

THE POETICAL WORKS OF  
**ROBERT BROWNING**



<i>New Edition</i>	.	.	.	.	.	1922
<i>Reprinted</i>	.	.	.	.	.	1943
<i>Reprinted</i>	.	.	.	.	.	1946
<i>Reprinted</i>	.	.	.	.	.	1951

## EDITOR'S NOTE.

THIS edition of Mr. Browning's poems and plays makes no pretence to be critical. One of the most useful of the Shakespearian commentators, Mr. Theobald, has observed that the science of criticism, so far as it affects an editor, is reduced to three classes : "The emendation of corrupt passages, the explanation of obscure and difficult ones, and an inquiry into the beauties and defects of composition." Happily there are no corrupt passages in Browning, but undoubtedly there are some obscure and difficult ones, although the reader will often be surprised to find how frequently obscurity and difficulty will be dissipated and removed by a careful study of the context. So, too, Browning has his beauties and defects of composition ; but neither his beauties or defects of composition, nor the obscurities and difficulties of particular passages, are here discussed or explained. All that has been done is to prefix (within square brackets) to some of the plays and poems a few lines explanatory of the characters and events depicted and described, and to explain in the margin of the volumes the meaning of such words as might, if left unexplained, momentarily arrest the understanding of the reader. That some easy words have been explained and some hard ones left alone is more than likely, since, on such a subject, no standard exists either of information or of ignorance. Sir F. G. Kenyon has been kind enough to make the notes for "The Ring and the Book," but for the rest the Editor alone is responsible.

The edition is a complete one, containing all Mr. Browning's regularly published plays and poems, from *Pauline* (1833) to *New Poems*, edited by Sir F. G. Kenyon (1914). In the arrangement of the contents a chronological order has as far as possible been observed ; but as Mr. Browning himself rearranged some of his smaller poems regardless of their dates of publication, his publishers have not felt themselves at liberty in these cases to adhere to chronology. In all the poems the poet's latest readings have been followed.

AUGUSTINE BIRRELL.



# CONTENTS OF VOLUME I.

PAULINE: A FRAGMENT OF A CONFESSION		1	SORDELLO—		PAGE
			DEDICATION		115
PARACELUS—			BOOK THE FIRST		115
I. PARACELUS ASPIRES			BOOK THE SECOND		128
II. PARACELUS ATTAINS			BOOK THE THIRD		141
III. PARACELUS			BOOK THE FOURTH		155
IV. PARACELUS ASPIRES			BOOK THE FIFTH		168
V. PARACELUS ATTAINS			BOOK THE SIXTH		182
NOTE			PIPPA PASSES: A DRAMA—		
72			INTRODUCTION		195
STRAFFORD: A TRAGEDY—			I. MORNING		198
ACT I.			II. NOON		205
SCENE I. A HOUSE NEAR WHITE-			III. EVENING		211
HALL			IV. NIGHT		215
77					
,, II. WHITEHALL					
81					
ACT II.			KING VICTOR AND KING		
SCENE I. A HOUSE NEAR WHITE-			CHARLES: A TRAGEDY—		
HALL			FIRST YEAR, 1730.—		
86			KING VICTOR. PART I.		221
,, II. WHITEHALL			KING VICTOR. PART II.		226
88			SECOND YEAR, 1731.—		
ACT III.			KING CHARLES. PART I.		235
SCENE I. OPPOSITE WESTMIN-			KING CHARLES. PART II.		242
STER HALL					
93					
,, II. WHITEHALL					
94					
,, III. THE ANTECHAMBER OF					
THE HOUSE OF					
LORDS					
98			DRAMATIC LYRICS—		
ACT IV.			CAVALIER TUNES—		
SCENE I. WHITEHALL			I. MARCHING ALONG		248
101			II. GIVE A ROUSE		248
,, II. A PASSAGE ADJOINING			III. BOOT AND SADDLE		249
WESTMINSTER HALL			THE LOST LEADER		249
103			"HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD		
,, III. WHITEHALL			NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX"		250
106					
ACT V.					
SCENE I. WHITEHALL					
108					
,, II. THE TOWER					
109					

DRAMATIC LYRICS—*Continued.*

	PAGE
THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-KADR . . . . .	251
NATIONALITY IN DRINKS . . . . .	251
GARDEN FANCIES . . . . .	252
I. THE FLOWER'S NAME . . . . .	252
II. SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURG-GENSIS . . . . .	253
LILOQUY OF THE SPANISH CLOISTER . . . . .	254
THE LABORATORY . . . . .	255
THE CONFESSIONAL . . . . .	256
CRISTINA . . . . .	257
THE LOST MISTRESS . . . . .	258
EARTH'S IMMORTALITIES . . . . .	258
MEETING AT NIGHT . . . . .	259
PARTING AT MORNING . . . . .	259
SONG . . . . .	259
A WOMAN'S LAST WORD . . . . .	259
EVERLYN HOPE . . . . .	260
LOVE AMONG THE RUINS . . . . .	261
A LOVERS' QUARREL . . . . .	262
UP AT A VILLA—DOWN IN THE CITY . . . . .	264
A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S . . . . .	266
OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE . . . . .	267
"DE GUSTIBUS ——" . . . . .	272
HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD . . . . .	272
HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA . . . . .	273
SAUL . . . . .	273
MY STAR . . . . .	280
BY THE FIRE-SIDE . . . . .	281
ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND . . . . .	285
TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA . . . . .	287
MISCONCEPTIONS . . . . .	288
A SERENADE AT THE VILLA . . . . .	288
ONE WAY OF LOVE . . . . .	289
ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE . . . . .	289
A PRETTY WOMAN . . . . .	290
RESPECTABILITY . . . . .	291
LOVE IN A LIFE . . . . .	291
LIFE IN A LOVE . . . . .	292

DRAMATIC LYRICS—*Continued.*

	PAGE
IN THREE DAYS . . . . .	292
IN A YEAR . . . . .	293
WOMEN AND ROSES . . . . .	294
BEFORE . . . . .	294
AFTER . . . . .	295
THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL . . . . .	296
MEMORABILLA . . . . .	297
POPULARITY . . . . .	297
MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA . . . . .	298
THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES : A TRAGEDY—	
ACT I . . . . .	301
" II. . . . .	307
" III. . . . .	312
" IV. . . . .	317
" V. . . . .	322
A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON : A TRAGEDY—	
ACT I.	
SCENE I. THE INTERIOR OF A LODGE IN LORD TRESHAM'S PARK . . . . .	330
" II. A SALOON IN THE MAN-SION . . . . .	332
" III. MILDRED'S CHAMBER . . . . .	334
ACT II.	
SCENE. THE LIBRARY . . . . .	338
ACT III.	
SCENE I. THE END OF THE YEW-TREE AVENUE UNDER MILDRED'S WINDOW . . . . .	345
" II. MILDRED'S CHAMBER . . . . .	349

# CONTENTS

17

## COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY.

### A PLAY—

#### ACT I. MORNING.

SCENE. A CORRIDOR LEADING  
TO THE AUDIENCE-  
CHAMBER . . . . . 352

#### ACT II. NOON.

SCENE. THE PRESENCE-CHAMBER . . . . . 358

#### ACT III. AFTERNOON.

SCENE. THE VESTIBULE . . . . . 364

#### ACT IV. EVENING.

SCENE. AN ANTECHAMBER. . . . . 370

#### ACT V. NIGHT.

SCENE. THE HALL . . . . . 376

## DRAMATIC ROMANCES—

INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP . . . . . 383

THE PATRIOT . . . . . 383

MY LAST DUCHESS . . . . . 384

COUNT GISMOND . . . . . 385

THE BOY AND THE ANGEL . . . . . 386

INSTANS TYRANNUS . . . . . 388

MESMERISM . . . . . 389

THE GLOVE . . . . . 391

TIME'S REVENGES . . . . . 393

THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND . . . . . 394

THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY . . . . . 396

IN A GONDOLA . . . . . 399

WARING . . . . . 402

THE TWINS . . . . . 405

A LIGHT WOMAN . . . . . 406

THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER . . . . . 407

THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN:

A CHILD'S STORY . . . . . 408

THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS . . . . . 412

A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL . . . . . 424

THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY . . . . . 426

HOLY-CROSS DAY . . . . . 427

PROTUS . . . . . 430

THE STATUE AND THE BUST . . . . . 431

## DRAMATIC ROMANCES—Continued.

PORPHYRIA'S LOVER . . . . . 434

✓ CHILDE-ROLAND TO THE DAWN  
TOWER CAME . . . . . 435

## LURIA: A TRAGEDY—

ACT I. MORNING . . . . . 439

„ II. NOON . . . . . 445

„ III. AFTERNOON . . . . . 450

„ IV. EVENING . . . . . 455

„ V. NIGHT . . . . . 459

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY—

ACT I. . . . . 465

„ II. . . . . 471

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-

### DAY—

CHRISTMAS-EVE . . . . . 480

EASTER-DAY . . . . . 496

## MEN AND WOMEN—

“TRANSCENDENTALISM: A POEM  
IN TWELVE BOOKS” . . . . . 508

HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPO-  
RARY . . . . . 509

ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES . . . . . 510

AN EPISTLE CONTAINING THE  
STRANGE MEDICAL EXPERI-  
ENCE OF KARSHISH, THE ARAB

PHYSICIAN . . . . . 512

JOHANNES AGRICOLA IN MEDI-  
TATION . . . . . 516

PICTOR IGNOTUS. . . . . 516

✓ FRA LIPPO LIPPI . . . . . 517

✓ ANDREA DEL SARTO (CALLED  
“THE FAULTLESS PAINTER”) 523

✓ THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB  
AT SAINT PRAXED'S CHURCH 527

BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY . 528

CLEON . . . . . 542

RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI 546

✓ ONE WORD MORE . . . . . 547

IN A BALCONY . . . . .	PAGE 550	DRAMATIS PERSONÆ— <i>Continued.</i>	PAGE
DRAMATIS PERSONÆ—		RABBI BEN EZRA . . . . .	580
JAMES LEE'S WIFE—		A DEATH IN THE DESERT . . . . .	583
I. JAMES LEE'S WIFE SPEAKS		✓ CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS; OR,	
AT THE WINDOW . . . . .	563	NATURAL THEOLOGY IN THE	
II. BY THE FIRESIDE . . . . .	563	ISLAND . . . . .	593
III. IN THE DOORWAY . . . . .	563	CONFESSIONS . . . . .	598
IV. ALONG THE BEACH . . . . .	564	MAY AND DEATH . . . . .	598
V. ON THE CLIFF . . . . .	565	DEAF AND DUMB: A GROUP BY	
VI. READING A BOOK UNDER		WOOLNER . . . . .	599
THE CLIFF . . . . .	565	PROSPICE . . . . .	599
VII. AMONG THE ROCKS . . . . .	567	EURYDICE TO ORPHEUS: A PIC-	
VIII. BESIDE THE DRAWING-		TURE BY LEIGHTON . . . . .	599
BOARD . . . . .	567	YOUTH AND ART . . . . .	599
IX. ON DECK . . . . .	568	A FACE . . . . .	601
GOLD HAIR: A STORY OF PORNIC	569	A LIKENESS . . . . .	601
THE WORST OF IT . . . . .	571	MR. SLUDGE, "THE MEDIUM".	602
DIS ALITER VISUM; OR, LE		APPARENT FAILURE . . . . .	624
BYRON DE NOS JOURS . . . . .	573	EPILOGUE . . . . .	625
TOO LATE . . . . .	575	BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE . . . . .	627
✓ ABT VOGLER . . . . .	578	ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY . . . . .	666

# PAULINE.

## A FRAGMENT OF A CONFESSION.

1833.

[Browning was twenty years old when this Fragment was first published. Amongst the early works of great poets it must always occupy a distinguished place on account of the splendour and extreme beauty of many of its passages. As a rule, such early work is disappointing, or at all events insignificant and uninteresting, but "Pauline" is far from insignificant, and is always interesting. One sees a mind at work and a rich promise of a harvest to come. The story of the young Rossetti transcribing the whole poem from the copy in the British Museum is a literary anecdote always worth recording. Mr. Browning himself seems to have thought lightly of the poem, and in giving one of his own copies to Mr. Frederick Locker spoke of it as a literary curiosity only. In his later days he became a very severe critic of the life and conduct of Shelley, and did not care to be too frequently reminded of his boyish raptures for that strange and unaccountable being. It would be difficult and unprofitable to attempt to analyse "Pauline," the charm of which now consists in detached passages. It is the sole survivor of a great deal of Browning's youthful verse. In a copy recently sold, and formerly belonging to Mr. Crampon, is an autograph note from the Author, recording "that the poem was written in pursuance of a foolish plan, I forget or have no wish to remember, involving the assumption of several distinct characters;" whilst in a copy of his own he wrote, "Only this crab remains of the shapely Tree of Life in my fool's paradise."]

### PAULINE.

Plus ne suis ce que j'ai été,  
Et ne le saurais jamais être.—*Marot.*

NON dubito, quin titulus libri nostri raritate sua quamplurimos alliciat ad legendum: inter quos nonnulli obliquæ opinionis, mente languidi, multi etiam maligni, et in ingenium nostrum iagrati accedent, qui temeraria sua ignorantia, vix conspecto titulo clamabunt. Nos vetita docere, hæresium semina jacere, piis auribus offendiculo, præclaris ingeniis scandalo esse: adeo conscientie suæ consulentes, ut nec Apollo, nec Musæ omnes, neque Angelus de coelo me ab illorum excitatione vindicare queant: quibus et ego nunc consulo, ne scripta nostra legant, nec intelligant, nec meminerint: nam poxis sunt, venenosa sunt: Acherontis ostium est in hoc libro, lapides loquuntur, caveant, ne cerebrum illis excutiat. Vos autem, qui æqua mente ad legendum veritatis, et tantam prudentiæ discretionem adhibueritis, quantum in melle legendi apes, jam securi legite. Puto namque vos et utilitatis haud parum et voluptatis

plurimum accepturos. Quod si quæ reperitis, quæ vobis non placeant, mittite illa, nec utimini. NAM ET EGO VOBIS ILLA NON PROBO, SLD NARRO. Cætera tamen propterea non respuite. . . . Ideo, si quid liberius dictum sit, ignoscite adolescentiæ nostræ, qui minor quam adolescens hoc opus composui.—*Hen. Corn. Agrippa, De Occult. Philosoph. in Prefat.*

LONDON: January 1833.

V. A. XX.

[This introduction would appear less absurdly pretentious did it apply, as was intended, to a completed structure of which the poem was meant for only a beginning and remains a fragment.]

PAULINE, mine own, bend o'er me—thy soft  
breast  
Shall pant to mine,—bend o'er me—thy sweet  
eyes,  
And loosened hair, and breathing lips, and  
arms  
Drawing me to thee—these build up a screen



To shut me in with thee, and from all fear ;  
 So that I might unlock the sleepless brood  
 Of fancies from my soul, their lurking-place,  
 Nor doubt that each would pass, ne'er to return  
 To one so watched, so loved and so secured.  
 But what can guard thee but thy naked love ?  
 Ah dearest, whoso sucks a poisoned wound  
 Envenoms his own veins ! Thou art so good,  
 So calm—if thou shouldst wear a brow less  
 light

For some wild thought which, but for me,  
 were kept

From out thy soul as from a sacred star !  
 Yet till I have unlocked them it were vain  
 To hope to sing ; some woe would light on me ;  
 Nature would point at one whose quivering lip  
 Was bathed in her enchantments, whose  
 brow burned

Beneath the crown to which her secrets knelt,  
 Who learned the spell which can call up the  
 dead,

And then departed smiling like a fiend  
 Who has deceived God,—if such one should  
 seek

Again her altars and stand robed and crowned  
 Amid the faithful ! Sad confession, first,  
 Remorse and pardon and old claims renewed,  
 Ere I can be—as I shall be no more.

I had been spared this shame if I had sat  
 By thee for ever from the first, in place  
 Of my wild dreams of beauty and of good,  
 Or with them, as an earnest of their truth :  
 No thought nor hope having been shut from  
 thee,

No vague wish unexplained, no wandering  
 aim

Sent back to bind on fancy's wings and seek  
 Some strange fair world where it might be  
 a law ;

But, doubting nothing, had been led by thee,  
 Tho' youth, and saved, as one at length  
 awaked

Who has slept through a peril. Ah vain, vain !

Thou lovest me ; the past is in its grave  
 Tho' its ghost haunts us ; still this much is  
 ours,

To cast away restraint, lest a worse thing  
 Wait for us in the dark. Thou lovest me ;  
 And thou art to receive not love but faith,  
 For which thou wilt be mine, and smile and  
 take

All shapes and shames, and veil without a  
 fear

That form which music follows like a slave :  
 And I look to thee and I trust in thee,  
 As in a Northern night one looks alway,  
 Unto the East for morn and spring and joy.  
 Thou seest then my aimless, hopeless state,  
 And, resting on some few old feelings won  
 Back by thy beauty, wouldst that I essay  
 The task which was to me what now thou art :  
 And why should I conceal one weakness more ?

Thou wilt remember one warm morn when  
 winter

Crept aged from the earth, and spring's first  
 breath

Blew soft from the moist hills ; the black-  
 thorn boughs,

So dark in the bare wood, when glistening  
 In the sunshine were white with coming  
 buds,

Like the bright side of a sorrow, and the  
 banks

Had violets opening from sleep like eyes.  
 I walked with thee who knew'st not a deep  
 shame

Lurked beneath smiles and careless words  
 which sought

To hide it till they wandered and were mute,  
 As we stood listening on a sunny mound  
 To the wind murmuring in the damp copse,  
 Like heavy breathings of some hidden thing  
 Betrayed by sleep ; until the feeling rushed  
 That I was low indeed, yet not so low  
 As to endure the calmness of thine eyes.

And so I told thee all, while the cool breast  
 I leaned on altered not its quiet beating :  
 And long ere words like a hurt bird's com-  
 plaint

Bade me look up and be what I had been,  
 I felt despair could never live by thee :  
 Thou wilt remember. Thou art not more  
 dear

Then song was once to me ; and I ne'er sung  
 But as one entering bright halls where all  
 Will rise and shout for him : sure I must own  
 That I am fallen, having chosen gifts  
 Distinct from theirs—that I am sad and fain  
 Would give up all to be but where I was,  
 Not high as I had been if faithful found,  
 But low and weak yet full of hope, and sure  
 Of goodness as of life—that I would lose  
 All this gay mastery of mind, to sit  
 Once more with them, trusting in truth and  
 love  
 And with an aim—not being what I am.

Oh Pauline, I am ruined who believed  
 That though my soul had floated from its  
 sphere

Of wild dominion into the dim orb  
 Of self—that it was strong and free as ever !  
 It has conformed itself to that dim orb,  
 Reflecting all its shades and shapes, and now  
 Must stay where it alone can be adored.  
 I have felt this in dreams—in dreams in which  
 I seemed the fate from which I fled ; I felt  
 A strange delight in causing my decay.  
 I was a fiend in darkness chained for ever  
 Within some ocean cave ; and ages rolled,  
 Till through the cleft rock, like a moonbeam,  
 came

A white swan to remain with me ; and ages  
 Rolled, yet I tired not of my first free joy.  
 In gazing on the peace of its pure wings :  
 And then I said " It is most fair to me,  
 " Yet its soft wings must sure have suffered  
 change

" From the thick darkness, sure its eyes are  
 dim,

" Its silver pinions must be cramped and  
 numbed

" With sleeping ages here ; it cannot leave me,  
 " For it would seem, in light beside its kind,  
 " Withered, tho' here to me most beautiful."  
 And then I was a young witch whose blue  
 eyes,

As she stood naked by the river springs,  
 Drew down a god : I watched his radiant form  
 Growing less radiant, and it gladdened me ;  
 Till one morn, as he sat in the sunshine

Upon my knees, singing to me of heaven,  
 He turned to look at me, ere I could lose  
 The grin with which I viewed his perishing :  
 And he shrieked and departed and sat long  
 By his deserted throne, but sunk at last  
 Murmuring, as I kissed his lips and curled  
 Around him, " I am still a god—to thee."

Still, I can lay my soul bare in its fall,  
 Since all the wandering and all the weakness  
 Will be a saddest comment on the song :  
 And if that done, I can be young again,  
 I will give up all gained, as willingly  
 As one gives up a charm which shuts him out  
 From hope or part or care in human kind.  
 As life wanes, all its care and strife and toil  
 Seem strangely valueless, while the old trees  
 Which grew by our youth's home, the waving  
 mass

Of climbing plants heavy with bloom and  
 dew,

The morning swallows with their songs like  
 words,  
 All these seem clear and only worth our  
 thoughts :

So, aught connected with my early life,  
 My rude songs or my wild imaginings,  
 How I look on them—most distinct amid  
 The fever and the stir of after years !

I ne'er had ventured e'en to hope for this,  
 Had not the glow I felt at His award,  
 Assured me all was not extinct within :  
 His whom all honour, whose renown springs  
 up,

Like sunlight which will visit all the world,  
 So that e'en they who sneered at him at first,  
 Come out to it, as some dark spider crawls  
 From his foul nets which some lit torch in-  
 vades,

Yet spinning still new films for his retreat,  
 Thou didst smile, poet, but can we forgive ?

Sun-treader,<sup>1</sup> life and light be thine for  
 ever !

Thou art gone from us ; years go by and  
 spring

<sup>1</sup> Shelley.

Gladdens and the young earth is beautiful,  
Yet thy songs come not, other bards arise,  
But none like thee! they stand, thy majesties,  
Like mighty works which tell some spirit  
there

Hath sat regardless of neglect and scorn,  
Till, its long task completed, it hath risen  
And left us, never to return, and all  
Rush in to peer and praise when all in vain.  
The air seems bright with thy past presence  
yet,

But thou art still for me as thou hast been  
When I have stood with thee as on a throne  
With all thy dim creations gathered round  
Like mountains, and I felt of mould like  
them,

And with them creatures of my own were  
mixed,  
Like things half-lived, catching and giving  
life.

But thou art still for me who have adored  
Thou single, panting but to hear thy name  
Which I believed a spell to me alone,  
Scarce deeming thou wast as a star to men!  
As one should worship long a sacred spring  
Scarce worth a moth's flitting, which long  
grasses cross,

And one small tree embowers droopingly  
Joying to see some wandering insect won  
To live in its few rushes, or some wild bird  
To pasture on its boughs, or some wild bird  
Stoop for its freshness from the trackless air:  
And then should find it but the fountain-  
head,

Long lost, of some great river washing towns  
And towers, and seeing old woods which  
will live

But by its banks untrod of human foot,  
Which, when the great sun sinks, lie quivering  
In light as some thing lieth half of life  
Before God's foot, waiting a wondrous  
change;

Then girt with rocks which seek to turn or  
stay

Its course in vain, for it does ever spread  
Like a sea's arm as it goes rolling on;  
Being the pulse of some great country—so  
Wast thou to me, and art thou to the world!

And I, perchance, half feel a strange regret  
That I am not what I have been to thee:

Like a girl one has silently loved long  
In her first loneliness in some retreat,  
When, late emerged, all gaze and glow to view  
Her fresh eyes and soft hair and lips which  
bloom

Like a mountain berry? doubtless it is sweet  
To see her thus adored; but there have been  
Moments when all the world was in our  
praise,

Sweeter than any pride of after hours.  
Yet, sun-treader, all hail! From my heart's  
heart

I bid thee hail! E'en in my wildest dreams,  
I proudly feel I would have thrown to dust  
The wreaths of fame which seemed o'er-  
hanging me,  
To see thee for a moment as thou art.

And if thou livest, if thou lovest, spirit!  
Remember me who set this final seal  
To wandering thought—that one so pure as  
thou

Could never die. Remember me who flung  
All honour from my soul, yet paused and  
said

"There is one spark of love remaining yet;  
"For I have nought in common with him,  
shapes

"Which followed him avoid me, and foul  
forms

"Seek me, which ne'er could fasten on his  
mind;

"And though I feel how low I am to him,  
"Yet I aim not even to catch a tone  
"Of harmonies he called profusely up;  
"So, one gleam still remains, although the  
last."

Remember me who praise thee e'en with tears,  
For never more shall I walk calm with thee;  
Thy sweet imaginings are as an air,  
A melody some wondrous singer sings,  
Which, though it haunt men oft in the still  
eve;

They dream not to essay; yet it no less  
But more is honoured. I was thine in shame  
And now when all thy proud renown is out,

I am a watcher whose eyes have grown dim  
With looking for some star which breaks on him  
Altered and worn and weak and full of tears;

Autumn has come like spring returned to us,  
Won from her girlishness; like one returned  
A friend that was a lover, nor forgets  
The first warm love, but full of sober thoughts  
Of fading years; whose soft mouth quivers yet  
With the old smile, but yet so changed and  
still!

And here am I the scoffer; who have probed  
Life's vanity, won by a word again  
Into my own life—by one little word

Of this sweet friend who lives in loving me,  
Lives strangely on my thoughts and looks  
and words,

As fathoms down some nameless ocean thing  
Its silent course of quietness and joy.

O dearest, if indeed I tell the past,  
May'st thou forget it as a sad sick dream!  
Or if it linger—my lost soul too soon  
Sinks to itself and whispers we shall be  
But closer linked, two creatures whom the earth  
Bears singly, with strange feelings unrevealed.

Save to each other; or two lonely things  
Created by some power whose reign is done,  
Having no part in God or his bright world.  
I am to sing whilst ebbing day dies soft,  
As a lean scholar dies worn o'er his book,  
And in the heaven stars steal out one by one  
As hunted men steal to their mountain watch.  
I must not think, lest this new impulse die  
In which I trust; I have no confidence:  
So, I will sing on fast as fancies come;  
Rudely, the verse being as the mood it paints.

I strip my mind bare, whose first elements  
I shall unveil—not as they struggled forth  
In infancy, nor as they now exist,  
When I am grown above them and can rule—  
But in that middle stage when they were full  
Yet ere I had disposed them to my will;  
And then I shall show how these elements  
Produced my present state, and what it is.

I am made up of an intensest life,  
Of a most clear idea of consciousness

Of self, distinct from all its qualities,  
From all affections, passions, feelings, powers;  
And thus far it exists, if tracked, in all—

But linked, in me, to self-supremacy,  
Existing as a centre to all things,  
Most potent to create and rule and call  
Upon all things to minister to it;  
And to a principle of restlessness  
Which would be all, have, see, know, taste,  
feel, all—

This is myself; and I should thus have  
been

Though gifted lower than the meanest soul.

And of my powers, one springs up to save  
From utter death a soul with such desire  
Confined to clay—of powers the only one  
Which marks me—an imagination which  
Has been a very angel, coming not  
In fitful visions but beside me ever  
And never failing me; so, though my mind  
Forgets not, not a shred of life forgets,  
Yet I can take a secret pride in calling  
The dark past up to quell it regally.

A mind like this must dissipate itself,  
But I have always had one lode-star; now,  
As I look back, I see that I have halted  
Or hastened as I looked towards that star—  
A need, a trust, a yearning after God:  
A feeling I have analysed but late,  
But it existed, and was reconciled  
With a neglect of all I deemed his laws,  
Which yet, when seen in others, I abhorred.  
I felt as one beloved, and so shut in  
From fear: and thence I date my trust in signs  
And omens, for I saw God everywhere;  
And I can only lay it to the fruit  
Of a sad after-time that I could doubt  
Even his being—e'en the while I felt  
His presence, never acted from myself,  
Still trusted in a hand to lead me through  
All danger; and this feeling ever fought  
Against my weakest reason and resolve.

And I can love nothing—and this dull truth  
Has come the last: but sense supplies a love  
Encircling me and mingling with my life.

These make myself: I have long sought in  
vain

To trace how they were formed by circum-  
stance,

Yet ever found them mould my wildest youth  
Where they alone displayed themselves, con-  
verted

All objects to their use: how see their course!

They came to me in my first dawn of life  
Which passed alone with wisest ancient books  
All halo-girt with fancies of my own;  
And I myself went with the tale—a god  
Wandering after beauty, or a giant  
Standing vast in the sunset—an old hunter  
Talking with gods, or a high-crested chief  
Sailing with troops of friends to Tenedos.  
I tell you, nought has ever been so clear  
As the place, the time, the fashion of those  
lives:

I had not seen a work of lofty art,  
Nor woman's beauty nor sweet nature's face,  
Yet, I say, never morn broke clear as those  
On the dim clustered isles in the blue sea,  
The deep groves and white temples and wet  
caves:

And nothing ever will surprise me now—  
Who stood beside the naked Swift-footed,  
Who bound my forehead with Proserpine's  
hair.

And strange it is that I who could so dream  
Should e'er have stooped to aim at aught  
beneath—

Aught low or painful; but I never doubted:  
So, as I grew, I rudely shaped my life  
To my immediate wants; yet strong beneath  
Was a vague sense of power though folded  
up—

A sense that, though those shades and times  
were past,  
Their spirit dwelt in me, with them should  
rule.

Then came a pause, and long restraint chained  
down

My soul till it was changed. I lost myself,  
And were it not that I so loathe that loss,

I could recall how first I learned to turn  
My mind against itself; and the effects  
In deeds for which remorse was vain as for  
The wanderings of delirious dream; yet  
thence

Came cunning, envy, falsehood, all world's  
wrong

That spotted me: at length I cleansed my  
soul.

Yet long world's influence remained; and  
nought

But the still life I led, apart once more,  
Which left me free to seek soul's old delights,  
Could e'er have brought me thus far back to  
peace.

As peace returned, I sought out some pursuit;  
And song rose, no new impulse but the one  
With which all others best could be combined.  
My life has not been that of those whose  
heaven

Was lampless save where poesy shone out;  
But as a clime where glittering mountain-tops  
And glancing sea and forests steeped in light  
Give back reflected the far-flashing sun;  
For music (which is earnest of a heaven,  
Seeing we know emotions strange by it,  
Not else to be revealed,) is like a voice,  
A low voice calling fancy, as a friend,  
To the green woods in the gay summer time:  
And she fills all the way with dancing shapes  
Which have made painters pale, and they go  
on

Till stars look at them and winds call to them  
As they leave life's path for the twilight world  
Where the dead gather. This was not at  
first,

For I scarce knew what I would do. I had  
An impulse but no yearning—only sang.

And first I sang as I in dream have seen  
Music wait on a lyrist for some thought,  
Yet singing to herself until it came.

I turned to those old times and scenes where  
all

That's beautiful had birth for me, and made  
Rude verses on them all; and then I paused—  
I had done nothing, so I sought to know

What other minds achieved. No fear out-  
broke.

As on the works of mighty bards I gazed,  
In the first joy at finding my own thoughts  
Recorded, my own fancies justified,  
And their aspirings but my very own.  
With them I first explored passion and  
mind,—

All to begin afresh ! I rather sought  
To rival what I wondered at than form  
Creations of my own ; if much was light  
Lent by the others, much was yet my own.

I paused again : a change was coming—came :  
I was no more a boy, the past was breaking  
Before the future and like fever worked.  
I thought on my new self, and all my powers  
Burst out. I dreamed not of restraint, but  
gazed

On all things : schemes and systems went  
and came,

And I was proud (being vainest of the weak)  
In wandering o'er thought's world to seek  
some one

To be my prize, as if you wandered o'er  
The White Way for a star.

And my choice fell

Not so much on a system as a man—  
On one, whom praise of mine shall not offend,  
Who was as calm as beauty, being such  
Unto mankind as thou to me, Pauline,—  
Believing in them and devoting all  
His soul's strength to their winning back to  
peace ;

Who sent forth hopes and longings for their  
sake,

Clothed in all passion's melodies : such first  
Caught me and set me, slave of a sweet task,  
To disentangle, gather sense from song :  
Since, song-inwoven, lurked there words  
which seemed

A key to a new world, the muttering  
Of angels, something yet unguessed by man.  
How my heart leapt as still I sought and found  
Much there, I felt my own soul had conceived,  
But there living and burning ! Soon the orb  
Of his conceptions dawned on me ; its praise

Lives in the tongues of men, men's brows  
are high

When his name means a triumph and a pride,  
So, my weak voice may well forbear to shame  
What seemed decreed my fate : I threw myself  
To meet it, I was vowed to liberty,  
Men were to be as gods and earth as heaven,  
And I—ah, what a life was mine to prove !  
My whole soul rose to meet it. Now, Pauline,  
I shall go mad, if I recall that time !

Oh let me look back ere I leave for ever  
The time which was an hour one fondly waits  
For a fair girl that comes a withered hag !  
And I was lonely, far from woods and fields,  
And amid dullest sights, who should be loose  
As a stag ; yet I was full of bliss, who lived  
With Plato and who had the key to life ;  
And I had dimly shaped my first attempt,  
And many a thought did I build up on  
thought,

As the wild bee hangs cell to cell ; in vain,  
For I must still advance, no rest for mind.

'Twas in my plan to look on real life,  
The life all new to me ; my theories  
Were firm, so then I left, to look and learn  
Mankind, its cares, hopes, fears, its woes and  
joys ;

And, as I pondered on their ways, I sought  
How best life's end might be attained—an end  
Comprising every joy. I deeply mused.

And suddenly without heart-wreck I awoke  
As from a dream : I said, " 'Twas beautiful,  
" Yet but a dream, and so adieu to it !"  
As some world-wanderer sees in a far meadow  
Strange towers and high-walled gardens thick  
with trees,

Where song takes shelter and delicious mirth  
From laughing fairy creatures peeping over,  
And on the morrow when he comes to lie  
For ever 'neath those garden-trees fruit-  
flushed

Sung round by fairies, all his search is vain.  
First went my hopes of perfecting mankind,  
Next—faith in them, and then in freedom's self  
And virtue's self, then my own motives, and

All pleasure, howso'er minute, grows pain;  
 I envy—how I envy him whose soul  
 Turns its whole energies to some one end,  
 To elevate an aim, pursue success  
 However mean! So, my still baffled hope  
 Seeks out abstractions; I would have one joy,  
 But one in life, so it were wholly mine,  
 One rapture all my soul could fill: and this  
 Wild feeling places me in dream afar  
 In some vast country where the eye can see  
 No end to the far hills and dales bestrewn  
 With shining towers and towns, till I grow  
 mad

Well-nigh, to know not one abode but holds  
 Some pleasure, while my soul could grasp  
 the world,

But must remain this vile form's slave: I look  
 With hope to age at last, which quenching  
 much,  
 May let me concentrate what sparks it spares.

This restlessness of passion meets in me—  
 A craving after knowledge: the sole proof  
 Of yet commanding will is in that power  
 Repressed; for I beheld it in its dawn,  
 The sleepless harpy with just-budding wings,  
 And I considered whether to forego  
 All happy ignorant hopes and fears, to live,  
 Finding a recompense in its wild eyes.  
 And when I found that I should perish so,  
 I bade its wild eyes close from me for ever,  
 And I am left alone with old delights;  
 See! it lies in me a chained thing, still prompt  
 To serve me if I loose its slightest bond:  
 I cannot but be proud of my bright slave.

How should this earth's life prove my only  
 sphere?

Can I so narrow sense but that in life  
 Soul still exceeds it? In their elements  
 My love outsoars my reason; but since love  
 Perforce receives its object from this earth  
 While reason wanders chainless, the few  
 truths

Caught from its wanderings have sufficed to  
 quell.

Love chained below; then what were love,  
 set free,

Which, with the object it demands, would pass  
 Reason companioning the seraphim?

No, what I feel may pass all human love—  
 Yet fall far short of what my love should be.  
 And yet I seem more warped in this than  
 aught,

Myself stands out more hideously: of old  
 I could forget myself in friendship, fame,  
 Liberty, nay, in love of mightier souls;  
 But I begin to know what thing hate is—  
 To sicken and to quiver and grow white—  
 And I myself have furnished its first prey.  
 Hate of the weak and ever-wavering will,  
 The selfishness, the still-decaying frame  
 But I must never grieve whom wing can waft  
 Far from such thoughts—as now. Andro-  
 meda!<sup>1</sup>

And she is with me: years roll, I shall change,  
 But change can touch her not—so beautiful  
 With her fixed eyes, earnest and still, and hair  
 Lifted and spread by the salt-sweeping breeze,  
 And one red beam, all the storm leaves in  
 heaven,

Resting upon her eyes and hair, such hair,  
 As she awaits the snake on the wet beach  
 By the dark rock and the white wave just  
 breaking

At her feet; quite naked and alone; a thing  
 I doubt not, nor fear for, secure some god  
 To save will come in thunder from the stars.  
 Let it pass! Soul requires another change.  
 I will be gifted with a wondrous mind,  
 Yet sunk by error to men's sympathy,  
 And in the wane of life, yet only so  
 As to call up their fears; and there shall  
 come

A time requiring youth's best energies;  
 And lo, I fling age, sorrow, sickness off,  
 And rise triumphant, triumph through decay.

And thus it is that I supply the chasm  
 'Twixt what I am and all I fain would be:  
 But then, to know nothing, to hope for  
 nothing,

To seize on life's dull joys from a strange fear  
 Lest, losing them, all's lost and nought  
 remains!

<sup>1</sup> As painted by Polidoro di Caravaggio.

There's some vile juggle with my reason here ;  
 I feel I but explain to my own loss  
 These impulses : they live no less the same.  
 Liberty ! what though I despair ? my blood  
 Rose never at a slave's name proud as now.  
 Oh sympathies, obscured by sophistries !—  
 Why else have I sought refuge in myself,  
 But from the woes I saw and could not stay ?  
 Love ! is not this to love thee, my Pauline ?  
 I cherish prejudice, lest I be left  
 Utterly loveless ? witness my belief  
 In poets, though sad change has come there  
 too ;

No more I leave myself to follow them—  
 Unconsciously I measure me by them—  
 Let me forget it : and I cherish most  
 My love of England—how her name, a word  
 Of hers in a strange tongue makes my heart  
 beat !

Pauline, could I but break the spell ! Not  
 now—

All's fever—but when calm shall come again,  
 I am prepared : I have made life my own.  
 I would not be content with all the change  
 One frame should feel, but I have gone in  
 thought

Thro' all conjuncture, I have lived all life.  
 When it is most alive, where strangest fate  
 New-shapes it past surmise—the throes of men  
 Bit by some curse or in the grasps of doom  
 Half-visible and still-increasing round,  
 Or crowning their wide being's general aim.

These are wild fancies, but I feel, sweet friend,  
 As one breathing his weakness to the ear  
 Of pitying angel—dear as a winter flower,  
 A slight flower growing alone, and offering  
 Its frail cup of three leaves to the cold sun,  
 Yet joyous and confiding like the triumph  
 Of a child : and why am I not worthy thee ?  
 I can live all the life of plants, and gaze  
 Drowsily on the bees that flit and play,  
 Or bare my breast for sunbeams which will  
 kill,  
 Or open in the night of sounds, to look  
 For the dim stars ; I can mount with the  
 bird

Leaping airily his pyramid of leaves  
 And twisted boughs of some tall mountain  
 tree,

Or rise cheerfully springing to the heavens ;  
 Or like a fish breathe deep the morning air  
 In the misty sun-warm water ; or with flower  
 And tree can smile in light at the sinking sun  
 Just as the storm comes, as a girl would look  
 On a departing lover—most serene.

Pauline, come with me, see how I could build  
 A home for us, out of the world, in thought !  
 I am uplifted : fly with me, Pauline !

Night, and one single ridge of narrow path  
 Between the sullen river and the woods  
 Waving and muttering, for the moonless night  
 Has shaped them into images of life,  
 Like the uprising of the giant-ghosts,  
 Looking on earth to know how their sons  
 fare :

Thou art so close by me, the roughest swell  
 Of wind in the tree-tops hides not the panting  
 Of thy soft breasts. No, we will pass to  
 morning—

Morning, the rocks and valleys and old  
 woods.

How the sun brightens in the mist, and here,  
 Half in the air, like creatures of the place,  
 Trusting the element, living on high boughs  
 That swing in the wind—look at the silver  
 spray !

Flung from the foam-sheet of the cataract  
 Amid the broken rocks ! Shall we stay here  
 With the wild hawks ? No, ere the hot noon  
 come,

Dive we down—safe ! See this our new  
 retreat

Walled in with a sloped mound of matted  
 shrubs,

Dark, tangled, old and green, still sloping  
 down

To a small pool whose waters lie asleep  
 Amid the trailing boughs turned water-plants :  
 And tall trees overarch to keep us in,  
 Breaking the sunbeams into emerald shafts,  
 And in the dreamy water one small group  
 Of two or three strange trees are got together



Wondering at all around, as strange beasts  
herd

Together far from their own land : all wild-  
ness,

No turf nor moss, for boughs and plants  
pave all,

And tongues of bank go shelving in the  
lymph,

Where the pale-throated snake reclines his  
head,

And old grey stones lie making eddies there,  
The wild-mice cross them dry-shod. Deeper  
in !

Shut thy soft eyes—now look—still deeper in !  
This is the very heart of the woods all round  
Mountain-like heaped above us ; yet even  
here

One pond of water gleams ; far off the river  
Sweeps like a sea, barred out from land ; but  
one—

One thin clear sheet has overleaped and  
wound

Into this silent depth, which gained, it lies  
Still, as but let by sufferance ; the trees bend  
O'er it as wild men watch a sleeping girl,  
And through their roots long creeping plants  
out-stretch

Their twined hair, steeped and sparkling ;  
farther on,

Tall rushes and thick flag-knots have com-  
bined

To narrow it ; so, at length, a silver thread,  
It winds, all noiselessly through the deep  
wood

Till thro' a cleft-way, thro' the moss and stone,  
It joins its parent-river with a shout.

Up for the glowing day, leave the old woods !  
See, they part like a ruined arch : the sky !  
Nothing but sky appears, so close the roots  
And grass of the hill-top level with the air—  
Blue sunny air, where a great cloud floats  
laden

With light, like a dead whale that white  
birds pick,

Floating away in the sun in some north sea.  
Air, air, fresh life-blood, thin and searching air,  
The clear, dear breath of God that loveth us,

Where small birds reel and winds take their  
delight !

Water is beautiful, but not like air :  
See, where the solid azure waters lie  
Made as of thickened air, and down below,  
The fern-ranks like a forest spread themselves  
As though each pore could feel the element ;  
Where the quick glancing serpent winds his  
way,  
Float with methere, Pauline!—but not like air.

Down the hill ! Stop—a clump of trees,  
see, set

On a heap of rock, which look o'er the far  
plain :

So, envious climbing shrubs would mount to rest  
And peer from their spread boughs ; wide  
they wave, looking

At the muleteers who whistle on their way,  
To the merry chime of morning bells, past all  
The little smoking cots, mid fields and banks  
And coppers bright in the sun. My spirit  
wanders :

Hedgerows for me—those living hedgerows  
where

The bushes close and clasp above and keep  
Thought in—I am concentrated—I feel ;  
But my soul saddens when it looks beyond :  
I cannot be immortal, taste all joy.

O God, where do they tend—these struggling  
aims ?<sup>1</sup>

What would I have ? What is this “sleep”  
which seems

To bound all ? can there be a “waking” point  
Of crowning life ? The soul would never rule ;  
It would be first in all things, it would have  
Its utmost pleasure filled, but, that completé,  
Commanding, for commanding, sickens it.  
The last point I can trace is—rest beneath  
Some better essence than itself, in weakness :  
This is “myself,” not what I think should be :  
And what is that I hunger for but God ?

My God, my God, let me for once look on  
thee

As though nought else existed, we alone !

<sup>1</sup> See note at the end of the poem.

And as creation crumbles, my soul's spark  
 Expands till I can say,—Even from myself  
 I need thee and I feel thee and I love thee.  
 I do not plead my rapture in thy works  
 For love of thee, nor that I feel as one  
 Who cannot die : but there is that in me  
 Which turns to thee, which loves or which  
 should love.

Why have I girt myself with this hell-dress?  
 Why have I laboured to put out my life?  
 Is it not in my nature to adore,  
 And e'en for all my reason do I not  
 Feel him, and thank him, and pray to him—  
 now?

Can I forego the trust that he loves me?  
 Do I not feel a love which only ONE . . .  
 O thou pale form, so dimly seen, deep-eyed!  
 I have denied thee calmly—do I not  
 Pant when I read of thy consummate power,  
 And burn to see thy calm pure truths out-flash  
 The brightest gleams of earth's philosophy?  
 Do I not shake to hear aught question thee?  
 If I am erring save me, madden me,  
 Take from me powers and pleasures, let me  
 die

Ages, so I see thee! I am knit round  
 As with a charm by sin and lust and pride,  
 Yet though my wandering dreams have seen  
 all shapes

Of strange delight, oft have I stood by thee—  
 Have I been keeping lonely watch with thee  
 In the damp night by weeping Olivet,  
 Or leaning on thy bosom, proudly less,  
 Or dying with thee on the lonely cross,  
 Or witnessing thine outburst from the tomb.

A mortal, sin's familiar friend, doth here  
 Avow that he will give all earth's reward,  
 But to believe and humbly teach the faith,  
 In suffering and poverty and shame,  
 Only believing he is not unloved.

And now, my Pauline, I am thine for ever!  
 I feel the spirit which has buoyed me up  
 Desert me, and old shades are gathering fast;  
 Yet while the last light waits, I would say much,  
 This chiefly, it is gain that I have said

Somewhat of love I ever felt for thee  
 But seldom told; our hearts so beat together  
 That speech seemed mockery; but when  
 dark hours come,  
 And joy departs, and thou, sweet, deem'st it  
 strange

A sorrow moves me, thou canst not remove,  
 Look on this lay I dedicate to thee,  
 Which through thee I began, which thus I end,  
 Collecting the last gleams to strive to tell  
 How I am thine, and more than ever now  
 That I sink fast: yet though I deeper sink,  
 No less song proves one word has brought  
 me bliss,

Another still may win bliss surely back.  
 Thou knowest, dear, I could not think all  
 calm,

For fancies followed thought and bore me off,  
 And left all indistinct; ere one was caught  
 Another glanced; so, dazzled by my wealth,  
 I knew not which to leave nor which to  
 choose,

For all so floated, nought was fixed and firm.  
 And then thou said'st a perfect bard was one  
 Who chronicled the stages of all life,  
 And so thou bad'st me shadow this first stage.  
 'Tis done, and even now I recognize  
 The shift, the change from last to past—  
 discern

Faintly how life is truth and truth is good.  
 And why thou must be mine is, that e'en now  
 In the dim hush of night, that I have done,  
 Despite the sad forebodings, love looks  
 through—

Whispers,—E'en at the last I have her still,  
 With her delicious eyes as clear as heaven  
 When rain in a quick shower has beat down  
 mist,

And clouds float white above like broods of  
 swans.

How the blood lies upon her cheek, outspread  
 As thinned by kisses! only in her lips  
 It wells and pulses like a living thing,  
 And her neck looks like marble misted o'er  
 With love-breath,—a Pauline from heights  
 above,

Stooping beneath me, looking up—one look  
 As I might kill her and be loved the more,

So, love me—me, Pauline, and nought but me,  
Never leave loving! Words are wild and weak,  
Believe them not, Pauline! I stained myself  
But to behold thee purer by my side,

To show thou art my breath, my life, a last  
Resource, an extreme want: never believe  
Aught better could so look on thee; nor seek  
Again the world of good thoughts left for mine!

There were bright troops of undiscovered suns,  
Each equal in their radiant course; there were  
Clusters of far fair isles which ocean kept  
For his own joy, and his waves broke on them

Without a choice; and there was a dim crowd  
Of visions, each a part of some grand whole:  
And one star left his peers and came with peace  
Upon a storm, and all eyes pined for him;

And one isle harboured a sea-beaten ship,  
And the crew wandered in its bowers and  
plucked

Its fruits and gave up all their hopes of home;  
And one dream came to a pale poet's sleep,  
And he said, "I am singled out by God,

"No sin must touch me." Words are wild  
and weak,

But what they would express is,—Leave me  
not,

Still sit by me with beating breast and hair  
Loosened, be watching earnest by my side,  
Turning my books or kissing me when I

Look up—like summer wind! Be still to me  
A help to music's mystery which mind fails  
To fathom, its solution, no mere clue!

O reason's pedantry, life's rule prescribed!  
I hopeless, I the loveless, hope and love.

Wiser and better, know me now, not when  
You loved me as I was. Smile not! I have  
Much yet to dawn on you, to gladden you.

No more of the past! I'll look within no  
more.

I have too trusted my own lawless wants,  
Too trusted my vain self, vague intuition—  
Draining soul's wine alone in the still night,

And seeing how, as gathering films arose,  
As by an inspiration life seemed bare

And grinning in its vanity, while ends  
Foul to be dreamed of, smiled at me as fixed

And fair, while others changed from fair to foul  
As a young witch turns an old hag at night.

No more of this! We will go hand in hand,  
I with thee, even as a child—love's slave,  
Looking no farther than his liege commands

And thou hast chosen where this life shall be.  
The land which gave me thee shall be our  
home,

Where nature lies all wild amid her lakes  
And snow-swathed mountains and vast pines  
begirt

With ropes of snow—where nature lies all  
bare.

Suffering none to view her but a race  
Or stunted or deformed, like the mute dwarfs  
Which wait upon a naked Indian queen.

And there (the time being when the heavens  
are thick

With storm) I'll sit with thee while thou dost  
sing

Thy native songs, gay as a desert bird  
Which crieth as it flies for perfect joy,  
Or telling me old stories of dead knights;

Or I will read great lays to thee—how she,  
The fair pale sister, went to her chill grave<sup>1</sup>

With power to love and to be loved and live:  
Or we will go together, like twin gods

Of the infernal world, with scented lamp  
Over the dead, to call and to awake,

Over the unshaped images which lie  
Within my mind's cave: only leaving all,

That tells of the past doubt. So, when spring  
comes

With sunshine back again like an old smile,  
And the fresh waters and awakened birds

And budding woods await us, I shall be  
Prepared, and we will question life once

more,

Till its old sense shall come renewed by  
change,

Like some clear thought which harsh words  
veiled before;

Feeling God loves us, and that all which errs  
Is but a dream which death will dissipate.

And then what need of longer exile? Seek  
My England, and, again there, calm approach

All I once fled from, calmly look on those

<sup>1</sup> Antigone.

The works of my past weakness, as one views  
Some scene where danger met him long  
before.

Ah that such pleasant life should be but  
dreamed !

But whate'er come of it, and though it fade,  
And though ere the cold morning all be gone,  
As it may be ;—tho' music wait to wile,  
And strange eyes and bright wine lure, laugh  
like sin

Which steals back softly on a soul half saved,  
And I the first deny, decry, despise,  
With this avowal, these intents so fair,—  
Still be it all my own, this moment's pride !  
No less I make an end in perfect joy.  
E'en in my brightest time, a lurking fear  
Possessed me : I well knew my weak resolves,  
I felt the witchery that makes mind sleep  
Over its treasure, as one half afraid  
To make his riches definite : but now  
These feelings shall not utterly be lost,  
I shall not know again that nameless care  
Lest, leaving all undone in youth, some new  
And undreamed end reveal itself too late :  
For this song shall remain to tell for ever  
That when I lost all hope of such a change,  
Suddenly beauty rose on me again.  
No less I make an end in perfect joy,  
For I, who thus again was visited,  
Shall doubt not many another bliss awaits,  
And, though this weak soul sink and dark-  
ness whelm,

Some little word shall light it, raisé aloft,  
To where I clearer see and better love,  
As I again go o'er the tracts of thought  
Like one who has a right, and I shall live  
With poets, calmer, purer still each time,  
And beauteous shapes will come for me to seize,  
And unknown secrets will be trusted me  
Which were denied the waverer once ; but now  
I shall be priest and prophet as of old.

Sun-treader, I believe in God and truth  
And love ; and as one just escaped from death  
Would bind himself in bands of friends to feel  
He lives indeed, so, I would lean on thee !  
Thou must be ever with me, most in gloom

If such must come, but chiefly when I die,  
For I seem, dying, as one going in the dark  
To fight a giant : but live thou for ever,  
And be to all what thou hast been to me !  
All in whom this wakes pleasant thoughts of me  
Know my last state is happy, free from doubt  
Or touch of fear. Love me and wish me well.

RICHMOND :

*October 22, 1832.*

#### NOTE.

Je crains bien que mon pauvre ami ne soit pas toujours parfaitement compris dans ce qui reste à lire de cet étrange fragment, mais il est moins propre que tout autre à éclaircir ce qui de sa nature ne peut jamais être que songe et confusion. D'ailleurs je ne sais trop si en cherchant à mieux co-ordonner certaines parties l'on ne courrait pas le risque de nuire au seul mérite auquel une production si singulière peut prétendre, celui de donner une idée assez précise du genre qu'elle n'a fait qu'ébaucher. Ce début sans prétention, ce remuement des passions qui va d'abord en accroissant et puis s'apaise par degrés, ces élans de l'âme, ce retour soudain sur soi-même, et par-dessus tout, la tournure d'esprit tout particulière de mon ami, rendent les changemens presque impossibles. Les raisons qu'il fait valoir ailleurs, et d'autres encore plus puissantes, ont fait trouver grâce à mes yeux pour cet écrit qu'autrement je lui eusse conseillé de jeter au feu. Je n'en crois pas moins au grand principe de toute composition—à ce principe de Shakespeare, de Raphaëlle, de Beethoven, d'où il suit que la concentration des idées est due bien plus à leur conception qu'à leur mise en exécution : j'ai tout lieu de craindre que la première de ces qualités ne soit encore étrangère à mon ami, et je doute fort qu'un redoublement de travail lui fasse acquérir la seconde. Le mieux serait de brûler ceci ; mais que faire ?

Je crois que dans ce qui suit il fait allusion à un certain examen qu'il fit autrefois de l'âme, ou plutôt de son âme, pour découvrir la suite des objets auxquels il lui serait possible d'atteindre, et dont chacun une fois obtenu devait former une espèce de plateau d'où l'on pouvait apercevoir d'autres buts, d'autres projets, d'autres jouissances qui, à leur tour, devaient être surmontés. Il en résultait que l'oubli et le sommeil devaient tout terminer. Cette idée, que je ne saisis pas parfaitement, lui est peut-être aussi inintelligible qu'à moi.

PAULINE.

# PARACELSUS.

1835.

[In his choice of Paracelsus, Browning exhibits that fondness for learned subjects and out-of-the-way reading which always characterised him. A Life of Paracelsus, did it only exist, would be a fascinating record of times and ideas now well-nigh inconceivable by us. Paracelsus (a name invented by himself to indicate that he was greater than Celsus) was the son of a doctor, and was born about 1490 in Einsiedeln, in the Swiss canton of Schwyz. He studied at Basel University, and was taught alchemy and chemistry by the renowned Trithemius. He also acquired in the mines in the Tyrol belonging to the Fugger family a practical acquaintance with minerals. His merit became that of an observer and an acquirer of facts. He wandered all over Europe, and even reached Samarcand. In 1526 he returned to Basel, and was appointed town physician, and lectured 'before the' University. His behaviour was eccentric, and his conceit boundless. In 1528 he left Basel and resumed his wandering life. He died in Salzburg in 1541—some say he was murdered, and others that he drank himself to death. He has been credited with an enormous number of works explanatory of his system, which was a mixture of mysticism, charlatanism, and useful empiricism. He lectured both in Latin and German. Erasmus consulted him for the stone, and he is said to have cured the famous printer, Froben, of the gout. It is asserted on his behalf that he discovered zinc, hydrogen gas, and the tincture of opium. His *aroth* is sometimes supposed to have been electricity (see *Encyclopædia Britannica*, vol. xviii.). The poem sufficiently explains itself, and presents no difficulty to an intelligent reader.]

INSCRIBED TO

AMÉDÉE DE RIPERT-MONCLAR

BY HIS AFFECTIONATE FRIEND

R. B.

LONDON: March 15, 1835.

## PARACELSUS.

### PERSONS.

AUREOLUS PARACELSUS, *a student.*

FESTUS and MICHAL, *his friends.*

APRILE, *an Italian poet.*

### I.—PARACELSUS ASPIRES.

SCENE.—*Würzburg; a garden in the environs.* 1512.

FESTUS, PARACELSUS, MICHAL.

*Paracelsus.* Come close to me, dear friends; still closer; thus!  
Close to the heart which, though long time  
roll by  
Ere it again beat quicker, pressed to yours,

As now it beats—perchance a long, long time—  
At least henceforth your memories shall make  
Quiet and fragrant as befits their home.  
Nor shall my memory want a home in yours—  
Alas, that it requires too well such free  
Forgiving love as shall embalm it there!  
For if you would remember me aright,  
As I was born to be, you must forget  
All fitful strange and moody waywardness  
Which e'er confused my better spirit, 'to dwell  
Only on moments such as these, dear friends!  
—My heart no truer, but my words and ways  
More true to it: as Michal, some months  
hence,  
Will say, "this autumn was a pleasant time,"  
For some few sunny days; and overlook

Its bleak wind, hankering after pining leaves.  
Autumn would fain be sunny ; I would look  
Liker my nature's truth : and both are frail,  
And both beloved, for all our frailty.

*Michal.* Aureole !

*Paracelsus.* Drop by drop ! she is weeping  
like a child !

Not so ! I am content—more than content ;  
Nay, autumn wins you best by this its mute  
Appeal to sympathy for its decay :  
Look up, sweet Michal, nor esteem the less  
Your stained and drooping vines their grapes  
bow down,  
Nor blame those creaking trees bent with  
their fruit,

That apple-tree with a rare after-birth  
Of peeping blooms sprinkled its wealth  
among !

Then for the winds—what wind that ever raved  
Shall vex that ash which overlooks you both,  
So proud it wears its berries ? Ah, at length,  
The old smile meet for her, the lady of this  
Sequestered nest !—this kingdom, limited  
Alone by one old populous green wall  
Tenanted by the ever-busy flies,  
Grey crickets and shy lizards and quick  
spiders,  
Each family of the silver-threaded moss—  
Which, look through near, this way, and it  
appears

A stubble-field or a cane-brake, a marsh  
Of bulrush whitening in the sun : laugh now !  
Fancy the crickets, each one in his house,  
Looking out, wondering at the world—or best,  
Yon painted snail with his gay shell of dew,  
Travelling to see the glossy balls high up  
Hung by the caterpillar, like gold lamps.

*Michal.* In truth we have lived carelessly  
and well.

*Paracelsus.* And shall, my perfect pair !—  
each, trust me, born

For the other ; nay, your very hair, when  
mixed,

Is of one hue. For where save in this nook  
Shall you two walk, when I am far away,  
And wish me prosperous fortune ? Stay :  
that plant

Shall never wave its tangles lightly and softly,

As a queen's languid and imperial arm  
Which scatters crowns among her lovers,  
but you

Shall be reminded to predict to me  
Some great success ! Ah see, the sun sinks  
broad

Behind Saint Saviour's : wholly gone, at last !  
*Festus.* Now, Aureole, stay those wander-  
ing eyes awhile !

You are ours to-night, at least ; and while  
you spoke

Of Michal and her tears, I thought—that none  
Could willing leave what he so seemed to  
love :

But that last look destroys my dream—that  
look

As if, where'er you gazed, there stood a star !  
How far was Wurzburg with its church and  
spire

And garden-walls and all things they contain,  
From that look's far alighting ?

*Paracelsus.* I but spoke

And looked alike from a simple joy to see  
The beings I love best, shut in so well  
From all rude chances like to be my lot,  
That, when afar, my weary spirit,—disposed  
To lose awhile its care in soothing thoughts  
Of them, their pleasant features, looks and  
words,—

Needs never hesitate, nor apprehend  
Encroaching trouble may have reached them  
too,

Nor have recourse to fancy's busy aid  
And fashion even a wish in their behalf  
Beyond what they possess already here ;  
But, unobstructed, may at once forget  
Itself in them, assured how well they fare.  
Beside, this Festus knows he holds me one  
Whom quiet and its charms arrest in vain,  
One scarce aware of all the joys I quit,  
Too filled with airy hopes to make account  
Of soft delights his own heart garners up :  
Whereas behold how much our sense of all  
That's beauteous proves alike ! When Festus  
learns

That every common pleasure of the world  
Affects me as himself ; that I have just  
As varied appetite for joy derived

From common things; a stake in life, in short,  
Like his; a stake which rash pursuit of aims  
That life affords not, would as soon destroy;—  
He may convince himself that, this in view,  
I shall act well advised. And last, because,  
Though heaven and earth and all things were  
at stake,  
Sweet Michal must not weep, our parting  
eve.

*Festus* True: and the eve is deepening,  
and we sit

As little anxious to begin our talk  
As though to-morrow I could hint of it  
As we paced arm-in-arm the cheerful town  
At sun-dawn; or could whisper it by fits  
(Trithemius busied with his class the while)  
In that dim chamber where the noon-streaks  
peer

Half frightened by the awful tones around;  
Or in some grassy lane unbosom all  
From even-blush to midnight: but, to-  
morrow!

Have I full leave to tell my inmost mind?  
We have been brothers, and henceforth the  
world

Will rise between us:—all my freest mind?  
'Tis the last night, dear Aureole!

*Paracelsus.* Oh, say on!

Devise some test of love, some arduous feat  
To be performed for you: say on! If night  
Be spent the while, the better! Recall how  
oft

My wondrous plans and dreams and hopes  
and fears

Have—never wearied you, oh no!—as I  
Recall, and never vividly as now,  
Your true affection, born when Einsiedeln  
And its green hills were all the world to us;  
And still increasing to this night which ends  
My further stay at Würzburg. Oh, one day  
You shall be very proud! Say on, dear  
friends!

*Festus.* In truth? 'Tis for my proper  
peace, indeed,

Rather than yours; for vain all projects seem  
To stay your course: I said my latest hope  
Is fading even now. A story tells  
Of some far embassy despatched to win

The favour of an eastern king, and how  
The gifts they offered proved but dazzling dust  
Shed from the ore-beds native to his clime.  
Just so, the value of repose and love,  
I meant should tempt you, better far than I  
You seem to comprehend; and yet desist  
No whit from projects where repose nor love  
Has part.

*Paracelsus.* Once more? Alas! As I  
foretold.

*Festus.* A solitary brier the bank puts forth  
To save our swan's nest floating out to sea.

*Paracelsus.* Dear Festus, hear me. What  
is it you wish?

That I should lay aside my heart's pursuit,  
Abandon the some ends for which I live,  
Reject God's great commission, and so die!  
You bid me listen for your true love's sake:  
Yet how has grown that love? Even in a long  
And patient cherishing of the self-same spirit  
It now would quell; as though a mother  
hoped

To stay the lusty manhood of the child  
Once weak upon her knees. I was not born  
Informed and fearless from the first, but  
shrank

From aught which marked me out apart from  
men:

I would have lived their life, and died their  
death,

Lost in their ranks, eluding destiny:  
But you first guided me through doubt and  
fear,

Taught me to know mankind and know  
myself;

And now that I am strong and full of hope,  
That, from my soul, I can reject all aims  
Save those your earnest words made plain to  
me,

Now that I touch the brink of my design,  
When I would have a triumph in their eyes,  
A glad cheer in their voices—Michal weeps,  
And Festus ponders gravely!

*Festus.* When you deign  
To hear my purpose . . .

*Paracelsus.* Hear it? I can say  
Beforehand all this evening's conference!  
'Tis this way, Michal, that he uses: first,

Or he declares, or I, the leading points  
Of our best scheme of life, what is man's end  
And what God's will; no two faiths e'er  
agreed

As his with mine. Next, each of us allows  
Faith should be acted on as best we may;  
Accordingly, I venture to submit  
My plan, in lack of better, for pursuing  
The path which God's will seems to authorize.  
Well, he discerns much good in it, avows  
This motive worthy, that hope plausible,  
A danger here to be avoided, there  
An oversight to be repaired: in fine  
Our two minds go together—all the good  
Approved by him, I gladly recognize,  
All he counts bad, I thankfully discard,  
And nought forbids my looking up at last  
For some stray comfort in his cautious brow.  
When, lo! I learn that, spite of all, there  
lurks

Some innate and inexplicable germ  
Of failure in my scheme; so that at last  
It all amounts to this—the sovereign proof  
That we devote ourselves to God, is seen  
In living just as though no God there were;  
A life which, prompted by the sad and blind  
Folly of man, Festus abhors the most;  
But which these tenets sanctify at once,  
Though to less subtle wits it seems the same,  
Consider it how they may.

*Michal.* Is it so, Festus?  
He speaks so calmly and kindly: is it so?

*Paracelsus.* Reject those glorious visions of  
God's love  
And man's design; laugh loud that God  
should send  
Vast longings to direct us; say how soon  
Power satiates these, or lust, or gold; I know  
The world's cry well, and how to answer it.  
But this ambiguous warfare . . .

*Festus.* . . . Wearies so  
That you will grant no last leave to your friend  
To urge it?—for his sake, not yours? I wish  
To send my soul in good hopes after you;  
Never to sorrow that uncertain words  
Erringly apprehended, a new creed  
Ill understood, begot rash trust in you,  
Had share in your undoing.

*Paracelsus.* Choose your side,  
Hold or renounce: but meanwhile blame  
me not

Because I dare to act on your own views,  
Nor shrink when they point onward, nor  
espy

A peril where they most ensure success.

*Festus.* Prove that to me—but that! Prove  
you abide

Within their warrant, nor presumptuous boast  
God's labour laid on you; prove, all you covet  
A mortal may expect; and, most of all,  
Prove the strange course you now affect, will  
lead

To its attainment—and I bid you speed,  
Nay, count the minutes till you venture forth!  
You smile; but I had gathered from slow  
thought—

Much musing on the fortunes of my friend—  
Matter I deemed could not be urged in vain;  
But it all leaves me at my need: in shreds  
And fragments I must venture what remains.

*Michal.* Ask at once, Festus, wherefore  
he should scorn . . .

*Festus.* Stay, Michal: Aureole, I speak  
guardedly

And gravely, knowing well, whate'er your  
error,

This is no ill-considered choice of yours,  
No sudden fancy of an ardent boy.

Not from your own confiding words alone  
Am I aware your passionate heart long since  
Gave birth to, nourished and at length matures  
This scheme. I will not speak of Einsiedeln,  
Where I was born your elder by some years  
Only to watch you fully from the first:  
In all beside, our mutual tasks were fixed  
Even then—'twas mine to have you in my  
view

As you had your own soul and those intents  
Which filled it when, to crown your dearest  
wish,

With a tumultuous heart, you left with me  
Our childhood's home to join the favoured few  
Whom, here, Trithemius condescends to teach  
A portion of his lore: and not one youth  
Of those so favoured, whom you now despise,  
Came earnest as you came, resolved, like you,



To grasp all, and retain all, and deserve  
 By patient toil a wide renown like his.  
 Now, this new ardour which supplants the old  
 I watched, too ; 'twas significant and strange,  
 In one matched to his soul's content at length  
 With rivals in the search for wisdom's prize,  
 To see the sudden pause, the total change ;  
 From contest, the transition to repose—  
 From pressing onward as his fellows pressed,  
 To a blank idleness, yet most unlike  
 The dull stagnation of a soul, content,  
 Once foiled, to leave betimes a thrivelless quest.  
 That careless bearing, free from all pretence  
 Even of contempt for what it ceased to seek—  
 Smiling humility, praising much, yet waiving  
 What it professed to praise—though not so  
 well

Maintained but that rare outbreaks, fierce  
 and brief,

Revealed the hidden scorn, as quickly curbed.  
 That ostentatious show of past defeat,  
 That ready acquiescence in contempt,  
 I deemed no other than the letting go  
 His shivered sword, of one about to spring  
 Upon his foe's throat ; but it was not thus :  
 Not that way looked your brooding purpose  
 then.

For after-signs disclosed, what you confirmed,  
 That you prepared to task to the uttermost  
 Your strength, in furtherance of a certain aim  
 Which while it bore the name your rivals  
 gave

Their own most puny efforts—was so vast  
 In scope that it included their best flights,  
 Combined them, and desired to gain one prize  
 In place of many,—the secret of the world,  
 Of man, and man's true purpose, path and fate.

That you, not nursing as a mere vague dream  
 This purpose, with the sages of the past,  
 Have struck upon a way to this, if all  
 You trust be true, which following, heart and  
 soul,

You, if a man may, dare aspire to know :  
 And that this aim shall differ from a host  
 Of aims alike in character and kind,  
 Mostly in this,—that in itself alone  
 Shall its reward be, not an alien end  
 Blending therewith ; no hope nor fear nor joy

Nor woe, to elsewhere move you, but this pure  
 Devotion to sustain you or betray :  
 Thus you aspire.

*Paracelsus.* You shall not state it thus :  
 I should not differ from the dreamy crew  
 You speak of. I profess no other share  
 In the selection of my lot, than this  
 My ready answer to the will of God  
 Who summons me to be his organ. All  
 Whose innate strength supports them shall  
 succeed

No better than the sages.

*Festus.* Such the aim, then,  
 God sets before you ; and 'tis doubtless need  
 That he appoint no less the way of praise  
 Than the desire to praise ; for, though I hold  
 With you, the setting forth such praise to be  
 The natural end and service of a man,  
 And hold such praise is best attained when  
 man

Attains the general welfare of his kind—  
 Yet this, the end, is not the instrument.  
 Presume not to serve God apart from such  
 Appointed channel as he wills shall gather  
 Imperfect tributes, for that sole obedience  
 Valued perchance ! He seeks not that his  
 altars

Blaze, careless how, so that they do but blaze.  
 Suppose this, then ; that God selected you  
 To know (heed well your answers, for my  
 faith

Shall meet implicitly what they affirm)  
 I cannot think you dare annex to such  
 Selection aught beyond a steadfast will,  
 An intense hope ; nor let your gifts create  
 Scorn or neglect of ordinary means  
 Conducive to success, make destiny  
 Dispense with man's endeavour. Now, dare  
 you search

Your inmost heart, and candidly avow  
 Whether you have not rather wild desire  
 For this distinction than security  
 Of its existence ? whether you discern  
 The path to the fulfilment of your purpose  
 Clear as that purpose — and again, that  
 purpose

Clear as your yearning to be singled out  
 For its pursuer. Dare you answer this ?

*Paracelsus* [after a pause]. No, I have  
 nought to fear! Who will may know  
 The secret'st workings of my soul. What  
 though  
 It be so?—if indeed the strong desire  
 Eclipse the aim in me?—if splendour break  
 Upon the outset of my path alone,  
 And duskest shade succeed? What fairer seal  
 Shall I require to my authentic mission  
 Than this fierce energy?—this instinct striving  
 Because its nature is to strive?—enticed  
 By the security of no broad course,  
 Without success forever in its eyes!  
 How know I else such glorious fate my  
 own,  
 But in the restless irresistible force  
 That works within me? Is it for human will  
 To institute such impulses?—still less,  
 To disregard their promptings! What  
 should I  
 Do, kept among you all; your loves, your  
 cares,  
 Your life —all to be mine? Be sure that God  
 Ne'er dooms to waste the strength he deigns  
 impart!  
 Ask the geier-eagle why she stoops at once  
 Into the vast and unexplored abyss,  
 What full-grown power informs her from the  
 first,  
 Why she not marvels, strenuously beating  
 The silent boundless regions of the sky!  
 Be sure they sleep not whom God needs!  
 Nor fear  
 Their holding light his charge, when every  
 hour  
 That finds that charge delayed, is a new death.  
 This for the faith in which I trust; and hence  
 I can abjure so well the idle arts  
 These pedants strive to learn and teach;  
 Black Arts,  
 Great Works, the Secret and Sublime, for-  
 sooth—  
 Let others prize : too intimate a tie  
 Connects me with our God! A sullen fiend  
 To do my bidding, fallen and hateful sprites  
 To help me—what are these, at best, beside  
 God helping, God directing everywhere,  
 So that the earth shall yield her secrets up,  
 And every object there be charged to strike,  
 Teach, gratify her master God appoints?  
 And I am young, my Festus, happy and free!  
 I can devote myself; I have a life  
 To give; I, singled out for this, the One!  
 Think, think! the wide East, where all  
 Wisdom sprung;  
 The bright South, where she dwelt; the  
 hopeful North,  
 All are passed o'er—it lights on me! 'Tis  
 time  
 New hopes should animate the world, new  
 light  
 Should dawn from new revealings to a race  
 Weighed down so long, forgotten so long;  
 thus shall  
 The heaven reserved for us at last receive  
 Creatures whom no unwonted splendours  
 blind,  
 But ardent to confront the unclouded blaze  
 Whose beams not seldom blessed their pil-  
 grimage,  
 Not seldom glorified their life below.  
*Fistus.* My words have their old fate and  
 make faint stand  
 Against your glowing periods. Call this,  
 truth—  
 Why not pursue it in a fast retreat,  
 Some one of Learning's many palaces,  
 After approved example?—seeking there  
 Calm converse with the great dead, soul to  
 soul,  
 Who laid up treasure with the like intent  
 —So lift yourself into their airy place,  
 And fill out full their unfulfilled careers,  
 Unravelling the knots their baffled skill  
 Pronounced inextricable, true!—but left  
 Far less confused. A fresh eye, a fresh hand,  
 Might do much at their vigour's waning-  
 point;  
 Succeeding with new-breathed new-hearted  
 force,  
 As at old games the runner snatched the torch  
 From runner still : this way success might be.  
 But you have coupled with your enterprise,  
 An arbitrary self-repugnant scheme  
 Of seeking it in strange and untried paths.  
 What books are in the desert? Writes the sea

The secret of her yearning in vast caves  
Where yours will fall the first of human feet ?  
Has wisdom sat there and recorded aught  
You press to read ? Why turn aside from her  
To visit, where her vesture never glanced,  
Now—solitudes consigned to barrenness  
By God's decree, which who shall dare  
impugn ?

Now—ruins where she paused but would not  
stay,

Old ravaged cities that, renouncing her,  
She called an endless curse on, so it came :  
Or worst of all, now—men you visit, men,  
Ignobler troops who never heard her voice  
Or hate it, men without one gift from Rome  
Or Athens,—these shall Aureole's teachers be !  
Rejecting past example, practice, precept,  
Andless 'mid these he thinks to stand alone :  
Thick like a glory round the Stagirite  
Your rivals throng, the sages : here stand you !  
Whatever you may protest, knowledge is not  
Paramount in your love ; or for her sake  
You would collect all help from every source—  
Rival, assistant, friend, foe, all would merge  
In the broad class of those who showed her  
haunts,

And those who showed them not.

*Paracelsus.*

What shall I say ?

Festus, from childhood I have been possessed  
By a fire—by a true fire, or faint or fierce,  
As from without some master, so it seemed,  
Repressed or urged its current : this but ill  
Expresses what would I convey : but rather  
I will believe an angel ruled me thus,  
Than that my soul's own workings, own high  
nature,

So became manifest. I knew not then  
What whispered in the evening, and spoke out  
At midnight. If some mortal, born too soon,  
Were laid away in some great trance—the  
ages

Coming and going all the while—till dawned  
His true time's advent ; and could then record  
The words they spoke who kept watch by  
his bed,—

Then I might tell more of the breath so light  
Upon my eyelids, and the fingers light  
Among my hair. Youth is confused ; yet never

So dull was I but, when that spirit passed,  
I turned to him, scarce consciously, as turns  
A water-snake when fairies cross his sleep.  
And having this within me and about me  
While Einsiedeln, its mountains, lakes and  
woods

Confined me—what oppressive joy was mine  
When life grew plain, and I first viewed the  
thronged,

The everlasting concourse of mankind !  
Believe that ere I joined them, ere I knew  
The purpose of the pageant, or the place  
Consigned me in its ranks—while, just awake,  
Wonder was freshest and delight most pure—  
'Twas then that least supportable appeared  
A station with the brightest of the crowd,  
A portion with the proudest of them all.  
And from the tumult in my breast, this only  
Could I collect, that I must thenceforth die  
Or elevate myself far, far above  
The gorgeous spectacle. I seemed to long  
At once to trample on, yet save mankind,  
To make some unexampled sacrifice  
In their behalf, to wring some wondrous good  
From heaven or earth for them, to perish,  
winning

Eternal weal in the act : as who should dare  
Pluck out the angry thunder from its cloud,  
That, all its gathered flame discharged on  
him,  
No storm might threaten summer's azure  
sleep :

Yet never to be mixed with men so much  
As to have part even in my own work, share  
In my own largess. Once the feat achieved,  
I would withdraw from their officious praise,  
Would gently put aside their profuse thanks.  
Like some knight traversing a wilderness,  
Who, on his way, may chance to free a tribe  
Of desert-people from their dragon-foe ;  
When all the swarthy race press round to kiss  
His feet, and choose him for their king, and  
yield

Their poor tents, pitched among the sand-  
hills, for

His realm : and he points, smiling, to his  
scarf

Heavy with riveled gold, his burgonet

Gay set with twinkling stones—and to the East,

Where these must be displayed !

*Festus.* Good : let us hear

No more about your nature, “which first shrank

“From all that marked you out apart from men !”

*Paracelsus.* I touch on that ; these words but analyse

The first mad impulse : ’twas as brief as fond,  
For as I gazed again upon the show,  
I soon distinguished here and there a shape  
Palm-wreathed and radiant, forehead and full eye.

Well pleased was I their state should thus at once

Interpret my own thoughts :—“Behold the clue

“To all,” I rashly said, “and what I pine

“To do, these have accomplished : we are peers.

“They know and therefore rule : I, too, will know !”

You were beside me, *Festus*, as you say ;  
You saw me plunge in their pursuits whom fame

Is lavish to attest the lords of mind,  
Not pausing to make sure the prize in view  
Would satiate my cravings when obtained,  
But since they strove I strove. Then came a slow

And strangling failure. We aspired alike,  
Yet not the meanest plodder, *Trithem* counts  
A marvel, but was all-sufficient, strong,  
Or staggered only at his own vast wits ;  
While I was restless, nothing satisfied,  
Distrustful, most perplexed. I would slur over  
That struggle ; suffice it, that I loathed myself  
As weak compared with them, yet felt somehow

A mighty power was brooding, taking shape  
Within me ; and this lasted till one night  
When, as I sat revolving it and more,  
A still voice from without said—“Seest thou not,

“Desponding child, whence spring defeat and loss ?

“Even from thy strength. Consider : hast thou gazed

“Presumptuously on wisdom’s countenance.

“No veil between ; and can thy faltering hands,

“Unguided by the brain the sight absorbs,

“Pursue their task as earnest blinkers do

“Whom radiance ne’er distracted ? Live their life

“If thou wouldst share their fortune, choose their eyes

“Unfed by splendour. Let each task present

“Its petty good to thee. Waste not thy gifts

“In profitless waiting for the gods’ descent,

“But have some idol of thine own to dress

“With their array. Know, not for knowing’s sake,

“But to become a star to men for ever ;

“Know, for the gain it gets, the praise it brings,

“The wonder it inspires, the love it breeds :

“Look one step onward, and secure that step !”

And I smiled as one never smiles but once,  
Then first discovering my own aim’s extent,  
Which sought to comprehend the works of God,

And God himself, and all God’s intercourse  
With the human mind ; I understood, no less,  
My fellows’ studies, whose true worth I saw,  
But smiled not, well aware who stood by me.  
And softer came the voice—“There is a way :

“’Tis hard for flesh to tread therein, imbued

“With frailty—hopeless, if indulgence first

“Have ripened inborn germs of sin to strength :

“Wilt thou adventure for my sake and man’s,

“Apart from all reward ?” And last it breathed—

“Be happy, my good soldier ; I am by thee.

“Be sure, even to the end !”—I answered not,

Knowing him. As he spoke, I was endued  
With comprehension and a steadfast will ;  
And when he ceased, my brow was sealed his own.

If there took place no special change in me,  
How comes it all things wore a different hue

Thenceforward?—pregnant with vast consequence,

Teeming with grand result, loaded with fate?  
So that when, quailing at the mighty range  
Of secret truths which yearn for birth, I haste  
To contemplate undazzled some one truth,  
Its hearings and effects alone—at once  
What was a speck expands into a star,  
Asking a life to pass exploring thus,  
Till I near craze. I go to prove my soul!  
I see my way as birds their trackless way.  
I shall arrive! what time, what circuit first,  
I ask not: but unless God send his hail  
Or blinding fireballs, sleet or stifling snow,  
In some time, his good time, I shall arrive:  
He guides me and the bird. In his good time!

*Michal.* Vex him no further, Festus; it is so!

*Festus.* Just thus you help me ever. This would hold

Were it the trackless air, and not a path  
Inviting you, distinct with footprints yet  
Of many a mighty marcher gone that way.  
You may have purer views than theirs, perhaps,

But they were famous in their day—the proofs  
Remain. At least accept the light they lend.

*Paracelsus.* Their light! the sum of all is briefly this:

They laboured and grew famous, and the fruits  
Are best seen in a dark and groaning earth  
Given over to a blind and endless strife  
With evils, what of all their lore abates?  
No; I reject and spurn them utterly  
And all they teach. Shall I still sit beside  
Their dry wells, with a white lip and filmed eye,  
While in the distance heaven is blue above  
Mountains where sleep the unsunned tarns?

*Festus.* And yet As strong delusions have prevailed ere now.  
Men have set out as gallantly to seek  
Their ruin. I have heard of such; yourself  
Avow all hitherto have failed and fallen.

*Michal.* Nay, Festus, when but as the pilgrims faint  
Through the drear way, do you expect to see  
Their city dawn amid the clouds afar?

*Paracelsus.* Ay, sounds it not like some old well-known tale?

For me, I estimate their works and them  
So rightly, that at times I almost dream  
I too have spent a life the sages' way,  
And tread once more familiar paths. Perchance

I perished in an arrogant self-reliance  
Ages ago; and in that act, a prayer  
For one more chance went up so earnest, so  
Instinct with better light let in by death,  
That life was blotted out—not so completely  
But scattered wrecks enough of it remain,  
Dim memories, as now, when once more seems

The goal in sight again. Ah which, indeed,  
Is foolish, and only means—the flesh I wear,

The earth I tread, are not more clear to me  
Than my belief, explained to you or no.

*Festus.* And who am I, to challenge and dispute

That clear belief? I will divest all fear.

*Michal.* Then Aureole is God's commissary! he shall

Be great and grand—and all for us!

*Paracelsus.* No, sweet! Not great and grand. If I can serve mankind  
'Tis well; but there our intercourse must end:  
I never will be served by those I serve.

*Festus.* Look well to this; here is a plague-spot, here,  
Disguise it how you may! 'Tis true, you utter

This scorn while by our side and loving us:  
'Tis but a spot as yet: but it will break  
Into a hideous blotch if overlooked.

How can that course be safe which from the first

Produces carelessness to human love?  
It seems you have abjured the helps which men

Who overpass their kind, as you would do,  
I have humbly sought; I dare not thoroughly probe

This matter, lest I learn too much. Let be  
That popular praise would little instigate  
Your efforts, nor particular approval

Reward you ; put reward aside ; alone  
 You shall go forth upon your arduous task,  
 None shall assist you, none partake your toil,  
 None share your triumph : still you must retain  
 Some one to cast your glory on, to share  
 Your rapture with. Were I elect like you,  
 I would encircle me with love, and raise  
 A rampart of my fellows ; it should seem  
 Impossible for me to fail, so watched  
 By gentle friends who made my cause their  
 own.

They should ward off fate's envy—the great  
 gift,

Extravagant when claimed by me alone,  
 Being so a gift to them as well as me.  
 If danger daunted me or ease seduced,  
 How calmly their sad eyes should gaze re-  
 proach !

*Michal.* O Aureole, can I sing when all  
 alone,

Without first calling, in my fancy, both  
 To listen by my side—even I ! And you ?  
 Do you not feel this ? Say that you feel this !

*Paracelsus.* I feel 'tis pleasant that my  
 aims, at length

Allowed their weight, should be supposed to  
 need

A further strengthening in these goodly helps !  
 My course allures for its own sake, its sole  
 Intrinsic worth ; and ne'er shall boat of mine  
 Adventure forth for gold and apes at once.  
 Your sages say, "if human, therefore weak :"

If weak, more need to give myself entire  
 To my pursuit ; and by its side, all else . . .  
 No matter ! I deny myself but little  
 In waiving all assistance save its own.

Would there were some real sacrifice to  
 make !

Your friends the sages threw their joys away,  
 While I must be content with keeping mine.

*Festus.* But do not cut yourself from human  
 weal !

You cannot thrive—a man that dares affect  
 To spend his life in service to his kind  
 For no reward of theirs, unbound to them  
 By any tie ; nor do so, Aureole ! No—  
 There are strange punishments for such. Give  
 up

VOL. I.

(Although no visible good flow thence) some  
 part

Of the glory to another ; hiding thus,  
 Even from yourself, that all is for yourself.  
 Say, say almost to God—"I have done all  
 "For her, not for myself !"

*Paracelsus.* And who but lately

Was to rejoice in my success like you ?

Whom should I love but both of you ?

*Festus.*

I know not :

But know this, you, that 'tis no will of mine  
 You should abjure the lofty claims you make ;  
 And this the cause—I can no longer seek  
 To overlook the truth, that there would be  
 A monstrous spectacle upon the earth,  
 Beneath the pleasant sun, among the trees :  
 —A being knowing not what love is. Hear  
 me !

You are endowed with faculties which bear  
 Annexed to them as 'twere a dispensation  
 To summon meaner spirits to do their will  
 And gather round them at their need ; in-  
 spiring

Such with a love themselves can never feel,  
 Passionless 'mid their passionate votaries.

I know not if you joy in this or no,  
 Or ever dream that common men can live  
 On objects you prize lightly, but which make  
 Their heart's sole treasure : the affections  
 seem

Beauteous at most to you, which we must  
 taste

Or die : and this strange quality accords,  
 I know not how, with you ; sits well upon  
 That luminous brow, though in another it  
 scowls

An eating brand, a shame. I dare not  
 judge you.

The rules of right and wrong thus set aside,  
 There's no alternative—I own you one  
 Of higher order, under other laws  
 Than bind us ; therefore, curb not one bold  
 glance !

'Tis best aspire. Once mingled with us  
 all . . .

*Michal.* Stay with us, Aureole ! cast those  
 hopes away,  
 And stay with us ! An angel warns me, too,

Man should be humble : you are very proud : Even as he knows not how those beams are  
 And God, dethroned, has doleful plagues born,  
 for such ! As little knows he what unlocks their fount :  
 Warns me to have in dread no quick And men have oft grown old among their  
 repulse, books  
 No slow defeat, but a complete success : To die case-hardened in their ignorance,  
 You will find all you seek, and perish so ! Whose careless youth had promised what  
*Paracelsus [after a pause].* Are these the long years  
 barren firstfruits of my quest ? Of unremitted labour ne'er performed :  
 I, love like this the natural lot of all ? While, contrary, it has chanced some idle  
 How many years of pain might one such hour day,  
 O'erbalance ? Dearest Michal, dearest To autumn loiterers just as fancy-free  
 Festus, As the midges in the sun, gives birth at last  
 What shall I say, if not that I desire To truth—produced mysteriously as cape  
 To justify your love ; and will, dear friends, Of cloud grown out of the invisible air.  
 In swerving nothing from my first resolves. Hence, may not truth be lodged alike in all,  
 See, the great moon ! and ere the mottled owls The lowest as the highest ? some slight film  
 Were wide awake, I was to go. It seems The interposing bar which binds a soul  
 You acquiesce at last in all save this — And makes the idiot, just as makes the sage  
 If I am like to compass what I seek Some film removed, the happy outlet whence  
 By the untried career I choose ; and then, Truth issues proudly ? See this soul of ours !  
 If that career, making but small account How it strives weakly in the child, is loosed  
 Of much of life's delight, will yet retain In manhood, clogged by sickness, back  
 Sufficient to sustain my soul : for thus compelled  
 I understand these fond fears just expressed. By age and waste, set free at last by death :  
 And first ; the lore you praise and I neglect, Why is it, flesh enthral's it or enthrones ?  
 The labours and the precepts of old time, What is this flesh we have to penetrate ?  
 I have not lightly disesteemed. But, friends, Oh, not alone when life flows still, do truth  
 Truth is within ourselves ; it takes no rise And power emerge, but also when strange  
 From outward things, whate'er you may chance  
 believe, Ruffles its current ; in unused conjuncture,  
 There is an inmost centre in us all, When sickness breaks the body—hungry,  
 Where truth abides in fulness ; and around, watching,  
 Wall upon wall, the gross flesh hems it in, Excess or languor—oftenest death's approach,  
 This perfect, clear perception—which is truth. Evil, deep joy or woe. One man shall crawl  
 A baffling and perverting carnal mesh Through life surrounded with all stirring  
 Binds it, and makes all error : and to know things,  
 Rather consists in opening out a way Unmoved ; and he goes mad : and from the  
 Whence the imprisoned splendour may wreck  
 escape, Of what he was, by his wild talk alone,  
 Than in effecting entry for a light You first collect how great a spirit he hid.  
 Supposed to be without. Watch narrowly Therefore, set free the soul alike in all,  
 The demonstration of a truth, its birth, Discovering the true laws by which the flesh  
 And you trace back the effluence to its spring Accloys the spirit ! We may not be doomed  
 And source within us ; where broods To cope with seraphs, but at least the rest  
 radiance vast, Shall cope with us. Make no more giants,  
 To be elicited ray by ray, as chance God,  
 Shall favour : chance—for hitherto, your sage But elevate the race at once ! We ask

To put forth just our strength, our human strength,

All starting fairly, all equipped alike,  
Gifted alike, all eagle-eyed, true-hearted—  
See if we cannot beat thine angels yet !

Such is my task. I go to gather this  
The sacred knowledge, here and there dispersed

About the world, long lost or never found.

And why should I be sad or lorn of hope ?

Why ever make man's good distinct from  
God's,

Or, finding they are one, why dare mistrust ?

Who shall succeed if not one pledged like me ?

Mine is no mad attempt to build a world

Apart from his, like those who set themselves

To find the nature of the spirit they bore,

And, taught betimes that all their gorgeous  
dreams

Were only born to vanish in this life,

Refused to fit them to its narrow sphere,

But chose to figure forth another world

And other frames meet for their vast desires,—

And all a dream ! Thus was life scorned ;  
but life

Shall yet be crowned : twine amaranth ! I  
am priest !

And all for yielding with a lively spirit

A poor existence, parting with a youth

Like those who squander every energy

Convertible to good, on painted toys,

Breath-bubbles, gilded dust ! And though  
I spurn

All adventitious aims, from empty praise

To love's award, yet whoso deems such  
helps

Important, and concerns himself for me,

May know even these will follow with the  
rest—

As in the steady rolling Mayne, asleep

Yonder, is mixed its mass of schistous ore.

My own affections laid to rest awhile,

Will waken purified, subdued alone

By all I have achieved. Till then—till  
then . . .

Ah, the time-wiling loitering of a page

Through bower and over lawn, till eve shall  
bring

The stately lady's presence whom he loves—  
The broken sleep of the fisher whose rough  
coat

Enwraps the qucenly pearl—these are faint  
types !

See, see, they look on me : I triumph  
now !

But one thing, Festus, Michal ! I have told

All I shall e'er disclose to mortal : say—

Do you believe I shall accomplish this ?

*Festus.* I do believe !

*Michal.*

I ever did believe !

*Paracelsus.* Those words shall never fade  
from out my brain !

This earnest of the end shall never fade !

Are there not, Festus, are there not, dear  
Michal,

Two points in the adventure of the diver,

One—when, a beggar, he prepares to plunge,

One—when, a prince, he rises with his  
pearl ?

*Festus, I plunge !*

*Festus.* We wait you when you rise !

## II.—PARACELSUS ATTAINS.

SCENE.—*Constantinople ; the house of a  
Greek Conjuror. 1521.*

PARACELSUS.

Over the waters in the vaporous West

The sun goes down as in a sphere of gold

Behind the arm of the city, which between,

With all that length of domes and minarets,

Athwart the splendour, black and crooked  
runs

Like a Turk verse along a scimitar.

There lie, sullen memorial, and no more

Possess my aching sight ! 'Tis done at last.

Strange—and the juggles of a sallow cheat

I have won me to this act ! 'Tis as you cloud

Should voyage unwrecked o'er many a  
mountain-top

And break upon a molehill. I have dared

Come to a pause with knowledge ; scan for once

The heights already reached, without regard

To the extent above ; fairly compute



All I have clearly gained; for once excluding  
A brilliant future to supply and perfect  
All half-gains and conjectures and crude  
hopes:

And all because a fortune-teller wills  
His credulous seekers should inscribe thus  
much

Their previous life's attainment, in his roll,  
Before his promised secret, as he vaunts,  
Make up the sum: and here amid the scrawled  
Uncouth recordings of the dupes of this  
Old arch-genethliac,<sup>1</sup> lie my life's results!

A few blurred characters suffice to note  
A stranger wandered long through many lands  
And reaped the fruit he coveted in a few  
Discoveries, as appended here and there,  
The fragmentary produce of much toil,  
In a dim heap, fact and surmise together  
Confusedly massed as when acquired; he was  
Intent on gain to come too much to stay  
And scrutinise the little gained: the whole  
Slipt in the blank space 'twixt an idiot's  
gibber

And a mad lover's ditty—there it lies.

And yet those blottings chronicle a life—  
A whole life, and my life! Nothing to do,  
No problem for the fancy, but a life  
Spent and decided, wasted past retrieve  
Or worthy beyond poet. Stay, what does  
this

Remembrancer set down concerning "life"?  
"Time fleets, youth fades, life is an empty  
dream,"

"It is the echo of time; and he whose heart  
Beat first beneath a human heart, whose  
speech

"Was copied from a human tongue, can  
never

"Recall when he was living yet knew not this.  
"Nevertheless long seasons pass o'er him

"Till some one hour's experience shows what  
nothing,

"It seemed, could clearer show; and ever  
after,

"An altered brow and eye and gait and  
speech

"Attest that now he knows the adage true,  
"Time fleets, youth fades, life is an empty  
dream."

Ay, my brave chronicler, and this same hour  
As well as any: now, let my time be!

Now! I can go no farther; well or ill,  
'Tis done. I must desist and take my chance.  
I cannot keep on the stretch: 'tis no back-  
shrinking—

For let but some assurance beam, some close  
To my toil grow visible, and I proceed  
At any price, though closing it, I die.  
Else, here I pause. The old Greek's prophecy  
Is like to turn out true: "I shall not quit  
"His chamber till I know what I desire!"  
Was it the light wind sang it o'er the sea?

An end, a rest! strange how the notion, once  
Encountered, gathers strength by moments!  
Rest!

Where has it kept so long? this throbbing  
brow

To cease, this beating heart to cease, all cruel  
And gnawing thoughts to cease! To dare  
let down

My strung, so high-strung brain, to dare un-  
nerve

My harassed o'ertasked frame, to know my  
place,

My portion, my reward, even my failure,  
Assigned, made sure for ever! To lose my-  
self

Among the common creatures of the world,  
To draw some gain from having been a man,  
Neither to hope nor fear, to live at length!  
Even in failure, rest! But rest in truth

And power and recompense . . . I hoped  
that once!

What, sunk insensibly so deep? Has all  
Been undergone for this? This the request  
My labour qualified me to present  
With no fear of refusal? Had I gone  
Slightly through my task, and so judged fit

<sup>1</sup> Birthday-book maker, γενεθλιακόν.

## PARACELSUS

To moderate my hopes ; nay, were it now  
My sole concern to exculpate myself,  
End things or mend them,—why, I could not  
choose

A humbler mood to wait for the event !  
No, no, there needs not this ; no, after all,  
At worst I have performed my share of the  
task :

The rest is God's concern ; mine, merely this,  
To know that I have obstinately held  
By my own work. The mortal whose brave  
foot

Has trod, unscathed, the temple-court so far  
That he descries at length the shrine of  
shrines,

Must let no sneering of the demons' eyes,  
Whom he could pass unquailing, fasten now  
Upon him, fairly past their power ; no, no—  
He must not stagger, faint, fall down at last,  
Having a charm to baffle them ; behold,  
He bares his front : a mortal ventures thus  
Serene amid the echoes, beams and glooms !  
If he be priest henceforth, if he wake up  
The god of the place to ban and blast him  
there,

Both well ! What's failure or success to me ?  
I have subdued my life to the one purpose  
Whereto I ordained it ; there alone I spy,  
No doubt, that way I may be satisfied.

Ves, well have I subdued my life ! beyond  
The obligation of my strictest vow,  
The contemplation of my wildest bond,  
Which gave my nature freely up, in truth,  
But in its actual state, consenting fully  
All passionate impulses its soil was formed  
To rear, should wither ; but foreseeing not  
The tract, doomed to perpetual barrenness,  
Would seem one day, remembered as it was,  
Beside the parched sand-waste which now  
it is,

Already strewn with faint blooms, viewless  
then.

I ne'er engaged to root up loves so frail  
I felt them not ; yet now, 'tis very plain  
Some soft spots had their birth in me at first,  
If not love, say, like love : there was a time  
When yet this wolfish hunger after knowledge

Set not remorselessly love's claims aside.  
This heart was human once, or why recall  
Einsiedeln, now, and Würzburg which the  
Mayne

Forsakes her course to fold as with an arm ?

And Festus—my poor Festus, with his praise  
And counsel and grave fears—where is he now  
With the sweet maiden, long ago his bride ?  
I surely loved them—that last night, at least,  
When we . . . gone ! gone ! the better. I  
am saved

The sad review of an ambitious youth  
Choked by vile lusts, unnoticed in their birth,  
But let grow up and wind around a will  
Till action was destroyed. No, I have gone  
Purging my path successively of aught  
Wearing the distant likeness of such lusts.  
I have made life consist of one idea :  
Ere that was master, up till that was born,  
I bear a memory of a pleasant life  
Whose small events I treasure ; till one morn  
I ran o'er the seven little grassy fields,  
Startling the flocks of nameless birds, to tell  
Poor Festus, leaping all the while for joy,  
To leave all trouble for my future plans,  
Since I had just determined to become  
The greatest and most glorious man on earth.  
And since that morn all life has been for-  
gotten :

All is one day, one only step between  
The outset and the end : one tyrant all-  
Absorbing aim fills up the interspace,  
One vast unbroken chain of thought, kept up  
Through a career apparently adverse  
To its existence : life, death, light and  
shadow,

The shows of the world, were bare receptacles  
Or indices of truth to be wrung thence,  
Not ministers of sorrow or delight :  
A wondrous natural robe in which she went.  
For some one truth would dimly beacon me  
From mountains rough with pines, and flit  
and wink

O'er dazzling wastes of frozen snow, and  
tremble  
Into assured light in some branching mine  
Where ripens, swathed in fire, the liquid gold—

And all the beauty, all the wonder fell  
On either side the truth, as its mere robe ;  
I see the robe now — then I saw the form.  
So far, then, I have voyaged with success,  
So much is good, then, in this working sea  
Which parts me from that happy strip of  
land :

But o'er that happy strip a sun shone, too !  
And fainter gleams it as the waves grow  
rough,

And still more faint as the sea widens ; last  
I sicken on a dead gulf streaked with light  
From its own putrefying depths alone.

Then, God was pledged to take me by the  
hand ;

Now, any miserable juggle can bid  
My pride depart. All is alike at length :

God may take pleasure in confounding pride  
By hiding secrets with the scorned and base—  
I am here, in short : so little have I paired  
Throughout ! I never glanced behind to  
know

If I had kept my primal light from wane,  
And thus insensibly am—what I am !

Oh, bitter ; very bitter !

And more bit

To fear a deeper curse, an inner ruin,  
Plague beneath plague, the last turning the  
first

To light beside its darkness. Let me rep  
My youth and its brave hopes, all dead and  
gone,

In tears which burn ! Would I were sure to  
win

Some startling secret in their stead, a tincture  
Of force to flush old age with youth, or breed  
Gold, or imprison moonbeams till they  
change

To opal shafts !—only that, hurling it  
Indignant back, I might convince myself  
My aims remained supreme and pure as ever !  
Even now, why not desire, for mankind's  
sake,

That if I fail, some fault may be the cause,  
That, though I sink, another may succeed ?  
O God, the despicable heart of us !  
Shut out this hideous mockery from my heart !

'Twas politic in you, Aureole, to reject  
Single rewards, and ask them in the lump ;  
At all events, once launched, to hold straight  
on :

For now 'tis all or nothing. Mighty profit  
Your gains will bring if they stop short of such  
Full consummation ! As a man, you had  
A certain share of strength ; and that is gone  
Already in the getting these you boast.  
Do not they seem to laugh, as who should  
say—

"Great master, we are here indeed, dragged  
forth

"To light ; this hast thou done : be glad !  
Now, seek

"The strength to use which thou hast spent  
in getting !"

And yet 'tis much, surely 'tis very much,  
Thus to have emptied youth of all its gifts,  
To feed a fire meant to hold out till morn  
Arrived with inexhaustible light ; and lo,  
I have heaped up my last, and day dawns  
not !

And I am left with grey hair, faded hands,  
And furrowed brow. Ha, have I, after all  
Mistaken the wild nursing of my breast ?  
Knowledge it seemed, and power, and re  
compense !

Was she who glided through my room of  
nights,

Who laid my head on her soft knees and  
smoothed

The damp locks,—whose sly soothings just  
began

When my sick spirit craved repose awhile—  
God ! was I fighting sleep off for death's  
sake ?

God ! Thou art mind ! Unto the master-  
mind

Mind should be precious. Spare my mind  
alone !

All else I will endure ; if, as I stand  
Here, with my gains, thy thunder smite me  
down,

I bow me ; 'tis thy will, thy righteous will ;  
I o'erpass life's restrictions, and I die ;

And if no trace of my career remain  
 Save a thin corpse at pleasure of the wind  
 In these bright chambers level with the air,  
 See thou to it ! But if my spirit fail,  
 My once proud spirit forsake me at the last,  
 Hast thou done well by me ? So do not thou  
 Crush not my mind, dear God, though I be  
 crushed !

Hold me before the frequency of thy scrapings  
 And say—"I crushed him, lest he should  
 disturb

"My law. Men must not know their  
 strength : behold

"Weak and alone, how he had raised himself !"

But if delusions trouble me, and thou,  
 Not seldom felt with rapture in thy help  
 Throughout my toils and wanderings, dost  
 intend

To work man's welfare through my weak  
 endeavour,

To crown my mortal forehead with a beam  
 From thine own blinding crown, to smile,  
 and guide

This puny hand and let the work so wrought  
 Be styled my work,—hear me ! I covet not  
 An influx of new power, an angel's soul :

It were no marvel then—but I have reached  
 Thus far, a man ; let me conclude, a man !  
 Give but one hour of my first energy,  
 Of that invincible faith, but only one !

That I may cover with an eagle-glance  
 The truths I have, and spy some certain way  
 To mould them, and completing them,  
 possess !

Yet God is good : I started sure of that,  
 And why dispute it now ? I'll not believe  
 But some undoubted warning long ere this  
 Had reached me : a fire-labrum<sup>1</sup> was not  
 deemed

Too much for the old founder of these walls.  
 Then, if my life has not been natural,  
 It has been monstrous : yet, till late, my course  
 So ardently engrossed me, that delight,  
 A pausing and reflecting joy, 'tis plain,

<sup>1</sup> The sacred standard used by Constantine  
 after his conversion.

Could find no place in it. True, I am worn ;  
 But who clothes summer, who is life itself ?  
 God, that created all things, can renew !  
 And then, though after-life to please me now  
 Must have no likeness to the past, what hinders  
 Reward from springing out of toil, as changed  
 As bursts the flower from earth and root and  
 stalk ?

What use were punishment, unless some sin  
 Be first detected ? let me know that first !

No man could ever offend as I have done . . .

[*A voice from within.*]

I hear a voice, perchance I heard  
 Long ago, but all too low,  
 So that scarce a care it stirred  
 If the voice were real or no :  
 I heard it in my youth when first  
 The waters of my life outburst :  
 But, now their stream ebbs faint, I  
 hear

That voice, still low, but fatal-clear—  
 As if all poets, God ever meant  
 Should save the world, and therefore lent  
 Great gifts to, but who, proud, refused  
 To do his work, or lightly used  
 Those gifts, or failed through weak en-  
 deavour,

So, mourn cast off by him for ever,—  
 As if these leaned in airy ring  
 To take me ; this the song they sing.

"Lost, lost ! yet come,  
 With our wan troop make thy home.  
 Come, come ! for we  
 Will not breathe, so much as breathe  
 Reproach to thee,  
 Knowing what thou sink'st beneath.  
 So sank we in those old years,  
 We who bid thee, come ! thou last  
 Who, living yet, hast life o'erpast.  
 And altogether we, thy peers,  
 Will pardon crave for thee, the last  
 Whose trial is done, whose lot is cast  
 With those who watch but work no more,  
 Who gaze on life but live no more.  
 Yet we trusted thou shouldst speak  
 The message which our lips, too weak,

Refused to utter,—shouldst redeem  
 Our fault : such trust, and all a dream !  
 Yet we chose thee a birthplace  
 Where the richness ran to flowers :  
 Couldst not sing one song for grace ?  
 Not make one blossom man's and ours ?  
 Must one more recreant to his race  
 Die with unexerted powers,  
 And join us, leaving as he found  
 The world, he was to loosen, bound ?  
 Anguish ! ever and for ever ;  
 Still beginning, ending never.  
 Yet, lost and last one, come !  
 How couldst understand, alas,  
 What our pale ghosts strove to say,  
 As their shades did glance and pass  
 Before thee night and day ?  
 Thou wast blind as we were dumb :  
 Once more, therefore, come, O come !  
 How should we clothe, how arm the spirit  
 Shall next thy post of life inherit—  
 How guard him from thy speedy ruin ?  
 Tell us of thy sad undoing  
 Here, where we sit, ever pursuing  
 Our weary task, ever renewing  
 Sharp sorrow, far from God who gave  
 Our powers, and man they could not  
 save !"

*APRILE enters.*

Ha, ha ! our king that wouldst be, here at  
 last ?  
 Art thou the poet who shall save the  
 world ?  
 Thy hand to mine ! Stay, fix thine eyes on  
 mine !  
 Thou wouldst be king ? Still fix thine eyes  
 on mine !

*Paracelsus.* Ha, ha ! why crouchest not ?  
 Am I not king ?

So torture is not wholly unavailing !  
 Have my fierce spasms compelled thee from  
 thy lair ?  
 Art thou the sage I only seemed to be,  
 Myself of after-time, my very self  
 With sight a little clearer, strength more firm,  
 Who robes him in my robe and grasps my

For just a fault, a weakness, a neglect ?  
 I scarcely trusted God with the surmise  
 That such might come, and thou didst hear  
 the while !

*Aprile.* Thine eyes are lustreless to mine ;  
 my hair

Is soft, nay silken soft : to talk with thee  
 Flushes my cheek, and thou art ashy-pale.  
 Truly, thou hast laboured, hast withstood  
 her lips,

The siren's ! Yes, 'tis like thou hast attained !  
 Tell me, dear master, wherefore now thou  
 comest ?

I thought thy solemn songs would have their  
 meed

In after-time ; that I should hear the earth  
 Exult in thee and echo with thy praise,  
 While I was laid forgotten in my grave.

*Paracelsus.* Ah fiend, I know thee, I am  
 not thy dupe !

Thou art ordained to follow in my track,  
 Reaping my sowing, as I scorned to reap  
 The harvest sown by sages passed away.  
 Thou art the sober searcher, cautious striver,  
 As if, except through me, thou hast searched  
 or striven !

Ay, tell the world ! Degrade me after all,  
 To an aspirant after fame, not truth—  
 To all but envy of thy fate, be sure !

*Aprile.* Nay, sing them to me ; I shall  
 envy not :

Thou shalt be king ! Sing thou, and I will sit  
 Beside, and call deep silence for thy songs,  
 And worship thee, as I had ne'er been meant  
 To fill thy throne : but none shall ever know !  
 Sing to me ; for already thy wild eyes  
 Unlock my heart-strings, as some crystal-shaft  
 Reveals by some chance blaze its parent fount  
 After long time : so thou reveal'st my soul.

All will flash forth at last, with thee to hear !  
*Paracelsus.* (His secret ! I shall get his  
 secret—fool !)

I am he that aspired to KNOW : and thou ?

*Aprile.* I would LOVE infinitely, and be  
 loved !

*Paracelsus.* Poor slave ! I am thy king  
 indeed.

*Aprile.*

Thou deem'st

That—born a spirit, dowered even as thou,  
 Born for thy fate—because I could not curb  
 My yearnings to possess at once the full  
 Enjoyment, but neglected all the means  
 Of realizing even the frailest joy,  
 Gathering no fragments to appease my want,  
 Yet nursing up that want till thus I die—  
 Thou deem'st I cannot trace thy safe sure  
 march

O'er perils that o'erwhelm me, triumphing,  
 Neglecting nought below for aught above,  
 Despising nothing and ensuring all—  
 Nor that I could (my time to come again)  
 Lead thus my spirit securely as thine own.  
 Listen, and thou shalt see I know thee well.  
 I would love infinitely . . . Ah, lost ! lost !

Oh ye who armed me at such cost,  
 How shall I look on all of ye  
 With your gifts even yet on me ?

*Paracelsus.* (Ah, 'tis some moonstruck  
 creature after all !

Such fond fools as are like to haunt this den :  
 They spread contagion, doubtless : yet he  
 seemed

To echo one foreboding of my heart  
 So truly, that . . . no matter ! How he  
 stands

With eve's last sunbeam staying on his hair  
 Which turns to it as if they were akin :  
 And those clear smiling eyes of saddest blue  
 Nearly set free, so far they rise above  
 The painful fruitless striving of the brow  
 And enforced knowledge of the lips, firm-set  
 In slow despondency's eternal sigh !  
 Has he, too, missed life's end, and learned  
 the cause ?)

I charge thee, by thy fealty, be calm !  
 Tell me what thou wouldst be, and what I am.

*Aprile.* I would love infinitely, and be  
 loved.

First : I would carve in stone, or cast in brass,  
 The forms of earth. No ancient hunter lifted  
 Up to the gods by his renown, no nymph  
 Supposed the sweet soul of a woodland tree  
 Or sapphirine spirit of a twilight star,  
 Should be too hard for me ; no shepherd-king  
 Regal for his white locks ; no youth who stands  
 Silent and very calm amid the throng,

His right hand ever hid beneath his robe  
 Until the tyrant pass ; no lawgiver,  
 No swan-soft woman rubbed with lucid oils  
 Given by a god for love of her—too hard !  
 Every passion sprung from man, conceived  
 by man,

Would I express and clothe it in its right  
 form,

Or blend with others struggling in one form,  
 Or show repressed by an ungainly form.

Oh, if you marvelled at some mighty spirit  
 With a fit frame to execute its will—  
 Even unconsciously to work its will—  
 You should be moved no less beside some  
 strong

Rare spirit, fettered to a stubborn body,  
 Endeavouring to subdue it and inform it  
 With its own splendour ! All this I would do :  
 And I would say, this done, " His sprites  
 created,

" God grants to each a sphere to be its world,  
 " Appointed with the various objects needed  
 " To satisfy its own peculiar want ;  
 " So, I create a world for these my shapes  
 " Fit to sustain their beauty and their  
 strength."

And, at the word, I would contrive and paint  
 Woods, valleys, rocks and plains, dells,  
 sands and wastes,

Lakes which, when morn breaks on their  
 quivering bed,

Blaze like a wyvern<sup>1</sup> flying round the sun,  
 And ocean isles so small, the dog-fish tracking  
 A dead whale, who should find them, would  
 swim thrice

Around them, and fare onward—all to hold  
 The offspring of my brain. Nor these alone :  
 Bronze labyrinth, palace, pyramid and crypt,  
 Baths, galleries, courts, temples and terraces,  
 Marts, theatres and wharfs—all filled with  
 men,

Men everywhere ! And this performed in  
 turn,

When those who looked on, pined to hear  
 the hopes

And fears and hates and loves which moved  
 the crowd,

<sup>1</sup> Dragon.

I would throw down the pencil as the chisel, And we shall fade, and leave our task undone.  
And I would speak; no thought which ever We will be wise in time: what though our  
stirred work

A human breast should be untold; all Be fashioned in despite of their ill-service,  
passions, Be crippled every way? 'Twere little praise

All soft emotions, from the turbulent stir Did full resources wait on our goodwill  
Within a heart fed with desires like mine, At every turn. Let all be as it is.

To the last comfort shutting the tired lids Some say the earth is even so contrived  
Of him who sleeps the sultry noon away That tree and flower, a vesture gay, conceal  
Beneath the tent-tree by the wayside well: A bare and skeleton framework. Had we  
And this in language as the need should be, means

Now poured at once forth in a burning flow, Answering to our mind! But now I seem  
Now piled up in a grand array of words. Wrecked on a savage isle: how rear thereon  
This done, to perfect and consummate all, My palace? Branching palms the props  
Even as a luminous haze links star to star, shall be,

I would supply all chasms with music, Fruit glossy mingling; gems are for the East;  
breathing Who heeds them? I can pass them. Ser-  
Mysterious motions of the soul, no way pent's scales,

To be defined save in strange melodies, And painted birds down, furs and fishes' skins  
Fast, having thus revealed all I could love, Must help me; and a little here and there

Flaying received all love bestowed on it, Is all I can aspire to: still my art  
I would die: preserving so throughout my Shall show its birth was in a gentler clime.

course "I had I green jars of malachite, this way  
God full on me, as I was full on men: "I'd range them: where those sea-shells

He would approve my prayer, "I have gone glisten above,

through "Cressets<sup>1</sup> should hang, by right: this way  
"The loveliness of life: create for me we set

"If not for men, or take me to thyself, "The purple carpets, as these mats are laid,

"Eternal, infinite love!" "Woven of fern and rush and blossoming flag."

If thou hast ne'er Or if, by fortune, some completer grace  
Conceived this mighty aim, this full desire, Be spared to me, some fragment, some slight  
Thou hast not passed my trial, and thou art sample

No king of mine. Of the prouder workmanship my own home  
boasts,

*Paracelsus.* Ah me! Some trifle little heeded there, but here

*Aprile.* But thou art here! The place's one perfection—with what joy

Thou didst not gaze like me upon that end Would I enshrine the relic, cheerfully

Till thine own powers for compassing the bliss Foregoing all the marvels out of reach!

Were blind with glory; nor grow mad to grasp Could I retain one strain of all the palm

At once the prize long patient toil should Of the angels, one word of the fiat of God,  
claim, To let my followers know what such things  
are!

Nor spurn all granted short of that. And I I would adventure nobly for their sakes:

Would do as thou, a second time: nay, When nights were still, and still the moaning  
listen! sea,

Knowing ourselves, our world, our task so And far away I could descry the land  
great,

Our time so brief, 'tis clear if we refuse

The means so limited, the tools so rude

To execute our purpose, life will fleet,

<sup>1</sup> Lanterns.

Whence I departed, whither I return,  
I would dispart the waves, and stand once more  
At home, and load my bark, and hasten back,  
And fling my gains to them, worthless or true.  
"Friends," I would say, "I went far, far  
for them,

"Past the high rocks the haunt of doves, the  
mounds

"Of red earth from whose sides strange trees  
grow out,

"Past tracks of milk-white minute blinding  
sand,

"Till, by a mighty moon, I tremblingly

"Gathered these magic herbs, berry and bud,

"In haste, not pausing to reject the weeds,

"But happy plucking them at any price.

"To me, who have seen them bloom in their  
own soil,

"They are scarce lovely: plait and wear  
them, you!

"And guess, from what they are, the springs  
that fed them,

"The stars that sparkled o'er them, night by  
night,

"The snakes that travelled far to sip their  
dew!"

Thus for my higher loves; and thus even  
weakness

Would win me honour. But not these alone  
Should claim my care; for common life, its  
wants

And ways, would I set forth in beauteous lines:

The lowest hind should not possess a hope,

A fear, but I'd be by him, saying better

Than he his own heart's language. I would  
live

For ever in the thoughts I thus explored,

As a discoverer's memory is attached

To all he finds; they should be mine hence-  
forth.

Imbued with me, though free to all before:

For clay, once cast into my soul's rich mine,

Should come up crusted o'er with gems. Nor  
this

Would need a meaner spirit, than the first;

Nay, 'twould be but the selfsame spirit,

♦ clothed

In humbler guise, but still the selfsame spirit:

As one spring wind unbinds the mountain snow  
And comforts violets in their hermitage.

But, master, poet, who hast done all this,  
How didst thou 'scape the ruin whelming me?

Didst thou, when nerving thee to this attempt,  
Ne'er range thy mind's extent, as some wide  
hall,

Dazzled by shapes that filled its length with  
light,

Shapes clustered there to rule thee, not obey,  
That will not wait thy summons, will not rise

Singly, nor when thy practised eye and hand

Can well transfer their loveliness, but crowd

By thee for ever, bright to thy despair?

Didst thou ne'er gaze on each by turns, and  
ne'er

Resolve to single out one, though the rest

Should vanish, and to give that one, entire

In beauty, to the world; forgetting, so,

Its peers, whose number baffles mortal power?

And, this determined, wast thou ne'er seduced

By memories and regrets and passionate love  
To glance once more farewell? and did their

eyes  
Fasten thee, brighter and more bright, until

Thou couldst but stagger back unto their feet,  
And laugh that man's applause or welfare ever

Could tempt thee to forsake them? Or when  
years

Had passed and still their love possessed thee  
wholly,

When from without some murmur startled  
thee

Of darkling mortals famished for one ray

Of thy so-hoarded luxury of light,

Didst thou ne'er strive even yet to break those  
spells

And prove thou couldst recover and fulfil

Thy early mission, long ago renounced,

And to that end, select some shape once more?

And did not mist-like influences, thick films,

Faint memories of the rest that charmed so long

Thine eyes, float fast, confuse thee, bear thee  
off,

As whirling snow-drifts blind a man who treads

A mountain ridge, with guiding spear,  
through storm?



Say, though I fell, I had excuse to fall ;  
 Say, I was tempted sorely : say but this,  
 Dear lord, Aprile's lord !

*Paracelsus.* Clasp me not thus,  
 Aprile ! That the truth should reach me thus !  
 We are weak dust. Nay, clasp not or I faint !

*Aprile.* My king ! and envious thoughts  
 could outrage thee ?

Lo, I forget my ruin, and rejoice  
 In thy success, as thou ! Let our God's praise  
 Go bravely through the world at last ! What  
 care

Through me or thee ? I feel thy breath.  
 Why, tears ?

Tears in the darkness, and from thee to me ?  
*Paracelsus.* Love me henceforth, Aprile,  
 while I learn

To love ; and, merciful God, forgive us both !  
 We wake at length from weary dreams ; but  
 both

I have slept in fairy-land : though dark and drear  
 Appears the world before us, we no less  
 Wake with our wrists and ankles jewelled still.  
 I too have sought to KNOW as thou to LOVE—  
 Excluding love as thou refusedst knowledge.  
 Still thou hast beauty and I, power. We  
 wake :

What penance canst devise for both of us ?

*Aprile.* I hear thee faintly. The thick  
 darkness ! Even

Thine eyes are hid. 'Tis as I knew : I speak,  
 And now I die. But I have seen thy face !  
 O poet, think of me, and sing of me !

But to have seen thee and to die so soon !

*Paracelsus.* Die not, Aprile ! We must  
 never part.

Are we not halves of one dissevered world,  
 Whom this strange chance unites once more ?  
 Part ? never !

Till thou the lover, know ; and I, the knower,  
 Love—until both are saved. Aprile, hear !  
 We will accept our gains, and use them—  
 now !

God, he will die upon my breast ! Aprile !

*Aprile.* To speak but once, and die ! yet  
 by his side.

Hush ! hush !

Ha ! go you ever girl about

With phantoms, powers ? I have created such,  
 But these seem real as I.

*Paracelsus.* Whom can you see  
 Through the accursed darkness ?

*Aprile.* Stay ; I know,  
 I know them : who should know them well  
 as I ?

White brows, lit up with glory ; poets all !

*Paracelsus.* Let him but live, and I have  
 my reward !

*Aprile.* Yes ; I see now. God is the  
 perfect poet,

Who in his person acts his own creations.

Had you but told me this at first ! Hush !  
 hush !

*Paracelsus.* Live ! for my sake, because of  
 my great sin,

To help my brain, oppressed by these wild  
 words

And their deep import. Live ! 'tis not too  
 late.

I have a quiet home for us, and friends.

Michal shall smile on you. Hear you ?  
 Lean thus,

And breathe my breath. I shall not lose  
 one word

Of all your speech, one little word, Aprile !

*Aprile.* No, no. Crown me ? I am not  
 one of you !

'Tis he, the king, you seek. I am not one.

*Paracelsus.* Thy spirit, at least, Aprile !  
 Let me love !

I have attained, and now I may depart.

### III.—PARACELSUS.

SCENE.—*Basil ; a chamber in the house of*  
 PARACELSUS. 1526.

PARACELSUS, FESTUS.

*Paracelsus.* Heap logs and let the blaze  
 laugh out !

*Festus.* True, true !

'Tis very fit all, time and chance and change  
 Have wrought since last we sat thus, face to  
 face

And soul to soul—all cares, far-looking fears,  
Vague apprehensions, all vain fancies bred  
By your long absence, should be cast away,  
Forgotten in this glad un hoped renewal  
Of our affections.

*Paracelsus.* Oh, omit not aught  
Which witnesses your own and Michal's own  
Affection: spare not that! Only forget  
The honours and the glories and what not,  
It pleases you to tell profusely out.

*Festus.* Nay, even your honours, in a sense,  
I waive:

The wondrous Paracelsus, life's dispenser,  
Fate's commissary, idol of the schools  
And courts, shall be no more than Aureole  
still,

Still Aureole and my friend as when we parted  
Some twenty years ago, and I restrained  
As best I could the promptings of my spirit  
Which secretly advanced you, from the first,  
To the pre-eminent rank which, since, your  
own

Adventurous ardour, nobly triumphing,  
Has won for you.

*Paracelsus.* Yes, yes. And Michal's  
face

Still wears that quiet and peculiar light  
Like the dim circlet floating round a pearl?

*Festus.* Just so.

*Paracelsus.* And yet her calm sweet  
countenance,  
Though saintly, was not sad; for she would  
sing

Alone. Does she still sing alone, bird-like,  
Not dreaming you are near? Her carols dropt  
In flakes through that old leafy bower built  
under

The sunny wall at Würzburg, from her lattice  
Among the trees above, while I, unseen,  
Sat conning some rare scroll from Tritheim's  
shelves

Much wondering notes so simple could divert  
My mind from study. Those were happy days.  
Respect all such as sing when all alone!

*Festus.* Scarcely alone: her children, you  
may guess,  
Are wild beside her.

*Paracelsus.* Ah, those children quite

Unsettle the pure picture in my mind:  
A girl, she was so perfect, so distinct:  
No change, no change! Not but this added  
grace

May blend and harmonize with its compeers,  
And Michal may become her motherhood;  
But 'tis a change, and I detest all change,  
And most a change in aught I loved long  
since.

So, Michal—you have said she thinks of me?

*Festus.* O very proud will Michal be of you!  
Imagine how we sat, long winter-nights,  
Scheming and wondering, shaping your pre-  
sumed

Adventure, or devising its reward;  
Shutting out fear with all the strength of hope.  
For it was strange how, even when most  
secure

In our domestic peace, a certain dim  
And fitting shade could sadden all; it seemed  
A restlessness of heart, a silent yearning,  
A sense of something wanting, incomplete—  
Not to be put in words, perhaps avoided  
By mute consent—but, said or unsaid, felt  
To point to one so loved and so long lost.  
And then the hopes rose and shut out the  
fears—

How you would laugh should I recount them  
now!

I still predicted your return at last  
With gifts beyond the greatest of them all,  
All Tritheim's wondrous troop; did one of  
which

Attain renown by any chance, I smiled,  
As well aware of who would prove his peer.  
Michal was sure some woman, long ere this,  
As beautiful as you were sage, had loved . . .

*Paracelsus.* Far-seeing, truly, to discern  
so much

In the fantastic projects and day-dreams  
Of a raw restless boy!

*Festus.* Oh, no: the sunrise  
Well warranted our faith in this full noon!  
Can I forget the anxious voice which said  
"Festus, have thoughts like these ere shaped  
themselves

"In other brains than mine? have their  
possessors

"Existed in like circumstance? were they weak

"As I, or ever constant from the first,

"Despising youth's allurements and rejecting

"As spider-films the shackles I endure?

"Is there hope for me?"—and I answered  
gravely

As an acknowledged elder, calmer, wiser,

More gifted mortal. O you must remember,

For all your glorious . . .

*Paracelsus.* Glorious? ay, this hair,

These hands—nay, touch them, they are  
mine! Recall

With all the said recallings, times when thus

To lay them by your own ne'er turned you  
pale

As now. Most glorious, are they not?

*Festus.* Why—why—

Something must be subtracted from success

So wide, no doubt. He would be scrupulous,  
truly,

Who should object such drawbacks. Still,  
still, Aureole,

You are changed, very changed! 'Twere  
losing nothing

To look well to it: you must not be stolen

From the enjoyment of your well-won meed.

*Paracelsus.* My friend! you seek my  
pleasure, past a doubt:

You will best gain your point, by talking, not  
Of me, but of yourself.

*Festus.* Have I not said

All touching Michal and my children? Sure:

You know, by this, full well how Aennchen  
looks

Gravely, while one disparts her thick brown  
hair;

And Aureole's glee when some stray gannet  
builds

Amid the hith-trees by the lake. Small hope

Have I that he will honour (the wild imp)

His namesake. Sigh not! 'tis too much to ask

That all we love should reach the same  
proud fate.

But you are very kind to humour me

By showing interest in my quiet life;

You, who of old could never tame yourself

To tranquil pleasures, must at heart de-  
spise . . .

*Paracelsus.* Festus, strange secrets are let  
out by death

Who blabs so oft the follies of this world:

And I am death's familiar, as you know.

I helped a man to die, some few weeks since,

Warped even from his go-cart to one end—

The living on princes' smiles, reflected from

A mighty herd of favourites. No mean trick

He left untried, and truly well-nigh wormed

All traces of God's finger out of him:

Then died, grown old. And just an hour  
before,

Having lain long with blank and soulless eyes,

He sat up suddenly, and with natural voice

Said that in spite of thick air and closed doors

God told him it was June; and he knew well,

Without such telling, harebells grew in June;

And all that kings could ever give or take

Would not be precious as those blooms to him.

Just so, allowing I am passing sage,

It seems to me much worthier argument

Why pansies,<sup>1</sup> eyes that laugh, bear beauty's  
prize

From violets, eyes that dream—(your  
Michal's choice)—

Than all fools find to wonder at in me

Or in my fortunes. And be very sure

I say this from no prurient restlessness,

No self-complacency, itching to turn,

Vary and view its pleasure from all points,

And, in this instance, willing other men

May be at pains, demonstrate to itself

The realness of the very joy it tastes.

What should delight me like the news of  
friends

Whose memories were a solace to me oft,

As mountain-baths to wild fowls in their

flight?

Other than you had wasted thought on me

Had you been wise, and rightly valued bliss.

But there's no taming nor repressing hearts:

God knows I need such!—So, you heard me  
speak?

*Festus.* Speak? when?

*Paracelsus.* When but this morning at  
my class?

<sup>1</sup> Citrinula (flamula) herba Paracelso mu-  
tum familiaris.—DORN.

There was noise and crowd enough. I saw  
you not.

Surely you know I am engaged to fill  
The chair here?—that 'tis part of my proud  
fate

To lecture to as many thick-skulled youths  
As please, each day, to throng the theatre,  
To my great reputation, and no small  
Danger of Basil's benches long unused  
To crack beneath such honour?

*Festus.* I was there ;  
I mingled with the throng : shall I avow  
Small care was mine to listen?—too intent  
On gathering from the murmurs of the crowd  
A full corroboration of my hopes !

What can I learn about your powers? but  
they

Know, care for nought beyond your actual  
state,

Your actual value ; yet they worship you,  
Those various natures whom you sway as one !  
But ere I go, be sure I shall attend . . .

*Paracelsus.* Stop, o' God's name: the  
thing's by no means yet

Past remedy ! Shall I read this morning's  
labour

—At least in substance? Nought so worth  
the gaining

As an apt scholar ! Thus then, with all due  
Precision and emphasis—you, beside, are  
clearly

Guiltless of understanding more, a whit,  
The subject than your stool—allowed to be  
A notable advantage.

*Festus.* Surely, Aureole,  
You laugh at me !

*Paracelsus.* I laugh? Ha, ha ! thank  
heaven,

I charge you, if 't be so ! for I forget  
Much, and what laughter should be like.

No less,  
However, I forego that luxury  
Since it alarms the friend who brings it back.  
True, laughter like my own must echo  
strangely

To thinking men ; a smile were better far ;  
So, make me smile ! If the exulting look  
You wore but now be smiling, 'tis so long

Since I have smiled ! Alas, such smiles are  
born

Alone of hearts like yours, or herdsmen's  
souls

Of ancient time, whose eyes, calm as their  
flocks,

Saw in the stars mere garnishry of heaven,  
And in the earth a stage for altars only.

Never change, Festus : I say, never change !

*Festus.* My God, if he be wretched after  
all !

*Paracelsus.* When last we parted, Festus,  
you declared,

—Or Michal, yes, her soft lips whispered  
words

I have preserved. She told me she believed  
I should succeed (meaning, that in the search  
I then engaged in, I should meet success)

And yet be wretched : now, she augured false.

*Festus.* Thank heaven ! but you spoke  
strangely : could I venture

To think bare apprehension lest your friend,  
Dazzled by your resplendent course, might  
find

Henceforth less sweetness in his own, could  
move

Such earnest mood in you? Fear not, dear  
friend,

That I shall leave you, inwardly repining  
Your lot was not my own !

*Paracelsus.* And this for ever !  
For ever ! gull who may, they will be gulled !  
They will not look nor think ; 'tis nothing  
new

In them : but surely he is not of them !  
My Festus, do you know, I reckoned, you—  
Though all beside were sand-blind—you, my  
friend,

Would look at me, once close, with piercing  
eye

Untroubled by the false glare that confounds  
A weaker vision : would remain serene,  
Though singular amid a gaping throng.

I feared you, or I had come, sure, long ere  
this,

To Einsiedeln. Well, error has no end,  
And Rhasis is a sage, and Basil boasts  
A tribe of wits, and I am wise and blest

Past all dispute ! 'Tis vain to fret at it.  
 I have vowed long ago my worshippers  
 Shall owe to their own deep sagacity  
 All further information, good or bad.  
 Small risk indeed my reputation runs,  
 Unless perchance the glance now searching  
 me

Be fixed much longer ; for it seems to spell  
 Dimly the characters a simpler man  
 Might read distinct enough. Old Eastern  
 books

Say, the fallen prince of morning some short  
 space

Remained unchanged in semblance ; nay, his  
 brow

Was hued with triumph : every spirit then  
 Praising, *his* heart on flame the while :—a  
 tale !

Well, Festus, what discover you, I pray ?

*Festus.* Some foul deed sullies then a life  
 which else

Were raised supreme ?

*Paracelsus.* Good : I do well, most well !

Why strive to make men hear, feel, fret  
 themselves

With what is past their power to comprehend ?  
 I should not strive now : only, having nursed  
 The faint surmise that one yet walked the  
 earth,

One, at least, not the utter fool of show,  
 Not absolutely formed to be the dupe  
 Of shallow plausibilities alone :

One who, in youth, found wise enough to  
 choose

The happiness his riper years approve,  
 Was yet so anxious for another's sake,  
 That, ere his friend could rush upon a mad  
 And ruinous course, the converse of his own,  
 His gentle spirit essayed, prejudged for him  
 The perilous path, foresaw its destiny,  
 And warned the weak one in such tender  
 words,

Such accents—his whole heart in every  
 tone—

That oft their memory comforted that friend  
 When it by right should have increased  
 despair :

—Having believed, I say, that this one man

Could never lose the light thus from the first  
 His portion—how should I refuse to grieve  
 At even my gain if it disturb our old  
 Relation, if it make me out more wise ?  
 Therefore, once more reminding him how  
 well

He prophesied, I note the single flaw  
 That spoils his prophet's title. In plain  
 words,

You were deceived, and thus were you de-  
 ceived—

I have not been successful, and yet am  
 Most miserable ; 'tis said at last ; nor you  
 Give credit, lest you force me to concede  
 That common sense yet lives upon the world !

*Festus.* You surely do not mean to banter  
 me ?

*Paracelsus.* You know, or—if you have  
 been wise enough

To cleanse your memory of such matters—  
 knew,

As far as words of mine could make it clear,  
 That 'twas my purpose to find joy or grief  
 Solely in the fulfilment of my plan  
 Or plot or whatso'er it was ; rejoicing  
 Alone as it proceeded prosperously,  
 Sorrowing then only when mischance re-  
 tardated

Its progress. That was in those Würzburg  
 days !

Not to prolong a theme I thoroughly hate,  
 I have pursued this plan with all my strength ;  
 And having failed therein most signally,  
 Cannot object to ruin utter and drear  
 As all-excelling would have been the prize  
 Had fortune favoured me. I scarce have right  
 To vex your frank good spirit late so glad  
 In my supposed prosperity, I know,  
 And, were I lucky in a glut of friends,  
 Would well agree to let your error live,  
 Nay, strengthen it with fables of success.  
 But mine is no condition to refuse

The transient solace of so rare a godsend,  
 My solitary luxury, my one friend :

Accordingly I venture to put off  
 The wearisome vest of falsehood galling me,  
 Secure when he is by. I lay me bare,  
 Prone at his mercy—but he is my friend !

Not that he needs retain his aspect grave ;  
That answers not my purpose ; for 'tis like,  
Some sunny morning—Basil being drained  
Of its wise population, every corner  
Of the amphitheatre crammed with learned  
clerks,

Here Cœlompadius, looking worlds of wit,  
Here Castellanus, as profound as he,  
Munsterus here, Frobenius there, all squeezed  
And staring,—that the zany of the show,  
Even Paracelsus, shall put off before them  
His trappings with a grace but seldom judged  
Expedient in such cases :—the grim smile  
That will go round ! Is it not therefore best  
To venture a rehearsal like the present  
In a small way ? Where are the signs I seek,  
The first-fruits and fair sample of the scorn  
Due to all quacks ? Why, this will never  
do !

*Festus.* These are foul vapours, Aureole ;  
nought beside !

The effect of watching, study, weariness.  
Were there a spark of truth in the confusion  
Of these wild words, you would not outrage  
thus

Your youth's companion. I shall ne'er regard  
These wanderings, bred of faintness and much  
study.

'Tis not thus you would trust a trouble to me,  
To Michal's friend.

*Paracelsus.* I have said it, dearest  
*Festus !*

For the manner, 'tis ungracious probably ;  
You may have it told in broken sobs, one day,  
And scalding tears, ere long : but I thought  
best

To keep that off as long as possible.  
Do you wonder still ?

*Festus.* No ; it must oft fall out  
That one whose labour perfects any work,  
Shall rise from it with eye so worn that he  
Of all men least can measure the extent  
Of what he has accomplished. He alone  
Who, nothing tasked, is nothing weary too,  
May clearly scan the little he effects :  
But we, the bystanders, untouched by toil,  
Estimate each aright.

*Paracelsus.* This worthy *Festus*

Is one of them, at last ! 'Tis so with all !  
First, they set down all progress as a dream ;  
And next, when he whose quick discomfiture  
Was counted on, accomplishes some few  
And doubtful steps in his career,—behold,  
They look for every inch of ground to vanish  
Beneath his tread, so sure they spy success !  
*Festus.* Few doubtful steps ? when death  
retires before

Your presence—when the noblest of man-  
kind,

Broken in body or subdued in soul,  
May through your skill renew their vigour,  
raise

The shattered frame to pristine stateliness ?  
When men in racking pain may purchase  
dreams

Of what delights them most, swooning at  
once

Into a sea of bliss or rapt along  
As in a flying sphere of turbulent light ?  
When we may look to you as one ordained  
To free the flesh from fell disease, as frees  
Our Luther's burning tongue the fettered  
soul ?

When . . .

*Paracelsus.* When and where, the devil,  
did you get

This notable news ?

*Festus.* Even from the common voice ;  
From those whose envy, daring not dispute  
The wonders it decries, attributes them  
To magic and such folly.

*Paracelsus.* Folly ? Why not  
To magic, pray ? You find a comfort doubt-  
less

In holding, God ne'er troubles him about  
Us or our doings : once we were judged worth  
The devil's tempting . . . I offend : forgive  
me,

And rest content. Your prophecy on the  
whole

Was fair enough as prophesying goes ;  
At fault a little in detail, but quite  
Precise enough in the main ; and hereupon  
I pay due homage : you guessed long ago  
(The prophet !) I should fail—and I have  
failed.

*Festus.* You mean to tell me, then, the hopes which fed  
Your youth have not been realized as yet  
Some obstacle has barred them hitherto?  
Or that their innate . . .

*Paracelsus.* As I said but now,  
You have a very decent prophet's fame,  
So you but shun details here. Little matter  
Whether those hopes were mad,—the aims  
they sought,  
Safe and secure from all ambitious fools;  
Or whether my weak wits are overcome  
By what a better spirit would scorn: I fail.  
And now methinks 'twere best to change a  
theme

I am a sad fool to have stumbled on.  
I say confusedly what comes uppermost;  
But there are times when patience proves at  
fault,  
As now: this morning's strange encounter—  
you

Beside me once again! you, whom I guessed  
Alive, since hitherto (with Luther's leave)  
No friend have I among the saints at peace,  
To judge by any good their prayers' effect.  
I knew you would have helped me—why not  
he,

My strange competitor in enterprise,  
Bound for the same end by another path,  
Arrived, or ill or well, before the time,  
At our disastrous journey's doubtful close?  
How goes it with April? Ah, they miss  
Your lone sad sunny idleness of heaven,  
Our martyrs for the world's sake; heaven  
shuts fast:

The poor mad poet is howling by this time!  
Since you are my sole friend then, here or  
there,

I could not quite repress the varied feelings  
This meeting wakens; they have had their vent,  
And now forget them. Do the rear-mice still  
Hang like a fretwork on the gate (or what  
In my time was a gate) fronting the road  
From Einsiedeln to Lachen?

*Festus.* Trifle not:  
Answer me, for my sake alone! You smiled  
Just now, when I supposed some deed, un-  
worthy

Yourselves, might blot the else so bright result;  
Yet if your motives have continued pure,  
Your will unfaltering, and in spite of this,  
You have experienced a defeat, why then  
I say not you would cheerfully withdraw  
From contest—mortal hearts are not so  
fashioned—

But surely you would ne'ertheless withdraw.  
You sought not fame nor gain nor even love,  
No end distinct from knowledge,—I repeat  
Your very words: once satisfied that know-  
ledge

Is a mere dream, you would announce as  
much,

Yourselves the first. But how is the event?  
You are defeated—and I find you here!

*Paracelsus.* As though "here" did not  
signify defeat!

I spoke not of my little labours here,  
But of the break-down of my general aims:  
For you, aware of their extent and scope,  
To look on these sage lecturings, approved  
By beardless boys, and bearded dotards worse,  
As a fit consummation of such aims,  
Is worthy notice. A professorship  
At Basil! Since you see so much in it,  
And think my life was reasonably drained  
Of life's delights: to render me a match  
For duties arduous as such post demands,—  
Be it far from me to deny my power  
To fill the petty circle lotted out  
Of infinite space, or justify the host  
Of honours thence accruing. So, take notice,  
This jewel dangling from my neck preserves  
The features of a prince, my skill restored  
To plague his people some few years to come:  
And all through a pure whim. He had eased  
the earth

For me, but that the droll despair which seized  
The vermin of his household, tickled me.  
I came to see. Here, driven the physician,  
Whose most infallible nostrum was at fault;  
There quaked the astrologer, whose horoscope  
Had promised him interminable years;  
Here a monk fumbled at the sick man's mouth  
With some undoubted relic—a sudary<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Napkin.

Of the Virgin ; while another piebald knave  
Of the same brotherhood (he loved them ever)  
Was actively preparing 'neath his nose  
Such a suffumigation as, once fired,  
Had stunk the patient dead ere he could groan.  
I cursed the doctor and upset the brother,  
Brushed past the conjurer, vowed that the  
first gust

Of stench from the ingredients just alight  
Would raise a cross-grained devil in my sword,  
Not easily laid : and ere an hour the prince  
Slept as he never slept since prince he was.  
A day—and I was posting for my life,  
Placarded through the town as one whose spite  
Had near availed to stop the blessed effects  
Of the doctor's nostrum which, well seconded  
By the sudary, and most by the costly smoke  
Not leaving out the strenuous prayers sent up  
Hard by in the abbey—raised the prince to  
life :

To the great reputation of the seer  
Who, confident, expected all along  
The glad event—the doctor's recompense—  
Much largess from his highness to the monks—  
And the vast solace of his loving people,  
Whose general satisfaction to increase,  
The prince was pleased no longer to defer  
The burning of some dozen heretics  
Remanded till God's mercy should be shown  
Touching his sickness : last of all were joined  
Ample directions to all loyal folk  
To swell the complement by seizing me  
Who—doubtless some rank sorcerer—en-  
deavoured

To thwart these pious offices, obstruct  
The prince's cure, and frustrate heaven by help  
Of certain devils dwelling in his sword.  
By luck, the prince in his first fit of thanks  
Had forced this hauble on me as an earnest  
Of further favours. This one case may serve  
To give sufficient taste of many such,  
So, let them pass. Those shelves support a  
pile

Of patents, licences, diplomas, titles  
From Germany, France, Spain, and Italy ;  
They authorize some honour ; ne'ertheless,  
I set more store by this Erasmus sent ;  
He trusts me ; our Frobenius is his friend,

And him "I raised" (nay, read it) "from  
the dead."

I weary you, I see. I merely sought  
To show, there's no great wonder after all  
That, while I fill the class-room and attract  
A crowd to Basil, I get leave to stay,  
And therefore need not scruple to accept  
The utmost they can offer, if I please :  
For 'tis but right the world should be prepared  
To treat with favour c'en fantastic wants  
Of one like me, used up in serving her.  
Just as the mortal, whom the gods in part  
Devoured, received in place of his lost limb  
Some virtue or other—cured disease, I think ;  
You mind the fables we have read together.

*Festus.* You do not think I comprehend a  
word.

The time was, Aureole, you were apt enough  
To clothe the airiest thoughts in specious  
breath ;

But surely you must feel how vague and strange  
These speeches sound.

*Paracelsus.* Well, then : you know my  
hopes ;

I am assured, at length, those hopes were vain ;  
That truth is just as far from me as ever ;  
That I have thrown my life away ; that sorrow  
On that account is idle, and further effort  
To mend and patch what's marred beyond  
repairing,

As useless : and all this was taught your friend  
By the convincing good old-fashioned method  
Of force—by sheer compulsion. Is that plain?

*Festus.* Dear Aureole, can it be my fears  
were just ?

God will not . . .

*Paracelsus.* Now, 'tis this I most  
admire—

The constant talk men of your stamp keep up  
Of God's will, as they style it ; one would swear  
Man had but merely to uplift his eye,  
And see the will in question characterized  
On the heaven's vault. 'Tis hardly wise to  
moot

Such topics : doubts are many and faith is weak.  
I know as much of any will of God  
As knows some dumb and tortured brute  
what Man,



It is stern lord, wills from the perplexing bows 'Tis well : and your reward, or soon or late,  
That plague him every way ; but there, of Will come from him whom no man serves in  
course, vain.

Where least he suffers, longest he remains—  
My case ; and for such reasons I plod on,  
Subdued but not convinced. I know as little  
Why I deserve to fail, as why I hoped  
Better things in my youth. I simply know  
I am no master here, but trained and beaten  
Into the path I tread ; and here I stay,  
Until some further intimation reach me,  
Like an obedient drudge. Though I prefer  
To view the whole thing as a task imposed  
Which, whether dull or pleasant, must be  
done —

Yet, I deny not, there is made provision  
Of joys which tastes less jaded might affect ;  
Nay, some which please me too, for all my  
pride—

Pleasures that once were pains : the iron ring  
Festering about a slave's neck grows at length  
Into the flesh it cuts. I hate no longer  
A host of petty vile delights, undreamed of  
Or spurned before ; such now supply the place  
Of my dead aims : as in the autumn woods  
Where tall trees used to flourish, from their  
roots

Springs up a fungous brood sickly and pale,  
Chill mushrooms coloured like a corpse's  
cheek.

*Festus.* If I interpret well your words, I  
own

It troubles me but little that your aims,  
Vast in their dawning and most likely grown  
Extravagantly since, have baffled you.  
Perchance I am glad ; you merit greater  
praise ;

Because they are too glorious to be gained,  
You do not blindly cling to them and die ;  
You fell, but have not sullenly refused  
To rise, because an angel worsted you  
In wrestling, though the world holds not  
your peer,

And though too harsh and sudden is the  
change

To yield content as yet, still you pursue  
The ungracious path as though 'twere rosy-  
strewn.

*Paracelsus.* Ah, very fine ! For my part,  
I conceive

The very pausing from all further toil,  
Which you find heinous, would become a seal  
To the sincerity of all my deeds.

To be consistent I should die at once ;

I calculated on no after-life ;

Yet (how crept in, how fostered, I know not)

Here am I with as passionate regret

For youth and health and love so vainly  
lavished,

As if their preservation had been first

And foremost in my thoughts ; and this  
strange fact

Humbled me wondrously, and had due force  
In rendering me the less averse to follow

A certain counsel, a mysterious warning—

You will not understand—but 'twas a man

With aims not mine and yet pursued likemine,

With the same fervour and no more success,

Perishing in my sight ; who summoned me

As I would shun the ghastly fate I saw,

To serve my race at once ; to wait no longer

That God should interfere in my behalf,

But to distrust myself, put pride away,

And give my gains, imperfect as they were,

To men. I have not leisure to explain

How, since, a singular series of events

Has raised me to the station you behold,

Wherein I seem to turn to most account

The mere wreck of the past,—perhaps receive

Some feeble glimmering token that God views

And may approve my penance : therefore here

You find me, doing most good or least harm.

And if folks wonder much and profit little

'Tis not my fault ; only, I shall rejoice

When my part in the farce is shuffled through,

And the curtain falls : I must hold out till then.

*Festus.* Till when, dear Aureole ?

*Paracelsus.*

Till I'm fairly thrust

From my proud eminence. Fortune is fickle

And even professors fall : should that arrive,

I see no sin in ceding to my bent.

You little fancy what rude shocks apprise us

We sin ; God's intimations rather fail

In clearness than in energy : 'twere well  
Did they but indicate the course to take  
Like that to be forsaken. I would fain  
Be spared a further sample. Here I stand,  
And here I stay, be sure, till forced to flit.

*Festus.* Be you but firm on that head !  
long ere then

All I expect will come to pass, I trust :  
The cloud that wraps you will have disappeared.

Meantime, I see small chance of such event :  
They praise you here as one whose lore,  
already

Divulged, eclipses all the past can show,  
But whose achievements, marvellous as they  
be,

Are faint anticipations of a glory  
About to be revealed. When Basil's crowds  
Dismiss their teacher, I shall be content  
That he depart.

*Paracelsus.* This favour at their hands  
I look for earlier than your view of things  
Would warrant. Of the crowd you saw to-  
day,

Remove the full half sheer amazement draws,  
Mere novelty, nought else ; and next, the tribe  
Whose innate blockish dulness just perceives  
That unless miracles (as seem my works)  
Be wrought in their behalf, their chance is  
slight

To puzzle the devil ; next, the numerous set  
Who bitterly hate established schools, and help  
The teacher that oppugns them, till he once  
Have planted his own doctrine, when the  
teacher

May reckon on their rancour in his turn ;  
Take, too, the sprinkling of sagacious knaves  
Whose cunning runs not counter to the vogue  
But seeks, by flattery and crafty nursing,  
To force my system to a premature  
Short-lived development. Why swell the list?  
Each has his end to serve, and his best way  
Of serving it : remove all these, remains  
A scantling, a poor dozen at the best,  
Worthy to look for sympathy and service,  
And likely to draw profit from my pains.

*Festus.* 'Tis no encouraging picture : still  
these few

Redeem their fellows. Once the germ im-  
planted,  
Its growth, if slow, is sure.

*Paracelsus.* God grant it so !

I would make some amends : but if I fail,  
The luckless rogues have this excuse to urge,  
That much is in my method and my manner,  
My uncouth habits, my impatient spirit,  
Which hinders of reception and result  
My doctrine : much to say, small skill to  
speak !

These old aims suffered not a looking-off  
Though for an instant ; therefore, only when  
I thus renounced them and resolved to reap  
Some present fruit—to teach mankind some  
truth

So dearly purchased—only then I found  
Such teaching was an art requiring cares  
And qualities peculiar to itself :  
That to possess was one thing—to display  
Another. With renown first in my thoughts,  
Or popular praise, I had soon discovered it :  
One grows but little apt to learn these things.

*Festus.* If it be so, which nowise I believe,  
There needs no waiting fuller dispensation  
To leave a labour of so little use.  
Why not throw up the irksome charge at  
once ?

*Paracelsus.* A task, a task !

But wherefore hide the whole  
Extent of degradation, once engaged  
In the confessing vein ? Despite of all  
My fine talk of obedience and repugnance,  
Docility and what not, 'tis yet to learn  
If when the task shall really be performed,  
My inclination free to choose once more,  
I shall do aught but slightly modify  
The nature of the hated task I quit.  
In plain words, I am spoiled ; my life still  
tends

As first it tended ; I am broken and trained  
To my old habits : they are part of me.  
I know, and none so well, my darling ends  
Are proved impossible : no less, no less,  
Even now what humours me, fond fool, as  
when

Their faint ghosts sit with me and flatter me  
And send me back content to my dull round ?

How can I change this soul?—this apparatus  
 Constructed solely for their purposes,  
 So well adapted to their every want,  
 To search out and discover, prove and perfect;  
 This intricate machine whose most minute  
 And meanest motions have their charm to me  
 Though to none else—an aptitude I seize,  
 An object I perceive, a use, a meaning,  
 A property, a fitness, I explain  
 And I alone :—how can I change my soul?  
 And this wronged body, worthless save when  
     tasked

Under that soul's dominion—used to care  
 For its bright master's cares and quite subdued  
 Its proper cravings—not to ail nor pine  
 So he but prosper—whither drag this poor  
 Tried patient body? (God! how I essayed  
 To live like that mad poet, for a while,  
 To love alone; and how I felt too warped  
 And twisted and deformed! What should I  
     do,

Even tho' released from drudgery, but return  
 Faint, as you see, and halting, blind and sore,  
 To my old life and die as I began?  
 I cannot feed on beauty for the sake  
 Of beauty only, nor can drink in balm  
 From lovely objects for their loveliness;  
 My nature cannot lose her first imprint;  
 I still must hoard and heap and class all truths  
 With one ulterior purpose: I must know!  
 Would God translate me to his throne, believe  
 That I should only listen to his word  
 To further my own aim! For other men,  
 Beauty is prodigally strewn around,  
 And I were happy could I quench as they  
 This mad and thriveless longing, and content me

With beauty for itself alone: alas,  
 I have addressed a frock of heavy mail  
 Yet may not join the troop of sacred knights;  
 And now the forest-creatures fly from me,  
 The grass-banks cool, the sunbeams warm  
     no more.

Best follow, dreaming that ere night arrive,  
 I shall o'ertake the company and ride  
 Glittering as they!

*Festus.* I think I apprehend  
 What you would say: if you, in truth, design

To enter once more on the life thus left,  
 Seek not to hide that all this consciousness  
 Of failure is assumed!

*Paracelsus.* My friend, my friend,  
 I toil, you listen; I explain, perhaps  
 You understand: there our communion ends.  
 Have you learnt nothing from to-day's dis-  
     course?

When we would thoroughly know the sick  
     man's state

We feel awhile the fluttering pulse, press soft  
 The hot brow, look upon the languid eye,  
 And thence divine the rest. Must I lay bare  
 My heart, hideous and beating, or tear up  
 My vitals for your gaze, ere you will deem  
 Enough made known? You! who are you,  
     forsooth?

That is the crowning operation claimed  
 By the arch-demonstrator—heaven the hall,  
 And earth the audience. Let Aprile and you  
 Secure good places: 'twill be worth the  
     while.

*Festus.* Are you mad, Aureole? What  
     can I have said

To call for this? I judged from your own  
     words.

*Paracelsus.* Oh, doubtless! A sick wretch  
     describes the ape

That mocks him from the bed-foot, and all  
     gravely

You thither turn at once: or he recounts  
 The perilous journey he has late performed,  
 And you are puzzled much how that could be!  
 You find me here, half stupid and half  
     mad:

It makes no part of my delight to search  
 Into these matters, much less undergo  
 Another's scrutiny; but so it chances  
 That I am led to trust my state to you:  
 And the event is, you combine, contrast  
 And ponder on my foolish words as though  
 They thoroughly conveyed all hidden here—  
 Here, loathsome with despair and hate and  
     rage!

Is there no fear, no shrinking and no shame?  
 Will you guess nothing? will you spare me  
     nothing?

Must I go deeper? Ay or no?

*Festus.*

Dear friend . . . I had immortal feelings ; such shall never

*Paracelsus.* True : I am brutal — 'tis a Be wholly quenched : no, no !

part of it ;

My friend, you wear

The plague's sign—you are not a lazar-haunter,  
How should you know? Well then, you  
think it strange

A melancholy face, and certain 'tis  
There's little cheer in all this dismal work.  
But was it my desire to set abroad

I should profess to have failed utterly,  
And yet propose an ultimate return  
To courses void of hope : and this, because  
You know not what temptation is, nor how  
'Tis like to ply men in the sickliest part.

Such memories and forebodings? I foresaw  
Where they would drive. 'Twere better we  
discuss

You are to understand that we who make  
Sport for the gods, are hunted to the end :  
There is not one sharp volley shot at us,  
Which 'scaped with life, though hurt, we  
slacken pace

News from Lucerne or Zurich ; ask and tell  
Of Egypt's flaring sky or Spain's cork-groves.

And gather by the wayside herbs and roots  
To staunch our wounds, secure from further  
harm :

*Festus.* I have thought : trust me, this  
mood will pass away !

We are assailed to life's extremest verge.

I know you and the lofty spirit you bear,  
And easily ravel out a clue to all.

It will be well indeed if I return,

These are the trials meet for such as you,  
Nor must you hope exemption : to be mortal

A harmless busy fool, to my old ways !

Is to be plied with trials manifold.

I would forget hints of another fate,  
Significant enough, which silent hours  
Have lately scared me with.

Look round ! The obstacles which kept the  
rest

*Festus.*

Another ! and what ?

*Paracelsus.* After all, Festus, you say well :

I am

From your ambition, have been spurned by  
you ;

A man yet : I need never humble me.

Their fears, their doubts, the chains that  
bind them all,

I would have been—something, I know not  
what ;

Were flax before your resolute soul, which  
nought

But though I cannot soar, I do not crawl.

Avails to awe save these delusions bred  
From its own strength, its selfsame strength

There are worse portions than this one of  
mine.

disguised,  
Mocking itself. Be brave, dear Aureole !

You say well !

Since

*Festus.*

Ah !

*Paracelsus.* And deeper degradation !

The rabbit has his shade to frighten him,  
The fawn a rustling bough, mortals their cares,

If the mean stimulants of vulgar praise,  
If vanity should become the chosen food  
Of a sunk mind, should stifle even the wish  
To find its early aspirations true,  
Should teach it to breathe falsehood like  
life-breath—

And higher natures yet would slight and laugh  
At these entangling fantasies, as you

An atmosphere of craft and trick and lies ;  
Should make it proud to emulate, surpass  
Base natures in the practices which woke  
Its most indignant loathing once . . . No, no !  
Utter damnation is reserved for hell !

At trammels of a weaker intellect,—  
Measure your mind's height by the shade it  
casts !

I know you.

*Paracelsus.* And I know you, dearest

Festus !

And how you love unworthily ; and how  
All admiration renders blind.

*Festus.*

You hold

That admiration blinds ?

*Paracelsus.*

Ay and alas !

*Festus.* Nought blinds you less than  
admiration, friend !

Whether it be that all love renders wise  
In its degree ; from love which blends with  
love---

Heart answering heart—to love which spends  
itself

In silent mad idolatry of some  
Pre-eminent mortal, some great soul of souls,  
Which ne'er will know how well it is adored.  
I say, such love is never blind ; but rather  
Alive to every the minutest spot  
Which mars its object, and which hate (sup-  
posed

So vigilant and searching) dreams not of.  
Love broods on such : what then ? When  
first perceived

Is there no sweet strife to forget, to change,  
To overflush those blemishes with all  
The glow of general goodness they disturb ?  
—To make those very defects an endless  
source

Of new affection grown from hopes and fears ?  
And, when all fails, is there no gallant stand  
Made even for much proved weak ? no  
shrinking-lack

Lest, since all love assimilates the soul  
To what it loves, it should at length become  
Almost a rival of its idol ? Trust me,  
If there be fiends who seek to work our hurt,  
To ruin and drag down earth's mightiest  
spirits

Even at God's foot, 'twill be from such as  
love,

Their zeal will gather most to serve their  
cause ;

And least from those who hate, who most  
essay

By contumely and scorn to blot the light  
Which forces entrance even to their hearts :  
For thence will our defender tear the veil  
And show within each heart, as in a shrine,  
The giant image of perfection, grown  
In hate's despite, whose calumnies were  
spawned

In the untroubled presence of its eyes.  
True admiration blinds not ; nor am I  
So blind. I call your sin exceptional ;  
It springs from one whose life has passed the  
bounds

Prescribed to life. Compound that fault  
with God !

I speak of men ; to common men like me  
The weakness you reveal endears you more,  
Like the far traces of decay in suns.  
I bid you have good cheer !

*Paracelsus.* *Præclare ! Optime !*

Think of a quiet mountain-cloistered priest  
Instructing Paracelsus ! yet 'tis so.  
Come, I will show you where my merit lies.  
'Tis in the advance of individual minds  
That the slow crowd should ground their  
expectation

Eventually to follow ; as the sea  
Waits ages in its bed till some one wave  
Out of the multitudinous mass, extends  
The empire of the whole, some feet perhaps,  
Over the strip of sand which could confine  
Its fellows so long time : thenceforth the rest,  
Even to the meanest, hurry in at once,  
And so much is clear gained. I shall be glad  
If all my labours, failing of aught else,  
Suffice to make such inroad and procure  
A wider range for thought : nay, they do  
this ;

For, whatsoever my notions of true knowledge  
And a legitimate success, may be,  
I am not blind to my undoubted rank  
When classed with others : I precede my age :  
And whoso wills is very free to mount  
These labours as a platform whence his own  
May have a prosperous outset. But, alas !  
My followers—they are noisy as you heard ;  
But, for intelligence, the best of them  
So clumsily wield the weapons I supply  
And they extol, that I begin to doubt  
Whether their own rude clubs and pebble-  
stones

Would not do better service than my arms  
Thus vilely swayed—if error will not fall  
Sooner before the old awkward batterings  
Than my more subtle warfare, not half  
learned.

*Festus.* I would supply that art, then, or  
withhold

New arms until you teach their mystery.

*Paracelsus.* Content you, 'tis my wish ; I  
have recourse

To the simplest training. Day by day I seek  
To wake the mood, the spirit which alone  
Can make those arms of any use to men.  
Of course they are for swaggering forth at once  
Graced with Ulysses' bow, Achilles' shield—  
Flash on us, all in armour, thou Achilles!  
Make our hearts dance to thy resounding step!  
A proper sight to scare the crows away!

*Festus.* Pity you choose not then some  
other method

Of coming at your point. The marvellous art  
At length established in the world bids fair  
To remedy all hindrances like these:  
Trust to Frobenius' press the precious lore  
Obscured by uncouth manner, or unfit  
For raw beginners; let his types secure  
A deathless monument to after-time;  
Meanwhile wait confidently and enjoy  
The ultimate effect: sooner or later  
You shall be all-revealed.

*Paracelsus.* The old dull question  
In a new form; no more. Thus: I possess  
Two sorts of knowledge; one,—vast,  
shadowy,

Hints of the unbounded aim I once pursued:  
The other consists of many secrets, caught  
While bent on nobler prize,—perhaps a few  
Prime principles which may conduct to much:  
These last I offer to my followers here.  
Now, bid me chronicle the first of these,  
My ancient study, and in effect you bid  
Revert to the wild courses just abjured:  
I must go find them scattered through the  
world.

Then, for the principles, they are so simple  
(Being chiefly of the overturning sort),  
That one time is as proper to propound them  
As any other—to-morrow at my class,  
Or half a century hence embalmed in print.  
For if mankind intend to learn at all,  
They must begin by giving faith to them  
And acting on them: and I do not see  
But that my lectures serve indifferent well:  
No doubt these dogmas fall not to the earth,  
For all their novelty and rugged setting.  
I think my class will not forget the day  
I let them know the gods of Israel,  
Ætius, Oribasius, Galen, Rhasis,

VOL. I.

Serapion, Avicenna, Averröes,  
Were blocks!

*Festus.* And that reminds me, I heard  
something

About your waywardness: you burned their  
books,

It seems, instead of answering those sages.

*Paracelsus.* And who said that?

*Festus.* Some I met yesternight  
With Æcolampadius. As you know, the  
purpose

Of this short stay at Basil was to learn  
His pleasure touching certain missives sent  
For our Zuinglius and himself. 'Twas he  
Apprised me that the famous teacher here  
Was my old friend.

*Paracelsus.* Ah, I forgot: you went . . .

*Festus.* From Zurich with advices for the ear  
Of Luther, now at Wittenberg—(you know,  
I make no doubt, the differences of late  
With Carolostadius)—and returning sought  
Basil and . . .

*Paracelsus.* I remember. Here's a case,  
now,

Will teach you why I answer not, but burn  
The books you mention. Pray, does Luther  
dream

His arguments convince by their own force  
The crowds that own his doctrine? No,  
indeed!

His plain denial of established points  
Ages had sanctified and men supposed  
Could never be oppugned while earth was  
under

And heaven above them—points which  
chance or time

Affected not—did more than the array  
Of argument which followed. Boldly deny!  
There is much breath-stopping, hair-stiffening  
Awhile; then, amazed glances, mute awaiting  
The thunderbolt which does not come; and  
next,

Reproachful wonder and inquiry: those  
Who else had never stirred, are able now  
To find the rest out for themselves, perhaps  
To outstrip him who set the whole at work,  
—As never will my wise class its instructor.  
And you saw Luther?

*Festus.* 'Tis a wondrous soul !  
*Paracelsus.* True : the so - heavy chain  
 which galled mankind  
 Is shattered, and the noblest of us all  
 Must bow to the deliverer—nay, the worker  
 Of our own project—we who long before  
 Had burst our trammels, but forgot the crowd,  
 We should have taught, still groaned beneath  
 their load :  
 This he has done and nobly. Speed that  
 may !  
 Whatever be my chance or my mischance,  
 What benefits mankind must glad me too ;  
 And men seem made, though not as I believed,  
 For something better than the times produce.  
 Witness these gangs of peasants your new  
 lights  
 From Suabia have possessed, whom Mün-  
 zer leads,  
 And whom the duke, the landgrave and the  
 elector  
 Will calm in blood ! Well, well ; 'tis not  
 my world !  
*Festus.* Hark !  
*Paracelsus.* 'Tis the melancholy wind  
 astir  
 Within the trees ; the embers too are grey :  
 Morn must be near.  
*Festus.* Best ope the casement : see,  
 The night, late strewn with clouds and flying  
 stars,  
 Is blank and motionless : how peaceful sleep  
 The tree-tops altogether ! Like an asp,  
 The wind slips whispering from bough to  
 bough.  
*Paracelsus.* Ay ; you would gaze on a wind-  
 shaken tree  
 By the hour, nor count time lost.  
*Festus.* So you shall gaze :  
 Those happy times will come again.  
*Paracelsus.* Gone, gone,  
 Those pleasant times ! Does not the moaning  
 wind  
 Seem to bewail that we have gained such gains  
 And bartered sleep for them ?  
*Festus.* It is our trust  
 That there is yet another world to mend  
 All error and mischance.

*Paracelsus.* Another world !  
 And why this world, this common world, to be  
 A make-shift, a mere foil, how fair soever,  
 To some fine life to come ? Man must be fed  
 With angels' food, forsooth ; and some few  
 traces  
 Of a diviner nature which look out  
 Through his corporeal baseness, warrant  
 him  
 In a supreme contempt of all provision  
 For his inferior tastes—some straggling marks  
 Which constitute his essence, just as truly  
 As here and there a gem would constitute  
 The rock, their barren bed, one diamond.  
 But were it so—were man all mind—he gains  
 A station little enviable. From God  
 Down to the lowest spirit ministrant,  
 Intelligence exists which casts our mind  
 Into immeasurable shade. No, no :  
 Love, hope, fear, faith—these make humanity ;  
 These are its sign and note and character,  
 And these I have lost !—gone, shut from me  
 for ever,  
 Like a dead friend safe from unkindness  
 more !  
 Sec, morn at length. The heavy darkness  
 seems  
 Diluted, grey and clear without the stars ;  
 The shrubs bestir and rouse themselves as if  
 Some snake, that weighed them down all  
 night, let go  
 His hold ; and from the East, fuller and  
 fuller,  
 Day, like a mighty river, flowing in ;  
 But clouded, wintry, desolate and cold.  
 Yet see how that broad prickly star-shaped  
 plant,  
 Half-down in the crevice, spreads its woolly  
 leaves  
 All thick and glistening with diamond dew.  
 And you depart for Einsiedeln this day,  
 And we have spent all night in talk like  
 this !  
 If you would have me better for your love,  
 Revert no more to these sad themes.  
*Festus.* One favour,  
 And I have done. I leave you, deeply  
 moved ;

Unwilling to have fared so well, the while  
My friend has changed so sorely. If this  
mood

Shall pass away, if light once more arise  
Where all is darkness now, if you see fit  
To hope and trust again, and strive again,  
You will remember—not our love alone—  
But that my faith in God's desire that man  
Should trust on his support, (as I must think  
You trusted) is obscured and dim through  
you :

For you are thus, and this is no reward.  
Will you not call me to your side, dear  
Aureole?

#### IV.—PARACELSUS ASPIRES.

SCENE.—*Colmar in Alsatia : an Inn. 1528.*

PARACELSUS, FESTUS.

*Paracelsus* [to JOHANNES OPORINUS, his  
Secretary]. *Sic itur ad astra!* Dear  
Von Visenburg

Is scandalized, and poor Torinus paralysed,  
And every honest soul that Basil holds  
Aghast ; and yet we live, as one may say,  
Just as though Liechtenfels had never set  
So true a value on his sorry carcass,  
And learned Pütter had not frowned us dumb.  
We live ; and shall as surely start to-morrow  
For Nuremberg, as we drink speedy scathe  
To Basil in this mantling wine, suffused  
A delicate blush, no fainter tinge is born  
I' the shut heart of a bud. Pledge me, good  
John—

“Basil ; a hot plague ravage it, and Pütter  
“Oppose the plague !” Even so? Do you  
too share

Their panic, the reptiles? Ha, ha ; faint  
through these,

Desist for these! They manage matters so  
At Basil, 'tis like : but others may find  
means

To bring the stoutest braggart of the tribe  
Once more to crouch in silence—means to  
breed

A stupid wonder in each fool again,

Now big with admiration at the skill  
Which stript a vain pretender of his plumes :  
And, that done,—means to brand each slavish  
brow

So deeply, surely, ineffaceably,  
That henceforth flattery shall not pucker it  
Out of the furrow ; there that stamp shall stay  
To show the next they fawn on, what they  
are,

This Basil with its magnates,—fill my cup,—  
Whom I curse soul and limb. And now  
despatch,

Despatch, my trusty John ; and what remains  
To do, whate'er arrangements for our trip  
Are yet to be completed, see you hasten  
This night ; we'll weather the storm at least :  
to-morrow

For Nuremberg ! Now leave us ; this grave  
clerk

Has divers weighty matters for my ear :  
[OPORINUS goes out.]

And spare my lungs. At last, my gallant  
Festus,

I am rid of this arch-knave that dogs my heels  
As a gaunt crow a gasping sheep ; at last  
May give a loose to my delight. How kind,  
How very kind, my first best only friend !  
Why, this looks like fidelity. Embrace me !  
Not a hair silvered yet? Right ! you shall live  
Till I am worth your love ; you shall be proud,  
And I—but let time show ! Did you not  
wonder?

I sent to you because our compact weighed  
Upon my conscience—(you recall the night  
At Basil, which the gods confound !)—because  
Once more I aspire. I call you to my side :  
You come. You thought my message strange?  
*Festus.* So strange

That I must hope, indeed, your messenger  
Has mingled his own fancies with the words  
Purporting to be yours.

*Paracelsus.* He said no more,  
'Tis probable, than the precious folk I leave  
Said fiftyfold more roughly. Well-a-day,  
'Tis true ! poor Paracelsus is exposed  
At last ; a most egregious quack he proves :  
And those he overreached must spit their hate  
On one who, utterly beneath contempt,



Could yet deceive their topping wits. You  
 heard  
 Bare truth ; and at my bidding you come here  
 To speed me on my enterprise, as once  
 Your lavish wishes sped me, my own friend !  
*Festus.* What is your purpose, Aureole ?  
*Paracelsus.* Oh, for purpose,  
 There is no lack of precedents in a case  
 Like mine ; at least, if not precisely mine,  
 The case of men cast off by those they sought  
 To benefit.  
*Festus.* They really cast you off ?  
 I only heard a vague tale of some priest,  
 Cured by your skill, who wrangled at your  
 claim,  
 Knowing his life's worth best ; and how the  
 judge  
 The matter was referred to, saw no cause  
 To interfere, nor you to hide your full  
 Contempt of him ; nor he, again, to smother  
 His wrath thereat, which raised so fierce a  
 flame  
 That Basil soon was made no place for you.  
*Paracelsus.* The affair of Liechtenfels ? the  
 shallowest fable,  
 The last and silliest outrage—mere pretence !  
 I knew it, I foretold it from the first,  
 How soon the stupid wonder you mistook  
 For genuine loyalty—a cheering promise  
 Of better things to come—would pall and pass ;  
 And every word comes true. Saul is among  
 The prophets ! Just so long as I was pleased  
 To play off the mere antics of my art,  
 Fantastic gambols leading to no end,  
 I got huge praise : but one can ne'er keep  
 down  
 Our foolish nature's weakness. There they  
 flocked,  
 Poor devils, jostling, swearing and perspiring,  
 Till the walls rang again ; and all for me !  
 I had a kindness for them, which was right ;  
 But then I stopped not till I tacked to that  
 A trust in them and a respect—a sort  
 Of sympathy for them ; I must needs begin  
 To teach them, not amaze them, “to impart  
 “The spirit which should instigate the search  
 “Of truth,” just what you bade me ! I spoke  
 out.  
 Forthwith a mighty squadron, in disgust,  
 Filed off—“the sifted chaff of the sack,” I  
 said,  
 Redoubling my endeavours to secure  
 The rest. When lo ! one man had tarried  
 so long  
 Only to ascertain if I supported  
 This tenet of his, or that ; another loved  
 To hear impartially before he judged,  
 And having heard, now judged ; this bland  
 disciple  
 Passed for my dupe, but all along, it seems,  
 Spied error where his neighbours marvelled  
 most ;  
 That fiery doctor who had hailed me friend,  
 Did it because my by-paths, once proved  
 wrong  
 And beaconed properly, would commend  
 again  
 The good old ways our sires jogged safely o'er,  
 Though not their squeamish sons ; the other  
 worthy  
 Discovered divers verses of St. John,  
 Which, read successively, refreshed the soul,  
 But, muttered backwards, cured the gout,  
 the stone,  
 The colic and what not. *Quid multa ?* The  
 end  
 Was a clear class-room, and a quiet leer  
 From grave folk, and a sour reproachful glance  
 From those in chief who, cap in hand, installed  
 The new professor scarce a year before ;  
 And a vast flourish about patient merit  
 Obscured awhile by flashy tricks, but sure  
 Sooner or later to emerge in splendour—  
 Of which the example was some luckless wight  
 Whom my arrival had discomfited,  
 But now, it seems, the general voice recalled  
 To fill my chair and so efface the stain  
 Basil had long incurred. I sought no better,  
 Only a quiet dismissal from my post,  
 And from my heart I wished them better  
 suited  
 And better served. Good night to Basil,  
 then !  
 But fast as I proposed to rid the tribe  
 Of my obnoxious back, I could not spare them  
 The pleasure of a parting kick.

*Festus.* You smile :  
Despise them as they merit !

*Paracelsus.* If I smile,  
'Tis with as very contempt as ever turned  
Flesh into stone. This courteous recompense,  
This grateful . . . Festus, were your nature  
fit

To be defiled, your eyes the eyes to ache  
At gangrene-blotches, eating poison-blains,  
The ulcerous barked scurf of leprosy  
Which finds—a man, and leaves—a hideous  
thing

That cannot but be mended by hell fire,  
—I would lay bare to you the human heart  
Which God cursed long ago, and devils make  
since

Their pet nest and their never-tiring home.  
Oh, sages have discovered we are born  
For various ends—to love, to know : has ever  
One stumbled, in his search, on any signs  
Of a nature in us formed to hate ? To hate ?  
If that be our true object which evokes  
Our powers in fullest strength, be sure 'tis  
hate !

Yet men have doubted if the best and bravest  
Of spirits can nourish him with hate alone.  
I had not the monopoly of fools,  
It seems, at Basil.

*Festus.* But your plans, your plans !  
I have yet to learn your purpose, Aureole !

*Paracelsus.* Whether to sink beneath such  
ponderous shame,

To shrink up like a crushed snail, undergo  
In silence and desist from further toil,  
And so subside into a monument  
Of one their censure blasted ? or to bow  
Cheerfully as submissively, to lower  
My old pretensions even as Basil dictates,  
To drop into the rank her wits assign me  
And live as they prescribe, and make that use  
Of my poor knowledge which their rules  
allow,

Proud to be patted now and then, and careful  
To practise the true posture for receiving  
The amplest benefit from their hoofs' appli-  
ance

When they shall condescend to tutor me ?  
Then, one may feel resentment like a flame

Within, and deck false systems in truth's garb,  
And tangle and entwine mankind with error,  
And give them darkness for a dower and  
falsehood

For a possession, ages : or one may mope  
Into a shade through thinking, or else drowse  
Into a dreamless sleep and so die off.

But I,—now Festus shall divine !—but I  
Am merely setting out once more, embracing  
My earliest aims again ! What thinks he now ?

*Festus.* Your aims ? the aims ?—to know !  
and where is found

The early trust . . .

*Paracelsus.* Nay, not so fast ; I say,  
The aims—not the old means. You know  
they made me

A laughing-stock ; I was a fool ; you know  
The when and the how : hardly those means  
again !

Not but they had their beauty ; who should  
know

Their passing beauty, if not I ? Still, dreams  
They were, so let them vanish, yet in beauty  
If that may be. Stay : thus they pass in song !

[*He sings*

I heap cassia, sandal-buds and stripes  
Of labdanum,<sup>1</sup> and aloe-balls,  
Smeared with dull nard an Indian wipes  
From out her hair : such balsam falls  
Down sea-side mountain pedestals,  
From tree-tops where tired winds are fain,  
Spent with the vast and howling main,  
To treasure half their island-gain.

And strew faint sweetness from some old  
Egyptian's fine worm-eaten shroud  
Which breaks to dust when once unrolled ;  
Or shredded perfume, like a cloud  
From closet long to quiet vowed,  
With moth and dropping arras hung,  
Mouldering her lute and books among,  
As when a queen, long dead, was young.

Mine, every word ! And on such pile shall die  
My lovely fancies, with fair perished things,  
Themselves fair and forgotten ; yes, forgotten,  
Or why abjure them ? So, I made this rhyme

<sup>1</sup> A fragrant gum.

That fitting dignity might be preserved ;  
No little proud was I ; though the list of drugs  
Smacks of my old vocation, and the verse  
Halts like the best of Luther's psalms.

*Festus.* But, Aureole,  
Talk not thus wildly and madly. I am here—  
Did you know all ! I have travelled far, in-  
deed,

To learn your wishes. Be yourself again !  
For in this mood I recognize you less  
Than in the horrible despondency  
I witnessed last. You may account this, joy ;  
But rather let me gaze on that despair  
Than hear these incoherent words and see  
This flushed cheek and intensely-sparkling eye.

*Paracelsus.* Why, man, I was light-hearted  
in my prime,  
I am light-hearted now ; what would you have ?  
Aprile was a poet, I make songs—  
'Tis the very augury of success I want !  
Why should I not be joyous now as then ?

*Festus.* Joyous ! and how ? and what re-  
mains for joy ?

You have declared the ends (which I am sick  
Of naming) are impracticable.

*Paracelsus.* Ay,  
I pursued as I pursued them—the arch-fool !  
Listen : my plan will please you not, 'tis like,  
But you are little versed in the world's ways.  
This is my plan—(first drinking its good  
luck)—

I will accept all helps ; all I despised  
So rashly at the outset, equally  
With early impulses, late years have  
quenched :

I have tried each way singly : now for both !  
All helps ! no one sort shall exclude the rest.  
I seek to know and to enjoy at once,  
Not one without the other as before.

Suppose my labour should seem God's own  
cause

Once more, as first I dreamed,—it shall not  
balk me

Of the meanest earthliest sensuallest delight  
That may be snatched ; for every joy is gain,  
And gain is gain, however small. My soul  
Can die then, nor be taunted—"what was  
gained ?"

Nor, on the other hand, should pleasure follow  
As though I had not spurned her hitherto,  
Shall she o'ercloud my spirit's rapt com-  
munion

With the tumultuous past, the teeming future,  
Glorious with visions of a full success.

*Festus.* Success !

*Paracelsus.* And wherefore not ?

Why not prefer

Results obtained in my best state of being,  
To those derived alone from seasons dark  
As the thoughts they bred ? When I was  
best, my youth

Unwasted, seemed success not surest too ?

It is the nature of darkness to obscure.

I am a wanderer : I remember well

One journey, how I feared the track was  
missed,

So long the city I desired to reach

Lay hid ; when suddenly its spires afar

Flashed through the circling clouds ; you  
may conceive

My transport. Soon the vapours closed again,  
But I had seen the city, and one such glance  
No darkness could obscure : nor shall the  
present—

A few dull hours, a passing shame or two,

Destroy the vivid memories of the past.

I will fight the battle out ; a little spent

Perhaps, but still an able combatant.

You look at my grey hair and furrowed brow ?

But I can turn even weakness to account :

Of many tricks I know, 'tis not the least

To push the ruins of my frame, whereon

The fire of vigour trembles scarce alive,

Into a heap, and send the flame aloft.

What should I do with age ? So, sickness  
lends

An aid ; it being, I fear, the source of all

We boast of : mind is nothing but disease,

And natural health is ignorance.

*Festus.*

I see

But one good symptom in this notable scheme.

I feared your sudden journey had in view

To wreak immediate vengeance on your foes.

'Tis not so : I am glad.

*Paracelsus.*

And if I please

To spit on them, to trample them, what then ?

'Tis sorry warfare truly, but the fools  
Provoke it. I would spare their self-conceit,  
But if they must provoke me, cannot suffer  
Forbearance on my part, if I may keep  
No quality in the shade, must needs put forth  
Power to match power, my strength against  
their strength,  
And teach them their own game with their  
own arms—

Why, be it so and let them take their chance !  
I am above them like a god, there's no  
Hiding the fact : what idle scruples, then,  
Were those that ever bade me soften it,  
Communicate it gently to the world,  
Instead of proving my supremacy,  
Taking my natural station o'er their head,  
Then owning all the glory was a man's !  
—And in my elevation man's would be.  
But live and learn, though life's short, learn-  
ing, hard !

And therefore, though the wreck of my past  
self,

I fear, dear Pütter, that your lecture-room  
Must wait awhile for its best ornament,  
The penitent empiric, who set up  
For somebody, but soon was taught his place ;  
Now, but too happy to be let confess  
His error, snuff the candles, and illustrate  
(*Fiat experientia corpore vili*)

Your medicine's soundness in his person.  
Wait,  
Good Pütter !

*Festus.* He who sneers thus, is a god !

*Paracelsus.* Ay, ay, laugh at me ! I am  
very glad

You are not gulled by all this swaggering ; you  
Can see the root of the matter !—how I strive  
To put a good face on the overthrow  
I have experienced, and to bury and hide  
My degradation in its length and breadth ;  
How the mean motives I would make you  
think

Just mingle as is due with nobler aims,  
The appetites I modestly allow  
May influence me as being mortal still—  
Do goad me, drive me on, and fast plumb  
My youth's desires. You are no stupid dupe :  
You find me out ! Yes, I had sent for you

To palm these childish lies upon you, Festus !  
Laugh—you shall laugh at me !

*Festus.* The past, then, Aureole,  
Proves nothing ? Is our interchange of love  
Yet to begin ? Have I to swear I mean  
No flattery in this speech or that ? For you,  
Whate'er you say, there is no degradation ;  
These low thoughts are no inmates of your  
mind,

Or wherefore this disorder ? You are vexed  
As much by the intrusion of base views,  
Familiar to your adversaries, as they  
Were troubled should your qualities alight  
Amid their murky souls ; not otherwise,  
A stray wolf which the winter forces down  
From our bleak hills, suffices to affright  
A village in the vales—while foresters  
Sleep calm, though all night long the  
famished troop

Snuff round and scratch against their crazy  
huts.

These evil thoughts are monsters, and will flee.

*Paracelsus.* May you be happy, Festus,  
my own friend !

*Festus.* Nay, further ; the delights you fain  
would think

The superseders of your nobler aims,  
Though ordinary and harmless stimulants,  
Will ne'er content you. . . .

*Paracelsus.* Hush ! I once despised them,  
But that soon passes. We are high at first  
In our demand, nor will abate a jot  
Of toil's strict value ; but time passes o'er,  
And humbler spirits accept what we refuse :  
In short, when some such comfort is doled out  
As these delights, we cannot long retain  
Bitter contempt which urges us at first  
To hurl it back, but hug it to our breast  
And thankfully retire. This life of mine  
Must be lived out and a grave thoroughly  
earned :

I am just fit for that and nought beside.  
I told you once, I cannot now enjoy,  
Unless I deem my knowledge gains through  
joy ;

Nor can I know, but straight warm tears reveal  
My need of linking also joy to knowledge :  
So, on I drive, enjoying all I can,

And knowing all I can. I speak, of course,  
Confusedly; this will better explain—feel  
here!

Quick beating, is it not?—a fire of the heart  
To work off some way, this as well as any.  
So, Festus sees me fairly launched; his calm  
Compassionate look might have disturbed  
me once;

But now, far from rejecting, I invite  
What bids me press the closer, lay myself  
Open before him, and be soothed with pity;  
I hope, if he command hope, and believe  
As he directs me—satiating myself  
With his enduring love. And Festus quits me  
To give place to some credulous disciple  
Who holds that God is wise, but Paracelsus  
Has his peculiar merits: I suck in  
That homage, chuckle o'er that admiration,  
And then dismiss the fool; for night is come,  
And I betake myself to study again,  
Till patient searchings after hidden lore  
Half wring some bright truth from its prison;  
my frame

Trembles, my forehead's veins swell out, my  
hair

Tingles for triumph. Slow and sure the morn  
Shall break on my pent room and dwindling  
lamp

And furnace dead, and scattered earths and  
ores;

When, with a failing heart and throbbing brow,  
I must review my captured truth, sum up  
Its value, trace what ends to what begins,  
Its present power with its eventual bearings,  
Latent affinities, the views it opens,  
And its full length in perfecting my scheme.  
I view it sternly circumscribed, cast down  
From the high place my fond hopes yielded it,  
Proved worthless—which, in getting, yet had  
cost

Another wrench to this fast-falling frame.  
Then, quick, the cup to quaff, that chases  
sorrow!

I lapse back into youth, and take again  
My fluttering pulse for evidence that God  
Means good to me, will make my cause his  
own.

See! I have cast off this remorseless care

Which clogged a spirit born to soar so free,  
And my dim chamber has become a tent,  
Festus is sitting by me, and his Michal . . .  
Why do you start? I say, she listening here,  
(For yonder—Würzburg through the orchard-  
bough!)

Motions as though such ardent words should  
find

No echo in a maiden's quiet soul,  
But her pure bosom heaves, her eyes fill fast  
With tears, her sweet lips tremble all the  
while!

Ha, ha!

*Festus.* It seems, then, you expect to reap  
No unreal joy from this your present course,  
But rather . . .

*Paracelsus.* Death! To die! I owe that  
much

To what, at least, I was. I should be sad  
To live contented after such a fall,  
To thrive and fatten after such reverse!  
The whole plan is a makeshift, but will last  
My time.

*Festus.* And you have never mused and  
said,

"I had a noble purpose, and the strength  
"To compass it; but I have stopped half-way,  
"And wrongly given the first-fruits of my toil  
"To objects little worthy of the gift.  
"Why linger round them still? why clench  
my fault?"

"Why seek for consolation in defeat,  
"In vain endeavours to derive a beauty  
"From ugliness? why seek to make the most  
"Of what no power can change, nor strive  
instead

"With mighty effort to redeem the past  
"And, gathering up the treasures thus cast  
down,

"To hold a steadfast course till I arrive  
"At their fit destination and my own?"  
You have never pondered thus?

*Paracelsus.* Have I, you ask,  
Often at midnight, when most fancies come,  
Would some such airy project visit me:  
But ever at the end or will you hear  
The same thing in a tale, a parable?  
You and I, wandering over the world wide,

Chance to set foot upon a desert coast.  
Just as we cry, "No human voice before  
"Broke the inveterate silence of these rocks!"  
—Their querulous echo startles us; we  
turn :

What ravaged structure still looks o'er the sea?  
Some characters remain, too! While we read,  
The sharp salt wind, impatient for the last  
Of even this record, wistfully comes and goes,  
Or sings what we recover, mocking it.  
This is the record; and my voice, the wind's.

[*He sings.*]

Over the sea our galleys went,  
With cleaving prows in order brave  
To a speeding wind and a bounding wave,  
A gallant armament :

Each bark built out of a forest-tree  
Left leafy and rough as first it grew,  
And nailed all over the gaping sides,  
Within and without, with black bull-hides,  
Seethed in fat and suppld in flame,  
To bear the playful billows' game :  
So, each good ship was rude to sec,  
Rude and bare to the outward view,

But each upbore a stately tent  
Where cedar pales in scented row  
Kept out the flakes of the dancing brine,  
And an awning drooped the mast below,  
In fold on fold of the purple fine,  
That neither noontide nor starshine  
Nor moonlight cold which maketh mad,  
Might pierce the regal tenement.

When the sun dawned, oh, gay and glad  
We set the sail and plied the oar ;  
But when the night-wind blew like breath,  
For joy of one day's voyage more,  
We sang together on the wide sea,  
Like men at peace on a peaceful shore ;  
Each sail was loosed to the wind so  
free,

Each helm made sure by the twilight star,  
And in a sleep as calm as death,  
We, the voyagers from afar,

Lay stretched along, each weary crew  
In a circle round its wondrous tent  
Whence gleamed soft light and curled rich  
scent,

And with light and perfume, music too :]

VOL. I.

So the stars wheeled round, and the dark-  
ness past,  
And at morn we started beside the mast,  
And still each ship was sailing fast.

Now, one morn, land appeared—a speck  
Dim trembling betwixt sea and sky :

"Avoid it," cried our pilot, "check  
"The shout, restrain the eager eye !

But the heaving sea was black behind  
For many a night and many a day,  
And land, though but a rock, drew nigh ;  
So, we broke the cedar pales away,  
Let the purple awning flap in the wind,

And a statue bright was on every deck !  
We shouted, every man of us,  
And steered right into the harbour thus,  
With pomp and pean glorious.

A hundred shapes of lucid stone !

All day we built its shrine for each,  
A shrine of rock for every one,  
Nor paused till in the westerling sun

We sat together on the beach  
To sing because our task was done.  
When lo ! what shouts and merry songs !  
What laughter all the distance stirs !  
A loaded raft with happy throngs  
Of gentle islanders !

"Our isles are just at hand," they cried,  
"Like cloudlets faint in even sleeping ;

"Our temple-gates are opened wide,  
"Our olive-groves thick shade are  
keeping

"For these majestic forms"—they cried.  
Oh, then we awoke with sudden start  
From our deep dream, and knew, too  
late,

How bare the rock, how desolate,  
Which had received our precious freight :  
Yet we called out—"Depart !

"Our gifts, once given, must here alide.  
"Our work is done ; we have no heart  
"To mar our work,"—we cried.

*Festus.* In truth?

*Paracelsus.*

tracings faint

Nay, wait : all this in

On rugged stones strewn here and there, but  
piled

In order once : then follows—mark what  
follows !

“The sad rhyme of the men who proudly clung  
“To their first fault, and withered in their  
pride.”

*Festus.* Come back then, Aureole ; as you  
fear God, come !

This is foul sin ; come back ! Renounce the  
past,

Forswear the future ; look for joy no more,  
But wait death's summons amid holy sights,  
And trust me for the event—peace, if not joy.  
Return with me to Einsiedeln, dear Aureole !

*Paracelsus.* No way, no way ! it would not  
turn to good.

A spotless child sleeps on the flowering moss—  
'Tis well for him ; but when a sinful man,  
Envyng such slumber, may desire to put  
His guilt away, shall he return at once  
To rest by lying there ? Our sires knew well  
(Spite of the grave discoveries of their sons)  
The fitting course for such : dark cells, dim  
lamps,

A stone floor one may writhe on like a worm :  
No mossy pillow blue with violets !

*Festus.* I see no symptom of these absolute  
And tyrannous passions. You are calmer now.  
This verse-making can purge you well enough  
Without the terrible penance you describe.  
You love me still : the lusts you fear will never  
Outrage your friend. To Einsiedeln, once  
more !

Say but the word !

*Paracelsus.* No, no ; those lusts forbid :  
They crouch, I know, cowering with half-shut  
eye

Beside you ; 'tis their nature. Thrust yourself  
Between them and their prey ; let some fool  
style me

Or king or quack, it matters not—then try  
Your wisdom, urge them to forego their  
treat !

No, no ; learn better and look deeper, Festus !  
If you knew how a devil sneers within me  
While you are talking now of this, now that,  
As though we differed scarcely save in trifles !

*Festus.* Do we so differ ? True, change  
must proceed,

Whether for good or ill ; keep from me, which !  
Do not confide all secrets : I was born  
To hope, and you . . .

*Paracelsus.* To trust : you know the fruits !  
*Festus.* Listen : I do believe, what you call  
trust

Was self-delusion at the best : for, see !  
So long as God would kindly pioneer  
A path for you, and screen you from the world,  
Procure you full exemption from man's lot,  
Man's common hopes and fears, on the mere  
pretext

Of your engagement in his service—yield you  
A limitless licence, make you God, in fact,  
And turn your slave—you were content to say  
Most courtly praises ! What is it, at last,  
But selfishness without example ? None  
Could trace God's will so plain as you, while  
yours

Remained implied in it ; but now you fail,  
And we, who prate about that will, are fools !  
In short, God's service is established here  
As he determines fit, and not your way,  
And this you cannot brook. Such discontent  
Is weak. Renounce all creatureship at once !  
Affirm an absolute right to have and use  
Your energies ; as though the rivers should  
say—

“We rush to the ocean ; what have we to do  
“With feeding streamlets, lingering in the  
vales,

“Sleeping in lazy pools ?” Set up that plea,  
That will be bold at last !

*Paracelsus.* 'Tis like enough.  
The serviceable spirits are those, no doubt,  
The Fast produces : lo, the master bids,—  
They wake, raise terraces and garden-grounds  
In one night's space ; and, this done, straight  
begin

Another century's sleep, to the great praise  
Of him that framed them wise and beautiful,  
Till a lamp's rubbing, or some chance akin,  
Wake them again. I am of different mould.  
I would have soothed my lord, and slaved for  
him

And done him service past my narrow bond

And thus I get rewarded for my pains !  
Beside, 'tis vain to talk of forwarding  
God's glory otherwise ; this is alone  
The sphere of its increase, as far as men  
Increase it ; why, then, look beyond this  
sphere ?  
We are his glory ; and if we be glorious,  
Is not the thing achieved ?

*Festus.* Shall one like me  
Judge hearts like yours ? Though years have  
changed you much,  
And you have left your first love, and retain  
Its empty shade to veil your crooked ways,  
Yet I still hold that you have honoured God.  
And who shall call your course without re-  
ward ?

For, wherefore this repining at defeat  
I had triumph ne'er injured you to high hopes ?  
I urge you to forsake the life you curse,  
And what success attends me ?—simply talk  
Of passion, weakness and remorse ; in short,  
Anything but the naked truth—you choose  
This so-despised career, and cheaply hold  
My happiness, or rather other men's.  
Once more, return !

*Paracelsus.* And quickly. John the thief  
Has pilfered half my secrets by this time :  
And we depart by daybreak. I am weary,  
I know not how ; not even the wine-cup soothes  
My brain to-night . . .

Do you not thoroughly despise me, Festus ?  
No flattery ! One like you needs not be told  
We live and breathe deceiving and deceived.  
Do you not scorn me from your heart of  
hearts,

Me and my cant, each petty subterfuge,  
My rhymes and all this frothy shower of  
words,

My glozing self-deceit, my outward crust  
Of lies which wrap, as tetter, morpew,  
furfair

Wrapt the sound flesh ?—so, see you flatter not !  
Even God flatters : but my friend, at least,  
Is true. I would depart, secure henceforth  
Against all further insult, hate and wrong  
From puny foes ; my one friend's scorn shall  
brand me :

No fear of sinking deeper !

*Festus.* No, dear Aureole !  
No, no ; I came to counsel faithfully.  
There are old rules, made long ere we were  
born,  
By which I judge you. I, so fallible,  
So infinitely low beside your mighty  
Majestic spirit !—even I can see  
You own some higher law than ours which call  
Sin, what is no sin—weakness, what is  
strength.

But I have only these, such as they are,  
To guide me ; and I blame you where they bid,  
Only so long as blaming promises  
To win peace for your soul : the more, that  
sorrow

Has fallen on me of late, and they have  
helped me

So that I faint not under my distress.  
But wherefore should I scruple to avow  
In spite of all, as brother judging brother,  
Your fate is most inexplicable to me ?  
And should you perish without recompense  
And satisfaction yet—too hastily  
I have relied on love : you may have sinned,  
But you have loved. As a mere human  
matter—

As I would have God deal with fragile men  
In the end—I say that you will triumph yet !

*Paracelsus.* Have you felt sorrow, Festus ?—'tis because

You love me. Sorrow, and sweet Michal  
yours !

Well thought on : never let her know this last  
Dull winding-up of all : these miscreants  
dared

Insult me—me she loved :—so, grieve her  
not !

*Festus.* Your ill success can little grieve  
her now.

*Paracelsus.* Michal is dead ! pray Christ  
we do not craze !

*Festus.* Aureole, dear Aureole, look not  
on me thus !

Fool, fool ! this is the heart grown sorrow-  
proof—

I cannot bear those eyes.

*Paracelsus.* Nay, really dead ?

*Festus.* 'Tis scarce a month.



*Paracelsus.* Stone dead !—then you have laid her  
Among the flowers ere this. Now, do you know,

I can reveal a secret which shall comfort  
Even you. I have no julep, as men think,  
To cheat the grave ; but a far better secret.  
Know, then, you did not ill to trust your love  
To the cold earth : I have thought much of it :  
For I believe we do not wholly die.

*Festus.* Aureole !

*Paracelsus.* Nay, do not laugh ;  
there is a reason  
For what I say : I think the soul can never  
Taste death. I am, just now, as you may see,  
Very unfit to put so strange a thought  
In an intelligible dress of words ;  
But take it as my trust, she is not dead.

*Festus.* But not on this account alone ?  
you surely,

—Aureole, you have believed this all along ?  
*Paracelsus.* And Michal sleeps among the  
roots and dews,

While I am moved at Basil, and full of  
schemes

For Nuremberg, and hoping and despairing,  
As though it mattered how the farce plays out,  
So it be quickly played. Away, away !

Have your will, rabble ! while we fight the  
prize,

Troop you in safety to the snug back-seats  
And leave a clear arena for the brave  
About to perish for your sport !—Behold !

#### V.—PARACELSUS ATTAINS.

SCENE.—*Salzburg ; a cell in the Hospital of  
St. Sebastian.* 1541.

FESTUS, PARACELSUS.

*Festus.* No change ! The weary night is  
well-nigh spent,  
The lamp burns low, and through the case-  
ment-bars  
Grey morning glimmers feebly : yet no  
change !

Another night, and still no sigh has stirred  
That fallen discoloured mouth, no pang relit  
Those fixed eyes, quenched by the decaying  
body,

Like torch-flame choked in dust. While all  
beside

Was breaking, to the last they held out bright,  
As a stronghold where life intrenched itself ;  
But they are dead now—very blind and dead :  
He will drowse into death without a groan.

My Aureole—my forgotten, ruined Aureole !  
The days are gone, are gone ! How grand  
thou wast !

And now not one of those who struck thee  
down—

Poor glorious spirit—concerns him event to stay  
And satisfy himself his little hand  
Could turn God's image to a livid thing.

Another night, and yet no change ! 'Tis  
much

That I should sit by him, and bathe his brow,  
And chafe his hands ; 'tis much : but he  
will sure

Know me, and look on me, and speak to me  
Once more—but only once ! His hollow  
cheek

Looked all night long as though a creeping  
laugh

At his own state were just about to break  
From the dying man : my brain swam, my  
throat swelled,

And yet I could not turn away. In truth,  
They told me how, when first brought here,  
he seemed

Resolved to live, to lose no faculty ;  
Thus striving to keep up his shattered strength,  
Until they bore him to this stifling cell :

When straight his features fell, an hour made  
white

The flushed face, and relaxed the quivering  
limb,

Only the eye remained intense awhile  
As though it recognized the tomb-like place,  
And then he lay as here he lies.

Ay, here !  
Here is earth's noblest, nobly garlanded—

Her bravest champion with his well-won  
 prize—  
 Her best achievement, her sublime amends  
 For countless generations fleeting fast  
 And followed by no trace ;—the creature-god  
 She instances when angels would dispute  
 The title of her brood to rank with them.  
 Angels, this is our angel ! Those bright forms  
 We clothe with purple, crown and call to  
 thrones,  
 Are human, but not his ; those are but men  
 Whom ' other men press round and kneel  
 before ;  
 Those palaces are dwelt in by mankind ;  
 Higher provision is for him you seek  
 Amid our pomps and glories : see it here !  
 Behold earth's paragon ! Now, raise thee,  
 clay !

God ! Thou art love ! I build my faith on  
 that.  
 Even as I watch beside thy tortured child  
 Unconscious whose hot tears fall fast by him,  
 So doth thy right hand guide us through the  
 world  
 Wherein we stumble. God ! what shall we  
 say ?  
 How has he sinned ? How else should he  
 have done ?  
 Surely he sought thy praise —thy praise, for all  
 He might be busied by the task so much  
 As half forget awhile its proper end.  
 Dost thou well, Lord ? Thou canst not but  
 prefer  
 That I should range myself upon his side—  
 How could he stop at every step to set  
 Thy glory forth ? Hadst thou but granted him  
 Success, thy honour would have crowned  
 success,  
 A halo round a star. Or, say he erred,—  
 Save him, dear God ; it will be like thee :  
 bathe him  
 In light and life ! Thou are not made like us ;  
 We should be wroth in such a case ; but thou  
 Forgiveest — so, forgive these passionate  
 thoughts  
 Which come unsought and will not pass  
 away !

I know thee, who hast kept my path, and  
 made  
 Light for me in the darkness, tempering  
 sorrow  
 So that it reached me like a solemn joy ;  
 It were too strange that I should doubt thy  
 love.  
 But what am I ? Thou madest him and  
 knowest  
 How he was fashioned. I could never err  
 That way : the quiet place beside thy feet,  
 Reserved for me, was ever in my thoughts :  
 But he—thou shouldst have favoured him as  
 well !

Ah ! he wakens ! Aureole, I am here ! 'tis  
 Festus !  
 I cast away all wishes save one wish—  
 Let him but know me, only speak to me !  
 He mutters ; louder and louder ; any other  
 Than I, with brain less laden, could collect  
 What he pours forth. Dear Aureole, do but  
 look !  
 Is it talking or singing, this he utters fast ?  
 Misery that he should fix me with his eye,  
 Quick talking to some other all the while !  
 If he would husband this wild vehemence  
 Which frustrates its intent !—I heard, I know  
 I heard my name amid those rapid words.  
 Oh, he will know me yet ! Could I divert  
 This current, lead it somehow gently back  
 Into the channels of the past !—His eye  
 Brighter than ever ! It must recognize me !

I am Erasmus : I am here to pray  
 That Paracelsus use his skill for me.  
 The schools of Paris and of Padua send  
 These questions for your learning to resolve.  
 We are your students, noble master : leave  
 This wretched cell, what business have you  
 here ?  
 Our class awaits you ; come to us once more !  
 (O agony ! the utmost I can do  
 Touches him not ; how else arrest his ear ?)  
 I am commissioned . . . I shall craze like  
 him.  
 Better be mute and see what God shall send.  
*Paracelsus.* Stay, stay with me !

- Festus.* I will ; I am come here  
To stay with you—Festus, you loved of old ;  
Festus, you know, you must know !
- Paracelsus.* Festus ! Where's  
Aprile, then ? Has he not chanted softly  
The melodies I heard all night ? I could not  
Get to him for a cold hand on my breast,  
But I made out his music well enough,  
O well enough ! If they have filled him full  
With magical music, as they freight a star  
With light, and have remitted all his sin,  
They will forgive me too, I too shall know !
- Festus.* Festus, your Festus !
- Paracelsus.* Ask him if Aprile  
Knows as he Loves—if I shall Love and  
Know ?
- I try ; but that cold hand, like lead—so cold !
- Festus.* My hand, see !
- Paracelsus.* Ah, the curse, Aprile,  
Aprile !
- We get so near—so very, very near !  
'Tis an old tale : Jove strikes the Titans  
down,  
Not when they set about their mountain-  
piling  
But when another rock would crown the work.  
And Phaeton—doubtless his first radiant  
plunge  
Astonished mortals, though the gods were  
calm,  
And Jove prepared his thunder : all old tales !
- Festus.* And what are these to you ?
- Paracelsus.* Ay, fiends must laugh  
So cruelly, so well ! most like I never  
Could tread a single pleasure underfoot,  
But they were grinning by my side, were  
chuckling  
To see me toil and drop away by flakes !  
Hell-spawn ! I am glad, most glad, that  
thus I fail !
- Your cunning has o'ershot its aim. One  
year,  
One month, perhaps, and I had served your  
turn !
- You should have curbed your spite awhile.  
But now,  
Who will believe 'twas you that held me  
back ?
- Listen : there's shame and hissing and con-  
tempt,  
And none but laughs who names me, none  
but spits  
Measureless scorn upon me, me alone,  
The quack, the cheat, the liar,—all on me !  
And thus your famous plan to sink mankind  
In silence and despair, by teaching them  
One of their race had probed the inmost truth,  
Had done all man could do, yet failed no  
less—  
Your wise plan proves abortive. Men  
despair ?
- Ha, ha ! why, they are hooting the empiric,  
The ignorant and incapable fool who rushed  
Madly upon a work beyond his wits ;  
Nor doubt they but the simplest of them-  
selves  
Could bring the matter to triumphant issue.  
So, pick and choose among them all, accursed !  
Try now, persuade some other to slave for  
you,  
To ruin body and soul to work your ends !  
No, no ; I am the first and last, I think.
- Festus.* Dear friend, who are accursed ;  
who has done . . .
- Paracelsus.* What have I done ? Fiends  
dare ask that ? or you,  
Brave men ? Oh, you can chime in boldly,  
backed  
By the others ! What had you to do, sage  
peers ?
- Here stand my rivals ; Latin, Arab, Jew,  
Greek, join dead hands against me : all I ask  
Is, that the world enrol my name with theirs,  
And even this poor privilege, it seems,  
They range themselves, prepared to disallow.  
Only observe ! why, fiends may learn from  
them !
- How they talk calmly of my throes, my fierce  
Aspirings, terrible watchings, each one  
claiming  
Its price of blood and brain ; how they dissect  
And sneeringly disparage the few truths  
Got at a life's cost ; they too hanging the while  
About my neck, their lies misleading me  
And their dead names browbeating me !  
Grey crew,

Yet steeped in fresh malevolence from hell,  
Is there a reason for your hate? My truths  
Have shaken a little the palm about each  
prince?

Just think, Aprile, all these leering dotards  
Were bent on nothing less than to be crowned  
As we! That yellow blear-eyed wretch in  
chief

To whom the rest cringe low with feigned  
respect,

Galen of Pergamos and hell—nay speak  
The tale, old man! We met there face to  
face:

I said the crown should fall from thee. Once  
more

We meet as in that ghastly vestibule:  
Look to my brow! Have I redeemed my  
pledge?

*Festus.* Peace, peace; ah, see!

*Paracelsus.* Oh, emptiness of fame!  
Oh Persic Zoroaster, lord of stars!

—Who said these old renowns, dead long ago,  
Could make me overlook the living world  
To gaze through gloom at where they stood,  
indeed,

But stand no longer? What a warm light life  
After the shade! In truth, my delicate witch,  
My serpent-queen, you did but well to hide  
The juggles I had else detected. Fire  
May well run harmless o'er a breast like  
yours!

The cave was not so darkened by the smoke  
But that your white limbs dazzled me: oh,  
white,

And panting as they twinkled, wildly  
dancing!

I cared not for your passionate gestures then,  
But now I have forgotten the charm of  
charms,

The foolish knowledge which I came to seek,  
While I remember that quaint dance; and  
thus

I am come back, not for those mummeries,  
But to love you, and to kiss your little feet  
Soft as an ermine's winter coat!

*Festus.*

A light

Will struggle through these thronging words  
at last.

As in the angry and tumultuous West  
A soft star trembles through the drifting  
clouds.

These are the strivings of a spirit which hates  
So sad a vault should coop it, and calls up  
The past to stand between it and its fate.

Were he at Einsiedeln—or Michal here!

*Paracelsus.* Cruel! I seek her now—I  
kneel—I shriek—

I clasp her vesture—but she fades, still fades;  
And she is gone; sweet human love is gone!  
'Tis only when they spring to heaven that  
angels

Reveal themselves to you; they sit all day  
Beside you, and lie down at night by you  
Who care not for their presence, muse or sleep,  
And all at once they leave you, and you know  
them!

We are so fooled, so cheated! Why, even  
now

I am not too secure against foul play;  
The shadows deepen and the walls contract:  
No doubt some treachery is going on.

'Tis very dusk. Where are we put, Aprile?  
Have they left us in the lurch? This murky  
loathsome

Death-trap, this slaughter-house, is not the  
hall

In the golden city! Keep by me, Aprile!  
There is a hand groping amid the blackness  
To catch us. Have the spider-fingers got you,  
Poet? Hold on me for your life! If once  
They pull you!—Hold!

'Tis but a dream—no more!

I have you still; the sun comes out again;  
Let us be happy: all will yet go well!

Let us confer: is it not like, Aprile,  
That spite of trouble, this ordeal passed,  
The value of my labours ascertained,

Just as some stream foams long among the  
rocks

But after glideth glassy to the sea,  
So, full content shall henceforth be my lot?  
What think you, poet? Louder! Your clear  
voice

Vibrates too like a harp-string. Do you ask  
How could I still remain on earth, should God  
Grant me the great approval which I seek?

I, you, and God can comprehend each other,  
But men would murmur, and with cause  
enough ;

For when they saw me, stainless of all sin,  
Preserved and sanctified by inward light,  
They would complain that comfort, shut from  
them,

I drank thus unspied ; that they live on,  
Nor taste the quiet of a constant joy,  
For ache and care and doubt and weariness,  
While I am calm ; help being vouchsafed to me,  
And hid from them.—'Twere best consider  
that !

You reason well, Aprile ; but at least  
Let me know this, and die ! Is this too much ?  
I will learn this, if God so please, and die !

If thou shalt please, dear God, if thou shalt  
please !

We are so weak, we know our motives least  
In their confused beginning. If at first  
I sought . . . but wherefore bare my heart  
to thee ?

I know thy mercy ; and already thoughts  
Flock fast about my soul to comfort it,  
And intimate I cannot wholly fail,  
For love and praise would clasp me willingly  
Could I resolve to seek them. Thou art good,  
And I should be content. Yet—yet first show  
I have done wrong in daring ! Rather give  
The supernatural consciousness of strength  
Which fed my youth ! Only one hour of that  
With thee to help—O what should bar me  
then !

Lost, lost ! Thus things are ordered here !  
God's creatures,

And yet he takes no pride in us !—none, none !  
Truly there needs another life to come !  
If this be all—(I must tell Festus that)  
And other life await us not—for one,  
I say 'tis a poor cheat, a stupid bungle,  
A wretched failure. I, for one, protest  
Against it, and I hurl it back with scorn.

Well, onward though alone ! Small time  
remains,

And much to do : I must have fruit, must reap

Some profit from my toils. I doubt my body  
Will hardly serve me through ; while I have  
laboured

It has decayed ; and now that I demand  
Its best assistance, it will crumble fast :  
A sad thought, a sad fate ! How very full  
Of wormwood 'tis, that just at altar-service,  
The rapt hymn rising with the rolling smoke,  
When glory dawns and all is at the best,  
The sacred fire may flicker and grow faint  
And die for want of a wood-piler's help !  
Thus fades the flagging body, and the soul  
Is pulled down in the overthrow. Well,  
well—

Let men catch every word, let them lose  
nought

Of what I say ; something may yet be done.

They are ruins ! Trust me who am one of you !  
All ruins, glorious once, but lonely now.

It makes my heart sick to behold you crouch  
Beside your desolate fane : the arches dim,  
The crumbling columns grand against the  
moon,

Could I but rear them up once more—but that  
May never be, so leave them ! Trust me,  
friends,

Why should you linger here when I have built  
A far resplendent temple, all your own ?  
Trust me, they are but ruins ! See, Aprile,  
Men will not heed ! Yet were I not prepared  
With better refuge for them, tongue of mine  
Should ne'er reveal how blank their dwelling  
is :

I would sit down in silence with the rest.

Ha, what ? you spit at me, you grin and shriek  
Contempt into my ear—my ear which drank  
God's accents once ? you curse me ? Why  
men, men,

I am not formed for it ! Those hideous eyes  
Will be before me sleeping, waking, praying,  
They will not let me even die. Spare, spare  
me,

Sinning or no, forget that, only spare me  
The horrible scorn ! You thought I could  
support it.

But now you see what silly fragile creature

Cowers thus. I am not good nor bad enough,  
Not Christ nor Cain, yet even Cain was saved  
From Hate like this. Let me but totter back!  
Perhaps I shall elude those jeers which creep  
Into my very brain, and shut these scorched  
Eyelids and keep those mocking faces out.

Listen, Aprile! I am very calm:  
Be not deceived, there is no passion here  
Where the blood leaps like an imprisoned  
thing:

I am calm: I will exterminate the race!  
Enough of that: 'tis said and it shall be.  
And now be merry: safe and sound am I  
Who broke through their best ranks to get  
at you.

And such a havoc, such a rout, Aprile!

*Festus.* Have you no thought, no memory  
for me,

Aureole? I am so wretched—my pure Michal  
Is gone, and you alone are left me now,  
And even you forget me. Take my hand—  
Lean on me thus. Do you not know me,  
Aureole?

*Paracelsus.* Festus, my own friend, you  
are come at last?

As you say, 'tis an awful enterprise;  
But you believe I shall go through with it:  
'Tis like you, and I thank you. Thank him  
for me,

Dear Michal! See how bright St. Saviour's  
spire

Flames in the sunset; all its figures quaint  
Gay in the glancing light: you might con-  
ceive them

A troop of yellow-vested white-haired Jews  
Bound for their own land where redemption  
dawns.

*Festus.* Not that blest time—not our  
youth's time, dear God!

*Paracelsus.* Ha—stay! true, I forget—all  
is done since,

And he is come to judge me. How he speaks,  
How calm, how well! yes, it is true, all true;  
All quackery; all deceit; myself can laugh  
The first at it, if you desire: but still  
You know the obstacles which taught me tricks  
So foreign to my nature—envy and hate,

Blind opposition, brutal prejudice,  
Bald ignorance—what wonder if I sunk  
To humour men the way they most approved?  
My cheats were never palmed on such as you,  
Dear Festus! I will kneel if you require me,  
Impart the meagre knowledge I possess,  
Explain its bounded nature, and avow  
My insufficiency—whate'er you will:  
I give the fight up: let there be an end,  
A privacy, an obscure nook for me.  
I want to be forgotten even by God.

But if that cannot be, dear Festus, lay me,  
When I shall die, within some narrow grave,  
Not by itself—for that would be too proud—  
But where such graves are thickest; let it look  
Nowise distinguished from the hillocks round,  
So that the peasant at his brother's bed  
May tread upon my own and know it not;  
And we shall all be equal at the last,  
Or classed according to life's natural ranks,  
Fathers, sons, brothers, friends—not rich,  
nor wise,

Nor gifted: lay me thus, then say, "He lived  
"Too much advanced before his brother men;  
"They kept him still in front: 'twas for  
their good

"But yet a dangerous station. It were strange  
"That he should tell God he had never ranked  
"With men: so, here at least he is a man."

*Festus.* That God shall take thee to his  
breast, dear spirit,  
Unto his breast, be sure! and here on earth  
Shall splendour sit upon thy name for ever.  
Sun! all the heaven is glad for thee: what  
care

If lower mountains light their snowy phares  
At thine effulgence, yet acknowledge not  
The source of day? Their theft shall be  
their bale:

For after-ages shall retrack thy beams,  
And put aside the crowd of busy ones  
And worship thee alone—the master-mind,  
The thinker, the explorer, the creator!  
Then, who should sneer at the convulsive  
throes

With which thy deeds were born, would  
scorn as well

The sheet of winding subterraneous fire

Which, pent and writhing, sends no less at last  
Huge islands up amid the simmering sea.  
Behold thy might in me ! thou hast infused  
Thy soul in mine ; and I am grand as thou,  
Seeing I comprehend thee—I so simple,  
Thou so august. I recognize thee first ;  
I saw thee rise, I watched thee early and late,  
And though no glance reveal thou dost accept  
My homage—thus no less I proffer it,  
And bid thee enter gloriously thy rest.

*Paracelsus.* Festus !

*Festus.* I am for noble Aureole, God !  
I am upon his side, come weal or woe.  
His portion shall be mine. He has done well.  
I would have sinned, had I been strong enough,  
As he has sinned. Reward him or I waive  
Reward ! If thou canst find no place for him,  
He shall be king elsewhere, and I will be  
His slave for ever. There are two of us.

*Paracelsus.* Dear Festus !

*Festus.* Here, dear Aureole ! ever  
by you !

*Paracelsus.* Nay, speak on, or I dream  
again. Speak on !

Some story, anything—only your voice.  
I shall dream else. Speak on ! ay, leaning so !

*Festus.* Thus the Mayne glideth  
Where my Love abideth.  
Sleep's no softer : it proceeds  
On through lawns, on through meads,  
On and on, whate'er befall,  
Meandering and musical,  
Though the niggard pasturage  
Bears not on its shaven ledge  
Aught but weeds and waving grasses  
To view the river as it passes,  
Save here and there a scanty patch  
Of primroses too faint to catch  
A weary bee.

*Paracelsus.* More, more ; say on !

*Festus.* And scarce it pushes  
Its gentle way through strangling rushes  
Where the glossy kingfisher  
Flutters when noon-heats are near,  
Glad the shelving banks to shun,  
Red and steaming in the sun,  
Where the shrew-mouse with pale throat  
Burrows, and the speckled stoat ;

Where the quick sandpipers flit  
In and out the marl and grit . . .  
That seems to breed them, brown as they :  
Nought disturbs its quiet way,  
Save some lazy stork that springs,  
Trailing it with legs and wings,  
Whom the shy fox from the hill  
Rouses, creep he ne'er so still.

*Paracelsus.* My heart ! they loose my  
heart, those simple words ;

Its darkness passes, which nought else could  
touch :

Likesome dark snake that force may not expel,  
Which glideth out to music sweet and low.

What were you doing when your voice broke  
through

A chaos of ugly images ? You, indeed !  
Are you alone here ?

*Festus.* All alone : you know me ?  
This cell ?

*Paracelsus.* An unexceptionable vault :  
Good brick and stone : the bats kept out,  
the rats

Kept in : a snug nook : how should I mis-  
take it ?

*Festus.* But wherefore am I here ?

*Paracelsus.* Ah, well remembered !  
Why, for a purpose—for a purpose, Festus !  
'Tis like me : here I trifle while time fleets,  
And this occasion, lost, will ne'er return.  
You are here to be instructed. I will tell  
God's message ; but I have so much to say,  
I fear to leave half out. All is confused  
No doubt ; but doubtless you will learn in  
time.

He would not else have brought you here :  
no doubt

I shall see clearer soon.

*Festus.* Tell me but this—  
You are not in despair ?

*Paracelsus.* I ? and for what ?

*Festus.* Alas, alas ! he knows not, as I  
feared !

*Paracelsus.* What is it you would ask me  
with that earnest

Dear searching face ?

*Festus.* How feel you, Aureole ?

*Paracelsus.* Well :

Well. 'Tis a strange thing: I am dying,

Festus,

And now that fast the storm of life subsides,  
I first perceive how great the whirl has been.  
I was calm then, who am so dizzy now—  
Calm in the thick of the tempest, but no less  
A partner of its motion and mixed up  
With its career. The hurricane is spent,  
And the good boat speeds through the  
brightening weather;

But is it earth or sea that heaves below?  
The gulf rolls like a meadow-swell, o'erstrewn  
With ravaged boughs and remnants of the  
shore;

And now some islet, loosened from the land,  
Swims past with all its trees, sailing to ocean;  
And now the air is full of upturn canes,  
Light strippings from the fan-trees, tamarisks  
Unrooted, with their birds still clinging to  
them,

All high in the wind. Even so my varied life  
Drifts by me; I am young, old, happy, sad,  
Hoping, desponding, acting, taking rest,  
And all at once: that is, those past conditions  
Float back at once on me. If I select  
Some special epoch from the crowd, 'tis but  
To will, and straight the rest dissolve away,  
And only that particular state is present  
With all its long-forgotten circumstance  
Distinct and vivid as at first—myself  
A careless looker-on and nothing more,  
Indifferent and amused, but nothing more.  
And this is death: I understand it all.  
New being waits me; new perceptions must  
Be born in me before I plunge therein;  
Which last is Death's affair; and while I  
speak,

Minute by minute he is filling me  
With power; and while my foot is on the  
threshold

Of boundless life—the doors unopened yet,  
All preparations not complete within—  
I turn new knowledge upon old events,  
And the effect is . . . but I must not tell;  
It is not lawful. Your own turn will come  
One day. Wait, Festus! You will die like me.

Festus. 'Tis of that past life that I burn to  
hear.

Paracelsus. You wonder it engages me just  
now?

In truth, I wonder too. What's life to me?  
Where'er I look is fire, where'er I listen  
Music, and where I tend bliss evermore.  
Yet how can I refrain? 'Tis a refined  
Delight to view those chances,—one last view.  
I am so near the perils I escape,  
That I must play with them and turn them  
over,

To feel how fully they are past and gone.  
Still, it is like, some further cause exists  
For this peculiar mood—some hidden pur-  
pose;

Did I not tell you something of it, Festus?  
I had it fast, but it has somehow slipped  
Away from me; it will return anon.

Festus. (Indeed his cheek seems young  
again, his voice

Complete with its old tones: that little laugh  
Concluding every phrase, with upturned eye,  
As though one stooped above his head to  
whom

He looked for confirmation and approval,  
Where was it gone so long, so well preserved?  
Then, the fore-finger pointing as he speaks,  
Like one who traces in an open book  
The matter he declares; 'tis many a year  
Since I remarked it last: and this in him,  
But now a ghastly wreck!)

And can it be,  
Dear Aureole, you have then found out at last  
That worldly things are utter vanity?  
That man is made for weakness, and should  
wait

In patient ignorance, till God appoint . . .

Paracelsus. Ha, the purpose: the true pur-  
pose: that is it!

How could I fail to apprehend! You here,  
I thus! But no more trifling: I see all,  
I know all: my last mission shall be done  
If strength suffice. No trifling! Stay; this  
posture

Hardly befits one thus about to speak:  
I will arise.

Festus. Nay, Aureole, are you wild?  
You cannot leave your couch.

Paracelsus. No help; no help;



- Not even your hand. So! there, I stand  
once more!
- Speak from a couch? I never lectured thus.  
My gown—the scarlet lined with fur; now  
put  
The chain about my neck; my signet-ring  
Is still upon my hand, I think—even so;  
Last, my good sword; ah, trusty Azoth,  
leanest  
Beneath thy master's grasp for the last time?  
This couch shall be my throne: I bid these  
walls  
Be consecrate, this wretched cell become  
A shrine, for here God speaks to men through  
me.  
Now, Festus, I am ready to begin.  
*Festus.* I am dumb with wonder.  
*Paracelsus.* Listen, therefore, Festus!  
There will be time enough, but none to spare.  
I must content myself with telling only  
The most important points. You doubtless  
feel  
That I am happy, Festus; very happy.  
*Festus.* 'Tis no delusion which uplifts him  
thus!
- Then you are pardoned, Aureole, all your sin?  
*Paracelsus.* Ay, pardoned: yet why pardoned?  
*Festus.* 'Tis God's praise  
That man is bound to seek, and you . . .  
*Paracelsus.* Have lived!  
We have to live alone to set forth well  
God's praise. 'Tis true, I sinned much, as  
I thought,  
And in effect need mercy, for I strove  
To do that very thing; but, do your best  
Or worst, praise rises, and will rise for ever.  
Pardon from him, because of praise denied—  
Who calls me to himself to exalt himself?  
He might laugh as I laugh!
- Festus.* But all comes  
To the same thing. 'Tis fruitless for mankind  
To fret themselves with what concerns them  
not;  
They are no use that way: they should lie  
down  
Content as God has made them, nor go mad  
In thriveless cares to better what is ill.
- Paracelsus.* No, no; mistake me not; let  
me not work  
More harm than I have worked! This is  
my case:  
If I go joyous back to God, yet bring  
No offering, if I render up my soul  
Without the fruits it was ordained to bear,  
If I appear the better to love God  
For sin, as one who has no claim on him,—  
Be not deceived! It may be surely thus  
With me, while higher prizes still await  
The mortal persevering to the end.  
Beside I am not all so valueless:  
I have been something, though too soon I left  
Following the instincts of that happy time.  
*Festus.* What happy time? For God's sake,  
for man's sake,  
What time was happy? All I hope to know  
That answer will decide. What happy time?  
*Paracelsus.* When but the time I vowed  
myself to man?  
*Festus.* Great God, thy judgments are  
inscrutable!  
*Paracelsus.* Yes, it was in me; I was born  
for it—  
I, Paracelsus: it was mine by right.  
Doubtless a searching and impetuous soul  
Might learn from its own motions that some  
task  
Like this awaited it about the world;  
Might seek somewhere in this blank life of  
ours  
For fit delights to stay its longings vast;  
And, grappling Nature, so prevail on her  
To fill the creature full she dared thus frame  
Hungry for joy; and, bravely tyrannous,  
Grow in demand, still craving more and more,  
And make each joy conceded prove a pledge  
Of other joy to follow—bating nought  
Of its desires, still seizing fresh pretence  
To turn the knowledge and the rapture  
wring  
As an extreme, last boon, from destiny,  
Into occasion for new covetings,  
New strifes, new triumphs:—doubtless a  
strong soul,  
Alone, unaided might attain to this,  
So glorious is our nature, so august

Man's inborn uninstructed impulses,  
His naked spirit so majestic !  
But this was born in me ; I was made so ;  
Thus much time saved : the feverish appetites,  
The tumult of unproved desire, the unaimed  
Uncertain yearnings, aspirations blind,  
Distrust, mistake, and all that ends in tears  
Were saved me ; thus I entered on my course.  
You may be sure I was not all exempt  
From human trouble ; just so much of doubt  
As bade me plant a surer foot upon  
The sun-road, kept my eye unruined 'mid  
The fierce and flashing splendour, set my  
heart

Trembling so much as warned me I stood  
there

On sufferance—not to idly gaze, but cast  
Light on a darkling race ; save for that doubt,  
I stood at first where all aspire at last  
To stand : the secret of the world was mine.  
I knew, I felt, (perception unexpressed,  
Uncomprehended by our narrow thought,  
But somehow felt and known in every shift  
And change in the spirit,—nay, in every pore  
Of the body, even,)—what God is, what we  
are,

What life is—how God tastes an infinite joy  
In infinite ways—one everlasting bliss,  
From whom all being emanates, all power  
Proceeds ; in whom is life for evermore,  
Yet whom existence in its lowest form  
Includes ; where dwells enjoyment there is  
he :

With still a flying point of bliss remote,  
A happiness in store afar, a sphere  
Of distant glory in full view ; thus climbs  
Pleasure its heights for ever and for ever.  
The centre-fire heaves underneath the earth,  
And the earth changes like a human face ;  
The molten ore bursts up among the rocks,  
Winds into the stone's heart, outbranches  
bright

In hidden mines, spots barren river-beds,  
Crumbles into fine sand where sunbeams  
bask—

God joys therein. The wroth sea's waves  
are edged

With foam, white as the bitten lip of hate,

When, in the solitary waste, strange groups  
Of young volcanos come up, cyclops-like,  
Staring together with their eyes on flame—  
God tastes a pleasure in their uncouth pride.  
Then all is still ; earth is a wintry clod :  
But spring-wind, like a dancing psaltress,  
passes

Over its breast to waken it, rare verdure  
Buds tenderly upon rough banks, between  
The withered tree-roots and the cracks of  
frost,

Like a smile striving with a wrinkled face ;  
The grass grows bright, the boughs are  
swoln with blooms

Like chrysalids impatient for the air,  
The shining dorrs are busy, beetles run  
Along the furrows, ants make their ado ;  
Above, birds fly in merry flocks, the lark  
Soars up and up, shivering for very joy ;  
Afar the ocean sleeps ; white fishing-gulls  
Flit where the strand is purple with its tribe  
Of nested limpets ; savage creatures seek  
Their loves in wood and plain—and God  
renews

His ancient rapture. Thus he dwells in all,  
From life's minute beginnings, up at last  
To man—the consummation of this scheme  
Of being, the completion of this sphere  
Of life : whose attributes had here and there  
Been scattered o'er the visible world before,  
Asking to be combined, dim fragments meant  
To be united in some wondrous whole,  
Imperfect qualities throughout creation,  
Suggesting some one creature yet to make,  
Some point where all those scattered rays  
should meet

Convergent in the faculties of man.  
Power—neither put forth blindly, nor con-  
trolled

Calmly by perfect knowledge ; to be used  
At risk, inspired or checked by hope and fear :  
Knowledge—not intuition, but the slow  
Uncertain fruit of an enhancing toil,  
Strengthened by love : love—not serenely pure,  
But strong from weakness, like a chance-sown  
plant

Which, cast on stubborn soil, puts forth  
changed buds

And softer stains, unknown in happier climes;  
Love which endures and doubts and is oppressed

And cherished, suffering much and much sustained,

And blind, oft-failing, yet believing love,  
A half-enlightened, often-chequered trust :—  
Hints and previsions of which faculties,  
Are strewn confusedly everywhere about  
The inferior natures, and all lead up higher,  
All shape out dimly the superior race,  
The heir of hopes too fair to turn out false,  
And man appears at last. So far the seal  
Is put on life ; one stage of being complete,  
One scheme wound up : and from the grand result

A supplementary reflux of light,  
Illustrates all the inferior grades, explains  
Each back step in the circle. Not alone  
For their possessor dawn those qualities,  
But the new glory mixes with the heaven  
And earth ; man, once descried, imprints for ever

His presence on all lifeless things : the winds  
Are henceforth voices, wailing or a shout,  
A querulous mutter or a quick gay laugh,  
Never a senseless gust now man is born.

The herded pines commune and have deep thoughts,

A secret they assemble to discuss

When the sun drops behind their trunks which glare

Like grates of hell : the peerless cup afloat  
Of the lake-lily is an urn, some nymph  
Swims bearing high above her head : no bird  
Whistles unseen, but through the gaps above  
That let light in upon the gloomy woods,  
A shape peeps from the breezy forest-top,  
Arch with small puckered mouth and mocking eye.

The morn has enterprise, deep quiet droops  
With evening, triumph takes the sunset hour,  
Voluptuous transport ripens with the corn  
Beneath a warm moon like a happy face :  
—And this to fill us with regard for man.  
With apprehension of his passing worth,  
Desire to work his proper nature out,  
And ascertain his rank and final place,

For these things tend still upward, progress is  
The law of life, man is not Man as yet.

Nor shall I deem his object served, his end  
Attained, his genuine strength put fairly forth,

While only here and there a star dispels  
The darkness, here and there a towering mind  
O'erlooks its prostrate fellows : when the host  
Is out at once to the despair of night,  
When all mankind alike is perfected,  
Equal in full-blown powers—then, not till then,

I say, begins man's general infancy.  
For wherefore make account of feverish starts  
Of restless members of a dormant whole,  
Impatient nerves which quiver while the body  
Slumbers as in a grave? Oh long ago  
The brow was twitched, the tremulous lids astir,

The peaceful mouth disturbed ; half-uttered speech

Ruffled the lip, and then the teeth were set,  
The breath drawn sharp, the strong right-hand  
clenched stronger,

As it would pluck a lion by the jaw ;  
The glorious creature laughed out even in sleep !

But when full roused, each giant-limb awake,  
Each sinew strung, the great heart pulsing fast,  
He shall start up and stand on his own earth,  
Then shall his long triumphant march begin,  
Thence shall his being date,—thus wholly roused,

What he achieves shall be set down to him.  
When all the race is perfected alike  
As man, that is ; all tended to mankind,  
And, man produced, all has its end thus far :  
But in completed man begins anew  
A tendency to God. Prognostics told  
Man's near approach ; so in man's self arise  
August anticipations, symbols, types  
Of a dim splendour ever on before  
In that eternal circle life pursues.

For men begin to pass their nature's bound,  
And find new hopes and cares which fast supplant

Their proper joys and griefs ; they grow too great

For narrow creeds of right and wrong, which  
fade

Before the unmeasured thirst for good : while  
peace

Rises within them ever more and more.

Such men are even now upon the earth,  
Serene amid the half-formed creatures round  
Who should be saved by them and joined  
with them.

Such was my task, and I was born to it—  
Free, as I said but now, from much that chains  
Spirits, high-dowered but limited and vexed  
By a divided and delusive aim,

A shadow mocking a reality

Whose truth avails not wholly to disperse  
The flitting mimic called up by itself,  
And so remains perplexed and nigh put out  
By its fantastic fellow's wavering gleam.

I, from the first, was never cheated thus ;

I never fashioned out a fancied good

Distinct from man's ; a service to be done,

A glory to be ministered unto

With powers put forth at man's expense,  
withdrawn

From labouring in his behalf ; a strength  
Denied that might avail him. I cared not  
Lest his success ran counter to success  
Elsewhere : for God is glorified in man,  
And to man's glory vowed I soul and limb.  
Yet, constituted thus, and thus endowed,  
I failed : I gazed on power till I grew blind.  
Power ; I could not take my eyes from that :  
That only, I thought, should be preserved,  
increased

At any risk, displayed, struck out at once—  
The sign and note and character of man.

I saw no use in the past : only a scene  
Of degradation, ugliness and tears,  
The record of disgraces best forgotten,  
A sullen page in human chronicles  
Fit to erase. I saw no cause why man  
Should not stand all-sufficient even now,  
Or why his annals should be forced to tell  
That once the tide of light, about to break  
Upon the world, was sealed within its spring :  
I would have had one day, one moment's space,  
Change man's condition, push each slumber-  
ing claim

Of mastery o'er the elemental world  
At once to full maturity, then roll  
Oblivion o'er the work, and hide from man  
What night had ushered morn. Not so, dear  
child

Of after-days, wilt thou reject the past  
Big with deep warnings of the proper tenure  
By which thou hast the earth : for thee the  
present

Shall have distinct and trembling beauty, seen  
Beside that past's own shade when, in relief,  
Its brightness shall stand out : nor yet on thee  
Shall burst the future, as successive zones  
Of several wonder open on some spirit  
Flying secure and glad from heaven to heaven :  
But thou shalt painfully attain to joy,  
While hope and fear and love shall keep thee  
man !

All this was hid from me : as one by one  
My dreams grew dim, my wide aims circum-  
scribed,

As actual good within my reach decreased,  
While obstacles sprung up this way and that  
To keep me from effecting half the sum,  
Small as it proved ; as objects, mean within  
The primal aggregate, seemed, even the least,  
Itself a match for my concentrated strength—  
What wonder if I saw no way to shun  
Despair ? The power I sought for man,  
seemed God's.

In this conjuncture, as I prayed to die,  
A strange adventure made me know, one sin  
Had spotted my career from its uprise ;  
I saw Aprile—my Aprile there !

And as the poor melodious wretch dis-  
burthened

His heart, and moaned his weakness in my  
ear,

I learned my own deep error ; love's undoing  
Taught me the worth of love in man's  
estate,

And what proportion love should hold with  
power

In his right constitution ; love preceding  
Power, and with much power, always much  
more love ;

Love still too straitened in his present means,  
And earnest for new power to set love free.

I learned this, and supposed the whole was learned :

And thus, when men received with stupid wonder

My first revealings, would have worshipped me,  
And I despised and loathed their proffered praise—

When, with awakened eyes, they took revenge  
For past credulity in casting shame  
On my real knowledge, and I hated them—  
It was not strange I saw no good in man,  
To overbalance all the wear and waste  
Of faculties, displayed in vain, but born

To prosper in some better sphere : and why ?  
In my own heart love had not been made wise  
To trace love's faint beginnings in mankind,  
To know even hate is but a mask of love's,  
To see a good in evil, and a hope  
In ill-success ; to sympathize, be proud  
Of their half-reasons, faint aspirings, dim  
Struggles for truth, their poorest fallacies,  
Their prejudice and fears and cares and doubts ;

All with a touch of nobleness, despite  
Their error, upward tending all though weak,  
Like plants in mines which never saw the sun,  
But dream of him, and guess where he may be,  
And do their best to climb and get to him.  
All this I knew not, and I failed. Let men  
Regard me, and the poet dead long ago  
Who loved too rashly ; and shape forth a third  
And better-tempered spirit, warned by both :  
As from the over-radiant star too mad  
To drink the life-springs, beamless thence  
itself—

And the dark orb which borders the abyss,  
Ingulfed in icy night,—might have its course  
A temperate and equidistant world.  
Meanwhile, I have done well, though not  
all well.

As yet men cannot do without contempt ;  
'Tis for their good, and therefore fit awhile  
That they reject the weak, and scorn the false,  
Rather than praise the strong and true, in me :  
But after, they will know me. If I stoop  
Into a dark tremendous sea of cloud,  
It is but for a time ; I press God's lamp  
Close to my breast ; its splendour, soon or late,

Will pierce the gloom : I shall emerge one day.  
You understand me ? I have said enough ?

*Festus.* Now die, dear Aureole !

*Paracelsus.* Festus, let my hand—

This hand, lie in your own, my own true friend !

Aprile ! Hand in hand with you, Aprile !

*Festus.* And this was Paracelsus !

## NOTE.

THE liberties I have taken with my subject are very trifling ; and the reader may slip the foregoing scenes between the leaves of any memoir of Paracelsus he pleases, by way of commentary. To prove this, I subjoin a popular account, translated from the " *Biographie Universelle*, Paris," 1822, which I select, not as the best, certainly, but as being at hand, and sufficiently concise for my purpose. I also append a few notes, in order to correct those parts which do not bear out my own view of the character of Paracelsus ; and have incorporated with them a notice or two, illustrative of the poem itself.

" PARACELSUS (Philippus Aureolus Theophrastus Bombastus ab Hohenheim) was born in 1493 at Einsiedeln, <sup>(1)</sup> a little town in the canton of Schwyz, some leagues distant from Zurich. His father, who exercised the profession of medicine at Villach in Carinthia, was nearly related to George Bombast de Hohenheim, who became afterward Grand Prior of the Order of Malta : consequently Paracelsus could not spring from the dregs of the people, as Thomas Erastus, his sworn enemy, pretends.\* It appears that his elementary education was much neglected, and that he spent part of his youth in pursuing the life common to the travelling *literati* of the age ; that is to say, in wandering from country to country, predicting the future by astrology and chiromancy, evoking apparitions, and practising the

\* I shall disguise M. Renaudin's next sentence a little. " *Hic (Erastus sc.) Paracelsum trimum a milite quodam, alii a sue exectum ferunt : constat imberbem illum, mulierumque osorem fuisse.*" A standing High-Dutch joke in those days at the expense of a number of learned men, as may be seen by referring to such rubbish at Melander's " *Jocoseria*," etc. In the prints from his portrait by Tinoretto, painted a year before his death, Paracelsus is *barbatulus*, at all events. But Erastus was never without a good reason for his faith—e.g. " *Helvetium fuisse (Paracelsum) vix credo, vix enim ea regio tale monstrum ediderit.*" (De Medicina Nova.)

different operations of magic and alchemy, in which he had been initiated whether by his father or by various ecclesiastics, among the number of whom he particularizes the Abbot Tritheim, (2) and many German bishops.

"As Paracelsus displays everywhere an ignorance of the rudiments of the most ordinary knowledge, it is not probable that he ever studied seriously in the schools: he contented himself with visiting the Universities of Germany, France, and Italy; and in spite of his boasting himself to have been the ornament of those institutions, there is no proof of his having legally acquired the title of Doctor, which he assumes. It is only known that he applied himself long, under the direction of the wealthy Sigismund Fugger of Schwatz, to the discovery of the *Magnum Opus*.

"Paracelsus travelled among the mountains of Bohemia, in the East, and in Sweden, in order to inspect the labours of the miners, to be initiated in the mysteries of the oriental adepts, and to observe the secrets of nature and the famous mountain of loadstone. (3) He professes also to have visited Spain, Portugal, Prussia, Poland, and Transylvania; everywhere communicating freely, not merely with the physicians, but the old women, charlatans and conjurers of these several lands. It is even believed that he extended his journeyings as far as Egypt and Tartary, and that he accompanied the son of the Khan of the Tartars to Constantinople, for the purpose of obtaining the secret of the tincture of Trismegistus from a Greek who inhabited that capital.

"The period of his return to Germany is unknown: it is only certain that, at about the age of thirty-three, many astonishing cures which he wrought on eminent personages procured him such a celebrity, that he was called in 1526, on the recommendation of Ecolampadius, (4) to fill a chair of physic and surgery at the University of Basil. There Paracelsus began by burning publicly in the amphitheatre the works of Avicenna and Galen, assuring his auditors that the latches of his shoes were more instructed than those two physicians; that all Universities, all writers put together, were less gifted than the hairs of his beard and of the crown of his head; and that, in a word, he was to be regarded as the legitimate monarch of medicine. 'You shall follow me,' cried he, 'you, Avicenna, Galen, Rhasis, Montagnana, Mesues, you, gentlemen of Paris, Montpellier, Germany, Cologne, Vienna,\* and whosoever

the Rhine and Danube nourish; you who inhabit the isles of the sea; you, likewise, Dalmatians, Athenians; thou, Arab; thou, Greek; thou, Jew: all shall follow me, and the monarchy shall be mine.' †

"But at Basil it was speedily perceived that the new Professor was no better than an egregious quack. Scarcely a year elapsed before his lectures had fairly driven away an audience incapable of comprehending their emphatic jargon. That which above all contributed to sully his reputation was the debauched life he led. According to the testimony of Oporinus, who lived two years in his intimacy, Paracelsus scarcely ever ascended the lecture-desk unless half drunk, and only dictated to his secretaries when in a state of intoxication: if summoned to attend the sick, he rarely proceeded thither without previously drenching himself with wine. He was accustomed to retire to bed without changing his clothes; sometimes he spent the night in pot-houses with peasants, and in the morning knew no longer what he was about; and, nevertheless, up to the age of twenty-five his only drink had been water. (5)

"At length, fearful of being punished for a serious outrage on a magistrate, (6) he fled from Basil towards the end of the year 1527, and took refuge in Alsatia, whither he caused Oporinus to follow with his chemical apparatus.

"He then entered once more upon the career of ambulatory theosophist. ‡ Accordingly we find him at Colmar in 1528; at Nuremberg in 1529; at St. Gall in 1531; at Pfeffers in 1535; and at Augsburg in 1536: he next made some stay in Moravia, where he still further compromised his reputation by the loss of many distinguished patients, which compelled him

† See his works *passim*. I must give one specimen:—Somebody had been styling him "Luther alter." "And why not?" (he asks, as he well might). "Luther is abundantly learned, therefore you hate him and me; but we are at least a match for you.—Nam et contra vos et vestros universos principes Avicennam, Galenum, Aristotelem, etc. me satis superque munitum esse novi. Et vertex iste meus calvus ac depilis multo plura et sublimiora novit quam vester vel Avicenna vel universæ academix. Prodit, et signum date, qui viri sitis, quid roboris habeatis? quid autem sitis? Doctores et magistri, pediculos pectentes et fricantes pedicem." (Frag. Med.)

‡ "So migratory a life could afford Paracelsus but little leisure for application to books, and accordingly he informs us that for the space of ten years he never opened a single volume, and that his whole medical library was not composed of six sheets: in effect, the inventory drawn up after his death states that the only books which he left were the Bible, the New Testament, the Commentaries of St. Jerome on the Gospels, a printed volume on Medicine, and seven manuscripts."

\* Erasmus, who relates this, here oddly remarks, "mirum quod non et Garamantes, Indos et Anglos adjunxit." Not so wonderful neither, if we believe what another adversary "had heard somewhere,"—that all Paracelsus' system came of his pillaging "Anglum quandam, Rogerium Bacchonem."

to betake himself to Vienna; from thence he passed into Hungary; and in 1538 was at Villach, where he dedicated his 'Chronicle' to the States of Carinthia, in gratitude for the many kindnesses with which they had honoured his father. Finally, from Mindelheim, which he visited in 1540, Paracelsus proceeded to Salzburg, where he died in the Hospital of St. Stephen (*Sebastian* is meant), Sept. 24, 1541. —(Here follows a criticism on his writings, which I omit.)

(1) *Paracelsus* would seem to be a fantastic version of *Von Hohenheim*; *Ein-siedeln* is the Latinized *Eremitus*, whence *Paracelsus* is sometimes called, as in the correspondence of Erasmus, *Eremita*; *Bombast*, his proper name, probably acquired, from the characteristic phraseology of his lectures, that unlucky signification which it has ever since retained.

(2) Then Bishop of Spanheim, and residing at Würzburg in Franconia; a town situated in a grassy fertile country, whence its name, *Herbipolis*. He was much visited there by learned men, as may be seen by his "Epistolæ Familiares," Hag. 1536: among others, by his staunch friend Cornelius Agrippa, to whom he dates thence, in 1510, a letter in answer to the dedicatory epistle prefixed to the treatise *De Occult. Philo-soph.*, which last contains the following ominous allusion to Agrippa's sojourn: "Quum nuper tecum, R. P. in cœnobio tuo apud Herbipolim aliquandiu conversatus, multa de chymicis, multa de magicis, multa de cabalisticis, cæterisque quæ adhuc in occulto delitescent, arcanis scientiis atque artibus una contulissimus," etc.

(3) "Inexplebilis illa aviditas naturæ perscrutandi secreta et reconditarum suppellectile scientiarum animum locupletandi, uno eodemque loco diu persistere non patiebatur, sed Mercurii instar, omnes terras, nationes et urbes perlustRANDI igniculos supponebat, ut cum viris naturæ scrutatoribus, chymicis præsertim, ore tenus conferret, et quæ diuturnis laboribus nocturnisque vigiliis invenerant una vel altera communicatione obtineret." (*Bitivklius* in *Præfat.*) "Patris auxilio primum, deinde propria industria doctissimos viros in Germania, Italia, Gallia, Hispania, aliisque Europæ regionibus, nactus est præceptores; quorum liberali doctrina, et potissimum propria inquisitione ut qui esset ingenio acutissimo ac fere divino, tantum profecit, ut multi testati sint, in universa philosophia, tam ardua, tam arcana et abdita eruisse mortalium neminem." (*Melch. Adam*, in *Vit. Germ. Medic.*) "*Paracelsus* qui in intima nature viscera sic penitus introierit, metallorum stirpiumque vires et facultates tam incredibili

ingenii acumine exploraverit ac perviderit, ad morbos omnes vel desperatos et opinione hominum insanabiles percurandum; ut cum Theophrasto nata primum medicina perfectaque videtur." (*Petri Rami Orat. de Basilea.*) His passion for wandering is best described in his own words: "Ecce amatorem adolescentem difficillimi itineris baud piget, ut venustam saltem puellam vel fœminam aspiciat: quanto minus nobilissimarum artium amore laboris ac cujuslibet tædi pugebit?" etc. ("Defensiones Septem adversus æmulos suos," 1573. Def. 4ta. "De peregrinationibus et exilio.")

(4) The reader may remember that it was in conjunction with *Æcolampadius*, then Divinity Professor at Basil, that *Zuinglius* published in 1528 an answer to Luther's Confession of Faith; and that both proceeded in company to the subsequent conference with Luther and Melancthon at Marburg. Their letters fill a large volume.—"D.D. Johannis Æcolampadii et Huldrici Zuinglii Epistolarum lib. quatuor," Bas. 1536. It must be also observed that *Zuinglius* began to preach in 1516, and at Zurich in 1519, and that in 1525 the Mass was abolished in the cantons. The tenets of *Æcolampadius* were supposed to be more evangelical than those up to that period maintained by the glorious German, and our brave Bishop Fisher, attacked them as the fouler heresy:—"About this time arose out of Luther's school one *Æcolampadius*, like a mighty and fierce giant; who, as his master had gone beyond the Church, went beyond his master (or else it had been impossible he could have been reputed the better scholar), who denied the real presence; him, this worthy champion (the Bishop) sets upon, and with five books (like so many smooth stones taken out of the river that doth always run with living water) slays the Philistine; which five books were written in the year of our Lord 1526, at which time he had governed the see of Rochester twenty years." (*Life of Bishop Fisher*, 1655.) Now, there is no doubt of the Protestantism of *Paracelsus*, Erasmus, Agrippa, etc., but the nonconformity of *Paracelsus* was always scandalous. L. Crasso ("Elogi d' Huomini Letterati," Ven. 1666) informs us that his books were excommunicated by the Church. Quenstedt (*de Patr. Doct.*) affirms "nec tantum novæ medicinæ, verum etiam novæ theologiæ autor est." Delrio, in his *Disquisit. Magicar.*, classes him among those "partim atheos, partim hæreticos" (lib. i. cap. 3). "Omnino tamen multa theologica in ejusdem scriptis plane atheismum olent, ac duriuscule sonant in auribus vere Christiani." (*D. Gabriels Claudi Schediasma de Tinct. Univ. Norimb.* 1736.) I shall only add one more authority:—"Oporianus dicit se (*Paracel-*

sum) aliquando Lutherum et Papam, non minus quam nunc Galenum et Hippocratem redacturum in ordinem munabatur, neque enim eorum qui hactenus in scripturam sacram scripsissent, sive veteres, sive recentiores, quoniam scripturæ nucleum recte eruisse, sed circa corticem et quasi membranam tantum hæreere." (Th. Erastus, Disputat. de Med. Nova.) These and similar notions had their due effect on Oporinus, who, says Zuingerus, in his "Theatrum," "longum vale dixit ei (Paracelso), ne ob præceptoris, aliqui amicissimi, horrendas blasphemias ipse quoque aliquando pœnas Deo Opt. Max. lueret."

(5) His defenders allow the drunkenness. Take a sample of their excuses: "Gentis hoc, non viri vitium est, a Taciti seculo ad nostrum usque non interrupto filo devolutum, sinceritati forte Germanæ cœvum, et nescio an aliquo consanguinitatis vinculo junctum." (Bitiskius.) The other charges were chiefly trumped up by Oporinus: "Domi, quod Oporinus amanuensius ejus sæpe narravit, nunquam nisi potus ad explicanda sua accessit, atque in medio conclavi ad columnam *τετυφωμένος* adstans, apprehenso manibus capulo ensis, cujus *κόλωμα* hospitium præbuit, ut aiunt, spiritui familiari, imaginationes aut concepta sua protulit:—alii illud quod in capulo habuit, ab ipso Azoth appellatum, medicinam fuisse præstantissimam aut lapidem Philosophicum putant." (Melch. Adam.) This famous sword was no laughing-matter in those days, and it is now a material feature in the popular idea of Paracelsus. I recollect a couple of allusions to it in our own literature, at the moment.

Ne had been known the Danish Gonswart,  
Or Paracelsus with his long sword.

'Volpone,' act ii. scene 2.

Bumbastus kept a devil's bird  
Shut in the pommel of his sword,  
That taught him all the cunning pranks  
Of past and future mountebanks.

'Hudibras,' part ii. cant. 3.

This Azoth was simply "*laudanum suum*." But in his time he was commonly believed to possess the double tincture—the power of curing diseases and transmuting metals. Oporinus often witnessed, as he declares, both these effects, as did also Francisus, the servant of Paracelsus, who describes, in a letter to Neander, a successful projection at which he was present, and the results of which, good golden ingots, were confided to his keeping. For the other quality, let the following notice vouch among many others:—"Degebat Theophrastus Norimbergæ prociis a medentibus illius urbis, et vaniloquus deceptorque proclamatus, qui, ut

laboranti famæ subveniat, viros quosdam authoritatis summæ in Republica illa adit, et infamiae amoliendæ, artique suæ asserendæ, specimen ejus pollicetur editurum, nullo stipendio vel accepto pretio, horum faciles præbentium aures jussu elephantiacos aliquot, a communi hominum cæterorum segregatos, et in valedudinarium detrusos, alieno arbitrio eliguntur, quos virtute singulari remediortum suorum Theophrastus a fœda Græcorum lepra mundat, pristinaque sanitati restituit; conservat illustre harum curationum urbs in archivis suis testimonium." (Bitiskius.)\* It is to be remarked that Oporinus afterwards repented of his treachery: "Sed respicit tandem, et quem vivum convitiis insectatus fuerat defunctum veneratione prosequitur, infames famæ præceptoris morsus in remorsus conscientie conversi pœnitentia, heu nimis tarda, vulnera claudere exanimi, quæ spiranti inflixerant." For these "bites" of Oporinus, see Disputat. Erasti, and Andreae Jocisci "Oratio de Vit. ob. Opori;" for the "remorse," Mlc. Toxita in pref. Testamenti, and Conringius (otherwise an enemy of Paracelsus), who says it was contained in a letter from Oporinus to Doctor Vegerus.†

Whatever the moderns may think of these marvellous attributes, the title of Paracelsus to be considered the father of modern chemistry is indisputable. Gerardus Vossius, "De Philos<sup>a</sup> et Philos<sup>um</sup> sectis," thus prefaces the ninth section of cap. 9, "De Chymia"—"Nobilem hanc medicinæ partem, diu sepultam avorum ætate, quasi ab orco revocavit Th. Paracelsus." I suppose many hints lie scattered in his neglected books, which clever appropriators have since developed with applause. Thus, it appears from his treatise "De Phlebotomia," and elsewhere, that he had discovered the circulation of the blood and the sanguification of the heart; as did after him Realdo Colombo, and still more perfectly Andrea Cesalpino of Arezzo, as Bayle and Bartoli observe. Even

\* The premature death of Paracelsus casts no manner of doubt on the fact of his having possessed the Elixir Vitæ: the alchemists have abundant reasons to adduce, from which I select the following, as explanatory of a property of the Tincture not calculated on by its votaries:—"Objectionem illam, quod Paracelsus non fuerit longævus, nonnulli quoque solvunt per rationes physicas; vitæ nimirum abbreviationem fortasse talibus accidere posse, ob Tincturam frequentiore ac largiore dosi sumtam, dum a summe efficaci et penetrabili hujus virtute calor innatus quasi suffocatur." (Gabrielis Clauderi Schediasma.)

† For a good defence of Paracelsus I refer the reader to Olaus Borrichius' treatise—"Hermetis ecc. Sapientia vindicata," 1674. Or, if he is no more learned than myself in such matters, I mention simply that Paracelsus introduced the use of Mercury and Laudanum.



Lavater quotes a passage from his work "De Natura Rerum," on practical Physiognomy, in which the definitions and axioms are precise enough: he adds, "though an astrological enthusiast, a man of prodigious genius." See Holcroft's translation, vol. iii. p. 179—"The Eyes." While on the subject of the writings of Paracelsus, I may explain a passage in the third part of the Poem. He was, as I have said, unwilling to publish his works, but in effect did publish a vast number. Valentius (in Præfat. in Paramyr.) declares "quod ad librorum Paracelsi copiam attinet, audio, a Germanis prope trecentos recenseri." "O fecunditas ingenii!" adds he, appositely. Many of these were, however, spurious; and Fred. Putschius gives his good edition (3 vols. fol. Gen. 1658) "rejectis suppositis solo ipsius nomine superbientibus quorum ingens circum fertur numerus." The rest were "charissimum et pretiosissimum authoris pignus, extorsum potius ab illo quam obtentum." "Jam minime eo volente atque iubente hæc ipsius scripta in lucem prodisse videntur; quippe quæ muro inclusa ipso absente, servi cujusdam indicio, fuito surrepta atque sublata sunt," says Valen-

tius. These have been the study of a host of commentators, amongst whose labours are most notable, Petri Severini, "Idea Medicinæ Philosophiæ. Bas. 1571;" Mic. Toxetis, "Onomastica. Arg. 1574;" Dornei, "Dict. Parac. Franc. 1584;" and "Pl Philos. Compendium cum scholiis auctore Leone Suavio. Paris." (This last, a good book.)

(6) A disgraceful affair. One Liechtenfels, a canon, having been rescued *in extremis* by the "*laudanum*" of Paracelsus, refused the stipulated fee, and was supported in his meanness by the authorities, whose interference Paracelsus would not brook. His own liberality was allowed by his bitterest foes, who found a ready solution of his indifference to profit in the aforesaid sword-handle and its guest. His freedom from the besetting sin of a profession he abhorred—(as he curiously says somewhere, "Quis quæso deinceps honorem deferat professione tali, quæ a tam facinorosis nebulonibus obitur et administratur?")—is recorded in his epitaph, which affirms—"Bona sua in pauperes distribuenda collocandaque erogavit," *honoravit*, or *ordinavit*—for accounts differ.

# STRAFFORD;

A TRAGEDY.

1837.

[Acted 1st May 1837 at Covent Garden Theatre, Mr. Macready as Strafford and Miss Helen Faucit as Lady Carlisle.]

DEDICATED, IN ALL AFFECTIONATE ADMIRATION,

TO

WILLIAM C. MACREADY.

LONDON: *April 23, 1837.*

## STRAFFORD.

### PERSONS.

CHARLES I.  
Earl of HOLLAND.  
Lord SAVILE.  
Sir HENRY VANE.  
WENTWORTH, Viscount WENTWORTH, Earl  
of STRAFFORD.  
JOHN PYM.  
JOHN HAMPDEN.  
The younger VANE.  
DENZIL HOLLIS.  
BENJAMIN RUDYARD.  
NATHANIEL FIENNES.  
Earl of LOUDON.  
MAXWELL, *Usher of the Black Rod.*  
BALFOUR, *Constable of the Tower.*  
*A Puritan.*  
Queen HENRIETTA.  
LUCY PERCY, Countess of Carlisle.

*Presbyterians, Scots Commissioners, Adherents  
of Strafford, Secretaries, Officers of the  
Court, &c. Two of Strafford's children.*

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*A House near Whitehall.* HAMPDEN, HOLLIS, the younger VANE, RUDYARD, FIENNES and many of the Presbyterian Party: LOUDON and other Scots Commissioners.

Vane. I say, if he be here—

Rudyard. (And he is here!)

Hollis. For England's sake let every man be still

Nor speak of him, so much as say his name,  
Till Pym rejoin us! Rudyard! Henry Vane!  
One rash conclusion may decide our course  
And with it England's fate—think—England's fate!

Hampden, for England's sake they should be still!

Vane. You say so, Hollis? Well, I must be still.

It is indeed too bitter that one man,  
Any one man's mere presence, should suspend

England's combined endeavour: little need  
To name him!

Rudyard. For you are his brother, Hollis!

Hampden. Shame on you, Rudyard! time to tell him that,

When he forgets the Mother of us all.

Rudyard. Do I forget her?

Hampden. You talk idle hate  
Against her foe: is that so strange a thing?  
Is hating Wentworth all the help she needs?

A Puritan. The Philistine strode, cursing  
as he went:

But David—five smooth pebbles from the brook

Within his scrip . . .

Rudyard. Be you as still as David!

Fiennes. Here's Rudyard not ashamed to wag a tongue

Stiff with ten years' disuse of Parliaments ;  
Why, when the last sat, Wentworth sat with  
us !

*Rudyard.* Let's hope for news of them now  
he returns—

He that was safe in Ireland, as we thought !  
—But I'll abide Pym's coming.

*Vane.* Now, by Heaven,  
They may be cool who can, silent who will—  
Some have a gift that way ! Wentworth is here,  
Here, and the King's safe closeted with him  
Ere this. And when I think on all that's past  
Since that man left us, how his single arm  
Rolled the advancing good of England back  
And set the woeful past up in its place,  
Exalting Dagon where the Ark should be,—  
How that man has made firm the fickle King  
(Hampden, I will speak out !)—in aught he  
feared

To venture on before ; taught tyranny  
Her dismal trade, the use of all her tools,  
To ply the scourge yet screw the gag so close  
That strangled agony bleeds mute to death ;  
How he turns Ireland to a private stage  
For training infant villanies, new ways  
Of wringing treasure out of tears and blood,  
Unheard oppressions nourished in the dark  
To try how much man's nature can endure  
—If he dies under it, what harm ? if not,  
Why, one more trick is added to the rest  
Worth a king's knowing, and what Ireland  
bears

England may learn to bear :—how all this  
while

That man has set himself to one dear task,  
The bringing Charles to relish more and more  
Power, power without law, power and blood  
too

—Can I be still ?

*Hampden.* For that you should be still.

*Vane.* Oh Hampden, then and now ! The  
year he left us,

The People in full Parliament could wrest  
The Bill of Rights from the reluctant King ;  
And now, he'll find in an obscure small room  
A stealthy gathering of great-hearted men  
That take up England's cause : England is  
here !

*Hampden.* And who despairs of England ?

*Rudyard.* That do I,

If Wentworth comes to rule her. I am sick  
To think her wretched masters, Hamilton,  
The muckworm Cottington, the maniac Laud,  
May yet be longed-for back again. I say,  
I do despair.

*Vane.* And, Rudyard, I'll say this—  
Which all true men say after me, not loud  
But solemnly and as you'd say a prayer !  
This King, who treads our England underfoot,  
Has just so much . . . it may be fear or craft,  
As bids him pause at each fresh outrage ;  
friends,

He needs some sterner hand to grasp his own,  
Some voice to ask, "Why shrink ? Am I  
not by ?"

Now, one whom England loved for serving  
her,

Found in his heart to say, "I know where best  
"The iron heel shall bruise her, for she leans  
"Upon me when you trample." Witness, you !  
So Wentworth heartened Charles, so England  
fell.

But inasmuch as life is hard to take  
From England . . .

*Many Voices.* Go on, Vane ! 'Tis well  
said, Vane !

*Vane.* —Who has not so forgotten Runny-  
mead !—

*Voices.* 'Tis well and bravely spoken,  
Vane ! Go on !

*Vane.* —There are some little signs of late  
she knows

The ground no place for her. She glances  
round,

Wentworth has dropped the hand, is gone  
his way

On other service : what if she arise ?

No ! the King beckons, and beside him stands  
The same bad man once more, with the same  
smile

And the same gesture. Now shall England  
crouch,

Or catch at us and rise ?

*Voices.*

The Renegade !

Haman ! Ahithophel !

*Hampden.*

Gentlemen of the North,

It was not thus the night your claims were urged,

And we pronounced the League and Covenant,  
The cause of Scotland, England's cause as well:

Vane there, sat motionless the whole night through.

*Vane.* Hampden!

*Fiennes.* Stay, Vane!

*Loudon.* Be just and patient, Vane!

*Vane.* Mind how you counsel patience,

Loudon! you

Have still a Parliament, and this your League  
To back it; you are free in Scotland still:

While we are brothers, hope's for England yet.

But know you wherefore Wentworth comes?  
to quench

This last of hopes? that he brings war with him?

Know you the man's self? what he dares?

*Loudon.* We know,

All know—'tis nothing new.

*Vane.* And what's new, then,

In calling for his life? Why, Pym himself—

You must have heard—ere Wentworth  
dropped our cause

He would see Pym first; there were many more

Strong on the people's side and friends of his,

Eliot that's dead, Rudyard and Hampden here,

But for these Wentworth cared not; only, Pym

He would see—Pym and he were sworn, 'tis  
said,

To live and die together; so, they met

At Greenwich. Wentworth, you are sure,

was long,

Specious enough, the devil's argument

Lost nothing on his lips; he'd have Pym own

A patriot could not play a purer part

Than follow in his track; they two combined

Might put down England. Well, Pym heard  
him out;

One glance—you know Pym's eye—one word  
was all:

"You leave us, Wentworth! while your  
head is on.

"I'll not leave you."

*Hampden.* Has he left Wentworth,  
then?

Has England lost him? Will you let him  
speak,

Or put your crude surmises in his mouth?

Away with this! Will you have Pym or Vane?

*Voices.* Wait Pym's arrival! Pym shall  
speak.

*Hampden.*

Meanwhile

Let Loudon read the Parliament's report

From Edinburgh: our last hope, as Vane says,

Is in the stand it makes. Loudon!

*Vane.*

No, no!

Silent I can be: not indifferent!

*Hampden.* Then each keep silence, pray-  
ing God to spare

His anger, cast not England quite away

In this her visitation!

*A Puritan.*

Seven years long

The Midianite drove Israel into dens

And caves. Till God sent forth a mighty man,

*Pym enters.*

Even Gideon!

*Pym.* Wentworth's come: nor sickness,  
care,

The ravaged body nor the ruined soul,

More than the winds and waves that beat his  
ship,

Could keep him from the King. He has not  
reached

Whitehall: they've hurried up a Council there

To lose no time and find him work enough.

Where's Loudon? your Scots' Parliament . . .

*Loudon.*

Holds firm:

We were about to read reports.

*Pym.*

The King

Has just dissolved your Parliament.

*Loudon and other Scots.*

Great God!

An oath-breaker! Stand by us, England,  
then!

*Pym.* The King's too sanguine; doubt-  
less Wentworth's here;

But still some little form might be kept up.

*Hampden.* Now speak, Vane! Rudyard,  
you had much to say!

*Hollis.* The rumour's false, then . . .

*Pym.*

Ay, the Court gives out

His own concerns have brought him back:

I know

Tis the King calls him. Wentworth super-  
sedes

The tribe of Cottingtons and Hamiltons  
Whose part is played; there's talk enough,  
by this,—

Merciful talk, the King thinks: time is now  
To turn the record's last and bloody leaf  
Which, chronicling a nation's great despair,  
Tells they were long rebellious, and their lord  
Indulgent, till, all kind expedients tried,  
He drew the sword on them and reigned in  
peace.

Laud's laying his religion on the Scots  
Was the last gentle entry: the new page  
Shall run, the King thinks, "Wentworth  
thrust it down

"At the sword's point."

*A Puritan.* I'll do your bidding, Pym,  
England's and God's—one blow!

*Pym.* A goodly thing—  
We all say, friends, it is a goodly thing  
To right that England. Heaven grows dark  
above:

Let's snatch one moment ere the thunder fall,  
To say how well the English spirit comes out  
Beneath it! All have done their best, indeed,  
From lion Elliot, that grand Englishman,  
To the least here: and who, the least one here,  
When she is saved (for her redemption dawns  
Dimly, most dimly, but it dawns—it dawns)  
Who'd give at any price his hope away  
Of being named along with the Great Men?  
We would not—no, we would not give that up!

*Hampden.* And one name shall be dearer  
than all names.  
When children, yet unborn, are taught that  
name

After their fathers',—taught what matchless  
man . . .

*Pym.* . . . Saved England? What if  
Wentworth's should be still  
That name?

*Rudyard and others.* We have just said it,  
Pym! His death  
Saves her! We said it—there's no way beside!  
I'll do God's bidding, Pym! They struck  
down Joab  
And purged the land.

*Vane.* No villanous striking-down!  
*Rudyard.* No, a calm vengeance: let the  
whole land rise

And shout for it. No Feltons!

*Pym.* Rudyard, no!  
England rejects all Feltons; most of all  
Since Wentworth . . . Hampden, say the  
trust again

Of England in her servants—but I'll think  
You know me, all of you. Then, I believe,  
Spite of the past, Wentworth rejoins you,  
friends!

*Vane and others.* Wentworth? Apostate!  
Judas! Double-dyed

A traitor! Is it Pym, indeed . . .

*Pym.* . . . Who says  
Vane never knew that Wentworth, loved that  
man,

Was used to stroll with him, arm locked in arm,  
Along the streets to see the people pass,  
And read in every island-countenance  
Fresh argument for God against the King,—  
Never sat down, say, in the very house  
Where Elliot's brow grew broad with noble  
thoughts,

(You've joined us, Hampden—Hollis, you as  
well.)

And then left talking over Gracchus' death . . .

*Vane.* To frame, we know it well, the  
choicest clause

In the Petition of Right: he framed such clause  
One month before he took at the King's hand  
His Northern Presidency, which that Bill  
Denounced.

*Pym.* Too true! Never more, never  
more

Walked we together! Most alone I went.  
I have had friends—all here are fast my  
friends—

But I shall never quite forget that friend.  
And yet it could not but be real in him!  
You, Vane,—you, Rudyard, have no right to  
trust

To Wentworth: but can no one hope with me?  
Hampden, will Wentworth dare shed English  
blood  
Like water?

*Hampden.* Ireland is Aceldama.

*Pym.* Will he turn Scotland to a hunting-ground  
To please the King, now that he knows the King?

The People or the King? and that King, Charles!

*Hampden.* Pym, all here know you: you'll not set your heart

On any baseless dream. But say one deed Of Wentworth's since he left us . . .

[*Shouting without.* There! he comes,

*Vane.* And they shout for him! Wentworth's at Whitehall,

The King embracing him, now, as we speak, And he, to be his match in courtesies, Taking the whole war's risk upon himself, Now, while you tell us here how changed he is!

Hear you?

*Pym.* And yet if 'tis a dream, no more, That Wentworth chose their side, and brought the King

To love it as though Laud had loved it first, And the Queen after;—that he led their cause Calm to success, and kept it spotless through, So that our very eyes could look upon The travail of our souls, and close content That violence, which something mars even right

Which sanctions it, had taken off no grace From its serene regard. Only a dream!

*Hampden.* We meet here to accomplish certain good

By obvious means, and keep tradition up Of free assemblages, else obsolete, In this poor chamber: nor without effect Has friend met friend to counsel and confirm, As, listening to the beats of England's heart, We spoke its wants to Scotland's prompt reply By these her delegates. Remains alone That word grow deed, as with God's help it shall—

But with the devil's hindrance, who doubts too? Looked we or no that tyranny should turn Her engines of oppression to their use? Whereof, suppose the worst be Wentworth here—

VOL. I.

Shall we break off the tactics which succeed In drawing out our formidablest foe, Let bickering and disunion take their place? Or count his presence as our conquest's proof, And keep the old arms at their steady play? Proceed to England's work! Fiennes, read the list!

*Fiennes.* Ship-money is refused or fiercely paid

In every county, save the northern parts Where Wentworth's influence . . .

[*Shouting.*

*Vane.* I, in England's name, Declare her work, this way, at end! Till now, Up to this moment, peaceful strife was best. We English had free leave to think; till now, We had a shadow of a Parliament In Scotland. But all's changed: they change the first,

They try brute-force for law, they, first of all . . .

*Voices.* Good! Talk enough! The old true hearts with Vane!

*Vane.* Till we crush Wentworth for her, there's no act

Serves England!

*Voices.* Vane for England!

*Pym.* Pym should be Something to England. I seek Wentworth, friends.

## SCENE II.—Whitehall.

Lady CARLISLE and WENTWORTH.

*Wentworth.* And the King?

*Lady Carlisle.* Wentworth, learn on me! Sit then!

I'll tell you all; this horrible fatigue Will kill you.

*Wentworth.* No;—or, Lucy, just your arm;

I'll not sit till I've cleared this up with him: After that, rest. The King?

*Lady Carlisle.* Confides in you.

*Wentworth.* Why? or, why now?—They have kind throats, the knaves!

Shout for me—they!

*Lady Carlisle.* You come so strangely Or leave them out and go straight to the charge—  
soon :  
Yet we took measures to keep off the crowd— The charge !  
Did they shout for you? *Lady Carlisle.* Oh, there's no charge,  
*Wentworth.* Wherefore should they not? no precise charge ;  
Does the King take such measures for himself? Only they sneer, make light of—one may say,  
Beside, there's such a dearth of malcontents, Nibble at what you do.  
You say !  
*Lady Carlisle.* I said but few dared carp I know ! but, Lucy,  
at you. I reckoned on you from the first !—Go on !  
*Wentworth.* At me? at us, I hope ! The —Was sure could I once see this gentle friend  
King and I ! When I arrived, she'd throw an hour away  
To help her . . . what am I ?  
*Lady Carlisle.* You thought of me,  
Dear Wentworth?  
*Wentworth.* But go on ! The party here !  
*Lady Carlisle.* They do not think your  
Irish government  
Of that surpassing value . . .  
*Wentworth.* The one thing  
Of value ! The one service that the crown  
May count on ! All that keeps these very  
Vanes  
In power, to vex me—not that they do vex,  
Only it might vex some to hear that service  
Decried, the sole support that's left the King !  
*Lady Carlisle.* So the Archbishop says.  
*Wentworth.* Ah? well, perhaps  
The only hand held up in my defence  
May be old Laud's ! These Hollands then,  
these Saviles  
Nibble? They nibble?—that's the very word !  
*Lady Carlisle.* Your profit in the Customs,  
Bristol says,  
Exceeds the due proportion : while the tax . . .  
*Wentworth.* Enough ! 'tis too unworthy,—  
I am not  
So patient as I thought. What's Pym about ?  
*Lady Carlisle.* Pym ?  
*Wentworth.* Pym and the People.  
*Lady Carlisle.* Oh, the Faction !  
Extinct—of no account : there'll never be  
Another Parliament.  
*Wentworth.* Tell Savile that !  
You may know—(ay, you do—the creatures  
here  
Never forget !) that in my earliest life  
I was not . . . much that I am now ! The  
King

*Lady Carlisle.* He's surely not disposed to let me bear  
The same away from him of these late deeds  
In Ireland? I am yet his instrument  
Be it for well or ill? He trusts me, too !  
*Lady Carlisle.* The King, dear Wentworth,  
purposes, I said,  
To grant you, in the face of all the Court . . .  
*Wentworth.* All the Court ! Evermore the  
Court about us !  
Savile and Holland, Hamilton and Vane  
About us,—then the King will grant me—  
what ?  
That he for once put these aside and say—  
"Tell me your whole mind, Wentworth !"  
*Lady Carlisle.* You professed  
You would be calm.  
*Wentworth.* Lucy, and I am calm !  
How else shall I do all I come to do,  
Broken, as you may see, body and mind,  
How shall I serve the King? Time wastes  
meanwhile,  
You have not told me half. His footstep ! No.  
Quick, then, before I meet him,—I am calm—  
Why does the King distrust me ?  
*Lady Carlisle.* He does not  
Distrust you.  
*Wentworth.* Lucy, you can help me ; you  
Have even seemed to care for me : one word !  
Is it the Queen ?  
*Lady Carlisle.* No, not the Queen : the  
party  
That poisons the Queen's ear, Savile and  
Holland.  
*Wentworth.* I know, I know : old Vane,  
too, he's one too ?  
Go on—and he's made Secretary. Well ?

May take my word on points concerning Pym  
Before Lord Savile's, Lucy, or if not,  
I bid them ruin their wise selves, not me,  
These Vanes and Hollands! I'll not be  
their tool  
Who might be Pym's friend yet.

But there's the King!

Where is he?

*Lady Carlisle.* Just apprised that you  
arrive.

*Wentworth.* And why not here to meet  
me? I was told  
He sent for me, nay, longed for me.

*Lady Carlisle.* Because,—  
He is now . . . I think a Council's sitting now  
About this Scots affair.

*Wentworth.* A Council sits?  
They have not taken a decided course  
Without me in the matter?

*Lady Carlisle.* I should say . . .

*Wentworth.* The war? They cannot have  
agreed to that?

Not the Scots' war?—without consulting me—  
Me, that am here to show how rash it is,  
How easy to dispense with?—Ah, you too  
Against me! well,—the King may take his  
time.

—Forget it, Lucy! Cares make peevish: mine  
Weigh me (but 'tis a secret) to my grave.

*Lady Carlisle.* For life or death I am your  
own, dear friend! [*Goes out.*]

*Wentworth.* Heartless! but all are heart-  
less here. Go now,  
Forsake the People!

I did not forsake

The People: they shall know it, when the  
King

Will trust me!—who trusts all beside at once,  
While I have not spoke Vane and Savile fair,  
And am not trusted: have but saved the  
throne:

Have not picked up the Queen's glove prettily,  
And am not trusted. But he'll see me now.  
Weston is dead: the Queen's half English  
now—

More English: one decisive word will brush  
These insects from . . . the step I know so  
well!

The King! But now, to tell him . . . no—  
to ask

What's in me he distrusts:—or, best begin  
By proving that this frightful Scots affair  
Is just what I foretold. So much to say,  
And the flesh fails, now, and the time is  
come;

And one false step no way to be repaired.  
You were avenged, Pym, could you look on me.

*Pym enters.*

*Wentworth.* I little thought of you just  
then.

*Pym.* No? I  
Think always of you, Wentworth.

*Wentworth.* The old voice!  
I wait the King, sir.

*Pym.* True—you look so pale!  
A Council sits within; when that breaks up  
He'll see you.

*Wentworth.* Sir, I thank you.

*Pym.* Oh, thank Laud!  
You know when Laud once gets on Church  
affairs

The case is desperate: he'll not be long  
To-day: he only means to prove, to-day,  
We English all are mad to have a hand  
In butchering the Scots for serving God  
After their fathers' fashion: only that!

*Wentworth.* Sir, keep your jests for those  
who relish them!

(Does he enjoy their confidence?) 'Tis kind  
To tell me what the Council does.

*Pym.* You grudge  
That I should know it had resolved on war  
Before you came? no need: you shall have all  
The credit, trust me!

*Wentworth.* Have the Council dared—  
They have not dared . . . that is—I know  
you not.

Farewell, sir: times are changed.

*Pym.* —Since we two met  
At Greenwich? Yes: poor patriots though  
we be,

You cut a figure, makes some slight return  
For your exploits in Ireland! Changed in-  
deed,  
Could our friend Eliot look from out his grave!



Ah, Wentworth, one thing for acquaintance's sake,

Just to decide a question; have you, now, Felt your old self since you forsook us?

*Wentworth.*

Sir!

*Pym.* Spare me the gesture! you misapprehend.

Think not I mean the advantage is with me. I was about to say that, for my part, I never quite held up my head since then—Was quite myself since then: for first, you see, I lost all credit after that event

With those who recollect how sure I was Wentworth would outdo Eliot on our side.

Forgive me: Savile, old Vane, Holland here, Eschew plain-speaking: 'tis a trick I keep.

*Wentworth.* How, when, where, Savile, Vane, and Holland speak,

Plainly or otherwise, would have my scorn, All of my scorn, sir . . .

*Pym.* . . . Did not my poor thoughts Claim somewhat?

*Wentworth.* Keep your thoughts! believe the King

Mistrusts me for their prattle, all these Vanes And Saviles! make your mind up, o' God's love,

That I am discontented with the King!

*Pym.* Why, you may be: I should be, that I know,

Were I like you.

*Wentworth.* Like me?

*Pym.* I care not much

For titles: our friend Eliot died no lord, Hampden's no lord, and Savile is a lord; But you care, since you sold your soul for one. I can't think, therefore, your soul's purchaser Did well to laugh you to such utter scorn When you twice prayed so humbly for its price,

The thirty silver pieces . . . I should say, The Earldom you expected, still expect, And may. Your letters were the movingest! Console yourself: I've borne him prayers just now

From Scotland not to be oppressed by Laud, Words moving in their way: he'll pay, be sure, As much attention as to those you sent.

*Wentworth.* False, sir! Who showed them you? Suppose it so,

The King did very well . . . nay, I was glad When it was shown me: I refused, the first!

John Pym, you were my friend—forbear me once!

*Pym.* Oh, Wentworth, ancient brother of my soul,

That all should come to this!

*Wentworth.* Leave me!

*Pym.* My friend,

Why should I leave you?

*Wentworth.* To tell Rudyard this, And Hampden this!

*Pym.* Whose faces once were bright At my approach, now sad with doubt and fear, Because I hope in you—yes, Wentworth, you Who never mean to ruin England—who Who shake off, with God's help, an obscene dream

In this Ezekiel chamber, where it crept Upon you first, and wake, yourself, your true And proper self, our Leader, England's Chief, And Hampden's friend!

This is the proudest day! Come, Wentworth! Do not even see the King!

The rough old room will seem itself again! We'll both go in together: you've not seen Hampden so long: come: and there's Fiennes: you'll have

To know young Vane. This is the proudest day!

[*The King enters.* WENTWORTH lets fall PYM's hand.

*Charles.* Arrived, my lord?—This gentleman, we know Was your old friend.

The Scots shall be informed What we determine for their happiness.

[*Pym goes out.*

You have made haste, my lord.

*Wentworth.* Sir, I am come:

*Charles.* To see an old familiar—nay, 'tis well;

Aid us with his experience: this Scots' League And Covenant spreads too far, and we have proofs

That they intrigue with France : the Faction too,  
Whereof your friend there is the head and front,

Abets them,—as he boasted, very like.

*Wentworth.* Sir, trust me ! but for this once, trust me, sir !

*Charles.* What can you mean ?

*Wentworth.* That you should trust me, sir !

Oh—not for my sake ! but 'tis sad, so sad  
That for distrusting me, you suffer—you  
Whom I would die to serve : sir, do you think

That I would die to serve you ?

*Charles.* But rise, Wentworth !

*Wentworth.* What 'shall convince you ?  
What does Savile do

To prove him . . . Ah, one can't tear out  
one's heart

And show it, how sincere a thing it is !

*Charles.* Have I not trusted you ?

*Wentworth.* Say aught but that !  
There is my comfort, mark you : all will be  
So different when you trust me—as you shall !  
It has not been your fault,—I was away,  
Mistook, maligned, how was the King to  
know ?

I am here, now—he means to trust me, now—  
All will go on so well !

*Charles.* Be sure I do—

I've heard that I should trust you : as you  
came,

Your friend, the Countess, told me . . .

*Wentworth.* No,—hear nothing—

Be told nothing about me !—you're not told  
Your right-hand serves you, or your children  
love you !

*Charles.* You love me, Wentworth : rise !

*Wentworth.* I can speak now.

I have no right to hide the truth. 'Tis I  
Can save you ; only I. Sir, what must be ?

*Charles.* Since Laud's assured (the  
minutes are within)

—Loath as I am to spill my subjects'  
blood . . .

*Wentworth.* That is, he'll have a war :  
what's done is done !

*Charles.* They have intrigued with France ;  
that's clear to Laud.

*Wentworth.* Has Laud suggested any way  
to meet

The war's expense ?

*Charles.* He'd not decide so far  
Until you joined us.

*Wentworth.* Most considerate !

He's certain they intrigue with France, these  
Scots ?

The People would be with us.

*Charles.* Pym should know.

*Wentworth.* The People for us—were the  
People for us !

Sir, a great thought comes to reward your  
trust :

Summon a Parliament ! in Ireland first,  
Then, here.

*Charles.* In truth ?

*Wentworth.* That saves us ! that puts off

The war, gives time to right their grievances—  
To talk with Pym. I know the Faction,—  
Laud

So styles it,—tutors Scotland : all their plans  
Suppose no Parliament : in calling one  
You take them by surprise. Produce the proofs  
Of Scotland's treason ; then bid England help :  
Even Pym will not refuse.

*Charles.* You would begin

With Ireland ?

*Wentworth.* Take no care for that : that's  
sure

To prosper.

*Charles.* You shall rule me. You were  
best

Return at once : but take this ere you go !

Now, do I trust you ? You're an Earl : my  
Friend

Of Friends : yes, while . . . You hear me not !

*Wentworth.* Say it all o'er again—but once  
again :

The first was for the music : once again !

*Charles.* Strafford, my friend, there may  
have been reports,

Vain rumours. Henceforth touching Strafford  
is

To touch the apple of my sight : why gaze  
So earnestly ?

*Wentworth.* I am grown young again,  
And foolish. What was it we spoke of?

*Charles.* Ireland,  
The Parliament,—

*Wentworth.* I may go when I will?  
—Now?

*Charles.* Are you tired so soon of us?

*Wentworth.* My King!  
But you will not so utterly abhor  
A Parliament? I'd serve you any way.

*Charles.* You said just now this was the  
only way.

*Wentworth.* Sir, I will serve you.

*Charles.* Strafford, spare yourself:  
You are so sick, they tell me.

*Wentworth.* 'Tis my soul  
That's well and prospers now.

This Parliament—  
We'll summon it, the English one—I'll  
care

For everything. You shall not need them  
much.

*Charles.* If they prove restive . . .

*Wentworth.* I shall be with you.

*Charles.* Ere they assemble?

*Wentworth.* I will come, or else  
Deposit this infirm humanity  
I' the dust. My whole heart stays with you,  
my King! [*As WENTWORTH goes out,*

*the QUEEN enters.*

*Charles.* That man must love me.

*Queen.* Is it over then?

Why, he looks yellower than ever! Well,

At least we shall not hear eternally

Of service—services: he's paid at least.

*Charles.* Not done with: he engages to  
surpass

All yet performed in Ireland.

*Queen.* I had thought

Nothing beyond was ever to be done.

The war, Charles—will he raise supplies  
enough?

*Charles.* We've hit on an expedient; he  
. . . that is,

I have advised . . . we have decided on

The calling—in Ireland—of a Parliament.

*Queen.* O truly! You agree to that? Is  
that

The first fruit of his counsel? But I guessed  
As much.

*Charles.* This is too idle, Henriette!

I should know best. He will strain every  
nerve,

And once a precedent established . . .

*Queen.* Notice

How sure he is of a long term of favour!

He'll see the next, and the next after that;

No end to Parliaments!

*Charles.* Well, it is done.

He talks it smoothly, doubtless. If, indeed,  
The Commons here . . .

*Queen.* Here! you will summon them

Here? Would I were in France again to see  
A King!

*Charles.* But, Henriette . . .

*Queen.* Oh, the Scots see clear!

Why should they bear your rule?

*Charles.* But listen, sweet!

*Queen.* Let Wentworth listen—you confide  
in him!

*Charles.* I do not, love,—I do not so  
confide!

The Parliament shall never trouble us

. . . Nay, hear me! I have schemes, such  
schemes: we'll buy

The leaders off: without that, Wentworth's  
counsel

Had ne'er prevailed on me. Perhaps I call it

To have excuse for breaking it for ever,

And whose will then the blame be? See you  
not?

Come, dearest!—look, the little fairy, now,

That cannot reach my shoulder! Dearest,  
come!

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—(As in Act I. Scene I.)

*The same Party enters.*

*Rudyard.* Twelve subsidies!

*Vane.* Oh, Rudyard, do not laugh  
At least!

*Rudyard.* True: Strafford called the  
Parliament—

'Tis he should laugh!

*A Puritan.* Out of the serpent's root  
Comes forth a cockatrice.

*Fiennes.* —A stinging one,  
If that's the Parliament: twelve subsidies!  
A stinging one! but, brother, where's your  
word

For Strafford's other nest-egg, the Scots' war?  
*The Puritan.* His fruit shall be a fiery  
flying serpent.

*Fiennes.* Shall be? It chips the shell,  
man; peeps abroad.

Twelve subsidies!—Why, how now, Vane?

*Rudyard.* Peace, Fiennes!

*Fiennes.* Ah?—But he was not more a  
dupe than I,

Or you, or any here, the day that Pym  
Returned with the good news. Look up,  
friend Vane!

We all believed that Strafford meant us well  
In summoning the Parliament.

*HAMPDEN enters.*

*Vane.* Now, Hampden,  
Clear me! I would have leave to sleep again:  
I'd look the People in the face again:  
Clear me from having, from the first, hoped,  
dreamed

Better of Strafford!

*Hampden.* You may grow one day  
A steadfast light to England, Henry Vane!

*Rudyard.* Meantime, by flashes I make  
shift to see

Strafford revived our Parliaments; before,  
War was but talked of; there's an army, now:  
Still, we've a Parliament! Poor Ireland  
bears

Another wrench (she dies the hardest  
death!)—

Why, speak of it in Parliament! and lo,

'Tis spoken, so console yourselves!

*Fiennes.* The jest!

We clamoured, I suppose, thus long, to win  
The privilege of laying on our backs

A sorer burden than the King dares lay!

*Rudyard.* Mark now: we meet at length,  
complaints pour in

From every county, all the land cries out  
On loans and levies, curses ship-money,

Calls vengeance on the Star Chamber; we  
lend

An ear. "Ay, lend them all the ears you  
have!"

Puts in the King; "my subjects, as you find,  
"Are fretful, and conceive great things of  
you.

"Just listen to them, friends; you'll sanction  
me

"The measures they most wince at, make  
them yours,

"Instead of mine, I know: and, to begin,

"They say my levies pinch them,—raise me  
straight

"Twelve subsidies!"

*Fiennes.* All England cannot furnish  
Twelve subsidies!

*Hollis.* But Strafford, just returned  
From Ireland—what has he to do with that?  
How could he speak his mind? He left before  
The Parliament assembled. Pym, who knows  
Strafford . . .

*Rudyard.* Would I were sure we know  
ourselves!

What is for good, what, bad—who friend,  
who foe!

*Hollis.* Do you count Parliaments no gain?

*Rudyard.* A gain?

While the King's creatures overbalance us?

—There's going on, beside, among ourselves

A quiet, slow, but most effectual course

Of buying over, sapping, leavening

The lump till all is leaven. Glanville's gone.

I'll put a case; had not the Court declared

That no sum short of just twelve subsidies

Will be accepted by the King—our House,

I say, would have consented to that offer

To let us buy off ship-money!

*Hollis.* Most like,

If, say, six subsidies will buy it off,

The House . . .

*Rudyard.* Will grant them! Hampden,  
do you hear?

Congratulate with me! the King's the king,

And gains his point at last—our own assent

To that detested tax? All's over, then!

There's no more taking refuge in this room,

Protesting, "Let the King do what he will,

"We, England, are no party to our shame :  
 "Our day will come !" Congratulate with  
 me !

*Pym enters.*

*Vane.* Pym, Strafford called this Parli-  
 ament, you say,  
 But we'll not have our Parliaments like those  
 in Ireland, Pym !

*Rudyard.* Let him stand forth, your  
 friend !

(One doubtful act hides far too many sins ;  
 It can be stretched no more, and, to my mind,  
 Begins to drop from those it covered.)

*Other Voices.* Good !  
 Let him avow himself ! No fitter time !  
 We wait thus long for you.

*Rudyard.* Perhaps, too long !  
 Since nothing but the madness of the  
 Court,

In thus unmasking its designs at once,  
 Has saved us from betraying England. Stay—  
 This Parliament is Strafford's : let us vote  
 Our list of grievances too black by far  
 To suffer talk of subsidies : or best,  
 That ship-money's disposed of long ago  
 By England : any vote that's broad enough :  
 And then let Strafford, for the love of it,  
 Support his Parliament !

*Vane.* And vote as well  
 No war to be with Scotland ! Hear you, Pym ?  
 We'll vote, no war ! No part nor lot in it  
 For England !

*Many Voices.* Vote, no war ! Stop the  
 new levies !  
 No Bishops' war ! At once ! When next  
 we meet !

*Pym.* Much more when next we meet !  
 Friends, which of you

Since first the course of Strafford was in doubt,  
 Has fallen the most away in soul from me ?

*Vane.* I sat apart, even now under God's eye,  
 Pondering the words that should denounce  
 you, Pym,

In presence of us all, as one at league  
 With England's enemy.

*Pym.* You are a good  
 And gallant spirit, Henry. Take my hand

And say you pardon me for all the pain  
 Till now ! Strafford is wholly ours.

*Many Voices.*

Sure ? sure ?

*Pym.* Most sure : for Charles dissolves the  
 Parliament

While I speak here.

—And I must speak, friends, now !  
 Strafford is ours. The King detects the  
 change,

Casts Strafford off for ever, and resumes  
 His ancient path : no Parliament for us,  
 No Strafford for the King !

Come, all of you,  
 To bid the King farewell, predict success  
 To his Scots' expedition, and receive  
 Strafford, our comrade now. The next will be  
 Indeed a Parliament !

*Vane.* Forgive me, Pym !  
*Voices.* This looks like truth : Strafford  
 can have, indeed,

No choice.

*Pym.* Friends, follow me ! He's with  
 the King.

Come, Hampden, and come, Rudyard, and  
 come, Vane !

This is no sullen day for England, sirs !  
 Strafford shall tell you !

*Voices.* To Whitehall then ! Come !

## SCENE II.—Whitehall.

CHARLES and STRAFFORD.

*Charles.* Strafford !

*Strafford.* Is it a dream ? my papers,  
 here—

Thus, as I left them, all the plans you found  
 So happy—(look ! the track you pressed my  
 hand

For pointing out)—and in this very room,  
 Over these very plans, you tell me, sir,  
 With the same face, too—tell me just one thing  
 That ruins them ! How's this ? What may  
 this mean ?

Sir, who has done this ?

*Charles.* Strafford, who but I ?  
 You bade me put the rest away : indeed  
 You are alone.

*Strafford.* Alone, and like to be !  
No fear, when some unworthy scheme grows  
ripe,  
Of those, who hatched it, leaving me to loose  
The mischief on the world ! Laud hatches  
war,  
Falls to his prayers, and leaves the rest to me,  
And I'm alone.

*Charles.* At least, you knew as much  
When first you undertook the war.

*Strafford.* My liege,  
Was this the way ? I said, since Laud would lap  
A little blood, 'twere best to hurry over  
The loathsome business, not to be whole  
months

At slaughter—one blow, only one, then, peace,  
Save for the dreams. I said, to please you both  
I'd lead an Irish army to the West,  
While in the South an English . . . but you  
look

As though you had not told me fifty times  
'Twas a brave plan ! My army is all raised,  
I am prepared to join it . . .

*Charles.* Hear me, Strafford !  
*Strafford.* . . . When, for some little thing,  
my whole design

Is set aside—(where is the wretched paper ?)  
I am to lead—(ay, here it is)—to lead  
The English army : why ? Northumberland  
That I appointed, chooses to be sick—  
Is frightened : and, meanwhile, who answers  
for

The Irish Parliament ? or army, either ?  
Is this my plan ?

*Charles.* So disrespectful, sir ?

*Strafford.* My liege, do not believe it ! I  
am yours,

Yours ever : 'tis too late to think about :

To the death, yours. Elsewhere, this unto-  
ward step

Shall pass for mine ; the world shall think it  
mine.

But here ! But here ! I am so seldom here,  
Seldom with you, my King ! I, soon to rush  
Alone upon a giant in the dark !

*Charles.* My Strafford !

*Strafford* [examines papers awhile]. "Seize  
the passes of the Tyne !"

VOL. I

But, sir, you see—see all I say is true ?

My plan was sure to prosper, so, no cause  
To ask the Parliament for help ; whereas  
We need them frightfully.

*Charles.* Need the Parliament ?

*Strafford.* Now, for God's sake, sir, not  
one error more !

We can afford no error ; we draw, now,  
Upon our last resource : the Parliament  
Must help us !

*Charles.* I've undone you, Strafford !

*Strafford.* Nay—  
Nay—why despond, sir, 'tis not come to  
that !

I have not hurt you ? Sir, what have I said  
To hurt you ? I unsay it ! Don't despond !  
Sir, do you turn from me ?

*Charles.* My friend of friends !

*Strafford.* We'll make a shift. Leave me  
the Parliament !

Help they us ne'er so little and I'll make  
Sufficient out of it. We'll speak them fair.  
They're sitting, that's one great thing ; that  
half gives

Their sanction to us ; that's much : don't  
despond !

Why, let them keep their money, at the worst !  
The reputation of the People's help

Is all we want : we'll make shift yet !

*Charles.* Good Strafford !

*Strafford.* But meantime, let the sum be  
ne'er so small

They offer, we'll accept it : any sum—

For the look of it : the least grant tells the  
Scots

The Parliament is ours—their staunch ally  
Turned ours : that told, there's half the blow  
to strike !

What will the grant be ? What does Glan-  
ville think ?

*Charles.* Alas !

*Strafford.* My liege ?

*Charles.* Strafford !

*Strafford.* But answer me !

Have they . . . O surely not refused us half ?

Half the twelve subsidies ? We never looked

For all of them. How many do they give ?

*Charles.* You have not heard . . .

D 2

*Strafford.* (What has he done?)—Heard "His head is mine!" Don't stop me there!  
what? You know

But speak at once, sir, this grows terrible! My head is yours, but never stop me there!

[*The KING continuing silent.*]

You have dissolved them!—I'll not leave *Charles.* Too shameful, Strafford! You  
this man. advised the war,

*Charles.* 'Twas old Vane's ill-judged *And . . .*  
vehemence. *Strafford.* I! I! that was never spoken  
with

*Strafford.* Old Vane? Till it was entered on! That loathe the war!

*Charles.* He told them, just about to vote That say it is the maddest, wickedest . . .  
the half, Do you know, sir, I think within my heart,

That nothing short of all twelve subsidies That you would say I did advise the war;  
Would serve our turn, or be accepted. And if, through your own weakness, or  
what's worse,

*Strafford.* Vane! These Scots, with God to help them, drive  
me back,

Vane! Who, sir, promised me, that very You will not step between the raging People  
Vane . . . And me, to say . . .

O God, to have it gone, quite gone from me, I knew it! from the first  
The one last hope—I that despair, my hope— I knew it! Never was so cold a heart!

That I should reach his heart one day, and cure Remember that I said it—that I never  
Believed you for a moment!

All bitterness one day, be proud again —And, you loved me?  
And young again, care for the sunshine too, You thought your perfidy profoundly hid

And never think of Eliot any more,— Because I could not share the whisperings  
God, and to toil for this, go far for this, With Vane, with Savile? What, the face  
Get nearer, and still nearer, reach this heart was masked?

And find Vane there! I had the heart to see, sir! Face of flesh,  
But heart of stone—of smooth cold frightful  
stone!

[*Suddenly taking up a paper, and continuing with a forced calmness.*]

Northumberland is sick : Ay, call them! Shall I call for you? The  
scots

Well, then, I take the army: Wilmot leads Goaded to madness? Or the English—Pym—  
The horse, and he, with Conway, must secure Shall I call Pym, your subject? Oh, you think  
The passes of the Tyne: Ormond supplies I'll leave them in the dark about it all?

My place in Ireland. Here, we'll try the City: They shall not know you? Hampden, Pym  
If they refuse a loan—debase the coin shall not?

And seize the bullion! we've no other choice.

Herbert . . .

And this while I am here! with you! Pym, Hampden, Vane, etc., enter.

And there are hosts such, hosts like Vane! I go, [Dropping on his knee.] Thus favoured with  
And, I once gone, they'll close around you, your gracious countenance

When the least pique, pettiest mistrust, is sure What shall a rebel League avail against  
To ruin me—and you along with me! Your servant, utterly and ever yours?

Do you see that? And you along with me! So, gentlemen, the King's not even left  
—Sir, you'll not ever listen to these men, The privilege of bidding me farewell

And I away, fighting your battle? Sir, Who haste to save the People—that you style  
If they—if She—charge me, no matter how— Your People—from the mercies of the Scots  
Say you, "At any time when he returns And France their friend?

[To CHARLES.] Pym's grave grey  
eyes are fixed  
Upon you, sir!

Your pleasure, gentlemen?  
Hampden. The King dissolved us—'tis the  
King we seek  
And not Lord Strafford.

Strafford. —Strafford, guilty too  
Of counselling the measure. [To CHARLES].

(Hush . . . you know—  
You have forgotten—sir, I counselled it)  
A heinous matter, truly! But the King  
Will yet see cause to thank me for a course  
Which now, perchance . . . (Sir, tell them  
so!)—he blames.

Well, choose some fitter time to make your  
charge:

I shall be with the Scots, you understand?  
Then yelp at me!

Meanwhile, your Majesty  
Binds me, by this fresh token of your  
trust . . .

[Under the pretence of an earnest farewell,  
STRAFFORD conducts CHARLES to the  
door, in such a manner as to hide his  
agitation from the rest: as the King  
disappears, they turn as by one impulse  
to PYM, who has not changed his original  
posture of surprise.

Hampden. Leave we this arrogant strong  
wicked man!

Vane and others. Hence, Pym! Come  
out of this unworthy place  
To our old room again! He's gone.

[STRAFFORD, just about to follow  
the KING, looks back.

Pym. Not gone!  
[To STRAFFORD.] Keep tryst! the old  
appointment's made anew:  
Forget not we shall meet again!

Strafford. So be it!  
And if an army follows me?

Vane. His friends  
Will entertain your army!

Pym. I'll not say  
You have misreckoned, Strafford: time  
shows,

Perish

Body and spirit! Fool to feign a doubt,  
Pretend the scrupulous and nice reserve  
Of one whose prowess shall achieve the feat!  
What share have I in it? Do I affect  
To see no dismal sign above your head  
When God suspends his ruinous thunder  
there?

Strafford is doomed. Touch him no one of  
you! [PYM, HAMPDEN, &c., go out.  
Strafford. Pym, we shall meet again!

Lady CARLISLE enters.

You here, child?  
Lady Carlisle. Hush—  
I know it all: hush, Strafford!

Strafford. Ah? you know?  
Well. I shall make a sorry soldier, Lucy!  
All knights begin their enterprise, we read,  
Under the best of auspices; 'tis morn,  
The Lady girds his sword upon the Youth  
(He's always very young)—the trumpets  
sound,

Cups pledge him, and, why, the King blesses  
him—

You need not turn a page of the romance  
To learn the Dreadful Giant's fate. Indeed,  
We've the fair Lady here; but she apart,—  
A poor man, rarely having handled lance,  
And rather old, weary, and far from sure  
His Squires are not the Giant's friends. All's  
one:

Let us go forth!

Lady Carlisle. Go forth?

Strafford. What matters it?  
We shall die gloriously—as the book says.

Lady Carlisle. To Scotland? Not to  
Scotland?

Strafford. Am I sick  
Like your good brother, brave Northumber-  
land?

Beside, these walls seem falling on me.

Lady Carlisle. Strafford,  
The wind that saps these walls can undermine  
Your camp in Scotland, too. Whence creeps  
the wind?

Have you no eyes except for Pym? Look  
here!

A breed of silken creatures lurk and thrive



In your contempt. You'll vanquish Pym?

Old Vane

Can vanquish you. And Vane you think to fly?

Rush on the Scots! Do nobly! Vane's slight sneer

Shall test success, adjust the praise, suggest  
The faint result: Vane's sneer shall reach you there.

—You do not listen!

*Strafford.* Oh,—I give that up!

There's fate in it: I give all here quite up.  
Care not what old Vane does or Holland does  
Against me! 'Tis so idle to withstand!

In no case tell me what they do!

*Lady Carlisle.* But, *Strafford* . . .

*Strafford.* I want a little strife, beside; real  
strife;

This petty palace-warfare does me harm:

I shall feel better, fairly out of it.

*Lady Carlisle.* Why do you smile?

*Strafford.* I got to fear them, child!  
I could have torn his throat at first, old Vane's,  
As he leered at me on his stealthy way  
To the Queen's closet. Lord, one loses heart!  
I often found it on my lips to say  
"Do not traduce me to her!"

*Lady Carlisle.* But the King . . .

*Strafford.* The King stood there, 'tis not  
so long ago,

—There; and the whisper, Lucy, "Be my  
friend

"Of friends!"—My King! I would have . . .

*Lady Carlisle.* . . . Died for him?

*Strafford.* Sworn him true, Lucy: I can die  
for him.

*Lady Carlisle.* But go not, *Strafford*! But  
you must renounce

This project on the Scots! Die, wherefore die?  
Charles never loved you.

*Strafford.* And he never will.  
He's not of those who care the more for men  
That they're unfortunate.

*Lady Carlisle.* Then wherefore die  
For such a master?

*Strafford.* You that told me first  
How good he was—when I must leave true  
friends

To find a truer friend!—that drew me here

From Ireland,—“I had but to show myself  
“And Charles would spurn Vane, Savile, and  
the rest”—

You, child, to ask me this?

*Lady Carlisle.* (If he have set  
His heart abidingly on Charles!)

Then, friend,

I shall not see you any more.

*Strafford.* Yes, Lucy.

There's one man here I have to meet.

*Lady Carlisle.* (The King!  
What way to save him from the King?

My soul—

That lent from its own store the charmed dis-  
guise

Which clothes the King—he shall behold my  
soul!)

*Strafford.*—I shall speak best if you'll not gaze

Upon me: I had never thought, indeed,

To speak, but you would perish too, so sure!

Could you but know what 'tis to bear, my  
friend,

One image stamped within you, turning blank  
The else imperial brilliance of your mind,—  
A weakness, but most precious,—like a flaw  
In the diamond, which should shape forth some  
sweet face

Yet to create, and meanwhile treasured there  
Lest nature lose her gracious thought for ever!

*Strafford.* When could it be? no! Yet . . .  
was it the day

We waited in the anteroom, till Holland

Should leave the presence-chamber?

*Lady Carlisle.* What?

*Strafford.* —That I

Described to you my love for Charles?

*Lady Carlisle.* (Ah, no—

One must not lure him from a love like that!

Oh, let him love the King and die! 'Tis past.

I shall not serve him worse for that one  
brief

And passionate hope, silent for ever now!)

And you are really bound for Scotland then?

I wish you well: you must be very sure

Of the King's faith, for Pym and all his crew

Will not be idle—setting Vane aside!

*Strafford.* If Pym is busy,—you may write  
of Pym.

*Lady Carlisle.* What need, since there's  
your King to take your part?

He may endure Vane's counsel; but for  
Pym—

Think you he'll suffer Pym to . . .

*Strafford.* Child, your hair  
Is glossier than the Queen's!

*Lady Carlisle.* Is that to ask  
A curl of me?

*Strafford.* Scotland—the weary way!

*Lady Carlisle.* Stay, let me fasten it.

—A rival's, Strafford?

*Strafford* [*showing the George*]. He hung  
it there: twine yours around it, child!

*Lady Carlisle.* No—no—another time—I  
trifle so!

And there's a masque on foot. Farewell.  
The Court

Is dull; do something to enliven us

In Scotland: we expect it at your hands.

*Strafford.* I shall not fail in Scotland.

*Lady Carlisle.* Prosper—if  
You'll think of me sometimes!

*Strafford.* How think of him  
And not of you? of you, the lingering streak  
(A golden one) in my good fortune's eve.

*Lady Carlisle.* Strafford . . . Well, when  
the eve has its last streak

The night has its first star. [*She goes out.*]

*Strafford.* That voice of hers—  
You'd think she had a heart sometimes!

His voice  
Is soft too.

Only God can save him now.

Be Thou about his bed, about his path!

His path! Where's England's path? Diverg-  
ing wide,

And not to join again the track my foot  
Must follow—whither? All that forlorn way  
Among the tombs! Far—far—till . . .

What, they do  
Then join again, these paths? For, huge in  
the dusk,  
There's—Pym to face!

Why then, I have a foe  
To close with, and a fight to fight at last  
Worthy my soul! What, do they beard the  
King,

And shall the King want Strafford at his need?  
Am I not here?

Not in the market-place,  
Pressed on by the rough artisans, so proud  
To catch a glance from Wentworth! They  
lie down

I hungry yet smile "Why, it must end some  
day:

"Is he not watching for our sake?" Not  
there!

But in Whitehall, the whited sepulchre,

The . . .

Curse nothing to-night! Only  
one name

They'll curse in all those streets to night.  
Whose fault?

Did I make kings? set up, the first, a man  
To represent the multitude, receive  
All love in right of them—supplant them so,  
Until you love the man and not the king—  
The man with the mild voice and mournful  
eyes

Which send me forth.

—To breast the bloody sea  
That sweeps before me: with one star for  
guide.

Night has its first, supreme, forsaken star.

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*Opposite Westminster Hall.*

Sir HENRY VANE, Lord SAVILE, Lord  
HOLLAND and others of the Court.

*Sir H. Vane.* The Commons thrust you  
out?

*Savile.* And what kept you  
From sharing their civility?

*Sir H. Vane.* Kept me?  
Fresh news from Scotland, sir! worse than  
the last,

If that may be. All's up with Strafford there:  
Nothing to bar the mad Scots marching hither  
Next Lord's-day morning. That detained  
me, sir!

Well now, before they thrust you out,—go  
on,—

Their Speaker—did the fellow Lenthall say  
All we set down for him?

*Holland.* Not a word missed.  
Ere he began, we entered, Savile, I  
And Bristol and some more, with hope to  
breed

A wholesome awe in the new Parliament.  
But such a gang of graceless ruffians, Vane,  
As glared at us!

*Vane.* So many?

*Savile.* Not a bench  
Without its complement of burly knaves;  
Your hopefulness among them: Hampden leant  
Upon his shoulder—think of that!

*Vane.* I'd think  
On Lenthall's speech, if I could get at it.  
Urged he, I ask, how grateful they should  
prove

For this unlooked-for summons from the King?  
*Holland.* Just as we drilled him.

*Vane.* That the Scots will march  
On London?

*Holland.* All, and made so much of it,  
A dozen subsidies at least seemed sure  
To follow, when . . .

*Vane.* Well?

*Holland.* 'Tis a strange thing, now!  
I've a vague memory of a sort of sound,  
A voice, a kind of vast unnatural voice—  
Pym, sir, was speaking! Savile, help me out:  
What was it all?

*Savile.* Something about "a matter"—  
No,—“work for England.”

*Holland.* “England's great revenge”  
He talked of.

*Savile.* How should I get used to Pym  
More than yourselves?

*Holland.* However that be,  
'Twas something with which we had nought  
to do,  
For we were “strangers” and 'twas “Eng-  
land's work”—

(All this while looking us straight in the face)  
In other words, our presence might be spared.  
So, in the twinkling of an eye, before  
I settled to my mind what ugly brute  
Was likest Pym just then, they yelled us out,  
Locked the doors after us, and here are we.

*Vane.* Eliot's old method . . .

*Savile.* Prithee, Vane, a truce  
To Eliot and his times, and the great Duke,  
And how to manage Parliaments! 'Twas you  
Advised the Queen to summon this: why,  
Strafford

(To do him justice) would not hear of it.

*Vane.* Say rather, you have done the best  
of turns

To Strafford: he's at York, we all know why.  
I would you had not set the Scots on Strafford  
Till Strafford put down Pym for us, my lord!  
*Savile.* Was it I altered Strafford's plans?  
did I . . .

*A Messenger enters.*

*Messenger.* The Queen, my lords—she  
sends me: follow me

At once; 'tis very urgent! she requires  
Your counsel: something perilous and strange  
Occurs her command.

*Savile.* ‘We follow, friend!’  
Now, Vane;—your Parliament will plague  
us all!

*Vane.* No Strafford here beside!

*Savile.* If you dare hint  
I had a hand in his betrayal, sir . . .

*Holland.* Nay, find a fitter time for quarrels  
—Pym

Will overmatch the best of you; and, think,  
The Queen!

*Vane.* Come on, then: understand, I  
loathe

Strafford as much as any—but his use!  
To keep off Pym, to screen a friend or two,  
I would we had reserved him yet awhile.

SCENE II.—*Whitehall.*

*The QUEEN and Lady CARLISLE.*

*Queen.* It cannot be.

*Lady Carlisle.* It is so.

*Queen.* Why, the House  
Have hardly met.

*Lady Carlisle.* They met for that.

*Queen.* No, no!  
Meet to impeach Lord Strafford? 'Tis a jest.

*Lady Carlisle.* A bitter one.

*Queen.* Consider ! 'Tis the House  
We summoned so reluctantly, which nothing  
But the disastrous issue of the war  
Persuaded us to summon. They'll wreak all  
Their spite on us, no doubt ; but the old way  
Is to begin by talk of grievances :  
They have their grievances to busy them.

*Lady Carlisle.* Pym has begun his speech.

*Queen.* Where's Vane ?—That is,  
Pym will impeach Lord Strafford if he leaves  
His Presidency ; he's at York, we know,  
Since the Scots beat him : why should he  
leave York ?

*Lady Carlisle.* Because the King sent for  
him.

*Queen.* Ah—but if  
The King did send for him, he let him know  
We had been forced to call a Parliament—  
A step which Strafford, now I come to think,  
Was vehement against.

*Lady Carlisle.* The policy  
Escaped him, of first striking Parliaments  
To earth, then setting them upon their feet  
And giving them a sword : but this is idle.  
Did the King send for Strafford ? He will  
come.

*Queen.* And what am I to do ?

*Lady Carlisle.* What do ? Fail, madam !  
Be ruined for his sake ! what matters how,  
So it but stand on record that you made  
An effort, only one ?

*Queen.* The King away  
At Theobald's !

*Lady Carlisle.* Send for him at once :  
he must  
Dissolve the House.

*Queen.* Wait till Vane finds the truth  
Of the report : then . . .

*Lady Carlisle.* —It will matter little  
What the King does. Strafford that lends  
his arm  
And breaks his heart for you !

Sir H. VANE enters.

*Vane.* The Commons, madam,  
Are sitting with closed doors. A huge debate,  
No lack of noise ; but nothing, I should guess,

Concerning Strafford : Pym has certainly  
Not spoken yet.

*Queen* [to Lady CARLISLE]. You hear ?

*Lady Carlisle.* I do not hear  
That the King's sent for !

*Vane.* Savile will be able  
To tell you more.

HOLLAND enters.

*Queen.* The last news, Holland ?

*Holland.* Pym  
Is raging like a fire. The whole House means  
To follow him together to Whitehall  
And force the King to give up Strafford.

*Queen.* Strafford ?

*Holland.* If they content themselves with  
Strafford ! Laud  
Is talked of, Cottington and Windebank  
too.

Pym has not left out one of them—I would  
You heard Pym raging !

*Queen.* Vane, go find the King !  
Tell the King, Vane, the People follow Pym  
To brave us at Whitehall !

SAVILE enters.

*Savile.* Not to Whitehall--  
'Tis to the Lords they go : they seek redress  
On Strafford from his peers—the legal way,  
They call it.

*Queen.* (Wait, Vane !)

*Savile.* But the adage gives  
Long life to threatened men. Strafford can  
save

Himself so readily : at York, remember,  
In his own county : what has he to fear ?  
The Commons only mean to frighten him  
From leaving York. Surely, he will not  
come.

*Queen.* Lucy, he will not come !

*Lady Carlisle.* Once more, the King  
Has sent for Strafford. He will come.

*Vane.* Oh doubtless !  
And bring destruction with him : that's his  
way.

What but his coming spoilt all Conway's plan ?  
The King must take his counsel, choose his  
friends,

Be wholly ruled by him ! What's the result ?  
The North that was to rise, Ireland to help,—  
What came of it ? In my poor mind, a fright  
Is no prodigious punishment.

*Lady Carlisle.* A fright ?

Pym will fail worse than Strafford if he thinks  
To frighten him. [*To the QUEEN.*] You  
will not save him then ?

*Savile.* When something like a charge is  
made, the King

Will best know how to save him : and 'tis clear,  
While Strafford suffers nothing by the matter,  
The King may reap advantage : this in  
question,

No dinning you with ship-money complaints !

*Queen* [*to Lady CARLISLE.*] If we dissolve  
them, who will pay the army ?

Protect us from the insolent Scots ?

*Lady Carlisle.* In truth,

I know not, madam. Strafford's fate concerns  
Me little : you desired to learn what course  
Would save him : I obey you.

*Vane.* Notice, too,

There can't be fairer ground for taking full  
Revenge—(Strafford's revengeful)—than he'll  
have

Against his old friend Pym.

*Queen.* Why, he shall claim  
Vengeance on Pym !

*Vane.* And Strafford, who is he

To 'scape unscathed amid the accidents  
That harass all beside ? I, for my part,  
Should look for something of discomfiture  
Had the King trusted me so thoroughly  
And been so paid for it.

*Holland.* He'll keep at York :

All will blow over : he'll return no worse,  
Humbled a little, thankful for a place  
Under as good a man. Oh, we'll dispense  
With seeing Strafford for a month or two !

STRAFFORD enters.

*Queen.* You here !

*Strafford.* The King sends for me, madam.

*Queen.* Sir,

'The King . . .

*Strafford.* An urgent matter that  
imports the King !

[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] Why, Lucy, what's  
in agitation now,

That all this muttering and shrugging, see,  
Begins at me ? They do not speak !

*Lady Carlisle.* 'Tis welcome !

For we are proud of you—happy and proud  
To have you with us, Strafford ! You were  
staunch

At Durham : you did well there ! Had you  
not

Been stayed, you might have . . . we said,  
even now,

Our hope's in you !

*Vane* [*to Lady CARLISLE.*] The Queen  
would speak with you.

*Strafford.* Will one of you, his servants  
here, vouchsafe

To signify my presence to the King ?

*Savile.* An urgent matter ?

*Strafford.* None that touches you,

Lord Savile ! Say, it were some treacherous  
Sly pitiful intriguing with the Scots—

You would go free, at least ! (They hail  
divine

My purpose !) Madam, shall I see the King ?  
The service I would render, much concerns  
His welfare.

*Queen.* But his Majesty, my lord,

May not be here, may . . .

*Strafford.* Its importance, then,  
Must plead excuse for this withdrawal,  
madam,

And for the grief it gives Lord Savile here.

*Queen* [*who has been conversing with VANE  
and HOLLAND.*] The King will see  
you, sir !

[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] Mark me :  
Pym's worst

Is done by now : he has impeached the Earl,  
Or found the Earl too strong for him, by now.  
Let us not seem instructed ! We should work  
No good to Strafford, but deform ourselves  
With shame in the world's eye. [*To STRAF-  
FORD.*] His Majesty

Has much to say with you.

*Strafford.* Time fleeting, too !

[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] No means of getting  
them away ? And She—

What does she whisper? Does she know my purpose?

What does she think of it? Get them away!

*Queen* [to *Lady CARLISLE*]. He comes to baffle Pym—he thinks the danger far off: tell him no word of it! a time for help will come; we'll not be wanting then. Keep him in play, Lucy—you, self-possessed and calm! [*To STRAFFORD*.] To spare your lordship some delay

I will myself acquaint the King. [*To Lady CARLISLE*.] Beware!

[*The QUEEN, VANE, HOLLAND, and SAVILE go out.*]

*Strafford*. She knows it?

*Lady Carlisle*. Tell me, *Strafford*! Afterward!

This moment's the great moment of all time. She knows my purpose?

*Lady Carlisle*. Thoroughly: just now she bade me hide it from you.

*Strafford*. Quick, dear child, the whole o' the scheme?

*Lady Carlisle*. (Ah, he would learn if they connive at Pym's procedure! Could they but have once apprised the King! But there's no time

for falsehood, now.) *Strafford*, the whole is known.

*Strafford*. Known and approved?

*Lady Carlisle*. Hardly discountenanced.

*Strafford*. And the King—say, the King consents as well?

*Lady Carlisle*. The King's not yet informed, but will not dare to interpose.

*Strafford*. What need to wait him, then? He'll sanction it! I stayed, child, tell him, long! It vexed me to the soul—this waiting here. You know him, there's no counting on the King. Tell him I waited long!

*Lady Carlisle*. (What can he mean? Rejoice at the King's hollowness?)

*Strafford*. I knew they would be glad of it,—all over once, I knew they would be glad: but he'd contrive, The Queen and he, to mar, by helping it, An angel's making.

*Lady Carlisle*. (Is he mad?) Dear *Strafford*,

You were not wont to look so happy. *Strafford*. Sweet,

I tried obedience thoroughly. I took The King's wild plan: of course, ere I could reach

My army, Conway ruined it. I drew The wrecks together, raised all heaven and earth,

And would have fought the Scots: the King at once

Made truce with them. Then, Lucy, then, dear child,

God put it in my mind to love, serve, die For Charles, but never to obey him more!

While he endured their insolence at Ripon I fell on them at Durham. But you'll tell The King I waited? All the anteroom Is filled with my adherents.

*Lady Carlisle*. *Strafford*—*Strafford*, What daring act is this you hint?

*Strafford*. No, no! 'Tis here, not daring if you knew? all here!

[*Drawing papers from his breast.* Full proof, see, ample proof—does the Queen know

I have such damning proof? Bedford and Essex,

Brooke, Warwick, Savile (did you notice Savile?

Thesimper that I spoil?), Saye, Mandeville—Sold to the Scots, body and soul, by Pym!

*Lady Carlisle*. Great heaven! *Strafford*. From Savile

and his lords, to Pym And his losels, crushed!—Pym shall no ward the blow

Nor Savile creep aside from it! The Crew And the Cabal—I crush them!

*Lady Carlisle*. And you go—*Strafford*,—and now you go?—

*Strafford*. —About no work In the background, I promise you! I go

Straight to the House of Lords to claim these knaves.

Mainwaring!

*Lady Carlisle*. Stay—stay, *Strafford*!

*Strafford.* She'll return,  
The Queen—some little project of her own!  
No time to lose: the King takes fright  
perhaps.

*Lady Carlisle.* Pym's strong, remember!

*Strafford.* Very strong, as fits  
The Faction's head—with no offence to  
Hampden,

Vane, Rudyard and my loving Hollis: one  
And all they lodge within the Tower to-night  
In just equality. Bryan! Mainwaring!

[*Many of his Adherents enter.*]

The Peers debate just now (a lucky chance)  
On the Scots' war; my visit's opportune  
When all is over, Bryan, you proceed  
To Ireland: these dispatches, mark me,  
Bryan,

Are for the Deputy, and these for Ormond:  
We want the army here—my army, raised  
At such a cost, that should have done such  
good,

And was inactive all the time! no matter,  
We'll find a use for it. Willis . . . or, no  
—you!

You, friend, make haste to York: bear this,  
at once . . .

Or,—better stay for form's sake, see yourself  
The news you carry. You remain with me  
To execute the Parliament's command,  
Mainwaring! Help to seize these lesser  
knaves,

Take care there's no escaping at backdoors:  
I'll not have one escape, mind me—not one!  
I seem revengeful, Lucy? Did you know  
What these men dare!

*Lady Carlisle.* It is so much they dare!

*Strafford.* I proved that long ago; my  
turn is now.

Keep sharp watch, Goring, on the citizens!  
Observe who harbours any of the brood  
That scramble off: be sure they smart for it!  
Our coffers are but lean.

And you, child, too,  
Shall have your task; deliver this to Laud.  
Laud will not be the slowest in my praise:  
"Thorough" he'll cry!—Foolish, to be so  
glad!

This life is gay and glowing, after all:

'Tis worth while, Lucy, having foes like mine  
Just for the bliss of crushing them. To-day  
Is worth the living for.

*Lady Carlisle.* That reddening brow!  
You seem . . .

*Strafford.* Well—do I not? I would  
be well—

I could not but be well on such a day!  
And, this day ended, 'tis of slight import  
How long the ravaged frame subjects the soul  
In Strafford.

*Lady Carlisle.* Noble Strafford!

*Strafford.* No farewell!  
I'll see you anon, to-morrow—the first thing.  
—If She should come to stay me!

*Lady Carlisle.* Go—'tis nothing—  
Only my heart that swells: it has been thus  
Ere now: go, Strafford!

*Strafford.* To-night, then, let it be.  
I must see Him: you, the next after Him.  
I'll tell you how Pym looked. Follow me,  
friends!

You, gentlemen, shall see a sight this hour  
To talk of all your lives. Close after me!  
"My friend of friends!"

[*STRAFFORD and the rest go out.*]

*Lady Carlisle.* The King—ever the King!  
No thought of one beside, whose little word  
Unveils the King to him—one word from me,  
Which yet I do not breathe!

Ah, have I spared  
Strafford a pang, and shall I seek reward  
Beyond that memory? Surely too, some way  
He is the better for my love. No, no—  
He would not look so joyous—I'll believe  
His very eye would never sparkle thus,  
Had I not prayed for him this long, long while.

#### SCENE III.—*The Antechamber of the House of Lords.*

*Many of the Presbyterian Party. The  
Adherents of STRAFFORD, etc.*

*A Group of Presbyterians.*—1. I tell you  
he struck Maxwell: Maxwell sought  
To stay the Earl: he struck him and passed

2. Fear as you may, keep a good countenance  
Before these rufflers.

3.                               Strafford here the first,  
With the great army at his back!

4.                               No doubt.  
I would Pym had made haste: that's Bryan,  
hush—

The gallant pointing.

*Strafford's Followers.* — 1. Mark these  
worthies, now!

2. A goodly gathering! "Where the  
carcass is

"There shall the eagles"—what's the rest?

3.                               For eagles  
Say crows.

*A Presbyterian.* Stand back, sirs!

*One of Strafford's Followers.*       Are we  
in Geneva?

*A Presbyterian.* No, nor in Ireland; we  
have leave to breathe.

*One of Strafford's Followers.* Truly? Be-  
hold how privileged we be  
That serve "King Pym"! There's Some-one  
at Whitehall

Who skulks obscure; but Pym struts . . .

*The Presbyterian.*                       Nearer.

*A Follower of Strafford.*               Higher,  
We look to see him. [*To his Companions.*]

I'm to have St. John  
In charge; was he among the knaves just now  
That followed Pym within there?

*Another.*                               The gaunt man  
Talking with Rudyard. Did the Earl expect  
Pym at his heels so fast? I like it not.

MAXWELL enters.

*Another.* Why, man, they rush into the  
net! Here's Maxwell—

Ha, Maxwell? How the brethren flock around  
The fellow! Do you feel the Earl's hand yet  
Upon your shoulder, Maxwell?

*Maxwell.*                               Gentlemen,  
Stand back! a great thing passes here.

*A Follower of Strafford.* [*To another.*] The  
Earl

Is at his work! [*To M.*] Say, Maxwell, what  
great thing!

Speak out! [*To a Presbyterian.*] Friend,  
I've a kindness for you! Friend,

I've seen you with St. John: O stockishness!  
Wear such a ruff, and never call to mind

St. John's head in a charger? How, the  
plague,

Not laugh?

*Another.* Say, Maxwell, what great thing!

*Another.*                               Nay, wait:

The jest will be to wait.

*First.*                               And who's to bear

These demure hypocrites? You'd swear they  
came . . .

Came . . . just as we come!

[*A Puritan enters hastily and without  
observing STRAFFORD'S Followers.*]

*The Puritan.*                       How goes on the work?

Has Pym . . .

*A Follower of Strafford.* The secret's out  
at last. Aha,

The carrion's scented! Welcome, crow the  
first!

Gorge merrily, you with the blinking eye!

"King Pym has fallen!"

*The Puritan.*                       Pym?

*A Strafford.*                       Pym!

*A Presbyterian.*                       Only Pym?

*Many of Strafford's Followers.* No, brother,  
not Pym only; Vane as well,  
Rudyard as well, Hampden, St. John as  
well!

*A Presbyterian.* My mind misgives: can it  
be true?

*Another.*                               Lost! Lost!

*A Strafford.* Say we true, Maxwell?

*The Puritan.* Pride before destruction,  
A haughty spirit goeth before a fall.

*Many of Strafford's Followers.* Ah now!

The very thing! A word in season!

A golden apple in a silver picture,

To greet Pym as he passes!

[*The doors at the back begin to open,  
noise and light issuing.*]

*Maxwell.*                               Stand back, all!

*Many of the Presbyterians.* I hold with  
Pym! And I!

*Strafford's Followers.* Now for the text!  
He comes! Quick!



*The Puritan.* How hath the oppressor When the King lays your head beneath my foot  
ceased!

The Lord hath broken the staff of the wicked! It will not pay for that. Go, all of you!  
The sceptre of the rulers, he who smote *Maxwell.* I dare, my lord, to disobey;  
The people in wrath with a continual stroke, none stir!  
That ruled the nations in his anger—he *Strafford.* This gentle Maxwell!—Do not  
I, persecuted and none hindereth! touch him, Bryan!

[*The doors open, and STRAFFORD issues in the greatest disorder, and amid cries from within of "Void the House!"*]  
[*To the Presbyterians.*] Whichever cur of you will carry this  
Escapes his fellow's fate. None saves his life? None?

*Strafford.* Impeach me! Pym! I never [Cries from within of "STRAFFORD!"  
struck, I think, Slingsby, I've loved you at least:  
The felon on that calm insulting mouth make haste!

When it proclaimed—Pym's mouth proclaimed me . . . God!

Was it a word, only a word that held  
The outrageous blood back on my heart— which beats!

Which beats! Some one word—"Traitor," did he say,

Bending that eye, brimful of bitter fire,  
Upon me?

*Maxwell.* In the Commons' name, their servant

Demands Lord Strafford's sword. *Strafford.* What did you say?

*Maxwell.* The Commons bid me ask your lordship's sword.

*Strafford.* Let us go forth: follow me, gentlemen!

Draw your swords too: cut any down that bar us.

On the King's service! Maxwell, clear the way! [The Presbyterians prepare to dispute his passage.

*Strafford.* I stay: the King himself shall see me here.

Your tablets, fellow!

[To MAINWARING.] Give that to the King!

Yes, Maxwell, for the next half-hour, let be! Pray you now—Pym awaits me—pray you now!

Nay, you shall take my sword! [MAXWELL advances to take it.

Or, no—not that!

Their blood, perhaps, may wipe out all thus far,  
All up to that—not that! Why, friend, you see

When the King lays your head beneath my foot

It will not pay for that. Go, all of you!

*Maxwell.* I dare, my lord, to disobey; none stir!

*Strafford.* This gentle Maxwell!—Do not touch him, Bryan!

[*To the Presbyterians.*] Whichever cur of you will carry this

Escapes his fellow's fate. None saves his life? None?

[Cries from within of "STRAFFORD!"  
Slingsby, I've loved you at least:  
make haste!

Stab me! I have not time to tell you why.

You then, my Bryan! Mainwaring, you then!

Is it because I spoke so hastily

At Allerton? The King had vexed me.

[*To the Presbyterians.*] You!

—Not even you? If I live over this,  
The King is sure to have your heads, you know!

But what if I can't live this minute through?

Pym, who is there with his pursuing smile!

[*Louder cries of "STRAFFORD!"*

The King! I troubled him, stood in the way

Of his negotiations, was the one  
Great obstacle to peace, the Enemy

Of Scotland: and he sent for me, from York,  
My safety guaranteed—having prepared

A Parliament—I see! And at Whitehall  
The Queen was whispering with Vane—I see

The trap! [Tearing off the George.  
I tread a gewgaw underfoot,  
And cast a memory from me. One stroke,  
now!

[*His own Adherents disarm him.*

*Renewed cries of "STRAFFORD!"*

England! I see thy arm in this and yield.

Pray you now—Pym awaits me—pray you now!

[STRAFFORD reaches the doors: they open wide. HAMPTDEN and a crowd discovered, and, at the bar, PYM standing apart. As STRAFFORD kneels, the scene shuts.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*Whitehall.*

*The KING, the QUEEN, HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE. (VANE, HOLLAND, SAVILE, in the background.)*

*Lady Carlisle.* Answer them, Hollis, for his sake! One word!

*Charles.* [*To HOLLIS.*] You stand, silent and cold, as though I were Deceiving you—my friend, my playfellow (of other times. What wonder after all? Just so, I dreamed my People loved me.

*Hollis.* Sir, It is yourself that you deceive, not me. You'll quit me comforted, your mind made up That, since you've talked thus much and grieved thus much, All you can do for Strafford has been done.

*Queen.* If you kill Strafford—(come, we grant you leave, Suppose)—

*Hollis.* I may withdraw, sir?  
*Lady Carlisle.* Hear them out 'Tis the last chance for Strafford! I hear them out!

*Hollis.* "If we kill Strafford"—on the eighteenth day Of Strafford's trial—"We!"

*Charles.* Pym, my good Hollis—Pym, I should say!

*Hollis.* Ah, true—sir, pardon me! You witness our proceedings every day; But the screened gallery, I might have guessed,

Admits of such a partial glimpse at us, Pym takes up all the room, shuts out the view. Still, on my honour, sir, the rest of the place Is not unoccupied. The Commons sit—That's England; Ireland sends, and Scotland too,

Their representatives; the Peers that judge Are easily distinguished; one remarks The People here and there: but the close curtain Must hide so much!

*Queen.* Acquaint your insolent crew, This day the curtain shall be dashed aside! It served a purpose.

*Hollis.* Think! This very day! Ere Strafford rises to defend himself?

*Charles.* I will defend him, sir!—sanction the past

This day: it ever was my purpose. Rage At me, not Strafford!

*Lady Carlisle.* Nobly!—will he not Do nobly?

*Hollis.* Sir, you will do honestly; And, for that deed, I too would be a king.

*Charles.* Only, to do this now!—"deaf" (in your style)

"To subjects' prayers,"—I must oppose them now!

It seems their will the trial should proceed,— So palpably their will!

*Hollis.* You peril much, But it were no bright moment save for that. Strafford, your prime support, the sole roof-tree

Which props this quaking House of Privilege, (Floods come, winds beat, and see—the treacherous sand!)

Doubtless, if the mere putting forth an arm Could save him, you'd save Strafford.

*Charles.* And they dare Consume calmly this great wrong! No hope?

This ineffaceable wrong! No pity then?

*Hollis.* No plague in store for perfidy?— Farewell!

You called me, sir—[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] you, lady, bade me come

To save the Earl: I came, thank God for it, To learn how far such perfidy can go!

You, sir, concert with me on saving him Who have just ruined Strafford!

*Charles.* I?—and how?

*Hollis.* Eighteen days long he throws, one after one,

Pym's charges back: a blind moth-eaten law! —He'll break from it at last: and whom to thank?

The mouse that gnawed the lion's net for him Got a good friend,—but he, the other mouse,

That looked on while the lion freed himself—

Fared he so well, does any fable say?

*Charles.* What can you mean?

*Hollis.* Pym never could have proved

Strafford's design of bringing up the troops

To force this kingdom to obedience: Vane—

Your servant, not our friend, has proved it.

*Charles.* Vane?

*Hollis.* This day. Did Vane deliver up or no

Those notes which, furnished by his son to Pym,

Seal Strafford's fate?

*Charles.* Sir, as I live, I know Nothing that Vane has done! What treason next?

I wash my hands of it. Vane, speak the truth!

Ask Vane himself!

*Hollis.* I will not speak to Vane, Who speak to Pym and Hampden every day.

*Queen.* Speak to Vane's master then!

What gain to him

Were Strafford's death?

*Hollis.* Ha? Strafford cannot turn As you, sir, sit there—bid you forth, demand If every hateful act were not set down In his commission?—whether you contrived Or no, that all the violence should seem His work, the gentle ways—your own,—his part,

To counteract the King's kind impulses—

While . . . but you know what he could say! And then

He might produce,—mark, sir!—a certain charge

To set the King's express command aside, If need were, and be blameless. He might add . . .

*Charles.* Enough!

*Hollis.* —Who bade him break the Parliament, Find some pretence for setting up sword-law!

*Queen.* Retire!

*Charles.* Once more, whatever Vane dared do,

I know not: he is rash, a fool—I know Nothing of Vane!

*Hollis.* Well—I believe you. Sir, Believe me, in return, that . . .

[Turning to Lady CARLISLE.] Gentle lady, The few words I would say, the stones might hear

Sooner than these,—I rather speak to you, You, with the heart! The question, trust me takes

Another shape, to-day: not, if the King Or England shall succumb,—but, who shall pay The forfeit, Strafford or his master. Sir, You loved me once: think on my warning now! [Goes out.]

*Charles.* On you and on your warning both!—Carlisle!

That paper!

*Queen.* But consider!

*Charles.* Give it me!

There, signed—will that content you? Do not speak!

You have betrayed me, Vane! See! any day, According to the tenor of that paper, He bids your brother bring the army up, Strafford shall head it and take full revenge. Seek Strafford! Let him have the same, before He rises to defend himself!

*Queen.* In truth?

That your shrewd Hollis should have worked a change

Like this! You, late reluctant . . .

*Charles.* Say, Carlisle, Your brother Percy brings the army up, Falls on the Parliament—(I'll think of you, My Hollis!) say, we plotted long—'tis mine, The scheme is mine, remember! Say, I curse! Vane's folly in your hearing! If the Earl Does rise to do us shame, the fault shall lie With you, Carlisle!

*Lady Carlisle.* Nay, fear not me! but still

That's a bright moment, sir, you throw away. Tear down the veil and save him!

*Queen.* Go, Carlisle!

*Lady Carlisle.* (I shall see Strafford— speak to him: my heart Must never beat so, then! And if I tell

The truth? What's gained by falsehood?  
There they stand

Whose trade it is, whose life it is! How vain  
To gild such rottenness! Strafford shall know,  
Thoroughly know them!)

*Queen.* Trust to me! [*To*

*CARLISLE.*] Carlisle,

You seem inclined, alone of all the Court,  
To serve poor Strafford: this bold plan of yours  
Merits much praise, and yet . . .

*Lady Carlisle.* Time presses, madam.

*Queen.* Yet—may it not be something  
premature?

Strafford defends himself to-day—reserves  
Some wondrous effort, one may well suppose!

*Lady Carlisle.* Ay, Hollis hints as much.

*Charles.* Why linger then?

Haste with the scheme—my scheme: I shall  
be there

To watch his look. Tell him I watch his look!

*Queen.* Stay, we'll precede you!

*Lady Carlisle.* At your pleasure.

*Charles.* Say—

Say, Vane is hardly ever at Whitehall!

I shall be there, remember!

*Lady Carlisle.* Doubt me not.

*Charles.* On our return, Carlisle, we wait  
you here!

*Lady Carlisle.* I'll bring his answer. Sir,  
I follow you.

(Prove the King faithless, and I take away  
All Strafford cares to live for: let it be—  
'Tis the King's scheme!

My Strafford, I can save,  
Nay, I have saved you, yet am scarce content,  
Because my poor name will not cross your  
mind.

Strafford, how much I am unworthy you!)

SCENE II.—*A Passage adjoining  
Westminster Hall.*

*Many Groups of Spectators of the Trial.  
Officers of the Court, etc.*

*1st Spectator.* More crowd than ever! Not  
know Hampden, man?  
That's he, by Pym, Pym that is speaking now.

No, truly, if you look so high you'll see  
Little enough of either!

*2nd Spectator.* Stay: Pym's arm  
Points like a prophet's rod.

*3rd Spectator.* Ay, ay, we've heard  
Some pretty speaking: yet the Earl escapes.

*4th Spectator.* I fear it: just a foolish word  
or two

About his children—and we see, forsooth,  
Not England's foe in Strafford, but the man  
Who, sick, half-blind . . .

*2nd Spectator.* What's that Pym's  
saying now

Which makes the curtains flutter? look! A  
hand

Clutches them. Ah! The King's hand!

*5th Spectator.* I had thought  
Pym was not near so tall. What said he,  
friend?

*2nd Spectator.* "Nor is this way a novel  
way of blood,"

And the Earl turns as if to . . . look! look!  
*Many Spectators.* There!

What ails him? no—he rallies, see—goes on,  
And Strafford smiles. Strange!

*An Officer.* Haselrig!

*Many Spectators.* Friend? Friend?

*The Officer.* Lost, utterly lost: just when  
we looked for Pym

To make a stand against the ill effects  
Of the Earl's speech! Is Haselrig without?  
Pym's message is to him.

*3rd Spectator.* Now, said I true?  
Will the Earl leave them yet at fault or no?

*1st Spectator.* Never believe it, man!  
These notes of Vane's

Ruin the Earl.

*5th Spectator.* A brave end: not a whit  
Less firm, less Pym all over. Then, the trial  
Is closed. No—Strafford means to speak  
again?

*An Officer.* Stand back, there!

*5th Spectator.* Why, the  
Earl is coming hither!

Before the court breaks up! His brother,  
look,—

You'd say he'd deprecated some fierce act  
In Strafford's mind just now.

*An Officer.* Stand back, I say ! [*To a Messenger.*] In truth ? This slip, tell

*and Spectator.* Who's the veiled woman Lane, contains as much

that he talks with ? As I can call to mind about the matter.

*Many Spectators.* Hush— Eliot would have disdained . . .

The Earl ! the Earl ! [*Calling after the Messenger.*] And Radcliffe, say,

[*Enter STRAFFORD, SLINGSBY, and other Secretaries, HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE, MAXWELL, BAL- FOUR, etc. STRAFFORD converses with Lady CARLISLE.*]  
The only person who could answer Pym, Is safe in prison, just for that.

Well, well !

*Hollis.* So near the end ! Be patient—  
Return ! [*To Lady CARLISLE.*] Nay, child, why look so grieved ?

*Strafford* [*to his Secretaries*]. Here—any-  
where—or, 'tis freshest here ! All's gained without the King ! You saw Pym quail ?

To spend one's April here, the blossom-month :  
Set it down here ! What shall I do when they acquit me, think you,

[*They arrange a table, papers, etc.*]  
But tranquilly resume my task as though  
So, Pym can quail, can cower  
Nothing had intervened since I proposed  
Because I glance at him, yet more's to do ?  
To call that traitor to account ! Such tricks,  
What's to be answered, Slingsby ? Let us end !  
Trust me, shall not be played a second  
[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] Child, I refuse his  
time,

offer ; whatso'er  
Not even against Laud, with his grey hair—  
It be ! Too late ! Tell me no word of him !  
Your good work, Hollis ! Peace ! To make  
'Tis something, Hollis, I assure you that—  
amends,

To stand, sick as you are, some eighteen days  
You, Lucy, shall be here when I impeach  
Fighting for life and fame against a pack  
Pym and his fellows.

Of very curs, that lie through thick and thin,  
*Hollis.* Wherefore not protest  
Eat flesh and bread by wholesale, and can't  
Against our whole proceeding, long ago ?  
say  
Why feel indignant now ? Why stand this  
“ Strafford ” if it would take my life !  
while

*Lady Carlisle.* Be moved !  
Enduring patiently ?

Glance at the paper !  
*Strafford.* Child, I'll tell you—

Already at my heels !  
You, and not Pym—you, the slight graceful  
Pym's faulting bloodhounds scent the track  
girl

again.  
Tall for a flowering lily, and not Hollis—  
Peace, child ! Now, Slingsby !  
Why I stood patient ! I was fool enough

[*Messengers from LANKE and other of STRAFFORD'S Counsel within the Hall are coming and going during the Scene.*]  
To see the will of England in Pym's will ;  
To fear, myself had wronged her, and to  
wait

*Strafford* [*setting himself to write and dic- tate*]. Her judgment : when, behold, in place of  
it . . .

I shall beat you, Hollis !  
[*To a Messenger who whispers.*] Tell Lane to  
Do you know that ? In spite of St. John's  
answer no such question ! Law,—

tricks,  
I grapple with their law ! I'm here to try  
In spite of Pym—your Pym who shrank from  
My actions by their standard, not my own !  
me !  
Their law allowed that levy : what's the rest  
To Pym, or Lane, any but God and me ?

Eliot would have contrived it otherwise.

*Lady Carlisle.* The King's so weak ! Secure this chance ! 'Twas Vane,  
Never forget, who furnished Pym the notes . . .

*Strafford.* Fit,—very fit, those precious notes of Vane,  
To close the Trial worthily ! I feared  
Some spice of nobleness might linger yet  
And spoil the character of all the past.  
Vane eased me . . . and I will go back and say

As much—to Pym, to England ! Follow me !  
I have a word to say ! There, my defence  
Is done !

Stay ! why be proud ? Why care to own  
My gladness, my surprise ?—Nay, not surprise !

Wherefore insist upon the little pride  
Of doing all myself, and sparing him  
The pain ? Child, say the triumph is my King's !

When Pym grew pale, and trembled, and sank down,  
One image was before me : could I fail ?  
Child, care not for the past, so indistinct,  
Obscure—there's nothing to forgive in it  
'Tis so forgotten ! From this day begins  
A new life, founded on a new belief  
In Charles.

*Hollis.* In Charles ? Rather believe in Pym !

And here he comes in proof ! Appeal to Pym !

Say how unfair . . .

*Strafford.* To Pym ? I would say nothing !

I would not look upon Pym's face again.

*Lady Carlisle.* Stay, let me have to think  
I pressed your hand !

[STRAFFORD and his friends go out.]

*Enter HAMPDEN and VANE.*

*Vane.* O Hampden, save the great misguided man !  
Plead Strafford's cause with Pym ! I have remarked

He moved no muscle when we all de-claimed

Against him : you had but to breathe—he turned  
Those kind calm eyes upon you.

[*Enter PYM, the Solicitor-General*  
*ST. JOHN, the Managers of the*  
*Trial, FIENNES, RUDYARD, etc.*

*Rudyard.* Horrible !  
Till now all hearts were with you : I withdraw

For one. Too horrible ! But we mistake  
Your purpose, Pym : you cannot snatch away  
The last spar from the drowning man.

*Fiennes.* He talks  
With St. John of it—see, how quietly !

[*To other Presbyterians.*] You'll join us ?  
Strafford may deserve the worst :

But this new course is monstrous. Vane, take heart !

This Bill of his Attainder shall not have  
One true man's hand to it.

*Vane.* Consider, Pym !  
Confront your Bill, your own Bill : what is it ?  
You cannot catch the Earl on any charge,—  
No man will say the law has hold of him  
On any charge ; and therefore you resolve  
To take the general sense on his desert,  
As though no law existed, and we met  
To found one. You refer to Parliament  
To speak its thought upon the abortive mass  
Of half-borne-out assertions, dubious hints  
Hereafter to be cleared, distortions—ay,  
And wild inventions. Every man is saved  
The task of fixing any single charge  
On Strafford : he has but to see in him  
The enemy of England.

*Pym.* A right scruple !  
I have heard some called England's enemy  
With less consideration.

*Vane.* Pity me !  
Indeed you made me think I was your friend !  
I who have murdered Strafford, how remove  
That memory from me ?

*Pym.* I absolve you, Vane.  
Take you no care for aught that you have done !

*Vane.* John Hampden, not this Bill !  
Reject this Bill !

He staggers through the ordeal : let him go,  
Strew no fresh fire before him ! Plead for  
us !

When Strafford spoke, your eyes were thick  
with tears !

*Hampden.* England speaks louder : who  
are we, to play

The generous pardoner at her expense,  
Magnanimously waive advantages,  
And, if he conquer us, applaud his skill ?

*Vane.* He was your friend.

*Pym.* I have heard that before.

*Fiennes.* And England trusts you.

*Hampden.* Shame be his, who turns  
The opportunity of serving her  
She trusts him with, to his own mean  
account—

Who would look nobly frank at her expense !

*Fiennes.* I never thought it could have  
come to this.

*Pym.* But I have made myself familiar,  
*Fiennes,*

With this one thought—have walked, and  
sat, and slept,

This thought before me. I have done such  
things,

Being the chosen man that should destroy  
The traitor. You have taken up this thought  
To play with, for a gentle stimulant,  
To give a dignity to idler life  
By the dim prospect of emprise to come,  
But ever with the softening, sure belief,  
That all would end some strange way right  
at last.

*Fiennes.* Had we made out some weightier  
charge !

*Pym.* You say  
That these are petty charges : can we come  
To the real charge at all ? There he is safe  
In tyranny's stronghold. Apostasy  
Is not a crime, treachery not a crime :  
The cheek burns, the blood tingles, when  
you speak  
The words, but where's the power to take  
revenge

Upon them ? We must make occasion serve,—  
The oversight shall pay for the main sin  
That mocks us.

*Rudyard.* But this unexampled course,  
This Bill !

*Pym.* By this, we roll the clouds away  
Of precedent and custom, and at once  
Bid the great beacon-light God sets in all,  
The conscience of each bosom, shine upon  
The guilt of Strafford : each man lay his hand  
Upon his breast, and judge !

*Vane.* I only see  
Strafford, nor pass his corpse for all beyond !

*Rudyard and others.* Forgive him ! He  
would join us, now he finds

What the King counts reward ! The pardon,  
too,

Should be your own. Yourself should bear  
to Strafford

The pardon of the Commons.

*Pym.* Meet him ? Strafford ?

Have we to meet once more, then ? Be it so !  
And yet—the prophecy seemed half fulfilled  
When, at the Trial, as he gazed, my youth,  
Our friendship, divers thoughts came back  
at once.

And left me, for a time . . . 'Tis very sad !  
To-morrow we discuss the points of law  
With Lane—to-morrow ?

*Vane.* Not before to-morrow—  
So, time enough ! I knew you would relent !

*Pym.* The next day, Haselrig, you intro-  
duce

The Bill of his Attainder. Pray for me !

### SCENE III.—*Whitehall.*

*The KING.*

*Charles.* My loyal servant ! To defend  
himself

Thus irresistibly,—withholding aught  
That seemed to implicate us !

We have done  
Less gallantly by Strafford. Well, the future  
Must recompense the past.

She tarries long.  
I understand you, Strafford, now !

The scheme—  
Carlisle's mad scheme—he'll sanction it, I  
fear,

For love of me. 'Twas too precipitate :  
Before the army's fairly on its march,  
He'll be at large : no matter.

Well, Carlisle?

*Enter Pym.*

*Pym.* Fear me not, sir :—my mission is to  
save,  
This time.

*Charles.* To break thus on me ! Un-  
announced !

*Pym.* It is of Strafford I would speak.

*Charles.* No more  
Of Strafford ! I have heard too much from  
you.

*Pym.* I spoke, sir, for the People ; will you  
hear

A word upon my own account?

*Charles.* Of Strafford ?  
(So turns the tide already ? Have we tamed  
The insolent brawler ?—Strafford's eloquence  
Is swift in its effect.) Lord Strafford, sir,  
Has spoken for himself.

*Pym.* Sufficiently.  
I would apprise you of the novel course  
The People take : the Trial fails.

*Charles.* Yes, yes :  
We are aware, sir : for your part in it  
Means shall be found to thank you.

*Pym.* Pray you, read  
This schedule ! I would learn from your own  
mouth

--(It is a matter much concerning me)—  
Whether, if two Estates of us concede  
The death of Strafford, on the grounds set  
forth

Within that parchment, you, sir, can resolve  
To grant your own consent to it. This Bill  
Is framed by me. If you determine, sir,  
That England's manifested will should guide  
Your judgment, ere another week such will  
Shall manifest itself. If not,—I cast  
Aside the measure.

*Charles.* You can hinder, then,  
The introduction of this Bill ?

*Pym.* I can.

*Charles.* He is my friend, sir : I have  
wronged him : mark you,

Had I not wronged him, this might be. You  
think

Because you hate the Earl . . . (turn not away,  
We know you hate him)—no one else could  
love

Strafford : but he has saved me, some affirm.  
Think of his pride ! And do you know one  
strange,

One frightful thing ? We all have used the man  
As though a drudge of ours, with not a source  
Of happy thoughts except in us ; and yet  
Strafford has wife and children, household  
cares,

Just as if we had never been. Ah sir,  
You are moved, even you, a solitary man  
Wed to your cause—to England if you will !

*Pym.* Yes—think, my soul—to England !  
Draw not back !

*Charles.* Prevent that Bill, sir ! All your  
course seems fair  
Till now. Why, in the end, 'tis I should sign  
The warrant for his death ! You have said  
much

I ponder on ; I never meant, indeed,  
Strafford should serve me any more. I take  
The Commons' counsel ; but this Bill is  
yours—

Nor worthy of its leader : care not, sir,  
For that, however ! I will quite forget  
You named it to me. You are satisfied ?

*Pym.* Listen to me, sir ! Eliot laid his  
hand,

Wasted and white, upon my forehead once ;  
Wentworth—he's gone now !—has talked on,  
whole nights,

And I beside him ; Hampden loves me : sir,  
How can I breathe and not wish England well,  
And her King well ?

*Charles.* I thank you, sir, who leave  
That King his servant. Thanks, sir !

*Pym.* Let me speak !  
—Who may not speak again ; whose spirit  
yearns

For a cool night after this weary day :  
—Who would not have my soul turn sicker yet  
In a new task, more fatal, more august,  
More full of England's utter weal or woe.  
I thought, sir, could I find myself with you,



After this trial, alone, as man to man—  
I might say something, warn you, pray you,  
save —

Mark me, King Charles, save—you !  
But God must do it. Yet I warn you, sir—  
(With Strafford's faded eyes yet full on me)  
As you would have no deeper question moved  
—"How long the Many must endure the  
One,"

Assure me, sir, if England give assent  
To Strafford's death, you will not interfere !  
Or—

*Charles.* God forsakes me. I am in a net  
And cannot move. Let all be as you say !

*Enter Lady CARLISLE.*

*Lady Carlisle.* He loves you -- looking  
beautiful with joy

Because you sent me ! he would spare you all  
The pain ! he never dreamed you would  
forsake

Your servant in the evil day--nay, see  
Your scheme returned ! That generous  
heart of his !

He needs it not--or, needing it, disdains  
A course that might endanger you--you, sir,  
Whom Strafford from his inmost soul . . .

[*Seeing Pym.*] Well met !

No fear for Strafford ! All that's true and  
brave

On your own side shall help us : we are now  
Stronger than ever.

Ha--what, sir, is this ?  
All is not well ! What parchment have you  
there ?

*Pym.* Sir, much is saved us both.

*Lady Carlisle.* This Bill ! Your lip  
Whitens--you could not read one line to me  
Your voice would falter so !

*Pym.* No recreant yet !  
The great word went from England to my  
soul,

And I arose. The end is very near.

*Lady Carlisle.* I am to save him ! All  
have shrunk beside ;

'Tis only I am left. Heaven will make strong  
The hand now as the heart. Then let both  
die !

# ACT V.

## SCENE I.—*Whitehall.*

HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE.

*Hollis.* Tell the King then ! Come in  
with me !

*Lady Carlisle.* Not so !

He must not hear till it succeeds.

*Hollis.* Succeed ?

No dream was half so vain--you'd rescue  
Strafford

And outwit Pym ! I cannot tell you . . . lady,  
The block pursues me, and the hideous show.  
To-day . . . is it to-day ? And all the while  
He's sure of the King's pardon. Think, I  
have

To tell this man he is to die. The King  
May rend his hair, for me ! I'll not see  
Strafford !

*Lady Carlisle.* Only, if I succeed, re-  
member--Charles

Has saved him. He would hardly value life  
Unless his gift. My staunch friends wait.

Go in--

You must go in to Charles !

*Hollis.* And all beside

Left Strafford long ago. The King has signed  
The warrant for his death ! the Queen was  
sick

Of the eternal subject. For the Court,--

The Trial was amusing in its way,  
Only too much of it : the Earl withdrew  
In time. But you, fragile, alone, so young  
Amid rude mercenaries--you devise

A plan to save him ! Even though it fails,  
What shall reward you ?

*Lady Carlisle.* I may go, you think,  
To France with him ? And you reward me,  
friend,

Who lived with Strafford even from his youth  
Before he set his heart on state-affairs  
And they bent down that noble brow of his.  
I have learned somewhat of his latter life,  
And all the future I shall know : but, Hollis,  
I ought to make his youth my own as well.  
Tell me,--when he is saved !

*Hollis.* My gentle friend,  
He should know all and love you, but 'tis  
vain!

*Lady Carlisle.* Love? no—too late now!  
Let him love the King!  
'Tis the King's scheme! I have your word,  
remember!

We'll keep the old delusion up. But, quick!  
Quick! Each of us has work to do, be-  
side!

Go to the King! I hope—Hollis—I hope!  
Say nothing of my scheme! Hush, while  
we speak

Think where he is! Now for my gallant  
friends!

*Hollis.* Where he is? Calling wildly upon  
Charles,  
Guessing his fate, pacing the prison-floor.  
Let the King tell him! I'll not look on  
Strafford.

SCENE II.—*The Tower.*

STRAFFORD *sitting with his Children.*  
*They sing.*

*O bell andare  
Per barca in mare,  
Verso la sera  
Di Primavera!*

*William.* The boat's in the broad moon-  
light all this while—

*Verso la sera  
Di Primavera!*

And the boat shoots from underneath the  
moon  
Into the shadowy distance; only still  
You hear the dipping oar—

*Verso la sera,*

And faint, and fainter, and then all's quite  
gone,  
Music and light and all, like a lost star.

*Anne.* But you should sleep, father: you  
were to sleep.

*Strafford.* I do sleep, Anne; or if not—  
you must know  
There's such a thing as . . .

*William.* You're too tired to sleep?

*Strafford.* It will come by-and-by and all  
day long,

In that old quiet house I told you of:

We sleep safe there.

*Anne.* Why not in Ireland?

*Strafford.* No!

Too many dreams!—That song's for Venice,

*William:*

You know how Venice looks upon the map—  
Isles that the mainland hardly can let go?

*William.* You've been to Venice, father?

*Strafford.* I was young, then.

*William.* A city with no King; that's  
why I like

Even a song that comes from Venice.

*Strafford.* *William!*

*William.* Oh, I know why! Anne, do  
you love the King?

But I'll see Venice for myself one day.

*Strafford.* See many lands, boy—England  
last of all,—

That way you'll love her best.

*William.* Why do men say

You sought to ruin her then?

*Strafford.* Ah,—they say that.

*William.* Why?

*Strafford.* I suppose they must have  
words to say,

As you to sing.

*Anne.* But they make songs beside:

Last night I heard one, in the street beneath,  
That called you . . . Oh, the names!

*William.* Don't mind her, father!  
They soon left off when I cried out to them.

*Strafford.* We shall so soon be out of it,  
my boy!

'Tis not worth while: who heeds a foolish  
song?

*William.* Why, not the King.

*Strafford.* Well: it has been the fate  
Of better; and yet,—wherefore not feel sure  
That Time, who in the twilight comes to  
mend

All the fantastic day's caprice, consign

To the low ground once more the ignoble Term,  
And raise the Genius on his orb again,—  
That Time will do me right?

*Anne.* (Shall we sing, William?  
He does not look thus when we sing.)

*Strafford.* For Ireland,  
Something is done: too little, but enough  
To show what might have been.

*William.* (I have no heart  
To sing now! Anne, how very sad he looks!  
Oh, I so hate the King for all he says!)

*Strafford.* Forsook them! What, the  
common songs will run  
That I forsook the People? Nothing more?  
Ay, Fame, the busy scribe, will pause, no  
doubt,

Turning a deaf ear to her thousand slaves  
Noisy to be enrolled,—will register  
The curious glosses, subtle notices,  
Ingenious clearings-up one fain would see  
Beside that plain inscription of The Name—  
The Patriot Pym, or the Apostate Strafford!

[*The Children resume their song  
timidly, but break off.*]

*Enter HOLLIS and an Attendant.*

*Strafford.* No,—Hollis? in good time!—  
Who is he?

*Hollis.* One  
That must be present.

*Strafford.* Ah—I understand.  
They will not let me see poor Laud alone.  
How politic! They'd use me by degrees  
To solitude: and, just as you came in,  
I was solicitous what life to lead  
When Strafford's "not so much as Constable  
"In the King's service." Is there any means  
To keep oneself awake? What would you do  
After this bustle, Hollis, in my place?

*Hollis.* Hollis!

*Strafford.* Observe, not but that  
Pym and you  
Will find me news enough—news I shall hear  
Under a quince-tree by a fish-pond side  
At Wentworth. Garrard must be re-engaged  
My newsman. Or, a better project now—  
What if when all's consummated, and the  
Saints

Reign, and the Senate's work goes swim-  
mingly,—

What if I venture up, some day, unseen,  
To saunter through the Town, notice how  
Pym,

Your Tribune, likes Whitehall, drop quietly  
Into a tavern, hear a point discussed,  
As, whether Strafford's name were John or  
James—

And be myself appealed to—I, who shall  
Myself have near forgotten!

*Hollis.* I would speak . . .  
*Strafford.* Then you shall speak,—not  
now. I want just now,

To hear the sound of my own tongue. This  
place  
Is full of ghosts.

*Hollis.* Nay, you must hear me,  
Strafford!

*Strafford.* Oh, readily! Only, one rare  
thing more,—

The minister! Who will advise the King,  
Turn his Sejanus, Richelieu and what not,  
And yet have health—children, for aught I  
know—

My patient pair of traitors! Ah,—but,  
Williata—

Does not his cheek grow thin?

*William.* 'Tis you look thin,  
Father!

*Strafford.* A scamper o'er the breezy wolds  
Sets all to-rights.

*Hollis.* You cannot sure forget  
A prison-roof is o'er you, Strafford?

*Strafford.* No,  
Why, no. I would not touch on that, the  
first.

I left you that. Well, Hollis? Say at once,  
The King can find no time to set me free!  
A mask at Theobald's?¹

*Hollis.* Hold: no such affair  
Detains him.

*Strafford.* True: what needs so great a  
matter?

The Queen's lip may be sore. Well: when  
he pleases,—

¹ A house near Cheshunt in Herts.

Only, I want the air : it vexes flesh  
To be pent up so long.

*Hollis.* The King—I bear  
His message, Strafford : pray you, let me  
speak !

*Strafford.* Go, William ! Anne, try o'er  
your song again !

[*The Children retire.*]

They shall be loyal, friend, at all events.  
I know your message : you have nothing new  
To tell me : from the first I guessed as much.  
I know, instead of coming here himself,  
Leading me forth in public by the hand,  
The King prefers to leave the door ajar  
As though I were escaping—bids me trudge  
While the mob gapes upon some show prepared  
On the other side of the river ! Give at once  
His order of release ! I've heard, as well  
Of certain poor manoeuvres to avoid  
The granting pardon at his proper risk ;  
First, he must prattle somewhat to the Lords,  
Must talk a trifle with the Commons first,  
Be grieved I should abuse his confidence,  
And far from blaming them, and . . .

Where's the order ?

*Hollis.* Spare me !

*Strafford.* Why, he'd not have me  
steal away ?

With an old doublet and a steeple hat  
Like Prynne's ? Be smuggled into France,  
perhaps ?

Hollis, 'tis for my children ! 'Twas for them  
I first consented to stand day by day  
And give your Puritans the best of words,  
Be patient, speak when called upon, observe  
Their rules, and not return them prompt  
their lie !

What's in that boy of mine that he should  
prove

Son to a prison-breaker ? I shall stay  
And he'll stay with me. Charles should  
know as much,

He too has children !

[*Turning to HOLLIS's Companion.*] Sir, you  
feel for me !

No need to hide that face ! Though it have  
looked

Upon me from the judgment-seat . . . I know

Strangely, that somewhere it has looked on  
me . . .

Your coming has my pardon, nay, my thanks :  
For there is one who comes not.

*Hollis.* Whom forgive,  
As one to die !

*Strafford.* True, all die, and all need  
Forgiveness : I forgive him from my soul.

*Hollis.* 'Tis a world's wonder : Strafford,  
you must die !

*Strafford.* Sir, if your errand is to set me free  
This heartless jest mars much. Ha ! Tears  
in truth ?

We'll end this ! See this paper, warm—feel  
—warm

With lying next my heart ! Whose hand is  
there ?

Whose promise ? Read, and loud for God to  
hear !

"Strafford shall take no hurt"—read it, I say !

"In person, honour, nor estate"—

*Hollis.* The King . . .

*Strafford.* I could unking him by a breath !  
You sit

Where Loudon sat, who came to prophesy  
The certain end, and offer me Pym's grace  
If I'd renounce the King : and I stood firm  
On the King's faith. The King who lives . . .

*Hollis.* To sign

The warrant for your death.

*Strafford.* "Put not your trust

"In princes, neither in the sons of men,"

In whom is no salvation !"

*Hollis.* Trust in God !

The scaffold is prepared : they wait for you :  
He has consented. Cast the earth behind !

*Charles.* You would not see me, Strafford,  
at your foot !

It was wrung from me ! Only, curse me not !

*Hollis* [*to STRAFFORD*]. As you hope  
grace and pardon in your need,

Be merciful to this most wretched man.

[*Voices from within.*]

*Verso la sera*

*Di Primavera.*

*Strafford.* You'll be good to those children,  
sir ? I know

You'll not believe her, even should the Queen  
Think they take after one they rarely saw.  
I had intended that my son should live  
A stranger to these matters : but you are  
So utterly deprived of friends ! He too  
Must serve you—will you not be good to  
him ?

Or, stay, sir, do not promise—do not swear !  
You, Hollis—do the best you can for me !  
I've not a soul to trust to : Wandesford's dead,  
And you've got Radcliffe safe, Laud's turn  
comes next :

I've found small time of late for my affairs,  
But I trust any of you, Pym himself—  
No one could hurt them : there's an infant,  
too.

These tedious cares ! Your Majesty could  
spare them.

Nay—pardon me, my King ! I had forgotten  
Your education, trials, much temptation,  
Some weakness : there escaped a peevish  
word—

'Tis gone : I bless you at the last. You know  
All's between you and me : what has the world  
To do with it ? Farewell !

*Charles [at the door].* Balfour ! Balfour !

*Enter* BALFOUR.

The Parliament !—go to them : I grant all  
Demands. Their sittings shall be permanent :  
Tell them to keep their money if they will :  
I'll come to them for every coat I wear  
And every crust I eat : only I choose  
To pardon Strafford. As the Queen shall  
choose !  
—You never heard the People howl for blood,  
Beside !

*Balfour.* Your Majesty may hear them now :  
The walls can hardly keep their murmurs out :  
Please you retire !

*Charles.* Take all the troops, Balfour !

*Balfour.* There are some hundred thou-  
sand of the crowd.

*Charles.* Come with me, Strafford ! You'll  
not fear, at least !

*Strafford.* Balfour, say nothing to the  
world of this !

I charge you, as a dying man, forget

You gazed upon this agony of one . . .  
Of one . . . or if . . . why you may say,  
Balfour,

The King was sorry : 'tis no shame in him :  
Yes, you may say he even wept, Balfour,  
And that I walked the lighter to the block  
Because of it. I shall walk lightly, sir !  
Earth fades, heaven breaks on me : I shall  
stand next

Before God's throne : the moment's close at  
hand

When man the first, last time, has leave to lay  
His whole heart bare before its Maker, leave  
To clear up the long error of a life  
And choose one happiness for evermore.  
With all mortality about me, Charles,  
The sudden wreck, the dregs of violent death—  
What if, despite the opening angel-song,  
There penetrate one prayer for you ? Be saved  
Through me ! Bear witness, no one could  
prevent

My death ! Lead on ! ere he awake—best,  
now !

All must be ready : did you say, Balfour,  
The crowd began to murmur ? They'll be  
kept

Too late for sermon, at St. Antholin's !  
Now ! But tread softly—children are at play  
In the next room. Precede ! I follow—

*Enter* Lady CARLISLE, with many  
Attendants.

*Lady Carlisle.* Me !

Follow me, Strafford, and be saved ! The  
King ?

[*To the KING.*] Well—as you ordered, they  
are ranged without,

The convoy . . . [*seeing the KING's state.*]

[*To STRAFFORD.*] You know all, then !  
Why, I thought

It looked best that the King should save you,  
—Charles

Alone ; 'tis a shame that you should owe  
me aught.

Or no, not shame ! Strafford, you'll not  
feel shame

At being saved by me ?

*Hollis.* All true ! Oh Strafford,

She saves you! all her deed! this lady's deed!

And is the boat in readiness? You, friend, Are Billingsley, no doubt. Speak to her, Strafford!

See how she trembles, waiting for your voice! The world's to learn its bravest story yet.

*Lady Carlisle.* Talk afterward! Long nights in France enough, To sit beneath the vines and talk of home.

*Strafford.* You love me, child? Ah, Strafford can be loved

As well as Vane! I could escape, then? *Lady Carlisle.* Haste!

Advance the torches, Bryan! *Strafford.* I will die.

They call me proud: but England had no right,

When she encountered me—her strength to mine—

To find the chosen foe a craven. Girl, I fought her to the utterance, I fell, I am her's now, and I will die. Beside, The lookers-on! Eliot is all about

This place, with his most uncomplaining brow. *Lady Carlisle.* Strafford!

*Strafford.* I think if you could know how much

I love you, you would be repaid, my friend! *Lady Carlisle.* Then, for my sake!

*Strafford.* Even for your sweet sake, I stay.

*Hollis.* For their sake! *Strafford.* To bequeath a stain?

Leave me! Girl, humour me and let me die! *Lady Carlisle.* Bid him escape—wake,

King! Bid him escape! *Strafford.* True, I will go! Die, and for-

sake the King? I'll not draw back from the last service.

*Lady Carlisle.* Strafford! *Strafford.* And, after all,

what is disgrace to me? Let us come, child! That it should end this way!

Lead then! but I feel strangely: it was not To end this way.

*Lady Carlisle.* Lean—lean on me!

VOL. I.

*Strafford.* My King! Oh, had he trusted me—his friend of friends!

*Lady Carlisle.* I can support him, Hollis! *Strafford.* Not this way!

This gate—I dreamed of it, this wery gate. *Lady Carlisle.* It opens on the river: our

good boat Is moored below, our friends are there.

*Strafford.* The same: Only with something ominous and dark,

Fatal, inevitable. *Lady Carlisle.* Strafford! Strafford!

*Strafford.* Not by this gate! I feel what will be there!

I dreamed of it, I tell you: touch it not! *Lady Carlisle.* To save the King,—Strafford,

to save the King!

[As STRAFFORD opens the door, Pym is discovered with HAMPTDEN, VANE, etc. STRAFFORD falls back; Pym follows slowly and confronts him.

*Pym.* Have I done well? Speak, England! Whose sole sake

I still have laboured for, with disregard To my own heart,—for whom my youth was

made Barren, my manhood waste, to offer up

Her sacrifice—this friend, this Wentworth here—

Who walked in youth with me, loved me, it may be,

And whom, for his forsaking England's cause, I hunted by all means (trusting that she

Would sanctify all means) even to the block Which waits for him. And saying this, I feel

No bitterer pang than first I felt, the hour I swore that Wentworth might leave us, but I

Would never leave him: I do leave him now. I render up my charge (be witness, God!)

To England who imposed it. I have done Her bidding—poorly, wrongly,—it may be,

With ill effects—for I am weak, a man: Still, I have done my best, my human best,

Not faltering for a moment. It is done. And this said, if I say . . . yes, I will say

I never loved but one man—David not More Jonathan! Even thus, I love him now!

And look for my chief portion in that world  
 Where great hearts led astray are turned again,  
 (Soon it may be, and, certes, will be soon :  
 My mission over, I shall not live long ;)—  
 Ay, here I know I talk—I dare and must,  
 Of England, and her great reward, as all  
 I look for there ; but in my inmost heart,  
 Believe, I think of stealing quite away  
 To walk once more with Wentworth—my  
 youth's friend  
 Purged from all error, gloriously renewed,  
 And Eliot shall not blame us Then indeed . . .  
 This is no meeting, Wentworth ! Tears increase  
 Too hot. A thin mist—is it blood ?—enwraps  
 The face I loved once. Then, the meeting be !  
*Strafford.* I have loved England too ;  
 we'll meet then, Pym.  
 As well die now ! Youth is the only time  
 To think and to decide on a great course :  
 Manhood with action follows ; but 'tis dreary,  
 To have to alter our whole life in age—  
 The time past, the strength gone ! As well  
 die now.  
 When we meet, Pym, I'd be set right—not  
 now !  
 Best die. Then if there's any fault, fault too  
 Dies, smothered up. Poor grey old little Laud  
 Maydream his dream out, of a perfect Church,  
 In some blind corner. And there's no one left.  
 I trust the King now wholly to you, Pym !  
 And yet, I know not : I shall not be there :  
 Friends fail—if he have any. And he's weak,  
 And loves the Queen, and . . . Oh, my fate  
 is nothing—  
 Nothing ! But not that awful head—not that !  
*Pym.* If England shall declare such will  
 to me . . .  
*Strafford.* Pym, you help England ! I,  
 that am to die,  
 What I must see ! 'tis here—all here ! My  
 God,  
 Let me but gasp out, in one word of fire,  
 How thou wilt plague him, satiating hell !  
 What ? England that you help, become  
 through you  
 A green and putrefying charnel, left  
 Our children . . . some of us have children,  
 Pym—  
 Some who, without that, still must ever wear  
 A darkened brow, an over-serious look,  
 And never properly be young ! No word ?  
 What if I curse you ? Send a strong curse  
 forth  
 Clothed from my heart, lapped round with  
 horror till  
 She's fit with her white face to walk the world  
 Scaring kind natures from your cause and  
 you—  
 Then to sit down with you at the board-head,  
 The gathering for prayer . . . O speak, but  
 speak !  
 . . . Creep up, and quietly follow each one  
 home,  
 You, you, you, be a nestling care for each  
 To sleep with,—hardly moaning in his dreams,  
 She gnaws so quietly,—till, lo he starts,  
 Gets off with half a heart eaten away !  
 Oh, shall you 'scape with less if she's my  
 child ?  
 You will not say a word—to me—to Him ?  
*Pym.* If England shall declare such will  
 to me . . .  
*Strafford.* No, not for England now, not  
 for Heaven now,—  
 See, Pym, for my sake, mine who kneel to  
 you !  
 There, I will thank you for the death, my  
 friend !  
 This is the meeting : let me love you well !  
*Pym.* England,—I am thine own ! Dost  
 thou exact  
 That service ? I obey thee to the end.  
*Strafford.* O God, I shall die first—I shall  
 die first !

# SORDELLO.

1840

[Sordello was a Mantuan Troubadour mentioned by Dante, some of whose poetry is extant. See Sismondi's "History of the Literature of the South of Europe," vol. i. An analysis of Browning's poem may be found in Mrs. Orr's Handbook.]

TO J. MILSAND, OF DIJON.

DEAR FRIEND,—Let the next poem be introduced by your name, therefore remembered along with one of the deepest of my affections, and so repay all trouble it ever cost me. I wrote it twenty-five years ago for only a few, counting even in these on somewhat more care about its subject than they really had. My own faults of expression were many; but with care for a man or book such would be surmounted, and without it what avails the faultlessness of either? I blame nobody, least of all myself, who did my best then and since; for I lately gave time and pains to turn my work into what the many might,—instead of what the few must,—like: but after all, I imagined another thing at first, and therefore leave as I find it. The historical decoration was purposely of no more importance than a background requires; and my stress lay on the incidents in the development of a soul: little else is worth study. I, at least, always thought so—you, with many known and unknown to me, think so—others may one day think so; and whether my attempt remain for them or not, I trust, though away and past it, to continue ever yours,

R. B.

LONDON: June 9, 1863.

## SORDELLO.

### BOOK THE FIRST.

WHO will, may hear Sordello's story told:  
His story? Who believes me shall behold  
The man, pursue his fortunes to the end,  
Like me: for as the friendless-people's friend  
Spied from his hill-top once, despite the din  
And dust of multitudes, Pentapolin

Named o' the Naked Arm,<sup>1</sup> I single out  
Sordello, compassed murkily about  
With ravage of six long sad hundred years.  
Only believe me. Ye believe?

Appears

Verona . . . Never,—I should warn you  
first,—

Of my own choice had this, if not the worst,  
Yet not the best expedient, served to tell  
A story I could body forth so well  
By making speak, myself kept out of view,  
The very man as he was wont to do,  
And leaving you to say the rest for him.  
Since, though I might be proud to see the dim  
Abysmal past divide its hateful surge,  
Letting of all men this one man emerge  
Because it pleased me, yet, that moment past,  
I should delight in watching first to last  
His progress as you watch it, not a whit  
More in the secret than yourselves who sit  
Fresh-chapleted to listen. But it seems  
Your setters-forth of unexampled themes,  
Makers of quite new men, producing them,  
Would best chalk broadly on each vesture's  
hem

The wearer's quality; or take their stand,  
Motley on back and pointing-pole in hand,  
Beside him. So, for once I face ye, friends,  
Summoned together from the world's four  
ends,

Dropped down from heaven or cast up from  
hell,

To hear the story I propose to tell.  
Confess now, poets know the dragnet's trick,  
Catching the dead, if fate denies the quick,

<sup>1</sup> See "Don Quixote," Part I. ch. 18.



And shaming her ; 'tis not for fate to choose  
Silence or song because she can refuse  
Real eyes to glisten more, real hearts to ache  
Less oft, real brows turn smother for our  
sake :

I have experienced something of her spite ;  
But there's a realm wherein she has no right  
And I have many lovers. Say, but few  
Friends fate accords me? Here they are :  
now view

The host I muster ! Many a lighted face  
Foul with no vestige of the grave's disgrace ;  
What else should tempt them back to taste  
our air

Except to see how their successors fare?  
My audience ! and they sit, each ghostly man  
Striving to look as living as he can,  
Brother by breathing brother ; thou art set,  
Clear-witted critic, by . . . but I'll not fret  
A wondrous soul of them, nor move death's  
spleen

Who loves not to unlock them. Friends ! I  
mean

The living in good earnest—ye elect  
Chiefly for love—suppose not I reject  
Judicious praise, who contrary shall peep,  
Some fit occasion, forth, for fear ye sleep,  
To glean your bland approvals. Then,  
appear,

Verona ! stay—thou, spirit, come not near  
Now—not this time desert thy cloudy place  
To scare me, thus employed, with that pure  
face !

I need not fear this audience, I make free  
With them, but then this is no place for thee !  
The thunder-phrase of the Athenian,<sup>1</sup> grown  
Up out of memories of Marathon,  
Would echo like his own sword's griding  
screech

Braying a Persian shield,—the silver speech  
Of Sidney's self, the starry paladin,  
Turn intense as a trumpet sounding in  
The knights to tilt,—wert thou to hear !

What heart

Have I to play my puppets, bear my part  
Before these worthies?

<sup>1</sup> Æschylus.

Lo, the past is hurled

In twain : up-thrust, out-staggering on the  
world.

Subsiding into shape, a darkness rears  
Its outline, kindles at the core, appears  
Verona. 'Tis six hundred years and more  
Since an event. The Second Friedrich wore  
The purple, and the Third Honorius filled  
The holy chair. That autumn eve was stilled :  
A last remains of sunset dimly burned  
O'er the far forests, like a torch-flame turned  
By the wind back upon its bearer's hand  
In one long flare of crimson ; as a brand,  
The woods beneath lay black. A single  
eye

From all Verona cared for the soft sky.  
But, gathering in its ancient market-place,  
Talked group with restless group ; and not a  
face

But wrath made livid, for among them were  
Death's staunch purveyors, such as have in  
care

To feast him. Fear had long since taken root  
In every breast, and now these crushed its  
fruit,

The ripe hate, like a wine : to note the way  
It worked while each grew drunk ! Men  
grave and grey

Stood, with shut eyelids, rocking to and fro,  
Letting the silent luxury trickle slow

About the hollows where a heart should be ;  
But the young gulped with a delirious glee  
Some foretaste of their first debauch in blood  
At the fierce news : for, be it understood,  
Envoys apprised Verona that her prince  
Count Richard of Saint Boniface, joined since  
A year with Azzo, Este's Lord, to thrust  
Taurello Salinguerra, prime in trust  
With Ecelin Romano, from his seat

Ferrara,—over zealous in the feat  
And stumbling on a peril unaware,  
Was captive, trammelled in his proper snare,  
They phrase it, taken by his own intrigue.

Immediate succour from the Lombard League  
Of fifteen cities that affect the Pope,  
For Azzo, therefore, and his fellow-hope  
Of the Guelf cause, a glory overcast !  
Men's faces, late agape, are now aghast.

"Prone is the purple pavis;<sup>1</sup> Este makes  
"Mirth for the devil when he undertakes  
"To play the Ecelin; as if it cost  
"Merely your pushing-by to gain a post  
"Like his! The patron tells ye, once for all,  
"There be sound reasons that preferment fall  
"On our beloved" . . .

"Duke o' the Rood, why not?"  
Shouted an Estian, "grudge ye such a lot?  
"The hill-cat boasts some cunning of her  
own,  
"Some stealthy trick to better beasts un-  
known,  
"That quick with prey enough her hunger  
blunts,  
"And feeds her fat while gaunt the lion  
hunts."

"Taurello," quoth an envoy, "as in wane  
"Dwelt at Ferrara. Like an osprey fain  
"To fly but forced the earth his couch to  
make  
"Far inland, till his friend the tempest wake,  
"Waits he the Kaiser's coming; and as yet  
"That fast friend sleeps, and he too sleeps:  
but let

"Only the billow freshen, and he snuffs  
"The aroused hurricane ere it enroughs  
"The sea it means to cross because of him.  
"Sinketh the breeze? His hope-sick eye  
grows dim;

"Creep closer on the creature! Every day  
"Strengthens the Pontiff; Ecelin, they say,  
"Dozes now at Oliero, with dry lips  
"Telling upon his perished finger-tips  
"How many ancestors are to depose  
"Ere he be Satan's Viceroy when the doze  
"Deposits him in hell. So, Guelfs rebuilt  
"Their houses; not a drop of blood was spilt  
"When Cino Bocchinpane chanced to meet  
"Buccio Virtù—God's wafer, and the street  
"Is narrow! Tutti Santi, think, a-swarm  
"With Ghibellins, and yet he took no harm!  
"This could not last. Off Salinguerra went  
"To Padua, Podestà, 'with pure intent,'  
"Said he, 'my presence, judged the single bar  
"To permanent tranquillity, may jar

<sup>1</sup> Shield.

"No longer!—so! his back is fairly turned?  
"The pair of goodly palaces are burned,  
"The gardens ravaged, and our Guelfs laugh,  
drunk  
"A week with joy. The next, their laughter  
sunk  
"In sobs of blood, for they found, some  
strange way,  
"Old Salinguerra back again—I say,  
"Old Salinguerra in the town once more  
"Uprooting, overturning, flame before,  
"Blood fetlock-high beneath him. Azzo fled;  
"Who 'scaped the carnage followed; then  
the dead  
"Were pushed aside from Salinguerra's  
throne,  
"He ruled once more Ferrara, all alone,  
"Till Azzo, stunned awhile, revived, would  
pounce  
"Coupled with Boniface, like lynx and ounce,  
"On the gorged bird. The burghers ground  
their teeth  
"To see troop after troop encamp beneath  
"I' the standing corn thick o'er the scanty  
patch  
"It took so many patient months to snatch  
"Out of the marsh; while just within their walls  
"Men fed on men. At length Taurello calls  
"A parley: 'let the Count wind up the war!'  
"Richard, light-hearted as a plunging star,  
"Agrees to enter for the kindest ends  
"Ferrara, flanked with fifty chosen friends,  
"No horse-boy more, for fear your timid  
sort  
"Should fly Ferrara at the bare report.  
"Quietly through the town they rode, jog-jog;  
"Ten, twenty, thirty,—curse the catalogue  
"Of burnt Guelf houses! Strange, Taurello  
shows  
"Not the least sign of life'—whereat arose  
"A general growl: 'How? With his  
victors by?  
"I and my Veronese? My troops and I?  
"Receive us, was your word?' So jogged  
they on,  
"Nor laughed their host too openly: once  
gone  
"Into the trap!—"

Six hundred years ago ! Dispread themselves, mantling the troubled  
 Such the time's aspect and peculiar woe main,  
 (Yourselves may spell it yet in chronicles, And, shattered by those rocks, took hold  
 Albeit the worm, our busy brother, drills again,  
 His sprawling path through letters anciently So kindly blazed it—that same blaze to brood  
 Made fine and large to suit some abbot's eye) O'er every cluster of the multitude  
 Still hazarding new clasps, ties, filaments,  
 When the new Hohenstauffen dropped the mask, An emulous exchange of pulses, vents  
 Of nature into nature ; till some growth  
 Flung John of Brienne's favour from his Unfancied yet, exuberantly clothe  
 casque, A surface solid now, continuous, one :  
 Forswore crusading, had no mind to leave "The Pope, for us the People, who begun  
 Saint Peter's proxy leisure to retrieve "The People, carries on the People thus,  
 Losses to Otho and to Barbaross, "To keep that Kaiser off and dwell with us !"  
 Or make the Alps less easy to recross ; See you ?  
 And, thus confirming Pope Honorius' fear, Or say, Two Principles that live  
 Was excommunicate that very year. Each fitly by its Representative.  
 "The triple-bearded Teuton come to life !" "Hill-cat"—who called him so?—the grace-  
 Groaned the Great League ; and, arming for fullest  
 the strife, Adventurer, the ambiguous stranger-guest  
 Wide Lombardy, on tiptoe to begin, Of Lombardy (sleek but that ruffling fur,  
 Took up, as it was Guelph or Ghibellin, Those talons to their sheath !) whose velvet  
 Its cry : what cry ? purr  
 "The Emperor to come !" Soothes jealous neighbours when a Saxon  
 His crowd of feudatories, all and some, scout  
 That leapt down with a crash of swords, —Arpo or Yoland, is it ?—one without  
 spears, shields, A country or a name, presumes to couch  
 One fighter on his fellow, to our fields, Beside their noblest ; until men avouch  
 Scattered anon, took station here and there, That, of all Houses in the Trevisan,  
 And carried it, till now, with little care— Conrad describes no fitter, rear or van,  
 Cannot but cry for him ; how else rebut Than Ecelo ! They laughed as they enrolled  
 Us longer?—cliffs, an earthquake suffered That name at Milan on the page of gold,  
 jut Godego's lord,—Ramon, Marostica,  
 In the mid-sea, each domineering crest Cartiglion, Bassano, Loria,  
 Which nought save such another throe can And every sheep-cote on the Suabian's fief !  
 wrest No laughter when his son, "the Lombard  
 From out (conceive) a certain chokeweed Chief"  
 grown Forsooth, as Barbarossa's path was bent  
 Since o'er the waters, twine and tangle thrown To Italy along the Vale of Trent,  
 Too thick, too fast accumulating round, Welcomed him at Roncaglia ! Sadness  
 Too sure to over-riot and confound now—  
 Ere long each brilliant islet with itself, The hamlets nested on the Tyrol's brow,  
 Unless a second shock save shoal and shelf, The Asolan and Euganean hills,  
 Whirling the sea-drift wide : alas, the bruised The Rhetian and the Julian, sadness fills  
 And sullen wreck ! Sunlight to be diffused Them all, for Ecelin vouchsafes to stay  
 For that !—sunlight, 'neath which, a scum at Among and care about them ; day by day  
 first, Choosing this pinnacle, the other spot,  
 The million fibres of our chokeweed nurst A castle building to defend a cot,

A cot built for a castle to defend,  
Nothing but castles, castles, nor an end  
To boasts how mountain ridge may join with  
ridge

Ily sunken gallery and soaring bridge.  
He takes, in brief, a figure that beseems  
The griesliest nightmare of the Church's  
dreams,

—A Signory firm-rooted, unestranged  
From its old interests, and nowise changed  
By its new neighbourhood: perchance the vaunt  
Of Otho, "my own Este shall supplant  
"Your Este," come to pass. The sire led in  
A son as cruel; and this Ecelin  
Had sons, in turn, and daughters sly and tall  
And curling and compliant; but for all  
Romano (so they styled him) throve, that neck  
Of his so pinched and white, that hungry  
cheek

Proved 'twas some fiend, not him, the  
man's-flesh went

To feed: whereas Romano's instrument,  
Famous Taurello Salinguerra, sole  
I' the world, a tree whose boughs were slipt  
the bole

Successively, why should not he shed blood  
To further a design? Men understood  
Living was pleasant to him as he wore  
His careless surcoat, glanced some missive  
o'er,

Propped on his truncheon in the public way,  
While his lord lifted writhen hands to pray,  
Lost at Oliero's convent.

Hill-cats, face  
Our Azzo, our Guelf Lion! Why disgrace  
A worthiness conspicuous near and far  
(Atii at Rome while free and consular,  
Este at Padua who repulsed the Hun)  
By trumpeting the Church's princely son?  
—Styled Patron of Rovigo's Polesine,  
Ancona's march, Ferrara's . . . ask, in fine,  
Our chronicles, commenced when some old  
monk

Found it intolerable to be sunk  
(Vexed to the quick by his revolting cell)  
Quite out of the quiver while alive and well:  
Ended when by his mat the Prior stood,  
'Mid busy promptings of the brotherhood,

Striving to coax from his decrepit brains  
The reason Father Porphyry took pains  
To blot those ten lines out which used to  
stand

First on their charter drawn by Hildebrand.

The same night wears. Verona's rule of yore  
Was vested in a certain Twenty-four;  
And while within his palace these debate  
Concerning Richard and Ferrara's fate,  
Glide we by clapping doors, with sudden glare  
Of cressets<sup>1</sup> vented on the dark, nor care  
For aught that's seen or heard until we shut  
The smother in, the lights, all noises but  
The carroch's booming: safe at last! Why  
strange

Such a recess should lurk behind a range  
Of banquet rooms? Your finger—thus—you  
push

A spring, and the wall opens, would you rush  
Upon the banqueters, select your prey,  
Waiting (the slaughter-weapons in the way  
Strewing this very bench) with sharpened ear  
A preconcerted signal to appear;  
Or if you simply crouch with beating heart,  
Bearing in some voluptuous pageant part  
To startle them. Normutes nor masquers now;  
Nor any . . . does that one man sleep  
whose brow

The dying lamp-flame sinks and rises o'er?  
What woman stood beside him? not the more  
Is he unfastened from the earnest eyes  
Because that arras fell between! Her wise  
And lulling words are yet about the room,  
Her presence wholly poured upon the gloom  
Down even to her vesture's creeping stir.  
And so reclines he, saturate with her,  
Until an outcry from the square beneath  
Pierces the charm: he springs up, glad to  
breathe,

Above the cunning element, and shakes  
The stupor off as (look you) morning breaks  
On the gay dress, and, near concealed by it,  
The lean frame like a half-burnt taper, lit  
Erst at some marriage-feast, then laid away  
Till the Armenian bridegroom's dying day,  
In his wool wedding-robe.

<sup>1</sup> Torches.

For he—for he,  
 Gate-vein of this hearts' blood of Lombardy,  
 (If I should falter now)—for he is thine !  
 Sordello, thy forerunner, Florentine !  
 A herald-star I know thou didst absorb  
 Relentless into the consummate orb  
 That scared it from its right to roll along  
 A sempiternal path with dance and song  
 Fulfilling its allotted period,  
 Serenest of the progeny of God—  
 Who yet resigns it not ! His darling stoops  
 With no quenched lights, desponds with no  
     blank troops  
 Of disenfranchised brilliances, for, blent  
 Utterly with thee, its shy element  
 Like thine uplurneth prosperous and clear.  
 Still, what if I approach the august sphere  
 Named now with only one name, disentwine  
 That under-current soft and argentine  
 From its fierce mate in the majestic mass  
 Leavened as the sea whose fire was mixt with  
     glass  
 In John's transcendent vision,—launch once  
     more  
 That lustre ? Dante, pacer of the shore  
 Where glutted hell disgorgeth filthiest gloom,  
 Unbitten by its whirring sulphur-spume—  
 Or whence the grieved and obscure waters  
     slope  
 Into a darkness quieted by hope ;  
 Plucker of anaranthis grown beneath God's  
     eye  
 In gracious twilights where his chosen lie,—  
 I would do this ! If I should falter now !  
 In Mantua territory half is slough,  
 Half pine-tree forest ; maples, scarlet oaks  
 Breed o'er the river-beds ; even Mincio chokes  
 With sand the summer through ; but 'tis  
     morass  
 In winter up to Mantua walls. There was,  
 Some thirty years before this evening's coil,  
 One spot reclaimed from the surrounding  
     spoil,  
 Goito ; just a castle built amid  
 A few low mountains ; firs and larches hid  
 Their main defiles, and rings of vineyard  
     bound  
 The rest. Some captured creature in a pound,

Whose artless wonder quite precludes dis-  
     tress,  
 Secure beside in its own loveliness,  
 So peered with airy head, below, above,  
 The castle at its toils, the lapwings love  
 To glean among at grape-time. Pass within.  
 A maze of corridors contrived for sin,  
 Dusk winding-stairs, dim galleries got past,  
 You gain the inmost chambers, gain at last  
 A maple-panelled room : that haze which  
     seems  
 Floating about the panel, if there gleams  
 A sunbeam over it, will turn to gold  
 And in light-graven characters unfold  
 The Arab's wisdom everywhere ; what shade  
 Marred them a moment, those slim pillars  
     made,  
 Cut like a company of palms to prop  
 The roof, each kissing top entwined with top,  
 Leaning together ; in the carver's mind  
 Some knot of bacchanals, flushed cheek com-  
     bined  
 With straining forehead, shoulders purpled,  
     hair  
 Diffused between, who in a goat-skin bear  
 A vintage ; graceful sister-palms ! But quick  
 To the main wonder, now. A vault, see ;  
     thick  
 Black shade about the ceiling, though fine slits  
 Across the buttress suffer light by fits  
 Upon a marvel in the midst. Nay, stoop—  
 A dullish grey-streaked cumbrous font, a  
     group  
 Round it,—each side of it, where'er one  
     sees,—  
 Upholds it ; shrinking Caryatides  
 Of just-tinged marble like Eve's lily flesh  
 Beneath her maker's finger when the fresh  
 First pulse of life shot brightening the snow.  
 The font's edge burthens every shoulder, so  
 They muse upon the ground, eyelids half  
     closed ;  
 Some, with meek arms behind their backs  
     disposed,  
 Some, crossed above their bosoms, some, to  
     veil  
 Their eyes, some, propping chin and cheek  
     so pale,

Some, hanging slack an utter helpless length  
Dead as a buried vestal whose whole strength  
Goes when the grate above shuts heavily.  
So dwell these noiseless girls, patient to see,  
Like priestesses because of sin impure  
Penanced for ever, who resigned endure,  
Having that once drunk sweetness to the  
dregs.

And every eve, Sordello's visit begs  
Pardon for them : constant as eve he came  
To sit beside each in her turn, the same  
As one of them, a certain space : and awe  
Made a great indistinctness till he saw  
Sunset slant cheerful through the buttress-  
chinks,

Gold seven times globed ; surely our maiden  
shrinks

And a smile stirs her as if one faint grain  
Her load were lightened, one shade less the  
stain

Obscured her forehead, yet one more bead  
slipt

From off the rosary whereby the crypt  
Keeps count of the contritions of its charge ?  
Then with a step more light, a heart more  
large,

He may depart, leave her and every one  
To linger out the penance in mute stone.  
Ah, but Sordello ? 'Tis the tale I mean  
To tell you.

In this castle may be seen,  
On the hill-tops, or underneath the vines,  
Or eastward by the mound of firs and pines  
That shuts out Mantua, still in loneliness,  
A slender boy in a loose page's dress,  
Sordello : do but look on him awhile  
Watching ('tis autumn) with an earnest smile  
The noisy flock of thievish birds at work  
Among the yellowing vineyards ; see him lurk  
( 'Tis winter <sup>even</sup> with its sullenest of storms)  
Beside that arras length of brodered forms,  
On tiptoe, lifting in both hands a light  
Which makes yon warrior's visage flutter  
bright

—Ecelo, dismal father of the brood,  
And Ecelin, close to the girl he wooed,  
Auria, and their Child, with all his wives  
From Agnes to the Tuscan that survives,

Lady of the castle, Adelaide. His face  
—Look, now he turns away ! Yourselves  
shall trace

(The delicate nostril swerving wide and fine,  
A sharp and restless lip, so well combine  
With that calm brow) a soul fit to receive  
Delight at every sense ; you can believe  
Sordello foremost in the regal class

Nature has broadly severed from her mass  
Of men, and framed for pleasure, as she frames  
Some happy lands, that have luxurious names,  
For loose fertility ; a footfall there  
Suffices to upturn to the warm air  
Half-germinating spices ; mere decay  
Produces richer life ; and day by day  
New pollen on the lily-petal grows,  
And still more labyrinthine buds the rose.

You recognise at once the finer dress  
Of flesh that amply lets in loveliness  
At eye and ear, while round the rest is furled  
(As though she would not trust them with  
her world)

A veil that shows a sky not near so blue,  
And lets but half the sun look fervid through.  
How can such love ?—like souls on each full-  
fraught

Discovery brooding, blind at first to aught  
Beyond its beauty, till exceeding love  
Becomes an aching weight ; and, to remove  
A curse that haunts such natures—to pre-  
clude

Their finding out themselves can work no good  
To what they love nor make it very blest  
By their endeavour,—they are fain invest  
The lifeless thing with life from their own soul,  
Availing it to purpose, to control,  
To dwell distinct and have peculiar joy  
And separate interests that may employ  
That beauty fitly, for its proper sake.  
Nor rest they here ; fresh births of beauty  
wake

Fresh homage, every grade of love is past,  
With every mode of loveliness : then cast  
Inferior idols off their borrowed crown  
Before a coming glory. Up and down  
Runs arrowy fire, while earthly forms com-  
bine

To throb the secret forth ; a touch divine—

And the scaled eyeball owns the mystic rod ;  
Visibly through his garden walketh God.

So fare they. Now revert. One character  
Denotes them through the progress and the  
stir,—

A need to blend with each external charm,  
Bury themselves, the whole heart wide and  
warm,—

In something not themselves ; they would  
belong

To what they worship—stronger and more  
strong

Thus prodigally fed—which gathers shape  
And feature, soon imprisons past escape  
The votary framed to love and to submit  
Nor ask, as passionate he kneels to it,  
Whence grew the idol's empery. So runs  
A legend ; light had birth ere moons and  
suns,

Flowing through space a river and alone,  
Till chaos burst and blank the spheres were  
strown

Hither and thither, foundering and blind ·  
When into each of them rushed light—to  
find

Itself no place, foiled of its radiant chance.  
Let such forego their just inheritance !  
For there's a class that eagerly looks, too,  
On beauty, but, unlike the gentler crew,  
Proclaims each new revelation born a twin  
With a distinctest consciousness within,  
Referring still the quality, now first  
Revealed, to their own soul—its instinct  
nursed

In silence, now remembered better, shown  
More thoroughly, but not the less their own ;  
A dream come true ; the special exercise  
Of any special function that implies  
The being fair, or good, or wise, or strong,  
Dormant within their nature all along—  
Whose fault ? So, homage, other souls direct  
Without, turns inward. "How should this  
deject

"Thee, soul?" they murmur ; "wherefore  
strength be quelled

"Because, its trivial accidents withheld,

"Organs are missed that clog the world, inert,

"Wanting a will, to quicken and exert,

"Like thine—existence cannot satiate,

"Cannot surprise? Laugh thou at envious  
fate,

"Who, from earth's simplest combination  
stamp

"With individuality—uncramp

"By living its faint elemental life,

"Dost soar to heaven's completest essence  
rife

"With grandeurs, unaffronted to the last,

"Equal to being all!"

In truth? Thou hast  
Life, then—wilt challenge life for us: our race  
Is vindicated so, obtains its place  
In thy ascent, the first of us; whom we  
May follow, to the meanest, finally,  
With our more bounded wills?

Ah, but to find  
A certain mood enervate such a mind,  
Counsel it slumber in the solitude  
Thus reached nor, stooping, task for man-  
kind's good

Its nature just as life and time accord

"—Too narrow an arena to reward

"Emprize—the world's occasion worthless  
since

"Not absolutely fitted to evince

"Its mastery!" Or if yet worse befall,

And a desire possess it to put all

That nature forth, forcing our straitened  
sphere

Contain it,—to display completely here

The mastery another life should learn,

Thrusting in time eternity's concern,—

So that Sordello . . .

Fool, who spied the mark  
Of leprosy upon him, violet-dark  
Already as he loiters? Born just now,  
With the new century, beside the glow  
And efflorescence out of barbarism;  
Witness a Greek or two from the abyss  
That stray through Florence-town with  
studious air,

Calming the chisel of that Pisan pair:

If Nicolo should carve a Christus yet!

While at Siena is Guidone set,

Forehead on hand; a painful birth must be

Matured ere Saint Eufemia's sacristy

Or transept gather fruits of one great gaze  
At the moon : look you ! The same orange  
haze,—

The same blue stripe round that—and, in the  
midst,

Thy spectral whiteness, Mother-maid, who  
didst

Pursue the dizzy painter !

Woe, then, worth

Any officious babble letting forth  
The leprosy confirmed and ruinous  
To spirit lodged in a contracted house !  
Go back to the beginning, rather ; blend  
It gently with Sordello's life ; the end  
Is piteous, you may see, but much between  
Pleasant enough. Meantime, some pyx to  
screen

The full-grown pest, some lid to shut upon  
The goblin ! So they found at Babylon,  
(Colleagues, mad Lucius and sage Antonine)  
Sacking the city, by Apollo's shrine,  
In rummaging among the rarities,  
A certain coffer ; he who made the prize  
Opened it greedily ; and out there curled  
Just such another plague, for half the world  
Was stung. Crawl in then, hag, and couch  
asquat,

Keeping that blotchy bosom thick in spot  
Until your time is ripe ! The coffer-lid  
Is fastened, and the coffer safely hid  
Under the Loxian's<sup>1</sup> choicest gifts of gold.

Who will may hear Sordello's story told,  
And how he never could remember when  
He dwelt not at Goito. Calmly, then,  
About this secret lodge of Adelaide's  
Glided his youth away ; beyond the glades  
On the fir-forest border, and the rim  
Of the low range of mountain, was for him  
No other world : but this appeared his own  
To wander through at pleasure and alone.  
The castle too seemed empty ; far and wide  
Might he disport ; only the northern side  
Lay under a mysterious interdict—  
Slight, just enough remembered to restrict  
His roaming to the corridors, the vault  
Where those font-bearers expiate their fault,

The maple-chamber, and the little nooks  
And nests, and breezy parapet that looks  
Over the woods to Mantua : there he strolled.  
Some foreign women-servants, very old,  
Tended and crept about him—all his clue  
To the world's business and embroiled ado  
Distant a dozen hill-tops at the most.

And first a simple sense of life engrossed  
Sordello in his drowsy Paradise ;  
The day's adventures for the day suffice—  
Its constant tribute of perceptions strange,  
With sleep and stir in healthy interchange,  
Suffice, and leave him for the next at ease  
Like the great palmer-worm that strips the  
trees,

Eats the life out of every luscious plant,  
And, when September finds them sere or scant,  
Puts forth two wondrous winglets, alters quite,  
And hies him after unforeseen delight.  
So fed Sordello, not a shard<sup>2</sup> dissheathed ;  
As ever, round each new discovery, wreathed  
Luxuriantly the fancies infantine  
His admiration, bent on making fine  
Its novel friend at any risk, would fling  
In gay profusion forth : a ficklest king,  
Confessed those minions !—eager to dispense  
So much from his own stock of thought and  
sense

As might enable each to stand alone  
And serve him for a fellow ; with his own,  
Joining the qualities that just before  
Had graced some older favourite. Thus they  
wore

A fluctuating halo, yesterday  
Set flicker and to-morrow filched away,—  
Those upland objects each of separate name,  
Each with an aspect never twice the same,  
Waxing and waning as the new-born host  
Of fancies, like a single night's hoar-frost,  
Gave to familiar things a face grotesque ;  
Only, preserving through the mad burlesque  
A grave regard. Conceive ! the orpine<sup>3</sup>  
patch

Blossoming earliest on the log-house thatch  
The day those archers wound along the vines—  
Related to the Chief that left their lines

<sup>1</sup> Apollo (the bowman).

<sup>2</sup> A fragment.

<sup>3</sup> Stonecrop.



To climb with clinking step the northern stair  
Up to the solitary chambers where  
Sordello never came. Thus thrall reached  
thrall :

He o'er-festooning every interval,  
As the adventurous spider, making light  
Of distance, shoots her threads from depth to  
height,

From barbican to battlement : so flung  
Fancies forth and in their centre swung  
Our architect,—the breezy morning fresh  
Above, and merry,—all his waving mesh  
Laughing with lucid dew-drops rainbow-  
edged.

This world of ours by tacit pact is pledged  
To laying such a spangled fabric low  
Whether by gradual brush or gallant blow.  
But its abundant will was balked here : doubt  
Rose tardily in one so fenced about  
From most that nurtures judgment,—care  
and pain :

Judgment, that dull expedient we are fain,  
Less favoured, to adopt betimes and force  
Stead us, diverted from our natural course  
Of joys—contrive some yet amid the dearth,  
Vary and render them, it may be, worth  
Most we forego. Suppose Sordello hence  
Selfish enough, without a moral sense  
However feeble ; what informed the boy  
Others desired a portion in his joy ?

Or say a ruthless chance broke woof and  
warp—

A heron's nest beat down by March winds  
sharp,

A fawn breathless beneath the precipice,  
A bird with unsoiled breast and unfiled  
eyes

Warm in the brake—could these undo the  
trance

Lapping Sordello ? Not a circumstance

That makes for you, friend Naddo ! Eat  
fern-seed<sup>1</sup>

And peer beside us and report indeed

If (your word) "genius" dawned with throes  
and stings

And the whole fiery catalogue, while springs,

Summers, and winters quietly came and  
went.

Time put at length that period to content,  
By right the world should have imposed :  
bereft

Of its good offices, Sordello, left  
To study his companions, managed rip  
Their fringe off, learn the true relationship,  
Core with its crust, their nature with his  
own :

Amid his wild-wood sights he lived alone.  
As if the poppy felt with him ! Though he  
Partook the poppy's red effrontery  
Till Autumn spoiled their fleering quite with  
rain,

And, turbanless, a coarse brown rattling  
crane

Lay bare. That's gone : yet why renounce,  
for that,

His disenchanted tributaries—flat  
Perhaps, but scarce so utterly forlorn,  
Their simple presence might not well be  
borne

Whose parley was a transport once : recall  
The poppy's gifts, it flaunts you, after all,  
A poppy :—why distrust the evidence  
Of each soon satisfied and healthy sense ?  
The new-born judgment answered, "little  
boots

"Beholding other creatures' attributes  
"And having none !" or, say that it sufficed,  
"Yet, could one but possess, oneself," (en-  
ticed

Judgment) "some special office !" Nought  
beside

Serves you ? "Well then, be somehow  
justified

"For this ignoble wish to circumscribe  
"And concentrate, rather than swell, the  
tribe

"Of actual pleasures : what, now, from with-  
out

"Effects it ?—proves, despite a lurking doubt.

"Mere sympathy sufficient, trouble spared ?

"That, tasting joys by proxy thus, you fared

"The better for them ?" Thus much craved  
his soul.

Alas, from the beginning love is whole

<sup>1</sup> Made the eater invisible.

And true ; if sure of nought beside, most sure  
Of its own truth at least ; nor may endure  
A crowd to see its face, that cannot know  
How hot the pulses throb its heart below :  
While its own helplessness and utter want  
Of means to worthily be ministrant  
To what it worships, do but fan the more  
Its flame, exalt the idol far before  
Itself as it would have it ever be.  
Souls like Sordello, on the contrary,  
Coerced and put to shame, retaining will,  
Care little, take mysterious comfort still,  
But look forth tremblingly to ascertain  
If others judge their claims not urged in vain,  
And say for them their stifled thoughts aloud.  
So, they must ever live before a crowd :  
—"Vanity," Naddo tells you.

Whence contrive  
A crowd, now ? From these women just  
alive,  
That archer-troop ? Forth glided—not alone  
Each painted warrior, every girl of stone,  
Nor Adelaide (bent double o'er a scroll,  
One maiden at her knees, that eve, his soul  
Shook as he stumbled through the arras'd  
glooms  
On them, for, 'mid quaint robes and weird  
perfumes,  
Started the meagre Tuscan up,—her eyes,  
The maiden's, also, bluer with surprise)  
—But the entire out-world : whatever, scraps  
And snatches, song and story, dreams  
perhaps,  
Conceited the world's offices, and he  
Had hitherto transferred to flower or tree,  
Not counted a befitting heritage  
Each, of its own right, singly to engage  
Some man, no other,—such now dared to  
stand  
Alone. Strength, wisdom, grace on every  
hand  
Soon disengaged themselves, and he discerned  
A sort of human life : at least, was turned  
A stream of lifelike figures through his brain.  
Lord, liegeman, valvassor<sup>1</sup> and suzerain,

<sup>1</sup> Vassal.

Ere he could choose, surrounded him ; a  
stuff  
To work his pleasure on ; there, sure enough :  
But as for gazing, what shall fix that gaze ?  
Are they to simply testify the ways  
He who convoked them sends his soul along  
With the cloud's thunder or a dove's brood-  
song ?  
—While they live each his life, boast each  
his own  
Peculiar dower of bliss, stand each alone  
In some one point where something dearest  
loved  
Is easiest gained—far worthier to be proved  
Than aught he envies in the forest-wights !  
No simple and self-evident delights,  
But mixed desires of unimagined range,  
Contrasts or combinations, new and strange,  
Irk some perhaps, yet plainly recognized  
By this, the sudden company—loves prized  
By those who are to prize his own amount  
Of loves. Once care because such make  
account,  
Allow that foreign recognitions stamp  
The current value, and his crowd shall vamp  
Him counterfeits enough ; and so their print  
Be on the piece, 'tis gold, attests the mint,  
And "good," pronounce they whom his new  
appeal  
Is made to : if their casual print conceal—  
This arbitrary good of theirs o'ergloss  
What he has lived without, nor felt the loss—  
Qualities strange, ungainly, wearisome,  
—What matter ? So must speech expand  
the dumb  
Part-sigh, part-smile with which Sordello, late  
Whom no poor woodland-sights could satiate,  
Betakes himself to study hungrily  
Just what the puppets his crude phantasy  
Supposes notablest, — popes, kings, priests,  
knights,—  
May please to promulgate for appetites ;  
Accepting all their artificial joys  
Not as he views them, but as he employs  
Each shape to estimate the other's stock  
Of attributes, whereon—a marshalled flock  
Of authorized enjoyments—he may spend  
Himself, be men, now, as he used to blend

With tree and flower—nay more entirely, else  
 'Twere mockery: for instance, "How excels  
 "My life that chieftain's?" (who apprised  
 the youth  
 Ecelin, here, becomes this month, in truth,  
 Imperial Vicar?) "Turns he in his tent  
 "Remissly? Be it so—my head is bent  
 "Deliciously amid my girls to sleep.  
 "What if he stalks the Trentine-pass? Yon  
 steep  
 "I climbed an hour ago with little toil:  
 "We are alike there. But can I, too, foil  
 "The Guelph's paid stabber, carelessly afford  
 "Saint Mark's a spectacle, the sleight o' the  
 sword  
 "Baffling the treason in a moment?" Here  
 No rescue! Poppy he is none, but peer  
 To Ecelin, assuredly: his hand,  
 Fashioned no otherwise, should wield a brand  
 With Ecelin's success—try, now! He soon  
 Was satisfied, returned as to the moon  
 From earth; left each abortive boy's-attempt  
 For feats, from failure happily exempt,  
 In fancy at his beck. "One day I will  
 "Accomplish it! Are they not older still  
 "—Not grown-up men and women? 'Tis  
 beside  
 "Only a dream; and though I must abide  
 "With dreams now, I may find a thorough  
 vent  
 "For all myself, acquire an instrument  
 "For acting what these people act; my  
 soul  
 "Hunting a body out may gain its whole  
 "Desire some day!" How else express  
 chagrin  
 And resignation, show the hope steal in  
 With which he let sink from an aching wrist  
 The rough-hewn ash-bow? Straight, a gold  
 shaft hissed  
 Into the Syrian air, struck Malek down  
 Superbly! "Crosses to the breach! God's  
 Town  
 "Is gained him back!" Why bend rough  
 ash-bows more?  
 Thus lives he: if not careless as before,  
 Comforted: for one may anticipate,  
 Rehearse the future, be prepared when fate

Shall have prepared in turn real men whose  
 names  
 Startle, real places of enormous fames,  
 Este abroad and Ecelin at home  
 To worship him,—Mantua, Verona, Rome  
 To witness it. Who grudges time so spent?  
 Rather test qualities to heart's content—  
 Summon them, thrice selected, near and far—  
 Compress the starriest into one star,  
 And grasp the whole at once!

The pageant thinned  
 Accordingly; from rank to rank, like wind  
 His spirit passed to winnow and divide;  
 Back fell the simpler phantasms; every side  
 The strong clave to the wise; with either  
 classed  
 The beauteous; so, till two or three amassed  
 Mankind's beseechingnesses, and reduced  
 Themselves eventually,—graces loosed,  
 Strengths lavished,—all to heighten up One  
 Shape  
 Whose potency no creature should escape.  
 Can it be Friedrich of the bowmen's talk?  
 Surely that grape-juice, bubbling at the stalk,  
 Is some grey scorching Saracenic wine  
 The Kaiser quaffs with the Miramolins<sup>1</sup>—  
 Those swarthy hazel-clusters, seamed and  
 chapped,  
 Or filberts russet-sheathed and velvet-capped,  
 Are dates plucked from the bough John  
 Bienne sent  
 To keep in mind his sluggish armament  
 Of Canaan:—Friedrich's, all the pomp and  
 fierce  
 Demeanour! But harsh sounds and sights  
 transpierce  
 So rarely the serene cloud where he dwells  
 Whose looks enjoin, whose lightest words  
 are spells  
 On the obdurate! That right arm indeed  
 Has thunder for its slave; but where's the  
 need  
 Of thunder if the stricken multitude  
 Harkens, arrested in its angriest mood,  
 While songs go up exulting, then disspread,  
 Dispart, disperse, lingering overhead

<sup>1</sup> *Emir al Maromenim*, Prince of the Faithful.

Like an escape of angels? 'Tis the tune,  
Nor much unlike the words his women croon  
Smilingly, colourless and faint-designed  
Each, as a worn-out queen's face some remind  
Of her extreme youth's love-tales. "Eglamor  
"Made that!" Half minstrel and half  
emperor,

What but ill objects vexed him? Such he  
slew.

The kinder sort were easy to subdue  
By those ambrosial glances, dulcet tones;  
And these a gracious hand advanced to  
thrones  
Beneath him. Wherefore twist and torture  
this,

Striving to name afresh the antique bliss,  
Instead of saying, neither less nor more,  
He had discovered, as our world before,  
Apollo? That shall be the name; nor bid  
Me rag by rag expose how patchwork hid  
The youth—what thefts of every clime and  
day

Contributed to purfle the array  
He climbed with (June at deep) some close  
ravine

Mid clatter of its million pebbles sheen,  
Over which, singing soft, the runnel slipped  
Elate with rains: into whose streamlet dipped  
He foot, yet trod, you thought, with unwet  
sock—

Though really on the stubs of living rock  
Ages ago it crenelled; vines for roof,  
Lindens for wall; before him, aye aloof,  
Flittered in the cool some azure damselfly,  
Born of the simmering quiet, there to die.  
Emerging whence, Apollo still, he spied  
Mighty descents of forest; multiplied  
Tuft on tuft, here, the frolic myrtle-trees,  
Theregendered the grave maple stocks at ease.  
And, proud of its observer, straight the wood  
Tried old surprises on him; black it stood  
A sudden barrier ('twas a cloud passed o'er)  
So dead and dense, the tiniest brute no more  
Must pass; yet presently (the cloud dis-  
patched)

Each clump, behold, was glistering detached  
A shrub, oak-boles shrunk into ilex-stems!  
Yet could not he denounce the stratagems

He saw thro', till, hours thence, aloft would  
hang

White summer-lightnings; as it sank and  
sprang

To measure, that whole palpitating breast  
Of heaven, 'twas Apollo, nature prest  
At eve to worship.

Time stole: by degrees  
The Pythons perish off; his votaries  
Sink to respectful distance; songs redeem  
Their pains, but briefer; their dismissals seem  
Emphatic; only girls are very slow  
To disappear—his Delians! Some that glow  
O' the instant, more with earlier loves to  
wrench

Away, reserves to quell, disdains to quench;  
Alike in one material circumstance—  
All soon or late adore Apollo! Glance  
The bevy through, divine Apollo's choice,  
His Daphne! "We secure Count Richard's  
voice

"In Este's counsels, good for Este's ends  
"As our Taurello," say his faded friends,  
"By granting him our Palma!"—the sole  
child,

They mean, of Agnes Este who beguiled  
Ecelin, years before this Adelaide  
Wedded and turned him wicked: "but the  
maid

"Rejects his suit," those sleepy women boast.  
She, scorning all beside, deserves the most  
Sordello: so, conspicuous in his world  
Of dreams sat Palma. How the tresses curled  
Into a sumptuous swell of gold and wound  
About her like a glory! even the ground  
Was bright as with spilt sunbeams; breathe  
not, breathe  
Not!—poised, see, one leg doubled under-  
neath,

Its small foot buried in the dimpling snow,  
Rests, but the other, listlessly below,  
O'er the couch-side swings feeling for cool air.  
The vein-streaks swollen a richer violet where  
The languid blood lies heavily; yet calm  
On her slight prop, each flat and outspread  
palm,

As but suspended in the act to rise  
By consciousness of beauty, whence her eyes

Turn with so frank a triumph, for she meets  
Apollo's gaze in the pine glooms.

Time fleets :  
That's worst ! Because the pre-appointed age  
Approaches. Fate is tardy with the stage  
And crowd she promised. Lean he grows  
and pale,  
Though restlessly at rest. Hardly avail  
Fancies to soothe him. Time steals, yet  
alone

He carries here ! The earnest smile is gone.  
How long this might continue matters not ;  
—For ever, possibly ; since to the spot  
None come : our lingering Taurello quits  
Mantua at last, and light our lady flits  
Back to her place disburthened of a care.  
Strange -- to be constant here if he is there !  
Is it distrust ? Oh, never ! for they both  
Goad Ecelin alike, Romano's growth  
Is daily manifest, with Azzo dumb  
And Richard wavering : let but Friedrich  
come,

Find matter for the minstrelsy's report  
—Lured from the Isle and its young Kaiser's  
court

To sing up a Messina morning up,  
And, double rillet of a drinking cup,  
Sparkle along to ease the land of drouth,  
Northward to Provence that, and thus far  
south

The other ! What a method to apprise  
Neighbours of births, espousals, obsequies,  
Which in their very tongue the Troubadour  
Records ! and his performance makes a  
tour,

For Trouveres bear the miracle about,  
Explain its cunning to the vulgar rout,  
Until the Formidable House is famed  
Over the country -- as Taurello aimed,  
Who introduced, although the rest adopt,  
The novelty. Such games, her absence  
stopped,

Begin afresh now Adelaide, recluse  
No longer, in the light of day pursues  
Her plans at Mantua : whence an accident  
Which, breaking on Sordello's mixed content  
Opened, like any flash that cures the blind,  
The veritable business of mankind.

## BOOK THE SECOND.

THE woods were long austere with snow : at  
last

Pink leaflets budded on the beech, and fast  
Larches, scattered through pine-tree solitudes,  
Brightened, "as in the slumbrous heart o' the  
woods

"Our buried year, a witch, grew young again  
"To placid incantations, and that stain  
"About were from her cauldron, green smoke  
blent

"With those black pines"—so Eglamor gave  
vent

To a chance fancy. Whence a just rebuke  
From his companion ; brother Naddo shook  
The solemnest of brows : "Beware," he said,  
"Of setting up conceits in nature's stead !"

Forth wandered our Sordello. Nought so sure  
As that to-day's adventure will secure  
Palma, the visioned lady—only pass  
O'er yon damp mound and its exhausted grass,  
Under that brake where sundawn feeds the  
stalks

Of withered fern with gold, into those walks  
Of pine and take her ! Buoyantly he went.  
Again his stooping forehead was besprent  
With dew-drops from the skirting ferns. Then  
wide

Opened the great morass, shot every side  
With flashing water through and through ;  
a-shine,

Thick-steaming, all-alive. Whose shape  
divine,

Quivered i' the farthest rainbow-vapour,  
glanced

Athwart the flying herons ? He advanced,  
But warily ; though Mincio leaped no more,  
Each foot-fall burst up in the marsh-floor  
A diamond jet : and if he stopped to pick  
Rose-lichen, or molest the leeches quick,  
And circling blood-worms, minnow, newt or  
loach,

A sudden pond would silently encroach  
This way and that. On Palma passed. The  
verge

Of a new wood was gained. She will emerge

Flushed, now, and panting,—crowds to see,—  
will own

She loves him—Boniface to hear, to groan,  
To leave his suit ! One screen of pine-trees  
still

Opposes : but—the startling spectacle—  
Mantua, this time ! Under the walls—a  
crowd

Indeed, real men and women, gay and loud  
Round a pavilion. How he stood !

In truth  
No prophecy had come to pass : his youth  
In its prime now—and where was homage  
poured

Upon Sordello ?—born to be adored,  
And suddenly discovered weak, scarce made  
To cope with any, cast into the shade  
By this and this. Yet something seemed to  
prick

And tingle in his blood ; a sleight—a trick—  
And much would be explained. It went for  
nought—

The best of their endowments were ill bought  
With his identity : nay, the conceit,  
That this day's roving led to Palma's feet  
Was not so vain—list ! The word, "Palma !"   
Steal

Aside, and die, Sordello ; this is real,  
And this—abjure !

What next ? The curtains see  
Dividing ! She is there ; and presently  
He will be there—the proper You, at length—  
In your own cherished dress of grace and  
strength :

Most like, the very Boniface !

Not so.  
It was a showy man advanced ; but though  
A glad cry welcomed him, then every sound  
Sank and the crowd disposed themselves  
around,

—"This is not he," Sordello felt ; while,  
"Place

"For the best Troubadour of Boniface !"   
Hollaed the Jongleurs,—"Eglamor,<sup>1</sup> whose  
lay

"Concludes his patron's Court of Love to-  
day !"

<sup>1</sup> A Troubadour.

Obsequious Naddo strung the master's lute  
With the new lute-string, "Elys," named to  
suit

The song : he stealthily at watch, the while,  
Biting his lip to keep down a great smile  
Of pride : then up he struck. Sordello's brain  
Swam ; for he knew a sometime deed again ;  
So, could supply each foolish gap and chasm  
The minstrel left in his enthusiasm,  
Mistaking its true version—was the tale

Not of Apollo ? Only, what avail  
Luring her down, that Elys an he pleased,  
If the man dared no further ? Has he ceased  
And, lo, the people's frank applause half  
done,

Sordello was beside him, had begun  
(Spite of indignant twittings from his friend  
The Trouvere) the true lay with the true end,  
Taking the other's names and time and place  
For his. On flew the song, a giddy race,  
After the flying story ; word made leap  
Out word, rhyme—rhyme ; the lay could  
barely keep

Pace with the action visibly rushing past :  
Both ended. Back fell Naddo more aghast  
Than some Egyptian from the harassed bull  
That wheeled abrupt and, bellowing, fronted  
full

His plague, who spied a scarab 'neath the  
tongue,

And found 'twas Apis' flank his hasty prong  
Insulted. But the people—but the cries,  
The crowding round, and proffering the prize !  
—For he had gained some prize. He  
seemed to shrink

Into a sleepy cloud, just at whose brink  
One sight withheld him. There sat Adelaide,  
Silent ; but at her knees the very maid  
Of the North Chamber, her red lips as rich,  
The same pure fleecy hair ; one weft of which,  
Golden and great, quite touched his cheek  
as o'er

She leant, speaking some six words and no  
more.

He answered something, anything ; and she  
Unbound a scarf and laid it heavily  
Upon him, her neck's warmth and all. Again  
Moved the arrested magic ; in his brain

Noises grew, and a light that turned to glare,  
And greater glare, until the intense flare  
Engulfed him, shut the whole scene from his  
sense.

And when he woke 'twas many a furlong  
thence,

At home; the sun shining his ruddy wont;  
The customary birds'-chirp; but his front  
Was crowned—was crowned! Her scented  
scarf around

His neck! Whose gorgeous vesture heaps  
the ground?

A prize? He turned, and peeringly on him  
Brooded the women-faces, kind and dim,  
Ready to talk—"The Jongleurs in a troop  
"Had brought him back, Naddo and  
Squarcialupe

"And Tagliafer; how strange! a childhood  
spent

"In taking, well for him, so brave a bent!  
"Since Eglamor," they heard, "was dead  
with spite,

"And Palma chose him for her minstrel."  
Light

Sordello rose—to think, now; hitherto  
He had perceived. Sure, a discovery grew  
Out of it all! Best live from first to last  
The transport o'er again. A week he passed,  
Sucking the sweet out of each circumstance,  
From the bard's outbreak to the luscious trance  
Bounding his own achievement. Strange!

A man

Recounted an adventure, but began  
Imperfectly; his own task was to fill  
The frame-work up, sing well what he sung ill,  
Supply the necessary points, set loose  
As many incidents of little use  
—More imbecile the other, not to see  
Their relative importance clear as he!  
But, for a special pleasure in the act  
Of singing—had he ever turned, in fact,  
From Elys, to sing Elys?—from each fit  
Of rapture to contrive a song of it?  
True, this snatch or the other seemed to wind  
Into a treasure, helped himself to find  
A beauty in himself; for, see, he soared  
By means of that mere snatch, to many a  
hoard

Of fancies; as some falling cone bears soft  
The eye along the fir-tree-spire, aloft  
To a dove's nest. Then, how divine the cause  
Why such performance should exact applause  
From men, if they had fancies too? Did fate  
Decree they found a beauty separate  
In the poor snatch itself?—"Take Elys, there,  
"—"Her head that's sharp and perfect like  
a pear,

"So close and smooth are laid the few fine  
locks

"Coloured like honey oozed from topmost  
rocks

"Sun-blanch'd the livelong summer"—if  
they heard

"Just those two rhymes, assented at my word,  
"And loved them as I love them who have run

"These fingers through those pale locks, let  
the sun

"Into the white cool skin—who first could  
clutch,

"Then praise—I needs must be a god to such.  
"Or what if some, above themselves, and yet

"Beneath me, like their Eglamor, have set  
"An impress on our gift? So, men believe

"And worship what they know not, nor  
receive

"Delight from. Have they fancies—slow,  
perchance,

"Not at their beck, which indistinctly glance  
"Until, by song, each floating part be linked

"To each, and all grow palpable, distinct!"  
He pondered this.

Meanwhile, sounds low and drear  
Stole on him, and a noise of footsteps, near  
And nearer, while the underwood was pushed  
Aside, the larches grazed, the dead leaves  
crushed

At the approach of men. The wind seemed  
laid;

Only, the trees shrunk slightly and a shade  
Came o'er the sky although 'twas midday yet:  
You saw each half-shut downcast floweret  
Flutter—"a Roman bride, when they'd  
dispart

"Her unbound tresses with the Sabine dart,  
"Holding that famous rape in memory still,  
"Felt creep into her curls the iron chill,

"And looked thus," Eglamor would say—  
indeed

'Tis Eglamor, no other, these precede  
Home hither in the woods. "'Twere surely  
sweet

"Far from the scene of one's forlorn defeat  
"To sleep!" judged Naddo, who in person led  
Jongleurs and Trouveres, chanting at their  
head,

A scanty company; for, sooth to say,  
Our beaten Troubadour had seen his day.  
Old worshippers were something shamed, old  
friends

Nigh weary; still the death proposed amends.  
"Let us but get them safely through my song  
"And home again!" quoth Naddo.

All along,  
This man (they rest the bier upon the sand)  
—This calm corpse with the loose flowers in  
his hand,

Eglamor, lived Sordello's opposite.  
For him indeed was Naddo's notion right,  
And verse a temple-worship vague and vast,  
A ceremony that withdrew the last  
Opposing bolt, looped back the lingering veil  
Which hid the holy place: should one so  
frail

Stand there without such effort? or repine  
If much was blank, uncertain at the shrine  
He knelt before, till, soothed by many a rite,  
The power responded, and some sound or sight  
Grew up, his own forever, to be fixed,  
In rhyme, the beautiful, forever!—mixed  
With his own life, unloosed when he should  
please,

Having it safe at hand, ready to ease  
All pain, remove all trouble; every time  
He loosed that fancy from its bonds of rhyme,  
(Like Perseus when he loosed his naked love)  
Faltering; so distinct and far above  
Himself, these fancies! He, no genius rare,  
Transfiguring in fire or wave or air  
At will, but a poor gnome that, cloistered up  
In some rock-chamber with his agate cup,  
His topaz rod, his seed-pearl, in these few  
And their arrangement finds enough to do  
For his best art. Then, how he loved that art!  
The calling marking him a man apart

From men—one not to care, take counsel for  
Cold hearts, comfortless faces—(Eglamor  
Was neediest of his tribe)—since verse, the gift,  
Was his, and men, the whole of them, must shift  
Without it, e'en content themselves with  
wealth

And pomp and power, snatching a life by  
stealth.

So, Eglamor was not without his pride!  
The sorriest bat which cowers throughout  
noontide

While other birds are jocund, has one time  
When moon and stars are blinded, and the  
prime

Of earth is his to claim, nor find a peer;  
And Eglamor was noblest poet here—

He well knew, 'mid those April woods he cast  
Conceits upon in plenty as he passed,  
That Naddo might suppose him not to think  
Entirely on the coming triumph: wink  
At the one weakness! 'Twas a fervid child,  
That song of his; no brother of the guild  
Had e'er conceived its like. The rest you know,  
The exaltation and the overthrow:

Our poet lost his purpose, lost his rank,  
His life—to that it came. Yet envy sank  
Within him, as he heard Sordello out,  
And, for the first time, shouted—tried to shout  
Like others, not from any zeal to show  
Pleasure that way: the common sort did so,  
What else was Eglamor? who, bending down  
As they, placed his beneath Sordello's crown,  
Printed a kiss on his successor's hand,  
Left one great tear on it, then joined his band  
—In time; for some were watching at the door:  
Who knows what envy may effect? "Give  
o'er,

"Nor charm his lips, nor craze him!" (here  
one spied

And disengaged the withered crown)—  
"Beside

"His crown? How prompt and clear those  
verses rang

"To answer yours! nay, sing them!" And  
he sang

Them calmly. Home he went; friends used  
to wait

His coming, zealous to congratulate;



But, to a man—so quickly runs report—  
 Could do no less than leave him, and escort  
 His rival. That eve, then, bred many a  
 thought:

What must his future life be? was he brought  
 So low, who stood so lofty this Spring morn?  
 At length he said, "Best sleep now with my  
 scorn,

"And by to-morrow I devise some plain  
 "Expedient!" So, he slept, nor woke again.  
 They found as much, those friends, when  
 they returned

O'erflowing with the marvels they had learned  
 About Sordello's paradise, his roves  
 Among the hills and vales and plains and  
 groves,

Wherein, no doubt, this lay was roughly cast,  
 Polished by slow degrees, completed last  
 To Eglamor's discomfiture and death.

Such form the chanters now, and, out of  
 breath,

They lay the beaten man in his abode,  
 Naddo reciting that same luckless ode,  
 Doleful to hear. Sordello could explore  
 By means of it, however, one step more  
 In joy; and, mastering the round at length,  
 Learnt how to live in weakness as in strength,  
 When from his covert forth he stood, addressed  
 Eglamor, bade the tender ferns invest,  
 Primeval pines o'er canopy his couch,  
 And, most of all, his fame—(shall I avouch  
 Eglamor heard it, dead though he might look,  
 And laughed as from his brow Sordello took  
 The crown, and laid on the bard's breast,  
 and said

It was a crown, now, fit for poet's head?)

—Continue. Nor the prayer quite fruitless  
 fell.

A plant they have, yielding a three-leaved bell<sup>1</sup>  
 Which whitens at the heart ere noon, and ails  
 Till evening; evening gives it to her gales  
 To clear away with such forgotten things  
 As are an eyesore to the morn: this brings  
 Him to their mind, and bears his very name.

So much for Eglamor. My own month  
 came;

'Twas a sunrise of blossoming and May.

Beneath a flowering laurel thicket lay  
 Sordello; each new sprinkle of white stars  
 That smell fainter of wine than Massic jars  
 Dug up at Baix, when the south wind shed  
 The ripest, made him happier; filleted  
 And robed the same, only a lute beside  
 Lay on the turf. Before him far and wide  
 The country stretched: Goito slept behind  
 —The castle and its covert, which confined  
 Him with his hopes and fears; so fain of old  
 To leave the story of his birth untold.  
 At intervals, 'spite the fantastic glow  
 Of his Apollo-life, a certain low  
 And wretched whisper, winding through the  
 bliss,

Admonished, no such fortune could be his,  
 All was quite false and sure to fade one  
 day:

The closelier drew he round him his array  
 Of brilliance to expel the truth. But when  
 A reason for his difference from men  
 Surprised him at the grave, he took no rest  
 While aught of that old life, superbly dressed  
 Down to its meanest incident, remained  
 A mystery: alas, they soon explained  
 Away Apollo! and the tale amounts  
 To this: when at Vicenza both her counts  
 Banished the Vivaresi kith and kin,  
 Those Maltraversi hung on Ecelin,  
 Reviled him as he followed; he for spite  
 Must fire their quarter, though that self-same  
 night

Among the flames young Ecelin was born  
 Of Adelaide, there too, and barely torn  
 From the roused populace hard on the rear,  
 By a poor archer when his chieftain's fear  
 Grew high; into the thick Elcorte leapt,  
 Saved her, and died; no creature left except  
 His child to thank. And when the full escape  
 Was known—how men impaled from chine  
 to nape

Unlucky Prata, all to pieces spurned  
 Bishop Pistor's concubines, and burned  
 Taurello's entire household, flesh and fell,  
 Missing the sweeter prey—such courage well  
 Might claim reward. The orphan, ever since,  
 Sordello, had been nurtured by his prince

<sup>1</sup> St. Bruno's lily, the *Anthericum Liliastrum*.

Within a blind retreat where Adelaide—  
 (For, once this notable discovery made,  
 The past at every point was understood)  
 —Might harbour easily when times were  
 rude,

When Azzo schemed for Palma, to retrieve  
 That pledge of Agnes Este—loth to leave  
 Mantua unguarded with a vigilant eye,  
 While there Taurello bode ambiguously—  
 He who could have no motive now to moil  
 For his own fortunes since their utter spoil—  
 As it were worth while yet (went the report)  
 To disengage himself from her. In short,  
 Apollo vanished; a mean youth, just named  
 His lady's minstrel, was to be proclaimed  
 —How shall I phrase it?—Monarch of the  
 World!

For, on the day when that array was furled  
 Forever, and in place of one a slave  
 To longings, wild indeed, but longings save  
 In dreams as wild, suppressed—one daring

• not

Assume the mastery such dreams allot,  
 Until a magical equipment, strength,  
 Grace, wisdom, decked him too,—he chose  
 at length,

Content with unproved wits and failing frame,  
 In virtue of his simple will, to claim  
 That mastery, no less—to do his best  
 With means so limited, and let the rest  
 Go by,—the seal was set: never again  
 Sordello could in his own sight remain  
 One of the many, one with hopes and cares  
 And interests powise distinct from theirs,  
 Only peculiar in a thriveless store  
 Of fancies, which were fancies and no more;  
 Never again for him and for the crowd  
 A common law was challenged and allowed  
 If calmly reasoned of, howe'er denied  
 By a mad impulse nothing justified  
 Short of Apollo's presence. The divorce  
 Is clear: why needs Sordello square his  
 course

By any known example? Men no more  
 Compete with him than tree and flower be-  
 fore.

Himself, inactive, yet is greater far  
 Than such as act, each stooping to his star,

Acquiring thence his function; he has gained  
 The same result with meaner mortals trained  
 To strength or beauty, moulded to express  
 Each the idea that rules him; since no less  
 He comprehends that function, but can still  
 Embrace the others, take of might his fill  
 With Richard as of grace with Palma, mix  
 Their qualities, or for a moment fix  
 On one; abiding free meantime, uncramped  
 By any partial organ, never stamped  
 Strong, and to strength turning all energies—  
 Wise, and restricted to becoming wise—  
 That is, he loves not, nor possesses One  
 Idea that, star-like over, lures him on  
 To its exclusive purpose. "Fortunate!

"This flesh of mine ne'er strove to emulate  
 "A soul so various—took no casual mould  
 "Of the first fancy and, contracted, cold,  
 "Clogged her forever—soul averse to change  
 "As flesh: whereas flesh leaves soul free  
 to range,

"Remains itself a blank, cast into shade,  
 "Encumbers little, if it cannot aid.

"So, range, free soul!—who, by self-  
 consciousness,

"The last drop of all beauty dost express—

"The grace of seeing grace, a quintessence

"For thee: while for the world, that can  
 dispense

"Wonder on men who, themselves, wonder  
 —make

"A shift to love at second-hand, and take

"For idols those who do but idolize,

"Themselves,—the world that counts men  
 strong or wise,

"Who, themselves, court strength, wisdom,  
 —it shall bow

"Surely in unexampled worship now,

"Discerning me!"—

(Dear monarch, I beseech,  
 Notice how lamentably wide a breach  
 Is here: discovering this, discover too  
 What our poor world has possibly to do  
 With it! As pigmy natures as you please—  
 So much the better for you; take your ease,  
 Look on, and laugh; style yourself God  
 alone;

Strangle some day with a cross olive-stone!

All that is right enough : but why want us  
To know that you 'yourself know thus and  
thus ?)

"The world shall bow to me conceiving all  
"Man's life, who see its blisses, great and  
small,

"Afar—not tasting any ; no machine

"To exercise my utmost will is mine :

"Be mine mere consciousness ! Let men  
perceive

"What I could do, a mastery believe,

"Asserted and established to the throng

"By their selected evidence of song

"Which now shall prove, whate'er they are,  
or seek

"To be, I am—whose words, not actions  
speak,

"Who change no standards of perfection, vex

"With no strange forms created to perplex,

"But just perform their bidding and no more,

"At their own satiating-point give o'er,

"While each shall love in me the love that  
leads

"His soul to power's perfection." Song,  
not deeds,

(For we get tired) was chosen. Fate would  
brook

Mankind no other organ ; he would look

For not another channel to dispense

His own volition by, receive men's sense

Of its supremacy—would live content,

Obstructed else, with merely verse for vent.

Nor should, for instance, strength an outlet  
seek

And, striving, be admired : nor grace bespeak  
Wonder, displayed in gracious attitudes :

Nor wisdom, poured forth, change unseemly  
moods ;

But he would give and take on song's one  
point.

Like some huge throbbing stone that, poised  
a-joint,

Sounds, to affect on its basaltic bed,

Must sue in just one accent ; tempests shed

Thunder, and raves the windstorm : only let

That key by any little noise be set—

The far benighted hunter's halloo pitch

On that, the hungry curlew chance to scritch

Or serpent hiss it, rustling through the rift,  
However loud, however low—all lift  
The groaning monster, stricken to the heart.

Lo ye, the world's concernment, for its part,  
And this, for his, will hardly interfere !

Its businesses in blood and blaze this year  
But wile the hour away—a pastime slight  
Till he shall step upon the platform : right !  
And, now thus much is settled, cast in rough,  
Proved feasible, be counselled ! thought  
enough,—

Slumber, Sordello ! any day will serve :  
Were it a less digested plan ! how swerve  
To-morrow ? Meanwhile eat these sun-dried  
grapes,

And watch the soaring hawk there ! Life  
escapes

Merrily thus.

He thoroughly read o'er  
His truchman Naddo's missive six times more,  
Praying him visit Mantua and supply  
A famished world.

The evening star was high  
When he reached Mantua, but his fame  
arrived

Before him : friends applauded, foes connived,  
And Naddo looked an angel, and the rest  
Angels, and all these angels would be blest  
Supremely by a song—the thrice-renowned  
Goito-manufacture. Then he found  
(Casting about to satisfy the crowd)  
That happy vehicle, so late allowed,  
A sore annoyance ; 'twas the song's effect  
He cared for, scarce the song itself : reflect !  
In the past life, what might be singing's use ?  
Just to delight his Delians, whose profuse  
Praise, not the toilsome process which pro-  
cured

That praise, enticed Apollo : dreams abjured,  
No overleaping means for ends—take both  
For granted or take neither ! I am loth  
To say the rhymes at last were Eglamor's ;  
But Naddo, chuckling, bade competitors  
Go pine ; "the master certes meant to waste  
"No effort, cautiously had probed the taste  
"He'd please anon : true bard, in short,—  
disturb

"His title if they could ; nor spur nor curb,

"Fancy nor reason, wanting in him ; whence  
 "The staple of his verses, common sense :  
 "He built on man's broad nature—gift of gifts,  
 "That power to build ! The world contented  
     shifts  
 "With counterfeits enough, a dreary sort  
 "Of warriors, statesmen, ere it can extort  
 "Its poet-soul—that's, after all, a freak  
 "(The having eyes to see and tongue to  
     speak)  
 "With our herd's stupid sterling happiness  
 "So plainly incompatible that—yes—  
 "Yes—should a son of his improve the breed  
 "And turn out poet, he were cursed indeed !"  
 "Well, there's Goito and its woods anon,  
 "If the worst happen ; best go stoutly on  
 "Now !" thought Sordello.

Ay, and goes on yet !  
 You pother with your glossaries to get  
 A notion of the Troubadour's intent  
 In rondel, tenzon, virlai or sirvent—  
 Much as you study arras how to twirl  
 His angelot, plaything of page and girl  
 Once ; but you surely reach, at last,—or, no !  
 Never quite reach what struck the people so,  
 As from the welter of their time he drew  
 Its elements successively to view,  
 Followed all actions backward on their course,  
 And catching up, unmingled at the source,  
 Such a strength, such a weakness, added then  
 A touch or two, and turned them into men.  
 Virtue took form, nor vice refused a shape ;  
 Here heaven opened, there was hell agape,  
 As Saint this simpered past in sanctity,  
 Sinner the other flared portentous by  
 A greedy people. Then why stop, surprised  
 At his success ? The scheme was realized  
 Too suddenly in one respect : a crowd  
 Praising, eyes quick to see, and lips as loud  
 To speak, delicious homage to receive,  
 The woman's breath to feel upon his sleeve,  
 Who said, "But Anafest—why asks he less  
 "Than Lucio, in your verses ? how confess,  
 "It seemed too much but yestereve !"—the  
     youth,  
 Who bade him earnestly, "Avow the truth !  
 "You love Bianca, surely, from your song ;  
 "I knew I was unworthy !"—soft or strong,

In poured such tributes ere he had arranged  
 Ethereal ways to take them, sorted, changed,  
 Digested, Courtied thus at unawares,  
 In spite of his pretensions and his cares,  
 He caught himself shamefully hankering  
 After the obvious petty joys that spring  
 From true life, fain relinquish pedestal  
 And condescend with pleasures—one and all  
 To be renounced, no doubt ; for, thus to chain  
 Himself to single joys and so refrain  
 From tasting their quintessence, frustrates,  
     sure,  
 His prime design ; each joy must he abjure  
 Even for love of it.

He laughed : what sage  
 But perishes if from his magic page  
 He look because, at the first line, a proof  
 'Twas heard salutes him from the cavern roof ?  
 "On ! Give yourself, excluding aught beside,  
 "To the day's task ; compel your slave  
     provide  
 "Its utmost at the soonest ; turn the leaf  
 "Thoroughly conned. These lays of yours,  
     in brief—  
 "Cannot men bear, now, something better ?  
     —fly  
 "A pitch beyond this unreal pageantry  
 "Of essences ? the period sure has ceased  
 "For such : present us with ourselves, at least,  
 "Not portions of ourselves, mere loves and  
     hates  
 "Made flesh : wait not !"

Awile the poet waits  
 However. The first trial was enough :  
 He left imagining, to try the stuff  
 That held the imaged thing, and, let it writhe  
 Never so fiercely, scarce allowed a tithe  
 To reach the light—his Language. How he  
     sought  
 The cause, conceived a cure, and slow re-  
     wrought  
 That Language, — welding words into the  
     crude  
 Mass from the new speech round him, till a rude  
 Armour was hammered out, in time to be  
 Approved beyond the Roman panoply  
 Melted to make it,—boots not. This obtained  
 With some ado, no obstacle remained

To using it ; accordingly he took  
 An action with its actors, quite forsook  
 Himself to live in each, returned anon  
 With the result—a creature, and, by one  
 And one, proceeded leisurely to equip  
 Its limbs in harness of his workmanship.  
 “ Accomplished ! Listen, Mantuans ! ” Fond  
 essay !

Piece after piece that armour broke away,  
 Because perceptions whole, like that he sought  
 To clothe, reject so pure a work of thought  
 As language : thought may take perception’s  
 place

But hardly co-exist in any case,  
 Being its mere presentment—of the whole  
 By parts, the simultaneous and the sole  
 By the successive and the many. Lacks  
 The crowd perception ? painfully it tacks  
 Thought to thought, which Sordello, needing  
 such,

Has rent perception into : it’s to clutch  
 And reconstruct—his office to diffuse,  
 Destroy : as hard, then, to obtain a Muse  
 As to become Apollo. “ For the rest,  
 “ E’en if some wondrous vehicle expressed  
 “ The whole dream, what impertinence in me  
 “ So to express it, who myself can be  
 “ The dream ! nor, on the other hand, are  
 those

“ I sing to, over-likely to suppose  
 “ A higher than the highest I present  
 “ Now, which they praise already : be content  
 “ Both parties, rather—they with the old verse,  
 “ And I with the old praise—far go, fare  
 worse ! ”

A few adhering rivets loosed, upsprings  
 The angel, sparkles off his mail, which rings  
 Whirled from each delicatest limb it warps ;  
 So might Apollo from the sudden corpse  
 Of Hyacinth <sup>1</sup> have cast his luckless quoits.  
 He set to celebrating the exploits  
 Of Montfort o’er the Mountaineers.

Then came  
 The world’s revenge : their pleasure, now his

<sup>1</sup> Accidentally killed by Apollo whilst playing  
 quoits, and changed into the flower.

Merely,—what was it ? “ Not to play the  
 fool

“ So much as learn our lesson in your school ! ”  
 Replied the world. He found that, every time  
 He gained applause by any ballad-rhyme,  
 His auditory recognised no jot

As he intended, and, mistaking not  
 Him for his meanest hero, ne’er was dunce  
 Sufficient to believe him—all, at once.

His will . . . conceive it caring for his will !  
 —Mantuans, the main of them, admiring still  
 How a mere singer, ugly, stunted, weak,  
 Had Montfort at completely (so to speak)  
 His fingers’ ends ; while past the praise-tide  
 swept

To Montfort, either’s share distinctly kept :  
 The true meed for true merit !—his abates  
 Into a sort he most repudiates,  
 And on them angrily he turns. Who were  
 The Mantuans, after all, that he should care  
 About their recognition, ay or no ?  
 In spite of the convention months ago,  
 (Why blink the truth ?) was not he forced to  
 help

This same ungrateful audience, every whelp  
 Of Naddo’s litter, make them pass for peers  
 With the bright band of old Goito years,  
 As erst he toiled for flower or tree ? Why,  
 there

Sat Palma ! Adelaide’s funeral hair  
 Ennobled the next corner. Ay, he strewed  
 A fairy dust upon that multitude,  
 Although he feigned to take them by them-  
 selves ;

His giants dignified those puny elves,  
 Sublimed their faint applause. In short, he  
 found

Himself still footing a delusive round,  
 Remote as ever from the self-display  
 He meant to compass, hampered every way  
 By what he hoped assistance. Wherefore  
 then

Continue, make believe to find in men  
 A use he found not ?

Weeks, months, years went by,  
 And lo, Sordello vanished utterly,  
 Sundered in twain ; each spectral part at strife  
 With each ; one jarred against another life ;

The Poet thwarting hopelessly the Man—  
 Who, fooled no longer, free in fancy ran  
 Here, there : let slip no opportunities  
 As pitiful, forsooth, beside the prize  
 To drop on him some no-time and acquit  
 His constant faith (the Poet-half's to wit—  
 That waiving any compromise between  
 No joy and all joy kept the hunger keen  
 Beyond most methods)—of incurring scoff  
 From the Man-portion—not to be put off  
 With self-reflectings by the Poet's scheme,  
 Though ne'er so bright. Who sauntered  
 forth in dream,

Dressed any how, nor waited mystic frames,  
 Immeasurable gifts, astounding claims,  
 But just his sorry self?—who yet might be  
 Sorrier for aught he in reality  
 Achieved, so pinioned Man's the Poet-part,  
 Fondling, in turn of fancy, verse ; the Art  
 Developing his soul a thousand ways—  
 Potent, by its assistance, to amaze  
 The multitude with majesties, convince  
 Each sort of nature that the nature's prince  
 Accosted it. Language, the makeshift, grew  
 Into a bravest of expedients, too ;  
 Apollo, seemed it now, perverse had thrown  
 Quiver and bow away, the lyre alone  
 Sufficed. While, out of dream, his day's  
 work went

To tune a crazy tenzon<sup>1</sup> or sirvent<sup>2</sup>—  
 So hampered him the Man-part, thrust to judge  
 Between the bard and the bard's audience,  
 grudge

A minute's toil that missed its due reward !  
 But the complete Sordello, Man and Bard,  
 John's cloud-girt angel, this foot on the land,  
 That on the sea, with, open in his hand,  
 A bitter-sweetling of a book—was gone.

Then, if internal struggles to be one,  
 Which frittered him incessantly piecemeal,  
 Referred, ne'er so obliquely, to the real  
 Intruding Mantuans ! ever with some call  
 To action while he pondered, once for all,

Which looked the easier effort—to pursue  
 This course, still leap o'er paltry joys, yearn  
 through

The present ill-appreciated stage  
 Of self-revelment, and compel the age  
 Know him—or else, forswearing bard-craft,  
 wake

From out his lethargy and nobly shake  
 Off timid habits of denial, mix  
 With men, enjoy like men. Ere he could fix  
 On aught, in rushed the Mantuans ; much  
 they cared

For his perplexity ! Thus unprepared,  
 The obvious if not only shelter lay  
 In deeds, the dull conventions of his day  
 Prescribed the like of him : why not be glad  
 'Tis settled Palma's minstrel, good or bad,  
 Submits to this and that established rule ?  
 Let Vidal change, or any other fool,  
 His murrey-coloured<sup>3</sup> robe for flamot,<sup>4</sup>  
 And crop his hair ; too skin-deep, is it not,  
 Such vigour ? Then, a sorrow to the heart,  
 His talk ! Whatever topics they might start  
 Had to be groped for in his consciousness  
 Straight, and as straight delivered them by  
 guess.

Only obliged to ask himself, "What was,"  
 A speedy answer followed ; but, alas,  
 One of God's large ones, tardy to condense  
 Itself into a period ; answers whence  
 A tangle of conclusions must be stripped  
 At any risk ere, trim to pattern clipped,  
 They matched rare specimens the Mantuan  
 flock

Regaled him with, each talker from his stock  
 Of sorted-o'er opinions, every stage,  
 Juicy in youth or desiccate with age,  
 Fruits like the fig-tree's, rather-ripe, rotten-  
 rich,

Sweet-sour, all tastes to take : a practice which  
 He too had not impossibly attained,  
 Once either of those fancy-flights restrained ;  
 (For, at conjecture how might words ap-  
 pear

To others, playing there what happened here,

<sup>1</sup> *Tenzon*. A dramatic skirmish in verse  
 before the Court of Love.

<sup>2</sup> *Sirvent*. Martial, political, and satirical  
 songs. Both Provençal terms.

<sup>3</sup> Mulberry-colour.

<sup>4</sup> The colour of a dead leaf.

And occupied abroad by what he spurned  
 At home, 'twas slipped, the occasion he re-  
 turned  
 To seize :) he'd strike that lyre adroitly—  
 speech,  
 Would but a twenty-cubit plectre<sup>1</sup> reach ;  
 A clever hand, consummate instrument,  
 Were both brought close ; each excellency  
 went  
 For nothing, else. The question Naddo  
 asked,  
 Had just a lifetime moderately tasked  
 To answer, Naddo's fashion. More disgust  
 And more : why move his soul, since move  
 it must  
 At minute's notice or as good it failed  
 To move at all ? The end was, he retained  
 Some ready-made opinion, put to use  
 This quip, that maxim, ventured reproduce  
 Gestures and tones—at any folly caught  
 Serving to finish with, nor too much sought  
 If false or true 'twas spoken ; praise and  
 blame  
 Of what he said grew pretty nigh the same  
 —Meantime awards to meantime acts : his  
 soul,  
 Unequal to the compassing a whole,  
 Saw, in a tenth part, less and less to strive  
 About. And as for men in turn . . . con-  
 trive  
 Who could to take eternal interest  
 In them, so hate the worst, so love the best !  
 Though, in pursuance of his passive plan,  
 He hailed, decried, the proper way.

As Man

So figured he ; and how as Poet ? Verse  
 Came only not to a stand-still. The worse,  
 That his poor piece of daily work to do  
 Was—not sink under any rivals ; who  
 Loudly and long enough, without these  
 qualms,  
 Turned, from Bocafoli's stark-naked psalms,  
 To Plara's sonnets spoilt by toying with,  
 "As knops<sup>2</sup> that stud some almug<sup>3</sup> to the pith

As Man

"Prickèd for gum, wry thence, and crinklèd  
 worse  
 "Than pursèd eyelids of a river-horse  
 "Sunning himself o' the slime when whirrs  
 the breese"—  
*Gad-fly*, that is. He might compete with  
 these !  
 But—but—  
 "Observe a pompion<sup>4</sup> twine afloat ;  
 "Pluck me one cup from off the castle-moat !  
 "Along with cup you raise leaf, stalk and  
 root,  
 "The entire surface of the pool to boot.  
 "So could I pluck a cup, put in one song  
 "A single sight, did not my hand, too strong,  
 "Twitch in the least the root-strings of the  
 whole.  
 "How should externals satisfy my soul ?"  
 "Why that's precise the error Squarcialupe"  
 (Hazardèd Naddo) "finds ; 'the man can't  
 stoop  
 "'To sing us out,' quoth he, 'a mere  
 romance ;  
 "'He'd fain do better than the best, enhance  
 "'The subjects' rarity, work problems out  
 "'Therewith.' Now, you're a bard, a bard  
 past doubt,  
 "And no philosopher ; why introduce  
 "Crotchets like these ? fine, surely, but no use  
 "In poetry—which still must be, to strike,  
 "Based upon common sense ; there's nothing  
 like  
 "Appealing to our nature ! what beside  
 "Was your first poetry ? No tricks were tried  
 "In that, no hollow thrills, affected throes !  
 "The man," said we, 'tells his own joys  
 and woes :  
 "'We'll trust him.' Would you have your  
 songs endure ?  
 "Build on the human heart !—why, to be sure  
 "Yours is one sort of heart—but I mean theirs,  
 "Ours, every one's, the healthy heart one  
 cares  
 "To build on ! Central peace, mother of  
 strength,  
 "That's father of . . . nay, go yourself that  
 length,

<sup>1</sup> An instrument for twanging the strings of  
 a lyre.

<sup>2</sup> Buds.

<sup>3</sup> Sandal-wood.

<sup>4</sup> Melon.

"Ask those calm-hearted doers what they do  
 "When they have got their calm! And is  
 it true,

"Fire rankles at the heart of every globe?

"Perhaps. But these are matters one may  
 probe.

"Too deeply for poetic purposes:

"Rather select a theory that . . . yes,

"Laugh! what does that prove?—stations  
 you midway

"And saves some little o'er-refining. Nay,

"That's rank injustice done me! I restrict

"The poet? Don't I hold the poet picked

"Out of a host of warriors, statesmen . . . did

"I tell you? Very like! As well you hid

"That sense of power, you have! True  
 bards believe

"All able to achieve what they achieve—

"That is, just nothing—in one point abide

"Profounder simpletons than all beside.

"Oh, ay! The knowledge that you are a bard

"Must constitute your prime, nay sole, re-  
 ward!"

So prattled Naddo, busiest of the tribe  
 Of genius-haunters—how shall I describe

What grubs or nips or rubs or rips—your louse  
 For love, your flea for hate, magnanimous,

Malignant, Pappacoda, Tagliafer,<sup>1</sup>

Picking a sustenance from wear and tear

By implements it sedulous employs

To undertake, lay down, mete out, o'er-toise

Sordello? Fifty creepers to elude

At once! They settled staunchly; shame  
 ensued:

Behold the monarch of mankind succumb

To the last fool who turned him round his  
 thumb,

As Naddo styled it! 'Twas not worth oppose

The matter of a moment, gainsay those

He aimed at getting rid of; better think

Their thoughts and speak their speech, secure  
 to slink

Back expeditiously to his safe place,

And chew the cud—what he and what his race

Were really, each of them. Yet even this

Conformity was partial. He would miss

Some point, brought into contact with them  
 ere

Assured in what small segment of the sphere  
 Of his existence they attended him;

Whence blunders, falsehoods rectified—a  
 grim

List—slur it over! How? If dreams were  
 tried,

His will swayed sicklily from side to side,

Nor merely neutralized his waking act

But tended e'en in fancy to distract

The intermediate will, the choice of means.

He lost the art of dreaming: Mantuan scenes

Supplied a baron, say, he sang before,

Handsomely reckless, full to running-o'er

Of gallantries; "abjure the soul, content

"With body, therefore!" Scarcely had he  
 bent

Himself in dream thus low, when matter fast

Cried out, he found, for spirit to contrast

And task it duly; by advances slight,

The simple stuff becoming composite,

Count Lori grew Apollo: best recall

His fancy! Then would some rough peasant-  
 Paul,

Like those old Ecelin confers with, glance

His gay apparel o'er; that countenance

Gathered his shattered fancies into one,

And, body clean abolished, soul alone

Sufficed the grey Paulician; by and by,

To balance the ethereality,

Passions were needed; foiled he sank again.

Meanwhile the world rejoiced ('tis time  
 explain)

Because a sudden sickness set it free

From Adelaide. Missing the mother-bee,

Her mountain-hive Romano swarmed; at  
 once

A rustle-forth of daughters and of sons

Blackened the valley. "I am sick too, old,

Half-crazed I think; what good's the

Kaiser's gold

To such an one? God help me! for I catch

"My children's greedy sparkling eyes at  
 watch—

He bears that double breastplate on,' they  
 say,

"So many minutes less than yesterday!"

<sup>1</sup> Minstrel-knight of William the Conqueror.



"Beside, Monk Hilary is on his knees  
 "Now, sworn to kneel and pray till God shall  
 please  
 "Exact a punishment for many things  
 "You know, and some you never knew ;  
 which brings  
 "To memory, Azzo's sister Beatrix  
 "And Richard's Giglia are my Alberic's  
 "And Ecelin's betrothed ; the Count himself  
 "Must get my Palma : Ghibellin and Guelph  
 "Mean to embrace each other." So began  
 Romano's missive to his fighting man  
 Taurello—on the Tuscan's death, away  
 With Friedrich sworn to sail from Naples' bay  
 Next month for Syria. Never thunder-clap  
 Out of Vesuvius' throat, like this mishap  
 Startled him. "That accursed Vicenza ! I  
 "Absent, and she selects this time to die !  
 "Ho, fellows, for Vicenza !" Half a score  
 Of horses ridden dead, he stood before  
 Romano in his reeking spurs : too late—  
 "Boniface urged me, Este could not wait,"  
 The chieftain stammered ; "let me die in  
 peace  
 "Forget me ! Was it I who craved increase  
 "Of rule ? Do you and Friedrich plot your  
 worst  
 "Against the Father : as you found me first  
 "So leave me now. Forgive me ! Palma,  
 sure,  
 "Is at Goito still. Retain that lure—  
 "Only be pacified !"

The country rung  
 With such a piece of news : on every tongue,  
 How Ecelin's great servant, congeed off,  
 Had done a long day's service, so, might doff  
 The green and yellow, and recover breath  
 At Mantua, whither,—since Retrude's death,  
 (The girlish slip of a Sicilian bride  
 From Otho's house, he carried to reside  
 At Mantua till the Ferrarese should pile  
 A structure worthy her imperial style,  
 The gardens raise, the statues there enshrine,  
 She never lived to see)—although his line  
 Was ancient in her archives and she took  
 A pride in him, that city, nor forsook  
 Her child when he forsook himself and spent  
 A prowess on Romano surely meant

For his own growth—whither he ne'er resorts  
 If wholly satisfied (to trust reports)  
 With Ecelin. So, forward in a trice  
 Were shows to greet him. "Take a friend's  
 advice,"  
 Quoth Naddo to Sordello, "nor be rash  
 "Because your rivals (nothing can abash  
 "Some folks) demur that we pronounced  
 you best  
 "To sound the great man's welcome ; 'tis a  
 test,  
 "Remember ! Strojavacca looks asquint,  
 "The rough fat sloven ; and there's plenty  
 hint  
 "Your pinions have received of late a shock—  
 "Outsoar them, cobsman of the silver flock !  
 "Sing well !" A signal wonder, song's no  
 whit  
 Facilitated.

Fast the minutes flit ;  
 Another day, Sordello finds, will bring  
 The soldier, and he cannot choose but sing ;  
 So, a last shift, quits Mantua—slow, alone :  
 Out of that aching brain, a very stone,  
 Song must be struck. What occupies that  
 front ?

Just how he was more awkward than his wont  
 The night before, when Naddo, who had seen  
 Taurello on his progress, praised the mien  
 For dignity no crosses could affect—  
 Such was a joy, and might not he detect  
 A satisfaction if established joys  
 Were proved imposture ? Poetry annoys  
 Its utmost : wherefore fret ? Verses may  
 come  
 Or keep away ! And thus he wandered, dumb  
 Till evening, when he paused, thoroughly  
 spent,  
 On a blind hill-top : down the gorge he went,  
 Yielding himself up as to an embrace.  
 The moon came out ; like features of a face,  
 A querulous fraternity of pines,  
 Sad blackthorn clumps, leafless and grovelling  
 vines  
 Also came out, made gradually up  
 The picture ; 'twas Goito's mountain-cup  
 And castle. He had dropped through one defile  
 He never dared explore, the Chief erewhile

Had vanished by. Back rushed the dream,  
enwrapped

Him wholly. 'Twas Apollo now they lapped,  
Those mountains, not a pettish minstrel meant  
To wear his soul away in discontent,  
Brooding on fortune's malice. Heart and brain  
Swelled; he expanded to himself again,  
As some thin seedling spice-tree starved and  
frail,

Pushing between cat's head and ibis' tail  
Crusted into the porphyry pavement smooth,  
—Suffered remain just as it sprung, to soothe  
The Soldan's pining daughter, never yet  
Well in her chilly green-glazed minaret,—  
When rooted up, the sunny day she died,  
And flung into the common court beside  
Its parent tree. Come home, Sordello! Soon  
Was he low muttering, beneath the moon,  
Of sorrow saved, of quiet evermore,—  
Since from the purpose, he maintained before,  
Only resulted wailing and hot tears.  
Ah, the slim castle! dwindled of late years,  
But more mysterious; gone to ruin—trails  
Of vine through every loop-hole. Nought  
avails

The night as, torch in hand, he must explore  
The maple chamber: did I say, its floor  
Was made of intersecting cedar beams?  
Worn now with gaps so large, there blew  
cold streams  
Of air quite from the dungeon; lay your ear  
Close and 'tis like, one after one, you hear  
In the blind darkness water drop. The nests  
And nooks retain their long ranged vesture-  
chests

Empty and smelling of the iris root  
The Tuscan grated o'er them to recruit  
Her wasted wits. Palma was gone that day,  
Said the remaining women. Last, he lay  
Beside the Carian group reserved and still.

The Body, the Machine for Acting Will,  
I had been at the commencement proved unfit;  
That for Demonstrating, Reflecting it,  
Mankind—no fitter: was the Will Itself  
In fault?

His forehead pressed the moonlit shelf  
Beside the youngest marble maid awhile;  
Then, raising it, he thought, with a long smile,

"I shall be king again!" as he withdrew  
The envied scarf; into the font he threw  
His crown.

Next day, no poet! "Where  
fore?" asked

Taurello, when the dance of Jongleurs,  
masked

As devils, ended; "don't a song come next?"  
The master of the pageant looked perplexed  
Till Naddo's whisper came to his relief.

"His Highness knew what poets were: in  
brief,

"Had not the tetchy race prescriptive right  
"To peevishness, caprice? or, call it spite,  
"One must receive their nature in its length  
"And breadth, expect the weakness with the  
strength!"

—So phrasing, till, his stock of phrases spent,  
The easy-natured soldier smiled assent,  
Settled his portly person, smoothed his chin,  
And nodded that the bull-bait might begin.

### BOOK THE THIRD.

AND the font took them: let our laurels lie!  
Braid moonfern now with mystic trifoly  
Because once more Goito gets, once more,  
Sordello to itself! A dream is o'er,  
And the suspended life begins anew;  
Quiet those throbbing temples, then, subdue  
That cheek's distortion! Nature's strict  
embrace,

Putting aside the past, shall soon efface  
Its print as well—factitious humours grown  
Over the true—loves, hatreds not his own—  
And turn him pure as some forgotten vest  
Woven of painted byssus,<sup>1</sup> silkiest  
Tufting the Tyrrhene whelk's pearl-sheeted lip,  
Left welter where a trireme let it slip  
I' the sea, and vexed a satrap; so the stain  
O' the world forsakes Sordello, with its pain,  
Its pleasure: how the tinct loosening escapes,  
Cloud after cloud! Mantua's familiar shapes  
Die, fair and foul die, fading as they flit,  
Men, women, and the pathos and the wit,

<sup>1</sup> A fine cloth.

Wise speech and foolish, deeds to smile or sigh  
 For, good, bad, seemly or ignoble, die.  
 The last face glances through the eglantines,  
 The last voice murmurs, 'twixt the blossomed  
     vines,

Of Men, of that machine supplied by thought  
 To compass self-perception with, he sought  
 By forcing half himself—an insane pulse  
 Of a god's blood, on clay it could convulse,  
 Never transmute—on human sights and  
     sounds,

To watch the other half with; irksome bounds  
 It ebbs from to its source, a fountain sealed  
 Forever. Better sure be unrevealed  
 Than part revealed: Sordello well or ill  
 Is finished: then what further use of Will,  
 'Point in the prime idea not realized,  
 An oversight? inordinately prized,  
 No less, and pampered with enough of each  
 Delight to prove the whole above its reach.

"To need become all natures, yet retain  
 "The law of my own nature—to remain  
 "Myself, yet yearn . . . as if that chestnut,  
     think,

"Should yearn for this first larch-bloom crisp  
     and pink,

"Or those pale fragrant tears where zephyrs  
     stanch

"March wounds along the fretted pine-tree  
     branch!

"Will and the means to show will, great  
     and small,

"Material, spiritual,—abjure them all  
 "Save any so distinct, they may be left

"To amuse, not tempt become! and, thus  
     bereft,

"Just as I first was fashioned would I be!

"Nor, moon, is it Apollo now, but me

"Thou visitest to comfort and befriend!

"Swim thou into my heart, and there an end,

"Since I possess thee!—nay, thus shut mine  
     eyes

"And know, quite know, by this heart's fall  
     and rise,

"When thou dost bury thee in clouds, and  
     when

"Out-standest: wherefore practise upon men

"To make that plainer to myself?"

Slide here

Over a sweet and solitary year  
 Wasted; or simply notice change in him—  
 How eyes, once with exploring bright, grew  
     dim

And satiate with receiving. Some distress  
 Was caused, too, by a sort of consciousness  
 Under the imbecility,—nought kept  
 That down; he slept, but was aware he slept,  
 So, frustrated: as who brainsick made pact  
 Erst with the overhanging cataract

To deafen him, yet still distinguished plain  
 His own blood's measured clicking at his brain.

To finish. One declining Autumn day—  
 Few birds about the heaven chill and grey,  
 No wind that cared trouble the tacit woods—  
 He sauntered home complacently, their moods  
 According, his and nature's. Every spark  
 Of Mantua life was trodden out; so dark  
 The embers, that the Troubadour, who sung  
 Hundreds of songs, forgot, its trick his tongue,  
 Its craft his brain, how either brought to pass  
 Singing at all; that faculty might class  
 With any of Apollo's now. The year  
 Began to find its early promise sere  
 As well. Thus beauty vanishes; thus stone  
 Outlingers flesh: nature's and his youth gone,  
 They left the world to you, and wished you  
     joy.

When, stopping his benevolent employ,  
 A presage shuddered through the welkin;  
     harsh

The earth's remonstrance followed. 'Twas  
     the marsh

Gone of a sudden. Mincio, in its place,  
 Laughed, a broad water, in next morning's  
     face,

And, where the mists broke up immense and  
     white

If the steady wind, burned like a spilth of light  
 Out of the crashing of a myriad stars.

And here was nature, bound by the same bars  
 Of fate with him!

"No! youth once gone is gone:  
 "Deeds, let escape, are never to be done.

"Leaf-fall and grass-spring for the year;  
     for us—

"Oh forfeit I unalterably thus

'My chance? nor two lives wait me, this to spend,  
 "Learning save that? Nature has time, may mend  
 'Mistake, she knows occasion will recur;  
 'Landslip or seabreach, how affects it her  
 'With her magnificent resources?—I  
 'Must perish once and perish utterly.  
 'Not any strollings now at even-close  
 'Down the field-path, Sordello! by thorn-rows  
 'Alive with lamp-flies, swimming spots of fire  
 'And dew, outlining the black cypress' spire  
 'She waits you at, Elys, who heard you first  
 'Woo her, the snow-month through, but ere she durst  
 'Answer 'twas April. Linden-flower-time-long  
 'Here eyes were on the ground; 'tis July, strong  
 'Now; and because white dust-clouds overwhelm  
 'The woodside, here or by the village elm  
 'That holds the moon, she meets you, somewhat pale,  
 'But letting you lift up her coarse flax veil  
 'And whisper (the damp little hand in yours)  
 'Of love, heart's love, your heart's love that endures  
 'Till death. Tush! No mad mixing with the rout  
 'Of haggard ribalds wandering about  
 'The hot torchlit wine-scented island-house  
 'Where Friedrich holds his wickedest carouse,  
 'Parading,—to the gay Palermitans,  
 'Soft Messinese, dusk Saracenic clans  
 'Nuocera holds,—those tall grave dazzling Norse,  
 'High-cheeked, lank-haired, toothed whiter than the morse,  
 'Queens of the caves of jet stalactites,  
 'He sent his barks to fetch through icy seas,  
 'The blind night seas without a saving star,  
 'And here in snowy birdskin robes they are,  
 'Sordello!—here, mollitious alcoves gilt  
 'Superb as Byzant domes that devils built!  
 'Ah, Byzant, there again! no chance to go  
 'Ever like august cheery Dandolo,

"Worshipping hearts about him for a wall,  
 "Conducted, blind eyes, hundred years and all,  
 "Through vanquished Byzant where friends note for him  
 "What pillar, marble massive, sardius' slim,  
 "'Twere fittest he transport to Venice' Square—  
 "Flattered and promised life to touch them there  
 "Soon, by those fervid sons of senators!  
 "No more lives, deaths, loves, hatreds, peaces, wars!  
 "Ah, fragments of a whole ordained to be,  
 "Points in the life I waited! what are ye  
 "But roundels of a ladder which appeared  
 "Awhile the very platform it was reared  
 "To lift me on?—that happiness I find  
 "Proofs of my faith in, even in the blind  
 "Instinct which bade forego you all unless  
 "Ye led me past yourselves. Ay, happiness  
 "Awaited me; the way life should be used  
 "Was to acquire, and deeds like you conducted  
 "To teach it by a self-revelment, deemed  
 "Life's very use, so long! Whatever seemed  
 "Progress to that, was pleasure; aught that stayed  
 "My reaching it—no pleasure. I have laid  
 "The ladder down; I climb not; still, aloft  
 "The platform stretches! Bliss strong and soft,  
 "I dared not entertain, elude me; yet  
 "Never of what they promised could I get  
 "A glimpse till now! The common sort, the crowd,  
 "Exist, perceive; with Being are endowed,  
 "However slight, distinct from what they see,  
 "However bounded; Happiness must be,  
 "To feed the first by gleanings from the last,  
 "Attain its qualities, and slow or fast  
 "Become what they behold; such peace-in-strife,  
 "By transmutation, is the Use of Life,  
 "The Alien turning Native to the soul  
 "Or body—which instructs me; I am whole  
 "There and demand a Palma; had the world  
 "Been from my soul to a like distance hurled,

"Twere Happiness to make it one with me:  
 "Whereas I must, ere I begin to Be,  
 "Include a world, in flesh, I comprehend  
 "In spirit now; and this done, what's to blend  
 "With? Nought is Alien in the world—  
     my Will  
 "Owns all already; yet can turn it—still  
 "Less—Native, since my Meansto correspond  
 "With Will are so unworthy, 'twas my  
     bond  
 "To tread the very joys that tantalize  
 "Most now, into a grave, never to rise.  
 "I die then! Will the rest agree to die?  
 "Next Age or no? Shall its Sordello try  
 "Clue after clue, and catch at last the clue  
 "I miss?—that's underneath my finger too,  
 "Twice, thrice a day, perhaps,—some yearning  
     traced  
 "Deeper, some petty consequence embraced  
 "Closer! Why fled I Mantua, then?—com-  
     plained  
 "So much my Will was fettered, yet remained  
 "Content within a tether half the range  
 "I could assign it?—able to exchange  
 "My ignorance (I felt) for knowledge, and  
 "Idle because I could thus understand—  
 "Could e'en have penetrated to its core  
 "Our mortal mystery, yet—fool—fornore,  
 "Preferred elaborating in the dark  
 "My casual stuff, by any wretched spark  
 "Born of my predecessors, though one stroke  
 "Of mine had brought the flame forth!  
     Mantua's yoke,  
 "My minstrel's-trade, was to behold man-  
     kind,—  
 "My own concern was just to bring my mind  
 "Behold, just extricate, for my acquist,  
 "Each object suffered stifle in the mist  
 "Which hazard, custom, blindness interpose  
 "Betwixt things and myself."

Whereat he rose.

The level wind carried above the firs  
 Clouds, the irrevocable travellers,  
 Onward.

"Pushed thus into a drowsy copse,  
 "Arms twine about my neck, each eyelid drops  
 "Under a humid finger; while there fleets,  
 "Outside the screen, a pageant time repeats

"Never again! To be deposed, immured  
 "Clandestinely—still petted, still assured  
 "To govern were fatiguing work—the Sight  
 "Fleeting meanwhile! 'Tis noontide: wreak  
     ere night  
 "Somehow my will upon it, rather! Slake  
 "This thirst somehow, the poorest impress  
     take  
 "That serves! A blasted bud displays you,  
     torn,  
 "Faint rudiments of the full flower unborn;  
 "But who divines what glory coats o'erclasp  
 "Of the bulb dormant in the mummy's grasp  
 "Taurello sent?" . . .

"Taurello? Palma sent

"Your Trouvere," (Naddo interposing leant  
 Over the lost bard's shoulder)—"and, believe,  
 "You cannot more reluctantly receive  
 "Than I pronounce her message: we depart  
 "Together. What avail a poet's heart  
 "Verona's pomps and gauds? five blades of  
     grass  
 "Suffice him. News? Why, where your  
     marsh was,  
 "On its mud-banks smoke rises after smoke  
 "I' the valley, like a spout of hell new-broke.  
 "Oh, the world's tidings! small your thanks,  
     I guess,  
 "For them The father of our Patroness,  
 "Has played Taurello an astounding trick,  
 "Parts between Ecelin and Alberic  
 "His wealth and goes into a convent: both  
 "Wed Guelfs: the Count and Palma plighted  
     troth  
 "A week since at Verona: and they want  
 "You doubtless to contrive the marriage-  
     chant  
 "Ere Richard storms Ferrara." Then was  
     told

The tale from the beginning—how, made bold  
 By Salinguerra's absence, Guelfs had burned  
 And pillaged till he unawares returned  
 To take revenge: how Azzo and his friend  
 Were doing their endeavour, how the end  
 O' the siege was nigh, and how the Count,  
     released  
 From further care, would with his marriage-  
     feast

Inaugurate a new and better rule,  
Absorbing thus Romano.

"Shall I school

"My master," added Naddo, "and suggest  
"How you may clothe in a poetic vest  
"These doings, at Verona? Your response  
"To Palma! Wherefore jest? 'Depart at  
once?'

"A good resolve! In truth, I hardly hoped  
"So prompt an acquiescence. Have you  
groped

"Out wisdom in the wilds here?—thoughts  
may be

"Over-poetical for poetry.

"Pearl-white, you poets liken Palma's neck;

"And yet what spoils an orient like some  
speck

"Of genuine white, turning its own white  
grey?

"You take me? Curse the cicala!"

One more day,

One eve—appears Verona! Many a group,  
(You mind) instructed of the osprey's swoop  
On lynx and ounce, was gathering—Christen-  
dom

Sure to receive, whate'er the end was, from  
The evening's purpose cheer or detriment,  
Since Friedrich only waited some event  
Like this, of Ghibellins establishing  
Themselves within Ferrara, ere, as King  
Of Lombardy, he'd glad descend there,  
wage

Old warfare with the Pontiff, disengage  
His barons from the burghers, and restore  
The rule of Charlemagne, broken of yore  
By Hildebrand.

I' the palace, each by each,  
Sordello sat and Palma: little speech  
At first in that dim closet, face with face  
(Despite the tumult in the market-place)  
Exchanging quick low laughter: now would  
rush

Word upon word to meet a sudden flush,  
A look left off, a shifting lips' surmise—  
But for the most part their two histories  
Ran best thro' the locked fingers and linked  
arms.

And so the night flew on with its alarms

VOL. I.

Till in burst one of Palma's retinue;

"Now, Lady!" gasped he. Then arose the  
two.

And leaned into Verona's air, dead-still.  
A balcony lay black beneath until  
Out, 'mid a gush of torchfire, grey-haired men  
Came on it and harangued the people: then  
Sea-like that people surging to and fro  
Shouted, "Hale forth the carroch—trumpets,  
ho,

"A flourish! Run it in the ancient grooves!

"Back from the bell! Hammer—that whom  
behoes

"May hear the League is up! Peal—learn  
who list,

"Verona means not first of towns break tryst

"To-morrow with the League!"

Enough. Now turn—

Over the eastern cypresses: discern!

Is any beacon set a-glimmer?

Range

The air with shouts that overpowered the clang  
Of the incessant carroch, even: "Haste—  
"The candle's at the gateway! ere it waste,  
"Each soldier stand beside it, armed to march  
"With Tiso Sampier through the eastern  
arch!"

Ferrara's succoured, Palma!

Once again

They sat together; some strange thing in train  
To say, so difficult was Palma's place  
In taking, with a coy fastidious grace  
Like the bird's flutter ere it fix and feed.  
But when she felt she held her friend indeed  
Safe, she threw back her curls, began implant  
Her lessons; telling of another want  
Goito's quiet nourished than his own;  
Palma—to serve him—to be served, alone  
Importing; Agnes' milk so neutralized  
The blood of Ecelin. Nor be surprised  
If, while Sordello fain had captive led  
Nature, in dream was Palma subjected  
To some out-soul, which dawned not though  
she pined  
Delaying, till its advent, heart and mind  
Their life. "How dared I let expand the  
force

Within me, till some out-soul, whose resource

- 'It grew for, should direct it? Every law  
 'Of life, its every fitness, every flaw,  
 'Must One determine whose corporeal shape  
 'Would be no other than the prime escape  
 'And revelation to me of a Will  
 'Orb-like o'ershrouded and inscrutable  
 'Above, save at the point which, I should  
 know,  
 'Shone that myself, my powers, might over-  
 flow  
 'So far, so much; as now it signified  
 'Which earthly shape it henceforth chose my  
 guide,  
 'Whose mortal lip selected to declare  
 'Its oracles, what fleshly garb would wear  
 '—The first of intimations, whom to love;  
 'The next, how love him. Seemed that orb,  
 above  
 'The castle-covert and the mountain-close,  
 'Slow in appearing?—if beneath it rose  
 'Cravings, aversions,—did our green pre-  
 cinct  
 'Take pride in me, at unawares distinct  
 'With this or that endowment,—how, re-  
 pressed  
 "At once, such jetting power shrank to the  
 rest!  
 "Was I to have a chance touch spoil me, leave  
 "My spirit thence unfitted to receive  
 "The consummating spell?—that spell so  
 near  
 'Moreover! 'Waits he not the waking  
 year?  
 "His almond-blossoms must be honey-ripe  
 "By this; to welcome him, fresh runnels  
 stripe  
 "The thawed ravines; because of him, the  
 wind  
 "Walks like a herald. I shall surely find  
 "Him now!  
 "And chief, that earnest April morn  
 "Of Richard's Love-court, was it time, so  
 worn  
 "And white my cheek, so idly my blood  
 beat,  
 "Sitting that morn beside the Lady's feet  
 "And saying as she prompted; till outburst  
 "One face from all the faces. Not then first
- 'I knew it; where in maple chamber glooms,  
 'Crowned with what sanguine-heart pome-  
 granate blooms,  
 'Advanced it ever? Men's acknowledg-  
 ment  
 'Sanctioned my own: 'twas taken, Palma's  
 bent,—  
 'Sordello,—recognized, accepted. "Dumb  
 'Sat she still scheming. Ecelin would come  
 'Gaunt, scared, 'Cesano baffles me,' he'd  
 say:  
 "Better I fought it out, my father's way!  
 "Strangle Ferrara in its drowning flats,  
 "And you and your Taurello yonder!—  
 what's  
 "Romano's business there?' An hour's  
 concern  
 'To cure the froward Chief!—induce return  
 'As heartened from those overmeaning eyes,  
 'Wound up to persevere,—his enterprise  
 'Marked out anew, its exigent of wit  
 'Apportioned,—she at liberty to sit  
 'And scheme against the next emergence, I—  
 'To covet her Taurello-sprite, made fly  
 'Or fold the wing—to con your horoscope  
 'For leave command those steely shafts  
 shoot ope,  
 'Or straight assuage their blinding eagerness  
 'In blank smooth snow. What semblance  
 of success  
 'To any of my plans for making you  
 'Mine and Romano's? Break the first wall  
 through,  
 'Tread o'er the ruins of the Chief, supplant  
 'His sons beside, still, vainest were the  
 vaunt:  
 'There, Salinguerra would obstruct me  
 sheer,  
 'And the insuperable Tuscan, here,  
 'Stay me! But one wild eve that Lady died  
 'In her lone chamber: only I beside:  
 "Taurello far at Naples, and my sire  
 "At Padua, Ecelin away in ire  
 "With Alberic. She held me thus—a clutch  
 "To make our spirits as our bodies touch—  
 "And so began flinging the past up, heaps  
 "Of uncouth treasure from their sunless sleeps

- "Within her soul; deeds rose along with dreams,  
 "Fragments of many miserable schemes,  
 "Secrets, more secrets, then—no, not the last—  
 "Mongst others, like a casual trick o' the past,  
 "How . . . ay, she told me, gathering up her face,  
 "All left of it, into one arch-grimace  
 "To die with . . .  
 "Friend, 'tis gone! but not the fear  
 "Of that fell laughing, heard as now I hear.  
 "Nor faltered voice, nor seemed her heart grow weak  
 "When i' the midst abrupt she ceased to speak  
 "—Dead, as to serve a purpose, mark it!—for in  
 "Rushed o' the very instant Ecelin  
 "(How summoned, who divines?)—looking as if  
 "He understood why Adelaide lay stiff  
 "Already in my arms; for 'Girl, how must  
 "'I manage Este in the matter thrust  
 "'Upon me, how unravel your bad coil?—  
 "'Since' (he declared) 'tis on your brow—a soil  
 "'Like hers there!' then in the same breath,  
 'he lacked:  
 "'No counsel after all, had signed no pact  
 "'With devils, nor was treason here or there,  
 "'Goito or Vicenza, his affair:  
 "'He buried it in Adelaide's deep grave,  
 "'Would begin life afresh. now,—would not slave  
 "'For any Friedrich's nor Taurello's sake!  
 "'What bootied him to meddle or to make  
 "'In Lombardy?' And afterward I knew  
 "The meaning of his promise to undo  
 "All she had done—why marriages were made,  
 "New friendships entered on, old followers paid  
 "With curses for their pains,—new friends' amaze  
 "At height, when, passing out by Gate Saint Blaive,  
 "He stopped short in Vicenza, bent his head  
 "Over a friar's neck,—'had vowed,' he said,  
 "Long since, nigh thirty years, because his wife  
 "And child were saved there, to bestow his life  
 "On God, his gettings on the Church.  
 "Exiled  
 "Within Goito, still one dream beguiled  
 "My days and nights; 'twas found, the orb I sought  
 "To serve, those glimpses came of Fomalhaut,  
 "No other: but how serve it?—authorize  
 "You and Romano mingle destinies?  
 "And straight Romano's angel stood beside  
 "Me who had else been Boniface's bride,  
 "For Salinguerra 'twas, with neck low bent  
 "And voice lightened to music, (as he meant  
 "To learn, not teach me,) who withdrew the pall  
 "From the dead past and straight revived it all,  
 "Making me see how first Romano waxed,  
 "Wherefore he waned now, why, if I relaxed  
 "My grasp (even I!) would drop a thing effete,  
 "Frayed by itself, unequal to complete  
 "Its course, and counting every step astray  
 "A gain so much. Romano, every way  
 "Stable, a Lombard House now—why start back  
 "Into the very outset of its track?  
 "This patching principle which late allied  
 "Our House with other Houses—what beside  
 "Concerned the apparition, the first Knight  
 "Who followed Conrad hither in such plight  
 "His utmost wealth was summed in his one steed?  
 "For Ecelo, that prowler, was decreed  
 "A task, in the beginning hazardous  
 "To him as ever task can be to us;  
 "But did the weather-beaten thief despair  
 "When first our crystal cincture of warm air  
 "That binds the Trevisan,—as its spice-belt  
 "(Crusaders say) the tract where Jesus dwelt,—  
 "Furtive he pierced, and Este was to face—  
 "Despaired Saponian strength of Lombard grace?  
 "Tried he at making surer aught made sure,  
 "Maturing what already was mature?



"No; his heart prompted Ecelo, 'Confront  
 "Este, inspect yourself. What's nature?  
 Wont.

"Discard three-parts your nature, and adopt  
 "The rest as an advantage!' Old strength  
 propped

"The man who first grew Podestà among  
 "The Vicentines, no less than, while there  
 sprung

"His palace up in Padua like a threat,  
 "Their noblest spied a grace, unnoticed yet  
 "In Conrad's crew. Thus far the object  
 gained,

"Romano was established—has remained—  
 "For are you not Italian, truly peers

"With Este? *Azzo* better soothes our ears  
 "Than *Alberici*? or is this lion's-crane

"From over-mounts' (this yellow hair of  
 mine)

"So weak a graft on Agnes Este's stock?"  
 "(Thus went he on with something of a mock)

"Wherefore recoil, then, from the very fate  
 "Conceded you, refuse to imitate

"Your model farther? Este long since left  
 "Being mere Este: as a blade its heft,

"Este required the Pope to further him:  
 "And you, the Kaiser—whom your father's  
 whim

"Foregoes or, better, never shall forego  
 "If Palma dare pursue what Ecelo

"Commenced, but Ecelin desists from: just  
 "As Adelaide of Susa could intrust

"Her donative,—her Piedmont given the  
 Pope,

"Her Alpine-pass for him to shut or ope  
 "Twixt France and Italy,—to the superb

"Matilda's perfecting,—so, lest aught curb  
 "Our Adelaide's great counter-project for

"Giving her Trentine to the Emperor  
 "With passage here from Germany,—shall  
 you

"Take it,—my slender plodding talent,  
 too!"

"—Urged me Taurello with his half-smile.

"He

"As Patron of the scattered family  
 "Conveyed me to his Mantua, kept in bruit

"Azzo's alliances and Richard's suit

"Until, the Kaiser excommunicate,  
 "Nothing remains,' Taurello said, 'but  
 wait

"Some rash procedure: Palma was the link,  
 "As Agnes' child, between us, and they  
 shrink

"From losing Palma: judge if we advance,  
 "Your father's method, your inheritance!"

"The day I was betrothed to Boniface  
 "At Padua by Taurello's self, took place

"The outrage of the Ferrarese: again,  
 "The day I sought Verona with the train

"Agreed for,—by Taurello's policy  
 "Convicting Richard of the fault, since we

"Were present to annul or to confirm,—  
 "Richard, whose patience had outstayed its  
 term,

"Quitted Verona for the siege.

"And now  
 "What glory may engird Sordello's brow

"Through this? A month since at Olierio  
 slunk

"All that was Ecelin into a monk;  
 "But how could Salinguerra so forget

"His liege of thirty years as grudge even yet  
 "One effort to recover him? He sent

"Forthwith the tidings of this last event  
 "To Ecelin—declared that he, despite

"The recent folly, recognized his right  
 "To order Salinguerra: 'Should he wring

"Its uttermost advantage out, or fling  
 "This chance away? Or were his sons now

Head

"O' the House?' Through me Taurello's  
 missive sped;

"My father's answer will by me return.  
 "Behold! 'For him,' he writes, 'no more  
 concern

"With strife than, for his children, with  
 fresh plots

"Of Friedrich. Old engagements out he  
 blots

"For aye: Taurello shall no more subserve,  
 "Nor Ecelin impose.' Lest this unnerve

"Taurello at this juncture, slack his grip  
 "Of Richard, suffer the occasion slip,—

"I, in his sons' default (who, mating with  
 "Este, forsake Romano as the frith

"Its mainsea for that firmland, sea makes head

"Against) I stand, Romano,—in their stead

"Assume the station they desert, and give

"Still, as the Kaiser's representative,

"Taurello licence he demands. Midnight—

"Morning—by noon to-morrow, making light

"Of the League's issue, we, in some gay weed

"Like yours, disguised together, may precede

"The arbitrators to Ferrara : reach

"Him, let Taurello's noble accents teach

"The rest ! Then say if I have misconceived

"Your destiny, too readily believed

"The Kaiser's cause your own !"

And Palma's fled.

Though no affirmative disturbs the head,

A dying lamp-flame sinks and rises o'er,

Like the alighted planet Pollux wore,

Until, morn breaking, he resolves to be

Gate-vein of this heart's blood of Lombardy,

Soul of this body—to wield this aggregate

Of souls and bodies, and so conquer fate

Though he should live—a centre of disgust

Even—apart, core of the outward crust

He vivifies, assimilates. For thus

I bring Sordello to the rapturous

Exclaim at the crowd's cry, because one round

Of life was quite accomplished ; and he found

Not only that a soul, whate'er its might,

Is insufficient to its own delight,

Both in corporeal organs and in skill

By means of such to body forth its Will—

And, after, insufficient to apprise

Men of that Will, oblige them recognize

The Hid by the Revealed—but that,—the last

Nor lightest of the struggles overpast,—

Will, he bade abdicate, which would not void

The throne, might sit there, suffer he enjoyed

Mankind, a varied and divine array

Incapable of homage, the first way,

Nor fit to render incidentally

Tribute connived at, taken by the by,

In joys. If thus with warrant to rescind

The ignominious exile of mankind—

Whose proper service, ascertained intact

As yet, (to be by him themselves made act,  
Not watch Sordello acting each of them)

Was to secure—if the true diadem

Seemed imminent while our Sordello drank

The wisdom of that golden Palma,—thank

Verona's Lady in her citadel

Founded by Gaulish Brennus, legends tell :

And truly when she left him, the sun reared

A head like the first clamberer's who peered

A-top the Capitol, his face on flame.

With triumph, triumphing till Manlius came.

Nor slight too much my rhymes—that spring,  
dispread,

Dispart, disperse, lingering overhead

Like an escape of angels ! Rather say,

My transcendental platan !<sup>1</sup> mounting gay

(An archimage so courts a novice-queen)

With tremulous silvered trunk, whence  
branches sheen

Laugh out, thick-foliaged next, a-shiver soon  
With coloured buds, then glowing like the  
moon

Onc mild flame,—last a pause, a burst, and all

Her ivory limbs are smothered by a fall,

Bloom-flinders and fruit-sparkles and leaf-  
dust,

Ending the weird work prosecuted just

For her amusement ; he decrepit, stark,

Dozes ; her uncontrolled delight may mark

Apart—

Yet not so, surely never so

Only, as good my soul were suffered go .

O'er the lagune : forth fare thee, put aside --

Entrance thy synod, as a god may glide

Out of the world he fills, and leave it mute

For myriad ages as we men compute,

Returning into it without a break

O' the consciousness ! They sleep, and I  
awake

O'er the lagune, being at Venice.

Note,

In just such songs as Eglamor (say) wrote

With heart and soul and strength, for he  
believed

Himself achieving all to be achieved

<sup>1</sup> Plane-tree.

Forth as she'd plant it on a pedestal,  
 Now, i' the silent city, seems to fall  
 Toward me—no wreath, only a lip's unrest  
 To quiet, surcharged eyelids to be pressed  
 I'ry of their tears upon my bosom. Strange  
 Such sad chance should produce in thee such  
 change,  
 My love! Warped souls and bodies! yet  
 God spoke  
 Of right-hand, foot and eye—selects our yoke,  
 Sordello, as your poetship may find!  
 So, sleep upon my shoulder, child, nor mind  
 Their foolish talk; we'll manage reinstate  
 Your old worth; ask moreover, when they  
 prate  
 Of evil men past hope, "Don't each contrive,  
 "Despite the evil you abuse, to live?—  
 "Keeping, each losel, through a maze of lies,  
 "His own conceit of truth? to which he hies  
 "By obscure windings, tortuous, if you will,  
 "But to himself not inaccessible;  
 "He sees truth, and his lies are for the crowd  
 "Who cannot see; some fancied right allowed  
 "His vilest wrong, empowered the losel  
 clutch  
 "One pleasure from a multitude of such  
 "Denied him." Then assert, "All men  
 appear  
 "To think all better than themselves, by here  
 "Trusting a crowd they wrong; but really,"  
 say,  
 "All men think all men stupider than they,  
 "Since, save themselves, no other compre-  
 hends  
 "The complicated scheme to make amends  
 "—Evil, the scheme by which, thro' Igno-  
 rance,  
 "Good labours to exist." A slight ar-  
 vance,—  
 Merely to find the sickness you die through,  
 And nought beside! but if one can't eschew  
 One's portion in the common lot, at least  
 One can avoid an ignorance increased  
 Tenfold by dealing out hint after hint  
 How nought were like dispensing without stint  
 The water of life—so easy to dispense  
 Beside, when one has probed the centre  
 whence

Commotion's born—could tell you of it all!  
 "—Meantime, just meditate my madrigal  
 "O' the mugwort that conceals a dewdrop  
 safe!"

What, dullard? we and you in smothery chafe,  
 Babes, baldheads, stumbled thus far into Zin  
 The Horrid,<sup>1</sup> getting neither out nor in,  
 A hungry sun above us, sands that bung  
 Our throats,—each dromedary lolls a tongue,  
 Each camel churns a sick and frothy chap,  
 And you, 'twixt tales of Potiphar's mishap,  
 And sonnets on the earliest ass that spoke,  
 —Remark, you wonder any one needs choke  
 With founts about! Potsherd him, Gibeonites!  
 While awkwardly enough your Moses smites  
 The rock, though he forego his Promised Land  
 Thereby, have Satan claim his carcass, and  
 Figure as Metaphysic Poet . . . ah,  
 Mark ye the dim first ooings? Meribah!<sup>2</sup>  
 Then, quaffing at the fount my courage gained,  
 Recall—not that I prompt ye—who ex-  
 plained . . .

"Presumptuous!" interrupts one. You,  
 not I

'Tis brother, marvel at and magnify  
 Such office: "office," quotha? can we get  
 To the beginning of the office yet?  
 What do we here? simply experiment  
 Each on the other's power and its intent  
 When elsewhere tasked,—if this of mine were  
 trucked

For yours to either's good,—we watch con-  
 struct,

In short, an engine: with a finished one,  
 What it can do, is all,—nought, how 'tis done.  
 But this of ours yet in probation, dusk  
 A kernel of strange wheelwork through its husk  
 Grows into shape by quarters and by halves;  
 Remark this tooth's spring, wonder what that  
 valve's

Fall bodes, presume each faculty's device,  
 Make out each other more or less precise—  
 The scope of the whole engine's to be proved;  
 We die: which means to say, the whole's  
 removed,

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah xlii. 21, 22.

<sup>2</sup> Waters of Meribah, that is, of Strife, See  
 Exodus xvii. 7.

Dismounted wheel by wheel, this complex  
gin,—

To be set up anew elsewhere; begin  
A task indeed, but with a clearer clime  
Than the murk lodgment of our building-time.  
And then, I grant you, it behoves forget  
How 'tis done—all that must amuse us yet  
So long: and, while you turn upon your heel,  
Pray that I be not busy slitting steel  
Or shredding brass, camped on some virgin  
shore

Under a cluster of fresh stars, before  
I name a tithe o' the wheels I trust to do!

So occupied, then, are we: hitherto,  
At present, and a weary while to come,  
The office of ourselves,—nor blind nor dumb,  
And seeing somewhat of man's state,—has  
been,

For the worst of us, to say they so have seen;  
For the better, what it was they saw; the  
best

Impart the gift of seeing to the rest:

"So that I glance," says such an one,  
"around,

"And there's no face but I can read profound  
"Disclosures in; this stands for hope, that—  
fear,

"And for a speech, a deed in proof, look  
here!

"Stoop, else the strings of blossom, where  
the nuts

"O'erarch, will blind thee! Said I not?  
She shuts

"Both eyes this time, so close the hazels  
meet!

"Thus, prisoned in the Piombi, I repeat

"Events one rove occasioned, o'er and o'er,

"Putting 'twixt me and madness evermore

"Thy sweet shape, Zanze! Therefore  
stoop!

"That's truth!"

"(Adjudge you) 'the incarcerated youth

"Would say that!"

"Youth? Plara the bard? Set down

"That Plara spent his youth in a grim town

"Whose cramped ill-featured streets huddled  
about

"The minster for protection, never out

"Of its black belfry's shade and its bells' roar.

"The brighter shone the suburb,—all the  
more

"Ugly and absolute that shade's reproof

"Of any chance escape of joy,—some roof,

"Taller than they, allowed the rest detect,—

"Before the sole permitted laugh (suspect

"Who could, 'twas meant for laughter, that  
ploughed cheek's

"Repulsive gleam!) when the sun stopped  
both peaks

"Of the cleft belfry like a fiery wedge,

"Then sank, a huge flame on its socket edge,

"With leavings on the grey glass oriel-pane

"Ghastly some minutes more. No fear of  
rain—

"The minster minded that! in heaps the dust

"Lay everywhere. This town, the minster's  
trust,

"Held Plara; who, its denizen, bade hail

"In twice twelve sonnets, Tempe's dewy  
vale."

"Exact the town, the minster and the  
street!"

"As all mirth triumphs, sadness means  
defeat:

"Lust triumphs and is gay, Love's triumphed  
o'er

"And sad: but Lucio's sad. I said before,

"Love's sad, not Lucio; one who loves may be

"As gay his love has leave to hope, as he

"Downcast that lusts' desire escapes the  
springe:

"Tis of the mood itself I speak, what tinge

"Determines it, else colourless,—or mirth,

"Or melancholy, as from heaven or earth."

"Ay, that's the variation's gist!"

"Indeed?"

"Thus far advanced in safety then, proceed!

"And having seen too what I saw, be bold

"And next encounter what I do behold

"(That's sure) but bid you take on trust!"

Attack

The use and purpose of such sights! Alack,

Not so unwisely does the crowd dispense

On Salinguerras praise in preference

To the Sordellos: men of action, these!

Who, seeing just as little as you please.

Yet turn that little to account,—engage  
 With, do not gaze at,—carry on, a stage,  
 The work o' the world, not merely make report  
 The work existed ere their day! In short,  
 When at some future no-time a brave band  
 Sees, using what it sees, then shake my hand  
 In heaven, my brother! Meanwhile where's  
 the hurt

Of keeping the Makers-see on the alert,  
 At whose defection mortals stare aghast  
 As though heaven's bounteous windows were  
 slammed fast

Incontinent? Whereas all you, beneath,  
 Should scowl at, bruise their lips and break  
 their teeth

Who ply the pullies, for neglecting you:  
 And therefore have I moulded, made anew  
 A Man, and give him to be turned and tried,  
 Be angry with or pleased at. On your side,  
 Have ye times, places, actors of your own?  
 Try them upon Sordello when full-grown,  
 And then—ah then! If Hercules first  
 parched

His foot in Egypt only to be marched  
 A sacrifice for Jove with pomp to suit,  
 What chance have I? The demigod was mute  
 Till, at the altar, where time out of mind  
 Such guests became oblations, chaplets  
 twined

His forehead long enough, and he began  
 Slaying the slayers, nor escaped a man.  
 Take not affront, my gentle audience! whom  
 No Hercules shall make his hecatomb,  
 Believe, nor from his brows your chaplet  
 rend—

That's your kind suffrage, yours, my patron-  
 friend,

Whose great verse blares unintermittent on  
 Like your own trumpeter at Marathon,—  
 You who, Platæa and Salamis being scant,  
 Put up with Ætna for a stimulant—  
 And did well, I acknowledged, as he loomed  
 Over the midland sea last month, presumed  
 Long, lay demolished in the blazing West  
 At eve, while towards him tilting cloudlets  
 pressed

Like Persian ships at Salamis. Friend, wear  
 A crest proud as desert while I declare

Had I a flawless ruby fit to wring  
 Tears of its colour from that painted king<sup>1</sup>  
 Who lost it, I would, for that smile which  
 went

To my heart, fling it in the sea, content,  
 Wearing your verse in place, an amulet  
 Sovereign against all passion, wear and fret!  
 My English Eyebright, if you are not glad  
 That, as I stopped my task awhile, the sad  
 Dishevelled form, wherein I put mankind  
 To come at times and keep my pact in mind,  
 Renewed me,—hear no crickets in the hedge,  
 Nor let a glowworm spot the river's edge  
 At home, and may the summer showers gush  
 Without a warning from the missel thrush!  
 So, to our business, now—the fate of such  
 As find our common nature—overmuch  
 Despised because restricted and unfit  
 To bear the burthen they impose on it—  
 Cling when they would discard it; craving  
 strength

To leap from the allotted world, at length  
 They do leap,—flounder on without a term,  
 Each a god's germ, doomed to remain a germ  
 In unexpanded infancy, unless . . .  
 But that's the story—dull enough, confess!  
 There might be fitter subjects to allure;  
 Still, neither misconceive my portraiture  
 Nor undervalue its adornments quaint:  
 What seems a fiend perchance may prove a  
 saint.

Ponder a story ancient pens transmit,  
 Then say if you condemn me or acquit.  
 John the Beloved, banished Antioch  
 For Patmos, bade collectively his flock  
 Farewell, but set apart the closing eve  
 To comfort those his exile most would grieve,  
 He knew: a touching spectacle, that house  
 In motion to receive him! Xanthus' spouse  
 You missed, made panther's meat a month  
 since; but

Xanthus himself (his nephew 'twas, they shut  
 'Twixt boards and sawed asunder) Polycarp,  
 Soft Charicle, next year no wheel could warp  
 To swear by Caesar's fortune, with the rest  
 Were ranged; thro' whom the grey disciple

<sup>1</sup> Polycrates of Samos.

Busily blessing right and left, just stopped  
To pat one infant's curls, the hangman cropped  
Soon after, reached the portal. On its hinge  
The door turns and he enters: what quick  
twinge

Ruins the smiling mouth, those wide eyes fix  
Whereon, why like some spectral candle-  
stick's

Branch the disciple's arms? Dead swooned  
he, woke

Anon, heaved sigh, made shift to gasp,  
heart-broke,

"Get thee behind me, Satan! Have I toiled  
"To no more purpose? Is the gospel foiled  
"Here too, and o'er my son's, my Xanthus'  
hearth,

"Portrayed with sooty garb and features  
swarth—

"Ah, Xanthus, am I to thy roof beguiled  
"To see the—the—the Devil domiciled?"  
Whereon sobbed Xanthus, "Father, 'tis your-  
self

"Installed, a limning which our utmost pelf  
"Went to procure against to-morrow's loss;  
"And that's not wy-prong, but a pastoral cross,  
"You're painted with!"

His puckered brows unfold—  
And you shall hear Sordello's story told.

#### BOOK THE FOURTH.

MEANTIME Ferrara lay in rueful case;  
The lady-city, for whose sole embrace  
Her pair of suitors struggled, felt their arms  
A brawny mischief to the fragile charms  
They tugged for—one discovering that to twist  
Her tresses twice or thrice about his wrist  
Secured a point of vantage—one, how best  
He'd parry that by planting in her breast  
His elbow spike—each party too intent  
For noticing, howe'er the battle went,  
The conqueror would but have a corpse to  
kiss.

"May Boniface be duly damned for this!"  
—Howled some old Ghibellin, as up he turned,  
From the wet heap of rubbish where they  
burned

His house, a little skull with dazzling teeth:  
"A boon, sweet Christ—let Salinguerra seethe  
"In hell for ever, Christ, and let myself  
"Be there to laugh at him!"—moaned some  
young Gulf

Stumbling upon a shrivelled hand nailed fast  
To the charred lintel of the doorway, last  
His father stood within to bid him speed.  
The thoroughfares were overrun with weed  
—Docks, quitchgrass, loathy mallows no  
man plants.

The stranger, none of its inhabitants  
Crept out of doors to taste fresh air again,  
And ask the purpose of a splendid train  
Admitted on a morning; every town  
Of the East League was come by envoy down  
To treat for Richard's ransom: here you saw  
The Vicentine, here snowy oxen draw  
The Paduan carroch, its vermilion cross  
On its white field. A-tiptoe o'er the fosse  
Looked Legate Montelungo wistfully  
After the flock of steeples he might spy  
In Este's time, gone (doubts he) long ago  
To mend the ramparts: sure the laggards know  
The Pope's as good as here! They paced  
the streets

More soberly. At last, "Taurello greets  
"The League," announced a pursuivant,—  
"will match

"Its courtesies, and labours to dispatch  
"At earliest Tito, Friedrich's Pretor, sent  
"On pressing matters from his post at Trent,  
"With Mainard Count of Tyrol,—simply waits  
"Their going to receive the delegates."  
"Tito!" Our delegates exchanged a glance,  
And, keeping the main way, admired askance  
The lazy engines of outlandish birth;  
Couched like a king each on its bank of earth—  
Arbalist, manganel<sup>1</sup> and catapult;  
While stationed by, as waiting a result,  
Lean silent gangs of mercenaries ceased  
Working to watch the strangers. "This, at  
least,

"Were better spared; he scarce presumes  
gainsay  
"The League's decision! Get our friend away

<sup>1</sup> Engine for throwing stones.

"And profit for the future : how else teach  
 "Fools 'tis not safe to stray within claw's reach  
 "Ere Salinguerra's final gasp be blown?  
 "Those mere convulsive scratches find the  
 bone.  
 "Who bade him bloody the spent osprey's  
 narc<sup>1</sup>?"

The carrochs<sup>2</sup> halted in the public square.  
 Pennons of every blazon once a-flaunt,  
 Men prattled, freelier that the crested gaunt  
 White ostrich with a horse-shoe in her beak  
 Was missing, and whoever chose might speak  
 "Ecelin" boldly out : so,—*"Ecelin*  
*"Needed his wife to swallow half the sin*  
*"And sickens by himself : the devil's whelp,*  
*"He styles his son, dwindles away, no help*  
*"From conserves, your fine triple-curdled froth*  
*"Of virgin's blood, your Venice viper-broth—*  
*"Eh? Jubilate!"—"Peace! no little word*  
*"You utter here that's not distinctly heard*  
*"Up at Oliero : he was absent sick*  
*"When we besieged Bassano—who, i' the*  
 thick

"O' the work, perceived the progress Azzo  
 made,  
 "Like Ecelin, through his witch Adelaide?  
 "She managed it so well that, night by  
 night  
 "At their bed-foot stood up a soldier-sprite,  
 "First fresh, pale by-and-by without a wound,  
 "And, when it came with eyes filmed as in  
 swound,  
 "They knew the place was taken."—  
 "Ominous  
 "That Ghibellins should get what cautious  
 "Old Redbeard sought from Azzo's sire to  
 wrench  
 "Vainly; Saint George contrived his town  
 a trench  
 "O' the marshes, an impermeable bar."  
 "—Young Ecelin is meant the tutelar  
 "Of Padua, rather; veins embrace upon  
 "His hand like Brenta and Bacchiglione."  
 What now?—"The founts! God's bread,  
 touch not a plank!  
 "A crawling hell of carrion—every tank

"Choke-full!—found out just now to Cino's  
 cost—

"The same who gave Taurello up for lost,  
 "And, making no account of fortune's freaks,  
 "Refused to budge from Padua then, but  
 sneaks

"Back now with Concorezzi : 'faith! they drag  
 "Their carroch to San Vitale, plant the flag  
 "On his own palace, so adroitly razed  
 "He knew it not; a sort of Guelf folk gazed  
 "And laughed apart; Cino disliked their air—  
 "Must pluck up spirit, show he does not  
 care—

"Seats himself on the tank's edge—will begin  
 "To hum, *za, za, Cavalier Ecelin—*  
 "A silence; he gets warmer, clinks to chime,  
 "Now both feet plough the ground, deeper  
 each time,  
 "At last, *za, za* and up with a fierce kick  
 "Comes his own mother's face caught by the  
 thick

"Grey hair about his spur!"

Which means, they lift

The covering, Salinguerra made a shift  
 To stretch upon the truth; as well avoid  
 Further disclosures; leave them thus em-  
 ployed.

Our dropping Autumn morning clears apace,  
 And poor Ferrara puts a softened face  
 On her misfortunes. Let us scale this tall  
 Huge foursquare line of red brick garden-wall  
 Bastioned within by trees of every sort  
 On three sides, slender, spreading, long and  
 short;

Each grew as it contrived, the poplar ramped,  
 The fig-tree reared itself,—but stark and  
 cramped,

Made fools of, like tamed lions : whence, on  
 the edge,  
 Running 'twixt trunk and trunk to smooth  
 one ledge

Ofshade, were shrubs inserted, warp and woof,  
 Which smothered up that variance. Scale  
 the roof

Of solid tops, and o'er the slope you slide  
 Down to a grassy space level and wide,  
 Here and there dotted with a tree, but trees  
 Of rarer leaf, each foreigner at ease,

<sup>1</sup> Nostril.

<sup>2</sup> Cars of state.

Set by itself : and in the centre spreads,  
 Borne upon three uneasy leopards' heads,  
 A laver, broad and shallow, one bright spirt  
 Of water bubbles in. The walls begirt  
 With trees leave off on either hand ; pursue  
 Your path along a wondrous avenue  
 Those walls abut on, heaped of gleamy stone,  
 With aloes leering everywhere, grey-grown  
 From many a Moorish summer : how they  
 wind

Out of the fissures ! likelier to bind  
 The building than those rusted cramps which  
 drop

Already in the eating sunshine. Stop,  
 You fleeting shapes above there ! Ah, the  
 pride

Or else despair of the whole country-side !  
 A range of statues, swarming o'er with wasps,  
 God, goddess, woman, man, the Greek  
 rough-rasps

In crumbling Naples marble—meant to look  
 Like those Messina marbles Constance took  
 Delight in, or Taurello's self conveyed  
 To Mantua for his mistress, Adelaide,—  
 A certain font with caryatides

Since cloistered at Goito ; only, these  
 Are up and doing, not abashed, a troop  
 Able to right themselves—who see you, stoop  
 Their arms o' the instant after you ! Unplucked  
 By this or that, you pass ; for they conduct  
 To terrace raised on terrace, and, between,  
 Creatures of brighter mould and braver mien  
 Than any yet, the choicest of the Isle  
 No doubt. Here, left a sullen breathing-  
 while,

Up-gathered on himself the Fighter stood  
 For his last fight, and, wiping treacherous blood  
 Out of the eyelids just held ope beneath  
 Those shading fingers in their iron sheath,  
 Steadied his strengths amid the buzz and stir  
 Of the dusk hideous amphitheatre  
 At the announcement of his over-match  
 To wind the day's diversion up, dispatch  
 The pertinacious Gaul : while, limbs on heap,  
 The Slave, no breath in her round mouth,  
 watched leap

Dart after dart forth, as her hero's car  
 Clove dizzily the solid of the war

—Let coil about his knees for pride in him.  
 We reach the farthest terrace, and the grim  
 San Pietro Palace stops us.

Such the state

Of Salinguerra's plan to emulate  
 Sicilian marvels, that his girlish wife  
 Retrude still might lead her ancient life  
 In her new home : whereat enlarged so much  
 Neighbours upon the novel princely touch  
 He took,—who here imprisons Boniface.  
 Here must the Envoys come to sue for grace ;  
 And here, emerging from the labyrinth  
 Below, Sordello paused beside the plinth  
 Of the door-pillar.

He had really left

Verona for the cornfields (a poor theft  
 From the morass) where Este's camp was  
 made ;

The Envoys' march, the Legate's cavalcade—  
 All had been seen by him, but scarce as  
 when,—

Eager for cause to stand aloof from men  
 At every point save the fantastic tie  
 Acknowledged in his boyish sophistry,—  
 He made account of such. A crowd,—he  
 meant

To task the whole of it ; each part's intent  
 Concerned him therefore : and, the more he  
 pried,

The less became Sordello satisfied  
 With his own figure at the moment. Sought  
 He respite from his task ? Descried he aught  
 Novel in the anticipated sight  
 Of all these livers upon all delight ?

This phalanx, as of myriad points combined,  
 Whereby he still had imaged the mankind  
 His youth was passed in dreams of rivalling,  
 His age—in plans to prove at least such thing  
 Had been so dreamed,—which now he must  
 impress

With his own will, effect a happiness  
 By theirs,—supply a body to his soul  
 Thence, and become eventually whole  
 With them as he had hoped to be without—  
 Made these the mankind he once raved  
 about ?

Because a few of them were notable,  
 Should all be figured worthy note ? As well



Expect to find Taurello's triple line  
Of trees a single and prodigious pine.  
Real pines rose here and there; but, close  
among,  
Thrust into and mixed up with pines, a  
throng  
Of shrubs, he saw,—a nameless common sort  
O'erpast in dreams, left out of the report  
And hurried into corners, or at best  
Admitted to be fancied like the rest.  
Reckon that morning's proper chiefs—how  
few!

And yet the people grew, the people grew,  
Grew ever, as if the many there indeed,  
More left behind and most who should  
succeed,—

Simply in virtue of their mouths and eyes,  
Petty enjoyments and huge miseries,—  
Mingled with, and made veritably great  
Those chiefs: he overlooked not Mainard's  
state

Nor Concorezzi's station, but instead  
Of stopping there, each dwindled to be head  
Of infinite and absent Tyrolese  
Or Paduans; startling all the more, that these  
Seemed passive and disposed of, uncared for,  
Yet doubtless on the whole (like Eglamor)  
Smiling; for if a wealthy man decays  
And out of store of robes must wear, all days,  
One tattered suit, alike in sun and shade,  
'Tis commonly some tarnished gay brocade  
Fit for a feast-night's flourish and no more:  
Nor otherwise poor Misery from her store  
Of looks is fain upgather, keep unfurled  
For common wear as she goes through the  
world,

The faint remainder of some worn-out smile  
Meant for a feast-night's service merely.  
While

Crowd upon crowd rose on Sordello thus,—  
(Crowds no way interfering to discuss,  
Much less dispute, life's joys with one em-  
ployed

In envying them,—or, if they aught enjoyed,  
Where lingered something indefinable  
In every look and tone, the mirth as well  
As woe, that fixed at once his estimate  
Of the result, their good or bad estate)—

Old memories returned with new effect:  
And the new body, ere he could suspect,  
Cohered, mankind and he were really fused,  
The new self seemed impatient to be used  
By him, but utterly another way  
Than that anticipated: strange to say,  
They were too much below him, more in  
thrall

Than he, the adjunct than the principal.  
What booted scattered units?—here a mind  
And there, which might repay his own to find,  
And stamp, and use?—a few, how'er august,  
If all the rest were grovelling in the dust?  
No: first a mighty equilibrium, sure,  
Should he establish, privilege procure  
For all, the few had long possessed! He  
felt

An error, an exceeding error melt:  
While he was occupied with Mantuan chants,  
Behoved him think of men, and take their  
wants,

Such as he now distinguished every side,  
As his own want which might be satisfied,—  
And, after that, think of rare qualities  
Of his own soul demanding exercise.  
It followed naturally, through no claim  
On their part, which made virtue of the aim  
At serving them, on his,—that, past retrieve,  
He felt now in their toils, theirs—nor could  
leave

Wonder how, in the eagerness to rule,  
Impress his will on mankind, he (the fool!)  
Had never even entertained the thought  
That this his last arrangement might be  
fraught

With incidental good to them as well,  
And that mankind's delight would help to  
swell

His own. So, if he sighed, as formerly  
Because the merry time of life must fleet,  
'Twas deeper now,—for could the crowds  
repeat

Their poor experiences? His hand that shook  
Was twice to be deplored. "The Legate,  
look!

"With eyes, like fresh-blown thrush-eggs on  
a thread,

"Faint-blue and loosely floating in his head,

"Large tongue, moist open mouth; and this  
long while

"That owner of the idiotic smile

"Serves them!"

He fortunately saw in time  
His fault however, and since the office prime  
Includes the secondary—best accept  
Both offices; Taurello, its adept,  
Could teach him the preparatory one,  
And how to do what he had fancied done  
Long previously, ere take the greater task.  
How render first these people happy? Ask  
The people's friends: for there must be one  
good,

One way to it—the Cause! He understood  
The meaning now of Palma; why the jar  
Else, the ado, the trouble wide and far  
Of Guefs and Ghibellins, the Lombard  
hope

And Rome's despair?—'twixt Emperor and  
Pope

The confused shifting sort of Eden tale—  
Hardihood still recurring, still to fail—  
That foreign interloping fiend, this free  
And native overbrooding deity:

Yet a dire fascination o'er the palms  
The Kaiser ruined, troubling even the calms  
Of paradise; or, on the other hand,  
The Pontiff, as the Kaisers understand,  
One snake-like cursed of God to love the  
ground,

Whose heavy length breaks in the noon pro-  
found

Some saving tree—which needs the Kaiser,  
dressed

As the dislodging angel of that pest:

Yet flames that pest bedropped, flat head, full  
fold,

With coruscating dower of dyes. "Behold

"The secret, so to speak, and master-spring

"O' the contest!—which of the two Powers  
shall bring

"Men good, perchance the most good: ay,  
it may

"Be that!—the question, which best knows  
the way."

And hereupon Count Mainard strutted past  
Out of San Pietro; never seemed the last

Of archers, slingers: and our friend began  
To recollect strange modes of serving man—  
Arbalist, catapult, brake, mangel,  
And more. "This way of theirs may,—who  
can tell?"

"Need perfecting," said he: "let all be  
solved

"At once! Taurello 'tis, the task devolved  
"On late: confront Taurello!"

And at last  
He did confront him. Scarce an hour had  
past

When forth Sordello came, older by years  
Than at his entry. Unexampled fears  
Oppressed him, and he staggered off, blind,  
mute

And deaf, like some fresh-mutilated brute,  
Into Ferrara—not the empty town  
That morning witnessed: he went up and  
down

Streets whence the veil had been stript shred  
by shred,

So that, in place of huddling with their dead  
Indoors, to answer Salinguerra's ends,  
Townfolk make shift to crawl forth, sit like  
friends

With any one. A woman gave him choice  
Of her two daughters, the infantile voice  
Or the dimpled knee, for half a chain, his  
throat

Was clasped with; but an archer knew the  
coat—

Its blue cross and eight lilies,—bade beware  
One dogging him in concert with the pair  
Though thrumming on the sleeve that hid  
his knife.

Night set in early, autumn dews were rife,  
They kindled great fires while the Leaguers'  
nass

Began at every carroch: he must pass  
Between the kneeling people. Presently  
The carroch of Verona caught his eye  
With purple trappings; silently he bent  
Over its fire, when voices violent

Began, "Affirm not whom the youth was  
like

"That struck me from the porch: I did not  
strike

"Again : I too have chestnut hair ; my kin  
 "Hate Azzo and stand up for Ecelin.  
 "Here, minstrel, drive bad thoughts away !  
     Sing ! Take  
 "My glove for guerdon !" And for that  
     man's sake  
 He turned : "A song of Eglamor's !" —  
     scarce named,  
 When, "Our Sordello's rather !" — all ex-  
     claimed ;  
 "Is not Sordello famousest for rhyme ?"  
 He had been happy to deny, this time, —  
 Profess as heretofore the aching head  
 And failing heart, — suspect that in his stead  
 Some true Apollo had the charge of them,  
 Was champion to reward or to condemn,  
 So his intolerable risk might shift  
 Or share itself ; but Naddo's precious gift  
 Of gifts, he owned, be certain ! At the close —  
 "I made that," said he to a youth who  
     rose  
 As if to hear : 'twas Palma through the band  
 Conducted him in silence by her hand.  
 Back now for Salinguerra. Tito of Trent  
 Gave place to Palma and her friend, who  
     went  
 In turn at Montelungo's visit : one  
 After the other were they come and gone, —  
 These spokesmen for the Kaiser and the Pope,  
 This incarnation of the People's hope,  
 Sordello, — all the say of each was said ;  
 And Salinguerra sat, — himself instead  
 Of these to talk with, lingered musing yet.  
 'Twas a drear vast presence-chamber roughly  
     set  
 In order for the morning's use ; full face,  
 The Kaiser's ominous sign-mark had first  
     place,  
 The crowned grim-twy-necked eagle, coarsely-  
     blackened  
 With ochre on the naked wall ; nor lacked  
 Romano's green and yellow either side ;  
 But the new token Tito brought had tried  
 The Legate's patience — nay, if Palma knew  
 What Salinguerra almost meant to do  
 Until the sight of her restored his lip  
 A certain half-smile, three months' chieftain-  
     Had banished ! Afterward, the Legate found  
     No change in him, nor asked what badge he  
     wound  
     And unwound carelessly. Now sat the Chief  
     Silent as when our couple left, whose brief  
     Encounter wrought so opportune effect  
 In thoughts he summoned not, nor would  
     reject,  
 Though time 'twas now if ever, to pause — fix  
 On any sort of ending : wiles and tricks  
 Exhausted, judge ! his charge, the crazy town,  
 Just managed to be hindered crashing  
     down —  
 His last sound troops ranged — care observed  
     to post  
 His best of the maimed soldiers innermost —  
 So much was plain enough, but somehow  
     struck  
 Him not before. And now with this strange  
     luck  
 Of Tito's news, rewarding his address  
 So well, what thought he of ? — how the  
     success  
 With Friedrich's rescript there, would either  
     hush  
 Old Ecelin's scruples, bring the manly flush  
 To his young son's white cheek, or, last,  
     exempt  
 Himself from telling what there was to  
     tempt ?  
 No : that this minstrel was Romano's last  
 Servant — himself the first ! Could he  
     contrast  
 The whole ! — that minstrel's thirty years  
     just spent  
 In doing nought, their notablest event  
 This morning's journey hither, as I told —  
 Who yet was lean, outworn and really old,  
 A stammering awkward man that scarce  
     dared raise  
 His eye before the magisterial gaze —  
 And Salinguerra with his fears and hopes  
 Of sixty years, his Emperors and Popes,  
 Cares and contrivances, yet, you would say,  
 'Twas a youth nonchalantly looked away  
 Through the embrasure northward o'er the  
     sick  
 Expostulating trees — so agile, quick

And graceful turned the head on the broad chest

Encased in pliant steel, his constant vest,  
Whence split the sun off in a spray of fire  
Across the room ; and, loosened of its tire  
Of steel, that head let breathe the comely brown

Large massive locks discoloured as if a crown  
Encircled them, so frayed the basnet<sup>1</sup> where  
A sharp white line divided clean the hair ;  
Glossy above, glossy below, it swept  
Curling and fine about a brow thus kept  
Calm, laid coat upon coat, marble and sound :  
This was the mystic mark the Tuscan found,  
Mused of, turned over books about. Square-faced,

No lion more ; two vivid eyes, enchased  
In hollows filled with many a shade and streak  
Settling from the bold nose and bearded cheek.  
Nor might the half-smile reach them that deformed

A lip supremely perfect else—unwarmed,  
Unwidened, less or more ; indifferent  
Whether on trees or men his thoughts were bent,  
Thoughts rarely, after all, in trim and train  
As now a period was fulfilled again :  
Of such, a series made his life, compressed  
In each, one story serving for the rest—  
How his life-streams rolling arrived at last  
At the barrier, whence, were it once overpast,  
They would emerge, a river to the end,—  
Gathered themselves up, paused, bade fate  
befriend,

Took the leap, hung a minute at the height,  
Then fell back to oblivion infinite :  
Therefore he smiled. Beyond stretched  
garden-grounds

Where late the adversary, breaking bounds,  
Had gained him an occasion, That above,  
That eagle, testified he could improve  
Effectually. The Kaiser's symbol lay  
Beside his rescript, a new badge by way  
Of baldric ; while,—another thing that marred  
-Alike emprise, achievement and reward,—  
Ecelin's missive was conspicuous too.

What past life did those flying thoughts  
pursue ?

<sup>1</sup> Light helmet.

As his, few names in Mantua half so old ;  
But at Ferrara, where his sires enrolled  
It latterly, the Adelardi spared  
No pains to rival them : both factions shared  
Ferrara, so that, counted out, 'twould yield  
A product very like the city's shield,  
Half black and white, or Ghibellin and Guelf  
As after Salinguerra styled himself  
And Este who, till Marchesalla died,  
(Last of the Adelardi)—never tried  
His fortune there : with Marchesalla's child  
Would pass,—could Blacks and Whites be  
reconciled  
And young Taurello wed Linguetta,—wealth  
And sway to a sole grasp. Each treats by  
stealth

Already : when the Guelfs, the Ravennese  
Arrive, assault the Pietro quarter, seize  
Linguetta, and are gone ! Men's first dismay  
Abated somewhat, hurries down, to lay  
The after indignation, Boniface,  
This Richard's father. " Learn the full dis-  
grace

" Averted, ere you blame us Guelfs, who rate  
" Your Salinguerra, your sole potentate  
" That might have been, 'mongst Este's  
valvassors—

" Ay, Azzo's—who, not privy to, abhors  
" Our step ; but we were zealous." Azzo then  
To do with ! Straight a meeting of old men :  
" Old Salinguerra dead, his heir a boy,  
" What if we change our ruler and decoy  
" The Lombard Eagle of the azure sphere  
" With Italy to build in, fix him here,  
" Settle the city's troubles in a trice ?  
" For private wrong, let public good suffice !"

In fine, young Salinguerra's staunchest friends  
Talked of the townsmen making him amends,  
Gave him a goshawk, and affirmed there was  
Rare sport, one morning, over the green grass  
A mile or so. He sauntered through the plain,  
Was restless, fell to thinking, turned again  
In time for Azzo's entry with the bride ;  
Count Boniface rode, smirking at their side ;  
" She brings him half Ferrara," whispers flew,  
" And all Ancona ! If the stripling knew !"  
Anon the stripling was in Sicily  
Where Heinrich ruled in right of Constance ; he

Was gracious nor his guest incapable ;  
 Each understood the other. So it fell,  
 One Spring, when Azzo, thoroughly at ease,  
 Had near forgotten by what precise degrees  
 He crept at first to such a downy seat,  
 The Count trudged over in a special heat  
 To bid him of God's love dislodge from each  
 Of Salinguerra's palaces,—a breach  
 Might yawn else, not so readily to shut,  
 For who was just arrived at Mantua but  
 The youngster, sword on thigh and tuft on chin,  
 With tokens for Celano, Ecelin,  
 Pistore, and the like ! Next news,—no whit  
 Do any of Ferrara's domes befit  
 His wife of Heinrich's very blood : a band  
 Of foreigners assemble, understand  
 Garden-constructing, level and surround,  
 Build up and bury in. A last news crowned  
 The consternation : since his infant's birth,  
 He only waits they end his wondrous girth  
 Of trees that link San Pietro with Tomà,  
 To visit Mantua. When the Podestà  
 Ecelin, at Vicenza, called his friend  
 Taurello thither, what could be their end  
 But to restore the Ghibellins' late Head,  
 The Kaiser helping ? He with most to dread  
 From vengeance and reprisal, Azzo, there  
 With Boniface beforehand, as aware  
 Of plots in progress, gave alarm, expelled  
 Both plotters : but the Guelfs in triumph  
 yelled  
 Too hastily. The burning and the flight,  
 And how Taurello, occupied that night  
 With Ecelin, lost wife and son, I told :  
 —Not how he bore the blow, retained his hold,  
 Got friends safe through, left enemies the worst  
 O' the fray, and hardly seemed to care at first :  
 But afterward men heard not constantly  
 Of Salinguerra's House so sure to be !  
 Though Azzo simply gained by the event  
 A shifting of his plagues—the first, content  
 To fall behind the second and estrange  
 So far his nature, suffer such a change  
 That in Romano sought he wife and child,  
 And for Romano's sake seemed reconciled  
 To losing individual life, which shrunk  
 As the other prospered—mortised in his  
 trunk ;

Like a dwarf palm which wanton Arabs foil  
 Of bearing its own proper wine and oil,  
 By grafting into it the stranger-vine,  
 Which sucks its heart out, sly and serpentine,  
 Till forth one vine-palm feathers to the root,  
 And red drops moisten the insipid fruit.  
 Once Adelaide set on,—the subtle mate  
 Of the weak soldier, urged to emulate  
 The Church's valiant women deed for deed,  
 And paragon her namesake, win the meed  
 O' the great Matilda,—soon they overbore  
 The rest of Lombardy,—not as before  
 By an instinctive truculence, but patched  
 The Kaiser's strategy until it matched  
 The Pontiff's, sought old ends by novel means  
 " Only, why is it Salinguerra screens  
 " Himself behind Romano ?—him we bade  
 " Enjoy our shine i' the front, not seek the  
 shade ! "

—Asked Heinrich, somewhat of the tardiest  
 To comprehend. Nor Philip acquiesced  
 At once in the arrangement ; reasoned, plied  
 His friend with offers of another bride,  
 A statelier function—fruitlessly : 'twas plain  
 Taurello through some weakness must remain  
 Obscure. And Otho, free to judge of both  
 —Ecelin the unready, harsh and loth,  
 And this more plausible and facile wight  
 With every point a-sparkle—chose the right,  
 Admiring how his predecessors harped  
 On the wrong man : " thus," quoth he, " wits  
 are warped  
 " By outsides ! " Carelessly, meanwhile, his  
 life

Suffered its many turns of peace and strife  
 In many lands—you hardly could surprise  
 The man ; who shamed Sordello (recognize !)  
 In this as much beside, that, unconcerned  
 What qualities were natural or earned,  
 With no ideal of graces, as they came  
 He took them, singularly well the same—  
 Speaking the Greek's own language, just be-  
 cause

Your Greek eludes you, leave the least of flaws  
 In contracts with him ; while, since Arab lore  
 Holds the stars' secret—take one trouble more  
 And master it ! 'Tis done, and now deter  
 Who may the Tuscan, once Jove trined for her,

From Friedrich's path!—Friedrich, whose pilgrimage

The same man puts aside, whom he'll engage  
To leave next year John Brienne in the lurch,

Come to Bassano, see Saint Francis' church  
And judge of Guido the Bolognian's piece  
Which,—lend Taurello credit,—rivals Greece—

Angels, with aureoles like golden quoits  
Pitched home, applauding Ecelin's exploits.  
For elegance, he strung the angelot,<sup>1</sup>  
Made rhymes thereto; for prowess, clove he not

Tiso, last siege, from crest to crupper? Why  
Detail you thus a varied mastery  
But to show how Taurello, on the watch  
For men, to read their hearts and thereby catch

Their capabilities and purposes,  
Displayed himself so far as displayed these:  
While our Sordello only cared to know  
About men as a means whereby he'd show  
Himself, and men had much or little worth  
According as they kept in or drew forth  
That self; the other's choicest instruments  
Surmised him shallow.

Meantime, malcontents  
Dropped off, town after town grew wiser.  
"How

"Change the world's face?" asked people;  
"as 'tis now

"It has been, will be ever: very fine  
"Subjecting things profane to things divine,  
"In talk! This contumacy will fatigue  
"The vigilance of Este and the League!

"The Ghibellins gain on us!"—as it happened.  
Old Azzo and old Boniface, entrapped  
By Ponte Alto, both in one month's space  
Slept at Verona: either left a brace  
Of sons—but, three years after, either's pair  
Lost Guglielm and Aldobrand its heir:  
Azzo remained and Richard—all the stay  
Of Este and Saint Boniface, at bay  
As 'twere. Then, either Ecelin grew old  
Or his brain altered—not o' the proper mould

<sup>1</sup> The lute.

For new appliances—his old palm-stock  
Endured no influx of strange strengths. He'd rock

As in a drunkenness, or chuckle low  
As proud of the completeness of his woe,  
Then weep real tears;—now make some mad onslaught

On Este, heedless of the lesson taught  
So painfully,—now cringe for peace, sue peace  
At price of past gain, bar of fresh increase  
To the fortunes of Romano. Up at last  
Rose Este, down Romano sank as fast.  
And men remarked these freaks of peace and war

Happened while Salinguerra was afar:  
Whence every friend besought him, all in vain,  
To use his old adherent's wits again.  
Not he!—"who had advisers in his sons,  
"Could plot himself, nor needed any one's  
"Advice." 'Twas Adelaide's remaining staunch

Prevented his destruction root and branch  
Forthwith; but when she died, doom fell,  
for gay  
He made alliances, gave lands away  
To whom it pleased accept them, and withdrew

For ever from the world. Taurello, who  
Was summoned to the convent, then refused  
A word at the wicket, patience thus abused,  
Promptly threw off alike his imbecile  
Ally's yoke, and his own frank, foolish smile.  
Soon a few movements of the happier sort  
Changed matters, put himself in men's report  
As heretofore; he had to fight, beside,  
And that became him ever. So, in pride  
And flushing of this kind of second youth,  
He dealt a good-will blow. Este in truth  
Lay prone—and men remembered, somewhat late,

A laughing old outrageous, stifled hate  
He bore to Este—how it would outbreak  
At times spite of disguise, like an earthquake  
In sunny weather—as that noted day  
When with his hundred friends he tried to slay

Azzo before the Kaiser's face: and how,  
On Azzo's calm refusal to allow

A liegeman's challenge, straight he too was calmed :

As if his hate could bear to lie embalmed,  
Bricked up, the moody Pharaoh, and survive  
All intermediate crumbings, to arrive  
At earth's catastrophe—'twas Este's crash  
Not Azzo's he demanded, so, no rash  
Procedure ! Este's true antagonist  
Rose out of Ecelin : all voices whist,  
All eyes were sharpened, wits predicted. He  
'Twas, leaned in the embrasure absently,  
Amused with his own efforts, now, to trace  
With his steel-sheathed forefinger Friedrich's  
face

I' the dust : but as the trees waved sere, his  
smile  
Deepened, and words expressed its thought  
crewhile.

"Ay, fairly housed at last, my old com-  
peer ?

"That we should stick together, all the year

"I kept Vicenza !—How old Boniface,

"Old Azzo caught us in its market-place,

"He by that pillar, I at this,—caught each

"In mid swing, more than fury of his speech,

"Egging the rabble on to disavow

"Allogiance to their Marquis—Bacchus, how

"They boasted ! Ecelin must turn their  
drudge,

"Nor, if released, will Salinguerra grudge

"Paying arrears of tribute due long since—

"Bacchus ! My man could promise then,  
nor wince :

"The bones-and-muscles ! Sound of wind  
and limb,

"Spoke he the set excuse I framed for him :

"And now he sits me, slaving and mute,

"Intent on chafing each starved purple foot

"Benumbed past aching with the altar  
slab :

"Will no vein throb there when some monk  
shall blab

"Spitefully to the circle of bald scalps,

"Friedrich's affirmed to be our side the  
Alps'

"—Eh, brother Lactance, brother Anaclet ?

"Sworn to abjure the world, its fume and  
fret,

"God's own now ? Drop the dormitory bar,

"Enfold the scanty grey serge scapular<sup>1</sup>

"Twice o'er the cowl to muffle memories out !

"So ! But the midnight whisper turns a  
shout,

"Eyes wink, mouths open, pulses circulate

"In the stone walls : the past, the world  
you hate

"Is with you, ambush, open field—or see

"The surging flame—we fire Vicenza—glee !

"Follow, let Pilio and Bernardo chafe !

"Bring up the Mantuans—through San  
Biagio—safe !

"Ah, the mad people waken ? Ah, they  
writhe

"And reach us ? If they block the gate ?  
No tithe

"Can pass—keep back, you Bassanese !  
The edge,

"Use the edge—shear, thrust, hew, melt  
down the wedge,

"Let out the black of those black upturned  
eyes !

"Hell—are they sprinkling fire too ? The  
blood fries

"And hisses on your brass gloves as they tear

"Those upturned faces choking with despair.

"Brave ! Slidder through the reeking gate !

'How now ?

"You six had charge of her ?' And then  
the vow

"Comes, and the foam spirts, hair's plucked,  
till one shriek

"(I hear it) and you fling—you cannotspeak—

"Your gold-flowered basnet to a man who  
haled

"The Adelaide he dared scarce view unveiled

"This morn, naked across the fire : how  
crown

"The archer that exhausted lays you down

"Your infant, smiling at the flame, and dies ?

"While one, while mine . . .

"Bacchus ! I think there lies

"More than one corpse there" (and he  
paced the room)

"—Another cinder somewhere : 'twas my  
doom

<sup>1</sup> A loose sleeveless vestment.

'Beside, my doom! If Adelaide is dead,  
'I live the same, this Azzo lives instead  
'Of that to me, and we pull, any how,  
'Este into a heap: the matter's now  
'At the true juncture slipping us so oft.  
'Ay, Heinrich died and Otho, please you,  
doed  
'His crown at such a juncture! Still, if  
holds  
'Our Friedrich's purpose, if this chain enfolds  
'The neck of . . . who but this same Ecelin  
'That must recoil when the best days begin!  
'Recoil? that's nought; if the recoiler  
leaves  
'His name for me to fight with, no one  
grieves:  
'But he must interfere, forsooth, unlock  
'His cloister to become my stumbling-block  
'Just as of old! Ay, ay, there 'tis again—  
'The land's inevitable Head—explain  
'The reverences that subject us! Count  
'These Ecelins now! Not to say as fount,  
'Originating power of thought,—from twelve  
'That drop i' the trenches they joined hands  
to delve,  
'Six shall surpass him, but . . . why men  
must twine  
'Somehow with something! Ecelin's a fine  
'Clear name! 'Twere simpler, doubtless,  
twine with me  
'At once: our cloistered friend's capacity  
'Was of a sort! I had to share myself  
'In fifty portions, like an o'ertasked elf  
'That's forced illume in fifty points the vast  
'Rare vapour he's environed by. At last  
'My strengths, though sorely frittered, e'en  
converge  
'And crown . . . no, Bacchus, they have  
yet to urge  
'The man be crowned!  
"That aloe, an he durst,  
'Would climb! Just such a bloated  
sprawler first  
'I noted in Messina's castle-court  
'The day I came, when Heinrich asked in  
sport  
'If I would pledge my faith to win him back  
'His right in Lombardy: 'for, once bid pack

'Marauders,' he continued, 'in my stead  
'You rule, Taurello!' and upon this head  
'Laid the silk glove of Constance—I see hei  
'Too, mantled head to foot in miniver,  
'Retrude following!  
"I am absolved  
'From further toil: the empery devolved  
'On me, 'twas Tito's word: I have to lay  
'For once my plan, pursue my plan my way,  
'Prompt nobody, and render an account  
'Taurello to Taurello! Nay, I mount  
'To Friedrich: he conceives the post I kept,  
'—Who did true service, able or inept,  
'Who's worthy guerdon, Ecelin or I,  
'Me guerdoned, counsel follows: would he  
vie  
'With the Pope really? Azzo, Boniface  
'Compose a right-arm Hohenstauffen's race  
'Must break ere govern Lombardy. I point  
'How easy 'twere to twist, once out of joint,  
'The socket from the bone: my Azzo's stare  
'Meanwhile! for I, this idle strap to wear,  
'Shall—fret myself abundantly, what end  
'To serve? There's left me twenty years  
to spend  
'—How better than my old way? Had I one  
'Who laboured to o'erthrow my work—a son  
'Hatching with Azzo superb treachery,  
'To root my pines up and then poison me,  
'Suppose—'twere worth while frustrate that!  
Beside  
'Another life's ordained me: the world's  
tide  
'Rolls, and what hope of parting from the  
press  
'Of waves, a single wave through weariness  
'Gently lifted aside, laid upon shore?  
'My life must be lived out in foam and roar,  
'No question. Fifty years the province held  
'Taurello; troubles raised, and troubles  
quelled,  
'He in the midst—who leaves this quaint  
stone place,  
'These trees a year or two, then not a trace  
'Of him! How obtain hold, fetter men's  
tongues  
'Like this poor minstrel with the foolish  
songs—



- "To which, despite our bustle, he is linked ?  
 "—Flowers one may tease, that never grow extinct.  
 "Ay, that patch, surely, green as ever, where  
 "I set Her Moorish lentisk, by the stair,  
 "To overawe the aloes ; and we trod  
 "Those flowers, how call you such ?—into the sod ;  
 "A stately foreigner—a world of pain  
 "To make it thrive, arrest rough winds—all vain !  
 "It would decline ; these would not be destroyed :  
 "And now, where is it ? where can you avoid  
 "The flowers ? I frighten children twenty years  
 "Longer !—which way, too, Ecelin appears  
 "To thwart me, for his son's besotted youth  
 "Gives promise of the proper tiger-tooth :  
 "They feel it at Vicenza ! Fate, fate, fate,  
 "My fine Taurello ! Go you, promulgate  
 "Friedrich's decree, and here 's shall aggrandise  
 "Young Ecelin—your Prefect's badge ! a prize  
 "Too precious, certainly.  
 "How now ? Compete  
 "With my old comrade ? shuffle from their seat  
 "His children ? Paltry dealing ! Don't I know  
 "Ecelin ? now, I think, and years ago !  
 "What's changed—the weakness ? did not I compound  
 "For that, and undertake to keep him sound  
 "Despite it ? Here's Taurello hankering  
 "After a boy's preferment—this plaything,  
 "To carry, Bacchus ! " And he laughed.  
 Remark  
 Why schemes wherein cold-blooded men embark  
 Prosper, when your enthusiastic sort  
 Fail : while these last are ever stopping short  
 (So much they should—so little they can do !)  
 The careless tribe see nothing to pursue  
 If they desist ; meantime their scheme succeeds.  
 Thoughts were caprices in the course of deeds  
 Methodic with Taurello ; so, he turned,—  
 Enough amused by fancies fairly earned  
 Of Este's horror-struck submitted neck,  
 And Richard, the cowed braggart, at his beck,—  
 To his own petty but immediate doubt  
 If he could pacify the League without  
 Conceding Richard ; just to this was brought  
 That interval of vain discursive thought !  
 As, shall I say, some Ethiop, past pursuit  
 Of all enslavers, dips a shackled foot  
 Burnt to the blood, into the drowsy black  
 Enormous watercourse which guides him back  
 To his own tribe again, where he is king ;  
 And laughs because he guesses, numbering  
 The yellower poison-wattles on the pouch  
 Of the first lizard wrested from its couch  
 Under the slime (whose skin, the while, he strips  
 To cure his nostril with, and festered lips,  
 And eyeballs bloodshot through the desert-blast)  
 That he has reached its boundary, at last  
 May breathe ;—thinks o'er enchantments of the South  
 Sovereign to plague his enemies, their mouth,  
 Eyes, nails, and hair ; but, these enchantments tried  
 In fancy, puts them soberly aside  
 For truth, projects a cool return with friends,  
 The likelihood of winning mere amends  
 Ere long ; thinks that, takes comfort silently,  
 Then, from the river's brink, his wrongs and he,  
 Hugging revenge close to their hearts, are soon  
 Off-striding for the Mountains of the Moon.  
 Midnight : the watcher nodded on his spear,  
 Since clouds dispersing left a passage clear  
 For any meagre and discoloured moon  
 To venture forth ; and such was peering soon  
 Above the harassed city—her close lanes  
 Closer, not half so tapering her fanes,  
 As though she shrunk into herself to keep  
 What little life was saved, more safely. Heap  
 By heap the watch-fires mouldered, and beside  
 The blackest spoke Sordello and replied  
 Palma with none to listen. " 'Tis your cause :  
 "What makes a Ghibellin ? There should be laws—

"(Remember how my youth escaped ! I trust  
 "To you for manhood, Palma ! tell me just  
 "As any child)—there must be laws at work  
 "Explaining this. Assure me, good may lurk  
 "Under the bad,—my multitude has part  
 "In your designs, their welfare is at heart  
 "With Salinguerra, to their interest  
 "Refer the deeds he dwelt on,—so divest  
 "Our conference of much that scared me.

Why

"Affect that heartless tone to Tito ? I  
 "Esteemed myself, yes, in my inmost mind  
 "This morn, a recreant to my race—mankind  
 "O'erlooked till now : why boast my spirit's  
 force,  
 "—Such force denied its object ? why divorce  
 "These, then admire my spirit's flight the same  
 "As though it bore up, helped some half-  
 orb'd flame  
 "Else quenched in the dead void, to living  
 space ?

"That orb cast off to chaos and disgrace,  
 "Why vaunt so much my unencumbered  
 dance,

"Making a feat's facilities enhance  
 "Its marvel ? But I front Taurello, one  
 "Of happier fate, and all I should have done,  
 "He does ; the people's good being paramount  
 "With him, their progress may perhaps  
 account

"For his abiding still ; whereas you heard  
 "The talk with Tito—the excuse preferred  
 "For burning those five hostages,—and  
 broached

"By way of blind, as you and I approached,  
 "I do believe."

She spoke : then he, "My thought  
 "Plainlier expressed ! All to your profit—  
 nought

"Meantime of these, of conquests to achieve  
 "For them, of wretchedness he might relieve  
 "While profiting your party. Azzo, too,  
 "Supports a cause : what cause ? Do Guelfs  
 pursue

"Their ends by means like yours, or better ?"

When

The Guelfs were proved alike, men weighed  
 with men,

And deed with deed, blaze, blood, with  
 blood and blaze,

Morn broke : "Once more, Sordello, meet  
 its gaze

"Proudly—the people's charge against thee  
 fails

"In every point, while either party quails !

"These are the busy ones : be silent thou !

"Two parties take the world up, and allow

"No third, yet have one principle, subside

"By the same injustice ; whoso shall enlist

"With either, ranks with man's inveterate foes.

"So there is one less quarrel to compose :

"The Guelf, the Ghibellin may be to curse—

"I have done nothing, but both sides do worse

"Than nothing. Nay, to me, forgotten, reft

"Of insight, lapped by trees and flowers,  
 was left

"The notion of a service—ha ? What lured

"Me here, what mighty aim was I assured

"Must move Taurello ? What if there re-  
 mained

"A cause, intact, distinct from these, ordained

"For me, its true discoverer ?"

Some one pressed

Before them here, a watcher, to suggest

The subject for a ballad : "They must know

"The tale of the dead worthy, long ago

"Consul of Rome—that's long ago for us,

"Minstrels and bowmen, idly squabbling thus

"In the world's corner—but too late no doubt,

"For the brave time he sought to bring about.

"—Not know Crescentius Nomentanus ?"

Then

He cast about for terms to tell him, when

Sordello disavowed it, how they used

Whenever their Superior introduced

A novice to the Brotherhood—"for I

"Was just a brown-sleeve brother, merrily

"Appointed too," quoth he, "till Innocent

"Bade me relinquish, to my small content,

"My wife or my brown sleeves")—some  
 brother spoke

Ere nocturns of Crescentius, to revoke

The edict issued, after his demise,

Which blotted fame alike and effigies,

All out except a floating power, a name

Including, tending to produce the same

Great act. Rome, dead, forgotten, lived at least

Within that brain, though to a vulgar priest  
And a vile stranger,—two not worth a slave  
Of Rome's, Pope John, King Otho,—fortune gave

The rule there : so, Crescentius, haply dressed  
In white, called Roman Consul for a jest,  
Taking the people at their word, forth stepped  
As upon Brutus' heel, nor ever kept  
Rome waiting,—stood erect, and from his brain  
Gave Rome out on its ancient place again,  
Ay, bade proceed with Brutus' Rome, Kings styled

Themselves mere citizens of, and, beguiled  
Into great thoughts thereby, would choose the gem

Out of a lapfull, spoil their diadem  
—The Senate's cypher was so hard to scratch !  
He flashes like a phanal, all men catch  
The flame, Rome's just accomplished ! when returned

Otho, with John, the Consul's stephadspurned,  
And Hugo Lord of Este, to redress

The wrongs of each. Crescentius in the stress  
Of adverse fortune bent. " They crucified

" Their Consul in the Forum ; and abide  
" E'er since such slaves at Rome, that I—(for I

" Was once a brown-sleeve brother, merrily  
" Appointed)—I had option to keep wife

" Or keep brown sleeves, and managed in  
the strife

" Lose both. A song of Rome !"

And Rome, indeed,  
Robed at Goito in fantastic weed,  
The Mother-City of his Mantuan days,  
Looked an established point of light whence rays

Traversed the world ; for, all the clustered  
homes

Beside of men, seemed bent on being Romes  
In their degree ; the question was, how each  
Should most resemble Rome, clean out of reach.  
Nor, of the Two, did either principle  
Struggle to change, but to possess Rome,—still  
Guelf Rome or Ghibellin Rome.

Let Rome advance !  
Rome, as she struck Sordello's ignorance—

How could he doubt one moment ? Rome's  
the Cause !

Rome of the Pandects, all the world's new  
laws—

Of the Capitol, of Castle Angelo ;  
New structures, that inordinately glow,  
Subdued, brought back to harmony, made ripe  
By many a relic of the archetype  
Extant for wonder ; every upstart church  
That hoped to leave old temples in the lurch,  
Corrected by the Theatre forlorn  
That,—as a mundane shell, its world late  
born,—

Lay and o'ershadowed it. These hints com-  
bined,

Rome typifies the scheme to put mankind  
Once more in full possession of their rights.

" Let us have Rome again ! On me it lights  
" To build up Rome—on me, the first and last :  
" For such a future was endured the past !"

And thus, in the grey twilight, forth he sprung  
To give his thought consistency among

The very People—let their facts avail  
Finish the dream grown from the archer's  
tale.

#### BOOK THE FIFTH.

Is it the same Sordello in the dusk  
As at the dawn ?—merely a perished husk  
Now, that arose a power fit to build  
Up Rome again ? The proud conception  
chilled

So soon ? Ay, watch that latest dream of  
thine

—A Rome indebted to no Palatine—  
Drop arch by arch, Sordello ! Art possessed  
Of thy wish now, rewarded for thy quest  
To-day among Ferrara's squalid sons ?

Are this and this and this the shining ones  
Meet for the Shining City ? Sooth to say,  
Your favoured tenantry pursue their way  
After a fashion ! This companion slips  
On the smooth causeway, t'other blinkard trips  
At his smoothed sandal. " Leave to lead the  
brawls

" Here i' the atria ?" No, friend ! He  
that sprawls

On aught but a stibadium<sup>1</sup> . . . what his  
dues

Who puts the lustral vase to such an use?  
Oh, huddle up the day's disasters! March,  
Ye runagates, and drop thou, arch by arch,  
Rome!

Yet before they quite disband—a whim—  
Study mere shelter, now, for him, and him,  
Nay, even the worst,—just house them!

Any cave  
Suffices: throw out earth! A loophole?  
Brave!

They ask to feel the sun shine, see the grass  
Grow, hear the larks sing? Dead art thou,  
alas,

And I am dead! But here's our son excels  
At hurdle-weaving any Scythian, fells  
Oak and devises rafters, dreams and shapes  
His dream into a door-post, just escapes  
The mystery of hinges. Lie we both  
Perdue another age. The goodly growth  
Of brick and stone! Our building-pelt was  
rough,

But that descendant's garb suits well enough  
A portico-contriver. Speed the years—  
What's time to us? At last, a city rears  
Itself! nay, enter—what's the grave to us?  
Lo, our forlorn acquaintance carry thus  
The head! Successively sewer, forum,  
cirque—

Last age, an aqueduct was counted work,  
But now they tire the artificer upon  
Blank alabaster, black obsidian,<sup>2</sup>  
—Careful, Jove's face be duly fulgorant,  
And mother Venus' kiss-creased nipples  
pant

Back into pristine pulpiness, ere fixed  
Above the baths. What difference betwixt  
This Rome and ours—resemblance what,  
between

That scurvy dumb-show and this pageant  
sheen—

These Romans and our rabble? Use thy  
wit!

The work marched: step by step,—a work-  
man fit

<sup>1</sup> Roman couch.

<sup>2</sup> A kind of glass (volcanic).

Took each, nor too fit,—to one task, one  
time,—

No leaping o'er the petty to the prime,  
When just the substituting osier lithe  
For brittle bulrush, sound wood for soft  
withe,

To further loam-and-roughcast-work a stage,—  
Exacts an architect, exacts an age  
No tables of the Mauritanian tree  
For men whose maple log's their luxury!  
That way was Rome built. "Better" (say  
you) "merge

"At once all workmen in the demiurge,  
"All epochs in a lifetime, every task  
"In one!" So should the sudden city bask  
I' the day—while those we'd feast there,  
want the knack

Of keeping fresh-chalked gowns from speck  
and brack,

Distinguish not rare peacock from vile swan,  
Nor Mareotic juice from Cæcuban.

"Enough of Rome! 'Twas happy to  
conceive

"Rome on a sudden, nor shall fate bereave  
"Me of that credit: for the rest, her spite  
"Is an old story—serves my folly right  
"By adding yet another to the dull  
"List of abortions—things proved beautiful  
"Could they be done, Sordello cannot do."

He sat upon the terrace, plucked and threw  
The powdery aloe-cusps away, saw shift  
Rome's walls, and drop arch after arch, and  
drift

Mist-like afar those pillars of all stripe,  
Mounds of all majesty. "Thou archetype,  
"Last of my dreams and loveliest, depart!"

And then a low voice wound into his heart:  
"Sordello!" (low as some old Pythoness  
Conceding to a Lydian King's distress  
The cause of his long error—one mistake  
Of her past oracle) "Sordello, wake!

"God has conceded two sights to a man—  
"One, of men's whole work, time's com-  
pleted plan,

"The other, of the minute's work, man's  
first

"Step to the plan's completeness: what's  
dispersed

- "Save hope of that supreme step which,  
descried  
"Earliest, was meant still to remain untried  
"Only to give you heart to take your own  
"Step, and there stay, leaving the rest alone?  
"Where is the vanity? Why count as one  
"The first step, with the last step? What is  
gone  
"Except Rome's æry magnificence,  
"That last step you'd take first?—an evidence  
"You were God: be man now! Let those  
glances fall!  
"The basis, the beginning step of all,  
"Which proves you just a man—is that gone  
too?  
"Pity to disconcert one versed as you  
"In fate's ill-nature! but its full extent  
"Eludes Sordello, even: the veil rent,  
"Read the black writing—that collective  
man  
"Outstrips the individual. Who began  
"The acknowledged greatnesses? Ay, your  
own art  
"Shall serve us: put the poet's mimes apart—  
"Close with the poet's self, and lo, a dim  
"Yet too plain form divides itself from him!  
"Alcamo's song enmeshes the lulled Isle,  
"Woven into the echoes left erewhile  
"By Nina, one soft web of song: no more  
"Turning his name, then, flower-like o'er  
and o'er!  
"An elder poet in the younger's place;  
"Nina's the strength, but Alcamo's the grace:  
"Each neutralizes each then! Search your  
fill;  
"You get no whole and perfect Poet—still  
"New Ninas, Alcamos, till time's mid-night  
"Shrouds all—or better say, the shutting light  
"Of a forgotten yesterday. Dissect  
"Every ideal workman—(to reject  
"In favour of your fearful ignorance  
"The thousand phantasms eager to advance,  
"And point you but to those within your  
reach)—  
"Were you the first who brought —(in  
modern speech)  
"The Multitude to be materialized?  
"That loose eternal unrest—who devised  
"An apparition i' the midst? The rout  
"Was checked, a breathless ring was formed  
about  
"That sudden flower: get round at any risk  
"The gold-rough pointel, silver-blazing disk  
"O' the lily! Swords across it! Reign thy  
reign  
"And serve thy frolic service, Charlemagne!  
"—The very child of over-joyousness,  
"Unfeeling thence, strong therefore: Strength  
by stress  
"Of Strength comes of that forehead confi-  
dent,  
"Those widened eyes expecting heart's  
content,  
"A calm as out of just-quelled noise; nor  
swerves  
"For doubt, the ample cheek in gracious  
curves  
"Abutting on the upthrust nether lip:  
"He wills, how should he doubt then?  
Ages slip:  
"Was it Sordello pried into the work  
"So far accomplished, and discovered lurk  
"A company amid the other clans,  
"Only distinct in priests for castellans  
"And popes for suzerains (their rule confessed  
"Its rule, their interest its interest,  
"Living for sake of living—there an end —  
"Wrapt in itself, no energy to spend  
"In making adversaries or allies)—  
"Dived you into its capabilities  
"And dared create, out of that sect, a soul  
"Should turn a multitude, already whole,  
"Into its body? Speak plainer! Is't so sure  
"God's church lives by a King's investiture?  
"Look to last step! A staggering—a shock—  
"What's mere sand is demolished, while the  
rock  
"Endures: a column of black fiery dust  
"Blots heaven—that help was prematurely  
thrust  
"Aside, perchance!—but air clears, nought's  
erased  
"Of the true outline. Thus much being  
firm based,  
"The other was a scaffold. See him stand  
"Buttressed upon his mattock, Hildebrand

- "Of the huge brain-mask welded ply o'er ply  
 "As in a forge; it buries either eye  
 "White and extinct, that stupid brow; teeth  
 clenched,  
 "The neck tight-corded, too, the chin deep-  
 trenched,  
 "As if a cloud enveloped him while fought  
 "Under its shade, grim prizers, thought with  
 thought  
 "At dead-lock, agonizing he, until  
 "The victor thought leap radiant up, and Will,  
 "Theslave with folded arms and drooping lids  
 "They fought for, lean forth flame-like as it  
 bids.  
 "Call him no flower—a mandrake of the  
 earth,  
 "Thwarted and dwarfed and blasted in its  
 birth,  
 "Rather,—a fruit of suffering's excess,  
 "Thence feeling, therefore stronger: still by  
 stress  
 "Of Strength, work Knowledge! Full three  
 hundred years  
 "Have men to wear away in smiles and tears  
 "Between the two that nearly seemed to  
 touch,  
 "Observe you! quit one workman and you  
 clutch  
 "Another, letting both their trains go by—  
 "The actors-out of either's policy,  
 "Heinrich, on this hand, Otho, Barbaross,  
 "Carry the three Imperial crowns across,  
 "Aix' Iron, Milan's Silver, and Rome's Gold—  
 "While Alexander, Innocent uphold  
 "On that, each Papal key—but, link on link,  
 "Why is it neither chain betrays a chink?  
 "How coalesce the small and great? Alack,  
 "For one thrust forward, fifty such fall back!  
 "Do the popes coupled there help Gregory  
 "Alone? Hark—from the hermit Peter's cry  
 "At Claremont, down to the first serf that says  
 "Friedrich's no liege of his while he delays  
 "Getting the Pope's curse off him! The  
 Crusade—  
 "Or trick of breeding Strength by other aid  
 "Than Strength, is safe. Hark—from the  
 wild harangue  
 "Of Vimercato, to the carroch's clang  
 "Yonder! The League—or trick of turning  
 Strength  
 "Against Pernicious Strength, is safe at  
 length.  
 "Yet hark—from Mantuan Albert making  
 cease  
 "The fierce ones, to Saint Francis preaching  
 peace  
 "Yonder! God's Truce—or trick to super-  
 sede  
 "The very Use of Strength, is safe. Indeed  
 "We trench upon the future. Who is found  
 "To take next step, next age—trail o'er the  
 ground—  
 "Shall I say, gourd-like?—not the flower's  
 display  
 "Nor the root's prowess, but the plenteous  
 way  
 "O' the plant—produced by joy and sorrow,  
 whence  
 "Unfeeling and yet feeling, strongest thence?  
 "Knowledge by stress of merely Knowledge?  
 No—  
 "E'en were Sordello ready to forego  
 "His life for this, 'twere overleaping work  
 "Some one has first to do, howe'er it irk,  
 "Nor stray a foot's breadth from the beaten  
 road.  
 "Who means to help must still support the load  
 "Hildebrand lifted—'why hast Thou,' he  
 groaned,  
 "Imposed on me a burthen, Paul had  
 moaned,  
 "And Moses dropped beneath?' Much  
 done—and yet  
 "Doubtless that grandest task God ever set  
 "On man, left much to do: at his arm's  
 wrench,  
 "Charlemagne's scaffold fell; but pillars  
 blench  
 Merely, start back again—perchance have  
 been  
 "Taken for buttresses: crash every screen,  
 Hammer the tenons<sup>1</sup> better, and engage  
 "A gang about your work, for the next age

<sup>1</sup> A word of carpentry—the projecting piece  
 of wood fitting into framework.

"Or two, of Knowledge, part by Strength and  
part

"By Knowledge ! Then, indeed, perchance  
may start

"Sordello on his race—would time divulge  
"Such secrets ! If one step's awry, one bulge

"Calls for correction by a step we thought  
"Got over long since, why, till that is

wrought,  
"No progress ! And the scaffold in its turn

"Becomes, its service o'er, a thing to spurn.  
"Meanwhile, if your half-dozen years of life

"In store dispose you to forego the strife,  
"Who takes exception ? Only bear in mind

"Ferrara's reached, Goito's left behind :  
"As you then were, as half yourself, desist !

"—The warrior-part of you may, an it list,  
"Finding real faulchions difficult to poise,

"Fling them afar and taste the cream of  
joys

"By wielding such in fancy,—what is bard  
"Of you may spurn the vehicle that marred

"Elys so much, and in free fancy glut  
"His sense, yet write no verses—-you have

but  
"To please yourself for law, and once could

please  
"What once appeared yourself, by dreaming

these  
"Rather than doing these, in days gone by.

"But all is changed the moment you descry  
"Mankind as half yourself,—then, fancy's

trade  
"Ends once and always : how may half evade

"The other half ? men are found half of you.  
"Out of a thousand helps, just one or two

"Can be accomplished presently : but flinch  
"From these (as from the faulchion, raised an

inch,  
"Elys, described a couplet) and make proof

"Of fancy,—then, while one half lolls aloof  
"I' the vines, completing Rome to the tip-

top—  
"See if, for that, your other half will stop

"A tear, begin a smile ! The rabble's woes,  
"Ludicrous in their patience as they chose

"To sit about their town and quietly  
"Be slaughtered,—the poor reckless soldiery,

"With their ignoble rhymes on Richard, how  
"Polt-foot,' sang they, 'was in a pitfall now,'

"Cheering each other from the engine  
mounts,—

"That crippled spawling idiot who recounts  
"How, lopped of limbs, he lay, stupid as

stone,  
"Till the pains crept from out him one by one,

"And wriggles round the archers on his  
head

"To earn a morsel of their chestnut bread,—  
"And Cino, always in the self-same place

"Weeping ; beside that other wretch's case,  
"Eyepits to ear, one gangrene since he

plied  
"The engine in his coat of raw sheep's hide

"A double watch in the noon sun ; and see  
"Lucchino, beauty, with the favours free,

"Trim haqueton,<sup>1</sup> spruce beard and scented  
hair,

"Campaigning it for the first time—cut there  
"In two already, boy enough to crawl

"For latter orpine round the southern wall,  
"Tomà, where Richard's kept, because that

whore  
"Marfisa, the fool never saw before,

"Sickened for flowers this wearisome siege :  
"And Tiso's wife—men liked their pretty

liege,  
"Cared for her least of whims once,—Berta,

wed  
"A twelvemonth gone, and, now poor Tiso's

dead,  
"Delivering herself of his first child

"On that chance heap of wet filth, reconciled  
"To fifty gazers !"—(Here a wind below

Made moody music augural of woe  
From the pine barrier)—"What if, now the

scene  
"Draws to a close, yourself have really been

"—You, plucking purples in Goito's moss  
"Like edges of a trabea<sup>2</sup> (not to cross

"Your consul-humour) or dry aloe-shafts  
"For fasces, at Ferrara—he, fate wafts,

"This very age, her whole inheritance  
"Of opportunities ? Yet you advance

A quilted jacket.

<sup>2</sup> A purple toga.

"Upon the last ! Since talking is your trade,  
"There's Salinguerra left you to persuade :  
"Fail ! then"—

"No—no—which latest chance  
secure !"

Leaped up and cried Sordello: "this made sure,  
"The past were yet redeemable ; its work  
"Was—help the Guelfs, whom I, howe'er  
it irk,

"Thus help !" He shook the foolish alcoh-  
haulm

Out of his doublet, paused, proceeded calm  
To the appointed presence. The large head  
Turned on its socket ; "And your spokes-  
man," said

The large voice, "is Elcorte's happy sprout ?  
"Few such"—(so finishing a speech no doubt  
Addressed to Palma, silent at his side)

"—My sober councils have diversified.

"Elcorte's son ! good : forward as you may,

"Our lady's minstrel with so much to say !"

The hesitating sunset floated back,

Rosily traversed in the wonted track

The chamber, from the lattice o'er the girth

Of pines, to the huge eagle blacked in earth

Opposite,—outlined sudden, spur to crest,

That solid Salinguerra, and caressed

Palma's contour ; 'twas day looped back

night's pall ;

Sordello had a chance left spite of all.

And much he made of the convincing  
speech

Meant to compensate for the past and reach  
Through his youth's daybreak of unprofit,  
quite

To his noon's labour, so proceed till night

Leisurely ! The great argument to bind

Taurello with the Guelf Cause, body and  
mind,

—Came the consummate rhetoric to that ?

Yet most Sordello's argument dropped flat

Through his accustomed fault of breaking yoke,

Disjoining him who felt from him who spoke.

Was't not a touching incident—so prompt

A rendering the world its just account ;

Once proved its debtor ? Who'd suppose,  
before

This proof, that he, Goito's god of yore,

At duty's instance could demean himself

So memorably, dwindle to a Guelf ?

Be sure, in such delicious flattery steeped,

His inmost self at the out-portion peeped,

Thus occupied ; then stole a glance at those

Appealed to, curious if her colour rose

Or his lip moved, while he discreetly urged

The need of Lombardy becoming purged

At soonest of her barons ; the poor part

Abandoned thus, missing the blood at heart

And spirit in brain, unseasonably off

Elsewhere ! But, though his speech was

worthy scoff,

Good-humoured Salinguerra, famed for tact

And tongue, who, careless of his phrase,

ne'er lacked

The right phrase, and harangued Honorius

dumb

At his accession,—looked as all fell plumb

To purpose and himself found interest

In every point his new instructor pressed

—Left playing with the rescript's white wax

seal

To scrutinize Sordello head and heel.

He means to yield assent sure ? No, alas !

All he replied was, "What, it comes to pass

"That poesy, sooner than politics,

"Makes fade young hair?" To think such

speech could fix

Taurello !

Then a flash of bitter truth :

So fantasies could break and fritter youth

That he had long ago lost earnestness,

Lost will to work, lost power to even express

The need of working ! Earth was turned a

grave :

No more occasions now, though he should

crave

Just one, in right of superhuman toil,

To do what was undone, repair such spoil,

Alter the past—nothing would give the chance !

Not that he was to die ; he saw askance

Protract the ignominious years beyond

To dream in—time to hope and time despond,

Remember and forget, be sad, rejoice .

As saved a trouble ; he might, at his choice,

One way or other, idle life out, drop

No few smooth verses by the way—for prop,



A thyrsus, these sad people, all the same,  
Should pick up, and set store by,—far from  
blame,  
Plant o'er his hearse, convinced his better  
part  
Survived him. "Rather tear men out the  
heart  
"O' the truth!"—Sordello muttered, and  
renewed  
His propositions for the Multitude.  
But Salinguerra, who at this attack  
Had thrown great breast and ruffling corslet  
back  
To hear the better, smilingly resumed  
His task; beneath, the carroch's warning  
boomed;  
He must decide with Tito; courteously  
He turned then, even seeming to agree  
With his admonisher—"Assist the Pope,  
"Extend Guelf domination, fill the scope  
"O' the Church, thus based on All, by All,  
for All—  
"Change Secular to Evangelical"—  
Echoing his very sentence: all seemed lost,  
When suddenly he looked up, laughingly  
almost,  
To Palma: "This opinion of your friend's—  
"For instance, would it answer Palma's  
ends?  
"Best, were it not, turn Guelf, submit our  
Strength"—  
(Here he drew out his baklric to its length)  
—"To the Pope's Knowledge—let our  
captive slip,  
"Wide to the walls throw ope our gates,  
equip  
"Azzo with . . . what I hold here! Who'll  
subscribe  
"To a trite censure of the minstrel tribe  
"Henceforward? or pronounce, as Heinrich  
used,  
"Spear-heads for battle, burr-heads for the  
joust!"  
"—When Constance, for his couplets, would  
promote  
"Alcamo, from a parti-coloured coat,  
"To holding her lord's stirrup in the wars,  
"Not that I see where couplet-making jars

"With common sense: at Mantua I had borne  
"This chanted, better than their most forlorn  
"Of bull-baits,—that's indisputable!"  
Brave!  
Whom vanity nigh slew, contempt shall save!  
All's at an end: a Troubadour suppose  
Mankind will class him with their friends or  
foes?  
A puny uncouth ailing vassal think  
The world and him bound in some special link?  
Abrupt the visionary tether burst.  
What were rewarded here, or what amerced  
If a poor drudge, solicitous to dream  
Deservingly, got tangled by his theme  
So far as to conceit the knack or gift  
Or whatsoe'er it be, of verse, might lift  
The globe, a lever like the hand and head  
Of—"Men of Action," as the Jongleurs said,  
—"The Great Men," in the people's dialect?  
And not a moment did this scorn affect  
Sordello: scorn the poet? They, for once,  
Asking "what was," obtained a full response.  
Bid Naddo think at Mantua—he had but  
To look into his promptuary, put  
Finger on a set thought in a set speech:  
But was Sordello fitted thus for each  
Conjecture? Nowise; since within his soul,  
Perception brooded unexpressed and whole.  
A healthy spirit like a healthy frame  
Craves aliment in plenty—all the same,  
Changes, assimilates its aliment.  
Perceived Sordello, on a truth intent?  
Next day no formularies more you saw  
Than figs or olives in a sated maw.  
'Tis Knowledge, whither such perceptions  
tend;  
They lose themselves in that, means to an end,  
The many old producing some one new,  
A last unlike the first. If lies are true,  
The Caliph's wheel-work man<sup>1</sup> of brass re-  
ceives  
A meal, munched millet grains and lettuce  
leaves  
Together in his stomach rattle loose;  
You find them perfect next day to produce:

<sup>1</sup> One of the automata sent by Haroun-al-Raschid to Charlemagne.

But ne'er expect the man, on strength of that,  
Can roll an iron camel-collar flat  
Like Haroun's self! I tell you, what was  
stored

Bit by bit through Sordello's life, outpoured  
That eve, was, for that age, a novel thing:  
And round those three the People formed a  
ring,

Of visionary judges whose award  
He recognized in full—faces that barred  
Henceforth return to the old careless life,  
In whose great presence, therefore, his first  
strife

For their sake must not be ignobly fought;  
All these, for once, approved of him, he  
thought,

Suspended their own vengeance, chose await  
The issue of this strife to reinstate  
Them in the right of taking it—in fact  
He must be proved king ere they could exact  
Vengeance for such king's defalcation. Last,  
A reason why the phrases flowed so fast  
Was in his quite forgetting for a time  
Himself in his amazement that the rhyme  
Disguised the royalty so much: he there—  
And Salinguerra yet all-unaware  
Who was the lord, who liegeman!

“Thus I lay

“On thine my spirit and compel obey  
“His lord,—my liegeman,—impotent to  
build

“Another Rome, but hardly so unskilled  
“In what such builder should have been, as  
brook

“One shame beyond the charge that I forsook  
“His function! Free me from that shame, I  
bend

“A brow before, suppose new years to  
spend,—

“Allow each chance, nor fruitlessly, recur—  
“Measure thee with the Minstrel, then, demur  
“At any crowd he claims! That I must cede  
“Shamed now, my right to my especial  
meed—

“Confess thee fitter help the world than I  
“Ordained its champion from eternity,  
“Is much: but to behold thee scorn the post  
“I quit in thy behalf—to hear thee boast

“What makes my own despair!” And while  
he rung

The changes on this theme, the roof up-sprung,  
The sad walls of the presence-chamber died  
Into the distance, or embowering vied  
With far-away Goito's vine-frontier;  
And crowds of faces—(only keeping clear  
The rose-light in the midst, his vantage-ground  
To fight their battle from)—deep clustered  
round

Sordello, with good wishes no mere breath,  
Kind prayers for him no vapour, since, come  
death

Come life, he was fresh-sinewed every joint,  
Each bone new-marrowed as whom gods  
anoint

Though mortal to their rescue. Now let  
sprawl

The snaky volumes hither! Is Typhon all  
For Hercules to trample—good report  
From Salinguerra only to extort?

“So was I” (closed he his inculcating  
A poet must be earth's essential king)

“So was I, royal so, and if I fail,

“’Tis not the royalty, ye witness quail,

“But one deposed who, caring not exert

“Its proper essence, trifled malapert

“With accidents instead—good things as-  
signed

“As heralds of a better thing behind—

“And, worthy through display of these, put  
forth

“Never the inmost all-surpassing worth

“That constitutes him king precisely since

“As yet no other spirit may evince

“Its like: the power he took most pride to test,

“Whereby all forms of life had been professed

“At pleasure, forms already on the earth,

“Was but a means to power beyond, whose  
birth

“Should, in its novelty, be kingship's proof.

“Now, whether he came near or kept aloof

“The several forms he longed to imitate,

“Not there the kingship lay, he sees too late.

“Those forms, unalterable first as last,

“Proved him her copier, not the protoplast

“Of nature: what would come of being free,

“By action to exhibit tree for tree,

- "Bird, beast, for beast and bird, or prove  
earth bore
- "One veritable man or woman more?
- "Means to an end, such proofs are: what the  
end?
- "Let essence, whatso'er it be, extend—  
"Never contract. Already you include  
"The multitude; then let the multitude  
"Include yourself; and the result were new:  
"Themselves before, the multitude turn you.  
"This were to live and move and have, in  
them,  
"Your being, and secure a diadem  
"You should transmit (because no cycle  
yearns  
"Beyond itself, but on itself returns)  
"When, the full sphere in wane, the world  
o'erlaid  
"Long since with you, shall have in turn  
obeyed  
"Some orb still prouder, some displayer, still  
"More potent than the last, of human will,  
"And some new king depose the old. Of such  
"Am I—whom pride of this elates too much?  
"Safe, rather say, 'mid troops of peers again;  
"I, with my words, hailed brother of the train  
"Deeds once sufficed: for, let the world roll  
back,  
"Who fails, through deeds howe'er diverse,  
retrack  
"My purpose still, my task? A teeming  
crust—  
"Air, flame, earth, wave at conflict! Then,  
needs must  
"Emerge some Calm embodied, these refer  
"The brawl to—yellow-bearded Jupiter?  
"No! Saturn; some existence like a pact  
"And protest against Chaos, some first fact  
"I' the faint of time. My deep of life, I know,  
"Is unavailing e'en to poorly show" . . .  
(For here the Chief immeasurably yawned)  
"Deeds in their due gradation till  
Song dawned—  
"The fullest effluence of the finest mind,  
"All in degree, no way diverse in kind  
"From minds about it, minds which, more or  
less,  
"Lofty or low, move seeking to impress
- "Themselves on somewhat; but one mind  
has climbed  
"Step after step, by just ascent sublimed.  
"Thought is the soul of act, and, stage by  
stage,  
"Soul is from body still to disengage  
"As tending to a freedom which rejects  
"Such help and incorporeally affects  
"The world, producing deeds but not by  
deeds,  
"Swaying, in others, frames itself exceeds,  
"Assigning them the simpler tasks it used  
"To patiently perform till Song produced  
"Acts, by thoughts only, for the mind: divest  
"Mind of e'en Thought, and, lo, God's un-  
expressed  
"Will draws above us! All then is to win  
"Save that. How much for me, then? where  
begin  
"My work? About me, faces! and they  
flock,  
"The earnest faces. What shall I unlock  
"By song? behold me prompt, whate'er it be,  
"To minister: how much can mortals see  
"Of Life? No more than so? I take the task  
"And marshal you Life's elemental masque,  
"Show Men, on evil or on good lay stress,  
"This light, this shade make prominent,  
suppress  
"All ordinary hues that softening blend  
"Such natures with the level. Apprehend  
"Which sinner is, which saint, if I allot  
"Hell, Purgatory, Heaven, a blaze or blot,  
"To those you doubt concerning! I enwomb  
"Some wretched Friedrich with his red-hot  
tomb;  
"Some dubious spirit, Lombard Agilulph  
"With the black chastening river I engulph!  
"Some unapproached Matilda I enshrine  
"With languors of the planet of decline—  
"These, fail to recognize, to arbitrate  
"Between henceforth, to rightly estimate  
"Thus marshalled in the masque! Myself,  
the while,  
"As one of you, am witness, shrink or smile  
"At my own showing! Next age—what's  
to do?  
"The men and women stationed hitherto

- "Will I unstation, good and bad, conduct  
 "Each nature to its farthest, or obstruct  
 "At soonest, in the world : light, thwarted,  
 breaks  
 "A limpid purity to rainbow flakes,  
 "Or shadow, massed, freezes to gloom :  
 behold  
 "How such, with fit assistance to unfold,  
 "Or obstacles to crush them, disengage  
 "Their forms, love, hate, hope, fear, peace  
 make, war wage,  
 "In presence of you all ! Myself, implied  
 "Superior now, as, by the platform's side,  
 "I bade them do and suffer,—would last  
 content  
 "The world . . . no—that's too far ! I  
 circumvent  
 "A few, my masque contented, and to these  
 "Offer unveil the last of mysteries—  
 "Man's inmost life shall have yet freer  
 play :  
 "Once more I cast external things away,  
 "And natures composite, so decompose  
 "That" . . . Why, he writes *Sordello* !  
 "How I rose,  
 "And how have you advanced ! since ever-  
 more  
 "Yourselves effect what I was fain before  
 "Effect, what I supplied yourselves suggest,  
 "What I leave bare yourselves can now in-  
 vest.  
 "How we attain to talk as brothers talk,  
 "In half-words, call things by half-names,  
 no balk  
 "From discontinuing old aids. To-day  
 "Takes in account the work of Yesterday :  
 "Has not the world a Past now, its adept  
 "Consults ere he dispense with or accept  
 "New aids ? a single touch more may en-  
 hance,  
 "A touch less turn to insignificance  
 "Those structures' symmetry the past has  
 strewed  
 "The world with, once so bare. Leave the  
 mere rude  
 "Explicit details ! 'tis but brother's speech  
 "We need, speech where an accent's change  
 gives each  
 "The other's soul—no speech to understand  
 "By former audience : need was then to  
 expand,  
 "Expatriate—hardly were we brothers !  
 true—  
 "Nor I lament my small remove from you,  
 "Nor reconstruct what stands already. Ends  
 "Accomplished turn to means : my art  
 intends  
 "New structure from the ancient : as they  
 changed  
 "The spoils of every clime at Venice, ranged  
 "The horned and snouted Libyan god,  
 upright  
 "As in his desert, by some simple bright  
 "Clay cinerary pitcher—Thebes as Rome,  
 "Athens as Byzant rifled, till their Dome  
 "From earth's reputed consummations razed  
 "A seal, the all-transmuting Triad blazed  
 "Above. Ah, whose that fortune ? Ne'er-  
 theless  
 "E'en he must stoop contented to express  
 "No tithe of what's to say—the vehicle  
 "Never sufficient : but his work is still  
 "For faces like the faces that select  
 "The single service I am bound effect,—  
 "That bid me cast aside such fancies, bow  
 "Taurello to the Gueff cause, disallow  
 "The Kaiser's coming—which with heart,  
 soul, strength,  
 "I labour for, this eve, who feel at length  
 "My past career's outrageous vanity,  
 "And would, as its amends, die, even dic  
 "Now I first estimate the boon of life,  
 "If death might win compliance—sure, this  
 strife  
 "Is right for once—the People my support."  
 My poor Sordello ! what may we extort  
 By this, I wonder ? Palma's lighted eyes  
 Turned to Taurello who, long past surprise,  
 Began, "You love him—what you'd say at  
 large  
 "Let me say briefly. First, your father's  
 charge  
 "To me, his friend, peruse : I guessed indeed  
 "You were no stranger to the course decreed  
 "He bids me leave his children to the saints :  
 "As for a certain project, he acquaints

"The Pope with that, and offers him the best  
 "Of your possessions to permit the rest  
 "Go peaceably—to Ecelin, a stripe  
 "Of soil the cursed Vicentines will gripe,  
 "—To Alberic, a patch the Trevisan  
 "Clutches already; extricate, who can,  
 "Treville, Villarazzi, Puissolo,  
 "Loria and Cartiglione!—all must go,  
 "And with them go my hopes. 'Tis lost,  
 then! Lost  
 "This eve, our crisis, and some pains it cost  
 "Procuring; thirty years—as good I'd spent  
 "Like our admonisher! But each his bent  
 "Pursues: no question, one might live absurd  
 "Oneself this while, by deed as he by word  
 "Persisting to obtrude an influence where  
 "'Tis made account of, much as . . . nay,  
 you fare  
 "With twice the fortune, youngster!—I submit,  
 "Happy to parallel my waste of wit  
 "With the renowned Sordello's: you decide  
 "A course for me. Romano may abide  
 "Romano,—Bacchus! After all, what dearth  
 "Of Ecelins and Alberics on earth?  
 "Say there's a prize in prospect, must disgrace  
 "Betide competitors, unless they style  
 "Themselves Romano? Were it worth my  
 while  
 "To try my own luck! But an obscure place  
 "Suits me—there wants a youth to bustle,  
 stalk  
 "And attitudinize—some fight, more talk,  
 "Most flaunting badges—how, I might make  
 clear  
 "Since Friedrich's very purposes lie here  
 "—Here, pity they are like to lie! For me,  
 "With station fixed unceremoniously  
 "Long since, small use contesting; I am but  
 "The liegeman—you are born the lieges: shut  
 "That gentle mouth now! or resume your kin  
 "In your sweet self; were Palma Ecelin  
 "For me to work with! Could that neck  
 endure  
 "This bauble for a cumbrous garniture,  
 "She should . . . or might one bear it for  
 her? Stay—  
 "I have not been so flattered many a day

"As by your pale friend—Bacchus! The  
 least help  
 "Would lick the hind's fawn to a lion's whelp:  
 "His neck is broad enough—a ready tongue  
 "Beside: too writhled—but, the main thing,  
 young—  
 "I could . . . why, look ye!"  
 And the badge was thrown  
 Across Sordello's neck: "This badge alone  
 "Makes you Romano's Head—becomes  
 superb  
 "On your bare neck, which would, on mine,  
 disturb  
 "The pauldron," said Taurello. A mad act,  
 Nor even dreamed about before—in fact,  
 Not when his sportive arm rose for the nonce—  
 But he had dallied overmuch, this once,  
 With power: the thing was done, and he,  
 aware  
 The thing was done, proceeded to declare—  
 (So like a nature made to serve, excel  
 In serving, only feel by service well!)  
 —That he would make Sordello that and more.  
 "As good a scheme as any. What's to pore  
 "At in my face?" he asked—"ponder it stead  
 "This piece of news; you are Romano's  
 Head!  
 "One cannot slacken pace so near the goal,  
 "Suffer my Azzo to escape heart-whole  
 This time! For you there's Palma to  
 espouse—  
 "For me, one crowning trouble ere I house  
 "Like my compeer."  
 On which ensued a strange  
 And solemn visitation; there came change  
 O'er every one of them; each looked on each:  
 Up in the midst a truth grew, without speech.  
 And when the giddiness sank and the haze  
 Subsided, they were sitting, no amaze,  
 Sordello with the baldrick on, his sire  
 Silent, though his proportions seemed aspire  
 Momentarily; and, interpreting the thrill,—  
 Night at its ebb,—Palma was found there still  
 Relating somewhat Adelaide confessed.  
 A year ago, while dying on her breast,—  
 Of a contrivance, that Vicenza night  
 When Ecelin had birth. "Their convoy's  
 flight,

- "Cut off a moment, coiled inside the flame  
 "That wallowed like a dragon at his game  
 "The toppling city through—San Biagio  
   rocks!  
 "And wounded lies in her delicious locks  
 "Retrude, the frail mother, on her face,  
 "None of her wasted, just in one embrace  
 "Covering her child: when, as they lifted  
   her,  
 "Cleaving the tumult, mighty, mightier  
 "And mightiest Taurello's cry outbroke,  
 "Leapt like a tongue of fire that cleaves the  
   smoke,  
 "Midmost to cheer his Mantuans onward—  
   drown  
 "His colleague Ecelin's clamour, up and  
   down  
 "The disarray: failed Adelaide see then  
 "Who was the natural chief, the man of men?  
 "Outstripping time, her infant there burst  
   swathe,  
 "Stood up with eyes haggard beyond the  
   scathe  
 "From wandering after his heritage  
 "Lost once and lost for aye: and why that  
   rage,  
 "That deprecating glance? A new shape  
   leant  
 "On a familiar shape—gloatingly bent  
 "O'er his discomfiture; 'mid wreaths it wore,  
 "Still one outflamed the rest—her child's  
   before  
 "'Twas Salinguerra's for his child: scorn,  
   hate,  
 "Rage now might startle her when all too late!  
 "Then was the moment!—rival's foot had  
   spurned  
 "Never that House to earth else! Sense  
   returned—  
 "The act conceived, adventured and com-  
   plete,  
 "They bore away to an obscure retreat  
 "Mother and child—Retrude's self not slain"  
 (Nor even here Taurello moved) "though pain  
 "Was fled; and what assured them most  
   'twas fled,  
 "All pain, was, if they raised the pale hushed  
   head
- "'Twould turn this way and that, waver  
   awhile,  
 "And only settle into its old smile—  
 "(Graceful as the disquieted water-flag  
 "Steadying itself, remarked they, in the quag  
 "On either side their path)—when suffered  
   look  
 "Down on her child. They marched: no  
   sign once shook  
 "The company's close litter of crossed spears  
 "Till, as they reached Goito, a few tears  
 "Slipped in the sunset from her long black  
   lash,  
 "And she was gone. So far the action rash;  
 "No crime. They laid Retrude in the font,  
 "Taurello's very gift, her child was wont  
 "To sit beneath—constant as eve he came  
 "To sit by its attendant girls the same  
 "As one of them. For Palma, she would  
   blend  
 "With this magnific spirit to the end,  
 "That ruled her first; but scarcely had she  
   dared  
 "To disobey the Adelaide who scared  
 "Her into vowing never to disclose  
 "A secret to her husband, which so froze  
 "His blood at half-recital, she contrived  
 "To hide from him Taurello's infant lived,  
 "Lest, by revealing that, himself should  
   mar  
 "Romano's fortunes. And, a crime so far,  
 "Palma received that action: she was told  
 "Of Salinguerra's nature, of his cold  
 "Calm acquiescence in his lot! But free  
 "To impart the secret to Romano, she  
 "Engaged to repossess Sordello of  
 "His heritage, and hers, and that way doff  
 "The mask, but after years, long years:  
   while now,  
 "Was not Romano's sign-mark on that brow?"  
   Across Taurello's heart his arms were  
   locked:  
 And when he did speak 'twas as if he mocked  
 The minstrel, "who had not to move," he  
 "Nor stir—should fate defraud him of a shred  
   Of his son's infancy? much less his youth!"  
 (Laughingly all this)—"which to aid, in truth,

"Himself, reserved on purpose, had not grown

"Old, not too old—'twas best they kept alone  
"Till now, and never idly met till now ;"

—Then, in the same breath, told Sordello how

All intimations of this eve's event

Werelies, for Friedrich must advance to Trent,  
Thence to Verona, then to Rome, there stop,  
Tumble the Church down, institute a-top  
The Alps a Prefecture of Lombardy :

—"That's now ! — no prophesying what may be

"Anon, with a new monarch of the clime,

"Native of Gesi, passing his youth's prime

"At Naples. Tito bids my choice decide

"On whom . . ."

"Embrace him, madman !" Palma cried,  
Who through the laugh saw sweat-drops  
burst apace,

And his lips blanching : he did not embrace  
Sordello, but he laid Sordello's hand

On his own eyes, mouth, forehead.

Understand,

This while Sordello was becoming flushed  
Out of his whiteness ; thoughts rushed, fancies  
rushed ;

He pressed his hand upon his head and signed  
Both should forbear him. "Nay, the best's  
behind !"

Taurello laughed—not quite with the same  
laugh :

"The truth is, thus we scatter, ay, like  
chaff

"These Guelfs, a despicable monk recoils

"From : nor expect a fickle Kaiser spoils

"Our triumph !—Friedrich ? Think you,  
I intend

"Friedrich shall reap the fruits of blood I  
spend

"And brain I waste ? Think you, the people  
clap

"Their hands at my out-hewing this wild-gap

"For any Friedrich to fill up ? 'Tis mine—

"That's yours : I tell you, towards some  
such design

"Have I worked blindly, yes, and idly, yes,

"And for another, yes—but worked no less

"With instinct at my heart ; I else had  
swerved,

"While now—look round ! My cunning has  
preserved

"Samminiato—that's a central place

"Secures us Florence, boy,—in Pisa's case.

"By land as she by sea ; with Pisa ours,

"And Florence, and Pistoia, one devours

"The land at leisure ! Gloriously dispersed—

"Brescia, observe, Milan, Piacenza first

"That flanked us (ah, you know not !) in the  
March ;

"On these we pile, as keystone of our arch,

"Romagna and Bologna, whose first span

"Covered the Trentine and the Valsugan ;

"Sofia's Egna by Bolgiano's sure !" . . .

So he proceeded : half of all this, pure

Delusion, doubtless, nor the rest too true,

But what was undone he felt sure to do,

As ring by ring he wrung off, flung away

The pauldron-rings to give his sword-arm  
play—

Need of the sword now ! That would soon  
adjust

Aught wrong at present ; to the sword in-  
trust

Sordello's whiteness, undersize : 'twas plain

He hardly rendered right to his own brain—

Like a brave hound, men educate to pride

Himself on speed or scent nor aught beside,

As though he could not, gift by gift, match  
men !

Palma had listened patiently : but when

'Twas time expostulate, attempt withdraw

Taurello from his child, she, without awe

Took off his iron arms from, one by one,

Sordello's shrinking shoulders, and, that  
done,

Made him avert his visage and relieve

Sordello (you might see his corslet heave

The while) who, loose, rose—tried to speak,  
then sank :

They left him in the chamber. All was blank.

And even reeling down the narrow stair

Taurello kept up, as though unaware

Palma was by to guide him, the old device

—Something of Milan—"how we muster  
thrice

"The Torriani's strength there ; all along  
 "Our own Visconti cowed them"—thus the  
 song

Continued even while she bade him stoop,  
 Thrid somehow, by some glimpse of arrow-  
 loop,

The turnings to the gallery below,  
 Where he stopped short as Palma let him go.  
 When he had sat in silence long enough  
 Splintering the stone bench, braving a rebuff  
 She stopped the truncheon ; only to com-  
 mence

One of Sordello's poems, a pretence  
 For speaking, some poor rhyme of "Elys' hair  
 "And head that's sharp and perfect like a  
 pear,

"So smooth and close are laid the few fine  
 locks

"Stained like pale honey oozed from topmost  
 rocks

"Sun-blanced the livelong summer"—from  
 his worst

Performance, the Goito, as his first :  
 And that at end, conceiving from the brow  
 And open mouth no silence would serve now,  
 Went on to say the whole world loved that  
 man

And, for that matter, thought his face, tho'  
 wan,

Eclipsed the Count's—he sucking in each  
 phrase

As if an angel spoke. The foolish praise  
 Ended, he drew her on his mailed knees,  
 made

Her face a framework with his hands, a shade,  
 A crown, an aureole : there must she remain  
 (Her little mouth compressed with smiling  
 pain

As in his gloves she felt her tresses twitch)  
 To get the best look at, in fittest niche  
 Dispose his saint. That done, he kissed her  
 brow,

—"Lauded her father for his treason now,"  
 He told her, "only, how could one suspect  
 "The wit in him?—whose clansman, re-  
 collect,

"Was ever Salinguerra—she, the same,  
 "Romano and his lady—so, might claim

"To know all, as she should"—and thus  
 begun

Schemes with a vengeance, schemes on  
 schemes, "not one

"Fit to be told that foolish boy," he said,  
 "But only let Sordello Palma wed,

"—Then !"

'Twas a dim long narrow place at best :  
 Midway a sole grate showed the fiery West,  
 As shows its corpse the world's end some  
 split tomb—

A gloom, a rift of fire, another gloom,  
 Faced Palma—but at length Taurello set  
 Her free ; the grating held one ragged jet  
 Of fierce gold fire : he lifted her within  
 The hollow underneath—how else begin  
 Fate's second marvellous cycle, else renew  
 The ages than with Palma plain in view ?  
 Then paced the passage, hands clenched, head  
 erect,

Pursuing his discourse ; a grand unchecked  
 Monotony made out from his quick talk  
 And the recurring noises of his walk ;  
 —Somewhat too much like the o'ercharged  
 assent

Of two resolved friends in one danger blent,  
 Who heartened each the other against heart ;  
 Boasting there's nought to care for, when,  
 apart

The boaster, all's to care for. He, beside  
 Some shape not visible, in power and pride  
 Approached, out of the dark, ginglyly near,  
 Nearer, passed close in the broad light, his ear  
 Crimson, eyeballs suffused, temples full-  
 fraught,

Just a snatch of the rapid speech you caught,  
 And on he strode into the opposite dark,  
 Till presently the harsh heel's turn, a spark  
 I' the stone, and whirl of some loose em-  
 bossed thong

That crashed against the angle aye so long  
 After the last, punctual to an amount  
 Of mailed great paces you could not but  
 count,—

Prepared you for the pacing back again.  
 And by the snatches you might ascertain  
 That, Friedrich's Prefecture surmounted, left  
 By this alone in Italy, they cleft



Asunder, crushed together, at command  
Of none, were free to break up Hildebrand,  
Rebuild, he and Sordello, Charlemagne—  
But garnished, Strength with Knowledge,  
“if we deign

“Accept that compromise and stoop to give  
“Rome law, the Cæsar’s Representative.”  
Enough, that the illimitable flood  
Of triumphs after triumphs, understood  
In its faint reflux (you shall hear) sufficed  
Young Ecelin for appanage, enticed  
Him on till, these long quiet in their graves,  
He found ’twas looked for that a whole life’s  
braves

Should somehow be made good; so, weak  
and worn,

Must stagger up at Milan, one grey morn  
Of the to-come, and fight his latest fight.  
But, Salinguerra’s prophecy at height—  
He voluble with a raised arm and stiff,  
A blaring voice, a blazing eye, as if  
He had our very Italy to keep  
Or cast away, or gather in a heap  
To garrison the better—ay, his word  
Was, “run the cucumber into a gourd,  
“Drive Trent upon Apulia”—at their pitch  
Who spied the continents and islands which  
Grew mulberry leaves and sickles, in the  
map—

(Strange that three such confessions so should  
hap

To Palma, Dante spoke with in the clear  
Amorous silence of the Swooning-sphere,—  
*Cunizza*, as he called her! Never ask  
Of Palma more! She sat, knowing her task  
Was done, the labour of it,—for, success  
Concerned not Palma, passion’s votaress.)  
Triumph at height, and thus Sordello  
crowned—

Above the passage suddenly a sound  
Stops speech, stops walk: back shrinks  
Taurello, bids

With large involuntary asking lids,  
Palma interpret. “’Tis his own foot-stamp—  
“Your hand! His summons! Nay, this  
idle damp

“Befits not!” Out they two reeled dizzily.  
“Visconti’s strong at Milan,” resumed he,

In the old, somewhat insignificant way—  
(Was Palma wont, years afterward, to say)  
As though the spirit’s flight, sustained thus far,  
Dropped at that very instant.

Gone they are—

Palma, Taurello; Eglamor anon,  
Ecelin,—only Naddo’s never gone!  
—Labours, this moonrise, what the Master  
meant:

“Is Squarcialupo speckled?—purulent,  
“I’d say, but when was Providence put out?  
“He carries somehow handily about  
“His spite nor fouls himself!” Gotto’s vines  
Stand like a cheat detected—stark rough  
lines,

The moon breaks through, a grey mean scale  
against

The vault where, this eve’s Maiden, thou  
remain’st

Like some fresh martyr, eyes fixed—who can  
tell?

As Heaven, now all’s at end, did not so well,  
Spite of the faith and victory, to leave  
Its virgin quite to death in the lone eve.  
While the persisting hermit-hee . . . ha! wait  
No longer: these in compass, forward fate!

#### BOOK THE SIXTH.

THE thought of Eglamor’s least like a  
thought,  
And yet a false one, was, “Man shrinks to  
nought

“If matched with symbols of immensity;  
“Must quail, forsooth, before a quiet sky  
“Or sea, too little for their quietude:”  
And, truly, somewhat in Sordello’s mood  
Confirmed its speciousness, while eve slow  
sank

Down the near terrace to the farther bank,  
And only one spot left from out the night  
Glimmered upon the river opposite—  
A breadth of watery heaven like a bay,  
A sky-like space of water, ray for ray,  
And star for star, one richness where they  
mixed

As this and that wing of an angel, fixed,

Tumultuary splendours folded in  
 To die. Nor turned he till Ferrara's din  
 (Say, the monotonous speech from a man's lip  
 Who lets some first and eager purpose slip  
 In a new fancy's birth—the speech keeps on  
 Though elsewhere its informing soul be gone)  
 —Aroused him, surely offered succour. Fate  
 Paused with this eve; ere she precipitate  
 Herself,—best put off new strange thoughts  
 awhile,

That voice, those large hands, that portentous  
 smile,—

What help to pierce the future as the past  
 Lay in the plaining city?

And at last  
 The main discovery and prime concern,  
 All that just now imported him to learn,  
 Truth's self, like yonder slow moon to com-  
 plete

Heaven, rose again, and; naked at his feet,  
 Lighted his old life's every shift and change,  
 Effort with counter-effort; nor the range  
 Of each looked wrong except wherein it  
 checked,

Some other—which of these could he suspect,  
 Prying into them by the sudden blaze?

The real way seemed made up of all the ways—  
 Mood after mood of the one mind in him;  
 Tokens of the existence, bright or dim,  
 Of a transcendent all-embracing sense  
 Demanding only outward influence,  
 A soul, in Palma's phrase, above his soul,  
 Power to uplift his power,—such moon's  
 control

Over such sea-depths,—and their mass had  
 swept

Onward from the beginning and still kept  
 Its course: but years and years the sky above  
 Held none, and so, untasked of any love,  
 His sensitiveness idled, now amot,  
 Alive now, and, to sullenness or sport  
 Given wholly up, disposed itself anew  
 At every passing instigation, grew  
 And dwindled at caprice, in foam-showers  
 spilt,

Wedge-like insisting, quivered now a gilt  
 Shield in the sunshine, now a blinding race  
 Of whitest ripples o'er the reef—found place

For much display; not gathered up and,  
 hurled

Right from its heart, encompassing the world.  
 So had Sordello been, by consequence,  
 Without a function: others made pretence  
 To strength not half his own, yet had some  
 core

Within, submitted to some moon, before  
 Them still, superior still whate'er their  
 force,—

Were able therefore to fulfil a course,  
 Nor missed life's crown, authentic attribute.  
 To each who lives must be a certain fruit  
 Of having lived in his degree,—a stage,  
 Earlier or later in men's pilgrimage,  
 To stop at; and to this the spirits tend  
 Who, still discovering beauty without end,  
 Amass the scintillations, make one star  
 —Something unlike them, self-sustained,  
 afar,—

And meanwhile nurse the dream of being blest  
 By winning it to notice and invest  
 Their souls with alien glory, some one day  
 Whene'er the nucleus, gathering shape away,  
 Round to the perfect circle—soon or late,  
 According as themselves are formed to wait;  
 Whether mere human beauty will suffice

The yellow hair and the luxurious eyes,  
 Or human intellect seem best, or each  
 Combine in some ideal form past reach  
 On earth, or else some shade of these, some  
 aim,

Some love, hate even, take their place, the  
 same,

So to be served—all this they do not lose,  
 Waiting for death to live, nor idly choose  
 What must be Hell—a progress thus pursued  
 Through all existence, still above the food  
 That's offered them, still fain to reach beyond  
 The widened range, in virtue of their bond  
 Of sovereignty. Not that a Palma's Love,  
 A Salinguerra's Hate, would equal prove  
 To swaying all Sordello: but why doubt  
 Some love meet for such strength, some moon  
 without

Would match his sea?—or fear, Good mani-  
 fest,

Only the Best breaks faith?—Ah but the Best

Somehow eludes us ever, still might be  
And is not ! Crave we gems ? No penury  
Of their material round us ! Pliant earth  
And plastic flame—what balks the mage his  
birth

—Jacinth in balls or lodestone by the block ?  
Flinders enrich the strand, veins swell the  
rock ;

Nought more ! Seek creatures ? Life's i'  
the tempest, thought  
Clothes the keen hill-top, mid-day woods  
are fraught

With fervours : human forms are well enough !  
But we had hoped, encouraged by the stuff  
Profuse at nature's pleasure, men beyond  
These actual men !—and thus are over-fond  
In arguing, from Good—the Best, from force  
Divided—force combined, an ocean's course  
From this our sea whose mere intestine pants  
Might seem at times sufficient to our wants.

External power ! If none be adequate,  
And he stand forth ordained (a prouder fate)  
Himself a law to his own sphere ? "Remove  
"All incompleteness !" for that law, that love ?  
Nay, if all other laws be feints,—truth veiled  
Helpfully to weak vision that had failed  
To grasp aught but its special want,—for lure,  
Embodied ? Stronger vision could endure  
The unbidden want : no part—the whole of  
truth !

The People were himself ; nor, by the ruti  
At their condition, was he less impelled  
To alter the discrepancy beheld,  
Than if, from the sound whole, a sickly part  
Subtracted were transformed, decked out  
with art,

Then palmed on him as alien woe—the Guelf  
To succour, proud that he forsook himself.  
All is himself ; all service, therefore, rates  
Alike, nor serving one part, immolates  
The rest : but all in time ! "That lance of  
yours

"Makes havoc soon with Malek and his  
Moors,

"That buckler's lined with many a giant's  
beard

"Ere long, our champion, be the lance up-  
reared,

"The buckler wielded handsomely as now !  
"But view your escort, bear in mind your  
vow,

"Count the pale tracts of sand to pass ere  
that,

"And, if you hope we struggle through the  
flat,

"Put lance and buckler by ! Next half-  
month lacks

"Mere sturdy exercise of mace and axe

"To cleave this dismal brake of prickly-pear

"Which bristling holds Cydippe by the hair,

"Lames barefoot Agathon : this felled, we'll  
try

"The picturesque achievements by and by—  
"Next life !"

Ay, rally, mock, O People, urge  
Your claims !—for thus he ventured, to the  
verge,

Push a vain mummerly which perchance dis-  
trust

Of his fast-slipping resolution thrust  
Likewise : accordingly the Crowd—(as yet  
He had unconsciously contrived forget  
I' the whole, to dwell o' the points . . . one  
might assuage

The signal horrors easier than engage  
With a dim vulgar vast unobvious grief  
Not to be fancied off, nor gained relief  
In brilliant fits, cured by a happy quirk,  
But by dim vulgar vast unobvious work  
To correspond . . . ) this Crowd then, forth  
they stood.

"And now content thy stronger vision, brood  
"On thy bare want ; uncovered, turf by turf,  
"Study the corpse-face thro' the taint-worms'  
scurf !"

Down sank the People's Then ; uprose  
their Now.

These sad ones render service to ! And how  
Piteously little must that service prove  
—Had surely proved in any case ! for, move  
Each other obstacle away, let youth  
Become aware it had surprised a truth  
'Twere service to impart—can truth be seized,  
Settled forthwith, and, of the captive eased,  
Its captor find fresh prey, since this alit  
So happily, no guesture luring it,

The earnest of a flock to follow? Vain,  
Most vain! a life to spend ere this he chain  
To the poor crowd's complacence: ere the  
crowd

Pronounce it captured, he describes a cloud  
Its kin of twice the plume; which he, in turn,  
If he shall live as many lives, may learn  
How to secure: not else. Then Mantua  
called

Back to his mind how certain bards were  
thrall'd

—Buds blasted, but of breath more like  
perfume

Than Naddo's staring nosegay's carrion  
bloom;

Some insane rose that burnt heart out in  
sweets,

A spendthrift in the spring, no summer greets;  
Some Dularete, drunk with truths and wine,  
Grown bestial, dreaming how become divine.  
Yet to surmount this obstacle, commence  
With the commencement, merits crowning!  
Hence

Must truth be casual truth, elicited  
In sparks so mean, at intervals dispread  
So rarely, that 'tis like at no one time  
Of the world's story has not truth, the prime  
Of truth, the very truth which, loosed, had  
hurled

The world's course right, been really in the  
world

—Content the while with some mean spark  
by dint

Of some chance-blow, the solitary hint  
Of buried fire, which, rip earth's breast,  
would stream

Sky-ward!

Sordello's miserable gleam

Was looked for at the moment: he would dash  
This badge, and all it brought, to earth,—  
abash

Taurello thus, perhaps persuade him wrest  
The Kaiser from his purpose,—would attest  
His own belief, in any case. Before  
He dashes it however, think once more!

For, were that little, truly service? "Ay,  
'I' the end, no doubt; but meantime?  
Plain you spy

VOL. I.

"Its ultimate effect, but many flaws

"Of vision blur each intervening cause.

"Were the day's fraction clear as the life's  
sum

"Of service, Now as filled as teems To-come

"With evidence of good—nor too minute

"A share to vie with evil! No dispute,

"'Twere fittest maintain the Guelfs in rule:

"That makes your life's work: but you  
have to school

"Your day's work on these natures circum-  
stanced

"Thus variously, which yet, as each  
advanced

"Or might impede the Guelf rule, must be  
moved

"Now, for the Then's sake,—hating what  
you loved,

"Loving old hatreds! Nor if one man bore

"Brand upon temples while his fellow wore

"The aureole, would it task you to decide:

"But, portioned duly out, the future vied

"Never with the unparcelled present! Smite

"Or spare so much on warrant all so slight?

"The present's complete sympathies to break,

"Aversions bear with, for a future's sake

"So feeble? Tito ruined through one speck,

"The Legate saved by his sole lightish fleck?

"This were work, true, but work performed  
at cost

"Of other work; aught gained here, else-  
where lost.

"For a new segment spoil an orb half-done?

"Rise with the People one step, and sink—  
one?

"Were it but one step, less than the whole face

"Of things, your novel duty bids erase!

"Harms to abolish! What, the prophet  
saith,

"The minstrel singeth vainly then? Old  
faith,

"Old courage, only born because of harms,

"Were not, from highest to the lowest,  
charms?

"Flame may persist; but is not glare as  
staunch?

"Where the salt marshes stagnate, crystals  
branch;

. G 2

- "Blood dries to crimson; Evil's beautified  
 "In every shape. Thrust Beauty then aside  
 "And banish Evil! Wherefore? After all,  
 "Is Evil a result less natural  
 "Than Good? For overlook the seasons'  
     strife  
 "With tree and flower,—the hideous animal  
     life,  
 "(Of which who seeks shall find a grinning  
     taunt  
 "For his solution, and endure the vaunt  
 "Of nature's angel, as a child that knows  
 "Himself befooled, unable to propose  
 "Aught better than the fooling)—and but  
     care  
 "For men, for the mere People then and  
     there,—  
 "In these, could you but see that Good and  
     Ill  
 "Claimed you alike! Whence rose their  
     claim but still  
 "From Ill, as fruit of Ill? What else could  
     knit  
 "You theirs but Sorrow? Any free from it  
 "Were also free from you! Whose happiness  
 "Could be distinguished in this morning's  
     press  
 "Of miseries?—the fool's who passed a gibe  
 "'On thee,' jeered he, 'so wedded to thy  
     tribe,  
 "'Thou carriest green and yellow tokens in  
 "'Thy very face that thou art Ghibellin!'  
 "Much hold on you that fool obtained!  
     Nay mount  
 "Yet higher—and upon men's own account  
 "Must Evil stay: for, what is joy?—to heave  
 "Up one obstruction more, and common leave  
 "What was peculiar, by such act destroy  
 "Itself; a partial death is every joy;  
 "The sensible escape, enfranchisement  
 "Of a sphere's essence: once the vexed—  
     content,  
 "The cramped—at large, the growing circle  
     —round,  
 "All's to begin again—some novel bound  
 "To break, some new enlargement to entreat;  
 "The sphere though larger is not more  
     complete.
- "Now for Mankind's experience: who alone  
 "Might style the unobstructed world his  
     own?  
 "Whom palled Goito with its perfect things?  
 "Sordello's self: whereas for Mankind  
     springs  
 "Salvation by each hindrance interposed.  
 "They climb; life's view is not at once dis-  
     closed  
 "To creatures caught up, on the summit left,  
 "Heaven plain above them, yet of wings  
     bereft:  
 "But lower laid, as at the mountain's foot.  
 "So, range on range, the girdling forests  
     shoot  
 "'Twixt your plain prospect and the throngs  
     who scale  
 "Height after height, and pierce mists, veil  
     by veil,  
 "Heartened with each discovery; in their  
     soul,  
 "The Whole they seek by Parts—but, found  
     that Whole,  
 "Could they revert, enjoy past gains? The  
     space  
 "Of time you judge so meagre to embrace  
 "The Parts were more than plenty, once  
     attained  
 "The Whole, to quite exhaust it: nought  
     were gained  
 "But leave to look—not leave to do: Be-  
     neath  
 "Soon sates the looker—look Above, and  
     Death  
 "Tempts ere a tithe of Life be tasted. Live  
 "First, and die soon enough, Sordello!  
     Give  
 "Body and spirit the first right they claim,  
 "And pasture soul on a voluptuous shame  
 "That you, a pageant-city's denizen,  
 "Are neither vilely lodged midst Lombard  
     men—  
 "Can force joy out of sorrow, seem to  
     truck  
 "Bright attributes away for sordid muck,  
 "Yet manage from that very muck educe  
 "Gold; then subject, nor scruple, to your  
     cruce

"The world's discardings! Though real  
 ingots pay  
 "Your pains, the clods that yielded them are  
 clay  
 "To all beside,—would clay remain, though  
 quenched  
 "Your purging-fire; who's robbed then?  
 Had you wrenched  
 "An ampler treasure forth!—As 'tis, they  
 crave  
 "A share that ruins you and will not save  
 "Them. Why should sympathy command  
 you quit  
 "The course that makes your joy, nor will  
 remit  
 "Their woe? Would all arrive at joy?  
 Reverse  
 "The order (time instructs you) nor coerce  
 "Each unit till, some predetermined mode,  
 "The total be emancipate; men's road  
 "Is one, men's times of travel many; thwart  
 "No enterprising soul's precocious start  
 "Before the general march! If slow or fast  
 "All straggle up to the same point at last,  
 "Why grudge your having gained, a month  
 ago,  
 "The brakes at balm-shed,<sup>1</sup> asphodels in  
 blow,  
 "While they were landlocked? Speed their  
 Then, but how  
 "This badge would suffer you improve your  
 Now!"  
 His time of action for, against, or with  
 Our world (I labour to extract the pith  
 Of this his problem) grew, that even-tide,  
 Gigantic with its power of joy, beside  
 The world's eternity of impotence  
 To profit though at his whole joy's expense.  
 "Make nothing of my day because so brief?  
 "Rather make more: instead of joy, use  
 grief  
 "Before its novelty have time subside!  
 "Wait not for the late savour, leave untried  
 "Virtue, the creaming honey-wine, quick  
 squeeze  
 "Vice like a biting spirit from the lees

<sup>1</sup> Guims exuding from brushwood.

"Of life! Together let wrath, hatred, lust,  
 "All tyrannies in every shape, be thrust  
 "Upon this Now, which time may reason out  
 "As mischiefs, far from benefits, no doubt;  
 "But long ere then Sordello will have slept  
 "Away; you teach him at Goito's crypt,  
 "There's a blank issue to that fiery thrill.  
 "Stirring, the few cope with the many, still:  
 "So much of sand as, quiet, makes a mass  
 "Unable to produce three tufts of grass,  
 "Shall, troubled by the whirlwind, render  
 void  
 "The whole calm glebe's endeavour: be  
 employed!  
 "And e'en though somewhat smart the  
 Crowd for this,  
 "Contribute each his pang to make your bliss,  
 "'Tis but one pang—one blood-drop to the  
 bowl  
 "Which brimful tempts the sluggish asp  
 uncowl  
 "At last, stains ruddily the dull red cape,  
 "And, kindling orbs grey as the unripe grape  
 "Before, avails forthwith to disentrance  
 "The portent, soon to lead a mystic dance  
 "Among you! For, who sits alone in Rome?  
 "Have those great hands indeed hewn out a  
 home,  
 "And set me there to live? Oh life, life-  
 breath,  
 "Life-blood,—ere sleep, come travail, life  
 ere death!  
 "This life stream on my soul, direct, oblique,  
 "But always streaming! Hindrances? They  
 pique:  
 "Helps? such . . . but why repeat, my  
 soul o'ertops  
 "Each height, then every depth profoundlier  
 drops?  
 "Enough that I can live, and would live!  
 Wait  
 "For some transcendent life reserved by Fate  
 "To follow this? Oh, never! Fate, I trust  
 "The same, my soul to; for, as who flings  
 dust,  
 "Perchance (so facile was the deed) she  
 chequed  
 "The void with these materials to affect

'My soul diversely : these consigned anew  
 'To nought by death, what marvel if she  
   threw  
 'A second and superber spectacle  
 'Before me? What may serve for sun, what  
   still  
 'Wander a moon above me? What else wind  
 'About me like the pleasures left behind,  
 'And how shall some new flesh that is not  
   flesh  
 'Cling to me? What's new laughter?  
   Soothes the fresh  
 'Sleep like sleep? Fate's exhaustless for  
   my sake  
 'In brave resource : but whether bids she slake  
 'My thirst at this first rivulet, or count  
 'No draught worth lip save from some rocky  
   fount  
 'Above i' the clouds, while here she's pro-  
   vident  
 'Of pure loquacious pearl, the soft tree-tent  
 'Guards, with its face of reate and sedge,  
   nor fail  
 'The silver globules and gold-sparkling grail  
 'At bottom? Oh, 'twere too absurd to slight  
 'For the hereafter the to-day's delight!  
 'Quench thirst at this, then seek next well-  
   spring : wear  
 'Home-lilies ere strange lotus in my hair!  
 'Here is the Crowd, whom I with freest heart  
 'Offer to serve, contented for my part  
 'To give life up in service,—only grant  
 'That I do serve ; if otherwise, why want  
 'Aught further of me? If men cannot choose  
 'But set aside life, why should I refuse  
 'The gift? I take it—I, for one, engage  
 'Never to falter through my pilgrimage—  
 'Nor end it howling that the stock or stone  
 'Were enviable, truly : I, for one,  
 'Will praise the world, you style mere ante-  
   room  
 'To palace—be it so ! shall I assume  
 '—My foot the courtly gait, my tongue the  
   trope,  
 'My mouth the smirk, before the doors fly open  
 'One moment? What? with guarders row  
   on row,  
 'Gay swarms of varletry that come and go,

'Pages to dice with, waiting-girls unlace  
 'The plackets<sup>1</sup> of, pert claimants help dis-  
   place,  
 'Heart-heavy suitors get a rank for,—laugh  
 'At yon sleek parasite, break his own staff  
 'Cross Beetle-brows the Usher's shoulder,  
   —why  
 'Admitted to the presence by and by,  
 'Should thought of having lost these make  
   me grieve  
 'Among new joys I reach, for joys I leave?  
 'Cool citrine-crystals, fierce pyropus-stone,<sup>2</sup>  
 'Are floor-work there ! But do I let alone  
 'That black-eyed peasant in the vestibule  
 'Once and for ever?—Floor-work? No  
   such fool !  
 'Rather, were heaven to forestall earth, I'd say  
 'I, is it, must be blest? Then, my own way  
 'Bless me ! Give firmer arm and fleetier foot,  
 'I'll thank you : but to no mad wings trans-  
   mute  
 'These limbs of mine—our greensward was  
   so soft !  
 'Nor camp I on the thunder-cloud aloft :  
 'We feel the bliss distinctlier, having thus  
 'Engines subservient, not mixed up with us.  
 'Better move palpably through heaven : nor,  
   freed  
 'Of flesh, forsooth, from space to space pro-  
   ceed  
 'Mid flying synods of worlds ! No : in  
   heaven's marge  
 'Show Titan still, recumbent o'er his targe  
 'Solid with stars—the Centaur at his game,  
 'Made tremulously out in hoary flame !  
 'Life ! Yet the very cup whose extreme  
   dull  
 'Dregs, even, I would quaff, was dashed,  
   at full,  
 'Aside so oft ; the death I fly, revealed  
 'So oft a better life this life concealed,  
 'And which sage, champion, martyr, through  
   each path  
 'Have hunted fearlessly—the horrid bath,  
 'The crippling-irons and the fiery chair.  
 'Twas well for them ; let me become aware

Under-petticoats.

<sup>2</sup> Red bronze.

"As they, and I relinquish life, too! Let  
 "What masters life disclose itself! Forget  
 "Vain ordinances, I have one appeal—  
 "I feel, am what I feel, know what I feel;  
 "So much is truth to me. What Is, then?  
 Since  
 "One object, viewed diversely, may evince  
 "Beauty and ugliness—this way attract,  
 "That way repel,—why gloze upon the fact?  
 "Why must a single of the sides be right?  
 "What bids choose this and leave the opposite?  
 "Where's abstract Right for me?—in youth  
 endued  
 "With Right still present, still to be pursued,  
 "Thro' all the interchange of circles, rife  
 "Each with its proper law and mode of life,  
 "Each to be dwelt at ease in: where, to  
 sway  
 "Absolute with the Kaiser, or obey  
 "Implicit with his serf of fluttering heart,  
 "Or, like a sudden thought of God's, to start  
 "Up, Brutus in the presence, then go shout  
 "That some should pick the unstrung jewels  
 out—  
 "Each, well!"

And, as in moments when the past  
 Gave partially enfranchisement, he cast  
 Himself quite through mere secondary states  
 Of his soul's essence, little loves and hates,  
 Into the mid deep yearnings overlaid  
 By these; as who should pierce hill, plain,  
 grove, glade,  
 And on into the very nucleus probe  
 That first determined there exist a globe.  
 As that were easiest, half the globe dissolved,  
 So seemed Sordello's closing-truth evolved  
 By his flesh-half's break-up; the sudden  
 swell  
 Of his expanding soul showed Ill and Well,  
 Sorrow and Joy, Beauty and Ugliness,  
 Virtue and Vice, the Larger and the Less,  
 All qualities, in fine, recorded here,  
 Might be but modes of Time and this one  
 sphere,  
 Urgent on these, but not of force to bind  
 Eternity, as Time—as Matter—Mind,  
 If Mind, Eternity, should choose assert  
 Their attributes within a Life: thus girt

With circumstance, next change beholds  
 them cinct  
 Quite otherwise—with Good and Ill distinct,  
 Joys, sorrows, tending to a like result—  
 Contrived to render easy, difficult,  
 This or the other course of . . . what new  
 bond  
 In place of flesh may stop their flight beyond  
 Its new sphere, as that course does harm or  
 good  
 To its arrangements. Once this understood,  
 As suddenly he felt himself alone,  
 Quite out of Time and this world: all was  
 known.  
 What made the secret of his past despair?  
 —Most imminent when he seemed most  
 aware  
 Of his own self-sufficiency: made mad  
 By craving to expand the power he had,  
 And not new power to be expanded?—just  
 This made it; Soul on Matter being thrust,  
 Joy comes when so much Soul is wreaked in  
 Time  
 On Matter: let the Soul's attempt sublime  
 Matter beyond the scheme and so prevent  
 By more or less that deed's accomplishment,  
 And Sorrow follows: Sorrow how avoid?  
 Let the employer match the thing employed,  
 Fit to the finite his infinity,  
 And thus proceed for ever, in degree  
 Changed but in kind the same, still limited  
 To the appointed circumstance and dead  
 To all beyond. A sphere is but a sphere;  
 Small, Great, are merely terms we bandy  
 here;  
 Since to the spirit's absoluteness all  
 Are like. Now, of the present sphere we call  
 Life, are conditions; take but this among  
 Many; the body was to be so long  
 Youthful, no longer: but, since no control  
 Tied to that body's purposes his soul,  
 She chose to understand the body's trade  
 More than the body's self—had fain conveyed  
 Her boundless to the body's bounded lot.  
 Hence, the soul permanent, the body not,—  
 Scarcely its minute for enjoying here,—  
 The soul must needs instruct her weak  
 compeer,



Run o'er its capabilities and wring  
 A joy thence, she held worth experiencing :  
 Which, far from half discovered even,—lo,  
 The minute gone, the body's power let go  
 Apportioned to that joy's acquirement !  
 Broke  
 Morning o'er earth, he yearned for all it  
 woke—  
 From the volcano's vapour-flag, winds hoist  
 Black o'er the spread of sea,—down to the  
 moist  
 Dale's silken barley-spikes sullied with rain,  
 Swayed earthwards, heavily to rise again—  
 The Small, a sphere as perfect as the Great  
 To the soul's absoluteness. Meditate  
 Too long on such a morning's cluster-chord  
 And the whole music it was framed afford,—  
 The chord's might half discovered, what  
 should pluck  
 One string, his finger, was found palsy-struck.  
 And then no marvel if the spirit, shown  
 A saddest sight—the body lost alone  
 Through her officious proffered help, deprived  
 Of this and that enjoyment Fate contrived,—  
 Virtue, Good, Beauty, each allowed slip  
 hence,—  
 Vain-gloriously were fain, for recompense,  
 To stem the ruin even yet, protract  
 The body's term, supply the power it lacked  
 From her infinity, compel it learn  
 These qualities were only Time's concern,  
 And body may, with spirit helping, barred—  
 Advance the same, vanquished — obtain  
 reward,  
 Reap joy where sorrow was intended grow,  
 Of Wrong make Right, and turn Ill Good  
 below.  
 And the result is, the poor body soon  
 Sinks under what was meant a wondrous  
 boon,  
 Leaving its bright accomplice all aghast.  
 So much was plain then, proper in the  
 past ;  
 To be complete for, satisfy the whole  
 Series of spheres—Eternity, his soul  
 Needs must exceed, prove incomplete for, each  
 Single sphere—Time. But does our know-  
 ledge reach  
 No farther? Is the cloud of hindrance broke  
 But by the failing of the fleshly yoke,  
 Its loves and hates, as now when death lets  
 soar  
 Sordello, self-sufficient as before,  
 Though during the mere space that shall  
 elapse  
 'Twixt his enthrallment in new bonds perhaps?  
 Must life be ever just escaped, which should  
 Have been enjoyed?—nay, might have been  
 and would,  
 Each purpose ordered right—the soul's no  
 whit  
 Beyond the body's purpose under it.  
 Like yonder breadth of watery heaven, a bay,  
 And that sky-space of water, ray for ray  
 And star for star, one richness where they  
 mixed  
 As this and that wing of an angel, fixed,  
 Tumultuary splendours folded in  
 To die—would soul, proportioned thus, begin  
 Exciting discontent, or surelier quell  
 The body if, aspiring, it rebel?  
 But how so order life? Still brutalize  
 The soul, the sad world's way, with muffled  
 eyes  
 To all that was before, all that shall be  
 After this sphere—all and each quality  
 Save some sole and immutable Great, Good  
 And Deauteous whither fate has loosed its  
 hood  
 To follow? Never may some soul see All  
 The Great Before and After, and the Small  
 Now, yet be saved by this the simplest lore,  
 And take the single course prescribed before,  
 As the king-bird with ages on his plumes  
 Travels to die in his ancestral glooms?  
 But where descry the Love that shall select  
 That course? Here is a soul whom, to affect,  
 Nature has plied with all her means, from  
 trees  
 And flowers e'en to the Multitude!—and  
 these,  
 Decides he save or no? One word to end !  
 Ah my Sordello, I this once befriend  
 And speak for you. Of a Power above you  
 still  
 Which, utterly incomprehensible,

Is out of rivalry, which thus you can  
Love, tho' unloving all conceived by man—  
What need ! And of—none the minutest  
duct

To that out-nature, nought that would in-  
struct

And so let rivalry begin to live—  
But of a Power its representative  
Who, being for authority the same,  
Communication different, should claim

A course, the first chose but this last re-  
vealed—

This Human clear, as that Divine concealed—  
What utter need !

What has Sordello found ?

Or can his spirit go the mighty round,  
End where poor Eglamor begun ? So, says  
Old fable, the two eagles went two ways  
About the world : where, in the midst, they  
met,

Though on a shifting waste of sand, men set  
Jove's temple. Quick, what has Sordello  
found ?

For they approach—approach—that foot's  
rebound

Palma ? No, Salinguerra though in mail ;  
They mount, have reached the threshold,  
dash the veil

Aside—and you divine who sat there dead,  
Under his foot the badge : still, Palma said,  
A triumph lingering in the wide eyes,  
Wider than some spent swimmer's if he  
spies

Help from above in his extreme despair,  
And, head far back on shoulder thrust, turns  
there

With short quick passionate cry : as Palma  
pressed

In one great kiss, her lips upon his breast,  
It beat.

By this, the hermit-bee has stopped  
His day's toil at Goito : the new-cropped  
Dead vine-leaf answers, now 'tis eve, he bit,  
Twirled so, and filed all day : the mansion's  
fit,

God counselled for. As easy guess the word  
That passed betwixt them, and become the  
third

To the soft small unfrighted bee, as tax  
Him with one fault—so, no remembrance racks  
Of the stone maidens and the font of stone  
He, creeping through the crevice, leaves  
alone.

Alas, my friend, alas Sordello, whom  
Anon they laid within that old font-tomb,  
And, yet again, alas !

And now is't worth

Our while bring back to mind, much less set  
forth

How Salinguerra extricates himself  
Without Sordello ? Ghibellin and Guelph  
May fight their fiercest out ? If Richard  
sulked

In durance or the Marquis paid his mulct,  
Who cares, Sordello gone ? The upshot, sure,  
Was peace ; our chief made some frank over-  
ture

That prospered ; compliment fell thick and  
fast

On its disposer, and Taurello passed  
With foe and friend for an outstripping soul,  
Nine days at least. Then,—fairly reached  
the goal,—

He, by one effort, blotted the great hope  
Out of his mind, nor further tried to cope  
With Este, that mad evening's style, but sent  
Away the Legate and the League, content  
No blame at least the brothers had incurred,  
—Dispatched a message to the Monk, he  
heard

Patiently first to last, scarce shivered at,  
Then curled his limbs up on his wolfskin mat  
And ne'er spoke more,—informed the  
Ferrarese

He but retained their rule so long as these  
Lingered in pupilage,—and last, no mode  
Apparent else of keeping safe the road  
From Germany direct to Lombardy .

For Friedrich,—none, that is, to guarantee  
The faith and promptitude of who should next  
Obtain Sofia's dowry,—sore perplexed—  
(Sofia being youngest of the tribe  
Of daughters, Ecelin was wont to bribe  
The envious magnates with—nor, since he  
sent

Henry of Egna this fair child, had Trent

Once failed the Kaiser's purposes—"we lost  
 "Egna last year, and who takes Egna's post—  
 "Opens the Lombard gate if Friedrich  
 knock?")

Himself espoused the Lady of the Rock  
 In pure necessity, and, so destroyed  
 His slender last of chances, quite made void  
 Old prophecy, and spite of all the schemes  
 Overt and covert, youth's deeds, age's  
 dreams,

Was sucked into Romano. And so hushed  
 He up this evening's work that, when 'twas  
 brushed

Somehow against by a blind chronicle  
 Which, chronicling whatever woe befell  
 Ferrara, noted this the obscure woe  
 Of "Salinguerra's sole son Giacomo  
 "Deceased, fatuous and doting, ere his sire,"  
 The townsfolk rubbed their eyes, could but  
 admire  
 Which of Sofia's five was meant.

Of earth's dead hope were tardy to collapse,  
 Obliterated not the beautiful  
 Distinctive features at a crash: but dull  
 And duller these, next year, as Guelphs with-  
 drew

Each to his stronghold. Then (securely too  
 Ecelin at Campese slept; close by,  
 Who likes may see him in Solagna lie,  
 With cushioned head and gloved hand to  
 denote

The cavalier he was)—then his heart smote  
 Young Ecelin at last; long since adult.  
 And, save Vicenza's business, what result  
 In blood and blaze? (So hard to intercept  
 Sordello till his plain withdrawal!) Stepped  
 Then its new lord on Lombardy. I' the nick  
 Of time when Ecelin and Alberic  
 Closed with Taurello, come precisely news  
 That in Verona half the souls refuse  
 Allegiance to the Marquis and the Count—  
 Have cast them from a throne they bid him  
 mount,

Their Podestà, thro' his ancestral worth.  
 Ecelin flew there, and the town henceforth  
 Was wholly his—Taurello sinking back  
 From temporary station to a track

That suited. News received of this acquist,  
 Friedrich did come to Lombardy: who  
 missed

Taurello then? Another year: they took  
 Vicenza, left the Marquis scarce a nook  
 For refuge, and, when hundreds two or three  
 Of Guelphs conspired to call themselves "The  
 Free,"

Opposing Alberic,—vile Bassanese,—  
 (Without Sordello!)—Ecelin at ease  
 Slaughtered them so observably, that oft  
 A little Salinguerra looked with soft  
 Blue eyes up, asked his sire the proper age  
 To get appointed his proud uncle's page.  
 More years passed, and that sire had  
 dwindled down

To a mere showy turbulent soldier, grown  
 Better through age, his parts still in repute,  
 Subtle—how else?—but hardly so astute  
 As his contemporaneous friends professed;  
 Undoubtedly a brawler: for the rest,  
 Known by each neighbour, and allowed for, let  
 Keep his incorrigible ways, nor fret  
 Men who would miss their boyhood's bug-  
 bear: "trap

"The ostrich, suffer our bald osprey flap  
 "A battered pinion!"—was the word. In  
 fine,

One flap too much and Venice's marine  
 Was meddled with; no overlooking that!  
 She captured him in his Ferrara, fat  
 And florid at a banquet, more by fraud  
 Than force, to speak the truth; there's  
 slender laud

Ascribed you for assisting eighty years  
 To pull his death on such a man; fate shears  
 The life-cord prompt enough whose last fine  
 thread

You fritter: so, presiding his board-head,  
 The old smile, your assurance all went well  
 With Friedrich (as if he were like to tell!)  
 In rushed (a plan contrived before) our friends,  
 Made some pretence at fighting, some amends  
 For the shame done his eighty years—(apart  
 The principle, none found it in his heart  
 To be much angry with Taurello)—gained  
 Their galleys with the prize, and what re-  
 mained

But carry him to Venice for a show?

—Set him, as 'twere, down gently—free to go  
His gait, inspect our square, pretend observe  
The swallows soaring their eternal curve  
'Twixt Theodore and Mark, if citizens  
Gathered importunately, fives and tens,  
To point their children the Magnifico,  
All but a monarch once in firm-land, go  
His gait among them now—"it took, indeed,  
"Fully this Ecelin to supersede  
"That man," remarked the seniors. Singular!  
Sordello's inability to bar  
Rivals the stage, that evening, mainly brought  
About by his strange disbelief that aught  
Was ever to be done,—this thrust the Twain  
Under Taurello's tutelage,—whom, brain  
And heart and hand, he forthwith in one rod  
Indissolubly bound to baffle God  
Who loves the world—and thus allowed the  
thin

Grey wizened dwarfish devil Ecelin,  
And massy-muscled big-boned Alberic  
(Mere man, alas!) to put his problem quick  
To demonstration—prove wherever's will  
To do, there's plenty to be done, or ill  
Or good. Anointed, then, to rend and rip—  
Kings of the gag and flesh-hook, screw and  
whip,  
They plagued the world: a touch of Hilde-  
brand

(So far from obsolete!) made Lombards band  
Together, cross their coats as for Christ's cause,  
And saving Milan win the world's applause.  
Ecelin perished: and I think grass grew  
Never so pleasant as in Valley Rù  
By San Zenon where Alberic in turn  
Saw his exasperated captors burn  
Seven children and their mother; then, re-  
galed  
So far, tied on to a wild horse, was trailed  
To death through raunce and bramble-bush.

I take  
God's part and testify that 'mid the brake  
Wild o'er his castle on the pleasant knoll,  
You hear its one tower left, a belfry, toll—  
The earthquake spared it last year, laying flat  
The modern church beneath,—no harm in  
that!

Chirrup the contumacious grasshopper,  
Rustles the lizard and the cushats chirre  
Above the ravage: there, at deep of day  
A week since, heard I the old Canon say  
He saw with his own eyes a barrow burst  
And Alberic's huge skeleton unheard  
Only five years ago. He added, "June's  
"The month for carding off our first cocoons  
"The silkworms fabricate"—a double news,  
Nor he nor I could tell the worthier. Choose!  
And Naddo gone, all's gone; not Eglamor!  
Believe, I knew the face I waited for,  
A guest my spirit of the golden courts!  
Oh strange to see how, despite ill-reports,  
Disuse, some wear of years, that face retained  
Its joyous look of love! Suns waxed and  
waned,

And still my spirit held an upward flight,  
Spiral on spiral, gyres of life and light  
More and more gorgeous—ever that face there,  
The last admitted! crossed, too, with some care  
As perfect triumph were not sure for all,  
But, on a few, enduring damp must fall,  
—A transient struggle, haply a painful sense  
Of the inferior nature's clinging—whence  
Slight starting tears easily wiped away,  
Fine jealousies soon stifled in the play  
Of irrepressible admiration—not  
Aspiring, all considered, to their lot  
Who ever, just as they prepare ascend  
Spiral on spiral, wish thee well, impend  
Thy frank delight at their exclusive track,  
That upturned fervid face and hair put back!

Is there no more to say? He of the  
rhymes—

Many a tale, of this retreat betimes,  
Was born: Sordello die at once for men?  
The Chroniclers of Mantua tired their pen  
Telling how *Sordello Prince Visconti* saved  
Mantua, and elsewhere notably behaved—  
Who thus, by fortune ordering events,  
Passed with posterity, to all intents,  
For just the god he never could become.  
As Knight, Bard, Gallant, men were never  
dumb

In praise of him: while what he should have  
been,  
Could be, and was not—the one step too mean

For him to take,—we suffer at this day  
Because of: Ecelin had pushed away  
Its chance ere Dante could arrive and take  
That step Sordello spurned, for the world's  
sake:

He did much—but Sordello's chance was  
gone.

Thus, had Sordello dared that step alone,  
Apollo had been compassed: 'twas a fit  
He wished should go to him, not he to it  
—As one content to merely be supposed  
Singing or fighting elsewhere, while he dozed  
Really at home—one who was chiefly glad  
To have achieved the few real deeds he had,  
Because that way assured they were not worth  
Doing, so spared from doing them hence-  
forth—

A tree that covets fruitage and yet tastes  
Never itself, itself. Had he embraced  
Their cause then, men had plucked Hes-  
perian fruit

And, praising that, just thrown him in to boot  
All he was anxious to appear, but scarce  
Solicitous to be. A sorry farce  
Such life is, after all! Cannot I say  
He lived for some one better thing? this  
way.—

Lo, on a heathy brown and nameless hill  
By sparkling Asolo, in mist and chill,  
Morning just up, higher and higher runs  
A child barefoot and rosy. See! the sun's  
On the square castle's inner-court's low wall  
Like the chine of some extinct animal

Half turned to earth and flowers; and through  
the haze

(Save where some slender patches of grey  
maize

Are to be overleaped) that boy has crossed  
The whole hill-side of dew and powder-frost  
Matting the balm and mountain camomile.

Up and up goes he, singing all the while  
Some unintelligible words to beat  
The lark, God's poet, swooning at his feet,  
So worsted is he at "the few fine locks  
"Stained like pale honey oozed from top-  
most rocks

"Sun-blached the livelong summer,"—all  
that's left

Of the Goito lay! And thus bereft,  
Sleep and forget, Sordello! In effect  
He sleeps, the feverish poet—I suspect  
Not utterly companionless; but, friends,  
Wake up! The ghost's gone, and the story  
ends

I'd fain hope, sweetly; seeing, peri or ghoul,  
That spirits are conjectured fair or foul,  
Evil or good, judicious authors think,  
According as they vanish in a stink  
Or in a perfume. Friends, be frank! ye snuff  
Civet, I warrant. Really? Like enough!  
Merely the savour's rareness; any nose  
May ravage with impunity a rose:  
Rife a musk-pod and 'twill ache like yours!  
I'd tell you that same pungency ensures  
An after-gust, but that were overbold.  
Who would has heard Sordello's story told.

# PIPPA PASSES;

## A DRAMA.

1841

[This drama is hinged on the chance appearance of Pippa, a poor child, at work all the year round (save one day) at the silk-mills at Asolo, in Northern Italy, at critical moments in the spiritual life-history of the leading characters in the play. Just when their emotions, passions, motives are swinging backwards and forwards Pippa passes by singing some refrain, and her voice determines the actions and fashions the destinies of men and women to whom she was unknown. It is a play of much simplicity, as well as rare charm and beauty.]

I DEDICATE MY BEST INTENTIONS, IN THIS POEM,  
ADMIRINGLY TO THE AUTHOR OF "ION,"  
AFFECTIONATELY TO MR. SERGEANT TALFOURD

R. B.

LONDON: 1841.

### PIPPA PASSES.

#### PERSONS.

PIPPA.  
OTTIMA.  
SEBALD.  
*Foreign Students.*  
GOTTLIEB.  
SCHRAMM.  
JULES.  
PHENE.  
*Austrian Police.*  
BLUPHOCKS.  
LUIGI *and his Mother.*  
*Poor Girls.*  
MONSIGNOR *and his Attendants.*

#### INTRODUCTION.

NEW YEAR'S DAY AT ASOLO IN THE  
TREVISAN.

SCENE.—*A large mean airy chamber. A girl, PIPPA, from the Silk-mills; springing out of bed.*

DAY!  
Faster and more fast,  
O'er night's brim, day boils at last

Boils, pure gold, o'er the cloud-cup's brim  
Where spurting and suppressed it lay,  
For not a froth-flake touched the rim  
Of yonder gap in the solid gray  
Of the eastern cloud, an hour away;  
But forth one wavelet, then another, curled,  
Till the whole sunrise, not to be suppressed,  
Rose, reddened, and its seething breast  
Flickered in bounds, grew gold, then over-  
flowed the world.

Oh, Day, if I squander a wavelet of thee,  
A mite of my twelve hours' treasure,  
The least of thy gazes or glances,  
(Be they grants thou art bound to or gifts  
above measure)  
One of thy choices or one of thy chances,  
(Be they tasks God imposed thee or freaks  
at thy pleasure)  
—My Day, if I squander such labour or  
leisure,  
Then shame fall on Asolo, mischief on me!

Thy long blue solemn hours serenely flowing,  
Whence earth, we feel, gets steady help and  
good—

Thy fitful sunshine-minutes, coming, going,  
As if earth turned from work in gamesome  
mood—

All shall be mine ! But thou must treat me  
not

As prosperous ones are treated, those who live  
At hand here, and enjoy the higher lot,  
In readiness to take what thou wilt give,  
And free to let alone what thou refusest ;  
For, Day, my holiday, if thou ill-usest  
Me, who am only Pippa,—old-year's sorrow,  
Cast off last night, will come again to-morrow :  
Whereas, if thou prove gentle, I shall borrow  
Sufficient strength of thee for new-year's  
sorrow.

All other men and women that this earth  
Belongs to, who all days alike possess,  
Make general plenty cure particular dearth,  
Get more joy one way, if another, less :  
Thou art my single day, God lends to leaven  
What were all earth else, with a feel of  
heaven,—

Sole light that helps me through the year,  
thy sun's !

Try now ! Take Asolo's Four Happiest  
Ones—

And let thy morning rain on that superb  
Great haughty Ottima ; can rain disturb  
Her Sebald's homage ? All the while thy rain  
Beats fiercest on her shrub-house window-  
pane,

He will but press the closer, breathe more  
warm

Against her cheek ; how should she mind  
the storm ?

And, morning past, if mid-day shed a gloom  
O'er Jules and Phene,—what care bride and  
groom

Save for their dear selves ? 'Tis their  
marriage-day ;

And while they leave church and go home  
their way,

Hand clasping hand, within each breast  
would be

Sunbeams and pleasant weather spite of thee.  
Then, for another trial, obscure thy eve  
With mist,—will Luigi and his mother  
grieve—

The lady and her child, unmatched, for-  
sooth,

She in her age, as Luigi in his youth,  
For true content ? The cheerful town, warm,  
close

And safe, the sooner that thou art morose,  
Receives them. And yet once again, out-  
break

In storm at night on Monsignor, they make  
Such stir about,—whom they expect from  
Rome

To visit Asolo, his brothers' home,  
And say here masses proper to release  
A soul from pain,—what storm dares hurt  
his peace ?

Calm would he pray, with his own thoughts  
to ward

Thy thunder off, nor want the angels' guard.  
But Pippa—just one such mischance would  
spoil

Her day that lightens the next twelvemonth's  
toil

At wearisome silk-winding, coil on coil !  
And here I let time slip for nought !

Aha, you foolhardy sunbeam, caught  
With a single splash from my ewer !  
You that would taock the best pursuer,  
Was my basin over-deep ?

One splash of water ruins you asleep,  
And up, up, fleet your brilliant bits  
Wheeling and counterwheeling,  
Reeling, broken beyond healing :  
Now grow together on the ceiling !  
That will task your wits.

Whoever it was quenched fire first, hoped to  
see

Morsel after morsel flee  
As merrily, as giddily . . .

Meantime, what lights my sunbeam on,  
Where settles by degrees the radiant cripple ?  
Oh, is it surely blown, my martagon ?<sup>1</sup>  
New-blown and ruddy as St. Agnes' nipple,  
Plump as the flesh-bunch on some Turk  
bird's poll !

Be sure if corals, branching 'neath the ripple  
Of ocean, bud there,—fairies watch unroll

<sup>1</sup> A lily with purple flowers.

Such turban-flowers ; I say, such lamps  
disperse  
Thick red flame through that dusk green  
universe !

I am queen of thee, floweret !  
And each fleshy blossom  
Preserve I not—(safer  
Than leaves that embower it,  
Or shells that embosom)  
—From weevil and chafer ?  
Laugh through my pane then ; solicit the bee ;  
Gibe him, be sure ; and, in midst of thy glee,  
Love thy queen, worship me !

—Worship whom else ? For am I not, this  
day,  
Whate'er I please ? What shall I please to-  
day ?  
My morn, noon, eve and night—how spend  
my day ?

To-morrow I must be Pippa who winds silk,  
The whole year round, to earn just bread and  
milk :

But, this one day, I have leave to go,  
And play out my fancy's fullest games ;  
I may fancy all day—and it shall be so—  
That I taste of the pleasures, am called by  
the names

Of the Happiest Four in our Asolo !

See ! Up the hill-side yonder, through the  
morning,

Some one shall love me, as the world calls love :  
I am no less than Ottima, take warning !

The gardens, and the great stone house above,  
And other house for shrubs, all glass in front,  
Are mine ; where Sebald steals, as he is wont,  
To court me, while old Luca yet reposes :  
And therefore, till the shrub-house door un-  
closes,

I . . . what now ?—give abundant cause for  
prate

About me—Ottima, I mean—of late,  
Too bold, too confident she'll still face down  
The spitefullest of talkers in our town.  
How we talk in the little town below !

But love, love, love—there's better love,  
I know !

This foolish love was only day's first offer ;  
I choose my next love to defy the scoffer :  
For do not our Bride and Bridegroom sally  
Out of Possagno church at noon ?  
Their house looks over Orcana valley :  
Why should not I be the bride as soon  
As Ottima ? For I saw, beside,  
Arrive last night that little bride—  
Saw, if you call it seeing her, one flash  
Of the pale snow-pure cheek and black bright  
tresses,

Blacker than all except the black eyelash ;  
I wonder she contrives those lids no dresses !  
—So strict was she, the veil

Should cover close her pale  
Pure cheeks—a bride to look at and scarce  
touch,

Scarce touch, remember, Jules ! For are  
not such

Used to be tended, flower-like, every feature,  
As if one's breath would fray the lily of a  
creature ?

A soft and easy life these ladies lead :  
Whiteness in us were wonderful indeed.

Oh, save that brow its virgin dimness,  
Keep that foot its lady primness,  
Let those ankles never swerve  
From their exquisite reserve,  
Yet have to trip along the streets like me,  
All but naked to the knee !

How will she ever grant her Jules a bliss  
So startling as her real first infant kiss ?  
Oh, no—not envy, this !

—Not envy, sure !—for if you gave me  
Leave to take or to refuse,  
In earnest, do you think I'd choose  
That sort of new love to enslave me ?  
Mine should have lapped me round from the  
beginning ;

As little fear of losing it as winning :  
Lovers grow cold, men learn to hate their  
wives,

And only parents' love can last our lives.  
At eve the Son and Mother, gentle pair,  
Commune inside our turret : what prevents  
My being Luigi ? While that mossy lair  
Of lizards through the winter-time is stirred



With each to each imparting sweet intents  
For this new-year, as brooding bird to bird—  
(For I observe of late, the evening walk  
Of Luigi and his mother, always ends  
Inside our ruined turret, where they talk,  
Calmer than lovers, yet more kind than  
friends)

—Let me be cared about, kept out of harm,  
And schemed for, safe in love as with a charm;  
Let me be Luigi! If I only knew  
What was my mother's face—my father, too!  
Nay, if you come to that, best love of all  
Is God's; then why not have God's love  
befall

Myself as, in the palace by the Dome,  
Monsignor?—who to-night will bless the  
home

Of his dead brother; and God bless in turn  
That heart which beats, those eyes which  
mildly burn

With love for all men! I, to-night at least,  
Would be that holy and beloved priest.

Now wait!—even I already seem to share  
In God's love: what does New-year's hymn  
declare?

What other meaning do these verses bear?

*All service ranks the same with God:  
If now, as formerly he trod  
Paradise, his presence fills  
Our earth, each only as God wills  
Can work—God's puppets, best and worst,  
Are we; there is no last nor first.*

*Say not "a small event!" Why "small"?  
Costs it more pain that this, ye call  
A "great event," should come to pass,  
Than that? Untwine me from the mass  
Of deeds which make up life, one deed  
Power shall fall short in or exceed!*

And more of it, and more of it!—oh yes—  
I will pass each, and see their happiness,  
And envy none—being just as great, no doubt,  
Useful to men, and dear to God, as they!  
A pretty thing to care about  
So mightily, this single holiday!  
But let the sun shine! Wherefore repine?  
—With thee to lead me, O Day of mine,

Down the grass path grey with dew,  
Under the pine-wood, blind with boughs,  
Where the swallow never flew  
Nor yet cicala dared carouse—  
No, dared carouse! [*She enters the street.*]

# I.—MORNING.

SCENE.—*Up the Hill-side, inside the Shrub-  
house. LUCA's wife, OTTIMA, and her  
paramour, the German SEBALD.*

*Sebald [sings].*

*Let the watching lids wink!  
Day's a-blaze with eyes, think!  
Deep into the night, drink!*

*Ottima.* Night? Such may be your Rhine-  
land nights perhaps;

But this blood-red beam through the shutter's  
chink

—We call such light, the morning: let us see!  
Mind how you grope your way, though!  
How these tall

Naked geraniums straggle! Push the lattice  
Behind that frame!—Nay, do I bid you?—  
Sebald,

It shakes the dust down on me! Why, of  
course

The slide-bolt catches. Well, are you content,  
Or must I find you something else to spoil?  
Kiss and be friends, my Sebald! Is't full  
morning?

Oh, don't speak then!

*Sebald.* Ay, thus it used to be.  
Ever your house was, I remember, shut  
Till mid-day; I observed that, as I strolled  
On mornings through the vale here; country  
girls

Were noisy, washing garments in the brook,  
Hinds drove the slow white oxen up the hills:  
But no, your house was mute, would ope no  
eye.

And wisely: you were plotting one thing there,  
Nature, another outside. I looked up—  
Rough white wood shutters, rusty iron bars.  
Silent as death, blind in a flood of light.

Oh, I remember!—and the peasants laughed  
And said, "The old man sleeps with the  
young wife."

This house was his, this chair, this window  
—his.

*Ottima.* Ah, the clear morning! I can  
see St. Mark's;

That black streak is the belfry. Stop: Vicenza  
Should lie . . . there's Padua, plain enough,  
that blue!

Look o'er my shoulder, follow my finger!  
*Sebald.* Morning?

It seems to me a night with a sun added.  
Where's dew, where's freshness? That  
bruised plant, I bruised

In getting through the lattice yestereve,  
Droops as it did. See, here's my elbow's  
mark

I' the dust o' the sill.

*Ottima.* Oh, shut the lattice, pray!

*Sebald.* Let me lean out. I cannot scent  
blood here,

Foul as the morn may be.

There, shut the world out!

How do you feel now, *Ottima*? There, curse  
The world and all outside! Let us throw off  
This mask: how do you bear yourself? Let's  
out

With all of it.

*Ottima.* Best never speak of it.

*Sebald.* Best speak again and yet again of it,  
Till words cease to be more than words.

"His blood,"

For instance—let those two words mean

"His blood"

And nothing more. Notice, I'll say them now,  
"His blood."

*Ottima.* Assuredly if I repented

The deed—

*Sebald.* Repent? Who should repent,  
or why?

What puts that in your head? Did I once say  
That I repented?

*Ottima.* No, I said the deed . . .

*Sebald.* "The deed" and "the event"—  
just now it was

"Our passion's fruit"—the devil take such  
cant!

Say, once and always, Luca was a wittol,  
I am his cut-throat, you are . . .

*Ottima.* Here's the wine;

I brought it when we left the house above,  
And glasses too—wine of both sorts. Black?

White then?

*Sebald.* But am not I his cut-throat?

What are you?

*Ottima.* There trudges on his business  
from the Duomo

Benet the Capuchin, with his brown hood  
And bare feet; always in one place at church,

Close under the stone wall by the south entry,  
I used to take him for a brown cold piece

Of the wall's self, as out of it he rose  
To let me pass—at first, I say, I used:

Now, so has that dumb figure fastened on me,  
I rather should account the plastered wall

A piece of him, so chilly does it strike.  
This, *Sebald*?

*Sebald.* No, the white wine—the  
white wine!

Well, *Ottima*, I promised no new year  
Should rise on us the ancient shameful way;

Nor does it rise. Pour on! To your black  
eyes!

Do you remember last damned New Year's  
day?

*Ottima.* You brought those foreign prints.

We looked at them

Over the wine and fruit. I had to scheme  
To get him from the fire. Nothing but saying

His own set wants the proof-mark, roused  
him up

To hunt them out.

*Sebald.* 'Faith, he is not alive

To fondle you before my face.

*Ottima.* Do you

Fondle me then! Who means to take your  
life

For that, my *Sebald*?

*Sebald.* Hark you, *Ottima*!

One thing to guard against. We'll not  
make much

One of the other—that is, not make more  
Parade of warmth, childish officious coil,

Than yesterday: as if, sweet, I supposed  
Proof upon proof were needed now, now first,

To show I love you—yes, still love you—  
love you

In spite of Luca and what's come to him  
—Sure sign we had him ever in our thoughts,  
White sneering old reproachful face and all !  
We'll even quarrel, love, at times, as if  
We still could lose each other, were not tied  
By this : conceive you ?

*Ottima.* Love !

*Sebald.* Not tied so sure.  
Because though I was wrought upon, have  
struck

His insolence back into him—am I  
So surely yours?—therefore forever yours ?

*Ottima.* Love, to be wise, (one counsel  
pays another)

Should we have—months ago, when first we  
loved,

For instance that May morning we two stole  
Under the green ascent of sycamores—

If we had come upon a thing like that  
Suddenly . . .

*Sebald.* “A thing”—there again—  
“a thing !”

*Ottima.* Then, Venus' body, had we come  
upon

My husband Luca Gaddi's murdered corpse  
Within there, at his couch-foot, covered  
close—

Would you have pored upon it ? Why persist  
In poring now upon it ? For 'tis here

As much as there in the deserted house :

You cannot rid your eyes of it. For me,  
Now he is dead I hate him worse : I hate . . .

Dare you stay here ? I would go back and  
hold

His two dead hands, and say, “I hate you  
worse,

“Luca, than . . .”

*Sebald.* Off, off—take your  
hands off mine,

'Tis the hot evening—off ! oh, morning is it ?

*Ottima.* There's one thing must be done ;  
you know what thing.

Come in and help to carry. We may sleep  
Anywhere in the whole wide house to-night.

*Sebald.* What would come, think you, if  
we let him lie

Just as he is ? Let him lie there until  
The angels take him ! He is turned by this  
Off from his face beside, as you will see.

*Ottima.* This dusty pane might serve for  
looking glass.

Three, four—four grey hairs ! Is it so you said  
A plait of hair should wave across my neck ?  
No—this way.

*Sebald.* Ottima, I would give your neck,  
Each splendid shoulder, both those breasts of  
yours,

That this were undone ! Killing ! Kill the  
world

So Luca lives again !—ay, lives to sputter  
His fulsome dotage on you—yes, and feign  
Surprise that I return at eve to sup,  
When all the morning I was loitering here—  
Bid me despatch my business and begone.

I would . . .

*Ottima.* See !

*Sebald.* No, I'll finish. Do  
you think

I fear to speak the bare truth once for all ?  
All we have talked of, is, at bottom, fine  
To suffer ; there's a recompense in guilt ;  
One must be venturous and fortunate :  
What is one young for, else ? In age we'll  
sigh

O'er the wild reckless wicked days flown  
over ;

Still, we have lived : the vice was in its place.  
But to have eaten Luca's bread, have worn  
His clothes, have felt his money swell my  
purse—

Do lovers in romances sin that way ?  
Why, I was starving when I used to call  
And teach you music, starving while you  
plucked me

These flowers to smell !

*Ottima.* My poor lost friend !

*Sebald.* He gave me

Life, nothing less : what if he did reproach  
My perfidy, and threaten, and do more—  
Had he no right ? What was to wonder at ?  
He sat by us at table quietly :

Why must you lean across till our cheeks  
touched ?

Could he do less than make pretence to strike ?

'Tis not the crime's sake—I'd commit ten crimes

Greater, to have this crime wiped out, undone!  
And you—O how feel you? Feel you for me?

*Ottima.* Well then, I love you better now than ever,

And best (look at me while I speak to you)—  
Best for the crime; nor do I grieve, in truth,  
This mask, this simulated ignorance,  
This affectation of simplicity,  
Falls off our crime; this naked crime of ours  
May not now be looked over: look it down!  
Great? let it be great; but the joys it brought,  
Pay they or no its price? Come: they or it!  
Speak not! The past, would you give up  
the past

Such as it is, pleasure and crime together?  
Give up that noon I owned my love for you?  
The garden's silence: even the single bee  
Persisting in his toil, suddenly stopped,  
And where he hid you only could surmise  
By some campanula chalice set a-swing.  
Who stammered—"Yes, I love you?"

*Sebald.* And I drew  
Back; put far back your face with both my  
hands

Lest you should grow too full of me—your face  
So seemed athirst for my whole soul and body!

*Ottima.* And when I ventured to receive  
you here,

Made you steal hither in the mornings—

*Sebald.* When  
I used to look up 'neath the shrub-house here,  
Till the red fire on its glazed windows spread  
To a yellow haze?

*Ottima.* Ah—my sign was, the sun  
Inflamed the sere side of yon chestnut-tree  
Nipped by the first frost.

*Sebald.* You would always laugh  
At my wet boots: I had to stride thro' grass  
Over my ankles.

*Ottima.* Then our crowning night!

*Sebald.* The July night?

*Ottima.* The day of it too, Sebald!  
When heaven's pillars seemed o'erbowed with  
heat,

Its black-blue canopy suffered descend  
Close on us both, to weigh down each to each,

And smother up all life except our life.  
So lay we till the storm came.

*Sebald.* How it came!

*Ottima.* Buried in woods we lay, you re-  
collect;

Swift ran the searching tempest overhead;  
And ever and anon some bright white shaft  
Burned thro' the pine-tree roof, here burned  
and there,

As if God's messenger thro' the close wood  
screen

Plunged and replunged his weapon at a ven-  
ture,

Feeling for guilty thee and me: then broke  
The thunder like a whole sea overhead—

*Sebald.* Yes!

*Ottima.* —While I stretched myself  
upon you, hands

To hands, my mouth to your hot mouth, and  
shook

All my locks loose, and covered you with  
them—

You, Sebald, the same you!

*Sebald.* Slower, *Ottima*!

*Ottima.* And as we lay—

*Sebald.* Less vehemently! Love me!  
Forgive me! Take not words, mere words,  
to heart!

Your breath is worse than wine! Breathe  
slow, speak slow!

Do not lean on me!

*Ottima.* Sebald, as we lay,

Rising and falling only with our pants,  
Who said, "Let death come now! 'Tis  
right to die!

"Right to be punished! Nought completes  
such bliss

"But woe!" Who said that?

*Sebald.* How did we ever rise?  
Was't that we slept? Why did it end?

*Ottima.* I felt you  
Taper into a point the ruffled ends

Of my loose locks 'twixt both your humid lips.

My hair is fallen now: knot it again!

*Sebald.* I kiss you now, dear *Ottima*, now  
and now!

This way? Will you forgive me—be once more  
My great queen?

*Ottima.* Bind it thrice about my brow ;  
Crown me your queen, your spirit's arbitress,  
Magnificent in sin. Say that !

*Sebald.* I crown you  
My great white queen, my spirit's arbitress,  
Magnificent . . .

[*From without is heard the voice  
of PIPPA, singing—*

*The year's at the spring  
And day's at the morn ;  
Morning's at seven ;  
The hill-side's dew-pearled ;  
The lark's on the wing ;  
The snail's on the thorn :  
God's in his heaven—  
All's right with the world !*

[*PIPPA passes.*

*Sebald.* God's in his heaven ! Do you hear  
that ? Who spoke ?

You, you spoke !

*Ottima.* Oh—that little ragged girl !  
She must have rested on the step : we give  
them

But this one holiday the whole year round.  
Did you ever see our silk-mills—their inside ?  
There are ten silk-mills now belong to you.  
She stoops to pick my double heartsease  
. . . Sh !

She does not hear : call you out louder !

*Sebald.* Leave me !  
Go, get your clothes on—dress those  
shoulders !

*Ottima.* Sebald ?

*Sebald.* Wipe off that paint ! I hate you.

*Ottima.* Miserable !

*Sebald.* My God, and she is emptied of it  
now !

Outright now !—how miraculously gone  
All of the grace—had she not strange grace  
once ?

Why, the blank cheek hangs listless as it likes  
No purpose holds the features up together,  
Only the cloven brow and puckered chin  
Stay in their places : and the very hair,  
That seemed to have a sort of life in it,  
Drops, a dead web !

*Ottima.* Speak to me—not of me !

*Sebald.* —That round great full-orbed face,  
where not an angle

Broke the delicious indolence—all broken !

*Ottima.* To me—not of me ! Ungrateful,  
perjured cheat !

A coward too : but ingrate's worse than all.

Beggar—my slave—a fawning, cringing lie !

Leave me ! Betray me ! I can see your  
drift !

A lie that walks and eats and drinks !

*Sebald.* My God !

Those morbid olive faultless shoulder-blades—

I should have known there was no blood  
beneath !

*Ottima.* You hate me then ? You hate me  
then ?

*Sebald.* To think

She would succeed in her absurd attempt,

And fascinate by sinning, show herself

Superior—guilt from its excess superior

To innocence ! That little peasant's voice

Has righted all again. Though I be lost,

I know which is the better, never fear,

Of vice or virtue, purity or lust,

Nature or trick ! I see what I have done,

Entirely now ! Oh I am proud to feel

Such torments—let the world take credit  
thence—

I, having done my deed, pay too its price !

I hate, hate—curse you ! God's in his heaven !

*Ottima.* —Me !

Me ! no, no, Sebald, not yourself—kill  
me !

Mine is the whole crime. Do but kill me—  
then

Yourself—then—presently—first hear me  
speak !

I always meant to kill myself—wait, you !

Lean on my breast—not as a breast ; don't  
love me

The more because you lean on me, my  
own

Heart's Sebald ! There, there, both deaths  
presently !

*Sebald.* My brain is drowned now—quite  
drowned : all I feel

Is . . . is, at swift-recurring intervals,  
A hurry-down within me, as of waters

Loosened to smother up some ghastly pit :  
There they go—whirls from a black fiery  
sea !

*Ottima.* Not me—to him, O God, be  
merciful !

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing  
from the hill-side to Orcana. Foreign  
Students of painting and sculpture, from  
Venice, assembled opposite the house of  
JULES, a young French statuary, at  
Possagno.*

*1st Student.* Attention ! My own post is  
beneath this window, but the pomegranate  
clump yonder will hide three or four of you  
with a little squeezing, and Schramm and his  
pipe must lie flat in the balcony. Four, five  
—who's a defaulter ? We want everybody,  
for Jules must not be suffered to hurt his  
bride when the jest's found out.

*2nd Student.* All here ! Only our poet's  
away—never having much meant to be  
present, moonstrike him ! The airs of that  
fellow, that Giovacchino ! He was in violent  
love with himself, and had a fair prospect of  
thriving in his suit, so unmolested was it,—  
when suddenly a woman falls in love with  
him, too ; and out of pure jealousy he takes  
himself off to Trieste, immortal poem and  
all : whereto is this prophetic epitaph  
appended already, as Bluphocks assures me,  
—“ *Here a mammoth-poem lies, Fouled to  
death by butterflies.*” His own fault, the  
simpleton ! Instead of cramp couplets, each  
like a knife in your entrails, he should write,  
says Bluphocks, both classically and intelli-  
gibly.—*Esculapius, an Epic. Catalogue of  
the drugs : Hebe's plaister—One strip Cools  
your lip. Phæbus' emulsion—One bottle  
Clears your throttle. Mercury's bolus—One  
box Cures . . .*

*3rd Student.* Subside, my fine fellow ! If  
the marriage was over by ten o'clock, Jules  
will certainly be here in a minute with his  
bride.

*2nd Student.* Good !—only, so should the  
poet's muse have been universally acceptable,

says Bluphocks, *et canibus nostris* . . . and  
Delia not better known to our literary dogs  
than the boy Giovacchino !

*1st Student.* To the point, now. Where's  
Gottlieb, the new-comer ? Oh,—listen,  
Gottlieb, to what has called down this piece  
of friendly vengeance on Jules, of which we  
now assemble to witness the winding-up. We  
are all agreed, all in a tale, observe, when  
Jules shall burst out on us in a fury by and  
by : I am spokesman—the verses that are to  
undecieve Jules bear my name of Lutwyche  
—but each professes himself alike insulted  
by this strutting stone-squarer, who came  
alone from Paris to Munich, and thence with  
a crowd of us to Venice and Possagno here,  
but proceeds in a day or two alone again  
—oh, alone indubitably !—to Rome and  
Florence. He, forsooth, take up his portion  
with these dissolute, brutalized, heartless  
bunglers !—so he was heard to call us all :  
now, is Schramm brutalized, I should like to  
know ? Am I heartless ?

*Gottlieb.* Why, somewhat heartless ; for,  
suppose Jules a coxcomb as much as you  
choose, still, for this mere coxcombry, you  
will have brushed off—what do folks style  
it?—the bloom of his life. Is it too late to  
alter ? These love-letters now, you call his  
—I can't laugh at them.

*4th Student.* Because you never read the  
sham letters of our inditing which drew forth  
these.

*Gottlieb.* His discovery of the truth will  
be frightful.

*4th Student.* That's the joke. But you  
should have joined us at the beginning :  
there's no doubt he loves the girl—loves a  
model he might hire by the hour !

*Gottlieb.* See here ! “ He has been accus-  
tomed,” he writes, “ to have Canova's  
‘women about him, in stone, and the world's  
‘women beside him, in flesh ; these being  
‘as much below, as those above, his soul's  
‘aspiration : but now he is to have the  
‘reality.” There you laugh again ! I say,  
you wipe off the very dew of his youth.

*1st Student.* Schramm ! (Take the pipe

out of his mouth, somebody!) Will Jules lose the bloom of his youth?

*Schramm.* Nothing worth keeping is ever lost in this world: look at a blossom—it drops presently, having done its service and lasted its time; but fruits succeed, and where would be the blossom's place could it continue? As well affirm that your eye is no longer in your body, because its earliest favourite, whatever it may have first loved to look on, is dead and done with—as that any affection is lost to the soul when its first object, whatever happened first to satisfy it, is superseded in due course. Keep but ever looking, whether with the body's eye or the mind's, and you will soon find something to look on! Has a man done wondering at women?—there follow men, dead and alive, to wonder at. Has he done wondering at men?—there's God to wonder at: and the faculty of wonder may be, at the same time, old and tired enough with respect to its first object, and yet young and fresh sufficiently, so far as concerns its novel one. Thus . . .

*1st Student.* Put Schramm's pipe into his mouth again! There, you see! Well, this Jules . . . a wretched frible—oh, I watched his disputings at Possagno, the other day! Canova's gallery—you know: there he marches first resolutely past great works by the dozen without vouchsafing an eye: all at once he stops full at the *Psiche-fanciulla*—cannot pass that old acquaintance without a nod of encouragement—"In your new place, beauty? Then behave yourself as well here as at Munich—I see you!" Next he posts himself deliberately before the unfinished *Pietà* for half an hour without moving, till up he starts of a sudden, and thrusts his very nose into—I say, into—the group; by which gesture you are informed that precisely the sole point he had not fully mastered in Canova's practice was a certain method of using the drill in the articulation of the knee-joint—and that, likewise, has he mastered at length! Good-bye, therefore, to poor Canova—whose gallery no longer needs detain his successor Jules, the predestinated novel thinker in marble!

*5th Student.* Tell him about the women: go on to the women!

*1st Student.* Why, on that matter he could never be supercilious enough. How should we be other (he said) than the poor devils you see, with those debasing habits we cherish? He was not to wallow in that mire, at least: he would wait, and love only at the proper time, and meanwhile put up with the *Psiche-fanciulla*. Now, I happened to hear of a young Greek—real Greek girl at Malamocco; a true Islander, do you see, with Alciphron's "hair like sea-moss"—Schramm knows!—white and quiet as an apparition, and fourteen years old at farthest,—a daughter of Natalia, so she swears—that hag Natalia, who helps us to models at three *lire* an hour. We selected this girl for the heroine of our jest. So first, Jules received a scented letter—somebody had seen his Tydeus at the Academy, and my picture was nothing to it: a profound admirer bade him persevere—would make herself known to him ere long. (Paolina, my little friend of the *Fenice*, transcribes divinely.) And in due time, the mysterious correspondent gave certain hints of her peculiar charms—the pale cheeks, the black hair—whatever, in short, had struck us in our Malamocco model: we retained her name, too—Phene, which is, by interpretation, sea-eagle. Now, think of Jules finding himself distinguished from the herd of us by such a creature! In his very first answer he proposed marrying his mistress: and fancy us over these letters, two, three times a day, to receive and despatch! I concocted the main of it: relations were in the way—secrecy must be observed—in fine, would he wed her on trust, and only speak to her when they were indissolubly united? St—st—Here they come!

*6th Student.* Both of them! Heaven's love, speak softly, speak within yourselves!

*5th Student.* Look at the bridegroom! Half his hair in storm and half in calm,—patted down over the left temple,—like a frothy cup one blows on to cool it: and the same old blouse that he murders the marble in.

*2nd Student.* Not a rich vest like yours, Hannibal Scratchy!—rich, that your face may the better set it off.

*6th Student.* And the bride! Yes, sure enough, our Phene! Should you have known her in her clothes? How magnificently pale!

*Gottlieb.* She does not also take it for earnest, I hope?

*1st Student.* Oh, Natalia's concern, that is! We settle with Natalia.

*6th Student.* She does not speak—has evidently let out no word. The only thing is, will she equally remember the rest of her lesson, and repeat correctly all those verses which are to break the secret to Jules?

*Gottlieb.* How he gazes on her! Pity—pity!

*1st Student.* They go in: now, silence! You three,—not nearer the window, mind, than that pomegranate: just where the little girl, who a few minutes ago passed us singing, is seated!

## II.—NOON.

SCENE.—*Over Orcana. The house of JULES, who crosses its threshold with PHENE: she is silent, on which JULES begins—*

Do not die, Phene! I am yours now, you are mine now; let fate reach me how she likes,

If you'll not die: so, never die! Sit here—My work-room's single seat. I over-lean This length of hair and lustrous front; they turn

Like an entire flower upward: eyes, lips, last Your chin—no, last your throat turns: 'tis their scent

Pulls down my face upon you. Nay, look ever This one way till I change, grow you—I could Change into you, beloved!

You by me,

And I by you; this is your hand in mine, And side by side we sit: all's true. Thank God!

I have spoken: speak you!

O my life to come!

My Tydeus must be carved that's there in clay;

Yet how be carved, with you about the room? Where must I place you? When I think that once

This room—full of rough block-work, seemed my heaven

Without you! Shall I ever work again, Get fairly into my old ways again, Bid each conception stand while, trait by trait, My hand transfers its lineaments to stone?

Will my mere fancies live near you, their truth—

The live truth, passing and repassing me, Sitting beside me?

Now speak!

Only first, See, all your letters! Was't not well contrived?

Their hiding-place is Psyche's robe; she keeps

Your letters next her skin: which drops out foremost?

Ah,—this that swam down like a first moon-beam

Into my world!

Again those eyes complete Their melancholy survey, sweet and slow, Of all my room holds; to return and rest On me, with pity, yet some wonder too:

As if God bade some spirit plague a world, And this were the one moment of surprise And sorrow while she took her station, pausing

O'er what she sees, finds good, and must destroy!

What gaze you at? Those? Books, I told you of;

Let your first word to me rejoice them, too:

This minion, a Coluthus, writ in red Bistre and azure by Bessarion's scribe—

Read this line . . . no, shame—Homer's be the Greek

First breathed me from the lips of my Greek girl!

This Odyssey in coarse black vivid type, With faded yellow blossoms 'twixt page and page,



To mark great places with due gratitude ;  
*"He said, and on Antinous directed*  
*"A bitter shaft"* . . . a flower blots out the  
 rest !

Again upon your search ? My statues, then !  
 —Ah, do not mind that—better that will  
 look

When cast in bronze—an Almain Kaiser, that,  
 Swart-green and gold, with truncheon based  
 on hip.

This, rather, turn to ! What, unrecognized ?  
 I thought you would have seen that here you  
 sit

As I imagined you,—Hippolyta,  
 Naked upon her bright Numidian horse.  
 Recall you this then ? "Carve in bold re-  
 lief"—

So you commanded—"carve, against I come,  
 "A Greek, in Athens, as our fashion was,  
 "Feasting, bay-filleted and thunder-free,  
 "Who rises 'neath the lifted myrtle-branch.  
 "Praise those who slew Hipparchus !' cry  
 the guests,

"While o'er thy head the singer's myrtle  
 waves  
 "As erst above our champion : stand up,  
 all !"

See, I have laboured to express your thought.  
 (Quite round, a cluster of mere hands and arms,  
 (Thrust in all senses, all ways, from all sides,  
 Only consenting at the branch's end  
 They strain toward) serves for frame to a sole  
 face,

The Praiser's, in the centre : who with eyes  
 Sightless, so bend they back to light inside  
 His brain where visionary forms throng up,  
 Sings, minding not that palpitating arch  
 Of hands and arms, nor the quick drip of wine  
 From the drenched leaves o'erhead, nor  
 crowns cast off,

Violet and parsley crowns to trample on—  
 Sings, pausing as the patron-ghosts approve,  
 Devoutly their unconquerable hymn.

But you must say a "well" to that—say  
 "well !"

Because you gaze—am I fantastic, sweet ?  
 Gaze like my very life's-stuff, marble—marbly  
 Even to the silence ! Why, before I found

The real flesh Phene, I inured myself  
 To see, throughout all nature, varied stuff  
 For better nature's birth by means of art :  
 With me, each substance tended to one form  
 Of beauty—to the human archetype.  
 On every side occurred suggestive germs  
 Of that—the tree, the flower—or take the  
 fruit,—

Some rosy shape, continuing the peach,  
 Curved beewise o'er its bough ; as rosy limbs,  
 Depending, nestled in the leaves ; and just  
 From a cleft rose-peach the whole Dryad  
 sprang

But of the stuffs one can be master of,  
 How I divined their capabilities !  
 From the soft-rinded smoothening facile chalk  
 That yields your outline to the air's embrace,  
 Half-softened by a halo's pearly gloom ;  
 Down to the crisp imperious steel, so sure  
 To cut its one confided thought clean out  
 Of all the world. But marble !—'neath my  
 tools

More pliable than jelly—as it were  
 Some clear primordial creature dug from  
 depths

In the earth's heart, where itself breeds itself,  
 And whence all baser substance may be  
 worked ;

Refine it off to air, you may,—condense it  
 Down to the diamond ;—is not metal there,  
 When o'er the sudden speck my chisel trips ?  
 —Not flesh, as flake off flake I scale, approach,  
 Lay bare those bluish veins of blood asleep ?  
 Lurks flame in no strange windings where, sur-  
 prised

By the swift implement sent home at once,  
 Flushes and glowings radiate and hover  
 About its track ?

Phene ? what—why is this ?  
 That whitening cheek, those still dilating  
 eyes !

Ah, you will die—I knew that you would die !

PHENE begins, on his having long  
 remained silent.

Now the end's coming ; to be sure, it must  
 Have ended sometime ! Tush, why need I  
 speak

Their foolish speech? I cannot bring to mind  
 One half of it, beside; and do not care  
 For old Natalia now, nor any of them  
 Oh, you—what are you?—if I do not try  
 To say the words Natalia made me learn,  
 To please your friends,—it is to keep myself  
 Where your voice lifted me, by letting that  
 Proceed: but can it? Even you, perhaps,  
 Cannot take up, now you have once let fall,  
 The music's life, and me along with that—  
 No, or you would! We'll stay, then, as we  
 are:

Above the world.

You creature with the eyes!  
 If I could look for ever up to them,  
 As now you let me,—I believe, all sin,  
 All memory of wrong done, suffering borne,  
 Would drop down, low and lower, to the earth  
 Whence all that's low comes, and there touch  
 and stay  
 —Never to overtake the rest of me,  
 All that, unspotted, reaches up to you,  
 Drawn by those eyes! What rises is myself,  
 Not me the shame and suffering; but they  
 sink,  
 Are left, I rise above them. Keep me so,  
 Above the world!

But you sink, for your eyes  
 Are altering—altered! Stay—"I love you,  
 love" . . .

I could prevent it if I understood:  
 More of your words to me: was't in the tone  
 Or the words, your power?

Or stay—I will repeat  
 Their speech, if that contents you! Only  
 change

No more, and I shall find it presently  
 Far back here, in the brain yourself filled up.  
 Natalia threatened me that harm should follow  
 Unless I spoke their lesson to the end,  
 But harm to me, I thought she meant, not you.  
 Your friends,—Natalia said they were your  
 friends

And meant you well,—because, I doubted it,  
 Observing (what was very strange to see)  
 On every face, so different in all else,  
 The same smile girls like me are used to bear,  
 But never men, men cannot stoop so low;

Yet your friends, speaking of you, used that  
 smile,

That hateful smirk of boundless self-conceit  
 Which seems to take possession of the world  
 And make of God a tame confederate,  
 Purveyor to their appetites . . . you know!  
 But still Natalia said they were your friends,  
 And they assented though they smiled the  
 more,

And all came round me,—that thin English-  
 man

With light lank hair seemed leader of the rest;  
 He held a paper—"What we want," said he,  
 Ending some explanation to his friends—

"Is something slow, involved and mystical,  
 "To hold Jules long in doubt, yet take his  
 taste

"And lure him on until, at innermost  
 "Where he seeks sweetness' soul, he may  
 find—this!

"—As in the apple's core, the noisome fly:  
 "For insects on the rind are seen at once,  
 "And brushed aside as soon, but this is found  
 "Only when on the lips or loathing tongue."  
 And so he read what I have got by heart:  
 I'll speak it,—“Do not die, love! I am  
 yours.”

No—is not that, or like that, part of words  
 Yourself began by speaking? Strange to lose  
 What cost such pains to learn! Is this more  
 right?

*I am a painter who cannot paint;  
 In my life, a devil rather than saint;  
 In my brain, as poor a creature too:  
 No end to all I cannot do!  
 Yet do one thing at least I can—  
 Love a man or hate a man  
 Supremely: thus my lore began.  
 Through the Valley of Love I went,  
 In the loveliest spot to abide,  
 And just on the verge where I pitched my  
 tent,  
 I found Hate dwelling beside.  
 (Let the Bridegroom ask what the painter  
 meant,  
 Of his Bride, of the peerless Bride!)  
 And further, I traversed Hate's grove,  
 In the hatefullest nook to dwell;*

*But lo, where I flung myself prone, couched |  
Love*

*Where the shadow threefold fell.  
(The meaning—those black bride's-eyes  
above,*

*Not a painter's lip should tell !)*

"And here," said he, "Jules probably will ask,

"You have black eyes, Love,—you are, sure enough,

"My peerless bride,—then do you tell indeed

"What needs some explanation ! What means this ?"

—And I am to go on, without a word—

*So, I grew wise in Love and Hate,  
From simple that I was of late,  
Once, when I loved, I would enlase  
Breast, eyelids, hands, feet, form and face  
Of her I loved, in one embrace—  
As if by mere love I could love immensely !  
Once, when I hated, I would plunge  
My sword, and wipe with the first lunge  
My foe's whole life out like a sponge—  
As if by mere hate I could hate intensely !  
But now I am wiser, know better the fashion  
How passion seeks aid from its opposite  
passion :*

*And if I see cause to love more, hate more  
Than ever man loved, ever hated before—*

*And seek in the Valley of Love,  
The nest, or the nook in Hate's Grove,  
Where my soul may surely reach  
The essence, nought less, of each,  
The Hate of all Hates, the Love  
Of all Loves, in the Valley or Grove,—  
I find them the very warders  
Each of the other's borders.*

*When I love most, Love is disguised  
In Hate ; and when Hate is surprised  
In Love, then I hate most : ask*

*How Love smiles through Hate's iron  
casque,  
Hate grins through Love's rose-braided  
mask,—*

*And how, having hated thee,  
I sought long and painfully  
To reach thy heart, nor prick  
The shin but pierce to the quick—*

*Ask this, my Jules, and be answered  
straight*

*By thy bride—how the painter Lutwyche  
can hate !*

JULES interposes.

Lutwyche ! Who else ? But all of them, no doubt,

Hated me : they at Venice—presently  
Their turn, however ! You I shall not meet :  
If I dreamed, saying this would wake me.

Keep

What's here, the gold—we cannot meet again.  
Consider ! and the money was but meant  
For two years' travel, which is over now,  
All chance or hope or care or need of it.

This—and what comes from selling these, my casts

And books and medals, except . . . let them go

Together, so the produce keeps you safe  
Out of Natalia's clutches ! If by chance  
(For all's chance here) I should survive the gang

At Venice, root out all fifteen of them,  
We might meet somewhere, since the world  
is wide.

[From without is heard the voice  
of PIPPA, singing—

*Give her but a least excuse to love me !*

*When--where—*

*How—can this arm establish her above me,  
If fortune fixed her as my lady there,*

*There already, to eternally reprove me ?*

*("Hist !"—said Kate the Queen ;*

*But "Oh !"—cried the maiden, binding  
her tresses,*

*" 'Tis only a page that carols unseen,*

*"Crumbling your hounds their messes !")*

*Is she wronged ?—To the rescue of her  
honour,*

*My heart !*

*Is she poor ?—What costs it to be styled a  
donor ?*

*Merely an earth to cleave, a sea to part.*

*But that fortune should have thrust all this  
upon her !*

("Nay, list!"—bade Kate the Queen;  
And still cried the maiden, binding her  
tresses,  
"Tis only a page that carols unseen,  
"Fitting your hawks their jesses!")  
[PIPPA passes.

JULES resumes.

What name was that the little girl sang forth?  
Kate? The Cornaro, doubtless, who re-  
nounced

The crown of Cyprus to be lady here  
At Asolo, where still her memory stays,  
And peasants sing how once a certain page  
Pined for the grace of her so far above  
His power of doing good to, "Kate the  
Queen—

"She never could be wronged, be poor," he  
sighed,  
"Need him to help her!"

Yes, a bitter thing  
To see our lady above all need of us;  
Yet so we look ere we will love; not I,  
But the world looks so. If whoever loves  
Must be, in some sort, god or worshipper,  
The blessing or the blest one, queen or page,  
Why should we always choose the page's part?  
Here is a woman with utter need of me,—  
I find myself queen here, it seems!

How strange!  
Look at the woman here with the new soul,  
Like my own Psyche,—fresh upon her lips  
Alit, the visionary butterfly,  
Waiting my word to enter and make bright,  
Or flutter off and leave all blank as first.  
This body had no soul before, but slept  
Or stirred, was beauteous or ungainly, free  
From taint or foul with stain, as outward things  
Fastened their image on its passiveness:  
Now, it will wake, feel, live—or die again!  
Shall to produce form out of unshaped stuff  
Be Art—and further, to evoke a soul  
From form be nothing? This new soul is  
mine!

Now, to kill Lutwyche, what would that do?  
—save  
A wretched dauber, men will hoot to death

VOL. I.

Without me, from their hooting. Oh, to hear  
God's voice plain as I heard it first, before  
They broke in with their laughter! I heard  
them

Henceforth, not God.

To Ancona—Greece—some isle!  
I wanted silence only; there is clay  
Everywhere. One may do whate'er one  
likes

In Art: the only thing is, to make sure  
That one does like it—which takes pains to  
know.

Scatter all this, my Phene—this mad  
dream!

Who, what is Lutwyche, what Natalia's  
friends,

What the whole world except our love—my  
own,

Own Phene? But I told you, did I not,  
Ere night we travel for your land—some isle  
With the sea's silence on it? Stand aside—  
I do but break these paltry models up  
To begin Art afresh. Meet Lutwyche, I—  
And save him from my statue meeting him?  
Some unsuspected isle in the far seas!  
Like a god going through his world, there  
stands

One mountain for a moment in the dusk,  
Whole brotherhoods of cedars on its brow:  
And you are ever by me while I gaze  
—Are in my arms as now—as now—as now!  
Some unsuspected isle in the far seas!  
Some unsuspected isle in far-off seas!

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing  
from Orcana to the Turret. Two or  
three of the Austrian Police loitering  
with BLUPHOCKS, an English vagabond,  
just in view of the Turret.*

*Bluphocks.*<sup>1</sup> So, that is your Pippa, the  
little girl who passed us singing? Well,  
your Bishop's Intendant's money shall be  
honestly earned:—now, don't make me that

<sup>1</sup> "He maketh his sun to rise on the evil and  
on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and  
on the unjust."

H

sour face because I bring the Bishop's name into the business; we know he can have nothing to do with such horrors; we know that he is a saint and all that a bishop should be, who is a great man beside. *Oh were but every worm a maggot, Every fly a grig, Every bough a Christmas faggot, Every tune a jig!* In fact, I have abjured all religions; but the last I inclined to, was the Armenian: for I have travelled, do you see, and at Koenigsberg, Prussia Improper (so styled because there's a sort of bleak hungry sun there), you might remark over a venerable house-porch, a certain Chaldee inscription; and brief as it is, a mere glance at it used absolutely to change the mood of every bearded passenger. In they turned, one and all; the young and lightsome, with no irreverent pause, the aged and decrepit, with a sensible alacrity: 'twas the Grand Rabbi's abode, in short. Struck with curiosity, I lost no time in learning Syriac—(these are vowels, you dogs,—follow my stick's end in the mud—*Celarent, Darii, Ferio!*) and one morning presented myself, spelling-book in hand, a, b, c,—I picked it out letter by letter, and what was the purport of this miraculous posy? Some cherished legend of the past, you'll say—"How Moses hocus-poussed Egypt's land with fly and locust,"—or, "How to Jonah sounded harshish, Get thee up and go to Tarshish,"—or, "How the angel meeting Balaam, Straight his ass returned a salaam." In no wise! "*Shackabrack—Boach—somebody or other—Isaach, Re-ai-ver, Pur-cha-ser and Ex-chan-ger of—Stolen Goods!*" So, talk to me of the religion of a bishop! I have renounced all bishops save Bishop Beveridge—mean to live so—and die—*As some Greek dog-sage, dead and merry, Heliward bound in Charon's wherry, With food for both worlds, under and upper, Lupine-seed and Hecate's supper, And never an obolus . . .* (Though thanks to you, or this Intendant through you, or this Bishop through his Intendant—I possess a burning pocketful of swanzigers) . . . *To pay the Stygian Ferry!*

*1st Policeman.* There is the girl, then; go and deserve them the moment you have pointed out to us Signor Luigi and his mother. [*To the rest.*] I have been noticing a house yonder, this long while: not a shutter unclosed since morning!

*2nd Policeman.* Old Luca Gaddi's, that owns the silk-mills here: he dozes by the hour, wakes up, sighs deeply, says he should like to be Prince Metternich, and then dozes again, after having bidden young Sebald, the foreigner, set his wife to playing draughts. Never molest such a household, they mean well.

*Bluphocks.* Only, cannot you tell me something of this little Pippa, I must have to do with? One could make something of that name. Pippa—that is, short for Felippa—rhyming to *Panurge consults Hertrippa—Believest thou, King Agrippa?* Something might be done with that name.

*2nd Policeman.* Put into rhyme that your head and a ripe musk-melon would not be dear at half a *swanziger!* Leave this fooling, and look out; the afternoon's over or nearly so.

*3rd Policeman.* Where in this passport of Signor Luigi does our Principal instruct you to watch him so narrowly? There? What's there beside a simple signature? (That English fool's busy watching.)

*2nd Policeman.* Flourish all round—"Put all possible obstacles in his way;" oblong dot at the end—"Detain him till further advices reach you;" scratch at bottom—"Send him back on pretence of some informality in the above;" ink-spirit on right-hand side (which is the case here)—"Arrest him at once." Why and wherefore, I don't concern myself, but my instructions amount to this: if Signor Luigi leaves home to-night for Vienna—well and good, the passport deposited with us for our *visa* is really for his own use, they have misinformed the Office, and he means well; but let him stay over to-night—there has been the pretence we suspect, the accounts of his corresponding and holding intelligence with the Carbonari are correct.

we arrest him at once, to-morrow comes Venice, and presently Spielberg. Bluphocks makes the signal, sure enough! That is he, entering the turret with his mother, no doubt.

### III.—EVENING.

SCENE.—*Inside the Turret on the Hill above Asolo. LUIGI and his Mother entering.*

*Mother.* If there blew wind, you'd hear a long sigh, easing

The utmost heaviness of music's heart.

*Luigi.* Here in the archway?

*Mother.* Oh no, no—in farther, Where the echo is made, on the ridge.

*Luigi.* Here surely, then. How plain the tap of my heel as I leaped up! Hark—"Lucius Junius!" The very ghost of a voice

Whose body is caught and kept by . . . what are those?

Mere withered wallflowers, waving overhead? They seem an elvish group with thin bleached hair

That lean out of their topmost fortress—look And listen, mountain men, to what we say, Hand under chin of each grave earthy face. Up and show faces all of you!—"All of you!" That's the king dwarf with the scarlet comb; old Franz,

Come down and meet your fate? Hark—"Meet your fate!"

*Mother.* Let him not meet it, my Luigi—do not

Go to his City! Putting crime aside, Half of these ills of Italy are feigned: Your Pellicos and writers for effect, Write for effect.

*Luigi.* Hush! Say A. writes, and B.

*Mother.* These A.s and B.s write for effect, I say.

Then, evil is in its nature loud, while good Is silent; you hear each petty injury, None of his virtues; he is old beside, Quiet and kind, and densely stupid. Why Do A. and B. not kill him themselves?

*Luigi.* They teach Others to kill him—me—and, if I fail, Others to succeed; now, if A. tried and failed, I could not teach that: mine's the lesser task. Mother, they visit night by night . . .

*Mother.* —You, Luigi? Ah, will you let me tell you what you are?

*Luigi.* Why not? Oh, the one thing you fear to hint,

You may assure yourself I say and say Ever to myself! At times—nay, even as now We sit—I think my mind is touched, suspect All is not sound: but is not knowing that, What constitutes one sane or otherwise? I know I am thus—so, all is right again.

I laugh at myself as through the town I walk, And see men merry as if no Italy Were suffering; then I ponder—"I am rich, "Young, healthy; why should this fact trouble me,

"More than it troubles these?" But it does trouble.

No, trouble's a bad word: for as I walk There's springing and melody and giddiness, And old quaint turns and passages of my youth,

Dreams long forgotten, little in themselves, Return to me—whatever may amuse me: And earth seems in a truce with me, and heaven

Accords with me, all things suspend their strife,

The very cicala laughs "There goes he, and there!

"Feast him, the time is short; he is on his way

"For the world's sake: feast him this once, our friend!"

And in return for all this, I can trip Cheerfully up the scaffold-steps. I go This evening, mother!

*Mother.* But mistrust yourself—Mistrust the judgment you pronounce on him!

*Luigi.* Oh, there I feel—am sure that I am right!

*Mother.* Mistrust your judgment then, of the mere means

To this wild enterprise. Say, you are right,—

How should one in your state e'er bring to  
pass

What would require a cool head, a cold heart,  
And a calm hand? You never will escape.

*Luigi.* Escape? To even wish that, would  
spoil all.

The dying is best part of it. Too much  
Have I enjoyed these fifteen years of mine,  
To leave myself excuse for longer life:  
Was not life pressed down, running o'er with  
joy,

That I might finish with it ere my fellows  
Who, sparerier feasted, make a longer stay?  
I was put at the board-head, helped to all  
At first; I rise up happy and content.  
God must be glad one loves his world so  
much.

I can give news of earth to all the dead  
Who ask me:—last year's sunsets, and great  
stars

Which had a right to come first and see ebb  
The crimson wave that drifts the sun away—  
Those crescent moons with notched and burn-  
ing rims

That strengthened into sharp fire, and there  
stood,

Impatient of the azure—and that day  
In March, a double rainbow stopped the  
storm—

May's warm slow yellow moonlit summer  
nights—

Gone are they, but I have them in my soul!

*Mother.* (He will not go!)

*Luigi.* You smile at me?

'Tis true,—

Voluptuousness, grotesqueness, ghastliness,  
Environ my devotedness as quaintly  
As round about some antique altar wreath  
The rose festoons, goats' horns, and oxen's  
skulls.

*Mother.* See now: you reach the city, you  
must cross

His threshold—how?

*Luigi.* Oh, that's if we conspired!  
Then would come pains in plenty, as you  
guess—

But guess not how the qualities most fit  
For such an office, qualities I have,

Would little stead me, otherwise employed,  
Yet prove of rarest merit only here.

Every one knows for what his excellence  
Will serve, but no one ever will consider  
For what his worst defect might serve: and yet  
Have you not seen me range our coppice  
yonder

In search of a distorted ash?—I find  
The wry spoilt branch a natural perfect bow.  
Fancy the thrice-sage, thrice-precautioned  
man

Arriving at the palace on my errand!

No, no! I have a handsome dress packed  
up—

White satin here, to set off my black hair;  
In I shall march—for you may watch your  
life out

Behind thick walls, make friends there to  
betray you;

More than one man spoils everything.  
March straight—

Only, no clumsy knife to fumble for.

Take the great gate and walk (not saunter)  
on

Thro' guards and guards—I have rehearsed  
it all

Inside the turret here a hundred times.

Don't ask the way of whom you meet,  
observe!

But where they cluster thickest is the door  
Of doors; they'll let you pass—they'll never  
blab

Each to the other, he knows not the favourite,  
Whence he is bound and what's his business  
now.

Walk in—straight up to him; you have no  
knife:

Be prompt, how should he scream? Then,  
out with you!

Italy, Italy, my Italy!

You're free, you're free! Oh mother, I could  
dream

They got about me—Andrea from his exile,  
Pier from his dungeon, Gualtier from his  
grave!

*Mother.* Well, you shall go. Yet seems  
this patriotism

The easiest virtue for a selfish man

To acquire : he loves himself—and next, the world—

If he must love beyond, — but nought between :

As a short-sighted man sees nought midway His body and the sun above. But you Are my adored Luigi, ever obedient To my least wish, and running o'er with love :

I could not call you cruel or unkind. Once more, your ground for killing him !— then go !

*Luigi.* Now do you try me, or make sport of me ?

How first the Austrians got these provinces . . .

(If that is all, I'll satisfy you soon)  
—Never by conquest but by cunning, for That treaty whereby . . .

*Mother.* Well ?

*Luigi.* (Sure, he's arrived,

The tell-tale cuckoo : spring's his confidant, And he lets out her April purposes !)

(Or . . . better go at once to modern time, He has . . . they have . . . in fact, I understand

But can't restate the matter ; that's my boast : Others could reason it out to you, and prove Things they have made me feel.

*Mother.* Why go to-night ? Morn's for adventure. Jupiter is now

A morning-star. I cannot hear you, Luigi !

*Luigi.* "I am the bright and morning-star," saith God—

And, "to such an one I give the morning-star." The gift o' the morning-star ! Have I God's gift

Of the morning-star ?

*Mother.* Chiara will love to see That Jupiter an evening-star next June.

*Luigi.* True, mother. Well for those who live through June !

Great noontides, thunder-storms, all glaring pomps

That triumph at the heels of June the god Leading his revel through our leafy world. Yes, Chiara will be here.

*Mother.* In June : remember, Yourself appointed that month for her coming.

*Luigi.* Was that low noise the echo ?

*Mother.* The night-wind. She must be grown—with her blue eyes up-turned

As if life were one long and sweet surprise : In June she comes.

*Luigi.* We were to see together The Titian at Treviso. There, again !

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA, singing—

*A king lived long ago,  
In the morning of the world,  
When earth was nigher heaven than now :  
And the king's locks curled,  
Disparting o'er a forehead full  
As the milk-white space 'twixt horn and horn*

*Of some sacrificial bull—  
Only calm as a babe new-born :  
For he was got to a sleepy mood,  
So safe from all decrepitude,  
Age with its bane, so sure gone by,  
(The gods so loved him while he dreamed)  
That, having lived thus long, there seemed  
No need the king should ever die.*

*Luigi.* No need that sort of king should ever die !

*Among the rocks his city was :  
Before his palace, in the sun,  
He sat to see his people pass,  
He sat to see his people pass,  
And judge them every one  
From its threshold of smooth stone.  
They haled him many a valley-thief  
Caught in the sheep-pens, robber-chief  
Swarthy and shameless, beggar-cheat,  
Spy-prowler, or rough pirate found  
On the sea-sand left aground ;  
And sometimes clung about his feet,  
With bleeding lip and burning cheek,  
A woman, bitterest wrong to speak  
Of one with sullen thickset brows :  
And sometimes from the prison-house  
The angry priests a pale wretch brought,  
Who through some chink had pushed and pressed*

*On knees and elbows, belly and breast,  
Worm-like into the temple,—caught*



*He was by the very god,  
Who ever in the darkness strode  
Backward and forward, keeping watch  
O'er his brazen bowls, such rogues to catch!  
These, all and every one,  
The king judged, sitting in the sun.*

*Luigi.* That king should still judge sitting  
in the sun!

*His councillors, on left and right,  
Looked anxious up,—but no surprise  
Disturbed the king's old smiling eyes  
Where the very blue had turned to white.  
'Tis said, a Python scared one day  
The breathless city, till he came,  
With forked tongue and eyes on flame,  
Where the old king sat to judge away;  
But when he saw the sweepy hair  
Girt with a crown of berries rare  
Which the god will hardly give to wear  
To the maiden who singeth, dancing bare  
In the altar-smoke by the pine-orch lights,  
At his wondrous forest rites,—  
Seeing this, he did not dare  
Approach that threshold in the sun,  
Assault the old king smiling there.  
Such grace had kings when the world begun!*

[PIPPA passes.

*Luigi.* And such grace have they, now  
that the world ends!

The Python at the city, on the throne,  
And brave men, God would crown for slay-  
ing him,

Lurk in bye-corners lest they fall his prey.  
Are crowns yet to be won in this late time,  
Which weakness makes me hesitate to reach?  
'Tis God's voice calls: how could I stay?  
Farewell!

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing  
from the Turret to the Bishop's Brother's  
House, close to the Duomo S. Maria.  
Four Girls sitting on the steps.*

*1st Girl.* There goes a swallow to Venice  
—the stout seafarer!

Seeing those birds fly, makes one wish for  
wings.

Let us all wish; you wish first!

*2nd Girl.*

To finish.

*3rd Girl.* That old—somebody I know,  
Greyer and older than my grandfather,  
To give me the same treat he gave last week—  
Feeding me on his knee with fig-peckers,  
Lampreys and red Breganze-wine, and mum-  
bling

The while some folly about how well I fare,  
Let sit and eat my supper quietly:  
Since had he not himself been late this morning  
Detained at—never mind where,—had he  
not . . .

“Eh, baggage, had I not!”—

*2nd Girl.* How she can lie!

*3rd Girl.* Look there—by the nails!

*2nd Girl.* What  
makes your fingers red!

*3rd Girl.* Dipping them into wine to write  
bad words with

On the bright table: how he laughed!

*1st Girl.* My turn.

Spring's come and summer's coming. I would  
wear

A long loose gown, down to the feet and  
hands,

With plaits here, close about the throat, all  
day;

And all night lie, the cool long nights, in  
bed;

And have new milk to drink, apples to eat,  
Deuzans and junetings, leather-coats . . .

ah, I should say,

This is away in the fields—miles!

*3rd Girl.* Say at once

You'd be at home: she'd always be at home!  
Now comes the story of the farm among

The cherry orchards, and how April snowed  
White blossoms on her as she ran. Why,

fool,

They've rubbed the chalk-mark out, how tall  
you were,

Twisted your starling's neck, broken his cage,  
Made a dung-hill of your garden!

*1st Girl.*

They, destroy  
My garden since I left them? well—perhaps!  
I would have done so: so I hope they have!

A fig-tree curled out of our cottage wall;

They called it mine, I have forgotten why,  
It must have been there long ere I was born:  
*Cric—cric*—I think I hear the wasps o'erhead  
Pricking the papers strung to flutter there  
And keep off birds in fruit-time—coarse long  
papers,  
And the wasps eat them, prick them through  
and through.

*3rd Girl.* How her mouth twitches! Where  
was I?—before

She broke in with her wishes and long gowns  
And wasps—would I be such a fool!—Oh,  
here!

This is my way: I answer every one  
Who asks me why I make so much of him—  
(If you say, "you love him"—straight "he'll  
not be gulled!")

"He that seduced me when I was a girl  
"Thus high—had eyes like yours, or hair  
like yours,

"Brown, red, white,"—as the case may be:  
that pleases!

See how that beetle burnishes in the path!  
There sparkles he along the dust: and, there—  
Your journey to that maize-tuft spoiled at  
least!

*1st Girl.* When I was young, they said if  
you killed one

Of those sunshiny beetles, that his friend  
Up there, would shine no more that day nor  
next.

*2nd Girl.* When you were young? Nor  
are you young, that's true.

How your plump arms, that were, have  
dropped away!

Why, I can span them. Cecco beats you still?  
No matter, so you keep your curious hair.  
I wish they'd find a way to dye our hair  
Your colour—any lighter tint, indeed,  
Than black: the men say they are sick of black,  
Black eyes, black hair!

*4th Girl.* Sick of yours, like enough.

Do you pretend you ever tasted lampreys  
And ortolans? Giovita, of the palace,  
Engaged (but there's no trusting him) to slice  
me

Polenta with a knife that had cut up  
An ortolan.

*2nd Girl.* Why, there! Is not that Pippa  
We are to talk to, under the window,—  
quick,—

Where the lights are?

*1st Girl.* That she? No, or  
she would sing,

For the Intendant said . . .

*3rd Girl.* Oh, you sing first!

Then, if she listens and comes close . . .

I'll tell you,—

Sing that song the young English noble made,  
Who took you for the purest of the pure,  
And meant to leave the world for you—what  
fun!

*2nd Girl* [sings].

*You'll love me yet!—and I can tarry.*

*Your love's protracted growing:*

*June reared that bunch of flowers you carry,  
From seeds of April's sowing.*

*I plant a heartfelt now: some seed*

*At least is sure to strike,*

*And yield—what you'll not pluck indeed,  
Not love, but, may be, like.*

*You'll look at least on love's remains,*

*A grave's one violet;*

*Your look?—that pays a thousand pains.*

*What's death? You'll love me yet!*

*3rd Girl* [to PIPPA who approaches]. Oh,  
you may come closer—we shall not eat you!  
Why, you seem the very person that the  
great rich handsome Englishman has fallen  
so violently in love with. I'll tell you all  
about it.

#### IV.—NIGHT.

SCENE.—*Inside the Palace by the Duomo.*  
MONSIGNOR, dismissing his Attendants.

*Monsignor.* Thanks, friends, many thanks!  
I chiefly desire life now, that I may recom-  
pense every one of you. Most I know some-  
thing of already. What, a repast prepart?  
*Benedicto benedicatur* . . . ugh, ugh!  
Where was I? Oh, as you were remarking,  
Ugo, the weather is mild, very unlike winter.

weather: but I am a Sicilian, you know, and shiver in your Julys here. To be sure, when 'twas full summer at Messina, as we priests used to cross in procession the great square on Assumption Day, you might see our thickest yellow tapers twist suddenly in two, each like a falling star, or sink down on themselves in a gore of wax. But go, my friends, but go! [*To the Intendant.*] Not you, Ugo! [*The others leave the apartment.*] I have long wanted to converse with you, Ugo.

*Intendant.* Uguccio—

*Monsignor.* . . . 'guccio Stefani, man! of Ascoli, Fermo and Fossombruno;—what I do need instructing about, are these accounts of your administration of my poor brother's affairs. Ugh! I shall never get through a third part of your accounts: take some of these dainties before we attempt it, however. Are you bashful to that degree? For me, a crust and water suffice.

*Intendant.* Do you choose this especial night to question me?

*Monsignor.* This night, Ugo. You have managed my late brother's affairs since the death of our elder brother: fourteen years and a month, all but three days. On the Third of December, I find him . . .

*Intendant.* If you have so intimate an acquaintance with your brother's affairs, you will be tender of turning so far back: they will hardly bear looking into, so far back.

*Monsignor.* Ay, ay, ugh, ugh,—nothing but disappointments here below! I remark a considerable payment made to yourself on this Third of December. Talk of disappointments! There was a young fellow here, Jules, a foreign sculptor I did my utmost to advance, that the Church might be a gainer by us both: he was going on hopefully enough, and of a sudden he notifies to me some marvellous change that has happened in his notions of Art. Here's his letter, "He never had a clearly conceived Ideal within his brain till to-day. Yet since his hand could manage a chisel, he has practised expressing other men's Ideals; and, in the very

perfection he has attained to, he foresees an ultimate failure: his unconscious hand will pursue its prescribed course of old years, and will reproduce with a fatal expertness the ancient types, let the novel one appear never so palpably to his spirit. There is but one method of escape: confiding the virgin type to as chaste a hand, he will turn painter instead of sculptor, and paint, not carve, its characteristics,"—strike out, I dare say, a school like Correggio: how think you, Ugo? *Intendant.* Is Correggio a painter?

*Monsignor.* Foolish Jules! and yet, after all, why foolish? He may—probably will—fail egregiously; but if there should arise a new painter, will it not be in some such way, by a poet now, or a musician (spirits who have conceived and perfected an Ideal through some other channel), transferring it to this, and escaping our conventional roads by pure ignorance of them; eh, Ugo? If you have no appetite, talk at least, Ugo!

*Intendant.* Sir, I can submit no longer to this course of yours. First, you select the group of which I formed one,—next you thin it gradually,—always retaining me with your smile,—and so do you proceed till you have fairly got me alone with you between four stone walls. And now then? Let this farce, this chatter end now: what is it you want with me?

*Monsignor.* Ugo!

*Intendant.* From the instant you arrived, I felt your smile on me as you questioned me about this and the other article in those papers—why your brother should have given me this villa, that *podere*,—and your nod at the end meant,—what?

*Monsignor.* Possibly that I wished for no loud talk here. If once you set me coughing, Ugo!

*Intendant.* I have your brother's hand and seal to all I possess: now ask me what for! what service I did him—ask me!

*Monsignor.* I would better not: I should rip up old disgraces, let out my poor brother's weaknesses. By the way, Maffeo of Forli (which, I forgot to observe, is your true name),

was the interdict ever taken off you, for robbing that church at Cesena?

*Intendant.* No, nor needs be: for when I murdered your brother's friend, Pasquale, for him . . .

*Monsignor.* Ah, he employed you in that business, did he? Well, I must let you keep, as you say, this villa and that *podere*, for fear the world should find out my relations were of so indifferent a stamp? Maffeo, my family is the oldest in Messina, and century after century have my progenitors gone on polluting themselves with every wickedness under heaven: my own father . . . rest his soul! —I have, I know, a chapel to support that it may rest: my dear two dead brothers were, —what you know tolerably well; I, the youngest, might have rivalled them in vice, if not in wealth: but from my boyhood I came out from among them, and so am not partaker of their plagues. My glory springs from another source; or if from this, by contrast only,—for I, the bishop, am the brother of your employers, Ugo. I hope to repair some of their wrong, however; so far as my brother's ill-gotten treasure reverts to me, I can stop the consequences of his crime: and not one *soldo* shall escape me. Maffeo, the sword we quiet men spurn away, you shrewd knaves pick up and commit murders with; what opportunities the virtuous forego, the villanous seize. Because, to pleasure myself apart from other considerations, my food would be millet-cake, my dress sackcloth, and my couch straw,—am I therefore to let you, the offscouring of the earth, seduce the poor and ignorant by appropriating a pomp these will be sure to think lessens the abominations so unaccountably and exclusively associated with it? Must I let villas and *poderi* go to you, a murderer and thief, that you may beget by means of them other murderers and thieves? No—if my cough would but allow me to speak!

*Intendant.* What am I to expect? You are going to punish me?

*Monsignor.* —Must punish you, Maffeo. I cannot afford to cast away a chance. I

have whole centuries of sin to redeem, and only a month or two of life to do it in. How should I dare to say . . .

*Intendant.* "Forgive us our trespasses"?

*Monsignor.* My friend, it is because I avow myself a very worm, sinful beyond measure, that I reject a line of conduct you would applaud perhaps. Shall I proceed, as it were, a-pardoning?—I?—who have no symptom of reason to assume that aught less than my strenuous efforts will keep myself out of mortal sin, much less keep others out. No: I do trespass, but will not double that by allowing you to trespass.

*Intendant.* And suppose the villas are not your brother's to give, nor yours to take? Oh, you are hasty enough just now!

*Monsignor.* 1, 2—N<sup>o</sup> 3!—ay, can you read the substance of a letter, N<sup>o</sup> 3, I have received from Rome? It is precisely on the ground there mentioned, of the suspicion I have that a certain child of my late elder brother, who would have succeeded to his estates, was murdered in infancy by you, Maffeo, at the instigation of my late younger brother—that the Pontiff enjoins on me not merely the bringing that Maffeo to condign punishment, but the taking all pains, as guardian of the infant's heritage for the Church, to recover it parcel by parcel, howsoever, whensoever, and wheresoever. While you are now gnawing those fingers, the police are engaged in sealing up your papers, Maffeo, and the mere raising my voice brings my people from the next room to dispose of yourself. But I want you to confess quietly, and save me raising my voice. Why, man, do I not know the old story? The heir between the succeeding heir, and this heir's ruffianly instrument, and their complot's effect, and the life of fear and bribes and ominous smiling silence? Did you throttle or stab my brother's infant? Come now!

*Intendant.* So old a story, and tell it no better? When did such an instrument ever produce such an effect? Either the child smiles in his face; or, most likely, he is not fool enough to put himself in the employer's

power so thoroughly: the child is always ready to produce—as you say—howsoever, wheresoever, and whensoever.

*Monsignor.* Liar!

*Intendant.* Strike me? Ah, so might a father chastise! I shall sleep soundly to-night at least, though the gallows await me to-morrow; for what a life did I lead! Carlo of Cesena reminds me of his connivance, every time I pay his annuity; which happens commonly thrice a year. If I remonstrate, he will confess all to the good bishop—you!

*Monsignor.* I see through the trick, catiff! I would you spoke truth for once. All shall be sifted, however—seven times sifted.

*Intendant.* And how my absurd riches encumbered me! I dared not lay claim to above half my possessions. Let me but once unbosom myself, glorify Heaven, and die!

Sir, you are no brutal dastardly idiot like your brother I frightened to death: let us understand one another. Sir, I will make away with her for you—the girl—here close at hand; not the stupid obvious kind of killing; do not speak—know nothing of her nor of me! I see her every day—saw her this morning: of course there is to be no killing; but at Rome the courtesans perish off every three years, and I can entice her thither—have indeed begun operations already. There's a certain lusty blue-eyed florid-complexioned English knave, I and the Police employ occasionally. You assent, I perceive—no, that's not it—assent I do not say—but you will let me convert my present havings and holdings into cash, and give me time to cross the Alps? 'Tis but a little black-eyed pretty singing Felippa, gay silk-winding girl. I have kept her out of harm's way up to this present; for I always intended to make your life a plague to you with her. 'Tis as well settled once and for ever. Some women I have procured will pass Bluphocks, my handsome scoundrel, off for somebody; and once Pippa entangled!—you conceive? Through her singing? Is it a bargain?

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA, singing—

*Overhead the tree-tops meet,  
Flowers and grass spring 'neath one's feet;  
There was nought above me, nought below,  
My childhood had not learned to know:  
For, what are the voices of birds  
—Ay, and of beasts,—but words, our words  
Only so much more sweet?  
The knowledge of that with my life begun,  
But I had so near made out the sun,  
And counted your stars, the seven and one,  
Like the fingers of my hand:  
Nay, I could all but understand  
Wherefore through heaven the white moon  
ranges;  
And just when out of her soft fifty changes  
No unfamiliar face might overlook me—  
Suddenly God took me.*

[PIPPA passes.

*Monsignor* [springing up]. My people—one and all—all—within there! Gag this villain—tie him hand and foot! He dares . . . I know not half he dares—but remove him—quick! *Miserere mei, Domine!* Quick, I say!

SCENE.—PIPPA'S chamber again. *She enters it.*

The bee with his comb,  
The mouse at her dray,  
The grub in his tomb,  
Wile winter away;  
But the fire-fly and hedge-shrew and lob-worm, I pray,  
How fare they?  
Ha, ha, thanks for your counsel, my Zanze!  
“Feast upon lampreys, quaff Breganze”—  
The summer of life so easy to spend,  
And care for to-morrow so soon put away!  
But winter hastens at summer's end,  
And fire-fly, hedge-shrew, lob-worm, pray,  
How fare they?  
No bidding me then to . . . what did Zanze say?

"Pare your nails pearlwise, get your small  
feet shoes

"More like" . . . (what said she?)—"and  
less like canoes!"

How pert that girl was!—would I be those  
pert

Impudent staring women! It had done me,  
However, surely no such mighty hurt  
To learn his name who passed that jest upon  
me:

No foreigner, that I can recollect,  
Came, as she says, a month since, to inspect  
Our silk-mills—none with blue eyes and thick  
rings

Of raw-silk-coloured hair, at all events.  
Well, if old Luca keep his good intents,  
We shall do better, see what next year  
brings.

I may buy shoes, my Zanze, not appear  
More destitute than you perhaps next year!  
Bluph . . . something! I had caught the  
uncouth name

But for Monsignor's people's sudden clatter  
Above us—bound to spoil such idle chatter  
As ours: it were indeed a serious matter  
If silly talk like ours should put to shame  
The pious man, the man devoid of blame,  
The . . . ah but—ah but, all the same,  
No mere mortal has a right  
To carry that exalted air;

Best people are not angels quite:  
While—not the worst of people's doings  
scare

The devil; so there's that proud look to  
spare!

Which is mere counsel to myself, mind! for  
I have just been the holy Monsignor:  
And I was you too, Luigi's gentle mother,  
And you too, Luigi!—how that Luigi started  
Out of the turret—doubtlessly departed  
On some good errand or another,  
For he passed just now in a traveller's trim,  
And the sullen company that prowled  
About his path, I noticed, scowled  
As if they had lost a prey in him.  
And I was Jules the sculptor's bride,  
And I was Ottima beside,  
And now what am I?—tired of fooling.

Day for folly, night for schooling!

New Year's day is over and spent,  
Ill or well, I must be content.

Even my lily's asleep, I vow:

Wake up—here's a friend I've plucked  
you:

Call this flower a heart's-ease now!  
Something rare, let me instruct you,  
Is this, with petals triply swollen,  
Three times spotted, thrice the pollen;  
While the leaves and parts that witness  
Old proportions and their fitness,  
Here remain unchanged, unmoved now;

Call this pampered thing improved now!  
Suppose there's a king of the flowers  
And a girl-show held in his bowers—

"Look ye, buds, this growth of ours,"  
Says he, "Zanze from the Brenta,  
"I have made her gorge polenta  
"Till both cheeks are near as bouncing  
"As her . . . name there's no pronounc-  
ing!

"See this heightened colour too,  
"For she swilled Breganze wine  
"Till her nose turned deep carmine;  
"Twas but white when wild she grew.  
"And only by this Zanze's eyes  
"Of which we could not change the size,  
"The magnitude of all achieved  
"Otherwise, may be perceived."

Oh what a drear dark close to my poor  
day!

How could that red sun drop in that black  
cloud?

Ah Pippa, morning's rule is moved away,  
Dispensed with, never more to be allowed!  
Day's turn is over, now arrives the night's.  
Oh lark, be day's apostle  
To mavis, merle and thristle,  
Bid them their betters jostle  
From day and its delights!  
But at night, brother howlet, over the woods,  
Toll the world to thy chantry;  
Sing to the bats' sleek sisterhoods  
Full complines with gallantry:  
Then, owls and bats,  
Cows and twats,

Monks and nuns, in a cloister's moods,  
Adjourn to the oak-stump pantry !

*[After she has begun to undress herself.]*  
Now, one thing I should like to really  
know :

How near I ever might approach all these

I only fancied being, this long day :

—Approach, I mean, so as to touch them, so  
As to . . . in some way . . . move them—  
if you please,

Do good or evil to them some slight way.

For instance, if I wind

Silk to-morrow, my silk may bind

*[Sitting on the bedside.]*

And border Ottima's cloak's hem.

Ah me, and my important part with them,

This morning's hymn half promised when I  
rose !

True in some sense or other, I suppose.

*[As she lies down.]*

God bless me ! I can pray no more to-night.

No doubt, some way or other, hymns say  
right.

*All service ranks the same with God—*

*With God, whose puppets, best and worst,*

*Are we : there is no last nor first.*

*[She sleeps.]*

# KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES;

## A TRAGEDY.

1842.

[Victor Amadeus II., originally Duke of Savoy, obtained the title of King of Sardinia in 1720. He was a powerful and self-willed man, and a sagacious sovereign. Saddened by the death of his eldest and favourite son, and of his daughter, the Queen of Spain, he began to meditate abdication in favour of his son Charles. In 1728, after the death of his first wife, and upon his marriage with a second, he carried out his design and withdrew with his lady to his castle at Chambéry, where they both soon began to repent their conduct and to be sick of ennui. In 1731 King Charles was told that his father was on his way to Turin to take up his old post as king; but when father and son met, the former repudiated the notion, and alleged health as the sole ground of his return to the capital. King Charles placed the castle of Moncagliè at his father's disposal, where, however, King Victor resumed his intrigues, and at last demanded that his deed of resignation should be delivered up to be cancelled. King Charles felt the position very keenly, and vacillated a good deal; but finally he concurred in the opinion of his Council that there was nothing for it but to put the old king under arrest, which was done under the direction of the Marquis D'Ormea. King Victor died shortly afterwards, namely, in October 1732.]

### NOTE.

So far as I know, this Tragedy is the first artistic consequence of what Voltaire termed "a terrible event without consequences;" and although it professes to be historical, I have taken more pains to arrive at the history than most readers would thank me for particularizing: since acquainted, as I will hope them to be, with the chief circumstances of Victor's remarkable European career—not quite ignorant of the sad and surprising facts I am about to reproduce (a tolerable account of which is to be found, for instance, in Abbé Roman's *Récit*, or even the fifth of Lord Orrery's Letters from Italy)—I cannot expect them to be versed, nor desirous of becoming so, in all the detail of the memoirs, correspondence, and relations of the time. From these only may be obtained a knowledge of the fiery and audacious temper, unscrupulous selfishness, profound dissimulation, and singular fertility in resources, of Victor—the extreme and painful sensibility, prolonged immaturity of powers, earnest good purpose and vacillating will of Charles—the noble and right woman's manliness of his wife—and the ill-considered rascality and subsequent better-advised rectitude of D'Ormea. When I say, therefore, that I cannot but believe my statement (combining as it does

what appears correct in Voltaire and plausible in Condorcet) more true to person and thing than any it has hitherto been my fortune to meet with, no doubt my word will be taken, and my evidence spared as readily. R. B.

LONDON: 1842.

## KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES.

### PERSONS.

VICTOR AMADEUS, *first King of Sardinia.*  
CHARLES EMMANUEL, *his son, Prince of Piedmont.*  
POLYXENA, *wife of Charles.*  
D'ORMEA, *minister.*

SCENE.—*The Council Chamber of Rivoli Palace, near Turin, communicating with a Hall at the back, an Apartment to the left, and another to the right of the stage.*

TIME, 1730-1732.

### FIRST YEAR, 1730.—KING VICTOR.

#### PART I.

CHARLES, POLYXENA.

Charles. You think so? Well, I do not.  
Polyxena. My beloved,



All must clear up; we shall be happy yet :  
This cannot last for ever—oh, may change  
To-day or any day !

*Charles.* —May change? Ah yes—  
May change !

*Polyxena.* Endure it, then.

*Charles.* No doubt, a life  
Like this drags on, now better and now worse.  
My father may . . . may take to loving me ;  
And he may take D'Ormea closer yet  
To counsel him ;—may even cast off her  
—That bad Sebastian ; but he also may  
. . . Or no, Polyxena, my only friend,  
He may not force you from me ?

*Polyxena.* Now, force me  
From you !—me, close by you as if there  
gloomed

No Sebastians, no D'Ormeas on our path—  
At Rivoli or Turin, still at hand,  
Arch-counsellor, prime confidant . . . force  
me !

*Charles.* Because I felt as sure, as I feel sure  
We clasp hands now, of being happy once.  
Young was I, quite neglected, nor concerned  
By the world's business that engrossed so  
much

My father and my brother : if I peered  
From out my privacy,—amid the crash  
And blaze of nations, domineered those two.  
'Twas war, peace—France our foe, now—  
England, friend—

In love with Spain—at feud with Austria !  
Well—

I wondered, laughed a moment's laugh for  
pride

In the chivalrous couple, then let drop  
My curtain—"I am out of it," I said—  
When . . .

*Polyxena.* You have told me, Charles.

*Charles.* Polyxena—  
When suddenly,—a warm March day, just  
that !

Just so much sunshine as the cottage child  
Basks in delighted, while the cottager  
Takes off his bonnet, as he ceases work,  
To catch the more of it—and it must fall  
Heavily on my brother ! Had you seen  
Philip—the lion-featured ! not like me !

*Polyxena.* I know—

*Charles.* And Philip's mouth  
yet fast to mine,

His dead cheek on my cheek, his arm still  
round

My neck,—they bade me rise, "for I was heir  
"To the Duke," they said, "the right hand  
of the Duke ;"

Till then he was my father, not the Duke.  
So . . . let me finish . . . the whole intricate  
World's-business their dead boy was born to, I  
Must conquer,—ay, the brilliant thing he was,

I, of a sudden must be : my faults, my follies,  
—All bitter truths were told me, all at once,

To end the sooner. What I simply styled  
Their overlooking me, had been contempt :  
How should the Duke employ himself, for-

sooth,

With such an one, while lordly Philip rode  
By him their Turin through? But he was  
punished,

And must put up with—me ! 'Twas sad  
enough

To learn my future portion and submit.  
And then the wear and worry, blame on  
blame !

For, spring-sounds in my ears, spring-smells  
about,

How could I but grow dizzy in their pent  
Dim palace-rooms at first? My mother's look  
As they discussed my insignificance,  
She and my father, and I sitting by,—

I bore ; I knew how brave a son they missed :  
Philip had gaily run state-papers through,  
While Charles was spelling at them painfully !  
But Victor was my father spite of that.

"Duke Victor's entire life has been," I said,  
"Innumerable efforts to one end ;

"And on the point now of that end's success,  
"Our Ducal turning to a Kingly crown,

"Where's time to be reminded 'tis his child  
"He spurns?" And so I suffered—scarcely  
suffered,

Since I had you at length !

*Polyxena.* —To serve in place  
Of monarch, minister, and mistress, Charles.

*Charles.* But, once that crown obtained,  
then wasn't not like

Our lot would alter? "When he rests,  
takes breath,  
"Glances around, sees who there's left to  
love—

"Now that my mother's dead, sees I am left—  
"Is it not like he'll love me at the last?"  
Well, Savoy turns Sardinia; the Duke's King:  
Could I—precisely then—could you expect  
His harshness to redouble? These few months  
Have been . . . have been . . . Polyxena,  
do you

And God conduct me, or I lose myself!  
What would he have? What is't they want  
with me?

Him with this mistress and this minister,  
—You see me and you hear him; judge us both!  
Pronounce what I should do, Polyxena!

*Polyxena.* Endure, endure, beloved! Say  
you not

He is your father? All's so incident  
To novel sway! Beside, our life must change:  
Or you'll acquire his kingcraft, or he'll find  
Harshness a sorry way of teaching it.  
I bear this—not that there's so much to bear.

*Charles.* You bear? Do not I know that  
you, tho' bound

To silence for my sake, are perishing  
Piecemeal beside me? And how otherwise  
When every creephole from the hideous Court  
Is stopped: the Minister to dog me, here—  
The Mistress posted to entrap you, there!  
And thus shall we grow old in such a life;  
Not careless, never estranged,—but old: to  
alter

Our life, there is so much to alter!

*Polyxena.*

Come—  
Is it agreed that we forego complaint  
Even at Turin, yet complain we here  
At Rivoli? 'Twere wiser you announced  
Our presence to the King. What's now afoot  
I wonder? Not that any more's to dread  
Than every day's embarrassment: but guess  
For me, why train so fast succeeded train  
On the high-road, each gayer still than each!  
I noticed your Archbishop's pursuivant,  
The sable cloak and silver cross; such pomp  
Bodes . . . what now, Charles? Can you  
conceive?

*Charles.* Not I.  
*Polyxena.* A matter of some moment.

*Charles.* There's our life!  
Which of the group of loiterers that stare  
From the lime-avenue, divines that I—  
About to figure presently, he thinks,  
In face of all assembled—am the one  
Who knows precisely least about it?

*Polyxena.* Tush!  
D'Ormea's contrivance!

*Charles.* Ay, how otherwise  
Should the young Prince serve for the old  
King's foil?

—So that the simplest courtier may remark  
'Twere idle raising parties for a Prince  
Content to linger the Court's laughing-stock.  
Something, 'tis like, about that weary business  
[*Pointing to papers he has laid down,*  
*and which POLYXENA examines.*

—Not that I comprehend three words, of  
course,

After all last night's study.

*Polyxena.* The faint heart!  
Why, as we rode and you rehearsed just now  
Its substance . . . (that's the folded speech  
I mean,

Concerning the Reduction of the Fiefs)  
—What would you have?—I fancied while  
you spoke,  
Some tones were just your father's.

*Charles.* Flattery!

*Polyxena.* I fancied so—and here lurks,  
sure enough,  
My note upon the Spanish Claims! You've  
mastered

The fief-speech thoroughly: this other, mind,  
Is an opinion you deliver,—stay,  
Best read it slowly over once to me;  
Read—there's bare time; you read it firmly  
—loud

—Rather loud, looking in his face,—don't  
sink

Your eye once—ay, thus! "If Spain claims  
. . ." begin

—Just as you look at me!

*Charles.* At you! Oh truly!  
You have I seen, say, marshalling your troops,  
Dismissing councils, or, through doors ajar,

Head sunk on hand, devoured by slow  
chagrins

—Then radiant, for a crown had all at once  
Seemed possible again! I can behold  
Him, whose least whisper ties my spirit fast,  
In this sweet brow, nought could divert me  
from

Save objects like Sebastian's shameless lip,  
Or worse, the clipped grey hair and dead  
white face

And dwindling eye as if it ached with guile,  
D'Ormea weeps . . .

*[As he kisses her, enter from the*

*KING's apartment D'ORMEA.*

I said he would divert

My kisses from your brow!

*D'Ormea [aside].* Here! So, King  
Victor

Spoke truth for once: and who's ordained,  
but I

To make that memorable? Both in call,  
As he declared. Were't better gnash the  
teeth,

Or laugh outright now?

*Charles [to POLYXENA].* What's his visit  
for?

*D'Ormea [aside].* I question if they even  
speak to me.

*Polyxena [to CHARLES].* Face the man!  
He'll suppose you fear him, else.

*[Aloud.]* The Marquis bears the King's  
command, no doubt?

*D'Ormea [aside].* Precisely!—If I threat-  
ened him, perhaps?

Well, this at least is punishment enough!  
Men used to promise punishment would come.

*Charles.* Deliver the King's message,  
Marquis!

*D'Ormea [aside].* Ah—

So anxious for his fate? *[Aloud.]* A word,  
my Prince,

Before you see your father—just one word  
Of counsel!

*Charles.* Oh, your counsel certainly!

*Polyxena,* the Marquis counsels us!

Well, sir? Be brief, however!

*D'Ormea.* What? You know

As much as I?—preceded me, most like,

In knowledge! So! ('Tis in his eye, be-  
side—

His voice: he knows it, and his heart's on  
flame

Already.) You surmise why you, myself,  
Del Borgo, Spava, fifty nobles more,  
Are summoned thus?

*Charles.* Is the Prince used to know,  
At any time, the pleasure of the King,  
Before his minister?—*Polyxena,*  
Stay here till I conclude my task: I feel  
Your presence (smile not) through the walls,  
and take

Fresh heart. The King's within that chamber?

*D'Ormea [passing the table whereon a  
paper lies, exclaims, as he glances at  
it].* "Spain!"

*Polyxena [aside to CHARLES].* Tarry awhile:  
what ails the minister?

*D'Ormea.* Madam, I do not often trouble  
you.

The Prince loathes, and you scorn me—let  
that pass!

But since it touches him and you, not me,  
Bid the Prince listen!

*Polyxena [to CHARLES].* Surely you will  
listen!

—Deceit?—those fingers crumpling up his  
vest?

*Charles.* Deceitful to the very fingers' ends!  
*D'Ormea [who has approached them, over-  
looks the other paper CHARLES continues  
to hold].* My project for the Fiefs! As  
I supposed!

Sir, I must give you light upon those measures  
—For this is mine, and that I spied of Spain,  
Mine too!

*Charles.* Release me! Do you gloze on me  
Who bear in the world's face (that is, the world  
You make for me at Turin) your contempt?  
—Your measures?—When was not a hateful  
task

*D'Ormea's* imposition? Leave my robe!  
What post can I bestow, what grant concede?  
Or do you take me for the King?

*D'Ormea.* Not I!  
Not yet for King,—not for, as yet, thank God,  
One who in . . . shall I say a year, a month?

Ay!—shall be wretcheder than e'er was slave  
In his Sardinia.—Europe's spectacle  
And the world's bye-word! What? The  
Prince aggrieved

That I excluded him our counsels? Here

[*Touching the paper in CHARLES's hand.*]

Accept a method of extorting gold  
From Savoy's nobles, who must wring its worth  
In silver first from tillers of the soil,  
Whose hinds again have to contribute brass  
To make up the amount: there's counsel, sir,  
My counsel, one year old; and the fruit,  
this—

Savoy's become a mass of misery  
And wrath, which one man has to meet—  
the King:

You're not the King! Another counsel, sir!  
Spain entertains a project (here it lies)  
Which, guessed, makes Austria offer that  
same King

Thus much to baffle Spain; he promises;  
Then comes Spain, breathless lest she be fore-  
stalled,

Her offer follows; and he promises . . .

*Charles.* —Promises, sir, when he has just  
agreed

To Austria's offer?

*D'Ormea.* That's a counsel, Prince!

But past our foresight, Spain and Austria  
(choosing

To make their quarrel up between themselves  
Without the intervention of a friend)

Produce both treaties, and both promises . . .

*Charles.* How?

*D'Ormea.* Prince, a counsel! And  
the fruit of that?

Both parties covenant afresh, to fall

Together on their friend, blot out his name,  
Abolish him from Europe. So, take note,  
Here's Austria and here's Spain to fight  
against:

And what sustains the King but Savoy here,  
A miserable people mad with wrongs?

You're not the King!

*Charles.* Polyxena, you said

All would clear up: all does clear up to me.

*D'Ormea.* Clear up! 'Tis no such thing  
to envy, then?

You see the King's state in its length and  
breadth?

You blame me now for keeping you aloof  
From counsels and the fruit of counsels?  
Wait

Till I explain this morning's business!

*Charles* [*aside*]. No—

Stoop to my father, yes,—D'Ormea, no:  
—The King's son, not to the King's coun-  
sellor!

I will do something, but at least retain  
The credit of my deed. [*Aloud.*] Then it is  
this

You now expressly come to tell me?

*D'Ormea.* This

To tell! You apprehend me?

*Charles.* Perfectly.

Further, D'Ormea, you have shown yourself,  
For the first time these many weeks and  
months,

Disposed to do my bidding?

*D'Ormea.* From the heart!

*Charles.* Acquaint my father, first, I wait  
his pleasure:

Next . . . or, I'll tell you at a fitter time.

Acquaint the King!

*D'Ormea* [*aside*]. If I 'scape Victor yet!

First, to prevent this stroke at me: if not,—  
Then, to avenge it! [*To CHARLES.*] Gracious  
sir, I go. [*Goes.*]

*Charles.* God, I forbore! Which more  
offends, that man

Or that man's master? Is it come to this?  
Have they supposed (the sharpest insult yet)  
I needed e'en his intervention? No!  
No—dull am I, conceded,—but so dull,  
Scarcely! Their step decides me.

*Polyxena.* How decides?

*Charles.* You would be freed D'Ormea's  
eye and hers?

—Could fly the court with me and live con-  
tent?

So, this it is for which the knights assemble!  
The whispers and the closeting of late;

The savageness and insolence of old,

—For this!

*Polyxena.* What mean you?

*Charles.* How? You fail to catch

Their clever plot? I missed it, but could you? These last two months of care to inculcate How dull I am,—D'Ormea's present visit To prove that, being dull, I might be worse Were I a King—as wretched as now dull— You recognize in it no winding up Of a long plot?

*Polyxena.* Why should there be a plot?

*Charles.* The crown's secure now; I should shame the crown—

An old complaint; the point is, how to gain My place for one, more fit in Victor's eyes, His mistress the Sebastian's child.

*Polyxena.* In truth?

*Charles.* They dare not quite dethrone Sardinia's Prince:

But they may descant on my dulness till They sting me into even praying them Grant leave to hide my head, resign my state, And end the coil. Not see now? In a word, They'd have me tender them myself my rights As one incapable;—some cause for that, Since I delayed thus long to see their drift! I shall apprise the King he may resume My rights this moment.

*Polyxena.* Pause! I dare not think So ill of Victor.

*Charles.* Think no ill of him!

*Polyxena.*—Nor think him, then, so shallow as to suffer

His purpose be divined thus easily. And yet—you are the last of a great line; There's a great heritage at stake; new days Seemed to await this newest of the realms Of Europe:—Charles, you must withstand this!

*Charles.* Ah—

You dare not then renounce the splendid Court For one whom all the world despises? Speak!

*Polyxena.* My gentle husband, speak I will, and truth.

Were this as you believe, and I once sure Your duty lay in so renouncing rule, I could . . . could? Oh what happiness it were—

To live, my Charles, and die, alone with you!

*Charles.* I grieve I asked you. To the presence, then!

By this, D'Ormea acquaints the King, no doubt,

He fears I am too simple for mere hints, And that no less will serve than Victor's mouth Demonstrating in council what I am.

I have not breathed, I think, these many years!

*Polyxena.* Why, it may be!—if he desire to wed

That woman, call legitimate her child.

*Charles.* You see as much? Oh, let his will have way!

You'll not repent confiding in me, love?

There's many a brighter spot in Piedmont, far, Than Rivoli. I'll seek him: or, suppose

You hear first how I mean to speak my mind?

—Loudly and firmly both, this time, be sure!

I yet may see your Rhine-land, who can tell? Once away, ever then away! I breathe.

*Polyxena.* And I too breathe.

*Charles.* Come, my Polyxena!

## KING VICTOR.

### PART II.

*Enter King VICTOR, bearing the Regalia on a cushion, from his apartment. He calls loudly.*

*Victor.* D'Ormea!—for patience fails me, treading thus

Among the obscure trains I have laid,—my knights

Safe in the hall here—in that anteroom,

My son,—D'Ormea, where? Of this, one touch—

[*Laying down the crown.*]

This fireball to these mute black cold trains

—then

Outbreak enough!

[*Contemplating it.*] To lose all, after all! This, glancing o'er my house for ages—shaped,

Brave meteor, like the crown of Cyprus now, Jerusalem, Spain, England, every change

The braver,—and when I have clutched a prize

My ancestry died wan with watching for,

To lose it!—by a slip, a fault, a trick  
 Learnt to advantage once and not unlearned  
 When past the use,—“just this once more”

(I thought)

“Use it with Spain and Austria happily,  
 “And then away with trick!” An oversight  
 I'd have repaired thrice over, any time  
 These fifty years, must happen now! There's  
 peace

At length; and I, to make the most of peace,  
 Ventured my project on our people here,  
 As needing not their help: which Europe  
 knows,

And means, cold-blooded, to dispose herself  
 (Apart from plausibilities of war)

To crush the new-made King—who ne'er  
 till now

Feared her. As Duke, I lost each foot of  
 earth

And laughed at her: my name was left, my  
 sword

Left, all was left! But she can take, she  
 knows,

This crown, herself conceded . . . That's  
 to try,

Kind Europe! My career's not closed as yet!

This boy was ever subject to my will,  
 Timid and tame—the fitter! D'Ormea, too—

What if the sovereign also rid himself  
 Of thee, his prime of parasites?—I delay!

D'Ormea! [As D'ORMEA enters, the  
 KING seats himself.

My son, the Prince—attends he?

D'Ormea. Sir,

He does attend. The crown prepared!—it  
 seems

That you persist in your resolve.

Victor. Who's come?

The chancellor and the chamberlain? My  
 knights?

D'Ormea. The whole Annunziata. If, my  
 liege,

Your fortune had not tottered worse than  
 now . . .

Victor. Del Borgo has drawn up the  
 schedules? mine—

My son's, too? Excellent! Only, beware  
 Of the least blunder, or we look but fools.

First, you read the Annulment of the Oaths;  
 Del Borgo follows . . . no, the Prince shall  
 sign;

Then let Del Borgo read the Instrument:

On which, I enter.

D'Ormea. Sir, this may be truth;

You, sir, may do as you affect—may break

Your engine, me, to pieces: try at least

If not a spring remain worth saving! Take

My counsel as I've counselled many times!

What if the Spaniard and the Austrian threat?

There's England, Holland, Venice—which  
 ally

Select you?

Victor. Aha! Come, D'Ormea,—

“truth”

Was on your lip a minute since: Allies?

I've broken faith with Venice, Holland,  
 England

—As who knows if not you?

D'Ormea. But why with me

Break faith—with one ally, your best, break  
 faith?

Victor. When first I stumbled on you,  
 Marquis—'twas

At Mondovi—a little lawyer's clerk . . .

D'Ormea. Therefore your soul's ally!—  
 who brought you through

Your quarrel with the Pope, at pains enough—  
 Who simply echoed you in these affairs—

On whom you cannot therefore visit these  
 Affairs' ill-fortune—whom you trust to guide

You safe (yes, on my soul) through these  
 affairs!

Victor. I was about to notice, had you not

Prevented me, that since that great town kept

With its chicane D'Ormea's satchel stuffed

And D'Ormea's self sufficiently recluse,

He missed a sight,—my naval armament

When I burned Toulon. How the skiff  
 exults

Upon the galliot's<sup>1</sup> wave!—rises its height,

O'ertops it even; but the great wave bursts,

And hell-deep in the horrible profound

Buries itself the galliot: shall the skiff

<sup>1</sup> A vessel used on the Mediterranean, built  
 for speed.

Think to escape the sea's black trough in turn?

Apply this : you have been my minister

—Next me, above me possibly ;—sad post,  
Huge care, abundant lack of peace of mind ;  
Who would desiderate the eminence ?  
You gave your soul to get it ; you'd yet give  
Your soul to keep it, as I mean you shall,  
D'Ormea ! What if the wave ebbed with me ?  
Whereas it cants you to another crest ;  
I toss you to my son ; ride out your ride !

D'Ormea. Ah, you so much despise me ?

Victor. You, D'Ormea ?

Nowise ; and I'll inform you why. A king  
Must in his time have many ministers,  
And I've been rash enough to part with mine  
When I thought proper. Of the tribe, not one  
' . . . Or wait, did Pianezze ?—ah, just the  
same !)

Not one of them, ere his remonstrance reached  
The length of yours, but has assured me  
(commonly

Standing much as you stand,—or nearer, say,  
The door to make his exit on his speech)

—I should repent of what I did. D'Ormea,  
Be candid, you approached it when I bade  
you

Prepare the schedules ! But you stopped in  
time,

You have not so assured me : how should I  
Despise you then ?

Enter CHARLES.

Victor [changing his tone]. Are you in-  
structed by ? Do

My order, point by point ! About it, sir !

D'Ormea. You so despise me ! [Aside.]

One last stay remains—

The boy's discretion there.

[To CHARLES.] For your sake, Prince,  
I pleaded, wholly in your interest,  
To save you from this fate !

Charles [aside]. Must I be told  
The Prince was supplicated for—by him ?

Victor [to D'ORMEA]. Apprise Del Borgo,  
Spava, and the rest,

Our son attends them ; then return.

D'Ormea.

One word !

Charles [aside]. A moment's pause and they  
would drive me hence,

I do believe !

D'Ormea [aside]. Let but the boy be firm !

Victor. You disobey ?

Charles [to D'ORMEA]. You do not disobey  
Me, at least ? Did you promise that or no ?

D'Ormea. Sir, I am yours : what would  
you ? Yours am I !

Charles. When I have said what I shall say,  
'tis like

Your face will ne'er again disgust me. Go !

Through you, as through a breast of glass, I see.

And for your conduct, from my youth till now,

Take my contempt ! You might have spared  
me much,

Secured me somewhat, nor so harmed your-  
self :

That's over now. Go, ne'er to come again !

D'Ormea. As son, the father—father as,  
the son !

My wits ! My wits ! [Goes.]

Victor [seated]. And you, what meant  
you, pray,

Speaking thus to D'Ormea ?

Charles.

Let us not

Waste words upon D'Ormea ! Those I spent

Have half unsettled what I came to say.

His presence vexes to my very soul.

Victor. One called to manage a kingdom,

Charles, needs heart

To bear up under worse annoyances

Than seems D'Ormea—to me, at least.

Charles [aside]. Ah, good !

He keeps me to the point. Then be it so.

[Aloud.] Last night, sir, brought me certain  
papers—these—

To be reported on,—your way of late.

Is it last night's result that you demand ?

Victor. For God's sake, what has night  
brought forth ? Pronounce

The . . . what's your word ?—result !

Charles.

Sir, that had proved

Quite worthy of your sneer, no doubt :—a few

Lame thoughts, regard for you alone could  
wring,

Lame as they are, from brains like mine, be-  
lieve !

As 'tis, sir, I am spared both toil and sneer.  
These are the papers.

*Victor.* Well, sir? I suppose  
You hardly burned them. Now for your  
result!

*Charles.* I never should have done great  
things of course,  
But . . . oh my father, had you loved me  
more!

*Victor.* Loved? [*Aside.*] Has D'Ormea  
played me false, I wonder?

[*Aloud.*] Why, Charles, a king's love is  
diffused—yourself

May overlook, perchance, your part in it.  
Our monarchy is absolutest now

In Europe, or my trouble's thrown away.  
I love, my mode, that subjects each and all  
May have the power of loving, all and each,  
Their mode: I doubt not, many have their sons  
To trifle with, talk soft to, all day long:

I have that crown, this chair, D'Ormea,  
Charles!

*Charles.* 'Tis well I am a subject then, not  
you.

*Victor* [*aside*]. D'Ormea has told him every-  
thing.

[*Aloud.*] Aha!

I apprehend you: when all's said, you take  
Your private station to be prized beyond  
My own, for instance?

*Charles.* —Do and ever did  
So take it: 'tis the method you pursue  
That grieves . . .

*Victor.* These words! Let me  
express, my friend,  
Your thoughts. You penetrate what I sup-  
posed

Secret. D'Ormea plies his trade betimes!  
I purpose to resign my crown to you.

*Charles.* To me?

*Victor.* Now,—in that chamber.

*Charles.* You resign  
The crown to me?

*Victor.* And time enough, Charles,  
sure?

Confess with me, at four-and-sixty years  
A crown's a load. I covet quiet once  
Before I die, and summoned you for that.

*Charles.* 'Tis I will speak: you ever hated  
me.

I bore it,—have insulted me, borne too—  
Now you insult yourself; and I remember  
What I believed you, what you really are,  
And cannot bear it. What! My life has  
passed

Under your eye, tormented as you know,—  
Your whole sagacities, one after one,  
At leisure brought to play on me—to prove me  
A fool, I thought and I submitted; now

You'd prove . . . what would you prove me?  
*Victor.* This to me?

I hardly know you!

*Charles.* Know me? Oh indeed  
You do not! Wait till I complain next time  
Of my simplicity!—for here's a sage  
Knows the world well, is not to be deceived,  
And his experience and his Macchiavels,  
D'Ormeas, teach him—what?—that I this  
while

I have envied him his crown! He has not  
smiled,

I warrant,—has not eaten, drunk, nor slept,  
For I was plotting with my Princess yonder!  
Who knows what we might do or might not  
do?

Go now, be politic, astound the world!  
That sentry in the antechamber—nay,  
The varlet who disposed this precious trap

[*Pointing to the crown.*]  
That was to take me—ask them if they think  
Their own sons envy them their posts!—Know  
me!

*Victor.* But you know me, it seems: so,  
learn in brief,

My pleasure. This assembly is convened . . .

*Charles.* Tell me, that woman put it in your  
head!

You were not sole contriver of the scheme,  
My father!

*Victor.* Now observe me, sir! I jest  
Seldom—on these points, never. Here, I say,  
The knights assemble to see me concede,  
And you accept, Sardinia's crown.

*Charles.* Farewell!  
'Twere vain to hope to change this: I can  
end it.



Not that I cease from being yours, when sunk  
Into obscurity : I'll die for you,  
But not annoy you with my presence. Sir,  
Farewell ! Farewell !

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

*D'Ormea [aside].* Ha, sure he's changed  
again—  
Means not to fall into the cunning trap !  
Then Victor, I shall yet escape you, Victor !  
*Victor [suddenly placing the crown upon  
the head of CHARLES].* D'Ormea, your  
King !

[*To CHARLES.*] My son, obey me !  
Charles,  
Your father, clearer-sighted than yourself,  
Decides it must be so. 'Faith, this looks real !  
My reasons after ; reason upon reason  
After : but now, obey me ! Trust in me !  
By this, you save Sardinia, you save me !  
Why, the boy swoons ! [*To D'ORMEA.*]

Come this side !

*D'Ormea [as CHARLES turns from him to  
VICTOR].* You persist ?

*Victor.* Yes, I conceive the gesture's mean-  
ing. 'Faith,

He almost seems to hate you : how is that ?  
Be re-assured, my Charles ! Is't over now ?  
Then, Marquis, tell the new King what re-  
mains

To do ! A moment's work. Del Borgo reads  
The Act of Abdication out, you sign it,  
Then I sign ; after that, come back to me.

*D'Ormea.* Sir, for the last time, pause !

*Victor.* Five minutes longer  
I am your sovereign, Marquis. Hesitate—  
And I'll so turn those minutes to account  
That . . . Ay, you recollect me ! [*Aside.*]

Could I bring  
My foolish mind to undergo the reading  
That Act of Abdication !

[*As CHARLES motions D'ORMEA  
to precede him.*

Thanks, dear Charles !

[*CHARLES and D'ORMEA retire.*

*Victor.* A novel feature in the boy,—indeed  
Just what I feared he wanted most. Quite  
right,

This earnest tone : your truth, now, for effect !  
It answers every purpose : with that look,  
That voice,—I hear him : "I began no  
treaty,"

(*He speaks to Spain*), "nor ever dreamed of  
this

"You show me ; this I from my soul regret ;  
"But if my father signed it, bid not me

"Dishonour him—who gave me all, beside :"  
And, "True," says Spain, "'twere harsh to  
visit that

"Upon the Prince." Then come the nobles  
trooping :

"I grieve at these exactions—I had cut  
"This hand off ere impose them ; but shall I  
"Undo my father's deed?"—and they confer :

"Doubtless he was no party, after all ;  
"Give the Prince time !"

Ay, give us time, but time !

Only, he must not, when the dark day comes,  
Refer our friends to me and frustrate all.

We'll have no child's play, no desponding fits,  
No Charles at each cross turn entreating  
Victor

To take his crown again. Guard against that !

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

Long live King Charles !

No—Charles's counsellor !

Well, is it over, Marquis ? Did I jst ?

*D'Ormea.* "King Charles !" What then  
may you be ?

*Victor.* Anything !

A country gentleman that, cured of bustle,  
Now beats a quick retreat toward Chambery,  
Would hunt and hawk and leave you noisy folk  
To drive your trade without him. I'm Count  
Remont—

Count Tende—any little place's Count !

*D'Ormea.* Then Victor, Captain against  
Catinat

At Staffarde, where the French beat you ; and  
Duke

At Turin, where you beat the French ; King  
late

Of Savoy, Piedmont, Montferrat, Sardinia,  
—Now, "any little place's Count"—

*Victor.*

Proceed !

*D'Ormea.* Breaker of vows to God, who crowned you first ;  
Breaker of vows to man, who kept you since ;  
Most profligate to me who outraged God  
And man to serve you, and am made pay crimes

I was but privy to, by passing thus  
To your imbecile son—who, well you know,  
Must—(when the people here, and nations there,

Clamour for you the main delinquent, slipped  
From King to—"Count of any little place")  
Must needs surrender me, all in his reach,—  
I, sir, forgive you : for I see the end—  
See you on your return—(you will return)—  
To him you trust, a moment . . .

*Victor.* Trust him? How?  
My poor man, merely a prime-minister,  
Make me know where my trust errs !

*D'Ormea.* In his fear,  
His love, his—but discover for yourself  
What you are weakest, trusting in !

*Victor.* Aha,  
*D'Ormea*, not a shrewder scheme than this  
In your repertory? You know old *Victor*—  
Vain, choleric, inconstant, rash—(I've heard  
Talkers who little thought the King so close)  
Felicitous now, were't not, to provoke him  
To clean forget, one minute afterward,  
His solemn act, and call the nobles back  
And pray them give again the very power  
He has abjured?—for the dear sake of what?  
Vengeance on you, *D'Ormea* ! No : such  
am I,

Count Tende or Count anything you please,  
—Only, the same that did the things you say,  
And, among other things you say not, used  
Your finest fibre, meanest muscle,—you  
I used, and now, since you will have it so,  
Leave to your fate—mere lumber in the midst,  
You and your works. Why, what on earth  
beside

Are you made for, you sort of ministers?

*D'Ormea.* Not left, though, to my fate !  
Your witless son  
Has more wit than to load himself with  
lumber :

He foils you that way, and I follow you.

*Victor.* Stay with my son—protect the weaker side !

*D'Ormea.* Ay, to be tossed the people like a rag,  
And flung by them for Spain and Austria's sport,

Abolishing the record of your part  
In all this perfidy !

*Victor.* Prevent, beside,  
My own return !

*D'Ormea.* That's half prevented now !  
"Twill go hard but you find a wondrous charm  
In exile, to discredit me. The Alps,  
Silk-mills to watch, vines asking vigilance—  
Hounds open for the stag, your hawk's  
a-wing—

Brave days that wait the Louis of the South,  
Italy's Janus !

*Victor.* So, the lawyer's clerk  
Won't tell me that I shall repent !

*D'Ormea.* You give me  
Full leave to ask if you repent ?

*Victor.* When'er  
Sufficient time's elapsed for that, you judge !  
[*Shouts inside* "King CHARLES !"]

*D'Ormea.* Do you repent ?

*Victor* [after a slight pause]. . . I've kept  
them waiting? Yes !

Come in, complete the Abdication, sir !

[*They go out.*]

*Enter POLYXENA.*

*Polyxena.* A shout ! The sycophants are  
free of Charles !

Oh is not this like Italy? No fruit  
Of his or my distempered fancy, this,  
But just an ordinary fact ! Beside,  
Here they've set forms for such proceedings ;

*Victor*  
Imprisoned his own mother : he should know,  
If any, how a son's to be deprived  
Of a son's right. Our duty's palpable.  
Ne'er was my husband for the wily king  
And the unworthy subjects : be it so !  
Come you safe out of them, my Charles ! Our  
life

Grows not the broad and dazzling life, I  
dreamed

Might prove your lot ; for strength was shut And I, alone, tend upward, more and more  
in you

None guessed but I—strength which, un- Tend upward : I am grown Sardinia's King.  
trammelled once, *Polyxena.* Now stop : was not this Victor,

Had little shamed your vaunted ancestry— Duke of Savoy  
Patience and self-devotion, fortitude, At ten years old ?

Simplicity and utter truthfulness *Charles.* He was.  
—All which, they shout to lose ! *Polyxena.* And the Duke spent

So, now my work Since then, just four-and-fifty years in toil  
Begins — to save him from regret. Save To be—what ?

*Charles.* King.  
Regret?—the noble nature ! He's not made *Polyxena.* Then why unking himself ?  
Like these Italians : 'tis a German soul. *Charles.* Those years are cause enough.

*CHARLES enters crowned.*

Oh, where's the King's heir ? Gone !—the *Polyxena.* The only cause ?  
Crown Prince ? Gone !— *Charles.* Some new perplexities.  
Where's Savoy ? Gone !—Sardinia ? Gone ! *Polyxena.* Which you can solve

But *Charles.* Although he cannot ?  
*Charles.* He assures me so.

Is left ! And when my Rhine-land bowers *Polyxena.* And this he means shall last—  
arrive, how long ?

If he looked almost handsome yester-twilight *Charles.* How long ?  
As his grey eyes seemed widening into Think you I fear the perils I confront ?  
black He's praising me before the people's face—  
Because I praised him, then how will he My people !

look ? *Polyxena.* Then he's changed — grown  
kind, the King ?

Farewell, you stripped and whited mulberry- *Charles.* Where can the trap be ?  
trees Heart and soul I pledge !

Bound each to each by lazy ropes of vine ! My father, could I guard the crown you gained,  
Now I'll teach you my language : I'm not Transmit as I received it,—all good else  
forced Would I surrender !

To speak Italian now, *Charles.* Ah, it opens then  
[*She sees the crown.*] What is this ? Before you, all you dreaded formerly ?

Answer me—who has done this ? Answer ! You are rejoiced to be a king, my *Charles.* So much to dare ? The better ;  
*Charles.* He ! —much to dread ?

I am King now. *Polyxena.* The better. I'll adventure though alone.

*Polyxena.* Oh worst, worst, worst of all ! Triumph or die, there's Victor still to witness  
Tell me ! What, Victor ? He has made you Who dies or triumphs—either way, alone !

King ? *Polyxena.* Once I had found my share in  
What's he then ? What's to follow this ? triumph, *Charles,*

You, King ? Or death.  
*Charles.* Have I done wrong ? Yes, for But you are I ! But you I call  
you were not by ! To take, Heaven's proxy, vows I tendered

*Polyxena.* Tell me from first to last. Heaven  
*Charles.* Hush—a new world

Brightens before me ; he is moved away A moment since. I will deserve the crown !  
—The dark form that eclipsed it, he subsides *Polyxena.* You will. [*Aside.*] No doubt  
Into a shape supporting me like you, it were a glorious thing

For any people, if a heart like his  
Ruled over it. I would I saw the trap.

*Enter* VICTOR.

'Tis he must show me.

*Victor.* So, the mask falls off  
An old man's foolish love at last. Spare  
thanks!

I know you, and Polyxena I know.  
Here's Charles—I am his guest now—does  
he bid me

Be seated? And my light-haired blue-eyed  
child

Must not forget the old man ~~far~~ away  
At Chambéry, who dozes while she reigns.

*Polyxena.* Most grateful shall we now be,  
talking least

Of gratitude—indeed of anything  
That hinders what yourself must need to say  
To Charles.

*Charles.* Pray speak, sir!

*Victor.* 'Faith, not much to say:  
Only what shows itself, you once i' the point  
Of sight. You're now the King: you'll  
comprehend

Much you may oft have wondered at—the  
shifts,

Dissimulation, wiliness I showed.

For what's our post? Here's Savoy and  
here's Piedmont,

Here's Montferrat—a breadth here, a space  
there—

To o'ersweep all these, what's one weapon  
worth?

I often think of how they fought in Greece:  
(Or Rome, which was it? You're the  
scholar, Charles!)

You made a front-thrust? But if your shield  
too

Were not adroitly planted, some shrewd knave  
Reached you behind; and him foiled, straight  
if thong

And handle of that shield were not cast loose,  
And you enabled to outstrip the wind,

Fresh foes assailed you, either side; 'scape  
these,

And reach your place of refuge—e'en then, odds  
If the gate opened unless breath enough

Were left in you to make its lord a speech.  
Oh, you will see!

*Charles.* No: straight on shall I go,  
Truth helping; win with it or die with it,

*Victor.* 'Faith, Charles, you're not made  
Europe's fighting-man!

The barrier-guarder, if you please. You clutch  
Hold and consolidate, with envious France  
This side, with Austria that, the territory  
I held—ay, and will hold . . . which *you*  
shall hold

Despite the couple! But I've surely earned  
Exemption from these weary politics,  
—The privilege to prattle with my son  
And daughter here, though Europe wait the  
while.

*Polyxena.* Nay, sir,—at Chambéry, away  
for ever,

As soon you will be, 'tis farewell we bid  
you:

Turn these few fleeting moments to account!  
'Tis just as though it were a death.

*Victor.* Indeed!  
*Polyxena* [*aside*]. Is the trap there?

*Charles.* Ay, call this parting—death!  
The sadder your memory becomes.  
If I misrule Sardinia, how bring back  
My father?

*Victor.* I mean . . .

*Polyxena* [*who watches VICTOR narrowly  
this while*]. Your father does not mean

You should be ruling for your father's sake:  
It is your people must concern you wholly  
Instead of him. You mean this, sir? (He  
drops

My hand!)

*Charles.* That people is now part of me.

*Victor.* About the people! I took certain  
measures

Some short time since . . . Oh, I know  
well, you know

But little of my measures! These affect  
The nobles; we've resumed some grants,  
imposed

A tax or two: prepare yourself, in short,  
For clamour on that score. Mark me: you  
yield

No jot of aught entrusted you!

*Polyxena.*  
You yield!

*Charles.* My father, when I took the oath, Although my eye might stray in search of yours, I heard it, understood it, promised God What you require. Till from this eminence He move me, here I keep, nor shall concede The meanest of my rights.

*Victor [aside].* The boy's a fool!  
—Or rather, I'm a fool: for, what's wrong here?

To-day the sweets of reigning: let to-morrow Be ready with its bitters.

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

There's beside Somewhat to press upon your notice first.

*Charles.* Then why delay it for an instant, sir?

That Spanish claim perchance? And, now you speak,

—This morning, my opinion was mature, Which, boy-like, I was bashful in producing To one I ne'er am like to fear in future! My thought is formed upon that Spanish claim.

*Victor.* Betimes indeed. Not now, Charles! You require

A host of papers on it.

*D'Ormea [coming forward].* Here they are. [To CHARLES.] I, sir, was minister and much beside

Of the late monarch; to say little, him I served: on you I have, to say e'en less, No claim. This case contains those papers: with them

I tender you my office.

*Victor [hastily].* Keep him, Charles! There's reason for it—many reasons: you Distrust him, nor are so far wrong there,—but He's mixed up in this matter—he'll desire To quit you, for occasions known to me: Do not accept those reasons: have him stay!

*Polyxena [aside].* His minister thrust on us!

*Charles [to D'ORMEA].* Sir, believe, In justice to myself, you do not need E'en this commending: howsoever might seem My feelings toward you, as a private man, They quit me in the vast and untried field

Of action. Though I shall myself (as late In your own hearing I engaged to do) Preside o'er my Sardinia, yet your help Is necessary. Think the past forgotten And serve me now!

*D'Ormea.* I did not offer you My service—would that I could serve you, sir! As for the Spanish matter . . .

*Victor.* But despatch At least the dead, in my good daughter's phrase,

Before the living! Help to house me safe Ere with D'Ormea you set the world a-gape! Here is a paper—will you overlook What I propose reserving for my needs? I get as far from you as possible; Here's what I reckon my expenditure.

*Charles [reading].* A miserable fifty thousand crowns—

*Victor.* Oh, quite enough for country gentlemen!

Beside the exchequer happens . . . but find out

All that, yourself!

*Charles [still reading].* "Count Tende"—what means this?

*Victor.* Me: you were but an infant when I burst

Through the defile of Tende upon France. Had only my allies kept true to me!

No matter. Tende's, then, a name I take Just as . . .

*D'Ormea.* —The Marchioness Sebastian takes

The name of Spigno.

*Charles.* How, sir?

*Victor [to D'ORMEA].* Fool! All that Was for my own detailing. [To CHARLES:]

That anon!

*Charles [to D'ORMEA].* Explain what you have said, sir!

*D'Ormea.* I supposed

The marriage of the King to her I named, Profoundly kept a secret these few weeks, Was not to be one, now he's Count.

*Polyxena [aside].* With us The minister—with him the mistress!

*Charles [to VICTOR].* No—

Tell me you have not taken her—that woman  
To live with, past recall!

*Victor.* And where's the crime . . .

*Polyxena* [to CHARLES]. True, sir, this is  
a matter past recall

And past your cognizance. A day before,  
And you had been compelled to note this:  
now,—

Why note it? The King saved his House  
from shame:

What the Count did, is no concern of yours.

*Charles* [after a pause]. The Spanish  
claim, D'Ormea!

*Victor.* . . . Why, my son,  
I took some ill-advised . . . one's age, in  
fact,

Spoils everything: though I was overreached,  
A younger brain, we'll trust, may extricate  
Sardinia readily. To-morrow, D'Ormea,  
Inform the King!

*D'Ormea* [without regarding VICTOR, and  
leisurely]. Thus stands the case with  
Spain:

When first the Infant Carlos claimed his proper  
Succession to the throne of Tuscany . . .

*Victor.* I tell you, that stands over! Let  
that rest!

There is the policy!

*Charles* [to D'ORMEA]. Thus much I know,  
And more—too much: the remedy?

*D'Ormea.* Of course!

No glimpse of one.

*Victor.* No remedy at all!

It makes the remedy itself—time makes it.

*D'Ormea* [to CHARLES]. But if . . .

*Victor* [still more hastily]. In fine, I  
shall take care of that:

And, with another project that I have . . .

*D'Ormea* [turning on him]. Oh, since

Count Tende means to take again

King Victor's crown!—

*Polyxena* [throwing herself at VICTOR'S  
feet]. E'en now retake it, sir!

Oh speak! We are your subjects both, once  
more!

Say it—a word effects it! You meant not,  
Nor do mean now, to take it: but you  
must!

'Tis in you—in your nature—and the shame's  
Not half the shame 'twould grow to after-  
wards!

*Charles.* *Polyxena!*

*Polyxena.* A word recalls the knights—  
Say it! What's promising and what's the  
past?

Say you are still King Victor!

*D'Ormea.*

Better say

The Count repents, in brief! [VICTOR rises.

*Charles.*

With such a crime

I have not charged you, sir!

*Polyxena.* (Charles turns from me!)

## SECOND YEAR, 1731.—KING CHARLES.

### PART I.

*Enter Queen POLYXENA and D'ORMEA.—*  
*A pause.*

*Polyxena.* And now, sir, what have you to  
say?

*D'Ormea.* Count Tende . . .

*Polyxena.* Affirm not I betrayed you; you  
resolve

On uttering this strange intelligence

—Nay, post yourself to find me ere I reach

The capital, because you know King Charles  
Tarries a day or two at Evian baths

Behind me:—but take warning,—here and  
thus [Seating herself in the royal seat.

I listen, if I listen—not your friend.

Explicitly the statement, if you still

Persist to urge it on me, must proceed:

I am not made for aught else.

*D'Ormea.* Good! Count Tende . . .

*Polyxena.* I, who mistrust you, shall  
acquaint King Charles

Who even more mistrusts you.

*D'Ormea.*

Does he so?

*Polyxena.* Why should he not?

*D'Ormea.*

Ay, why not?

Motives, seek

You virtuous people, motives! Say, I serve  
God at the devil's bidding—will that do?

I'm proud: our people have been pacified,  
Really I know not how—

- Polyxena.* By truthfulness. That's not this year's care-burthened voice  
*D'Ormea.* Exactly; that shows I had and step:  
 nought to do 'Tis last year's step, the Prince's voice!  
*D'Ormea.* I know.  
 With pacifying them. Our foreign perils  
 Also exceed my means to stay: but here  
 'Tis otherwise, and my pride's piqued. Count  
 Tende  
 Completes a full year's absence: would you,  
 madam,  
 Have the old monarch back, his mistress  
 back,  
 His measures back? I pray you, act upon  
 My counsel, or they will be.  
*Polyxena.* When?  
*D'Ormea.* Let's think.  
 Home-matters settled—Victor's coming now;  
 Let foreign matters settle—Victor's here  
 Unless I stop him; as I will, this way.  
*Polyxena* [*reading the papers he presents*].  
 If 'this should prove a plot 'twixt you  
 and Victor?  
 You seek annoyances to give the pretext  
 For what you say you fear.  
*D'Ormea.* Oh, possibly!  
 I go for nothing. Only show King Charles  
 That thus Count Tende purposes return,  
 And style me his inviter, if you please!  
*Polyxena.* Half of your tale is true; most  
 like, the Count  
 Seeks to return: but why stay you with us?  
 To aid in such emergencies.  
*D'Ormea.* Keep safe  
 Those papers: or, to serve me, leave no  
 proof  
 I thus have counselled! When the Count  
 returns,  
 And the King abdicates, 'twill stead me little  
 To have thus counselled.  
*Polyxena.* The King abdicate!  
*D'Ormea.* He's good, we knew long since  
 —wise, we discover—  
 Firm, let us hope:—but I'd have gone to work  
 'With him away. Well!  
 [*CHARLES without*]. In the Council  
 Chamber?  
*D'Ormea.* All's lost!  
*Polyxena.* Oh, surely not King  
 Charles! He's changed—
- That's not this year's care-burthened voice  
 and step:  
 'Tis last year's step, the Prince's voice!  
*D'Ormea.* I know.  
 [*Enter CHARLES:—D'ORMEA*  
*retiring a little.*  
*Charles.* Now wish me joy, Polyxena!  
 Wish it me  
 The old way! [*She embraces him.*  
 There was too much cause for that!  
 But I have found myself again. What news  
 'At Turin? Oh, if you but felt the load  
 I'm free of—free! I said this year would end  
 Or it, or me—but I am free, thank God!  
*Polyxena.* How, Charles?  
*Charles.* You do not  
 guess? The day I found  
 Sardinia's hideous coil, at home, abroad,  
 And how my father was involved in it,—  
 Of course, I vowed to rest and smile no more  
 Until I cleared his name from obloquy.  
 We did the people right—'twas much to gain  
 That point, redress our nobles' grievance, too—  
 But that took place here, was no crying shame:  
 All must be done abroad,—if I abroad  
 Appeased the justly-angered Powers, de-  
 stroyed  
 The scandal, took down Victor's name at last  
 From a bad eminence, I then might breathe  
 And rest! No moment was to lose. Behold  
 The proud result—a Treaty, Austria, Spain  
 Agree to—  
*D'Ormea* [*aside*]. I shall merely stipulate  
 For an experienced headsman.  
*Charles.* Not a soul  
 Is compromised: the blotted past's a blank:  
 Even D'Ormea escapes unquestioned. See!  
 It reached me from Vienna; I remained  
 At Evian to despatch the Count his news;  
 'Tis gone to Chambery a week ago—  
 And here am I: do I deserve to feel  
 Your warm white arms around me?  
*D'Ormea* [*coming forward*]. He knows  
 that?  
*Charles.* What, in Heaven's name, means  
 this?  
*D'Ormea.* He knows that matters

Are settled at Vienna? Not too late!  
Plainly, unless you post this very hour  
Some man you trust (say, me) to Chambery  
And take precautions I acquaint you with,  
Your father will return here.

*Charles.* Are you crazed,  
D'Ormea? Here? For what? As well return  
To take his crown!

*D'Ormea.* He will return for that.

*Charles [to POLYXENA].* You have not  
listened to this man?

*Polyxena.* He spoke  
About your safety—and I listened.

*[He disengages himself from her arms.]*

*Charles [to D'ORMEA].* What  
Apprised you of the Count's intentions?

*D'Ormea.* Me?  
His heart, sir; you may not be used to  
read

Such evidence however; therefore read  
*[Pointing to POLYXENA's papers.]*  
My evidence.

*Charles [to POLYXENA].* Oh, worthy this  
of you!

And of your speech I never have forgotten,  
Though I professed forgetfulness; which  
haunts me

As if I did not know how false it was;  
Which made me toil unconsciously thus long  
That there might be no least occasion left  
For aught of its prediction coming true!

And now, when there is left no least occasion  
To instigate my father to such crime—  
When I might venture to forget (I hoped)  
That speech and recognize Polyxena—  
Oh worthy, to revive, and tenfold worse,  
That plague! D'Ormea at your ear, his  
slanders

Still in your hand! Silent?

*Polyxena.* As the wronged are.

*Charles.* And you, D'Ormea, since when  
have you presumed

To spy upon my father? I conceive  
What that wise paper shows, and easily.  
Since when?

*D'Ormea.* The when and where and how  
belong

To me. 'Tis sad work, but I deal in such.

You oftimes serve yourself; I'd serve you  
here:

Use makes me not so squeamish. In a word,  
Since the first hour he went to Chambery,  
Of his seven servants, five have I suborned.

*Charles.* You hate my father?

*D'Ormea.* Oh, just as you will!

*[Looking at POLYXENA.]*

A minute since, I loved him—hate him, now!  
What matter?—if you ponder just one thing:  
Has he that treaty?—he is setting forward  
Already. Are your guards here?

*Charles.* Well for you  
They are not! *[To POLYXENA.]* Him I  
knew of old, but you—

To hear that pickthank, further his designs!  
*[To D'ORMEA.]*

Guards?—were they here, I'd bid them, for  
your trouble,

Arrest you.

*D'Ormea.* Guards you shall not want.

I lived

The servant of your choice, not of your need.  
You never greatly needed me till now  
That you discard me. This is my arrest.  
Again I tender you my charge—its duty  
Would bid me press you read those docu-  
ments.

Here, sir! *[Offering his badge of office.]*

*Charles [taking it].* The papers also! Do  
you think

I dare not read them?

*Polyxena.* Read them, sir!

*Charles.* They prove,

My father, still a month within the year  
Since he so solemnly consigned it me,  
Means to resume his crown? They shall  
prove that,

Or my best dungeon . . .

*D'Ormea.* Even say, Chambery!  
'Tis vacant, I surmise, by this.

*Charles.* You prove  
Your words or pay their forfeit, sir. Go  
there!

Polyxena, one chance to rend the veil  
Thickening and blackening 'twixt us two!  
Do say,

You'll see the falsehood of the charges proved!



Do say, at least, you wish to see them proved  
False charges—my heart's love of other times!

*Polyzena.* Ah, Charles!

*Charles [to D'ORMEA].* Precede me, sir!

*D'Ormea.* And I'm at length

A martyr for the truth! No end, they say,  
Of miracles. My conscious innocence!

*[As they go out, enter—by the middle door,  
at which he pauses—VICTOR.]*

*Victor.* Sure I heard voices? No. Well,  
I do best

To make at once for this, the heart o' the  
place.

The old room! Nothing changed! So near  
my seat,

D'Ormea? *[Pushing away the stool which  
is by the KING's chair.]*

I want that meeting over first,  
I know not why. Tush, he, D'Ormea,  
slow

To hearten me, the supple knave? That  
burst

Of spite so eased him! He'll inform me . . .

What?

Why come I hither? All's in rough: let  
all

Remain rough. There's full time to draw  
back—nay,

There's nought to draw back from, as yet;  
whereas,

If reason should be, to arrest a course

Of error—reason good, to interpose

And save, as I have saved so many times,

Our House, admonish my son's giddy youth,

Relieve him of a weight that proves too much—

Now is the time,—or now, or never.

'Faith,

This kind of step is pitiful, not due

To Charles, this stealing back—hither,  
because

He's from his capital! Oh Victor! Victor!

But thus it is. The age of crafty men

Is loathsome; youth contrives to carry off

Dissimulation; we may intersperse

Extenuating passages of strength,

Ardour, vivacity, and wit—may turn

E'en guile into a voluntary grace:

But one's old age, when graces drop away

And leave guile the pure staple of our lives—  
Ah, loathsome!

Not so—or why pause I? Turin  
Is mine to have, were I so minded, for

The asking; all the army's mine—I've  
witnessed

Each private fight beneath me; all the Court's

Mine too; and, best of all, D'Ormea's still

D'Ormea and mine. There's some grace  
clinging yet.

Had I decided on this step, ere midnight

I'd take the crown.

No. Just this step to rise

Exhausts me. Here am I arrived: the rest

Must be done for me. Would I could sit here

And let things right themselves, the masque  
unmasque

Of the old King, crownless, grey hair and hot  
blood,—

The young King, crowned, but calm before  
his time,

They say,—the eager mistress with her  
taunts,—

And the sad earnest wife who motions me

Away—ay, there she knelt to me! E'en yet

I can return and sleep at Chamberly

A dream out.

Rather shake it off at Turin,

King Victor! Say: to Turin—yes, or no?

'Tis this relentless noonday-lighted chamber,

Lighted like life but silent as the grave,

That disconcerts me. That's the change  
must strike.

No silence last year! Some one flung doors  
wide

(Those two great doors which scrutinize me  
now)

And out I went 'mid crowds of men—men  
talking,

Men watching if my lip fell or brow knit,

Men saw me safe forth, put me on my road:

That makes the misery of this return.

Oh had a battle done it! Had I dropped,

Haling some battle, three entire days old,

Hither and thither by the forehead—dropped

In Spain, in Austria, best of all, in France—

Spurned on its horns or underneath its hooves,

When the spent monster went upon its knees

To pad and pash the prostrate wretch—I,  
Victor,  
Sole to have stood up against France, beat  
down

By inches, brayed to pieces finally  
In some vast unimaginable charge,  
A flying hell of horse and foot and guns  
Over me, and all's lost, for ever lost,  
There's no more Victor when the world  
wakes up!

Then silence, as of a raw battle-field,  
Throughout the world. Then after (as whole

After, you catch at intervals faint noise  
Through the stiff crust of frozen blood)—  
there creeps

A rumour forth, so faint, no noise at all,  
That a strange old man, with face outworn  
for wounds,

Is stumbling on from frontier town to town,  
Begging a pittance that may help him find  
His Turin out; what scorn and laughter  
follow

The coin you fling into his cap! And last,  
Some bright morn, how men crowd about  
the midst

O' the market-place, where takes the old  
king breath

Ere with his crutch he strike the palace-gate  
Wide ope!

To Turin, yes or no—or no?

*Re-enter CHARLES with papers.*

*Charles.* Just as I thought! A miserable  
falsehood

Of hirelings discontented with their pay  
And longing for enfranchisement! A few  
Tasty expressions of old age that thinks  
To keep alive its dignity o'er slaves  
By means that suit their natures!

[*Tearing them.*] Thus they shake  
My faith in Victor!

[*Turning, he discovers VICTOR.*

*Victor [after a pause].* Not at Evian,  
Charles?

What's this? Why do you run to close the  
doors?

No welcome for your father?

*Charles [aside].* Not his voice!  
What would I give for one imperious tone  
Of the old sort! That's gone for ever.

*Victor.* Must

I ask once more . . .

*Charles.* No—I concede it, sir!

You are returned for . . . true, your health  
declines;

True, Chambery's a bleak unkindly spot;  
You'd choose one fitter for your final lodge—  
Veneria, or Moncagliè—ay, that's close  
And I concede it.

*Victor.* I received advices  
Of the conclusion of the Spanish matter,  
Dated from Evian Baths . . .

*Charles.* And you forbore  
To visit me at Evian, satisfied

The work I had to do would fully task  
The little wit I have, and that your presence  
Would only disconcert me—

*Victor.* Charles?

*Charles.* —Me, set

For ever in a foreign course to yours,  
And . . .

Sir, this way of wile were good to catch,  
But I have not the sleight of it. The truth!  
Though I sink under it! What brings you  
here?

*Victor.* Not hope of this reception, certainly,  
From one who'd scarce assume a stranger mode  
Of speech, did I return to bring about  
Some awfulest calamity!

*Charles.* —You mean,

Did you require your crown again! Oh yes,  
I should speak otherwise! But turn not that  
To jesting! Sir, the truth! Your health  
declines?

Is aught deficient in your equipage?  
Wisely you seek myself to make complaint,  
And foil the malice of the world which laughs  
At petty discontents; but I shall care  
That not a soul knows of this visit. Speak!

*Victor [aside].* Here is the grateful much-  
professing son

Prepared to worship me, for whose sole sake  
I think to waive my plans of public good!

[*Aloud.*] Nay, Charles, if I did seek to take  
once more

My crown, were so disposed to plague myself,  
What would be warrant for this bitterness?

I gave it—grant I would resume it—well?

*Charles.* I should say simply—leaving out  
the why

And how—you made me swear to keep that  
crown:

And as you then intended . . .

*Victor.* Fool! What way  
Could I intend or not intend? As man,  
With a man's will, when I say "I intend,"  
I can intend up to a certain point,  
No farther. I intended to preserve  
The crown of Savoy and Sardinia whole:  
And if events arise demonstrating  
The way, I hoped should guard it, rather like  
To lose it . . .

*Charles.* Keep within your sphere  
and mine!

It is God's province we usurp on, else.

Here, blindfold through the maze of things  
we walk

By a slight clue of false, true, right and  
wrong;

All else is rambling and presumption. I  
Have sworn to keep this kingdom: there's  
my truth.

*Victor.* Truth, boy, is here, within my  
breast; and in

Your recognition of it, truth is, too;  
And in the effect of all this tortuous dealing  
With falsehood, used to carry out the truth,  
—In its success, this falsehood turns, again,  
Truth for the world. But you are right:  
these themes

Are over-subtle. I should rather say  
In such a case, frankly,—it fails, my scheme:  
I hoped to see you bring about, yourself,  
What I must I ring about. I interpose  
On your behalf—with my son's good in  
sight—

To hold what he is nearly letting go,  
Confirm his title, add a grace perhaps.  
There's Sicily, for instance,—granted me  
And taken back, some years since: till I give  
That island with the rest, my work's half  
done.

For his sake, therefore, as of those he rules . . .

*Charles.* Our sakes are one; and that, you  
could not say,

Because my answer would present itself  
Forthwith:—a year has wrought an age's  
change.

This people's not the people now, you once  
Could benefit; nor is my policy  
Your policy.

*Victor [with an outburst].* I know it! You  
undo

All I have done—my life of toil and care!  
I left you this the absolutest rule  
In Europe: do you think I sit and smile,  
Bid you throw power to the populace—  
See my Sardinia, that has kept apart,  
Join in the mad and democratic whirl  
Whereto I see all Europe haste full tide?  
England casts off her kings; France mimics  
England:

This realm I hoped was safe. Yet here I  
talk,

When I can save it, not by force alone,  
But bidding plagues, which follow sons like  
you,

Fasten upon my disobedient . . .

[*Recollecting himself.*] Surely  
I could say this—if minded so—my son?

*Charles.* You could not. Bitterer curses  
than your curse

Have I long since denounced upon myself  
If I misused my power. In fear of these  
I entered on those measures—will abide  
By them: so, I should say, Count Tende . . .

*Victor.* No!  
But no! But if, my Charles, your—more  
than old—

Half-foolish father urged these arguments,  
And then confessed them futile, but said  
plainly

That he forgot his promise, found his strength  
Fail him, had thought at savage Chambery  
Too much of brilliant Turin, Rivoli here,  
And Susa, and Veneria, and Superga—  
Pined for the pleasant places he had built  
When he was fortunate and young—

*Charles.* My father!

*Victor.* Stay yet!—and if he said he could  
not die

Deprived of baubles he had put aside,  
He deemed, for ever—of the Crown that binds  
Your brain up, whole, sound and impreg-  
nable,

Creating kingliness—the Sceptre too,  
Whose mere wind, should you wave it, back  
would beat

Invaders—and the golden Ball which throbs  
As if you grasped the palpitating heart  
Indeed o' the realm, to mould as choose you  
may !

—If I must totter up and down the streets  
My sires built, where myself have introduced  
And fostered laws and letters, sciences,  
The civil and the military arts !  
Stay, Charles ! I see you letting me pretend  
To live my former self once more—King  
Victor,

The venturesome yet politic : they style me  
Again, the Father of the Prince : friends wink  
Good-humouredly at the delusion you  
So sedulously guard from all rough truths  
That else would break upon my dotage !—  
You—

Whom now I see preventing my old shame—  
I tell not, point by cruel point, my tale—  
For is't not in your breast my brow is hid ?  
Is not your hand extended ? Say you not . . .

*Enter D'ORMEA, leading in POLYXENA.*

*Polyxena [advancing and withdrawing  
CHARLES—to VICTOR].* In this con-  
juncture even, he would say  
(Though with a moistened eye and quivering  
lip)

The suppliant is my father. I must save  
A great man from himself, nor see him fling  
His well-earned fame away : there must not  
follow

Ruin so utter, a break-down of worth  
So absolute : no enemy shall learn,  
He thrust his child 'twixt danger and himself,  
And, when that child somehow stood danger  
out,

Stole back with serpent wiles to ruin Charles  
—Body, that's much,—and soul, that's more  
—and realm,

That's most of all ! No enemy shall say . . .  
VOL. I.

*D'Ormea.* Do you repent, sir ?

*Victor [resuming himself].* D'Ormea ?

This is well !

Worthily done, King Charles, craftily done !  
Judiciously you post these, to o'erhear  
The little your importunate father thrusts  
Himself on you to say !—Ah, they'll correct  
The amiable blind facility  
You show in answering his peevish suit.  
What can he need to sue for ? Thanks,  
D'Ormea !

You have fulfilled your office : but for you,  
The old Count might have drawn some few  
more lives

To swell his income ! Had you, lady, missed  
The moment, a permission might be granted  
To buttress up my ruinous old pile !  
But you remember properly the list  
Of wise precautions I took when I gave  
Nearly as much away—to reap the fruits  
I should have looked for !

*Charles.* Thanks, sir : degrade me,  
So you remain yourself ! Adieu !

*Victor.* I'll not  
Forget it for the future, nor presume  
Next time to slight such mediators ! Nay—  
Had I first moved them both to intercede,  
I might secure a chamber in Moncaglièr  
—Who knows ?

*Charles.* Adieu !

*Victor.* You bid me this adieu  
With the old spirit ?

*Charles.* Adieu !

*Victor.* Charles—Charles !

*Charles.* Adieu !

[VICTOR goes.]

*Charles.* You were mistaken, Marquis, as  
you hear.

'Twas for another purpose the Count came.  
The Count desires Moncaglièr. Give the  
order !

*D'Ormea [leisurely].* Your minister has lost  
your confidence,  
Asserting late, for his own purposes,  
Count Tende would . . .

*Charles [flinging his badge back].* Be still  
the minister !

And give a loose to your insulting joy ;

## KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES

It irks me more thus stifled than expressed :  
Loose it !

*D'Ormea.* There's none to loose, alas !

I see

I never am to die a martyr.

*Polyxena.* Charles !

*Charles.* No praise, at least, Polyxena—no  
praise !

## KING CHARLES.

## PART II.

*D'ORMEA, seated, folding papers he has  
been examining.*

This at the last effects it : now, King Charles  
Or else King Victor—that's a balance : but  
now,

*D'Ormea* the arch-culprit, either turn  
O' the scale,—that's sure enough. A point  
to solve,

My masters, moralists, whate'er your style !  
When you discover why I push myself  
Into a pitfall you'd pass safely by,  
Impart to me among the rest ! No matter.  
Prompt are the righteous ever with their rede  
To us the wrongful ; lesson them this once !  
For safe among the wicked are you set,  
*D'Ormea* ! We lament life's brevity,  
Yet quarter e'en the threescore years and ten,  
Nor stick to call the quarter roundly "life."  
*D'Ormea* was wicked, say, some twenty years ;  
A tree so long was stunted ; afterward,  
What if it grew, continued growing, till  
No fellow of the forest equalled it ?

'Twas a stump then ; a stump it still must be :  
While forward saplings, at the outset checked,  
In virtue of that first sprout keep their style  
Amid the forest's green fraternity.  
Thus I shoot up to surely get lopped down  
And bound up for the burning. Now for it !

*Enter CHARLES and POLYXENA with  
Attendants.*

*D'Ormea [rises].* Sir, in the due discharge  
of this my office—

This enforced summons of yourself from Turin,  
And the disclosure I am bound to make

To-night,—there must already be, I feel,  
So much that wounds . . .

*Charles.* Well, sir ?

*D'Ormea.* —That I, perchance,

May utter also what, another time,  
Would irk much,—it may prove less irksome  
now.

*Charles.* What would you utter ?

*D'Ormea.* That I from my soul  
Grieve at to-night's event : for you I grieve,  
E'en grieve for . . .

*Charles.* Tush, another time for talk !  
My kingdom is in imminent danger ?

*D'Ormea.* Let  
The Count communicate with France—its  
King,

His grandson, will have Fleury's aid for  
this,

Though for no other war.

*Charles.* First for the levies :  
What forces can I muster presently ?

[*D'ORMEA delivers papers which*

*CHARLES inspects.*

*Charles.* Good—very good. Montorio . . .  
how is this ?

—Equips me double the old complement  
Of soldiers ?

*D'Ormea.* Since his land has been relieved  
From double imposts, this he manages :  
But under the late monarch . . .

*Charles.* Peace ! I know.  
Count Spava has omitted mentioning  
What proxy is to head these troops of his.

*D'Ormea.* Count Spava means to head his  
troops himself.

Something to fight for now ; "Whereas,"  
says he,

"Under the sovereign's father" . . .

*Charles.* It would seem  
That all my people love me.

*D'Ormea.* Yes.

[*To POLYXENA while CHARLES con-  
tinues to inspect the papers.*

A temper

Like Victor's may avail to keep a state ;  
He terrifies men and they fall not off ;  
Good to restrain : best, if restraint were all.  
But, with the silent circle round him, ends

Such away : our King's begins precisely there.  
For to suggest, impel and set at work,  
Is quite another function. Men may slight,  
In time of peace, the King who brought  
them peace :

In war,—his voice, his eyes, help more than  
fear.

They love you, sir !

*Charles* [to Attendants]. Bring the regalia  
forth !

Quit the room ! And now, Marquis, answer me !  
Why should the King of France invade my  
realm ?

*D'Ormea*. Why ? Did I not acquaint your  
Majesty

An hour ago ?

*Charles*. I choose to hear again  
What then I heard.

*D'Ormea*. Because, sir, as I said,  
Your father is resolved to have his crown  
At any risk ; and, as I judge, calls in  
The foreigner to aid him.

*Charles*. And your reason  
For saying this ?

*D'Ormea* [aside]. Ay, just his father's way !  
[To CHARLES.] The Count wrote yesterday  
to your forces' Chief,

Rhebinder—made demand of help—

*Charles*. To try  
Rhebinder—he's of alien blood : aught else ?

*D'Ormea*. Receiving a refusal,—some hours  
after,

The Count called on Del Borgo to deliver  
The Act of Abdication : he refusing,

Or hesitating, rather—

*Charles*. What ensued ?

*D'Ormea*. At midnight, only two hours  
since, at Turin,

He rode in person to the citadel  
With one attendant, to Soccorso gate,  
And bade the governor, San Remi, open—  
Admit him.

*Charles*. For a purpose I divine.  
These three were faithful, then ?

*D'Ormea*. They told it me.  
And I—

*Charles*. Most faithful—

*D'Ormea*. Tell it you—with this

Moreover of my own : if, an hour hence,  
You have not interposed, the Count will be  
O' the road to France for succour.

*Charles*. Very good !

You do your duty now to me your monarch  
Fully, I warrant ?—have, that is, your project  
For saving both of us disgrace, no doubt ?

*D'Ormea*. I give my counsel,—and the  
only one.

A month since, I besought you to employ  
Restraints which had prevented many a pang :  
But now the harsher course must be pursued.  
These papers, made for the emergency,  
Will pain you to subscribe : this is a list  
Of those suspected merely—men to watch ;  
This—of the few of the Count's very house-  
hold

You must, however reluctantly, arrest ;  
While here's a method of remonstrance—sure  
Not stronger than the case demands—to take  
With the Count's self.

*Charles*. Deliver those three papers.

*Polyxena* [while CHARLES inspects them—  
to D'ORMEA]. Your measures are not  
over-harsh, sir : France

Will hardly be deterred from her intents  
By these.

*D'Ormea*. If who proposes might dispose,  
I could soon satisfy you. Even these,  
Hear what he'll say at my presenting !

*Charles* [who has signed them]. There !  
About the warrants ! You've my signature.  
What turns you pale ? I do my duty by you  
In acting boldly thus on your advice.

*D'Ormea* [reading them separately]. Arrest  
the people I suspected merely ?

*Charles*. Did you suspect them ?

*D'Ormea*. Doubtless : but—but—sir,  
This Forquiere's governor of Turin,  
And Rivarol and he have influence over  
Half of the capital ! Rabella, too ?  
Why, sir—

*Charles*. Oh, leave the fear to me !

*D'Ormea* [still reading]. You bid me  
Incarcerate the people on this list ?

Sir—

*Charles*. But you never bade arrest those  
men,

So close related to my father too,  
On trifling grounds?

*D'Ormea.* Oh, as for that, St. George,  
President of Chambery's senators,  
's hatching treason ! still—

[*More troubled.*] Sir, Count Cumiane  
Is brother to your father's wife ! What's  
here?

Arrest the wife herself?

*Charles.* You seem to think  
A venial crime this plot against me. Well?  
*D'Ormea* [*who has read the last paper*].  
Wherefore am I thus ruined? Why  
not take

My life at once? This poor formality  
Is, let me say, unworthy you ! Prevent it  
You, madam ! I have served you, am pre-  
pared

For all disgraces : only, let disgrace  
Be plain, be proper—proper for the world  
To pass its judgment on 'twixt you and me !  
Take back your warrant, I will none of it !

*Charles.* Here is a man to talk of fickleness !

He stakes his life upon my father's falsehood ;  
I bid him . . .

*D'Ormea.* Not you ! Were he trebly  
false,

You do not bid me . . .

*Charles.* Is't not written there?  
I thought so : give—I'll set it right.

*D'Ormea.* Is it there?  
Oh yes, and plain—arrest him now—drag here  
Your father ! And were all six times as plain,  
Do you suppose I trust it?

*Charles.* Just one word !  
You bring him, taken in the act of flight,  
Or else your life is forfeit.

*D'Ormea.* Ay, to Turin  
I bring him, and to-morrow?

*Charles.* Here and now !  
The whole thing is a lie, a hateful lie,  
As I believed and as my father said.  
I knew it from the first, but was compelled  
To circumvent you ; and the great D'Ormea,  
That baffled Alberoni and tricked Coscia,  
The miserable sower of such discord  
'Twixt sire and son, is in the toils at last.

Oh I see ! you arrive—this plan of yours,  
Weak as it is, torments sufficiently  
A sick old peevish man—wings hasty speech,  
An ill-considered threat from him ; that's  
noted ;

Then out you ferret papers, his amusement  
In lonely hours of lassitude—examine  
The day-by-day report of your paid spies—  
And back you come : all was not ripe, you  
find,

And, as you hope, may keep from ripening yet,  
But you were in bare time ! Only, 'twere  
best

I never saw my father—these old men  
Are potent in excuses : and meanwhile,  
D'Ormea's the man I cannot do without !

*Polyxena.* Charles—

*Charles.* Ah, no question !  
You against me too !

You'd have me eat and drink and sleep, live,  
die

With this lie coiled about me, choking me !  
No, no, D'Ormea ! You venture life, you say,  
Upon my father's perfidy : and I  
Have, on the whole, no right to disregard  
The chains of testimony you thus wind  
About me ; though I do—from my soul  
Discredit them : still I must authorize  
These measures, and I will. Perugia !

[*Many Officers enter.*] Count—  
You and Solar, with all the force you have,

Stand at the Marquis' orders : what he bids,  
Implicitly perform ! You are to bring  
A traitor here ; the man that's likest one  
At present, fronts me ; you are at his beck  
For a full hour ! he undertakes to show  
A fouler than himself,—but, failing that,  
Return with him, and, as my father lives,  
He dies this night ! The clemency you blame  
So oft, shall be revoked—rights exercised,  
Too long abjured.

[*To D'ORMEA.*] Now sir, about the work !  
To save your king and country ! Take the  
warrant !

*D'Ormea.* You hear the sovereign's man-  
date, Count Perugia?

Obeys me ! As your diligence, expect  
Reward ! All follow to Moncagliar !

*Charles* [*in great anguish*]. D'Ormea.  
[D'ORMEA goes.]  
He goes, lit up with that appalling smile!

[*To POLYXENA, after a pause.*  
At least you understand all this?

*Polyxena.* These means  
Of our defence—these measures of precaution?

*Charles.* It must be the best way; I should  
have ~~the~~  
Withered beneath his scorn.

*Polyxena.* What would you say?  
*Charles.* Why, do you think I mean to  
keep the crown,

*Polyxena?*

*Polyxena.* You then believe the story  
In spite of all—that Victor comes?

*Charles.* Believe it?  
I know that he is coming—feel the strength  
That has upheld me leave me at his coming!  
'Twas mine, and now he takes his own again.  
Some kinds of strength are well enough to  
have;

But who's to have that strength? Let my  
crown go!

I meant to keep it; but I cannot—cannot!  
Only, he shall not taunt me—he, the first . . .  
See if he would not be the first to taunt me  
With having left his kingdom at a word.  
With letting it be conquered without stroke,  
With . . . no—no—'tis no worse than when  
he left!

I've just to bid him take it, and, that over,  
We'll fly away—fly, for I loathe this Turin,  
This Rivoli, all titles loathe, all state.  
We'd best go to your country—unless God  
Send I die now!

*Polyxena.* Charles, hear me!  
*Charles.* And again

Shall you be my *Polyxena*—you'll take me  
Out of this woe! Yes, do speak, and keep  
speaking!

I would not let you speak just now, for fear  
You'd counsel me against him: but talk, now,  
As we two used to talk in blessed times:  
Bid me endure all his caprices; take me  
From this mad post above him!

*Polyxena.* I believe  
We are undone, but from a different cause.

All your resources, down to the least guard,  
Are at D'Ormea's beck. What if, the while,  
He act in concert with your father? We  
Indeed were lost. This lonely Rivoli—  
Where find a better place for them?

*Charles* [*pacing the room*]. And why  
Does Victor come? To undo all that's done,  
Restore the past, prevent the future! Seat  
His mistress in your seat, and place in mine  
. . . Oh, my own people, whom will you  
find there,

To ask of, to consult with, to care for,  
To hold up with your hands? Whom? One  
that's false—

False—from the head's crown to the foot's  
sole, false!

The best is, that I knew it in my heart  
From the beginning, and expected this,  
And hated you, *Polyxena*, because  
You saw thro' him, though I too saw thro'

him,  
Saw that he meant this while he crowned  
me, while  
He prayed for me,—nay, while he kissed my  
brow,

I saw—  
*Polyxena.* But if your measures take effect,  
D'Ormea true to you?

*Charles.* Then worst of all!  
I shall have loosed that callous wretch on him!  
Well may the woman taunt him with his  
child—

I, eating here his bread, clothed in his clothes,  
Seated upon his seat, let slip D'Ormea  
To outrage him! We talk—perchance he  
tears

My father from his bed; the old hands feel  
For one who is not, but who should be there,  
He finds D'Ormea! D'Ormea too finds him!  
The crowded chamber when the lights go  
out—

Closed doors—the horrid scuffle in the dark—  
The accursed prompting of the minute! My  
guards!

To horse—and after, with me—and prevent!  
*Polyxena* [*seizing his hand*]. King Charles!  
Pause here upon this strip of time  
Allotted you out of eternity!



Crowns are from God: you in his name hold  
yours.

Your life's no least thing, were it fit your life  
Should be abjured along with rule; but now,  
Keep both! Your duty is to live and rule—  
You, who would vulgarly look fine enough  
In the world's eye, deserting your soul's  
charge,—

Ay, you would have men's praise, this Rivoli  
Would be illumined! While, as 'tis, no doubt,  
Something of stain will ever rest on you;  
No one will rightly know why you refused  
To abdicate; they'll talk of deeds you could  
Have done, no doubt,—nor do I much expect  
Future achievement will blot out the past,  
Envelope it in haze—nor shall we two  
Live happy any more. 'Twill be, I feel,  
Only in moments that the duty's seen  
As palpably as now: the months, the years  
Of painful indistinctness are to come,  
While daily must we tread these palace-rooms  
Pregnant with memories of the past: your  
eye

May turn to mine and find no comfort there,  
Through fancies that beset me, as yourself,  
Of other courses, with far other issues,  
We might have taken this great night: such  
bear,

As I will bear! What matters happiness?  
Duty! There's man's one moment: this is  
yours!

*[Putting the crown on his head, and  
the sceptre in his hand, she places  
him on his seat: a long pause and  
silence.]*

Enter D'ORMEA and VICTOR, with Guards.

Victor. At last I speak; but once—that  
once, to you!

'Tis you I ask, not these your varletry,  
Who's King of us?

Charles *[from his seat]*. Count Tende . . .

Victor. What your spies

Assert I ponder in my soul, I say—

Here to your face, amid your guards! I  
choose

To take again the crown whose shadow I  
gave—

For still its potency surrounds the weak  
White locks their felon hands have discom-  
posed.

Or I'll not ask who's King, but simply, who  
Withholds the crown I claim? Deliver it!  
I have no friend in the wide world: nor  
France

Nor England cares for me: you see the sum  
Of what I can avail. Deliver it!

Charles. Take it, my father!

And now say in turn,

Was it done well, my father—sure not well,  
To try me thus! I might have seen much  
cause

For keeping it—too easily seen cause!

But, from that moment, e'en more woefully

My life had pined away, than pine it will.

Already you have much to answer for.

My life to pine is nothing,—her sunk eyes

Were happy once! No doubt, my people  
think

I am their King still . . . but I cannot  
strive!

Take it!

Victor *[one hand on the crown CHARLES  
offers, the other on his neck]*. So few  
years giv' it quietly,

My son! It will drop from me. See you  
not?

A crown's unlike a sword to give away—

That, let a strong hand to a weak hand give!

But crowns should slip from palsied brows to  
heads

Young as this head: yet mine is weak enough,

E'en weaker than I knew. I seek for phrases

To vindicate my right. 'Tis of a piece!

All is alike gone by with me—who beat

Once D'Orleans in his lines—his very lines!

To have been Eugene's comrade, Louis's  
rival,

And now . . .

Charles *[putting the crown on him, to  
the rest]*. The King speaks, yet none  
kneels, I think!

Victor. I am then King! As I became a  
King

Despite the nations, kept myself a King,  
So I die King, with Kingship dying too

Around me. I have lasted Europe's time.  
What wants my story of completion? Where  
Must needs the damning break show? Who  
mistrusts

My children here—tell they of any break  
'Twixt my day's sunrise and its fiery fall?  
And who were by me when I died but they?  
D'Ormea there!

*Charles.* What means he?

*Victor.* Ever there!

Charles—how to save your story! Mine  
must go.

Say—say that you refused the crown to me!

Charles, yours shall be my story! You im-  
mured

Me, say, at Rivoli. A single year

I spend without a sight of you, then die.

That will serve every purpose—tell that tale  
The world!

*Charles.* Mistrust me? Help!

*Victor.* Past help, past reach!

'Tis in the heart—you cannot reach the heart:  
This broke mine, that I did believe, you,

Charles,

Would have denied me and disgraced me.

*Polyxena.* Charles

Has never ceased to be your subject, sir!

He reigned at first through setting up yourself

As pattern: if he e'er seemed harsh to you,

'Twas from a too intense appreciation

Of your own character: he acted you—

Ne'er for an instant did I think it real,

Nor look for any other than this end.

I hold him worlds the worse on that account;  
But so it was.

*Charles [to POLYXENA].* I love you now  
indeed.

[*To VICTOR.*] You never knew me.

*Victor.* Hardly till this moment,

When I seem learning many other things

Because the time for using them is past.

If 'twere to do again! That's idly wished.

Truthfulness might prove policy as good  
As guile. Is this my daughter's forehead?

Yes:

I've made it fitter now to be a queen's  
Than formerly: I've ploughed the deep lines  
there

Which keep too well a crown from slipping off.

No matter. Guile has made me King  
again.

*Louis—'twas in King Victor's time:—long  
since,*

*When Louis reigned and, also, Victor reigned.*

How the world talks already of us two!

God of eclipse and each discoloured star,

Why do I linger then?

Ha! Where lurks he?

D'Ormea! Nearer to your King! Now  
stand!

[*Collecting his strength as D'ORMEA  
approaches.*

You lied, D'Ormea! I do not repent.

[*Dies.*

# DRAMATIC LYRICS.

184— 185—

## CAVALIER TUNES.

### I. MARCHING ALONG.

#### I.

KENTISH Sir Byng stood for his King,  
Bidding the crop-headed Parliament swing :  
And, pressing a troop unable to stoop  
And see the rogues flourish and honest folk  
droop,  
Marched them along, fifty-score strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song.

#### II.

God for King Charles ! Pym and such carles  
To the Devil that prompts 'em their treason-  
ous parles !  
Cavaliers; up ! Lips from the cup,  
Hands from the pasty, nor bite take nor sup  
Till you're—

CHORUS. — *Marching along, fifty - score  
strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, sing-  
ing this song.*

#### III.

Hampden to hell, and his obsequies' knell  
Serve Hazelrig, Fiennes, and young Harry  
as well !  
England, good cheer ! Rupert is near !  
Kentish and loyalists, keep we not here

CHORUS. — *Marching along, fifty - score  
strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, sing-  
ing this song ?*

#### IV.

Then, God for King Charles ! Pym and  
his snarls  
To the Devil that pricks on such pestilent  
carles !

Hold by the right, you double your might ;  
So, onward to Nottingham, fresh for the  
fight,

CHORUS. — *March we along, fifty - score  
strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, sing-  
ing this song !*

### II. GIVE A ROUSE.

#### I.

King Charles, and who'll do him right now ?  
King Charles, and who's ripe for fight now ?  
Give a rouse : here's, in hell's despite now,  
King Charles !

#### II.

Who gave me the goods that went since ?  
Who raised me the house that sank once ?  
Who helped me to gold I spent since ?  
Who found me in wine you drank once ?

CHORUS.—*King Charles, and who'll do  
him right now ?  
King Charles, and who's ripe  
for fight now ?  
Give a rouse : here's, in hell's  
despite now,  
King Charles !*

#### III.

To whom used my boy George quaff else,  
By the old fool's side that begot him ?  
For whom did he cheer and laugh else,  
While Noll's damned troopers shot him ?

CHORUS.—*King Charles, and who'll do  
him right now ?  
King Charles, and who's ripe  
for fight now ?  
Give a rouse : here's, in hell's  
despite now,  
King Charles !*

## III. BOOT AND SADDLE.

## I.

Boot, saddle, to horse, and away !  
Rescue my castle before the hot day  
Brightens to blue from its silvery grey,

CHORUS.—*Boot, saddle, to horse, and away !*

## II.

Ride past the suburbs, asleep as you'd say ;  
Many's the friend there, will listen and  
pray  
"God's luck to gallants that strike up the  
lay—

CHORUS.—*" Boot, saddle, to horse, and away !"*

## III.

Forty miles off, like a roebuck at bay,  
Flouts Castle Brancepeth the Roundheads'  
array :  
Who laughs, " Good fellows ere this, by my  
fay,

CHORUS.—*" Boot, saddle, to horse, and away !"*

## IV.

Who ? My wife Gertrude ; that, honest and  
gay,  
Laughs when you talk of surrendering,  
"Nay !  
"I've better counsellors ; what counsel they ?

CHORUS.—*" Boot, saddle, to horse, and away !"*

## THE LOST LEADER.

## I.

JUST for a handful of silver he left us,  
Just for a riband to stick in his coat—  
Found the one gift of which fortune bereft us,  
Lost all the others she lets us devote ;  
They, with the gold to give, doled him out  
silver,

So much was theirs who so little allowed :

VOL. I.

How all our copper had gone for his  
service !

Rags—were they purple, his heart had  
been proud !

We that had loved him so, followed him,  
honoured him,

Lived in his mild and magnificent eye,  
Learned his great language, caught his clear  
accents,

Made him our pattern to live and to die !

Shakespeare was of us, Milton was for us,

Burns, Shelley, were with us,—they watch  
from their graves !

He alone breaks from the van and the free-  
men,

—He alone sinks to the rear and the slaves !

## II.

We shall march prospering,—not thro' his  
presence ;

Songs may inspirit us,—not from his lyre ;  
Deeds will be done,—while he boasts his  
quiescence,

Still bidding crouch whom the rest bade  
aspire :

Blot out his name, then, record one lost soul  
more,

One task more declined, one more foot-  
path untrod,

One more devils' triumph and sorrow for  
angels,

One wrong more to man, one more insult  
to God !

Life's night begins : let him never come  
back to us !

There would be doubt, hesitation and  
pain,

Forced praise on our part—the glimmer of  
twilight,

Never glad confident morning again !

Best fight on well, for we taught him—strike  
gallantly,

Menace our heart ere we master his own ;

Then let him receive the new knowledge and  
wait us,

Pardoned in heaven, the first by the  
throne !

**"HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD  
NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX."**

[16—.]

I.

I SPRANG to the stirrup, and Joris, and he ;  
I galloped, Dirck galloped, we galloped all  
three ;  
"Good speed !" cried the watch, as the gate-  
bolts undrew ;  
"Speed !" echoed the wall to us galloping  
through ;  
Behind shut the postern, the lights sank to  
rest,  
And into the midnight we galloped abreast.

II.

Not a word to each other ; we kept the  
great pace  
Neck by neck, stride by stride, never chang-  
ing our place ;  
I turned in my saddle and made its girths  
tight,  
Then shortened each stirrup, and set the  
pique right,  
Rebuckled the cheek-strap, chained slacker  
the bit,  
Nor galloped less steadily Roland a whit.

III.

'Twas moonset at starting ; but while we  
drew near  
Lokeren, the cocks crew and twilight dawned  
clear ;  
At Boom, a great yellow star came out to see ;  
At Duffeld, 'twas morning as plain as could be ;  
And from Mecheln church-steeple we heard  
the half-chime,  
So, Joris broke silence with, "Yet there is  
time !"

IV.

At Aershot, up leaped of a sudden the sun,  
And against him the cattle stood black every  
one,  
To stare thro' the mist at us galloping past,  
And I saw my stout galloper Roland at last,

With resolute shoulders, each butting away  
The haze, as some bluff river headland its  
spray :

V.

And his low head and crest, just one sharp  
ear bent back  
For my voice, and the other pricked out on  
his track ;  
And one eye's black intelligence,—ever that  
glance  
O'er its white edge at me, his own master,  
askance !  
And the thick heavy spume-flakes which aye  
and anon  
His fierce lips shook upwards in galloping on.

VI.

By Hasselt, Dirck groaned ; and cried Joris,  
"Stay spur !  
"Your Roos galloped bravely, the fault's  
not in her,  
"We'll remember at Aix"—for one heard  
the quick wheeze  
Of her chest, saw the stretched neck and  
staggering knees,  
And sunk tail, and horrible heave of the flank,  
As down on her haunches she shuddered and  
sank.

VII.

So, we were left galloping, Joris and I,  
Past Looz and past Tongres, no cloud in the  
sky ;  
The broad sun above laughed a pitiless laugh,  
'Neath our feet broke the brittle bright  
stubble like chaff ;  
Till over by Dalhem a dome-spiresprang white,  
And "Gallop," gasped Joris, "for Aix is in  
sight !"

VIII.

"How they'll greet us !"—and all in a  
moment his roan  
Rolled neck and croup over, lay dead as a  
stone ;  
And there was my Roland to bear the whole  
weight  
Of the news which alone could save Aix from  
her fate,

With his nostrils like pits full of blood to the  
brim,  
And with circles of red for his eye-sockets'  
rim.

## IX.

Then I cast loose my buffcoat, each holster  
let fall,  
Shook off both my jack-boots, let go belt  
and all,  
Stood up in the stirrup, leaned, patted his ear,  
Called my Roland his pet-name, my horse  
without peer ;  
Clapped my hands, laughed and sang, any  
noise, bad or good,  
Till at length into Aix Roland galloped and  
stood.

## X.

And all I remember is—friends flocking round  
As I sat with his head 'twixt my knees on  
the ground ;  
And no voice but was praising this Roland  
of mine,  
As I poured down his throat our last measure  
of wine,  
Which (the burgesses voted by common  
consent)  
Was no more than his due who brought good  
news from Ghent.

### THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-KADR.

[Abd-el-Kadr was an Arab Chief of Algiers  
who resisted the French in 1833.]

## I.

As I ride, as I ride,  
With a full heart for my guide,  
So its tide rocks my side,  
As I ride, as I ride,  
That, as I were double-eyed,  
He, in whom our Tribes confide,  
Is descried, ways untried  
As I ride, as I ride.

## II.

As I ride, as I ride  
To our Chief and his Allied,

Who dares chide my heart's pride  
As I ride, as I ride?  
Or are witnesses denied—  
Through the desert waste and wide  
Do I glide unespied  
As I ride, as I ride?

## III.

As I ride, as I ride,  
When an inner voice has cried,  
The sands slide, nor abide  
(As I ride, as I ride)  
O'er each visioned homicide  
That came vaunting (has he lied?)  
To reside—where he died,  
As I ride, as I ride.

## IV.

As I ride, as I ride,  
Ne'er has spur my swift horse plied,  
Yet his hide, streaked and pied,  
As I ride, as I ride,  
Shows where sweat has sprung an  
dried,  
—Zebra-footed, ostrich-thighed—  
How has vied stride with stride  
As I ride, as I ride !

## V.

As I ride, as I ride,  
Could I loose what Fate has tied,  
Ere I pried, she should hide  
(As I ride, as I ride)  
All that's meant me—satisfied  
When the Prophet and the Bride  
Stop veins I'd have subside  
As I ride, as I ride !

### NATIONALITY IN DRINKS.

## I.

My heart sank with our Claret-flask,  
Just now, beneath the heavy sedges  
That serve this pond's black face for mask  
And still at yonder broken edges  
O' the hole, where up the bubbles glisten,  
After my heart I look and listen.

## II.

Our laughing little flask, compelled  
Thro' depth to depth more bleak and shady;  
As when, both arms beside her held,  
Feet straightened out, some gay French lady  
Is caught up from life's light and motion,  
And dropped into death's silent ocean!

Up jumped Tokay on our table,  
Like a pygmy castle-warder,  
Dwarfish to see, but stout and able,  
Arms and accoutrements all in order;  
And fierce he looked North, then, wheeling  
South,  
Blew with his bugle a challenge to Drouth,  
Cocked his flap-hat with the tosspot-feather,  
Twisted his thumb in his red moustache,  
Jingled his huge brass spurs together,  
Tightened his waist with its Buda sash,  
And then, with an impudence nought could  
abash,  
Shrugged his hump-shoulder, to tell the  
beholder,  
For twenty such knaves he should laugh but  
the bolder:  
And so, with his sword-hilt gallantly jutting,  
And dexter-hand on his haunch abutting,  
Went the little man, Sir Ausbruch, strutting!

Here's to Nelson's memory!  
'Tis the second time that I, at sea,  
Right off Cape Trafalgar here,  
Have drunk it deep in British Beer.  
Nelson for ever—any time  
Am I his to command in prose or rhyme!  
Give me of Nelson only a touch,  
And I save it, be it little or much:  
Here's one our Captain gives, and so  
Down at the word, by George, shall it go!  
He says that at Greenwich they point the  
beholder  
To Nelson's coat, "still with tar on the  
shoulder:  
"For he used to lean with one shoulder digging,  
"Jigging, as it were, and zig-zag-zigging  
"Up against the mizen-rigging!"

## GARDEN FANCIES.

## I. THE FLOWER'S NAME

HERE's the garden she walked across,  
Arm in my arm, such a short while since:  
Hark, now I push its wicket, the moss  
Hinders the hinges and makes them wince!  
She must have reached this shrub ere she  
turned,  
As back with that murmur the wicket  
swung;  
For she laid the poor snail, my chance foot  
spurned,  
To feed and forget it the leaves among.

Down this side of the gravel-walk  
She went while her robe's edge brushed  
the box:  
And here she paused in her gracious talk  
To point me a moth on the milk-white  
phlox.  
Roses, ranged in valiant row,  
I will never think that she passed you by!  
She loves you noble roses, I know;  
But yonder, see, where the rock-plants lie

This flower she stopped at, finger on lip,  
Stooped over, in doubt, as settling its claim;  
Till she gave me, with pride to make no slip,  
Its soft meandering Spanish name:  
What a name! Was it love or praise?  
Speech half-asleep or song half-awake?  
I must learn Spanish, one of these days,  
Only for that slow sweet name's sake.

Roses, if I live and do well,  
I may bring her, one of these days,  
To fix you fast with as fine a spell,  
Fit you each with his Spanish phrase;  
But do not detain me now; for she lingers  
There, like sunshine over the ground,  
And ever I see her soft white fingers  
Searching after the bud she found.

## V.

Flower, you Spaniard, look that you grow  
not,  
Stay as you are and be loved for ever !  
Bud, if I kiss you 'tis that you blow not :  
Mind, the shut pink mouth opens never !  
For while it pouts, her fingers wrestle,  
Twinkling the audacious leaves between,  
Till round they turn and down they nestle—  
Is not the dear mark still to be seen ?

## VI.

Where I find her not, beauties vanish ;  
Whither I follow her, beauties flee ;  
Is there no method to tell her in Spanish  
June's twice June since she breathed it with  
me ?  
Come, bud, show me the least of her traces,  
Treasure my lady's lightest footfall !  
—Ah, you may flout and turn up your faces—  
Roses, you are not so fair after all !

## II. SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURGENSIS.

Plague take all your pedants, say I !  
He who wrote what I hold in my hand,  
Centuries back was so good as to die,  
Leaving this rubbish to cumber the land ;  
This, that was a book in its time,  
Printed on paper and bound in leather,  
Last month in the white of a matin-prime  
Just when the birds sang all together.

## II.

Into the garden I brought it to read,  
And under the arbut and laurustine  
Read it, so help me grace in my need,  
From title-page to closing line.  
Chapter on chapter did I count,  
As a curious traveller counts Stonehenge ;  
Added up the mortal amount ;  
And then proceeded to my revenge.

Yonder's a plum-tree with a crevice  
An owl would build in, were he but sage ;

For a lap of moss, like a fine pont-levis  
In a castle of the Middle Age,  
Joins to a lip of gum, pure amber ;  
When he'd be private, there might he  
spend  
Hours alone in his lady's chamber :  
Into this crevice I dropped our friend.

## IV.

Splash, went he, as under he ducked,  
—At the bottom, I knew, rain-drippings  
stagnate :  
Next, a handful of blossoms I plucked  
To bury him with, my bookshelf's mag-  
nate ;  
Then I went in-doors, brought out a loaf,  
Half a cheese, and a bottle of Chablis ;  
Lay on the grass and forgot the oaf  
Over a jolly chapter of Rabelais.

## V.

Now, this morning, betwixt the moss  
And gum that locked our friend in limbo,  
A spider had spun his web across,  
And sat in the midst with arms akimbo :  
So, I took pity, for learning's sake,  
And, *de profundis, accentibus letis*,  
*Cantate !* quoth I, as I got a rake ;  
And up I fished his delectable treatise.

## VI.

Here you have it, dry in the sun,  
With all the binding all of a blister,  
And great blue spots where the ink has  
run,  
And reddish streaks that wink and glister  
O'er the page so beautifully yellow :  
Oh, well have the droppings played their  
tricks !  
Did he guess how toadstools grow, this fellow ?  
Here's one stuck in his chapter six !

## VII.

How did he like it when the live creatures  
Tickled and toused and browsed him all  
over,  
And worm, slug, eft, with serious features,  
Came in, each one, for his right of trover ?



—When the water-beetle with great blind  
deaf face

Made of her eggs the stately deposit,  
And the newt borrowed just so much of the  
preface

As tiled in the top of his black wife's closet?

## VIII.

All that life and fun and romping,  
All that frisking and twisting and coupling,  
While slowly our poor friend's leaves were  
swamping

And clasps were cracking and covers  
supplying!

As if you had carried sour John Knox  
To the play-house at Paris, Vienna or  
Munich,

Fastened him into a front-row box,  
And danced off the ballet with trousers  
and tunic.

## IX.

Come, old martyr! What, torment enough  
is it?

Back to my room shall you take your sweet  
self.

Good-bye, mother-beetle; husband-eft, *suffi-*  
*cient!*

See the snug niche I have made on my shelf!  
A.'s book shall prop you up, B.'s shall cover  
you,

Here's C. to be grave with, or D. to be gay,  
And with E. on each side, and F. right over  
you,

Dry-rot at ease till the Judgment-day!

### SOLILOQUY OF THE SPANISH CLOISTER.

## I.

GR-R-R—there go, my heart's abhorrence!

Water your damned flower-pots, do!

If hate killed men, Brother Lawrence,

God's blood, would not mine kill you!

What? your myrtle-bush wants trimming?

Oh, that rose has prior claims—

Needs its leaden vase filled brimming?

Hell dry you up with its flames!

## II.

At the meal we sit together:

*Salve tibi!* I must hear

Wise talk of the kind of weather,

Sort of season, time of year:

*Not a plenteous cork-crop; scarcely*

*Dare we hope oak-galls, I doubt:*

*What's the Latin name for "parsley"?*

What's the Greek name for Swine's Snout?

## III.

Whew! We'll have our platter burnished,

Laid with care on our own shelf!

With a fire-new spoon we're furnished,

And a goblet for ourself,

Rinsed like something sacrificial

Ere 'tis fit to touch our chaps—

Marked with L. for our initial!

(He-he! There his lily snaps!)

## IV.

*Saint*, forsooth! While brown Dolores

Squats outside the Convent bank

With Sanchicha, telling stories,

Steeping tresses in the tank,

Blue-black, lustrous, thick like horsehairs,

—Can't I see his dead eye glow,

Bright as 'twere a Barbary corsair's?

(That is, if he'd let it show!)

## V.

When he finishes refection,

Knife and fork he never lays

Cross-wise, to my recollection,

As do I, in Jesu's praise.

I the Trinity illustrate,

Drinking watered orange-pulp—

In three sips the Arian frustrate;

While he drains his at one gulp.

## VI.

Oh, those melons? If he's able

We're to have a feast! so nice!

One goes to the Abbot's table,

All of us get each a slice.

How go on your flowers? None double

Not one fruit-sort can you spy?

Strange!—And I, too, at such trouble,

Keep them close-nipped on the sly!

## VII.

There's a great text in Galatians,  
Once you trip on it, entails  
Twenty-nine distinct damnations,  
One sure, if another fails :  
If I trip him just a-dying,  
Sure of heaven as sure can be,  
Spin him round and send him flying  
Off to hell, a Manichee?

Or, my scrofulous French novel  
On grey paper with blunt type !  
Simply glance at it, you grovel  
Hand and foot in Belial's gripe :  
If I double down its pages  
At the woeful sixteenth print,  
When he gathers his greengages,  
Ope a sieve and slip it in't?

## IX.

Or, there's Satan !—one might venture  
Pledge one's soul to him, yet leave  
Such a flaw in the indenture  
As he'd miss till, past retrieve,  
Blasted lay that rose-acacia  
We're so proud of ! *Hy, Zy, Hine* . . .  
'St, there's Vespers ! *Plena gratia*  
*Ave, Virgo ! Gr-r-r—you swine !*

## THE LABORATORY.

## ANCIEN RÉGIME.

Now that I, tying thy glass mask tightly,  
May gaze thro' these faint smokes curling  
whitely,  
As thou pliest thy trade in this devil's-  
smithy—  
Which is the poison to poison her, prithee?

## II.

He is with her, and they know that I know  
Where they are, what they do : they believe  
my tears flow

While they laugh, laugh at me, at me fled to  
the drear  
Empty church, to pray God in, for them !—I  
am here.

## III.

Grind away, moisten and mash up thy paste,  
Pound at thy powder,—I am not in haste !  
Better sit thus, and observe thy strange  
things,  
Than go where men wait me and dance at  
the King's.

## IV.

That in the mortar—you call it a gum ?  
Ah, the brave tree whence such gold oozings  
come !  
And yonder soft phial, the exquisite blue,  
Sure to taste sweetly,—is that poison too ?

## V.

Had I but all of them, thee and thy treasures,  
What a wild crowd of invisible pleasures !  
To carry pure death in an earring, a casket,  
A signet, a fan-mount, a filigree basket !

## VI.

Soon, at the King's, a mere lozenge to give,  
And Pauline should have just thirty minutes  
to live !  
But to light a pastile, and Elise, with her  
head  
And her breast and her arms and her hands,  
should drop dead !

## VII.

Quick—is it finished? The colour's too grim !  
Why not soft like the phial's, enticing and  
dim?  
Let it brighten her drink, let her turn it and stir,  
And try it and taste, ere she fix and prefer !

## VIII.

What a drop ! She's not little, no minion  
like me !  
That's why she ensnared him : this never  
will free  
The soul from those masculine eyes,—say,  
“no !”  
To that pulse's magnificent come-and-go.

## IX.

For only last night, as they whispered, I brought  
My own eyes to bear on her so, that I thought  
Could I keep them one half minute fixed,  
    she would fall  
Shrivelled; she fell not; yet this does it all!

## X.

Not that I bid you spare her the pain;  
Let death be felt and the proof remain:  
Brand, burn up, bite into its grace—  
He is sure to remember her dying face!

## XI.

Is it done? Take my mask off! Nay, be  
    not morose;  
It kills her, and this prevents seeing it close:  
The delicate droplet, my whole fortune's fee!  
If it hurts her, beside, can it ever hurt me?

## XII.

Now, take all my jewels, gorge gold to your  
    fill,  
You may kiss me, old man, on my mouth if  
    you will!  
But brush this dust off me, lest horror it brings  
Ere I know it—next moment I dance at the  
    King's!

## THE CONFESSIONAL.

## [SPAIN.]

## I.

It is a lie—their Priests, their Pope,  
Their Saints, their . . . all they fear or hope  
Are lies, and lies—there! through my door  
And ceiling, there! and walls and floor,  
There, lies, they lie—shall still be hurled  
Till spite of them I reach the world!

## II.

You think Priests just and holy men!  
Before they put me in this den  
I was a human creature too,  
With flesh and blood like one of you,  
A girl that laughed in beauty's pride  
Like lilies in your world outside.

## III.

I had a lover—shame avault!  
This poor wrenched body, grim and gaunt,  
Was kissed all over till it burned,  
By lips the truest, love e'er turned  
His heart's own tint: one night they kissed  
My soul out in a burning mist.

## IV.

So, next day when the accustomed train  
Of things grew round my sense again,  
"That is a sin," I said: and slow  
With downcast eyes to church I go,  
And pass to the confession-chair,  
And tell the old mild father there.

## V.

But when I falter Beltran's name,  
"Ha?" quoth the father; "much I blame  
"The sin; yet wherefore idly grieve?  
"Despair not—strenuously retrieve!  
"Nay, I will turn this love of thine  
"To lawful love, almost divine;

## VI.

"For he is young, and led astray,  
"This Beltran, and he schemes, men say,  
"To change the laws of church and state;  
"So, thine shall be an angel's fate,  
"Who, ere the thunder breaks, should roll  
"Its cloud away and save his soul.

## VII.

"For, when he lies upon thy breast,  
"Thou mayst demand and be possessed  
"Of all his plans, and next day steal  
"To me, and all those plans reveal,  
"That I and every priest, to purge  
"His soul, may fast and use the scourge."

## VIII.

That father's beard was long and white,  
With love and truth his brow seemed bright;  
I went back, all on fire with joy,  
And, that same evening, bade the boy  
Tell me, as lovers should, heart-free,  
Something to prove his love of me.

## IX.

He told me what he would not tell  
 For hope of heaven or fear of hell ;  
 And I lay listening in such pride !  
 And, soon as he had left my side,  
 Tripped to the church by morning-light  
 To save his soul in his despire.

## X.

I told the father all his schemes,  
 Who were his comrades, what their dreams ;  
 "And now make haste," I said, "to pray  
 "The one spot from his soul away ;  
 "To-night he comes, but not the same  
 "Will look !" At night he never came.

## XI.

Nor next night : on the after-morn,  
 I went forth with a strength new-born.  
 The church was empty ; something drew  
 My steps into the street ; I knew  
 It led me to the market-place :  
 Where, lo, on high, the father's face !

## XII.

That horrible black scaffold dressed,  
 That stapled block . . . God sink the rest !  
 That head strapped back, that blinding vest,  
 Those knotted hands and naked breast,  
 Till near one busy hangman pressed,  
 And, on the neck these arms caressed . . .

## XIII.

No part in aught they hope or fear !  
 No heaven with them, no hell !—and here,  
 No earth, not so much space as pens  
 My body in their worst of dens  
 But shall bear God and man my cry,  
 Lies—lies, again—and still, they lie !

## CRISTINA.

## I.

SHE should never have looked at me  
 If she meant I should not love her !  
 There are plenty . . . men, you call such,  
 I suppose . . . she may discover

All her soul to, if she pleases,  
 And yet leave much as she found them :  
 But I'm not so, and she knew it  
 When she fixed me, glancing round them.

## II.

What? To fix me thus meant nothing?  
 But I can't tell (there's my weakness) . . .  
 What her look said !—no vile cant, sure,  
 About "need to strew the bleakness  
 "Of some lone shore with its pearl-seed.  
 "That the sea feels"—no "strange yearning  
 "That such souls have, most to lavish  
 "Where there's chance of least returning."

## III.

Oh, we're sunk enough here, God knows !  
 But not quite so sunk that moments,  
 Sure tho' seldom, are denied us,  
 When the spirit's true endowments  
 Stand out plainly from its false ones,  
 And apprise it if pursuing  
 Or the right way or the wrong way,  
 To its triumph or undoing.

## IV.

There are flashes struck from midnights,  
 There are fire-flames noondays kindle,  
 Whereby piled-up honours perish,  
 Whereby swollen ambitions dwindle,  
 While just this or that poor impulse,  
 Which for once had play unstified,  
 Seems the sole work of a life-time  
 That away the rest have trifled.

## V.

Doubt you if, in some such moment,  
 As she fixed me, she felt clearly,  
 Ages past the soul existed,  
 Here an age 'tis resting merely,  
 And hence fleets again for ages,  
 While the true end, sole and single,  
 It stops here for is, this love-way,  
 With some other soul to mingle?

## VI.

Else it loses what it lived for,  
And eternally must lose it ;  
Better ends may be in prospect,  
Deeper blisses (if you choose it),  
But this life's end and this love-bliss  
Have been lost here. Doubt you whether  
This she felt as, looking at me,  
Mine and her souls rushed together ?

## VII.

Oh, observe ! Of course, next moment,  
The world's honours, in derision,  
Trampled out the light for ever :  
Never fear but there's provision  
Of the devil's to quench knowledge  
Lest we walk the earth in rapture !  
—Making those who catch God's secret  
Just so much more prize their capture !

## VIII.

Such am I : the secret's mine now !  
She has lost me, I have gained her ;  
Her soul's mine : and thus, grown perfect,  
I shall pass my life's remainder.  
Life will just hold out the proving  
Both our powers, alone and blended :  
And then, come next life quickly !  
This world's use will have been ended.

## THE LOST MISTRESS.

## I.

ALL's over, then : does truth sound bitter  
As one at first believes ?  
Hark, 'tis the sparrows' good-night twitter  
About your cottage eaves !

## II.

And the leaf-buds on the vine are woolly,  
I noticed that, to-day ;  
One day more bursts them open fully  
—You know the red turns grey.

## III.

To-morrow we meet the same then, dearest ?  
May I take your hand in mine ?  
Mere friends are we,—well, friends the merest  
Keep much that I resign :

## IV.

For each glance of the eye so bright and  
black,  
Though I keep with heart's endeavour,—  
Your voice, when you wish the snowdrops  
back,  
Though it stay in my soul for ever !—

## V.

Yet I will but say what mere friends say,  
Or only a thought stronger ;  
I will hold your hand but as long as all may,  
Or so very little longer !

## EARTH'S IMMORTALITIES.

## FAME.

SEE, as the prettiest graves will do in time,  
Our poet's wants the freshness of its prime ;  
Spite of the sexton's browsing horse, the sods  
Have struggled through its binding osier rods ;  
Headstone and half-sunk footstone lean awry,  
Wanting the brick-work promised by-and-by ;  
How the minute grey lichens, plate o'er plate,  
Have softened down the crisp-cut name and  
date !

## LOVE.

So, the year's done with !  
(*Love me for ever !*)  
All March begun with,  
April's endeavour ;  
May-wreaths that bound me  
June needs must sever ;  
Now snows fall round me,  
Quenching June's fever—  
(*Love me for ever !*)

## MEETING AT NIGHT.

## I.

THE grey sea and the long black land ;  
 And the yellow half-moon large and low ;  
 And the startled little waves that leap  
 In fiery ringlets from their sleep,  
 As I gain the cove with pushing prow,  
 And quench its speed i' the slushy sand.

## II.

Then a mile of warm sea-scented beach ;  
 Three fields to cross till a farm appears ;  
 A tap at the pane, the quick sharp scratch  
 And blue spurt of a lighted match,  
 And a voice less loud, thro' its joys and fears,  
 Than the two hearts beating each to each !

## PARTING AT MORNING.

ROUND the cape of a sudden came the sea,  
 And the sun looked over the mountain's rim :  
 And straight was a path of gold for him,  
 And the need of a world of men for me.

## SONG.

## I.

NAY but you, who do not love her,  
 Is she not pure gold, my mistress ?  
 Holds earth aught—speak truth—above her ?  
 Aught like this tress, see, and this tress,  
 And this last fairest tress of all,  
 So fair, see, ere I let it fall ?

## II.

Because, you spend your lives in praising ;  
 To praise, you search the wide world over :  
 Then why not witness, calmly gazing,  
 If earth holds aught—speak truth—above  
 her ?  
 Above this tress, and this, I touch  
 But cannot praise, I love so much !

## A WOMAN'S LAST WORD.

## I.

LET's contend no more, Love,  
 Strive nor weep :  
 All be as before, Love,  
 —Only sleep !

## II.

What so wild as words are ?  
 I and thou  
 In debate, as birds are,  
 Hawk on bough !

## III.

See the creature stalking  
 While we speak !  
 Hush and hide the talking,  
 Check on check !

## IV.

What so false as truth is,  
 False to thee ?  
 Where the serpent's tooth is  
 Shun the tree—

## V.

Where the apple reddens  
 Never pry—  
 Lest we lose our Edens,  
 Eve and I.

## VI.

Be a god and hold me  
 With a charm !  
 Be a man and fold me  
 With thine arm !

## VII.

Teach me, only teach, Love !  
 As I ought  
 I will speak thy speech, Love,  
 Think thy thought—

## VI.

But he looked upon the city, every side,  
     Far and wide,  
 All the mountains topped with temples, all  
     the glades'  
     Colonnades,  
 All the causeys, bridges, aqueducts,—and  
     then,  
     All the men !  
 When I do come, she will speak not, she  
     will stand,  
     Either hand  
 On my shoulder, give her eyes the first  
     embrace  
     Of my face,  
 Ere we rush, ere we extinguish sight and  
     speech  
     Each on each.

## VII.

In one year they sent a million fighters forth  
     South and North,  
 And they built their gods a brazen pillar high  
     As the sky,  
 Yet reserved a thousand chariots in full  
     force—  
     Gold, of course.  
 Oh heart ! oh blood that freezes, blood that  
     burns !  
     Earth's returns  
 For whole centuries of folly, noise and sin !  
     Shut them in,  
 With their triumphs and their glories and  
     the rest !  
     Love is best.

## A LOVERS' QUARREL.

## I.

Oh, what a dawn of day !  
 How the March sun feels like May !  
     All is blue again  
     After last night's rain,  
 And the South dries the hawthorn-spray.  
     Only, my Love's away !  
 I'd as lief that the blue were grey,

## II.

Runnels, which rillels swell,  
 Must be dancing down the dell,  
     With a foaming head  
     On the beryl bed  
 Paven smooth as a hermit's cell ;  
     Each with a tale to tell,  
 Could my Love but attend as well.

## III.

Dearest, three months ago !  
 When we lived blocked-up with  
     snow,—  
     When the wind would edge  
     In and in his wedge,  
 In, as far as the point could go—  
     Not to our ingle, though,  
 Where we loved each the other so !

## IV.

Laughs with so little cause !  
 We devised games out of straws,  
     We would try and trace  
     One another's face  
 In the ash, as an artist draws ;  
     Free on each other's flaws,  
 How we chattered like two church daws !

## V.

What's in the "Times" ?—a scold  
 At the Emperor deep and cold ;  
     He has taken a bride  
     To his gruesome side,  
 That's as fair as himself is bold :  
     There they sit ermine-stoled,  
 And she powders her hair with gold.

## VI.

Fancy the Pampas' sheen !  
 Miles and miles of gold and green  
     Where the sunflowers blow  
     In a solid glow,  
 And — to break now and then the  
     screen—  
     Black neck and eyeballs keen,  
 Up a wild horse leaps between !

## VII.

Try, will our table turn?  
Lay your hands there light, and yearn  
Till the yearning slips  
Thro' the finger-tips  
In a fire which a few discern,  
And a very few feel burn,  
And the rest, they may live and learn!

## VIII.

Then we would up and pace,  
For a change, about the place,  
Each with arm o'er neck:  
'Tis our quarter-deck,  
We are seamen in woeful case.  
Help in the ocean-space!  
Or, if no help, we'll embrace.

## IX.

See, how she looks now, dressed  
In a sledging-cap and vest!  
'Tis a huge fur cloak—  
Like a reindeer's yoke  
Falls the lappet along the breast:  
Sleeves for her arms to rest,  
Or to hang, as my Love likes best.

## X.

Teach me to flirt a fan  
As the Spanish ladies can,  
Or I tint your lip  
With a burnt stick's tip  
And you turn into such a man!  
Just the two spots that span  
Half the bill of the young male swan.

## XI.

Dearest, three months ago  
When the mesmerizer Snow  
With his hand's first sweep  
Put the earth to sleep:  
'Twas a time when the heart could show  
All—how was earth to know,  
'Neath the mute hand's to-and-fro?

## XII.

Dearest, three months ago  
When we loved each other so,  
Lived and loved the same  
Till an evening came  
When a shaft from the devil's bow  
Pierced to our ingle-glow,  
And the friends were friend and foe!

## XIII.

Not from the heart beneath—  
'Twas a bubble born of breath,  
Neither sneer nor vaunt,  
Nor reproach nor taunt.  
See a word, how it severeth!  
Oh, power of life and death  
In the tongue, as the Preacher saith!

## XIV.

Woman, and will you cast  
For a word, quite off at last  
Me, your own, your You,—  
Since, as truth is true,  
I was You all the happy past—  
Me do you leave aghast  
With the memories We amassed?

## XV.

Love, if you knew the light  
That your soul casts in my sight,  
How I look to you  
For the pure and true  
And the beauteous and the right,—  
Bear with a moment's spite  
When a mere mote threatens the white!

## XVI.

What of a hasty word?  
Is the fleshly heart not stirred  
By a worm's pin-prick  
Where its roots are quick?  
See the eye, by a fly's foot blurred—  
Ear, when a straw is heard  
Scratch the brain's coat of curd!



## XVII.

Foul be the world or fair  
 More or less, how can I care?  
 'Tis the world the same  
 For my praise or blame,  
 And endurance is easy there.  
 Wrong in the one thing rare—  
 Oh, it is hard to bear!

## XVIII.

Here's the spring back or close,  
 When the almond-blossom blows:  
 We shall have the word  
 In a minor third  
 There is none but the cuckoo knows  
 Heaps of the guelder-rose!  
 I must bear with it, I suppose.

## XIX.

Could but November come,  
 Were the noisy birds struck dumb  
 At the warning slash  
 Of his driver's-lash—  
 I would laugh like the valiant Thumb  
 Facing the castle glum  
 And the giant's fee-faw-fum!

## XX.

Then, were the world well stripped  
 Of the gear wherein equipped  
 We can stand apart,  
 Heart dispense with heart  
 In the sun, with the flowers unrippd,—  
 Oh, the world's hangings ripped,  
 We were both in a bare-walled crypt!

## XXI.

Each in the crypt would cry  
 "But one freezes here! and why?"  
 "When a heart, as chill,  
 "At my own would thrill  
 "Back to life, and its fires out-fly?  
 "Heart, shall we live or die?  
 "The rest, . . . settle by-and-by!"

## XXII.

So, she'd efface the score,  
 And forgive me as before.  
 It is twelve o'clock:  
 I shall hear her knock  
 In the worst of a storm's uproar,  
 I shall pull her through the door,  
 I shall have her for evermore!

UP AT A VILLA—DOWN IN  
THE CITY.

(AS DISTINGUISHED BY AN ITALIAN  
PERSON OF QUALITY.)

## I.

HAD I but plenty of money, money enough  
 and to spare,  
 The house for me, no doubt, were a house  
 in the city-square;  
 Ah, such a life, such a life, as one leads at  
 the window there!

## II.

Something to see, by Bacchus, something to  
 hear, at least!  
 There, the whole day long, one's life is a  
 perfect feast;  
 While up at a villa one lives, I maintain it,  
 no more than a beast.

## III.

Well now, look at our villa! stuck like the  
 horn of a bull  
 Just on a mountain-edge as bare as the  
 creature's skull,  
 Save a mere shag of a bush with hardly a leaf  
 to pull!  
 —I scratch my own, sometimes, to see if the  
 hair's turned wool.

## IV.

But the city, oh the city—the square with  
 the houses! Why?  
 They are stone-faced, white as a curd, there's  
 something to take the eye!

Houses in four straight lines, not a single front awry ;  
 You watch who crosses and gossips, who saunters, who hurries by ;  
 Green blinds, as a matter of course, to draw when the sun gets high ;  
 And the shops with fanciful signs which are painted properly.

## V.

What of a villa ? Though winter be over in March by rights,  
 'Tis May perhaps ere the snow shall have withered well off the heights :  
 You've the brown ploughed land before, where the oxen steam and wheeze,  
 And the hills over-smoked behind by the faint grey olive-trees.

## VI.

Is it better in May, I ask you ? You've summer all at once ;  
 In a day he leaps complete with a few strong April suns.  
 'Mid the sharp short emerald wheat, scarce risen three fingers well,  
 The wild tulip, at end of its tube, blows out its great red bell  
 Like a thin clear bubble of blood, for the children to pick and sell.

## VII.

Is it ever hot in the square ? There's a fountain to spout and splash !  
 In the shade it sings and springs ; in the shine such foam-bows flash  
 On the horses with curling fish-tails, that prance and paddle and pash  
 Round the lady atop in her conch—fifty gazers do not abash,  
 Though all that she wears is some weeds round her waist in a sort of sash.

All the year long at the villa, nothing to see though you linger,  
 Except yon cypress that points like death's lean lifted forefinger.

Some think fireflies pretty, when they mix i' the corn and mingle,  
 Or thrud the stinking hemp, till the stalks of it seem a-tingle.  
 Late August or early September, the stunning cicala is shrill,  
 And the bees keep their tiresome whine round the resinous firs on the hill.  
 Enough of the seasons,—I spare you the months of the fever and chill.

## IX.

Ere you open your eyes in the city, the blessed church-bells begin :  
 No sooner the bells leave off than the diligence rattles in :  
 You get the pick of the news, and it costs you never a pin.  
 By-and-by there's the travelling doctor gives pills, lets blood, draws teeth ;  
 Or the Pulcinello-trumpet breaks up the market beneath.  
 At the post-office such a scene-picture—the new play, piping hot !  
 And a notice how, only this morning, three liberal thieves were shot.  
 Above it, behold the Archbishop's most fatherly rebukes,  
 And beneath, with his crown and his lion, some little new law of the Duke's !  
 Or a sonnet with flowery marge, to the Reverend Don So-and-so  
 Who is Dante, Boccaccio, Petrarca, Saint Jerome and Cicero,  
 "And moreover," (the sonnet goes rhyming,) "the skirts of Saint Paul has reached,  
 "Having preached us those six Lent-lectures more unctuous than ever he preached."  
 Noon strikes,—here sweeps the procession ! our Lady borne smiling and smart  
 With a pink gauze gown all spangles, and seven swords stuck in her heart !  
*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-tootle* the fife ;  
 No keeping one's haunches still : it's the greatest pleasure in life.

## X.

But bless you, it's dear—it's dear ! fowls,  
wine, at double the rate.

They have clapped a new tax upon salt, and  
what oil pays passing the gate

It's a horror to think of. And so, the villa for  
me, not the city !

Beggars can scarcely be choosers : but still—  
ah, the pity, the pity !

Look, two and two go the priests, then the  
monks with cowls and sandals,

And the penitents dressed in white shirts,  
a-holding the yellow candles ;

One, he carries a flag up straight, and another  
a cross with handles,

And the Duke's guard brings up the rear, for  
the better prevention of scandals :

*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-  
tootle* the fife.

Oh, a day in the city-square, there is no such  
pleasure in life !

A TOCCATA<sup>1</sup> OF GALUPPI'S.

[Galuppi was a famous Italian composer of  
the eighteenth century. He was in London  
from 1741 to 1744.]

## I.

OH Galuppi, Baldassaro, this is very sad to  
find !

I can hardly misconceive you ; it would prove  
me deaf and blind ;

But although I take your meaning, 'tis with  
such a heavy mind !

## II.

Here you come with your old music, and  
here's all the good it brings.

What, they lived once thus at Venice where  
the merchants were the kings,

Where Saint Mark's is, where the Doges  
used to wed the sea with rings ?

<sup>1</sup> An overture—a touch piece.

## III.

Ay, because the sea's the street there ; and  
'tis arched by . . . what you call

. . . Shylock's bridge with houses on it,  
where they kept the carnival :

I was never out of England—it's as if I saw  
it all.

## IV.

Did young people take their pleasure when  
the sea was warm in May ?

Balls and masks begun at midnight, burning  
ever to mid-day,

When they made up fresh adventures for the  
morrow, do you say ?

## V.

Was a lady such a lady, cheeks so round and  
lips so red,—

On her neck the small face buoyant, like a  
bell-flower on its bed,

O'er the breast's superb abundance where a  
man might base his head ?

## VI.

Well, and it was graceful of them—they'd  
break talk off and afford

—She, to bite her mask's black velvet—he,  
to finger on his sword,

While you sat and played Toccatas, stately  
at the clavichord ?

## VII.

What ? Those lesser thirds so plaintive,  
sixths diminished, sigh on sigh,

Told them something ? Those suspensions,  
those solutions—"Must we die ?"

Those commiserating sevenths—"Life might  
last ! we can but try !"

## VIII.

"Were you happy ?"—"Yes."—"And are  
you still as happy ?"—"Yes. And you ?"

—"Then, more kisses !"—"Did I stop them,  
when a million seemed so few ?"

Hark, the dominant's persistence till it must  
be answered to !

IX.

So, an octave struck the answer. Oh, they  
praised you, I dare say !  
"Brave Galuppi ! that was music ! good  
alike at grave and gay !  
"I can always leave off talking when I hear  
a master play !"

X.

Then they left you for their pleasure : till in  
due time, one by one,  
Some with lives that came to nothing, some  
with deeds as well undone,  
Death stepped tacitly and took them where  
they never see the sun.

XI.

But when I sit down to reason, think to take  
my stand nor swerve,  
While I triumph o'er a secret wrung from  
nature's close reserve,  
In you come with your cold music till I creep  
thro' every nerve.

XII.

Yes, you, like a ghostly cricket, creaking  
where a house was burned ;  
"Dust and ashes, dead and done with,  
Venice spent what Venice earned.  
"The soul, doubtless, is immortal—where a  
soul can be discerned.

"Yours for instance : you know physics,  
something of geology,  
"Mathematics are your pastime ; souls shall  
rise in their degree ;  
"Butterflies may dread extinction,—you'll  
not die, it cannot be !

"As for Venice and her people, merely born  
to bloom and drop,  
"Here on earth they bore their fruitage,  
mirth and folly were the crop :  
"What of soul was left, I wonder, when the  
kissing had to stop ?

XV.

"Dust and ashes !" So you creak it, and I  
want the heart to scold.  
Dear dead women, with such hair, too—  
what's become of all the gold  
Used to hang and brush their bosoms ? I  
feel chilly and grown old.

OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE.

THE morn when first it thunders in March,  
The eel in the pond gives a leap, they say :  
As I leaned and looked over the aloed arch  
Of the villa-gate this warm March day,  
No flash snapped, no dumb thunder rolled  
In the valley beneath where, white and wide  
And washed by the morning water-gold,  
Florence lay out on the mountain-side.

II.

River and bridge and street and square  
Lay mine, as much at my beck and call,  
Through the live translucent bath of air,  
As the sights in a magic crystal ball.  
And of all I saw and of all I praised,  
The most to praise and the best to see  
Was the startling bell-tower Giotto raised :  
But why did it more than startle me ?

Giotto, how, with that soul of yours,  
Could you play me false who loved you so ?  
Some slights if a certain heart endures  
Yet it feels, I would have your fellows  
know !  
I' faith, I perceive not why I should care  
To break a silence that suits them best,  
But the thing grows somewhat hard to bear  
When I find a Giotto join the rest.

IV.

On the arch where olives overhead  
Print the blue sky with twig and leaf,  
(That sharp-curved leaf which they never shed)  
'Twixt the aloes, I used to lean in chief,

And mark through the winter afternoons,  
By a gift God grants me now and then,  
In the mild decline of those suns like moons,  
Who walked in Florence, besides her men.

## V.

They might chirp and chaffer, come and go  
For pleasure or profit, her men alive—  
My business was hardly with them, I trow,  
But with empty cells of the human hive ;  
—With the chapter-room, the cloister-porch,  
The church's apsis, aisle or nave,  
Its crypt, one fingers along with a torch,  
Its face set full for the sun to shave.

## VI.

Wherever a fresco peels and drops,  
Wherever an outline weakens and wanes  
Till the latest life in the painting stops,  
Stands One whom each fainter pulse-tick  
pains :  
One, wishful each scrap should clutch the brick,  
Each tinge not wholly escape the plaster,  
—A lion who dies of an ass's kick,  
The wronged great soul of an ancient  
Master.

## VII.

For oh, this world and the wrong it does !  
They are safe in heaven with their backs  
to it,  
The Michaels and Rafaels, you hum and buzz  
Round the works of, you of the little wit !  
Do their eyes contract to the earth's old scope,  
Now that they see God face to face,  
And have all attained to be poets, I hope ?  
'Tis their holiday now, in any case.

Much they reckon of your praise and you !  
But the wronged great souls—can they be  
quit  
Of a world where their work is all to do,  
Where you style them, you of the little wit,  
Old Master This and Early the Other,  
Not dreaming that Old and New are fellows :  
A younger succeeds to an elder brother,  
Da Vincis derive in good time from Dellos.

And here where your praise might yield  
returns,  
And a handsome word or two give help,  
Here, after your kind, the mastiff grins  
And the puppy pack of poodles yelp.  
What, not a word for Stefano there,  
Of brow once prominent and starry,  
Called Nature's Ape and the world's despair  
For his peerless painting? (See Vasari.)

## X.

There stands the Master. Study, my friends,  
What a man's work comes to ! So he  
plans it,  
Performs it, perfects it, makes amends  
For the toiling and moiling, and then, *sic  
transit* !  
Happier the thrifty blind-folk labour,  
With upturned eye while the hand is busy,  
Not sidling a glance at the coin of their  
neighbour !  
'Tis looking downward that makes one  
dizzy.

## XI.

"If you knew their work you would deal  
your dole."  
May I take upon me to instruct you ?  
When Greek Art ran and reached the goal,  
Thus much had the world to boast *in  
fructu*—  
The Truth of Man, as by God first spoken,  
Which the actual generations garble,  
Was re-uttered, and Soul (which Limbs  
betoken)  
And Limbs (Soul informs) made new in  
marble.

## XII.

So, you saw yourself as you wished you were,  
As you might have been, as you cannot be ;  
Earth here, rebuked by Olympus there :  
And grew content in your poor degree  
With your little power, by those statues'  
godhead,  
And your little scope, by their eyes' full sway,  
And your little grace, by their grace embodied,  
And your little date, by their forms that stay.

XIII.

You would fain be kinglier, say, than I am?  
 Even so, you will not sit like Theseus.  
 You would prove a model? The Son of Priam  
 Has yet the advantage in arms' and knees'  
 use.  
 You're wroth—can you slay your snake like  
 Apollo?  
 You're grieved—still Niobe's the grander!  
 You live—there's the Racers' frieze to follow:  
 You die—there's the dying Alexander.

XIV.

So, testing your weakness by their strength,  
 Your meagre charms by their rounded  
 beauty,  
 Measured by Art in your breadth and length,  
 You learned—to submit is a mortal's duty.  
 —When I say "you" 'tis the common soul,  
 The collective, I mean: the race of Man  
 That receives life in parts to live in a whole,  
 And grow here according to God's clear  
 plan.

XV.

Growth came when, looking your last on  
 them all,  
 You turned your eyes inwardly one fine day  
 And cried with a start—What if we so small  
 Be greater and grander the while than they?  
 Are they perfect of lineament, perfect of  
 stature?  
 In both, of such lower types are we  
 Precisely because of our wider nature;  
 For time, theirs—ours, for eternity.

XVI.

To-day's brief passion limits their range;  
 It seethes with the morrow for us and more.  
 They are perfect—how else? they shall never  
 change:  
 We are faulty—why not? we have time in  
 store.  
 The Artificer's hand is not arrested  
 With us; we are rough-hewn, nowise  
 polished:  
 They stand for our copy, and, once invested  
 With all they can teach, we shall see them  
 abolished.

XVII.

'Tis a life-long toil till our lump be leaven—  
 The better! What's come to perfection  
 perishes.  
 Things learned on earth, we shall practise  
 in heaven:  
 Works done least rapidly, Art most  
 cherishes.  
 Thyself shalt afford the example, Giotto!  
 Thy one work, not to decrease or diminish,  
 Done at a stroke, was just (was it not?) "O!"  
 Thy great Campanile is still to finish.

XVIII.

Is it true that we are now, and shall be hereafter,  
 But what and where depend on life's minute?  
 Hails heavenly cheer or infernal laughter  
 Our first step out of the gulf or in it?  
 Shall Man, such step within his endeavour,  
 Man's face, have no more play and action  
 Than joy which is crystallized for ever,  
 Or grief, an eternal petrification?

XIX.

On which I conclude, that the early painters,  
 To cries of "Greek Art and what more  
 wish you?"—  
 Replied, "To become now self-acquainters,  
 "And paint man man, whatever the issue!  
 "Make new hopes shine through the flesh they  
 fray,  
 "New fears aggrandize the rags and tatters:  
 "To bring the invisible full into play!"  
 "Let the visible go to the dogs—what  
 matters?"

XX.

Give these, I exhort you, their guerdon and  
 glory  
 For daring so much, before they well did it.  
 The first of the new, in our race's story,  
 Beats the last of the old; 'tis no idle quiddit.  
 The worthies began a revolution,  
 Which if on earth you intend to acknow-  
 ledge,  
 Why, honour them now! (ends my allocution)  
 Nor confer your degree when the folk leave  
 college.

## XXI.

There's a fancy some lean to and others hate—  
That, when this life is ended, begins  
New work for the soul in another state,  
Where it strives and gets weary, loses and  
wins :

Where the strong and the weak, this world's  
congeries,

Repeat in large what they practised in small,  
Through life after life in unlimited series ;  
Only the scale's to be changed, that's all.

## XXII.

Yet I hardly know. When a soul has seen  
By the means of Evil that Good is best,  
And, through earth and its noise, what is  
heaven's serene,—

When our faith in the same has stood the  
test—

Why, the child grown man, you burn the rod,  
The uses of labour are surely done ;

There remaineth a rest for the people of  
God :

And I have had troubles enough, for one.

## XXIII.

But at any rate I have loved the season  
Of Art's spring-birth so dim and dewy ;

My sculptor is Nicolo<sup>1</sup> the Pisan,

My painter—who but Cimabue ?

Nor ever was man of them all indeed,

From these to Ghiberti<sup>2</sup> and Ghirlandajo,<sup>3</sup>  
Could say that he missed my critic-meed.

So, now to my special grievance—heigh ho !

## XXIV.

Their ghosts still stand, as I said before,

Watching each fresco flaked and rasped,  
Blocked up, knocked out, or whitewashed  
o'er :

—No getting again what the church has  
grasped !

<sup>1</sup> A sculptor, died 1278.

<sup>2</sup> Died 1455. Designed the bronze gates of  
the Baptistry at Florence.

<sup>3</sup> A painter, died 1498.

The works on the wall must take their chance ;  
“ Works never conceded to England's thick  
clime ! ”

(I hope they prefer their inheritance  
Of a bucketful of Italian quick-lime.)

When they go at length, with such a shaking  
Of heads o'er the old delusion, sadly

Each master his way through the black streets  
taking,

Where many a lost work breathes though  
badly—

Why don't they bethink them of who has  
merited ?

Why not reveal, while their pictures dree  
Such doom, how a captive might be out-  
ferreted ?

Why is it they never remember me ?

## XXVI.

Not that I expect the great Bigordi,  
Nor Sandro to hear me, chivalric, bellicose ;

Nor the wronged Lippino<sup>4</sup> ; and not a word I  
Say of a scrap of Frà Angelico's :

But are you too fine, Taddeo Gaddi,<sup>5</sup>

To grant me a taste of your intonaco,<sup>6</sup>

Some Jerome that seeks the heaven with a  
sad eye ?

Not a churlish saint, Lorenzo Monaco ?

## XXVII.

Could not the ghost with the close red cap,  
My Pollajolo,<sup>7</sup> the twice a craftsman,

Save me a sample, give me the hap

Of a muscular Christ that shows the  
draughtsman ?

No Virgin by him the somewhat petty,

Of finical touch and tempera<sup>8</sup> crumbly—

Could not Alesso Baldovinetti

Contribute so much, I ask him humbly ?

<sup>4</sup> The son of Frà Lippo Lippi. Wronged,  
because some of his pictures have been attributed  
to others.

<sup>5</sup> Died 1366. One of Giotto's pupils and  
assistants.

<sup>6</sup> Rough cast.

<sup>7</sup> Painter, sculptor, and goldsmith.

<sup>8</sup> Distemper—mixture of water and egg yolk.

XXVIII.

Margheritone of Arezzo,<sup>1</sup>  
 With the grave-clothes garb and swaddling  
 barret  
 (Why purse up mouth and beak in a pet so,  
 You bald old saturnine poll-clawed parrot?)  
 Not a poor glimmering Crucifixion,  
 Where in the foreground kneels the donor?  
 If such remain, as is my conviction,  
 The hoarding it does you but little honour.

XXIX.

They pass; for them the panels may thrill,  
 The tempera grow alive and tinglish;  
 Their pictures are left to the mercies still  
 Of dealers and stealers, Jews and the  
 English,  
 Who, seeing mere money's worth in their  
 prize,  
 Will sell it to somebody calm as Zeno  
 At naked High Art, and in ecstasies  
 Before some clay-cold vile Carlino!

XXX.

No matter for these! But Giotto, you,  
 Have you allowed, as the town-tongues  
 babble it,—  
 Oh, never! it shall not be counted true—  
 That a certain precious little tablet  
 Which Buonarroti eyed like a lover,—  
 Was buried so long in oblivion's womb  
 And, left for another than I to discover,  
 Turns up at last! and to whom?—to whom?

XXXI.

I, that have haunted the dim San Spirito,  
 (Or was it rather the Ognissanti?)  
 Patient on altar-step planting a weary toe!  
 Nay, I shall have it yet! *Detur amanti!*  
 My Koh-i-noor—or (if that's a platitude)  
 Jewel of Giamschid, the Persian Sofi's eye;  
 So, in anticipative gratitude,  
 What if I take up my hope and prophesy?

<sup>1</sup> Sculptor and architect, died 1313.

<sup>2</sup> All Saints.

XXXII.

When the hour grows ripe, and a certain  
 dotard  
 Is pitched, no parcel that needs invoicing,  
 To the worse side of the Mont Saint Gothard,  
 We shall begin by way of rejoicing;  
 None of that shooting the sky (blank car-  
 tridge),  
 Nor a civic guard, all plumes and lacquer,  
 Hunting Radetzky's soul like a partridge  
 Over Morello with squib and cracker.

XXXIII.

This time we'll shoot better game and bag  
 'em hot—  
 No mere display at the stone of Dante,  
 But a kind of sober Witanagemot  
 (Ex: "Casa Guidi," *quod vultes ante*)  
 Shall ponder, once Freedom restored to  
 Florence,  
 How Art may return that departed with her.  
 Go, hated house, go each trace of the  
 Loraine's,  
 And bring us the days of Orgagna<sup>3</sup> hither!

XXXIV.

How we shall prologize, how we shall  
 perorate,  
 Utter fit things upon art and history,  
 Feel truth at blood-heat and falsehood at  
 zero rate,  
 Make of the want of the age no mystery;  
 Contrast the fructuous and sterile eras,  
 Show—monarchy ever its uncouth cub licks  
 Out of the bear's shape into Chimæra's,  
 While Pure Art's birth is still the republic's.

XXXV.

Then one shall propose in a speech (curt  
 Tuscan,  
 Expurgate and sober, with scarcely an  
 "issimo,")  
 To end now our half-told tale of Cambuscan,<sup>4</sup>  
 And turn the bell-tower's *alt* to *altissimo*:

<sup>3</sup> A Florentine painter, died 1576.

<sup>4</sup> Tartar king.



And fine as the beak of a young beccaccia<sup>1</sup>  
 The Campanile, the Duomo's fit ally,  
 Shall soar up in gold full fifty braccia,  
 Completing Florence, as Florence Italy.

## XXXVI.

Shall I be alive that morning the scaffold  
 Is broken away, and the long-pent fire,  
 Like the golden hope of the world, unbaffled  
 Springs from its sleep, and up goes the spire  
 While "God and the People" plain for its  
 motto,  
 Thence the new tricolour flaps at the sky?  
 At least to foresee that glory of Giotto  
 And Florence together, the first am I!

## "DE GUSTIBUS——"

## I.

YOUR ghost will walk, you lover of trees,  
 (If our loves remain)  
 In an English lane,  
 By a cornfield-side a-flutter with poppies.  
 Hark, those two in the hazel coppice—  
 A boy and a girl, if the good fates please,  
 Making love, say,—  
 The happier they!  
 Draw yourself up from the light of the moon,  
 And let them pass, as they will too soon,  
 With the bean-flowers' boon,  
 And the blackbird's tune,  
 And May, and June!

## II.

What I love best in all the world  
 Is a castle, precipice-encurled,  
 In a gash of the wind-grieved Apennine  
 Or look for me, old fellow of mine,  
 (If I get my head from out the mouth  
 O' the grave, and loose my spirit's bands,  
 And come again to the land of lands)—  
 In a sea-side house to the farther South,  
 Where the baked cicala dies of drouth,  
 And one sharp tree—'tis a cypress—stands.

<sup>1</sup> A woodcock.

By the many hundred years red-rusted,  
 Rough iron-spiked, ripe fruit-o'ercrusted,  
 My sentinel to guard the sands  
 To the water's edge. For, what expands  
 Before the house, but the great opaque  
 Blue breadth of sea without a break?  
 While, in the house, for ever crumbles  
 Some fragment of the frescoed walls,  
 From blisters where a scorpion sprawls.  
 A girl bare-footed brings, and tumbles  
 Down on the pavement, green-flesh melons,  
 And says there's news to-day—the king  
 Was shot at, touched in the liver-wing,  
 Goes with his Bourbon arm in a sling:  
 —She hopes they have not caught the  
 felons.

Italy, my Italy!

Queen Mary's saying serves for me—  
 (When fortune's malice  
 Lost her—Calais)—

Open my heart and you will see  
 Graved inside of it, "Italy."  
 Such lovers old are I and she:  
 So it always was, so shall ever be!

## HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD.

## I.

OH, to be in England  
 Now that April's there,  
 And whoever wakes in England  
 Sees, some morning, unaware,  
 That the lowest boughs and the brushwood  
 sheaf  
 Round the elm-tree hole are in tiny leaf,  
 While the chaffinch sings on the orchard  
 bough  
 In England—now!

And after April, when May follows,  
 And the whitethroat builds, and all the  
 swallows!  
 Hark, where my blossomed pear-tree in the  
 hedge  
 Leans to the field and scatters on the clover

Blossoms and dewdrops—at the bent spray's  
edge—

That's the wise thrush ; he sings each song  
twice over,

Lest you should think he never could re-  
capture

The first fine careless rapture !

And though the fields look rough with hoary  
dew,

All will be gay when noontide wakes anew

The buttercups, the little children's dower

—Far brighter than this gaudy melon-flower !

### HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA.

NOBLY, nobly Cape Saint Vincent to the  
North-west died away ;

Sunset ran, one glorious blood-red, reeking  
into Cadiz Bay ;

Bluish 'mid the burning water, full in face  
Trafalgar lay ;

In the dimmest North-east distance dawned  
Gibraltar grand and gray ;

"Here and here did England help me : how  
can I help England ?"—say,

Whoso turns as I, this evening, turn to God  
to praise and pray,

While Jove's planet rises yonder, silent over  
Africa.

### SAUL.

#### I.

SAID Abner, "At last thou art come ! Ere  
I tell, ere thou speak,

"Kiss my cheek, wish me well !" Then I  
wished it, and did kiss his cheek.

And he, "Since the King, O my friend, for  
thy countenance sent,

"Neither drunken nor eaten have we ; nor  
until from his tent

"Thou return with the joyful assurance the  
King liveth yet,

"Shall our lip with the honey be bright,  
with the water be wet.

VOL. I.

"For out of the black mid-tent's silence, a  
space of three days,

"Not a sound hath escaped to thy servants,  
of prayer nor of praise,

"To betoken that Saul and the Spirit have  
ended their strife,

"And that, faint in his triumph, the monarch  
sinks back upon life.

#### II.

"Yet now my heart leaps, O beloved ! God's  
child with his dew

"On thy gracious gold hair, and those lilies  
still living and blue

"Just broken to twine round thy harp-  
strings, as if no wild heat

"Were now raging to torture the desert !"

#### III.

Then I, as was meet,  
Knelt down to the God of my fathers, and  
rose on my feet,

And ran o'er the sand burnt to powder. The  
tent was unlooped ;

I pulled up the spear that obstructed, and  
under I stooped ;

Hands and knees on the slippery grass-patch,  
all withered and gone,

That extends to the second enclosure, I  
groped my way on

Till I felt where the foldskirts fly open.  
Then once more I prayed,

And opened the foldskirts and entered, and  
was not afraid

But spoke, "Here is David, thy servant !" And  
no voice replied.

At the first I saw nought but the blackness ;  
but soon I descried

A something more black than the blackness  
—the vast, the upright

Main prop which sustains the pavilion : and  
slow into sight

Grew a figure against it, gigantic and blackest  
of all.

Then a sunbeam, that burst thro' the tent-  
roof, showed Saul.

## IV.

He stood as erect as that tent-prop, both  
 arms stretched out wide  
 On the great cross-support in the centre, that  
 goes to each side ;  
 He relaxed not a muscle, but hung there as,  
 caught in his pangs  
 And waiting his change, the king-serpent all  
 heavily hangs,  
 Far away from his kind, in the pine, till  
 deliverance come  
 With the spring-time,—so agonized Saul,  
 drear and stark, blind and dumb.

## V.

Then I tuned my harp,—took off the lilies  
 we twine round its chords  
 Lest they snap 'neath the stress of the noon-  
 tide—those sunbeams like swords !  
 And I first played the tune all our sheep  
 know, as, one after one,  
 So docile they come to the pen-door till fold-  
 ing be done.  
 They are white and untorn by the bushes, for  
 lo, they have fed  
 Where the long grasses stifle the water within  
 the stream's bed ;  
 And now one after one seeks its lodging, as  
 star follows star  
 Into eve and the blue far above us,—so blue  
 and so far !

## VI.

—Then the tune, for which quails on the  
 cornland will each leave his mate  
 To fly after the player ; then, what makes  
 the crickets elate  
 Till for boldness they fight one another : and  
 then, what has weight  
 To set the quick jerboa<sup>1</sup> a-musing outside his  
 sand house—  
 There are none such as he for a wonder, half  
 bird and half mouse !  
 God made all the creatures and gave them  
 our love and our fear,  
 To give sign, we and they are his children,  
 one family here.

<sup>1</sup> The jumping hare.

## VII.

Then I played the help-tune of our reapers,  
 their wine-song, when hand  
 Grasps at hand, eye lights eye in good friend-  
 ship, and great hearts expand  
 And grow one in the sense of this world's  
 life.—And then, the last song  
 When the dead man is praised on his journey  
 —“ Bear, bear him along  
 “ With his few faults shut up like dead  
 flowerets ! Are balm-seeds not here  
 “ To console us ? The land has none left  
 such as he on the bier.  
 “ Oh, would we might keep thee, my  
 brother ! ”—And then, the glad chaunt  
 Of the marriage,—first go the young maidens,  
 next, she whom we vaunt  
 As the beauty, the pride of our dwelling.—  
 And then, the great march  
 Wherein man runs to man to assist him and  
 buttress an arch  
 Nought can break ; who shall harm them,  
 our friends ?—Then, the chorus intoned  
 As the Levites go up to the altar in glory  
 enthroned.  
 But I stopped here : for here in the darkness  
 Saul groaned.

And I paused, held my breath in such silence,  
 and listened apart ;  
 And the tent shook, for mighty Saul shuddered :  
 and sparkles 'gan dart  
 From the jewels that woke in his turban, at  
 once with a start,  
 All its lordly male-sapphires, and rubies  
 courageous at heart.  
 So the head : but the body still moved not,  
 still hung there erect.  
 And I bent once again to my playing, pursued  
 it unchecked,  
 As I sang,—

## IX.

“ Oh, our manhood's prime vigour !  
 No spirit feels waste,  
 “ Not a muscle is stopped in its playing nor  
 sinew unbraced.

- "Oh, the wild joys of living! the leaping  
 from rock up to rock,"  
 "The strong rending of boughs from the  
 fir-tree, the cool silver shock  
 "Of the plunge in a pool's living water, the  
 hunt of the bear,  
 "And the sultriness showing the lion is  
 couched in his lair.  
 "And the meal, the rich dates yellowed over  
 with gold dust divine,  
 "And the locust-flesh steeped in the pitcher,  
 the full draught of wine,  
 "And the sleep in the dried river-channel  
 where bulrushes tell  
 "That the water was wont to go warbling  
 so softly and well.  
 "How good is man's life, the mere living!  
 how fit to employ  
 "All the heart and the soul and the senses  
 for ever in joy!  
 "Hast thou loved the white locks of thy  
 father, whose sword thou didst guard  
 "When he trusted thee forth with the armies,  
 for glorious reward?  
 "Didst thou see the thin hands of thy mother,  
 held up as men sung  
 "The low song of the nearly-departed, and  
 hear her faint tongue  
 "Joining in while it could to the witness,  
 'Let one more attest,  
 "'I have lived, seen God's hand thro' a life-  
 time, and all was for best'?  
 "Then they sung thro' their tears in strong  
 triumph, not much, but the rest.  
 "And thy brothers, the help and the contest,  
 the working whence grew  
 "Such result as, from seething grape-bundles,  
 the spirit strained true:  
 "And the friends of thy boyhood—that boy-  
 hood of wonder and hope,  
 "Present promise and wealth of the future  
 beyond the eye's scope,—  
 "Till lo, thou art grown to a monarch; a  
 people is thine;  
 "And all gifts, which the world offers singly,  
 on one head combine!  
 "On one head, all the beauty and strength,  
 love and rage (like the throe
- "That, a-work in the rock, helps its labour  
 and lets the gold go)  
 "High ambition and deeds which surpass it,  
 fame crowning them,—all  
 "Brought to blaze on the head of one  
 creature—King Saul!"  
 X.  
 And lo, with that leap of my spirit,—heart,  
 hand, harp and voice,  
 Each lifting Saul's name out of sorrow, each  
 bidding rejoice  
 Saul's fame in the light it was made for—as  
 when, dare I say,  
 The Lord's army, in rapture of service, strains  
 through its array,  
 And upsoareth the cherubim-chariot—"Saul!"  
 cried I, and stopped,  
 And waited the thing that should follow.  
 Then Saul, who hung propped  
 By the tent's cross-support in the centre, was  
 struck by his name.  
 Have ye seen when Spring's arrowy summons  
 goes right to the aim,  
 And some mountain, the last to withstand  
 her, that held (he alone,  
 While the vale laughed in freedom and  
 flowers) on a broad bust of stone  
 A year's snow bound about for a breastplate,  
 —leaves grasp of the sheet?  
 Fold on fold all at once it crowds thunderously  
 down to his feet,  
 And there fronts you, stark, black, but alive  
 yet, your mountain of old,  
 With his rents, the successive bequeathings  
 of ages untold—  
 Yea, each harm got in fighting your battles,  
 each furrow and scar  
 Of his head thrust 'twixt you and the tempest  
 —all hail, there they are!  
 —Now again to be softened with verdure,  
 again hold the nest  
 Of the dove, tempt the goat and its young to  
 the green on his crest  
 For their food in the arduous of summer.  
 One long shudder thrilled  
 All the tent till the very air tingled, then sank  
 and was stilled

At the King's self left standing before me,  
released and aware.

What was gone, what remained? All to  
traverse, 'twixt hope and despair;

Death was past, life not come: so he waited.  
Awhile his right hand

Held the brow, helped the eyes left too  
vacant forthwith to remand

To their place what new objects should enter:  
'twas Saul as before.

I looked up and dared gaze: at those eyes, nor  
was hurt any more

Than by slow pallid sunsets in autumn, ye  
watch from the shore,

At their sad level gaze o'er the ocean—a sun's  
slow decline

Over hills which, resolved in stern silence,  
o'erlap and entwine

Base with base to knit strength more in-  
tensely: so, arm folded arm

O'er the chest whose slow heavings subsided.

## XI.

What spell or what charm,  
(For, awhile there was trouble within me)  
what next should I urge

To sustain him where song had restored him?  
—Song filled to the verge

His cup with the wine of this life, pressing  
all that it yields

Of mere fruitage, the strength and the beauty:  
beyond, on what fields,

Glean a vintage more potent and perfect to  
brighten the eye

And bring blood to the lip, and commend  
them the cup they put by?

He saith, "It is good;" still he drinks not:  
he lets me praise life,

Gives assent, yet would die for his own part.

## XII.

Then fancies grew rife  
Which had come long ago on the pasture,  
when round me the sheep

Fed in silence—above, the one eagle wheeled  
slow as in sleep;

And I lay in my hollow and mused on the  
world that might lie

'Neath' his ken, though I saw but the strip  
'twixt the hill and the sky:

And I laughed—"Since my days are ordained  
to be passed with my flocks,

"Let me people at least, with my fancies,  
the plains and the rocks,

"Dream the life I am never to mix with, and  
image the show

"Of mankind as they live in those fashions  
I hardly shall know!

"Schemes of life, its best rules and right  
uses, the courage that gains,

"And the prudence that keeps what men strive  
for." And now these old trains

Of vague thought came again; I grew surer;  
so, once more the string

Of my harp made response to my spirit, as  
thus—

## XIII.

"Yea, my King,"  
I began—"thou dost well in rejecting mere  
comforts that spring

"From the mere mortal life held in common  
by man and by brute:

"In our flesh grows the branch of this life,  
in our soul it bears fruit.

"Thou hast marked the slow rise of the tree,  
—how its stem trembled first

"Till it passed the kid's lip, the stag's antler;  
then safely outburst

"The fan-branches all round; and thou  
mindest when these too, in turn

"Broke a-bloom and the palm-tree seemed  
perfect: yet more was to learn,

"E'en the good that comes in with the palm-  
fruit. Our dates shall we slight,

"When their juice brings a cure for all sorrow?  
or care for the plight

"Of the palm's self whose slow growth  
produced them? Not so! stem and  
branch

"Shall decay, nor be known in their place,  
while the palm-wine shall staunch

"Every wound of man's spirit in winter. I  
pour thee such wine.

"Leave the flesh to the fate it was fit for!  
the spirit be thine!

- "By the spirit, when age shall o'ercome thee,  
thou still shalt enjoy  
"More indeed, than at first when unconscious,  
the life of a boy.  
"Crush that life, and behold its wine running!  
Each deed thou hast done  
"Dies, revives, goes to work in the world;  
until e'en as the sun  
"Looking down on the earth, though  
clouds spoil him, though tempests  
efface,  
"Can find nothing his own deed produced  
not, must everywhere trace  
"The results of his past summer-prime,—so,  
each ray of thy will,  
"Every flash of thy passion and prowess,  
long over, shall thrill  
"Thy whole people, the countless, with  
ardour, till they too give forth  
"A like cheer to their sons, who in turn,  
fill the South and the North  
"With the radiance thy deed was the germ  
of. Carouse in the past!  
"But the license of age has its limit; thou  
diest at last:  
"As the lion when age dims his eyeball, the  
rose at her height  
"So with man—so his power and his beauty  
for ever take flight.  
"No! Again a long draught of my soul-  
wine! Look forth o'er the years!  
"Thou hast done now with eyes for the  
actual; begin with the seer's!  
"Is Saul dead? In the depth of the vale  
make his tomb—bid arise  
"A grey mountain of marble heaped four-  
square, till, built to the skies,  
"Let it mark where the great First  
King slumbers: whose fame would ye  
know?  
"Up above see the rock's naked face, where  
the record shall go  
"In great characters cut by the scribe,—Such  
was Saul, so he did;  
"With the sages directing the work, by the  
populace chid,—  
"For not half, they'll affirm, is comprised  
there! Which fault to amend,
- "In the grove with his kind grows the cedar,  
whereon they shall spend  
"(See, in tablets 'tis level before them) their  
praise, and record  
"With the gold of the graver, Saul's story,  
—the statesman's great word  
"Side by side with the poet's sweet com-  
ment. The river's a-wave  
"With smooth paper-reeds grazing each other  
when prophet-winds rave:  
"So the pen gives unborn generations their  
due and their part  
"In thy being! Then, first of the mighty,  
thank God that thou art!"

## XIV.

And behold while I sang . . . but O Thou  
who didst grant me that day,  
And before it not seldom hast granted thy  
help to essay,  
Carry on and complete an adventure,—my  
shield and my sword  
In that act where my soul was thy servant,  
thy word was my word,—  
Still be with me, who then at the summit of  
human endeavour  
And scaling the highest, man's thought could,  
gazed hopeless as ever  
On the new stretch of heaven above me—till,  
mighty to save,  
Just one lift of thy hand cleared that distance  
—God's throne from man's grave!  
Let me tell out my tale to its ending—my  
voice to my heart  
Which can scarce dare believe in what mar-  
vels last night I took part,  
As this morning I gather the fragments, alone  
with my sheep,  
And still fear lest the terrible glory vanish  
like sleep!  
For I wake in the grey dewy covert, while  
Hebron<sup>1</sup> upheaves  
The dawn struggling with night on his  
shoulder, and Kidron<sup>2</sup> retrieves  
Slow the damage of yesterday's sunshine.

<sup>1</sup> One of the six cities of Refuge.<sup>2</sup> A brook near Jerusalem.

## xv.

I say then,—my song  
While I sang thus, assuring the monarch, and  
ever more strong  
Made a proffer of good to console him—he  
slowly resumed  
His old motions and habitudes kingly. The  
right-hand replumed  
His black locks to their wonted composure,  
adjusted the swathes  
Of his turban, and see—the huge sweat that  
his countenance bathes,  
He wipes off with the robe; and he girds  
now his loins as of yore,  
And feels slow for the armlets of price, with  
the clasp set before.  
He is Saul, ye remember in glory,—ere error  
had bent  
The broad brow from the daily communion;  
and still, though much spent  
Be the life and the bearing that front you,  
the same, God did choose,  
To receive what a man may waste, desecrate,  
never quite lose.  
So sank he along by the tent-prop till, stayed  
by the pile  
Of his armour and war-cloak and garments,  
he leaned there awhile,  
And sat out my singing,—one arm round the  
tent-prop, to raise  
His bent head, and the other hung slack—  
till I touched on the praise  
I foresaw from all men in all time, to the  
man patient there;  
And thus ended, the harp falling forward.  
Then first I was 'ware  
That he sat, as I say, with my head just  
above his vast knees  
Which were thrust out on each side around  
me, like oak-roots which please  
To encircle a lamb when it slumbers. I  
looked up to know  
If the best I could do had brought solace:  
he spoke not, but slow  
Lifted up the hand slack at his side, till he  
laid it with care  
Soft and grave, but in mild settled will, on  
my brow: thro' my hair

The large fingers were pushed, and he bent  
back my head, with kind power—  
All my face back, intent to peruse it, as men  
do a flower.  
Thus held he me there with his great eyes  
that scrutinized mine—  
And oh, all my heart how it loved him! but  
where was the sign?  
I yearned—"Could I help thee, my father,  
inventing a bliss,  
"I would add, to that life of the past, both  
the future and this;  
"I would give thee new life altogether, as  
good, ages hence,  
"As this moment,—had love but the warrant,  
love's heart to dispense!"

## xvi.

Then the truth came upon me. No harp  
more—no song more! outbroke—

## xvii.

"I have gone the whole round of creation:  
I saw and I spoke:  
"I, a work of God's hand for that purpose,  
received in my brain  
"And pronounced on the rest of his hand-  
work—returned him again  
"His creation's approval or censure: I spoke  
as I saw:  
"I report, as a man may of God's work—  
all's love, yet all's law.  
"Now I lay down the judgeship he lent me.  
Each faculty tasked  
"To perceive him, has gained an abyss,  
where a dewdrop was asked.  
"Have I knowledge? confounded it shrivels  
at Wisdom laid bare.  
"Have I forethought? how purblind, how  
blank, to the Infinite Care!  
"Do I task any faculty highest, to image  
success?  
"I but open my eyes,—and perfection, no  
more and no less,  
"In the kind I imagined, full-fronts me, and  
God is seen God  
"In the star, in the stone, in the flesh, in the  
soul and the clod.

- "And thus looking within and around me, I  
ever renew
- "(With that stoop of the soul which in bend-  
ing upraises it too)
- "The submission of man's nothing-perfect to  
God's all-complete,
- "As by each new obeisance in spirit, I climb  
to his feet.
- "Yet with all this abounding experience,  
this deity known,
- "I shall dare to discover some province, some  
gift of my own.
- "There's a faculty pleasant to exercise, hard  
to hoodwink,
- "I am fain to keep still in abeyance, (I laugh  
as I think)
- "Lest, insisting to claim and parade in it,  
wot ye, I worst
- "E'en the Giver in one gift.—Behold, I could  
love if I durst !
- "But I sink the pretension as fearing a man  
may o'ertake
- "God's own speed in the one way of love : I  
abstain for love's sake.
- "—What, my soul? see thus far and no  
farther? when doors great and small,
- "Nine-and-ninety flew ope at our touch,  
should the hundredth appal?
- "In the least things have faith, yet distrust in  
the greatest of all?
- "Do I find love so full in my nature, God's  
ultimate gift,
- "That I doubt his own love can compete  
with it? Here, the parts shift?
- "Here, the creature surpass the Creator,—  
the end, what Began?
- "Would I fain in my impotent yearning do  
all for this man,
- "And dare doubt he alone shall not help  
him, who yet alone can?
- "Would it ever have entered my mind, the  
bare will, much less power,
- "To bestow on this Saul what I sang of, the  
marvellous dower
- "Of the life he was gifted and filled with? to  
make such a soul,
- "Such a body, and then such an earth for  
insphering the whole?
- "And doth it not enter my mind (as my  
warm tears attest)
- "These good things being given, to go on,  
and give one more, the best?
- "Ay, to save and redeem and restore him,  
maintain at the height
- "This perfection,—succeed with life's day-  
spring, death's minute of night?
- "Interpose at the difficult minute, snatch  
Saul the mistake,
- "Saul the failure, the ruin he seems now,—  
and bid him awake
- "From the dream, the probation, the prelude,  
to find himself set
- "Clear and safe in new light and new life,—  
a new harmony yet
- "To be run, and continued, and ended—who  
knows?—or endure !
- "The man taught enough, by life's dream, of  
the rest to make sure ;
- "By the pain-throb, triumphantly winning  
intensified bliss,
- "And the next world's reward and repose,  
by the struggles in this.

## XVIII.

- "I believe it ! 'Tis thou, God, that givest,  
'tis I who receive :
- "In the first is the last, in thy will is my  
power to believe.
- "All's one gift : thou canst grant it moreover,  
as prompt to my prayer
- "As I breathe out this breath, as I open these  
arms to the air.
- "From thy will, stream the worlds, life and  
nature, thy dread Sabaoth :
- "I will?—the mere atoms despise me ! Why  
am I not loth
- "To look that, even that in the face too?  
Why is it I dare
- "Think but lightly of such impuissance?  
What stops my despair?
- "This ;—'tis not what man Does which  
exalts him, but what man Would  
do !
- "See the King—I would help him but  
cannot, the wishes fall through.



- "Could I wrestle to raise him from sorrow, And the stars of night beat with emotion,  
grow poor to enrich, and tingled and shot  
"To fill up his life, starve my own out, I Out in fire the strong pain of pent knowledge :  
would—knowing which, but I fainted not,  
"I know that my service is perfect. Oh, For the Hand still impelled me at once and  
speak through me now ! supported, suppressed  
"Would I suffer for him that I love? So All the tumult, and quenched it with quiet,  
wouldst thou—so wilt thou ! and holy behest,  
"So shall crown thee the topmost, ineffablest, Till the rapture was shut in itself, and the  
uttermost crown— earth sank to rest.  
"And thy love fill infinitude wholly, nor Anon at the dawn, all that trouble had  
leave up nor down withered from earth—  
"One spot for the creature to stand in ! It Not so much, but I saw it die out in the day's  
is by no breath, tender birth ;  
"Turn of eye, wave of hand, that salvation In the gathered intensity brought to the grey  
joins issue with death ! of the hills ;  
"As thy Love is discovered almighty, al- In the shuddering forests' held breath ; in  
mighty he proved the sudden wind-thrills ;  
"Thy power, that exists with and for it, of In the startled wild beasts that bore off, each  
being Beloved ! with eye sidling still  
"He who did most, shall bear most ; the Though averted with wonder and dread ; in  
strongest shall stand the most weak. the birds stiff and chill  
"Tis the weakness in strength, that I cry That rose heavily, as I approached them,  
for ! my flesh, that I seek made stupid with awe :  
"In the Godhead ! I seek and I find it. O E'en the serpent that slid away silent,—he  
Saul, it shall be felt the new law.  
"A Face like my face that receives thee ; a The same stared in the white humid faces  
Man like to me, upturned by the flowers ;  
"Thou shalt love and be loved by, for ever : The same worked in the heart of the cedar  
a Hand like this hand and moved the vine-bowers :  
"Shall throw open the gates of new life to And the little brooks witnessing murmured,  
thee ! See the Christ stand !" persistent and low,  
With their obstinate, all but hushed voices—  
"E'en so, it is so !"

## XIX.

I know not too well how I found my way  
home in the night.  
There were witnesses, cohorts about me, to  
left and to right,  
Angels, powers, the unuttered, unseen, the  
alive, the aware :  
I repressed, I got through them as hardly,  
as strugglingly there,  
As a runner beset by the populace famished  
for news—  
Life or death. The whole earth was  
awakened, hell loosed with her  
crews ;

## MY STAR.

ALL that I know  
Of a certain star  
Is, it can throw  
(Like the angled spar)  
Now a dart of red,  
Now a dart of blue ;  
Till my friends have said  
They would fain see, too,  
My star that dartles the red and the blue !

Then it stops like a bird ; like a flower,  
 hangs furled :  
 They must solace themselves with the  
 Saturn above it.  
 What matter to me if their star is a world ?  
 Mine has opened its soul to me ; therefore  
 I love it.

## BY THE FIRE-SIDE.

## I.

How well I know what I mean to do  
 When the long dark autumn-evenings  
 come :  
 And where, my soul, is thy pleasant hue ?  
 With the music of all thy voices, dumb  
 In life's November too !

## II.

I shall be found by the fire, suppose,  
 O'er a great wise book as beseemeth age,  
 While the shutters flap as the cross-wind  
 blows  
 And I turn the page, and I turn the page,  
 Not verse now, only prose !

## III.

Till the young ones whisper, finger on lip,  
 " There he is at it, deep in Greek :  
 " Now then, or never, out we slip  
 " To cut from the hazels by the creek  
 " A mainmast for our ship !"

## IV.

I shall be at it indeed, my friends :  
 Greek puts already on either side  
 Such a branch-work forth as soon extends  
 To a vista opening far and wide,  
 And I pass out where it ends.

## V.

The outside-frame, like your hazel-trees :  
 But the inside-archway widens fast,  
 And a rarer sort succeeds to these,  
 And we slope to Italy at last  
 And youth, by green degrees.

VOL. I.

## VI.

I follow wherever I am led,  
 Knowing so well the leader's hand :  
 Oh woman-country, wooed not wed,  
 Loved all the more by earth's male-lands,  
 Laid to their hearts instead !

## VII.

Look at the ruined chapel again  
 Half-way up in the Alpine gorge !  
 Is that a tower, I point you plain,  
 Or is it a mill, or an iron-forge  
 Breaks solitude in vain ?

## VIII.

A turn, and we stand in the heart of things ;  
 The woods are round us, heaped and dim ;  
 From slab to slab how it slips and springs,  
 The thread of water single and slim,  
 Through the ravage some torrent brings !

## IX.

Does it feed the little lake below ?  
 That speck of white just on its marge  
 Is Pella ; see, in the evening-glow,  
 How sharp the silver spear-heads charge  
 When Alp meets heaven in snow !

## X.

On our other side is the straight-up rock ;  
 And a path is kept 'twixt the gorge and it  
 By boulder-stones where lichens mock  
 The marks on a moth, and small ferns fit  
 Their teeth to the polished black.

## XI.

Oh the sense of the yellow mountain-flowers,  
 And thorny balls, each three in one,  
 The chestnuts throw on our path in showers !  
 For the drop of the woodland fruit's begun,  
 These early November hours,

## XII.

That crimson the creeper's leaf across  
 Like a splash of blood, intense, abrupt,  
 O'er a shield else gold from rim to boss,  
 And lay it for show on the fairy-cupped  
 Elf-needed mat of moss,

K 2

## XIII.

By the rose-flesh mushrooms, undivulged  
 Last evening—nay, in to-day's first dew  
 Yon sudden coral nipple bulged,  
 Where a freaked fawn-coloured flaky crew  
 Of toadstools peep indulged.

## XIV.

And yonder, at foot of the fronting ridge  
 That takes the turn to a range beyond,  
 Is the chapel reached by the one-arched  
 bridge  
 Where the water is stopped in a stagnant pond  
 Danced over by the midge.

## XV.

The chapel and bridge are of stone alike,  
 Blackish-grey and mostly wet ;  
 Cut hemp-stalks steep in the narrow dyke.  
 See here again, how the lichens fret  
 And the roots of the ivy strike !

## XVI.

Poor little place, where its one priest comes  
 On a festa-day, if he comes at all,  
 To the dozen folk from their scattered homes,  
 Gathered within that precinct small  
 By the dozen ways one roams—

## XVII.

To drop from the charcoal-burners' huts,  
 Or climb from the hemp-dressers' low shed,  
 Leave the grange where the woodman stores  
 his nuts,  
 Or the wattled cote where the fowlers  
 spread  
 Their gear on the rock's bare juts.

## XVIII.

It has some pretension too, this front,  
 With its bit of fresco half-moon-wise  
 Set over the porch, Art's early wont :  
 'Tis John in the Desert, I surmise,  
 But has borne the weather's brunt—

## XIX.

Not from the fault of the builder, though,  
 For a pent-house properly projects  
 Where three carved beams make a certain  
 show,  
 Dating—good thought of our architect's—  
 'Five, six, nine, he lets you know.

## XX.

And all day long a bird sings there,  
 And a stray sheep drinks at the pond at  
 times ;  
 The place is silent and aware ;  
 It has had its scenes, its joys and crimes,  
 But that is its own affair.

## XXI.

My perfect wife, my Leonor,  
 Oh heart, my own, oh eyes, mine too,  
 Whom else could I dare look backward for,  
 With whom beside should I dare pursue  
 The path grey heads abhor ?

## XXII.

For it leads to a crag's sheer edge with them ;  
 Youth, flowery all the way, there stops—  
 Not they ; age threatens and they contemn,  
 Till they reach the gulf wherein youth  
 drops,  
 One inch from life's safe hem !

## XXIII.

With me, youth led . . . I will speak now,  
 No longer watch you as you sit  
 Reading by fire-light, that great brow  
 And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
 Mutely, my heart knows how—

## XXIV.

When, if I think but deep enough,  
 You are wont to answer, prompt as rhyme ;  
 And you, too, find without rebuff  
 Response your soul seeks many a time  
 Piercing its fine flesh-stuff.

## XXV.

My own, confirm me ! If I tread  
 This path back, is it not in pride  
 To think how little I dreamed it led  
 To an age so blest that, by its side,  
 Youth seems the waste instead ?

## XXVI.

My own, see where the years conduct !  
 At first, 'twas something our two souls  
 Should mix as mists do ; each is sucked  
 In each now : on, the new stream rolls,  
 Whatever rocks obstruct.

## XXVII.

Think, when our one soul understands  
 The great Word which makes all things new,  
 When earth breaks up and heaven expands,  
 How will the change strike me and you  
 In the house not made with hands ?

## XXVIII.

Oh I must feel your brain prompt mine,  
 Your heart anticipate my heart,  
 You must be just before, in fine,  
 See and make me see, for your part,  
 New depths of the divine !

## XXIX.

But who could have expected this  
 When we two drew together first  
 Just for the obvious human bliss,  
 To satisfy life's daily thirst  
 With a thing men seldom miss ?

## XXX.

Come back with me to the first of all,  
 Let us lean and love it over again,  
 Let us now forget and now recall,  
 Break the rosary in a pearly rain,  
 And gather what we let fall !

## XXXI.

What did I say ?—that a small bird sings  
 All day long, save when a brown pair  
 Of hawks from the wood float with wide wings  
 Strained to a bell : 'gainst noon-day glare  
 You count the streaks and rings.

## XXXII.

But at afternoon or almost eve  
 'Tis better ; then the silence grows  
 To that degree, you half believe  
 It must get rid of what it knows,  
 Its bosom does so heave.

## XXXIII.

Hither we walked then, side by side,  
 Arm in arm and cheek to cheek,  
 And still I questioned or replied,  
 While my heart, convulsed to really speak,  
 Lay choking in its pride.

## XXXIV.

Silent the crumbling bridge we cross,  
 And pity and praise the chapel sweet,  
 And care about the fresco's loss,  
 And wish for our souls a like retreat,  
 And wonder at the moss.

## XXXV.

Stoop and kneel on the settle under,  
 Look through the window's grated square :  
 Nothing to see ! For fear of plunder,  
 The cross is down and the altar bare,  
 As if thieves don't fear thunder.

## XXXVI.

We stoop and look in through the grate,  
 See the little porch and rustic door,  
 Read duly the dead builder's date ;  
 Then cross the bridge that we crossed  
 before,  
 Take the path again—but wait !

## XXXVII.

Oh moment, one and infinite !  
 The water slips o'er stock and stone ;  
 The West is tender, hardly bright :  
 How grey at once is the evening grown—  
 One star, its chrysolite !

## XXXVIII.

We two stood there with never a third,  
 But each by each, as each knew well :  
 The sights we saw and the sounds we heard,  
 The lights and the shades made up a spell  
 Till the trouble grew and stirred.

## XXXIX.

Oh, the little more, and how much it is !  
 And the little less, and what worlds away !  
 How a sound shall quicken content to bliss,  
 Or a breath suspend the blood's best  
 play,  
 And life be a proof of this !

## XLI.

Had she willed it, still had stood the screen  
 So slight, so sure, 'twixt my love and  
 her :  
 I could fix her face with a guard between,  
 And find her soul as when friends confer,  
 Friends—lovers that might have been.

## XLII.

For my heart had a touch of the woodland-  
 time,  
 Wanting to sleep now over its best.  
 Shake the whole tree in the summer-prime,  
 But bring to the last leaf no such test !  
 "Hold the last fast !" runs the rhyme.

## XLIII.

For a chance to make your little much,  
 To gain a lover and lose a friend,  
 Venture the tree and a myriad such,  
 When nothing you mar but the year can  
 mend :  
 But a last leaf—fear to touch !

## XLIII.

Yet should it unfasten itself and fall  
 Eddying down till it find your face  
 At some slight wind—best chance of all !  
 Be your heart henceforth its dwelling-  
 place  
 You trembled to forestall !

## XLIV.

Worth how well, those dark grey eyes,  
 That hair so dark and dear, how worth  
 That a man should strive and agonize,  
 And taste a veriest hell on earth  
 For the hope of such a prize !

You might have turned and tried a man,  
 Set him a space to weary and wear,  
 And prove which suited more your plan,  
 His best of hope or his worst despair,  
 Yet end as he began.

## XLVI.

But you spared me this, like the heart you are,  
 And filled my empty heart at a word.  
 If two lives join, there is oft a scar,  
 They are one and one, with a shadowy third ;  
 One near one is too far.

## XLVII.

A moment after, and hands unseen  
 Were hanging the night around us fast ;  
 But we knew that a bar was broken between  
 Life and life : we were mixed at last  
 In spite of the mortal screen.

## XLVIII.

The forests had done it ; there they stood ;  
 We caught for a moment the powers at play :  
 They had mingled us so, for once and good,  
 Their work was done—we might go or stay,  
 They relapsed to their ancient mood.

## XLIX.

How the world is made for each of us !  
 How all we perceive and know in it  
 Tends to some moment's product thus,  
 When a soul declares itself—to wit,  
 By its fruit, the thing it does !

## L.

Be hate that fruit or love that fruit,  
 It forwards the general deed of man,  
 And each of the Many helps to recruit  
 The life of the race by a general plan ;  
 Each living his own, to boot.

## LI.

I am named and known by that moment's feat ;  
 There took my station and degree ;  
 So grew my own small life complete,  
 As nature obtained her best of me—  
 One born to love you, sweet !

LII.

And to watch you sink by the fire-side now  
Back again, as you mutely sit  
Musing by fire-light, that great brow  
And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
Yonder, my heart knows how !

LIII.

So, earth has gained by one man the more,  
And the gain of earth must be heaven's  
gain too ;  
And the whole is well worth thinking o'er  
When autumn comes : which I mean to do  
One day, as I said before.

ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND.

I.

My love, this is the bitterest, that thou—  
Who art all truth, and who dost love me now  
As thine eyes say, as thy voice breaks to  
say—  
Shouldst love so truly, and couldst love me still  
A whole long life through, had but love its will,  
Would death that leads me from thee brook  
delay.

II.

I have but to be by thee, and thy hand  
Will never let mine go, nor heart withstand  
The beating of my heart to reach its place.  
When shall I look for thee and feel thee gone ?  
When cry for the old comfort and find none ?  
Never, I know ! Thy soul is in thy face.

III.

Oh, I should fade—'tis willed so ! Might I  
save,  
Gladly I would, whatever beauty gave  
Joy to thy sense, for that was precious too.  
It is not to be granted. But the soul  
Where the love comes, all ravage leaves  
that whole ;  
Vainly the flesh fades ; soul makes all  
things new.

IV.

It would not be because my eye grew dim  
Thou couldst not find the love there, thanks  
to Him  
Who never is dishonoured in the spark  
He gave us from his fire of fires, and bade  
Remember whence it sprang, nor be afraid  
While that burns on, though all the rest  
grow dark.

V.

So, how thou wouldst be perfect, white and  
clean  
Outside as inside, soul and soul's demesne  
Alike, this body given to show it by !  
Oh, three-parts through the worst of life's  
abyss,  
What plaudits from the next world after this,  
Couldst thou repeat a stroke and gain the  
sky !

VI.

And is it not the bitterer to think  
That, disengage our hands and thou wilt  
sink  
Although thy love was love in very deed ?  
I know that nature ! Pass a festive day,  
Thou dost not throw its relic-flower away  
Nor bid its music's loitering echo speed.

VII.

Thou let'st the stranger's glove lie where it  
fell ;  
If old things remain old things all is well,  
For thou art grateful as becomes man best :  
And hadst thou only heard me play one tune,  
Or viewed me from a window, not so soon  
With thee would such things fade as with  
the rest.

VIII.

I seem to see ! We meet and part ; 'tis brief ;  
The book I opened keeps a folded leaf,  
The very chair I sat on, breaks the rank ;  
That is a portrait of me on the wall—  
Three lines, my face comes at so slight a call :  
And for all this, one little hour to thank !

## IX.

But now, because the hour through years was  
fixed,  
Because our inmost beings met and mixed,  
Because thou once hast loved me—wilt thou  
dare  
Say to thy soul and Who may list beside,  
“Therefore she is immortally my bride;  
“Chance cannot change my love, nor time  
impair.

## X.

“So, what if in the dusk of life that’s left,  
“I, a tired traveller of my sun bereft,  
“Look from my path when, mimicking  
the same,  
“The fire-fly glimpses past me, come and  
gone?  
“—Where was it till the sunset? where anon  
“It will be at the sunrise! What’s to  
blame?”

## XI.

Is it so helpful to thee? Canst thou take  
The mimic up, nor, for the true thing’s sake,  
Put gently by such efforts at a beam?  
Is the remainder of the way so long,  
Thou need’st the little solace, thou the strong?  
Watch out thy watch, let weak ones doze  
and dream!

## XII.

—Ah, but the fresher faces! “Is it true,”  
Thou’lt ask, “some eyes are beautiful and new?  
“Some hair,—how can one choose but  
grasp such wealth?  
“And if a man would press his lips to lips  
“Fresh as the wilding hedge-rose-cup there  
slips  
“The dew-drop out of, must it be by stealth?

## XIII.

“It cannot change the love still kept for Her,  
“More than if such a picture I prefer  
“Passing a day with, to a room’s bare side:  
The painted form takes nothing she possessed,  
Yet, while the Titian’s Venus lies at rest,  
A man looks. Once more, what is there  
to chide?”

## XIV.

So must I see, from where I sit and watch,  
My own self sell myself, my hand attach  
Its warrant to the very thefts from me—  
Thy singleness of soul that made me proud,  
Thy purity of heart I loved aloud,  
Thy man’s-truth I was bold to bid God see!

## XV.

Love so, then, if thou wilt! Give all thou  
canst  
Away to the new faces—disentranced,  
(Say it and think it) obdurate no more:  
Re-issue looks and words from the old mint,  
Pass them afresh, no matter whose the  
print  
Image and superscription once they bore!

## XVI.

Re-coin thyself and give it them to spend,—  
It all comes to the same thing at the end,  
Since mine thou wast, mine art and mine  
shalt be,  
Faithful or faithless, sealing up the sum  
Or lavish of my treasure, thou must come  
Back to the heart’s place here I keep for  
thee!

## XVII.

Only, why should it be with stain at all?  
Why must I, ’twixt the leaves of coronal,  
Put any kiss of pardon on thy brow?  
Why need the other women know so much,  
And talk together, “Such the look and  
such  
“The smile he used to love with, then as  
now!”

## XVIII.

Might I die last and show thee! Should I  
find  
Such hardship in the few years left behind,  
If free to take and light my lamp, and go  
Into thy tomb, and shut the door and sit,  
Seeing thy face on those four sides of it  
The better that they are so blank, I  
know!

## XIX.

Why, time was what I wanted, to turn o'er  
 Within my mind each look, get more and more  
 By heart each word, too much to learn at  
 first ;  
 And join thee all the fitter for the pause  
 'Neath the low doorway's lintel. That were  
 cause

For lingering, though thou calledst, if I  
 durst !

## XX.

And yet thou art the nobler of us two :  
 What dare I dream of, that thou canst not do,  
 Outstripping my ten small steps with one  
 stride ?

I'll say then, here's a trial and a task—  
 Is it to bear ?—if easy, I'll not ask :  
 Though love fail, I can trust on in thy  
 pride.

## XXI.

Pride ?—when those eyes forestall the life  
 behind  
 The death I have to go through !—when I  
 find,

Now that I want thy help most, all of thee !  
 What did I fear ? Thy love shall hold me  
 fast

Until the little minute's sleep is past  
 And I wake saved.—And yet it will not be

## TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA.

## I.

I WONDER do you feel to-day  
 As I have felt since, hand in hand,  
 We sat down on the grass, to stray  
 In spirit better through the land,  
 This morn of Rome and May ?

## II.

For me, I touched a thought, I know,  
 Has tantalized me many times,  
 (Like turns of thread the spiders throw  
 Mocking across our path) for rhymes  
 To catch at and let go.

## III.

Help me to hold it ! First it left  
 The yellowing fennel,<sup>1</sup> run to seed  
 There, branching from the brickwork's cleft,  
 Some old tomb's ruin : yonder weed  
 Took up the floating west,

## IV.

Where one small orange cup amassed  
 Five beetles,—blind and green they grope  
 Among the honey-meal : and last,  
 Everywhere on the grassy slope  
 I traced it. Hold it fast !

## V.

The champaign with its endless fleece  
 Of feathery grasses everywhere !  
 Silence and passion, joy and peace,  
 An everlasting wash of air—  
 Rome's ghost since her decease.

## VI.

Such life here, through such lengths of hours,  
 Such miracles performed in play,  
 Such primal naked forms of flowers,  
 Such letting nature have her way  
 While heaven looks from its towers !

## VII.

How say you ? Let us, O my dove,  
 Let us be unashamed of soul,  
 As earth lies bare to heaven above !  
 How is it under our control  
 To love or not to love ?

## VIII.

I would that you were all to me,  
 You that are just so much, no more.  
 Nor yours nor mine, nor slave nor free !  
 Where does the fault lie ? What the core  
 O' the wound, since wound must be ?

<sup>1</sup> Herb with yellow flowers and seeds supposed to be medicinal.



## IX.

I would I could adopt your will,  
 See with your eyes, and set my heart  
 Beating by yours, and drink my fill  
 At your soul's springs,—your part my part  
 In life, for good and ill.

## X.

No. I yearn upward, touch you close,  
 Then stand away. I kiss your cheek,  
 Catch your soul's warmth,—I pluck the rose  
 And love it more than tongue can speak—  
 Then the good minute goes.

## XI.

Already how am I so far  
 Out of that minute? Must I go  
 Still like the thistle-ball, no bar,  
 Onward, whenever light winds blow,  
 Fixed by no friendly star?

## XII.

Just when I seemed about to learn!  
 Where is the thread now? Off again!  
 The old trick! Only I discern—  
 Infinite passion, and the pain  
 Of finite hearts that yearn.

## MISCONCEPTIONS.

## I.

THIS is a spray the Bird clung to,  
 Making it blossom with pleasure,  
 Ere the high tree-top she sprung to,  
 Fit for her nest and her treasure.  
 Oh, what a hope beyond measure  
 Was the poor spray's, which the flying feet  
 hung to,—  
 So to be singled out, built in, and sung to!

This is a heart the Queen leant on,  
 Thrilled in a minute erratic,

Ere the true bosom she bent on,  
 Meet for love's regal dalmatic.<sup>1</sup>  
 Oh, what a fancy ecstatic  
 Was the poor heart's, ere the wanderer went  
 on—  
 Love to be saved for it, proffered to, spent on!

## A SERENADE AT THE VILLA.

## I.

THAT was I, you heard last night,  
 When there rose no moon at all,  
 Nor, to pierce the strained and tight  
 Tent of heaven, a planet small:  
 Life was dead and so was light.

## II.

Not a twinkle from the fly,  
 Not a glimmer from the worm;  
 When the crickets stopped their cry,  
 When the owls forbore a term,  
 You heard music; that was I.

## III.

Earth turned in her sleep with pain,  
 Sultrily suspired for proof:  
 In at heaven and out again,  
 Lightning!—where it broke the roof,  
 Bloodlike, some few drops of rain.

## IV.

What they could my words expressed,  
 O my love, my all, my one!  
 Singing helped the verses best,  
 And when singing's best was done,  
 To my lute I left the rest.

## V.

So wore night; the East was gray,  
 White the broad-faced hemlock-flowers:  
 There would be another day;  
 Ere its first of heavy hours  
 Found me, I had passed away.

<sup>1</sup> A vestment used by ecclesiastics, and formerly by senators and persons of high rank.

## VI.

What became of all the hopes,  
 Words and song and lute as well ?  
 Say, this struck you—"When life gropes  
 "Feebly for the path where fell  
 "Light last on the evening slopes,

## VII.

"One friend in that path shall be,  
 "To secure my step from wrong ;  
 "One to count night day for me,  
 "Patient through the watches long,  
 "Serving most with none to see."

## VIII.

Never say—as something bodes—  
 "So, the worst has yet a worse !  
 "When life halts 'neath double loads,  
 "Better the taskmaster's curse  
 "Than such music on the roads !

## IX.

"When no moon succeeds the sun,  
 "Nor can pierce the midnight's tent  
 "Any star, the smallest one,  
 "While some drops, where lightning rent,  
 "Show the final storm begun—

## X.

"When the fire-fly hides its spot,  
 "When the garden-voices fall  
 "In the darkness thick and hot,—  
 "Shall another voice avail,  
 "That shape be where these are not ?

## XI.

"Has some plague a longer lease,  
 "Proffering its help uncouth ?  
 "Can't one even die in peace ?  
 "As one shuts one's eyes on youth,  
 "Is that face the last one sees ?"

## XII.

Oh how dark your villa was,  
 Windows fast and obdurate !  
 How the garden grudged me grass  
 Where I stood—the iron gate  
 Ground its teeth to let me pass !

## ONE WAY OF LOVE.

## I.

ALL June I bound the rose in sheaves.  
 Now, rose by rose, I strip the leaves  
 And strew them where Pauline may  
     pass.  
 She will not turn aside ? Alas !  
 Let them lie. Suppose they die ?  
 The chance was they might take her eye.

## II.

How many a month I strove to suit  
 These stubborn fingers to the lute !  
 To-day I venture all I know.  
 She will not hear my music ? So !  
 Break the string ; fold music's wing :  
 Suppose Pauline had bade me sing !

## III.

My whole life long I learned to love.  
 This hour my utmost art I prove  
 And speak my passion—heaven or hell ?  
 She will not give me heaven ? 'Tis  
     well !  
 Lose who may—I still can say,  
 Those who win heaven, blest are they !

## ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE.

## I.

JUNE was not over  
 Though past the full,  
 And the best of her roses  
 Had yet to blow,  
 When a man I know  
 (But shall not discover,  
 Since ears are dull,  
 And time discloses)  
 Turned him and said with a man's true  
     air,  
 Half sighing a smile in a yawn, as 'twere,—  
 "If I tire of your June, will she greatly  
     care?"

Well, dear, in-doors with you !

True ! serene deadness

Tries a man's temper.

What's in the blossom

June wears on her bosom ?

Can it clear scores with you ?

Sweetness and redness.

*Eadem semper !*

Go, let me care for it greatly or slightly !

If June mend her bower now, your hand left  
unsightly

By plucking the roses,—my June will do  
rightly.

### III.

And after, for pastime,

If June be refulgent

With flowers in completeness,

All petals, no prickles,

Delicious as trickles

Of wine poured at mass-time,—

And choose One indulgent

To redness and sweetness :

Or if, with experience of man and of spider,  
June use my June-lightning, the strong insect-  
rider,

And stop the fresh film-work,—why, June  
will consider.

## A PRETTY WOMAN.

### I.

THAT fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers,

And the blue eye

Dear and dewy,

And that infantine fresh air of hers !

To think men cannot take you, Sweet,

And enfold you,

Ay, and hold you,

And so keep you what they make you, Sweet !

### III.

You like us for a glance, you know—

For a word's sake.

Or a sword's sake,

All's the same, whate'er the chance, you know.

### IV.

And in turn we make you ours, we say—

You and youth too,

Eyes and mouth too,

All the face composed of flowers, we say.

### V.

All's our own, to make the most of, Sweet—

Sing and say for,

Watch and pray for,

Keep a secret or go boast of, Sweet !

### VI.

But for loving, why, you would not, Sweet,

Though we prayed you,

Paid you, brayed you

In a mortar—for you could not, Sweet !

### VII.

So, we leave the sweet face fondly there :

Be its beauty

Its sole duty !

Let all hope of grace beyond, lie there !

### VIII.

And while the face lies quiet there,

Who shall wonder

That I ponder

A conclusion ? I will try it there.

### IX.

As,—why must one, for the love foregone,

Scout mere liking ?

Thunder-striking

Earth,—the heaven, we looked above for, gone !

### X.

Why, with beauty, needs there money be,

Love with liking ?

Crush the fly-king

In his gauze, because no honey-bee ?

### XI.

May not liking be so simple-sweet,

If love grew there

'T would undo there

All that breaks the cheek to dimples sweet ?

XII.

Is the creature too imperfect, say?  
Would you mend it  
And so end it?  
Since not all addition perfects aye!

XIII.

Or is it of its kind, perhaps,  
Just perfection—  
Whence, rejection  
Of a grace not to its mind, perhaps?

XIV.

Shall we burn up, tread that face at once  
Into tinder,  
And so hinder  
Sparks from kindling all the place at once?

XV.

Or else kiss away one's soul on her?  
Your love-fancies!  
—A sick man sees  
Truer, when his hot eyes roll on her!

XVI.

Thus the craftsman thinks to grace the  
rose,—  
Plucks a mould-flower  
For his gold flower,  
Uses fine things that efface the rose:

XVII.

Rosy rubies make its cup more rose,  
Precious metals  
Ape the petals,—  
Last, some old king locks it up, morose!

XVIII.

Then how grace a rose? I know a way!  
Leave it, rather.  
Must you gather?  
Smell, kiss, wear it—at last, throw away!

RESPECTABILITY.

I.

DEAR, had the world in its caprice  
Deigned to proclaim "I know you both,  
"Have recognized your plighted troth,  
"Am sponsor for you: live in peace!"—  
How many precious months and years  
Of youth had passed, that speed so fast,  
Before we found it out at last,  
The world, and what it fears?

II.

How much of priceless life were spent  
With men that every virtue decks,  
And women models of their sex,  
Society's true ornament,—  
Ere we dared wander, nights like this,  
Thro' wind and rain, and watch the Seine,  
And feel the Boulevard break again  
To warmth and light and bliss?

III.

I know! the world proscribes not love;  
Allows my finger to caress  
Your lips' contour and downiness,  
Provided it supply a glove.  
The world's good word!—the Institute!  
Guizot receives Montalembert!  
Eh? Down the court three lampions flare:  
Put forward your best foot!

LOVE IN A LIFE.

I.

ROOM after room,  
I hunt the house through  
We inhabit together.  
Heart, fear nothing, for, heart, thou shalt  
find her—  
Next time, herself!—not the trouble behind  
her  
Left in the curtain, the couch's perfume!

As she brushed it, the cornice-wreath  
blossomed anew :  
Yon looking-glass gleamed at the wave of  
her feather.

## II.

Yet the day wears,  
And door succeeds door ;  
I try the fresh fortune—  
Range the wide house from the wing to the  
centre.

Still the same chance! she goes out as I  
enter.

Spend my whole day in the quest,—who  
cares?

But 'tis twilight, you see,—with such suites  
to explore,

Such closets to search, such alcoves to impor-  
tune !

## LIFE IN A LOVE.

ESCAPE me ?

Never—  
Beloved !

While I am I, and you are you,

So long as the world contains us both,

Me the loving and you the loth,

While the one eludes, must the other pursue.

My life is a fault at last, I fear :

It seems too much like a fate, indeed !

Though I do my best I shall scarce suc-  
ceed.

But what if I fail of my purpose here ?

It is but to keep the nerves at strain,

To dry one's eyes and laugh at a fall,

And, baffled, get up and begin again,—

So the chace takes up one's life, that's all.

While, look but once from your farthest  
bound

At me so deep in the dust and dark,

No sooner the old hope goes to ground

Than a new one, straight to the self-same  
mark,

I shape me—

Ever

Removed !

## IN THREE DAYS.

## I.

So, I shall see her in three days  
And just one night, but nights are short,  
Then two long hours, and that is morn.  
See how I come, unchanged, unworn !  
Feel, where my life broke off from thine,  
How fresh the splinters keep and fine,—  
Only a touch and we combine !

## II.

Too long, this time of year, the days !  
But nights, at least the nights are short.  
As night shows where her one moon is,  
A hand's-breadth of pure light and bliss,  
So life's night gives my lady birth  
And my eyes hold her ! What is worth  
The rest of heaven, the rest of earth ?

## III.

O loaded curls, release your store  
Of warmth and scent, as once before  
The tingling hair did, lights and darks  
Outbreaking into fairy sparks,  
When under curl and curl I pried  
After the warmth and scent inside,  
Thro' lights and darks how manifold—  
The dark inspired, the light controlled !  
As early Art embrowns the gold.

## IV.

What great fear, should one say, "Threedays  
"That change the world might change as well  
"Your fortune ; and if joy delays,  
"Be happy that no worse befell !"  
What small fear, if another says,  
"Three days and one short night beside  
"May throw no shadow on your ways ;  
"But years must teem with change untried,  
"With chance not easily defied,  
"With an end somewhere undescried."  
No fear !—or if a fear be born  
This minute, it dies out in scorn.  
Fear ? I shall see her in three days  
And one night, now the nights are short,  
Then just two hours, and that is morn.

## IN A YEAR.

## I.

NEVER any more,  
While I live,  
Need I hope to see his face  
As before.  
Once his love grown chill,  
Mine may strive :  
Bitterly we re-embrace,  
Single still.

## II.

Was it something said,  
Something done,  
Vexed him ? was it touch of hand,  
Turn of head ?  
Strange ! that very way  
Love begun :  
I as little understand  
Love's decay.

## III.

When I sewed or drew,  
I recall  
How he looked as if I sung,  
—Sweetly too.  
If I spoke a word,  
First of all  
Up his cheek the colour sprung,  
Then he heard.

## IV.

Sitting by my side,  
At my feet,  
So he breathed but air I breathed,  
Satisfied !  
I, too, at love's brim  
Touched the sweet :  
I would die if death bequeathed  
Sweet to him.

## V.

"Speak, I love thee best !"  
He exclaimed :  
"Let thy love my own foretell !"  
I confessed ;

"Clasp my heart on thine  
"Now unblamed,  
"Since upon thy soul as well  
"Hangeth mine !"

## VI.

Was it wrong to own,  
Being truth ?  
Why should all the giving prove  
His alone ?  
I had wealth and ease,  
Beauty, youth :  
Since my lover gave me love,  
I gave these.

## VII.

That was all I meant,  
—To be just,  
And the passion I had raised,  
To content.  
Since he chose to change  
Gold for dust,  
If I gave him what he praised  
Was it strange ?

## VIII.

Would he loved me yet,  
On and on,  
While I found some way undreamed  
—Paid my debt !  
Gave more life and more,  
Till, all gone,  
He should smile "She never seemed  
"Mine before.

## IX.

"What, she felt the while,  
"Must I think ?  
"Love's so different with us men !"  
He should smile :  
"Dying for my sake—  
"White and pink !  
"Can't we touch these bubbles then  
"But they break ?"

## X.

Dear, the pang is brief,  
 Do thy part,  
 Have thy pleasure ! How perplexed  
 Grows belief !  
 Well, this cold clay clod  
 Was man's heart :  
 Crumble it, and what comes next ?  
 Is it God ?

## WOMEN AND ROSES.

## I.

I DREAM of a red-rose tree.  
 And which of its roses three  
 Is the dearest rose to me ?

## II.

Round and round, like a dance of snow  
 In a dazzling drift, as its guardians, go  
 Floating the women faded for ages,  
 Sculptured in stone, on the poet's pages.  
 Then follow women fresh and gay,  
 Living and loving and loved to-day.  
 Last, in the rear, flee the multitude of maidens,  
 Beauties yet unborn. And all, to one cadence,  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## III.

Dear rose, thy term is reached,  
 Thy leaf hangs loose and bleached :  
 Bees pass it unimpeached.

## IV.

Stay then, stoop, since I cannot climb,  
 You, great shapes of the antique time !  
 How shall I fix you, fire you, freeze you,  
 Break my heart at your feet to please you ?  
 Oh, to possess and be possessed !  
 Hearts that beat 'neath each pallid breast !  
 Once but of love, the poesy, the passion,  
 Drink but once and die !—In vain, the same  
 fashion,  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## V.

Dear rose, thy joy's undimmed,  
 Thy cup is ruby-rimmed,  
 Thy cup's heart nectar-brimmed.

## VI.

Deep, as drops from a statue's plinth  
 The bee sucked in by the hyacinth,  
 So will I bury me while burning,  
 Quench like him at a plunge my yearning,  
 Eyes in your eyes, lips on your lips !  
 Fold me fast where the cincture slips,  
 Prison all my soul in eternities of pleasure,  
 Girdle me for once ! But no—the old  
 measure,  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## VII.

Dear rose without a thorn,  
 Thy bud's the babe unborn :  
 First streak of a new morn.

## VIII.

Wings, lend wings for the cold, the clear !  
 What is far conquers what is near.  
 Roses will bloom nor want beholders,  
 Sprung from the dust where our flesh  
 moulders.  
 What shall arrive with the cycle's change ?  
 A novel grace and a beauty strange.  
 I will make an Eve, be the artist that began  
 her,  
 Shaped her to his mind !—Alas ! in like  
 manner  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## BEFORE.

LET them fight it out, friend ! things have  
 gone too far.  
 God must judge the couple : leave them as  
 they are  
 —Whichever one's the guiltless, to his glory,  
 And whichever one the guilt's with, to my  
 story !

## II.

Why, you would not bid men, sunk in such  
a slough,  
Strike no arm out further, stick and stink as  
now,  
Leaving right and wrong to settle the em-  
broilment,  
Heaven with snaky hell, in torture and  
entailment?

## III.

Who's the culprit of them? How must he  
conceive  
God—the queen he caps to, laughing in his  
sleeve,  
"Tis but decent to profess oneself beneath  
her:  
"Still, one must not be too much in earnest,  
either!"

## IV.

Better sin the whole sin, sure that God  
observes;  
Then go live his life out! Life will try his  
nerves,  
When the sky, which noticed all, makes no  
disclosure,  
And the earth keeps up her terrible com-  
posure.

## V.

Let him pace at pleasure, past the walls of  
rose,  
Pluck their fruits when grape-trees graze him  
as he goes!  
For he 'gins to guess the purpose of the  
garden,  
With the sly mute thing, beside there, for a  
warden.

## VI.

What's the leopard-dog-thing, constant at  
his side,  
A leer and lie in every eye of its obsequious  
hide?  
When will come an end to all the mock  
obseisance,  
And the price appear that pays for the mis-  
feasance?

## VII.

So much for the culprit. Who's the martyred  
man?  
Let him bear one stroke more, for be sure he  
can!  
He that strove thus evil's lump with good to  
leaven,  
Let him give his blood at last and get his  
heaven!

## VIII.

All or nothing, stake it! Trusts he God or no?  
Thus far and no farther? farther? be it so!  
Now, enough of your chicane of prudent  
pauses,  
Sage provisos, sub-intents and saving-clauses!

Ah, "forgive" you bid him? While God's  
champion lives,  
Wrong shall be resisted: dead, why, he for-  
gives.  
But you must not end my friend ere you  
begin him;  
Evil stands not crowned on earth, while  
breath is in him.

Once more—Will the wronger, at this last  
of all,  
Dare to say, "I did wrong," rising in his fall?  
No?—Let go, then! Both the fighters to  
their places!  
While I count three, step you back as many  
paces!

## AFTER.

TAKE the cloak from his face, and at first  
Let the corpse do its worst!

How he lies in his rights of a man!  
Death has done all death can.  
And, absorbed in the new life he leads,  
He recks not, he heeds  
Nor his wrong nor my vengeance; both strike  
On his senses alike,  
And are lost in the solemn and strange  
Surprise of the change.



Ha, what avails death to erase

His offence, my disgrace?

I would we were boys as of old

In the field, by the fold:

His outrage, God's patience, man's scorn

Were so easily borne!

I stand here now, he lies in his place:

Cover the face!

### THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL.

#### A PICTURE AT FANO.

##### I.

DEAR and great Angel, wouldst thou only  
leave

That child, when thou hast done with him,  
for me!

Let me sit all the day here, that when eve

Shall find performed thy special ministry,

And time come for departure, thou, suspending

Thy flight, mayst see another child for tending,

Another still, to quiet and retrieve.

##### II.

Then I shall feel thee step one step, no more,  
From where thou standest now, to where

I gaze,

—And suddenly my head is covered o'er

With those wings, white above the child  
who prays

Now on that tomb—and I shall feel thee  
guarding

Me, out of all the world; for me, discarding

Yon heaven thy home, that waits and opes  
its door.

##### III.

I would not look up thither past thy head

Because the door opes, like that child, I  
know,

For I should have thy gracious face instead,

Thou bird of God! And wilt thou bend  
me low

Like him, and lay, like his, my hands together,  
And lift them up to pray, and gently tether

Me, as thy lamb there, with thy garment's  
spread?

##### IV.

If this was ever granted, I would rest

My head beneath thine, while thy healing  
hands

Close-covered both my eyes beside thy breast,  
Pressing the brain, which too much thought  
expands,

Back to its proper size again, and smoothing

Distortion down till every nerve had soothing,

And all lay quiet, happy and suppressed.

##### V.

How soon all worldly wrong would be repaired!

I think how I should view the earth and  
skies

And sea, when once again my brow was bared

After thy healing, with such different eyes.

O world, as God has made it! All is beauty:

And knowing this, is love, and love is duty.

What further may be sought for or declared?

##### VI.

Guercino drew this angel I saw teach

(Alfred, dear friend!)—that little child to  
pray,

Holding the little hands up, each to each  
Pressed gently,—with his own head turned  
away

Over the earth where so much lay before him

Of work to do, though heaven was opening  
o'er him,

And he was left at Fano by the beach.

##### VII.

We were at Fano, and three times we went

To sit and see him in his chapel there,

And drink his beauty to our soul's content

—My angel with me too: and since I care

For dear Guercino's fame (to which in power

And glory comes this picture for a dower,

Fraught with a pathos so magnificent!—

##### VIII.

And since he did not work thus earnestly

At all times, and has else endured some  
wrong—

I took one thought his picture struck from me,  
 And spread it out, translating it to song.  
 My love is here. Where are you, dear old friend?  
 How rolls the Wairoa at your world's far end?  
 This is Ancona, yonder is the sea.

## MEMORABILIA.

## I.

AH, did you once see Shelley plain,  
 And did he stop and speak to you  
 And did you speak to him again?  
 How strange it seems and new!

## II.

But you were living before that,  
 And also you are living after;  
 And the memory I started at—  
 My starting moves your laughter.

## III.

I crossed a moor, with a name of its own  
 And a certain use in the world no doubt  
 Yet a hand's-breadth of it shines alone  
 'Mid the blank miles round about:

## IV.

For there I picked up on the heather  
 And there I put inside my breast  
 A moulted feather, an eagle-feather!  
 Well, I forget the rest.

## POPULARITY.

## I.

STAND still, true poet that you are!  
 I know you; let me try and draw you.  
 Some night you'll fail us: when afar  
 You rise, remember one man saw you,  
 Knew you, and named a star!

## II.

My star, God's glow-worm! Why extend  
 That loving hand of his which leads you  
 Yet locks you safe from end to end  
 Of this dark world, unless he needs you,  
 Just saves your light to spend?

## III.

His clenched hand shall unclothe at last,  
 I know, and let out all the beauty:  
 My poet holds the future fast,  
 Accepts the coming ages' duty,  
 Their present for this past.

## IV.

That day, the earth's feast-master's brow  
 Shall clear, to God the chalice raising;  
 "Others give best at first, but thou  
 "Forever set'st our table praising,  
 "Keep'st the good wine till now!"

## V.

Meantime, I'll draw you as you stand,  
 With few or none to watch and wonder:  
 I'll say—a fisher, on the sand  
 By Tyre the old, with ocean-plunder,  
 A netful, brought to land.

## VI.

Who has not heard how Tyrian shells  
 Enclosed the blue, that dye of dyes  
 Whereof one drop worked miracles,  
 And coloured like Astarte's<sup>1</sup> eyes  
 Raw silk the merchant sells?

## VII.

And each bystander of them all  
 Could criticize, and quote tradition  
 How depths of blue sublimed some pall  
 —To get which, pricked a king's ambition;  
 Worth sceptre, crown and ball.

## VIII.

Yet there's the dye, in that rough mesh,  
 The sea has only just o'erwhispered!  
 Live whelks, each lip's beard dripping fresh,  
 As if they still the water's lip heard  
 Through foam the rock-weeds thresh.

## IX.

Enough to furnish Solomon  
 Such hangings for his cedar-house,  
 That, when gold-robed he took the throne  
 In that abyss of blue, the Spouse  
 Might swear his presence shone

<sup>1</sup> The Syrian Venus.

## X.

Most like the centre-spike of gold  
Which burns deep in the blue-bell's womb,  
What time, with ardours manifold,  
The bee goes singing to her groom,  
Drunk and overbold.

## XI.

Mere conchs ! not fit for warp or woof !  
Till cunning come to pound and squeeze  
And clarify,—refine to proof  
The liquor filtered by degrees,  
While the world stands aloof.

## XII.

And there's the extract, flasked and fine,  
And priced and saleable at last !  
And Hobbs, Nobbs, Stokes and Nokes combine  
To paint the future from the past,  
Put blue into their line.

## XIII.

Hobbs hints blue,—straight he turtle eats :  
Nobbs prints blue,—claret crowns his cup :  
Nokes outdares Stokes in azure feats,—  
Both gorge. Who fished the murex<sup>1</sup> up ?  
What porridge had John Keats ?

### MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE- GOTIIA.

[An imaginary composer.]

## I.

HIST, but a word, fair and soft !  
Forth and be judged, Master Hugues !  
Answer the question I've put you so oft :  
What do you mean by your mountainous  
fugues ?<sup>2</sup>  
See, we're alone in the loft,—

<sup>1</sup> Molluscs from which the famous Tyrian purple dye was obtained.

<sup>2</sup> A fugue is a short melody.

## II.

I, the poor organist here,  
Hugues, the composer of note,  
Dead though, and done with, this many a year:  
Let's have a colloquy, something to quote.  
Make the world prick up its ear !

## III.

See, the church empties apace :  
Fast they extinguish the lights.  
Hallo there, sacristan ! Five minutes' grace !  
Here's a crank pedal wants setting to rights,  
Baulks one of holding the base.

## IV.

See, our huge house of the sounds,  
Hushing its hundreds at once,  
Bids the last loiterer back to his bounds !  
—O you may challenge them, not  
response  
Get the church-saints on their rounds !

## V.

(Saints go their rounds, who shall doubt ?  
—March, with the moon to admire,  
Up nave, down chancel, turn transept about  
Supervise all betwixt pavement and spire  
Put rats and mice to the rout—

## VI.

Aloys and Jurien and Just—  
Order things back to their place,  
Have a sharp eye lest the candlesticks rust,  
Rub the church-plate, darn the sacramen-  
lace,  
Clear the desk-velvet of dust.)

## VII.

Here's your book, younger folks shelve !  
Played I not off-hand and runningly,  
Just now, your masterpiece, hard number  
twelve ?  
Here's what should strike, could one handle  
it cunningly,  
Help the axe, give it a helve !

## VIII.

Page after page as I played,  
Every bar's rest, where one wipes  
Sweat from one's brow, I looked up and surveyed,  
O'er my three claviers,<sup>1</sup> yon forest of pipes  
Whence you still peeped in the shade.

## IX.

Sure you were wishful to speak?  
You, with brow ruled like a score,  
Yes, and eyes buried in pits on each cheek,  
Like two great breves,<sup>2</sup> as they wrote them  
of yore,  
Each side that bar, your straight beak!

## X.

Sure you said—"Good, the mere notes!  
"Still, couldst thou take my intent,  
"Know what procured me our Company's  
votes—  
"A master were lauded and sciolists shent,  
"Parted the sheep from the goats!"

## XI.

Well then, speak up, never flinch!  
Quick, ere my candle's a snuff  
—Burnt, do you see? to its uttermost inch—  
I believe in you; but that's not enough:  
Give my conviction a clinch!

## XII.

First you deliver your phrase  
—Nothing propound, that I see,  
Fit in itself for much blame or much praise—  
Answered no less, where no answer needs  
be:  
Off start the Two on their ways.

## XIII.

Straight must a Third interpose,  
Volunteer needlessly help;  
In strikes a Fourth, a Fifth thrusts in his nose,  
So the cry's open, the kennel's a-yelp,  
Argument's hot to the close.

<sup>1</sup> Keyboard of organ.

<sup>2</sup> A note in music.

## XIV.

One dissertates, he is candid;  
Two must discept,—has distinguished;  
Three helps the couple, if ever yet man  
did;  
Four protests; Five makes a dart at the  
thing wished:  
Back to One, goes the case bandied.

## XV.

One says his say with a difference;  
More of expounding, explaining!  
All now is wrangle, abuse, and vociferance;  
Now there's a truce, all's subdued, self-  
restraining:  
Five, though, stands out all the stiffer hence.

## XVI.

One is incisive, corrosive;  
Two retorts, nettled, curt, crepitan;  
Three makes rejoinder, expansive, explosive;  
Four overbears them all, strident and  
strepitant:  
Five . . . O Danaides,<sup>3</sup> O Sieve!

## XVII.

Now, they ply axes and crowbars;  
Now, they prick pins at a tissue  
Fine as a skein of the casuist Escobar's<sup>4</sup>  
Worked on the bone of a lie. To what  
issue?  
Where is our gain at the Two-bars?

## XVIII.

*Est fuga, voluitur rota.*  
On we drift: where looms the dim port?  
One, Two, Three, Four, Five, contribute  
their quota;  
Something is gained, if one caught but the  
import—  
Show it us, Hugues of Saxe-Gotha!

<sup>3</sup> The daughters of Danaus, condemned to pour water into a sieve.

<sup>4</sup> The Spanish casuist, so severely mauled by Pascal.

## XIX.

What with affirming, denying,  
Holding, risposting,<sup>1</sup> subjoining,  
All's like . . . it's like . . . for an instance

I'm trying . . .

There! See our roof, its gilt moulding  
and groining  
Under those spider-webs lying!

## XX.

So your fugue broadens and thickens,  
Greatens and deepens and lengthens,  
Till we exclaim—"But where's music, the  
dickens?"

"Blot ye the gold, while your spider-web  
strengthens  
"—Blacked to the stoutest of tickens?"<sup>2</sup>

## XXI.

I for man's effort am zealous:  
Prove me such censure unfounded!  
Seems it surprising a lover grows jealous—  
I hopes 'twas for something, his organ-pipes  
sounded,  
Tiring three boys at the bellows?

## XXII.

Is it your moral of Life?  
Such a web, simple and subtle,  
Weave we on earth here in impotent strife,  
Backward and forward each throwing his  
shuttle,  
Death ending all with a knife?

## XXIII.

Over our heads truth and nature—  
Still our life's zigzags and dodges,  
Ins and outs, weaving a new legislature—  
God's gold just shining its last where that  
lodges,  
Palled beneath man's usurpature.

## XXIV.

So we o'ershroud stars and roses,  
Cherub and trophy and garland;

<sup>1</sup> A quick return in fencing.

<sup>2</sup> A closely woven fabric.

Nothings grow something which quietly closes  
Heaven's earnest eye: not a glimpse of the  
far land  
Gets through our comments and glozes.

## XXV.

Ah but traditions, inventions,  
(Say we and make up a visage)  
So many men with such various intentions,  
Down the past ages, must know more than  
this age!  
Leave we the web its dimensions!

## XXVI.

Who thinks Hugues wrote for the deaf,  
Proved a mere mountain in labour?  
Better submit; try again; what's the clef?  
'Faith, 'tis no trifle for pipe and for tabor—  
For flats, the minor in F.

## XXVII.

Friend, your fugue taxes the finger:  
Learning it once, who would lose it?  
Yet all the while a misgiving will linger,  
Truth's golden o'erusal though we refuse it—  
Nature, thro' cobwebs we string her.

## XXVIII.

Hugues! I advise *meâ pœnâ*  
(Counterpoint glares like a Gorgon)  
Bid One, Two, Three, Four, Five, clear the  
arena!  
Say the word, straight I unstop the full-organ,  
Blare out the *mode Palestrina*.<sup>3</sup>

## XXIX.

While in the roof, if I'm right there,  
. . . Lo you, the wick in the socket!  
Hallo, you sacristan, show us a light there!  
Down it dips, gone like a rocket.  
What, you want, do you, to come unawares,  
Sweeping the church up for first morning-  
prayers,  
And find a poor devil has ended his cares  
At the foot of your rotten-runged rat-riddled  
stairs?  
Do I carry the moon in my pocket?

<sup>3</sup> *Giovanni P. da Palestrina*, celebrated musician (1524-1594).

# THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES;

A TRAGEDY.

1843.

[The Druses still exist on Mount Lebanon, and entertain opinions said to have been first promulgated at the beginning of the eleventh century by an Egyptian caliph who styled himself Hakeem Biamrallah; that is, He who judges by the order of God. See Holland's "Stories from Browning," p. 172.]

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES.

### PERSONS.

*The Grand-Master's Prefect.*

*The Patriarch's Nuncio.*

*The Republic's Admiral.*

LOYS DE DREUX, *Knight-Novice.*

*Initiated Druses*—DJABAL, KHALIL, ANAEL,  
MAANI, KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOOB,  
and others.

*Uninitiated Druses.*

*Prefect's Guard. Nuncio's Attendants. Admiral's Force.*

TIME, 14—.

PLACE.—*An Islet of the Southern Sporades, colonized by Druses of Lebanon, and garrisoned by the Knights-Hospitallers of Rhodes.*

SCENE.—*A Hall in the Prefect's Palace.*

### ACT I.

*Enter stealthily KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOOB and other initiated Druses, each as he enters casting off a robe that conceals his distinctive black vest and white turban; then, as giving a loose to exultation,—*

*Karshook.* The moon is carried off in purple fire:

Day breaks at last! Break glory, with the day,

On Djabal's dread incarnate mystery  
Now ready to resume its pristine shape

Of Hakeem, as the Khalif vanished erst  
In what seemed death to uninstructed eyes,  
On red Mokattam's verge—our Founder's  
flesh,

As he resumes our Founder's function!

*Raghib.* —Death

Sweep to the Christian Prefect that enslaved  
So long us sad Druse exiles o'er the sea!

*Ayoub.* Most joy be thine, O Mother-  
mount! Thy brood

Returns to thee, no outcasts as we left,  
But thus—but thus! Behind, our Prefect's  
corse;

Before, a presence like the morning—thine,  
Absolute Djabal late,—God Hakeem now  
That day breaks!

*Karshook.* Off then, with disguise  
at last!

As from our forms this hateful garb we strip,  
Lose every tongue its glozing accent too,  
Discard each limb the ignoble gesture! Cry,  
'Tis the Druse Nation, warders on our Mount  
Of the world's secret, since the birth of time,  
—No kindred slips, no offsets from thy stock,  
No spawn of Christians are we, Prefect, we  
Who rise . . .

*Ayoub.* Who shout . . .

*Raghib.* Who seize, a first-fruits, ha—  
Spoil of the spoiler! Brave!

[*They begin to tear down, and to dispute  
for, the decorations of the hall.*

*Karshook.* Hold!

*Ayoub.* —Mine, I say;

And mine shall it continue!

*Karshook.* Just this fringe !  
Take anything beside ! Lo, spire on spire,  
Curl serpentwise wreathed columns to the top  
O' the roof, and hide themselves mysteriously  
Among the twinkling lights and darks that  
haunt

Yon cornice ! Where the huge veil, they  
suspend

Before the Prefect's chamber of delight,  
Floats wide, then falls again as if its slave,  
The scented air, took heart now, and anon  
Lost heart to buoy its breadths of gorgeousness  
Above the gloom they droop in—all the porch  
Is jewelled o'er with frostwork character ;  
And, see, yon eight-point cross of white  
flame, winking

Hoar-silvery like some fresh-broke marble  
stone :

Raze out the Rhodian cross there, so thou  
leav'st me

This single fringe !

*Ayoob.* Ha, wouldst thou, dog-  
fox ? Help !

—Three hand-breadths of gold fringe, my son  
was set

To twist, the night he died !

*Karshook.* Nay, hear the knave !  
And I could witness my one daughter borne,  
A week since, to the Prefect's couch, yet fold  
These arms, be mute, lest word of mine  
should mar

Our Master's work, delay the Prefect here  
A day, prevent his sailing hence for Rhodes—  
How know I else ?—Hear me denied my right  
By such a knave !

*Raghib* [*interposing*]. Each ravage for him-  
self !

Booty enough ! On, Druses ! Be there found  
Blood and a heap behind us ; with us, Djabal  
Turned Hakeem ; and before us, Lebanon !  
Yields the porch ? Spare not ! There his  
minions dragged

Thy daughter, Karshook, to the Prefect's  
couch !

*Ayoob* ! Thy son, to soothe the Prefect's  
pride,

Bent o'er that task, the death-sweat on his  
brow,

Carving the spice-tree's heart in scroll-work  
there !

Onward in Djabal's name !

*As the tumult is at height, enter KHALIL.*  
*A pause and silence.*

*Khalil.* Was it for this,  
Djabal hath summoned you ? Deserve you thus  
A portion in to-day's event ? What, here—  
When most behoves your feet fall soft, your  
eyes

Sink low, your tongues lie still,—at Djabal's  
side,

Close in his very hearing, who, perchance,  
Assumes e'en now God Hakeem's dreaded  
shape,—

Dispute you for these gauds ?

*Ayoob.* How say'st thou, Khalil ?  
Doubtless our Master prompts thee ! Take  
the fringe,

Old Karshook ! I supposed it was a day . . .

*Khalil.* For pillage ?

*Karshook.* Harken, Khalil !  
Never spoke

A boy so like a song-bird ; we avouch thee  
Prettiest of all our Master's instruments

Except thy bright twin-sister ; thou and Aneel  
Challenge his prime regard : but we may crave  
(Such nothings as we be) a portion too  
Of Djabal's favour ; in him we believed,  
His bound ourselves, him moon by moon  
obeyed,

Kept silence till this daybreak—so, may claim  
Reward : who grudges me my claim ?

*Ayoob.* To-day  
Is not as yesterday !

*Raghib.* Stand off !

*Khalil.* Rebel you ?

Must I, the delegate of Djabal, draw  
His wrath on you, the day of our Return ?

*Other Druses.* Wrench from their grasp the  
fringe ! Hounds ! must the earth

Vomit her plagues on us thro' thee ?—and  
thee ?

Plague me not, Khalil, for their fault !

*Khalil.* Oh, shame !

Thus breaks to-day on you, the mystic tribe  
Who, flying the approach of Osman, bore

Our faith, a merest spark, from Syria's ridge  
Its birthplace, hither ! " Let the sea divide  
" These hunters from their prey," you said ;  
" and safe

" In this dim islet's virgin solitude  
" Tend we our faith, the spark, till happier  
time

" Fan it to fire ; till Hakeem rise again,  
" According to his word that, in the flesh  
" Which faded on Mokattam ages since,  
" He, at our extreme need, would interpose,  
" And, reinstating all in power and bliss,  
" Lead us himself to Lebanon once more."

Was't not thus you departed years ago,  
Ere I was born ?

*Druses.* 'Twas even thus, years ago.

*Khalil.* And did you call—(according to  
old laws

Which bid us, lest the sacred grow profane,  
Assimilate ourselves in outward rites  
With strangers fortune makes our lords, and  
live

As Christian with the Christian, Jew with Jew,  
Druse only with the Druses)—did you call  
Or no, to stand 'twixt you and Osman's rage  
(Mad to pursue e'en hither thro' the sea  
The remnant of our tribe), a race self-vowed  
To endless warfare with his hordes and him,  
The White-cross Knights of the adjacent Isle ?

*Karshook.* And why else rend we down,  
wrench up, rase out ?

These Knights of Rhodes we thus solicited  
For help, bestowed on us a fiercer pest  
Than aught we fled—their Prefect ; who began  
His promised mere paternal governance  
By a prompt massacre of all our Sheikhs  
Able to thwart the Order in its scheme  
Of crushing, with our nation's memory,  
Each chance of our return, and taming us  
Bondslaves to Rhodes for ever—all, he thinks  
To end by this day's treason.

*Khalil.* Say I not ?

You, fitted to the Order's purposes,  
Your Sheikhs cut off, your rites, your garb  
proscribed,

Must yet receive one degradation more ;  
The Knights at last throw off the mask—  
transfer,

As tributary now and appanage,  
This islet they are but protectors of,  
To their own ever-craving liege, the Church,  
Who licenses all crimes that pay her thus.  
You, from their Prefect, were to be consigned  
(Pursuant of I know not what vile pact)  
To the Knights' Patriarch, ardent to outvie  
His predecessor in all wickedness.  
When suddenly rose Djabal in the midst,  
Djabal, the man in semblance, but our God  
Confessed by signs and portents. Ye saw fire  
Bicker round Djabal, heard strange music flit  
Bird-like about his brow ?

*Druses.* We saw—we heard !

Djabal is Hakeem, the incarnate Dread,  
The phantasm Khalif, King of Prodigies !

*Khalil.* And as he said has not our Khalif  
done,

And so disposed events (from land to land  
Passing invisibly) that when, this morn,  
The pact of villany complete, there comes  
This Patriarch's Nuncio with this Master's  
Prefect

Their treason to consummate,—each will face  
For a crouching handful, an uplifted nation :  
For simulated Christians, confessed Druses :  
And, for slaves past hope of the Mother-mountain,  
Freedmen returning there 'neath Venice' flag ;  
That Venice which, the Hospitallers' foe,  
Grants us from Candia escort home at price  
Of our relinquished isle, Rhodes counts her  
own—

Venice, whose promised argosies should stand  
Toward harbour : is it now that you, and you,  
And you, selected from the rest to bear  
The burthen of the Khalif's secret, further  
To-day's event, entitled by your wrongs,  
And witness in the Prefect's hall his fate—  
That you dare clutch these gauds ? Ay, drop  
them !

*Karshook.* True,

Most true, all this ; and yet, may one dare hint,  
Thou art the youngest of us ?—though employed  
Abundantly as Djabal's confidant,  
Transmitter of his mandates, even now.  
Much less, when'er beside him Anael graces  
The cedar throne, his queen-bride, art thou like  
To occupy its lowest step that day !



Now, Khalil, wert thou checked as thou  
aspirest,

Forbidden such or such an honour,—say,  
Would silence serve so amply?

*Khalil.* Karshook thinks  
I covet honours? Well, nor idly thinks.  
Honours? I have demanded of them all  
The greatest.

*Karshook.* I supposed so.

*Khalil.* Judge, yourselves!  
Turn, thus: 'tis in the alcove at the back  
Of yonder columned porch, whose entrance now  
The veil hides, that our Prefect holds his state,  
Receives the Nuncio, when the one, from  
Rhodes,  
The other lands from Syria; there they meet.  
Now, I have sued with earnest prayers . . .

*Karshook.* For what  
Shall the Bride's brother vainly sue?

*Khalil.* That mine—  
Avenging in one blow a myriad wrongs  
—Might be the hand to slay the Prefect there!  
Djabal reserves that office for himself.

[A silence.]

Thus far, as youngest of you all, I speak  
—Scarce more enlightened than yourselves;  
since, near

As I approach him, nearer as I trust  
Soon to approach our Master, he reveals  
Only the God's power, not the glory yet.  
Therefore I reasoned with you: now, as  
servant

To Djabal, bearing his authority,  
I hear me appoint your several posts! Till noon  
None see him save myself and Anaël: once  
The deed achieved, our Khalif, casting off  
The embodied Awe's tremendous mystery,  
The weakness of the flesh disguise, resumes  
His proper glory, ne'er to fade again.

*Enter a Druse.*

*The Druse.* Our Prefect lands from Rhodes!  
—without a sign

That he suspects aught since he left our Isle;  
Nor in his train a single guard beyond  
The few he sailed with hence: so have we  
learned  
From Loys.

*Karshook.* Loys? Is not Loys gone  
For ever?

*Ayoob.* Loys, the Frank Knight, returned?

*The Druse.* Loys, the boy, stood on the  
leading prow

Conspicuous in his gay attire, and leapt  
Into the surf the foremost. Since day-dawn  
I kept watch to the Northward; take but note  
Of my poor vigilance to Djabal!

*Khalil.* Peace!

Thou, Karshook, with thy company, receive  
The Prefect as appointed: see, all keep  
The wonted show of servitude: announce  
His entry here by the accustomed peal  
Of trumpets, then await the further pleasure  
Of Djabal! (Loys back, when Djabal sent  
To Rhodes that we might spare the single  
Knight  
Worth sparing!)

*Enter a second Druse.*

*The Druse.* I espied it first! Say, I  
First spied the Nuncio's galley from the  
South!

Said'st thou a Crossed-keys' flag would flap  
the mast?

It nears apace! One galley and no more.  
If Djabal chance to ask who spied the flag,  
Forget not, I it was!

*Khalil.* Thou, Ayoob, bring  
The Nuncio and his followers hither! Break  
One rule prescribed, ye wither in your blood,  
Die at your fault!

*Enter a third Druse.*

*The Druse.* I shall see home, see home!  
—Shall banquet in the sombre groves again!  
Hail to thee, Khalil! Venice looms afar;  
The argosies of Venice, like a cloud,  
Bear up from Candia in the distance!

*Khalil.* Joy!  
Summon our people, Raghib! Bid all forth!  
Tell them the long-kept secret, old and  
young!

Set free the captive, let the trampled raise  
Their faces from the dust, because at length  
The cycle is complete, God Hakeem's reign  
Begins anew! Say, Venice for our guard,

Ele night we steer for Syria! Hear you,  
Druses?

Hear you this crowning witness to the claims  
Of Djabal? Oh, I spoke of hope and fear,  
Reward and punishment, because he bade  
Who has the right; for me, what should I say  
But, mar not those imperial lineaments,  
No majesty of all that rapt regard  
Vex by the least omission! Let him rise  
Without a check from you!

*Druses.* Let Djabal rise!

*Enter LOYS.—The Druses are silent.*

*Loys.* Who speaks of Djabal?—for I seek  
him, friends!

*[Aside.] Tu Dieu!* 'Tis as our Isle broke  
out in song

For joy, its Prefect-incubus drops off  
To-day, and I succeed him in his rule!  
But no—they cannot dream of their good  
fortune!

*[Aloud.]* Peace to you, Druses! I have  
tidings for you

But first for Djabal: where's your tall  
bewitcher,

With that small Arab thin-lipped silver-mouth?  
*Khalil [aside to KARSHOOK].* Loys, in  
truth! Yet Djabal cannot err!

*Karshook [to KHALIL].* And who takes  
charge of Loys? That's forgotten,  
Despite thy wariness! Will Loys stand  
And see his comrades slaughtered?

*Loys [aside].* How they shrink  
And whisper, with those rapid faces! What?  
The sight of me in their oppressors' garb  
Strike terror to the simple tribe? God's shame  
On those that bring our Order ill repute!  
But all's at end now; better days begin  
For these mild mountaineers from over-sea:  
The timidest shall have in me no Prefect  
To cower at thus! *[Aloud.]* I asked for  
Djabal—

*Karshook [aside].* Better  
One lured him, ere he can suspect, inside  
The corridor; 'twere easy to despatch  
A youngster. *[To LOYS.]* Djabal passed  
some minutes since  
Thro' yonder porch, and . . .

VOL. I.

*Khalil [aside].*  
him despatch?

Hold! What,

The only Christian of them all we charge  
No tyranny upon? Who,—noblest Knight  
Of all that learned from time to time their  
trade

Of lust and cruelty among us,—heir  
To Europe's pomp, a truest child of pride,—  
Yet stood between the Prefect and ourselves  
From the beginning? Loys, Djabal makes  
Account of, and precisely sent to Rhodes  
For safety? I take charge of him!

*[To LOYS.]* Sir Loys,—

*Loys.* There, cousins! Does Sir Loys  
strike you dead?

*Khalil [advancing].* Djabal has intercourse  
with few or none

Till noontide: but, your pleasure?

*Loys.* "Intercourse  
"With few or none?"—(Ah, Khalil, when  
you spoke

I saw not your smooth face! All health!—  
and health

To Anael! How fares Anael?)—"Inter-  
course

"With few or none?" Forget you, I've  
been friendly

With Djabal long ere you or any Druse?  
—Enough of him at Rennes, I think, beneath  
The Duke my father's roof! He'd tell by  
the hour,

With fixed white eyes beneath his swarthy  
brow,

Plausiblest stories . . .

*Khalil.* Stories, say you?—Ah,  
The quaint attire!

*Loys.* My dress for the last time!  
How sad I cannot make you understand,  
This ermine, o'er a shield, betokens me  
Of Bretagne, ancientest of provinces  
And noblest; and, what's best and oldest  
there,

See, Dreux', our house's blazon, which the  
Nuncio

Tacks to an Hospitaller's vest to-day!

*Khalil.* The Nuncio we await? What  
brings you back

From Rhodes, Sir Loys?

*Loys.* How you island-tribe  
Forget the world's awake while here you  
drowse!

What brings me back? What should not  
bring me, rather!

Our Patriarch's Nuncio visits you to-day—  
Is not my year's probation out? I come  
to take the knightly vows.

*Khalil.* What's that you wear?

*Loys.* This Rhodian cross? The cross  
your Prefect wore.

You should have seen, as I saw, the full Chapter  
Rise, to a man, while they transferred this cross  
From that unworthy Prefect's neck to . . .  
(fool—

My secret will escape me!) In a word,  
My year's probation passed, a Knight ere eve  
Am I; bound, like the rest, to yield my wealth  
To the common stock, to live in chastity,  
(We Knights espouse alone our Order's fame)  
—Change this gay weed for the back white-  
crossed gown,

And fight to death against the Infidel  
—Not, therefore, against you, you Christians  
with

Such partial difference only as befits  
The peace-fullest of tribes. But Khalil, prithee,  
Is not the Isle brighter than wont to-day?

*Khalil.* Ah, the new sword!

*Loys.* See now! You handle sword  
As 'twere a camel-staff. Pull! That's my  
motto,

Annealed "*Pro fide*," on the blade in blue.

*Khalil.* No curve in it? Surely a blade  
should curve.

*Loys.* Straight from the wrist! Loose—  
it should poise itself!

*Khalil* [waving with irrepressible exulta-  
tion the sword]. We are a nation, Loys,  
of old fame

Among the mountains! Rights have we to keep  
With the sword too!

[Remembering himself.] But I forget—you  
bid me

Seek Djabal?

*Loys.* What! A sword's sight scares  
you not?

(The People I will make of him and them!

Oh let my Prefect-sway begin at once!)  
Bring Djabal—say, indeed, that come he must!

*Khalil.* At noon seek Djabal in the Pre-  
fect's Chamber,

And find . . . [Aside.] Nay, 'tis thy cursed  
race's token,

Frank pride, no special insolence of thine!

[Aloud.] Tarry, and I will do your bidding,  
Loys!

[To the rest aside.] Now, forth you! I pro-  
ceed to Djabal straight.

Leave this poor boy, who knows not what  
he says!

Oh will it not add joy to even thy joy,  
Djabal, that I report all friends were true?

[KHALIL goes, followed by the Druses.]

*Loys.* Tu Dieu! How happy I shall  
make these Druses!

Was't not surpassingly contrived of me  
To get the long list of their wrongs by heart,  
Then take the first pretence for stealing off  
From these poor islanders, present myself  
Sudden at Rhodes before the noble Chapter,  
And (as best proof of ardour in its cause  
Which ere to-night will have become, too,  
mine)

Acquaint it with this plague-sore in its body,  
This Prefect and his villainous career?  
The princely Synod! All I dared request  
Was his dismissal; and they graciously  
Consigned his very office to myself—  
Myself may cure the Isle diseased!

And well

For them, they did so! Since I never felt  
How lone a lot, tho' brilliant, I embrace,  
Till now that, past retrieval, it is mine.  
To live thus, and thus die! Yet, as I leapt  
On shore, so home a feeling greeted me  
That I could half believe in Djabal's story,  
He used to tempt my father with, at Rennes—  
And me, too, since the story brought me  
here—

Of some Count Dreux and ancestor of ours  
Who, sick of wandering from Bouillon's war,  
Left his old name in Lebanon.

Long days

At least to spend in the Isle! and, my news  
known

An hour hence, what if Anael turn on me  
The great black eyes I must forget?

Why, fool,

Recall them, then? My business is with  
Djabal,

Not Anael! Djabal tarries: if I seek him?—  
The Isle is brighter than its wont to-day.

## ACT II.

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Djabal.* That a strong man should think  
himself a God!

I—Hakeem? To have wandered through  
the world,

Sown falsehood, and thence reaped now  
scorn, now faith,

For my one chant with many a change, my  
tale

Of outrage, and my prayer for vengeance—  
this

Required, forsooth, no mere man's faculty,  
Nought less than Hakeem's? The persuad-  
ing Loys

To pass probation here; the getting access  
By Loys to the Prefect; worst of all,  
The gaining my tribe's confidence by fraud  
That would disgrace the very Frank,—a few  
Of Europe's secrets which subdue the flame,  
The wave,—to ply a simple tribe with these,  
Took Hakeem?

And I feel this first to-day!

Does the day break, is the hour imminent  
When one deed, when my whole life's deed,  
my deed

Must be accomplished? Hakeem? Why  
the God?

Shout, rather, "Djabal, Youssof's child,  
thought slain

"With his whole race, the Druses' Sheikhs,  
this Prefect

"Endeavoured to extirpate—saved, a child,  
"Returns from traversing the world, a man,

"Able to take revenge, lead back the march  
"To Lebanon"—so shout, and who gainsays?  
But now, because delusion mixed itself

Insensibly with this career, all's changed!  
Have I brought Venice to afford us convoy?  
"True—but my jugglings wrought that!"

Put I heart

Into our people where no heart lurked?—

"Ah,

"What cannot an impostor do!"

Not this!

Not do this which I do! Not bid avaunt  
Falsehood! Thou shalt not keep thy hold  
on me!

—Nor even get a hold on me! 'Tis now—  
This day—hour—minute—'tis as here I stand

On the accursed threshold of the Prefect,  
That I am found deceiving and deceived!

And now what do I?—hasten to the few  
Deceived, ere they deceive the many—shout,

"As I professed, I did believe myself!

"Say, Druses, had you seen a butchery—

"If Ayoub, Karshook saw—Maani there

"Must tell you how I saw my father sink;

"Mymother's arms twine still about my neck;

"I hear my brother shriek, here's yet the scar

"Of what was meant for my own death-blow  
—say,

"If you had woke like me, grown year by year

"Out of the tumult in a far-off clime,

"Would it be wondrous such delusion grew?

"I walked the world, asked help at every  
hand;

"Came help or no? Not this and this?  
Which helps

"When I returned with, found the Prefect  
here,

"The Druses here, all here but Hakeem's self,

"The Khalif of the thousand prophecies,

"Reserved for such a juncture,—could I call

"My mission aught but Hakeem's? Promised  
Hakeem

"More than performs the Djabal—you  
absolve?

"—Me, you will never shame before the  
crowd

"Yet happily ignorant?—Me, both throngs  
surround,

"The few deceived, the many unabused,

"—Who, thus surrounded, slay for you and  
them

"The Prefect, lead to Lebanon? No Khalif,  
 "But Sheikh once more! Mere Djabal—  
 not" . . .

*Enter KHALIL hastily.*

*Khalil.* —God Hakeem!

'Tis told! The whole Druse nation knows  
 thee, Hakeem,

As we! and mothers lift on high their babes  
 Who seem aware, so glisten their great eyes,  
 Thou hast not failed us; ancient brows are  
 proud;

Our elders could not earlier die, it seems,  
 Than at thy coming! The Druse heart is  
 thine!

Take it! my lord and theirs, be thou adored!  
*Djabal [aside].* Adored!—but I renounce  
 it utterly!

*Khalil.* Already are they instituting choirs  
 And dances to the Khalif, as of old  
 'Tis chronicled thou bad'st them.

*Djabal [aside].* I abjure it!  
 'Tis not mine—not for me!

*Khalil.* Why pour they wine  
 Flavoured like honey and bruised mountain-  
 herbs,

Or wear those strings of sun-dried cedar-fruit?  
 Oh, let me tell thee—Esaad, we supposed  
 Doting, is carried forth, eager to see  
 The last sun rise on the Isle: he can see now!  
 The shamed Druse women never wept before:  
 They can look up when we reach home, they  
 say.

Smell!—sweet cane, saved in Lilith's breast  
 thus long—

Sweet!—it grows wild in Lebanon. And I  
 Alone do nothing for thee! 'Tis my office  
 Just to announce what well thou know'st—  
 but thus

Thou bidst me. At this self-same moment  
 tend

The Prefect, Nuncio and the Admiral  
 Hither by their three sea-paths: nor forget  
 Who were the trusty watchers!—thou forget?  
 Like me, who do forget that Anael bade . . .

*Djabal [aside].* Ay, Anael, Anael—is that  
 said at last?

Louder than all, that would be said, I knew!

What does abjuring mean, confessing mean,  
 To the people? Till that woman crossed my  
 path,

On went I, solely for my people's sake:  
 I saw her, and I then first saw myself,  
 And slackened pace: "if I should prove  
 indeed

"Hakeem—with Anael by!"

*Khalil [aside].* Ah, he is rapt!  
 Dare I at such a moment break on him  
 Even to do my sister's bidding? Yes:

The eyes are Djabal's and not Hakeem's yet,  
 Though but till I have spoken this, perchance.

*Djabal [aside].* To yearn to tell her, and  
 yet have no one

Great heart's word that will tell her! I could  
 gasp

Doubtless one such word out, and die.

[*Aloud.*] You said

That Anael . . .

*Khalil.* . . . Fain would see thee,  
 speak with thee,  
 Before thou change, discard this Djabal's shape  
 She knows, for Hakeem's shape she is to know.  
 Something to say that will not from her mind!  
 I know not what—"Let him but come!"  
 she said.

*Djabal [half-apart].* My nation—all my  
 Druses—how fare they?

Those I must save, and suffer thus to save,  
 Hold they their posts? Wait they their  
 Khalif too?

*Khalil.* All at the signal pant to flock  
 around

That banner of a brow!

*Djabal [aside].* And when they flock,  
 Confess them this: and after, for reward,  
 Be chased with howlings to her feet perchance!  
 —Have the poor outraged Druses, deaf and  
 blind,

Precede me there, forestall my story there,  
 Tell it in mocks and jeers!

I lose myself.

Who needs a Hakeem to direct him now?  
 I need the veriest child—why not this child?

[*Turning abruptly to KHALIL.*  
 You are a Druse too, Khalil; you were  
 nourished

Like Anael with our mysteries : if she  
 Could vow, so nourished, to love only one  
 Who should avenge the Druses, whence proceeds

Your silence? Wherefore made you no essay,  
 Who thus implicitly can execute  
 My bidding? What have I done, you could not?

Who, knowing more than Anael the prostration

Of our once lofty tribe, the daily life  
 Of this detested . . .

Does he come, you say,  
 This Prefect? All's in readiness?

*Khalil.* The sword,  
 The sacred robe, the Khalif's mystic tiar,  
 Laid up so long, are all disposed beside  
 The Prefect's chamber.

*Djabal.* -- Why did you despair?  
*Khalil.* I know our nation's state? Too surely know,

As thou who speak'st to prove me! Wrongs like ours

Should wake revenge: but when I sought the wronged

And spoke,—“The Prefect stabbed your son—arise!

“Your daughter, while you starve, eats shameless bread

“In his pavilion—then arise!”—my speech fell idly: 'twas, “Be silent, or worse fare!

“Endure till time's slow cycle prove complete!

“Who mayst thou be that takest on thee to thrust

“Into this peril—art thou Hakeem?” No! Only a mission like thy mission renders All these obedient at a breath, subduces Their private passions, brings their wills to one.

*Djabal.* You think so?

*Khalil.* Even now—when they have witnessed Thy miracles—had I not threatened all With Hakeem's vengeance, they would mar the work,

And couch ere this, each with his special prize,  
 Safe in his dwelling, leaving our main hope

To perish. No! When these have kissed thy feet

At Lebanon, the past purged off, the present Clear,—for the future, even Hakeem's mission May end, and I perchance, or any youth, Shall rule them thus renewed.—I tutor thee!

*Djabal.* And wisely. (He is Anael's brother, pure

As Anael's self.) Go say, I come to her. Haste! I will follow you. [*KHALIL goes.*

Oh, not confess

To these, the blinded multitude—confess, Before at least the fortune of my deed Half-authorize its means! Only to her Let me confess my fault, who in my path Curled up like incense from a Mage-king's tomb

When he would have the wayfarer descend Through the earth's rift and bear hid treasure forth!

How should child's-carelessness prove manhood's crime

Till now that I, whose lone youth hurried past, Letting each joy 'scape for the Druses' sake, At length recover in one Druse all joy?

Were her brow brighter, her eyes richer, still Would I confess. On the gulf's verge I pause.

How could I slay the Prefect, thus and thus? Anael, be mine to guard me, not destroy!

[*Goes.*

*Enter ANAEL, and MAANI who is assisting to array her in the ancient dress of the Druses.*

*Anael.* Those saffron vestures of the tabret-girls!

Comes *Djabal*, think you?

*Maani.* Doubtless *Djabal* comes.

*Anael.* Dost thou snow-swathe thee king-lie, Lebanon,

Than in my dreams?—Nay all the tresses off My forehead! Look I lovely so? He says That I am lovely.

*Maani.* Lovely nay, that hangs Awry.

*Anael.* You tell me how a khandjar hangs? The sharp side, thus, along the heart, see, marks

The maiden of our class. Are you content  
For Djabal as for me?

*Maani.* Content, my child.

*Anael.* Oh mother, tell me more of him!  
He comes

Even now—tell more, fill up my soul with  
him!

*Maani.* And did I not . . . yes, surely  
. . . tell you all?

*Anael.* What will be changed in Djabal  
when the Change

Arrives? Which feature? Not his eyes!

*Maani.* 'Tis writ  
Our Hakeem's eyes rolled fire and clove the  
dark

Superbly.

*Anael.* Not his eyes! His voice perhaps?  
Yet that's no change; for a grave current  
lived

—Grandly beneath the surface ever lived,  
That, scattering, broke as in live silver spray  
While . . . ah, the bliss . . . he would dis-  
course to me

In that enforced still fashion, word on word!  
'Tis the old current which must swell thro'  
that,

For what least tone, Maani, could I lose?

'Tis surely not his voice will change!

—If Hakeem

Only stood by! If Djabal, somehow, passed  
Out of the radiance as from out a robe;  
Possessed, but was not it!

He lived with you?

Well—and that morning Djabal saw me first  
And heard me vow never to wed but one  
Whosaved my People—on that day . . . pro-  
ceed!

*Maani.* Once more, then: from the time  
of his return

In secret, changed so since he left the Isle  
That I, who screened our Emir's last of sons,  
This Djabal, from the Prefect's massacre  
—Who bade him ne'er forget the child he  
was,

—Who dreamed so long the youth he might  
become—

I knew not in the man that child; the man  
Who spoke alone of hope to save our tribe,

How he had gone from land to land to save  
Our tribe—allies were sure, nor foes to dread:  
And much he mused, days, nights, alone he  
mused:

But never till that day when, pale and worn  
As by a persevering woe, he cried  
"Is there not one Druse left me?"—and I  
showed

The way to Khalil's and your hiding-place  
From the abhorred eye of the Prefect here,  
So that he saw you, heard you speak—till  
then,

Never did he announce—(how the moon  
seemed

To ope and shut, the while, above us both!)  
—His mission was the mission promised us;  
The cycle had revolved; all things renewing,  
He was lost Hakeem clothed in flesh to lead  
His children home anon, now veiled to work  
Great purposes: the Druses now would  
change!

*Anael.* And they have changed! And  
obstacles did sink,

And furtherances rose! And round his form  
Played fire, and music beat her angel wings!

My people, let me more rejoice, oh more  
For you than for myself! Did I but watch

Afar the pageant, feel our Khalif pass,  
One of the throng, how proud were I—tho'  
ne'er

Singled by Djabal's glance! But to be  
chosen

His own from all, the most his own of all,  
To be exalted with him, side by side,  
Lead the exulting Druses, meet . . . ah, how  
Worthily meet the maidens who await  
Ever beneath the cedars—how deserve  
This honour, in their eyes? So bright are  
they

Who saffron-vested sound the tabret there,  
The girls who throng there in my dream!  
One hour

And all is over: how shall I do aught  
That may deserve next hour's exalting?—

How?— [*Suddenly to MAANI.*

Mother, I am not worthy him! I read it  
Still in his eyes! He stands as if to tell me  
I am not, yet forbears. Why else revert

To one theme ever?—how mere human gifts  
Suffice him in myself—whose worship fades,  
Whose awe goes ever off at his approach,  
As now, who when he comes . . .

[DJABAL enters.] Oh why is it  
I cannot kneel to you?

Djabal. Rather, 'tis I

Should kneel to you, my Anael!

Anael. Even so!

For never seem you—shall I speak the  
truth?—

Never a God to me! 'Tis the Man's hand,  
Eye, voice! Oh do you veil these to our  
people,

Or but to me? To them, I think, to them!  
And brightness is their veil, shadow—my  
truth!

You mean that I should never kneel to you

—So, thus I kneel!

Djabal [preventing her]. No—no!

[Feeling the khandjar as he raises her.

Ha, have you chosen . . .

Anael. The khandjar with our ancient garb.  
But, Djabal,

Change not, be not exalted yet! Give time  
That I may plan more, perfect more! My  
blood

Beats, beats!

[Aside.] Oh must I then—since  
Loys leaves us

Never to come again, renew in me  
These doubts so near effaced already—must  
I needs confess them now to Djabal?—own  
That when I saw that stranger, heard his  
voice,

My faith fell, and the woeful thought flashed  
first

That each effect of Djabal's presence, taken  
For proof of more than human attributes

In him, by me whose heart at his approach  
Beat fast, whose brain while he was by swam  
round,

Whose soul at his departure died away,  
—That every such effect might have been  
wrought

In other frames, tho' not in mine, by Loys  
Or any merely mortal presence? Doubt  
is fading fast; shall I reveal it now?

How shall I meet the rapture presently,  
With doubt unexpiated, undisclosed?

Djabal [aside]. Avow the truth? I cannot!  
In what words

Avow that all she loved in me was false?

—Which yet has served that flower-like love  
of hers

To climb by, like the clinging gourd, and  
clasp

With its divinest wealth of leaf and bloom.

Could I take down the prop-work, in itself  
So vile, yet interlaced and overlaid

With painted cups and fruitage—might these  
still

Bask in the sun, unconscious their own  
strength

Of matted stalk and tendril had replaced

The old support thus silently withdrawn!

But no; the beauteous fabric crushes too.

'Tis not for my sake but for Anael's sake

I leave her soul this Hakeem where it leans.

Oh could I vanish from her, quit the Isle!

And yet—a thought comes: here my work is  
done

At every point; the Druses must return—  
Have convoy to their birth-place back,  
whose

The leader be, myself or any Druse—

Venice is pledged to that: 'tis for myself,  
For my own vengeance in the Prefect's death,

I stay now, not for them: to slay or spare

The Prefect, whom imports it save myself?

He cannot bar their passage from the Isle;

What would his death be but my own reward?

Then, mine I will forego. It is foregone!

Let him escape with all my House's blood!

Ere he can reach land, Djabal disappears,

And Hakeem, Anael loved, shall, fresh as  
first,

Live in her memory, keeping her sublime  
Above the world. She cannot touch that  
world

By ever knowing what I truly am,

Since Loys,—of mankind the only one

Able to link my present with my past,

My life in Europe with my Island life,

Thence, able to unmask me,—I've disposed  
Safely at last at Rhodes, and . . .



*Enter KHALIL.*

*Khalil.* Loys greets thee !  
*Djabal.* Loys ? To drag me back ? It cannot be !

*Anael [aside].* Loys ! Ah, doubt may not be stifled so !

*Khalil.* Can I have erred that thou so gazest ? Yes,

I told thee not in the glad press of tidings  
 Of higher import, Loys is returned  
 Before the Prefect, with, if possible,  
 Twice the light-heartedness of old. As though

On some inauguration he expects,

To-day, the world's fate hung !

*Djabal.* —And asks for me ?

*Khalil.* Thou knowest all things. Thee in chief he greets,

But every Druse of us is to be happy

At his arrival, he declares : were Loys

Thou, Master, he could have no wider soul

To take us in with. How I love that Loys !

*Djabal [aside].* Shame winds me with her teth' round and round.

*Anael [aside].* Loys ? I take the trial ! it is meet,

The little I can do, be done ; that faith,

All I can offer, want no perfecting

Which my own act may compass. Ay, this way

All may go well, nor that ignoble doubt

Be chased by other aid than mine. Advance

Close to my fear, weigh Loys with my Lord,

The mortal with the more than mortal gift !

*Djabal [aside].* Before, there were so few deceived ! and now

There's doubtless not one least Druse in the Isle

But, having learned my superhuman claims,

And calling me his Khalif-God, will clash

The whole truth out from Loys at first word !

While Loys, for his part, will hold me up,

With a Frank's unimaginable scorn

Of such imposture, to my people's eyes !

Could I but keep him longer yet awhile

From them, amuse him here until I plan

How he and I at once may leave the Isle !

Khalil I cannot part with from my side—

My only help in this emergency :

There's Anael !

*Anael.* Please you ?

*Djabal.* Anael—none but she !

[*To ANAEL.*] I pass some minutes in the chamber there,

Ere I see Loys : you shall speak with him

Until I join you. Khalil follows me.

*Anael [aside].* As I divined : he bids me save myself,

Offers me a probation—I accept.

Let me see Loys !

*Loys [without].* Djabal !

*Anael [aside].* 'Tis his voice.

The smooth Frank trifter with our people's wrongs,

The self-complacent boy-inquirer, loud

On this and that inflicted tyranny,

—Aught serving to parade an ignorance

Of how wrong feels, inflicted ! Let me close

With what I viewed at distance : let myself

Probe this delusion to the core !

*Djabal.* He comes.

Khalil, along with me ! while Anael waits

Till I return once more—and but once more.

## ACT III.

## ANAEL and LOYS.

*Anael.* Here leave me ! Here I wait another. 'Twas

For no mad protestation of a love

Like this you say possesses you, I came.

*Loys.* Love ? how protest a love I dare not feel ?

Mad words may doubtless have escaped me : you

Are here—I only feel you here !

*Anael.* No more !

*Loys.* But once again, whom could you love ? I dare,

Alas, say nothing of myself, who am

A Knight now, for when Knighthood we embrace,

Love we abjure : so, speak on safely : speak,

lest I speak, and betray my faith ! And yet  
To say your breathing passes through me,  
changes

My blood to spirit, and my spirit to you,  
As Heaven the sacrificer's wine to it—  
This is not to protest my love ! You said  
You could love one . . .

Anael. One only ! We are bent  
To earth—who raises up my tribe, I love ;  
The Prefect bows us—who removes him ; we  
Have ancient rights—who gives them back  
to us,  
I love. Forbear me ! Let my hand go !

Loys. Him  
You could love only ? Where is Djabal ? Stay !  
[*Aside.*] Yet wherefore stay ? Who does this  
but myself ?

Had I apprised her that I come to do  
Just this, what more could she acknowledge ?  
No,

She sees into my heart's core ! What is it  
Feeds either cheek with red, as Junesome rose ?  
Why turns she from me ? Ah fool, over-fond  
To dream I could call up . . .

. . . What never dream  
Yet feigned ! 'Tis love ! Oh Anael speak to  
me !

Djabal—  
Anael. Seek Djabal by the Prefect's  
chamber

At noon ! [*She paces the room.*]

Loys [*aside*]. And am I not the Prefect now ?  
Is it my fate to be the only one  
Able to win her love, the only one  
Unable to accept her love ? The past  
Breaks up beneath my footing : came I here  
This morn as to a slave, to set her free  
And take her thanks, and then spend day by day  
Content beside her in the Isle ? What works  
This knowledge in me now ? Her eye has  
broken

The faint disguise away : for Anael's sake  
I left the Isle, for her espoused the cause  
Of the Druses, all for her I thought, till now,  
To live without !

—As I must live ! To-day  
Ordains me Knight, forbids me . . . never  
shall

Forbid me to profess myself, heart, arm,  
Thy soldier !

Anael. Djabal you demanded, comes.

Loys [*aside*]. What wouldst thou, Loys ?  
See him ? Nought beside

Is wanting : I have felt his voice a spell  
From first to last. He brought me here,  
made known

The Druses to me, drove me hence to seek  
Redress for them ; and shall I meet him now,  
When nought is wanting but a word of his,  
To—what ?—induce me to spurn hope, faith,  
pride,

Honour away,—to cast my lot among  
His tribe, become a proverb in men's mouths,  
Breaking my high pact of companionship  
With those who graciously bestowed on me  
The very opportunities I turn

Against them ! Let me not see Djabal now !  
Anael. The Prefect also comes.

Loys [*aside*]. Him let me see,  
Not Djabal ! Him, degraded at a word,  
To soothe me,—to attest belief in me—  
And after, Djabal ! Yes, ere I return  
To her, the Nuncio's vow shall have destroyed  
This heart's rebellion, and coerced this will  
For ever.

Anael, not before the vows  
Irrevocably fix me . . .

Let me fly !  
The Prefect, or I lose myself for ever !

[*Goes.*]  
Anael. Yes, I am calm now ; just one way  
remains—

One, to attest my faith in him : for, see,  
I were quite lost else : Loys, Djabal, stand  
On either side—two men ! I balance looks  
And words, give Djabal a man's preference,  
No more. In Djabal, Hakeem is absorbed !  
And for a love like this, the God who saves  
My race, selects me for his bride ? One way !

Enter DJABAL.

Djabal [*to himself*]. No moment is to waste  
then ; 'tis resolved.

If Khalil may be trusted to lead back  
My Druses, and if Loys can be lured  
Out of the Isle—if I procure his silence,

Or promise never to return at least,—  
All's over. Even now my bark awaits :  
I reach the next wild islet and the next,  
And lose myself beneath the sun for ever.  
And now, to Anael !

*Anael.* Djabal, I am thine !

*Djabal.* Mine ? Djabal's ?—As if Hakeem  
had not been ?

*Anael.* Not Djabal's ? Say first, do you  
read my thought ?

Why need I speak, if you can read my thought ?

*Djabal.* I do not, I have said a thousand  
times.

*Anael.* (My secret's safe, I shall surprise  
him yet !)

Djabal, I knew your secret from the first :

Djabal, when first I saw you . . . (by your porch  
You leant, and pressed the tinkling veil away,  
And one fringe fell behind your neck—I see !)

. . . I knew you were not human, for I said

"This dim secluded house where the sea beats

"Is heaven to me—my people's huts are he."

"To them ; this august form will follow me,

"Mix with the waves his voice will,—I have  
him ;

"And they, the Prefect ! Oh, my happiness

"Rounds to the full whether I choose or no !

"His eyes met mine, he was about to speak,

"His hand grew damp—surely he meant to say

"He let me love him : in that moment's bliss

"I shall forget my people pine for home—

"They pass and they repass with pallid eyes !"

I vowed at once a certain vow ; this vow—

Not to embrace you till my tribe was saved.

Embrace me !

*Djabal [apart].* And she loved me ! Nought  
remained

But that ! Nay, Anael, is the Prefect dead ?

*Anael.* Ah, you reproach me ! True, his  
death crowns all,

I know—or should know : and I would do  
much,

Believe ! but, death ! Oh, you, who have  
known death,

Would never doom the Prefect, were death  
fearful

As we report !

Death !—a fire curls within us

From the foot's palm, and fills up to the brain,  
Up, out, then shatters the whole bubble-shell  
Of flesh, perchance !

Death !—witness, I would die,  
Whate'er death be, would venture now to  
die

For Khalil, for Maani—what for thee ?

Nay but embrace me, Djabal, in assurance

My vow will not be broken, for I must

Do something to attest my faith in you,

Be worthy you !

*Djabal [avoiding her].* I come for that—to  
say

Such an occasion is at hand : 'tis like

I leave you—that we part, my Anael,—part

For ever !

*Anael.* We part ? Just so ! I have suc-  
cumbed,—

I am, he thinks, unworthy—and nought less

Will serve than such approval of my faith.

Then, we part not ! Remains there no way

short

Of that ? Oh not that !

Death !—yet a hurt bird  
Died in my hands ; its eyes filmed—"Nay,  
it sleeps,"

I said, "will wake to-morrow well : " 'twas  
dead.

*Djabal.* I stand here and time fleets.

*Anael.*—I come

To bid a last farewell to you : perhaps

We never meet again. But, ere the Prefect

Arrive . . .

*Enter KHALIL, breathlessly.*

*Khalil.* He's here ! The Prefect ! Twenty  
guards,

No more : no sign he dreams of danger. All

Awaits thee only. Ayooob, Karshook, keep

Their posts—wait but the deed's accomplish-  
ment

To join us with thy Druses to a man.

Still holds his course the Nuncio—near and  
near

The fleet from Candia steering.

*Djabal [aside].* All is lost !

—Or won ?

*Khalil.* And I have laid the sacred robe,

The sword, the head-tiar, at the porch—the place  
commanded. Thou wilt hear the Prefect's trumpet.

*Djabal.* Then I keep Anael,—him then;  
past recall,

I slay—'tis forced on me. As I began  
I must conclude—so be it!

*Khalil.* For the rest,

Save Loys, our foe's solitary sword,  
All is so safe that . . . I will ne'er entreat  
Thy post again of thee: tho' danger none,  
There must be glory only meet for thee  
In slaying the Prefect.

*Anael* [*aside*]. And 'tis now that *Djabal*  
Would leave me!—in the glory meet for him!

*Djabal.* As glory, I would yield the deed  
to you

Or any Druse; what peril there may be,  
I keep. [*Aside*.] All things conspire to hound  
me on.

Not now, my soul, draw back, at least! Not  
now!

The course is plain, howe'er obscure all else.  
Once offer this tremendous sacrifice,  
Prevent what else will be irreparable,  
Secure these transcendental helps, regain  
The Cedars—then let all dark clear itself!  
I slay him!

*Khalil.* Anael, and no part for us!

[*To DJABAL.*] Hast thou possessed her with . . .

*Djabal* [*to ANAEL*]. Whom speak you to?  
What is it you behold there? Nay, this smile  
Turns stranger. Shudder you? The man  
must die,

As thousands of our race have died thro' him.  
One blow, and I discharge his weary soul  
From the flesh that pollutes it! Let him fill  
Straight some new expiatory form, of earth  
Or sea, the reptile or some æry thing:  
What is there in his death?

*Anael.* My brother said,

Is there no part in it for us?

*Djabal.* For *Khalil*,—

The trumpet will announce the Nuncio's entry;  
Here, I shall find the Prefect hastening  
In the Pavilion to receive him—here  
I slay the Prefect; meanwhile Ayoob leads

The Nuncio with his guards within: once these  
Secured in the outer hall, bid Ayoob bar  
Entry or egress till I give the sign  
Which waits the landing of the argosies  
You will announce to me: this double sign  
That justice is performed and help arrived,  
When Ayoob shall receive, but not before,  
Let him throw open the palace doors, admit  
The Druses to behold their tyrant, ere  
We leave for ever this detested spot.

Go, *Khalil*, hurry all! No pause, no pause!  
Whirl on the dream, secure to wake anon!

*Khalil.* What sign? and who the bearer?

*Djabal.* Who shall show

My ring, admit to Ayoob. How she stands!  
Have I not . . . I must have some task for her.  
*Anael*, not that way! 'Tis the Prefect's  
chamber!

*Anael*, keep you the ring—give you the sign!  
(It holds her safe amid the stir.) You will  
Be faithful?

*Anael* [*taking 'he ring*]. I would fain be  
worthy. Hark! [*Trumpet without*.]

*Khalil.* He comes.

*Djabal.* And I too come.

*Anael.* One word, but one!

Say, shall you be exalted at the deed?

Then? On the instant?

*Djabal.* I exalted? What?

He, there—we, thus—our wrongs revenged,  
our tribe

Set free? Oh, then shall I, assure yourself,  
Shall you, shall each of us, be in his death  
Exalted!

*Khalil.* He is here.

*Djabal.* Away—away! [*They go*.]

*Enter the PREFECT with Guards, and LOYS.*

*The Prefect* [*to Guards*]. Back, I say, to the  
galley every guard!

That's my sole care now; see each bench  
retains

Its complement of rowers; I embark  
O' the instant, since this Knight will have it so.  
Alas me! Could you have the heart, my Loys!  
[*To a Guard who whispers.*] Oh, bring the  
holy Nuncio here forthwith!

[*The Guards go*.]

Loys, a rueful sight, confess, to see  
The grey discarded Prefect leave his post,  
With tears i' the eye! So, you are Prefect  
now?

You depose me—you succeed me? Ha, ha!

Loys. And dare you laugh, whom laughter  
less becomes

Than yesterday's forced meekness we be-  
held . . .

Prefect. —When you so eloquently pleaded,  
Loys,

For my dismissal from the post? Ah, meek  
With cause enough, consult the Nuncio else!  
And wish him the like meekness: for so  
staunch

A servant of the Church can scarce have bought  
His share in the Isle, and paid for it, hard  
pieces!

You've my successor to condole with, Nuncio!  
I shall be safe by then i' the galley, Loys!

Loys. You make as you would tell me you  
rejoice

To leave your scene of . . .

Prefect. Trade in the dear Druses?  
Blood and sweat traffic? Spare what yester-  
day

We heard enough of! Drove I in the Isle  
A profitable game? Learn wit, my son,  
Which you'll need shortly! Did it never breed  
Suspicion in you, all was not pure profit,  
When I, the insatiate . . . and so forth—  
was bent

On having a partaker in my rule?  
Why did I yield this Nuncio half the gain,  
If not that I might also shift—what on him?  
Half of the peril, Loys!

Loys. Peril?

Prefect. Hark you!  
I'd love you if you'd let me—this for reason,  
You save my life at price of . . . well, say  
risk

At least, of yours. I came a long time since  
To the Isle; our Hospitallers bade me tame  
These savage wizards, and reward myself—

Loys. The Knights who so repudiate your  
crime?

Prefect. Loys, the Knights! we doubtless  
understood

Each other; as for trusting to reward  
From any friend beside myself . . . no, no!  
I clutched mine on the spot, when it was  
sweet,

And I had taste for it. I felt these wizards  
Alive—was sure they were not on me, only  
When I was on them: but with age comes  
caution:

And stinging pleasures please less and sting  
more.

Year by year, fear by fear! The girls were  
brighter

Than ever ('faith, there's yet one Anael left,  
I set my heart upon—Oh, prithee, let  
That brave new sword lie still!)—These joys  
looked brighter,

But silter the town, too, as I passed.  
With this alcove's delicious memories  
Began to mingle visions of gaunt fathers,  
Quick-eyed sons, fugitives from the mine,  
the oar,

Stealing to catch me. Brief, when I began  
To quake with fear—(I think I hear the  
Chapter

Solicited to let me leave, now all  
Worth staying for was gained and gone!)—I  
say,

Just when, for the remainder of my life,  
All methods of escape seemed lost—that then  
Up should a young hot-headed Loys spring,  
Talk very long and loud,—in fine, compel  
The Knights to break their whole arrange-  
ment, have me

Home for pure shame—from this safehold of  
mine

Where but ten thousand Druses seek my life,  
To my wild place of banishment, San Gines  
By Murcia, where my three fat manors lying,  
Purchased by gains here and the Nuncio's  
gold,

Are all I have to guard me,—that such fortune  
Should fall to me, I hardly could expect.

Therefore I say, I'd love you.

Loys. Can it be?

I play into your hands then? Oh no, no!  
The Venerable Chapter, the Great Order  
Sunk o' the sudden into fiends of the pit?  
But I will back—will yet unveil you!

*Prefect.*  
To whom?—perhaps Sir Galeas, who in  
Chapter  
Shook his white head thrice—and some  
dozen times  
My hand next morning shook, for value  
paid!

To that Italian saint, Sir Cosimo?—  
Indignant at my wringing year by year  
A thousand bezants from the coral-divers,  
As you recounted; felt the saint aggrieved?  
Well might he—I allowed for his half-share  
Merely one hundred. To Sir . . .

*Loys.* See! you dare  
Inculcate the whole Order; yet should I,  
A youth, a sole voice, have the power to  
change  
Their evil way, had they been firm in it?  
Answer me!

*Prefect.* Oh, the son of Bretagne's Duke,  
And that son's wealth, the father's influence,  
too,

And the young arm, we'll even say, my Loys,  
—The fear of losing or diverting these  
Into another channel, by gainsaying  
A novice too abruptly, could not influence  
The Order! You might join, for aught they  
cared,

Their red-cross rivals of the Temple! Well,  
I thank you for my part, at all events.  
Stay here till they withdraw you! You'll  
inhabit

My palace—sleep, perchance, in the alcove  
Whither I go to meet our holy friend.  
Good! and now disbelieve me if you can,—  
This is the first time for long years I enter  
Thus [*lifts the arras*] without feeling just as  
if I lifted  
The lid up of my tomb.

*Loys.* They share his crime!  
God's punishment will overtake you yet.

*Prefect.* Thank you it does not! Pardon  
this last flash:

I bear a sober visage presently  
With the disinterested Nuncio here—  
His purchase-money safe at Murcia, too!  
Let me repeat—for the first time, no draught  
Coming as from a sepulchre salutes me.

*Me?* When we next meet, this folly may have  
passed,  
We'll hope. Ha, ha!

[*Goes through the arras.*]

*Loys.* Assure me but . . . he's gone!  
He could not lie. Then what have I escaped,  
I, who had so nigh given up happiness  
For ever, to be linked with him and them!  
Oh, opportunist of discoveries! I  
Their Knight? I utterly renounce them all!  
Hark! What, he meets by this the Nuncio?

Yes,  
The same hyæna groan-like laughter! Quick—  
To Djabal! I am one of them at last,  
These simple-hearted Druses—Anael's tribe!  
Djabal! She's mine at last. Djabal, I say!

[*Goes.*]

## ACT IV.

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Djabal.* Let me but slay the Prefect.  
The end now!  
To-morrow will be time enough to pry  
Into the means I took: suffice, they served,  
Ignoble as they were, to hurl revenge  
True to its object.

[*Seeing the robe, etc. disposed.*]

Mine should never so  
Have hurried to accomplishment! Thee,  
Djabal,

Far other mood befitted! Calm the Robe  
Should clothe this doom's awarder!

[*Taking the robe.*] Shall I dare  
Assume my nation's Robe? I am at least  
A Druse again, chill Europe's policy  
Drops from me: I dare take the Robe.  
Why not

The Tiar? I rule the Druses, and what more  
Betokens it than rule?—yet—yet—

[*Lays down the tiar.*]

[*Footsteps in the alcove.*] He comes!

[*Taking the sword.*]  
If the Sword serve, let the Tiar lie! So,  
feet

Clogged with the blood of twenty years can  
fall

Thus lightly! Round me, all ye ghosts!

He'll lift . . .

Which arm to push the arras wide?—or both?

Stab from the neck down to the heart—there stay!

Near he comes—nearer—the next footstep!

Now! [*As he dashes aside the arras,*

*ANAEL is discovered.*

Ha! Anael! Nay, my Anael, can it be?

Heard you the trumpet? I must slay him here,

And here you ruin all. Why speak you not?

Anael, the Prefect comes! [*ANAEL screams.*]

So slow to feel

'Tis not a sight for you to look upon?

A moment's work—but such work! Till you go,

I must be idle—idle, I risk all!

[*Pointing to her hair.*

Those locks are well, and you are beauteous thus,

But with the dagger 'tis, I have to do!

Anael. With mine!

Djabal. Blood—Anael?

Anael. Djabal, 'tis thy deed!

It must be! I had hoped to claim it mine—

Be worthy thee—but I must needs confess

'Twas not I, but thyself . . . not I have . . .

Djabal!

Speak to me!

Djabal. Oh, my punishment!

Anael. Speak to me

While I can speak! touch me, despite the blood!

When the command passed from thy soul to mine,

I went, fire leading me, muttering of thee,

And the approaching exaltation,—“make

“One sacrifice!” I said,—and he sat there,

Bade me approach; and, as I did approach,

Thy fire with music burst into my brain.

'Twas but a moment's work, thou saidst—perchance

It may have been so! Well, it is thy deed.

Djabal. It is my deed.

Anael. His blood all this!

—this! and . . .

“And more! Sustain me, Djabal! Wait not

—now

Let flash thy glory! Change thyself and me!

It must be! Ere the Druses flock to us!

At least confirm me! Djabal, blood gushed forth—

He was our tyrant—but I looked he'd fall

Prone as asleep—why else is death called sleep?

Sleep? He bent o'er his breast! 'Tis sin, I know,—

Punish me, Djabal, but wilt thou let him?

Be it thou that punishest, not he—who creeps

On his red breast—is here! 'Tis the small groan

Of a child—no worse! Bestow the new life, then!

Too swift it cannot be, too strange, surpassing! [*Following him as he retreats.*

Now! Change us both! Change me and change thou!

Djabal [*sinks on his knees*]. Thus!

Behold my change! You have done nobly.

I!—

Anael. Can Hakeem kneel?

Djabal. No Hakeem,

and scarce Djabal!

I have dealt falsely, and this woe is come.

No—hear me ere scorn blast me! Once and ever,

The deed is mine. Oh think upon the past!

Anael [*to herself*]. Did I strike once, or twice, or many times?

Djabal. I came to lead my tribe where, bathed in glooms,

Doth Bahumid the Renovator sleep:

Anael, I saw my tribe: I said, “Without

A miracle this cannot be”—I said

“Be there a miracle!”—for I saw you.

Anael. His head lies south the portal.

Djabal. —Weighed with this

The general good, how could I choose my own?

What matter was my purity of soul?

Little by little I engaged myself—

Heaven would accept me for its instrument,

I hoped: I said Heaven had accepted me!

Anael. Is it this blood breeds dreams in

me? Who said

You were not Hakeem? And your miracles—

The fire that plays innocuous round your form?

[*Again changing her whole manner.*]

Ah, thou wouldst try me—thou art Hakeem still!

*Djabal.* Woe—woe! As if the Druses of the Mount

(Scarce Arabs, even there, but here, in the Isle, Beneath their former selves) should comprehend

The subtle lore of Europe! A few secrets That would not easily affect the meanest

Of the crowd there, could wholly subjugate The best of our poor tribe. Again that eye?

*Anael* [*after a pause springs to his neck*].

Djabal, in this there can be no deceit! Why, Djabal, were you human only,—think, Maani is but human, Khalil human, Loys is human even—did their words haunt me, their looks pursue me? Shame on you

So to have tried me! Rather, shame on me So to need trying! Could I, with the Prefect And the blood, there—could I see only you?—Hang by your neck over this gulf of blood? Speak, I am sayd! Speak, Djabal! Am I saved?

[*As DJABAL slowly unclasps her arms, and puts her silently from him.*]

Hakeem would save me. Thou art Djabal. Crouch!

Bow to the dust, thou basest of our kind! The pile of thee, I reared up to the cloud—Full, midway, of our fathers' trophied tombs, Based on the living rock, devoured not by The unstable desert's jaws of sand,—falls prone.

Fire, music, quenched: and now thou liest there

A ruin, obscene creatures will moan through. —Let us come, Djabal!

*Djabal.* Whither come?

*Anael.* At once—

Lest so it grow intolerable. Come! Will I not share it with thee? Best at once! So, feel less pain! Let them deride,—thy tribe

Now trusting in thee,—Loys shall deride! Come to them, hand in hand, with me!

*Djabal.*

Where come?

*Anael.* Where?—to the Druses thou hast wronged! Confess,

Now that the end is gained—(I love thee now—)

That thou hast so deceived them—(perchance love thee

Better than ever.) Come, receive their doom Of infamy! O, best of all I love thee!

Shame with the man, no triumph with the God,

Be mine! Come!

*Djabal.* Never! More shame yet? and why?

Why? You have called this deed mine—it is mine!

And with it I accept its circumstance.

How can I longer strive with fate? The past Is past: my false life shall henceforth show true.

Hear me! The argosies touch land by this; They bear us to fresh scenes and happier skies.

What if we reign together?—if we keep Our secret for the Druses' good?—by means Of even their superstition, plant in them New life? I learn from Europe: all who seek Man's good must awe man, by such means as these.

We two will be divine to them—we are! All great works in this world spring from the ruins

Of greater projects—ever, on our earth, Babels men block out, Babylons they build. I wrest the weapon from your hand! I claim

The deed! Retire! You have my ring—your bar

All access to the Nuncio till the forces From Venice land.

*Anael.* Thou wilt feign Hakeem then?

*Djabal* [*putting the Tiara of Hakeem on his head*]. And from this moment that I dare ope wide

Eyes that till now refused to see, begins My true dominion: for I know myself, And what am I to personate. No word?

[*ANAEEL goes.*]



'Tis come on me at last ! His blood on her—

What memories will follow that ! Her eye, Her fierce distorted lip and ploughed black brow !

Ah, fool ! Has Europe then so poorly tamed The Syrian blood from out thee ? Thou, presume

To work in this foul earth by means not foul ? Scheme, as for heaven,—but, on the earth, be glad

If a least ray like heaven's be left thee !

Thus I shall be calm—in readiness—no way Surprised. [*A noise without.*]

This should be Khalil and my Druses. Venice is come then ! Thus I grasp thee, sword !

Druses, 'tis Hakeem saves you ! In ! Behold Your Prefect !

*Enter LOYS. DJABAL hides the khandjar in his robe.*

*Loys.* Oh, well found, Djabal !—but no time for words.

You know who waits there ?

[*Pointing to the alcove.*]

Well !—and that 'tis there

He meets the Nuncio ? Well ? Now, a surprise—

He there—

*Djabal.* I know—

*Loys.* —is now no mortal's lord, Is absolutely powerless—call him, dead— He is no longer Prefect—you are Prefect ! Oh, shriek not ! I do nothing in the dark, Nothing unworthy Breton blood, believe ! I understood at once your urgency That I should leave this isle for Rhodes ; I felt What you were loath to speak—your need of help.

I have fulfilled the task, that earnestness Imposed on me : have, face to face, confronted

The Prefect in full Chapter, charged on him The enormities of his long rule ; he stood. Mute, offered no defence, no crime denied. On which, I spoke of you, and of your tribe,

Your faith so like our own, and all you urged Of old to me : I spoke, too, of your goodness, Your patience—brief, I hold henceforth the Isle

In charge, am nominally lord,—but you, You are associated in my rule—

Are the true Prefect ! Ay, such faith had they

In my assurance of your loyalty (For who insults an imbecile old man ?) That we assume the Prefecture this hour.

You gaze at me ? Hear greater wonders yet— I cast down all the fabric I have built.

These Knights, I was prepared to worship . . . but

Of that another time ; what's now to say, Is—I shall never be a Knight ! Oh, Djabal, Here first I throw all prejudice aside, And call you brother ! I am Druse like you : My wealth, my friends, my power, are wholly yours,

Your people's, which is now my people : for There is a maiden of your tribe, I love— She loves me—Khalil's sister—

*Djabal.* Anael ?

*Loys.* Start you ?

Seems what I say, unknighly ? Thus it chanced :

When first I came, a novice, to the isle . . .

*Enter one of the NUNCIO'S Guards from the alcove.*

*Guard.* Oh horrible ! Sir Loys ! Here is Loys !

And here— [*Others enter from the alcove. Pointing to DJABAL.*] Secure him, bind him—this is he ! [*They surround DJABAL.*]

*Loys.* Madmen—what is't you do ? Stand from my friend,

And tell me !

*Guard.* Thou canst have no part in this— Surely no part ! But slay him not ! The Nuncio

Commanded, slay him not !

*Loys.* Speak, or . . .

*Guard.* The Prefect Lies murdered there by him thou dost embrace.

Loys. By Djabal? Miserable fools! How Djabal?

[A Guard lifts DJABAL'S robe; DJABAL flings down the khandjar.]

Loys [after a pause]. Thou hast received some insult worse than all,  
Some outrage not to be endured—

[To the Guards.] Stand back!  
He is my friend—more than my friend.  
Thou hast  
Slain him upon that provocation.

Guard. No!  
No provocation! 'Tis a long devised  
Conspiracy: the whole tribe is involved.  
He is their Khalif—'tis on that pretence—  
Their mighty Khalif who died long ago,  
And now comes back to life and light again!  
All is just now revealed, I know not how,  
By one of his confederates—who, struck  
With horror at this murder, first apprised  
The Nuncio. As 'twas said, we find this  
Djabal

Here where we take him.

Djabal [aside]. Who broke faith with me?

Loys [to DJABAL]. Hear'st thou? Speak!  
Till thou speak, I keep off these,  
Or die with thee. Deny this story! Thou  
A Khalif, an impostor? Thou, my friend,  
Whose tale was of an inoffensive tribe,  
With . . . but thou know'st—on that tale's  
truth I pledged

My faith before the Chapter: what art thou?

Djabal. Loys, I am as thou hast heard.

All's true.

No more concealment! As these tell thee, all  
Was long since planned. Our Druses are  
enough

To crush this handful: the Venetians land  
Even now in our behalf. Loys, we part.

Thou, serving much, wouldst fain have served  
me more;

It might not be. I thank thee. As thou  
hearest,

We are a separated tribe: farewell!

Loys. Oh where will truth be found now?

Canst thou so

Belie the Druses? Do they share thy crime?  
Those thou professest of our Breton stock,

Are partners with thee? Why, I saw but now  
Khalil, my friend: he spoke with me—no word  
Of this! and Anael—whom I love, and who  
Loves me—she spoke no word of this.

Djabal. Poor boy!  
Anael, who loves thee? Khalil, fast thy  
friend?

We, offsets from a wandering Count of Dreux?  
No: older than the oldest, princelier  
Than Europe's princeliest race, our tribe:  
enough

For thine, that on our simple faith we found  
A monarchy to shame your monarchies  
At their own trick and secret of success.

The child of this our tribe shall laugh upon  
The palace-step of him whose life ere night  
Is forfeit, as that child shall know, and  
yet

Shall laugh there! What, we Druses wait  
forsooth

The kind interposition of a boy

—Can only save ourselves if thou concede:  
—Khalil admire thee? He is my right-hand,  
My delegate!—Anael accept thy love?

She is my bride!

Loys. Thy bride? She one of them?

Djabal. My bride!

Loys. And she retains her  
glorious eyes!

She, with those eyes, has shared this mis-  
creant's guilt!

Ah—who but she directed me to find  
Djabal within the Prefect's chamber? Khalil  
Bade me seek Djabal there, too. All is  
truth.

What spoke the Prefect worse of them than  
this?

Did the Church ill to institute long since  
Perpetual warfare with such serpentry?

And I—have I desired to shift my part,  
Evade my share in her design? 'Tis well.

Djabal. Loys, I wronged thee—but un-  
wittingly:

I never thought there was in thee a virtue  
That could attach itself to what thou  
deemest

A race below thine own. I wronged thee,  
Loys,

But that is over : all is over now,  
Save the protection I ensure against  
My people's anger. By their Khalif's side,  
Thou art secure and mayst depart : so,  
come!

*Loys.* Thy side? I take protection at thy  
hand?

*Enter other Guards.*

*Guards.* Fly with him! Fly, Sir Loys!

'Tis too true :

And only by his side thou mayst escape.  
The whole tribe is in full revolt : they flock  
About the palace—will be here—on thee—  
And there are twenty of us, we the Guards  
O' the Nuncio, to withstand them! Even we  
Had stayed to meet our death in ignorance,  
But that one Druse, a single faithful Druse,  
Made known the horror to the Nuncio. Fly!  
The Nuncio stands aghast. At least let us  
Escape thy wrath, O Hakeem! We are  
nought

In thy tribe's persecution! [*To LOYS.*]  
Keep by him!

They hail him Hakeem, their dead Prince  
returned :

He is their God, they shout, and at his beck  
Are life and death!

*Loys [springing at the khandjar DJABAL  
had thrown down, seizes him by the throat].*

Thus by his side am I!

Thus I resume my knighthood and its warfare,  
Thus end thee, miscreant, in thy pride of  
place!

Thus art thou caught. Without, thy dupes  
may cluster :

Friends aid thee, foes avoid thee,—thou art  
Hakeem,

How say they?—God art thou! but also here  
Is the least, youngest, meanest the Church  
calls

Her servant, and his single arm avails  
To aid her as she lists. I rise, and thou  
Art crushed. Hordes of thy Druses flock  
without :

Here thou hast me, who represent the Cross,  
Honour and Faith, 'gainst Hell, Mahound  
and thee.

Die! [*DJABAL remains calm.*] Implore my  
mercy, Hakeem, that my scorn

May help me! Nay, I cannot ply thy trade;  
I am no Druse, no stabber : and thine eye,  
Thy form, are too much as they were—my  
friend

Had such. Speak! Beg for mercy at my  
foot! [*DJABAL still silent.*]

Heaven could not ask so much of me—not,  
sure,

So much. I cannot kill him so.

[*After a pause.*] Thou art

Strong in thy cause, then—dost outbrave us,  
then.

Heardst thou that one of thine accomplices,  
Thy very people, has accused thee? Meet  
His charge! Thou hast not even slain the  
Prefect

As thy own vile creed warrants. Meet that  
Druse!

Come with me and disprove him—be thou  
tried

By him, nor seek appeal! Promise me this,  
Or I will do God's office. What, shalt thou  
Boast of assassins at thy beck, yet truth  
Want even an executioner? Consent,  
Or I will strike—look in my face—I will!

*Djabal.* Give me again my khandjar, if  
thou darest! [*Loys gives it.*]

Let but one Druse accuse me, and I plunge  
This home. A Druse betray me? Let us go!  
[*Aside.*] Who has betrayed me?

[*Shouts without.*]

Hearst thou? I hear

No plainer than long years ago I heard  
That shout—but in no dream now. They  
return!

Wilt thou be leader with me, Loys? Well.

## ACT V.

*The Uninitiated Druses, filling the hall  
tumultuously, and speaking together.*

Here flock we, obeying the summons. Lo,  
Hakeem hath appeared, and the Prefect is  
dead, and we return to Lebanon! My manu-

facture of goats' fleece must, I doubt, soon fall away there. Come, old Nasif—link thine arm in mine—we fight, if needs be. Come, what is a great fight-word?—"Lebanon?" (My daughter—my daughter!)—But is Khalil to have the office of Hamza?—Nay, rather, if he be wise, the monopoly of henna and cloves. Where is Hakeem?—The only prophet I ever saw, prophesied at Cairo once, in my youth: a little black Copht, dressed all in black too, with a great stripe of yellow cloth flapping down behind him like the back-fin of a water-serpent. Is this he? Biamrallah! Biamreh! HAKEEM!

*Enter the NUNCIO, with Guards.*

*Nuncio* [to his Attendants]. Hold both, the sorcerer and this accomplice

Ye talk of, that accuseth him! And tell Sir Loys he is mine, the Church's hope: Bid him approve himself our Knight indeed! Lo, this black disemboгуing of the Isle!

[*To the Druses.*] Ah children, what a sight for these old eyes

That kept themselves alive this voyage through To smile their very last on you! I came

To gather one and all you wandering sheep Into my fold, as though a father came . . .

As though, in coming, a father should . . .

[*To his Guards.*] (Ten, twelve—Twelve guards of you, and not an outlet? None?

The wizards stop each avenue? Keep close!)

[*To the Druses.*] As if one came to a son's house, I say,

Sodid I come—no guard with me—to find . . .

Alas—alas!

*A Druse.* Who is the old man?

*Another.* Oh, ye are to shout!

Children, he styles you.

*Druses.* Ay, the Prefect's slain!

Glory to the Khalif, our Father!

*Nuncio.* Even so

I find, (ye prompt aright) your father slain.

While most he plotted for your good, that father (Alas, how kind, ye never knew)—lies slain.

[*Aside.*] (And hell's worm gnaw the glozing knave—with me,

For being duped by his cajoleries!

Are these the Christians? These the docile crew

My bezants went to make me Bishop o'er?)

[*To his Attendants, who whisper.*] What say ye does this wizard style himself?

Hakeem? Biamrallah? The third Fatemite?

What is this jargon? He—the insane Khalif,

Dead near three hundred years ago, come back In flesh and blood again?

*Druses.* He mutters! Hear ye?

He is blaspheming Hakeem. The old man

Is our dead Prefect's friend. Tear him!

*Nuncio.* Ye dare not.

I stand here with my five-and-seventy years,

The Patriarch's power behind me; God's above.

Those years have witnessed sin enough; ere now

Misguided men arose against their lords,

And found excuse; but ye, to be enslaved

By sorceries, cheats—alas! the same tricks, tried

On my poor children in this nook o' the earth,

Could triumph, that have been successively

Exploded, laughed to scorn, all nations through:

"*Romatoï, Ioudaioïte kai proselutoï,*

"Cretes and Arabians"—you are duped the last.

Said I, refrain from tearing me? I pray ye

Tear me! Shall I return to tell the Patriarch

That so much love was wasted—every gift

Rejected, from his benison I brought,

Down to the galley-full of bezants, sunk

An hour since at the harbour's mouth, by that . . .

That . . . never will I speak his hated name!

[*To his Servants.*] What was the name his fellow slip-fetter

Called their arch-wizard by? [*They whisper.*]

Oh, Djabal was't?

*Druses.* But how a sorcerer? false whereto?

*Nuncio.* (Ay, Djabal!)

How false? Ye know not, Djabal has confessed . . .

Nay, that by tokens found on him we learn . . .

What I sailed hither solely to divulge—

How by his spells the demons were allured  
To seize you : not that these be aught save lies  
And mere illusions. Is this clear ? I say,  
By measures such as these, he would have  
led you

Into a monstrous ruin : follow ye ?

Say, shall ye perish for his sake, my sons ?

*Druses.* Hark ye !

*Nuncio.* —Be of one privilege amerced ?  
No ! Infinite the Patriarch's mercies are !  
No ! With the Patriarch's licence, still I  
bid

Tear him to pieces who misled you ! Haste !

*Druses.* The old man's beard shakes, and  
his eyes are white fire ! After all, I know  
nothing of Djabal beyond what Karshook  
says ; he knows but what Khalil says, who  
knows just what Djabal says himself. Now,  
the little Copht Prophet, I saw at Cairo in  
my youth, began by promising each bystander  
three full measures of wheat . . .

*Enter KHALIL and the initiated DRUSES.*

*Khalil.* Venice and her deliverance are at  
hand :

Their fleet stands through the harbour. Hath  
he slain

The Prefect yet ? Is Djabal's change come  
yet ?

*Nuncio* [to Attendants]. What's this of  
Venice ? Who's this boy ?

[Attendants *whisper*.] One Khalil ?

Djabal's accomplice, Loys called, but now,  
The only Druse, save Djabal's self, to fear ?

[*To the Druses.*] I cannot hear ye with  
these aged ears :

Is it so ? Ye would have my troops assist ?

Doth he abet him in his sorceries ?

Down with the cheat, guards, as my children  
bid ! [*They spring at KHALIL ; as*

*he beats them back,*

Stay ! No more bloodshed ! Spare deluded  
youth !

Whom seek'st thou ? (I will teach him)—  
whom, my child ?

Thou know'st not what these know, what  
these declare.

I am an old man as thou seest—have done

With life ; and what should move me but  
the truth ?

Art thou the only fond one of thy tribe ?

'Tis I interpret for thy tribe.

*Khalil.*

Oh, this

Is the expected Nuncio ! Druses, hear—

Endure ye this ? Unworthy to partake

The glory Hakeem gains you ! While I speak,

The ships touch land : who makes for  
Lebanon ?

They plant the winged lion in these halls !

*Nuncio* [*aside*]. If it be true ! Venice ?

Oh, never true !

Yet Venice would so gladly thwart our  
Knights,

So fain get footing here, stand close by  
Rhodes !

Oh, to be duped this way !

*Khalil.*

Ere he appear

And lead you gloriously, repent, I say !

*Nuncio* [*aside*]. Nor any way to stretch  
the arch-wizard stark

Ere the Venetians come ? Cut off the head,

The trunk were easily stilled. [*To the*  
*Druses.*] He ? Bring him forth !

Since so you needs will have it, I assent.

You'd judge him, say you, on the spot—  
confound

The sorcerer in his very circle ? Where's

Our short black-bearded sallow friend who  
swore

He'd earn the Patriarch's guerdon by one  
stab ?

Bring Djabal forth at once !

*Druses.*

Ay, bring him forth !

The Patriarch drives a trade in oil and silk,

And we're the Patriarch's children—true  
men, we !

Where is the glory ? Show us all the glory !

*Khalil.* You dare not so insult him !

What, not see . . .

(I tell thee, Nuncio, these are uninstructed,  
Untrusting : they know nothing of our Khalif !)

—Not see that if he lets a doubt arise

'Tis but to give yourselves the chance of  
seeming

To have some influence in your own Return !  
That all may say ye would have trusted him

Without the all-convincing glory—ay,  
And did! Embrace the occasion, friends!

For, think—

What wonder when his change takes place?

But now

For your sakes, he should not reveal himself.

No: could I ask and have, I would not ask

The change yet!

*Enter DJABAL and LOYS.*

Spite of all, reveal thyself!

I had said, pardon them for me—for Anael—

For our sakes pardon these besotted men—

Ay, for thine own—they hurt not thee! Yet  
now

One thought swells in me and keeps down all  
else.

This Nuncio couples shame with thee, has  
called

Imposture thy whole course, all bitter things  
Has said: he is but an old fretful man!

Hakeem—nay, I must call thee Hakeem now—  
Reveal thyself! See! Where is Anael? Sec!

*Loys [to DJABAL].* Here are thy people.

Keep thy word to me!

*Djabal.* Who of my people hath accused me?

*Nuncio.* So!

So this is Djabal, Hakeem, and what not?

A fit deed, Loys, for thy first Knight's day!

May it be augury of thy after-life!

Ever prove truncheon of the Church as now

That, Nuncio of the Patriarch, having  
charge

Of the Isle here, I claim thee [*turning to*  
DJABAL] as these bid me,

Forfeit for murder done thy lawful prince,

Thou conjurer that peep'st and mutterest!

Why should I hold thee from their hands?  
(Spells, children?

But hear how I dispose of all his spells!)

Thou art a prophet?—wouldst entice thy  
tribe

From me?—thou workest miracles? (Attend!

Let him but move me with his spells!) I,  
Nuncio . . .

*Djabal.* . . Which how thou camest to be,

I say not now,

Though I have also been at Stamboul, Luke!

Ply thee with spells, forsooth! What need  
of spells?

If Venice, in her Admiral's person, stoop

To ratify thy compact with her foe,

The Hospitallers, for this Isle—withdraw

Her warrant of the deed which reinstates

My people in their freedom, tricked away

By him I slew,—refuse to convoy us

To Lebanon and keep the Isle we leave—

Then will be time to try what spells can do!

Dost thou dispute the Republic's power?

*Nuncio.*

Lo ye!

He tempts me too, the wily exorcist!

No! The renowned Republic was and is

The Patriarch's friend: 'tis not for courting  
Venice

That I—that these implore thy blood of me.

Lo ye, the subtle miscreant! Ha, so  
subtle?

Ye, Druses, hear him. Will ye be deceived?

How he evades me! Where's the miracle

He works? I bid him to the proof—fish up

Your galley-full of bezants that he sank!

That were a miracle! One miracle!

Enough of trifling, for it chafes my years.

I am the Nuncio, Druses! I stand forth

To save you from the good Republic's rage

When she shall find her fleet was summoned  
here

To aid the mummeries of a knave like this.

[*As the Druses hesitate, his*

*Attendants whisper.*

Ah, well suggested! Why, we hold the while

One who, his close confederate till now,

Confesses Djabal at the last a cheat,

And every miracle a cheat. Who throws me

His head? I make three offers, once I offer,—

And twice . . .

*Djabal.*

Let who moves perish at

my foot!

*Khalil.* Thanks, Hakeem, thanks! Oh,  
Anael, Maani,

Why tarry they?

*Druses [to each other].* He can! He can!  
Live fire—

[*To the NUNCIO.*] I say he can, old man!  
Thou know'st him not.

Live fire like that thou seest now in his eyes,

Plays fawning round him. See ! The change begins.

All the brow lightens as he lifts his arm.

Look not at me ! It was not I !

*Djabal.* What Druse  
Accused me, as he saith ? I bid each bone  
Crumble within that Druse ! None, Loys,  
none

Of my own people, as thou said'st, have  
raised

A voice against me.

*Nuncio* [*aside*]. Venice to come ! Death !

*Djabal* [*continuing*]. Confess and go un-  
scathed, however false !

Seest thou my Druses, Luke ? I would sub-  
mit

To thy pure malice did one Druse confess !  
How said I, Loys ?

*Nuncio* [*to his Attendants who whisper*].

Ah, ye counsel so ?

[*Aloud.*] Bring in the witness, then, who,  
first of all,

Disclosed the treason ! Now I have thee,  
wizard !

Ye hear that ? If one speaks, he bids you  
tear him

Joint after joint : well then, one does speak !  
One,

Befooled by Djabal, even as yourselves,

But who hath voluntarily proposed

To expiate, by confessing thus, the fault  
Of having trusted him.

[*They bring in a veiled Druse.*]

*Loys.* Now, Djabal, now !

*Nuncio.* Friend, Djabal fronts thee ! Make  
a ring, sons. Speak !

Expose this Djabal—what he was, and  
how :

The wiles he used, the aims he cherished : all,

Explicitly as late 'twas spoken to these

My servants : I absolve and pardon thee.

*Loys.* Thou hast the dagger ready, Djabal ?

*Djabal.* Speak,  
Recreant !

*Druses.* Stand back, fool ! farther ! Sud-  
denly

You shall see some huge serpent glide from  
under

The empty vest, or down will thunder crash !  
Back, Khalil !

*Khalil.* I go back ? Thus go I back !

[*To ANAEL.*] Unveil ! Nay, thou shalt face  
the Khalil ! Thus !

[*He tears away ANAEL'S veil ; DJABAL  
folds his arms and bows his head ;  
the Druses fall back ; LOYS springs  
from the side of DJABAL and the  
NUNCIO.*]

*Loys.* Then she was true—she only of  
them all !

True to her eyes—may keep those glorious  
eyes,

And now be mine, once again mine ! Oh,  
Anael !

Dared I think thee a partner in his crime—  
That blood could soil that hand ? nay, 'tis  
mine—Anael,

—Not mine ?—who offer thee before all  
these

My heart, my sword, my name—so thou wilt  
say

That Djabal, who affirms thou art his bride,  
Lies—say but that he lies !

*Djabal.* Thou, Anael ?

*Loys.* Nay, Djabal, nay, one chance for  
me—the last !

Thou hast had every other ; thou hast spoken  
Days, nights, what falsehood listed thee—let  
me

Speak first now ; I will speak now !

*Nuncio.* Loys, pause !

Thou art the Duke's son, Bretagne's choicest  
stock,

Loys of Dreux, God's sepulchre's first sword :

This wilt thou spit on, this degrade, this  
trample

To earth ?

*Loys* [*to ANAEL*]. Who had foreseen that  
one day Loys

Would stake these gifts against some other  
good

In the whole world ? I give them thee ! I  
would

My strong will might bestow real shape on  
them,

That I might see, with my own eyes, thy foot

Tread on their very neck ! 'Tis not by gifts  
I put aside this Djabal : we will stand—

We do stand, see, two men ! Djabal, stand  
forth !

Who's worth her, I or thou ? I—who for  
Anael

Uprightly, purely kept my way, the long  
True way—left thee each by-path, boldly  
lived

Without the lies and blood,—or thou, or thou ?  
Me ! love me, Anael ! Leave the blood and  
him !

[To DJABAL.] Now speak—now, quick on  
this that I have said,—

Thou with the blood, speak if thou art a man !  
*Djabal [to ANAEL].* And was it thou be-  
trayedst me ? 'Tis well !

I have deserved this of thee, and submit.  
Nor 'tis much evil thou inflictest : life  
Ends here. The cedars shall not wave  
for us :

For there was crime, and must be punishment.  
See fate ! By thee I was seduced, by thee  
I perish : yet do I—can I repent ?  
I with my Arab instinct, thwarted ever  
By my Frank policy,—and with, in turn,  
My Frank brain, thwarted by my Arab  
heart—

While these remained in equipoise, I lived  
—Nothing ; had either been predominant,  
As a Frank schemer or an Arab mystic,  
I had been something ;—now, each has  
destroyed

The other—and behold, from out their crash,  
A third and better nature rises up—  
My mere man's-nature ! And I yield to it :  
I love thee, I who did not love before !

*Anael.* Djabal !

*Djabal.* It seemed love, but it was  
not love :

How could I love while thou adoredst me ?  
Now thou despisest, art above me so  
Immeasurably ! Thou, no other, doonest  
My death now ; this my steel shall execute  
Thy judgment ; I shall feel thy hand in it.  
Oh luxury to worship, to submit,  
Transcended, doomed to death by thee !

*Anael.*

*My Djabal !*

*Djabal.* Dost hesitate ? I force thee then.

Approach,

Druses ! for I am out of reach of fate ;  
No further evil waits me. Speak the doom !  
Hear, Druses, and hear, Nuncio, and hear,  
Loys !

*Anael.* HAKEEM ! [*She falls dead.*]

[*The Druses scream, grovelling before him.*]  
*Druses.* Ah Hakeem !—not on me thy  
wrath !

Biamrallah, pardon ! never doubted I !

Ha, dog, how sayest thou ?

[*They surround and seize the NUNCIO  
and his Guards. LOYS flings him-  
self upon the body of ANAEL, on  
which DJABAL continues to gaze  
as stupefied.*]

*Nuncio.* Caitiffs ! Have ye eyes ?  
Whips, racks should teach you ! What, his  
fools ? his dupes ?

Leave me ! Unhand me !

*Khalil [approaching DJABAL timidly].*  
Save her for my sake !

She was already thine ; she would have shared  
To-day thine exaltation : think, this day  
Her hair was plaited thus because of thee !  
Yes, feel the soft bright hair—feel !

*Nuncio [struggling with those who have  
seized him].* What, because

His leman dies for him ? You think it hard  
To die ? Oh, would you were at Rhodes,  
and choice

Of deaths should suit you !

*Khalil [bending over ANAEL'S body].*

Just restore her life !

So little does it ! there—the eyelids tremble !  
'Twas not my breath that made them : and  
the lips

Move of themselves. I could restore, her life !  
Hakeem, we have forgotten—have presumed  
On our free converse : we are better taught.  
Sec, I kiss—how I kiss thy garment's hem  
For her ! She kisses it—Oh, take her deed  
In mine ! Thou dost believe now, Anael ?—

See,

She smiles ! Were her lips open o'er the teeth  
Thus, when I spoke first ? She believes in  
thee !



Go not without her to the cedars, lord !  
 Or leave us both—I cannot go alone !  
 I have obeyed thee, if I dare so speak :  
 Hath Hakeem thus forgot all Djabal knew ?  
 Thou feelest then my tears fall hot and fast  
 Upon thy hand, and yet thou speakest not ?  
 Ere the Venetian trumpet sound—ere thou  
 Exalt thyself, O Hakeem ! save thou her !

*Nuncio.* And the accursed Republic will  
 arrive  
 And find me in their toils—dead, very like,  
 Under their feet !

What way—not one way yet  
 To foil them ? None ?

[*Observing DJABAL'S face.*

What ails the Khalif? Ah,  
 That ghastly face ! A way to foil them yet !  
 [ *To the Druses.* ] Look to your Khalif, Druses !

Is that face  
 God Hakeem's? Where is triumph,—where  
 is . . . what

Said he of exaltation—hath he promised  
 So much to-day? Why then, exalt thyself !  
 Cast off that husk, thy form, set free thy soul  
 In splendour ! Now, bear witness ! here I  
 stand—

I challenge him exalt himself, and I  
 Become, for that, a Druse like all of you !

*The Druses.* Exalt thyself ! Exalt thyself,  
 O Hakeem !

*Djabal [advances].* I can confess now all  
 from first to last.

There is no longer shame for me. I am . . .

[*Here the Venetian trumpet sounds :  
 the Druses shout, DJABAL'S eye  
 catches the expression of those about  
 him, and, as the old dream comes  
 back, he is again confident and  
 inspired.*

—Am I not Hakeem? And ye would have  
 crawled

But yesterday within these impure courts  
 Where now ye stand erect ! Not grand enough?

—What more could be conceded to such beasts  
 As all of you, so sunk and base as you,  
 Than a mere man? A man among such beasts  
 Was miracle enough : yet him you doubt,  
 Him you forsake, him fain would you destroy—

With the Venetians at your gate, the Nuncio  
 Thus—(see the baffled hypocrite !) and, best,  
 The Prefect there !

*Druses.* No, Hakeem, ever thine !

*Nuncio.* He lies—and twice he lies—and  
 thrice he lies !

Exalt thyself, Mahound ! Exalt thyself !

*Djabal.* Druses ! we shall henceforth be  
 far away—

Out of mere mortal ken—above the cedars—  
 But we shall see ye go, hear ye return,  
 Repeopling the old solitudes,—through thee,  
 My Khalil ! Thou art full of me : I fill  
 Thee full—my hands thus fill thee ! Yestereve,  
 —Nay, but this morn, I deemed thee ignorant  
 Of all to do, requiring word of mine  
 To teach it : now, thou hast all gifts in one,  
 With truth and purity go other gifts,  
 All gifts come clustering to that. Go,  
 lead

My people home whate'er betide !

[*Turning to the Druses.*] Ye take  
 This Khalil for my delegate? To him  
 Bow as to me? He leads to Lebanon—  
 Ye follow?

*Druses.* We follow ! Now exalt thyself !

*Djabal [raises LOYS].* Then to thee, Loys !  
 How I wronged thee, Loys !

Yet, wronged, no less thou shalt have full  
 revenge,

Fit for thy noble self, revenge—and thus.  
 Thou, loaded with such wrongs, the princely  
 soul,

The first sword of Christ's sepulchre—thou  
 shalt

Guard Khalil and my Druses home again !  
 Justice, no less, God's justice and no more,  
 For those I leave ! To seeking this, devote  
 Some few days out of thy Knight's brilliant  
 life :

And, this obtained them, leave their Lebanon,  
 My Druses' blessing in thine ears—(they  
 shall

Bless thee with blessing sure to have its  
 way)

—One cedar-blossom in thy duca! cap,  
 One thought of Anael in thy heart,—per-  
 chance,

One thought of him who thus, to bid thee  
speed,

His last word to the living speaks! This  
done,

Resume thy course, and, first amidst the  
first

In Europe, take my heart along with thee!

Go boldly, go serenely, go augustly—

What shall withstand thee then?

[*He bends over ANAEL.*] And last to  
thee!

Ah, did I dream I was to have, this day,

Exalted thee? A vain dream: hast thou  
not

Won greater exaltation? What remains

But press to thee, exalt myself to thee?

Thus I exalt myself, set free my soul!

[*He stabs himself. As he falls, supported by KHALIL and LOYS, the Venetians enter; the ADMIRAL advances.*

*Admiral.* God and St. Mark for Venice!

Plant the Lion!

[*At the clash of the planted standard, the Druses shout and move tumultuously forward, LOYS drawing his sword.*

*Djabal* [*leading them a few steps between KHALIL and LOYS*]. On to the Mountain! At the Mountain, Druses! [*Dies.*

# A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON;

## A TRAGEDY.

1843.

### A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON.

#### PERSONS.

MILDRED TRESHAM.

GUENDOLEN TRESHAM.

THOROLD, Earl Tresham.

AUSTIN TRESHAM.

HENRY, Earl Mertoun.

GERARD, and other retainers of Lord Tresham.

TIME, 17—.

#### ACT I.

SCENE I.—*The interior of a lodge in LORD TRESHAM'S park. Many Retainers crowded at the window, supposed to command a view of the entrance to his mansion. GERARD, the warreners, his back to a table on which are flagons, etc.*

1st Retainer. Ay, do! push, friends, and then you'll push down me!

—What for? Does any hear a runner's foot Or a steed's trample or a coach-wheel's cry?

Is the Earl come or his least poursuivant? But there's no breeding in a man of you Save Gerard yonder: here's a half-place yet, Old Gerard!

Gerard. Save your courtesies, my friend. Here is my place.

2nd Retainer. Now, Gerard, out with it! What makes you sullen, this of all the days I' the year? To-day that young rich bountiful Handsome Earl Mertoun, whom alone they match

With our Lord Tresham through the country-side,

Is coming here in utmost bravery To ask our master's sister's hand?

Gerard. What then?

2nd Retainer. What then? Why, you, she speaks to, if she meets

Your worship, smiles on as you hold apart The boughs to let her through her forest walks,

You, always favourite for your no-deserts, You've heard, these three days, how Earl Mertoun sues

To lay his heart and house and broad lands too

At Lady Mildred's feet: and while we squeeze Ourselves into a mousehole lest we miss One congee of the least page in his train, You sit o' one side—"there's the Earl," say I—

"What then?" say you!

3rd Retainer. I'll wager he has let Both swans he tamed for Lady Mildred swim Over the falls and gain the river!

Gerard. Ralph,

Is not to-morrow my inspecting-day

For you and for your hawks?

4th Retainer. Let Gerard be! He's coarse-grained, like his carved black cross-bow stock.

Ha, look now, while we squabble with him, look!

Well done, now—is not this beginning, now, To purpose?

1st Retainer. Our retainers look as fine— That's comfort. Lord, how Richard holds himself

With his white staff! Will not a knave behind Prick him upright?

4th Retainer. He's only bowing, fool! The Earl's man bent us lower by this much.

1st Retainer. That's comfort. Here's a very cavalcade!

3rd Retainer. I don't see wherefore Richard, and his troop

Of silk and silver varlets there, should find  
Their perfumed selves so indispensable  
On high days, holidays! Would it so disgrace  
Our family, if I, for instance, stood—  
In my right hand a cast of Swedish hawks,  
A leash of greyhounds in my left?—

Gerard. —With Hugh

The logman for supporter, in his right  
The bill-hook, in his left the brushwood-  
shears!

3rd Retainer. Out on you, crab! What next, what next? The Earl!

1st Retainer. Oh Walter, groom, our horses, do they match

The Earl's? Alas, that first pair of the six—  
They paw the ground—Ah Walter! and that brute

Just on his haunches by the wheel!

6th Retainer. Ay—ay!

You, Philip, are a special hand, I hear,  
At soups and sauces: what's a horse to you?  
D'ye mark that beast they've slid into the midst

So cunningly?—then, Philip, mark this further;

No leg has he to stand on!

1st Retainer. No? That's comfort.

2nd Retainer. Peace, Cook! The Earl descends. Well, Gerard, see

The Earl at least! Come, there's a proper man,

I hope! Why, Ralph, no falcon, Pole or Swede,

Has got a starrier eye.

3rd Retainer. His eyes are blue:

But leave my hawks alone!

4th Retainer. So young, and yet

So tall and shapely!

5th Retainer. Here's Lord Tresham's self!

There now—there's what a nobleman should be!

He's older, graver, loftier, he's more like  
A House's head.

2nd Retainer. But you'd not have a boy—  
—And what's the Earl beside?—possess too soon

That stateliness?

1st Retainer. Our master takes his hand—  
Richard and his white staff are on the move—  
Back fall our people—(tsh!—there's Timothy  
Sure to get tangled in his ribbon-ties,  
And Peter's cursed rosette's a-coming off!)  
—At last I see our lord's back and his friend's;

And the whole beautiful bright company  
Close round them—in they go! [*Jumping down from the window-bench, and making for the table and its jugs.*]

Good health, long life,

Great joy to our Lord Tresham and his House!

6th Retainer. My father drove his father first to court,

After his marriage-day—ay, did he!

2nd Retainer. God bless

Lord Tresham, Lady Mildred, and the Earl!  
Here, Gerard, reach your beaker!

Gerard. Drink, my boys!

Don't mind me—all's not right about me—  
drink!

2nd Retainer [*aside*]. He's vexed, now,  
that he let the show escape!

[*To GERARD.*] Remember that the Earl returns this way.

Gerard. That way?

2nd Retainer. Just so.

Gerard. Then my way's here.

[*Goes.*]

2nd Retainer. Old Gerard

Will die soon—mind, I said it! He was used  
To care about the pitifullest thing

That touched the House's honour, not an eye  
But his could see wherein: and on a cause

Of scarce a quarter this importance, Gerard  
Fairly had fretted flesh and bone away

In cares that this was right, nor that was  
wrong,

Such point decorous, and such square by  
rule—

He knew such niceties, no herald more:

And now—you see his humour: die he will!

*2nd Retainer.* God help him! Who's for the great servants'-hall  
To hear what's going on inside? They'd follow

Lord Tresham into the saloon.

*3rd Retainer.* I!—

*4th Retainer.* I!—

Leave Frank alone for catching, at the door,  
Some hint of how the parley goes inside!  
Prosperity to the great House once more!  
Here's the last drop!

*1st Retainer.* Have at you! Boys,  
hurrah!

SCENE II.—*A Saloon in the Mansion.*

*Enter* LORD TRESHAM, LORD MERTOUN,  
AUSTIN, and GUENDOLEN.

*Tresham.* I welcome you, Lord Mertoun,  
yet once more,  
To this ancestral roof of mine. Your name  
—Noble among the noblest in itself,  
Yet taking in your person, fame avers,  
New price and lustre,—(as that gem you  
wear,  
Transmitted from a hundred knightly breasts,  
Fresh chased and set and fixed by its last lord,  
Seems to re-kindle at the core)—your name  
Would win you welcome!—

*Mertoun.* Thanks!

*Tresham.* —But add to that,  
The worthiness and grace and dignity  
Of your proposal for uniting both  
Our Houses even closer than respect  
Unites them now—add these, and you must  
grant

One favour more, nor that the least,—to think  
The welcome I should give;—'tis given!

My lord,

My only brother, Austin: he's the king's.  
Our cousin, Lady Guendolen—betrothed  
To Austin: all are yours.

*Mertoun.* I thank you—less

For the expressed commendings which your  
seal,

And only that, authenticates—forbids

My putting from me . . . to my heart I take

Your praise . . . but praise less claims my  
gratitude,

Than the indulgent insight it implies  
Of what must needs be uppermost with one  
Who comes, like me, with the bare leave to  
ask,

In weighed and measured unimpassioned  
words,

A gift, which, if as calmly 'tis denied,  
He must withdraw, content upon his cheek,  
Despair within his soul. That I dare ask  
Firmly, near boldly, near with confidence  
That gift, I have to thank you. Yes, Lord  
Tresham,

I love your sister—as you'd have one love  
That lady . . . oh more, more I love her!  
Wealth,

Rank, all the world thinks me, they're yours,  
you know,  
To hold or part with, at your choice—but  
grant

My true self, me without a rood of land,  
A piece of gold, a name of yesterday,  
Grant me that lady, and you . . . Death or  
life?

*Guendolen* [*apart to* AUSTIN]. Why, this  
is loving, Austin!

*Austin.* He's so young!

*Guendolen.* Young? Old enough, I think,  
to half surmise

He never had obtained an entrance here,  
Were all this fear and trembling needed.

*Austin.* Hush!

He reddens.

*Guendolen.* Mark him, Austin; that's true  
love!

Ours must begin again.

*Tresham.* We'll sit, my lord.

Ever with best desert goes diffidence.

I may speak plainly nor be misconceived.

That I am wholly satisfied with you

On this occasion, when a falcon's eye

Were dull compared with mine to search out  
faults,

Is somewhat. Mildred's hand is hers to give  
Or to refuse.

*Mertoun.* But you, you grant my suit?

I have your word if hers?

- Tresham.* My best of words  
If hers encourage you. I trust it will.  
Have you seen Lady Mildred, by the way?  
*Mertoun.* I . . . I . . . our two de-  
mesnes, remember, touch ;  
I have been used to wander carelessly  
After my stricken game : the heron roused  
Deep in my woods, has trailed its broken wing  
Thro' thickets and glades a mile in yours,—or  
else  
Some eyass<sup>1</sup> ill-reclaimed has taken flight  
And lured me after her from tree to tree,  
I marked not whither. I have come upon  
The lady's wondrous beauty unaware,  
And—and then . . . I have seen her.  
*Guendolen* [*aside to AUSTIN*]. Note that  
mode  
Of faltering out that, when a lady passed,  
He, having eyes, did see her ! You had said—  
“On such a day I scanned her, head to foot ;  
“Observed a red, where red should not have  
been,  
“Outside her elbow ; but was pleased enough  
“Upon the whole.” Let such irreverent talk  
Be lessoned for the future !  
*Tresham.* What's to say  
May be said briefly. She has never known  
A mother's care ; I stand for father too.  
Her beauty is not strange to you, it seems—  
You cannot know the good and tender  
heart,  
Its girl's trust and its woman's constancy,  
How pure yet passionate, how calm yet kind,  
How grave yet joyous, how reserved yet free  
As light where friends are—how imbued with  
lore  
The world most prizes, yet the simplest, yet  
The . . . one might know I talked of Mildred  
—thus  
We brothers talk !  
*Mertoun.* I thank you.  
*Tresham.* In a word,  
Control's not for this lady ; but her wish  
To please me outstrips in its subtlety  
My power of being pleased : herself creates  
The want she means to satisfy. My heart  
Prefers your suit to her as 'twere its own.  
Can I say more?  
*Mertoun.* No more—thanks, thanks  
—no more !  
*Tresham.* This matter then discussed . . .  
*Mertoun.* —We'll waste no breath  
On aught less precious. I'm beneath the  
roof  
Which holds her : while I thought of that,  
my speech  
To you would wander—as it must not do,  
Since as you favour me I stand or fall.  
I pray you suffer that I take my leave !  
*Tresham.* With less regret 'tis suffered,  
that again  
We meet, I hope, so shortly.  
*Mertoun.* We? again?—  
Ah yes, forgive me—when shall . . . you  
will crown  
Your goodness by forthwith apprising me  
When . . . if . . . the lady will appoint a  
day  
For me to wait on you—and her.  
*Tresham.* So soon  
As I am made acquainted with her thoughts  
On your proposal—howsoever they lean—  
A messenger shall bring you the result.  
*Mertoun.* You cannot bind me more to  
you, my lord.  
Farewell till we renew . . . I trust, renew  
A converse ne'er to disunite again.  
*Tresham.* So may it prove !  
*Mertoun.* You, lady, you,  
sir, take  
My humble salutation !  
*Guendolen and Austin.* Thanks !  
*Tresham.* Within there !  
[*Servants enter. TRESHAM conducts*  
*MERTOUN to the door. Meantime*  
*AUSTIN remarks,*  
Well,  
Here I have an advantage of the Earl,  
Confess now ! I'd not think that all was safe  
Because my lady's brother stood my friend !  
Why, he makes sure of her—“do you say,  
yes—  
“She'll not say, no,”—what comes it to  
beside?

<sup>1</sup> Young hawk.

- I should have prayed the brother, "speak this speech,  
 "For Heaven's sake urge this on her—put in this—  
 "Forget not, as you'd save me, t'other thing,—  
 "Then set down what she says, and how she looks,  
 "And if she smiles, and" (in an under breath)  
 "Only let her accept me, and do you  
 "And all the world refuse me, if you dare!"  
*Guendolen.* That way you'd take, friend Austin? What a shame  
 I was your cousin, tamely from the first  
 Your bride, and all this fervour's run to waste!  
 Do you know you speak sensibly to-day?  
 The Earl's a fool.  
*Austin.* Here's Thorold. Tell him so!  
*Tresham* [returning]. Now, voices, voices!  
 'St! the lady's first!  
 How seems he?—seems he not . . . come, faith give fraud  
 The mercy-stroke whenever they engage!  
 Down with fraud, up with faith! How seems the Earl?  
 A name! a blazon! if you knew their worth,  
 As you will never! come—the Earl?  
*Guendolen.* He's young.  
*Tresham.* What's she? an infant save in heart and brain.  
 Young! Mildred is fourteen, remark! And you . . .  
 Austin, how old is she?  
*Guendolen.* There's tact for you!  
 I meant that being young was good excuse  
 If one should tax him . . .  
*Tresham.* Well?  
*Guendolen.* —With lacking wit.  
*Tresham.* He lacked wit? Where might he lack wit, so please you?  
*Guendolen.* In standing straighter than the steward's rod  
 And making you the tiresomest harangue,  
 Instead of slipping over to my side  
 And softly whispering in my ear, "Sweet lady,  
 "Your cousin there will do me detriment  
 "He little dreams of: he's absorbed, I see,  
 "In my old name and fame—be sure he'll leave  
 "My Mildred, when his best account of me  
 "Is ended, in full confidence I wear  
 "My grandsire's periwig down either cheek.  
 "I'm lost unless your gentleness vouchsafes" . . .  
*Tresham.* . . . "To give a best of best accounts, yourself,  
 "Of me and my demerits." You are right!  
 He should have said what now I say for him.  
 You golden creature, will you help us all?  
 Here's Austin means to vouch for much, but you  
 —You are . . . what Austin only knows!  
 Come up,  
 All three of us: she's in the library  
 No doubt, for the day's wearing fast. Precede!  
*Guendolen.* Austin, how we must—!  
*Tresham.* Must what? Must speak truth,  
 Malignant tongue! Detect one fault in him!  
 I challenge you!  
*Guendolen.* Witchcraft's a fault in him,  
 For you're bewitched.  
*Tresham.* What's urgent we obtain  
 Is, that she soon receive him—say, to-morrow—  
 Next day at furthest.  
*Guendolen.* Ne'er instruct me!  
*Tresham.* Come!  
 —He's out of your good graces, since forsooth,  
 He stood not as he'd carry us by storm  
 With his perfections! You're for the composed  
 Manly assured becoming confidence!  
 Get her to say, "to-morrow," and I'll give you . . .  
 I'll give you black Urganda, to be spoiled  
 With petting and snail-paces. Will you?  
 Come!
- SCENE III.—MILDRED'S chamber. A painted window overlooks the park.  
 MILDRED and GUENDOLEN  
*Guendolen.* Now, Mildred, spare those pains. I have not left  
 Our talkers in the library, and climbed

The wearisome ascent to this your bower  
In company with you,—I have not dared . . .  
Nay, worked such prodigies as sparing you  
Lord Mertoun's pedigree before the flood,  
Which Thorold seemed in very act to tell  
—Or bringing Austin to pluck up that most  
Firm-rooted heresy—your suitor's eyes,  
He would maintain, were grey instead of  
blue—

I think I brought him to contrition !—Well,  
I have not done such things, (all to deserve  
A minute's quiet cousin's talk with you,)  
To be dismissed so coolly.

*Mildred.* Guendolen !

What have I done ? what could suggest . . .

*Guendolen.* There, there !

Do I not comprehend you'd be alone  
To throw those testimonies in a heap,  
Thorold's enlargings, Austin's brevities,  
With that poor silly heartless Guendolen's  
Ill-timed misplaced attempted smartnesses—  
And sift their sense out ? now, I come to  
spare you

Nearly a whole night's labour. Ask and have !  
Demand, be answered ! Lack I ears and eyes ?  
Am I perplexed which side of the rock-table  
The Conqueror dined on when he landed  
first,

Lord Mertoun's ancestor was bidden take—  
The bow-hand or the arrow-hand's great  
meed ?

Mildred, the Earl has soft blue eyes !

*Mildred.* My brother—

Did he . . . you said that he received him  
well ?

*Guendolen.* If I said only "well" I said  
not much.

Oh, stay—which brother ?

*Mildred.* Thorold ! who—who else ?

*Guendolen.* Thorold (a secret) is too proud  
by half,—

Nay, hear me out—with us he's even gentler  
Than we are with our birds. Of this great  
House

The least retainer that e'er caught his glance  
Would die for him, real dying—no mere talk :  
And in the world, the court, if men would  
cite

The perfect spirit of honour, Thorold's name  
Rises of its clear nature to their lips.  
But he should take men's homage, trust in it,  
And care no more about what drew it down.  
He has desert, and that, acknowledgment ;  
Is he content ?

*Mildred.* You wrong him, Guendolen.

*Guendolen.* He's proud, confess ; so proud  
with brooding o'er

The light of his interminable line,  
An ancestry with men all paladins,  
And women all . . .

*Mildred.* Dear Guendolen, 'tis late !  
When yonder purple pane the climbing moon  
Pierces, I know 'tis midnight.

*Guendolen.* Well, that Thorold  
Should rise up from such musings, and receive  
One come audaciously to graft himself  
Into this peerless stock, yet find no flaw,  
No slightest spot in such an one . . .

*Mildred.* Who finds  
A spot in Mertoun ?

*Guendolen.* Not your brother ; therefore,  
Not the whole world.

*Mildred.* I am weary, Guendolen.  
Bear with me !

*Guendolen.* I am foolish.

*Mildred.* Oh no, kind !

But I would rest.  
*Guendolen.* Good night and rest to you !  
I said how gracefully his mantle lay  
Beneath the rings of his light hair ?

*Mildred.* Brown hair.

*Guendolen.* Brown ? why, it is brown : how  
could you know that ?

*Mildred.* How ? did not you—Oh, Austin  
'twas, declared

His hair was light, not brown—my head !—  
and look,

The moon-beam purpling the dark chamber !  
Sweet,

Good night !

*Guendolen.* Forgive me—sleep the sound-  
lier for me !

[*Going, she turns suddenly.*

*Mildred* !  
Perdition ! all's discovered ! Thorold finds  
—That the Earl's greatest of all grandmothers



Was grander daughter still—to that fair dame  
Whose garter slipped down at the famous  
dance ! [Goes.

Mildred. Is she—can she be really gone  
at last ?

My heart ! I shall not reach the window.  
Needs

Must I have sinned much, so to suffer.

[She lifts the small lamp which is suspended before the Virgin's image in the window, and places it by the purple pane.

There !

[She returns to the seat in front.

Mildred and Mertoun ! Mildred, with consent

(Of all the world and Thorold, Mertoun's bride !

Too late ! 'Tis sweet to think of, sweeter still

To hope for, that this blessed end soothes up  
The curse of the beginning ; but I know  
It comes too late : 'twill sweetest be of all  
To dream my soul away and die upon.

[A noise without.

The voice ! Oh why, why glided sin the snake

Into the paradise Heaven meant us both ?

[The window opens softly.

A low voice sings.

There's a woman like a dew-drop, she's so purer  
than the purest ;

And her noble heart's the noblest, yes, and her  
sure faith's the surest :

And her eyes are dark and humid, like the depth  
on depth of lustre

Hid i' the harebell, while her tresses, sunnier  
than the wild-grape cluster,

Gush in golden-tinted plenty down her neck's  
rose-misted marble :

Then her voice's music . . . call it the well's  
bubbling the bird's warble !

[A figure wrapped in a mantle  
appears at the window.

And this woman says, " My days were sunless  
and my nights were moonless,

" Parched the pleasant April herbage, and the  
lark's heart's outbreak tuneless,

" If you loved me not ! " And I who—(ah, for  
words of flame !) adore her,  
Who am mad to lay my spirit prostrate palpably  
before her—

[He enters, approaches her seat,  
and bends over her.

I may enter at her portal soon, as now her lattice  
takes me,

And by noontide as by midnight make her mine,  
as hers she makes me !

[The Earl throws off his slouches  
hat and long cloak.

My very heart sings, so I sing, Beloved !

Mildred. Sit, Henry—do not take my hand !

Mertoun. 'Tis mine.

The meeting that appalled us both so much  
Is ended.

Mildred. What begins now ?

Mertoun. Happiness

Such as the world contains not.

Mildred. That is it.

Our happiness would, as you say, exceed  
The whole world's best of blisses : we—do we  
Deserve that ? Utter to your soul, what  
mine

Long since, Beloved, has grown used to hear,  
Like a death-knell, so much regarded once,  
And so familiar now ; this will not be !

Mertoun. Oh, Mildred, have I met your  
brother's face ?

Compelled myself—if not to speak untruth,  
Yet to disguise, to shun, to put aside  
The truth, as—what had e'er prevailed on me  
Save you, to venture ? Have I gained at last  
Your brother, the one scarer of your dreams,  
And waking thoughts' sole apprehension too ?  
Does a new life, like a young sunrise, break  
On the strange unrest of our night, confused  
With rain and stormy flaw—and will you see  
No dripping blossoms, no fire-tinted drops  
On each live spray, no vapour steaming up,  
And no expressless glory in the Fast ?

When I am by you, to be ever by you,  
When I have won you and may worship you,  
Oh, Mildred, can you say " this will not be " ?

Mildred. Sin has surprised us, so will  
punishment.

*Mertoun.* No—me alone, who sinned alone !

*Mildred.* The night  
You likened our past life to—was it storm  
Throughout to you then, Henry ?

*Mertoun.* Of your life  
I spoke—what am I, what my life, to waste  
A thought about when you are by me?—you  
It was, I said my folly called the storm  
And pulled the night upon. 'Twas day with  
me—

Perpetual dawn with me.

*Mildred.* Come what, come will,  
You have been happy : take my hand !

*Mertoun* [after a pause]. How good  
Your brother is ! I figured him a cold—  
Shall I say, haughty man ?

*Mildred.* They told me all.  
I know all.

*Mertoun.* It will soon be over.  
*Mildred.* Over ?

Oh, what is over ? what must I live through  
And say, "'tis over" ? Is our meeting over ?  
Have I received in presence of them all  
The partner of my guilty love—with brow  
Trying to seem a maiden's brow—with lips  
Which make believe that when they strive to  
form

Replies to you and tremble as they strive,  
It is the nearest ever they approached  
A stranger's . . . Henry, yours that stranger's  
. . . lip—

With cheek that looks a virgin's, and that  
is . . .

Ah God, some prodigy of thine will stop  
This planned piece of deliberate wickedness  
In its birth even ! some fierce leprous spot  
Will mar the brow's dissimulating ! I  
Shall murmur no smooth speeches got by  
heart,

But, frenzied, pour forth all our woeful story,  
The love, the shame, and the despair—with  
them

Round me aghast as round some cursed fount  
That should spirt water, and spouts blood.  
I'll not

. . . Henry, you do not wish that I should  
draw

VOL. I.

This vengeance down ? I'll not affect a grace  
That's gone from me—gone once, and gone  
for ever !

*Mertoun.* Mildred, my honour is your  
own. I'll share

Disgrace I cannot suffer by myself.  
A word informs your brother I retract  
This morning's offer ; time will yet bring forth  
Some better way of saving both of us

*Mildred.* I'll meet their faces, Henry !  
*Mertoun.* When ? to-morrow !

Get done with it !

*Mildred.* Oh, Henry, not to-morrow !  
Next day ! I never shall prepare my words  
And looks and gestures sooner.—How you  
must

Despise me !

*Mertoun.* Mildred, break it if you choose,  
A heart the love of you uplifted—still  
Uplifts, thro' this protracted agony,  
To heaven ! but Mildred, answer me,—first  
pace

The chamber with me—once again—now, say  
Calmly the part, the . . . what it is of me  
You see contempt (for you did say contempt)  
Contempt for you in ! I would pluck it off  
And cast it from me !—but no—no, you'll not  
Repeat that?—will you, Mildred, repeat that ?

*Mildred.* Dear Henry !  
*Mertoun.* I was scarce a boy—e'en now  
What am I more ? And you were infantine  
When first I met you ; why, your hair fell  
loose

On either side ! My fool's-cheek reddens now  
Only in the recalling how it burned  
That morn to see the shape of many a dream

You know we boys are prodigal of charms  
To her we dream of—I had heard of one,  
Had dreamed of her, and I was close to her,  
Might speak to her, might live and die her  
own,

Who knew ? I spoke. Oh, Mildred, feel  
you not

That now, while I remember every glance  
Of yours, each word of yours, with power to  
test

And weigh them in the diamond scales of  
pride,

Resolved the treasure of a first and last  
Heart's love shall have been bartered at its  
worth,

—That now I think upon your purity  
And utter ignorance of guilt—your own  
Or other's guilt—the girlish undisguised  
Delight at a strange novel prize—(I talk  
A silly language, but interpret, you !)  
If I, with fancy at its full, and reason  
Scarce in its germ, enjoined you secrecy,  
If you had pity on my passion, pity  
On my protested sickness of the soul  
To sit beside you, hear you breathe, and watch  
Your eyelids and the eyes beneath—if you  
Accorded gifts and knew not they were  
gifts—

If I grew mad at last with enterprise  
And must behold my beauty in her bower  
Or perish—(I was ignorant of even  
My own desires—what then were you?) if  
sorrow—

Sin—if the end came—must I now renounce  
My reason, blind myself to light, say truth  
Is false and lie to God and my own soul?  
Contempt were all of this !

*Mildred.* Do you believe . . .  
Or, Henry, I'll not wrong you—you believe  
That I was ignorant. I scarce grieve o'er  
The past. We'll love on ; you will love me  
still.

*Mertoun.* Oh, to love less what one has  
injured ! Dove,  
Whose pinion I have rashly hurt, my breast—  
Shall my heart's warmth not nurse thee into  
strength?

Flower I have crushed, shall I not care for thee?  
Bloom o'er my crest, my fight-mark and  
device !

*Mildred,* I love you and you love me.

*Mildred.* Go !  
Be that your last word. I shall sleep to-night.

*Mertoun.* This is not our last meeting?

*Mildred.* One night more.

*Mertoun.* And then—think, then !

*Mildred.* Then, no  
sweet courtship-days,  
No dawning consciousness of love for us,  
No strange and palpitating births of sense

From words and looks, no innocent fears and  
hopes,

Reserves and confidences : morning's over !

*Mertoun.* How else should love's perfected  
noontide follow ?

All the dawn promised shall the day perform

*Mildred.* So may it be ! but—

You are cautious, Love ?  
Are sure that unobserved you scaled the walls ?

*Mertoun.* Oh, trust me ! Then our final  
meeting's fixed

To-morrow night ?

*Mildred.* Farewell ! Stay, Henry  
. . . wherefore ?

His foot is on the yew-tree bough ; the turf  
Receives him : now the moonlight as he runs  
Embraces him—but he must go—is gone.

Ah, once again he turns—thanks, thanks, my  
Love !

He's gone. Oh, I'll believe him every word !

I was so young, I loved him so, I had

No mother, God forgot me, and I fell.

There may be pardon yet : all's doubt beyond  
Surely the bitterness of death is past.

## ACT II.

### SCENE.—*The Library.*

*Enter LORD TRESHAM, hastily.*

*Tresham.* This way ! In, Gerard, quick !

[*As GERARD enters, TRESHAM  
secures the door.*]

Now speak ! or, wait—

I'll bid you speak directly. [*Seats himself.*]

Now repeat

Firmly and circumstantially the tale

You just now told me ; it eludes me ; either

I did not listen, or the half is gone

Away from me. How long have you lived  
here ?

Here in my house, your father kept our woods  
Before you ?

*Gerard.* —As his father did, my lord.

I have been eating, sixty years almost,

Your bread.

*Tresham.* Yes, yes. You ever were of all

The servants in my father's house, I know,  
The trusted one. You'll speak the truth.

*Gerard.* I'll speak  
God's truth. Night after night . . .

*Tresham.* Since when?

*Gerard.* At least

A month—each midnight has some man access  
To Lady Mildred's chamber.

*Tresham.* Tush, "access"—  
No wide words like "access" to me!

*Gerard.* He runs  
Along the woodside, crosses to the South,  
Takes the left tree that ends the avenue . . .

*Tresham.* The last great yew-tree?

*Gerard.* You might stand upon  
The main boughs like a platform. Then  
he . . .

*Tresham.* Quick!

*Gerard.* Climbs up, and, where they lessen  
at the top,

—I cannot see distinctly, but he throws,  
I think—for this I do not vouch—a line  
That reaches to the lady's casement—

*Tresham.* —Which  
He enters not! Gerard, some wretched fool  
Dares pry into my sister's privacy!

When such are young, it seems a precious thing  
To have approached,—to merely have ap-  
proached,

Got sight of, the abode of her they set  
Their frantic thoughts upon. He does not  
enter?

*Gerard?*

*Gerard.* There is a lamp that's full i' the  
midst,

Under a red square in the painted glass  
Of Lady Mildred's . . .

*Tresham.* Leave that name out! Well?  
That lamp?

*Gerard.* —Is moved at midnight higher up  
To one pane—a small dark-blue pane; he waits  
For that among the boughs: at sight of that,  
I see him, plain as I see you, my lord,  
Open the lady's casement, enter there . . .

*Tresham.* —And stay?

*Gerard.* An hour, two hours.

*Tresham.* And this you saw  
Once?—twice?—quick!

*Gerard.* Twenty times.

*Tresham.* And what brings you  
Under the yew-trees?

*Gerard.* The first night I left  
My range so far, to track the stranger stag

That broke the pale, I saw the man.

*Tresham.* Yet sent

No cross-bow shaft through the marauder?

*Gerard.* But

He came, my lord, the first time he was seen,

In a great moonlight, light as any day,

From Lady Mildred's chamber.

*Tresham* [after a pause]. You have  
no cause

—Who could have cause to do my sister  
wrong?

*Gerard.* Oh, my lord, only once—let me  
this once

Speak what is on my mind! Since first I  
noted

All this, I've groaned as if a fiery net

Plucked me this way and that—fire if I turned

To her, fire if I turned to you, and fire

If down I flung myself and strove to die.

The lady could not have been seven years  
old

When I was trusted to conduct her safe

Through the deer-herd to stroke the snow-  
white fawn

I brought to eat bread from her tiny hand

Within a month. She ever had a smile

To greet me with—she . . . if it could undo

What's done, to lop each limb from off this  
trunk . . .

All that is foolish talk, not fit for you—

I mean, I could not speak and bring her hurt

For Heaven's compelling. But when I was  
fixed

To hold my peace, each morsel of your food

Eaten beneath your roof, my birth-place  
too,

Choked me. I wish I had grown mad in  
doubts

What it behoved me do. This morn it  
seemed

Either I must confess to you, or die:

Now it is done, I seem the vilest worm

That crawls, to have betrayed my lady.

- Tresham.* No— Until thought settle and I see my course.  
 No, Gerard ! Avert, oh God, only this woe from me !  
*Gerard.* Let me go ! *[As he sinks his head between his arms on the table, GUENDOLEN'S voice is heard at the door.]*  
*Tresham.* A man, you say : Lord Tresham ! *[She knocks.]* Is Lord  
 What man ? Young ? Not a vulgar hind ? Tresham there ?  
 What dress ? *[TRESHAM, hastily turning, pulls down the first book above him and opens it.]*  
*Gerard.* A slouched hat and a large dark foreign cloak  
 Wraps his whole form ; even his face is hid ;  
 But I should judge him young : no hind, be sure !  
*Tresham.* Why ?  
*Gerard.* He is ever armed : his sword projects  
 Beneath the cloak.  
*Tresham.* Gerard,—I will not say  
 No word, no breath of this !  
*Gerard.* Thanks, thanks, my lord !  
*[Goes.]*  
*Tresham [paces the room. After a pause].* "The Earl"—whose worth did I asseverate  
 Oh, thought's absurd !—as with some monstrous fact Till I am very fain to hope that . . . Thorold,  
 Which, when ill thoughts beset us, seems to give What is all this ? You are not well !  
 Merciful God that made the sun and stars, *Tresham.* Who, I ?  
 The waters and the green delights of earth, You laugh at me.  
 The lie ! I apprehend the monstrous fact — *Guendolen.* Has what I'm fain to hope,  
 Yet know the maker of all worlds is good, Arrived then ? Does that huge tome show  
 And yield my reason up, inadequate some blot  
 To reconcile what yet I do behold— In the Earl's 'scutcheon come no longer back  
 Blasting my sense ! There's cheerful day Than Arthur's time ?  
 outside : *Tresham.* When left you Mildred's  
 This is my library, and this the chair chamber ?  
 My father used to sit in carelessly *Guendolen.* Oh, late enough, I told you !  
 After his soldier-fashion, while I stood The main thing  
 Between his knees to question him : and here To ask is, how I left her chamber,—sure,  
 Gerard our grey retainer,—as he says, Content yourself, she'll grant this paragon  
 Fed with our food, from sire to son, an age,— Of Earls no such ungracious . . .  
 Has told a story—I am to believe ! *Tresham.* Send her here !  
 That Mildred . . . oh, no, no ! both tales *Guendolen.* Thorold ?  
 are true, *Tresham.* I mean—acquaint  
 Her pure cheek's story and the forester's ! her, Guendolen,  
 Would she, or could she, err—much less, —But mildly !  
 confound *Guendolen.* Mildly ?  
 All guilts of treachery, of craft, of . . . *Tresham.* Ah, you guessed aright !  
 Heaven I am not well : there is no hiding it.  
 Keep me within its hand !—I will sit here But tell her I would see her at her leisure—  
 That is, at once ! here in the library !  
 The passage in that old Italian book  
 We hunted for so long is found, say, found—

And if I let it slip again . . . you see,  
That she must come—and instantly!

*Guendolen.* I'll die  
Piecemeal, record that, if there have not  
gloomed  
Some blot i' the 'scutcheon!

*Tresham.* Go! or, Guendolen,  
Be you at call,—with Austin, if you choose,—  
In the adjoining gallery! There, go!

[GUENDOLEN goes.]

Another lesson to me! You might bid  
A child disguise his heart's sore, and conduct  
Some sly investigation point by point  
With a smooth brow, as well as bid me catch  
The inquisitorial cleverness some praise.  
If you had told me yesterday, "There's one  
"You needs must circumvent and practise  
with,

"Entrap by policies, if you would worm  
"The truth out; and that one is—Mildred!"

There,  
There—reasoning is thrown away on it!  
Prove she's unchaste . . . why, you may  
after prove  
That she's a poisoner, traitress, what you will!  
Where I can comprehend nought, nought's  
to say.

Or do, or think. Force on me but the first  
Abomination,—then outpour all plagues,  
And I shall ne'er make count of them.

*Enter MILDRED.*

*Mildred.* What book  
Is it I wanted, Thorold? Guendolen  
Thought you were pale; you are not pale.

That book?  
That's Latin surely.

*Tresham.* Mildred, here's a line,  
(Don't lean on me: I'll English it for you)  
"Love conquers all things." What love  
conquers them?

What love should you esteem—best love?

*Mildred.* True love.

*Tresham.* I mean, and should have said,  
whose love is best

Of all that love or that profess to love?

*Mildred.* The list's so long: there's father's,  
mother's, husband's . . .

*Tresham.* Mildred, I do believe a brother's  
love

For a sole sister must exceed them all.  
For see now, only see! there's no alloy  
Of earth that creeps into the perfect'st gold  
Of other loves—no gratitude to claim;  
You never gave her life, not even aught  
That keeps life—never tended her, instructed,  
Enriched her—so, your love can claim no right  
O'er her save pure love's claim: that's what  
I call

Freedom from earthliness. You'll never hope  
To be such friends, for instance, she and you,  
As when you hunted cowslips in the woods  
Or played together in the meadow hay.  
Oh yes—with age, respect comes, and your  
worth

Is felt, there's growing sympathy of tastes,  
There's ripened friendship, there's confirmed  
esteem:

—Much head these make against the new-  
comer!

The startling apparition, the strange youth—  
Whom one half-hour's conversing with, or,  
say,

Mere gazing at, shall change (beyond all  
change

This Ovid ever sang about) your soul  
. . . Her soul, that is,—the sister's soul!  
With her

'Twas winter yesterday; now, all is warmth,  
The green leaf's springing and the turtle's  
voice,

"Arise and come away!" Come whither?  
—far

Enough from the esteem, respect, and all  
The brother's somewhat insignificant  
Array of rights! All which he knows before,  
Has calculated on so long ago!

I think such love, (apart from yours and  
mine,)

Contented with its little term of life,  
Intending to retire betimes, aware  
How soon the background must be place  
for it,

—I think, am sure, a brother's love exceeds  
All the world's love in its unworldliness.

*Mildred.* What is this for?

*Tresham.* This, Mildred, is it for !  
Or, no, I cannot go to it so soon !

That's one of many points my haste left out—  
Each day, each hour throws forth its silk-  
slight film

Between the being tied to you by birth,  
And you, until those slender threads compose  
A web that shrouds her daily life of hopes  
And fears and fancies, all her life, from yours :  
So close you live and yet so far apart !  
And must I rend this web, tear up, break  
down

The sweet and palpitating mystery  
That makes hersacred ? You—for you I mean,  
Shall I speak, shall I not speak ?

*Mildred.* Speak !

*Tresham.* I will.  
Is there a story men could—any man  
Could tell of you, you would conceal from  
me ?

I'll never think there's falsehood on that lip.  
Say "There is no such story men could tell,"  
And I'll believe you, though I disbelieve  
The world—the world of better men than I,  
And women such as I suppose you. Speak !  
[*After a pause.*] Not speak ? Explain then !

Clear it up then ! Move  
Some of the miserable weight away  
That presses lower than the grave ! Not speak ?  
Some of the dead weight, Mildred ! Ah, if I  
Could bring myself to plainly make their  
charge

Against you ! Must I, Mildred ? Silent still ?  
[*After a pause.*] Is there a gallant that has  
night by night

Admittance to your chamber ?

[*After a pause.*] Then, his name !  
Till now, I only had a thought for you :  
But now,—his name !

*Mildred.* Thorold, do you devise  
Fit expiation for my guilt, if fit  
There be ! 'Tis nought to say that I'll  
endure

And bless you,—that my spirit yearns to  
purge

Her stains off in the fierce renewing fire :  
But do not plunge me into other guilt !  
Oh, guilt enough ! I cannot tell his name.

*Tresham.* Then judge yourself ! How  
should I act ? Pronounce !

*Mildred.* Oh, Thorold, you must never  
tempt me thus !

To die here in this chamber by that sword  
Would seem like punishment : so should I  
glide,

Like an arch-cheat, into extremest bliss !  
'Twere easily arranged for me : but you—  
What would become of you ?

*Tresham.* And what will now  
Become of me ? I'll hide your shame and  
mine  
From every eye ; the dead must heave their  
hearts

Under the marble of our chapel-floor ;  
They cannot rise and blast you. You may  
wed

Your paramour above our mother's tomb ;  
Our mother cannot move from 'neath your  
foot.

We too will somehow wear this one day out :  
But with to-morrow hastens here—the Earl !  
The youth without suspicion face can come  
From Heaven, and heart from . . . whence  
proceed such hearts ?

I have despatched last night at your com-  
mand

A missive bidding him present himself  
To-morrow—here—thus much is said ; the  
rest

Is understood as if 'twere written down—

"His suit finds favour in your eyes." Now  
dictate

This morning's letter that shall countermand  
Last night's—do dictate that !

*Mildred.* But, Thorold—  
if I will receive him as I said ?

*Tresham.* The Earl ?

*Mildred.* I will receive him.

*Tresham* [*starting up*]. Ho there !  
Guendolen !

GUENDOLEN and AUSTIN enter.

And, Austin, you are welcome, too ! Look  
there !

The woman there !

*Austin and Guendolen.* How ? Mildred !

*Tresham.* Mildred once !  
 Now the receiver night by night, when sleep  
 Blesses the inmates of her father's house,  
 —I say, the soft sly wanton that receives  
 Her guilt's accomplice 'neath this roof which  
 holds  
 You, Guendolen, you, Austin, and has held  
 A thousand Treshams—never one like her !  
 No lighter of the signal-lamp her quick  
 Foul breath near quenches in hot eagerness  
 To mix with breath as foul ! no loosener  
 O' the lattice, practised in the stealthy tread,  
 The low voice and the noiseless come-and-go !  
 Not one composer of the bacchant's mien  
 Into—what you thought Mildred's, in a word !  
 Know her !

*Guendolen.* Oh, Mildred, look to me, at  
 least !  
 Thorold—she's dead, I'd say, but that she  
 stands  
 Rigid as stone and whiter !

*Tresham.* You have heard . . .  
*Guendolen.* Too much ! You must proceed  
 no further.

*Mildred.* Yes—  
 Proceed ! All's truth. Go from me !

*Tresham.* All is truth,  
 She tells you ! Well, you know, or ought to  
 know,  
 All this I would forgive in her. I'd con  
 Each precept the harsh world enjoins, I'd take  
 Our ancestors' stern verdicts one by one,  
 I'd bind myself before them to exact  
 The prescribed vengeance—and one word of  
 hers,

The sight of her, the bare least memory  
 Of Mildred, my one sister, my heart's pride  
 Above all prides, my all in all so long,  
 Would scatter every trace of my resolve.  
 What were it silently to waste away  
 And see her waste away from this day forth,  
 Two scathed things with leisure to repent,  
 And grow acquainted with the grave, and die  
 Tired out if not at peace, and be forgotten ?  
 It were not so impossible to bear.  
 But this—that, fresh from last night's pledge  
 renewed  
 Of love with the successful gallant there,

She calmly bids me help her to entice,  
 Inveigle an unconscious trusting youth  
 Who thinks her all that's chaste and good  
 and pure,  
 —Invites me to betray him . . . who so fit  
 As honour's self to cover shame's arch-deed ?  
 —That she'll receive Lord Mertoun—(her  
 own phrase)—

This, who could bear ? Why, you have heard  
 of thieves,  
 Stabbers, the earth's disgrace, who yet have  
 laughed,  
 "Talk not to me of torture—I'll betray  
 "No comrade I've pledged faith to !"—you  
 have heard

Of wretched women—all but Mildreds—tied  
 By wild illicit ties to losels vile  
 You'd tempt them to forsake ; and they'll  
 reply

"Gold, friends, repute, I left for him, I find  
 "In him, why should I leave him then for  
 gold,

"Repute or friends?"—and you have felt  
 your heart

Respond to such poor outcasts of the world  
 As to so many friends ; bad as you please,  
 You've felt they were God's men and women  
 still,

So, not to be disowned by you. But she  
 That stands there, calmly gives her lover up  
 As means to wed the Earl that she may hide  
 Their intercourse the surelier : and, for this,  
 I curse her to her face before you all.

Shame hunt her from the earth ! Then  
 Heaven do right

To both ! It hears me now—shall judge her  
 then ! [*As MILDRED faints and falls,*  
*TRESHAM rushes out.*

*Austin.* Stay, Tresham, we'll accompany  
 you !

*Guendolen.* We ?  
 What, and leave Mildred ? We ? Why,  
 where's my place

But by her side, and where yours but by mine ?  
 Mildred—one word ! Only look at me, then !

*Austin.* No, Guendolen ! I echo Thorold's  
 voice.

She is unworthy to behold . . .



*Guendolen.* Us two? No, nor half that—of all he heard! He says,  
If you spoke on reflection, and if I Look up and take his hand!  
Approved your speech—if you (to put the  
thing *Austin.* Look up and take  
My hand, dear Mildred!  
At lowest) you the soldier, bound to make  
*Mildred.* I—I was so young!  
The king's cause yours and fight for it, and  
Beside, I loved him, Thorold—and I had  
throw No mother; God forgot me: so, I fell.  
Regard to others of its right or wrong,  
*Guendolen.* Mildred!  
—If with a death-white woman you can help,  
*Mildred.* Require no further!  
Let alone sister, let alone a Mildred,  
Did I dream  
You left her—or if I, her cousin, friend  
That I could palliate what is done? All's true.  
This morning, playfellow but yesterday,  
Now, punish me! A woman takes my hand?  
Who said, or thought at least a thousand  
Let go my hand! You do not know, I see.  
times, I thought that Thorold told you.  
“I'd serve you if I could,” should now face  
*Guendolen.* What is this?  
round Where start you to?  
And say, “Ah, that's to only signify  
*Mildred.* Oh, Austin, loosen me!  
“I'd serve you while you're fit to serve your-  
You heard the whole of it—your eyes were  
self: worse,  
“So long as fifty eyes await the turn  
In their surprise, than Thorold's! Oh, unless  
“Of yours to forestall its yet half-formed wish,  
You stay to execute his sentence, loose  
“I'll proffer my assistance you'll not need—  
My hand! Has Thorold gone, and are you  
“When every tongue is praising you, I'll join  
here?  
“The praisers' chorus—when you're hemmed  
*Guendolen.* Here, Mildred, we two friends  
about of yours will wait  
“With lives between you and detraction—  
Your bidding; be you silent, sleep or muse!  
lives Only, when you shall want your bidding done,  
“To be laid down if a rude voice, rash eye,  
How can we do it if we are not by?  
“Rough hand should violate the sacred ring  
Here's Austin waiting patiently your will!  
“Their worship throws about you, — then  
One spirit to command, and one to love  
indeed, And to believe in it and do its best,  
“Who'll stand up for you stout as I?” If so  
Poor as that is, to help it—why, the world  
We said, and so we did,—not Mildred there  
Has been won many a time, its length and  
Would be unworthy to behold us both,  
breadth,  
But we should be unworthy, both of us,  
By just such a beginning!  
To be beheld by—by—your meanest dog,  
*Mildred.* I believe  
Which, if that sword were broken in your face  
If once I threw my arms about your neck  
Before a crowd, that badge torn off your  
And sunk my head upon your breast, that I  
breast, Should weep again.  
And you cast out with hooting and contempt,  
*Guendolen.* Let go her hand now,  
—Would push his way thro' all the hooters,  
*Austin!*  
gain Wait for me. Pace the gallery and think  
Your side, go off with you and all your shame  
On the world's seemings and realities,  
To the next ditch you choose to die in! Until I call you. [AUSTIN goes.  
*Austin,*  
Do you love me? Here's Austin, Mildred,  
*Mildred.* No—I cannot weep.  
—here's No more tears from this brain—no sleep—no  
Your brother says he does not believe half— tears!  
O Guendolen, I love you!

*Guendolen.* Yes: and "love"  
Is a short word that says so very much!  
It says that you confide in me.

*Mildred.* Confide!

*Guendolen.* Your lover's name, then! I've  
so much to learn,

Ere I can work in your behalf!

*Mildred.* My friend,  
You know I cannot tell his name.

*Guendolen.* At least  
He is your lover? and you love him too?

*Mildred.* Ah, do you ask me that?—but I  
am fallen

So low!

*Guendolen.* You love him still, then?

*Mildred.* My sole prop

Against the guilt that crushes me! I say,  
Each night ere I lie down, "I was so young—  
"I had no mother, and I loved him so!"  
And then God seems indulgent, and I dare  
Trust him my soul in sleep.

*Guendolen.* How could you let us  
E'en talk to you about Lord Mertoun then?

*Mildred.* There is a cloud around me.

*Guendolen.* But you said  
You would receive his suit in spite of this?

*Mildred.* I say there is a cloud . . .

*Guendolen.* No cloud to me!  
Lord Mertoun and your lover are the same!

*Mildred.* What maddest fancy . . .

*Guendolen* [calling aloud]. Austin!  
(spare your pains—

When I have got a truth, that truth I keep)—  
*Mildred.* By all you love, sweet Guen-  
dolen, forbear!

Have I confided in you . . .

*Guendolen.* Just for this!  
Austin!—Oh, not to guess it at the first!

But I did guess it—that is, I divined,  
Felt by an instinct how it was: why else  
Should I pronounce you free from all that  
heap

Of sins which had been irredeemable?

I felt they were not yours—what other way  
Than this, not yours? The secret's wholly  
mine!

*Mildred.* If you would see me die before  
his face . . .

*Guendolen.* I'd hold my peace! And it  
the Earl returns  
To-night?

*Mildred.* Ah Heaven, he's lost!

*Guendolen.* I thought so. Austin!

*Enter AUSTIN.*

Oh, where have you been hiding?

*Austin.* Thorold's gone,

I know not how, across the meadow-land.

I watched him till I lost him in the skirts

O' the beech-wood.

*Guendolen.* Gone? All thwarts us.

*Mildred.* Thorold too?

*Guendolen.* I have thought. First lead  
this Mildred to her room.

Go on the other side; and then we'll seek  
Your brother: and I'll tell you, by the way,  
The greatest comfort in the world. You said  
There was a clue to all. Remember, Sweet,  
He said there was a clue! I hold it. Come!

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The end of the Yew-tree Avenue  
under MILDRED'S window. A light seen  
through a central red pane.*

*Enter TRESHAM through the trees.*

Again here! But I cannot lose myself.

The heath—the orchard—I have traversed  
glades

And dells and bosky paths which used to lead  
Into green wild-wood depths, bewildering  
My boy's adventurous step. And now they  
tend

Hither or soon or late; the blackest shade  
Breaks up, the thronged trunks of the trees  
ope wide,

And the dim turret I have fled from, fronts  
Again my step; the very river put  
Its arm about me and conducted me

To this detested spot. Why then, I'll shun  
Their will no longer: do your will with me!

Oh, bitter! To have reared a towering scheme  
Of happiness, and to behold it ~~ruined~~.

Were nothing : all men hope, and see their  
 hopes  
 Frustrate, and grieve awhile, and hope anew.  
 But I . . . to hope that from a line like ours  
 No horrid prodigy like this would spring,  
 Were just as though I hoped that from these old  
 Confederates against the sovereign day,  
 Children of older and yet older sires,  
 Whose living coral berries dropped, as now  
 On me, on many a baron's surcoat once,  
 On many a beauty's whimple—would proceed  
 No poison-tree, to thrust, from hell its root,  
 Hither and thither its strange snaky arms.  
 Why came I here? What must I do? [*A bell  
 strikes.*] A bell?  
 Midnight! and 'tis at midnight . . . Ah, I  
 catch  
 —Woods, river, plains, I catch your meaning  
 now,  
 And I obey you! Hist! This tree will serve.  
 [*He retires behind one of the trees.  
 After a pause, enter MERTOUN  
 cloaked as before.*]  
 Mertoun. Not time! Beat out thy last  
 voluptuous beat  
 Of hope and fear, my heart! I thought the  
 clock  
 I' the chapel struck as I was pushing through  
 The ferns. And so I shall no more see rise  
 My love-star! Oh, no matter for the past!  
 So much the more delicious task to watch  
 Mildred revive: to pluck out, thorn by thorn,  
 All traces of the rough forbidden path  
 My rash love lured her to! Each day must see  
 Some fear of hers effaced, some hope renewed:  
 Then there will be surprises, unforeseen  
 Delights in store. I'll not regret the past.  
 [*The light is placed above  
 in the purple pane.*]  
 And see; my signal rises, Mildred's star!  
 I never saw it lovelier than now  
 It rises for the last time. If it sets,  
 'Tis that the re-assuring sun may dawn.  
 [*As he prepares to ascend the last tree of  
 the avenue, TRESHAM arrests his arm.*]  
 Unhand me—peasant, by your grasp! Here's  
 gold.  
 'Twas a mad freak of mine. I said I'd pluck

A branch from the white-blossomed shrub  
 beneath  
 The casement there. Take this, and hold  
 your peace.  
 Tresham. Into the moonlight yonder, come  
 with me!  
 Out of the shadow!  
 Mertoun. I am armed, fool!  
 Tresham. Yes,  
 Or no? You'll come into the light, or no?  
 My hand is on your throat—refuse!—  
 Mertoun. That voice!  
 Where have I heard . . . no—that was mild  
 and slow.  
 I'll come with you. [*They advance.*]  
 Tresham. You're armed: that's well.  
 Declare  
 Your name: who are you?  
 Mertoun. (Tresham!—she is lost!)  
 Tresham. Oh, silent? Do you know, you  
 bear yourself  
 Exactly as, in curious dreams I've had  
 How felons, this wild earth is full of, look  
 When they're detected, still your kind has  
 looked!  
 The bravo holds an assured countenance,  
 The thief is voluble and plausible,  
 But silently the slave of lust has crouched  
 When I have fancied it before a man.  
 Your name!  
 Mertoun. I do conjure Lord Tresham—ay,  
 Kissing his foot, if so I might prevail—  
 That he for his own sake forbear to ask  
 My name! As heaven's above, his future weal  
 Or woe depends upon my silence! Vain!  
 I read your white inexorable face.  
 Know me, Lord Tresham!  
 [*He throws off his disguises.*]  
 Tresham. Mertoun!  
 [*After a pause.*] Draw now!  
 Mertoun. Hear me  
 But speak first!  
 Tresham. Not one least word on your  
 life!  
 Be sure that I will strangle in your throat  
 The least word that informs me how you live  
 And yet seem what you seem! No doubt  
 'twas you

Taught Mildred still to keep that face and sin.  
We should join hands in frantic sympathy  
If you once taught me the unteachable,  
Explained how you can live so, and so lie.  
With God's help I retain, despite my sense,  
The old belief—a life like yours is still  
Impossible. Now draw!

*Mertoun.* Not for my sake,  
Do I entreat a hearing—for your sake,  
And most, for her sake!

*Tresham.* Ha ha, what should I  
Know of your ways? A miscreant like your-  
self,

How must one rouse his ire? A blow?  
that's pride  
No doubt, to him! One spurns him, does  
one not?

Or sets the foot upon his mouth, or spits  
Into his face! Come! Which, or all of  
these?

*Mertoun.* 'Twixt him and me and Mildred,  
Heaven be judge!

Can I avoid this? Have your will, my lord!  
[*He draws and, after a few passes, falls.*]

*Tresham.* You are not hurt?

*Mertoun.* You'll hear me now!

*Tresham.* But rise!

*Mertoun.* Ah, Tresham, say I not "you'll  
hear me now!"

And what procures a man the right to speak  
In his defence before his fellow man,  
But—I suppose—the thought that presently  
He may have leave to speak before his God  
His whole defence?

*Tresham.* Not hurt? It cannot be!  
You made no effort to resist me. Where  
Did my sword reach you? Why not have  
returned

My thrusts? Hurt where?

*Mertoun.* My lord—

*Tresham.* How young he is!

*Mertoun.* Lord Tresham, I am very young,  
and yet

I have entangled other lives with mine.  
Do let me speak, and do believe my speech!  
That when I die before you presently,—

*Tresham.* Can you stay here till I return  
with help?

*Mertoun.* Oh, stay by me! When I was  
less than boy

I did you grievous wrong and knew it not—  
Upon my honour, knew it not! Once known,  
I could not find what seemed a better way  
To right you than I took: my life—you feel  
How less than nothing were the giving you  
The life you've taken! But I thought my  
way

The better—only for your sake and hers:  
And as you have decided otherwise,  
Would I had an infinity of lives  
To offer you! Now say—instruct me—think!  
Can you, from the brief minutes I have left,  
Eke out my reparation? Oh think—think!  
For I must wring a partial—dare I say,  
Forgiveness from you, ere I die?

*Tresham.* I do  
Forgive you.

*Mertoun.* Wait and ponder that great word!  
Because, if you forgive me, I shall hope  
To speak to you of—Mildred!

*Tresham.* Mertoun, haste  
And anger have undone us. 'Tis not you  
Should tell me for a novelty you're young,  
Thoughtless, unable to recall the past.

Be but your pardon ample as my own!

*Mertoun.* Ah, Tresham, that a sword-stroke  
and a drop

Of blood or two, should bring all this about!  
Why, 'twas my very fear of you, my love  
Of you—(what passion like a boy's for one  
Like you?)—that ruined me! I dreamed of  
you—

You, all accomplished, courted everywhere,  
The scholar and the gentleman. I burned  
To knit myself to you: but I was young,  
And your surpassing reputation kept me  
So far aloof! Oh, wherefore all that love?  
With less of love, my glorious yesterday  
Of praise and gentlest words and kindest  
looks,

Had taken place perchance six months ago.  
Even now, how happy we had been! And  
yet

I know the thought of this escaped you,  
*Tresham!*

Let me look up into your face; I feel

'Tis changed above me: yet my eyes are glazed.

Where? where?

*[As he endeavours to raise himself, his eye catches the lamp.]*

Ah, Mildred! What will

Mildred do?

Tresham, her life is bound up in the life  
That's bleeding fast away! I'll live—must live,

There, if you'll only turn me I shall live  
And save her! Tresham—oh, had you but heard!

Had you but heard! What right was yours to set

The thoughtless foot upon her life and mine,

And then say, as we perish, "Had I thought,  
"All had gone otherwise"? We've sinned and die:

Never you sin, Lord Tresham! for you'll die,  
And God will judge you.

*Tresham.* Yes, be satisfied!

That process is begun.

*Mertoun.* And she sits there

Waiting for me! Now, say you this to her—  
You, not another—say, I saw him die

As he breathed this, "I love her"—you don't know

What those three small words mean! Say, loving her

Lowers me down the bloody slope to death  
With memories . . . I speak to her, not you,

Who had no pity, will have no remorse,  
Perchance intend her . . . Die along with me,

Dear Mildred! 'tis so easy, and you'll 'scape  
So much unkindness! Can I lie at rest,

With rude speech spoken to you, ruder deeds  
Done to you?—heartless men shall have my heart,

And I tied down with grave-clothes and the worm,

Aware, perhaps, of every blow—oh God!—  
Upon those lips—yet of no power to tear

The felon stripe by stripe! Die, Mildred!

Leave

Their honourable world to them! For God  
We're good enough, though the world casts us out. *[A whistle is heard.]*

*Tresham.* Ho, Gerard!

*Enter GERARD, AUSTIN and GUENDOLEN, with lights.*

No one speak!

You see what's done.

I cannot bear another voice.

*Mertoun.*

There's light—

Light all about me, and I move to it.

Tresham, did I not tell you—did you not

Just promise to deliver words of mine

To Mildred?

*Tresham.* I will bear those words to her.

*Mertoun.* Now?

*Tresham.* Now. Lift you the body, and leave me

The head.

*[As they have half raised MERTOUN, he turns suddenly.]*

*Mertoun.* I knew they turned me: turn me not from her!

There! stay you! there!

*[Dies.]*

*Guendolen [after a pause].* Austin, remain you here

With Thorold until Gerard comes with help:  
Then lead him to his chamber. I must go

To Mildred.

*Tresham.* Guendolen, I hear each word

You utter. Did you hear him bid me give  
His message? Did you hear my promise? I,

And only I, see Mildred.

*Guendolen.*

She will die.

*Tresham.* Oh no, she will not die! I dare not hope

She'll die. What ground have you to think she'll die?

Why, Austin's with you!

*Austin.*

Had we but arrived

Before you fought!

*Tresham.*

There was no fight at all.

He let me slaughter him—the boy! I'll trust

The body there to you and Gerard—thus!

Now bear him on before me.

*Austin,*

Whither bear him?

*Tresham.* Oh, to my chamber! When we meet there next,  
We shall be friends.

[*They bear out the body of MERTOUN.*]

Will she die, Guendolen?

*Guendolen.* Where are you taking me?

*Tresham.* He fell just here.

Now answer me. Shall you in your whole life

—You who have nought to do with Mertoun's fate,

Now you have seen his breast upon the turf,  
Shall you e'er walk this way if you can help?  
When you and Austin wander arm-in-arm  
Through our ancestral grounds, will not a shade

Be ever on the meadow and the waste—  
Another kind of shade than when the night  
Shuts the woodside with all its whispers up?  
But will you ever so forget his breast  
As carelessly to cross this bloody turf  
Under the black yew avenue? That's well!  
You turn your head: and I then?—

*Guendolen.* What is done  
Is done. My care is for the living. Thorold,  
Bear up against this burden: more remains  
To set the neck to!

*Tresham.* Dear and ancient trees  
My fathers planted, and I loved so well!  
What have I done that, like some fabled crime  
Of yore, lets loose a Fury leading thus  
Her miserable dance amidst you all?  
Oh, never more for me shall winds intone  
With all your tops a vast antiphony,  
Demanding and responding in God's praise!  
Hers ye are now, not mine! Farewell—  
farewell!

SCENE II.—MILDRED'S chamber.

MILDRED *alone.*

He comes not! I have heard of those who  
seemed

Resourceless in prosperity,—you thought  
Sorrow might slay them when she listed; yet  
Did they so gather up their diffused strength  
At her first menace, that they bade her strike,

And stood and laughed her subtlest skill to  
scorn.

Oh, 'tis not so with me! The first woe fell,  
And the rest fall upon it, not on me:

Else should I bear that Henry comes not?—  
fails

Just this first night out of so many nights?  
Loving is done with. Were he sitting now,  
As so few hours since, on that seat, we'd love  
No more—contrive no thousand happy ways  
To hide love from the loveless, any more.

I think I might have urged some little point  
In my defence, to Thorold; he was breathless  
For the least hint of a defence: but no,  
The first shame over, all that would might fall.  
No Henry! Yet I merely sit and think  
The morn's deed o'er and o'er. I must have  
crept

Out of myself. A Mildred that has lost  
Her lover—oh, I dare not look upon  
Such woe! I crouch away from it! 'Tis she,  
Mildred, will break her heart, not I! The  
world

Forsakes me: only Henry's left me—left?  
When I have lost him, for he does not come,  
And I sit stupidly . . . Oh Heaven, break up  
This worse than anguish, this mad apathy,  
By any means or any messenger!

*Tresham* [without]. Mildred!  
*Mildred.* Come in!

Heaven hears me!

[*Enter TRESHAM.*] You? alone?

Oh, no more cursing!

*Tresham.* Mildred, I must sit.

There—you sit!

*Mildred.* Say it, Thorold—do not look  
The curse! deliver all you come to say!  
What must become of me? Oh, speak that  
thought

Which makes your brow and cheeks so pale!  
*Tresham.* My thought?

*Mildred.* All of it!

*Tresham.* How we waded—years ago—  
After those water-lilies, till the plash,  
I know not how, surprised us; and you dared  
Neither advance nor turn back: so, we stood  
Laughing and crying until Gerard came—  
Once safe upon the turf, the loudest too,

For once more reaching the relinquished prize!  
How idle thoughts are, some men's, dying  
men's!

Mildred,—

*Mildred.* You call me kindlier by my name  
Than even yesterday: what is in that?

*Tresham.* It weighs so much upon my mind  
that I

This morning took an office not my own!  
I might . . . of course, I must be glad or  
grieved,

Content or not, at every little thing  
That touches you. I may with a wrung  
heart

Even reprove you, Mildred; I did more:  
Will you forgive me?

*Mildred.* Thorold? do you mock?  
Or no . . . and yet you bid me . . . say  
that word!

*Tresham.* Forgive me, Mildred!—are you  
silent, Sweet?

*Mildred* [*starting up*]. Why does not  
Henry Mertoun come to-night?  
Are you, too, silent?

[*Dashing his mantle aside, and pointing  
to his scabbard, which is empty.*]

Ah, this speaks for you!  
You've murdered Henry Mertoun! Now  
proceed!

What is it I must pardon? This and all?  
Well, I do pardon you—I think I do.  
Thorold, how very wretched you must be!

*Tresham.* He bade me tell you . . .

*Mildred.* What I do forbid  
Your utterance of! So much that you may  
tell  
And will not—how you murdered him . . .  
but, no!

You'll tell me that he loved me, never more  
Than bleeding out his life there: must I say  
"Indeed," to that? Enough! I pardon you.

*Tresham.* You cannot, Mildred! for the  
harsh words, yes:

Of this last deed Another's judge: whose  
doom

I wait in doubt, despondency and fear.

*Mildred.* Oh, true! There's thought for me  
to pardon! True!

You loose my soul of all its cares at once.  
Death makes me sure of him for ever! You  
Tell me his last words? He shall tell me  
them,

And take my answer—not in words, but  
reading

Himself the heart I had to read him late,  
Which death . . .

*Tresham.* Death? You are dying  
too? Well said

Of Guendolen! I dared not hope you'd die:  
But she was sure of it.

*Mildred.* Tell Guendolen  
I loved her, and tell Austin . . .

*Tresham.* Him you loved:  
And me?

*Mildred.* Ah, Thorold! Was't not rashly  
done

To quench that blood, on fire with youth and  
hope

And love of me—whom you loved too, and  
yet

Suffered to sit here waiting his approach  
While you were slaying him? Oh, doubtlessly  
You let him speak his poor confused boy's-  
speech

—Do his poor utmost to disarm your wrath  
And respite me!—you let him try to give  
The story of our love and ignorance,  
And the brief madness and the long despair—  
You let him plead all this, because your  
code

Of honour bids you hear before you strike:  
But at the end, as he looked up for life  
Into your eyes—you struck him down!

*Tresham.* No! No!  
Had I but heard him—had I let him speak  
Half the truth—less—had I looked long on  
him

I had desisted! Why, as he lay there,  
The moon on his flushed cheek, I gathered all  
The story ere he told it: I saw through  
The troubled surface of his crime and yours  
A depth of purity immovable,

Had I but glanced, where all seemed turbidest  
Had gleamed some inlet to the calm beneath;  
I would not glance: my punishment's at  
hand.

There, Mildred, is the truth ! and you—say  
on—

You curse me?

*Mildred.* As I dare approach that Heaven  
Which has not bade a living thing despair,  
Which needs no code to keep its grace from  
stain,

But bids the vilest worm that turns on it  
Desist and be forgiven,—I—forgive not,  
But bless you, Thorold, from my soul of souls !

[*Falls on his neck.*]

There ! Do not think too much upon the past !  
The cloud that's broke was all the same a cloud  
While it stood up between my friend and you ;  
You hurt him 'neath its shadow : but is that  
So past retrieve ? I have his heart, you know ;  
I may dispose of it : I give it you !  
It loves you as mine loves ! Confirm me,

Henry ! [*Dies.*]

*Tresham.* I wish thee joy, Beloved ! I  
am glad

In thy full gladness !

*Guendolen* [*without*]. Mildred ! Tresham !

[*Entering with AUSTIN.*] Thorold,  
I could desist no longer. Ah, she swoons !  
That's well.

*Tresham.* Oh, better far than that !

*Guendolen.* She's dead !  
Let me unlock her arms !

*Tresham.* She threw them thus  
About my neck, and blessed me, and then  
died :

You'll let them stay now, Guendolen !

*Austin.* Leave her  
And look to him ! What ails you, Thorold ?

*Guendolen.* White  
As she, and whiter ! Austin ! quick—this  
side !

*Austin.* A froth is oozing through his  
clenched teeth ;  
Both lips, where they're not bitten through,  
are black :  
Speak, dearest Thorold !

*Tresham.* Something does weigh down  
My neck beside her weight : thanks : I should  
fall

But for you, Austin, I believe !—there, there,  
'Twill pass away soon !—ah,—I had for-  
gotten :

I am dying.

*Guendolen.* Thorold—Thorold—why was  
this ?

*Tresham.* I said, just as I drank the poison  
off,

The earth would be no longer earth to me,  
The life out of all life was gone from me.  
There are blind ways provided, the foredone  
Heart-weary player in this pageant-world  
Drops out by, letting the main masque defile  
By the conspicuous portal : I am through—  
Just through !

*Guendolen.* Don't leave him, Austin !  
Death is close.

*Tresham.* Already Mildred's face is peace-  
fuller.

I see you, Austin—feel you : here's my hand,  
Put yours in it—you, Guendolen, yours too !  
You're lord and lady now—you're Treshams ;  
name

And fame are yours : you hold our 'scutcheon  
up.

Austin, no blot on it ! You see how blood  
Must wash one blot away : the first blot  
came

And the first blood came. To the vain  
world's eye

All's gules again : no care to the vain world,  
From whence the red was drawn !

*Austin.* No blot shall come !

*Tresham.* I said that : yet it did come.  
Should it come,

Vengeance is God's, not man's. Remember  
me ! [*Dies.*]

*Guendolen* [*letting fall the pulseless arm*].  
Ah, Thorold, we can but—remember  
you !



# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY;

A PLAY.

1844.

NO ONE LOVES AND HONOURS BARRY CORNWALL MORE THAN

DOES ROBERT BROWNING;

WHO, HAVING NOTHING BETTER THAN THIS PLAY

TO GIVE HIM IN PROOF OF IT, MUST SAY SO.

LONDON: 1844.

## COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY.

Ivy and violet, what do ye here  
With blossom and shoot in the warm spring-  
weather,  
Hiding the arms of Monchenci and Vere?  
—*Hanmer.*

### PERSONS.

COLOMBE OF RAVESTEIN, Duchess of Juliers  
and Cleves.

SADYNE, ADOLF, *her attendants.*

GUIBERT, GAUCELME, MAUFROY, CLUG-  
NET, *courtiers.*

VALENCE, *advocate of Cleves.*

PRINCE BERTHOLD, *claimant of the Duchy.*

MELCHIOR, *his confidant.*

PLACE.—*The Palace at Juliers.*

TIME, 16—.

### ACT I.

#### MORNING.

SCENE.—*A corridor leading to the  
Audience-chamber.*

GAUCELME, CLUGNET, MAUFROY *and other  
Courtiers, round GUIBERT, who is silently  
reading a paper: as he drops it at the end—*

*Guibert.* That this should be her birthday;  
and the day

We all invested her, twelve months ago,

As the late Duke's true heiress and our liege;  
And that this also must become the day . . .

Oh, miserable lady!

*1st Courtier.* Ay, indeed?

*2nd Courtier.* Well, Guibert?

*3rd Courtier.* But your news,  
my friend, your news!

The sooner, friend, one learns Prince Ber-  
thold's pleasure,

The better for us all: how writes the Prince?  
Give me! I'll read it for the common good.

*Guibert.* In time, sir,—but till time comes,  
pardon me!

Our old Duke just disclosed his child's retreat,  
Declared her true succession to his rule,  
And died: this birthday was the day, last  
year,

We convoyed her from Castle Ravestein—  
That sleeps out trustfully its extreme age  
On the Meuse' quiet bank, where she lived  
queen

Over the water-buds,—to Juliers' court  
With joy and bustle. Here again we stand;  
Sir Gaucelme's buckle's constant to his cap:  
To-day's much such another sunny day!

*Gaucelme.* Come, Guibert, this outgrows a  
jest, I think!

You're hardly such a novice as to need  
The lesson, you pretend.

*Guibert.* What lesson, sir?  
That everybody, if he'd thrive at court,  
Should, first and last of all, look to himself?

Why, no: and therefore with your good example,  
(—Ho, Master Adolf!—) to myself I'll look.

*Enter ADOLF.*

*Guibert.* The Prince's letter; why, of all men else,  
Comes it to me?

*Adolf.* By virtue of your place,  
Sir Guibert! 'Twas the Prince's express charge,

His envoy told us, that the missive there  
Should only reach our lady by the hand  
Of whosoever held your place.

*Guibert.* Enough!

[*ADOLF retires.*]

Then, gentles, who'll accept a certain poor  
Indifferently honourable place,  
My friends, I make no doubt, have gnashed  
their teeth

At leisure minutes these half-dozen years,  
To find me never in the mood to quit?  
Who asks may have it, with my blessing,  
and—

This to present our lady. Who'll accept?  
You,—you,—you? There it lies, and may,  
for me!

*Maufray [a youth, picking up the paper, reads aloud]* "Prince Berthold, proved  
by titles following

"Undoubted Lord of Juliers, comes this day  
"To claim his own, with licence from the  
Pope,

"The Emperor, the Kings of Spain and  
France" . . .

*Gaucelme.* Sufficient "titles following," I  
judge!

Don't read another! Well,—"to claim his  
own?"

*Maufray.* "—And take possession of the  
Duchy held

"Since twelve months, to the true heir's  
prejudice,

"By" . . . Colombe, Juliers' mistress, so  
she thinks,

And Ravestein's mere lady, as we find.

Who wants the place and paper? *Guibert's*  
right.

I hope to climb a little in the world,—  
I'd push my fortunes,—but, no more than he,  
Could tell her on this happy day of days,  
That, save the nosegay in her hand, perhaps,  
There's nothing left to call her own. *Sir*  
*Clugnet,*

You famish for promotion; what say you?

*Clugnet [an old man].* To give this letter  
were a sort, I take it,

Of service: services ask recompense:  
What kind of corner may be Ravestein?

*Guibert.* The castle? Oh, you'd share her  
fortunes? Good!

Three walls stand upright, full as good as four,  
With no such bad remainder of a roof.

*Clugnet.* Oh,—but the town?

*Guibert.* Five houses, fifteen huts;  
A church whereto was once a spire, 'tis  
judged;

And half a dyke, except in time of thaw.

*Clugnet.* Still, there's some revenue?

*Guibert.* Else Heaven forfend!  
You hang a beacon out, should fogs increase;  
So, when the Autumn floats of pine-wood  
steer

Safe 'mid the white confusion, thanks to you,  
Their grateful raftsmen fling a guilder in;

—That's if he mean to pass your way next  
time.

*Clugnet.* If not?

*Guibert.* Hang guilders, then! He  
blesses you.

*Clugnet.* What man do you suppose me?  
Keep your paper!

And, let me say, it shows no handsome  
spirit

To dally with misfortune: keep your place!

*Gaucelme.* Some one must tell her.

*Guibert.* Some one may: you may!

*Gaucelme.* Sir Guibert, 'tis no trifle turns  
me sick

Of court-hypocrisy at years like mine,  
But this goes near it. Where's there news  
at all?

Who'll have the face, for instance, to affirm  
He never heard, e'en while we crowned the  
girl,

That Juliers' tenure was by Salic law;

That one, confessed her father's cousin's child,

And, she away, indisputable heir,

Against our choice protesting and the Duke's.

Claimed Juliers?—nor, as he preferred his claim,

That first this, then another potentate,

Inclined to its allowance?—I or you,

Or any one except the lady's self?

Oh, it had been the direst cruelty

To break the business to her! Things might change :

At all events, we'd see next masque at end,

Next mummerly over first : and so the edge

Was taken off sharp tidings as they came,

Till here's the Prince upon us, and there's she

—Wreathing her hair, a song between her lips,

With just the faintest notion possible

That some such claimant earns a livelihood

About the world, by feigning grievances—

Few pay the story of, but grudge its price,

And fewer listen to, a second time.

Your method proves a failure; now try mine!

And, since this must be carried . . .

*Guibert [snatching the paper from him].*

By your leave!

Your zeal transports you! 'Twill not serve the Prince

So much as you expect, this course you'd take.

If she leaves quietly her palace,—well;

But if she died upon its threshold,—no :

He'd have the trouble of removing her.

Come, gentles, we're all—what the devil knows!

You, Gaucelme, won't lose character, beside :

You broke your father's heart superiorly

To gather his succession—never blush!

You're from my province, and, be comforted,

They tell of it with wonder to this day.

You can afford to let your talent sleep.

We'll take the very worst supposed, as true :

There, the old Duke knew, when he hid his child

Among the river-flowers at Ravestein,

With whom the right lay! Call the Prince our Duke!

There, she's no Duchess, she's no anything

More than a young maid with the bluest eyes :

And now, sirs, we'll not break this young maid's heart

Coolly as Gaucelme could and would! No haste!

His talent's full-blown, ours but in the bud :

We'll not advance to his perfection yet—

Will we, Sir Maufroy? See, I've ruined

*Maufroy*

For ever as a courtier!

*Gaucelme.*

Here's a coil!

And, count us, will you? Count its residue,

This boasted convoy, this day last year's crowd!

A birthday, too, a gratulation day!

I'm dumb: bid that keep silence!

*Maufroy and others.*

Eh, Sir Guibert?

He's right: that does say something: that's bare truth.

Ten—twelve, I make: a perilous dropping off!

*Guibert.* Pooh—is it audience hour? The vestibule

Swarms too, I wager, with the common sort

That want our privilege of entry here.

*Gaucelme.* Adolf! [*Re-enter ADOLF.*]

Who's outside?

*Guibert.*

Oh, your looks suffice!

Nobody waiting?

*Maufroy [looking through the door-folds].*

Scarce our number!

*Guibert.*

'Sdeath!

Nothing to beg for, to complain about?

It can't be! Ill news spreads, but not so fast

As thus to frighten all the world!

*Gaucelme.*

The world

Lives out of doors, sir—not with you and me

By presence-chamber porches, state-room stairs,

Wherever warmth's perpetual: outside's free

To every wind from every compass-point,

And who may get nipped needs be weather-wise.

The Prince comes and the lady's People go;

The snow-goose settles down, the swallows flee—

Why should they wait for winter-time? 'Tis instinct.

Don't you feel somewhat chilly?

*Guibert.* That's their craft? And last year's crowders-round and criers-forth  
That strewed the garlands, overarched the  
roads,  
Lighted the bonfires, sang the loyal songs!  
Well 'tis my comfort, you could never call me  
The People's Friend! The People keep  
their word—  
I keep my place: don't doubt I'll entertain  
The People when the Prince comes, and the  
People  
Are talked of! Then, their speeches—no  
one tongue  
Found respite, not a pen had holiday  
—For they wrote, too, as well as spoke,  
these knaves!  
Now see: we tax and tithe them, pill and  
poll,  
They wince and fret enough, but pay they  
must  
—We manage that,—so, pay with a good  
grace  
They might as well, it costs so little more.  
But when we've done with taxes, meet folk  
next  
Outside the toll-booth and the rating-place,  
In public—there they have us if they will,  
We're at their mercy after that, you see!  
For one tax not ten devils could extort—  
Over and above necessity, a grace;  
This prompt disbosoming of love, to wit—  
Their vine-leaf wrappage of our tribute penny,  
And crowding attestation, all works well.  
Yet this precisely do they thrust on us!  
These cappings quick, these crook-and-cring-  
ings low,  
Hand to the heart, and forehead to the knee,  
With grin that shuts the eyes and opes the  
mouth—  
So tender they their love; and, tender made,  
Go home to curse us, the first do it we ask.  
As if their souls were any longer theirs!  
As if they had not given ample warrant  
To who should clap a collar on their neck,  
Rings in their nose, a goad to either flank,  
And take them for the brute they boast  
themselves!  
Stay—there's a bustle at the outer door—

And somebody entreating . . . that's my  
name!  
*Adolf.*—I heard my name!  
*Adolf.* 'Twas probably  
The suitor.  
*Guibert.* Oh, there is one?  
*Adolf.* With a suit  
He'd fain enforce in person.  
*Guibert.* The good heart  
—And the great fool! Just ope the mid-  
door's fold!  
Is that a lappet of his cloak, I see?  
*Adolf.* If it bear plenteous sign of travel  
. . . ay,  
The very cloak my comrades tore!  
*Guibert.* Why tore?  
*Adolf.* He seeks the Duchess' presence in  
that trim:  
Since daybreak, was he posted hereabouts  
Lest he should miss the moment.  
*Guibert.* Where's he now?  
*Adolf.* Gone for a minute possibly, not  
more:  
They have ado enough to thrust him back.  
*Guibert.* Ay—but my name, I caught?  
*Adolf.* Oh, sir—he said  
—What was it?—You had known him for-  
merly,  
And, he believed, would help him did you  
guess  
He waited now; you promised him as much:  
The old plea! 'Faith, he's back,—renews  
the charge!  
[*Speaking at the door.*] So long as the man  
parleys, peace outside—  
Nor be too ready with your halberts, there!  
*Gaucelme.* My horse bespattered, as he  
blocked the path  
A thin sour man, not unlike somebody.  
*Adolf.* He holds a paper in his breast,  
whereon  
He glances when his cheeks flush and his  
brow  
At each repulse—  
*Gaucelme.* I noticed he'd a brow.  
*Adolf.* So glancing, he grows calmer, leans  
awhile  
Over the balustrade, adjusts his dress,

*Adolf.* Her Grace receives the court.  
*Guibert* [*aside*]. Now, *sursum corda*, quoth  
 the mass-priest! Do—  
 Whoever's my kind saint, do let alone  
 These pushings to and fro, and pullings  
 back;

Peaceably let me hang o' the devil's arm  
 The downward path, if you can't pluck me off  
 Completely! Let me live quite his, or yours!

[*The Courtiers begin to range themselves,  
 and move toward the door.*]

After me, Valence! So, our famous Cleves  
 Lacks bread? Yet don't we gallants buy  
 their lace?

And dear enough—it beggars me, I know,  
 To keep my very gloves fringed properly.  
 This, Valence, is our Great State Hall you  
 cross;

Yon grey urn's veritable marcasite,  
 The Pope's gift: and those salvers testify  
 The Emperor. Presently you'll set your  
 foot

. . . But you don't speak, friend Valence!

*Valence.* I shall speak.

*Gaucelme* [*aside to GUIBERT*]. Guibert—it  
 were no such ungraceful thing

If you and I, at first, seemed horror-struck  
 With the bad news. Look here, what you  
 shall do.

Suppose you, first, clap hand to sword and cry  
 "Yield strangers our allegiance? First I'll  
 perish

"Beside your Grace!"—and so give me the cue  
 To . . .

*Guibert.* —Clap your hand to note-book  
 and jot down

That to regale the Prince with? I conceive.  
 [*To VALENCE.*] Do, Valence, speak, or I  
 shall half suspect

You're plotting to supplant us, me the first,  
 I' the lady's favour! Is't the grand harangue  
 You mean to make, that thus engrosses  
 you?

—Which of her virtues you'll apostrophize?  
 Or is't the fashion you aspire to start,  
 Of that close-curled, not unbecoming hair?  
 Or what else ponder you?

*Valence.* My townsmen's wrongs.

## ACT II.

### NOON.

SCENE.—*The Presence-chamber.*

*The DUCHESS and SABYNE.*

*The Duchess.* Announce that I am ready  
 for the court!

*Sabyné.* 'Tis scarcely audience-hour, I  
 think; your Grace

May best consult your own relief, no doubt,  
 And shun the crowd: but few can have  
 arrived.

*The Duchess.* Let those not yet arrived,  
 then, keep away!

'Twas me, this day last year at Ravestein,  
 You hurried. It has been full time, beside,  
 This half-hour. Do you hesitate?

*Sabyné.* Forgive me!

*The Duchess.* Stay, Sabyné; let me hasten  
 to make sure

Of one true thanker: here with you begins  
 My audience, claim you first its privilege!  
 It is my birth's event they celebrate:

You need not wish me more such happy days,  
 But—ask some favour! Have you none to ask?  
 Has Adolf none, then? this was far from least  
 Of much I waited for impatiently,

Assure yourself! It seemed so natural  
 Your gift, beside this bunch of river-bells,  
 Should be the power and leave of doing good  
 To you, and greater pleasure to myself.

You ask my leave to-day to marry Adolf?  
 The rest is my concern.

*Sabyné.* Your Grace is ever  
 Our lady of dear Ravestein,—but, for  
 Adolf . . .

*The Duchess.* "But"? You have not,  
 sure, changed in your regard  
 And purpose towards him?

*Sabyné.* We change?

*The Duchess.* Well then? Well?

*Sabyné.* How could we two be happy, and,  
 most like,

Leave Juliers, when—when . . . but 'tis  
 audience-time!

*The Duchess.* "When, if you left me, I were left indeed!"  
 Would you subjoin that?—Bid the court approach!  
 —Why should we play thus with each other, Sabyne?

Do I not know, if courtiers prove remiss,  
 If friends detain me, and get blame for it,  
 There is a cause? Of last year's fervid throng  
 Scarce one half comes now.

*Sabyne [aside].* One half? No, alas!

*The Duchess.* So can the mere suspicion  
 of a cloud

Over my fortunes, strike each loyal heart.  
 They've heard of this Prince Berthold; and,  
 forsooth,

Some foolish arrogant pretence he makes,  
 May grow more foolish and more arrogant,  
 They please to apprehend! I thank their  
 love.

Admit them!

*Sabyne [aside].* How much has she really  
 learned?

*The Duchess.* Surely, whoever's absent,  
 Tristan waits?

—Or at least Romuald, whom my father  
 raised

From nothing—come, he's faithful to me,  
 come!

(Sabyne, I should but be the prouder—yes,  
 The fitter to comport myself aright)

Not Romuald? Xavier—what said he to  
 that?

For Xavier hates a parasite, I know!

[SABYNE goes out.]

*The Duchess.* Well, sunshine's everywhere,  
 and summer too.

Next year 'tis the old place again, perhaps—  
 The water-breeze again, the birds again.

—It cannot be! It is too late to be!

What part had I, or choice in all of it?

Hither they brought me; I had not to think

Nor care, concern myself with doing good

Or ill, my task was just—to live,—to live,

And, answering ends there was no need explain,

To render Juliens happy—so they said.

All could not have been falsehood: some was  
 love,

And wonder and obedience. I did all  
 They looked for: why then cease to do it  
 now?

Yet this is to be calmly set aside,  
 And—ere next birthday's dawn, for aught I  
 know,

Things change, a claimant may arrive, and  
 I . . .

It cannot nor it shall not be! His right?

Well then, he has the right, and I have not,

—But who bade all of you surround my life

And close its growth up with your ducal crown  
 Which, plucked off rudely, leaves me perishing?

I could have been like one of you,—loved,  
 hoped,

Feared, lived and died like one of you—but  
 you

Would take that life away and give me this,  
 And I will keep this! I will face you!

Come!

*Enter the COURTIERs and VALENCE.*

*The Courtiers.* Many such happy mornings  
 to your Grace!

*The Duchess [aside, as they pay their devoir].*  
 The same words, the same faces,—the  
 same love!

I have been overfearful. These are few;  
 But these, at least, stand firmly: these are  
 mine.

As many come as may; and if no more,  
 'Tis that these few suffice—they do suffice!  
 What succour may not next year bring me?

Plainly,

I feared too soon. [To the Courtiers.] I  
 thank you, sirs: all thanks!

*Valence [aside, as the DUCHESS passes from  
 one group to another, conversing].* 'Tis  
 she—the vision this day last year brought,

When, for a golden moment at our Cleves,  
 She tarried in her progress hither. Cleves

Chose me to speak its welcome, and I spoke  
 —Not that she could have noted the recluse

—Ungainly, old before his time—who gazed.  
 Well, Heaven's gifts are not wasted, and that  
 gaze

Kept, and shall keep me to the end, her own!

She was above it—but so would not sink  
My gaze to earth! The People caught it,  
hers—

Thenceforward, mine; but thus entirely mine,  
Who shall affirm, had she not raised my soul  
Ere she retired and left me—them? She  
turns—

There's all her wondrous face at once! The  
ground

Reels and . . . [*suddenly occupying himself  
with his paper*]

These wrongs of theirs I have to plead!  
*The Duchess* [to the Courtiers]. Nay, com-  
pliment enough! and kindness' self

Should pause before it wish me more such  
years.

'Twas fortunate that thus, ere youth escaped,  
I tasted life's pure pleasure—one such, pure,  
Is worth a thousand, mixed—and youth's for  
pleasure:

Mine is received; let my age pay for it.

*Gauclme*. So, pay, and pleasure paid for,  
thinks your Grace,

Should never go together?

*Guibert*. How, Sir *Gauclme*?

Hurry one's feast down unenjoyingly

At the snatched breathing-intervals of work?

As good you saved it till the dull day's-end

When, stiff and sleepy, appetite is gone.

Eat first, then work upon the strength of food!

*The Duchess*. True: you enable me to risk  
my future,

By giving me a past beyond recall.

I lived, a girl, one happy leisure year:

Let me endeavour to be the Duchess now!

And so,—what news, Sir *Guibert*, spoke  
you of?

[*As they advance a little, and*

*GUIBERT speaks—*

—That gentleman?

*Valence* [*aside*]. I feel her eyes on me.

*Guibert* [to *VALENCE*]. The Duchess, sir,  
inclines to hear your suit.

Advance! He is from Cleves.

*Valence* [*coming forward. Aside*]. Their  
wrongs—their wrongs!

*The Duchess*. And you, sir, are from  
Cleves? How fresh in mind,

The hour or two I passed at queenly Cleves!  
She entertained me bravely, but the best  
Of her good pageant seemed its standers-by.  
With insuppressive joy on every face!

What says my ancient famous happy Cleves?

*Valence*. Take the truth, lady—you are  
made for truth!

So think my friends: nor do they less deserve  
The having you to take it, you shall think,

When you know all—nay, when you only know  
How, on that day you recollect at Cleves,

When the poor acquiescing multitude  
Who thrust themselves with all their woes  
apart

Into unnoticed corners, that the few,  
Their means sufficed to muster trappings for,

Might fill the foreground, occupy your sight  
With joyous faces fit to bear away

And boast of as a sample of all Cleves

—How, when to daylight these crept out  
once more,

Clutching, unconscious, each his empty rags  
Whence the scant coin, which had not half  
bought bread,

That morn he shook forth, counted piece by  
piece,

And, well-advisedly, on perfumes spent them  
To burn, or flowers to strew, before your path

—How, when the golden flood of music and  
bliss

Elbbed, as their moon retreated, and again  
Left the sharp black-point rocks of misery bare

—Then I, their friend, had only to suggest

“Saw she the horror as she saw the pomp!”

And as one man they cried “He speaks the  
truth:

“Show her the horror! Take from our own  
mouths

“Our wrongs and show them, she will see  
them too!”

This they cried, lady! I have brought the  
wrongs.

*The Duchess*. Wrongs? Cleves has wrongs  
—apparent now and thus?

I thank you! In that paper? Give it me!

*Valence*. (There, Cleves!) In this! (What  
did I promise, Cleves?)

Our weavers, clothiers, spinners are reduced

Since . . . Oh, I crave your pardon ! I forget I buy the privilege of this approach, And promptly would discharge my debt. I lay This paper humbly at the Duchess' feet.

[*Presenting GUIBERT'S paper.*

*Guibert.* Stay ! for the present . . .

*The Duchess.* Stay, sir ? I take aught That teaches me their wrongs with greater pride Than this your ducal circlet. Thank you, sir !

[*The DUCHESS reads hastily ; then, turning to the Courtiers—*

What have I done to you ? Your deed or mine Was it, this crowning me ? I gave myself No more a title to your homage, no, Than church-flowers, born this season, wrote the words

In the saint's-book that sanctified them first. For such a flower, you plucked me ; well, you erred—

Well, 'twas a weed ; remove the eye-sore quick ! But should you not remember it has lain Steeped in the candles' glory, palely shrined, Nearer God's Mother than most earthly things ? —That if't be faded 'tis with prayer's sole breath—

That the one day it boasted was God's day ? Still, I do thank you ! Had you used respect, Here might I dwindle to my last white leaf, Here lose life's latest freshness, which even yet May yield some wandering insect rest and food : So, fling me forth, and—all is best for all !

[*After a pause.*] Prince Berthold, who art Juliers' Duke it seems—

The King's choice, and the Emperor's, and the Pope's—

Be mine, too ! Take this People ! Tell not me Of rescripts, precedents, authorities, —But take them, from a heart that yearns to give !

Find out their love,—I could not ; find their fear,—

I would not ; find their like,—I never shall, Among the flowers ! [*Taking off her coronet.*

Colombe of Ravestein

Thanks God she is no longer Duchess here !

*Valence* [*advancing to GUIBERT.*] Sir

Guibert, knight, they call you—this of

Is the first step I ever set at court.

You dared make me your instrument, I find ;

For that, so sure as you and I are men,

We reckon to the utmost presently :

But as you are a courtier and I none, Your knowledge may instruct me. I, already,

Have too far outraged, by my ignorance

Of courtier-ways, this lady, to proceed

A second step and risk addressing her :

—I am degraded—you let me address !

Out of her presence, all is plain enough

What I shall do—but in her presence, too,

Surely there's something proper to be done.

[*To the others.*] You, gentles, tell me if I guess aright—

May I not strike this man to earth ?

*The Courtiers* [*as GUIBERT springs forward, withholding him*]. Let go !

—The clothiers' spokesman, Guibert ? Grace a churl ?

*The Duchess* [*to VALENCE*]. Oh, be acquainted with your party, sir !

He's of the oldest lineage Juliers boasts ;

A lion crests him for a cognizance ;

"Scorning to waver"—that's his 'scutcheon's word ;

His office with the new Duke—probably

The same in honour as with me ; or more,

By so much as this gallant turn deserves.

He's now, I dare say, of a thousand times

The rank and influence that remain with her

Whose part you take ! So, lest for taking it

You suffer . . .

*Valence.* I may strike him then to earth ?

*Guibert* [*falling on his knee*]. Great and

dear lady, pardon me ! Hear once !

Believe me and be merciful—be just !

I could not bring myself to give that paper

Without a keener pang than I dared meet

—And so felt Clugnet here, and Maufroy here

—No one dared meet it. Protestation's cheap,—

But, if to die for you did any good,

[*To GAUCELME.*] Would not I die, sir ? Say your worst of me !

But it does no good, that's the mournful truth.

And since the hint of a resistance, even.

Would just precipitate, on you the first,



A speedier ruin—I shall not deny,  
 Saving myself indubitable pain,  
 I thought to give you pleasure (who might say?)  
 By showing that your only subject found  
 To carry the sad notice, was the man  
 Precisely ignorant of its contents;  
 A nameless, mere provincial advocate;  
 One whom 'twas like you never saw before,  
 Never would see again. All has gone wrong;  
 But I meant right, God knows, and you, I trust!

*The Duchess.* A nameless advocate, this gentleman?

—[I pardon you, Sir Guibert!]

*Guibert* [rising, to VALENCE]. Sir, and you?

*Valence.* —Rejoice that you are lightened of a load.

Now, you have only me to reckon with.

*The Duchess.* One I have never seen, much less obliged?

*Valence.* Dare I speak, lady?

*The Duchess.*

Dare you!

I heard you not

I rule no longer?

*Valence.* Lady, if your rule

Were based alone on such a ground as these  
 [Pointing to the Courtiers.]

Could furnish you,—abjure it! They have hidden

A source of true dominion from your sight.

*The Duchess.* You hear them—no such source is left . . .

*Valence.* I hear Cleves!

Whose haggard craftsmen rose to starve this day,

Starve now, and will lie down at night to starve,  
 Sure of a like to-morrow—but as sure  
 Of a most unlike morrow-after-that,  
 Since end things must, end howsoever things may.

What curbs the brute-force instinct in its hour?  
 What makes—instead of rising, all as one,  
 And teaching fingers, so expert to wield  
 Their tool, the broadsword's play or carbine's trick,

—What makes that there's an easier help,  
 they think,

For you, whose name so few of them can spell,  
 Whose face scarce one in every hundred saw,—

You simply have to understand their wrongs,  
 And wrongs will vanish—so, still trades are plied,

And swords lie rusting, and myself stand here?  
 There is a vision in the heart of each  
 Of justice, mercy, wisdom, tenderness  
 To wrong and pain, and knowledge of its cure:  
 And these embodied in a woman's form  
 That best transmits them, pure as first received,  
 From God above her, to mankind below.

Will you derive your rule from such a ground,  
 Or rather hold it by the suffrage, say,  
 Of this man—this—and this?

*The Duchess* [after a pause]. You come from Cleves:

How many are at Cleves of such a mind?

*Valence* [from his paper]. "We, all the manufacturers of Cleves—"

*The Duchess.* Or stay, sir—lest I seem too covetous—

Are you my subject? such as you describe,  
 Am I to you, though to no other man?

*Valence* [from his paper].—"Valence, ordained your Advocate at Cleves—"

*The Duchess* [replacing the coronet]. Then I remain Cleves' Duchess! Take you note,

While Cleves but yields one subject of this stamp,

I stand her lady till she waves me off!

For her sake, all the Prince claims I withhold;  
 Laugh at each menace; and, his power defying,

Return his missive with its due contempt!

[Casting it away.]

*Guibert* [picking it up]. —Which to the Prince I will deliver, lady,

(Note it down, Gaucelme)—with your message too!

*The Duchess.* I think the office is a subject's, sir!

—Either . . . how style you him?—my special guarder

The Marshal's—for who knows but violence  
 May follow the delivery?—Or, perhaps,  
 My Chancellor's—for law may be to urge  
 On its receipt!—Or, even my Chamberlain's—  
 For I may violate established form!

[To VALENCE.] Sir,—for the half-hour till this service ends,  
Will you become all these to me?

*Valence* [falling on his knee]. My liege!

*The Duchess*. Give me!

[*The Courtiers present their badges of office.*]

[*Putting them by.*] Whatever was their virtue once,

They need new consecration. [*Raising*

VALENCE.] Are you mine?

I will be Duchess yet! [*She retires.*]

*The Courtiers*. Our Duchess yet!

A glorious lady! Worthy love and dread!

I'll stand by her,—And I, whate'er betide!

*Guibert* [to VALENCE]. Well done, well done, sir! I care not who know's,

You have done nobly and I envy you—

Tho' I am but unfairly used, I think:

For when one gets a place like this I hold,

(One gets too the remark that its mere wages,

The pay and the preferment, make our prize.

Talk about zeal and faith apart from these,  
We're laughed at—much would zeal and faith subsist

Without these also! Yet, let these be stopped,

Our wages discontinue,—then, indeed,

Our zeal and faith, (we hear on every side,)   
Are not released—having been pledged away

I wonder, for what zeal and faith in turn?

Hard money purchased me my place! No, no—

I'm right, sir—but your wrong is better still,  
If I had time and skill to argue it.

Therefore, I say, I'll serve you, how you please—

If you like,—fight you, as you seem to wish—

(The kinder of me that, in sober truth,

I never dreamed I did you any harm) . . .

*Gaucelme*. —Or, kinder still, you'll introduce, no doubt,

His merits to the Prince who's just at hand,

And let no hint drop he's made Chancellor

And Chamberlain and Heaven knows what beside!

*Clugnet* [to VALENCE]. You stare, young sir, and threaten! Let me say,

That at your age, when first I came to court,  
I was not much above a gentleman;

While now . . .

*I'valence*. —You are Head-Lackey?

With your office

I have not yet been graced, sir!

*Other Courtiers* [to CLUGNET]. Let him

talk!

Fidelity, disinterestedness,

Excuse so much! Men claim my worship ever

Who staunchly and steadfastly . . .

*Enter ADOLF.*

*Adolf*. The Prince arrives.

*Courtiers*. Ha? How?

*Adolf*. He leaves his guard a stage behind  
At Aix, and enters almost by himself.

*1st Courtier*. The Prince! This foolish business puts all out.

*2nd Courtier*. Let Gaucelme speak first!

*3rd Courtier*. Better I began

About the state of Juliers: should one say

All's prosperous and inviting him?

*4th Courtier*. —Or rather,

All's prostrate and imploring him?

*5th Courtier*. That's best

Where's the Cleves' paper, by the way?

*4th Courtier* [to VALENCE]. Sir—sir—

If you'll but lend that paper—trust it me,

I'll warrant . . .

*5th Courtier*. Softly, sir—the Marshal's duty!

*Clugnet*. Has not the Chamberlain a hearing first

By virtue of his patent?

*Gaucelme*. Patents?—Duties?

All that, my masters, must begin again!

One word composes the whole controversy:

We're simply now—the Prince's!

*The Others*. Ay—the Prince's!

*Enter SABYNE.*

*Sabyné*. Adolf! Bid . . . Oh, no time for ceremony!

Where's whom our lady calls her only subject?

She needs him. Who is here the Duchess's?

*Valence* [starting from his reverie]. Most gratefully I follow to her feet.

## ACT III.

## AFTERNOON.

SCENE.—*The Vestibule.**Enter PRINCE BERTHOLD and MELCHIOR.**Berthold.* A thriving little burgh this Juliers looks.[*Half-apart.*] Keep Juliers, and as good you kept Cologne :

Better try Aix, though !—

*Melchior.* Please 't your Highness speak ?*Berthold* [*as before*]. Aix, Cologne, Frankfurt,—Milan ;—Rome !—*Melchior.* The Grave.More weary seems your Highness, I remark,  
Than sundry conquerors whose path I've watchedThrough fire and blood to any prize they gain.  
I could well wish you, for your proper sake,  
Had met some shade of opposition here  
—Found a blunt seneschal refuse unlock,  
Or a scared usher lead your steps astray.  
You must not look for next achievement's palm

So easily : this will hurt your conquering.

*Berthold.* My next ? Ay, as you say, my next and next !Well, I am tired, that's truth, and moody too,  
This quiet entrance-morning : listen why !  
Our little burgh, now, Juliers—'tis indeed  
One link, however insignificant,  
Of the great chain by which I reach my hope,  
—A link I must secure ; but otherwise,  
You'd wonder I esteem it worth my grasp.  
Just see what life is, with its shifts and turns !  
It happens now—this very nook—to be  
A place that once . . . not a long while since,  
neither—When I lived an ambiguous hanger-on  
Of foreign courts, and bore my claims about,  
Discarded by one kinsman, and the other  
A poor priest merely,—then, I say, this place  
Shone my ambition's object ; to be Duke—  
Seemed then, what to be Emperor seems now.  
My rights were far from judged as plain and sureIn those days as of late, I promise you :  
And 'twas my day-dream, Lady Colombe here  
Might e'en compound the matter, pity me,  
Be struck, say, with my chivalry and grace  
(I was a boy !)—bestow her hand at length,  
And make me Duke, in her right if not mine.  
Here am I, Duke confessed, at Juliers now.  
Hearken : if ever I be Emperor,  
Remind me what I felt and said to-day !*Melchior.* All this consoles a bookish man like me.—And so will weariness cling to you. Wrong,  
Wrong ! Had you sought the lady's court yourself,—Faced the redoubtables composing it,  
Flattered this, threatened that man, bribed the other,—

Pleaded by writ and word and deed, your cause,—

Conquered a footing inch by painful inch,—  
And, after long years' struggle, pounced at last  
On her for prize,—the right life had been lived,  
And justice done to divers faculties  
Shut in that brow. Yourself were visible  
As you stood victor, then ; whom now—  
(your pardon !)I am forced narrowly to search and see,  
So are you hid by helps—this Pope, your uncle—

Your cousin, the other King ! You are a mind,—

They, body : too much of mere legs-and-arms  
Obstructs the mind so ! Match these with their like :

Match mind with mind !

*Berthold.* And where's your mind to match ?They show me legs-and-arms to cope withal !  
I'd subjugate this city—where's its mind ?[*The Courtiers enter slowly.*]*Melchior.* Got out of sight when you came troops and all !

And in its stead, here greets you flesh-and-blood :

A smug economy of both, this first !

[*As CLUGNET bows obsequiously.*]

Well done, gout, all considered !—I may go ?

*Berthold.* Help me receive them !

*Melchior.* Oh, they just will say  
What yesterday at Aix their fellows said—  
At Treves, the day before! Sir Prince, my  
friend,  
Why do you let your life slip thus?—Mean-  
time,  
I have my little Juliers to achieve—  
The understanding this tough Platonist,  
Your holy uncle disinterred, Amelius:  
Lend me a company of horse and foot,  
To help me through his tractate—gain my  
Duchy!

*Berthold.* And Empire, after that is gained,  
will be—?

*Melchior.* To help me through your uncle's  
comment, Prince! [*Goes.*]

*Berthold.* Ah? Well: he o'er-refines—  
the scholar's fault!

How do I let my life slip? Say, this life,  
I lead now, differs from the common life  
(Of other men in mere degree, not kind,  
Of joys and griefs,—still there is such degree  
More largeness in a life is something, sure,—  
Enough to care about and struggle for,  
In this world: for this world, the size of  
things;

The sort of things, for that to come, no doubt.  
A great is better than a little aim:  
And when I wooed Priscilla's rosy mouth  
And failed so, under that grey convent-wall,  
Was I more happy than I should be now

[*By this time, the Courtiers  
are ranged before him.*]

If failing of my Empire? Not a whit.  
—Here comes the mind, it once had tasked  
me sore

To baffle, but for my advantages!  
All's best as 'tis: these scholars talk and talk.  
[*Sits himself.*]

*The Courtiers.* Welcome our Prince to  
Juliers!—to his heritage!  
Our dutifullest service proffer we!

*Clugnet.* I, please your Highness, having  
exercised  
The function of Grand Chamberlain at court,  
With much acceptance, as men testify . . .

*Berthold.* I cannot greatly thank you,  
gentlemen!

The Pope declares my claim to the Duchy  
founded

On strictest justice—you concede it, therefore,  
I do not wonder: and the kings my friends  
Protest they mean to see such claim enforced,—  
You easily may offer to assist.

But there's a slight discretionary power  
To serve me in the matter, you've had long,  
Though late you use it. This is well to say—  
But could you not have said it months ago?  
I'm not denied my own Duke's truncheon,  
true—

'Tis flung me—I stoop down, and from the  
ground

Pick it, with all you placid standers-by:  
And now I have it, gems and mire at once,  
Grace go with it to my soiled hands, you say!  
*Guibert.* (By Paul, the advocate our  
doughty friend

Cuts the best figure!)

*Gaucelme.* If our ignorance  
May have offended, sure our loyalty . . .

*Berthold.* Loyalty? Yours? Oh—of your  
selves you speak!

I mean the Duchess all this time, I hope!  
And since I have been forced repeat my  
claims

As if they never had been urged before,  
As I began, so must I end, it seems.

The formal answer to the grave demand!  
What says the lady?

*Courtiers [one to another].* 1st *Courtier.*  
Marshal! 2nd *Courtier.* Orator!

*Guibert.* A variation of our mistress' way!  
Wipe off his boots' dust, Clugnet!—that, he  
waits!

1st *Courtier.* Your place!

2nd *Courtier.* Just now it was  
your own!

*Guibert.* The devil's!  
*Berthold [to GUIBERT].* Come forward,  
friend—you with the paper, there!

Is Juliers the first city I've obtained?  
By this time, I may boast proficiency  
In each decorum of the circumstance.  
Give it me as she gave it—the petition,  
Demand, you style it! What's required, in  
brief?

What title's reservation, appanage's Allowance? I heard all at Treves, last week.

*Gaucelme* [to *GUIBERT*]. "Give it him as she gave it!"

*Guibert*. And why not? [To *BERTHOLD*.] The lady crushed your summons thus together,

And bade me, with the very greatest scorn So fair a frame could hold, inform you . . .

*Courtiers*. Stop—Idiot!

*Guibert*. —Inform you she denied your claim,

Defied yourself! (I tread upon his heel, The blustering advocate!)

*Berthold*. By heaven and earth! Dare you jest, sir?

*Guibert*. Did they at Treves, last week? *Berthold* [starting up]. Why then, I look much bolder than I knew,

And you prove better actors than I thought: Since, as I live, I took you as you entered For just so many dearest friends of mine, Fled from the sinking to the rising power —The sneaking'st crew, in short, I e'er despised!

Whereas, I am alone here for the moment, With every soldier left behind at Aix! Silence? That means the worst? I thought as much!

What follows next then?

*Courtiers*. Gracious Prince, he raves!

*Guibert*. He asked the truth and why not get the truth?

*Berthold*. Am I a prisoner? Speak, will somebody?

—But why stand paltering with imbeciles? Let me see her, or . . .

*Guibert*. Her, without her leave, Shall no one see: she's Duchess yet!

*Courtiers* [footsteps without, as they are disputing]. Good chance! She's here—the Lady Colombe's self!

*Berthold*. 'Tis well! [Aside.] Array a handful thus against my world?

Not ill done, truly! Were not this a mind

To match one's mind with? Colombe! Let us wait!

I failed so, under that grey convent wall! She comes.

*Guibert*. The Duchess! Strangers, range yourselves!

[As the DUCHESS enters in conversation with VALENCE, BERTHOLD and the Courtiers fall back a little.

*The Duchess*. Presagefully it beats, presagefully,

My heart: the right is Berthold's and not mine.

*Valence*. Grant that he has the right, dare I mistrust

Your power to acquiesce so patiently As you believe, in such a dream-like change Of fortune—change abrupt, profound, complete?

*The Duchess*. Ah, the first bitterness is over now!

Bitter I may have felt it to confront The truth, and ascertain those natures' value I had so counted on; that was a pang: But I did bear it, and the worst is over. Let the Prince take them!

*Valence*. And take Juliers too? —Your people without crosses, wands and chains—

Only with hearts?

*The Duchess*. There I feel guilty, sir! I cannot give up what I never had: For I ruled these, not them—these stood between.

Shall I confess, sir? I have heard by stealth Of Berthold from the first; more news and more:

Closer and closer swam the thundercloud, But I was safely housed with these, I knew. At times when to the casement I would turn, At a bird's passage or a flower-trail's play, I caught the storm's red glimpses on its edge— Yet I was sure some one of all these friends Would interpose: I followed the bird's flight Or plucked the flower: some one would interpose!

*Valence*. Not one thought on the People—and Cleves there!

*The Duchess.* Now, sadly conscious my real sway was missed,  
Its shadow goes without so much regret :  
Else could I not again thus calmly bid you,  
Answer Prince Berthold !

*Valence.* Then you acquiesce?

*The Duchess.* Remember over whom it was I ruled !

*Guibert [stepping forward].* Prince Berthold, yonder, craves an audience, lady !

*The Duchess [to VALENCE].* I only have to turn, and I shall face

Prince Berthold ! Oh, my very heart is sick !  
It is the daughter of a line of Dukes  
This scornful insolent adventurer  
Will bid depart from my dead father's halls !  
I shall not answer him—dispute with him—  
But, as he bids, depart ! Prevent it, sir !  
Sir—but a mere day's respite ! Urge for me  
—What I shall call to mind I should have urged

When time's gone by : 'twill all be mine, you urge !

A day—an hour—that I myself may lay  
My rule down ! 'Tis too sudden—must not be !

The world's to hear of it ! Once done—for ever !

How will it read, sir ? How be sung about ?  
Prevent it !

*Berthold [approaching].* Your frank indignation, lady,

Cannot escape me. Overbold I seem ;  
But somewhat should be pardoned my surprise  
At this réception,—this defiance, rather.

And if, for their and your sake, I rejoice  
Your virtues could inspire a trusty few  
To make such gallant stand in your behalf,  
I cannot but be sorry, for my own,  
Your friends should force me to retrace my steps :

Since I no longer am permitted speak  
After the pleasant peaceful course prescribed  
No less by courtesy than relationship—  
Which I remember, if you once forgot.  
But never must attack pass unrepelled.  
Suffer that, through you, I demand of these,  
Who controverts my claim to Juliens ?

*The Duchess.*

—Me

You say, you do not speak to—

*Berthold.*

Of your subjects

I ask, then : whom do you accredit ? Where  
Stand those should answer ?

*Valence [advancing].* The lady is alone.

*Berthold.* Alone, and thus ? So weak and yet so bold ?

*Valence.* I said she was alone—

*Berthold.* And weak,

I said.

*Valence.* When is man strong until he feels alone ?

It was some lonely strength at first, be sure,  
Created organs, such as those you seek,  
By which to give its varied purpose shape :  
And, naming the selected ministrants,  
Took sword, and shield, and sceptre,—each,  
a man !

That strength performed its work and passed its way :

You see our lady : there, the old shapes stand !

—A Marshal, Chamberlain, and Chancellor—  
“Be helped their way, into their death put life

“And find advantage !”—so you counsel us.  
But let strength feel alone, seek help itself,—  
And, as the inland-hatched sea-creature hunts  
The sea's breast out,—as, littered 'mid the waves

The desert-brute makes for the desert's joy,  
So turns our lady to her true resource,  
Passing o'er hollow fictions, worn-out types,  
—And I am first her instinct fastens on.

And prompt I say, as clear as heart can speak,  
The People will not have you ; nor shall have !  
It is not merely I shall go bring Cleves  
And fight you to the last,—though that does much,

And men and children,—ay, and women too,  
Fighting for home, are rather to be feared  
Than mercenaries fighting for their pay—

But, say you beat us, since such things have been,

And, where this Juliens laughed, you set your foot

Upon a steaming bloody splash—what then ?

Stand you the more our lord that there you stand?

Lord it o'er troops whose force you concentrate,

A pillared flame whereto all ardours tend—  
Lord it 'mid priests whose schemes you amplify,

A cloud of smoke 'neath which all shadows brood—

But never, in this gentle spot of earth,  
Can you become our Colombe, our play-queen,

For whom, to furnish lilies for her hair,  
We'd pour our veins forth to enrich the soil.  
—Our conqueror? Yes!—Our despot? Yes!  
—Our Duke?

Know yourself, know us!  
*Berthold [who has been in thought].* Know your lady, also!

[*Very deferentially.*]—To whom I needs must exculpate myself

For having made a rash demand, at least.  
Wherefore to you, sir, who appear to be  
Her chief adviser, I submit my claims,

[*Giving papers.*

But, this step taken, take no further step,  
Until the Duchess shall pronounce their worth.

Here be our meeting-place; at night, its time:

Till when I humbly take the lady's leave!

[*He withdraws. As the DUCHESS turns to VALENCE, the Courtiers interchange glances and come forward a little.*

1st Courtier. So, this was their device!

2nd Courtier. No bad device!

3rd Courtier. You'd say they love each other, Guibert's friend

From Cleves, and she, the Duchess!

4th Courtier. —And moreover,  
That all Prince Berthold comes for, is to help  
Their loves!

5th Courtier. Pray, Guibert, what is next to do?

Guibert [*advancing*]. I laid my office at the Duchess' foot—

Others. And I—and I—and I!

*The Duchess.* I took them, sirs.  
*Guibert [apart to VALENCE].* And now, sir,

I am simple knight again—

Guibert, of the great ancient house, as yet  
That never bore affront; whate'er your birth,—  
As things stand now, I recognize yourself  
(If you'll accept experience of some date)  
As like to be the leading man o' the time,  
Therefore as much above me now, as I  
Seemed above you this morning. Then, I  
offered

To fight you: will you be as generous  
And now fight me?

*Valence.* Ask when my life is mine!

*Guibert.* ('Tis hers now!)

*Clugnet [apart to VALENCE, as GUIBERT turns from him].* You, sir, have insulted me

Grossly,—will grant me, too, the selfsame favour

You've granted him, just now, I make no question?

*Valence.* I promise you, as him, sir.

*Clugnet.* Do you so?

Handsomely said! I hold you to it, sir.

You'll get me reinstated in my office

As you will Guibert!

*The Duchess.* I would be alone!

[*They begin to retire slowly; as*

*VALENCE is about to follow—*

Alone, sir—only with my heart: you stay!

*Gauclme.* You hear that? Ah, light  
breaks upon me! Cleves—

It was at Cleves some man harangued us all—  
With great effect,—so those who listened said,  
My thoughts being busy elsewhere: was  
this he?

Guibert,—your strange, disinterested man!  
Your uncorrupted, if uncourtly friend!

The modest worth you mean to patronize!  
He cares about no Duchesses, not he—

His sole concern is with the wrongs of  
Cleves!

What, Guibert? What, it breaks on you at  
last?

*Guibert.* Would this hall's floor were a  
mine's roof! I'd back

And in her very face . . .

- Gaucelme.* Apply the match  
That fired the train,—and where would you  
be, pray?  
*Guibert.* With him!  
*Gaucelme.* Stand, rather, safe  
outside with me!  
The mine's charged: shall I furnish you the  
match  
And place you properly? To the ante-  
chamber!  
*Guibert.* Can you?  
*Gaucelme.* Try me! Your friend's  
in fortune!  
*Guibert.* Quick—  
To the antechamber! He is pale with bliss!  
*Gaucelme.* No wonder! Mark her eyes!  
*Guibert.* To the antechamber!  
[*The Courtiers retire.*]  
*The Duchess.* Sir, could you know all you  
have done for me  
You were content! You spoke, and I am  
saved.  
*Valence.* Be not too sanguine, lady! Ere  
you dream,  
That transient flush of generosity  
Fades off, perchance. The man, beside, is  
gone,—  
Him we might bend; but see, the papers here—  
Inalterably his requirement stays,  
And cold hard words have we to deal with  
now.  
In that large eye there seemed a latent pride,  
To self-denial not incompetent,  
But very like to hold itself dispensed  
From such a grace: however, let us hope!  
He is a noble spirit in noble form.  
I wish he less had bent that brow to smile  
As with the fancy how he could subject  
Himself upon occasion to—himself!  
From rudeness, violence, you rest secure;  
But do not think your Duchy rescued yet!  
*The Duchess.* You,—who have opened a  
new world to me,  
Will never take the faded language up  
Of that I leave? My Duchy—keeping it,  
Or losing it—is that my sole world now?  
*Valence.* Ill have I spoken if you thence  
despise
- Juliers; although the lowest, on true grounds,  
Be worth more than the highest rule, on false:  
Aspire to rule, on the true grounds!  
*The Duchess.* Nay, hear—  
False, I will never—rash, I would not be!  
This is indeed my birthday—soul and body,  
Its hours have done on me the work of years.  
You hold the requisition: ponder it!  
If I have right, my duty's plain: if he—  
Say so, nor ever change a tone of voice!  
At night you meet the Prince; meet meat eve!  
Till when, farewell! This discomposes you!  
Believe in your own nature, and its force  
Of renovating mine! I take my stand  
Only as under me the earth is firm:  
So, prove the first step stable, all will prove.  
That first, I choose: [*Laying her hand on his.*]  
—the next to take, choose you!  
[*She withdraws.*]  
*Valence* [*after a pause*]. What drew down  
this on me?—on me, dead once,  
She thus bids live,—since all I hitherto  
Thought dead in me, youth's ardours and  
emprise,  
Burst into life before her, as she bids  
Who needs them. Whither will this reach,  
where end?  
Her hand's print burns on mine . . . Yet  
she's above—  
So very far above me! All's too plain:  
I served her when the others sank away,  
And she rewards me as such souls reward—  
The changed voice, the suffusion of the cheek,  
The eye's acceptance, the expressive hand,  
—Reward, that's little, in her generous  
thought,  
Though all to me . . .  
I cannot so disclaim  
Heaven's gift, nor call it other than it is!  
She loves me!  
[*Looking at the Prince's papers.*]—Which love,  
these, perchance, forbid.  
Can I decide against myself—pronounce  
She is the Duchess and no mate for me?  
Cleves, help me! Teach me,—every  
haggard face,—  
To sorrow and endure! I will do right  
Whatever be the issue. Help me, Cleves!



## ACT IV.

## EVENING.

SCENE.—*An Ante-chamber.**Enter the Courtiers.*

*Maufroy.* Now, then, that we may speak  
—how spring this mine?

*Gaucelme.* Is Guibert ready for its match?  
He cools!

Not so friend Valence with the Duchess there!  
"Stay, Valence! Are not you my better  
self?"

And her cheek mantled—

*Guibert.* Well, she loves him, sir:  
And more,—since you will have it I grow  
cool,—

She's right: he's worth it.

*Gaucelme.* For his deeds to-day?  
Say so!

*Guibert.* What should I say beside?

*Gaucelme.* Not this—

For friendship's sake leave this for me to say—  
That we're the dupes of an egregious cheat!  
This plain unpractised suitor, who found way  
To the Duchess through the merest die's  
turn-up

A year ago, had seen her and been seen,  
Loved and been loved.

*Guibert.* Impossible!

*Gaucelme.* —Nor say,  
How sly and exquisite a trick, moreover,  
Was this which—taking not their stand on  
facts

Boldly, for that had been endurable,  
But worming on their way by craft, they  
choose

Resort to, rather,—and which you and we,  
Sheep-like, assist them in the playing-off!

The Duchess thus parades him as preferred,  
Not on the honest ground of preference,

Seeing first, liking more, and there an end—  
But as we all had started equally,

And at the close of a fair race he proved  
The only valiant, sage and loyal man.

Herself, too, with the pretty fits and starts,—

The careless, winning, candid ignorance  
Of what the Prince might challenge or forego—  
She had a hero in reserve! What risk  
Ran she? This deferential easy Prince  
Who brings his claims for her to ratify—  
—He's just her puppet for the nonce!  
You'll see,—

Valence pronounces, as is equitable,  
Against him: off goes the confederate:  
As equitably, Valence takes her hand!

*The Chancellor.* You run too fast: her  
hand, no subject takes.

Do not our archives hold her father's will?  
That will provides against such accident,  
And gives next heir, Prince Berthold, the  
reversion

Of Juliers, which she forfeits, wedding so.

*Gaucelme.* I know that, well as you,—but  
does the Prince?

Knows Berthold, think you, that this plan,  
he helps,

For Valence's ennoblement,—would end,  
If crowned with the success which seems its  
due,

In making him the very thing he plays,  
The actual Duke of Juliers? All agree  
That Colombe's title waived or set aside,  
He is next heir.

*The Chancellor.* Incontrovertibly.

*Gaucelme.* Guibert, your match, now, to  
the train!

*Guibert.* Enough!

I'm with you: selfishness is best again.  
I thought of turning honest—what a dream!  
Let's wake now!

*Gaucelme.* Selfish, friend, you never  
were:

'Twas but a series of revenges taken  
On your unselfishness for prospering ill.  
But now that you're grown wiser, what's our  
course?

*Guibert.* —Wait, I suppose, till Valence  
weds our lady,

And then, if we must needs revenge ourselves,  
Apprise the Prince.

*Gaucelme.* —The Prince, ere then  
dismissed

With thanks for playing his mock part so well?

Tell the Prince now, sir ! Ay, this very night,  
Ere he accepts his dole and goes his way,  
Explain how such a marriage makes him Duke,  
Then trust his gratitude for the surprise !

*Guibert.* —Our lady wedding Valence all  
the same

As if the penalty were undisclosed ?

Good ! If she loves, she'll not disown her  
love,

Throw Valence up. I wonder you see that.

*Gaucelme.* The shame of it—the sudden-  
ness and shame !

Within her, the inclining heart—without,

A terrible array of witnesses—

And Valence by, to keep her to her word,

With Berthold's indignation or disgust !

We'll try it !—Not that we can venture much.  
Her confidence we've lost for ever : Berthold's  
is all to gain.

*Guibert.* To-night, then, venture we !  
Yet—if lost confidence might be renewed ?

*Gaucelme.* Never in noble natures ! With  
the base ones,—

Twist off the crab's claw, wait a smarting-  
while,

And something grows and grows and gets  
to be

A mimic of the lost joint, just so like

As keeps in mind it never, never will

Replace its predecessor ! Crabs do that :

But lop the lion's foot—and . . .

*Guibert.* To the Prince !

*Gaucelme* [*aside*]. And come what will to  
the lion's foot, I pay you,

My cat's-paw, as I long have yearned to pay.

[*Aloud.*] Footsteps ! Himself ! 'Tis Valence  
breaks on us,

Exulting that their scheme succeeds. We'll  
hence—

And perfectours ! Consult the archives, first—

Then, fortified with knowledge, seek the Hall !

*Cugnat* [*to GAUCELME as they retire*].

You have not smiled so since your father  
died !

*As they retire, enter VALENCE with papers.*

*Valence.* So must it be ! I have examined  
these

With scarce a palpitating heart—so calm,  
Keeping her image almost wholly off,  
Setting upon myself determined watch,  
Repelling to the uttermost his claims :

And the result is—all men would pronounce  
And not I, only, the result to be—

Berthold is heir ; she has no shade of right

To the distinction which divided us,

But, suffered to rule first, I know not why,

Her rule connived at by those Kings and  
Popes,

To serve some devil's-purpose,—now 'tis  
gained,

Whate'er it was, the rule expires as well.

—Valence, this rapture . . . selfish can  
it be ?

Eject it from your heart, her home !—It stays !

Ah, the brave world that opens on us both !

—Do my poor townsmen so esteem it ?  
Cleves,—

I need not your pale faces ! This, reward

For service done to you ? Too horrible !

I never served you : 'twas myself I served—

Nay, served not—rather saved from punish-  
ment

Which, had I failed you then, would plague  
me now.

My life continues yours, and your life, mine.

But if, to take God's gift, I swerve no step—

Cleves ! If I breathe no prayer for it—if she,  
[*Footsteps without.*]

Colombe, that comes now, freely gives her-  
self—

Will Cleves require, that, turning thus to her,  
I . . .

*Enter Prince BERTHOLD.*

Pardon, sir ! I did not look for you  
Till night, i' the Hall ; nor have as yet

declared

My judgment to the lady.

*Berthold.* So I hoped.

*Valence.* And yet I scarcely know why  
that should check

The frank disclosure of it first to you—

What her right seems, and what, in conse-  
quence,

She will decide on.

*Berthold.* That I need not ask.

*Valence.* You need not : I have proved the lady's mind :

And, justice being to do, dare act for her.

*Berthold.* Doubtless she has a very noble mind.

*Valence.* Oh, never fear but she'll in each conjuncture

Bear herself bravely ! She no whit depends  
On circumstance ; as she adorns a throne,  
She had adorned . . .

*Berthold.* A cottage—in what book  
Have I read that, of every queen that lived ?  
A throne ! You have not been instructed,  
sure,

To forestall my request ?

*Valence.* 'Tis granted, sir !  
My heart instructs me. I have scrutinized  
Your claims . . .

*Berthold.* Ah—claims, you mean,  
at first preferred ?

I come, before the hour appointed me,  
To pray you let those claims at present rest,  
In favour of a new and stronger one.

*Valence.* You shall not need a stronger :  
on the part

(*O*) the lady, all you offer I accept,  
Since one clear right suffices : yours is clear.  
Propose !

*Berthold.* I offer her my hand.

*Valence.* Your hand ?

*Berthold.* A Duke's, yourself say ; and, at  
no far time,  
Something here whispers me—an Emperor's.  
The lady's mind is noble : which induced  
This seizure of occasion ere my claims  
Were—settled, let us amicably say !

*Valence.* Your hand !

*Berthold.* (He will fall down  
and kiss it next !)

Sir, this astonishment's too flattering,  
Nor must you hold your mistress' worth so  
cheap.

Enhance it, rather,—urge that blood is blood—  
The daughter of the Burgraves, Landgraves,  
Markgraves,

Remains their daughter ! I shalt scarce gain-  
say.

Elsewhere or here, the lady needs must rule :  
Like the imperial crown's great chrysoprase,<sup>1</sup>  
They talk of—somewhat out of keeping there,  
And yet no jewel for a meaner cap.

*Valence.* You wed the Duchess ?

*Berthold.* Cry you mercy, friend !

Will the match also influence fortunes here ?  
A natural solicitude enough.

Be certain, no bad chance it proves for you !  
However high you take your present stand,  
There's prospect of a higher still remove—  
For Juliers will not be my resting-place,  
And, when I have to choose a substitute  
To rule the little burgh, I'll think of you  
Who need not give your mates a character.  
And yet I doubt your fitness to supplant

The grey smooth Chamberlain : he'd hesitate  
A doubt his lady could demean herself  
So low as to accept me. Courage, sir !  
I like your method better : feeling's play  
Is franker much, and flatters me beside.

*Valence.* I am to say, you love her ?

*Berthold.* Say that too !  
Love has no great concernment, thinks the  
world,

With a Duke's marriage. How go precedents  
In Juliers' story—how use Juliers' Dukes ?  
I see you have them here in goodly row ;  
Yon must be Luitpold—ay, a stalwart sire !  
Say, I have been arrested suddenly  
In my ambition's course, its rocky course,  
By this sweet flower : I fain would gather it  
And then proceed : so say and speedily  
—(Nor stand there like Duke Luitpold's  
brazen self !)

Enough, sir : you possess my mind, I think.  
This is my claim, the others being withdrawn,  
And to this be it that, i' the Hall to-night,  
Your lady's answer comes ; till when, fare-  
well ! [*He retires.*]

*Valence* [*after a pause*]. The heavens and  
earth stay as they were ; my heart  
Beats as it beat : the truth remains the truth.  
What falls away, then, if not faith in her ?  
Was it my faith, that she could estimate  
Love's value, and, such faith still guiding me,

<sup>1</sup> A variety of chalcedony.

Dare I now test her? Or grew faith so strong  
Solely because no power of test was mine?

*Enter the DUCHESS.*

*The Duchess.* My fate, sir! Ah, you turn away. All's over.

But you are sorry for me? Be not so!  
What I might have become, and never was,  
Regret with me! What I have merely been,  
Rejoice I am no longer! What I seem  
Beginning now, in my new state, to be,  
I hope that I am!—for, once my rights proved void,

This heavy roof seems easy to exchange  
For the blue sky outside—my lot henceforth.

*Valence.* And what a lot is Berthold's!

*The Duchess.* How of him?

*Valence.* He gathers earth's whole good  
into his arms;

Standing, as man now, stately, strong and wise,

Marching to fortune, not surprised by her.  
One great aim, like a guiding-star, above—  
Which tasks strength, wisdom, stateliness,  
to lift

His manhood to the height that takes the prize;

A prize not near—lest overlooking earth  
He rashly spring to seize it—nor remote,  
So that he rest upon his path content:  
But day by day, while shimmering grows  
shine,

And the faint circlet prophesies the orb,  
He sees so much as, just evolving these,  
The stateliness, the wisdom and the strength,  
To due completion, will suffice this life,  
And lead him at his grandest to the grave.  
After this star, out of a night he springs;  
A beggar's cradle for the throne of thrones  
He quits; so, mounting, feels each step he  
mounts,

Nor, as from each to each exultingly  
He passes, overleaps one grade of joy.  
This, for his own good:—with the world,  
each gift

Of God and man,—reality, tradition,  
Fancy and fact—so well environ him,

That as a mystic panoply they serve—  
Of force, untenanted, to awe mankind,  
And work his purpose out with half the  
world,

While he, their master, dexterously slipt  
From such encumbrance, is meantime employed

With his own prowess on the other half.  
Thus shall he prosper, every day's success  
Adding, to what is he, a solid strength—  
An æry might to what encircles him,  
Till at the last, so life's routine lends help,  
That as the Emperor only breathes and  
moves,

His shadow shall be watched, his step or stalk

Become a comfort or a portent, how  
He trails his ermine take significance,—  
Till even his power shall cease to be most  
power,

And men shall dread his weakness more, not  
dare

Peril their earth its bravest, first and best,  
Its typified invincibility.  
Thus shall he go on, greatening, till he ends—  
The man of men, the spirit of all flesh,  
The fiery centre of an earthly world!

*The Duchess.* Some such a fortune I had  
dreamed should rise

Out of my own—that is, above my power  
Seemed other, greater potencies to stretch—  
*Valence.* For you?

*The Duchess.* It was not I moved  
there, I think:

But one I could,—though constantly beside,  
And aye approaching,—still keep distant  
from,

And so adore. 'Twas a man moved there.

*Valence.* Who?

*The Duchess.* I felt the spirit, never saw  
the face.

*Valence.* See it! 'Tis Berthold's! He  
enables you

To realize your vision.

*The Duchess.* Berthold?

*Valence.* Duke—

Emperor to be: he proffers you his hand.

*The Duchess.* Generous and princely!

*Valence.* He is all of this.  
*The Duchess.* Thanks, Berthold, for my father's sake! No hand degrades me.  
*Valence.* You accept the proffered hand?  
*The Duchess.* That he should love me!  
*Valence.* "Loved" I did not say.  
 Had that been—love might so incline the Prince  
 To the world's good, the world that's at his foot,—  
 I do not know, this moment, I should dare  
 Desire that you refused the world—and Cleves—  
 The sacrifice he asks.  
*The Duchess.* Not love me, sir?  
*Valence.* He scarce affirmed it.  
*The Duchess.* May not deeds affirm?  
*Valence.* What does he? . . . Yes, yes, very much he does!  
 All the shame saved, he thinks, and sorrow saved—  
 Immitigable sorrow, so he thinks,—  
 Sorrow that's deeper than we dream, perchance.  
*The Duchess.* Is not this love?  
*Valence.* So very much he does!  
 For look, you can descend now gracefully:  
 All doubts are banished, that the world might have,  
 Or worst, the doubts yourself, in after-time,  
 May call up of your heart's sincereness now.  
 To such, reply, "I could have kept my rule—  
 "Increased it to the utmost of my dreams—  
 "Yet I ajured it." This, he does for you:  
 It is munificently much.  
*The Duchess.* Still "much!"  
 But why is it not love, sir? Answer me!  
*Valence.* Because not one of Berthold's words and looks  
 Had gone with love's presentment of a flower  
 To the beloved: because bold confidence,  
 Open superiority, free pride—  
 Love owns not, yet were all that Berthold owned:  
 Because where reason, even, finds no flaw,  
 Unerringly a lover's instinct may.

*The Duchess.* You reason, then, and doubt?  
*Valence.* I love, and know.  
*The Duchess.* You love? How strange!  
 I never cast a thought  
 On that. Just see our selfishness! You seemed  
 So much my own . . . I had no ground—and yet,  
 I never dreamed another might divide  
 My power with you, much less exceed it.  
*Valence.* Lady,  
 I am yours wholly.  
*The Duchess.* Oh, no, no, not mine!  
 'Tis not the same now, never more can be.  
 —Your first love, doubtless! Well, what's gone from me?  
 What have I lost in you?  
*Valence.* My heart replies—  
 No loss there! So, to Berthold back again:  
 This offer of his hand, he bids me make—  
 Its obvious magnitude is well to weigh.  
*The Duchess.* She's . . . yes, she must be very fair for you!  
*Valence.* I am a simple advocate of Cleves.  
*The Duchess.* You! With the heart and brain that so helped me,  
 I fancied them exclusively my own,  
 Yet find are subject to a stronger sway!  
 She must be . . . tell me, is she very fair?  
*Valence.* Most fair, beyond conception or belief.  
*The Duchess.* Black eyes?—no matter!  
 Colombe, the world leads  
 Its life without you, whom your friends professed  
 The only woman: see how true they spoke!  
 One lived this while, who never saw your face,  
 Nor heard your voice—unless . . . Is she from Cleves?  
*Valence.* Cleves knows her well.  
*The Duchess.* Ah—just a fancy, now!  
 When you poured forth the wrongs of Cleves,  
 —I said,  
 —Thought, that is, afterward . . .  
*Valence.* You thought of me?  
*The Duchess.* Of whom else? Only such great cause, I thought,

For such effect : see what true love can do !  
 Cleves is his love. I almost fear to ask  
 . . . And will not. This is idling : to our  
 work !

Admit before the Prince, without reserve,  
 My claims misgrounded ; then may follow  
 better.

. . . When you poured out Cleves' wrongs  
 impetuously,  
 Was she in your mind ?

*Valence.* All done was done for her  
 —To humble me !

*The Duchess.* She will be proud at least.

*Valence.* She ?

*The Duchess.* When you tell her.

*Valence.* That will never be.

*The Duchess.* How — are there sweeter  
 things you hope to tell ?

No, sir ! You counselled me, — I counsel you  
 In the one point I — any woman — can.

Your worth, the first thing ; let her own  
 come next —

Say what you did through her, and she  
 through you —

The praises of her beauty afterward !

Will you ?

*Valence.* I dare not.

*The Duchess.* Dare not ?

*Valence.* She I love

Suspects not such a love in me.

*The Duchess.* You jest.

*Valence.* The lady is above me and away.  
 Not only the brave form, and the bright mind,  
 And the great heart, combine to press me  
 low —

But all the world calls rank divides us.

*The Duchess.* Rank !

Now grant me patience ! Here's a man  
 declares

Oracularly in another's case —

Sees the true value and the false, for them —

Nay, bids them see it, and they straight do  
 see.

You called my court's love worthless — so it  
 turned :

I threw away as dross my heap of wealth,  
 And here you stickle for a piece or two !

First — has she seen you ?

*Valence.* Yes.

*The Duchess.* She loves you, then.

*Valence.* One flash of hope burst ; then  
 succeeded night :

And all's at darkest now, Impossible !

*The Duchess.* We'll try : you are — so to  
 speak — my subject yet ?

*Valence.* As ever — to the death.

*The Duchess.* Obey me, then !

*Valence.* I must.

*The Duchess.* Approach her, and . . .  
 no ! first of all

Get more assurance. "My instructress," say,  
 "Was great, descended from a line of kings,  
 "And even fair" — (wait why I say this  
 folly) —

"She said, of all men, none for eloquence,  
 "Courage, and (what cast even these to shade)  
 "The heart they sprung from, — none deserved  
 like him

"Who saved her at her need : if she said this,  
 "What should not one I love, say ?"

*Valence.* Heaven — this hope —  
 Oh, lady, you are filling me with fire !

*The Duchess.* Say this ! — nor think I bid  
 you cast aside

One touch of all the awe and reverence ;  
 Nay, make her proud for once to heart's con-  
 tent

That all this wealth of heart and soul's her  
 own !

Think you are all of this, — and, thinking it,  
 . . . (Obey !)

*Valence.* I cannot choose.

*The Duchess.* Then, kneel to her  
 [VALENCE sinks on his knee.]

I dream !

*Valence.* Have mercy ! Yours, unto the  
 death, —

I have obeyed. Despise, and let me die !

*The Duchess.* Alas, sir, is it to be ever  
 thus ?

Even with you as with the world ? I know  
 This morning's service was no vulgar deed  
 Whose motive, once it dares avow itself,  
 Explains all done and infinitely more,  
 So, takes the shelter of a nobler cause.  
 Your service named its true source, — loyalty !

While I career on all the world for stage,  
There needs at home my representative.

*The Duchess.* —Such, rather, would some  
warrior-woman be—

One dowered with lands and gold, or rich in  
friends—

One like yourself.

*Berthold.* Lady, I am myself,  
And have all these: I want what's not myself,  
Nor has all these. Why give one hand two  
swords?

Here's one already: be a friend's next gift  
A silk glove, if you will—I have a sword.

*The Duchess.* You love me, then?

*Berthold.* Your lineage I revere,  
Honour your virtue, in your truth believe,  
Do homage to your intellect, and bow  
Before your peerless beauty.

*The Duchess.* But, for love—

*Berthold.* A further love I do not under-  
stand.

Our best course is to say these hideous truths,  
And see them, once said, grow endurable:  
Like waters shuddering from their central bed,  
Black with the midnight bowels of the earth,  
That, once up-spouted by an earthquake's  
throe,

A portent and a terror—soon subside,  
Freshen apace, take gold and rainbow hues  
In sunshine, sleep in shadow, and at last  
Grow common to the earth as hills or trees—  
Accepted by all things they came to scare.

*The Duchess.* You cannot love, then?

*Berthold.* —Charlemagne, perhaps!  
Are you not over-curious in love-lore?

*The Duchess.* I have become so, very  
recently.

It seems, then, I shall best deserve esteem,  
Respect, and all your candour promises,  
By putting on a calculating mood—  
Asking the terms of my becoming yours?

*Berthold.* Let me not do myself injustice,  
neither.

Because I will not condescend to fictions  
That promise what my soul can ne'er acquit,  
It does not follow that my guarded phrase  
May not include far more of what you seek,  
Than wide profession of less scrupulous men.

You will be Empress, once for all: with me  
The Pope disputes supremacy—you stand,  
And none gainsays, the earth's first woman.

*The Duchess.* That—

Or simple Lady of Ravestein again?

*Berthold.* The matter's not in my arbitra-  
ment:

Now I have made my claims—which I  
regret—

Cede one, cede all.

*The Duchess.* This claim then, you enforce?

*Berthold.* The world looks on.

*The Duchess.* And when must I decide?

*Berthold.* When, lady? Have I said thus  
much so promptly

For nothing?—Poured out, with such pains,  
at once

What I might else have suffered to ooze forth  
Droplet by droplet in a lifetime long—

For aught less than as prompt an answer,  
too?

All's fairly told now: who can teach you  
more?

*The Duchess.* I do not see him.

*Berthold.* I shall ne'er deceive.

This offer should be made befittingly:  
Did time allow the better setting forth  
The good of it, with what is not so good,  
Advantage, and disparagement as well:  
But as it is, the sum of both must serve.  
I am already weary of this place;  
My thoughts are next stage on to Rome.  
Decide!

The Empire—or,—not even Juliers now!

Hail to the Empress—farewell to the Duchess!

[*The Courtiers, who have been drawing  
nearer and nearer, interpose.*

*Gaucelme.* —“Farewell,” Prince? when  
we break in at our risk—

*Clugnet.* Almost upon court-licence tres-  
passing—

*Gaucelme.* —To point out how your claims  
are valid yet!

You know not, by the Duke her father's will,  
The lady, if she weds beneath her rank,  
Forfeits her Duchy in the next heir's favour—  
So 'tis expressly stipulate. And if  
It can be shown 'tis her intent to wed

A subject, then yourself, next heir, by right  
Succeed to Juliers.

*Berthold.* What insanity?—

*Guibert.* Sir, there's one Valence, the pale  
fiery man

You saw and heard this morning—thought,  
no doubt,

Was of considerable standing here :

I put it to your penetration, Prince,

If aught save love, the truest love for her

Could make him serve the lady as he did !

He's simply a poor advocate of Cleves

—Creeps here with difficulty, finds a place

With danger, gets in by a miracle,

And for the first time meets the lady's face—

So runs the story : is that credible ?

For, first—no sooner in, than he's apprised  
Fortunes have changed ; you are all-powerful  
here,

The lady as powerless : he stands fast by her !

*The Duchess* [*aside*]. And do such deeds  
spring up from love alone ?

*Guibert.* But here occurs the question,  
does the lady

Love him again ? I say, how else can she ?

Can she forget how he stood singly forth

In her defence, dared outrage all of us,

Insult yourself—for what, save love's reward ?

*The Duchess* [*aside*]. And is love then the  
sole reward of love ?

*Guibert.* But, love him as she may and  
must—you ask,

Means she to wed him ? “ Yes,” both natures  
answer !

Both, in their pride, point out the sole result ;

Nought less would he accept nor she propose.

For each conjecture was she great enough

—Will be, for this.

*Clugnat.* Though, now that this  
is known,

Policy, doubtless, urges she deny . . .

*The Duchess.* —What, sir, and wherefore ?

—since I am not sure

That all is any other than you say !

You take this Valence, hold him close to  
me,

Him with his actions : can I choose but look ?  
I am not sure, love trulier shows itself

Than in this man, you hate and would  
degrade,

Yet, with your worst abatement, show me  
thus.

Nor am I—(thus made look within myself,  
Ere I had dared)—now that the look is  
dared—

Sure that I do not love him !

*Guibert.* I hear you, Prince ?

*Berthold.* And what, sirs, please you, may  
this prattle mean

Unless to prove with what alacrity

You give your lady's secrets to the world ?

How much indebted, for discovering

That quality, you make me, will be found

When there's a keeper for my own to seek.

*Courtiers.* “ Our lady ? ”

*Berthold.* —She assuredly remains.

*The Duchess.* Ah, Prince—and you too  
can be generous ?

You could renounce your power, if this  
were so,

And let me, as these phrase it, wed my love

Yet keep my Duchy ? You perhaps exceed

Ilhim, even, in disinterestedness !

*Berthold.* How, lady, should all this affect  
my purpose ?

Your will and choice are still as ever, free.

Say, you have known a worthier than myself

In mind and heart, of happier form and face—

Others must have their birthright : I have gifts,

To balance theirs, not blot them out of sight.

Against a hundred alien qualities,

I lay the prize I offer. I am nothing :

Wed you the Empire ?

*The Duchess.* And my heart away ?

*Berthold.* When have I made pretension  
to your heart ?

I give none. I shall keep your honour safe ;

With mine I trust you, as the sculptor trusts

Yon marble woman with the marble rose,

Loose on her hand, she never will let fall,

In graceful, slight, silent security.

You will be proud of my world-wide career,

And I content in you the fair and good.

What were the use of planting a few seeds

The thankless climate never would mature—

Affections all repelled by circumstance ?



Enough : to these no credit I attach,—  
To what you own, find nothing to object.  
Write simply on my requisition's face  
What shall content my friends—that you admit,  
As Colombe of Ravestein, the claims therein,  
Or never need admit them, as my wife—  
And either way, all's ended !

*The Duchess.*

Let all end !

*Berthold.* The requisition !

*Guibert.* —Valence holds, of course !

*Berthold.* Desire his presence !

[*ADOLF goes out.*]

*Courtiers [to each other].* Out it all comes yet ;

He'll have his word against the bargain yet ;  
He's not the man to tamely acquiesce.

One passionate appeal—upbraiding even,  
May turn the tide again. Despair not yet !

[*They retire a little.*]

*Berthold [to MELCHIOR].* The Empire has  
its old success, my friend !

*Melchior.* You've had your way : before  
the spokesman speaks,

Let me, but this once, work a problem out,  
And ever more be dumb ! The Empire wins ?  
To better purpose have I read my books !

*Enter VALENCE.*

*Melchior [to the Courtiers].* Apart, my  
masters !

[*To VALENCE.*] Sir, one word with you !

I am a poor dependant of the Prince's—  
Pitched on to speak, as of slight consequence.  
You are no higher, I find : in other words,  
We two, as probably the wisest here,  
Need not hold diplomatic talk like fools.  
Suppose I speak, divesting the plain fact  
Of all their tortuous phrases, fit for them ?  
Do you reply so, and what trouble saved !  
The Prince, then—an embroiled strange heap  
of news

This moment reaches him—if true or false,  
All dignity forbids he should inquire  
In person, or by worthy deputy ;  
Yet somehow must inquire, lest slander come :  
And so, 'tis I am pitched on. You have heard  
His offer to your lady ?

*Valence.*

Yes.

*Melchior.*

—Conceive

Her joy thereat ?

*Valence.* I cannot.

*Melchior.* No one can.

All draws to a conclusion, therefore.

*Valence [aside].* So !

No after-judgment—no first thought revised—  
Her first and last decision !—me, she leaves,  
Takes him ; a simple heart is flung aside,  
The ermine o'er a heartless breast embraced.  
Oh Heaven, this mockery has been played  
too oft !

Once, to surprise the angels—twice, that fiends  
Recording, might be proud they chose not so—  
Thrice, many thousand times, to teach the  
world

All men should pause, misdoubt their  
strength, since men

Can have such chance yet fail so signally,  
But ever, ever this farewell to Heaven,  
Welcome to earth—this taking death for life—  
This spurning love and kneeling to the world—  
Oh Heaven, it is too often and too old !

*Melchior.* Well, on this point, what but  
an absurd rumour

Arises—these, its source—its subject, you !  
Your faith and loyalty misconstruing,  
They say, your service claims the lady's hand !  
Of course, nor Prince nor lady can respond :  
Yet something must be said : for, were it true  
You made such claim, the Prince would . . .

*Valence.* Well, sir,—would ?

*Melchior.* —Not only probably withdraw  
his suit,

But, very like, the lady might be forced  
Accept your own. Oh, there are reasons  
why !

But you'll excuse at present all save one,—  
I think so. What we want is, your own witness,  
For, or against—her good, or yours : decide !  
*Valence [aside].* Be it her good if she  
accounts it so !

[*After a contest.*] For what am I but hers, to  
choose as she ?

Who knows how far, beside, the light from her  
May reach, and dwell with, what she looks  
upon ?

*Melchior [to the Prince].* Now to him, you !

*Berthold* [to VALENCE]. My friend acquaints you, sir,  
The noise runs . . .

*Valence.* —Prince, how fortunate are you,  
Wedding her as you will, in spite of noise,  
To show belief in love! Let her but love you,

All else you disregard! What else can be?  
You know how love is incompatible  
With falsehood—purifies, assimilates  
All other passions to itself.

*Melchior.* Ay, sir:  
But softly! Where, in the object we select,  
Such love is, perchance, wanting?

*Valence.* Then indeed,  
What is it you can take?

*Melchior.* Nay, ask the world!  
Youth, beauty, virtue, an illustrious name,  
An influence o'er mankind.

*Valence.* When man perceives . . .  
—Ah, I can only speak as for myself!

*The Duchess.* Speak for yourself!

*Valence.* May I?—no, I have spoken,  
And time's gone by. Had I seen such an one,  
As I loved her—weighing thoroughly that word—

So should my task be to evolve her love:  
If for myself!—if for another—well.

*Berthold.* Heroic truly! And your sole reward,—

The secret pride in yielding up love's right?

*Valence.* Who thought upon reward? And yet how much

Comes after—oh, what amplest recompense!  
Is the knowledge of her, nought? the memory, nought?

—Lady, should such an one have looked on you,

Ne'er wrong yourself so far as quote the world  
And say, love can go unrequited here!

You will have blessed him to his whole life's end—

Low passions hindered, baser cares kept back,  
All goodness cherished where you dwelt—and dwell.

What would he have? He holds you—you, both form

And mind, in his,—where self-love makes such room

For love of you, he would not serve you now  
The vulgar way,—repulse your enemies,  
Win you new realms, or best, to save the old

Die blissfully—that's past so long ago!  
He wishes you no need, thought, care of him—  
Your good, by any means, himself unseen,  
Away, forgotten!—He gives that life's task up,

As it were . . . but this charge which I return—

[*Offers the requisition, which she takes.*]

Wishing your good.

*The Duchess* [having subscribed it]. And opportunely, sir—

Since at a birthday's close, like this of mine,

Good wishes gentle deeds reciprocate.

Most on a wedding-day, as mine is too,  
Should gifts be thought of: yours comes first by right.

Ask of me!

*Berthold.* He shall have what'er he asks,  
For your sake and his own.

*Valence* [aside]. If I should ask—  
The withered bunch of flowers she wears—perhaps,

One last touch of her hand, I never more

Shall see! [*After a pause, presenting his paper to the Prince.*]

Cleves' Prince, redress the wrongs

of Cleves!

*Berthold.* I will, sir!

*The Duchess* [as VALENCE prepares to retire]. —Nay, do out your duty, first!

You bore this paper; I have registered  
My answer to it: read it and have done!

[VALENCE reads it.]

I take him—give up Juliers and the world.

This is my Birthday.

*Melchior.* Berthold, my one hero  
Of the world she gives up, one friend worth my books,

Sole man I think it pays the pains to watch,—  
Speak, for I know you through your Popes and Kings!

*Berthold* [after a pause]. Lady, well rewarded! Sir, as well deserved!  
 I could not imitate—I hardly envy—  
 I do admire you. All is for the best.  
 Too costly a flower were this, I see it now,  
 To pluck and set upon my barren helm  
 To wither—any garish plume will do.  
 I'll not insult you and refuse your Duchy—  
 You can so well afford to yield it me,  
 And I were left, without it, sadly lorn.  
 As it is—for me—if that will flatter you,  
 A somewhat wearier life seems to remain  
 Than I thought possible where . . . 'faith,  
 their life

Begins already! They're too occupied  
 To listen: and few words content me best.

[Abruptly to the Courtiers.] I am your Duke,  
 though! Who obey me here?

*The Duchess.* Adolf and Sabyne follow  
 us—

*Guibert* [starting from the Courtiers].

—And I?

Do I not follow them, if I mayn't you?  
 Shall not I get some little duties up  
 At Ravestein and emulate the rest?  
 God save you, Gaucelme! 'Tis my Birthday,  
 too!

*Berthold.* You happy handful that remain  
 with me

. . . That is, with Dietrich the black Barna-  
 bite

I shall leave over you—will earn your  
 wages

Or Dietrich has forgot to ply his trade!

Meantime,—go copy me the precedents

Of every installation, proper styles

And pedigrees of all your Juliers' Dukes—

While I prepare to plod on my old way,

And somewhat wearily, I must confess!

*The Duchess* [with a light joyous laugh as  
 she turns from them]. Come, Valence,  
 to our friends, God's earth . . .

*Valence* [as she falls into his arms].

—And thee!

## DRAMATIC ROMANCES.

184— 185—

### INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP.

v.

I.

You know, we French stormed Ratisbor  
A mile or so away,  
On a little mound, Napoleon  
Stood on our storming-day ;  
With neck out-thrust, you fancy how,  
Legs wide, arms locked behind,  
As if to balance the prone brow  
Oppressive with its mind.

II.

Just as perhaps he mused " My plans  
" That soar, to earth may fall,  
" Let once my army-leader Lannes  
" Waver at yonder wall,"—  
Out 'twixt the battery-smokes there flew  
A rider, bound on bound  
Full-galloping ; nor bridle drew  
Until he reached the mound.

III.

Then off there flung in smiling joy,  
And held himself erect  
By just his horse's mane, a boy :  
You hardly could suspect—  
(So tight he kept his lips compressed,  
Scarce any blood came through)  
You looked twice ere you saw his breast  
Was all but shot in two.

IV.

" Well," cried he, " Emperor, by God's grace  
" We've got you Ratisbon !  
" The Marshal's in the market-place,  
" And you'll be there anon  
" To see your flag-bird flap his vans  
" Where I, to heart's desire,  
" Perched him !" The chief's eye flashed ;  
his plans  
Soared up again like fire.

The chief's eye flashed ; but presently  
Softened itself, as sheathes  
A film the mother-eagle's eye  
When her bruised eaglet breathes ;  
" You're wounded !" " Nay," the soldier's  
pride  
Touched to the quick, he said :  
" I'm killed, Sire !" And his chief beside  
Smiling the boy fell dead.

### THE PATRIOT.

AN OLD STORY.

I.

It was roses, roses, all the way,  
With myrtle mixed in my path like mad :  
The house-roofs seemed to heave and sway,  
The church-spires flamed, such flags they  
had,  
A year ago on this very day.

II.

The air broke into a mist with bells,  
The old walls rocked with the crowd and  
cries.  
Had I said, " Good folk, mere noise repels—  
But give me your sun from yonder  
skies !"  
They had answered, " And afterward, what  
else ?"

III.

Alack, it was I who leaped at the sun  
To give it my loving friends to keep !  
Nought man could do, have I left un-  
done :  
And you see my harvest, what I reap  
This very day, now a year is run.

## IV.

There's nobody on the house-tops now—  
Just a palsied few at the windows set ;  
For the best of the sight is, all allow,  
At the Shambles' Gate—or, better yet,  
By the very scaffold's foot, I trow.

## V.

I go in the rain, and, more than needs,  
A rope cuts both my wrists behind ;  
And I think, by the feel, my forehead bleeds,  
For they fling, whoever has a mind,  
Stones at me for my year's misdeeds.

## VI.

Thus I entered, and thus I go !  
In triumphs, people have dropped down  
dead.  
"Paid by the world, what dost thou owe  
"Me?"—God might question ; now instead,  
'Tis God shall repay : I am safer so.

## MY LAST DUCHESS.

## FERRARA.

THAT's my last Duchess painted on the wall,  
Looking as if she were alive. I call  
That piece a wonder, now: Frà Pandolf's hands  
Worked busily a day, and there she stands.  
Will't please you sit and look at her? I said  
"Frà Pandolf" by design, for never read  
Strangers like you that pictured countenance,  
The depth and passion of its earnest glance,  
But to myself they turned (since none puts by  
The curtain, I have drawn for you, but I)  
And seemed as they would ask me, if they durst,  
How such a glance came there ; so, not the  
first  
Are you to turn and ask thus. Sir, 'twas not  
Her husband's presence only, called that spot  
Of joy into the Duchess' cheek : perhaps  
Frà Pandolf chanced to say "Her mantle  
laps  
"Over my lady's wrist too much," or "Paint  
"Must never hope to reproduce the faint

"Half-flush that dies along her throat :"  
such stuff.

Was courtesy, she thought, and cause enough  
For calling up that spot of joy. She had  
A heart—how shall I say?—toosoon made glad,  
Too easily impressed ; she liked whate'er  
She looked on, and her looks went ev'rywhere.  
Sir, 'twas all one ! My favour at her breast,  
The dropping of the daylight in the West,  
The bough of cherries some officious fool  
Broke in the orchard for her, the white mule  
She rode with round the terrace—all and each  
Would draw from her alike the approving  
speech,  
Or blush, at least. She thanked men,—  
good ! but thanked  
Somehow—I know not how—as if she ranked  
My gift of a nine-hundred-years-old name  
With anybody's gift. Who'd stoop to blame  
This sort of trifling? Even had you skill  
In speech—(which I have not)—to make  
your will

Quite clear to such an one, and say, "Just this  
"Or that in you disgusts me ; here you miss,  
"Or there exceed the mark"—and if she let  
Herself be lessoned so, nor plainly set  
Her wits to yours, forsooth, and made excuse,  
—E'en then would be some stooping ; and I  
choose

Never to stoop. Oh sir, she smiled, no doubt,  
Whene'er I passed her ; but who passed  
without

Much the same smile? This grew ; I gave  
commands ;

Then all smiles stopped together. There  
she stands

As if alive. Will't please you rise? We'll  
meet

The company below, then. I repeat,  
The Count your master's known munificence  
Is ample warrant that no just pretence  
Of mine for dowry will be disallowed ;  
Though his fair daughter's self, as I avowed  
At starting, is my object. Nay, we'll go  
Together down, sir. Notice Neptune, though,  
Taming a sea-horse, thought a rarity,

Which Claus of Innsbruck cast in bronze for  
me !

## COUNT GISMOND.

## AIX IN PROVENCE.

## I.

CHRIST God who savest man, save most  
 Of men Count Gismond who saved me !  
 Count Gauthier, when he chose his post,  
 Chose time and place and company  
 To suit it ; when he struck at length  
 My honour, 'twas with all his strength.

## II.

And doubtlessly ere he could draw  
 All points to one, he must have schemed  
 That miserable morning saw  
 Few half so happy as I seemed,  
 While being dressed in queen's array  
 To give our tourney prize away.

## III.

I thought they loved me, did me grace  
 To please themselves ; 'twas all their deed ;  
 God makes, or fair or foul, our face ;  
 If showing mine so caused to bleed  
 My cousins' hearts, they should have dropped  
 A word, and straight the play had stopped.

## IV.

They, too, so beauteous ! Each a queen  
 By virtue of her brow and breast ;  
 Not needing to be crowned, I mean,  
 As I do. E'en when I was dressed,  
 Had either of them spoke, instead  
 Of glancing sideways with still head !

## V.

But no · they let me laugh, and sing  
 My birthday song quite through, adjust  
 The last rose in my garland, fling  
 A last look on the mirror, trust  
 My arms to each an arm of theirs,  
 And so descend the castle-stairs—

And come out on the morning-troop  
 Of merry friends who kissed my cheek,

And called me queen, and made me stoop  
 Under the canopy—(a streak  
 That pierced it, of the outside sun,  
 Powdered with gold its gloom's soft dun)—

## VII.

And they could let me take my state  
 And foolish throne amid applause  
 Of all come there to celebrate  
 My queen's-day—Oh I think the cause  
 Of much was, they forgot no crowd  
 Makes up for parents in their shroud !

## VIII.

However that be, all eyes were bent  
 Upon me, when my cousins cast  
 Theirs down ; 'twas time I should present  
 The victor's crown, but . . . there, 'twill  
 last  
 No long time . . . the old mist again  
 Blinds me as then it did. How vain !

## IX.

See ! Gismond's at the gate, in talk  
 With his two boys : I can proceed.  
 Well, at that moment, who should stalk  
 Forth boldly—to my face, indeed—  
 But Gauthier, and he thundered "Stay !"   
 And all stayed. "Bring no crowns, I say !"

## X.

"Bring torches ! Wind the penance-sheet  
 "About her ! Let her shun the chaste,  
 "Or lay herself before their feet !  
 "Shall she whose body I embraced  
 "A night long, queen it in the day ?  
 "For honour's sake no crowns, I say !"

## XI.

I ? What I answered ? As I live,  
 I never fancied such a thing  
 As answer possible to give.  
 What says the body when they spring  
 Some monstrous torture-engine's whole  
 Strength on it ? No more says the soul.

## XII.

Till out strode Gismond ; then I knew  
That I was saved. I never met  
His face before, but, at first view,  
I felt quite sure that God had set  
Himself to Satan ; who would spend  
A minute's mistrust on the end ?

## XIII.

He strode to Gauthier, in his throat  
Gave him the lie, then struck his mouth  
With one back-handed blow that wrote  
In blood men's verdict there. North, South,  
East, West, I looked. The lie was dead,  
And damned, and truth stood up instead.

## XIV.

This glads me most, that I enjoyed  
The heart of the joy, with my content  
In watching Gismond unalloyed  
By any doubt of the event :  
God took that on him—I was bid  
Watch Gismond for my part : I did.

## XV.

Did I not watch him while he let  
His armourer just brace his greaves,  
Rivet his hauberk, on the fret  
The while ! His foot . . . my memory leaves  
No least stamp out, nor how anon  
He pulled his ringing gauntlets on.

## XVI.

And e'en before the trumpet's sound  
Was finished, prone lay the false knight,  
Prone as his lie, upon the ground :  
Gismond flew at him, used no sleight  
O' the sword, but open-breasted drove,  
Cleaving till out the truth he clove.

## XVII.

Which done, he dragged him to my feet  
And said " Here die, but end thy breath  
" In full confession, lest thou fleet  
" From my first, to God's second death !  
" Say, hast thou lied ? " And, " I have lied  
" To God and her," he said, and died.

## XVIII.

Then Gismond, kneeling to me, asked  
—What safe my heart holds, though no  
word  
Could I repeat now, if I tasked  
My powers for ever, to a third  
Dear even as you are. Pass the rest  
Until I sank upon his breast.

## XIX.

Over my head his arm he flung.  
Against the world ; and scarce I felt  
His sword (that dripped by me and swung)  
A little shifted in its belt :  
For he began to say the while  
How South our home lay many a mile.

## XX.

So 'mid the shouting multitude  
We two walked forth to never more  
Return. My cousins have pursued  
Their life, untroubled as before  
I vexed them. Gauthier's dwelling-place  
God lighten ! May his soul find grace !

## XXI.

Our elder boy has got the clear  
Great brow ; tho' when his brother's black  
Full eye shows scorn, it . . . Gismond here?  
And have you brought my tercel<sup>1</sup> back ?  
I just was telling Adela  
How many birds it struck since May.

## THE BOY AND THE ANGEL.

MORNING, evening, noon and night,  
" Praise God ! " sang Theocrite.

Then to his poor trade he turned,  
Whereby the daily meal was earned.

Hard he laboured, long and well ;  
O'er his work the boy's curls fell.

But ever, at each period,  
He stopped and sang, "Praise God!"

Then back again his curls he threw,  
And cheerful turned to work anew.

Said Blaise, the listening monk, "Well done;  
"I doubt not thou art heard, my son:"

"As well as if thy voice to-day  
"Were praising God, the Pope's great way.

"This Easter Day, the Pope at Rome  
"Praises God from Peter's dome."

Said Theocrite, "Would God that I  
"Might praise him, that great way, and die!"

Night passed, day shone,  
And Theocrite was gone.

With God a day endures away,  
A thousand years are but a day.

God said in heaven, "Nor day nor night  
"Now brings the voice of my delight."

Then Gabriel, like a rainbow's birth,  
Spread his wings and sank to earth;

Entered, in flesh, the empty cell,  
Lived there, and played the craftsman well;

And morning, evening, noon and night,  
Praised God in place of Theocrite.

And from a boy, to youth he grew:  
The man put off the stripling's hue:

The man matured and fell away  
Into the season of decay:

And ever o'er the trade he bent,  
And ever lived on earth content.

(He did God's will; to him, all one  
If on the earth or in the sun.)

God said, "A praise is in mine ear;  
"There is no doubt in it, no fear:

"So sing old worlds, and so  
"New worlds that from my footstool go.

"Clearer loves sound other ways:  
"I miss my little human praise."

Then forth sprang Gabriel's wings, off fell  
The flesh disguise, remained the cell.

'Twas Easter Day: he flew to Rome,  
And paused above Saint Peter's dome.

In the tiring-room close by  
The great outer gallery,

With his holy vestments dight,  
Stood the new Pope, Theocrite:

And all his past career  
Came back upon him clear,

Since when, a boy, he plied his trade,  
Till on his life the sickness weighed;

And in his cell, when death drew near,  
An angel in a dream brought cheer:

And rising from the sickness drear  
He grew a priest, and now stood here.

To the East with praise he turned,  
And on his sight the angel burned.

"I bore thee from thy craftsman's cell  
"And set thee here; I did not well.

"Vainly I left my angel-sphere;  
"Vain was thy dream of many a year.

"Thy voice's praise seemed weak; it  
dropped—  
"Creation's chorus stopped!

"Go back and praise again  
"The early way, while I remain.



"With that weak voice of our disdain,  
 "Take up creation's pausing strain.  
 "Back to the cell and poor employ :  
 "Resume the craftsman and the boy !"

Theocrite grew old at home ;  
 A new Pope dwelt in Peter's dome.

One vanished as the other died :  
 They sought God side by side.

### INSTANS TYRANNUS.

#### I.

OF the million or two, more or less,  
 I rule and possess,  
 One man, for some cause undefined,  
 Was least to my mind.

#### II.

I struck him, he grovelled of course—  
 For, what was his force ?  
 I pinned him to earth with my weight  
 And persistence of hate :  
 And he lay, would not moan, would not curse,  
 As his lot might be worse.

#### III.

"Were the object less mean, would he stand  
 "At the swing of my hand !  
 "For obscurity helps him and blots  
 "The hole where he squats."  
 So, I set my five wits on the stretch  
 To inveigle the wretch.  
 All in vain ! Gold and jewels I threw,  
 Still he couched there perdue ;  
 I tempted his blood and his flesh,  
 Hid in roses my mesh,  
 Choicest cates and the flagon's best spilt :  
 Still he kept to his filth.

#### IV.

I had he kith now or kin, were access  
 To his heart, did I press :  
 Just a son or a mother to seize !  
 No such booty as these.

Were it simply a friend to pursue  
 'Mid my million or two,  
 Who could pay me in person or pelf  
 What he owes me himself !  
 No : I could not but smile through my chafe :  
 For the fellow lay safe  
 As his mates do, the midge and the nit,  
 —Through minuteness, to wit.

Then a humour more great took its place  
 At the thought of his face,  
 The droop, the low cares of the mouth,  
 The trouble uncouth  
 'Twixt the brows, all that air one is fain  
 To put out of its pain.  
 And, "no !" I admonished myself,  
 "Is one mocked by an elf,  
 "Is one baffled by toad or by rat ?  
 "The gravamen's in that !  
 "How the lion, who crouches to suit  
 "His back to my foot,  
 "Would admire that I stand in debate !  
 "But the small turns the great  
 "If it vexes you,—that is the thing !  
 "Toad or rat vex the king ?  
 "Though I waste half my realm to unearth  
 "Toad or rat, 'tis well worth !"

#### VII.

So, I soberly laid my last plan  
 To extinguish the man.  
 Round his creep-hole, with never a break  
 Ran my fires for his sake ;  
 Over-head, did my thunder combine  
 With my underground mine :  
 Till I looked from my labour content  
 To enjoy the event.  
 When sudden . . . how think ye, the end ?  
 Did I say "without friend" ?  
 Say rather, from marge to blue marge  
 The whole sky grew his targe  
 With the sun's self for visible boss,  
 While an Arm ran across  
 Which the earth heaved beneath like a breast  
 Where the wretch was safe prest !

Do you see? Just my vengeance complete,  
 The man sprang to his feet,  
 Stood erect, caught at God's skirts, and  
 prayed!  
 —So, I was afraid!

## MESMERISM.

## I.

ALL I believed is true!  
 I am able yet  
 All I want, to get  
 By a method as strange as new:  
 Dare I trust the same to you?

## II.

If at night, when doors are shut,  
 And the wood-worm picks,  
 And the death-watch ticks,  
 And the bar has a flag of smut,  
 And a cat's in the water-butt—

## III.

And the socket floats and flares,  
 And the house-beams groan,  
 And a foot unknown  
 Is surmised on the garret-stairs,  
 And the locks slip unawares—

## IV.

And the spider, to serve his ends,  
 By a sudden thread,  
 Arms and legs outspread,  
 On the table's midst descends,  
 Comes to find, God knows what  
 friends!—

## V.

If since eve drew in, I say,  
 I have sat and brought  
 (So to speak) my thought  
 To bear on the woman away,  
 Till I felt my hair turn grey—

## VI.

Till I seemed to have and hold,  
 In the vacancy  
 'Twixt the wall and me,  
 From the hair-plait's chestnut gold  
 To the foot in its muslin fold—

## VII.

Have and hold, then and there,  
 Her, from head to foot,  
 Breathing and mute,  
 Passive and yet aware,  
 In the grasp of my steady stare—

## VIII.

Hold and have, there and then,  
 All her body and soul  
 That completes my whole,  
 All that women add to men,  
 In the clutch of my steady ken—

## IX.

Having and holding, till  
 I imprint her fast  
 On the void at last  
 As the sun does whom he will  
 By the calotypist's skill—

## X.

Then,—if my heart's strength serve,  
 And through all and each  
 Of the veils I reach  
 To her soul and never swerve,  
 Knitting an iron nerve—

## XI.

Command her soul to advance  
 And inform the shape  
 Which has made escape  
 And before my countenance  
 Answers me glance for glance—

## XII.

I, still with a gesture fit  
 Of my hands that best  
 Do my soul's behest,  
 Pointing the power from it,  
 While myself do steadfast sit—

## XIII.

Steadfast and still the same  
 On my object bent,  
 While the hands give vent  
 To my ardour and my aim  
 And break into very flame—

## XIV.

Then I reach, I must believe,  
 Not her soul in vain,  
 For to me again  
 It reaches, and past retrieve  
 Is wound in the toils I weave ;

## XV.

And must follow as I require,  
 As befits a thrall,  
 Bringing flesh and all,  
 Essence and earth-attire,  
 To the source of the tractile fire :

## XVI.

Till the house called hers, not mine,  
 With a growing weight  
 Seems to suffocate  
 If she break not its leaden line  
 And escape from its close confine.

## XVII.

Out of doors into the night !  
 On to the maze  
 Of the wild wood-ways,  
 Not turning to left nor right  
 From the pathway, blind with sight—

## XVIII.

Making thro' rain and wind  
 O'er the broken shrubs,  
 'Twixt the stems and stubs,  
 With a still, composed, strong mind,  
 Nor a care for the world behind—

## XIX.

Swifter and still more swift,  
 As the crowding peace  
 Doth to joy increase  
 In the wide blind eyes uplift  
 Thro' the darkness and the drift !

## XX.

While I—to the shape, I too  
 Feel my soul dilate  
 Nor a whit abate,  
 And relax not a gesture due,  
 As I see my belief come true.

## XXI.

For, there ! have I drawn or no  
 Life to that lip ?  
 Do my fingers dip  
 In a flame which again they throw  
 On the cheek that breaks a-glow ?

## XXII.

Ha ! was the hair so first ?  
 What, unfiled,  
 Made alive, and spread  
 Through the void with a rich outburst,  
 Chestnut gold-interspersed ?

## XXIII.

Like the doors of a casket-shrine,  
 See, on either side,  
 Her two arms divide  
 Till the heart betwixt makes sign,  
 Take me, for I am thine !

## XXIV.

"Now—now"—the door is heard !  
 Hark, the stairs ! and near—  
 Nearer—and here—  
 "Now !" and at call the third  
 She enters without a word.

## XXV.

On doth she march and on  
 To the fancied shape ;  
 It is, past escape,  
 Herself, now : the dream is done  
 And the shadow and she are one.

## XXVI.

First I will pray. Do Thou  
 That ownest the soul,  
 Yet wilt grant control  
 To another, nor disallow  
 For a time, restrain me now !

## XXVII.

I admonish me while I may,  
 Not to squander guilt,  
 Since require Thou wilt  
 At my hand its price one day !  
 What the price is, who can say ?

## THE GLOVE.

(PETER RONSARD *loquitur.*)

"HEIGHO!" yawned one day King Francis,  
 "Distance all value enhances !  
 "When a man's busy, why, leisure  
 "Strikes him as wonderful pleasure :  
 "Faith, and at leisure once is he ?  
 "Straightway he wants to be busy.  
 "Here we've got peace ; and aghast I'm  
 "Caught thinking war the true pastime.  
 "Is there a reason in metre ?  
 "Give us your speech, master Peter !"  
 I who, if mortal dare say so,  
 Ne'er am at loss with my Naso,  
 "Sire," I replied, "joys prove cloudlets :  
 "Men are the merest Ixions"—  
 Here the King whistled aloud, "Let's  
 "—Heigho—go look at our lions !"  
 Such are the sorrowful chances  
 If you talk fine to King Francis.

And so, to the courtyard proceeding,  
 Our company, Francis was leading,  
 Increased by new followers tenfold  
 Before he arrived at the penfold ;  
 Lords, ladies, like clouds which bedizen  
 At sunset the western horizon.  
 And Sir De Lorge pressed 'mid the foremost  
 With the dame he professed to adore most.  
 Oh, what a face ! One by fits eyed  
 Her, and the horrible pitside ;  
 For the penfold surrounded a hollow  
 Which led where the eye scarce dared follow,  
 And shelved to the chamber secluded  
 Where Bluebeard, the great lion, brooded.  
 The King hailed his keeper, an Arab  
 As glossy and black as a scarab,<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A beetle.

And bade him make sport and at once stir  
 Up and out of his den the old monster.  
 They opened a hole in the wire-work  
 Across it, and dropped there a firework,  
 And fled : one's heart's beating redoubled ;  
 A pause, while the pit's mouth was troubled,  
 The blackness and silence so utter,  
 By the firework's slow sparkling and sputter ;  
 Then earth in a sudden contortion  
 Gave out to our gaze her abortion.  
 Such a brute ! Were I friend Clement  
 Marot

(Whose experience of nature's but narrow,  
 And whose faculties move in no small mist  
 When he versifies David the Psalmist)  
 I should study that brute to describe you  
*Illum Juda Leonem de Tribu.*  
 One's whole blood grew curdling and creepy  
 To see the black mane, vast and heapy,  
 The tail in the air stiff and straining,  
 The wide eyes, nor waxing nor waning,  
 As over the barrier which bounded  
 His platform, and us who surrounded  
 The barrier, they reached and they rested  
 On space that might stand him in best stead :  
 For who knew, he thought, what the amaze-  
 ment,  
 The eruption of clatter and blaze meant,  
 And if, in this minute of wonder,  
 No outlet, 'mid lightning and thunder,  
 Lay broad, and, his shackles all shivered,  
 The lion at last was delivered ?  
 Ay, that was the open sky o'erhead !  
 And you saw by the flash on his forehead,  
 By the hope in those eyes wide and steady,  
 He was leagues in the desert already,  
 Driving the flocks up the mountain,  
 Or catlike couched hard by the fountain  
 To waylay the date-gathering negress :  
 So guarded he entrance or egress.  
 "How he stands !" quoth the King : "we  
 may well swear,  
 ("No novice, we've won our spurs elsewhere  
 "And so can afford the confession,)  
 "We exercise wholesome discretion  
 "In keeping aloof from his threshold ;  
 "Once hold you, those jaws want no fresh  
 hold,

" Their first would too pleasantly purloin  
 " The visitor's brisket or surloin :  
 " But who's he would prove so fool-hardy ?  
 " Not the best man of Marignan, pardie ! "

The sentence no sooner was uttered,  
 Than over the rails a glove fluttered,  
 Fell close to the lion, and rested :  
 The dame 'twas, who flung it and jested  
 With life so, De Lorge had been wooing  
 For months past ; he sat there pursuing  
 His suit, weighing out with nonchalance  
 Fine speeches like gold from a balance.

Sound the trumpet, no true knight's a tarrier !  
 De Lorge made one leap at the barrier,  
 Walked straight to the glove,—while the  
 lion

Ne'er moved, kept his far-reaching eye on  
 The palm-tree-edged desert-spring's sapphire,  
 And the musky oiled skin of the Kaffir,—  
 Picked it up, and as calmly retreated,  
 Leaped back where the lady was seated,  
 And full in the face of its owner  
 Flung the glove.

" Your heart's queen, you dethrone her ?  
 " So should I ! "—cried the King—" 'twas  
 mere vanity,  
 " Not love, set that task to humanity ! "  
 Lords and ladies alike turned with loathing  
 From such a proved wolf in sheep's clothing.

Not so, I ; for I caught an expression  
 In her brow's undisturbed self-possession  
 Amid the Court's scoffing and merriment,—  
 As if from no pleasing experiment  
 She rose, yet of pain not much heedful  
 So long as the process was needful,—  
 As if she had tried in a crucible,  
 To what " speeches like gold " were re-  
 ducible,

And, finding the finest prove copper,  
 Felt the smoke in her face was but proper ;  
 To know what she had *not* to trust to,  
 Was worth all the ashes and dust too.  
 She went out 'mid hooting and laughter ;  
 Clement Marot stayed ; I followed after,

And asked, as a grace, what it all meant ?  
 If she wished not the rash deed's recalcitrant ?  
 " For I "—so I spoke—" am a poet :  
 " Human nature,—behoves that I know it ! "

She told me, " Too long had I heard  
 " Of the deed proved alone by the word :  
 " For my love—what De Lorge would not  
 dare !

" With my scorn—what De Lorge could  
 compare !

" And the endless descriptions of death  
 " He would brave when my lip formed a  
 breath,

" I must reckon as braved, or, of course,  
 " Doubt his word—and moreover, perforce,  
 " For such gifts as no lady could spurn,  
 " Must offer my love in return.

" When I looked on your lion, it brought  
 " All the dangers at once to my thought,  
 " Encountered by all sorts of men,  
 " Before he was lodged in his den,—  
 " From the poor slave whose club or bare  
 hands

" Dug the trap, set the snare on the sands,  
 " With no King and no Court to applaud,  
 " By no shame, should he shrink, overawed,  
 " Yet to capture the creature made shift,  
 " That his rude boys might laugh at the gift,  
 "—To the page who last leaped o'er the  
 fence

" Of the pit, on no greater pretence  
 " Than to get back the bonnet he dropped,  
 " Lest his pay for a week should be stopped.  
 " So, wiser I judged it to make  
 " One trial what ' death for my sake '   
 " Really meant, while the power was yet  
 mine,

" Than to wait until time should define  
 " Such a phrase not so simply as I ;  
 " Who took it to mean just ' to die.'   
 " The blow a glove gives is but weak :  
 " Does the mark yet discolour my cheek ?  
 " But when the heart suffers a blow,  
 " Will the pain pass so soon, do you know ? "

I looked, as away she was sweeping.  
 And saw a youth eagerly keeping

As close as he dared to the doorway.  
 No doubt that a noble should more weigh  
 His life than befits a plebeian ;  
 And yet, had our brute been Nemean—  
 (I judge by a certain calm fervour  
 The youth stepped with, forward to serve her)  
 —He'd have scarce thought you did him the  
 worst turn

If you whispered "Friend, what you'd get,  
 first earn !"

And when, shortly after, she carried  
 Her shame from the Court, and they married,  
 To that marriage some happiness, maugre  
 The voice of the Court, I dared augur.

For De Lorge, he made women with men vie,  
 Those in wonder and praise, these in envy ;  
 And in short stood so plain a head taller  
 That he wooed and won . . . how do you  
 call her ?

The beauty, that rose in the sequel  
 To the King's love, who loved her a week  
 well.

And 'twas noticed he never would honour  
 De Lorge (who looked daggers upon her)  
 With the easy commission of stretching  
 His legs in the service, and fetching  
 His wife, from her chamber, those straying  
 Sad gloves she was always mislaying,  
 While the King took the closet to chat in,—  
 But of course this adventure came pat in.  
 And never the King told the story,  
 How bringing a glove brought such glory,  
 But the wife smiled—"His nerves are grown  
 firmer :

"Mine he brings now and utters no murmur."

*Venienti occurrere morbo !*

With which moral I drop my theorbo.

#### TIME'S REVENGES.

I'VE a Friend, over the sea ;  
 I like him, but he loves me.  
 It all grew out of the books I write ;  
 They find such favour in his sight

That he slaughters you with savage looks  
 Because you don't admire my books.  
 He does himself though,—and if some vein  
 Were to snap to-night in this heavy brain,  
 To-morrow month, if I lived to try,  
 Round should I just turn quietly,  
 Or out of the bedclothes stretch my hand  
 Till I found him, come from his foreign  
 land

To be my nurse in this poor place,  
 And make my broth and wash my face  
 And light my fire and, all the while,  
 Bear with his old good-humoured smile  
 That I told him "Better have kept away  
 "Than come and kill me, night and day,  
 "With, worse than fever throbs and shoots,  
 "The creaking of his clumsy boots."  
 I am as sure that this he would do,  
 As that Saint Paul's is striking two.  
 And I think I rather . . . woe is me !  
 —Yes, rather would see him than not see,  
 If lifting a hand could seat him there  
 Before me in the empty chair  
 To-night, when my head aches indeed,  
 And I can neither think nor read  
 Nor make these purple fingers hold  
 The pen ; this garret's freezing cold !

And I've a Lady—there he wakes,  
 The laughing fiend and prince of snakes  
 Within me, at her name, to pray  
 Fate send some creature in the way  
 Of my love for her, to be down-torn,  
 Uphrust and outward-borne,  
 So I might prove myself that sea  
 Of passion which I needs must be !  
 Call my thoughts false and my fancies quaint  
 And my style infirm and its figures faint,  
 All the critics say, and more blame yet,  
 And not one angry word you get.  
 But, please you, wonder I would put  
 My cheek beneath that lady's foot  
 Rather than trample under mine  
 The laurels of the Florentine,  
 And you shall see how the devil spends  
 A fire God gave for other ends !  
 I tell you, I stride up and down  
 This garret, crowned with love's best crown,

And feasted with love's perfect feast,  
 To think I kill for her, at least,  
 Body and soul and peace and fame,  
 Alike youth's end and manhood's aim,  
 —So is my spirit, as flesh with sin,  
 Filled full, eaten out and in  
 With the face of her, the eyes of her,  
 The lips, the little chin, the stir  
 Of shadow round her mouth; and she  
 —I'll tell you,—calmly would decree  
 That I should roast at a slow fire,  
 If that would compass her desire  
 And make her one whom they invite  
 To the famous ball to-morrow night.

There may be heaven; there must be hell;  
 Meantime, there is our earth here—well!

#### THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND.

THAT second time they hunted me  
 From hill to plain, from shore to sea,  
 And Austria, hounding far and wide  
 Her blood-hounds thro' the country-side,  
 Breathed hot and instant on my trace,—  
 I made six days a hiding-place  
 Of that dry green old aqueduct  
 Where I and Charles, when boys, have  
 plucked

The fire-flies from the roof above,  
 Bright creeping thro' the moss they love:  
 —How long it seems since Charles was lost!  
 Six days the soldiers crossed and crossed  
 The country in my very sight;  
 And when that peril ceased at night,  
 The sky broke out in red dismay  
 With signal fires; well, there I lay  
 Close covered o'er in my recess,  
 Up to the neck in ferns and cress,  
 Thinking on Metternich our friend,  
 And Charles's miserable end,  
 And much beside, two days; the third,  
 Hunger o'ercame me when I heard  
 The peasants from the village go  
 To work among the maize; you know,  
 With us in Lombardy, they bring  
 Provisions packed on mules, a string

With little bells that cheer their task,  
 And casks, and boughs on every cask;  
 To keep the sun's heat from the wine;  
 These I let pass in jingling line,  
 And, close on them, dear noisy crew,  
 The peasants from the village, too;  
 For at the very rear would troop  
 Their wives and sisters in a group  
 To help, I knew. When these had passed,  
 I threw my glove to strike the last,  
 Taking the chance: she did not start,  
 Much less cry out, but stooped apart,  
 One instant rapidly glanced round,  
 And saw me beckon from the ground.  
 A wild bush grows and hides my crypt;  
 She picked my glove up while she stripped  
 A branch off, then rejoined the rest  
 With that; my glove lay in her breast.  
 Then I drew breath; they disappeared:  
 It was for Italy I feared.

An hour, and she returned alone  
 Exactly where my glove was thrown.  
 Meanwhile came many thoughts: on me  
 Rested the hopes of Italy.  
 I had devised a certain tale  
 Which, when 'twas told her, could not  
 fail

Persuade a peasant of its truth;  
 I meant to call a freak of youth  
 This hiding, and give hopes of pay,  
 And no temptation to betray.  
 But when I saw that woman's face,  
 Its calm simplicity of grace,  
 Our Italy's own attitude  
 In which she walked thus far, and stood,  
 Planting each naked foot so firm,  
 To crush the snake and spare the worm—  
 At first sight of her eyes, I said,  
 "I am that man upon whose head  
 "They fix the price, because I hate  
 "The Austrians over us: the State  
 "Will give you gold—oh, gold so much!—  
 "If you betray me to their clutch,  
 "And be your death, for aught I know,  
 "If once they find you saved their foe.  
 "Now, you must bring me food and drink,  
 "And also paper, pen and ink,

"And carry safe what I shall write  
 "To Padua, which you'll reach at night  
 "Before the duomo shuts; go in,  
 "And wait till Tenebræ begin;  
 "Walk to the third confessional,  
 "Between the pillar and the wall,  
 "And kneeling whisper, *Whence comes peace?*  
 "Say it a second time, then cease;  
 "And if the voice inside returns,  
 "*From Christ and Freedom; what concerns*  
 "*The cause of Peace?*—for answer, slip  
 "My letter where you placed your lip;  
 "Then come back happy we have done  
 "Our mother service—I, the son,  
 "As you the daughter of our land!"

Three mornings more, she took her stand  
 In the same place, with the same eyes:  
 I was no surer of sun-rise  
 Than of her coming. We conferred  
 Of her own prospects, and I heard  
 She had a lover—stout and tall,  
 She said—then let her eyelids fall,  
 "He could do much"—as if some doubt  
 Entered her heart,—then, passing out,  
 "She could not speak for others, who  
 "Had other thoughts; herself she knew:"  
 And so she brought me drink and food.  
 After four days, the scouts pursued  
 Another path; at last arrived  
 The help my Paduan friends contrived  
 To furnish me: she brought the news.  
 For the first time I could not choose  
 But kiss her hand, and lay my own  
 Upon her head—"This faith was shown  
 "To Italy, our mother; she  
 "Uses my hand and blesses thee."  
 She followed down to the sea-shore;  
 I left and never saw her more.

How very long since I have thought  
 Concerning—much less wished for—ought  
 Beside the good of Italy,  
 For which I live and mean to die!  
 I never was in love; and since  
 Charles proved false, what shall now con-  
 vince.

My inmost heart I have a friend?  
 However, if I pleased to spend  
 Real wishes on myself—say, three—  
 I know at least what one should be.  
 I would grasp Metternich until  
 I felt his red wet throat distil  
 In blood thro' these two hands. And next,  
 Nor much for that am I perplexed—  
 Charles, perjured traitor, for his part,  
 Should die slow of a broken heart  
 Under his new employers. Last  
 —Ah, there, what should I wish? For  
 fast

Do I grow old and out of strength.  
 If I resolved to seek at length  
 My father's house again, how scared  
 They all would look, and unprepared!  
 My brothers live in Austria's pay  
 —Disowned me long ago, men say;  
 And all my early mates who used  
 To praise me so—perhaps induced  
 More than one early step of mine—  
 Are turning wise: while some opine  
 "Freedom grows license," some suspect  
 "Haste breeds delay," and recollect  
 They always said, such premature  
 Beginnings never could endure!  
 So, with a sullen "All's for best,"  
 The land seems settling to its rest.  
 I think then, I should wish to stand  
 This evening in that dear, lost land,  
 Over the sea the thousand miles,  
 And know if yet that woman smiles  
 With the calm smile; some little farm  
 She lives in there, no doubt: what harm  
 If I sat on the door-side bench,  
 And, while her spindle made a trench  
 Fantastically in the dust,  
 Inquired of all her fortunes—just  
 Her children's ages and their names,  
 And what may be the husband's aims  
 For each of them. I'd talk this out,  
 And sit there, for an hour about,  
 Then kiss her hand once more, and lay  
 Mine on her head, and go my way.

So much for idle wishing—how  
 It steals the time! To business now.



## THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY.

## PIANO DI SORRENTO

FORTÙ, Fortù, my beloved one,  
 Sit here by my side,  
 On my knees put up both little feet !  
 I was sure, if I tried,  
 I could make you laugh spite of Scirocco.  
 Now, open your eyes,  
 Let me keep you amused till he vanish  
 In black from the skies,  
 With telling my memories over  
 As you tell your beads ;  
 All the Plain saw me gather, I garland  
 —The flowers or the weeds.

Time for rain ! for your long hot dry Autumn  
 Had net-worked with brown  
 The white skin of each grape on the bunches,  
 Marked like a quail's crown,  
 Those creatures you make such account of,  
 Whose heads,—speckled white  
 Over brown like a great spider's back,  
 As I told you last night, - -  
 Your mother bites off for her supper.  
 Red-ripe as could be,  
 Pomegranates were chapping and splitting  
 In halves on the tree :  
 And betwixt the loose walls of great flint-  
 stone,  
 Or in the thick dust  
 On the path, or straight out of the rock-  
 side,  
 Wherever could thrust  
 Some burnt sprig of bold hardy rock-flower  
 Its yellow face up,  
 For the prize were great butterflies fighting,  
 Some five for one cup.  
 So, I guessed, ere I got up this morning,  
 What change was in store,  
 By the quick rustle-down of the quail-nets  
 Which woke me before  
 I could open my shutter, made fast  
 With a bough and a stone,  
 And look thro' the twisted dead vine-twigs,  
 Sole lattice that's known.

Quick and sharp rang the rings down the  
 net-poles,  
 While, busy beneath,  
 Your priest and his brother tugged at them,  
 The rain in their teeth.  
 And out upon all the flat house-roofs  
 Where split figs lay drying,  
 The girls took the frails under cover :  
 Nor use seemed in trying  
 To get out the boats and go fishing,  
 For, under the cliff,  
 Fierce the black water frothed o'er the blind-  
 rock.  
 No seeing our skiff  
 Arrive about noon from Amalfi,  
 —Our fisher arrive,  
 And pitch down his basket before us,  
 All trembling alive  
 With pink and grey jellies, your sea-fruit ;  
 You touch the strange lumps,  
 And mouths gape there, eyes open, all  
 manner  
 Of horns and of humps,  
 Which only the fisher looks grave at,  
 While round him like imps  
 C'ling screaming the children as naked  
 And brown as his shrimps ;  
 Himself too as bare to the middle  
 —You see round his neck  
 The string and its brass coin suspended,  
 That saves him from wreck.  
 But to-day not a boat reached Salerno,  
 So back, to a man,  
 Came our friends, with whose help in the  
 vineyards  
 Grape-harvest began.  
 In the vat, halfway up in our house-side,  
 Like blood the juice spins,  
 While your brother all bare-legged is dancing  
 Till breathless he grins  
 Dead-beaten in effort on effort  
 To keep the grapes under,  
 Since still when he seems all but master,  
 In pours the fresh plunder  
 From girls who keep coming and going  
 With basket on shoulder,  
 And eyes shut against the rain's driving ;  
 Your girls that are older,—

For under the hedges of aloe,  
 And where, on its bed  
 Of the orchard's black mould, the love-apple  
 Lies pulpy and red,  
 All the young ones are kneeling and filling  
 Their laps with the snails  
 Tempted out by this first rainy weather,—  
 Your best of regales,  
 As to-night will be proved to my sorrow,  
 When, supping in state,  
 We shall feast our grape-gleaners (two dozen,  
 Three over one plate)  
 With lasagne so tempting to swallow  
 In slippery ropes,  
 And gourds fried in great purple slices,  
 That colour of popes.  
 Meantime, see the grape bunch they've  
 brought you :  
 The rain-water slips  
 O'er the heavy blue bloom on each globe  
 Which the wasp to your lips  
 Still follows with fretful persistence :  
 Nay, taste, while awake,  
 This half of a curd-white smooth cheese-  
 ball  
 That peels, flake by flake,  
 Like an onion, each smoother and whiter ;  
 Next, sip this weak wine  
 From the thin green glass flask, with its  
 stopper,  
 A leaf of the vine ;  
 And end with the prickly-pear's red flesh  
 That leaves thro' its juice  
 The stony black seeds on your pearl-teeth.  
 Scirocco is loose !  
 Hark, the quick, whistling pelt of the olives  
 Which, thick in one's track,  
 Tempt the stranger to pick up and bite  
 them,  
 Tho' not yet half black !  
 How the old twisted olive trunks shudder,  
 The medlars let fall  
 Their hard fruit, and the brittle great fig-trees  
 Snap off, figs and all,  
 For here comes the whole of the tempest !  
 No refuge, but creep  
 Back again to my side and my shoulder,  
 And listen or sleep.

O how will your country show next week,  
 When all the vine-boughs  
 Have been stripped of their foliage to pasture  
 The mules and the cows ?  
 Last eve, I rode over the mountains ;  
 Your brother, my guide,  
 Soon left me, to feast on the myrtles  
 That offered, each side,  
 Their fruit-balls, black, glossy and luscious,—  
 Or strip from the sorbs  
 A treasure, or, rosy and wondrous,  
 Those hairy gold orbs !  
 But my mule picked his sure sober path out,  
 Just stopping to neigh  
 When he recognized down in the valley  
 His mates on their way  
 With the faggots and barrels of water ;  
 And soon we emerged  
 From the plain, where the woods could scarce  
 follow ;  
 And still as we urged  
 Our way, the woods wondered, and left us,  
 As up still we trudged  
 Though the wild path grew wilder each instant,  
 And place was e'en grudged  
 'Mid the rock-chasms and piles of loose stones  
 Like the loose broken teeth  
 Of some monster which climbed there to die  
 From the ocean beneath—  
 Place was grudged to the silver-grey fume-  
 weed  
 That clung to the path,  
 And dark rosemary ever a-dying  
 That, 'spite the wind's wrath,  
 So loves the salt rock's face to seaward,  
 And lentisks<sup>1</sup> as staunch  
 To the stone where they root and bear berries,  
 And . . . what shows a branch  
 Coral-coloured, transparent, with circlets  
 Of pale seagreen leaves ;  
 Over all trod my mule with the caution  
 Of gleaners o'er sheaves,  
 Still, foot after foot like a lady,  
 Till, round after round,  
 He climbed to the top of Calvano,  
 And God's own profound

<sup>1</sup> The mastic tree (resinous).

Was above me, and round me the mountains,  
 And under, the sea,  
 And within me my heart to bear witness  
 What was and shall be.  
 Oh, heaven and the terrible crystal !  
 No rampart excludes  
 Your eye from the life to be lived  
 In the blue solitudes.  
 Oh, those mountains, their infinite move-  
 ment !  
 Still moving with you ;  
 For, ever some new head and breast of them  
 Thrusts into view  
 To observe the intruder ; you see it  
 If quickly you turn  
 And, before they escape you surprise them.  
 They grudge you should learn  
 How the soft plains they look on, lean over  
 And love (they pretend)  
 —Cower beneath them, the flat sea-pine  
 crouches,  
 The wild fruit-trees bend,  
 E'en the myrtle-leaves curl, shrink and shut :  
 All is silent and grave :  
 'Tis a sensual and timorous beauty,  
 How fair ! but a slave.  
 So, I turned to the sea ; and there slumbered  
 As greenly as ever  
 Those isles of the siren, your Galli ;  
 No ages can sever  
 The Three, nor enable their sister  
 To join them,—halfway  
 On the voyage, she looked at Ulysses—  
 No farther to-day,  
 Tho' the small one, just launched in the wave,  
 Watches breast-high and steady  
 From under the rock, her bold sister  
 Swum halfway already.  
 Fortu' shall we sail there together  
 And see from the sides  
 Quite new rocks show their faces, new haunts  
 Where the siren abides ?  
 Shall we sail round and round them, close over  
 The rocks, tho' unseen,  
 That ruffle the grey glassy water  
 To glorious green ?  
 Then scramble from splinter to splinter,  
 Reach land and explore,

On the largest, the strange square black  
 turret  
 With never a door,  
 Just a loop to admit the quick lizards ;  
 Then, stand there and hear  
 The birds' quiet singing, that tells us  
 What life is, so clear ?  
 —The secret they sang to Ulysses  
 When, ages ago,  
 He heard and he knew this life's secret  
 I hear and I know.  
 Ah, see ! The sun breaks o'er Calvano ;  
 He strikes the great gloom  
 And flutters it o'er the mount's summit  
 In airy gold fume.  
 All is over. Look out, see the gipsy,  
 Our tinker and smith,  
 Has arrived, set up bellows and forge,  
 And down-squatted forthwith  
 To his hammering, under the wall there ;  
 One eye keeps aloof  
 The urchins that itch to be putting  
 His jews'-harps to proof,  
 While the other, thro' locks of curled wire,  
 Is watching how sleek  
 Shines the hog, come to share in the windfall  
 —Chew, abbot's own cheek !  
 All is over. Wake up and come out now,  
 And down let us go,  
 And see the fine things got in order  
 At church for the show  
 Of the Sacrament, set forth this evening.  
 To-morrow's the Feast  
 Of the Rosary's Virgin, by no means  
 Of Virgins the least,  
 As you'll hear in the off-hand discourse  
 Which (all nature, no art)  
 The Dominican brother, these three weeks,  
 Was getting by heart.  
 Not a pillar nor post but is dizen'd  
 With red and blue papers ;  
 All the roof waves with ribbons, each altar  
 A-blaze with long tapers ;  
 But the great masterpiece is the scaffold  
 Rigg'd glorious to hold  
 All the fiddlers and fifers and drummers  
 And trumpeters bold,

Not afraid of Bellini nor Auber,  
 Who, when the priest's hoarse,  
 Will strike us up something that's brisk  
 For the feast's second course.  
 And then will the flaxen-wigged Image  
 Be carried in pomp  
 Thro' the plain, while in gallant procession  
 The priests mean to stomp.  
 All round the glad church lie old bottles  
 With gunpowder stopped,  
 Which will be, when the Image re-enters,  
 Religiously popped;  
 And at night from the crest of Calvano  
 Great bonfires will hang,  
 On the plain will the trumpets join chorus;  
 And more poppers bang.  
 At all events, come—to the garden  
 As far as the wall;  
 See me tap with a hoe on the plaster  
 Till out there shall fall  
 A scorpion with wide angry nippers!

—"Such trifles!" you say?  
 Forth, in my England at home,  
 Men meet gravely to-day  
 And debate, if abolishing Corn-laws  
 Be righteous and wise  
 —If 'twere proper, Scirocco should vanish  
 In black from the skies!

## IN A GONDOLA.

*He sings.*

I SEND my heart up to thee, all my heart  
 In this my singing.  
 For the stars help me, and the sea bears part;  
 The very night is clinging  
 Closer to Venice' streets to leave one space  
 Above me, whence thy face  
 May light my joyous heart to thee its dwelling-  
 place.

*She speaks.*

Say after me, and try to say  
 My very words, as if each word  
 Came from you of your own accord,  
 In your own voice, in your own way:

"This woman's heart and soul and brain  
 "Are mine as much as this gold chain  
 "She bids me wear; which" (say again)  
 "I choose to make by cherishing  
 "A precious thing, or choose to fling  
 "Over the boat-side, ring by ring."  
 And yet once more say . . . no word more!  
 Since words are only words. Give o'er!

Unless you call me, all the same,  
 Familiarly by my pet name;  
 Which if the Three should hear you call,  
 And me reply to, would proclaim  
 At once our secret to them all.  
 Ask of me, too, command me, blame—  
 Do, break down the partition-wall  
 'Twixt us, the daylight world beholds  
 Curtained in dusk and splendid folds!  
 What's left but—all of me to take?  
 I am the Three's: prevent them, slake  
 Your thirst! 'Tis said, the Arab sage,  
 In practising with gems, can loose  
 Their subtle spirit in his cruce  
 And leave but ashes: so, sweet mage,  
 Leave them my ashes when thy use  
 Sucks out my soul, thy heritage!

*He sings.*

I.

Past we glide, and past, and past!  
 What's that poor Agnese doing  
 Where they make the shutters fast?  
 Grey Zanobi's just a-wooing  
 To his couch the purchased bride:  
 Past we glide!

II.

Past we glide, and past, and past!  
 Why's the Pucci Palace flaring  
 Like a beacon to the blast?  
 Guests by hundreds, not one caring  
 If the dear host's neck were wried:  
 Past we glide!

*She sings.*

I.

The moth's kiss, first!  
 Kiss me as if you made believe  
 You were not sure, this eve,

How my face, your flower, had pursed  
Its petals up ; so, here and there  
You brush it, till I grow aware  
Who wants me, and wide ope I burst.

## II.

The bee's kiss, now !  
Kiss me as if you entered gay  
My heart at some noonday,  
A bud that dares not disallow  
The claim, so all is rendered up,  
And passively its shattered cup  
Over your head to sleep I bow.

*He sings.*

## I.

What are we two ?  
I am a Jew,  
And carry thee, farther than friends can pursue,  
To a feast of our tribe ;  
Where they need thee to bribe  
The devil that blasts them unless he imbibe-  
Thy . . . Scatter the vision for ever ! And  
now,  
As of old, I am I, thou art thou !

## II.

Say again, what we are ?  
The sprite of a star,  
I lure thee above where the destinies bar  
My plumes their full play  
Till a ruddier ray  
Than my pale one announce there is wither-  
ing away  
Some . . . Scatter the vision for ever ! And  
now,  
As of old, I am I, thou art thou !

*He muses.*

Oh, which were best, to roam or rest ?  
The land's lap or the water's breast ?  
To sleep on yellow millet-sheaves,  
Or swim in lucid shallows just  
Eluding water-lily leaves,  
An inch from Death's black fingers, thrust  
To lock you, whom release he must ;  
Which life were best on Summer eves ?

*He speaks, musing.*

Lie back ; could thought of mine improve  
you ?  
From this shoulder let there spring  
A wing ; from this, another wing ;  
Wings, not legs and feet, shall move you !  
Snow-white must they spring, to blend  
With your flesh, but I intend  
They shall deepen to the end,  
Broader, into burning gold,  
Till both wings crescent-wise enfold  
Your perfect self, from 'neath your feet  
To o'er your head, where, lo, they meet  
As if a million sword-blades hurled  
Defiance from you to the world !

Rescue me thou, the only real !  
And scare away this mad ideal  
That came, nor motions to depart !  
Thanks ! Now, stay ever as thou art !

*Still he muses.*

## I.

What if the Three should catch at last  
Thy serenader ? While there's cast  
Paul's cloak about my head, and fast  
Gian pinions me, Himself has past  
His stylet thro' my back ; I reel ;  
And . . . is it thou I feel ?

## II.

They trail me, these three godless knaves,  
Past every church that saints and saves,  
Nor stop till, where the cold sea raves  
By Lido's wet accursed graves,  
They scoop mine, roll me to its brink,  
And . . . on thy breast I sink !

*She replies, musing.*

Dip your arm o'er the boat-side, elbow-  
deep,  
As I do : thus : were death so unlike sleep,  
Caught this way ? Death's to fear from flame  
or steel,  
Or poison doubtless ; but from water—  
feel !

Go find the bottom ! Would you stay me ?  
There !

Now pluck a great blade of that ribbon-grass  
To plait in where the foolish jewel was,  
I flung away : since you have praised my hair,  
'Tis proper to be choice in what I wear.

*He speaks.*

Row home? must we row home? Too surely  
Know I where its front's demurely  
Over the Giudecca piled ;  
Window just with window mating,  
Door on door exactly waiting,  
All's the set face of a child :  
But behind it, where's a trace  
Of the staidness and reserve,  
And formal lines without a curve,  
In the same child's playing-face ?  
No two windows look one way  
O'er the small sea-water thread  
Below them. Ah, the autumn day  
I, passing, saw you overhead !  
First, out a cloud of curtain blew,  
Then a sweet cry, and last came you—  
To catch your lory<sup>1</sup> that must needs  
Escape just then, of all times then,  
To peck a tall plant's fleecy seeds,  
And make me happiest of men.  
I scarce could breathe to see you reach  
So far back o'er the balcony  
To catch him ere he climbed too high  
Above you in the Smyrna peach  
That quick the round smooth cord of gold,  
This coiled hair on your head, unrolled,  
Fell down you like a gorgeous snake  
The Roman girls were wont, of old,  
When Rome there was, for coolness' sake  
To let lie curling o'er their bosoms.  
Dear lory, may his beak retain  
Ever its delicate rose stain  
As if the wounded lotus-blossoms  
Had marked their thief to know again !

Stay longer yet, for others' sake  
Than mine ! What should your chamber do ?  
—With all its rarities that ache  
In silence while day lasts, but wake

<sup>1</sup> A parrot.

At night-time and their life renew,  
Suspended just to pleasure you  
Who brought against their will together  
These objects, and, while day lasts, weave  
Around them such a magic tether  
That dumb they look : your harp, be-  
lieve,

With all the sensitive tight strings  
Which dare not speak, now to itself  
Breathes slumberously, as if some elf  
Went in and out the chords, his wings  
Make murmur wheresoe'er they graze,  
As an angel may, between the maze  
Of midnight palace-pillars, on  
And on, to sow God's plagues, have gone  
Through guilty glorious Babylon.  
And while such murmurs flow, the nymph  
Bends o'er the harp-top from her shell  
As the dry limpet for the lymph  
Come with a tune he knows so well.  
And how your statues' hearts must  
swell !

And how your pictures must descend  
To see each other, friend with friend !  
Oh, could you take them by surprise,  
You'd find Schidone's eager Duke  
Doing the quaintest courtesies  
To that prim saint by Haste-thee-Luke !  
And, deeper into her rock den,  
Bold Castelfranco's Magdalen  
You'd find retreated from the ken  
Of that robed counsel-keeping Ser—  
As if the Tizian thinks of her,  
And is not, rather, gravely bent  
On seeing for himself what toys  
Are these, his progeny invent,  
What litter now the board employs  
Whereon he signed a document  
That got him murdered ! Each enjoys  
Its night so well, you cannot break  
The sport up, so, indeed must make  
More stay with me, for others' sake.

*She speaks.*

I.

To-morrow, if a harp-string, say,  
Is used to tie the jasmine-back  
That overfloods my room with sweets,

Contrive your Zorzi somehow meets  
My Zanze ! If the ribbon's black,  
The Three are watching : keep away !

## II.

Your gondola—let Zorzi wreathe  
A mesh of water-weeds about  
Its prow, as if he unaware  
Had struck some quay or bridge-foot stair !  
That I may throw a paper out  
As you and he go underneath.

There's Zanze's vigilant taper ; safe are we.  
Only one minute more to-night with me ?  
Resume your past self of a month ago !  
Be you the bashful gallant, I will be  
The lady with the colder breast than snow.  
Now bow you, as becomes, nor touch my hand  
More than I touch yours when I step to land,  
And say, " All thanks, Siora ! "—

Heart to heart  
And lips to lips ! Yet once more, ere we part,  
Clasp me and make me thine, as mine thou  
art ! [*He is surprised, and stabbed.*]  
It was ordained to be so, sweet !—and best  
Comes now, beneath thine eyes, upon thy breast.  
Still kiss me ! Care not for the cowards ! Care  
Only to put aside thy beauteous hair  
My blood will hurt ! The Three, I do not scorn  
To death, because they never lived : but I  
Have lived indeed, and so—(yet one more  
kiss)—can die !

## WARING.

[Mr. Alfred Domett, C.M.G., author of  
"Ranolf and Amohia," full of descriptions of  
New Zealand scenery.]

## I.

WHAT's become of Waring  
Since he gave us all the slip,  
Chose land-travel or seafaring,  
Boots and chest or staff and scrip,  
Rather than pace up and down  
Any longer London town ?

## II.

Who'd have guessed it from his lip  
Or his brow's accustomed bearing,  
On the night he thus took ship  
Or started landward ?—little caring  
For us, it seems, who supped together  
(Friends of his too, I remember)  
And walked home thro' the merry weather,  
The snowiest in all December.  
I left his arm that night myself  
For what's-his-name's, the new prose-poet  
Who wrote the book there, on the shelf—  
How, forsooth, was I to know it  
If Waring meant to glide away  
Like a ghost at break of day ?  
Never looked he half so gay !

## III.

He was prouder than the devil :  
How he must have cursed our revel !  
Ay and many other meetings,  
Indoor visits, outdoor greetings,  
As up and down he paced this London,  
With no work done, but great works undone,  
Where scarce twenty knew his name.  
Why not, then, have earlier spoken,  
Written, bustling ? Who's to blame  
If your silence kept unbroken ?  
" True, but there were sundry jottings,  
" Stray-leaves, fragments, blurs and blot-  
tings,  
" Certain first steps were achieved  
" Already which "—(is that your meaning ?)  
" Had well borne out who'er believed  
" In more to come ! " But who goes glean-  
ing  
Hedgeside chance-blades, while full-sheaved  
Stand cornfields by him ? Pride, o'erweening  
Pride alone, puts forth such claims  
O'er the day's distinguished names.

## IV.

Meantime, how much I loved him,  
I find out now I've lost him.  
I who cared not if I moved him,  
Who could so carelessly accost him,  
Henceforth never shall get free  
Of his ghostly company,

His eyes that just a little wink  
As deep I go into the merit  
Of this and that distinguished spirit—  
His cheeks' raised colour, soon to sink,  
As long I dwell on some stupendous  
And tremendous (Heaven defend us !)  
Monstr'-inform'-ingens-horrend-ous  
Demoniaco-seraphic  
Penman's latest piece of graphic.  
Nay, my very wrist grows warm  
With his dragging weight of arm.  
E'en so, swimmingly appears,  
Through one's after-supper musings,  
Some lost lady of old years  
With her beauteous vain endeavour  
And goodness unrepaid as ever ;  
The face, accustomed to refusings,  
We, puppies that we were . . . Oh never  
Surely, nice of conscience, scrupled  
Being aught like false, forsooth, to ?  
Telling aught but honest truth to ?  
What a sin, had we centupled  
Its possessor's grace and sweetness !  
No ! she heard in its completeness  
Truth, for truth's a weighty matter,  
And truth, at issue, we can't flatter !  
Well, 'tis done with ; she's exempt  
From damning us thro' such a sally ;  
And so she glides, as down a valley,  
Taking up with her contempt,  
Past our reach ; and in, the flowers  
Shut her unregarded hours.

v.

Oh, could I have him back once more,  
This Waring, but one half-day more !  
Back, with the quiet face of yore,  
So hungry for acknowledgment  
Like mine ! I'd fool him to his bent.  
Feed, should not he, to heart's content ?  
I'd say, "to only have conceived,  
"Planned your great works, apart from  
progress,  
"Surpasses little works achieved !"  
I'd lie so, I should be believed.  
I'd make such havoc of the claims  
Of the day's distinguished names  
To feast him with, as feasts an ogress

Her feverish sharp-toothed gold-crowned  
child !  
Or as one feasts a creature rarely  
Captured here, unreconciled  
To capture ; and completely gives  
Its pettish humours license, barely  
Requiring that it lives .

vi.

Ichabod, Ichabod,  
The glory is departed !  
Travels Waring East away ?  
Who, of knowledge, by hearsay,  
Reports a man upstarted  
Somewhere as a god,  
Hordes grown European-hearted,  
Millions of the wild made tame  
On a sudden at his fame ?  
In Vishnu-land what Avatar ?  
Or who in Moscow, toward the Czar,  
With the demurest of footfalls  
Over the Kremlin's pavement bright  
With serpentine and syenite,<sup>1</sup>  
Steps, with five other Generals  
That simultaneously take snuff.  
For each to have pretext enough  
And kerchiefwise unfold his sash  
Which, softness' self, is yet the stuff  
To hold fast where a steel chain snaps,  
And leave the grand white neck no gash ?  
Waring in Moscow, to those rough  
Cold northern natures born perhaps,  
Like the lambwhite maiden dear  
From the circle of mute kings  
Unable to repress the tear,  
Each as his sceptre down he flings,  
To Dian's fane at Taurica,  
Where now a captive priestess, she alway  
Mingles her tender grave Hellenic speech  
With theirs, tuned to the hailstone-beaten  
beach  
As pours some pigeon, from the myrrhy lands  
Rapt by the whirlblast to fierce Scythian  
strands .  
Where breed the swallows, her melodious cry  
Amid their barbarous twitter !  
In Russia ? Never ! Spain were fitter !

<sup>1</sup> Egyptian granite,



Ay, most likely 'tis in Spain  
That we and Waring meet again  
Now, while he turns down that cool narrow  
lane

Into the blackness, out of grave Madrid  
All fire and shine, abrupt as when there's slid  
Its stiff gold blazing pall  
From some black coffin-lid.

Or, best of all,  
I love to think

The leaving us was just a feint ;  
Back here to London did he slink,  
And now works on without a wink  
Of sleep, and we are on the brink  
Of something great in fresco-paint :  
Some garret's ceiling, walls and floor,  
Up and down and o'er and o'er  
He splashes, as none splashed before  
Since great Caldara Polidore.<sup>1</sup>  
Or Music means this land of ours  
Some favour yet, to pity won  
By Purcell from his Rosy Bowers,—  
"Give me my so-long promised son,  
"Let Waring end what I begun !"  
Then down he creeps and out he steals  
Only when the night conceals  
His face ; in Kent 'tis cherry-time,  
Or hops are picking : or at prime  
Of March he wanders as, too happy,  
Years ago when he was young,  
Some mild eve when woods grew sappy  
And the early moths had sprung  
To life from many a trembling sheath  
Woven the warm boughs beneath ;  
While small birds said to themselves  
What should soon be actual song,  
And young gnats, by tens and twelves,  
Made as if they were the throng  
That crowd around and carry aloft  
The sound they have nursed, so sweet and  
pure,

Out of a myriad noises soft,  
Into a tone that can endure  
Amid the noise of a July noon  
When all God's creatures crave their boon,  
All at once and all in tune,

<sup>1</sup> Surnamed da Caravaggio. A pupil of  
Raphael.

And get it, happy as Waring then,  
Having first within his ken  
What a man might do with men :  
And far too glad, in the even-glow,  
To mix with the world he meant to take  
Into his hand, he told you, so—  
And out of it his world to make,  
To contract and to expand  
As he shut or oped his hand.  
Oh Waring, what's to really be ?  
A clear stage and a crowd to see !  
Some Garrick, say, out shall not he  
The heart of Hamlet's mystery pluck ?  
Or, where most unclean beasts are rife,  
Some Junius—am I right?—shall tuck  
His sleeve, and forth with flaying-knife !  
Some Chatterton shall have the luck  
Of calling Rowley into life !  
Some one shall somehow run a muck  
With this old world for want of strife  
Sound asleep. Contrive, contrive  
To rouse us, Waring ! Who's alive ?  
Our men scarce seem in earnest now.  
Distinguished names !—but 'tis, somehow,  
As if they played at being names  
Still more distinguished, like the games  
Of children. Turn our sport to earnest  
With a visage of the sternest !  
Bring the real times back, confessed  
Still better than our very best !

## II.

### I.

"WHEN I last saw Waring . . ."  
(How all turned to him who spoke !  
You saw Waring ? Truth or joke ?  
In land-travel or sea-faring ?)

### II.

"We were sailing by Triest  
"Where a day or two we harboured :  
"A sunset was in the West,  
"When, looking over the vessel's side,  
"One of our company espied  
"A sudden speck to larboard"

"And as a sea-duck flies and swims  
 "At once, so came the light craft up,  
 "With its sole lateen sail that trims  
 "And turns (the water round its rims  
 "Dancing, as round a sinking cup)  
 "And by us like a fish it curled,  
 "And drew itself up close beside,  
 "Its great sail on the instant furled,  
 "And o'er its thwarts a shrill voice cried,  
 "(A neck as bronzed as a Lascar's)  
 "'Buy wine of us, you English Brig?  
 "'Or fruit, tobacco and cigars?  
 "'A pilot for you to Triest?  
 "'Without one, look you ne'er so big,  
 "'They'll never let you up the bay!  
 "'We natives should know best.'  
 "I turned, and 'just those fellows' way,'  
 "Our captain said, 'The 'long-shore thieves  
 "'Are laughing at us in their sleeves.'

## III.

"In truth, the boy leaned laughing back;  
 "And one, half-hidden by his side  
 "Under the furled sail, soon I spied,  
 "With great grass hat and kerchief black,  
 "Who looked up with his kingly throat,  
 "Said somewhat, while the other shook  
 "His hair back from his eyes to look  
 "Their longest at us; then the boat,  
 "I know not how, turned sharply round,  
 "Laying her whole side on the sea  
 "As a leaping fish does; from the lee  
 "Into the weather, cut somehow  
 "Her sparkling path beneath our bow  
 "And so went off, as with a bound,  
 "Into the rosy and golden half  
 "O' the sky, to overtake the sun  
 "And reach the shore, like the sea-calf  
 "Its singing cave; yet I caught one  
 "Glance ere away the boat quite passed,  
 "And neither time nor toil could mar  
 "Those features: so I saw the last  
 "Of Waring!"—You? Oh, never star  
 "Was lost here but it rose afar!  
 "Look East, where whole new thousands  
 "are!  
 "In Vishnu-land what Avatar?

## THE TWINS.

"Give" and "It-shall-be-given-unto-you."

## I.

GRAND rough old Martin Luther  
 Bloomed fables—flowers on furze,  
 The better the uncouth:  
 Do roses stick like burrs?

## II.

A beggar asked an alms  
 One day at an abbey-door,  
 Said Luther; but, seized with qualms,  
 The abbot replied, "We're poor!"

## III.

"Poor, who had plenty once,  
 "When gifts fell thick as rain:  
 "But they give us nought, for the nonce  
 "And now should we give again?"

## IV.

Then the beggar, "See your sins!  
 "Of old, unless I err,  
 "Ye had brothers for inmates, twins,  
 "Date and Dabitur.

## V.

"While Date was in good case  
 "Dabitur flourished too:  
 "For Dabitur's lenten face  
 "No wonder if Date rue.

## VI.

"Would ye retrieve the one?  
 "Try and make plump the other!  
 "When Date's penance is done,  
 "Dabitur helps his brother.

## VII.

"Only, beware relapse!"  
 The Abbot hung his head.  
 This beggar might be perhaps  
 An angel, Luther said.

## A LIGHT WOMAN.

## I.

So far as our story approaches the end,  
Which do you pity the most of us three?—  
My friend, or the mistress of my friend  
With her wanton eyes, or me?

## II.

My friend was already too good to lose,  
And seemed in the way of improvement yet,  
When she crossed his path with her hunting-  
noose  
And over him drew her net.

## III.

When I saw him tangled in her toils,  
A shame, said I, if she adds just him  
To her nine-and-ninety other spoils,  
The hundredth for a whim!

## IV.

And before my friend be wholly hers,  
How easy to prove to him, I said,  
An eagle's the game her pride prefers,  
Though she snaps at a wren instead!

## V.

So, I gave her eyes my own eyes to take,  
My hand sought hers as in earnest need,  
And round she turned for my noble sake,  
And gave me herself indeed.

## VI.

The eagle am I, with my fame in the world,  
The wren is he, with his maiden face.  
—You look away and your lip is curled?  
Patience, a moment's space!

## VII.

For see, my friend goes shaking and white;  
He eyes me as the basilisk:  
I have turned, it appears, his day to night,  
Eclipsing his sun's disk.

## VIII.

And I did it, he thinks, as a very thief:  
"Though I love her—that, he compre-  
hends—  
"One should master one's passions, (love, in  
chief)  
"And be loyal to one's friends!"

## IX.

And she,—she lies in my hand as tame  
As a pear late basking over a wall;  
Just a touch to try and off it came;  
'Tis mine,—can I let it fall?

## X.

With no mind to eat it, that's the worst!  
Were it thrown in the road, would the case  
assist?  
'Twas quenching a dozen blue-flies' thirst  
When I gave its stalk a twist.

## XI.

And I,—what I seem to my friend, you see:  
What I soon shall seem to his love, you  
guess:  
What I seem to myself, do you ask of me?  
No hero, I confess.

## XII.

'Tis an awkward thing to play with souls,  
And matter enough to save one's own:  
Yet think of my friend, and the burning coals  
He played with for bits of stone!

## XIII.

One likes to show the truth for the truth;  
That the woman was light is very true:  
But suppose she says,—Never mind that  
youth!  
What wrong have I done to you?

## XIV.

Well, any how, here the story stays,  
So far at least as I understand;  
And, Robert Browning, you writer of plays,  
Here's a subject made to your hand!

## THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER.

## I.

I SAID—Then, dearest, since 'tis so,  
 Since now at length my fate I know,  
 Since nothing all my love avails,  
 Since all, my life seemed meant for, fails,  
 Since this was written and needs must  
 be—

My whole heart rises up to bless  
 Your name in pride and thankfulness !  
 Take back the hope you gave,—I claim  
 Only a memory of the same,  
 —And this beside, if you will not blame,  
 Your leave for one more last ride with me.

## II.

My mistress bent that brow of hers ;  
 Those deep dark eyes where pride demurs  
 When pity would be softening through,  
 Fixed me a breathing-while or two  
 With life or death in the balance : right !  
 The blood replenished me again ;  
 My last thought was at least not vain :  
 I and my mistress, side by side  
 Shall be together, breathe and ride,  
 So, one day more am I deified.

Who knows but the world may end to-  
 night ?

## III.

Hush ! if you saw some western cloud  
 All billowy-bosomed, over-bowed  
 By many benedictions—sun's  
 And moon's and evening-star's at once—  
 And so, you, looking and loving best,  
 Conscious grew, your passion drew  
 Cloud, sunset, moonrise, star-shine too,  
 Down on you, near and yet more near,  
 Till flesh must fade for heaven was here !—  
 Thus leant she and lingered—joy and fear !  
 Thus lay she a moment on my breast.

## IV.

Then we began to ride. My soul  
 Smoothed itself out, a long-cramped scroll

Freshening and fluttering in the wind.  
 Past hopes already lay behind.

What need to strive with a life awry ?  
 Had I said that, had I done this,  
 So might I gain, so might I miss.  
 Might she have loved me ? just as well  
 She might have hated, who can tell !  
 Where had I been now if the worst befell ?  
 And here we are riding, she and I.

## V.

Fail I alone, in words and deeds ?  
 Why, all men strive and who succeeds ?  
 We rode ; it seemed my spirit flew,  
 Saw other regions, cities new,  
 As the world rushed by on either side.  
 I thought,—All labour, yet no less  
 Bear up beneath their unsuccess.  
 Look at the end of work, contrast  
 The petty done, the undone vast,  
 This present of theirs with the hopeful  
 past !  
 I hoped she would love me ; here we ride.

## VI.

What hand and brain went ever paired ?  
 What heart alike conceived and dared ?  
 What act proved all its thought had  
 been ?  
 What will but felt the fleshly screen ?  
 We ride and I see her bosom heave.  
 There's many a crown for who can reach.  
 Ten lines, a statesman's life in each !  
 The flag stuck on a heap of bones,  
 A soldier's doing ! what atones ?  
 They scratch his name on the Abbey-  
 stones.  
 My riding is better, by their leave.

## VII.

What does it all mean, poet ? Well,  
 Your brains beat into rhythm, you tell  
 What we felt only ; you expressed  
 You hold things beautiful the best,  
 And pace them in rhyme so, side by  
 side.

'Tis something, nay 'tis much : but then,  
 I have you yourself what's best for men ?  
 Are you—poor, sick, old ere your time—  
 Nearer one whit your own sublime  
 Than we who never have turned a rhyme ?  
 Sing, riding's a joy ! For me, I ride.

## VIII.

And you, great sculptor—so, you gave  
 A score of years to Art, her slave,  
 And that's your Venus, whence we turn  
 To yonder girl that fords the burn !  
 You acquiesce, and shall I repine ?  
 What, man of music, you grown grey  
 With notes and nothing else to say,  
 Is this your sole praise from a friend,  
 "Greatly his opera's strains intend,  
 "Put in music we know how fashion  
 end !"  
 I gave my youth ; but we ride, in fine.

## IX.

Who knows what's fit for us ? Had fate  
 Proposed bliss here should sublimate  
 My being—had I signed the bond—  
 Still one must lead some life beyond,  
 Have a bliss to die with, dim-described.  
 This foot once planted on the goal,  
 This glory-garland round my soul,  
 Could I descry such ? Try and test !  
 I sink back shuddering from the quest.  
 Earth being so good, would heaven seem  
 best ?  
 Now, heaven and she are beyond this ride.

And yet—she has not spoke so long !  
 What if heaven be that, fair and strong  
 At life's best, with our eyes upturned  
 Whither life's flower is first discerned,  
 We, fixed so, ever should so abide ?  
 What if we still ride on, we two  
 With life for ever old yet new,  
 Changed not in kind but in degree,  
 The instant made eternity,—  
 And heaven just prove that I and she  
 Ride, ride together, for ever ride ?

# THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN ; A CHILD'S STORY.

(Written for, and inscribed to, W. M.  
 the Younger.)

## I.

HAMELIN Town's in Brunswick,  
 By famous Hanover city ;  
 The river Weser, deep and wide,  
 Washes its wall on the southern side ;  
 A pleasanter spot you never spied ;  
 But, when begins my ditty,  
 Almost five hundred years ago,  
 To see the townsfolk suffer so  
 From vermin, was a pity.

## II.

Rats !  
 They fought the dogs and killed the cats,  
 And bit the babies in the cradles,  
 And ate the cheeses out of the vats,  
 And licked the soup from the cooks' own  
 ladles,  
 Split open the kegs of salted sprats,  
 Made nests inside men's Sunday hats,  
 And even spoiled the women's chaps  
 By drowning their speaking  
 With shrieking and squeaking  
 in fifty different sharps and flats.

## III.

At last the people in a body  
 To the Town Hall came flocking :  
 " 'Tis clear," cried they, "our Mayor's a  
 noddie ;  
 "And as for our Corporation—shocking  
 "To think we buy gowns lined with ermine  
 "For dolts that can't or won't determine  
 "What's best to rid us of our vermin !  
 "You hope, because you're old and obese,  
 "To find in the furry civic robe ease ?  
 "Rouse up, sirs ! Give your brains a racking  
 "To find the remedy we're lacking,  
 "Or, sure as fate, we'll send you packing !"  
 At this the Mayor and Corporation  
 Quaked with a mighty consternation.

## IV.

An hour they sat in council,

At length the Mayor broke silence :

"For a guilder I'd my ermine gown sell,

"I wish I were a mile hence !

"It's easy to bid one rack one's brain—

"I'm sure my poor head aches again,

"I've scratched it so, and all in vain.

"Oh for a trap, a trap, a trap !"

Just as he said this, what should hap

At the chamber door but a gentle tap ?

"Bless us," cried the Mayor, "what's that ?"

(With the Corporation as he sat,

Looking little though wondrous fat ;

Nor brighter was his eye, nor moister

Than a too-long-opened oyster,

Save when at noon his paunch grew mutinous

For a plate of turtle green and glutinous)

"Only a scraping of shoes on the mat ?

"Anything like the sound of a rat

"Makes my heart go pit-a-pat !"

## V.

"Come in !"—the Mayor cried, looking  
bigger :

And in did come the strangest figure !

His queer long coat from heel to head

Was half of yellow and half of red,

And he himself was tall and thin,

With sharp blue eyes, each like a pin,

And light loose hair, yet swarthy skin,

No tuft on cheek nor beard on chin,

But lips where smiles went out and in ;

There was no guessing his kith and kin :

And nobody could enough admire

The tall man and his quaint attire.

Quoth one : "It's as my great-grandsire,

"Starting up at the Trump of Doom's tone,

"Had walked this way from his painted  
tombstone !"

## VI.

He advanced to the council-table :

And, "Please your honours," said he, "I'm  
able,

"By means of a secret charm, to draw

"All creatures living beneath the sun,

"That creep or swim or fly or run,

"After me so as you never saw !

"And I chiefly use my charm

"On creatures that do people harm,

"The mole and toad and newt and viper ;

"And people call me the Pied Piper."

(And here they noticed round his neck

A scarf of red and yellow stripe,

To match with his coat of the self-same  
cheque ;

And at the scarf's end hung a pipe ;

And his fingers, they noticed, were ever  
straying

As if impatient to be playing

Upon this pipe, as low it dangled

Over his vesture so old-fangled.)

"Yet," said he, "poor piper as I am,

"In Tartary I freed the Cham,

"Last June, from his huge swarms of  
gnats ;

"I eased in Asia the Nizam

"Of a monstrous brood of vampyre-bats :

"And as for what your brain bewilders,

"If I can rid your town of rats

"Will you give me a thousand guilders ?"

"One? fifty thousand !"—was the exclamation  
Of the astonished Mayor and Corporation.

## VII.

Into the street the Piper stept,

Smiling first a little smile,

As if he knew what magic slept

In his quiet pipe the while ;

Then, like a musical adept,

To blow the pipe his lips he wrinkled,

And green and blue his sharp eyes twinkled ;

Like a candle-flame where salt is sprinkled ;

And ere three shrill notes the pipe uttered,

You heard as if an army muttered ;

And the muttering grew to a grumbling ;

And the grumbling grew to a mighty rumbling ;

And out of the houses the rats came tumbling.

Great rats, small rats, lean rats, brawny rats,

Brown rats, black rats, grey rats, tawny rats,

Grave old plodders, gay young friskers,

Fathers, mothers, uncles, cousins,

Cocking tails and pricking whiskers,

Families by tens and dozens,

Brothers, sisters, husbands, wives—

Followed the Piper for their lives.

From street to street he piped advancing,  
 And step for step they followed dancing,  
 Until they came to the river Weser,  
 Wherein all plunged and perished !  
 —Save one who, stout as Julius Cæsar,  
 Swam across and lived to carry  
 (As he, the manuscript he cherished)  
 To Rat-land home his commentary :  
 Which was, "At the first shrill notes of the pipe,  
 "I heard a sound as of scraping tripe,  
 "And putting apples, wondrous ripe,  
 "Into a cider-press's gripe :  
 "And a moving away of pickle-tub-boards,  
 "And a leaving ajar of conserve-cupboards,  
 "And a drawing the corks of train-oil-flasks,  
 "And a breaking the hoops of butter-casks :  
 "And it seemed as if a voice  
 " (Sweeter far than by harp or by psaltery  
 "Is breathed) called out, 'Oh rats, rejoice !  
 " 'The world is grown to one vast drysal-  
 tery !  
 " 'So munch on, crunch on, take your  
 nuncheon,  
 " 'Breakfast, supper, dinner, luncheon !'  
 "And just as a bulky sugar-puncheon,  
 "All ready staved, like a great sun stone  
 "Glorious scarce an inch before me,  
 "Just as methought it said, 'Come, bore me !'  
 "—I found the Weser rolling o'er me."

## VIII.

You should have heard the Hamelin people  
 Ringing the bells till they rocked the steeple.  
 "Go," cried the Mayor, "and get long poles,  
 "Poke out the nests and block up the holes !  
 "Consult with carpenters and builders,  
 "And leave in our town not even a trace  
 "Of the rats !" —when suddenly, up the face  
 Of the Piper perked in the market-place,  
 With a, "First, if you please, my thousand  
 guilders !"

## IX.

A thousand guilders ! The Mayor looked  
 blue ;  
 So did the Corporation too.  
 For council dinners made rare havoe  
 With Claret, Moselle, Vin-de-Grave, Hock ;

And half the money would replenish  
 Their cellar's biggest butt with Rhenish.  
 To pay this sum to a wandering fellow  
 With a gipsy coat of red and yellow !  
 "Beside," quoth the Mayor with a knowing  
 wink,  
 "Our business was done at the river's brink ;  
 "We saw with our eyes the vermin sink,  
 "And what's dead can't come to life, I think.  
 "So, friend, we're not the folks to shrink  
 "From the duty of giving you something for  
 drink,  
 "And a matter of money to put in your poke ;  
 "But as for the guilders, what we spoke  
 "Of them, as you very well know, was in joke.  
 "Beside, our losses have made us thrifty.  
 "A thousand guilders ! Come, take fifty !"

## X.

The Piper's face fell, and he cried  
 "No trifling ! I can't wait, beside !  
 "I've promised to visit by dinnertime  
 "Bagdat, and accept the prime  
 "Of the Head-Cook's pottage, all he's rich in,  
 "For having left, in the Caliph's kitchen,  
 "Of a nest of scorpions no survivor :  
 "With him I proved no bargain-driver,  
 "With you, don't think I'll bate a stiver !  
 "And folks who put me in a passion  
 "May find me pipe after another fashion."

## XI.

"How?" cried the Mayor, "d'ye think I  
 brook  
 "Being worse treated than a Cook ?  
 "Insulted by a lazy ribald  
 "With idle pipe and vesture piebald ?  
 "You threaten us, fellow ? Do your worst,  
 "Blow your pipe there till you burst !"

## XII.

Once more he stept into the street  
 And to his lips again  
 Laid his long pipe of smooth straight cane ;  
 And ere he blew three notes (such sweet  
 Soft notes as yet musician's cunning  
 Never gave the enraptured air)

There was a rustling that seemed like a  
bustling  
Of merry crowds justling at pitching and  
hustling,  
Small feet were pattering, wooden shoes  
clattering,  
Little hands clapping and little tongues  
chattering,  
And, like fowls in a farm-yard when barley  
is scattering,  
Out came the children running.  
All the little boys and girls,  
With rosy cheeks and flaxen curls,  
And sparkling eyes and teeth like pearls,  
Tripping and skipping, ran merrily after  
The wonderful music with shouting and  
laughter.

## XIII.

The Mayor was dumb, and the Council stood  
As if they were changed into blocks of wood,  
Unable to move a step, or cry  
To the children merrily skipping by,  
—Could only follow with the eye  
That joyous crowd at the Piper's back.  
But how the Mayor was on the rack,  
And the wretched Council's bosoms beat,  
As the Piper turned from the High Street  
To where the Weser rolled its waters  
Right in the way of their sons and daughters !  
However he turned from South to West,  
And to Koppelberg Hill his steps addressed,  
And after him the children pressed ;  
Great was the joy in every breast.  
" He never can cross that mighty top !  
" He's forced to let the piping drop,  
" And we shall see our children stop !"  
When, lo, as they reached the mountain-  
side,  
A wondrous portal opened wide,  
As if a cavern was suddenly hollowed ;  
And the Piper advanced and the children  
followed,  
And when all were in to the very last,  
The door in the mountain-side shut fast.  
Did I say, all ? No ! One was lame,  
And could not dance the whole of the way ;  
And in after years, if you would blame  
His sadness, he was used to say,—

" It's dull in our town since my playmates left !  
" I can't forget that I'm bereft  
" Of all the pleasant sights they see,  
" Which the Piper also promised me.  
" For he led us, he said, to a joyous land,  
" Joining the town and just at hand,  
" Where waters gushed and fruit-trees grew  
" And flowers put forth a fairer hue,  
" And everything was strange and new ;  
" The sparrows were brighter than peacocks  
here,  
" And their dogs outran our fallow deer,  
" And honey-bees had lost their stings,  
" And horses were born with eagles' wings :  
" And just as I became assured  
" My lame foot would be speedily cured,  
" The music stopped and I stood still,  
" And found myself outside the hill,  
" Left alone against my will,  
" To go now limping as before,  
" And never hear of that country more !"

## XIV.

Alas, alas for Hamelin !

There came into many a burgher's pate  
A text which says that heaven's gate  
Opens to the rich at as easy rate  
As the needle's eye takes a camel in !  
The mayor sent East, West, North and South,  
To offer the Piper, by word of mouth,  
Wherever it was men's lot to find him,  
Silver and gold to his heart's content,  
If he'd only return the way he went,  
And bring the children behind him.  
But when they saw 'twas a lost endeavour,  
And Piper and dancers were gone for ever,  
They made a decree that lawyers never  
Should think their records dated duly  
If, after the day of the month and year,  
These words did not as well appear,  
" And so long after what happened here  
" On the Twenty-second of July,  
" Thirteen hundred and seventy-six :"  
And the better in memory to fix  
The place of the children's last retreat,  
They called it, the Pied Piper's Street—  
Where any one playing on pipe or tabor  
Was sure for the future to lose his labour.



Nor suffered they hostelry or tavern  
 To shock with mirth a street so solemn ;  
 But opposite the place of the cavern  
 They wrote the story on a column,  
 And on the great church-window painted  
 The same, to make the world acquainted  
 How their children were stolen away,  
 And there it stands to this very day.  
 And I must not omit to say  
 That in Transylvania there's a tribe  
 Of alien people who ascribe  
 The outlandish ways and dress  
 On which their neighbours lay such stress,  
 To their fathers and mothers having risen  
 Out of some subterraneous prison  
 Into which they were trepanned  
 Long time ago in a mighty band  
 Out of Hamelin town in Brunswick land,  
 But how or why, they don't understand.

## XV.

So, Willy, let me and you be wipers  
 Of scores out with all men—especially pipers !  
 And, whether they pipe us free from rats or  
 from mice,  
 If we've promised them aught, let us keep  
 our promise !

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS.

## I.

You'RE my friend :  
 I was the man the Duke spoke to ;  
 I helped the Duchess to cast off his yoke, too ;  
 So here's the tale from beginning to end,  
 My friend !

## II.

Ours is a great wild country :  
 If you climb to our castle's top,  
 I don't see where your eye can stop ;  
 For when you've passed the cornfield country,  
 Where vineyards leave off, flocks are packed,  
 And sheep-range leads to cattle-tract,  
 And cattle-tract to open-chase,  
 And open-chase to the very base  
 Of the mountain where, at a funeral pace,

Round about, solemn and slow,  
 One by one, row after row,  
 Up and up the pine-trees go,  
 So, like black priests up, and so  
 Down the other side again  
 To another greater, wilder country,  
 That's one vast red drear burnt-up plain,  
 Branched through and through with many a vein  
 Whence iron's dug, and copper's dealt ;  
 Look right, look left, look straight before,—  
 Beneath they mine, above they smelt,  
 Copper-ore and iron-ore,  
 And forge and furnace mould and melt,  
 And so on, more and ever more,  
 Till at the last, for a bounding belt,  
 Comes the salt sand hoar of the great sea-  
 shore,  
 —And the whole is our Duke's country.

## III.

I was born the day this present Duke was—  
 (And O, says the song, ere I was old !)  
 In the castle where the other Duke was—  
 (When I was happy and young, not old !)  
 I in the kennel, he in the bower :  
 We are of like age to an hour.  
 My father was huntsman in that day ;  
 Who has not heard my father say  
 That, when a boar was brought to bay,  
 Three times, four times out of five,  
 With his huntspear he'd contrive  
 To get the killing-place transfixed,  
 And pin him true, both eyes betwixt ?  
 And that's why the old Duke would rather  
 He lost a salt-pit than my father,  
 And loved to have him ever in call ;  
 That's why my father stood in the hall  
 When the old Duke brought his infant out  
 To show the people, and while they passed  
 The wondrous bantling round about,  
 Was first to start at the outside blast  
 As the Kaiser's courier blew his horn  
 Just a month after the babe was born.  
 "And," quoth the Kaiser's courier, "since  
 "The Duke has got an heir, our Prince  
 "Needs the Duke's self at his side :"  
 The Duke looked down and seemed to wince,  
 But he thought of wars o'er the world wide,

Castles a-fire, men on their march,  
The toppling tower, the crashing arch ;  
And up he looked, and awhile he eyed  
The row of crests and shields and banners  
Of all achievements after all manners,  
And "ay," said the Duke with a surly  
pride.

The more was his comfort when he died  
At next year's end, in a velvet suit,  
With a gilt glove on his hand, his foot  
In a silken shoe for a leather boot,  
Petticoated like a herald,  
In a chamber next to an ante-room,  
Where he breathed the breath of page and  
groom,

What he called stink, and they, perfume :  
-- They should have set him on red Berold  
Mad with pride, like fire to manage !  
They should have got his cheek fresh tannage  
Such a day as to-day in the merry sunshine !  
Had they stuck on his fist a rough-foot merlin !  
(Hark, the wind's on the heath at its game !  
Oh for a noble falcon-lanner  
To flap each broad wing like a banner,  
And turn in the wind, and dance like flame !)  
Had they broached a white-beer cask from  
Berlin

- Or if you incline to prescribe mere wine  
Put to his lips, when they saw him pine,  
A cup of our own Moldavia fine,  
Cotnar for instance, green as May sorrel  
And rosy with sweet,—we shall not quarrel.

## IV.

So, at home, the sick tall yellow Duchess  
Was left with the infant in her clutches,  
She being the daughter of God knows who :

And now was the time to revisit her tribe.  
Abroad and afar they went, the two,  
And let our people rail and gibe  
At the empty hall and extinguished fire,  
As loud as we liked, but ever in vain,  
Till after long years we had our desire,  
And back came the Duke and his mother  
again.

## V.

And he came back the pertest little ape  
That ever affronted human shape ;

Full of his travel, struck at himself.

You'd say, he despised our bluff old ways ?  
—Not he ! For in Paris they told the elf  
Our rough North land was the Land of Lays,  
The one good thing left in evil days ;  
Since the Mid-Age was the Heroic Time,  
And only in wild nooks like ours  
Could you taste of it yet as in its prime,  
And see true castles, with proper towers,  
Young-hearted women, old-minded men,  
And manners now as manners were then.  
So, all that the old Dukes had been, without  
knowing it,  
This Duke would fain know he was, without  
being it ;

'Twas not for the joy's self, but the joy of  
his showing it,  
Nor for the pride's self, but the pride of our  
seeing it,  
He revived all usages thoroughly worn-out,  
The souls of them fumed-forth, the hearts of  
them torn-out :

And chief in the chase his neck he perilled  
On a lathy horse, all legs and length,  
With blood for bone, all speed, no strength ;  
—They should have set him on red Berold  
With the red eye slow consuming in fire,  
And the thin stiff ear like an abbey-spire !

## VI.

Well, such as he was, he must marry, we heard :  
And out of a convent, at the word,  
Came the lady, in time of spring.  
—Oh, old thoughts they cling, they cling !  
That day, I know, with a dozen oaths  
I clad myself in thick hunting-clothes  
Fit for the chase of urochs or buffle  
In winter-time when you need to muffle.  
But the Duke had a mind we should cut a figure,

And so we saw the lady arrive :  
My friend, I have seen a white crane bigger !  
She was the smallest lady alive,  
Made in a piece of nature's madness,  
Too small, almost, for the life and gladness  
That over-filled her, as some hive  
Out of the bears' reach on the high trees  
Is crowded with its safe merry bees :  
In truth, she was not hard to please !

Up she looked, down she looked, round at  
the mead,

Straight at the castle, that's best indeed  
To look at from outside the walls :

As for us, styled the "serfs and thralls,"  
She as much thanked me as if she had said it,  
(With her eyes, do you understand ?)

Because I patted her horse while I led it ;

And Max, who rode on her other hand,  
Said, no bird flew past but she inquired  
What its true name was, nor ever seemed  
tired—

If that was an eagle she saw hover,  
And the green and grey bird on the field was  
the plover.

When suddenly appeared the Duke :

And as down she sprung, the small foot  
pointed

On to my hand,—as with a rebuke,

And as if his backbone were not jointed,

The Duke stepped rather aside than forward,  
And welcomed her with his grandest  
smile ;

And, mind you, his mother all the while  
Chilled in the rear, like a wind to Nor'ward ;

And up, like a weary yawn, with its pullies  
Went, in a shriek, the rusty portcullis ;

And, like a glad sky the north-wind sullies,  
The lady's face stopped its play,

As if her first hair had grown grey ;

For such things must begin some one day.

#### VII.

In a day or two she was well again ;

As who should say, " You labour in vain !

" This is all a jest against God, who meant

" I should ever be, as I am, content

" And glad in his sight ; therefore, glad I  
will be."

So, smiling as at first went she.

#### VIII.

She was active, stirring, all fire—

Could not rest, could not tire—

To a stone she might have given life !

(I myself loved once, in my day)

—For a shepherd's, miner's, huntsman's wife,

(I had a wife, I know what I say)

Never in all the world such an one !

And here was plenty to be done,

And she that could do it, great or small,

She was to do nothing at all.

There was already this man in his post,

This in his station, and that in his office,

And the Duke's plan admitted a wife, at most,

To meet his eye, with the other trophies,

Now outside the hall, now in it,

To sit thus, stand thus, see and be seen,

At the proper place in the proper minute,

And die away the life between.

And it was amusing enough, each infraction

Of rule—(but for after-sadness that came)

To hear the consummate self-satisfaction

With which the young Duke and the old  
dame

Would let her advise, and criticise,

And, being a fool, instruct the wise,

And, child-like, parcel out praise or blame :

They bore it all in complacent guise,

As though an artificer, after contriving

A wheel-work image as if it were living,

Should find with delight it could motion to  
strike him !

So found the Duke, and his mother like him :

The lady hardly got a rebuff—

That had not been contemptuous enough,

With his cursed smirk, as he nodded applause,

And kept off the old mother-cat's claws.

#### IX.

So, the little lady grew silent and thin,

Paling and ever paling,

As the way is with a hid chagrin ;

And the Duke perceived that she was ailing,

And said in his heart, "'Tis done to spite me,

" But I shall find in my power to right me !"

Don't swear, friend ! The old one, many a  
year,

Is in hell, and the Duke's self . . . you shall  
hear.

#### X.

Well, early in autumn, at first winter-warning,

When the stag had to break with his foot, of  
a morning,

A drinking-hole out of the fresh tender ice  
That covered the pond till the sun, in a trice.

Loosening it, let out a ripple of gold,  
 And another and another, and faster and  
 faster,  
 Till, dimpling to blindness, the wide water  
 rolled :  
 Then it so chanced that the Duke our  
 master  
 Asked himself what were the pleasures in  
 season,  
 And found, since the calendar bade him be  
 hearty,  
 He should do the Middle Age no treason  
 In resolving on a hunting-party.  
 Always provided, old books showed the way  
 of it !  
 What meant old poets by their strictures ?  
 And when old poets had said their say of it,  
 How taught old painters in their pictures ?  
 We must revert to the proper channels,  
 Workings in tapestry, paintings on panels,  
 And gather up woodcraft's authentic traditions:  
 Here was food for our various ambitions,  
 As on each case, exactly stated—  
 To encourage your dog, now, the properest  
 chirrup,  
 Or best prayer to Saint Hubert on mount-  
 ing your stirrup—  
 We of the household took thought and debated.  
 Blessed was he whose back ached with the  
 jerkin  
 His sire was wont to do forest-work in ;  
 Blessed he who nobly sunk "ohs"  
 And "ahs" while he tugged on his grand-  
 sire's trunk-hose ;  
 What signified hats if they had no rims on,  
 Each slouching before and behind like the  
 scallop,  
 And able to serve at sea for a shallop,  
 Loaded with lacquer and looped with crim-  
 son ?  
 So that the deer now, to make a short rhyme  
 on't,  
 What with our Venerers, Prickers and  
 Verderers,  
 Might hope for real hunters at length and  
 not murderers,  
 And oh the Duke's tailor, he had a hot time  
 on't !

## XI.

Now you must know that when the first dizziness  
 Of flap-hats and buff-coats and jack-boots  
 subsided,  
 The Duke put this question, "The Duke's  
 part provided,  
 "Had not the Duchess some share in the  
 business?"  
 For out of the mouth of two or three witnesses  
 Did he establish all fit-or-unfitnesses :  
 And, after much laying of heads together,  
 Somebody's cap got a notable feather  
 By the announcement with proper unction  
 That he had discovered the lady's function ;  
 Since ancient authors gave this tenet,  
 "When horns wind a mort and the deer  
 is at siege,  
 "Let the dame of the castle prick forth on  
 her jennet,  
 "And, with water to wash the hands of  
 her liege  
 "In a clean ewer with a fair toweling,  
 "Let her preside at the disemboweling."  
 Now, my friend, if you had so little religion  
 As to catch a hawk, some falcon-lanner,  
 And thrust her broad wings like a banner  
 Into a coop for a vulgar pigeon ;  
 And if day by day and week by week  
 You cut her claws, and sealed her eyes,  
 And clipped her wings, and tied her beak,  
 Would it cause you any great surprise  
 If, when you decided to give her an airing,  
 You found she needed a little preparing ?  
 —I say, should you be such a curmudgeon,  
 If she clung to the perch, as to take it in  
 dudgeon ?  
 Yet when the Duke to his lady signified,  
 Just a day before, as he judged most dignified,  
 In what a pleasure she was to participate,—  
 And, instead of leaping wide in flashes,  
 Her eyes just lifted their long lashes,  
 As if pressed by fatigue even he could not  
 dissipate,  
 And duly acknowledged the Duke's fore-  
 thought,  
 But spoke of her health, if her health were  
 worth aught,

Of the weight by day and the watch by night,  
And much wrong now that used to be right,  
So, thanking him, declined the hunting,—  
Was conduct ever more affronting?

With all the ceremony settled—

With the towel ready, and the sewer  
Polishing up his oldest ewer,  
And the jennet pitched upon, a piebald,  
Black-barred, cream-coated and pink eye-  
balled,—

No wonder if the Duke was nettled !

And when she persisted nevertheless,—  
Well, I suppose here's the time to confess  
That there ran half round our lady's chamber  
A balcony none of the hardest to clamber ;  
And that Jacynth the tire-woman, ready in  
waiting,

Stayed in call outside, what need of relating ?  
And since Jacynth was like a June rose, why,  
a fervent

Adorer of Jacynth of course was your servant ;  
And if she had the habit to peep through the  
casement,

How could I keep at any vast distance ?

And so, as I say, on the lady's persistence,  
The Duke, dumb-stricken with amazement,  
Stood for a while in a sultry smother,

And then, with a smile that partook of the  
awful,

Turned her over to his yellow mother

To learn what was held decorous and  
lawful ;

And the mother smelt blood with a cat-like  
instinct,

As her cheek quick whitened thro' all its  
quince-tinct.

Oh, but the lady heard the whole truth at once !

What meant she ?—Who was she ?—Her  
duty and station,

The wisdom of age and the folly of youth, at  
once,

Its decent regard and its fitting relation—

In brief, my friend, set all the devils in hell  
free

And turn them out to carouse in a belfry  
And treat the priests to a fifty-part canon,  
And then you may guess how that tongue of  
hers ran on !

Well, somehow or other it ended at last  
And, licking her whiskers, out she passed ;  
And after her,—making (he hoped) a face  
Like Emperor Nero or Sultan Saladin,  
Stalked the Duke's self with the austere grace  
Of ancient hero or modern paladin,  
From door to staircase—oh such a solemn  
Unbending of the vertebral column !

## XII.

However, at sunrise our company mustered ;  
And here was the huntsman bidding un-  
kennel,

And there 'neath his bonnet the pricker  
blustered,

With feather dank as a bough of wet fennel ;  
For the court-yard walls were filled with  
fog

You might have cut as an axe chops a log—  
Like so much wool for colour and bulkiness ;  
And out rode the Duke in a perfect sulkiness,  
Since, before breakfast, a man feels but  
queasily,

And a sinking at the lower abdomen  
Begins the day with indifferent omen.  
And lo, as he looked around uneasily,  
The sun ploughed the fog up and drove it  
asunder

This way and that from the valley under ;  
And, looking through the court-yard arch,  
Down in the valley, what should meet him  
But a troop of Gipsies on their march ?

No doubt with the annual gifts to greet him.

## XIII.

Now, in your land, Gipsies reach you, only  
After reaching all lands beside ;  
North they go, South they go, trooping or  
lonely,

And still, as they travel far and wide,  
Catch they and keep now a trace here, a  
trace there,  
That puts you in mind of a place here, a  
place there.

But with us, I believe they rise out of the  
ground,

And nowhere else, I take it, are found  
With the earth-tint yet so freshly embrowned :

Born, no doubt, like insects which breed on  
The very fruit they are meant to feed on.  
For the earth—not a use to which they don't

turn it,  
The ore that grows in the mountain's  
womb,

Or the sand in the pits like a honeycomb,  
They sift and soften it, bake it and burn it—  
Whether they weld you, for instance, a snaffle  
With side-bars never a brute can baffle ;

Or a lock that's a puzzle of wards within  
wards ;

Or, if your colt's fore-foot inclines to curve  
inwards,

Horseshoes they hammer which turn on a  
swivel

And won't allow the hoof to shrivel.

Then they cast bells like the shell of the  
winkle

That keep a stout heart in the ram with their  
tinkle ;

But the sand—they pinch and pound it like  
otters ;

Commend me to Gipsy glass-makers and  
potters !

Glasses they'll blow you, crystal-clear,  
Where just a faint cloud of rose shall appear,

As if in pure water you dropped and let die  
A bruised black-blooded mulberry ;

And that other sort, their crowning pride,  
With long white threads distinct inside,

Like the lake-flower's fibrous roots which  
dangle

Loose such a length and never tangle,  
Where the bold sword-lily cuts the clear

waters,  
And the cup-lily couches with all the white  
daughters :

Such are the works they put their hand to,  
The uses they turn and twist iron and sand to.

And these made the troop, which our Duke  
saw sally

Toward his castle from out of the valley,  
Men and women, like new-hatched spiders,

Come out 'with the morning to greet our  
riders.

And up they wound till they reached the ditch,  
Whereat all stopped save one, a witch

That I knew, as she hobbled from the group,  
By her gait directly and her stoop,  
I, whom Jacynth was used to importune  
To let that same witch tell us our fortune.

The oldest Gipsy then above ground ;  
And, sure as the autumn season came round,  
She paid us a visit for profit or pastime,  
And every time, as she swore, for the last  
time.

And presently she was seen to sidle  
Up to the Duke till she touched his bridle,  
So that the horse of a sudden reared up  
As under its nose the old witch peered up  
With her worn-out eyes, or rather eye-holes

Of no use now but to gather brine,  
And began a kind of level whine

Such as they used to sing to their viols  
When their ditties they go grinding

Up and down with nobody minding :  
And then, as of old, at the end of the  
humming

Her usual presents were forthcoming  
—A dog-whistle blowing the fiercest of trebles,

(Just a sea-shore stone holding a dozen fine  
pebbles,)

Or a porcelain mouth-piece to screw on a  
pipe-end,—

And so she awaited her annual stipend.  
But this time, the Duke would scarcely

vouchsafe  
A word in reply ; and in vain she felt  
With twitching fingers at her belt

For the purse of sleek pine-martin pelt,  
Ready to put what he gave in her pouch

safe,—  
Till, either to quicken his apprehension,  
Or possibly with an after-intention,

She was come, she said, to pay her duty  
To the new Duchess, the youthful beauty.

No sooner had she named his lady,  
Than a shine lit up the face so shady,

And its smirk returned with a novel meaning—  
For it struck him, the babe just wanted

weaning ;  
If one gave her a taste of what life was and  
sorrow,

She, foolish to-day, would be wiser to-  
morrow ;

And who so fit a teacher of trouble  
As this sordid crone bent well-nigh double?  
So, glancing at her wolf-skin vesture,  
(If such it was, for they grow so hirsute  
That their own fleece serves for natural  
fur-suit)

He was contrasting, 'twas plain from his  
gesture,

The life of the lady so flower-like and delicate  
With the loathsome squalor of this helicat.

I, in brief, was the man the Duke beckoned  
From out of the throng, and while I drew  
near

He told the crone—as I since have reckoned  
By the way he bent and spoke into her  
ear

With circumspection and mystery—

The main of the lady's history,

Her frowardness and ingratitude :

And for all the crone's submissive attitude

I could see round her mouth the loose plaits  
tightening,

And her brow with assenting intelligence  
brightening,

As though she engaged with hearty good-  
will

Whatever he now might enjoin to fulfil,  
And promised the lady a thorough frightening.  
And so, just giving her a glimpse  
Of a purse, with the air of a man who imps  
The wing of the hawk that shall fetch the  
hernshaw,

He bade me take the Gipsy mother  
And set her telling some story or other  
Of hill or dale, oak-wood or fernshaw,  
To wile away a weary hour  
For the lady left alone in her bower,  
Whose mind and body craved exertion  
And yet shrank from all better diversion.

#### XIV.

Then clapping heel to his horse, the mere  
curveter,

Out rode the Duke, and after his hollo  
Horses and hounds swept, huntsman and  
servitor,

And back I turned and bade the crone  
follow.

And what makes me confident what's to be  
told you

Had all along been of this crone's devising,  
Is, that, on looking round sharply, behold  
you,

There was a novelty quick as surprising :  
For first, she had shot up a full head in  
stature,

And her step kept pace with mine nor  
falterd,

As if age had foregone its usurpature,

And the ignoble mien was wholly altered,

And the face looked quite of another nature,

And the change reached too, whatever the  
change meant,

Her shaggy wolf-skin cloak's arrangement :

For where its tatters hung loose like sedges,

Gold coins were glittering on the edges,

Like the band-roll strung with tomans

Which proves the veil a Persian woman's :

And under her brow, like a snail's horns newly

Come out as after the rain he paces,

Two unmistakeable eye-points duly

Live and aware looked out of their places.

So, we went and found Jacynth at the entry

Of the lady's chamber standing sentry ;

I told the command and produced my com-  
panion,

And Jacynth rejoiced to admit any one,

For since last night, by the same token,

Not a single word had the lady spoken :

They went in both to the presence together,

While I in the balcony watched the weather.

#### XV.

And now, what took place at the very first  
of all,

I cannot tell, as I never could learn it :

Jacynth constantly wished a curse to fall

On that little head of hers and burn it

If she knew how she came to drop so soundly

Asleep of a sudden and there continue

The whole time sleeping as profoundly

As one of the boars my father would pin you

'Twixt the eyes where life holds garrison,

—Jacynth forgive me the comparisor !

But where I begin my own narration

Is a little after I took my station

To breathe the fresh air from the balcony,  
And, having in those days a falcon eye,  
To follow the hunt thro' the open country,  
From where the bushes thinnier crested  
The hillocks, to a plain where's not one  
tree.

When, in a moment, my ear was arrested  
By—was it singing, or was it saying,  
Or a strange musical instrument playing  
In the chamber?—and to be certain  
I pushed the lattice, pulled the curtain,  
And there lay Jacynth asleep,  
Yet as if a watch she tried to keep,  
In a rosy sleep along the floor  
With her head against the door;  
While in the midst, on the seat of state,  
Was a queen—the Gipsy woman late,  
With head and face downbent  
On the lady's head and face intent:  
For, coiled at her feet like a child at ease,  
The lady sat between her knees  
And o'er them the lady's clasped hands met,  
And on those hands her chin was set,  
And her upturned face met the face of the  
crone

Wherein the eyes had grown and grown  
As if she could double and quadruple  
At pleasure the play of either pupil  
—Very like, by her hands' slow fanning,  
As up and down like a gor-crow's flappers  
They moved to measure, or bell-clappers.

I said "Is it blessing, is it banning,  
"Do they applaud you or burlesque you—  
"Those hands and fingers with no flesh  
on?"

But, just as I thought to spring in to the rescue,  
At once I was stopped by the lady's expres-  
sion:

For it was life her eyes were drinking  
From the crone's wide pair above unwinking,  
—Life's pure fire received without shrinking,  
Into the heart and breast whose heaving  
Told you no single drop they were leaving,  
—Life, that filling her, passed ~~re~~dundant  
Into her very hair, back swerving  
Over each shoulder, loose and abundant,  
As her head thrown back showed the white  
throat curving;

And the very tresses shared in the pleasure,  
Moving to the mystic measure,  
Bounding as the bosom bounded.  
I stopped short, more and more confounded,  
As still her cheeks burned and eyes glistened,  
As she listened and she listened:  
When all at once a hand detained me,  
The selfsame contagion gained me,  
And I kept time to the wondrous chime,  
Making out words and prose and rhyme,  
Till it seemed that the music furled

Its wings like a task fulfilled, and dropped  
From under the words it first had propped,  
And left them midway in the world:  
Word took word as hand takes hand,  
I could hear at last, and understand,  
And when I held the unbroken thread,  
The Gipsy said:—

"And so at last we find my tribe.  
"And so I set thee in the midst,  
"And to one and all of them describe  
"What thou saidst and what thou didst,  
"Our long and terrible journey through,  
"And all thou art ready to say and do  
"In the trials that remain:  
"I trace them the vein and the other vein  
"That meet on thy brow and part again,  
"Making our rapid mystic mark;  
"And I bid my people prove and probe  
"Each eye's profound and glorious globe  
"Till they detect the kindred spark  
In those depths so dear and dark,  
"Like the spots that snap and burst and flee,  
"Circling over the midnight sea.  
"And on that round young cheek of thine  
"I make them recognize the tinge,  
"As when of the costly scarlet wine  
"They drip so much as will impinge  
"And spread in a thinnest scale afloat  
"One thick gold drop from the olive's coat  
"Over a silver plate whose sheen  
"Still thro' the mixture shall be seen.  
"For so I prove thee, to one and all,  
"Fit, when my people ope their breast,  
"To see the sign, and hear the call,  
"And take the vow, and stand the test  
"Which adds one more child to the rest—



- "When the breast is bare and the arms are wide,  
 "And the world is left outside.  
 "For there is probation to decree,  
 "And many and long must the trials be  
 "Thou shalt victoriously endure,  
 "If that brow is true and those eyes are sure ;  
 "Like a jewel-finder's fierce assay  
 "Of the prize he dug from its mountain-tomb—  
 "Let once the vindicating ray  
 "Leap out amid the anxious gloom,  
 "And steel and fire have done their part  
 "And the prize falls on its finder's heart ;  
 "So, trial after trial past,  
 "Wilt thou fall at the very last  
 "Breathless, half in trance  
 "With the thrill of the great deliverance,  
 "Into our arms for evermore ;  
 "And thou shalt know, those arms once curled  
 "About thee, what we knew before,  
 "How love is the only good in the world.  
 "Henceforth be loved as heart can love,  
 "Or brain devise, or hand approve !  
 "Stand up, look below,  
 "It is our life at thy feet we throw  
 "To step with into light and joy ;  
 "Not a power of life but we employ  
 "To satisfy thy nature's want ;  
 "Art thou the tree that props the plant,  
 "Or the climbing plant that seeks the tree—  
 "Canst thou help us, must we help thee ?  
 "If any two creatures grew into one,  
 "They would do more than the world has done :  
 "Though each apart were never so weak,  
 "Ye vainly through the world should seek  
 "For the knowledge and the might  
 "Which in such union grew their right :  
 "So, to approach at least that end,  
 "And blend,—as much as may be, blend  
 "Thee with us or us with thee,—  
 "As climbing plant or propping tree,  
 "Shall some one deck thee, over and down,  
 "Up and about, with blossoms and leaves ?  
 "Fix his heart's fruit for thy garland-crown,  
 "Cling with his soul as the gourd-vine cleaves,
- "Die on thy boughs and disappear  
 "While not a leaf of thine is ere ?  
 "Or is the other fate in store,  
 "And art thou fitted to adore,  
 "To give thy wondrous self away,  
 "And take a stronger nature's sway ?  
 "I foresee and could foretell  
 "Thy future portion, sure and well :  
 "But those passionate eyes speak true, speak true,  
 "Let them say what thou shalt do !  
 "Only be sure thy daily life,  
 "In its peace or in its strife,  
 "Never shall be unobserved ;  
 "We pursue thy whole career,  
 "And hope for it, or doubt, or fear,—  
 "Lo, hast thou kept thy path or swerved,  
 "We are beside thee in all thy ways,  
 "With our blame, with our praise,  
 "Our shame to feel, our pride to show,  
 "Glad, angry—but indifferent, no !  
 "Whether it be thy lot to go,  
 "For the good of us all, where the haters meet  
 "In the crowded city's horrible street ;  
 "Or thou step alone through the morass  
 "Where never sound yet was  
 "Save the dry quick clap of the stork's bill,  
 "For the air is still, and the water still,  
 "When the blue breast of the dipping coot  
 "Dives under, and all is mute.  
 "So, at the last shall come old age,  
 "Decrepit as befits that stage ;  
 "How else wouldst thou retire apart  
 "With the hoarded memories of thy heart,  
 "And gather all to the very least  
 "Of the fragments of life's earlier feast,  
 "Let fall through eagerness to find  
 "The crowning dainties yet behind ?  
 "Ponder on the entire past  
 "Laid together thus at last,  
 "When the twilight helps to fuse  
 "The first fresh with the faded hues,  
 "And the outline of the whole,  
 "As round ~~eye's~~ shades their framework roll,  
 "Grandly fronts for once thy soul.  
 "And then as, 'mid the dark, a gleam  
 "Of yet another morning breaks,

"And like the hand which ends a dream,  
 "Death, with the might of his sunbeam,  
 "Touches the flesh and the soul awakes,  
 "Then——"

Ay, then indeed something  
 would happen !  
 But what ? For here her voice changed  
 like a bird's ;  
 There grew more of the music and less of  
 the words ;

Had Jacynth only been by me to clap pen  
 To paper and put you down every syllable  
 With those clever clerkly fingers,  
 All I've forgotten as well as what lingers  
 In this old brain of mine that's but ill able  
 To give you even this poor version

Of the speech I spoil, as it were, with  
 stammering  
 —More fault of those who had the hammer-  
 ing

Of prosody into me and syntax,  
 And did it, not with hobnails but tintacks !  
 But to return from this excursion,—  
 Just, do you mark, when the song was  
 sweetest,

The peace most deep and the charm com-  
 pletest,

There came, shall I say, a snap—  
 And the charm vanished !  
 And my sense returned, so strangely  
 banished,

And, starting as from a nap,  
 I knew the crone was bewitching my lady,  
 With Jacynth asleep ; and but one spring  
 made I

Down from the casement, round to the portal,  
 Another minute and I had entered,—  
 When the door opened, and more than mortal  
 Stood, with a face where to my mind centred  
 All beauties I ever saw or shall see,  
 The Duchess · I stopped as if struck by  
 palsy.

She was so different, happy and beautiful,  
 I felt at once that all was best,  
 And that I had nothing to do, for the rest,  
 But wait her commands, obey and be dutiful.  
 Not that, in fact, there was any commanding ;  
 I saw the glory of her eye,

And the brow's height and the breast's ex-  
 panding,

And I was hers to live or to die.  
 As for finding what she wanted,  
 You know God Almighty granted  
 Such little signs should serve wild creatures  
 To tell one another all their desires,  
 So that each knows what his friend requires,  
 And does its bidding without teachers.

I preceded her ; the crone  
 Followed silent and alone ;  
 I spoke to her, but she merely jabbered  
 In the old style ; both her eyes had slunk  
 Back to their pits ; her stature shrunk ;  
 In short, the soul in its body sunk  
 Like a blade sent home to its scabbard.

We descended, I preceding ;  
 Crossed the court with nobody heeding ;  
 All the world was at the chase,  
 The courtyard like a desert-place,  
 The stable emptied of its small fry ;  
 I saddled myself the very palfrey  
 I remember patting while it carried her,  
 The day she arrived and the Duke married  
 her.

And, do you know, though it's easy deceiving  
 Oneself in such matters, I can't help believing  
 The lady had not forgotten it either,  
 And knew the poor devil so much beneath her  
 Would have been only too glad for her service  
 To dance on hot ploughshares like a Turk  
 dervise,

But, unable to pay proper duty where owing  
 it,

Was reduced to that pitiful method of show-  
 ing it :

For though the moment I began setting  
 His saddle on my own nag of Berold's beget-  
 ting,

(Not that I meant to be obtrusive)  
 She stopped me, while his rug was shifting,  
 By a single rapid finger's lifting,

And, with a gesture kind but conclusive,  
 And a little shake of the head, refused me,—  
 I say, although she never used me,  
 Yet when she was mounted, the Gipsy be-  
 hind her,  
 And I ventured to remind her,

I suppose with a voice of less steadiness  
 Than usual, for my feeling exceeded me,  
 —Something to the effect that I was in readiness

Whenever God should please she needed me,—

Then, do you know, her face looked down on me  
 With a look that placed a crown on me,  
 And she felt in her bosom,—mark, her bosom—  
 And, as a flower-tree drops its blossom,  
 Dropped me . . . ah, had it been a purse  
 Of silver, my friend, or gold that's worse,  
 Why, you see, as soon as I found myself

So understood,—that a true heart so may gain

Such a reward,—I should have gone home again,

Kissed Jacynth, and soberly drowned myself !  
 It was a little plait of hair

Such as friends in a convent make

To wear, each for the other's sake,—

This, see, which at my breast I wear,  
 Ever did (rather to Jacynth's grudgment),  
 And ever shall, till the Day of Judgment.  
 And then,—and then,—to cut short,—this is idle,

These are feelings it is not good to foster,—  
 I pushed the gate wide, she shook the bridle,  
 And the palfrey bounded,—and so we lost her.

#### XVI.

When the liquor's out why clink the cannikin?  
 I did think to describe you the panic in  
 The redoubtable breast of our master the  
 mannikin,

And what was the pitch of his mother's yellowness,

How she turned as a shark to snap the  
 spare-rib

Clean off, sailors say, from a pearl-diving  
 Carib,

When she heard, what she called the flight  
 of the feloness

—But it seems such child's play,  
 What they said and did with the lady away !  
 And to dance on, when we've lost the music,  
 Always made me—and no doubt makes you  
 —sick.

Nay, to my mind, the world's face looked so  
 stern

As that sweet form disappeared through the  
 postern,

She that kept it in constant good humour,  
 It ought to have stopped ; there seemed  
 nothing to do more.

But the world thought otherwise and went on,  
 And my head's one that its spite was spent on :  
 Thirty years are fled since that morning,  
 And with them all my head's adorning.

Nor did the old Duchess die outright,  
 As you expect, of suppressed spite,  
 The natural end of every adder

Not suffered to empty its poison-bladder :

But she and her son agreed, I take it,  
 That no one should touch on the story to  
 wake it,

For the wound in the Duke's pride rankled  
 fiery,

So, they made no search and small inquiry—  
 And when fresh Gipsies have paid us a visit,  
 I've

Noticed the couple were never inquisitive,  
 But told them they're folks the Duke don't  
 want here,

And bade them make haste and cross the  
 frontier.

Brief, the Duchess was gone and the Duke  
 was glad of it,

And the old one was in the young one's  
 stead,

And took, in her place, the household's  
 head,

And a blessed time the household had of it !  
 And were I not, as a man may say, cautious  
 How I trench, more than needs, on the  
 nauseous,

I could favour you with sundry touches  
 Of the paint-smutches with which the Duchess  
 Heightened the mellowness of her cheek's  
 yellowness

(To get on faster) until at last her  
 Cheek grew to be one master-plaster  
 Of mucus and fucus from mere use of  
 ceruse :

In short, she grew from scalp to udder  
 Just the object to make you shudder.

## XVII.

You're my friend—

What a thing friendship is, world without end!  
How it gives the heart and soul a stir-up

As if somebody broached you a glorious  
runlet,

And poured out, all lovelily, sparkingly,  
sunlit,

Our green Moldavia, the streaky syrup,  
Cotnar as old as the time of the Druids—

Friendship may match with that monarch of  
fluids ;

Each supplies a dry brain, fills you its ins-and-  
outs,

Gives your life's hour-glass a shake when the  
thin sand doubts

Whether to run on or stop short, and guarantees  
Age is not all made of stark sloth and arrant  
ease.

I have seen my little lady once more,  
Jacynth, the Gipsy, Berold, and the rest  
of it,

For to me spoke the Duke, as I told you  
before ;

I always wanted to make a clean breast  
of it :

And now it is made—why, my heart's blood,  
that went trickle,

Trickle, but anon, in such muddy driblets,  
Is pumped up brisk now, through the main  
ventricle,

And genially floats me about the giblets.  
I'll tell you what I intend to do :

I must see this fellow his sad life through—  
He is our Duke, after all,

And I, as he says, but a serf and thrall.

My father was born here, and I inherit

His fame, a chain he bound his son with ;

Could I pay in a lump I should prefer it,

But there's no mine to blow up and get  
done with :

So, I must stay till the end of the chapter.

For, as to our middle-age-manners-adapter,

Be it a thing to be glad on or sorry on,

Some day or other, his head in a morion

And breast in a hauberk, his heels he'll  
kick up,

Slain by an onslaught fierce of hiccup.

And then, when red doth the sword of our  
Duke rust,

And its leathern sheath lie o'ergrown with a  
blue crust,

Then I shall scrape together my earnings ;

For, you see, in the churchyard Jacynth  
reposes,

And our children all went the way of the  
roses :

It's a long lane that knows no turnings.

One needs but little tackle to travel in ;

So, just one stout cloak shall I indue :

And for a staff, what beats the javelin  
With which his boars my father pinned you?

And then, for a purpose you shall hear  
presently,

Taking some Cotnar, a tight plump skinful,

I shall go journeying, who but I, pleasantly !  
Sorrow is vain and despondency sinful.

What's a man's age? He must hurry more,  
that's all ;

Cram in a day, what his youth took a year  
to hold :

When we mind labour, then only, we're  
too old—

What age had Methusalem when he begat  
Saul?

And at last, as its haven some buffeted ship  
sees,

(Come all the way from the north-parts  
with sperm oil)

I hope to get safely out of the turmoil

And arrive one day at the land of the Gipsies,

And find my lady, or hear the last news of  
her

From some old thief and son of Lucifer,

His forehead chapleted green with wreathy  
hop,

Sunburned all over like an Æthiop.

And when my Cotnar begins to operate

And the tongue of the rogue to run at a  
proper rate,

And our wine-skin, tight once, shows each  
flaccid dent,

I shall drop in with—as if by accident—

“You never knew, then, how it all ended,

“What fortune good or bad attended

“The little lady your Queen befriended?”

—And when that's told me, what's remaining?  
 This world's too hard for my explaining.  
 The same wise judge of matters equine  
 Who still preferred some slim four-year-old  
 To the big-boned stock of mighty Berold,  
 And, for strong Cotnar, drank French weak wine,  
 He also must be such a lady's scorner!  
 Smooth Jacob still robs homely Esau:  
 Now up, now down, the world's one see-saw.  
 —So, I shall find out some snug corner  
 Under a hedge, like Orson the wood-knight,  
 Turn myself round and bid the world good night;  
 And sleep a sound sleep till the trumpet's blowing  
 Wakes me (unless priests cheat us laymen)  
 To a world where will be no further throwing  
 Pearls before swine that can't value them.  
 Amen!

### A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL,

SHORTLY AFTER THE REVIVAL OF  
 LEARNING IN EUROPE.

LET us begin and carry up this corpse,  
 Singing together.  
 Leave we the common crofts, the vulgar thorpes  
 Each in its tether  
 Sleeping safe on the bosom of the plain,  
 Cared-for till cock-crow:  
 Look out if yonder be not day again  
 Rimming the rock-row!  
 That's the appropriate country; there, man's thought,  
 Rarer, intenser,  
 Self-gathered for an outbreak, as it ought,  
 Chafes in the censer.  
 Leave we the unlettered plain its herd and crop;  
 Seek we sepulture  
 On a tall mountain, cited to the top,  
 Crowded with culture!

All the peaks soar, but one the rest excels;  
 Clouds overcome it;  
 No! yonder sparkle is the citadel's  
 Circling its summit.  
 Thither our path lies; wind we up the heights:  
 Wait ye the warning?  
 Our low life was the level's and the night's;  
 He's for the morning.  
 Step to a tune, square chests, erect each head,  
 'Ware the beholders!  
 This is our master, famous calm and dead,  
 Borne on our shoulders.  
 Sleep, crop and herd! sleep, darkling thorpe and croft,  
 Safe from the weather!  
 He, whom we convoy to his grave aloft,  
 Singing together,  
 He was a man born with thy face and throat,  
 Lyric Apollo!  
 Long he lived nameless: how should spring take note  
 Winter would follow?  
 Till lo, the little touch, and youth was gone!  
 Cramped and diminished,  
 Moaned he, "New measures, other feet anon!  
 "My dance is finished?"  
 Ne, that's the world's way: (keep the mountain-side,  
 Make for the city!)  
 He knew the signal, and stepped on with pride  
 Over men's pity;  
 Left play for work, and grappled with the world  
 Bent on escaping:  
 "What's in the scroll," quoth he, "thou keepest furled?  
 "Show me their shaping,  
 "Theirs who most studied man, the bard and sage,—  
 "Give!"—So, he gowned him,  
 Straight got by heart that book to its last page:  
 Learned, we found him.  
 Yea, but we found him bald too, eyes like lead,  
 Accents uncertain:  
 "Time to taste life," another would have said,  
 'Up with the curtain!'

This man said rather, "Actual life comes next?"

"Patience a moment!"

"Grant I have mastered learning's crabbed text,

"Still there's the comment.

"Let me know all! Prate not of most or least,

"Painful or easy!"

"Even to the crumbs I'd fain eat up the feast,

"Ay, nor feel queasy."

Oh, such a life as he resolved to live,

When he had learned it,

When he had gathered all books had to give!

Sooner, he spurned it.

Image the whole, then execute the parts—

Fancy the fabric

Quite, ere you build, ere steel strike fire from quartz,

Ere mortar dab brick!

(Here's the town-gate reached: there's the market-place

Gaping before us.)

Yea, this in him was the peculiar grace

(Hearten our chorus!)

That before living he'd learn how to live—

No end to learning:

Earn the means first—God surely will contrive

Use for our earning.

Others mistrust and say, "But time escapes:

"Live now or never!"

He said, "What's time? Leave Now for dogs and apes!

"Man has Forever."

Back to his book then: deeper drooped his head:

*Calculus* racked him:

Leadens before, his eyes grew dross of lead:

*Tussis* attacked him.

"Now, master, take a little rest!"—not he!

(Caution redoubled,

Step two abreast, the way winds narrowly!)

Not a whit troubled

Back to his studies, fresher than at first,

Fierce as a dragon

He (soul-hydroptic with a sacred thirst)

Sucked at the flagon.

Oh, if we draw a circle premature,

Heedless of far gain,

Greedy for quick returns of profit, sure

Bad is our bargain!

Was it not great? did not he throw on God,

(He loves the burthen)—

God's task to make the heavenly period

Perfect the carthen?

Did not he magnify the mind, show clear

Just what it all meant?

He would not discount life, as fools do here,

Paid by instalment.

He ventured neck or nothing—heaven's success

Found, or earth's failure:

"Wilt thou trust death or not?" He

answered "Yes:

"Hence with life's pale lure!"

That low man seeks a little thing to do,

Sees it and does it:

This high man, with a great thing to pursue,

Dies ere he knows it.

That low man goes on adding one to one,

His hundred's soon hit:

This high man, aiming at a million,

Misses an unit.

That, has the world here—should he need the next,

Let the world mind him!

This, throws himself on God, and unperplexed

Seeking shall find him.

So, with the throttling hands of death at strife,

Ground he at grammar;

Still, thro' the rattle, parts of speech were rife:

While he could stammer

He settled *Holi's* business—let it be!—

Properly based *Om*—

Gave us the doctrine of the enclitic *De*,

Dead from the waist down.

Well, here's the platform, here's the proper place:

Hail to your purlieus,

All ye highfliers of the feathered race,

Swallows and curlews!

Here's the top-peak; the multitude below

Live, for they can, there:

This man decided not to Live but Know—

Bury this man there?

Here—here's his place, where meteors shoot,  
clouds form,

Lightnings are loosened,  
Stars come and go! Let joy break with the  
storm,

Peace let the dew send!  
Lofty designs must close in like effects:

Lofily lying,  
Leave him—still loftier than the world suspects,  
Living and dying.

### THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY.

#### A MIDDLE-AGE INTERLUDE.

ROSA MUNDI; SEU, FULCITE ME FLORIBUS.  
A CONCEIT OF MASTER GYSBRECHT,  
CANON-REGULAR OF SAINT JODOCUS-BY-  
THE-BAR, YPRES CITY. CANTUQUE, *Virgilus*. AND HATH OFTEN BEEN SUNG  
AT HOCK-TIDE AND FESTIVALS. GAVISUS  
ERAM, *Jessides*.

(It would seem to be a glimpse from the  
burning of Jacques du Bourg-Molay, at Paris,  
A.D. 1314; as distorted by the refraction from  
Flemish brain to brain, during the course of  
a couple of centuries.)

[Molay was Grand Master of the Templars  
when that order was suppressed in 1312.]

#### I.

PREADMONISHETH THE ABBOT DEODAET.

THE Lord, we look to once for all,  
Is the Lord we should look at, all at  
once:

He knows not to vary, saith Saint Paul,  
Nor the shadow of turning, for the  
nonce.

See him no other than as he is!

Give both the infinitudes their due—

Infinite mercy, but, I wis,  
As infinite a justice too.

[*Organ: plagal-cadence.*

As infinite a justice too.

#### II.

##### ONE SINGETH.

John, Master of the Temple of God,  
Falling to sin the Unknown Sin,  
What he bought of Emperor Aldabrod,  
He sold it to Sultan Saladin:  
Till, caught by Pope Clement, a-buzzing there,  
Hornet-prince of the mad wasps' hive,  
And clipt of his wings in Paris square,  
They bring him now to be burned alive.

[*And wanteth there grace of lute or  
clavicithern, ye shall say to con-  
firm him who singeth—*

We bring John now to be burned alive.

#### III.

In the midst is a goodly gallows built;  
'Twixt fork and fork, a stake is stuck;  
But first they set divers tumbrels a-tilt,  
Make a trench all round with the city muck;  
Inside they pile log upon log, good store;  
Faggots no few, blocks great and small,  
Reach a man's mid-thigh, no less, no more,—  
For they mean he should roast in the sight  
of all.

##### CHORUS.

We mean he should roast in the sight of all.

#### IV.

Good sappy bavins<sup>1</sup> that kindle forthwith;  
Billets that blaze substantial and slow;  
Pine-stump split deftly, dry as pith;  
Larch-heart that chars to a chalk-white glow:  
Then up they hoist me John in a chafe,  
Sling him fast like a hog to scorch,  
Spit in his face, then leap back safe,  
Sing "Laudes" and bid clap-to the torch.

##### CHORUS.

*Laus Deo*—who bids clap-to the torch.

#### V.

John of the Temple, whose fame so bragged,  
Is burning alive in Paris square!  
How can he curse, if his mouth is gagged?  
Or wriggle his neck, with a collar there?

<sup>1</sup> Faggots.

Or heave his chest, which a band goes round ?

Or threat with his fist, since his arms are  
spliced ?

Or kick with his feet, now his legs are bound ?

—Thinks John, I will call upon Jesus Christ.

[*Here one crosseth himself.*]

VI.

Jesus Christ—John had bought and sold,

Jesus Christ—John had eaten and drunk ;

To him, the Flesh meant silver and gold.

(*Salvd reverentiâ.*)

Now it was, "Saviour, bountiful lamb,

"I have roasted thee Turks, though men  
roast me !

"See thy servant, the plight wherein I am !

"Art thou a saviour? Save thou me !"

CHORUS.

'Tis John the mocker cries, "Save thou me !"

VII.

Who maketh God's menace an idle word ?

—Saith, it no more means what it proclaims,

Than a damsel's threat to her wanton bird ?—

For she too rattles of ugly names.

—Saith, he knoweth but one thing,—what he  
knows ?

That God is good and the rest is breath ;

Why else is the same stiled Sharon's rose ?

Once a rose, ever a rose, he saith.

CHORUS.

O, John shall yet find a rose, he saith !

VIII.

Alack, there be roses and roses, John !

Some, honied of taste like your leman's  
tongue :

Some, bitter ; for why ? (roast gaily on !)

Their tree struck root in devil's-dung.

When Paul once reasoned of righteousness

And of temperance and of judgment to come,

Good Felix trembled, he could no less :

John, snickering, crook'd his wicked thumb.

CHORUS.

What cometh to John of the wicked thumb ?

Ha ha, John plucketh now at his rose

To rid himself of a sorrow at heart !

Lo,—petal on petal, fierce rays uncloze ;

Anther on anther, sharp spikes outstart ;

And with blood for dew, the bosom boils ;

And a gust of sulphur is all its smell ;

And lo, he is horribly in the toils

Of a coal-black giant flower of hell !

CHORUS.

What maketh heaven, That maketh hell.

X.

So, as John called now, through the fire amain,

On the Name, he had cursed with, all his  
life—

To the Person, he bought and sold again—

For the Face, with his daily buffets rife—

Feature by feature It took its place :

And his voice, like a mad dog's choking bark,

At the steady whole of the Judge's face—

Died. Forth John's soul flared into the dark.

SUBJOINETH THE ABBOT DEODAET.

God help all poor souls lost in the dark !

HOLY-CROSS DAY.

ON WHICH THE JEWS WERE FORCED TO  
ATTEND AN ANNUAL CHRISTIAN SER-  
MON IN ROME.

[“Now was come about Holy-Cross Day,  
and now must my lord preach his first sermon  
to the Jews : as it was of old cared for in the  
merciful bowels of the Church, that, so to  
speak, a crumb at least from her conspicuous  
table here in Rome should be, though but  
once yearly, cast to the famishing dogs, under-  
trampled and bespitten-upon beneath the feet  
of the guests. And a moving sight in truth,  
this, of so many of the besotted blind restif  
and ready-to-perish Hebrews ! now maternally  
brought—nay (for He saith, ‘Compel them  
to come in’) haled, as it were, by the head and  
hair, and against their obstinate hearts, to partake  
of the heavenly grace. What awakening,  
what striving with tears, what working of a



yeasty conscience ! Nor was my lord wanting to himself on so apt an occasion ; witness the abundance of conversions which did incessantly reward him : though not to my lord be altogether the glory."—*Diary by the Bishop's Secretary, 1600.*]

What the Jews really said, on thus being driven to church, was rather to this effect :—

## I.

FEE, faw, fum ! bubble and squeak !  
Blessedest Thursday's the fat of the week.  
Rumble and tumble, sleek and rough,  
Stinking and savoury, smug and gruff,  
Take the church-road, for the bell's due chime  
Gives us the summons—'tis sermon-time !

## II.

Boh, here's Barnabas ! Job, that's you ?  
Up stumps Solomon—bustling too ?  
Shame, man ! greedy beyond your years  
To handsel the bishop's shaving-shears ?  
Fair play's a jewel ! Leave friends in the lurch ?  
Stand on a line ere you start for the church !

## III.

Higgledy piggedly, packed we lie,  
Rats in a hamper, swine in a sty,  
Wasps in a bottle, frogs in a sieve,  
Worms in a carcase, fleas in a sleeve.  
Hist ! square shoulders, settle your thumbs  
And buzz for the bishop—here he comes.

## IV.

Bow, wow, wow—a bone for the dog !  
I liken his Grace to an acorned hog.  
What, a boy at his side, with the bloom of a lass,  
To help and handle my lord's hour-glass !  
Didst ever behold so lithe a chine ?  
His cheek hath laps like a fresh-singed swine.

## V.

Aaron's asleep—shove hip to haunch,  
Or somebody deal him a dig in the paunch !

Look at the purse with the tassel and knob,  
And the gown with the angel and thingum-  
bob !

What's he at, quotha ? reading his text !  
Now you've his curtesy—and what comes next ?

## VI.

See to our converts—you doomed black  
dozen—  
Nor stealing away—nor cog nor cozen !  
You five, that were thieves, deserve it fairly ;  
You seven, that were beggars, will live less  
sparely ;  
You took your turn and dipped in the hat,  
Got fortune—and fortune gets you ; mind that !

## VII.

Give your first groan—compunction's at work ;  
And soft ! from a Jew you mount to a Turk.  
Lo, Micah,—the selfsame beard on chin  
He was four times already converted in !  
Here's a knife, clip quick—it's a sign of grace—  
Oh he ruins us all with his hanging-face.

## VIII.

Whom now is the bishop a-leering at ?  
I know a point where his text falls pat.  
I'll tell him to-morrow, a word just now  
Went to my heart and made me vow  
I meddle no more with the worst of trades—  
Let somebody else pay his serenades.

## IX.

Groan all together now, whee—hee—hee !  
It's a-work, it's a-work, ah, woe is me !  
It began, when a herd of us, picked and placed,  
Were spurred through the Corso, stripped to  
the waist ;  
Jew brutes, with sweat and blood well spent  
To usher in worthy Christian Lent.

## X.

It grew, when the hangman entered our  
bounds,  
Yelled, pricked us out to his church like  
hounds :

It got to a pitch, when the hand indeed  
Which gutted my purse would throttle my  
creed :

And it overflows when, to even the odd,  
Men I helped to their sins help me to their  
God.

XI.

But now, while the scapegoats leave our  
flock,  
And the rest sit silent and count the clock,  
Since forced to muse the appointed time  
(On these precious facts and truths sublime,—  
Let us fitly employ it, under our breath,  
In saying Ben Ezra's Song of Death.

XII.

For Rabbi Ben Ezra, the night he died,  
Called sons and sons' sons to his side,  
And spoke, "This world has been harsh and  
strange ;  
"Something is wrong : there needeth a  
change.  
"But what, or where? at the last or first?  
"In one point only we sinned, at worst.

XIII.

"The Lord will have mercy on Jacob yet,  
"And again in his border see Israel set.  
"When Judah beholds Jerusalem,  
"The stranger-seed shall be joined to them :  
"To Jacob's House shall the Gentiles cleave.  
"So the Prophet saith and his sons believe.

XIV.

"Ay, the children of the chosen race  
"Shall carry and bring them to their place :  
"In the land of the Lord shall lead the same,  
"Bondsmen and handmaids. Who shall  
blame,  
"When the slaves enslave, the oppressed  
ones o'er  
"The oppressor triumph for evermore?

XV.

"God spoke, and gave us the word to keep,  
"Bade never fold the hands nor sleep  
"Mid a faithless world,—at watch and ward,  
"Till Christ at the end relieve our guard.

"By His servant Moses the watch was set :  
"Though near upon cock-crow, we keep it  
yet.

XVI.

"Thou ! if thou wast He, who at mid-watch  
came,  
"By the starlight, naming a dubious name !  
"And if, too heavy with sleep—too rash  
"With fear—O Thou, if that martyr-gash  
"Fell on Thee coming to take thine own,  
"And we gave the Cross, when we owed the  
Throne—

XVII.

"Thou art the Judge. We are bruised thus.  
"But, the Judgment over, join sides with us !  
"Thine too is the cause ! and not more thine  
"Than ours, is the work of these dogs and  
swine,  
"Whose life laughs through and spits at their  
creed !  
"Who maintain Thee in word, and defy  
Thee in deed !

XVIII.

"We withstood Christ then? Be mindful  
how  
"At least we withstand Barabbas now !  
"Was our outrage sore? But the worst we  
spared,  
"To have called these—Christians, had we  
dared !  
"Let defiance to them pay mistrust of Thee,  
"And Rome make amends for Calvary !

XIX.

"By the torture, prolonged from age to age,  
"By the infamy, Israel's heritage,  
"By the Ghetto's plague, by the garb's dis-  
grace,  
"By the badge of shame, by the felon's  
place,  
"By the branding-tool, the bloody whip,  
"And the summons to Christian fellowship,—

XX.

"We boast our proof that at least the Jew  
"Would wrest Christ's name from the Devil's  
crew.

"Thy face took never so deep a shade  
 "But we fought them in it, God our aid!  
 "A trophy to bear, as we march, thy band,  
 "South, East, and on to the Pleasant Land!"

[*Pope Gregory XVI. abolished this bad business of the Sermon.*—R. B.]

### PROTUS.

[This poem is without warrant of history.]

AMONG these latter busts we count by scores,  
 Half-emperors and quarter-emperors,  
 Each with his bay-leaf fillet, loose-thonged  
 vest,  
 Loric and low-browed Gorgon on the breast,—  
 One loves a baby face, with violets there,  
 Violets instead of laurel in the hair,  
 As those were all the little locks could bear.

Now read here. "Protus ends a period

"Of empery beginning with a god;  
 "Born in the porphyry chamber at Byzant,  
 "Queens by his cradle, proud and ministrant:  
 "And if he quickened breath there, 'twould  
 like fire

"Pantingly through the dim vast realm  
 transpire.

"A fame that he was missing spread afar:  
 "The world from its four corners, rose in  
 war,

"Till he was borne out on a balcony  
 "To pacify the world when it should see.

"The captains ranged before him, one, his  
 hand

"Made baby points at, gained the chief  
 command.

"And day by day more beautiful he grew

"In shape, all said, in feature and in hue,

"While young Greek sculptors, gazing on  
 the child,

"Became with old Greek sculpture reconciled.

"Already sages laboured to condense

"In easy tomes a life's experience:

"And artists took grave counsel to impart

"In one breath and one hand-sweep, all their  
 art—

"To make his graces prompt as blossoming

"Of plentifully-watered palms in spring:

"Since well beseems it, whoso mounts the  
 throne,

"For beauty, knowledge, strength, should  
 stand alone,

"And mortals love the letters of his name."

—Stop! Have you turned two pages? Still  
 the same.

New reign, same date. The scribe goes on  
 to say

How that same year, on such a month and  
 day,

"John the Pannonian, groundedly believed

"A blacksmith's bastard, whose hard hand  
 reprieved

"The Empire from its fate the year before,—

"Came, had a mind to take the crown, and  
 wore

"The same for six years (during which the  
 Huns

"Kept off their fingers from us), till his sons

"Put something in his liquor"—and so forth.

Then a new reign. Stay—"Take at its just  
 worth"

(Subjoins an annotator) "what I give

"As hearsay. Some think, John let Protus  
 live

"And slip away. 'Tis said, he reached  
 man's age

"At some blind northern court; made, first  
 a page,

"Then tutor to the children; last, of use

"About the hunting-stables. I deduce

"He wrote the little tract 'On worming  
 dogs,'

"Whereof the name in sundry catalogues

"Is extant yet. A Protus of the race

"Is rumoured to have died a monk in  
 Thrace,—

"And if the same, he reached senility."

Here's John the Smith's rough-hammered  
 head. Great eye,

Gross jaw and gripped lips do what granite can  
 To give you the crown-grasper. What a  
 man!

## THE STATUE AND THE BUST.

THERE'S a palace in Florence, the world  
knows well,  
And a statue watches it from the square,  
And this story of both do our townsmen tell.

Ages ago, a lady there,  
At the farthest window facing the East  
Asked, "Who rides by with the royal air?"

The bridesmaids' prattle around her ceased;  
She leaned forth, one on either hand;  
They saw how the blush of the bride in-  
creased—

They felt by its beats her heart expand—  
As one at each ear and both in a breath  
Whispered, "The Great-Duke Ferdinand."

That self-same instant, underneath,  
The Duke rode past in his idle way,  
Emptily and fine like a swordless sheath.

Gay he rode, with a friend as gay,  
Till he threw his head back—"Who is she?"  
—"A bride the Riccardi brings home to-day."

Hair in heaps lay heavily  
Over a pale brow spirit-pure—  
Carved like the heart of a coal-black tree,

Crisped like a war-steed's encolure<sup>1</sup>—  
And vainly sought to dissemble her eyes  
Of the blackest black our eyes endure.

And lo, a blade for a knight's emprise  
Filled the fine empty sheath of a man,—  
The Duke grew straightway brave and wise.

He looked at her, as a lover can;  
She looked at him, as one who awakes:  
The past was a sleep, and her life began.

Now, love so ordered for both their sakes,  
A feast was held that selfsame night  
In the pile which the mighty shadow makes.

<sup>1</sup> Neck and shoulder of a horse.

(For Via Larga is three-parts light,  
But the palace overshadows one,  
Because of a crime which may God requite!

To Florence and God the wrong was done,  
Through the first republic's murder there  
By Cosimo and his cursed son.)

The Duke (with the statue's face in the square)  
Turned in the midst of his multitude  
At the bright approach of the bridal pair.

Face to face the lovers stood  
A single minute and no more,  
While the bridegroom bent as a man sub-  
dued—

Bowed till his bonnet brushed the floor—  
For the Duke on the lady a kiss conferred,  
As the courtly custom was of yore.

In a minute can lovers exchange a word?  
If a word did pass, which I do not think,  
Only one out of the thousand heard.

That was the bridegroom. At day's brink  
He and his bride were alone at last  
In a bedchamber by a taper's blink.

Calmly he said that her lot was cast,  
That the door she had passed was shut on  
her  
Till the final catafalk<sup>2</sup> repassed.

The world meanwhile, its noise and stir,  
Through a certain window facing the East,  
She could watch like a convent's chronicler.

Since passing the door might lead to a feast,  
And a feast might lead to so much beside,  
He, of many evils, chose the least.

"Freely I choose too," said the bride—  
"Your window and its world suffice,"  
Replied the tongue, while the heart replied—

<sup>2</sup> The stage or scaffolding for a coffin whilst  
in the church.

"If I spend the night with that devil twice,  
 "May his window serve as my loop of hell  
 "Whence a damned soul looks on paradise !

"I fly to the Duke who loves me well,  
 "Sit by his side and laugh at sorrow  
 "Ere I count another ave-bell,

"'Tis only the coat of a page to borrow,  
 "And tie my hair in a horse-boy's trim,  
 "And I save my soul—but not to-morrow"—

(She checked herself and her eye grew dim)  
 "My father tarries to bless my state :  
 "I must keep it one day more for him.

"Is one day more so long to wait ?  
 "Moreover the Duke rides past, I know ;  
 "We shall see each other, sure as fate."

She turned on her side and slept. Just so !  
 So we resolve on a thing and sleep :  
 So did the lady, ages ago.

That night the Duke said, "Dear or cheap  
 "As the cost of this cup of bliss may prove  
 "To body or soul, I will drain it deep."

And on the morrow, bold with love,  
 He beckoned the bridegroom (close on call,  
 As his duty bade, by the Duke's alcove)

And smiled "'Twas a very funeral,  
 "Your lady will think, this feast of ours,—  
 "A shame to efface, whate'er befall !

"What if we break from the Arno bowers,  
 "And try if Petraja, cool and green,  
 "Cure last night's fault with this morning's  
 flowers?"

The bridegroom, not a thought to be seen  
 On his steady brow and quiet mouth,  
 Said, "Too much favour for me so mean !

"But, alas ! my lady leaves the South ;  
 "Each wind that comes from the Apennine  
 "Is a menace to her tender youth :

"Nor a way exists, the wise opine,  
 "If she quits her palace twice this year,  
 "To avert the flower of life's decline."

Quoth the Duke, "A sage and a kindly  
 fear.

"Moreover Petraja is cold this spring :  
 "Be our feast to-night as usual here !"

And then to himself—"Which night shall  
 bring

"Thy bride to her lover's embraces, fool—  
 "Or I am the fool, and thou art the king !

"Yet my passion must wait a night, nor  
 cool—

"For to-night the Envoy arrives from France  
 "Whose heart I unlock with thyself, my  
 tool.

"I need thee still and might miss perchance.  
 "To-day is not wholly lost, beside,  
 "With its hope of my lady's countenance :

"For I ride—what should I do but ride ?  
 "And passing her palace, if I list,  
 "May glance at its window—well betide !"

So said, so done : nor the lady missed  
 One ray that broke from the ardent brow,  
 Nor a curl of the lips where the spirit kissed.

Be sure that each renewed the vow,  
 No morrow's sun should arise and set  
 And leave them then as it left them now.

But next day passed, and next day yet,  
 With still fresh cause to wait one day more  
 Ere each leaped over the parapet.

And still, as love's brief morning wore,  
 With a gentle start, half smile, half sigh,  
 They found love not as it seemed before.

They thought it would work infallibly,  
 But not in despite of heaven and earth :  
 The rose would blow when the storm  
 passed by.

Meantime they could profit in winter's dearth "Let Robbia's craft so apt and strange  
By store of fruits that supplant the rose : "Arrest the remains of young and fair,  
The world and its ways have a certain worth: "And rivet them while the seasons range.

And to press a point while these oppose "Make me a face on the window there,  
Were simple policy ; better wait : "Waiting as ever, mute the while,  
We lose no friends and we gain no foes. "My love to pass below in the square !

Meantime, worse fates than a lover's fate, "And let me think that it may beguile  
Who daily may ride and pass and look "Dreary days which the dead must spend  
Where his lady watches behind the grate ! "Down in their darkness under the aisle,

And she—she watched the square like a book "To say, 'What matters it at the end ?  
Holding one picture and only one, "I did no more while my heart was warm  
Which daily to find she undertook : "'Than does that image, my pale-faced  
friend.'

When the picture was reached the book was "Where is the use of the lip's red charm,  
done, "The heaven of hair, the pride of the brow,  
And she turned from the picture at night to "And the blood that blues the inside arm—  
scheme  
Of tearing it out for herself next sun.

So weeks grew months, years ; gleam by gleam, "Unless we turn, as the soul knows how,  
The glory dropped from their youth and love, "The earthly gift to an end divine ?  
And both perceived they had dreamed a "A lady of clay is as good, I trow."

dream ; But long ere Robbia's cornice, fine,  
Which hovered as dreams do, still above, With flowers and fruits which leaves enlase,  
But who can take a dream for a truth ? Was set where now is the empty shrine—

Oh, hide our eyes from the next remove !

One day as the lady saw her youth (And, leaning out of a bright blue space,  
Depart, and the silver thread that streaked As a ghost might lean from a chink of sky,  
Her hair, and, worn by the serpent's tooth, The passionate pale lady's face—

Eyeing ever, with earnest eye  
Depart, and the silver thread that streaked And quick-turned neck at its breathless stretch,  
Her hair, and, worn by the serpent's tooth, Some one who ever is passing by—)

The brow so puckered, the chin so peaked,—  
And wondered who the woman was,  
Hollow-eyed and haggard-checked,

Fronting her silent in the glass—  
The Duke had sighed like the simplest  
"Summon here," she suddenly said, wretch  
"Before the rest of my old self pass, In Florence, "Youth—my dream escapes !  
fetch  
Will its record stay ?" And he bade them

"Him, the Carver, a hand to aid,  
"Who fashions the clay no love will change,  
"And fixes a beauty never to fade. Some subtle moulder of brazen shapes—  
Can the soul, the will, die out of a man  
"Ere his body find the grave that gapes ?

"John of Douay<sup>1</sup> shall effect my plan,  
 "Set me on horseback here aloft,  
 "Alive, as the crafty sculptor can,

"In the very square I have crossed so oft :  
 "That men may admire, when future suns  
 "Shall touch the eyes to a purpose soft,

"While the mouth and the brow stay brave  
 in bronze—

"Admire and say, 'When he was alive  
 "'How he would take his pleasure once !'

"And it shall go hard but I contrive  
 "To listen the while, and laugh in my tomb  
 "At idleness which aspires to strive."

So ! While these wait the trump of doom,  
 How do their spirits pass, I wonder,  
 Nights and days in the narrow room ?

Still, I suppose, they sit and ponder  
 What a gift life was, ages ago,  
 Six steps out of the chapel yonder.

Only they see not God, I know,  
 Nor all that chivalry of his,  
 The soldier-saints who, row on row,

Burn upward each to his point of bliss—  
 Since, the end of life being manifest,  
 He had burned his way thro' the world to this.

I hear you reproach, "But delay was best,  
 "For their end was a crime."—Oh, a crime  
 will do

As well, I reply, to serve for a test,

As a virtue golden through and through,  
 Sufficient to vindicate itself  
 And prove its worth at a moment's view !

Must a game be played for the sake of pelf ?  
 Where a button goes, 'twere an epigram  
 To offer the stamp of the very Guelph.

<sup>1</sup> Giovanni of Bologna, a sculptor.

The true has no value beyond the sham :  
 As well the counter as coin, I submit,  
 When your table's a hat, and your prize a dram

Stake your counter as boldly every whit,  
 Venture as warily, use the same skill,  
 Do your best, whether winning or losing it,

If you choose to play !—is my principle.  
 Let a man contend to the uttermost  
 For his life's set prize, be it what it will !

The counter our lovers staked was lost  
 As surely as if it were lawful coin :  
 And the sin I impute to each frustrate ghost

Is—the unlit lamp and the ungirt loin,  
 Though the end in sight was a vice, I say  
 You of the virtue (we issue join)  
 How strive you ? *De te, fabula !*

#### PORPHYRIA'S LOVER.

THE rain set early in to-night,  
 The sullen wind was soon awake,  
 It tore the elm-tops down for spite,  
 And did its worst to vex the lake :  
 I listened with heart fit to break.  
 When glided in Porphyria ; straight  
 She shut the cold out and the storm,  
 And kneeled and made the cheerless grate  
 Blaze up, and all the cottage warm ;  
 Which done, she rose, and from her form  
 Withdrew the dripping cloak and shawl,  
 And laid her soiled gloves by, untied  
 Her hat and let the damp hair fall,  
 And, last, she sat down by my side  
 And called me. When no voice replied,  
 She put my arm about her waist,  
 And made her smooth white shoulder bare,  
 And all her yellow hair displaced,  
 And, stooping, made my cheek lie there,  
 And spread, o'er all, her yellow hair,  
 Murmuring how she loved me—she  
 Too weak, for all her heart's endeavour,  
 To set its struggling passion free  
 From pride, and vainer ties dissever,  
 And give herself to me for ever.

But passion sometimes would prevail,  
Nor could to-night's gay feast restrain  
A sudden thought of one so pale  
For love of her, and all in vain :  
So, she was come through wind and rain.  
Be sure I looked up at her eyes  
Happy and proud ; at last I knew  
Porphyria worshipped me ; surprise  
Made my heart swell, and still it grew  
While I debated what to do.  
That moment she was mine, mine, fair,  
Perfectly pure and good : I found  
A thing to do, and all her hair  
In one long yellow string I wound  
Three times her little throat around,  
And strangled her. No pain felt she ;  
I am quite sure she felt no pain.  
As a shut bud that holds a bee,  
I warily oped her lids : again  
Laughed the blue eyes without a stain.  
And I untightened next the tress  
About her neck ; her cheek once more  
Blushed bright beneath my burning kiss :  
I propped her head up as before,  
Only, this time my shoulder bore  
Her head, which droops upon it still :  
The smiling rosy little head,  
So glad it has its utmost will,  
That all it scorned at once is fled,  
And I, its love, am gained instead !  
Porphyria's love : she guessed not how  
Her darling one wish would be heard.  
And thus we sit together now,  
And all night long we have not stirred,  
And yet God has not said a word !

"CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK  
TOWER CAME."

(See *Edgar's song in "LEAR."*)

I.

My first thought was, he lied in every  
word,  
That hoary cripple, with malicious eye  
Askance to watch the working of his lie

On mine, and mouth scarce able to afford  
Suppression of the glee, that pursed and scored  
Its edge, at one more victim gained thereby.

II.

What else should he be set for, with his staff?  
What, save to waylay with his lies, ensnare  
All travellers who might find him posted  
there,  
And ask the road? I guessed what skull-like  
laugh  
Would break, what crutch 'gin write my  
epitaph  
For pastime in the dusty thoroughfare,

III.

If at his counsel I should turn aside  
Into that ominous tract which, all agree,  
Hides the Dark Tower. Yet acquiescingly  
I did turn as he pointed : neither pride  
Nor hope rekindling at the end descried,  
So much as gladness that some end might  
be.

IV.

For, what with my whole world-wide  
wandering,  
What with my search drawn out thro'  
years, my hope  
Dwindled into a ghost not fit to cope  
With that obstreperous joy success would  
bring,  
I hardly tried now to rebuke the spring  
My heart made, finding failure in its scope.

V.

As when a sick man very near to death  
Seems dead indeed, and feels begin and end  
The tears and takes the farewell of each  
friend,  
And hears one bid the other go, draw breath  
Freelier outside, ("since all is o'er," he  
saith,  
"And the blow fallen no grieving can  
amend ;")

VI.

While some discuss if near the other graves  
Be room enough for this, and when a day  
Suits best for carrying the corpse away,



With care about the banners, scarves and staves :

And still the man hears all, and only craves  
He may not shame such tender love and stay.

## VII.

Thus, I had so long suffered in this quest,  
Heard failure prophesied so oft, been writ  
So many times among "The Band"—to wit,  
The knights who to the Dark Tower's search addressed  
Their steps—that just to fail as they, seemed best,  
And all the doubt was now—should I be fit?

## VIII.

So, quiet as despair, I turned from him,  
That hateful cripple, out of his highway  
Into the path he pointed. All the day  
Had been a dreary one at best, and dim  
Was settling to its close, yet shot one grim  
Red leer to see the plain catch its estray.

## IX.

For mark ! no sooner was I fairly found  
Pledged to the plain, after a pace or two,  
Than, pausing to throw backward a last view  
O'er the safe road, 'twas gone ; grey plain all round :  
Nothing but plain to the horizon's bound.  
I might go on ; nought else remained to do.

## X.

So, on I went. I think I never saw  
Such starved ignoble nature ; nothing thrive :  
For flowers—as well expect a cedar grove !  
But cackle, spurge, according to their law  
Might propagate their kind, with none to awe,  
You'd think ; a burr had been a treasure-trove.

## XI.

No ! penury, inertness and grimace,  
In some strange sort, were the land's portion. " See  
"Or shut your eyes," said Nature peevishly,

"It nothing skills : I cannot help my case :  
"'Tis the Last Judgment's fire must cure  
this place,  
"Calcine its clods and set my prisoners free."

## XII.

If there pushed any ragged thistle-stalk  
Above its mates, the head was chopped ;  
the bents  
Were jealous else. What made those holes  
and rents  
In the dock's harsh swarth leaves, bruised as  
to baulk  
All hope of greenness ? 'tis a brute must walk  
Pashing their life out, with a brute's intents.

## XIII.

As for the grass, it grew as scant as hair  
In leprosy ; thin dry blades pricked the mud  
Which underneath looked kneaded up  
with blood.  
One stiff blind horse, his every bone a-stare,  
Stood stupefied, however he came there :  
Thrust out past service from the devil's stud !

## XIV.

Alive ? he might be dead for aught I know,  
With that red gaunt and colloped neck  
a-strain,  
And shut eyes underneath the rusty mane :  
Seldom went such grotesqueness with such  
woe ;  
I never saw a brute I hated so ;  
He must be wicked to deserve such pain.

## XV.

I shut my eyes and turned them on my heart.  
As a man calls for wine before he fights,  
I asked one draught of earlier, happier  
sights,  
Ere fitly I could hope to play my part.  
Think first, fight afterwards—the soldier's art :  
One taste of the old time sets all to rights

## XVI.

Not it ! I fancied Cuthbert's reddening face  
Beneath its garniture of curly gold,  
Dear fellow, till I almost felt him fold

An arm in mine to fix me to the place,  
That way he used. Alas, one night's disgrace!  
Outwent my heart's new fire and left it cold.

XVII.

Giles then, the soul of honour—there he stands  
Frank as ten years ago when knighted first.  
What honest man should dare (he said) he  
durst.

Good—but the scene shifts—faugh! what  
hangman hands

Pin to his breast a parchment? His own bands  
Read it. Poor traitor, spit upon and curst!

XVIII.

Better this present than a past like that;  
Back therefore to my darkening path again!  
No sound, no sight as far as eye could strain.  
Will the night send a howlet or a bat?  
I asked: when something on the dismal flat  
Came to arrest my thoughts and change  
their train.

XIX.

A sudden little river crossed my path  
As unexpected as a serpent comes.  
No sluggish tide congenial to the glooms;  
This, as it frothed by, might have been a  
bath  
For the fiend's glowing hoof—to see the wrath  
Of its black eddy bespate with flakes and  
spumes.

XX.

So petty yet so spiteful! All along,  
Low scrubby alders kneeled down over it;  
Drenched willows flung them headlong in  
a fit  
Of mute despair, a suicidal throng:  
The river which had done them all the wrong,  
Whate'er that was, rolled by, deterred no  
whit.

XXI.

Which, while I forded,—good saints, how I  
feared  
To set my foot upon a dead man's cheek,  
Each step, or feel the spear I thrust to seek  
For hollows, tangled in his hair or beard!  
—It may have been a water-rat I speared,  
But, ugh! it sounded like a baby's shriek.

XXII.

Glad was I when I reached the other bank.  
Now for a better country. Vain presage!  
Who were the strugglers, what war did  
they wage,  
Whose savage trample thus could pad the dank  
Soil to a plash? Toads in a poisoned tank,  
Or wild cats in a red-hot iron cage—

XXIII.

The fight must so have seemed in that fell  
cirque.  
What penned them there, with all the plain  
to choose?  
No foot-print leading to that horrid mews,  
None out of it. Mad brewage set to work  
Their brains, no doubt, like galley-slaves the  
Turk  
Pits for his pastime, Christians against Jews.

XXIV.

And more than that—a furlong on—why,  
there!  
What bad use was that engine for, that wheel,  
Or brake, not wheel—that harrow fit to reel  
Men's bodies out like silk? with all the air  
Of Tophet's tool, on earth left unaware,  
Or brought to sharpen its rusty teeth of steel.

XXV.

Then came a bit of stubbed ground, once a  
wood,  
Next a marsh, it would seem, and now mere  
earth  
Desperate and done with; (so a fool finds  
mirth,  
Makes a thing and then mars it, till his mood  
Changes and off he goes!) within a rood—  
Bog, clay and rubble, sand and stark black  
dearth.

XXVI.

Now blotches rankling, coloured gay and grim,  
Now patches where some leanness of the  
soil's  
Broke into moss or substances like boils;  
Then came some palsied oak, a cleft in him  
Like a distorted mouth that splits its rim  
Gaping at death, and dies while it recoils.

## XXVII.

And just as far as ever from the end !  
 Nought in the distance but the evening,  
 nought  
 To point my footstep further ! At the  
 thought,  
 A great black bird, Apollyon's bosom-friend,  
 Sailed past, nor beat his wide wing dragon-  
 penned  
 That brushed my cap—perchance the guide  
 I sought.

## XXVIII.

For, looking up, aware I somehow grew,  
 'Spite of the dusk, the plain had given place  
 All round to mountains—with such name  
 to grace  
 Mere ugly heights and heaps now stolen in view.  
 How thus they had surprised me,—solve it,  
 you !  
 How to get from them was no clearer case.

## XXIX.

Yet half I seemed to recognize some trick  
 Of mischief happened to me, God knows  
 when—  
 In a bad dream perhaps. Here ended, then,  
 Progress this way. When, in the very nick  
 Of giving up, one time more, came a click  
 As when a trap shuts—you're inside the  
 den !

## XXX.

Burningly it came on me all at once,  
 This was the place ! those two hills on the  
 right,  
 Crouched like two bulls locked horn in  
 horn in fight ;  
 While to the left, a tall scalped mountain . . .  
 Dunce,  
 Dotard, a-doing at the very nonce,  
 After a life spent training for the sight !

## XXXI.

What in the midst lay but the Tower itself ?  
 The round squat turret, blind as the fool's  
 heart,  
 Built of brown stone, without a counter-  
 part  
 In the whole world. The tempest's mock-  
 ing elf  
 Points to the shipman thus the unseen shelf  
 He strikes on, only when the timbers start.

## XXXII.

Not see ? because of night perhaps ?—why,  
 day  
 Came back again for that ! before it left,  
 The dying sunset kindled through a  
 cleft :  
 The hills, like giants at a hunting, lay,  
 Chin upon hand, to see the game at bay,—  
 "Now stab and end the creature—to the  
 heft !"

## XXXIII.

Not hear ? when noise was everywhere ! it  
 tolled  
 Increasing like a bell. Names in my ears  
 Of all the lost adventurers my peers,—  
 How such a one was strong, and such was  
 bold,  
 And such was fortunate, yet each of old  
 Lost, lost ! one moment knelled the woe of  
 years.

## XXXIV.

There they stood, ranged along the hill-sides,  
 met  
 To view the last of me, a living frame  
 For one more picture ! in a sheet of flame  
 I saw them and I knew them all. And yet  
 Dauntless the slug-horn to my lips I set,  
 And blew. "*Childe Roland to the Dark  
 Tower came.*"

# LURIA;

## A TRAGEDY.

1846.

I DEDICATE THIS LAST ATTEMPT FOR THE PRESENT AT DRAMATIC POETRY  
TO A GREAT DRAMATIC POET;

"WISHING WHAT I WRITE MAY BE READ BY HIS LIGHT:"

IF A PHRASE ORIGINALLY ADDRESSED,

BY NOT THE LEAST WORTHY OF HIS CONTEMPORARIES,

TO SHAKESPEARE,

MAY BE APPLIED HERE, BY ONE WHOSE SOLE PRIVILEGE IS IN  
A GRATEFUL ADMIRATION,

TO WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR

LONDON: 1846.

LURIA.

PERSONS.

LURIA, *a Moor, Commander of the Florentine Forces.*

HUSAIN, *a Moor, his friend.*

PUCCIO, *the old Florentine Commander, now LURIA's chief officer.*

BRACCIO, *Commissary of the Republic of Florence.*

JACOPO (LAPO), *his secretary.*

TIBURZIO, *Commander of the Pisans.*

DOMIZIA, *a noble Florentine lady.*

SCENE.—LURIA'S Camp between  
Florence and Pisa.

TIME, 14—.

ACT I.

MORNING.

BRACCIO, *as dictating to his Secretary;*  
PUCCIO *standing by.*

*Braccio [to PUCCIO].* Then, you join battle  
in an hour?

*Puccio.*

Luria, the captain.

*Braccio [to the Secretary].* "In an hour, the battle."

*[To PUCCIO.]* Sir, let your eye run o'er this loose digest,

And see if very much of your report  
Have slipped away through my civilian phrase.  
Does this instruct the Signory aright  
How army stands with army?

*Puccio [taking the paper].* All seems here:  
—That Luria, seizing with our city's force  
The several points of vantage, hill and plain,

Shuts Pisa safe from help on every side,  
And, baffling the Lucchese arrived too late,  
Must, in the battle he delivers now,  
Beat her best troops and first of chiefs.

*Braccio.* So sure?

Tiburzio's a consummate captain too!

*Puccio.* Luria holds Pisa's fortune in his hand.

*Braccio [to the Secretary].* "The Signory hold Pisa in their hand."

Your own proved soldiership's our warrant,  
sir:

So, while my secretary ends his task,  
Have out two horsemen, by the open roads,  
To post with it to Florence!

*Puccio* [returning the paper]. All seems here ;

Unless . . . Ser Braccio, 'tis my last report !  
Since Pisa's outbreak, and my overthrow,  
And Luria's hastening at the city's call  
To save her, as he only could, no doubt ;  
Till now that she is saved or sure to be,—  
Whatever you tell Florence, I tell you :  
Each day's note you, her Commissary, make  
Of Luria's movements, I myself supply.  
No youngster am I longer, to my cost ;  
Therefore while Florence gloried in her choice  
And vaunted Luria, whom but Luria, still,  
As if zeal, courage, prudence, conduct, faith,  
Had never met in any man before,  
I saw no pressing need to swell the cry.  
But now, this last report and I have done :  
So, ere to-night comes with its roar of praise,  
'Twere not amiss if some one old i' the trade  
Subscribed with, " True, for once rash  
counsel's best.

" This Moor of the bad faith and doubtful race,  
" This boy to whose untried sagacity,  
" Raw valour, Florence trusts without reserve  
" The charge to save her,—justifies her choice ;  
" In no point has this stranger failed his friends.  
" Now praise ! " I say this, and it is not here.

*Braccio* [to the Secretary]. Write, " Puccio,  
superceded in the charge,  
" By Luria, bears full witness to his worth,  
" And no reward our Signory can give  
" Their champion but he'll back it cheerfully."  
Aught more? Five minutes hence, both  
messengers ! [PUCCIO goes.

*Braccio* [after a pause, and while he slowly  
tears the paper into shreds]. I think . . .  
(pray God, I hold in fit contempt  
This warfare's noble art and ordering,  
And,—once the brace of prizes fairly matched,  
Polcaxe with polcaxe, knife with knife as  
good,—

Spit properly at what men term their skill !—)  
Yet here I think our fighter has the odds.  
With Pisa's strength diminished thus and thus,  
Such points of vantage in our hands and such,  
Lucca still off the stage, too,—all's assured :  
Luria must win this battle. Write the Court,  
That Luria's trial end and sentence pass !

*Secretary*. Patron,—

*Braccio*. Ay, Lapo?

*Secretary*. If you trip, I fall ;  
'Tis in self-interest I speak—

*Braccio*. Nay, nay,  
You overshoot the mark, my Lapo ! Nay !  
When did I say pure love's impossible ?  
I make you daily write those red cheeks thin,  
Load your young brow with what concerns  
it least,

And, when we visit Florence, let you pace  
The Piazza by my side as if we talked,  
Where all your old acquaintances may see :  
You'd die for me, I should not be surprised.  
Now then !

*Secretary*. Sir, look about and love yourself !  
Step after step, the Signory and you  
Tread gay till this tremendous point's to pass ;  
Which pass not, pass not, ere you ask your-  
self,—

Bears the brain steadily such draughts of fire,  
Or too delicious may not prove the pride  
Of this long secret trial you dared plan,  
Dare execute, you solitary here,  
With the grey-headed toothless fools at home,  
Who think themselves your lords, such slaves  
are they ?

If they pronounce this sentence as you bid,  
Declare the treason, claim its penalty,—  
And sudden out of all the blaze of life,  
On the best minute of his brightest day,  
From that adoring army at his back,  
Thro' Florence' joyous crowds before his face,  
Into the dark you beckon Luria . . .

*Braccio*. Then—  
Why, Lapo, when the fighting-people vaunt,  
We of the other craft and mystery,  
May we not smile demure, the danger past ?

*Secretary*. Sir, no, no, no,—the danger,  
and your spirit  
At watch and ward? Where's danger on  
your part,  
With that thin flitting instantaneous steel  
'Gainst the blind bull-front of a brute-for-  
world?

If Luria, that's to perish sure as fate,  
Should have been really guiltless after all ?

*Braccio*. Ah, you have thought that ?

*Secretary.* Here I sit, your scribe,  
And in and out goes Luria, days and nights;  
This Puccio comes; the Moor his other friend,  
Husain; they talk—that's all feigned easily;  
He speaks (I would not listen if I could),  
Reads, orders, counsels:—but he rests some-  
times,—

I see him stand and eat, sleep stretched an hour  
On the lynx-skins yonder; hold his bared  
black arms

Into the sun from the tent-opening; laugh  
When his horse drops the forage from his teeth  
And neighs to hear him hum his Moorish songs.  
That man believes in Florence, as the saint  
Tied to the wheel believes in God.

*Braccio.* How strange!  
You too have thought that!

*Secretary.* Do but you think too,  
And all is saved! I only have to write,  
"The man seemed false awhile, proves true  
at last,

"Bury it"—so I write the Signory—  
"Bury this trial in your breast for ever,  
"Blot it from things or done or dreamed about!  
"So Luria shall receive his meed to-day  
"With no suspicion what reverse was near,—  
"As if no meteoric finger hushed  
"The doom-word just on the destroyer's lip,  
"Motioned him off, and let life's sun fall  
straight."

*Braccio* [*looks to the wall of the tent*]. Did  
he draw that?

*Secretary.* With charcoal, when the watch  
Made the report at midnight; Lady Domizia  
Spoke of the unfinished Duomo, you re-  
member;  
That is his fancy how a Moorish front  
Might join to, and complete, the body,—a  
sketch,—  
And again where the cloak hangs, yonder in  
the shadow.

*Braccio.* He loves that woman.

*Secretary.* She is sent the spy  
Of Florence,—spies on you as you on him:  
Florence, if only for Domizia's sake,  
Is surely safe. What shall I write?

*Braccio.* I see—  
A Moorish front, nor of such ill design!

Lapo, there's one thing plain and positive;  
Man seeks his own good at the whole world's  
cost.

What? If to lead our troops, stand forth our  
chiefs,

And hold our fate, and see us at their beck,  
Yet render up the charge when peace return,  
I have ever proved too much for Florentines,  
Even for the best and bravest of ourselves—  
If in the struggle when the soldier's sword  
Should sink its point before the statish's pen,  
And the calm head replace the violent hand,  
Virtue on virtue still have fallen away  
Before ambition with unvarying fate,  
Till Florence' self at last in bitterness

Be forced to own such falls the natural end,  
And, sparing further to expose her sons  
To a vain strife and profitless disgrace,  
Declare, "The foreigner, one not my child,  
"Shall henceforth lead my troops, reach  
height by height

"The glory, then descend into the shame;  
"So shall rebellion be less guilt in him,  
"And punishment the easier task for me:"  
—If on the best of us such brand she set,  
Can I suppose an utter alien here,  
This Luria, our inevitable foe,  
Confessed a mercenary and a Moor,  
Born free from many ties that bind the rest  
Of common faith in Heaven or hope on earth,  
No past with us, no future,—such a spirit  
Shall hold the path from which our staunchest  
broke,

Stand firm where every famed precursor fell?  
My Lapo, I will frankly say, these proofs  
So duly noted of the man's intent,  
Are for the doting fools at home, not me.  
The charges here, they may be true or false:  
—What is set down? Errors and oversights,  
A dallying interchange of courtesies  
With Pisa's General,—all that, hour by hour,  
Puccio's pale discontent has furnished us,  
Of petulant speeches, inconsiderate acts,  
Now overhazard, overcaution now;  
Even that he loves this lady who believes  
She outwits Florence, and whom Florence  
posted

By my procurement here, to spy on me,

Lest I one minute lose her from my sight—  
She who remembering her whole House's  
fall,

That nest of traitors strangled in the birth,  
Now labours to make Luria (poor device  
As plain) the instrument of her revenge  
—That she is ever at his ear to prompt  
Inordinate conceptions of his worth,  
Exorbitant belief in worth's reward,  
And after, when sure disappointment follows,  
Proportionable rage at such a wrong—  
Why, all these reasons, while I urge them  
most,  
Weigh with me less than least—as nothing  
weigh.

Upon that broad man's-heart of his, I go :  
On what I know must be, yet, while I live,  
Shall never be, because I live and know.  
Brute-force shall not rule Florence ! Intellect  
May rule her, bad or good as chance supplies :  
But intellect it shall be, pure if bad,  
And intellect's tradition so kept up.  
Till the good come—'twas intellect that ruled,  
Not brute-force bringing from the battle-field  
The attributes of wisdom, foresight's graces  
We lent it there to lure its grossness on ;  
All which it took for earnest and kept safe  
To show against us in our market-place,  
Just as the plumes and tags and swordsman's-  
gear

(Fetched from the camp where, at their  
foolish best,

When all was done they frightened nobody)  
Perk in our faces in the street, forsooth,  
With our own warrant and allowance. No !  
The whole procedure's overcharged,—its end  
In too strict keeping with the bad first step.  
To conquer Pisa was sheer inspiration ?  
Well then, to perish for a single fault,  
Let that be simple justice ! There, my  
Lapo !

A Moorish front ill suits our Duomo's body :  
Blot it out—and bid Luria's sentence come !

[LURIA, who, with DOMIZIA, has  
entered unobserved at the close of  
the last phrase, now advances.

Luria. And Luria, Luria, what of Luria  
now ?

Braccio. Ah, you so close, sir ? Lady  
Domizia too ?

I said it needs must be a busy moment  
For one like you : that you were now i' the  
thick  
Of your duties, doubtless, while we idlers  
sat . . .

Luria. No—in that paper,—it was in that  
paper

What you were saying !

Braccio. Oh—my day's despatch !

I censure you to Florence : will you see ?

Luria. See your despatch, your last, for  
the first time ?

Well, if I should, now ? For in truth,  
Domizia,

He would be forced to set about another,  
In his sly cool way, the true Florentine,  
To mention that important circumstance.  
So, while he wrote I should gain time, such  
time !

Do not send this !

Braccio. And wherefore ?

Luria. These Lucchese

Are not arrived—they never will arrive !  
And I must fight to-day, arrived or not,  
And I shall beat Tiburzio, that is sure :  
And then will be arriving his Lucchese,  
But slowly, oh so slowly, just in time  
To look upon my battle from the hills,  
Like a late moon, of use to nobody !  
And I must break my battle up, send forth,  
Surround on this side, hold in check on that.  
Then comes to-morrow, we negotiate,  
You make me send for fresh instructions home,  
—Incompleteness, incompleteness !

Braccio. Ah, we scribes !

Why, I had registered that very point,  
The non-appearance of our foes' ally,  
As a most happy fortune ; both at once  
Were formidable : singly faced, each falls.

Luria. So, no great battle for my Floren-  
tines !

No crowning deed, decisive and complete,  
For all of them, the simple as the wise,  
Old, young, alike, that do not understand  
Our wearisome pedantic art of war,  
By which we prove retreat may be success,

Delay—best speed,—half loss, at times,—  
whole gain :

They want results : as if it were their fault !  
And you, with warmest wish to be my friend,  
Will not be able now to simply say  
"Your servant has performed his task—  
enough !

"You ordered, he has executed : good !  
"Now walk the streets in holiday attire,  
"Congratulate your friends, till noon strikes  
fierce,

"Then form bright groups beneath the  
Duomo's shade !"

No, you will have to argue and explain,  
Persuade them, all is not so ill in the end,  
Tease, tire them out ! Arrive, arrive,  
Lucchese !

*Domizia.* Well, you will triumph for the  
past enough,  
Whatever be the present chance ; no service  
Falls to the ground with Florence : she awaits  
Her saviour, will receive him fittingly.

*Luria.* Ah Braccio, you know Florence !  
Will she, think you,  
Receive one . . . what means "fittingly  
receive" ?

—Receive compatriots, doubtless—I am none :  
And yet Domizia promises so much !

*Braccio.* Kind women still give men a  
woman's prize.  
I know not o'er which gate most boughs will  
arch,

Nor if the Square will wave red flags or blue.  
I should have judged, the fullest of rewards  
Our state gave Luria, when she made him  
chief

Of her whole force, in her best captain's place,  
*Luria.* That, my reward ? Florence on  
my account

Relieved Ser Puccio?—mark you, my reward !  
And Puccio's having all the fight's true joy—  
Goes here and there, gets close, may fight,  
himself,

While I must order, stand aloof, o'ersee.  
That was my calling, there was my true place !  
I should have felt, in some one over me,  
Florence impersonate, my visible head,  
As I am over Puccio,—taking life

Directly from her eye ! They give me you :  
But do you cross me, set me half to work ?  
I enjoy nothing—though I will, for once !  
Decide, shall we join battle ? may I wait ?

*Braccio.* Let us compound the matter ;  
wait till noon :

Then, no arrival,—  
*Luria.* Ah, noon comes too fast !

I wonder, do you guess why I delay  
Involuntarily the final blow  
As long as possible ? Peace follows it !  
Florence at peace, and the calm studious heads  
Come out again, the penetrating eyes ;  
As if a spell broke, all's resumed, each art  
You boast, more vivid that it slept awhile.  
'Gainst the glad heaven, o'er the white  
palace-front

The interrupted scaffold climbs anew ;  
The walls are peopled by the painter's brush ;  
The statue to its niche ascends to dwell.  
The present noise and trouble have retired  
And left the eternal past to rule once more ;  
You speak its speech and read its records  
plain,  
Greece lives with you, each Roman breathes  
your friend :

But Luria—where will then be Luria's place ?  
*Domizia.* Highest in honour, for that past's  
own sake,  
Of which his actions, sealing up the sum  
By saving all that went before from wreck,  
Will range as part, with which be worshipped  
too.

*Luria.* Then I may walk and watch you  
in your streets,  
Lead the smooth life my rough life helps no  
more,

So different, so new, so beautiful—  
Nor fear that you will tire to see parade  
The club that slew the lion, now that crooks  
And shepherd-pipes come into use again ?  
For very lone and silent seems my East  
In its drear vastness : still it spreads, and still  
No Braccios, no Domizias anywhere—  
Not ever more ! Well, well, to-day is ours !

*Domizia* [to BRACCIO]. Should he not  
have been one of us ?

*Luria.* Oh, no !



Not one of you, and so escape the thrill  
Of coming into you, of changing thus,—  
Feeling a soul grow on me that restricts  
The boundless unrest of the savage heart !  
The sea heaves up, hangs loaded o'er the land,  
Breaks there and buries its tumultuous  
strength ;

Horror, and silence, and a pause awhile :  
Lo, inland glides the gulf-stream, miles away,  
In rapture of assent, subdued and still,  
'Neath those strange banks, those unimagined  
skies.

Well, 'tis not sure the quiet lasts for ever !  
Your placid heads still find rough hands new  
work ;  
Some minute's chance—there comes the need  
of mine :

And, all resolved on, I too hear at last.  
Oh, you must find some use for me, Ser  
Braccio !

You hold my strength ; 'twere best dispose of it :  
What you created, see that you find food for—  
I shall be dangerous else !

*Braccio.* How dangerous, sir ?

*Luria.* There are so many ways, Domizia  
warns me,

And one with half the power that I possess,  
—Grows very formidable. Do you doubt ?  
Why, first, who holds the army . . .

*Domizia.* While we talk,  
Morn wears ; we keep you from your proper  
place,  
The field.

*Luria.* Nay, to the field I move no more ;  
My part is done, and Puccio's may begin :  
I cannot trench upon his province longer  
With any face.—You think yourselves so safe ?  
Why, see—in concert with Tiburzio, now—  
One could . . .

*Domizia.* A trumpet !

*Luria.* My Lucchese at last !  
Arrived, as sure as Florence stands ! Your  
leave ! [*Springs out.*]

*Domizia.* How plainly is true greatness  
charactered

By such unconscious sport as Luria's here,  
Strength sharing least the secret of itself !  
Be it with head that schemes or hand that acts,

Such save the world which none but they  
could save,  
Yet think what'er they did, that world  
could do.

*Braccio.* Yes : and how worthy note, that  
these same great ones

In hand or head, with such unconsciousness  
And all its due entailed humility,  
Should never shrink, so far as I perceive,  
From taking up whatever tool there be  
Effects the whole world's safety or mishap,  
Into their mild hands as a thing of course !  
The statist finds it natural to lead  
The mob who might as easily lead him—  
The captain marshals troops born skilled in  
war—

Statist and captain verily believe !  
While we poor scribes . . . you catch me  
thinking now,

That I shall in this very letter write  
What none of you are able ! To it, Lapo !

[DOMIZIA goes.]

This last worst all-affected childish fit  
Of Luria's, this be-praised unconsciousness,  
Convinces me ; the past was no child's play :  
It was a man beat Pisa,—not a child.

All's mere dissimulation<sup>h</sup> to remove  
The fear, he best knows we should enter-  
tain.

The utmost danger was at hand. Is't written?  
Now make a duplicate, lest this should fail,  
And speak your fullest on the other side.

*Secretary.* I noticed he was busily repairing  
My half-effacement of his Duomo sketch,  
And, while he spoke of Florence, turned to it,  
As the Mage Negro king to Christ the babe.  
I judge his childishness the mere relapse  
To boyhood of a man who has worked lately,  
And presently will work, so, meantime,  
plays :

Whence, more than ever I believe in him.

*Braccio* [*after a pause*]. The sword ! At  
best, the soldier, as he says,  
In Florence—the black face, the barbarous  
name,

For Italy to boast her show of the age,  
Her man of men ! To Florence with each  
letter !

## ACT II.

## NOON.

*Domizia.* Well, Florence, shall I reach thee, pierce thy heart Thro' all its safeguards? Hate is said to help—

Quicken the eye, invigorate the arm ;  
And this my hate, made up of many hates,  
Might stand in scorn of visible instrument,  
And will thee dead : yet do I trust it not.  
Nor man's devices nor Heaven's memory  
Of wickedness forgot on earth so soon,  
But thy own nature,—hell and thee I trust,  
To keep thee constant in that wickedness,  
Where my revenge may meet thee. Turn  
aside

A single step, for gratitude or shame,—  
Grace but this Luria,—this wild mass of rage  
I have prepared to launch against thee now,—  
With other payment than thy noblest found,—  
Give his desert for once its due reward,—  
And past thee would my sure destruction roll.  
But thou, who mad'st our House thy sacrifice,  
It cannot be thou wilt except this Moor  
From the accustomed fate of zeal and truth :  
Thou wilt deny his looked-for recompense,  
And then—I reach thee. Old and trained,  
my sire

Could bow down on his quiet broken heart,  
Die awe-struck and submissive, when at last  
The strange blow came for the expected  
wreath ;

And Porzio passed in blind bewilderment  
To exile, never to return,—they say,  
Perplexed in his frank simple honest soul,  
As if some natural law had changed,—how  
else

Could Florence, on plain fact pronouncing  
thus,

Judge Porzio's actions worthy such reward ?  
But Berto, with the ever-passionate pulse,  
—Oh that long night, its dreadful hour on  
hour,

In which no way of getting his fair fame  
From their inexplicable charges free,

Was found, save pouring forth the impatient  
blood

To show its colour whether false or no !  
My brothers never had a friend like me  
Close in their need to watch the time, then  
speak,

—Burst with a wakening laughter on their  
dream,

Cry, " Florence was all falseness, so, false  
here ! "

And show them what a simple task re-  
mained—

To leave dreams, rise, and punish in God's  
name

The city wedded to the wickedness.  
None stood by them as I by Luria stand.

So, when the stranger cheated of his due  
Turns on thee as his rapid nature bids,  
Then, Florence, think, a hireling at thy  
throat

For the first outrage, think who bore thy last,  
Yet mutely in forlorn obedience died !

He comes—his friend—black faces in the  
camp

Where moved those peerless brows and eyes  
of old.

*Enter LURIA and HUSAIN.*

*Domizia.* Well, and the movement—is it  
as you hope ?

'Tis Lucca ?  
*Luria.* Ah, the Pisan trumpet merely !  
Tiburzio's envoy, I must needs receive.

*Domizia.* Whom I withdraw before ; tho'  
if I lingered

You could not wonder, for my time fleets fast.  
The overtaking night brings such reward !  
And where will then be room for me ? Yet,  
praised,

Remember who was first to promise praise,  
And envy those who also can perform !

[*Goes.*

*Luria.* This trumpet from the Pisans ?—  
*Husan.* In the camp ;

A very noble presence—Braccio's visage  
On Puccio's body—calm and fixed and good ;  
A man I seem as I had seen before :  
Most like, it was some statue had the face.

*Luria.* Admit him ! This will prove the last delay.

*Husain.* Ay, friend, go on, and die thou going on !

Thou heardest what the grave woman said but now :

To-night rewards thee. That is well to hear ; But stop not therefore : hear it, and go on !

*Luria.* Oh, their reward and triumph and the rest

They round me in the ears with, all day long ? All that, I never take for earnest, friend ! Well would it suit us,—their triumphal arch Or storied pillar,—thee and me, the Moors ! But gratitude in those Italian eyes— That, we shall get ?

*Husain.* It is too cold an air. Our sun rose out of yonder mound of mist : Where is he now ? So, I trust none of them.

*Luria.* Truly ?

*Husain.* I doubt and fear. There stands a wall

'Twixt our expansive and explosive race And those absorbing, concentrating men. They use thee.

*Luria.* And I feel it, Husain ! yes, And care not—yes, an alien force like mine Is only called to play its part outside Their different nature ; where its sole use seems

To fight with and keep off an adverse force, As alien,—which repelled, mine too withdraws :

Inside, they know not what to do with me. Thus I have told them laughingly and oft, But long since am prepared to learn the worst.

*Husain.* What is the worst ?

*Luria.* I will forestall them, Husain, Will speak the destiny they dare not speak— Banish myself before they find the heart.

I will be first to say, "The work rewards !

"I know, for all your praise, my use is over,

"So may it prove !—meanwhile 'tis best I go,

"Go carry safe my memories of you all

"To other scenes of action, newer lands !—

Thus leaving them confirmed in their belief

They would not easily have tired of me.

You think this hard to say ?

*Husain.*

Say or not say,

So thou but go, so they but let thee go !

This hating people, that hate each the other, And in one blandness to us Moors unite—

Locked each to each like slippery snakes, I say,

Which still in all their tangles, hissing tongue And threatening tail, ne'er do each other harm ;

While any creature of a better blood,

They seem to fight for, while they circle safe And never touch it,—pines without a wound, Withers away beside their eyes and breath.

See thou, if Puccio come not safely out Of Braccio's grasp, this Braccio sworn his foe, As Braccio safely from Domizia's toils

Who hates him most ! But thou, the friend of all,

. . . Come out of them !

*Luria.* The Pisan trumpet now !

*Husain.* Breathe free—it is an enemy, no friend !

[*Goes.*]

*Luria.* He keeps his instincts, no new culture mars

Their perfect use in him ; just so the brutes Rest not, are anxious without visible cause, When change is in the elements at work, Which man's trained senses fail to apprehend. But here,—he takes the distant chariot wheel For thunder, festal flame for lightning's flash, The finer traits of cultivated life For treachery and malevolence : I see !

#### Enter TIBURZIO.

*Luria.* Quick, sir, your message ! I but wait your message

To sound the charge. You bring no overture For truce ? I would not, for your General's sake,

You spoke of truce : a time to fight is come, And, whatso'er the fight's event, he keeps His honest soldier's-name to beat me with, Or leaves me all himself to beat, I trust !

*Tiburzio.* I am Tiburzio.

*Luria.* You ? 'Tis—yes

. . . Tiburzio !

You were the last to keep the ford i' the valley From Puccio, when I threw in succours there

Why, I was on the heights—through the defile  
Ten minutes after, when the prey was lost !  
You wore an open skull-cap with a twist  
Of water-reeds—the plume being hewn away ;  
While I drove down my battle from the  
heights,  
I saw with my own eyes !

*Tiburzio.* And you are Luria  
Who sent my cohort, that laid down its arms  
In error of the battle-signal's sense,  
Back safely to me at the critical time—  
One of a hundred deeds. I know you.

Therefore  
To none but you could I . . .

*Luria.* No truce, Tiburzio !

*Tiburzio.* Luria, you know the peril  
imminent

On Pisa,—that you have us in the toils,  
Us her last safeguard, all that intercepts  
The rage of her implacablest of foes  
From Pisa : if we fall to-day, she falls.  
Tho' Lucca will arrive, yet, 'tis too late.  
You have so plainly here the best of it,  
That you must feel, brave soldier as you  
are,

How dangerous we grow in this extreme,  
How truly formidable by despair.  
Still, probabilities should have their weight :  
The extreme chance is ours, but, that chance  
failing,

You win this battle. Wherefore say I this ?  
To be well apprehended when I add,  
This danger absolutely comes from you.  
Were you, who threaten thus, a Floren-  
tine . . .

*Luria.* Sir, I am nearer Florence than her  
sons.

I can, and have perhaps obliged the State,  
Nor paid a mere son's duty.

*Tiburzio.* Even so.  
Were you the son of Florence, yet endured  
With all your present nobleness of soul,  
No question, what I must communicate  
Would not detach you from her.

*Luria.* Me, detach ?

*Tiburzio.* Time urges. You will ruin  
presently  
Pisa, you never knew, for Florence' sake

You think you know. I have from time to  
time

Made prize of certain secret missives sent  
From Braccio here, the Commissary, home :  
And knowing Florence otherwise, I piece  
The entire chain out, from these its scattered  
links.

Your trial occupies the Signory ;  
They sit in judgment on your conduct now.  
When men at home inquire into the acts  
Which in the field e'en foes appreciate . . .  
Brief, they are Florentines ! You, saving  
them,

Seek but the sure destruction saviours find.

*Luria.* Tiburzio !

*Tiburzio.* All the wonder is of course.  
I am not here to teach you, nor direct,  
Only to loyally apprise—scarce that.  
This is the latest letter, sealed and safe,  
As it left here an hour ago. One way  
Of two thought free to Florence, I command.  
The duplicate is on its road ; but this,—  
Read it, and then I shall have more to say.

*Luria.* Florence !

*Tiburzio.* Now, were yourself a  
Florentine,

This letter, let it hold the worst it can,  
Would be no reason you should fall away.  
The mother city is the mother still,  
And recognition of the children's service  
Her own affair ; reward—there's no reward !  
But you are bound by quite another tie.  
Nor nature shows, nor reason, why at first  
A foreigner, born friend to all alike,  
Should give himself to any special State  
More than another, stand by Florence' side  
Rather than Pisa ; 'tis as fair a city  
You war against as that you fight for—famed  
As well as she in story, graced no less  
With noble heads and patriotic hearts :  
Nor to a stranger's eye would either cause,  
Stripped of the cumulative loves and hates  
Which take importance from familiar view,  
Stand as the right and sole to be upheld.  
Therefore, should the preponderating gift  
Of love and trust, Florence was first to throw,  
Which made you hers, not Pisa's, void the  
scale,—

Old ties dissolving, things resume their place  
And all begins again. Break seal and read !  
At least let Pisa offer for you now !  
And I, as a good Pisan, shall rejoice—  
Though for myself I lose, in gaining you,  
This last fight and its opportunity ;  
The chance it brings of saving Pisa yet,  
Or in the turn of battle dying so  
That shame should want its extreme bitter-  
ness.

*Luria.* Tiburzio, you that fight for Pisa now  
As I for Florence . . . say my chance were  
yours !

You read this letter, and you find . . . no,  
no !

Too mad !

*Tiburzio.* I read the letter, find they pur-  
pose

When I have crushed their foe, to crush me :  
well ?

*Luria.* You, being their captain, what is  
it you do ?

*Tiburzio.* Why, as it is, all cities are alike ;  
As Florence pays you, Pisa will pay me.  
I shall be as belied, whate'er the event,  
As you, or more : my weak head, they will say,  
Prompted this last expedient, my faint heart  
Entailed on them indelible disgrace,  
Both which defects ask proper punishment.  
Another tenure of obedience, mine !  
You are no son of Pisa's : break and read !

*Luria.* And act on what I read ? What  
act were fit ?

If the firm-fixed foundation of my faith  
In Florence, who to me stands for mankind,  
—If that break up and, disimprisoning  
From the abyss . . . Ah friend, it cannot be !  
You may be very sage, yet—all the world  
Having to fail, or your sagacity,  
You do not wish to find yourself alone !  
What would the world be worth ? Whose  
love be sure ?

The world remains : you are deceived !

*Tiburzio.* Your hand !  
I lead the vanguard. —If you fall, beside,  
The better : I am left to speak ! For me,  
This was my duty, nor would I rejoice  
If I could help, it misses its effect ;

And after all you will look gallantly  
Found dead here with that letter in your  
breast.

*Luria.* Tiburzio—I would see these people  
once

And test them ere I answer finally !  
At your arrival let the trumpet sound :  
If mine return not then the wonted cry  
It means that I believe—am Pisa's !

*Tiburzio.*

Well !

[*Goes.*

*Luria.* My heart will have it he speaks  
true ! My blood

Beats close to this Tiburzio as a friend.  
If he had stept into my watch-tent, night  
And the wild desert full of foes around,  
I should have broke the bread and given the  
salt

Secure, and, when my hour of watch was done,  
Taken my turn to sleep between his knees,  
Safe in the untroubled brow and honest cheek.  
Oh world, where all things pass and nought  
abides,

Oh life, the long mutation—is it so ?  
Is it with life as with the body's change ?  
—Where, e'en tho' better follow, good must  
pass,

Nor manhood's strength can mate with boy-  
hood's grace,  
Nor age's wisdom, in its turn, find strength,  
But silently the first gift dies away,  
And though the new stays, never both at once.  
Life's time of savage instinct o'er with me,  
It fades and dies away, past trusting more,  
As if to punish the ingratitude  
With which I turned to grow in these new  
lights,

And learned to look with European eyes.  
Yet it is better, this cold certain way,  
Where Braccio's brow tells nothing, Puccio's  
mouth,

Domizia's eyes reject the searcher : yes !  
For on their calm sagacity I lean,  
Their sense of right, deliberate choice of good,  
Sure, as they know my deeds, they deal with me.  
Yes, that is better—that is best of all !  
Such faith stays when mere wild belief would  
go.

Yes—when the desert creature's heart, at fault

Amid the scattering tempest's pillared sands,  
Betrays its step into the pathless drift—

The calm instructed eye of man holds fast  
By the sole bearing of the visible star,  
Sure that when slow the whirling wreck sub-  
side,

The boundaries, lost now, shall be found  
again,—

The palm-trees and the pyramid over all.

Yes: I trust Florence: Pisa is deceived.

*Enter BRACCIO, PUCCIO, and DOMIZIA.*

*Braccio.* Noon's at an end: no Lucca?

You must fight.

*Luria.* Do you remember ever, gentle  
friends,

I am no Florentine?

*Domizia.* It is yourself

Who still are forcing us, importunately,  
To bear in 'mind what else we should for-  
get.

*Luria.* For loss!—for what I lose in being  
none!

No shrewd man, such as you yourselves  
respect,

But would remind you of the stranger's loss

In natural friends and advocates at home,

Hereditary loves, even rivalships

With precedent for honour and reward.

Still, there's a gain, too! If you take it so,

The stranger's lot has special gain as well.

Do you forget there was my own far East

I might have given away myself to, once,

As now to Florence, and for such a gift,

Stood there like a descended deity?

There, worship waits us: what is it waits here?

*[Shows the letter.]*

See! Chance has put into my hand the  
means

Of knowing what I earn, before I work.

Should I fight better, should I fight the  
worse,

With payment palpably before me? See!

Here lies my whole reward! Best learn it  
now

Or keep it for the end's entire delight?

*Braccio.* If you serve Florence as the vulgar  
serve,

For swordsmen's-pay alone,—break seal and  
read!

In that case, you will find your full desert.

*Luria.* Give me my one last happy moment,  
friends!

You need me now, and all the graciousness

This letter can contain will hardly balance.

The after-feeling that you need no more.

This moment . . . oh, the East has use with  
you!

Its sword still flashes—is not flung aside

With the past praise, in a dark corner yet!

How say you? 'Tis not so with Florentines,

Captains of yours: for them, the ended war

Is but a first step to the peace begun:

He who did well in war, just earns the  
right

To begin doing well in peace, you know:

And certain my precursors,—would not  
such

Look to themselves in such a chance as  
mine,

Secure the ground they trod upon, perhaps?

For I have heard, by fits, or seemed to  
hear,

Of strange mishap, mistake, ingratitude,

Treachery even. Say that one of you

Surmised this letter carried what might turn

To harm hereafter, cause him prejudice:

What would he do?

*Domizia [hastily].* Thank God and take  
revenge!

Hurl her own force against the city straight

And, even at the moment when the foe

Sounded defiance . . .

*[TIBURZIO'S trumpet sounds  
in the distance.]*

*Luria.* Ah, you Florentines!

So would you do? Wisely for you, no  
doubt.

My simple Moorish instinct bids me clench

The obligation you relieve me from,

Still deeper! *[To PUCCIO.]* Sound our answer,

I should say,

And thus:—*[tearing the paper.]*—The battle!

That solves every doubt.

## ACT III.

## AFTERNOON.

**PUCCIO**, *as making a report to JACOPO*.

**Puccio**. And here, your captain must report the rest ;

For, as I say, the main engagement over  
And Luria's special part in it performed,  
How could a subaltern like me expect  
Leisure or leave to occupy the field  
And glean what dropped from his wide  
harvesting ?

I thought, when Lucca at the battle's end  
Came up, just as the Pisan centre broke,  
That Luria would detach me and prevent  
The flying Pisans seeking what they found,  
Friends in the rear, a point to rally by.  
But no, more honourable proved my post !  
I had the august captive to escort  
Safe to our camp ; some other could pursue,  
Fight, and be famous ; gentler chance was  
mine—

Tiburzio's wounded spirit must be soothed !  
He's in the tent there.

**Jacopo**. Is the substance down ?  
I write—"The vanguard beaten and both wings  
"In full retreat, Tiburzio prisoner"—  
And now,—“That they fell back and formed  
again

“On Lucca's coming.” Why then, after all,  
'Tis half a victory, no conclusive one ?

**Puccio**. Two operations where a sole had  
served.

**Jacopo**. And Luria's fault was—?

**Puccio**. Oh, for fault—not much !  
He led the attack, a thought impetuously,  
—There's commonly more prudence ; now,  
he seemed

To hurry measures, otherwise well judged.  
By over-concentrating strength at first  
Against the enemy's van, both wings escaped :  
That's reparable, yet it is a fault.

*Enter BRACCIO.*

**Jacopo**. As good as a full victory to  
Florence,

With the advantage of a fault beside—  
What is it, Puccio ?—that by pressing forward  
With too impetuous . . .

**Braccio**. The report anon !

Thanks, sir—you have elsewhere a charge, I  
know. [**PUCCIO goes.**]

There's nothing done but I would do again ;  
Yet, Lapo, it may be the past proves nothing,  
And Luria has kept faithful to the close.

**Jacopo**. I was for waiting.

**Braccio**. Yes : so was not I.  
He could not choose but tear that letter—  
true !

Still, certain of his tones, I mind, and looks :—  
You saw, too, with a fresher soul than I.  
So, Porzio seemed an injured man, they say !  
Well, I have gone upon the broad, sure  
ground.

*Enter LURIA, PUCCIO, and DOMIZIA*

**Luria** [*to PUCCIO*]. Say, at his pleasure I  
will see Tiburzio !  
All's at his pleasure.

**Domizia** [*to LURIA*]. Were I not fore-  
warned

You would reject, as you do constantly,  
Praise,—I might tell you how you have  
deserved

Of Florence by this last and crowning feat :  
But words offend.

**Luria**. Nay, you may praise me now.  
I want instruction every hour, I find,  
On points where once I saw least need of it ;  
And praise, I have been used to slight  
perhaps,

Seems scarce so easily dispensed with now.  
After a battle half one's strength is gone ;  
The glorious passion in us once appeased,  
Our reason's calm cold dreadful voice begins.  
All justice, power and beauty scarce appear  
Monopolized by Florence, as of late,  
To me, the stranger : you, no doubt, may know  
Why Pisa needs must bear her rival's yoke.  
And peradventure I grow nearer you,  
For I, too, want to know and be assured.  
When a cause ceases to reward itself,  
Its friend seeks fresh sustainments ; praise is  
one.

And here stand you—you, lady, praise me well.

But yours—(your pardon)—is unlearned praise.

To the motive, the endeavour, the heart's self, Your quick sense looks: 'you crown and call aright

The soul o' the purpose, ere 'tis shaped as act, Takes flesh i' the world, and clothes itself a king.

But when the act comes, stands for what 'tis worth,

—Here's Puccio, the skilled soldier, he's my judge!

Was all well, Puccio?

*Puccio.* All was . . . must be well: If we beat Lucca presently, as doubtless . . .

—No, there's no doubt, we must—all was well done.

*Luria.* In truth? Still you are of the trade, my Puccio!

You have the fellow-craftsman's sympathy. There's none cares, like a fellow of the craft, For the all-unestimated sum of pains That go to a success the world can see: They praise then, but the best they never know

—While you know! So, if envy mix with it, Hate even, still the bottom-praise of all, Whatever be the dregs, that drop's pure gold! —For nothing's like it; nothing else records Those daily, nightly drippings in the dark Of the heart's blood, the world lets drop away

For ever—so, pure gold that praise must be! And I have yours, my soldier! yet the best Is still to come. There's one looks on apart Whom all refers to, failure or success;

What's done might be our best, our utmost work,

And yet inadequate to serve his need.

Here's Braccio now, for Florence—here's our service—

Well done for us, seems it well done for him? His chosen engine, tasked to its full strength Answers the end? Should he have chosen higher?

Do we help Florence, now our best is wrought?

*Braccio.* This battle, with the foregone services,

Saves Florence.

*Luria.* Why then, all is very well! Here am I in the middle of my friends, Who know me and who love me, one and all. And yet . . . 'tis like . . . this instant while

I speak  
Is like the turning-moment of a dream  
When . . . Ah, you are not foreigners like me!

Well then, one always dreams of friends at home;

And always comes, I say, the turning-point  
When something changes in the friendly eyes  
That love and look on you . . . so slight, so slight . . .

And yet it tells you they are dead and gone,  
Or changed and enemies, for all their words,  
And all is mockery and a maddening show.  
You now, so kind here, all you Florentines,  
What is it in your eyes . . . those lips, those brows . . .

Nobody spoke it, yet I know it well!  
Come now—this battle saves you, all's at end,

Your use of me is o'er, for good, for ill,—  
Come now, what's done against me, while I speak,

In Florence? Come! I feel it in my blood,  
My eyes, my hair, a voice is in my ears  
That spite of all this smiling and soft speech  
You are betraying me. What is it you do?  
Have it your way, and think my use is over—  
Think you are saved and may throw off the mask—

Have it my way, and think more work remains

Which I could do,—so, show you fear me not!  
Or prudent be, or daring, as you choose,  
But tell me—tell what I refused to know  
At noon, lest heart should fail me! Well?  
That letter?

My fate is sealed at Florence! What is it?  
*Braccio.* Sir, I shall not deny what you divine.

It is no novelty for innocence  
To be suspected, but a privilege:



The after certain compensation comes.  
Charges, I say not whether false or true,  
Have been preferred against you some time  
since,

Which Florence was bound, plainly, to receive,  
And which are therefore undergoing now  
The due investigation. That is all.  
I doubt not but your innocence will prove  
Apparent and illustrious, as to me,  
To them this evening, when the trial ends.

*Luria.* My trial?

*Domizia.* Florence, Florence to  
the end,

My whole heart thanks thee!

*Puccio* [to BRACCIO]. What is "trial,"  
sir?

It was not for a trial—surely, no—  
I furnished you those notes from time to time?  
I held myself aggrieved—I am a man—  
And I might speak,—ay, and speak mere  
truth, too,

And yet not mean at bottom of my heart  
What should assist a—trial, do you say?  
You should have told me!

*Domizia.* Nay, go on, go on!  
His sentence! Do they sentence him? What  
is it?

The block—wheel?

*Braccio.* Sentence there is none as yet,  
Nor shall I give my own opinion now  
Of what it should be, or is like to be.  
When it is passed, applaud or disapprove!

Up to that point, what is there to impugn?

*Luria.* They are right, then, to try me?

*Braccio.* I assert,  
Maintain and justify the absolute right  
Of Florence to do all she can have done  
In this procedure,—standing on her guard,  
Receiving even services like yours  
With utmost fit suspicious wariness.

In other matters, keep the mummery up!  
Take all the experiences of all the world,  
Each knowledge that broke through a heart  
to life,

Each reasoning which, to reach, burnt out a  
brain,

—In other cases, know these, warrant these,  
And then dispense with these—'tis very well!

Let friend trust friend, and love demand  
love's like,

And gratitude be claimed for benefits,—  
There's grace in that,—and when the fresh  
heart breaks,

The new brain proves a ruin, what of them?  
Where is the matter of one moth the more  
Singed in the candle, at a summer's end?  
But Florence is no simple John or James  
To have his toy, his fancy, his conceit  
That he's the one excepted man by fate,

And, when fate shows him he's mistaken  
there,

Die with all good men's praise, and yield his  
place

To Paul and George intent to try their chance!  
Florence exists because these pass away.

She's a contrivance to supply a type  
Of man, which men's deficiencies refuse;  
She binds so many, that she grows out of  
them—

Stands steady o'er their numbers, though they  
change

And pass away—there's always what upholds  
Always enough to fashion the great show.

As see, yon hanging city, in the sun,  
Of shapely cloud substantially the same!  
A thousand vapours rise and sink again,  
Are interfused, and live their life and die,—  
Yet ever hangs the steady show i' the air,  
Under the sun's straight influence: that is well,  
That is worth heaven should hold, and God  
should bless!

And so is Florence,—the unseen sun above,  
Which draws and holds suspended all of us,  
Binds transient vapours into a single cloud  
Differing from each and better than they all.  
And shall she dare to stake this permanence  
On any one man's faith? Man's heart is weak,  
And its temptations many: let her prove  
Each servant to the very uttermost  
Before she grant him her reward, I say!

*Domizia.* And as for hearts she chances  
to mistake,

Wronged hearts, not destined to receive  
reward,

Though they deserve it, did she only know,  
—What should she do for these?

*Braccio.*

What does she not?

Say, that she gives them but herself to serve!  
Here's Luria—what had profited his strength,  
When half an hour of sober fancying  
Had shown him step by step the uselessness  
Of strength exerted for strength's proper sake?  
But the truth is, she did create that strength,  
Draw to the end the corresponding means.  
The world is wide—are we the only men?  
Oh, for the time, the social purpose' sake,  
Use words agreed on, bandy epithets,  
Call any man the sole great wise and good!  
But shall we therefore, standing by ourselves,  
Insult our souls and God with the same speech?  
There, swarm the ignoble thousands under  
him:

What marks us from the hundreds and the tens?  
Florence took up, turned all one way the soul  
Of Luria with its fires, and here he glows!  
She takes me out of all the world as him,  
Fixing my coldness till like ice it checks  
The fire! So, Braccio, Luria, which is best?

*Luria.* Ah, brave me? And is this indeed the way

To gain your good word and sincere esteem?  
Am I the baited animal that must turn  
And fight his baiters to deserve their praise?  
Obedience is mistake then? Be it so!  
Do you indeed remember I stand here  
The captain of the conquering army,—mine—  
With all your tokens, praise and promise, ready  
To show for what their names meant when  
you gave,

Not what you style them now you take away?  
If I call in my troops to arbitrate,  
And dash the first enthusiastic thrill  
Of victory with this you menace now—  
Commend to the instinctive popular sense,  
My story first, your comment afterward,—  
Will they take, think you, part with you or me?  
If I say—I, the labourer they saw work,  
Ending my work, ask pay, and find my lords  
Have all this while provided silently  
Against the day of pay and proving faith,  
By what you call my sentence that's to come—  
Will friends advise I wait complacently?  
If I meet Florence half way at their head,  
What will you do, my mild antagonist?

*Braccio.* I will rise up like fire, proud and triumphant

That Florence knew you thoroughly and by me,

And so was saved. "See, Italy," I'll say,  
"The crown of our precautions! Here's a man

"Was far advanced, just touched on the belief  
"Less subtle cities had accorded long;

"But we were wiser: at the end comes this!"  
And from that minute, where is Luria? Lost!

The very stones of Florence cry against  
The all-exacting, nought-enduring fool

Who thus resents her first probation, flouts  
As if he, only, shone and cast no shade,

He, only, walked the earth with privilege  
Against suspicion, free where angels fear:

He, for the first inquisitive mother's-word,  
Must turn, and stand on his defence, forsooth!

Reward? You will not be worth punishment!  
*Luria.* And Florence knew me thus!

Thus I have lived,—

And thus you, with the clear fine intellect,  
Braccio, the cold acute instructed mind,

Out of the stir, so calm and unconfused,  
Reported me—how could you otherwise!

Ay?—and what dropped from you, just now,  
moreover?

Your information, Puccio?—Did your skill,  
Your understanding sympathy approve

Such a report of me? Was this the end?  
Or is even this the end? Can I stop here?

You, lady, with the woman's stand apart,  
The heart to see with, past man's brain and eyes,

. . . I cannot fathom why you should destroy  
The offending one, you call your friend—

Still, lessoned by the good examples here  
Of friendship, 'tis but natural I ask—

Had you a further aim, in aught you urged,  
Than your friend's profit—in all those instances

Of perfidy, all Florence wrought of wrong—  
All I remember now for the first time?

*Domizia.* I am a daughter of the Traversari,  
Sister of Porzio and of Berto both,

So, have foreseen all that has come to pass.  
I knew the Florence that could doubt their faith,

Must needs mistrust a stranger's—dealing them  
Punishment, would deny him his reward.

And I believed, the shame they bore and died,  
He would not bear, but live and fight against—  
Seeing he was of other stuff than they.

*Luria.* Hear them ! All these against one  
foreigner !

And all this while, where is, in the whole world,  
To his good faith a single witness ?

*Tiburzio* [who has entered unseen during the  
preceding dialogue]. Here !

Thus I bear witness, not in word but deed.

I live for Pisa ; she's not lost to-day

By many chances—much prevents from that !

Her army has been beaten, I am here,

But Lucca comes at last, one happy chance !

I rather would see Pisa three times lost

Than saved by any traitor, even by you ;

The example of a traitor's happy fortune

Would bring more evil in the end than good ;—

Pisa rejects the traitor, craves yourself !

I, in her name, resign forthwith to you

My charge,—the highest office, sword and  
shield !

You shall not, by my counsel, turn on Florence

Your army, give her calumny that ground—

Nor bring one soldier : be you all we gain !

And all she'll lose,—a head to deck some  
bridge,

And save the cost o' the crown should deck  
the head.

Leave her to perish in her perfidy,

Plague-stricken and stripped naked to all eyes,

A proverb and by-word in all mouths !

Go you to Pisa ! Florence is my place—

Leave me to tell her of the rectitude,

I, from the first, told Pisa, knowing it.

To Pisa !

*Domitia.* Ah my Braccio, are you caught ?

*Braccio.* Puccio, good soldier and good  
citizen,

Whom I have ever kept beneath my eye,

Ready as fit, to serve in this event

Florence, who clear foretold it from the first—

Through me, she gives you the command and  
charge

She takes, through me, from him who held it  
late !

A painful trial, very sore, was yours :

All that could draw out, marshal in array

The selfish passions 'gainst the public good—  
Slights, scorns, neglects, were heaped on you  
to bear :

And ever you did bear and bow the head !

It had been sorry trial, to precede

Your feet, hold up the promise of reward

For luring gleam ; your footsteps kept the  
track

Thro' dark and doubt : take all the light at  
once !

Trial is over, consummation shines ;

Well have you served, as well henceforth  
command !

*Puccio.* No, no . . . I dare not ! I am  
grateful, glad ;

But Luria—you shall understand he's  
wronged :

And he's my captain : this is not the way

We soldiers climb to fortune : think again !

The sentence is not even passed, beside !

I dare not : where's the soldier could ?

*Luria.*

Now, Florence—

Is it to be ? You will know all the strength

O' the savage—to your neck the proof must go ?

You will prove the brute nature ? Ah, I see !

The savage plainly is impossible :

He keeps his calm way through insulting words,

Sarcastic looks, sharp gestures—one of which

Would stop you, fatal to your finer sense,

But if he stolidly advance, march mute

Without a mark upon his callous hide,

Through the mere brushwood you grow angry  
with,

And leave the tatters of your flesh upon,

—You have to learn that when the true bar  
comes,

The murk mid-forest, the grand obstacle,

Which when you reach, you give the labour up,

Nor dash on, but lie down composed before,

—He goes against it, like the brute he is :

It falls before him, or he dies in his course.

I kept my course through past ingratitude :

I saw—it does seem, now, as if I saw,

Could not but see, those insults as they fell,

—Ay, let them glance from off me, very like,

Laughing, perhaps, to think the quality

You grew so bold on, while you so despised

The Moor's dull mute inapprehensive mood,

Was saving you : I bore and kept my course.  
Now real wrong fronts me : see if I succumb !  
Florence withstands me ? I will punish her.

At night my sentence will arrive, you say.  
Till then I cannot, if I would, rebel  
—Unauthorized to lay my office down,  
Retaining my full power to will and do :  
After—it is to see. Tiburzio, thanks !  
Go ; you are free : join Lucca ! I suspend  
All further operations till to-night.  
Thank you, and for the silence most of all !  
[To BRACCIO.] Let my complacent bland  
accuser go

Carry his self-approving head and heart  
Safe through the army which would trample  
him

Dead in a moment at my word or sign !  
Go, sir, to Florence ; tell friends what I say—  
That while I wait my sentence, theirs waits  
them !

[To DOMIZIA.] You, lady,—you have black  
Italian eyes !

I would be generous if I might : oh, yes—  
For I remember how so oft you seemed  
Inclined at heart to break the barrier down  
Which Florence finds God built between us  
both.

Alas, for generosity ! this hour  
Asks retribution : bear it as you may,  
I must—the Moor—the savage,—pardon you !  
Puccio, my trusty soldier, see them forth !

## ACT IV.

## EVENING.

*Enter PUCCIO and JACOPO.*

*Puccio.* What Luria will do ? Ah, 'tis  
yours, fair sir,  
Your and your subtle-witted master's part,  
To tell me that ; I tell you what he can.

*Jacopo.* Friend, you mistake my station :  
I observe  
The game, watch how my betters play, no  
more.

*Puccio.* But mankind are not pieces—  
there's your fault !

You cannot push them, and, the first move  
made,

Lean back and study what the next shall be,  
In confidence that, when 'tis fixed upon,  
You find just where you left them, blacks  
and whites :

Men go on moving when your hand's away.  
You build, I notice, firm on Luria's faith  
This whole time,—firmer than I choose to  
build,

Who never doubted it—of old, that is—  
With Luria in his ordinary mind.  
But now, oppression makes the wise man  
mad :

How do I know he will not turn and stand  
And hold his own against you, as he may ?  
Suppose he but withdraw to Pisa—well,—  
Then, even if all happen to your wish,  
Which is a chance . . .

*Jacopo.* Nay—'twas an oversight,  
Not waiting till the proper warrant came :  
You could not take what was not ours to give.  
But when at night the sentence really comes,  
Our city authorizes past dispute  
Luria's removal and transfers the charge,  
You will perceive your duty and accept ?

*Puccio.* Accept what ? muster-rolls of  
soldiers' names ?

An army upon paper ? I want men,  
The hearts as well as hands—and where's a  
heart

But beats with Luria, in the multitude  
I come from walking through by Luria's side ?  
You gave them Luria, set him thus to grow,  
Head-like, upon their trunk ; one heart feeds  
both,

They feel him there, live twice, and well  
know why.

—For they do know, if you are ignorant,  
Who kept his own place and respected theirs,  
Managed their sweat, yet never spared his  
blood.

All was your act : another might have served—  
There's peradventure no such dearth of heads—  
But you chose Luria : so, they grew one flesh,  
And now, for nothing they can understand,

Luria removed, off is to roll the head ;  
The body's mine—much I shall do with it !  
*Jacopo.* That's at the worst.

*Puccio.* No—at the best, it is !  
Best, do you hear ? I saw them by his side.  
Only we two with Luria in the camp  
Are left that keep the secret ? You think that ?  
I fear what I know : from rear to van, no heart  
But felt the quiet patient hero there  
Was wronged, nor in the moveless ranks an eye  
But glancing told its fellow the whole story  
Of that convicted silent knot of spies  
Who passed thro' them to Florence ; they  
might pass—

No breast but gladder beat when free of such !  
Our troops will catch up Luria, close him round,  
Bear him to Florence as their natural lord,  
Partake his fortune, live or die with him.

*Jacopo.* And by mistake catch up along  
with him

*Puccio,* no doubt, compelled in self despite  
To still continue second in command !

*Puccio.* No, sir, no second nor so fortunate !  
Your tricks succeed with me too well for that !  
I am as you have made me, live and die  
To serve your end—a mere trained fighting-  
hack,

With words, you laugh at while they leave  
your mouth  
For my life's rule and ordinance of God !  
I have to do my duty, keep my faith,  
And earn my praise, and guard against my  
blame,

As I was trained. I shall accept your charge,  
And fight against one better than myself,  
Spite of my heart's conviction of his worth—  
That, you may count on !—just as hitherto  
I have gone on, persuaded I was wronged,  
Slighted, insulted, terms we learn by rote,—  
All because Luria superseded me—  
Because the better nature, fresh-inspired,  
Mounted above me to its proper place !  
What mattered all the kindly graciousness,  
The cordial brother's-bearing ? This was  
clear—

I, once the captain, now was subaltern,  
And so must keep complaining like a fool !  
Go, take the curse of a lost soul, I say !

You neither play your puppets to the end,  
Nor treat the real man,—for his realness' sake  
Thrust rudely in their place,—with such  
regard

As might console them for their altered rank.  
Me, the mere steady soldier, you depose  
For Luria, and here's all your pet deserves !  
Of what account, then, is your laughing-stock ?  
One word for all : whatever Luria does,  
—If backed by his indignant troops he turn,  
Revenge himself, and Florence go to ground,—  
Or, for a signal everlasting shame,  
He pardon you, simply seek better friends,  
Side with the Pisans and Lucchese for change  
—And if I, pledged to ingrates past belief,  
Dare fight against a man such fools call false,  
Who, inasmuch as he was true, fights me,—  
Whichever way he win, he wins for worth,  
For every soldier, for all true and good !  
Sir, chronicling the rest, omit not this !

*As they go, enter LURIA and HUSAIN.*

*Husain.* Saw'st thou ?—For they are gone !  
The world lies bare

Before thee, to be tasted, felt and seen  
Like what it is, now Florence goes away !  
Thou livest now, with men art man again !  
Those Florentines were all to thee of old ;  
But Braccio, but Domizia, gone is each,  
There lie beneath thee thine own multitudes !  
Saw'st thou ?

*Luria.* I saw.

*Husain.* Then, ho'd thy course,  
my king !

The years return. Let thy heart have its  
way :

Ah, they would play with thee as with all else,  
Turn thee to use, and fashion thee anew,  
Find out God's fault in thee as in the rest ?  
Oh watch, oh listen only to these fiends  
Once at their occupation ! Ere we know,  
The free great heaven is shut, their stifling pall  
Drops till it frets the very tingling hair,  
So weighs it on our head,—and, for the earth,  
Our common earth is tethered up and down,  
Over and across—"here shalt thou move,"  
they cry !

*Luria.* Ay, Husain ?

*Husain.* So have they spoiled all beside !  
 So stands a man girt round with Florentines,  
 Priests, greybeards, Braccios, women, boys  
 and spies,  
 All in one tale, all singing the same song,  
 How thou must house, and live at bed and  
 board,  
 Take pledge and give it, go their every way,  
 Breathe to their measure, make thy blood  
 beat time  
 With theirs—or, all is nothing—thou art lost—  
 A savage, how shouldst thou perceive as they?  
 Feel glad to stand 'neath God's close naked  
 hand !  
 Look up to it ! Why, down they pull thy  
 neck,  
 Lest it crush thee, who feel'st it and wouldst  
 kiss,  
 Without their priests that needs must glove  
 it first,  
 Lest peradventure flesh offend thy lip.  
 Love woman ! Why, a very beast thou art !  
 Thou must . . .

*Luria.* Peace, Husain !

*Husain.* Ay but, spoiling all,  
 For all, else true things, substituting false,  
 That they should dare spoil, of all instincts,  
 thine !  
 Should dare to take thee with thine instincts  
 up,  
 Thy battle-ardours, like a ball of fire,  
 And class them and allow them place and  
 play  
 So far, no farther—unabashed the while !  
 Thou with the soul that never can take rest—  
 Thou born to do, undo, and do again,  
 And never to be still,—wouldst thou make  
 war ?  
 Oh, that is commendable, just and right !  
 "Come over," say they, "have the honour  
 due  
 "In living out thy nature ! Fight thy best :  
 "It is to be for Florence, not thyself !  
 "For thee, it were a horror and a plague ;  
 "For us, when war is made for Florence, see,  
 "How all is changed : the fire that fed on  
 earth  
 "Now towers to heaven !" —

*Luria.* And what sealed up so long  
 My Husain's mouth ?

*Husain.* Oh friend, oh lord—for me,  
 What am I ?—I was silent at thy side,  
 Who am a part of thee. It is thy hand,  
 Thy foot that glows when in the heart fresh  
 blood

Boils up, thou heart of me ! Now, live again,  
 Again love as thou likest, hate as free !  
 Turn to no Braccios nor Domizias now,  
 To ask, before thy very limbs dare move,  
 If Florence' welfare be concerned thereby !

*Luria.* So clear what Florence must ex-  
 pect of me ?

*Husain.* Both armies against Florence !  
 Take revenge !

Wide, deep—to live upon, in feeling now,—  
 And, after live, in memory, year by year—  
 And, with the dear conviction, die at last !  
 She lies now at thy pleasure : pleasure have !  
 Their vaunted intellect that gilds our sense,  
 And blends with life, to show it better by,  
 —How think'st thou?—I have turned that  
 light on them !

They called our thirst of war a transient thing ;  
 "The battle-element must pass away  
 "From life," they said, "and leave a tran-  
 quil world."

—Master, I took their light and turned it full  
 On that dull turgid vein they said would burst  
 And pass away ; and as I looked on life,  
 Still everywhere I tracked this, though it hid  
 And shifted, lay so silent as it thought,  
 Changed shape and hue yet ever was the same.  
 Why, 'twas all fighting, all their nobler life !  
 All work was fighting, every harm—defeat,  
 And every joy obtained—a victory !  
 Be not their dupe !

—Their dupe ? That hour is past !  
 Here stand'st thou in the glory and the calm :  
 All is determined. Silence for me now !

[HUSAIN goes.]

*Luria.* Have I heard all ?

*Domizia* [advancing from the background].

No, Luria, I remain !  
 Not from the motives these have urged on thee,  
 Ignoble, insufficient, incomplete,  
 And pregnant each with sure seeds of decay,

As failing of sustainment from thyself,  
 —Neither from low revenge, nor selfishness,  
 Nor savage lust of power, nor one, nor all,  
 Shalt thou abolish Florence! I proclaim  
 The angel in thee, and reject the sprites  
 Which ineffectual crowd about his strength,  
 And mingle with his work and claim a share!  
 Inconsciously to the augustest end  
 Thou hast arisen: second not in rank  
 So much as time, to him who first ordained  
 That Florence, thou art to destroy, should be.  
 Yet him a star, too, guided, who broke first  
 The pride of lonely power, the life apart,  
 And made the eminences, each to each,  
 Lean o'er the level world and let it lie  
 Safe from the thunder henceforth 'neath their  
 tops;

So the few famous men of old combined,  
 And let the multitude rise underneath,  
 And reach them and unite—so Florence grew:  
 Braccio speaks true, it was well worth the price.  
 But when the sheltered many grew in pride  
 And grudged the station of the elected ones,  
 Who, greater than their kind, are truly great  
 Only in voluntary servitude—  
 Time was for thee to rise, and thou art here.  
 Such plague possessed this Florence: who  
 can tell

The mighty girth and greatness at the heart  
 Of those so perfect pillars of the grove  
 She pulled down in her envy? Who as I,  
 The light weak parasite born but to twine  
 Round each of them and, measuring them,  
 live?

My light love keeps the matchless circle safe,  
 My slender life proves what has passed away.  
 I lived when they departed; lived to cling  
 To thee, the mighty stranger; thou wouldst  
 rise

And burst the thralldom, and avenge, I knew.  
 I have done nothing; all was thy strong bolc.  
 But a bird's weight can break the infant tree  
 Which after holds an aery in its arms,  
 And 'twas my care that nought should warp  
 thy spire

From rising to the height; the roof is reached  
 O' the forest, break through, see extend the  
 sky!

Go on to Florence, Luria! 'Tis man's cause!  
 Fail thou, and thine own fall were least to  
 dread:

Thou keepest Florence in her evil way,  
 Encouragest her sin so much the more—  
 And while the ignoble past is justified,  
 Thou all the surelier warp'st the future growth,  
 The chiefs to come, the Lurias yet unborn,  
 That, greater than thyself, are reached o'er  
 thee

Who giv'st the vantage-ground their foes  
 require

As o'er my prostrate House thyself wast  
 reached.

Man calls thee, God requites thee! All is  
 said,

The mission of my House fulfilled at last:  
 And the mere woman, speaking for herself,  
 Reserves speech—it is now no woman's time.

[DOMIZIA goes.]

*Luria.* Thus at the last must figure Luria,  
 then!

Doing the various work of all his friends,  
 And answering every purpose save his own.  
 No doubt, 'tis well for them to wish; but  
 him—

After the exploit what were left? Perchance  
 A little pride upon the swarthy brow,  
 At having brought successfully to bear  
 'Gainst Florence' self her own especial arms,—  
 Her craftiness, impelled by fiercer strength  
 From Moorish blood than feeds the northern  
 wit

But after!—once the easy vengeance willed,  
 Beautiful Florence at a word laid low  
 —(Not in her domes and towers and palaces,  
 Not even in a dream, that outrage!)—low,  
 As shamed in her own eyes henceforth for  
 ever,

Low, for the rival cities round to laugh,  
 Conquered and pardoned by a hireling Moor!  
 —For him, who did the irreparable wrong,  
 What would be left, his life's illusion fled,—  
 What hope or trust in the forlorn wide world?  
 How strange that Florence should mistake me  
 so!

Whence grew this? What withdrew her faith  
 from me?

Some cause ! These fretful-blooded children  
talk

Against their mother, — they are wronged,  
they say—

Notable wrongs her smile makes up again !  
So, taking fire at each supposed offence,  
They may speak rashly, suffer for their speech :  
But what could it have been in word or deed  
Thus injured me ? Some one word spoken  
more

Out of my heart, and all had changed perhaps.  
My fault, it must have been,—for, what gain  
they ?

Why risk the danger ? See, what I could do !  
And my fault, wherefore visit upon them,  
My Florentines ? The notable revenge  
I meditated ! To stay passively,  
Attend their summons, be as they dispose !  
Why, if my very soldiers keep the rank,  
And if my chieftains acquiesce, what then ?  
I ruin Florence, teach her friends mistrust,  
Confirm her enemies in harsh belief,  
And when she finds one day, as find she must,  
The strange mistake, and how my heart was  
hers,

Shall it console me, that my Florentines  
Walk with a sadder step, in graver guise,  
Who took me with such frankness, praised  
me so,

At the glad outset ? Had they loved me less,  
They had less feared what seemed a change  
in me.

And after all, who did the harm ? Not they !  
How could they interpose with those old fools  
I' the council ? Suffer for those old fools'  
sake—

They, who made pictures of me, sang the  
songs

About my battles ? Ah, we Moors get blind  
Out of our proper world, where we can see !  
The sun that guides is closer to us ! There—  
There, my own orb ! He sinks from out the  
sky.

Why, there ! a whole day has he blessed the  
land,

My land, our Florence all about the hills,  
The fields and gardens, vineyards, olive-  
grounds,

All have been blest : and yet we Florentines  
With souls intent upon our battle here,  
Found that he rose too soon, or set too late,  
Gave us no vantage, or gave Pisa much—  
Therefore we wronged him ! Does he turn  
in ire  
To burn the earth that cannot understand ?  
Or drop out quietly, and leave the sky,  
His task once ended ? Night wipes blame  
away.

Another morning from my East shall spring  
And find all eyes at leisure, all disposed  
To watch and understand its work, no doubt.  
So, praise the new sun, the successor praise,  
Praise the new Luria and forget the old !

[*Taking a phial from his breast.*  
Strange ! This is all I brought from my own  
land

To help me : Europe would supply the  
rest,

All needs beside, all other helps save one !  
I thought of adverse fortune, battle lost,  
The natural upbraiding of the loser,  
And then this quiet remedy to seek  
At end of the disastrous day. [*He drinks.*

'Tis sought !  
This was my happy triumph-morning : Flor-  
ence

Is saved : I drink this, and ere night,—die !  
Strange !

ACT V.

NIGHT.

LURIA and PUCCIO.

*Luria.* I thought to do this, not to talk  
this : well,

Such were my projects for the city's good,  
To help her in attack or by defence.  
Time, here as elsewhere, soon or late may  
take

Our foresight by surprise thro' chance and  
change ;

But not a little we provide against  
—If you see clear on every point.

*Puccio.*

Most clear.



*Luria.* Then all is said—not much, if you count words,

Yet to an understanding ear enough  
And all that my brief stay permits, beside.  
Nor must you blame me, as I sought to teach

My elder in command, or threw a doubt  
Upon the very skill, it comforts me  
To know I leave,—your steady soldiery  
Which never failed me: yet, because it seemed  
A stranger's eye might haply note defect  
That skill, through use and custom, over-looks—

I have gone into the old cares once more,  
As if I had to come and save again  
Florence—that May—that morning! 'Tis  
night now.

Well—I broke off with? . . .

*Puccio.* Of the past campaign  
You spoke—of measures to be kept in mind  
For future use.

*Luria.* True, so . . . but, time—no time!  
As well end here: remember this, and me!  
Farewell now!

*Puccio.* Dare I speak?

*Luria.* South o' the river—  
How is the second stream called . . . no,  
—the third?

*Puccio.* Pesa.

*Luria.* And a stone's cast from the  
fording-place,  
To the east,—the little mount's name?

*Puccio.* Lupo.

*Luria.* Ay!  
Ay—there the tower, and all that side is safe!  
With San Romano, west of Evola,  
San Miniato, Scala, Empoli,  
Five towers in all,—forget not!

*Puccio.* Fear not me!

*Luria.*—Nor to memorialize the Council  
now,

I' the easy hour, on those battalions' claim,  
Who forced a pass by Staggia on the hills,  
And kept the Sienese at check!

*Puccio.* One word—  
Sir, I must speak! That you submit yourself  
To Florence' bidding, howsoe'er it prove,  
And give up the command to me—is much,

Too much, perhaps: but what you tell me  
now,

Even will affect the other course you choose—  
Poor as it may be, perils even that!

Refuge you seek at Pisa: yet these plans  
All militate for Florence, all conclude  
Your formidable work to make her queen  
O' the country,—which her rivals rose against  
When you began it,—which to interrupt,  
Pisa would buy you off at any price!  
You cannot mean to sue for Pisa's help,  
With this made perfect and on record?

*Luria.* I—

At Pisa, and for refuge, do you say?

*Puccio.* Where are you going, then? You  
must decide

On leaving us, a silent fugitive,  
Alone, at night—you, stealing through our  
lines,

Who were this morning's Luria,—you escape  
To painfully begin the world once more,  
With such a past, as it had never been!  
Where are you going?

*Luria.* Not so far, my Puccio,  
But that I hope to hear, enjoy and praise  
(If you mind praise from your old captain yet)  
Each happy blow you strike for Florence.

*Puccio.* Ay,—  
But ere you gain your shelter, what may  
come?

For see—though nothing's surely known as  
yet,

Still—truth must out—I apprehend the worst.  
If mere suspicion stood for certainty

Before, there's nothing can arrest the step  
Of Florence toward your ruin, once on foot.  
Forgive her fifty times, it matters not!  
And having disbelieved your innocence,  
How can she trust your magnanimity?

You may do harm to her—why then, you will!  
And Florence is sagacious in pursuit.

Have you a friend to count on?

*Luria.* One sure friend.

*Puccio.* Potent?

*Luria.* All-potent.

*Puccio.* And he is apprised?

*Luria.* He waits me.

*Puccio.* So!—Then I, put in your place,

Making my profit of all done by you,  
 Calling your labours mine, reaping their fruit,  
 To this, the State's gift, now add yours  
 beside—

That I may take as my peculiar store  
 These your instructions to work Florence  
 good.

And if, by putting some few happily  
 In practice, I should both advantage her  
 And draw down honour on myself,—what  
 then?

*Luria.* Do it, my Puccio! I shall know  
 and praise.

*Puccio.* Though so, men say, "mark what  
 we gain by change

"—A Puccio for a Luria!"

*Luria.* Even so.

*Puccio.* Then, not for fifty hundred  
 Florences,

Would I accept one office save my own,  
 Fill any other than my rightful post  
 Here at your feet, my captain and my lord!  
 That such a cloud should break, such trouble  
 be,

Ere a man settle, soul and body, down  
 Into his true place and take rest for ever!  
 Here were my wise eyes fixed on your right-  
 hand,

And so the bad thoughts came and the worse  
 words,

And all went wrong and painfully enough,—  
 No wonder,—till, the right spot stumbled on,  
 All the jar stops, and there is peace at once!  
 I am yours now,—a tool your right-hand  
 wields!

God's love, that I should live, the man I am,  
 On orders, warrants, patents, and the like,  
 As if there were no glowing eye in the world  
 To glance straight inspiration to my brain,  
 No glorious heart to give mine twice the  
 beats!

For, see—my doubt, where is it?—fear? 'tis  
 flown!

And Florence and her anger are a tale  
 To scare a child. Why, half-a-dozen words  
 Will tell her, spoken as I now can speak,  
 Her error, my past folly—and all's right,  
 And you are Luria, our great chief again!

Or at the worst—which worst were best of  
 all—

To exile or to death I follow you.

*Luria.* Thanks, Puccio! Let me use the  
 privilege

You grant me: if I still command you,—stay!  
 Remain here—my vicegerent, it shall be,  
 And not successor: let me, as of old,  
 Still serve the State, my spirit prompting  
 yours—

Still triumph, one for both. There! Leave  
 me now!

You cannot disobey my first command?  
 Remember what I spoke of Jacopo,  
 And what you promised to concert with him!  
 Send him to speak with me—nay, no fare-  
 well!

You shall be by me when the sentence comes.  
 [PUCCIO goes.

So, there's one Florentine returns again!  
 Out of the genial morning-company,  
 One face is left to take into the night.

*Enter JACOPO.*

*Jacopo.* I wait for your command, sir.

*Luria.* What, so soon?  
 I thank your ready presence and fair word.

I used to notice you in early days  
 As of the other species, so to speak,  
 Those watchers of the lives of us who act—  
 That weigh our motives, scrutinize our  
 thoughts.

So, I propound this to your faculty  
 As you would tell me, were a town to take  
 . . . That is, of old. I am departing hence  
 Under these imputations; that is nought—  
 I leave no friend on whom they may rebound,  
 Hardly a name behind me in the land,  
 Being a stranger: all the more behoves  
 That I regard how altered were the case  
 With natives of the country, Florentines  
 On whom the like mischance should fall: the  
 roots

O' the tree survive the ruin of the trunk—  
 No root of mine will throb, you understand.  
 But I had predecessors, Florentines,  
 Accused as I am now, and punished so—  
 The Traversari: you know more than I

How stigmatized they are, and lost in shame.  
 Now Puccio, who succeeds me in command,  
 Both served them and succeeded, in due time;  
 He knows the way, holds proper documents,  
 And has the power to lay the simple truth  
 Before an active spirit, as I count yours:  
 And also there's Tiburzio, my new friend,  
 Will, at a word, confirm such evidence,  
 He being the great chivalric soul we know.  
 I put it to your tact, sir—were't not well,  
 —A grace, though but for contrast's sake,  
 no more,—

If you who witness, and have borne a share  
 Involuntarily in my mischance,  
 Should, of your proper motion, set your skill  
 To indicate—that is, investigate  
 The right or wrong of what mischance befell  
 Those famous citizens, your countrymen?  
 Nay, you shall promise nothing: but reflect,  
 And if your sense of justice prompt you—  
 good!

*Jacopo.* And if, the trial past, their fame  
 stand clear  
 To all men's eyes, as yours, my lord, to  
 mine—

Their ghosts may sleep in quiet satisfied!  
 For me, a straw thrown up into the air,  
 My testimony goes for a straw's worth.  
 I used to hold by the instructed brain,  
 And move with Braccio as my master-wind;  
 The heart leads surelier: I must move with  
 you—

As greatest now, who ever were the best.  
 So, let the last and humblest of your servants  
 Accept your charge, as Braccio's heretofore,  
 And tender homage by obeying you!

[*JACOPO goes.*]

*Luria.* Another! *Luria* goes not poorly  
 forth.

If we could wait! The only fault's with time;  
 All men become good creatures: but so slow!

*Enter DOMIZIA.*

*Luria.* Ah, you once more?

*Domizia.* *Domizia*, whom you knew,  
 Performed her task, and died with it. 'Tis I,  
 Another woman, you have never known.  
 Let the past sleep now!

*Luria.*

I have done with it.  
*Domizia.* How inexhaustibly the spirit  
 grows!

One object, she seemed erewhile born to reach  
 With her whole energies and die content,—  
 So like a wall at the world's edge it stood,  
 With nought beyond to live for,—is that  
 reached?

Already are new undreamed energies  
 Outgrowing under, and extending farther  
 To a new object; there's another world.  
 See! I have told the purpose of my life;  
 'Tis gained: you are decided, well or ill—  
 You march on Florence, or submit to her—  
 My work is done with you, your brow de-  
 clares.

But—leave you? More of you seems yet to  
 reach:

I stay for what I just begin to see.

*Luria.* So that you turn not to the past!

*Domizia.* You trace

Nothing but ill in it—my selfish impulse,  
 Which sought its end and disregarded yours?

*Luria.* Speak not against your nature:  
 best, each keep

His own—you, yours—most, now that I keep  
 mine,

—At least, fall by it, having too weakly stood.  
 God's finger marks distinctions, all so fine,

We would confound: the lesser has its use,  
 Which, when it apes the greater, is forgone.

I, born a Moor, lived half a Florentine;  
 But, punished properly, can end, a Moor.

Beside, there's something makes me under-  
 stand

Your nature: I have seen it.

*Domizia.* Aught like mine?

*Luria.* In my own East . . . if you would  
 stoop and help

My barbarous illustration! It sounds ill;  
 Yet there's no wrong at bottom: rather,  
 praise.

*Domizia.* Well?

*Luria.* We have creatures there,  
 which if you saw

The first time, you would doubtless marvel at  
 For their surpassing beauty, craft and  
 strength.

And though it were a lively moment's shock  
When you first found the purpose of forked  
tongues

That seem innocuous in their lambent play,  
Yet, once made know such grace requires  
such guard,

Your reason soon would acquiesce, I think,  
In wisdom which made all things for the  
best—

So, take them, good with ill, contentedly,  
The prominent beauty with the latent sting.  
I am glad to have seen you wondrous  
Florentines :

Yet . . .

*Domizia.* I am here to listen.

*Luria.* My own East !

How nearer God we were ! He glows above  
With scarce an intervention, presses close  
And palpitatingly, his soul o'er ours :

We feel him, nor by painful reason know !

The everlasting minute of creation

Is felt there ; now it is, as it was then ;

All changes at his instantaneous will,

Not by the operation of a law

Whose maker is elsewhere at other work.

His hand is still engaged upon his world—

Man's praise can forward it, man's prayer  
suspend,

For is not God all-mighty ? To recast

The world, erase old things and make them  
new,

What costs it Him ? So, man breathes  
nobly there.

And inasmuch as feeling, the East's gift,

Is quick and transient—comes, and lo, is  
gone—

While Northern thought is slow and durable,  
Surely a mission was reserved for me,

Who, born with a perception of the power

And use of the North's thought for us of the  
East,

Should have remained, turned knowledge to  
account,

Giving thought's character and permanence

To the too transitory feeling there—

Writing God's message plain in mortal words.

Instead of which, I leave my fated field

For this where such a task is needed least,

Where all are born consummate in the art

I just perceive a chance of making mine,—

And then, deserting thus my early post,

I wonder that the men I come among

Mistake me ! There, how all had under-  
stood,

Still brought fresh stuff for me to stamp and  
keep,

Fresh instinct to translate them into law !

Me, who . . .

*Domizia.* Who here the greater task  
achieve,

More needful even : who have brought fresh  
stuff

For us to mould, interpret and prove right,—

New feeling fresh from God, which, could  
we know

O' the instant, where had been our need of  
it ?

—Whose life re-teaches us what life should be,

What faith is, loyalty and simpleness,

All, once revealed but taught us so long since

That, having mere tradition of the fact,—

Truth copied falteringly from copies faint,

The early traits all dropped away,—we said

On sight of faith like yours, " So looks not  
faith

" We understand, described and praised  
before."

But still, the feat was dared ; and though at  
first

It suffered from our haste, yet trace by trace

Old memories reappear, old truth returns,

Our slow thought does its work, and all's  
re-knownn.

Oh noble Luria ! What you have decreed

I see not, but no animal revenge,

No brute-like punishment of bad by worse—

It cannot be, the gross and vulgar way

Traced for me by convention and mistake,

Has gained that calm approving eye and  
brow !

Spare Florence, after all ! Let Luria trust

To his own soul, he whom I trust with mine !

*Luria.* In time !

*Domizia.* How, Luria ?

*Luria.*

It is midnight now,

And they arrive from Florence with my fate.

*Domizia.* I hear no step.

*Luria.* I feel one, as you say.

*Enter HUSAIN.*

*Husain.* The man returned from Florence!

*Luria.* As I knew.

*Husain.* He seeks thee.

*Luria.* And I only wait for him.

Aught else?

*Husain.* A movement of the Lucchese troops  
Southward—

*Luria.* Toward Florence? Have out  
instantly . . .

Ah, old use clings! Puccio must care hence-  
forth.

In—quick—'tis nearly midnight! Bid him  
come!

*Enter TIBURZIO, BRACCIO, and PUCCIO.*

Tiburzio?—not at Pisa?

*Tiburzio.* I return

From Florence: I serve Pisa, and must think

By such procedure I have served her best.

A people is but the attempt of many

To rise to the completer life of one;

And those who live as models for the mass

Are singly of more value than they all.

Such man are you, and such a time is this,

That your sole fate concerns a nation more

Than much apparent welfare: that to prove

Your rectitude, and duly crown the same,

Imports us far beyond to-day's event,

A battle's loss or gain: man's mass remains,—

Keep but God's model safe, new men will  
rise

To take its mould, and other days to prove

How great a good was Luria's glory. True—

I might go try my fortune as you urged,  
And, joining Lucca, helped by your disgrace,  
Repair our harm—so were to-day's work  
done;

But where leave Luria for our sons to see?

No, I look farther. I have testified

(Declaring my submission to your arms)

Her full success to Florence, making clear

Your probity, as none else could: I spoke,

And out it shone!

*Luria.* Ah—until Braccio spoke!

*Braccio.* Till Braccio told in just a word  
the whole—

His lapse to error, his return to knowledge:

Which told . . . Nay, Luria, I should droop  
the head,

I whom shame rests with! Yet I dare look up,

Sure of your pardon now I sue for it,

Knowing you wholly. Let the midnight  
end!

'Tis morn approaches! Still you answer  
not?

Sunshine succeeds the shadow past away;

Our faces, which phantasmal grew and false,

Are all that felt it: they change round you,  
turn

Truly themselves now in its vanishing.

Speak, Luria! Here begins your true career:

Look up, advance! All now is possible,

Fact's grandeur, no false dreaming! Dare  
and do!

And every prophecy shall be fulfilled

Save one—(nay, now your word must come  
at last)

—That you would punish Florence!

*Husain* [*pointing to LURIA's dead body*].

That is done.

# A SOUL'S TRAGEDY.

1846.

ACT FIRST, BEING WHAT WAS CALLED THE POETRY OF CHIAPPINO'S LIFE :  
AND ACT SECOND, ITS PROSE.

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY.

### PERSONS.

LUITOLFO and EULALIA, *betrothed lovers.*  
CHIAPPINO, *their friend.*  
OGNIBEN, *the Pope's Legate.*  
*Citizens of Faenza.*

TIME, 15—. PLACE, *Faenza.*

### ACT I.

SCENE.—*Inside LUITOLFO'S house.*

CHIAPPINO, EULALIA.

*Eulalia.* What is it keeps Luitolfo?  
Night's fast falling,  
And 'twas scarce sunset . . . had the ave-  
bell  
Sounded before he sought the Provost's house?  
I think not : all he had to say would take  
Few minutes, such a very few, to say !  
How do you think, Chiappino ? If our lord  
The Provost were less friendly to your friend  
Than everybody here professes him,  
I should begin to tremble—should not you ?  
Why are you silent when so many times  
I turn and speak to you ?

*Chiappino.* That's good !

*Eulalia.* You laugh !

*Chiappino.* Yes. I had fancied nothing  
that bears price

In the whole world was left to call my own ;  
And, may be, felt a little pride thereat.

Up to a single man's or woman's love,  
Down to the right in my own flesh and blood,  
There's nothing mine, I fancied,—till you  
spoke :

VOL. I.

—Counting, you see, as “ nothing ” the per-  
mission

To study this peculiar lot of mine  
In silence : well, go silence with the rest  
Of the world's good ! What can I say, shall  
serve ?

*Eulalia.* This,—lest you, even more than  
needs, embitter

Our parting : say your wrongs have cast, for  
once,

A cloud across your spirit !

*Chiappino.* How a cloud ?

*Eulalia.* No man nor woman loves you,  
did you say ?

*Chiappino.* My God, were't not for thee !

*Eulalia.* Ay, God remains,  
Even did men forsake you.

*Chiappino.* Oh, not so !

Were't not for God, I mean, what hope of  
truth—

Speaking truth, hearing truth, would stay  
with man ?

I, now—the homeless friendless penniless  
Proscribed and exiled wretch who speak to  
you,—

Ought to speak truth, yet could not, for my  
death,

(The thing that tempts me most) help speak-  
ing lies

About your friendship and Luitolfo's courage  
And all our townsfolk's equanimity—

Through sheer incompetence to rid myself  
Of the old miserable lying trick

Caught from the liars I have lived with,—  
God,

Did I not turn to thee ! It is thy prompting  
I dare to be ashamed of, and thy counsel

Would die along my coward lip, I know.

But I do turn to thee. This craven tongue,  
These features which refuse the soul its way,  
Reclaim thou! Give me truth—truth, power  
to speak—

And after be sole present to approve  
The spoken truth! Or, stay, that spoken truth,  
Who knows but you, too, may approve?

*Eulalia.* Ah, well—  
Keep silence then, Chiappino!

*Chiappino.* You would hear,  
You shall now,—why the thing we please to  
style

My gratitude to you and all your friends  
For service done me, is just gratitude  
So much as yours was service: no whit more.  
I was born here, so was Luitolfo; both  
At one time, much with the same circumstance  
Of rank and wealth; and both, up to this  
night

Of parting company, have side by side  
Still fared, he in the sunshine—I, the shadow.  
“Why?” asks the world. “Because,” replies  
the world

To its complacent self, “these playfellows,  
“Who took at church the holy-water drop  
“Each from the other’s finger, and so forth,—  
“Were of two moods: Luitolfo was the proper  
“Friend-making, everywhere friend-finding  
soul,

“Fit for the sunshine, so, it followed him.  
“A happy-tempered bringer of the best  
“Out of the worst; who bears with what’s  
past cure,

“And puts so good a face on’t—wisely passive  
“Where action’s fruitless, while he remedies  
“In silence what the foolish rail against;  
“A man to smoothe such natures as parade  
“Of opposition must exasperate;  
“No general gauntlet-gatherer for the weak  
“Against the strong, yet over-scrupulous  
“At lucky junctures: one who won’t forego  
“The after-battle work of binding wounds,  
“Because, forsooth he’d have to bring himself  
“To side with wound-inflictors for their  
leave!”

—Why do you gaze, nor help me to repeat  
What comes so glibly from the common mouth,  
About Luitolfo and his so-styled friend?

*Eulalia.* Because that friend’s sense is  
obscured . . .

*Chiappino.* I thought  
You would be readier with the other half  
Of the world’s story, my half! Yet, ’tis true.  
For all the world does say it. Say your worst!  
True, I thank God, I ever said “you sin,”  
When a man did sin: if I could not say it,  
I glared it at him; if I could not glare it,  
I prayed against him; then my part seemed  
over.

God’s may begin yet: so it will, I trust.

*Eulalia.* If the world outraged you, did we?  
*Chiappino.* What’s “me”

That you use well or ill? It’s man, in me,  
All your successes are an outrage to,  
You all, whom sunshine follows, as you say!  
Here’s our Faenza birthplace; they send  
here

A provost from Ravenna: how he rules,  
You can at times be eloquent about.  
“Then, end his rule!”—“Ah yes, one stroke  
does that!

“But patience under wrong works slow and  
sure.

“Must violence still bring peace forth? He,  
beside,

“Returns so blandly one’s obeisance! ah—  
“Some latent virtue may be lingering yet,

“Some human sympathy which, once excite,  
“And all the lump were leavened quietly:

“So, no more talk of striking, for this time!”  
But I, as one of those he rules, won’t bear

These pretty takings-up and layings-down  
Our cause, just as you think occasion suits.  
Enough of earnest, is there? You’ll play,  
will you?

Diversify your tactics, give submission,  
Obsequiousness and flattery a turn,  
While we die in our misery patient deaths?  
We all are outraged then, and I the first:  
I, for mankind, resent each shrug and smirk  
Each beck and bend, each . . . all you do  
and are,

I hate!

*Eulalia.* We share a common censure, then.  
’Tis well you have not poor Luitolfo’s part  
Nor mine to point out in the wide offence.

*Chiappino.* Oh, shall I let you so escape me, lady?  
Come, on your own ground, lady,—from yourself,  
(Leaving the people's wrong, which most is mine)  
What have I got to be so grateful for?  
These three last fines, no doubt, one on the other  
Paid by Luitolfo?

*Eulalia.* Shame, Chiappino!

*Chiappino.* Shame  
Fall presently on who deserves it most!  
—Which is to see. He paid my fines—my friend,  
Your prosperous smooth lover presently,  
Then, scarce your wooer,—soon, your husband: well—  
I loved you.

*Eulalia.* Hold!

*Chiappino.* You knew it, years ago.  
When my voice faltered and my eye grew dim  
Because you gave me your silk mask to hold—  
My voice that greatens when there's need to curse  
The people's Provost to their heart's content,  
—My eye, the Provost, who bears all men's eyes,  
Banishes now because he cannot bear,—  
You knew . . . but you do your parts—my part, I:

So be it! You flourish, I decay: all's well.

*Eulalia.* I hear this for the first time.

*Chiappino.* The fault's there?  
Then my days spoke not, and my nights of fire  
Were voiceless? Then the very heart may burst,  
Yet all prove nought, because no mincing speech

Tells leisurely that thus it is and thus?  
*Eulalia.* truce with toying for this once!  
A banished fool, who troubles you to-night  
For the last time—why, what's to fear from me?  
You knew I loved you!

*Eulalia.* Not so, on my faith!  
You were my now-affianced lover's friend—  
Came in, went out with him, could speak as he.

All praise your ready parts and pregnant wit;  
See how your words come from you in a crowd!  
Luitolfo's first to place you o'er himself  
In all that challenges respect and love:  
Yet you were silent then, who blame me now.  
I say all this by fascination, sure:  
I, all but wed to one I love, yet listen!  
It must be, you are wronged, and that the wrongs

Luitolfo pities . . .

*Chiappino.* —You too pity? Do!  
But hear first what my wrongs are; so began  
This talk and so shall end this talk. I say,  
Was't not enough that I must strive (I saw)  
To grow so far familiar with your charms  
As next contrive some way to win them—  
which

To do, an age seemed far too brief—for, see!  
We all aspire to heaven; and there lies heaven  
Above us: go there! Dare we go? no,  
surely!

How dare we go without a reverent pause,  
A growing less unfit for heaven? Just so,  
I dared not speak: the greater fool, it seems!  
Was't not enough to struggle with such folly,  
But I must have, beside, the very man  
Whose slight free loose and incapacious soul  
Gave his tongue scope to say what'er he would  
—Must have him load me with his benefits  
For fortune's fiercest stroke?

*Eulalia.* Justice to him  
That's now entreating, at his risk perhaps,  
Justice for you! Did he once call those acts  
Of simple friendship—bounties, benefits?

*Chiappino.* No: the straight course had  
been to call them thus.

Then, I had flung them back, and kept myself  
Unhampered, free as he to win the prize  
We both sought. But "the gold was dross,"  
he said:

'He loved me, and I loved him not: why  
spurn

'A trifle out of superfluity?

'He had forgotten he had done as much.'  
So had not I! Henceforth, try as I could  
To take him at his word, there stood by you  
My benefactor; who might speak and laugh  
And urge his nothings, even banter me



Before you—but my tongue was tied. A dream!

Let's wake: your husband . . . how you shake at that!

Good—my revenge!

*Eulalia.* Why should I shake?

What forced

Or forces me to be Luitolfo's bride?

*Chiappino.* There's my revenge, that nothing forces you.

No gratitude, no liking of the eye  
Nor longing of the heart, but the poor bond  
Of habit—here so many times he came,  
So much he spoke,—all these compose the tie  
That pulls you from me. Well, he paid my fines,

Nor missed a cloak from wardrobe, dish from table;

He spoke a good word to the Provost here,  
Held me up when my fortunes fell away  
—It had not looked so well to let me drop—  
Men take pains to preserve a tree-stump, even,  
Whose boughs they played beneath—much more a friend.

But one grows tired of seeing, after the first,  
Pains spent upon impracticable stuff  
Like me. I could not change: you know the rest.

I've spoke my mind too fully out, by chance,  
This morning to our Provost; so, ere night  
I leave the city on pain of death. And now

On my account there's gallant intercession  
Goes forward—that's so graceful!—and anon  
He'll noisily come back: "the intercession  
"Was made and fails; all's over for us both;  
"'Tis vain contending; I would better go."  
And I do go—and straight to you he turns  
Light of a load; and ease of that permits  
His visage to repair the natural bland  
Economy, sore broken late to suit  
My discontent. Thus, all are pleased—you, with him,

He with himself, and all of you with me  
—"Who," say the citizens, "had done far better  
"In letting people sleep upon their woes,  
"If not possessed with talent to relieve them

"When once awake;—but then I had," they'll say,  
"Doubtless some unknown compensating pride  
"In what I did; and as I seem content  
"With ruining myself, why, so should they be."

And so they are, and so be with his prize  
The devil, when he gets them speedily!  
Why does not your Luitolfo come? I long  
To don this cloak and take the Lugo path.  
It seems you never loved me, then?

*Eulalia.* Chiappino!

*Chiappino.* Never?

*Eulalia.* Never.

*Chiappino.* That's sad.

Say what I might,  
There was no help from being sure this while  
You loved me. Love like mine must have return,

I thought: no river starts but to some sea.  
And had you loved me, I could soon devise  
Some specious reason why you stifled love,  
Some fancied self-denial on your part,  
Which made you choose Luitolfo; so, excepting

From the wide condemnation of all here,  
One woman. Well, the other dream may break!

If I knew any heart, as mine loved you,  
Loved me, though in the vilest breast 'twere lodged,

I should, I think, be forced to love again:  
Else there's no right nor reason in the world.

*Eulalia.* "If you knew," say you,—but I did not know.

That's where you're blind, Chiappino!—a disease

Which if I may remove, I'll not repent  
The listening to. You cannot, will not, see  
How, place you but in every circumstance  
Of us, you are just now indignant at,  
You'd be as we.

*Chiappino.* I should be? . . . that; again!

I, to my friend, my country and my love,  
Be as Luitolfo and these Faentines?

*Eulalia.* As we.

- Chiappino.* Now, I'll say something to remember.
- I trust in nature for the stable laws  
Of beauty and utility.—Spring shall plant,  
And Autumn garner to the end of time :  
I trust in God—the right shall be the right  
And other than the wrong, while he endures :  
I trust in my own soul, that can perceive  
The outward and the inward, nature's good  
And God's : so, seeing these men and myself,  
Having a right to speak, thus do I speak.  
I'll not curse—God bears with them, well may I—  
But I—protest against their claiming me.  
I simply say, if that's allowable,  
I would not (broadly) do as they have done.  
—God curse this townful of born slaves, bred slaves,  
Branded into the blood and bone, slaves !  
Curse  
Whoever loves, above his liberty,  
House, land or life ! and . . .
- [*A knocking without.*  
—bless my hero-friend,
- Luitolfo !*  
*Eulalia.* How he knocks !  
*Chiappino.* The peril, lady !  
"Chiappino, I have run a risk—a risk !  
"For when I prayed the Provost (he's my friend)  
"To grant you a week's respite of the sentence  
"That confiscates your goods, exiles yourself,  
"He shrugged his shoulder—I say, shrugged it ! Yes,  
"And fright of that drove all else from my head.  
"Here's a good purse of *scudi*: off with you,  
"Lest of that shrug come what God only knows !  
"The *scudi*—friend, they're trash—no thanks, I beg !  
"Take the north gate,—for San Vitale's suburb,  
"Whose double taxes you appealed against,  
"In discomposure at your ill-success  
"Is apt to stone you : there, there—only go !  
"Beside, Eulalia here looks sleepily.
- "Shake . . . oh, you hurt me, so you squeeze my wrist !"  
—Is it not thus you'll speak, adventurous friend ?  
[*As he opens the door, LUITOLFO rushes in, his garments disordered.*  
*Eulalia.* Luitolfo ! Blood ?  
*Luitolfo.* There's more  
—and more of it !  
*Eulalia*—take the garment ! No—you, friend !  
You take it and the blood from me—you dare !  
*Eulalia.* Oh, who has hurt you ? where's the wound ?  
*Chiappino.* "Who," say you ?  
The man with many a touch of virtue yet !  
The Provost's friend has proved too frank of speech,  
And this comes of it. Miserable hound !  
This comes of temporizing, as I said !  
Here's fruit of your smooth speeches and soft looks !  
Now see my way ! As God lives, I go straight  
To the palace and do justice, once for all !  
*Luitolfo.* What says he ?  
*Chiappino.* I'll do justice on him.  
*Luitolfo.* Him ?  
*Chiappino.* The Provost.  
*Luitolfo.* I've just killed him.  
*Eulalia.* Oh, my God !  
*Luitolfo.* My friend, they're on my trace ;  
they'll have me—now !  
They're round him, busy with him : soon they'll find  
He's past their help, and then they'll be on me !  
*Chiappino*, save Eulalia ! I forget . . .  
Were you not bound for . . .  
*Chiappino.* Lugo ?  
*Luitolfo.* Ah—yes—yes !  
That was the point I prayed of him to change.  
Well, go—be happy ! Is Eulalia safe ?  
They're on me !  
*Chiappino.* 'Tis through me they reach you, then !  
Friend, see the man you are ! Lock arms  
—that's right !  
Now tell me what you've done ; explain how you

That still professed forbearance, still preached  
peace,

Could bring yourself . . .

*Luitolfo.* What was peace  
for, Chiappino?

I tried peace: did that promise, when peace  
failed,

Strife should not follow? All my peaceful  
days

Were just the prelude to a day like this.

I cried "You call me 'friend': save my  
true friend!

"Save him, or lose me!"

*Chiappino.* But you never said  
You meant to tell the Provost thus and  
thus.

*Luitolfo.* Why should I say it? What else  
did I mean?

*Chiappino.* Well? He persisted?

*Luitolfo.* —"Would so order it

"You should not trouble him too soon again."

I saw a meaning in his eye and lip;

I poured my heart's store of indignant words  
Out on him: then—I know not! He retorted,

And I . . . some staff lay there to hand—I  
think

He bade his servants thrust me out—I  
struck . . .

Ah, they come! Fly you, save yourselves,  
you two!

The dead back-weight of the beheading axe!  
The glowing trip-hook, thumbscrews and the  
gadge!

*Eulalia.* They do come! Torches in the  
Place! Farewell,

Chiappino! You can work no good to us—  
Much to yourself; believe not, all the world  
Must needs be cursed henceforth!

*Chiappino.* And you?

*Eulalia.* I stay.

*Chiappino.* Ha, ha! Now, listen! I am  
master here!

This was my coarse disguise; this paper shows  
My path of flight and place of refuge—see—  
Lugo, Argenta, past San Nicolo,  
Ferrara, then to Venice and all's safe!

Put on the cloak! His people have to fetch  
A compass round about. There's time enough

Ere they can reach us, so you straightway  
make

For Lugo . . . nay, he hears not! On  
with it—

The cloak, Luitolfo, do you hear me? See—  
He obeys he knows not how. Then, if I  
must—

Answer me! Do you know the Lugo gate?  
*Eulalia.* The north-west gate, over the  
bridge?

*Luitolfo.* I know.

*Chiappino.* Well, there—you are not  
frightened? all my route

Is traced in that: at Venice you escape

Their power. *Eulalia*, I am master here!

[*Shouts from without. He pushes  
out LUITOLFO, who complies  
mechanically.*

In time! Nay, help me with him—so!  
He's gone.

*Eulalia.* What have you done? On you,  
perchance, all know

The Provost's hater, will men's vengeance  
fall

As our accomplice.

*Chiappino.* Mere accomplice? See!  
[*Putting on LUITOLFO's vest.*

Now, lady, am I true to my profession,

Or one of these?

*Eulalia.* You take Luitolfo's place?

*Chiappino.* Die for him.

*Eulalia.* Well done!

[*Shouts increase.*

*Chiappino.* How the people tarry!

I can't be silent; I must speak: or sing—

How natural to sing now!

*Eulalia.* Hush and pray!

We are to die; but even I perceive

'Tis not a very hard thing so to die.

My cousin of the pale-blue tearful eyes,

Poor Cesca, suffers more from one day's life

With the stern husband; Tisbe's heart goes  
forth

Each evening after that wild son of hers,  
To track his thoughtless footstep through the  
streets:

How easy for them both to die like this!

I am not sure that I could live as they.

*Chiappino.* Here they come, crowds!  
 They pass the gate? Yes!—No!—  
*One* torch is in the courtyard. Here flock all.  
*Eulalia.* At least Luitolfo has escaped.  
 What cries!  
*Chiappino.* If they would drag one to the  
 market-place,  
*One* might speak there!  
*Eulalia.* List, list!  
*Chiappino.* They mount the steps.

*Enter the Populace.*

*Chiappino.* I killed the Provost!  
*The Populace [speaking together].* 'Twas  
 Chiappino, friends!  
 Our saviour! The best man at last as first!  
 He who first made us feel what chains we  
 wore,  
 He also strikes the blow that shatters them,  
 He at last saves us—our best citizen!  
 —Oh, have you only courage to speak now?  
 My eldest son was christened a year since  
 "Cino" to keep Chiappino's name in mind—  
 Cino, for shortness merely, you observe!  
 The city's in our hands. The guards are fled.  
 Do you, the cause of all, come down—come  
 up—  
 Come out to counsel us, our chief, our king,  
 Whate'er rewards you! Choose your own  
 reward!  
 The peril over, its reward begins!  
 Come and harangue us in the market-place!  
*Eulalia.* Chiappino?  
*Chiappino.* Yes—I understand your  
 eyes!  
 You think I should have promptly disowned  
 This deed with its strange unforeseen success,  
 In favour of Luitolfo. But the peril,  
 So far from ended, hardly seems begun.  
 To-morrow, rather, when a calm succeeds,  
 We easily shall make him full amends:  
 And meantime—if we save them as they pray,  
 And justify the deed by its effects?  
*Eulalia.* You would, for worlds, you had  
 denied at once.  
*Chiappino.* I know my own intention, be  
 assured!  
 All's well. Precede us, fellow-citizens!

## ACT II.

SCENE.—*The Market-place. LUITOLFO in  
 disguise mingling with the Populace  
 assembled opposite the Provost's Palace.*

*1st Bystander [to LUITOLFO].* You, a friend  
 of Luitolfo's? Then, your friend is vanished,  
 —in all probability killed on the night that  
 his patron the tyrannical Provost was loyally  
 suppressed here, exactly a month ago, by our  
 illustrious fellow-citizen, thrice-noble saviour,  
 and new Provost that is like to be, this very  
 morning,—Chiappino!

*Luitolfo.* He the new Provost?

*2nd Bystander.* Up those steps will he  
 go, and beneath yonder pillar stand, while  
 Ogniben, the Pope's Legate from Ravenna,  
 reads the new dignitary's title to the people,  
 according to established custom: for which  
 reason, there is the assemblage you inquire  
 about.

*Luitolfo.* Chiappino—the late Provost's  
 successor? Impossible! But tell me of that  
 presently. What I would know first of all is;  
 wherefore Luitolfo must so necessarily have  
 been killed on that memorable night?

*3rd Bystander.* You were Luitolfo's friend!  
 So was I. Never, if you will credit me, did  
 there exist so poor-spirited a milksop. He,  
 with all the opportunities in the world, fur-  
 nished by daily converse with our oppressor,  
 would not stir a finger to help us: and, when  
 Chiappino rose in solitary majesty and . .  
 how does one go on saying? . . . dealt the  
 godlike blow,—this Luitolfo, not unreason-  
 ably fearing the indignation of an aroused  
 and liberated people, fled precipitately. He  
 may have got trodden to death in the press  
 at the south-east gate, when the Provost's  
 guards fled through it to Ravenna, with their  
 wounded master,—if he did not rather hang  
 himself under some hedge.

*Luitolfo.* Or why not simply have lain per-  
 due in some quiet corner,—such as San  
 Cassiano, where his estate was,—receiving  
 daily intelligence from some sure friend,

meanwhile, as to the turn matters were taking here—how, for instance, the Provost was not dead, after all, only wounded—or, as to-day's news would seem to prove, how Chiappino was not Brutus the Elder, after all, only the new Provost—and thus Luitolfo be enabled to watch a favourable opportunity for returning? Might it not have been so?

*3rd Bystander.* Why, he may have taken that care of himself, certainly, for he came of a cautious stock. I'll tell you how his uncle, just such another gingerly treader on tiptoes with finger on lip,—how he met his death in the great plague-year: *dico vobis!* Hearing that the seventeenth house in a certain street was infected, he calculates to pass it in safety by taking plentiful breath, say, when he shall arrive at the eleventh house; then scouring by, holding that breath, till he be got so far on the other side as number twenty-three, and thus elude the danger.—And so did he begin; but, as he arrived at thirteen, we will say,—thinking to improve on his precaution by putting up a little prayer to St. Nepomucene<sup>1</sup> of Prague, this exhausted so much of his lungs' reserve, that at sixteen it was clean spent,—consequently at the fatal seventeen he inhaled with a vigour and persistence enough to suck you any latent venom out of the heart of a stone—Ha, ha!

*Luitolfo [aside].* (If I had not lent that man the money he wanted last spring, I should fear this bitterness was attributable to me.) Luitolfo is dead then, one may conclude?

*3rd Bystander.* Why, he had a house here, and a woman to whom he was affianced; and as they both pass naturally to the new Provost, his friend and heir . . .

*Luitolfo.* Ah, I suspected you of imposing on me with your pleasantry! I know Chiappino better.

*1st Bystander.* (Our friend has the bile! After all, I do not dislike finding somebody vary a little this general gape of admiration

at Chiappino's glorious qualities.) Pray, how much may you know of what has taken place in Faenza since that memorable night?

*Luitolfo.* It is most to the purpose, that I know Chiappino to have been by profession a hater of that very office of Provost, you now charge him with proposing to accept.

*1st Bystander.* Sir, I'll tell you. That night was indeed memorable. Up we rose, a mass of us, men, women, children; out fled the guards with the body of the tyrant; we were to defy the world: but, next grey morning, "What will Rome say?" began everybody. You know we are governed by Ravenna, which is governed by Rome. And quietly into the town, by the Ravenna road, comes on muleback a portly personage, Ogniben by name, with the quality of Pontifical Legate; trots briskly through the streets humming a "*Cur fremuere gentes,*" and makes directly for the Provost's Palace—there it faces you. "One Messer Chiappino is your leader? I have known three-and-twenty leaders of revolts!" (laughing gently to himself)—"Give me the help of your arm from my mule to yonder steps under the pillar—So! And now, my revolvers and good friends, what do you want? The guards burst into Ravenna last night bearing your wounded Provost; and, having had a little talk with him, I take on myself to come and try appease the disorderliness, before Rome, hearing of it, resort to another method: 'tis I come, and not another, from a certain love I confess to, of composing differences. So, do you understand, you are about to experience this unheard-of tyranny from me, that there shall be no heading nor hanging, no confiscation nor exile: I insist on your simply pleasing yourselves. And now, pray, what does please you? To live without any government at all? Or having decided for one, to see its minister murdered by the first of your body that chooses to find himself wronged, or disposed for reverting to first principles and a justice anterior to all institutions,—and so will you carry matters, that the rest of the world must at length unite and

<sup>1</sup> Patron saint of Bohemia, murdered by the Emperor Wenceslaus.

put down such a den of wild beasts? As for vengeance on what has just taken place,—once for all, the wounded man assures me he cannot conjecture who struck him; and this so earnestly, that one may be sure he knows perfectly well what intimate acquaintance could find admission to speak with him late last evening. I come not for vengeance therefore, but from pure curiosity to hear what you will do next.” And thus he ran on, on, easily and volubly, till he seemed to arrive quite naturally at the praise of law, order, and paternal government by somebody from rather a distance. All our citizens were in the snare, and about to be friends with so congenial an adviser; but that Chiappino suddenly stood forth, spoke out indignantly, and set things right again.

*Luitolfo.* Do you see? I recognize him there!

*3rd Bystander.* Ay but, mark you, at the end of Chiappino's longest period in praise of a pure republic,—“And by whom do I desire such a government should be administered, perhaps, but by one like yourself?”—returns the Legate: thereupon speaking for a quarter of an hour together, on the natural and only legitimate government by the best and wisest. And it should seem there was soon discovered to be no such vast discrepancy at bottom between this and Chiappino's theory, place but each in its proper light. “Oh, are you there?” quoth Chiappino: “Ay, in that, I agree,” returns Chiappino: and so on.

*Luitolfo.* But did Chiappino cede at once to this?

*1st Bystander.* Why, not altogether at once. For instance, he said that the difference between him and all his fellows was, that they seemed all wishing to be kings in one or another way,—“whereas what right,” asked he, “has any man to wish to be superior to another?”—whereat, “Ah, sir,” answers the Legate, “this is the death of me, so often as I expect something is really going to be revealed to us by you clearer-seers, deeper-thinkers—this—that your right-hand (to

speak by a figure) should be found taking up the weapon it displayed so ostentatiously, not to destroy any dragon in our path, as was prophesied, but simply to cut off its own fellow left-hand: yourself set about attacking yourself. For see now! Here are you who, I make sure, glory exceedingly in knowing the noble nature of the soul, its divine impulses, and so forth; and with such a knowledge you stand, as it were, armed to encounter the natural doubts and fears as to that same inherent nobility, which are apt to waylay us, the weaker ones, in the road of life. And when we look eagerly to see them fall before you, lo, round you wheel, only the left-hand gets the blow; one proof of the soul's nobility destroys simply another proof, quite as good, of the same, for you are found delivering an opinion like this! Why, what is this perpetual yearning to exceed, to subdue, to be better than, and a king over, one's fellows,—all that you so disclaim,—but the very tendency yourself are most proud of, and under another form, would oppose to it,—only in a lower stage of manifestation? You don't want to be vulgarly superior to your fellows after their poor fashion—to have me hold solemnly up your gown's tail, or hand you an express of the last importance from the Pope, with all these bystanders noticing how unconcerned you look the while: but neither does our gaping friend, the burgess yonder, want the other kind of kingship, that consists in understanding better than his fellows this and similar points of human nature, nor to roll under his tongue this sweeter morsel still,—the feeling that, through immense philosophy, he does *not* feel, he rather thinks, above you and me!” And so chatting, they glided off arm-in-arm.

*Luitolfo.* And the result is . . .

*1st Bystander.* Why that, a month having gone by, the indomitable Chiappino, marrying as he will Luitolfo's love—at all events succeeding to Luitolfo's wealth—becomes the first inhabitant of Faenza, and a proper aspirant to the Provostship; which we assemble here to see conferred on him this

morning. The Legate's Guard to clear the way! He will follow presently.

*Luitolfo [withdrawing a little].* I understand the drift of Eulalia's communications less than ever. Yet she surely said, in so many words, that Chiappino was in urgent danger: wherefore, disregarding her injunction to continue in my retreat and await the result of—what she called, some experiment yet in process—I hastened here without her leave or knowledge: how could I else? But if this they say be true—if it were for such a purpose, she and Chiappino kept me away . . . Oh, no, no! I must confront him and her before I believe this of them. And at the word, see!

*Enter CHIAPPINO and EULALIA.*

*Eulalia.* We part here, then? The change in your principles would seem to be complete.

*Chiappino.* Now, why refuse to see that in my present course I change no principles, only re-adapt them and more adroitly? I had despaired of, what you may call the material instrumentality of life; of ever being able to rightly operate on mankind through such a deranged machinery as the existing modes of government: but now, if I suddenly discover how to inform these perverted institutions with fresh purpose, bring the functionary limbs once more into immediate communication with, and subjection to, the soul I am about to bestow on them—do you see? Why should one desire to invent, as long as it remains possible to renew and transform? When all further hope of the old organization shall be extinct, then, I grant you, it may be time to try and create another.

*Eulalia.* And there being discoverable some hope yet in the hitherto much-abused old system of absolute government by a Provost here, you mean to take your time about endeavouring to realize those visions of a perfect State, we once heard of?

*Chiappino.* Say, I would fain realize my conception of a palace, for instance, and that there is, abstractedly, but a single way of erecting one perfectly. Here, in the market-

place is my allotted building-ground; here I stand without a stone to lay, or a labourer to help me,—stand, too, during a short day of life, close on which the night comes. On the other hand, circumstances suddenly offer me (turn and see it!) the old Provost's house to experiment upon—ruinous, if you please, wrongly constructed at the beginning, and ready to tumble now. But materials abound, a crowd of workmen offer their services; here, exists yet a Hall of Audience of originally noble proportions, there a Guest-chamber of symmetrical design enough: and I may restore, enlarge, abolish or unite these to heart's content. Ought I not make the best of such an opportunity, rather than continue to gaze disconsolately with folded arms on the flat pavement here, while the sun goes slowly down, never to rise again? Since you cannot understand this nor me, it is better we should part as you desire.

*Eulalia.* So, the love breaks away too!

*Chiappino.* No, rather my soul's capacity for love widens—needs more than one object to content it,—and, being better instructed, will not persist in seeing all the component parts of love in what is only a single part,—nor in finding that so many and so various loves are all united in the love of a woman,—manifold uses in one instrument, as the savage has his sword, staff, sceptre and idol, all in one club-stick. Love is a very compound thing. The intellectual part of my love I shall give to men, the mighty dead or the illustrious living; and determine to call a mere sensual instinct by as few fine names as possible. What do I lose?

*Eulalia.* Nay, I only think, what do I lose? and, one more word—which shall complete my instruction—does friendship go too? What of Luitolfo, the author of your present prosperity?

*Chiappino.* How the author?

*Eulalia.* That blow now called yours . . .

*Chiappino.* Struck without principle or purpose, as by a blind natural operation: yet to which all my thought and life directly and advisedly tended. I would have struck

it, and could not: he would have done his utmost to avoid striking it, yet did so. I dispute his right to that deed of mine—a final action with him, from the first effect of which he fled away,—a mere first step with me, on which I base a whole mighty superstructure of good to follow. Could he get good from it?

*Eulalia.* So we profess, so we perform!

*Enter OGNIBEN. EULALIA stands apart.*

*Ogniben.* I have seen three-and-twenty leaders of revolts. By your leave, sir! Perform? What does the lady say of performing?

*Chiappino.* Only the trite saying, that we must not trust profession, only performance.

*Ogniben.* She'll not say that, sir, when she knows you longer; you'll instruct her better. Ever judge of men by their professions! For though the bright moment of promising is but a moment and cannot be prolonged, yet, if sincere in its moment's extravagant goodness, why, trust it and know the man by it, I say—not by his performance; which is half the world's work, interfere as the world needs must, with its accidents and circumstances: the profession was purely the man's own. I judge people by what they might be,—not are, nor will be.

*Chiappino.* But have there not been found, too, performing natures, not merely promising?

*Ogniben.* Plenty. Little Bindo of our town, for instance, promised his friend, great ugly Masaccio, once, "I will repay you!"—for a favour done him. So, when his father came to die, and Bindo succeeded to the inheritance, he sends straightway for Masaccio and shares all with him—gives him half the land, half the money, half the kegs of wine in the cellar. "Good," say you: and it is good. But had little Bindo found himself possessor of all this wealth some five years before—on the happy night when Masaccio procured him that interview in the garden with his pretty cousin Lisa—instead of being the beggar he then was,—I am bound to believe that in the

warm moment of promise he would have given away all the wine-kegs and all the money and all the land, and only reserved to himself some hut on a hill-top hard by, whence he might spend his life in looking and seeing his friend enjoy himself: he meant fully that much, but the world interfered.—To our business! Did I understand you just now within-doors? You are not going to marry your old friend's love, after all?

*Chiappino.* I must have a woman that can sympathize with, and appreciate me, I told you.

*Ogniben.* Oh, I remember! you, the greater nature, needs must have a lesser one (—avowedly lesser—contest with you on that score would never do)—such a nature must comprehend you, as the phrase is, accompany and testify of your greatness from point to point onward. Why, that were being not merely as great as yourself, but greater considerably! Meantime, might not the more bounded nature as reasonably count on your appreciation of it, rather?—on your keeping close by it, so far as you both go together, and then going on by yourself as far as you please? Thus God serves us.

*Chiappino.* And yet a woman that could understand the whole of me, to whom I could reveal alike the strength and the weakness—

*Ogniben.* Ah, my friend, wish for nothing so foolish! Worship your love, give her the best of you to see; be to her like the western lands (they bring us such strange news of, to the Spanish Court; send her only your lumps of gold, fans of feathers, your spirit-like birds, and fruits and gems! So shall you, what is unseen of you, be supposed altogether a paradise by her,—as these western lands by Spain: though I warrant there is filth, red baboons, ugly reptiles and squalor enough, which they bring Spain as few samples of as possible. Do you want your mistress to respect your body generally? Offer her your mouth to kiss: don't strip off your boot and put your foot to her lips! You understand my humour by this time? I help men to carry out their own principles: if they



please to say two and two make five, I assent, so they will but go on and say, four and four make ten.

*Chiappino.* But these are my private affairs; what I desire you to occupy yourself about, is my public appearance presently: for when the people hear that I am appointed Provost, though you and I may thoroughly discern—and easily, too—the right principle at bottom of such a movement, and how my republicanism remains thoroughly unaltered, only takes a form of expression hitherto commonly judged (and heretofore by myself) incompatible with its existence,—when thus I reconcile myself to an old form of government instead of proposing a new one . . .

*Ogniben.* Why, you must deal with people broadly. Begin at a distance from this matter and say,—New truths, old truths! sirs, there is nothing new possible to be revealed to us in the moral world; we know all we shall ever know: and it is for simply reminding us, by their various respective expedients, how we do know this and the other matter, that men get called prophets, poets and the like. A philosopher's life is spent in discovering that, of the half-dozen truths he knew when a child, such an one is a lie, as the world states it in set terms; and then, after a weary lapse of years, and plenty of hard-thinking, it becomes a truth again after all, as he happens to newly consider it and view it in a different relation with the others: and so he restates it, to the confusion of somebody else in good time. As for adding to the original stock of truths,—impossible! Thus, you see the expression of them is the grand business:—you have got a truth in your head about the right way of governing people, and you took a mode of expressing it which now you confess to be imperfect. But what then? There is truth in falsehood, falsehood in truth. No man ever told one great truth, that I know, without the help of a good dozen of lies at least, generally unconscious ones. And as when a child comes in breathlessly and relates a strange story, you try to conjecture from the very falsities

in it, what the reality was,—do not conclude that he saw nothing in the sky, because he assuredly did not see a flying horse there as he says,—so, through the contradictory expression, do you see, men should look painfully for, and trust to arrive eventually at, what you call the true principle at bottom. Ah, what an answer is there! to what will it not prove applicable?—"Contradictions? Of course there were," say you!

*Chiappino.* Still, the world at large may call it inconsistency, and what shall I urge in reply?

*Ogniben.* Why, look you, when they tax you with tergiversation or duplicity, you may answer—you begin to perceive that, when all's done and said, both great parties in the State, the advocates of change in the present system of things, and the opponents of it, patriot and anti-patriot, are found working together for the common good; and that in the midst of their efforts for and against its progress, the world somehow or other still advances: to which result they contribute in equal proportions, those who spend their life in pushing it onward, as those who give theirs to the business of pulling it back. Now, if you found the world stand still between the opposite forces, and were glad, I should conceive you: but it steadily advances, you rejoice to see! By the side of such a rejoicer, the man who only winks as he keeps cunning and quiet, and says, "Let yonder hot-headed fellow fight out my battle! I, for one, shall win in the end by the blows he gives, and which I ought to be giving"—even he seems graceful in his avowal, when one considers that he might say, "I shall win quite as much by the blows our antagonist gives him, blows from which he saves me—I thank the antagonist equally!" Moreover, you may enlarge on the loss of the edge of party-animosity with age and experience . . .

*Chiappino.* And naturally time must wear off such asperities: the bitterest adversaries get to discover certain points of similarity

between each other, common sympathies—do they not?

*Ogniben.* Ay, had the young David but sat first to dine on his cheeses with the Philistine, he had soon discovered an abundance of such common sympathies. He of Gath, it is recorded, was born of a father and mother, had brothers and sisters like another man,—they, no more than the sons of Jesse, were used to eat each other. But, for the sake of one broad antipathy that had existed from the beginning, David slung the stone, cut off the giant's head, made a spoil of it, and after ate his cheeses alone, with the better appetite, for all I can learn. My friend, as you, with a quickened eye-sight, go on discovering much good on the worse side, remember that the same process should proportionably magnify and demonstrate to you the much more good on the better side! And when I profess no sympathy for the Goliaths of our time, and you object that a large nature should sympathize with every form of intelligence, and see the good in it, however limited—I answer, “So I do; but preserve the proportions of my sympathy, however finelier or widelier I may extend its action.” I desire to be able, with a quickened eye-sight, to descry beauty in corruption where others see foulness only: but I hope I shall also continue to see a redoubled beauty in the higher forms of matter, where already everybody sees no foulness at all. I must retain, too, my old power of selection, and choice of appropriation, to apply to such new gifts; else they only dazzle instead of enlightening me. God has his archangels and consorts with them: though he made too, and intimately sees what is good in, the worm. Observe, I speak only as you profess to think and, so, ought to speak: I do justice to your own principles, that is all.

*Chiappino.* But you very well know that the two parties do, on occasion, assume each other's characteristics. What more disgusting, for instance, than to see how promptly the newly emancipated slave will adopt, in

his own favour, the very measures of precaution, which pressed soreliest on himself as institutions of the tyranny he has just escaped from? Do the classes, hitherto without opinion, get leave to express it? there follows a confederacy immediately, from which—exercise your individual right and dissent, and woe be to you!

*Ogniben.* And a journey over the sea to you! That is the generous way. Cry—“Emancipated slaves, the first excess, and off I go!” The first time a poor devil, who has been bastinadoed steadily his whole life long, finds himself let alone and able to legislate, so, begins pettishly, while he rubs his soles, “Woe be to whoever brings anything in the shape of a stick this way!”—you, rather than give up the very innocent pleasure of carrying one to switch flies with,—you go away, to everybody's sorrow. Yet you were quite reconciled to staying at home while the governors used to pass, every now and then, some such edict as “Let no man indulge in owning a stick which is not thick enough to chastise our slaves, if need require!” Well, there are pre-ordained hierarchies among us, and a profane vulgar subjected to a different law altogether; yet I am rather sorry you should see it so clearly: for, do you know what is to—all but save you at the Day of Judgment, all you men of genius? It is this: that, while you generally began by pulling down God, and went on to the end of your life, in one effort at setting up your own genius in his place,—still, the last, bitterest concession wrung with the utmost unwillingness from the experience of the very loftiest of you, was invariably—would one think it?—that the rest of mankind, down to the lowest of the mass, stood not, nor ever could stand, just on a level and equality with yourselves. That will be a point in the favour of all such, I hope and believe.

*Chiappino.* Why, men of genius are usually charged, I think, with doing just the reverse; and at once acknowledging the natural inequality of mankind, by themselves

participating in the universal craving after, and deference to, the civil distinctions which represent it. You wonder they pay such undue respect to titles and badges of superior rank.

*Ogniben.* Not I (always on your own ground and showing, be it noted!) Who doubts that, with a weapon to brandish, a man is the more formidable? Titles and badges are exercised as such a weapon, to which you and I look up wistfully. We could pin lions with it moreover, while in its present owner's hands it hardly prods rats. Nay, better than a mere weapon of easy mastery and obvious use, it is a mysterious divining rod that may serve us in undreamed-of ways. Beauty, strength, intellect—men often have none of these, and yet conceive pretty accurately what kind of advantages they would bestow on the possessor. We know at least what it is we make up our mind to forego, and so can apply the fittest substitute in our power. Wanting beauty, we cultivate good humour; missing wit, we get riches: but the mystic unimaginable operation of that gold collar and string of Latin names which suddenly turned poor stupid little peevish Cecco of our town into natural lord of the best of us—a Duke, he is now—there indeed is a virtue to be revered!

*Chiappino.* Ay, by the vulgar: not by Messere Stiatta the poet, who pays more assiduous court to him than anybody.

*Ogniben.* What else should Stiatta pay court to? He has talent, not honour and riches: men naturally covet what they have not.

*Chiappino.* No, or Cecco would covet talent, which he has not, whereas he covets more riches, of which he has plenty, already.

*Ogniben.* Because a purse added to a purse makes the holder twice as rich: but just such another talent as Stiatta's, added to what he now possesses, what would that profit him? Give the talent a purse indeed, to do something with! But lo, how we keep the good people waiting! I only desired to do justice to the noble sentiments which animate you, and which you are too modest to duly enforce.

Come, to our main business: shall we ascend the steps? I am going to propose you for Provost to the people; they know your antecedents, and will accept you with a joyful unanimity: whereon I confirm their choice. Rouse up! Are you nerving yourself to an effort? Beware the disaster of Messere Stiatta we were talking of! who, determining to keep an equal mind and constant face on whatever might be the fortune of his last new poem with our townsmen, heard too plainly "hiss, hiss, hiss," increase every moment. Till at last the man fell senseless: not perceiving that the portentous sounds had all the while been issuing from between his own nobly clenched teeth, and nostrils narrowed by resolve.

*Chiappino.* Do you begin to throw off the mask?—to jest with me, having got me effectually into your trap?

*Ogniben.* Where is the trap, my friend? You hear what I engage to do, for my part: you, for yours, have only to fulfil your promise made just now within doors, of professing unlimited obedience to Rome's authority in my person. And I shall authorize no more than the simple re-establishment of the Provostship and the conferment of its privileges upon yourself: the only novel stipulation being a birth of the peculiar circumstances of the time.

*Chiappino.* And that stipulation?

*Ogniben.* Just the obvious one—that in the event of the discovery of the actual assailant of the late Provost . . .

*Chiappino.* Ha!

*Ogniben.* Why, he shall suffer the proper penalty, of course; what did you expect?

*Chiappino.* Who heard of this?

*Ogniben.* Rather, who needed to hear of this?

*Chiappino.* Can it be, the popular rumour never reached you . . .

*Ogniben.* Many more such rumours reach me, friend, than I choose to receive; those which wait longest have best chance. Has the present one sufficiently waited? Now is its time for entry with effect. See the good people crowding about yonder palace-steps—

which we may not have to ascend, after all. My good friends ! (nay, two or three of you will answer every purpose)—who was it fell upon and proved nearly the death of your late Provost ? His successor desires to hear, that his day of inauguration may be graced by the act of prompt bare justice we all anticipate. Who dealt the blow that night, does anybody know ?

*Luitolfo [coming forward].* I !

*All.* Luitolfo !

*Luitolfo.* I avow the deed, justify and approve it, and stand forth now, to relieve my friend of an unearned responsibility. Having taken thought, I am grown stronger : I shall shrink from nothing that awaits me. Nay, Chiappino—we are friends still : I dare say there is some proof of your superior nature in this starting aside, strange as it seemed at first. So, they tell me, my horse is of the right stock, because a shadow in the path frightens him into a frenzy, makes him dash my brains out. I understand only the dull mule's way of standing stockishly, plodding soberly, suffering on occasion a blow or two with due patience.

*Eulalia.* I was determined to justify my choice, Chiappino,—to let Luitolfo's nature vindicate itself. Henceforth we are undivided, whatever be our fortune.

*Ogniben.* Now, in these last ten minutes of silence, what have I been doing, deem you ? Putting the finishing stroke to a homily of mine, I have long taken thought to perfect, on the text, "Let whoso thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall." To your house, Luitolfo ! Still silent, my patriotic friend ? Well, that is a good sign however. And you will go aside for a time ? That is better still.

I understand : it would be easy for you to die of remorse here on the spot and shock us all ; but you mean to live and grow worthy of coming back to us one day. There, I will tell everybody ; and you only do right to believe you must get better as you get older. All men do so : they are worst in childhood, improve in manhood, and get ready in old age for another world. Youth, with its beauty and grace, would seem bestowed on us for some such reason as to make us partly endurable till we have time for really becoming so of ourselves, without their aid ; when they leave us. The sweetest child we all smile on for his pleasant want of the whole world to break up, or suck in his mouth, seeing no other good in it—would be rudely handled by that world's inhabitants, if he retained those angelic infantine desires when he had grown six feet high, black and bearded. But, little by little, he sees fit to forego claim after claim on the world, puts up with a less and less share of its good as his proper portion ; and when the octogenarian asks barely a sup of gruel and a fire of dry sticks, and thanks you as for his full allowance and right in the common good of life,—hoping nobody may murder him,—he who began by asking and expecting the whole of us to bow down in worship to him,—why, I say he is advanced, far onward, very far, nearly out of sight like our friend Chiappino yonder. And now—(ay, good-bye to you ! He turns round the north-west gate : going to Lugo again ? Good-bye !)—and now give thanks to God, the keys of the Provost's palace to me, and yourselves to profitable meditation at home ! I have known *Four-and-twenty* leaders of revolts.

# CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY.

1850.

## CHRISTMAS EVE.

### I.

OUT of the little chapel I burst  
Into the fresh night-air again.  
Five minutes full, I waited first  
In the doorway, to escape the rain  
That drove in gusts down the common's  
centre

At the edge of which the chapel stands,  
Before I plucked up heart to enter.

Heaven knows how many sorts of hands  
Reached past me, groping for the latch  
Of the inner door that hung on catch  
More obstinate the more they fumbled,

Till, giving way at last with a scold  
Of the crazy hinge, in squeezed or tumbled

One sheep more to the rest in fold,  
And left me irresolute, standing sentry  
In the sheepfold's lath-and-plaster entry,  
Six feet long by three feet wide,  
Partitioned off from the vast inside—

I blocked up half of it at least.  
No remedy; the rain kept driving.

They eyed me much as some wild beast,  
That congregation, still arriving,  
Some of them by the main road, white  
A long way past me into the night,  
Skirting the common, then diverging;  
Not a few suddenly emerging  
From the common's self thro' the paling-  
gaps,

—They house in the gravel-pits perhaps,  
Where the road stops short with its safeguard  
border

Of lamps, as tired of such disorder;—  
But the most turned in yet more abruptly

From a certain squalid knot of alleys,  
Where the town's bad blood once slept  
corruptly,

Which now the little chapel rallies

And leads into day again,—its priestliness  
Lending itself to hide their beastliness  
So cleverly (thanks in part to the mason),  
And putting so cheery a whitewashed face on  
Those neophytes too much in lack of it,

That, where you cross the common as I  
did,

And meet the party thus presided,  
Mount Zion" with Love-lane at the back  
of it,

They front you as little disconcerted  
As, bound for the hills, her fate averted,  
And her wicked people made to mind him,  
Lot might have marched with Gomorrah  
behind him.

### II.

Well, from the road, the lanes or the  
common,

In came the flock: the fat weary woman,  
Panting and bewildered, down-clapping  
Her umbrella with a mighty report,  
Grounded it by me, wry and flapping,

A wreck of whalebones; then, with a  
snort,

Like a startled horse, at the interloper  
(Who humbly knew himself improper,  
But could not shrink up small enough)  
—Round to the door, and in,—the gruff  
Hinge's invariable scold  
Making my very blood run cold.

Prompt in the wake of her, up-pattered  
On broken clogs, the many-tattered  
Little old-faced peaking sister-turned-mother  
Of the sickly babe she tried to smother  
Somehow up, with its spotted face,  
From the cold, on her breast, the one warm  
place;

She too must stop, wring the poor ends dry  
Of a draggled shawl, and add thereby  
Her tribute to the door-mat, sopping  
Already from my own clothes' dropping,

Which yet she seemed to grudge I should stand on :

Then, stooping down to take off her pattens,

She bore them defiantly, in each hand one,  
Planted together before her breast

And its babe, as good as a lance in rest.

Close on her heels, the dingy satins  
Of a female something, past me flitted,

With lips as much too white, as a streak

Lay far too red on each hollow cheek ;

And it seemed the very door-hinge pitied

All that was left of a woman once,

Holding at least its tongue for the nonce.

Then a tall yellow man, like the Penitent Thief,

With his jaw bound up in a handkerchief,  
And eyelids screwed together tight,

Led himself in by some inner light.

And, except from him, from each that entered,

I got the same interrogation—

"What, you the alien, you have ventured

"To take with us, the elect, your station ?

"A carer for none of it, a Gallio !"—

Thus, plain as print, I read the glance

At a common prey, in each countenance

As of huntsman giving his hounds the tallyho.

And, when the door's cry drowned their wonder,

The draught, it always sent in shutting,

Made the flame of the single tallow candle

In the cracked square lantern I stood under,

Shoot its blue lip at me, rebutting

As it were, the luckless cause of scandal :

I verily fancied the zealous light

(In the chapel's secret, too !) for spite

Would shudder itself clean off the wick,

With the airs of a Saint John's Candlestick.<sup>1</sup>

There was no standing it much longer.

"Good folks," thought I, as resolve grew stronger,

"This way you perform the Grand-Inquisitor

"When the weather sends you a chance visitor ?

"You are the men, and wisdom shall die with you,

"And none of the old Seven Churches vie with you !

"But still, despite the pretty perfection

"To which you carry your trick of exclusiveness,

"And, taking God's word under wise protection,

"Correct its tendency to diffusiveness,

"And bid one reach it over hot ploughshares,—

"Still, as I say, though you've found salvation,

"If I should choose to cry, as now, 'Shares !'—

"See if the best of you bars me my ration !

"I prefer, if you please, for my expounder

"Of the laws of the feast, the feast's own Founder ;

"Mine's the same right with your poorest and sickliest

"Supposing I don the marriage vestiment :

"So, shut your mouth and open your Testament,

"And carve me my portion at your quickest !"

Accordingly, as a shoemaker's lad

With wizened face in want of soap,

And wet apron wound round his waist like a rope,

(After stopping outside, for his cough was bad,

To get the fit over, poor gentle creature,

And so avoid disturbing the preacher)

—Passed in, I sent my elbow spikewise

At the shutting door, and entered likewise,

Received the hinge's accustomed greeting,

And crossed the threshold's magic pentacle,

And found myself in full convective,

—To wit, in Zion Chapel Meeting,

On the Christmas-Eve of 'Forty-nine,

Which, calling its flock to their special clover,

Found all assembled and one sheep over,

Whose lot, as the weather pleased, was mine.

<sup>1</sup> See Rev. i. 20.

## III.

I very soon had enough of it.

The hot smell and the human noises,  
And my neighbour's coat, the greasy cuff of it,  
Were a pebble-stone that a child's hand  
poises,

Compared with the pig-of-lead-like pressure  
Of the preaching man's immense stupidity,  
As he poured his doctrine forth, full measure,  
To meet his audience's avidity.

You needed not the wit of the Sibyl

To guess the cause of it all, in a twinkling:

No sooner our friend had got an inkling  
Of treasure hid in the Holy Bible,  
(Whene'er 'twas the thought first struck him,  
How death, at unawares, might duck him  
Deeper than the grave, and quench  
The gin-shop's light in hell's grim drench)  
Than he handled it so, in fine irreverence,

As to hug the book of books to pieces :  
And, a patchwork of chapters and texts in  
severance,

Not improved by the private dog's-ears  
and creases,  
Having clothed his own soul with, he'd fain  
see equipt yours,—

So tossed you again your Holy Scriptures.

And you picked them up, in a sense, no  
doubt :

Nay, had but a single face of my neighbours  
Appeared to suspect that the preacher's  
labours

Were help which the world could be saved  
without,

'Tis odds but I might have borne in quiet  
A qualm or two at my spiritual diet,  
Or (who can tell ?) perchance even mustered  
Somewhat to urge in behalf of the sermon :

But the flock sat on, divinely flustered,  
Sniffing, methought, its dew of Hermon  
With such content in every snuffle,  
As the devil inside us loves to ruffle.

My old fat woman purred with pleasure,  
And thumb round thumb went twirling  
faster,

While she, to his periods keeping measure,  
Maternally devoured the pastor.

The man with the handkerchief untied it,  
Showed us a horrible wen inside it,  
Gave his eyelids yet another screwing,  
And rocked himself as the woman was doing.  
The shoemaker's lad, discreetly choking,  
Kept down his cough. 'Twas too provoking !  
My gorge rose at the nonsense and stuff of it ;  
So, saying like Eve when she plucked  
the apple,  
"I wanted a taste, and now there's enough  
of it,"

I flung out of the little chapel.

## IV.

There was a lull in the rain, a lull

In the wind too ; the moon was risen,  
And would have shone out pure and full,

But for the ramparted cloud-prison,  
Block on block built up in the West,  
For what purpose the wind knows best,  
Who changes his mind continually.

And the empty other half of the sky  
Seemed in its silence as if it knew .  
What, any moment, might look through  
A chance gap in that fortress massy :—

Through its fissures you got hints  
Of the flying moon, by the shifting tints,  
Now, a dull lion-colour, now, brassy  
Burning to yellow, and whitest yellow,

Like furnace-smoke just ere flames bellow,  
All a-simmer with intense strain  
To let her through,—then blank again,  
At the hope of her appearance failing.

Just by the chapel, a break in the railing  
Shows a narrow path directly across ;

'Tis ever dry walking there, on the moss—  
Besides, you go gently all the way uphill.  
I stooped under and soon felt better ;

My head grew lighter, my limbs more supple,  
As I walked on, glad to have slipped the fetter.  
My mind was full of the scene I had left,

That placid flock, that pastor vociferant,  
—How this outside was pure and different !  
The sermon, now—what a mingled west  
Of good and ill ! Were either less,

Its fellow had coloured the whole dis-  
tinctly ;

But alas for the excellent earnestness,  
And the truths, quite true if stated succinctly,  
But as surely false, in their quaint presentment,  
However to pastor and flock's contentment !  
Say rather, such truths looked false to your eyes,  
With his provings and parallels twisted and twined,

Till how could you know them, grown double their size

In the natural fog of the good man's mind,  
Like yonder spots of our roadside lamps,  
Haloed about with the common's damps ?  
Truth remains true, the fault's in the prover ;  
The zeal was good, and the aspiration ;  
And yet, and yet, yet, fifty times over,  
Pharaoh received no demonstration,  
By his Baker's dream of Baskets Three,  
Of the doctrine of the Trinity,—  
Although, as our preacher thus embellished it,  
Apparently his hearers relished it  
With so unfeigned a gust—who knows if  
They did not prefer our friend to Joseph ?  
But so it is everywhere, one way with all of them !

These people have really felt, no doubt,  
A something, the motion they style the Call of them ;

And this is their method of bringing about,  
By a mechanism of words and tones,  
(So many texts in so many groans)

A sort of reviving and reproducing,  
• More or less perfectly, (who can tell ?)

The mood itself, which strengthens by using ;  
And how that happens, I understand well.

A tune was born in my head last week,  
Out of the thump-thump and shriek-shriek  
Of the train, as I came by it, up from Manchester ;

And when, next week, I take it back again,  
My head will sing to the engine's clack again,  
While it only makes my neighbour's haunches stir,

—Finding no dormant musical sprout  
In him, as in me, to be jolted out.

'Tis the taught already that profits by teaching ;

He gets no more from the railway's preaching  
Than, from this preacher who does the rail's office, I :

Whom therefore the flock cast a jealous eye on.  
Still, why paint over their door "Mount Zion,"

To which all flesh shall come, saith the prophecy ?

v.

But wherefore be harsh on a single case ?

After how many modes, this Christmas-Eve,  
Does the self-same weary thing take place ?

The same endeavour to make you believe,  
And with much the same effect, no more :  
Each method abundantly convincing,  
As I say, to those convinced before,

But scarce to be swallowed without wincing  
By the not-as-yet-convinced. For me,  
I have my own church equally :

And in this church my faith sprang first !  
(I said, as I reached the rising ground,  
And the wind began again, with a burst

Of rain in my face, and a glad rebound  
From the heart beneath, as if, God speeding me,

I entered his church-door, nature leading me)  
—In youth I looked to these very skies,  
And probing their immensities,

I found God there, his visible power ;  
Yet felt in my heart, amid all its sense  
Of the power, an equal evidence  
That his love, there too, was the nobler dower.

For the loving worm within its clod,  
Were diviner than a loveless god  
Amid his worlds, I will dare to say.

You know what I mean : God's all, man's nought :

But also, God, whose pleasure brought  
Man into being, stands away

As it were a handbreadth off, to give  
Room for the newly-made to live,  
And look at him from a place apart,  
And use his gifts of brain and heart,  
Given, indeed, but to keep for ever.  
Who speaks of man, then, must not sever



Man's very elements from man,  
 Saying, "But all is God's"—whose plan  
 Was to create man and then leave him  
 Able, his own word saith, to grieve him,  
 But able to glorify him too,  
 As a mere machine could never do,  
 That prayed or praised, all unaware  
 Of its fitness for aught but praise and prayer,  
 Made perfect as a thing of course.  
 Man, therefore, stands on his own stock  
 Of love and power as a pin-point rock :  
 And, looking to God who ordained divorce  
 Of the rock from his boundless continent,  
 Sees, in his power made evident,  
 Only excess by a million-fold  
 O'er the power God gave man in the mould.  
 For, note : man's hand, first formed to carry  
 A few pounds' weight, when taught to marry  
 Its strength with an engine's, lifts a mountain,  
 —Advancing in power by one degree ;  
 And why count steps through eternity ?  
 But love is the ever-springing fountain :  
 Man may enlarge or narrow his bed  
 For the water's play, but the water-head—  
 How can he multiply or reduce it ?  
 As easy create it, as cause it to cease ;  
 He may profit by it, or abuse it,  
 But 'tis not a thing to bear increase  
 As power does : be love less or more  
 In the heart of man, he keeps it shut  
 Or opes it wide, as he pleases, but  
 Love's sum remains what it was before.  
 So, gazing up, in my youth, at love  
 As seen through power, ever above  
 All modes which make it manifest,  
 My soul brought all to a single test—  
 That he, the Eternal First and Last,  
 Who, in his power, had so surpassed  
 All man conceives of what is might,—  
 Whose wisdom, too, showed infinite,  
 —Would prove as infinitely good ;  
 Would never, (my soul understood,)  
 With power to work all love desires,  
 Bestow e'en less than man requires ;  
 That he who endlessly was teaching,  
 Above my spirit's utmost reaching,  
 What love can do in the leaf or stone,  
 (So that to master this alone,

This done in the stone or leaf for me,  
 I must go on learning endlessly)  
 Would never need that I, in turn,  
 Should point him out defect unheeded,  
 And show that God had yet to learn  
 What the meanest human creature needed,  
 —Not life, to wit, for a few short years,  
 Tracking his way through doubts and fears,  
 While the stupid earth on which I stay  
 Suffers no change, but passive adds  
 Its myriad years to myriads,  
 Though I, he gave it to, decay,  
 Seeing death come and choose about me,  
 And my dearest ones depart without me.  
 No : love whith, on earth, amid all the  
 shows of it,  
 Has ever been seen the sole good of life  
 in it,  
 The love, ever growing there, spite of the  
 strife in it,  
 Shall arise, made perfect, from death's re-  
 pose of it.  
 And I shall behold thee, face to face,  
 O God, and in thy light retrace  
 How in all I loved here, still wast thou !  
 Whom pressing to, then, as I fain would  
 now,  
 I shall find as able to satiate  
 The love, thy gift, as my spirit's wonder  
 Thou art able to quicken and sublimiate,  
 With this sky of thine, that I now walk  
 under,  
 And glory in thee for, as I gaze  
 Thus, thus ! Oh, let men keep their ways  
 Of seeking thee in a narrow shrine—  
 Be this my way ! And this is mine !

For lo, what think you ? suddenly  
 The rain and the wind ceased, and the sky  
 Received at once the full fruition  
 Of the moon's consummate apparition.  
 The black cloud-barricade was riven,  
 Ruined beneath her feet, and driven  
 Deep in the West ; while, bare and breathless,  
 North and South and East lay ready  
 For a glorious thing that, dauntless, deathless,  
 Sprang across them and stood steady.

'Twas a moon-rainbow, vast and perfect,  
From heaven to heaven extending, perfect  
As the mother-moon's self, full in face.  
It rose, distinctly at the base

With its seven proper colours chorded,  
Which still, in the rising, were compressed,  
Until at last they coalesced,

And supreme the spectral creature lorded  
In a triumph of whitest white,—  
Above which intervened the night.

But above night too, like only the next,

The second of a wondrous sequence,  
Reaching in rare and rarer frequency,  
Till the heaven of heavens were circum-  
flexed,

Another rainbow rose, a mightier,  
Fainter, flushier and flightier,—  
Rapture dying along its verge.  
Oh, whose foot shall I see emerge,  
Whose, from the straining topmost dark,  
On to the keystone of that arc?

## VII.

This sight was shown me, there and then,—  
Me, one out of a world of men,  
Singled forth, as the chance might hap  
To another if, in a thunderclap  
Where I heard noise and you saw flame,  
Some one man knew God called his name.  
For me, I think I said, "Appear!

"Good were it to be ever here.

"If thou wilt, let me build to thee

"Service-tabernacles three,

"Where, forever in thy presence,

"In ecstatic acquiescence,

"Far alike from thriftless learning

"And ignorance's undiscerning,

"I may worship and remain!"

Thus at the show above me, gazing  
With upturned eyes, I felt my brain

Glutted with the glory, blazing  
Throughout its whole mass, over and under  
Until at length it burst asunder

And out of it bodily there streamed,

The too-much glory, as it seemed,

Passing from out me to the ground,

\*Then palely serpentine round  
Into the dark with mazy error.

## VIII.

All at once I looked up with terror.

He was there.

He himself with his human air.

On the narrow pathway, just before.

I saw the back of him, no more—

He had left the chapel, then, as I.

I forgot all about the sky.

No face: only the sight

Of a sweepy garment, vast and white,

With a hem that I could recognize.

I felt terror, no surprise;

My mind filled with the cataract,

At one bound of the mighty fact.

"I remember, he did say

"Doubtless that, to this world's end,

"Where two or three should meet and  
pray,

"He would be in the midst, their friend;

"Certainly he was there with them!"

And my pulses leaped for joy

Of the golden thought without alloy,

That I saw his very vesture's hem.

Then rushed the blood back, cold and  
clear,

With a fresh enhancing shiver of fear;

And I hastened, cried out while I pressed

To the salvation of the vest,

"But not so, Lord! It cannot be

"That thou, indeed, art leaving me—

"Me, that have despised thy friends!

"Did my heart make no amends?

"Thou art the love of God—above

"His power, didst hear me place his  
love,

"And that was leaving the world for thee.

"Therefore thou must not turn from me

"As I had chosen the other part!

"Folly and pride o'ercame my heart.

"Our best is bad, nor bears thy test;

"Still, it should be our very best.

"I thought it best that thou, the spirit,

"Be worshipped in spirit and in truth,

"And in beauty, as even we require it—

"Not in the forms burlesque, uncouth,

"I left but now, as scarcely fitted

"For thee: I knew not what I pitted.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

But, all I felt there, right or wrong,  
 "What is it to thee, who curest sinning?  
 Am I not weak as thou art strong?  
 "I have looked to thee from the beginning,  
 Straight up to thee through all the world  
 Which, like an idle scroll, lay furled  
 To nothingness on either side :  
 And since the time thou wast descried,  
 Spite of the weak heart, so have I  
 Lived ever, and so fain would die,  
 Living and dying, thee before !  
 But if thou leavest me——"

Less or more,

I suppose that I spoke thus.  
 When,—have mercy, Lord, on us !  
 The whole face turned upon me full.  
 And I spread myself beneath it,  
 As when the bleacher spreads, to seethe it  
 In the cleansing sun, his wool,—  
 Steeps in the flood of noontide whiteness  
 Some defiled, discoloured web—  
 So lay I, saturate with brightness.  
 And when the flood appeared to ebb,  
 Lo, I was walking, light and swift,  
 With my senses settling fast and steadying,  
 But my body caught up in the whirl and drift  
 Of the vesture's amplitude, still eddying  
 On, just before me, still to be followed,  
 As it carried me after with its motion :  
 What shall I say?—as a path were hollowed  
 And a man went weltering through the  
 ocean,  
 Sucked along in the flying wake  
 Of the luminous water-snake.  
 Darkness and cold were cloven, as through  
 I passed, upborne yet walking too.  
 And I turned to myself at intervals,—  
 "So he said, so it befalls.  
 "God who registers the cup  
 "Of mere cold water, for his sake  
 "To a disciple rendered up,  
 "Disdains not his own thirst to slake  
 "At the poorest love was ever offered :  
 "And because my heart I proffered,  
 "With true love trembling at the brim,  
 "He suffers me to follow him

"For ever, my own way,—dispensed  
 "From seeking to be influenced  
 "By all the less immediate ways  
 "That earth, in worships manifold,  
 "Adopts to reach, by prayer and praise,  
 "The garment's hem, which, lo, I hold !"

And so we crossed the world and stopped.  
 For where am I, in city or plain,  
 Since I am 'ware of the world again?  
 And what is this that rises propped  
 With pillars of prodigious girth?  
 Is it really on the earth,  
 This miraculous Dome of God?  
 Has the angel's measuring-rod  
 Which numbered cubits, gem from gem,  
 'Twixt the gates of the New Jerusalem,  
 Meted it out,—and what he meted,  
 Have the sons of men completed?  
 —Binding, ever as he bade,  
 Columns in the colonnade  
 With arms wide open to embrace  
 The entry of the human race  
 To the breast of . . . what is it, yon building,  
 Ablaze in front, all paint and gilding,  
 With marble for brick, and stones of price  
 For garniture of the edifice?  
 Now I see ; it is no dream ;  
 It stands there and it does not seem ;  
 For ever, in pictures, thus it looks,  
 And thus I have read of it in books  
 Often in England, leagues away,  
 And wondered how these fountains play,  
 Growing up eternally  
 Each to a musical water-tree,  
 Whose blossoms drop, a glittering boon,  
 Before my eyes, in the light of the moon,  
 To the granite lavers underneath.  
 Liar and dreamer in your teeth !  
 I, the sinner that speak to you,  
 Was in Rome this night, and stood, and knew  
 Both this and more. For see, for see,  
 The dark is rent, mine eye is free  
 To pierce the crust of the outer wall,  
 And I view inside, and all there, all,  
 As the swarming hollow of a hive,  
 The whole Basilica alive !

Men in the chancel, body and nave,  
 Men on the pillars' architrave,  
 Men on the statues, men on the tombs  
 With popes and kings in their porphyry wombs,  
 All famishing in expectation  
 Of the main-altar's consummation.  
 For see, for see, the rapturous moment  
 Approaches, and earth's best endowment  
 Blends with heaven's; the taper-fires  
 Pant up, the winding brazen spires  
 Heave loftier yet the baldachin;<sup>1</sup>  
 The incense-gasings, long kept in,  
 Suspire in clouds; the organ blatant  
 Holds his breath and grovels latent,  
 As if God's hushing finger grazed him,  
 (Like Behemoth when he praised him)  
 At the silver bell's shrill tinkling,  
 Quick cold drops of terror sprinkling  
 On the sudden pavement strewed  
 With faces of the multitude.  
 Earth breaks up, time drops away,  
 In flows heaven, with its new day  
 Of endless life, when He who trod,  
 Very man and very God,  
 This earth in weakness, shame and pain,  
 Dying the death whose signs remain  
 Up yonder on the accursed tree,—  
 Shall come again, no more to be  
 Of captivity the thrall,  
 But the one God, All in all,  
 King of kings, Lord of lords,  
 As His servant John received the words,  
 "I died, and live for evermore!"

## XI.

Yet I was left outside the door.  
 "Why sit I here on the threshold-stone  
 "Left till He return, alone  
 "Save for the garment's extreme fold  
 "Abandoned still to bless my hold?"  
 My reason, to my doubt, replied,  
 As if a book were opened wide,  
 And at a certain page I traced  
 Every record undefaced,  
 Added by successive years,—  
 The harvestings of truth's stray ears

Singly gleaned, and in one sheaf  
 Bound together for belief.  
 Yes, I said—that he will go  
 And sit with these in turn, I know.  
 Their faith's heart beats, though her head  
 swims  
 Too giddily to guide her limbs;  
 Disabled by their palsy-stroke  
 From propping mine. Though Rome's gross  
 yoke  
 Drops off, no more to be endured,  
 Her teaching is not so obscured  
 By errors and perversities,  
 That no truth shines athwart the lies:  
 And he, whose eye detects a spark  
 Even where, to man's, the whole seems dark,  
 May well see flame where each beholder  
 Acknowledges the embers smoulder.  
 But I, a mere man, fear to quit  
 The clue God gave me as most fit  
 To guide my footsteps through life's maze,  
 Because himself discerns all ways  
 Open to reach him: I, a man  
 Able to mark where faith began  
 To swerve aside, till from its summit  
 Judgment drops her damning plummet,  
 Pronouncing such a fatal space  
 Departed from the founder's base:  
 He will not bid me enter too,  
 But rather sit, as now I do,  
 Awaiting his return outside.  
 —'Twas thus my reason straight replied  
 And joyously I turned, and pressed  
 The garment's skirt upon my breast,  
 Until, afresh its light suffusing me,  
 My heart cried—What has been abusing me  
 That I should wait here lonely and coldly,  
 Instead of rising, entering boldly,  
 Baring truth's face, and letting drift  
 Her veils of lies as they choose to shift?  
 Do these men praise him? I will raise  
 My voice up to their point of praise!  
 I see the error; but above  
 The scope of error, see the love.—  
 Oh, love of those first Christian days!  
 —Fanned so soon into a blaze,  
 From the spark preserved by the trampled sect,  
 That the antique sovereign intellect

<sup>1</sup> Canopy over the High Altar.

Which then sat ruling in the world,  
 Like a change in dreams, was hurled  
 From the throne he reigned upon :  
 You looked up and he was gone.  
 Gone, his glory of the pen !  
 —Love, with Greece and Rome in ken,  
 Bade her scribes abhor the trick  
 Of poetry and rhetoric,  
 And exult with hearts set free,  
 In blessed imbecility  
 Scrawled, perchance, on some torn sheet  
 Leaving Sallust incomplete.  
 Gone, his pride of sculptor, painter !  
 —Love, while able to acquaint her  
 While the thousand statues yet  
 Fresh from chisel, pictures wet  
 From brush, she saw on every side,  
 Chose rather with an infant's pride  
 To frame those portents which impart  
 Such unction to true Christian Art.  
 Gone, music too ! The air was stirred  
 By happy wings : Terpander's <sup>1</sup> bird  
 (That, when the cold came, fled away)  
 Would tarry not the wintry day,—  
 As more-enduring sculpture must,  
 Till filthy saints rebuked the gust  
 With which they chanced to get a sight  
 Of some dear naked Aphrodite  
 They glanced a thought above the toes of,  
 By breaking zealously her nose off.  
 Love, surely, from that music's lingering,  
 Might have filched her organ-fingering,  
 Nor chosen rather to set prayings  
 To hog-grunts, praises to horse-neighings.  
 Love was the startling thing, the new :  
 Love was the all-sufficient too ;  
 And seeing that, you see the rest :  
 As a babe can find its mother's breast  
 As well in darkness as in light,  
 Love shut our eyes, and all seemed right.  
 True, the world's eyes are open now :  
 —Less need for me to disallow  
 Some few that keep Love's zone unbuckled,  
 Peevish as ever to be suckled,  
 Lulled by the same old baby-prattle  
 With intermixture of the rattle,  
<sup>1</sup> Terpander, a famous Lesbian musician and  
 lyric poet, 670 B.C.

When she would have them creep, stand  
 steady  
 Upon their feet, or walk already,  
 Not to speak of trying to climb.  
 I will be wise another time,  
 And not desire a wall between us,  
 When next I see a church-roof cover  
 So many species of one genus,  
 All with foreheads bearing *lover*  
 Written above the earnest eyes of them ;  
 All with breasts that beat for beauty,  
 Whether sublimed, to the surprise of them,  
 In noble daring, steadfast duty,  
 The heroic in passion, or in action,—  
 Or, lowered for sense's satisfaction,  
 To the mere outside of human creatures,  
 Mere perfect form and faultless features.  
 What ? with all Rome here, whence to levy  
 Such contributions to their appetite,  
 With women and men in a gorgeous bevy,  
 They take, as it were, a padlock, clap it  
 tight  
 On their southern eyes, restrained from  
 feeding  
 On the glories of their ancient reading,  
 On the beauties of their modern singing,  
 On the wonders of the builder's bringing,  
 On the majesties of Art around them,—  
 And, all these loves, late struggling in-  
 cessant,  
 When faith has at last united and bound them,  
 They offer up to God for a present ?  
 Why, I will, on the whole, be rather proud  
 of it,—  
 And, only taking the act in reference  
 To the other recipients who might have  
 allowed it,  
 I will rejoice that God had the preference.

So I summed up my new resolves :  
 Too much love there can never be.  
 And where the intellect devalues  
 Its function on love exclusively,  
 I, a man who possesses both,  
 Will accept the provision, nothing loth,  
 —Will feast my love, then depart elsewhere,  
 That my intellect may find its share.

And ponder, O soul, the while thou departest,  
And see thou applaud the great heart of the  
artist,

Who, examining the capabilities  
Of the block of marble he has to fashion  
Into a type of thought or passion,—  
Not always, using obvious facilities,  
Shapes it, as any artist can,  
Into a perfect symmetrical man,  
Complete from head to foot of the life-size,  
Such as old Adam stood in his wife's eyes,—  
But, now and then, bravely aspires to consummate

A Colossus by no means so easy to come at,  
And uses the whole of his block for the bust,  
Leaving the mind of the public to finish it,  
Since cut it ruefully short he must :

On the face alone he expends his devotion,  
He rather would mar than resolve to diminish it,

--Saying, "Applaud me for this grand notion  
"Of what a face may be! As for completing it  
"In breast and body and limbs, do that,  
you!"

All hail! I fancy how, happily meeting it,  
A trunk and legs would perfect the statue,  
Could man carve so as to answer volition.

And how much nobler than petty cavils,  
Were a hope to find, in my spirit-travels,  
Some artist of another ambuion,  
Who having a block to carve, no bigger,  
Has spent his power on the opposite quest,  
And believed to begin at the feet was best—  
For so may I see, ere I die, the whole figure!

## XIII.

No sooner said than out in the night!  
My heart beat lighter and more light:  
And still, as before, I was walking swift,  
With my senses settling fast and steady,  
But my body caught up in the whirl and drift  
Of the vesture's amplitude, still eddying  
On just before me, still to be followed,  
As it carried me after with its motion,  
—What shall I say?—as a path were hollowed,  
And a man went weltering through the ocean,  
Sucked along in the flying wake  
Of the luminous water-snake.

## XIV.

Alone! I am left alone once more—  
(Save for the garment's extreme fold  
Abandoned still to bless my hold)  
Alone, beside the entrance-door  
Of a sort of temple,—perhaps a college,  
—Like nothing I ever saw before  
At home in England, to my knowledge.  
The tall old quaint irregular town!  
It may be . . . though which, I can't  
affirm . . . any

Of the famous middle-age towns of Germany;  
And this flight of stairs where I sit down,  
Is it Halle, Weimar, Cassel, Frankfort  
Or Göttingen, I have to thank for't?  
It may be Göttingen,—most likely.  
Through the open door I catch obliquely  
Glimpses of a lecture-hall;

And not a bad assembly neither,  
Ranged decent and symmetrical  
On benches, waiting what's to see there;  
Which, holding still by the vesture's hem,  
I also resolve to see with them,  
Cautious this time how I suffer to slip  
The chance of joining in fellowship  
With any that call themselves his friends;

As these folk do, I have a notion.  
But hush—a buzzing and emotion!  
All settle themselves, the while ascends  
By the creaking rail to the lecture-desk,  
Step by step, deliberate  
Because of his cranium's over-freight,  
Three parts sublime to one grotesque,  
If I have proved an accurate guesser,  
The hawk-nosed high-cheek-boned Professor  
I felt at once as if there ran

A shoot of love from my heart to the man—  
That sallow virgin-minded studious  
Martyr to mild enthusiasm,  
As he uttered a kind of cough-preludious  
That woke my sympathetic spasm,  
(Beside some spitting that made me sorry)  
And stood, surveying his auditory  
With a wan pure look, well nigh celestial,—  
Those blue eyes had survived so much!

While, under the foot they could not smutch,  
Lay all the fleshly and the bestial.

Over he bowed, and arranged his notes,  
Till the auditory's clearing of throats  
Was done with, died into a silence ;  
And, when each glance was upward sent,  
Each bearded mouth composed intent,  
And a pin might be heard drop half a mile  
hence,—

He pushed back higher his spectacles,  
Let the eyes stream out like lamps from cells,  
And giving his head of hair—a hake  
Of undressed tow, for colour and quantity—  
One rapid and impatient shake,  
(As our own Young England adjusts a  
jaunty tie

When about to impart, on mature digestion,  
Some thrilling view of the surplice-question)  
—The Professor's grave voice, sweet though  
hoarse,

Broke into his Christmas-Eve discourse.

And he began it by observing

How reason dictated that men  
Should rectify the natural swerving,  
By a reversion, now and then,  
To the well-heads of knowledge, few  
And far away, whence rolling grew  
The life-stream wide whereat we drink,  
Commingled, as we needs must think,  
With waters alien to the source ;  
To do which, aimed this eve's discourse ;

Since, where could be a fitter time  
For tracing backward to its prime  
This Christianity, this lake,  
This reservoir, whereat we slake,  
From one or other bank, our thirst ?  
So, he proposed inquiring first  
Into the various sources whence

This Myth of Christ is derivable ;  
Demanding from the evidence,  
(Since plainly no such life was liveable)  
How these phenomena should class ?  
Whether 'twere best opine Christ was,  
Or never was at all, or whether  
He was and was not, both together—  
It matters little for the name,  
So the idea be left the same.

Only, for practical purpose' sake,  
'Twas obviously as well to take  
The popular story,—understanding  
How the ineptitude of the time,  
And the penman's prejudice, expanding  
Fact into fable fit for the clime,  
Had, by slow and sure degrees, translated it  
Into this myth, this Individuum,—  
Which, when reason had strained and abated it  
Of foreign matter, left, for residuum,  
A Man !—a right true man, however,  
Whose work was worthy a man's endeavour :  
Work, that gave warrant almost sufficient  
To his disciples, for rather believing  
He was just omnipotent and omniscient,  
As it gives to us, for as frankly receiving  
His word, their tradition,—which, though it  
meant

Something entirely different  
From all that those who only heard it,  
In their simplicity thought and averred it,  
Had yet a meaning quite as respectable :  
For, among other doctrines delectable,  
Was he not surely the first to insist on  
The natural sovereignty of our race ?—  
Here the lecturer came to a pausing-place.  
And while his cough, like a drouthy piston,  
Tried to dislodge the husk that grew to him,  
I seized the occasion of bidding adieu to him,  
The vesture still within my hand.

I could interpret its command.  
This time he would not bid me enter  
The exhausted air-bell of the Critic.  
Truth's atmosphere may grow mephitic  
When Papist struggles with Dissenter,  
Impregnating its pristine clarity,  
—One, by his daily fare's vulgarity,  
Its gust of broken meat and garlic ;  
—One, by his soul's too-much presuming  
To turn the frankincense's fuming  
And vapours of the candle starlike  
Into the cloud her wings she buoys on.  
Each, that thus sets the pure air seething,  
May poison it for healthy breathing—  
But the Critic leaves no air to poison ;

Pumps out with ruthless ingenuity  
 Atom by atom, and leaves you—vacuity.  
 Thus much of Christ does he reject?  
 And what retain? His intellect?  
 What is it I must reverence duly?  
 Poor intellect for worship, truly,  
 Which tells me simply what was told  
 (If mere morality, bereft

Of the God in Christ, be all that's left)  
 Elsewhere by voices manifold;

With this advantage, that the stater  
 Made nowise the important stumble  
 Of adding, he, the sage and humble,  
 Was also one with the Creator.

You urge Christ's followers' simplicity:  
 But how does shifting blame, evade it?  
 Have wisdom's words no more felicity?

The stumbling-block, his speech—who laid  
 it?

How comes it that for one found able  
 To sift the truth of it from fable,  
 Millions believe it to the letter?  
 Christ's goodness, then—does that fare better?  
 Strange goodness, which upon the score

Of being goodness, the mere due  
 Of man to fellow-man, much more

To God,—should take another view  
 Of its possessor's privilege,  
 And bid him rule his race! You pledge  
 Your fealty to such rule? What, all—  
 From heavenly John and Attic Paul,  
 And that brave weather-battered Peter,  
 Whose stout faith only stood completer  
 For buffets, sinning to be pardoned,  
 As, more his hands hauled nets, they  
 hardened,—

All, down to you, the man of men,  
 Professing here at Göttingen,  
 Compose Christ's flock! They, you and I,  
 Are sheep of a good man! And why?  
 The goodness,—how did he acquire it?  
 Was it self-gained, did God inspire it?  
 Choose which; then tell me, on what ground  
 Should its possessor dare propound  
 His claim to rise o'er us an inch?

Were goodness all some man's invention,  
 Who arbitrarily made mention  
 What we should follow, and whence flinch,—

What qualities might take the style  
 Of right and wrong,—and had such guess-  
 ing

Met with as general acquiescing  
 As graced the alphabet erewhile,  
 When A got leave an Ox to be,  
 No Camel (quoth the Jews) like G,<sup>1</sup>—  
 For thus inventing thing and title  
 Worship were that man's fit requital.  
 But if the common conscience must  
 Be ultimately judge, adjust  
 Its apt name to each quality  
 Already known,—I would decree  
 Worship for such mere demonstration

And simple work of nomenclature,  
 Only the day I praised, not nature,  
 But Harvey, for the circulation.

I would praise such a Christ, with pride  
 And joy, that he, as none beside,  
 Had taught us how to keep the mind  
 God gave him, as God gave his kind,  
 Freer than they from fleshly taint:  
 I would call such a Christ our Saint,  
 As I declare our Poet, him  
 Whose insight makes all others dim:  
 A thousand poets prided at life,  
 And only one amid the strife  
 Rose to be Shakespeare: each shall take  
 His crown, I'd say, for the world's sake—  
 Though some objected—"Had we seen  
 "The heart and head of each, what  
 screen

"Was broken there to give them light,  
 "While in ourselves it shuts the sight,  
 "We should no more admire, perchance,  
 "That these found truth out at a glance,  
 "Than marvel how the bat discerns  
 "Some pitch-dark cavern's fifty turns,  
 "Led by a finer tact, a gift  
 "He boasts, which other birds must shift  
 "Without, and grope as best they can."  
 No, freely I would praise the man,—  
 Nor one whit more, if he contended  
 That gift of his, from God descended.  
 Ah friend, what gift of man's does not?  
 No nearer something, by a jot,

<sup>1</sup> Gimel, the Hebrew G, means camel.



Rise an infinity of nothings

Than one : take Euclid for your teacher :

Distinguish kinds : do crownings, clothings,

Make that creator which was creature ?

Multiply gifts upon man's head,

And what, when all's done, shall be said

But—the more gifted he, I ween !

That one's made Christ, this other, Pilate,

And this might be all that has been,—

So what is there to frown or smile at ?

What is left for us, save, in growth

Of soul, to rise up, far past both,

From the gift looking to the giver,

And from the cistern to the river,

And from the finite to infinity,

And from man's dust to God's divinity ?

Take all in a word : the truth in God's breast

Lies trace for trace upon ours impressed :

Though he is so bright and we so dim,

We are made in his image to witness him :

And were no eye in us to tell,

Instructed by no inner sense,

The light of heaven from the dark of hell,

That light would want its evidence,—

Though justice, good and truth were still

Divine, if, by some demon's will,

Hatred and wrong had been proclaimed

Law through the worlds, and right misnamed.

No mere exposition of morality

Made or in part or in totality,

Should win you to give it worship, there-  
fore :

And, if no better proof you will care for,

—Whom do you count the worst man upon  
earth ?

Be sure, he knows, in his conscience, more  
Of what right is, than arrives at birth

In the best man's acts that we bow before :

This last knows better—true, but my fact is,

'Tis one thing to know, and another to prac-  
tise.

And thence I conclude that the real God-  
function

Is to furnish a motive and injunction

For practising what we know already.

And such an injunction and such a motive

As the God in Christ, do you waive, and

“heady,

“High-minded,” hang your tablet-votive

Outside the fane on a finger-post ?

Morality to the uttermost,

Supreme in Christ as we all confess,

Why need we prove would avail no jot

To make him God, if God he were not ?

What is the point where himself lays stress ?

Does the precept run “Believe in good,

“In justice, truth, now understood

“For the first time ?”—or, “Believe in me,

“Who lived and died, yet essentially

“Am Lord of Life ?” Whoever can take

The same to his heart and for mere love's sake

Conceive of the love,—that man obtains

A new truth ; no conviction gains

Of an old one only, made intense

By a fresh appeal to his faded sense.

#### XVIII.

Can it be that he stays inside ?

Is the vesture left me to commune with ?

Could my soul find aught to sing in tune  
with

Even at this lecture, if she tried ?

Oh, let me at lowest sympathize

With the lurking drop of blood that lies

In the desiccated brain's white roots

Without throb for Christ's attributes,

As the lecturer makes his special boast !

If love's dead there, it has left a ghost.

Admire we, how from heart to brain

(Though to say so strike the doctors dumb)

One instinct rises and falls again,

Restoring the equilibrium.

And how when the Critic had done his best,

And the pearl of price, at reason's test,

Lay dust and ashes levigable

On the Professor's lecture-table,—

When we looked for the inference and monition

That our faith, reduced to such condition,

Be swept forthwith to its natural dust-hole,—

He bids us, when we least expect it,

Take back our faith,—if it be not just whole,

Yet a pearl indeed, as his tests affect it,

Which fact pays damage done rewardingly,

So, prize we our dust and ashes accordingly !

"Go home and venerate the myth  
 "I thus have experimented with—  
 "This man, continue to adore him  
 "Rather than all who went before him,  
 "And all who ever followed after!"—  
 Surely for this I may praise you, my brother!  
 Will you take the praise in tears or laughter?  
 That's one point gained: can I compass  
 another?

Unlearned love was safe from spurning—  
 Can't we respect your loveless learning?  
 Let us at least give learning honour!  
 What laurels had we showered upon her,  
 Girding her loins up to perturb  
 Our theory of the Middle Verb;  
 Or Turk-like brandishing a scimitar  
 O'er anapests in comic-trimeter;  
 Or curing the halt and maimed 'Iketides,'<sup>1</sup>  
 While we lounged on at our indebted ease:  
 Instead of which, a tricky demon  
 Sets her at Titus or Philemon!  
 When ignorance wags his ears of leather  
 And hates God's word, 'tis altogether;  
 Nor leaves he his congenial thistles  
 To go and browse on Paul's Epistles.  
 —And you, the audience, who might ravage  
 The world wide, enviably savage,  
 Nor heed the cry of the retriever,  
 More than Herr Heine (before his fever),—  
 I do not tell a lie so arrant

As say my passion's wings are furled up,  
 And, without plainest heavenly warrant,  
 I were ready and glad to give the world up—  
 But still, when you rub brow meticulous,  
 And ponder the profit of turning holy

If not for God's, for your own sake solely,  
 —God forbid I should find you ridiculous!  
 Deduce from this lecture all that eases you,  
 Nay, call yourselves, if the calling pleases you,  
 "Christians,"—abhor the deist's pravity,—  
 Go on, you shall no more move my gravity  
 Than, when I see boys ride a-cockhorse,  
 I find it in my heart to embarrass them  
 By hinting that their stick's a mock horse,  
 And they really carry what they say carries  
 them.

<sup>1</sup> *The Suppliants*, a fragment of a play by

## XIX.

So sat I talking with my mind.  
 I did not long to leave the door  
 And find a new church, as before,  
 But rather was quiet and inclined  
 To prolong and enjoy the gentle resting  
 From further tracking and trying and testing.  
 "This tolerance is a genial mood!"  
 (Said I, and a little pause ensued).  
 "One trims the bark 'twixt shoal and shelf,  
 "And sees, each side, the good effects of it,  
 "A value for religion's self,  
 "A carelessness about the sects of it.  
 "Let me enjoy my own conviction,  
 "Not watch my neighbour's faith with  
 fretfulness,  
 "Still spying there some dereliction  
 "Of truth, perversity, forgetfulness!  
 "Better a mild indifferentism,  
 "Teaching that both our faiths (though  
 duller  
 "His shine through a dull spirit's prism)  
 "Originally had one colour!  
 "Better pursue a pilgrimage  
 "Through ancient and through modern  
 times  
 "To many peoples, various climes,  
 "Where I may see saint, savage, sage  
 "Fuse their respective creeds in one  
 "Before the general Father's throne!"

## XX.

—'Twas the horrible storm began afresh!  
 The black night caught me in his mesh,  
 Whirled me up, and flung me prone:  
 I was left on the college-step alone.  
 I looked, and far there, ever fleeting  
 Far, far away, the receding gesture,  
 And looming of the lessening vesture!—  
 Swept forward from my stupid hand,  
 While I watched my foolish heart expand  
 In the lazy glow of benevolence,  
 O'er the various modes of man's belief.  
 I sprang up with fear's vehemence.  
 Needs must there be one way, our chief  
 Best way of worship: let me strive  
 To find it, and when found, contrive

My fellows also take their share !  
 This constitutes my earthly care :  
 God's is above it and distinct.  
 For I, a man, with men am linked  
 And not a brute with brutes ; no gain  
 That I experience, must remain  
 Unshared : but should my best endeavour  
 To share it, fail—subsisteth ever  
 God's care above, and I exult  
 That God, by God's own ways occult,  
 May—doth, I will believe—bring back  
 All wanderers to a single track.  
 Meantime, I can but testify  
 God's care for me—no more, can I—  
 It is but for myself I know ;

The world rolls witnessing around me  
 Only to leave me as it found me ;  
 Men cry there, but my ear is slow :  
 Their races flourish or decay  
 —What boots it, while yon lucid way  
 Loaded with stars divides the vault ?  
 But soon my soul repairs its fault  
 When, sharpening sense's hebetude,  
 She turns on my own life ! So viewed,  
 No mere mote's-breadth but teems immense  
 With witnessings of providence :  
 And woe to me if when I look  
 Upon that record, the sole book  
 Unsealed to me, I take no heed  
 Of any warning that I read !  
 Have I been sure, this Christmas-Eve,  
 God's own hand did the rainbow weave,  
 Whereby the truth from heaven slid  
 Into my soul ?—I cannot bid  
 The world admit he stooped to heal  
 My soul, as if in a thunder-peal  
 Where one heard noise, and one saw flame,  
 I only knew he named my name :  
 But what is the world to me, for sorrow  
 Or joy in its censure, when to-morrow  
 It drops the remark, with just-turned head  
 Then, on again, ' That man is dead ' ?  
 Yes, but for me—my name called,—drawn  
 As a conscript's lot from the lap's black  
 yawn,  
 He has dipt into on a battle-dawn :  
 Bid out of life by a nod, a glance,—  
 Stumbling, mute-mazed, at nature's chance,—

With a rapid finger circled round,  
 Fixed to the first poor inch of ground  
 To fight from, where his foot was found ;  
 Whose ear but a minute since lay free  
 To the wide camp's buzz and gossipry—  
 Summoned, a solitary man  
 To end his life where his life began,  
 From the safe glad rear, to the dreadful  
 van !  
 Soul of mine, hadst thou caught and held  
 By the hem of the vesture !—

## XXI.

And I caught

At the flying robe, and unrepelled  
 Was lapped again in its folds full-fraught  
 With warmth and wonder and delight,  
 God's mercy being infinite.  
 For scarce had the words escaped my tongue,  
 When, at a passionate bound, I sprung,  
 Out of the wandering world of rain,  
 Into the little chapel again.

How else was I found there, bolt upright  
 On my bench, as if I had never left it ?  
 —Never flung out on the common at night,  
 Nor met the storm and wedge-like cleft it,  
 Seen the raree-show of Peter's successor,  
 Or the laboratory of the Professor !  
 For the Vision, that was true, I wist,  
 True as that heaven and earth exist.  
 There sat my friend, the yellow and tall,  
 With his neck and its wen in the selfsame  
 place ;  
 Yet my nearest neighbour's cheek showed  
 gall.

She had slid away a contemptuous space :  
 And the old fat woman, late so placable,  
 Eyed me with symptoms, hardly mistakable,  
 Of her milk of kindness turning rancid.  
 In short, a spectator might have fancied  
 That I had nodded, betrayed by slumber,  
 Yet kept my seat, a warning ghastly,  
 Through the heads of the sermon, nine in  
 number,  
 And woke up now at the tenth and lastly.

But again, could such disgrace have happened  
Each friend at my elbow had surely nudged  
it ;

And, as for the sermon, where did my nap end?

Unless I heard it, could I have judged it?

Could I report as I do at the close,

First, the preacher speaks through his nose :

Second, his gesture is too emphatic :

Thirdly, to waive what's pedagogic,

The subject-matter itself lacks logic :

Fourthly, the English is ungrammatic.

Great news ! the sermon proves no Pascal,

Whom, if I pleased, I might to the task call

Of making square to a finite eye

The circle of infinity,

And find so all-but-just-succeeding !

Great news ! the sermon proves no reading

Where bee-like in the flowers I bury me,

Like Taylor's the immortal Jeremy !

And now that I know the very worst of him,

What was it I thought to obtain at first of him ?

Ha ! Is God mocked, as he asks ?

Shall I take on me to change his tasks,

And dare, despatched to a river-head

For a simple draught of the element,

Neglect the thing for which he sent,

And return with another thing instead ?—

Saying, " Because the water found

" Welling up from underground,

" Is mingled with the taints of earth,

" While thou, I know, dost laugh at dearth,

" And couldst, at wink or word, convulse

" The world with the leap of a river-pulse,—

" Therefore I turned from the oozeings muddy,

" And bring thee a chalice I found, instead :

" See the brave veins in the breccia ruddy !

" One would suppose that the marble bled.

" What matters the water ? A hope I have

nursed :

" The waterless cup will quench my thirst."

—Better have knelt at the poorest stream

That trickles in pain from the straitest rift !

For the less or the more is all God's gift,

Who blocks up or breaks wide the granite-seam.

And here, is there water or not, to drink ?

I then, in ignorance and weakness,

Taking God's help, have attained to think

My heart does best to receive in meekness

That mode of worship, as most to his mind,

Where earthly aids being cast behind,

His All in All appears serene

With the thinnest human veil between,

Letting the mystic lamps, the seven,

The many motions of his spirit,

Pass, as they list, to earth from heaven.

For the preacher's merit or demerit,

It were to be wished the flaws were fewer :

In the earthen vessel, holding treasure

Which lies as safe in a golden ewer ;

But the main thing is, does it hold good

measure ?

Heaven soon sets right all other matters !—

Ask, else, these ruins of humanity,

This flesh worn out to rags and tatters,

This soul at struggle with insanity,

Who thence take comfort—can I doubt ?—

Which an empire gained, were a loss without.

May it be mine ! And let us hope

That no worse blessing befell the Pope,

Turned sick at last of to-day's buffoonery,

Of posturings and petticoatings,

Beside his Bourbon bully's gloatings

In the bloody orgies of drunk poltroonery !

Nor may the Professor forego its peace

At Göttingen presently, when, in the dusk

Of his life, if his cough, as I fear, should

increase,

Prophesied of by that horrible husk—

When thicker and thicker the darkness fills

The world through his misty spectacles,

And he gropes for something more substantial

Than a fable, myth or personification,—

May Christ do for him what no mere man

shall,

And stand confessed as the God of salvation !

Meantime, in the still recurring fear

Lest myself, at unawares, be found,

While attacking the choice of my neighbours

round,

With none of my own made—I choose here !

The giving out of the hymn reclaims me ;

I have done : and if any blames me,

Thinking that merely to touch in brevity

The topics I dwell on, were unlawful,—

Or worse, that I trench, with undue levity,

On the bounds of the holy and the awful,—

I praise the heart, and pity the head of  
him,

And refer myself to THEE, instead of him,  
Who head and heart alike discernest,

Looking below light speech we utter,

When frothy spume and frequent sputter  
Prove that the soul's depths boil in earnest !

May truth shine out, stand ever before us !

I put up pencil and join chorus

To Hepzibah Tune, without further apology,

The last five verses of the third section

Of the seventeenth hymn of Whitfield's

Collection,

To conclude with the doxology.

### EASTER-DAY.

How very hard it is to be

A Christian ! Hard for you and me,

—Not the mere task of making real

That duty up to its ideal,

Effecting thus, complete and whole,

A purpose of the human soul—

For that is always hard to do ;

But hard, I mean, for me and you

To realize it, more or less,

With even the moderate success

Which commonly repays our strife

To carry out the aims of life.

"This aim is greater," you will say,

"And so more arduous every way."

—But the importance of their fruits

Still proves to man, in all pursuits,

Proportional encouragement.

"Then, what if it be God's intent

"That labour to this one result

"Should seem unduly difficult?"

Ah, that's a question in the dark—

And the sole thing that I remark

Upon the difficulty, this ;

We do not see it where it is,

At the beginning of the race :

As we proceed, it shifts its place,

And where we looked for crowns to fall,

We find the tug's to come,—that's all.

### II.

At first you say, "The whole, or chief

"Of difficulties, is belief.

"Could I believe once thoroughly,

"The rest were simple. What? Am I

"An idiot, do you think,—a beast?

"Prove to me, only that the least

"Command of God is God's indeed,

"And what injunction shall I need

"To pay obedience? Death so nigh,

"When time must end, eternity

"Begin,—and cannot I compute,

"Weigh loss and gain together, suit

"My actions to the balance drawn,

"And give my body to be sawn

"Asunder, hacked in pieces, tied

"To horses, stoned, burned, crucified,

"Like any martyr of the list?

"How gladly!—if I make acquit,

"Through the brief minute's fierce annoy,

"Of God's eternity of joy."

### III.

—And certainly you name the point

Whereon all turns : for could you joint

This flexile finite life once tight

Into the fixed and infinite,

You, safe inside, would spurn what's out,

With carelessness enough, no doubt—

Would spurn mere life : but when time brings

To their next stage your reasonings,

Your eyes, late wide, begin to wink

Nor see the path so well, I think.

You say, "Faith may be, one agrees,

"A touchstone for God's purposes,

"Even as ourselves conceive of them.

"Could he acquit us or condemn

"For holding what no hand can loose.

"Rejecting when we can't but choose?

"As well award the victor's wreath

"To whosoever should take breath

"Duly each minute while he lived—

"Grant heaven, because a man contrived

"To see its sunlight every day

"He walked forth on the public way.

"You must mix some uncertainty  
 "With faith, if you would have faith be.  
 "Why, what but faith, do we abhor  
 "And idolize each other for—  
 "Faith in our evil or our good,  
 "Which is or is not understood  
 "Aright by those we love or those  
 "We hate, thence called our friends or  
 foes?

"Your mistress saw your spirit's grace,  
 "When, turning from the ugly face,  
 "I found belief in it too hard;  
 "And she and I have our reward.  
 "—Yet here a doubt peeps: well for us  
 "Weak beings, to go using thus  
 "A touchstone for our little ends,  
 "Trying with faith the foes and friends;  
 "—But God, bethink you! I would fain  
 "Conceive of the Creator's reign  
 "As based upon exacter laws  
 "Than creatures build by with applause.  
 "In all God's acts—(as Plato cries  
 "He doth)—he should geometrize.  
 "Whence, I desiderate . . ."

## V.

I see!

You would grow as a natural tree,  
 Stand as a rock, soar up like fire.  
 The world's so perfect and entire,  
 Quite above faith, so right and fit!  
 Go there, walk up and down in it!  
 No. The creation travails, groans—  
 Contrive your music from its moans,  
 Without or let or hindrance, friend!  
 That's an old story, and its end  
 As old—you come back (be sincere)  
 With every question you put here  
 (Here where there once was, and is still,  
 We think, a living oracle,  
 Whose answers you stand carping at)  
 This time flung back unanswered flat,—  
 Beside, perhaps, as many more  
 As those that drove you out before,  
 Now added, where was little need.  
 Questions impossible, indeed,  
 To us who sat still, all and each  
 Persuaded that our earth had speech,

VOL. 1.

Of God's, writ down, no matter if  
 In cursive type or hieroglyph,—  
 Which one fact freed us from the yoke  
 Of guessing why He never spoke.  
 You come back in no better plight  
 Than when you left us,—am I right?

## VI.

So, the old process, I conclude,  
 Goes on, the reasoning's pursued  
 Further. You own, "'Tis well averred,  
 "A scientific faith's absurd,  
 "—Frustrates the very end 'twas meant  
 "To serve. So, I would rest content  
 "With a mere probability,  
 "But, probable; the chance must lie  
 "Clear on one side,—lie all in rough,  
 "So long as there be just enough  
 "To pin my faith to, though it hap  
 "Only at points: from gap to gap  
 "One hangs up a huge curtain so,  
 "Grandly, nor seeks to have it go  
 "Foldless and flat along the wall.  
 "What care I if some interval  
 "Of life less plainly may depend  
 "On God? I'd hang there to the end;  
 "And thus I should not find it hard  
 "To be a Christian and debarred  
 "From trailing on the earth, till furled  
 "Away by death.—Renounce the world!  
 "Were that a mighty hardship? Plan  
 "A pleasant life, and straight some man  
 "Beside you, with, if he thought fit,  
 "Abundant means to compass it,  
 "Shall turn deliberate aside  
 "To try and live as, if you tried  
 "You clearly might, yet most despise.  
 "One friend of mine wears out his eyes,  
 "Slighting the stupid joys of sense,  
 "In patient hope that, ten years hence,  
 "Somewhat comp'eter,<sup>1</sup> he may say,  
 "'My list of *coleoptera*!'<sup>1</sup>  
 "While just the other who most laughs  
 "At him, above all epitaphs  
 "Aspires to have his tomb describe  
 "Himself as sole among the tribe

<sup>1</sup> Beetles.

"Of snuffbox-fanciers, who possessed  
 "A Grignon with the Regent's crest.  
 "So that, subduing, as you want,  
 "Whatever stands predominant  
 "Among my earthly appetites  
 "For tastes and smells and sounds and sights,  
 "I shall be doing that alone,  
 "To gain a palm-branch and a throne.  
 "Which fifty people undertake  
 "To do, and gladly, for the sake  
 "Of giving a Semitic guess,  
 "Or playing pawns at blindfold chess."

## VII.

Good : and the next thing is,—look round  
 For evidence enough ! 'Tis found,  
 No doubt : as is your sort of mind,  
 So is your sort of search : you'll find  
 What you desire, and that's to be  
 A Christian. What says history ?  
 How comforting a point it were  
 To find some mummy-scrap declare  
 There lived a Moses ! Better still,  
 Prove Jonah's whale translatable  
 Into some quicksand of the seas,  
 Isle, cavern, rock, or what you please,  
 That faith might flap her wings and crow  
 From such an eminence ! Or, no—  
 The human heart's best ; you prefer  
 Making that prove the minister  
 To truth ; you probe its wants and needs,  
 And hopes and fears, then try what creeds  
 Meet these most aptly,—resolute  
 That faith plucks such substantial fruit  
 Wherever these two correspond,  
 She little needs to look beyond,  
 And puzzle out who Orpheus was,  
 Or Dionysius Zagrias.<sup>1</sup>  
 You'll find sufficient, as I say,  
 To satisfy you either way ;  
 You wanted to believe ; your pains  
 Are crowned—you do : and what remains ?  
 "Renounce the world !"—Ah, were it done  
 By merely cutting one by one  
 Your limbs off, with your wise head last,  
 How easy were it !—how soon past,

<sup>1</sup> A name for the god.

If once in the believing mood !  
 "Such is man's usual gratitude,  
 "Such thanks to God do we return,  
 "For not exacting that we spurn  
 "A single gift of life, forego  
 "One real gain,—only taste them so  
 "With gravity and temperance,  
 "That those mild virtues may enhance  
 "Such pleasures, rather than abstract—  
 "Last spice of which, will be the fact  
 "Of love discerned in every gift ;  
 "While, when the scene of life shall shift  
 "And the gay heart be taught to ache,  
 "As sorrows and privations take  
 "The place of joy,—the thing that seems  
 "Mere misery, under human schemes,  
 "Becomes, regarded by the light  
 "Of love, as very near, or quite  
 "As good a gift as joy before.  
 "So plain is it that, all the more  
 "A dispensation's merciful,  
 "More pettishly we try and cull  
 "Briers, thistles, from our private plot,  
 "To mar God's ground where thorns are  
 not !"

## VIII.

Do you say this, or I ?—Oh, you !  
 Then, what, my friend ?—(thus I pursue  
 Our parley)—you indeed opine  
 That the Eternal and Divine  
 Did, eighteen centuries ago,  
 In very truth . . . Enough ! you know  
 The all-stupendous tale,—that Birth,  
 That Life, that Death ! And all, the earth  
 Shuddered at,—all, the heavens grew black  
 Rather than see ; all, nature's rack  
 And throes at dissolution's brink  
 Attested,—all took place, you think,  
 Only to give our joys a zest,  
 And prove our sorrows for the best ?  
 We differ, then ! Where I, still pale  
 And heartstruck at the dreadful tale,  
 Waiting to hear God's voice declare  
 What horror followed for my share,  
 As implicated in the deed,  
 Apart from other sins,—concede  
 That if He blacked out in a blot  
 My brief life's pleasantness, 'twere not

So very disproportionate !  
 Or there might be another fate—  
 I certainly could understand  
 (If fancies were the thing in hand)  
 How God might save, at that day's price,  
 The impure in their impurities,  
 Give licence formal and complete  
 To choose the fair and pick the sweet.  
 But there be certain words, broad, plain,  
 Uttered again and yet again,  
 Hard to mistake or overgloss—  
 Announcing this world's gain for loss,  
 And bidding us reject the same :  
 The whole world lieth (they proclaim)  
 In wickedness,—come out of it !  
 Turn a deaf ear, if you think fit,  
 But I who thrill through every nerve  
 At thought of what deaf ears deserve—  
 How do you counsel in the case ?

## IX.

" I'd take, by all means, in your place,  
 " The safe side, since it so appears :  
 " Deny myself, a few brief years,  
 " The natural pleasure, leave the fruit  
 " Or cut the plant up by the root.  
 " Remember what a martyr said  
 " On the rude tablet overhead !  
 " ' I was born sickly, poor and mean,  
 " ' A slave : no misery could screen  
 " ' The holders of the pearl of price  
 " ' From Cæsar's envy ; therefore twice  
 " ' I fought with beasts, and three times  
   saw  
 " ' My children suffer by his law ;  
 " ' At last my own release was earned :  
 " ' I was some time in being burned,  
 " ' But at the close a Hand came through  
 " ' The fire above my head, and drew  
 " ' My soul to Christ, whom now I see.  
 " ' Sergius, a brother, writes for me  
 " ' This testimony on the wall—  
 " ' For me, I have forgot it all.'  
 " You say right ; this were not so hard !  
 " And since one nowise is debarred  
 " From this, why not escape some sins  
 " By such a method ?"

## X.

Then begins  
 To the old point revulsion new—  
 (For 'tis just this I bring you to)  
 If after all we should mistake,  
 And so renounce life for the sake  
 Of death and nothing else ? You hear  
 Each friend we jeered at, send the jeer  
 Back to ourselves with good effect—  
 " There were my beetles to collect !  
 " My box—a trifle, I confess,  
 " But here I hold it, ne'ertheless !"  
 Poor idiots, (let us pluck up heart  
 And answer) we, the better part  
 Have chosen, though 'twere only hope,—  
 Nor envy moles like you that grope  
 Amid your veritable muck,  
 More than the grasshoppers would truck,  
 For yours, their passionate life away,  
 That spends itself in leaps all day  
 To reach the sun, you want the eyes  
 To see, as they the wings to rise  
 And match the noble hearts of them !  
 Thus the contemner we condemn,—  
 And, when doubt strikes us, thus we ward  
 Its stroke off, caught upon our guard,  
 Not struck enough to overturn  
 Our faith, but shake it—make us learn  
 What I began with, and, I wis,  
 End, having proved,—how hard it is  
 To be a Christian !

## XI.

" Proved, or not,  
 ' Howe'er you wis, small thanks, I wot,  
 ' You get of mine, for taking pains  
 ' To make it hard to me. Who gains  
 ' By that, I wonder ? Here I live  
 ' In trusting ease ; and here you drive  
 ' At causing me to lose what most  
 ' Yourself would mourn for had you lost !"

## XII.

But, do you see, my friend, that thus  
 You leave Saint Paul for Æschylus ?  
 —Who made his Titan's arch-device  
 The giving men *blind hopes* to spice  
 The meal of life with, else devoured  
 In bitter haste, while lo, death loured



Before them at the platter's edge !  
 If faith should be, as I allege,  
 Quite other than a condiment  
 To heighten flavours with, or meant  
 (Like that brave curry of his Grace)  
 To take at need the victuals' place ?  
 If, having dined, you would digest  
 Besides, and turning to your rest  
 Should find instead . . .

## XIII.

Now, you shall see

And judge if a mere foppery  
 Pricks on my speaking ! I resolve  
 To utter—yes, it shall devolve  
 On you to hear as solemn, strange  
 And dread a thing as in the range  
 Of facts,—or fancies, if God will—  
 E'er happened to our kind ! I still  
 Stand in the cloud and, while it wraps  
 My face, ought not to speak perhaps ;  
 Seeing that if I carry through  
 My purpose, if my words in you  
 Find a live actual listener,  
 My story, reason must aver  
 False after all—the happy chance !  
 While, if each human countenance  
 I meet in London day by day,  
 Be what I fear,—my warnings fray  
 No one, and no one they convert,  
 And no one helps me to assert  
 How hard it is to really be  
 A Christian, and in vacancy  
 I pour this story !

## XIV.

I commence

By trying to inform you, whence  
 It comes that every Easter-night  
 As now, I sit up, watch, till light,  
 Upon those chimney-stacks and roofs,  
 Give, through my window-pane, grey proofs  
 That Easter-day is breaking slow.  
 On such a night three years ago,  
 It chanced that I had cause to cross  
 The common, where the chapel was,  
 Our friend spoke of, the other day—  
 You've not forgotten, I dare say.

I fell to musing of the time.  
 So close, the blessed matin-prime  
 All hearts leap up at, in some guise—  
 One could not well do otherwise.  
 Insensibly my thoughts were bent  
 Toward the main point ; I overwent  
 Much the same ground of reasoning  
 As you and I just now. One thing  
 Remained, however—one that tasked  
 My soul to answer ; and I asked,  
 Fairly and frankly, what might be  
 That History, that Faith, to me  
 —Me there—not me in some domain  
 Built up and peopled by my brain,  
 Weighing its merits as one weighs  
 Mere theories for blame or praise,  
 —The kingcraft of the Lucumons,<sup>1</sup>  
 Or Fourier's scheme, its pros and cons,—  
 But my faith there, or none at all.  
 "How were my case, now, did I fall  
 "Dead here, this minute—should I lie  
 "Faithful or faithless?" Note that I  
 Inclined thus ever !—little prone  
 For instance, when I lay alone  
 In childhood, to go calm to sleep  
 And leave a closet where might keep  
 His watch perdue some murderer  
 Waiting till twelve o'clock to stir,  
 As good authentic legends tell :  
 "He might : but how improbable !  
 "How little likely to deserve  
 "The pains and trial to the nerve  
 "Of thrusting head into the dark !" —  
 Urged my old nurse, and bade me mark  
 Beside, that, should the dreadful scout  
 Really lie hid there, and leap out  
 At first turn of the rusty key,  
 Mine were small gain that she could see,  
 Killed not in bed but on the floor,  
 And losing one night's sleep the more.  
 I tell you, I would always burst  
 The door ope, know my fate at first.  
 This time, indeed, the closet penned  
 No such assassin : but a friend  
 Rather, peeped out to guard me, fit  
 For counsel, Common Sense, to wit,

<sup>1</sup> Heads of Etruscan families.

Who said a good deal that might pass,—  
 Heartening, impartial too, it was,  
 Judge else: "For, soberly now,—who  
 "Should be a Christian if not you?"  
 (Hear how he smoothed me down.) "One  
 takes  
 "A whole life, sees what course it makes  
 "Mainly, and not by fits and starts—  
 "In spite of stoppage which imparts  
 "Fresh value to the general speed.  
 "A life, with none, would fly indeed:  
 "Your progressing is slower—right!  
 "We deal with progress and not flight.  
 "Through baffling senses passionate,  
 "Fancies as restless,—with a freight  
 "Of knowledge cumbersome enough  
 "To sink your ship when waves grow rough,  
 "Though meant for ballast in the hold,—  
 "I find, 'mid dangers manifold,  
 "The good bark answers to the helm  
 "Where faith sits, easier to o'erwhelm  
 "Than some stout peasant's heavenly guide,  
 "Whose hard head could not, if it tried,  
 "Conceive a doubt, nor understand  
 "How senses hornier than his hand  
 "Should 'tice the Christian off his guard.  
 "More happy! But shall we award  
 "Less honour to the hull which, dogged  
 "By storms, a mere wreck, waterlogged,  
 "Masts by the board, her bulwarks gone  
 "And stanchions going, yet bears on,—  
 "Than to mere life-boats, built to save,  
 "And triumph o'er the breaking wave?  
 "Make perfect your good ship as these,  
 "And what were her performances!"  
 I added—"Would the ship reach home!  
 "I wish indeed 'God's kingdom come—'  
 "The day when I shall see appear  
 "His bidding, as my duty, clear  
 "From doubt! And it shall dawn, that  
 day,  
 "Some future season; Easter may  
 "Prove, not impossibly, the time—  
 "Yes, that were striking—fates would chime  
 "So aptly! Easter-morn, to bring  
 "The Judgment!—deeper in the spring.  
 "Than now, however, when there's snow  
 "Capping the hills; for earth must show

"All signs of meaning to pursue  
 "Her tasks as she was wont to do  
 "—The skylark, taken by surprise  
 "As we ourselves, shall recognize  
 "Sudden the end. For suddenly  
 "It comes; the dreadfulness must be  
 "In that; all warrants the belief—  
 "—"At night it cometh like a thief."  
 "I fancy why the trumpet blows;  
 "—Plainly, to wake one. From repose  
 "We shall start up, at last awake  
 "From life, that insane dream we take  
 "For waking now, because it seems.  
 "And as, when now we wake from dreams,  
 "We laugh, while we recall them, 'Fool,  
 "'To let the chance slip, linger cool  
 "'When such adventure offered! Just  
 "'A bridge to cross, a dwarf to thrust  
 "'Aside, a wicked mage to stab—  
 "'And, lo ye, I had kissed Queen Mab!'"  
 "So shall we marvel why we grudged  
 "Our labour here, and idly judged  
 "Of heaven, we might have gained, but  
 lose!  
 "Lose? Talk of loss, and I refuse  
 "To plead at all! You speak no worse  
 "Nor better than my ancient nurse  
 When she would tell me in my youth  
 "I well deserved that shapes uncouth  
 "Frighted and teased me in my sleep:  
 "Why could I not in memory keep  
 "Her precept for the evil's cure?  
 Pinch your own arm, boy, and be sure  
 You'll wake forthwith!"

And as I said

This nonsense, throwing back my head  
 With light complacent laugh, I found  
 Suddenly all the midnight round  
 One fire. The dome of heaven had stood  
 As made up of a multitude  
 Of handbreadth cloudlets, one vast rack  
 Of ripples infinite and black,  
 From sky to sky. Sudden there went,  
 Like horror and astonishment,  
 A fierce vindictive scribble of red  
 Quick flame across, as if one said

(The angry scribe of Judgment) "There—  
 "Burn it!" And straight I was aware  
 That the whole ribwork round, minute  
 Cloud touching cloud beyond compute,  
 Was tinted, each with its own spot  
 Of burning at the core, till clot  
 Jammed against clot, and spilt its fire  
 Over all heaven, which 'gan suspire  
 As fanned to measure equable,—  
 Just so great conflagrations kill  
 Night overhead, and rise and sink,  
 Reflected. Now the fire would shrink  
 And wither off the blasted face  
 Of heaven, and I distinct might trace  
 The sharp black ridgy outlines left  
 Unburned like network—then, each cleft  
 The fire had been sucked back into,  
 Regorged, and out it surging flew  
 Furiously, and night writhed inflamed,  
 Till, tolerating to be tamed  
 No longer, certain rays world-wide  
 Shot downwardly. On every side  
 Caught past escape, the earth was lit;  
 As if a dragon's nostril split  
 And all his famished ire o'erflowed;  
 Then, as he winced at his lord's goad,  
 Back he inhaled: whereat I found  
 The clouds into vast pillars bound,  
 Based on the corners of the earth,  
 Propping the skies at top: a dearth  
 Of fire i' the violet intervals,  
 Leaving exposed the utmost walls  
 Of time, about to tumble in  
 And end the world.

## XVI.

I felt begin  
 The Judgment-Day: to retrocede  
 Was too late now. "In very deed,"  
 (I uttered to myself) "that Day!"  
 The intuition burned away  
 All darkness from my spirit too:  
 There, stood I, found and fixed, I knew,  
 Choosing the world. The choice was made;  
 And naked and disguiseless stayed,  
 And unevadable, the fact.  
 My brain held all the same compact  
 Its senses, nor my heart declined  
 Its office; rather, both combined

To help me in this juncture. I  
 Lost not a second,—agony  
 Gave boldness: since my life had end  
 And my choice with it—best defend,  
 Applaud both! I resolved to say,  
 "So was I framed by thee, such way  
 "I put to use thy senses here!  
 "It was so beautiful, so near,  
 "Thy world,—what could I then but choose  
 "My part there? Nor did I refuse  
 "To look above the transient boon  
 "Of time; but it was hard so soon  
 "As in a short life, to give up  
 "Such beauty: I could put the cup  
 "Undrained of half its fulness, by;  
 "But, to renounce it utterly,  
 "—That was too hard! Nor did the cry  
 "Which bade renounce it, touch my brain  
 "Authentically deep and plain  
 "Enough to make my lips let go.  
 "But Thou, who knowest all, dost know  
 "Whether I was not, life's brief while,  
 "Endeavouring to reconcile  
 "Those lips (too tardily, alas!)  
 "To letting the dear remnant pass,  
 "One day,—some drops of earthly good  
 "Untasted! Is it for this mood,  
 "That Thou, whose earth delights so well,  
 "Hast made its complement a hell?"

## XVII.

A final belch of fire like blood,  
 Overbroke all heaven in one flood  
 Of doom. Then fire was sky, and sky  
 Fire, and both, one brief ecstasy,  
 Then ashes. But I heard no noise  
 (Whatever was) because a voice  
 Beside me spoke thus, "Life is done,  
 "Time ends, Eternity's begun,  
 "And thou art judged for evermore."

## XVIII.

I looked up; all seemed as before;  
 Of that cloud-Tophet overhead  
 No trace was left: I saw instead  
 The common round me, and the sky  
 Above, stretched drear and empty

Of life. 'Twas the last watch of night,  
Except what brings the morning quite;  
When the armed angel, conscience-clear,  
His task nigh done, leans o'er his spear  
And gazes on the earth he guards,  
Safe one night more through all its wards,  
Till God relieve him at his post.

"A dream—a waking dream at most!"  
(I spoke out quick, that I might shake  
The horrid nightmare off, and wake.)

"The world gone, yet the world is here?"

"Are not all things as they appear?"

"Is Judgment past for me alone?"

"—And where had place the great white  
throne?"

"The rising of the quick and dead?"

"Where stood they, small and great? Who  
read

"The sentence from the opened book?"

So, by degrees, the blood forsook  
My heart, and let it beat afresh;  
I knew I should break through the mesh  
Of horror, and breathe presently:  
When, lo, again, the voice by me!

I saw . . . Oh brother, 'mid far sands  
The palm-tree-cinctured city stands,  
Bright-white beneath, as heaven, bright-blue,  
Leans o'er it, while the years pursue  
Their course, unable to abate  
Its paradisaal laugh at fate!  
One morn,—the Arab staggers blind  
O'er a new tract of death, calcined  
To ashes, silence, nothingness,—  
And strives, with dizzy wits, to guess  
Whence fell the blow. What if, 'twixt skies  
And prostrate earth, he should surprise  
The imaged vapour, head to foot,  
Surveying, motionless and mute,  
Its work, ere, in a whirlwind rapt  
It vanish up again?—So hapt  
My chance. He stood there. Like the smoke  
Pillared o'er Sodom, when day broke,—  
I saw Him. One magnific pall  
Mantled in massive fold and fall  
His head, and coiled in snaky swaths  
About His feet: night's black, that bathes

All else, broke, grizzled with despair,  
Against the soul of blackness there.  
A gesture told the mood within—  
That wrapped right hand which bared the chin,  
That intense meditation fixed  
On His procedure,—pity mixed  
With the fulfilment of decree.  
Motionless, thus, He spoke to me,  
Who fell before His feet, a mass,  
No man now.

xx.

"All is come to pass.

"Such shows are over for each soul  
"They had respect to. In the roll  
"Of Judgment which convinced mankind  
"Of sin, stood many, bold and blind,  
"Terror must burn the truth into:  
"Their fate for them!—thou hadst to do  
"With absolute omnipotence,  
"Able its judgments to dispense  
"To the whole race, as every one  
"Were its sole object. Judgment done,  
"God is, thou art,—the rest is hurled  
"To nothingness for thee. This world,  
"This finite life, thou hast preferred,  
"In disbelief of God's plain word,  
"To heaven and to infinity.  
"Here the probation was for thee,  
"To show thy soul the earthly mixed  
"With heavenly, it must choose betwixt.  
"The earthly joys lay palpable,—  
"A taint, in each, distinct as well;  
"The heavenly flitted, faint and rare,  
"Above them, but as truly were  
"Taintless, so, in their nature, best.  
"Thy choice was earth: thou didst attest  
"Twas fitter spirit should subserve  
"The flesh, than flesh refine to nerve  
"Beneath the spirit's play. Advance  
"No claim to their inheritance  
"Who chose the spirit's fugitive  
"Brief gleams, and yearned, 'This were to live  
"Indeed, if rays, completely pure  
"From flesh that dulls them, could endure,—  
"Not shoot in meteor-light athwart  
"Our earth, to show how cold and swart  
"It lies beneath their fire, but stand  
"As stars do, destined to expand,

" 'Prove veritable worlds, our home !'  
 "Thou saidst,— 'Let spirit star the dome  
 " 'Of sky, that flesh may miss no peak,  
 " 'No nook of earth,—I shall not seek  
 " 'Its service further !' Thou art shut  
 "Out of the heaven of spirit ; glut  
 "Thy sense upon the world : 'tis thine  
 "For ever—take it !"

## XXI.

"How ? Is mine,  
 "The world ?" (I cried, while my soul broke  
 Out in a transport.) "Hast Thou spoke  
 "Plainly in that ? Earth's exquisite  
 "Treasures of wonder and delight,  
 "For me ?"

## XXII.

The austere voice returned,—  
 "So soon made happy ? Hadst thou learned  
 "What God accounteth happiness,  
 "Thou wouldst not find it hard to guess  
 "What hell may be his punishment  
 "For those who doubt if God invent  
 "Better than they. Let such men rest  
 "Content with what they judged the best.  
 "Let the unjust usurp at will :  
 "The filthy shall be filthy still :  
 "Miser, there waits the gold for thee !  
 "Hater, indulge thine enmity !  
 "And thou, whose heaven self-ordained  
 "Was, to enjoy earth unrestrained,  
 "Do it ! Take all the ancient show !  
 "The woods shall wave, the rivers flow,  
 "And men apparently pursue  
 "Their works, as they were wont to do,  
 "While living in probation yet.  
 "I promise not thou shalt forget  
 "The past, now gone to its account ;  
 "But leave thee with the old amount  
 "Of faculties, nor less nor more,  
 "Unvisited, as heretofore,  
 "By God's free spirit, that makes an end.  
 "So, once more, take thy world ! Expend  
 "Eternity upon its shows,  
 "Flung thee as freely as one rose  
 "Out of a summer's opulence,  
 "Over the Eden-barrier whence  
 "Thou art excluded. Knock in vain !"

## XXIII.

I sat up. All was still again.  
 I breathed free : to my heart, back fled  
 The warmth. "But, all the world !"—I said,  
 I stooped and picked a leaf of fern,  
 And recollected I might learn  
 From books, how many myriad sorts  
 Of fern exist, to trust reports,  
 Each as distinct and beautiful  
 As this, the very first I cull.  
 Think, from the first leaf to the last !  
 Conceive, then, earth's resources ! Vast  
 Exhaustless beauty, endless change  
 Of wonder ! And this foot shall range  
 Alps, Andes,—and this eye devour  
 The bee-bird and the aloë-flower ?

## XXIV.

Then the voice, "Welcome so to rate  
 "The arras-folds that variegate  
 "The earth, God's antechamber, well !  
 "The wise, who waited there, could tell  
 "By these, what royalties in store  
 "Lay one step past the entrance-door.  
 "For whom, was reckoned, not too much,  
 "This life's munificence ? For such  
 "As thou,—a race, whereof scarce one  
 "Was able, in a million,  
 "To feel that any marvel lay  
 "In objects round his feet all day ;  
 "Scarce one, in many millions more,  
 "Willing, if able, to explore  
 "The secreter, minuter charm !  
 "—Brave souls, a fern-leaf could disarm  
 "Of power to cope with God's intent,—  
 "Or scared if the south firmament  
 "With north-fire did its wings reflexed !  
 "All partial beauty was a pledge  
 "Of beauty in its plenitude :  
 "But since the pledge sufficed thy mood,  
 "Retain it ! plenitude be theirs  
 "Who looked above !"

## XXV.

Though sharp despairs  
 Shot through me, I held up, bore on.  
 "What matter though my trust were gone  
 "From natural things ? Henceforth my part  
 "Be less with nature than with art !

'For art supplants, gives mainly worth  
'To nature ; 'tis man stamps the earth—  
'And I will seek his impress, seek  
'The statuary of the Greek,  
'Italy's painting—there my choice  
'Shall fix !"

## XXVI.

"Obtain it !" said the voice,  
—The one form with its single act,  
'Which sculptors laboured to abstract,  
'The one face, painters tried to draw,  
'With its one look, from throngs they saw.  
'And that perfection in their soul,  
'These only hinted at ? The whole,  
'They were but parts of ? What each laid  
'His claim to glory on ?—afraid  
'His fellow-men should give him rank  
'By mere tentatives which he shrank  
'Smitten at heart from, all the more,  
'That gazers pressed in to adore !  
'Shall I be judged by only these ?'  
'If such his soul's capacities,  
'Even while he trod the earth,—think, now,  
'What pomp in Buonarroti's brow,  
'With its new palace-brain where dwells  
'Superb the soul, unvexed by cells  
'That crumbled with the transient clay !  
'What visions will his right hand's sway  
'Still turn to forms ; as still they burst  
'Upon him ? How will he quench thirst,  
'Titanically infantine,  
'Laid at the breast of the Divine ?  
'Does it confound thee,—this first page  
'Emblazoning man's heritage ?—  
'Can this alone absorb thy sight,  
'As pages were not infinite,—  
'Like the omnipotence which tasks  
'Itself to furnish all that asks  
'The soul it means to satiate ?  
'What was the world, the starry state  
'Of the broad skies,—what, all displays  
'Of power and beauty intermixed,  
'Which now thy soul is chained betwixt,—  
'What else than needful furniture  
'For life's first stage ? God's work, be  
sure,  
'No more spreads wasted, than falls scant !  
'He filled, did not exceed, man's want

## VOL. I.

"Of beauty in this life. But through  
'Life pierce,—and what has earth to do,  
'Its utmost beauty's appanage,  
'With the requirement of next stage ?  
'Did God pronounce earth 'very good' ?  
'Needs must it be, while understood  
'For man's preparatory state ;  
'Nought here to heighten nor abate ;  
'Transfer the same completeness here,  
'To serve a new state's use,—and drear  
'Deficiency gapes every side !  
'The good, tried once, were bad, retired.  
'See the enwrapping rocky niche,  
'Sufficient for the sleep in which  
'The lizard breathes for ages safe :  
'Split the mould—and as light would  
chafe  
'The creature's new world-widened sense,  
'Dazzled to death at evidence  
'Of all the sounds and sights that broke  
'Innumerable at the chisel's stroke,—  
'So, in God's eye, the earth's first stuff  
'Was, neither more nor less, enough  
'To house man's soul, man's need fulfil.  
'Man reckoned it immeasurable ?  
'So thinks the lizard of his vault !  
'Could God be taken in default,  
'Short of contrivances, by you,—  
'Or reached, ere ready to pursue  
'His progress through eternity ?  
'That chambered rock, the lizard's world,  
'Your easy mallet's blow has hurled  
'To nothingness for ever ; so,  
'Has God abolished at a blow  
'This world, wherein his saints were pent,—  
'Who, though found grateful and content,  
'With the provision there, as thou,  
'Yet knew he would not disallow  
'Their spirit's hunger, felt as well,—  
'Unsated,—not unsatable,  
'As paradise gives proof. Deride  
'Their choice now, thou who sit'st outside !"

## XXVII.

I cried in anguish, "Mind, the mind,  
'So miserably cast behind,  
'To gain what had been wisely lost !  
'Oh, let me strive to make the most

"Of the poor stunted soul, I nipped  
 "Of budding wings, else now equipped  
 "For voyage from summer isle to isle !  
 "And though she needs must reconcile  
 "Ambition to the life on ground,  
 "Still, I can profit by late found  
 "But precious knowledge. Mind is best--  
 "I will seize mind, forego the rest,  
 "And try how far my tethered strength  
 "May crawl in this poor breadth and length.  
 "Let me, since I can fly no more,  
 "At least spin dervish-like about  
 "(Till giddy rapture almost doubt  
 "I fly) through circling sciences,  
 "Philosophies and histories  
 "Should the whirl slacken there, then verse,  
 "Fining to music, shall asperse  
 "Fresh and fresh fire-dew, till I strain  
 "Intoxicate, half-break my chain !  
 "Not joyless, though more favoured feast  
 "Stand calm, where I want wings to beat  
 "The floor. At least earth's bond is broke !"

## XXVIII

Then, (sickening even while I spoke)  
 "Let me alone ! No answer, pray,  
 "To this ! I know what Thou wilt say !  
 "All still is earth's,--to know, as much  
 "As feel its truths, which if we touch  
 "With sense, or apprehend in soul,  
 "What matter ? I have reached the goal--  
 "'Where to does knowledge serve !' will burn  
 "My eyes, too sure, at every turn !  
 "I cannot look back now, nor stake  
 "Bliss on the race, for running's sake.  
 "The goal's a ruin like the rest !--  
 "And so much worse thy latter quest,"  
 (Added the voice) "that even on earth  
 "Whenever, in man's soul, had birth  
 "Those intuitions, grasps of guess,  
 "Which pull the more into the less,  
 "Making the finite comprehend  
 "Infinity,--the bard would spend  
 "Such praise alone, upon his craft,  
 "As, when wind-lyres obey the waft,  
 "Goes to the craftsman who arranged  
 "The seven strings, changed them and re-  
 changed--

"Knowing it was the South that harped.  
 "He felt his song, in singing, warped ;  
 "Distinguished his and God's part : whence  
 "A world of spirit as of sense  
 "Was plain to him, yet not too plain,  
 "Which he could traverse, not remain  
 "A guest in :--else were permanent  
 "Heaven on the earth its gleams were meant  
 "To sting with hunger for full light,--  
 "Made visible in verse, despite  
 "The veiling weakness,--truth by means  
 "Of fable, showing while it screens,--  
 "Since highest truth, man e'er supplied,  
 "Was ever fable on outside.  
 "Such gleams made bright the earth an age ;  
 "Now the whole sun's his heritage !  
 "Take up thy world, it is allowed,  
 "Thou who hast entered in the cloud !"

## XXIX.

Then I--"Behold, my spirit bleeds,  
 "Catches no more at broken reeds,--  
 "But lilies flower those reeds above :  
 "I let the world go, and take love !  
 "Love survives in me, albeit those  
 "I love be henceforth masks and shows,  
 "Not living men and women : still  
 "I mind how love repaired all ill,  
 "Cured wrong, soothed grief, made earth  
 amends  
 "With parents, brothers, children, friends !  
 "Some semblance of a woman yet  
 "With eyes to help me to forget,  
 "Shall look on me ; and I will match  
 "Departed love with love, attach  
 "Old memories to new dreams, nor scorn  
 "The poorest of the grains of corn  
 "I save from shipwreck on this isle,  
 "Trusting its barrenness may smile  
 "With happy foodful green one day,  
 "More precious for the pains. I pray,--  
 "I leave to love, only !"

## XXX.

At the word,  
 The form, I looked to have been stirred  
 With pity and approval, rose  
 O'er me, as when the headsmen throws

Axe over shoulder to make end—  
 I fell prone, letting Him expend  
 His wrath, while thus the inflicting voice  
 Smote me. "Is this thy final choice?  
 "Love is the best? 'Tis somewhat late!  
 "And all thou dost enumerate  
 "Of power and beauty in the world,  
 "The mightiness of love was curled  
 "Inextricably round about.  
 "Love lay within it and without,  
 "To clasp thee,—but in vain! Thy soul  
 "Still shrunk from Him who made the  
     whole,  
 "Still set deliberate aside  
 "His love!—Now take love! Well betide  
 "Thy tardy conscience! Haste to take  
 "The show of love for the name's sake,  
 "Remembering every moment Who,  
 "Beside creating thee unto  
 "These ends, and these for thee, was said  
 "To undergo death in thy stead  
 "In flesh like thine: so ran the tale.  
 "What doubt in thee could countervail  
 "Belief in it? Upon the ground  
 "'That in the story had been found  
 "'Too much love! How could God love  
     so?'  
 "He who in all his works below  
 "Adapted to the needs of man,  
 "Made love the basis of the plan,—  
 "Did love, as was demonstrated:  
 "While man, who was so fit instead  
 "To hate, as every day gave proof,—  
 "Man thought man, for his kind's behoof,  
 "Both could and did invent that scheme  
 "Of perfect love: 'twould well bescem  
 "Cain's nature thou wast wont to praise,  
 "Not tally with God's usual ways!"

## XXXI.

And I cowered deprecatingly—  
 "Thou Love of God! Or let me die,  
 "Or grant what shall seem heaven almost!  
 "Let me not know that all is lost,  
 "Though lost it be—leave me not tied  
 "To this despair, this corpse-like bride!  
 "Let that old life seem mine—no more—  
 "With limitation as before,

"With darkness, hunger, toil, distress:  
 "Be all the earth a wilderness!  
 "Only let me go on, go on,  
 "Still hoping ever and anon  
 "To reach one eve the Better Land!"

## XXXII.

Then did the form expand, expand—  
 I knew Him through the dread disguise  
 As the whole God within His eyes  
 Embraced me.

## XXXIII.

When I lived again,  
 The day was breaking,—the grey plain  
 I rose from, silvered thick with dew.  
 Was this a vision? False or true?  
 Since then, three varied years are spent,  
 And commonly my mind is bent  
 To think it was a dream—be sure  
 A mere dream and distemperature—  
 The last day's watching: then the night,—  
 The shock of that strange Northern Light  
 Set my head swimming, bred in me  
 A dream. And so I live, you see,  
 Go through the world, try, prove, reject,  
 Prefer, still struggling to effect  
 My warfare; happy that I can  
 Be crossed and thwarted as a man,  
 Not left in God's contempt apart,  
 With ghastly smooth life, dead at heart,  
 Fame in earth's paddock as her prize.  
 Thank God, she still each method tries  
 To catch me, who may yet escape,  
 She knows,—the fiend in angel's shape!  
 Thank God, no paradise stands barred  
 To entry, and I find it hard  
 To be a Christian, as I said!  
 Still every now and then my head  
 Raised glad, sinks mournful—all grows  
     drear

Spite of the sunshine, while I fear  
 And think, "How dreadful to be grudged  
     No ease henceforth, as one that's judged.  
     Condemned to earth for ever, shut  
     From heaven!"

But Easter-Day breaks! But  
 Christ rises! Mercy every way  
 Is infinite,—and who can say?



# MEN AND WOMEN.

184—185—

## "TRANSCENDENTALISM: A POEM IN TWELVE BOOKS."

STOP playing, poet ! May a brother speak ?  
'Tis you speak, that's your error. Song's  
our art :

Whereas you please to speak these naked  
thoughts

Instead of draping them in sights and sounds.  
—True thoughts, good thoughts, thoughts fit  
to treasure up !

But why such long prolusion and display,  
Such turning and adjustment of the harp,  
And taking it upon your breast, at length,  
Only to speak dry words across its strings ?  
Stark-naked thought is in request enough :  
Speak prose and hollo it till Europe hears !  
The six-foot Swiss tube, braced about with  
bark,

Which helps the hunter's voice from Alp to  
Alp—

Exchange our harp for that,—who hinders you ?

But here's your fault ; grown men want  
thought, you think ;

Thought's what they mean by verse, and seek  
in verse.

Boys seek for images and melody,  
Men must have reason—so, you aim at men.  
Quite otherwise ! Objects throng our youth,  
'tis true ;

We see and hear and do not wonder much :  
If you could tell us what they mean, indeed !  
As German Boehme<sup>1</sup> never cared for plants  
Until it happened, a-walking in the fields,  
He noticed all at once that plants could speak,  
Nay, turned with loosened tongue to talk  
with him.

That day the daisy had an eye indeed—  
Colloquized with the cowslip on such  
themes !

We find them extant yet in Jacob's prose.  
But by the time youth slips a stage or two  
While reading prose in that tough book he  
wrote

(Collating and emendating the same  
And settling on the sense most to our  
mind),

We shut the clasps and find life's summer  
past.

Then, who helps more, pray, to repair our  
loss—

Another Boehme with a tougher book  
And subtler meanings of what roses say,—  
Or some stout Mage like him of Halberstadt,<sup>2</sup>  
John, who made things Boehme wrote  
thoughts about ?

He with a "look you !" vents a brace of  
rhymes,

And in there breaks the sudden rose herself,  
Over us, under, round us every side,  
Nay, in and out the tables and the chairs  
And musty volumes, Boehme's book and  
all,—

Buries us with a glory, young once more,  
Pouring heaven into this shut house of life.

So come, the harp back to your heart  
again !

You are a poem, though your poem's  
naught.

The best of all you showed before, believe,  
Was your own boy-face o'er the finer chords  
Bent, following the cherub at the top  
That points to God with his paired half-moon  
wings.

<sup>1</sup> Jacob Boehme, a mystical writer (died 1624),  
who turned William Law's head.

<sup>2</sup> John of Halberstadt, a magician botanist  
and a chymist.

HOW IT STRIKES A  
CONTEMPORARY.

I ONLY knew one poet in my life :  
And this, or something like it, was his way.

You saw go up and down Valladolid,  
A man of mark, to know next time you saw.  
His very serviceable suit of black  
Was courtly once and conscientious still,  
And many might have worn it, though none  
did :

The cloak, that somewhat shone and showed  
the threads,

Had purpose, and the ruff, significance.  
He walked and tapped the pavement with  
his cane,

Scenting the world, looking it full in face,  
An old dog, bald and blindish, at his heels.  
They turned up, now, the alley by the  
church,

That leads nowhither ; now, they breathed  
themselves

On the main promenade just at the wrong  
time :

You'd come upon his scrutinizing hat,  
Making a peaked shade blacker than itself  
Against the single window spared some house  
Intact yet with its mouldered Moorish work,—  
Or else surprise the ferrel of his stick  
Trying the mortar's temper 'tween the chinks  
Of some new shop a-building, French and  
fine.

He stood and watched the cobbler at his  
trade,

The man who slices lemons into drink,  
The coffee-roaster's brazier, and the boys  
That volunteer to help him turn its winch.  
He glanced o'er books on stalls with half an  
eye,

And fly-leaf ballads on the vendor's string,  
And broad-edge bold-print posters by the  
wall.

He took such cognizance of men and things,  
If any beat a horse, you felt he saw ;  
If any cursed a woman, he took note ;  
Yet stared at nobody,—you stared at him,

And found, less to your pleasure than surprise,  
He seemed to know you and expect as much.  
So, next time that a neighbour's tongue was  
loosed,

It marked the shameful and notorious fact,  
We had among us, not so much a spy,  
As a recording chief-inquisitor,  
The town's true master if the town but knew !  
We merely kept a governor for form,  
While this man walked about and took account  
Of all thought, said and acted, then went  
home,

And wrote it fully to our Lord the King  
Who has an itch to know things, he knows  
why,

And reads them in his bedroom of a night.  
Oh, you might smile ! there wanted not a  
touch,

A tang of . . . well, it was not wholly ease  
As back into your mind the man's look came.  
Stricken in years a little,—such a brow  
His eyes had to live under !—clear as flint  
On either side the formidable nose  
Curved, cut and coloured like an eagle's claw.  
Had he to do with A.'s surprising fate ?  
When altogether old B. disappeared  
And young C. got his mistress,—was't our  
friend,

His letter to the King, that did it all ?  
What paid the bloodless man for so much  
pains ?

Our Lord the King has favourites manifold,  
And shifts his ministry some once a month ;  
Our city gets new governors at whiles,—  
But never word or sign, that I could hear,  
Notified to this man about the streets  
The King's approval of those letters conned  
The last thing duly at the dead of night.  
Did the man love his office ? Frowned our  
Lord,

Exhorting when none heard—"Beseech me  
not !

"Too far above my people,—beneath me !  
"I set the watch,—how should the people  
know ?

"Forget them, keep me all the more in  
mind !"

Was some such understanding 'twixt the two ?

I found no truth in one report at least—  
That if you tracked him to his home, down  
lanes

Beyond the Jewry, and as clean to pace,  
You found he ate his supper in a room  
Blazing with lights, four Titians on the wall,  
And twenty naked girls to change his plate!  
Poor man, he lived another kind of life  
In that new stuccoed third house by the  
bridge,

Fresh-painted, rather smart than otherwise!  
The whole street might o'erlook him as he sat,  
Leg crossing leg, one foot on the dog's back,  
Playing a decent cribbage with his maid  
(Jacynth, you're sure her name was) o'er the  
cheese

And fruit, three red halves of starved winter-  
pears,  
Or treat of radishes in April. Nine,  
Ten, struck the church clock, straight to bed  
went he.

My father, like the man of sense he was,  
Would point him out to me a dozen times;  
"St—St," he'd whisper, "the Corregidor!"  
I had been used to think that personage  
Was one with lacquered breeches, lustrous  
belt,  
And feathers like a forest in his hat,  
Who blew a trumpet and proclaimed the news,  
Announced the bull-fights, gave each church  
its turn,  
And memorized the miracle in vogue!  
He had a great observance from us boys;  
We were in error; that was not the man.

I'd like now, yet had haply been afraid,  
To have just looked, when this man came to  
die,  
And seen who lined the clean gay garret-sides  
And stood about the neat low truckle-bed,  
With the heavenly manner of relieving guard.  
Here had been, mark, the general-in-chief,  
Thro' a whole campaign of the world's life  
and death,  
Doing the King's work all the dim day long,  
In his old coat and up to knees in mud,  
Smoked like a herring, dining on a crust,—

And, now the day was won, relieved at once!  
No further show or need for that old coat,  
You are sure, for one thing! Bless us, all  
the while  
How sprucely we are dressed out, you and I!  
A second, and the angels alter that.  
Well, I could never write a verse,—could you?  
Let's to the Prado and make the most of time.

### ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES.

I AM a goddess of the ambrosial courts,  
And save by Here, Queen of Pride, surpassed  
By none whose temples whiten this the world.  
Through heaven I roll my lucid moon along;  
I shed in hell o'er my pale people peace;  
On earth I, caring for the creatures, guard  
Each pregnant yellow wolf and fox-bitch sleek,  
And every feathered mother's callow brood,  
And all that love green haunts and loneliness.  
Of men, the chaste adore me, hanging crowns  
Of poppies red to blackness, bell and stem,  
Upon my image at Athenai here;  
And this dead Youth, Asclepios bends above,  
Was dearest to me. He, my buskined step  
To follow through the wild-wood leafy ways,  
And chase the panting stag, or swift with darts  
Stop the swift ounce, or lay the leopard low,  
Neglected homage to another god:  
Whence Aphrodite, by no midnight smoke  
Of tapers lulled, in jealousy despatched  
A noisome lust that, as the gadbee stings,  
Possessed his stepdame Phaidra for himself.  
The son of Theseus her great absent spouse.  
Hippolitos exclaiming in his rage  
Against the fury of the Queen, she judged  
Life insupportable; and, pricked at heart  
An Amazonian stranger's race should dare!  
To scorn her, perished by the murderous cord:  
Yet, ere she perished, blasted in a scroll  
The fame of him her swerving made not  
swerve.  
And Theseus, read, returning, and believed;  
And exiled, in the blindness of his wrath,  
The man without a crime who, last as first,  
Loyal, divulged not to his sire the truth.

Now Theseus from Poseidon had obtained  
That of his wishes should be granted three,  
And one he imprecated straight—"Alive  
"May ne'er Hippolotos reach other lands!"  
Poseidon heard, ai ai! And scarce the prince  
Had stepped into the fixed boots of the car  
That give the feet a stay against the strength  
Of the Henetian horses, and around  
His body flung the rein, and urged their  
speed

Along the rocks and shingles of the shore,  
When from the gaping wave a monster flung  
His obscene body in the coursers' path.  
These, mad with terror; as the sea-bull  
sprawled

Wallowing about their feet, lost care of him  
That reared them; and the master-chariot-  
pole

Snapping beneath their plunges like a reed,  
Hippolotos, whose feet were trammelled fast,  
Was yet dragged forward by the circling rein  
Which either hand directed; nor they quenched  
The frenzy of their flight before each trace,  
Wheel-spoke and splinter of the woeful car,  
Each boulder-stone, sharp stub and spiny shell,  
Huge fish-bone wrecked and wreathed amid  
the sands

On that detested beach, was bright with blood  
And morsels of his flesh: then fell the steeds  
Head foremost, crashing in their mooned  
fronts,

Shivering with sweat, each white eye horror-  
fixed.

His people, who had witnessed all afar,  
Bore back the ruins of Hippolotos.  
But when his sire, too swollen with pride, re-  
joiced

(Indomitable as a man foredoomed)  
That vast Poseidon had fulfilled his prayer,  
I, in a flood of glory visible,  
Stood o'er my dying votary and, deed  
By deed, revealed, as all took place, the  
truth.

Then Theseus lay the woefullest of men;  
And worthily; but ere the death-veils hid  
His face, the murdered prince full pardon  
breathed

To his rash sire. Whereat Athenai wails.

So I, who ne'er forsake my votaries,  
Lest in the cross-way none the honey-cake  
Should tender, nor pour out the dog's hot life;  
Lest at my fane the priests disconsolate  
Should dress my image with some faded poor  
Few crowns, made favours of, nor dare object  
Such slackness to my worshippers who turn  
Elsewhere the trusting heart and loaded hand,  
As they had climbed Olumpus to report  
Of Artemis and nowhere found her throne—  
I interposed: and, this eventful night,—  
(While round the funeral pyre the populace  
Stood with fierce light on their black robes  
which bound

Each sobbing head, while yet their hair they  
clipped

O'er the dead body of their withered prince,  
And, in his palace, Theseus prostrated  
On the cold hearth, his brow cold as the slush  
'Twas bruised on, groaned away the heavy  
grief—

As the pyre fell, and down the cross logs  
crashed

Sending a crowd of sparkles through the night,  
And the gay fire, elate with mastery,  
Towered like a serpent o'er the clotted jars  
Of wine, dissolving oils and frankincense,  
And splendid gums like gold),—my potency  
Conveyed the perished man to my retreat  
In the thrice-venerable forest here.

And this white-bearded sage who squeezes  
now

The berried plant, is Phoibos' son of fame,  
Asclepios, whom my radiant brother taught  
The doctrine of each herb and flower and root,  
To know their secret'st virtue and express  
The saving soul of all: who so has soothed  
With lavers the torn brow and murdered  
cheeks,

Composed the hair and brought its gloss  
again,

And called the red bloom to the pale skin back,  
And laid the strips and jagged ends of flesh  
Even once more, and slacked the sinew's knot  
Of every tortured limb—that now he lies  
As if mere sleep possessed him underneath  
These interwoven oaks and pines. Oh cheer  
Divine presenter of the healing rod,

Thy snake, with ardent throat and lulling  
 eye,  
 Twines his lithe spires around ! I say, much  
 cheer !  
 Proceed thou with thy wisest pharmacies !  
 And ye, white crowd of woodland sister-  
 nymphs,  
 Ply, as the sage directs, these buds and leaves  
 That strew the turf around the twain ! While I  
 Await, in fitting silence, the event.

### AN EPISTLE

CONTAINING THE STRANGE MEDICAL EXPERIENCE OF KARSHISH, THE ARAB PHYSICIAN.

KARSHISH, the picker-up of learning's crumbs,  
 The not-incurious in God's handiwork  
 (This man's flesh he hath admirably made,  
 Blown like a bubble, kneaded like a paste,  
 To coop up and keep down on earth a space  
 That puff of vapour from his mouth, man's  
 soul)

—To Abib, all-sagacious in our art,  
 Breeder in me of what poor skill I boast,  
 Like me inquisitive how pricks and cracks  
 Befall the flesh through too much stress and  
 strain,

Whereby the wily vapour fain would slip  
 Back and rejoin its source before the term,—  
 And aptest in contrivance (under God)  
 To baffle it by deftly stopping such :—  
 The vagrant Scholar to his Sage at home  
 Sends greeting (health and knowledge, fame  
 with peace)

Three samples of true snakestone—rarer still,  
 One of the other sort, the melon-shaped,  
 (But fitter, pounded fine, for charms than drugs)  
 And writeth now the twenty-second time.

My journeyings were brought to Jericho :  
 Thus I resume. Who studious in our art  
 Shall count a little labour unrepaid ?  
 I have shed sweat enough, left flesh and bone  
 On many a flinty furlong of this land.  
 Also, the country-side is all on fire

With rumours of a marching hitherward :  
 Some say Vespasian cometh, some, his son.  
 A black lynx snarled and pricked a tufted ear ;  
 Lust of my blood inflamed his yellow balls :  
 I cried and threw my staff and he was gone.  
 Twice have the robbers stripped and beaten me,  
 And once a town declared me for a spy ;  
 But at the end, I reach Jerusalem,  
 Since this poor covert where I pass the night,  
 This Bethany, lies scarce the distance thence  
 A man with plague-sores at the third degree  
 Runs till he drops down dead. Thou laughest  
 here !

'Sooth, it elates me, thus reposed and safe,  
 To void the stuffing of my travel-scrip  
 And share with thee whatever Jewry yields.  
 A viscid choler is observable  
 In tertians, I was nearly bold to say ;  
 And falling-sickness hath a happier cure  
 Than our school wots of: there's a spider here  
 Weaves no web, watches on the ledge of tombs,  
 Sprinkled with mottles on an ash-grey back ;  
 Take five and drop them . . . but who knows  
 his mind,

The Syrian runagate I trust this to ?  
 His service payeth me a sublimate  
 Blown up his nose to help the ailing eye.  
 Best wait : I reach Jerusalem at morn,  
 There set in order my experiences,  
 Gather what most deserves, and give thee all—  
 Or I might add, Judæa's gum-tragacanth<sup>1</sup>  
 Scales off in purer flakes, shines clearer-grained,  
 Cracks 'twixt the pestle and the porphyry,  
 In fine exceeds our produce. Scalp-disease  
 Confounds me, crossing so with leprosy—  
 Thou hadst admired one sort I gained at Zoar—  
 But zeal outruns discretion. Here I end.

Yet stay : my Syrian blinketh gratefully,  
 Protesteth his devotion is my price—  
 Suppose I write what harms not, though he  
 steal ?

I half resolve to tell thee, yet I blush,  
 What set me off a-writing first of all.  
 An itch I had, a sting to write, a tang !

<sup>1</sup> A thick mucilage useful in pharmacy and trade.

For, be it this town's barrenness—or else.  
 The Man had something in the look of him—  
 His case has struck me far more than 'tis worth.  
 So, pardon if—(lest presently I lose  
 In the great press of novelty at hand  
 The care and pains this somehow stole from me)  
 I bid thee take the thing while fresh in mind,  
 Almost in sight—for, wilt thou have the truth?  
 The very man is gone from me but now,  
 Whose ailment is the subject of discourse.  
 Thus then, and let thy better wit help all!

'Tis but a case of mania—subinduced  
 By epilepsy, at the turning-point  
 Of trance prolonged unduly some three days:  
 When, by the exhibition of some drug  
 Or spell, exorcization, stroke of art  
 Unknown to me and which 'twere well to know,  
 The evil thing out-breaking all at once  
 Left the man whole and sound of body indeed,—  
 But, flinging (so to speak) life's gates too wide,  
 Making a clear house of it too suddenly,  
 The first conceit that entered might inscribe  
 Whatever it was minded on the wall  
 So plainly at that vantage, as it were,  
 (First come, first served) that nothing subsequent

Attaineth to erase those fancy-scrawls  
 The just-returned and new-established soul  
 Hath gotten now so thoroughly by heart  
 That henceforth she will read or these or none.  
 And first—the man's own firm conviction rests  
 That he was dead (in fact they buried him)  
 —That he was dead and then restored to life  
 By a Nazarene physician of his tribe:  
 —'Sayeth, the same bade "Rise," and he did rise.

"Such cases are diurnal," thou wilt cry.  
 Not so this figment!—not, that such a fume,  
 Instead of giving way to time and health,  
 Should eat itself into the life of life,  
 As saffron tingeth flesh, blood, bones and all!  
 For see, how he takes up the after-life.  
 The man—it is one Lazarus a Jew,  
 Sanguine, proportioned, fifty years of age,  
 The body's habit wholly laudable,  
 As much, indeed, beyond the common health  
 As he were made and put aside to show.

Think, could we penetrate by any drug  
 And bathe the wearied soul and worried flesh,  
 And bring it clear and fair, by three days' sleep!  
 Whence has the man the balm that brightens  
 all?

This grown man eyes the world now like a child.

Some elders of his tribe, I should premise,  
 Led in their friend, obedient as a sheep,  
 To bear my inquisition. While they spoke,  
 Now sharply, now with sorrow,—told the case,—

He listened not except I spoke to him,  
 But folded his two hands and let them talk,  
 Watching the flies that buzzed: and yet no fool.  
 And that's a sample how his years must go.  
 Look, if a beggar, in fixed middle-life,  
 Should find a treasure,—can he use the same  
 With straitened habits and with tastes starved small,

And take at once to his impoverished brain  
 The sudden element that changes things,  
 That sets the undreamed-of rapture at his hand  
 And puts the cheap old joy in the scorned dust?  
 Is he not such an one as moves to mirth—  
 Warily parsimonious, when no need,  
 Wasteful as drunkenness at undue times?  
 All prudent counsel as to what befits  
 The golden mean, is lost on such an one:  
 The man's fantastic will is the man's law.  
 So here—we call the treasure knowledge, say,  
 Increased beyond the fleshly faculty—  
 Heaven opened to a soul while yet on earth,  
 Earth forced on a soul's use while seeing  
 heaven:

The man is witless of the size, the sum,  
 The value in proportion of all things,  
 Or whether it be little or be much.  
 Discourse to him of prodigious armaments  
 Assembled to besiege his city now,  
 And of the passing of a mule with gourds—  
 'Tis one! Then take it on the other side,  
 Speak of some trifling fact,—he will gaze rapt  
 With stupor at its very littleness,  
 (Far as I see) as if in that indeed  
 He caught prodigious import, whole results;  
 And so will turn to us the bystanders  
 In ever the same stupor (note this point)

That we too see not with his opened eyes.  
Wonder and doubt come wrongly into play,  
Preposterously, at cross purposes:

Should his child sicken unto death,—why,  
look

For scarce abatement of his cheerfulness,  
Or pretermission of the daily craft!  
While a word, gesture, glance from that same  
child

At play or in the school or laid asleep,  
Will startle him to an agony of fear,  
Exasperation, just as like. Demand  
The reason why—" 'tis but a word," object—  
"A gesture"—he regards thee as our lord  
Who lived there in the pyramid alone,  
Looked at us (dost thou mind?) when, being  
young,

We both would unadvisedly recite  
Some charm's beginning, from that book of  
his,

Able to bid the sun throb wide and burst  
All into stars, as suns grown old are wont.  
Thou and the child have each a veil alike  
Thrown o'er your heads, from under which  
ye both

Stretch your blind hands and trifle with a  
match

Over a mine of Greek fire, did ye know!  
He holds on firmly to some thread of life—  
(It is the life to lead forcedly)  
Which runs across some vast distracting orb  
Of glory on either side that meagre thread,  
Which, conscious of, he must not enter yet—  
The spiritual life around the earthly life:  
The law of that is known to him as this,  
His heart and brain move there, his feet stay  
here.

So is the man perplexed with impulses  
Sudden to start off crosswise, not straight on,  
Proclaiming what is right and wrong across,  
And not along, this black thread through the  
blaze—

"It should be" balked by "here it cannot  
be."

And off the man's soul springs into his face  
As if he saw again and heard again  
His sage that bade him "Rise" and he did  
rise.

Something, a word, a tick o' the blood within  
Admonishes: then back he sinks at once  
To ashes, who was very fire before,  
In sedulous recurrence to his trade  
Whereby he earneth him the daily bread;  
And studiously the humbler for that pride,  
Professedly the faultier that he knows  
God's secret, while he holds the thread of  
life.

Indeed the especial marking of the man  
Is prone submission to the heavenly will—  
Seeing it, what it is, and why it is.  
'Sayeth, he will wait patient to the last  
For that same death which must restore his  
being  
To equilibrium, body loosening soul  
Divorced even now by premature full growth:  
He will live, nay, it pleaseth him to live  
So long as God please, and just how God  
please.

He even seeketh not to please God more  
(Which meaneth, otherwise) than as God  
please.  
Hence, I perceive not he affects to preach  
The doctrine of his sect whate'er it be,  
Make proselytes as madmen thirst to do:  
How can he give his neighbour the real  
ground,

His own conviction? Ardent as he is—  
Call his great truth a lie, why, still the old  
"Be it as God please" reassureth him.  
I probed the sore as thy disciple should:  
"How, beast," said I, "this stolid careless-  
ness

"Sufficeth thee, when Rome is on her march  
"To stamp out like a little spark thy town,  
"Thy tribe, thy crazy tale and thee at once?"  
He merely looked with his large eyes on me.  
The man is apathetic, you deduce?  
Contrariwise, he loves both old and young,  
Able and weak, affects the very brutes  
And birds—how say I? flowers of the field—  
As a wise workman recognizes tools  
In a master's workshop, loving what they  
make.

Thus is the man as harmless as a lamb:  
Only impatient, let him do his best,  
At ignorance and carelessness and sin—

An indignation which is promptly curbed :  
As when in certain travel I have feigned  
To be an ignoramus in our art  
According to some preconceived design,  
And happed to hear the land's practitioners  
Steeped in conceit sublimed by ignorance,  
Prattle fantastically on disease,  
Its cause and cure—and I must hold my peace!

Thou wilt object—Why have I not ere this  
Sought out the sage himself, the Nazarene  
Who wrought this cure, inquiring at the  
source,

Conferring with the frankness that befits?  
Alas! it grieveth me, the learned leech  
Perished in a tumult many years ago,  
Accused,—our learning's fate,—of wizardry,  
Rebellion, to the setting up a rule  
And creed prodigious as described to me.  
His death, which happened when the earth-  
quake fell

(Prefiguring, as soon appeared, the loss  
To occult learning, in our lord the sage  
Who lived there in the pyramid alone)  
Was wrought by the mad people—that's their  
wont!

On vain recourse, as I conjecture it,  
To his tried virtue, for miraculous help—  
How could he stop the earthquake? That's  
their way!

The other imputations must be lies:  
But take one, though I loathe to give it  
thee,

In mere respect for any good man's fame.  
(And after all, our patient Lazarus  
Is stark mad; should we count on what he  
says?)

Perhaps not: though in writing to a leech  
'Tis well to keep back nothing of a case.)  
This man so cured regards the curer, then,  
As—God forgive me!—who but God himself,  
Creator and sustainer of the world,  
That came and dwelt in flesh on it awhile!  
—Saveth that such an one was born and  
lived,

Taught, healed the sick, broke bread at his  
own house,

Then died, with Lazarus by, for aught I know,

And yet was . . . what I said nor choose  
repeat;

And must have so avouched himself, in fact,  
In hearing of this very Lazarus  
Who saith—but why all this of what he saith?  
Why write of trivial matters, things of price  
Calling at every moment for remark?  
I noticed on the margin of a pool  
Blue-flowering borage, the Aleppo sort,  
Aboundeth, very nitrous. It is strange!

Thy pardon for this long and tedious case,  
Which, now that I review it, needs must seem  
Unduly dwelt on, prolixly set forth!  
Nor I myself discern in what is writ  
Good cause for the peculiar interest  
And awe indeed this man has touched me  
with.

Perhaps the journey's end, the weariness  
Had wrought upon me first. I met him thus:  
I crossed a ridge of short sharp broken hills  
Like an old lion's cheek teeth. Out there  
came

A moon made like a face with certain spots  
Multiform, manifold and menacing:  
Then a wind rose behind me. So we met  
In this old sleepy town at unaware,  
The man and I. I send thee what is writ.  
Regard it as a chance, a matter risked  
To this ambiguous Syrian—he may lose,  
Or steal, or give it thee with equal good.  
Jerusalem's repose shall make amends  
For time this letter wastes, thy time and  
mine;

Till when, once more thy pardon and farewell!

The very God! think, Abib; dost thou  
think?

So, the All-Great, were the All-Loving too—  
So, through the thunder comes a human voice  
Saying, "O heart I made, a heart beats here!  
"Face, my hands fashioned, see it in myself!  
"Thou hast no power nor mayst conceive of  
mine,

"But love I gave thee, with myself to love,  
"And thou must love me who have died for  
thee!"

The madman saith He said so: it is strange.



### JOHANNES AGRICOLA IN MEDITATION.

THERE's heaven above, and night by night  
I look right through its gorgeous roof;  
No suns and moons though e'er so bright  
Avail to stop me; splendour-proof  
I keep the broods of stars aloof:  
For I intend to get to God,  
For 'tis to God I speed so fast,  
For in God's breast, my own abode,  
Those shoals of dazzling glory, passed,  
I lay my spirit down at last.  
I lie where I have always lain,  
God smiles as he has always smiled;  
Ere suns and moons could wax and wane,  
Ere stars were thundergirt, or piled  
The heavens, God thought on me his  
child;  
Ordained a life for me, arrayed  
Its circumstances every one  
To the minutest; ay, God said  
This head this hand should rest upon  
Thus, ere he fashioned star or sun.  
And having thus created me,  
Thus rooted me, he bade me grow,  
Guiltless for ever, like a tree  
That buds and blooms, nor seeks to  
know  
The law by which it prospers so:  
But sure that thought and word and deed  
All go to swell his love for me,  
Me, made because that love had need  
Of something irreversibly  
Pledged solely its content to be.  
Yes, yes, a tree which must ascend,  
No poison-gourd foredoomed to stoop!  
I have God's warrant, could I blend  
All hideous sins, as in a cup,  
To drink the mingled venoms up;  
Secure my nature will convert  
The draught to blossoming gladness fast:  
While sweet dew turns to the gourd's hurt,  
And bloat, and while they bloat it, blast,  
As from the first its lot was cast.  
For as I lie, smiled on, full-fed  
By unexhausted power to bless,

I gaze below on hell's fierce bed,  
And those its waves of flame oppress,  
Swarming in ghastly wretchedness;  
Whose life on earth aspired to be  
One altar-smoke, so pure!—to win  
If not love like God's love for me,  
At least to keep his anger in;  
And all their striving turned to sin.  
Priest, doctor, hermit, monk grown white  
With prayer, the broken-hearted nun,  
The martyr, the wan acolyte,  
The incense-swinging child,—undone  
Before God fashioned star or sun!  
God, whom I praise; how could I praise,  
If such as I might understand,  
Make out and reckon on his ways,  
And bargain for his love, and stand,  
Paying a price, at his right hand?

### PICTOR IGNOTUS.

FLORENCE, 15—.

I COULD have painted pictures like that  
youth's  
Ye praise so. How my soul springs up!  
No bar  
Stayed me—ah, thought which saddens while  
it soothes!  
—Never did fate forbid me, star by star,  
To outburst on your night with all my gift  
Of fires from God: nor would my flesh  
have shrunk  
From seconding my soul, with eyes uplift  
And wide to heaven, or, straight like  
thunder, sunk  
To the centre, of an instant; or around  
Turned calmly and inquisitive, to scan  
The licence and the limit, space and bound,  
Allowed to truth made visible in man.  
And, like that youth ye praise so, all I saw,  
Over the canvas could my hand have flung;  
Each face obedient to its passion's law,  
Each passion clear proclaimed without a  
tongue;  
Whether Hope rose at once in all the blood,  
A-tiptoe for the blessing of embrace,

Or Rapture drooped the eyes, as when her  
   brood  
   Pull down the nesting dove's heart to its  
   place ;  
 Or Confidence lit swift the forehead up,  
   And locked the mouth fast, like a castle  
   braved,—  
 O human faces, hath it spilt, my cup?  
   What did ye give me that I have not saved  
 Nor will I say I have not dreamed (how  
   well!)  
   Of going—I, in each new picture,—forth,  
 As, making new hearts beat and bosoms  
   swell,  
   To Pope or Kaiser, East, West, South, or  
   North,  
 Bound for the calmly-satisfied great State,  
   Or glad aspiring little burgh, it went,  
 Flowers cast upon the car which bore the  
   freight,  
   Through old streets named afresh from the  
   event,  
 Till it reached home, where learned age  
   should greet  
   My face, and youth, the star not yet distinct  
 Above his hair, lie learning at my feet!—  
   Oh, thus to live, I and my picture, linked  
 With love about, and praise, till life should  
   end,  
   And then not go to heaven, but linger here,  
 Here on my earth, earth's every man my  
   friend,—  
   The thought grew frightful, 'twas so wildly  
   dear!  
 But a voice changed it. Glimpses of such  
   sights  
   Have scared me, like the revels through a  
   door  
 Of some strange house of idols at its rites!  
   This world seemed not the world it was  
   before :  
 Mixed with my loving trusting ones, there  
   trooped  
   . . . Who summoned those cold faces that  
   began  
 To press on me and judge me? Though I  
   stooped  
   Shrinking, as from the soldiery a nun,  
   They drew me forth, and spite of me . . .  
   enough!  
   These buy and sell our pictures, take and  
   give,  
   Count them for garniture and household-stuff,  
   And where they live needs must our pic-  
   tures live  
   And see their faces, listen to their prate,  
   Partakers of their daily pottiness,  
   Discussed of,—“ This I love, or this I hate,  
   “ This likes me more, and this affects me  
   less ! ”  
   Wherefore I chose my portion. If at whiles  
   My heart sinks, as monotonous I paint  
   These endless cloisters and eternal aisles  
   With the same series, Virgin, Babe and  
   Saint,  
   With the same cold calm beautiful regard,—  
   At least no merchant traffics in my heart ;  
   The sanctuary's gloom at least shall ward  
   Vain tongues from where my pictures stand  
   apart :  
   Only prayer breaks the silence of the shrine  
   While, blackening in the daily candle-  
   smoke,  
   They moulder on the damp wall's travertine,<sup>1</sup>  
   'Mid echoes the light footstep never woke.  
   So, die my pictures ! surely, gently die !  
   O youth, men praise so,—holds their praise  
   its worth?  
   Blown harshly, keeps the trump its golden  
   cry?  
   Tastes sweet the water with such specks of  
   earth?

## FRA LIPPO LIPPI.

[Florentine painter, 1412-1469. See Vasari.]

I AM poor brother Lippo, by your leave !  
 You need not clap your torches to my face.  
 Zooks, what's to blame? you think you see a  
   monk !  
 What, 'tis past midnight, and you go the  
   rounds,  
 And here you catch me at an alley's end

<sup>1</sup> A white limestone.

Where sportive ladies leave their doors ajar?  
The Carmine's my cloister: hunt it up,  
Do,—harry out, if you must show your zeal,  
Whatever rat, there, haps on his wrong hole,  
And nip each softling of a wee white mouse,  
*Weke, weke*, that's crept to keep him company!  
Aha, you know your betters! Then, you'll  
take

Your hand away that's fiddling on my throat,  
And please to know me likewise. Who am I?  
Why, one, sir, who is lodging with a friend  
Three streets off—he's a certain . . . how  
d'ye call?

Master—a . . . Cosimo of the Medici,  
I' the house that caps the corner. Boh! you  
were best!

Remember and tell me, the day you're hanged,  
How you affected such a gullet's-gripe!  
But you, sir, it concerns you that your knaves  
Pick up a manner nor discredit you:  
Zooks, are we pilchards, that they sweep the  
streets

And count fair prize what comes into their net?  
He's Judas to a tittle, that man is!

Just such a face! Why, sir, you make amends.  
Lord, I'm not angry! Bid your handdogs go  
Drink out this quarter-florin to the health  
Of the munificent House that harbours me  
(And many more beside, lads! more beside!)  
And all's come square again. I'd like his  
face—

His, elbowing on his comrade in the door  
With the pike and lantern,—for the slave that  
holds

John Baptist's head a-dangle by the hair  
With one hand ("Look you, now," as who  
should say)

And his weapon in the other, yet unwiped!  
It's not your chance to have a bit of chalk,  
A wood-coal or the like? or you should see!  
Yes, I'm the painter, since you style me so.  
What, brother Lippo's doings, up and down,  
You know them and they take you? like  
enough!

I saw the proper twinkle in your eye—  
"Tell you, I liked your looks at very first."  
Let's sit and set things straight now, hip to  
haunch.

Here's spring come, and the nights one makes  
up bands

To roam the town and sing out 'carnival,  
And I've been three weeks shut within thymew,  
A-painting for the great man, saints and saints  
And saints again. I could not paint all night—  
Ouf! I leaned out of window for fresh air.  
There came a hurry of feet and little feet,  
A sweep of lute-strings, laughs, and whiffs of  
song,—

*Flower o' the broom,  
Take away love, and our earth is a tomb!*  
*Flower o' the quince,  
I let Lisa go, and what good in life since?*  
*Flower o' the thyme*—and so on. Round  
they went.

Scarce had they turned the corner when a titter  
Like the skipping of rabbits by moonlight,—  
three slim shapes,  
And a face that looked up . . . zooks, sir,  
flesh and blood,

That's all I'm made of! Into shreds it went,  
Curtain and counterpane and coverlet,  
All the bed-furniture—a dozen knots,  
There was a ladder! Down I let myself,  
Hands and feet, scrambling somehow, and so  
dropped,

And after them. I came up with the fun  
Hard by Saint Laurence, hail fellow, well  
met,—

*Flower o' the rose,  
If I've been merry, what matter who knows?*  
And so as I was stealing back again  
To get to bed and have a bit of sleep  
Ere I rise up to-morrow and go work  
On Jerome knocking at his poor old breast  
With his great round stone to subdue the  
flesh,

You snap me of the sudden. Ah, I see!  
Though your eye twinkles still, you shake  
your head—  
Mine's shaved—a monk, you say—the sting's  
in that!

If Master Cosimo announced himself,  
Mum's the word naturally; but a monk!  
Come, what am I a beast for? tell us, now!  
I was a baby when my mother died  
And father died and left me in the street.

I starved there, God knows how, a year or two

On fig-skins, melon-parings, rinds and shucks,  
Refuse and rubbish. One fine frosty day,  
My stomach being empty as your hat,  
The wind doubled me up and down I went.  
Old Aunt Lapaccia trussed me with one hand,  
(Its fellow was a stinger as I knew)  
And so along the wall, over the bridge,  
By the straight cut to the convent. Six words there,

While I stood munching my first bread that month :

"So, boy, you're minded," quoth the good fat father

Wiping his own mouth, 'twas refection-time,—  
"To quit this very miserable world ?

"Will you renounce ? . . . "the mouthful of bread ?" thought I ;

By no means ! Brief, they made a monk of me ;

I did renounce the world, its pride and greed,  
Palace, farm, villa, shop and banking-house,  
Trash, such as these poor devils of Medici  
Have given their hearts to—all at eight years old.

Well, sir, I found in time, you may be sure,  
'Twas not for nothing—the good bellyful,  
The warm serge and the rope that goes all round,

And day-long blessed idleness beside !

"Let's see what the urchin's fit for"—that came next.

Not overmuch their way, I must confess.

Such a to-do ! They tried me with their books :

Lord, they'd have taught me Latin in pure waste !

*Flower o' the clove,*

*All the Latin I construe is, "amo" I love !*

But, mind you, when a boy starves in the streets

Eight years together, as my fortune was,  
Watching folk's faces to know who will fling  
The bit of half-stripped grape-bunch he desires,  
And who will curse or kick him for his pains,—  
Which gentleman processional and fine,  
Holding a candle to the Sacrament,

Will wink and let him lift a plate and catch  
The droppings of the wax to sell again,  
Or holla for the Eight and have him whipped,—

How say I?—nay, which dog bites, which lets drop

His bone from the heap of offal in the street,—  
Why, soul and sense of him grow sharp alike,  
He learns the look of things, and none the less  
For admonition from the hunger-pinch.

I had a store of such remarks, be sure,  
Which, after I found leisure, turned to use.

I drew men's faces on my copy-books,  
Scrawled them within the antiphony's<sup>1</sup> marge,

Joined legs and arms to the long music-notes,  
Found eyes and nose and chin for A's and B's,  
And made a string of pictures of the world  
Betwixt the ins and outs of verb and noun,  
On the wall, the bench, the door. The monks looked black.

"Nay," quoth the Prior, "turn him out, d'ye say ?

"In no wise. Lose a crow and catch a lark.

"What if at last we get our man of parts,

"We Carmelites, like those Camaldolese

"And Preaching Friars, to do our church up fine

"And put the front on it that ought to be !"

And hereupon he bade me daub away.

Thank you ! my head being crammed, the walls a blank,

Never was such prompt disembodying.

First, every sort of monk, the black and white,  
I drew them, fat and lean : then, folk at church,

From good old gossips waiting to confess  
Their cribs of barrel-droppings, candle-ends,—

To the breathless fellow at the altar-foot,  
Fresh from his murder, safe and sitting there  
With the little children round him in a row  
Of admiration, half for his beard and half  
For that white anger of his victim's son  
Shaking a fist at him with one fierce arm,  
Signing himself with the other because of Christ

<sup>1</sup> The Roman Choir-book.

(Whose sad face on the cross sees only this  
After the passion of a thousand years)  
Till some poor girl, her apron o'er her head,  
(Which the intense eyes looked through)  
came at eve

On tiptoe, said a word, dropped in a loaf,  
Her pair of earrings and a bunch of flowers  
(The brute took growling), prayed, and so  
was gone.

I painted all, then cried "'Tis ask and  
have;

"Choose, for more's ready!"—laid the  
ladder flat,

And showed my covered bit of cloister-wall.  
The monks closed in a circle and praised loud  
Till checked, taught what to see and not to  
see,

Being simple bodies,— "That's the very man!  
"Look at the boy who stoops to pat the dog!  
"That woman's like the Prior's niece who  
comes

"To care about his asthma: it's the life!"  
But there my triumph's straw-fire flared and  
funked;

Their betters took their turn to see and say:  
The Prior and the learned pulled a face  
And stopped all that in no time. "How?  
what's here?

"Quite from the mark of painting, bless us  
all!

"Faces, arms, legs and bodies like the true  
"As much as pea and pea! it's devil's-game!

"Your business is not to catch men with show,

"With homage to the perishable clay,

"But lift them over it, ignore it all,

"Make them forget there's such a thing as  
flesh.

"Your business is to paint the souls of men—

"Man's soul, and it's a fire, smoke . . . no,  
it's not . . .

"It's vapour done up like a new-born babe—

"(In that shap when you die it leaves your  
mouth)

"It's . . . well, what matters talking, it's  
the soul!

"Give us no more of body than shows soul!

"Here's Giotto, with his Saint a-praising  
God,

"That sets us praising,—why not stop with  
him?

"Why put all thoughts of praise out of our  
head

"With wonder at lines, colours, and what  
not?

"Paint the soul, never mind the legs and  
arms!

"Rub all out, try at it a second time.

"Oh, that white smallish female with the  
breasts,

"She's just my niece . . . Herodias, I  
would say,—

"Who went and danced and got men's heads  
cut off!

"Have it all out!" Now, is this sense, I  
ask?

A fine way to paint soul, by painting body  
So ill, the eye can't stop there, must go  
further

And can't fare worse! Thus, yellow does  
for white

When what you put for yellow's simply black,  
And any sort of meaning looks intense

When all beside itself means and looks  
nought.

Why can't a painter lift each foot in turn,  
Left foot and right foot, go a double step,  
Make his flesh liker and his soul more like,  
Both in their order? Take the prettiest face,  
The Prior's niece . . . patron-saint—is it  
so pretty

You can't discover if it means hope, fear,  
Sorrow or joy? won't beauty go with these?  
Suppose I've made her eyes all right and blue,  
Can't I take breath and try to add life's flash,  
And then add soul and heighten them three-  
fold?

Or say there's beauty with no soul at all—  
(I never saw it—put the case the same—)

If you get simple beauty and nought else,  
You get about the best thing God invents:  
That's somewhat: and you'll find the soul  
you have missed,

Within yourself, when you return him thanks.

"Rub all out!" Well, well, there's my life,  
in short,

And so the thing has gone on ever since.

I'm grown a man no doubt, I've broken bounds :

You should not take a fellow eight years old  
And make him swear to never kiss the girls.  
I'm my own master, paint now as I please—  
Having a friend, you see, in the Corner-house !

Lord, it's fast holding by the rings in front—  
Those great rings serve more purposes than just

To plant a flag in, or tie up a horse !  
And yet the old schooling sticks, the old grave eyes

Are peeping o'er my shoulder as I work,  
The heads shake still—"It's art's decline,  
my son !

"You're not of the true painters, great and old ;

"Brother Angelico's the man, you'll find ;

"Brother Lorenzo<sup>1</sup> stands his single peer :

"Fag on at flesh, you'll never make the third !"

*Flower o' the pine,*

*You keep your mistr . . . manners, and I'll stick to mine !*

I'm not the third, then : bless us, they must know !

Don't you think they're the likeliest to know,  
They with their Latin ? So, I swallow my rage,

Clench my teeth, suck my lips in tight, and paint

To please them—sometimes do and sometimes don't ;

For, doing most, there's pretty sure to come  
A turn, some warm eve finds me at my saints—

A laugh, a cry, the business of the world—

*(Flower o' the peach,*

*Death for us all, and his own life for each !)*

And my whole soul revolves, the cup runs over,

The world and life's too big to pass for a dream,

And I do these wild things in sheer despite,  
And play the fooleries you catch me at,

<sup>1</sup> Lorenzo Monaco, an eminent painter, a monk.

In pure rage ! The old mill-horse, out at grass  
After hard years, throws up his stiff heels so,  
Although the miller does not preach to him  
The only good of grass is to make chaff.  
What would men have ? Do they like grass  
or no—

May they or mayn't they ? all I want's the thing  
Settled for ever one way. As it is,  
You tell too many lies and hurt yourself :  
You don't like what you only like too much,  
You do like what, if given you at your word,  
You find abundantly detestable.

For me, I think I speak as I was taught ;  
I always see the garden and God there  
A-making man's wife : and, my lesson learned,  
The value and significance of flesh,  
I can't unlearn ten minutes afterwards,

You understand me : I'm a beast, I know.  
But see, now—why, I see as certainly  
As that the morning-star's about to shine,  
What will hap some day. We've a youngster here

Comes to our convent, studies what I do,  
Slouches and stares and lets no atom drop :  
His name is Guidi<sup>2</sup>—he'll not mind the monks—

They call him Hulking Tom, he lets them talk—

He picks my practice up—he'll paint apace,  
I hope so—though I never live so long,  
I know what's sure to follow. You be judge !  
You speak no Latin more than I, belike ;  
However, you're my man, you've seen the world

—The beauty and the wonder and the power,  
The shapes of things, their colours, lights  
and shades,

Changes, surprises,—and God made it all !

—For what ? Do you feel thankful, ay or no,  
For this fair town's face, yonder river's line,  
The mountain round it and the sky above,  
Much more the figures of man, woman, child,  
These are the frame to ? What's it all about ?  
To be passed over, despised ? or dwelt upon  
Wondered at ? oh, this last of course !—you say.

<sup>2</sup> Tommaso Guidi, a painter.

But why not do as well as say,—paint these  
Just as they are, careless what comes of it?  
God's works—paint anyone, and count it crime

To let a truth slip. Don't object, "His works

"Are here already; nature is complete:

"Suppose you reproduce her—(which you  
can't)

"There's no advantage! you must beat her,  
then."

For, don't you mark? we're made so that we  
love

First when we see them painted, things we  
have passed

Perhaps a hundred times nor cared to see;

And so they are better, painted—better to us,  
Which is the same thing. Art was given for  
that;

God uses us to help each other so,

Lending our minds out. Have you noticed,  
now,

Your cullion's hanging face? A bit of chalk,  
And trust me but you should, though! How  
much more,

If I drew higher things with the same truth!  
That were to take the Prior's pulpit-place,  
Interpret God to all of you! Oh, oh,

It makes me mad to see what men shall do  
And we in our graves! This world's no blot  
for us,

Nor blank; it means intensely, and means  
good:

To find its meaning is my meat and drink.

"Ay, but you don't so instigate to prayer!"

Strikes in the Prior: "when your meaning's  
plain

"It does not say to folk—remember matins,

"Or, mind you fast next Friday!" Why,  
for this

What need of art at all? A skull and bones,  
Two bits of stick nailed crosswise, or, what's  
best,

A bell to chime the hour with, does as well.  
I painted a Saint Laurence six months since  
At Prato, splashed the fresco in fine style:

"How looks my painting, now the scaffold's  
down?"

I ask a brother: "Hugely," he returns—

"Already not one phiz of your three slaves

"Who turn the Deacon off his toasted side,  
"But's scratched and prodded to our heart's  
content,

"The pious people have so eased their own

"With coming to say prayers there in a rage:

"We get on fast to see the bricks beneath.

"Expect another job this time next year,

"For pity and religion grow i' the crowd—

"Your painting serves its purpose!" Hang  
the fools!

—That is—you'll not mistake an idle word  
Spoke in a huff by a poor monk, Got wot,  
Tasting the air this spicy night which turns  
The unaccustomed head like Chianti wine!  
Oh, the church knows! don't misreport me,  
now!

It's natural a poor monk out of bounds  
Should have his apt word to excuse himself:  
And hearken how I plot to make amends.

I have bethought me: I shall paint a piece  
. . . There's for you! Give me six months,  
then go, see

Something in Sant' Ambrogio's! Bless the  
nuns!

They want a cast o' my office. I shall paint  
God in the midst, Madonna and her babe,  
Ringed by a bowery flowery angel-brood,  
Lilies and vestments and white faces, sweet  
As puff on puff of grated orris-root  
When ladies crowd to Church at midsummer!  
And then i' the front, of course a saint or two—  
Saint John, because he saves the Florentines,  
Saint Ambrose, who puts down in black and  
white

The convent's friends and gives them a long  
day,

And Job, I must have him there past mistake,  
The man of Uz (and Us without the z,  
Painters who need his patience). Well, all  
these

Secured at their devotion, up shall come  
Out of a corner when you least expect;  
As one by a dark stair into a great light,  
Musie and talking, who but Lippo! I!—  
Mazed, motionless and moonstruck—I'm the  
man!

Back I shrink—what is this I see and hear?

I, caught up with my monk's-things by mistake,  
My old serge gown and rope that goes all round,

I, in this presence, this pure company!  
Where's a hole, where's a corner for escape?  
Then steps a sweet angelic slip of a thing  
Forward, puts out a soft palm—"Not so fast!"  
—Addresses the celestial presence, "nay—  
"He made you and devised you, after all,  
"Though he's none of you! Could Saint  
John there draw—

"His camel-hair make up a painting-brush?  
"We come to brother Lippo for all that,  
"*Iste perfecit opus!*" So, all smile—  
I shuffle sideways with my blushing face  
Under the cover of a hundred wings  
Thrown like a spread of kirtles when you're gay  
And play hot cockles, all the doors being shut,  
Till, wholly unexpected, in there pops  
The hothead husband! Thus I scuttle off  
To some safe bench behind, not letting go  
The palm of her, the little lily thing  
That spoke the good word for me in the nick,  
Like the Prior's niece . . . Saint Lucy, I  
would say.

And so all's saved for me, and for the church  
A pretty picture gained. Go, six months  
hence!

Your hand, sir, and good-bye: no lights, no  
lights!

The street's lushed, and I know my own  
way back,

Don't fear, me! There's the grey beginning.  
Zooks!

### ANDREA DEL SARTO. ✓

(CALLED "THE FAULTLESS PAINTER.")

[Famous painter, died 1531, aged 43:]

BUT do not let us quarrel any more,  
No, my Lucrezia; bear with me for once:  
Sit down and all shall happen as you wish.  
You turn your face, but does it bring your  
heart?

I'll work then for your friend's friend, never  
fear,

Treat his own subject after his own way,  
Fix his own time, accept too his own price,  
And shut the money into this small hand  
When next it takes mine. Will it? tenderly?

Oh, I'll content him,—but to-morrow, Love!

I often am much wearier than you think,

This evening more than usual, and it seems

As if—forgive now—should you let me sit

Here by the window with your hand in mine

And look a half-hour forth on Fiesole,

Both of one mind, as married people use,

Quietly, quietly the evening through,

I might get up to-morrow to my work

Cheerful and fresh as ever. Let us try.

To-morrow, how you shall be glad for this!

Your soft hand is a woman of itself,

And mine the man's bared breast she curls

inside.

Don't count the time lost, neither; you must  
serve.

For each of the five pictures we require:

It saves a model. So! keep looking so—

My serpentine beauty, rounds on rounds!

—How could you ever prick those perfect ears,

Even to put the pearl there! oh, so sweet—

My face, my moon, my everybody's moon,

Which everybody looks on and calls his,

And, I suppose, is looked on by in turn,

While she looks—no one's: very dear, no  
less.

You smile? why, there's my picture ready  
made,

There's what we painters call our harmony!

A common greyness silvers everything,—

All in a twilight, you and I alike

—You, at the point of your first pride in me

(That's gone you know),—but I, at every  
point;

My youth, my hope, my art, being all toned  
down

To yonder sober pleasant Fiesole.

There's the bell clinking from the chapel-top;

That length of convent-wall across the way

Holds the trees safer, huddled more inside;

The last monk leaves the garden; days

decrease,

And autumn grows, autumn in everything.

Eh? the whole seems to fall into a shape



As if I saw alike my work and self  
And all that I was born to be and do,  
A twilight-piece. Love, we are in God's  
hand.

How strange now, looks the life he makes us  
lead ;

So free we seem, so fettered fast we are !

I feel he laid the fetter : let it lie !

This chamber for example—turn your head—  
All that's behind us ! You don't understand

Nor care to understand about my art,

But you can hear at least when people speak :

And that cartoon, the second from the door

—It is the thing, Love ! so such things should  
be—

Behold Madonna !—I am bold to say.

I can do with my pencil what I know,

What I see, what at bottom of my heart

I wish for, if I ever wish so deep—

Do easily, too—when I say, perfectly,

I do not boast, perhaps : yourself are judge,

Who listened to the Legat's talk last week,

And just as much they used to say in France.

At any rate 'tis easy, all of it !

No sketches first, no studies, that's long past :

I do what many dream of, all their lives,

—Dream ? strive to do, and agonize to do,

And fail in doing. I could count twenty such

On twice your fingers, and not leave this town,

Who strive—you don't know how the others

strive

To paint a little thing like that you smeared

Carelessly passing with your robes afloat,—

Yet do much less, so much less, Someone

says,

(I know his name, no matter)—so much less !

Well, less is more, Lucrezia : I am judged.

There burns a truer light of God in them,

In their vexed beating stuffed and stopped-up

brain,

Heart, or whate'er else, than goes on to

prompt

This low-pulsed forthright craftsman's hand

of mine.

Their works drop groundward, but them-

selves, I know,

Reach many a time a heaven that's shut to

me,

Enter and take their place there sure enough,  
Though they come back and cannot tell the  
world.

My works are nearer heaven, but I sit here.

The sudden blood of these men ! at a word—

Praise them, it boils, or blame them, it boils  
too.

I, painting from myself and to myself,

Know what I do, am unmoved by men's  
blame

Or their praise either. Somebody remarks

Morello's outline there is wrongly traced,

His hue mistaken ; what of that ? or else,

Rightly traced and well ordered ; what of  
that ?

Speak as they please, what does the mountain  
care ?

Ah, but a man's reach should exceed his grasp,

Or what's a heaven for ? All is silver-grey

Placid and perfect with my art : the worse !

I know both what I want and what might  
gain,

And yet how profitless to know, to sigh

" Had I been two, another and myself,

" Our head would have o'erlooked the  
world ! " No doubt.

Yonder's a work now, of that famous youth

The Urbinate who died five years ago.

('Tis copied, George Vasari sent it me.)

Well, I can fancy how he did it all,

Pouring his soul, with kings and popes to see,

Reaching, that heaven might so replenish him,

Above and through his art—for it gives way ;

That arm is wrongly put—and there again—

A fault to pardon in the drawing's lines,

Its body, so to speak : its soul is right,

He meaps right—that, a child may understand.

Still, what an arm ! and I could alter it :

But all the play, the insight and the stretch—

Out of me, out of me ! And wherefore out ?

Had you enjoined them on me, given me  
soul,

We might have risen to Rafael, I and you !

Nay, Love, you did give all I asked, I think—

More than I merit, yes, by many times.

But had you—oh, with the same perfect brow,

And perfect eyes, and more than perfect

mouth,

And the low voice my soul hears, as a bird  
The fowler's pipe, and follows to the snare—  
Had you, with these the same, but brought a  
mind!

Some women do so. Had the mouth there  
urged

"God and the glory! never care for gain.

"The present by the future, what is that?

"Live for fame, side by side with Agnolo!

"Rafael is waiting: up to God, all three!"

I might have done it for you. So it seems:

Perhaps not. All is as God over-rules.

Beside, incentives come from the soul's self;

The rest avail not. Why do I need you?

What wife had Rafael, or has Agnolo?

In this world, who can do a thing, will not;

And who would do it, cannot, I perceive:

Yet the will's somewhat—somewhat, too, the  
power—

And thus we half-men struggle. At the end,

God, I conclude, compensates, punishes.

'Tis safer for me, if the award be strict,

That I am something underrated here,

Poor this long while, despised, to speak the  
truth.

I dared not, do you know, leave home all day,  
For fear of chancing on the Paris lords.

The best is when they pass and look aside;

But they speak sometimes; I must bear it all.

Well may they speak! That Francis, that  
first time,

And that long festal year at Fontainebleau!

I surely then could sometimes leave the  
ground,

Put on the glory, Rafael's daily wear,

In that humane great monarch's golden  
look,—

One finger in his beard or twisted curl

Over his mouth's good mark that made the  
smile,

One arm about my shoulder, round my neck,

The jingle of his gold chain in my ear,

I painting proudly with his breath on me,

All his court round him, seeing with his eyes,

Such frank French eyes, and such a fire of  
souls

Profuse, my hand kept plying by those  
hearts,—

And, best of all, this, this, this face beyond,  
This in the background, waiting on my work,  
To crown the issue with a last reward!

A good time, was it not, my kingly days?

And had you not grown restless . . . but I  
know—

'Tis done and past; 'twas right, my instinct  
said;

Too live the life grew, golden and not grey,  
And I'm the weak-eyed bat no sun should  
tempt

Out of the grange whose four walls make  
his world.

How could it end in any other way?

You called me, and I came home to your  
heart.

The triumph was—to reach and stay there;  
since

I reached it ere the triumph, what is lost?

Let my hands frame your face in your hair's  
gold,

You beautiful Lucrezia that are mine!

"Rafael did this, Andrea painted that;

"The Roman's is the better when you pray,  
"But still the other's Virgin was his wife—"

Men will excuse me. I am glad to judge  
Both pictures in your presence; clearer grows  
My better fortune, I resolve to think.

For, do you know, Lucrezia, as God lives,

Said one day Agnolo, his very self,

To Rafael . . . I have known it all these  
years . . .

(When the young man was flaming out his  
thoughts

Upon a palace-wall for Rome to see,

Too lifted up in heart because of it)

"Friend, there's a certain sorry little scrub

"Goes up and down our Florence, none cares  
how,

"Who, were he set to plan and execute

"As you are, pricked on by your popes and  
kings,

"Would bring the sweat into that brow of  
yours!"

To Rafael's!—And indeed the arm is wrong.

I hardly dare . . . yet, only you to see,

Give the chalk here—quick, thus the line  
should go!

Ay, but the soul ! he's Rafael ! rub it out !  
 Still, all I care for, if he spoke the truth,  
 What he ? why, who but Michel Agnolo ?  
 Do you forget already words like those ?  
 If really there was such a chance, so lost,—  
 Is, whether you're—not grateful—but more  
 pleased.

Well, let me think so. And you smile indeed !  
 This hour has been an hour ! Another smile ?  
 If you would sit thus by me every night  
 I should work better, do you comprehend ?  
 I mean that I should earn more, give you  
 more.

See, it is settled dusk now ; there's a star ;  
 Morello's<sup>1</sup> gone, the watch-lights show the  
 wall,

The cue-owls speak the name we call them by.  
 Come from the window, love,—come in, at  
 last,

Inside the melancholy little house

We built to be so gay with. God is just.

King Francis may forgive me : oft at nights  
 When I look up from painting, eyes tired out,  
 The walls become illumined, brick from brick  
 Distinct, instead of mortar, fierce bright  
 gold,

That gold of his I did cement them with !  
 Let us but love each other. Must you go ?  
 That Cousin here again ? he waits outside ?  
 Must see you—you, and not with me ? Those  
 loans ?

More gaming debts to pay ? you smiled for  
 that ?

Well, let smiles buy me ! have you more to  
 spend ?

While hand and eye and something of a heart  
 Are left me, work's my ware, and what's it  
 worth ?

I'll pay my fancy. Only let me sit  
 The grey remainder of the evening out,  
 Idle, you call it, and muse perfectly  
 How I could paint, were I but back in France,  
 One picture, just one more—the Virgin's  
 face,

Not yours this time ! I want you at my side  
 To hear them—that is, Michel Agnolo—

Judge all I do and tell you of its worth.  
 Will you ? To-morrow, satisfy your friend.  
 I take the subjects for his corridor,  
 Finish the portrait out of hand—there—  
 there,

And throw him in another thing or two  
 If he demurs ; the whole should prove enough  
 To pay for this same Cousin's freak. Beside,  
 What's better and what's all I care about,  
 Get you the thirteen scudi for the ruff !  
 Love, does that please you ? Ah, but what  
 does he,

The Cousin ! what does he to please you  
 more ?

I am grown peaceful as old age to-night.  
 I regret little, I would change still less.  
 Since there my past life lies, why alter it ?  
 The very wrong to Francis !—it is true  
 I took his coin, was tempted and complied,  
 And built this house and sinned, and all is  
 said.

My father and my mother died of want.  
 Well, had I riches of my own ? you see  
 How one gets rich ! Let each one bear his  
 lot.

They were born poor, lived poor, and poor  
 they died :  
 And I have laboured somewhat in my time  
 And not been paid profusely. Some good  
 son

Paint my two hundred pictures—let him  
 try !

No doubt, there's something strikes a balance.  
 Yes,

You loved me quite enough, it seems to-night.  
 This must suffice me here. What would one  
 have ?

In heaven, perhaps, new chances, one more  
 chance—

Four great walls in the New Jerusalem,  
 Meted on each side by the angel's reed,  
 For Leonard, Rafael, Agnolo and me  
 To cover—the three first without a wife,  
 While I have mine ! So—still they overcome  
 Because there's still Lucrezia,—as I choose.

<sup>1</sup> One of the Apennines.

Again the Cousin's whistle ! Go, my Love.

THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB  
AT SAINT PRADEX'S CHURCH.

ROME, 15—.

VANITY, saith the preacher, vanity !

Draw round my bed : is Anselm keeping  
back ?Nephews—sons mine . . . ah God, I know  
not ! Well—

She, men would have to be your mother once,  
Old Gandolf envied me, so fair she was !  
What's done is done, and she is dead beside.  
Dead long ago, and I am Bishop since,  
And as she died so must we die ourselves,  
And thence ye may perceive the world's a  
dream.

Life, how and what is it ? As here I lie  
In this state-chamber, dying by degrees,  
Hours and long hours in the dead night, I ask  
"Do I live, am I dead ?" Peace, peace  
seems all.

Saint Praxed's ever was the church for peace ;  
And so, about this tomb of mine. I fought  
With tooth and nail to save my niche, ye  
know :

—Old Gandolf cozened me, despite my care ;  
Shrewd was that snatch from out the corner  
South

He graced his carrion with, God curse the  
same !

Yet still my niche is not so cramped but  
thence

One sees the pulpit o' the epistle-side,  
And somewhat of the choir, those silent seats,  
And up into the airy dome where live

The angels, and a sunbeam's sure to lurk :

And I shall fill my slab of basalt there,

And 'neath my tabernacle take my rest,

With those nine columns round me, two and  
two,

The odd one at my feet where Anselm stands :  
Peach-blossom marble all, the rare, the ripe  
As fresh-poured red wine of a mighty pulse.

—Old Gandolf with his paltry onion-stone,  
Put me where I may look at him ! True  
peach,

Rosy and flawless : how I earned the prize !

Draw close : that conflagration of my church  
—What then ? So much was saved if aught  
were missed !

My sons, ye would not be my death ? Go dig  
The white-grape vineyard where the oil-press  
stood,

Drop water gently till the surface sink,  
And if ye find . . . Ah God, I know not,  
I ! . . .

Bedded in store of rotten fig-leaves soft,  
And corded up in a tight olive-frail,  
Some lump, ah God, of *lapis lazuli*,  
Big as a Jew's head cut off at the nape,  
Blue as a vein o'er the Madonna's breast . . .  
Sons, all have I bequeathed you, villas, all,  
That brave Frascati villa with its bath,  
So, let the blue lump poise between my knees,  
Like God the Father's globe on both his  
hands

Ye worship in the Jesu Church so gay,  
For Gandolf shall not choose but see and  
burst !

Swift as a weaver's shuttle fleet our years :  
Man goeth to the grave, and where is he ?

Did I say basalt for my slab, sons ? Black—  
'Twas ever antique-black I meant ! How else

Shall ye contrast my frieze to come beneath ?  
The bas-relief in bronze ye promised me,  
Those Pans and Nymphs ye wot of, and  
perchance

Some tripod, thyrsus, with a vase or so,  
The Saviour at his sermon on the mount,  
Saint Praxed in a glory, and one Pan  
Ready to twitch the Nymph's last garment off,  
And Moses with the tables . . . but I know  
Ye mark me not ! What do they whisper  
thee,

Child of my bowels, Anselm ? Ah, ye hope  
To revel down my villas while I gasp

Bricked o'er with beggar's mouldy travertine  
Which Gandolf from his tomb-top chuckles at !

Nay, boys, ye love me—all of jasper, then !

'Tis jasper ye stand pledged to, lest I grieve,  
My bath must needs be left behind, alas !

One block, pure green as a pistachio-nut,  
There's plenty jasper somewhere in the world—  
And have I not Saint Praxed's ear to pray  
Horses for ye, and brown Greek manuscripts,

And mistresses with great smooth marbly  
limbs?

—That's if ye carve my epitaph aright,  
Choice Latin, picked phrase, Tully's every  
word,

No gaudy ware like Gandolf's second line—  
Tully, my masters? Ulpian serves his need!  
And then how I shall lie through centuries,  
And hear the blessed mutter of the mass,  
And see God made and eaten all day long,  
And feel the steady candle-flame, and taste  
Good strong thick stupefying incense-smoke!  
For as I lie here, hours of the dead night,  
Dying in state and by such slow degrees,  
I fold my arms as if they clasped a crook,  
And stretch my feet forth straight as stone  
can point,

And let the bedclothes, for a mortcloth, drop  
Into great laps and folds of sculptor's-work:  
And as yon tapers dwindle, and strange  
thoughts

Grow, with a certain humming in my ears,  
About the life before I lived this life,  
And this life too, popes, cardinals and priests,  
Saint Praxed at his sermon on the mount,  
Your tall pale mother with her talking eyes,  
And new-found agate urns as fresh as day,  
And marble's language, Latin pure, discreet,  
—Aha, *ELUCESCEBAT* quoth our friend?  
No Tully, said I, Ulpian at the best!  
Evil and brief hath been my pilgrimage.  
All *lapis*, all, sons! Else I give the Pope  
My villas! Will ye ever eat my heart?  
Ever your eyes were as a lizard's quick,  
They glitter like your mother's for my soul,  
Or ye would heighten my impoverished  
frieze,

Piece out its starved design, and fill my vase  
With grapes, and add a vizor and a Term,<sup>1</sup>  
And to the tripod ye would tie a lynx  
That in his struggle throws the thyrsus down,  
To comfort me on my entablature  
Whereon I am to lie till I must ask  
“Do I live, am I dead?” There, leave me,  
there!

For ye have stabbed me with ingratitude

<sup>1</sup> A bust ending in a square block of stone,  
like those of the god *Terminus*.

To death—ye wish it—God, ye wish it!  
Stone—

Gritstone, a-crumble! Clammy squares which  
sweat  
As if the corpse they keep were oozing  
through—

And no more *lapis* to delight the world!  
Well go! I bless ye. Fewer tapers there,  
But in a row: and, going, turn your backs  
—Ay, like departing altar-ministrants,  
And leave me in my church, the church for  
peace,

That I may watch at leisure if he leers—  
Old Gandolf, at me, from his onion-stone,  
As still he envied me, so fair she was!

#### BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY.

No more wine? then we'll push back  
chairs and talk.

A final glass for me, though: cool, i' faith!  
We ought to have our Abbey back, you see.  
It's different, preaching in basilicas,  
And doing duty in some masterpiece  
Like this of brother Pugin's, bless his heart!  
I doubt if they're half baked, those chalk  
rosettes,

Ciphers and stucco-twiddlings everywhere;  
It's just like breathing in a lime-kiln: eh?  
These hot long ceremonies of our church  
Cost us a little—oh, they pay the price,  
You take me—amply pay it! Now, we'll  
talk.

So, you despise me, Mr. Gigadibs.  
No deprecation,—nay, I beg you, sir!  
Beside 'tis our engagement: don't you know,  
I promised, if you'd watch a dinner out,  
We'd see truth dawn together?—truth that  
peeps  
Over the glasses' edge when dinner's done,  
And body gets its sop and holds its noise  
And leaves soul free a little. Now's the  
time:

Truth's break of day! You do despise me  
then.

And if I say, “despise me,”—never fear!

I know you do not in a certain sense—  
Not in my arm-chair, for example : here,  
I well imagine you respect my place  
(*Status, entourage*, worldly circumstance)  
Quite to its value—very much indeed :  
—Are up to the protesting eyes of you  
In pride at being seated here for once—  
You'll turn it to such capital account !  
When somebody, through years and years to  
come,

Hints of the bishop,—names me—that's  
enough :

"Blougram? I knew him"—(into it you  
slide)

"Dined with him once, a Corpus Christi  
Day,

"All alone, we two ; he's a clever man :

"And after dinner,—why, the wine you  
know,—

"Oh, there was wine, and good !—what  
with the wine . . .

"Faith, we began upon all sorts of talk !

"He's no bad fellow, Blougram ; he had seen  
"Something of mine he relished, some  
review :

"He's quite above their humbug in his heart,  
"Half-said as much, indeed—the thing's his  
trade.

"I warrant, Blougram's sceptical at times :  
"How otherwise? I liked him, I confess !"  
*Che che*, my dear sir, as we say at Rome,  
Don't you protest now ! It's fair give and  
take ;

You have had your turn and spoken your  
home-truths :

The hand's mine now, and here you follow  
suit.

Thus much conceded, still the first fact  
stays—

You do despise me ; your ideal of life  
Is not the bishop's : you would not be I.

You would like better to be Goethe, now,  
Or Buonaparte, or, bless me, lower still,  
Count D'Orsay,—so you did what you pre-  
ferred,

Spoke as you thought, and, as you cannot  
help,

VOL. I.

Believed or disbelieved, no matter what,  
So long as on that point, whate'er it was,  
You loosed your mind, were whole and sole  
yourself.

—That, my ideal never can include,  
Upon that element of truth and worth

Never be based ! for say they make me Pope—  
(They can't—suppose it for our argument !)

Why, there I'm at my tether's end, I've  
reached

My height, and not a height which please  
you :

An unbelieving Pope won't do, you say.  
It's like those eerie stories nurses tell,

Of how some actor on a stage played Death,  
With pasteboard crown, sham orb and tin-  
selled dart,

And called himself the monarch of the world ;  
Then, going in the tire-room afterward,

Because the play was done, to shift himself,  
Got touched upon the sleeve familiarly,

The moment he had shut the closet door,  
By Death himself. Thus God might touch  
a Pope

At unawares, ask what his baubles mean,  
And whose part he presumed to play just now.

Best be yourself, imperial, plain and true !

So, drawing comfortable breath again,  
You weigh and find, whatever more or less  
I boast of my ideal realized

Is nothing in the balance when opposed  
To your ideal, your grand simple life,

Of which you will not realize one jot.  
I am much, you are nothing ; you would be  
all,

I would be merely much : you beat me there.

No, friend, you do not beat me : hearken  
why !

The common problem, yours, mine, every  
one's,

Is—not to fancy what were fair in life  
Provided it could be,—but, finding first

What may be, then find how to make it fair  
Up to our means : a very different thing !

No abstract intellectual plan of life  
Quite irrespective of life's plainest laws,

But ~~one, a man~~, who is man and nothing  
 more,  
 May lead within a world which (by your  
 leave)  
 Is Rome or London, not Fool's-paradise.  
 Embellish Rome, idealize away,  
 Make paradise of London if you can,  
 You're welcome, nay, you're wise.

A simile !

We mortals cross the ocean of this world  
 Each in his average cabin of a life ;  
 The best's not big, the worst yields elbow-  
 room.  
 Now for our six months' voyage—how pre-  
 pare ?  
 You come on shipboard with a landsman's  
 list

Of things he calls convenient : so they are !  
 An India screen is pretty furniture,  
 A piano-forte is a fine resource,  
 All Balzac's novels occupy one shelf,  
 The new edition fifty volumes long ;  
 And little Greek books, with the funny type  
 They get up well at Leipsic, fill the next :  
 Go on ! slabbed marble, what a bath it makes !  
 And Parma's pride, the Jerome, let us add !  
 'Twere pleasant could Correggio's fleeting  
 glow

Hang full in face of one where'er one roams,  
 Since he more than the others brings with him  
 Italy's self,—the marvellous Modenese !—  
 Yet was not on your list before, perhaps.  
 —Alas, friend, here's the agent . . . is't  
 the name ?

The captain, or whoever's master here—  
 You see him screw his face up ; what's his  
 cry  
 Ere you set foot on shipboard ? "Six feet  
 square !"

If you won't understand what six feet mean,  
 Compute and purchase stores accordingly—  
 And if, in pique because he overhauls  
 Your Jerome, piano, bath, you come on board  
 Bare—why, you cut a figure at the first  
 While sympathetic landmen see you off ;  
 Not afterward, when long ere half seas over,  
 You peep up from your utterly naked boards

Into some snug and well-appointed berth,  
 Like mine for instance (try the cooler jug—  
 Put back the other, but don't jog the ice !)  
 And mortified you mutter "Well and good ;  
 "He sits enjoying his sea-furniture ;  
 "'Tis stout and proper, and there's store of  
 it :

"Though I've the better notion, all agree,  
 "Of fitting rooms up. Hang the carpenter,  
 "Neat ship-shape fixings and contrivances—  
 "I would have brought my Jerome, frame  
 and all !"

And meantime you bring nothing : never  
 mind—

You've proved your artist-nature : what you  
 don't

You might bring, so despise me, as I say.

Now come, let's backward to the starting-  
 place.

See my way : we're two college friends,  
 suppose.

Prepare together for our voyage, then ;  
 Each note and check the other in his work,—  
 Here's mine, a bishop's outfit ; criticize !  
 What's wrong ? why won't you be a bishop  
 too ?

Why first, you don't believe, you don't  
 and can't,

(Not stately, that is, and fixedly  
 And absolutely and exclusively)  
 In any revelation called divine.

No dogmas nail your faith ; and what remains  
 But say so, like the honest man you are ?

First, therefore, overhaul theology !

Nay, I too, not a fool, you please to think,  
 Must find believing every whit as hard :

And if I do not frankly say as much,  
 The ugly consequence is clear enough.

Now wait, my friend : well, I do not  
 believe—

If you'll accept no faith that is not fixed,  
 Absolute and exclusive, as you say.

You're wrong—I mean to prove it in due  
 time.

Meanwhile, I know where difficulties lie

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

I could not, cannot solve, nor ever shall,  
So give up hope accordingly to solve—  
(To you, and over the wine). Our dogmas  
then

With both of us, though in unlike degree,  
Missing full credence—overboard with them!  
I mean to meet you on your own premise:  
Good, there go mine in company with yours!

And now what are we? unbelievers both,  
Calm and complete, determinately fixed  
To-day, to-morrow and for ever, pray?  
You'll guarantee me that? Not so, I think!  
In no wise! all we've gained is, that belief,  
As unbelief before, shakes us by fits,  
Confounds us like its predecessor. Where's  
The gain? how can we guard our unbelief,  
Make it bear fruit to us?—the problem here.  
Just when we are safest, there's a sunset-  
touch,

A fancy from a flower-bell, some one's death,  
A chorus-ending from Euripides,—  
And that's enough for fifty hopes and fears  
As old and new at once as nature's self,  
To rap and knock and enter in our soul,  
Take hands and dance there, a fantastic ring,  
Round the ancient idol, on his base again,—  
The grand Perhaps! We look on helplessly.  
There the old misgivings, crooked questions  
are—

This good God,—what he could do, if he  
would,

Would, if he could—then must have done  
long since:

If so, when, where and how? some way  
must be,—

Once feel about, and soon or late you hit  
Some sense, in which it might be, after all.  
Why not, "The Way, the Truth, the Life?"

—That way

Over the mountain, which who stands upon  
Is apt to doubt if it be meant for a road;  
While, if he views it from the waste itself,  
Up goes the line there, plain from base to  
brow,  
Not vague, mistakeable! what's a break or  
two

Seen from the unbroken desert either side?  
And then (to bring in fresh philosophy)  
What if the breaks themselves should prove  
at last

The most consummate of contrivances  
To train a man's eye, teach him what is faith?  
And so we stumble at truth's slippery test!  
All we have gained then by our unbelief  
Is a life of doubt diversified by faith,  
For one of faith diversified by doubt:  
We called the chess-board white,—we call  
it black.

"Well," you rejoins, "the end's no worse,  
at least."  
"We've reason for both colours on the board:  
"Why not confess then, where I drop the  
faith  
"And you the doubt, that I'm as right as  
you?"

Because, friend, in the next place, this  
being so,  
And both things even,—faith and unbelief  
Left to a man's choice,—we'll proceed a step,  
Returning to our image, which I like.

A man's choice, yes—but a cabin-pas-  
senger's—

The man made for the special life o' the world—  
Do you forget him? I remember though!  
Consult our ship's conditions and you find  
One and but one choice suitable to all;  
The choice, that you unluckily prefer,  
Turning things topsy-turvy—they of it  
Going to the ground. Belief or unbelief  
Bears upon life, determines its whole course,  
Begins at its beginning. See the world  
Such as it is,—you made it not, nor I;  
I mean to take it as it is,—and you,  
Not so you'll take it,—though you get nought  
else.

I know the special kind of life I like,  
What suits the most my idiosyncrasy,  
Brings out the best of me and bears me fruit  
In power, peace, pleasantness and length of  
days.

I find that positive belief does this



For me, and unbelief, no whit of this.

—For you, it does, however?—that, we'll try!

'Tis clear, I cannot lead my life, at least,

Induce the world to let me peaceably,

Without declaring at the outset, "Friends,

"I absolutely and peremptorily

"Believe!"—I say, faith is my waking life:

One sleeps, indeed, and dreams at intervals,

We know, but waking's the main point with us,

And my provision's for life's waking part.

Accordingly, I use heart, head and hand

All day, I build, scheme, study, and make  
friends;

And when night overtakes me, down I lie,

Sleep, dream a little, and get done with it,

The sooner the better, to begin afresh.

What's midnight doubt before the dayspring's  
faith?

You, the philosopher, that disbelieve,

That recognize the night, give dreams their  
weight—

To be consistent you should keep your bed,

Abstain from healthy acts that prove you man,

For fear you drowse perhaps at unawares!

And certainly at night you'll sleep and dream,

Live through the day and bustle as you please.

And so you live to sleep as I to wake,

To unbelieve as I to still believe?

Well, and the common sense o' the world calls  
you

Bed-ridden,—and its good things come to me.

Its estimation, which is half the fight,

That's the first-cabin comfort I secure:

The next . . . but you perceive with half an  
eye!

Come, come, it's best believing, if we may;

You can't but own that!

Next, concede again,

If once we choose belief, on all accounts

We can't be too decisive in our faith,

Conclusive and exclusive in its terms,

To suit the world which gives us the good  
things.

In every man's career are certain points

Whereon he dares not be indifferent;

The world detects him clearly, if he dare,

As baffled at the game, and losing life.

He may care little or he may care much

For riches, honour, pleasure, work, repose,

Since various theories of life and life's

Success are extant which might easily

Comport with either estimate of these;

And whoso chooses wealth or poverty,

Labour or quiet, is not judged a fool

Because his fellow would choose otherwise:

We let him choose upon his own account

So long as he's consistent with his choice.

But certain points, left wholly to himself,

When once a man has arbitrated on,

We say he must succeed there or go hang.

Thus, he should wed the woman he loves most

Or needs most, whatsoe'er the love or need—

For he can't wed twice. Then, he must  
avouch,

Or follow, at the least, sufficiently,

The form of faith his conscience holds the best,

Whate'er the process of conviction was:

For nothing can compensate his mistake

On such a point, the man himself being judge:

He cannot wed twice, nor twice lose his soul.

Well now, there's one great form of Chris-  
tian faith

I happened to be born in—which to teach

Was given me as I grew up, on all hands,

As best and readiest means of living by;

The same on examination being proved

The most pronounced moreover, fixed, precise

And absolute form of faith in the whole world—

Accordingly, most potent of all forms

For working on the world. Observe, my friend!

Such as you know me, I am free to say,

In these hard latter days which hamper one,

Myself—by no immoderate exercise

Of intellect and learning, but the tact

To let external forces work for me,

—Bid the street's stones be bread and they are  
bread;

Bid Peter's creed, or rather, Hildebrand's,

Exalt me o'er my fellows in the world . . .

And make my life an ease and joy and pride;

It does so,—which for me's a great point  
gained,

Who have a soul and body that exact

A comfortable care in many ways.

There's power in me and will to dominate  
Which I must exercise, they hurt me else :  
In many ways I need mankind's respect,  
Obedience, and the love that's born of fear :  
While at the same time, there's a taste I have,  
A toy of soul, a titillating thing,  
Refuses to digest these dainties crude.  
The naked life is gross till clothed upon :  
I must take what men offer, with a grace  
As though I would not, could I help it, take !  
An uniform I wear, though over-rich—  
Something imposed on me, no choice of mine :  
No fancy-dress worn for pure fancy's sake  
And despicable therefore ! now folk kneel  
And kiss my hand—of course the Church's  
hand.

Thus I am made, thus life is best for me,  
And thus that it should be I have procured ;  
And thus it could not be another way,  
I venture to imagine.

You'll reply,

So far my choice, no doubt, is a success ;  
But were I made of better elements,  
With nobler instincts, purer tastes, like you,  
I hardly would account the thing success  
Though it did all for me I say.

But, friend,

We speak of what is ; not of what might be,  
And how 'twere better if 'twere otherwise.  
I am the man you see here plain enough :  
Grant I'm a beast, why, beasts must lead  
beasts' lives !

Suppose I own at once to tail and claws ;  
The tailless man exceeds me : but being tailed  
I'll lash out lion fashion, and leave apes  
To dock their stump and dress their  
haunches up.

My business is not to remake myself,  
But make the absolute best of what God made.  
Or—our first simile—though you prove me  
doomed

To a viler berth still, to the steerage-hole,  
The sheep-pen or the pig-stye, I should strive  
To make what use of each were possible ;  
And as this cabin gets upholstery,  
That hutch should rustle with sufficient straw.

But, friend, I don't acknowledge quite so  
fast

I fail of all your manhood's lofty tastes  
Enumerated so complacently,  
On the mere ground that you forsooth can find  
In this particular life I choose to lead.  
No fit provision for them. Can you not ?  
Say you, my fault is I address myself  
To grosser estimators than should judge ?  
And that's no way of holding up the soul,  
Which, nobler, needs men's praise perhaps,  
yet knows

One wise man's verdict outweighs all the  
fools'—

Would like the two, but, forced to choose,  
takes that.

I pine among my million imbeciles  
(You think) aware some dozen men of sense  
Eye me and know me, whether I believe  
In the last winking Virgin, as I vow,  
And am a fool, or disbelieve in her  
And am a knave,—approve in neither case,  
Withhold their voices though I look their  
way :

Like Verdi when, at his worst opera's end  
(The thing they gave at Florence,—what's  
its name ?)

While the mad houseful's plaudits near out-  
bang

His orchestra of salt-box, tongs and bones,  
He looks through all the roaring and the  
wreaths

Where sits Rossini patient in his stall.

Nay, friend, I meet you with an answer  
here—

That even your prime men who appraise  
their kind

Are men still, catch a wheel within a wheel,  
See more in a truth than the truth's simple  
self,

Confuse themselves. You see lads walk the  
street

Sixty the minute ; what's to note in that ?

You see one lad o'erstride a chimney-stack ;  
Him you must watch—he's sure to fall, yet  
stands !

Our interest's on the dangerous edge of things.

The honest thief, the tender murderer,  
The superstitious atheist, demirep  
That loves and saves her soul in new French  
books—

We watch while these in equilibrium keep  
The giddy line midway : one step aside,  
They're classed and done with. I, then,  
keep the line

Before your sages,—just the men to shrink  
From the gross weights, coarse scales and  
labels broad

You offer their refinement. Fool or knave?  
Why needs a bishop be a fool or knave  
When there's a thousand diamond weights  
between?

So, I enlist them. Your picked twelve,  
you'll find,

Profess themselves indignant, scandalized  
At thus being held unable to explain  
How a superior man who disbelieves  
May not believe as well : that's Schelling's way!  
It's through my coming in the tail of time,  
Nicking the minute with a happy tact.  
Had I been born three hundred years ago  
They'd say, "What's strange? Blougram of  
course believes ;"

And, seventy years since, "disbelieves of  
course."

But now, "He may believe ; and yet, and yet  
"How can he?" All eyes turn with interest.  
Whereas, step off the line on either side—

You, for example, clever to a fault,  
The rough and ready man who write apace,  
Read somewhat seldomer, think perhaps even  
less—

You disbelieve ! Who wonders and who cares?  
Lord So-and-so—his coat bedropped with wax,  
All Peter's chains about his waist, his back  
Brave with the needlework of Noddledom—  
Believes ! Again, who wonders and who cares?  
But I, the man of sense and learning too,  
The able to think yet act, the this, the that,  
I, to believe at this late time of day !  
Enough ; you see, I need not fear contempt.

—Except it's yours ! Admire me as these  
may,

You don't. But whom at least do you admire?

Present your own perfection, your ideal,  
Your pattern man for a minute—oh, make  
haste,

Is it Napoleon you would have us grow?  
Concede the means ; allow his head and hand,  
(A large concession, clever as you are)  
Good ! In our common primal element  
Of unbelief (we can't believe, you know—  
We're still at that admission, recollect !)  
Where do you find—apart from, towering o'er  
The secondary temporary aims

Which satisfy the gross taste you despise—  
Where do you find his star?—his crazy trust  
God knows through what or in what? it's alive  
And shines and leads him, and that's all we  
want.

Have we aught in our sober night shall point  
Such ends as his were, and direct the means  
Of working out our purpose straight as his,  
Nor bring a moment's trouble on success  
With after-care to justify the same?  
—Be a Napoleon, and yet disbelieve—  
Why, the man's mad, friend, take his light  
away !

What's the vague good o' the world, for  
which you dare

With comfort to yourself blow millions up?  
We neither of us see it ! we do see  
The blown-up millions—spatter of their brains  
And writhing of their bowels and so forth,  
In that bewildering entanglement  
Of horrible eventualities

Past calculation to the end of time !  
Can I mistake for some clear word of God  
(Which were my ample warrant for it all)  
His puff of hazy instinct, idle talk,  
"The State, that's I," quack-nonsense about  
crowns,

And (when one beats the man to his last hold)  
A vague idea of setting things to rights,  
Policing people efficaciously,  
More to their profit, most of all to his own ;  
The whole to end that dismallest of ends  
By an Austrian marriage, cant to us the Church,  
And resurrection of the old régime?

Would I, who hope to live a dozen years,  
Fight Austerlitz for reasons such and such?  
No : for, concede me but the merest chance

Doubt may be wrong—there's judgment, life  
to come!

With just that chance, I dare not. Doubt  
proves right?

This present life is all?—you offer me  
Its dozen noisy years, without a chance  
That wedding an archduchess, wearing lace,  
And getting called by divers new-coined names,  
Will drive off ugly thoughts and let me dine,  
Sleep, read and chat in quiet as I like!  
Therefore I will not.

Take another case;

Fit up the cabin yet another way.

What say you to the poets? shall we write  
Hamlet, Othello—make the world our own,  
Without a risk to run of either sort?

I can't!—to put the strongest reason first.  
"But try," you urge, "the trying shall suffice;  
"The aim, if reached or not, makes great  
the life:

"Try to be Shakespeare, leave the rest to  
fate!"

Spare my self-knowledge—there's no fooling  
me!

If I prefer remaining my poor self,  
I say so not in self-dispraise but praise.  
If I'm a Shakespeare, let the well alone;  
Why should I try to be what now I am?  
If I'm no Shakespeare, as too probable,—  
His power and consciousness and self-delight  
And all we want in common, shall I find—  
Trying for ever? while on points of taste  
Wherewith, to speak it humbly, he and I  
Are dowered alike—I'll ask you, I or he,  
Which in our two lives realizes most?  
Much, he imagined—somewhat, I possess.  
He had the imagination; stick to that!  
Let him say, "In the face of my soul's works  
"Your world is worthless and I touch it not  
"Lest I should wrong them"—I'll withdraw  
my plea.

But does he say so? look upon his life!  
Himself, who only can, gives judgment there.  
He leaves his towers and gorgeous palaces  
To build the trimmest house in Stratford town;  
Saves money, spends it, owns the worth of  
things,

Giulio Romano's pictures, Dowland's lute;  
Enjoys a show; respects the puppets, too,  
And none more, had he seen its entry once,  
Than "Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal."

Why then should I who play that personage,  
The very Pandulph Shakespeare's fancy made,  
Be told that had the poet chanced to start  
From where I stand now (some degree like  
mine

Being just the goal he ran his race to reach)  
He would have run the whole race back,  
forsooth,

And left being Pandulph, to begin write plays?  
Ah, the earth's best can be but the earth's  
best!

Did Shakespeare live, he could but sit at home  
And get himself in dreams the Vatican,  
Greek busts, Venetian paintings, Roman walls,  
And English books, none equal to his own;  
Which I read, bound in gold (he never did).  
—Terni's fall, Naples' bay and Gothard's top—

Eh, friend? I could not fancy one of these;  
But, as I pour this claret, there they are:  
I've gained them—crossed St. Gothard last  
July

With ten mules to the carriage and a bed.  
Slung inside; is my hap the worse for that?  
We want the same things, Shakespeare and  
myself,

And what I want, I have: he, gifted more,  
Could fancy he too had them when he liked,  
But not so thoroughly that, if fate allowed,  
He would not have them also in my sense.  
We play one game; I send the ball aloft  
No less adroitly that of fifty strokes  
Scarce five go o'er the wall so wide and high  
Which sends them back to me: I wish and  
get.

He struck balls higher and with better skill,  
But at a poor fence level with his head,  
And hit—his Stratford house, a coat of arms,  
Successful dealings in his grain and wool,  
While I receive heaven's incense in my nose.  
And style myself the cousin of Queen Bess.  
Ask him, if this life's all, who wins the game?

Believe—and our whole argument breaks up:  
Enthusiasm's the best thing, I repeat;

Only, we can't command it ; fire and life  
Are all, dead matter's nothing, we agree :  
And be it a mad dream or God's very breath,  
The fact's the same,—belief's fire, once in us,  
Makes of all else mere stuff to show itself :  
We penetrate our life with such a glow  
As fire lends wood and iron—this turns steel,  
That burns to ash—all's one, fire proves its  
power

For good or ill, since men call flare success.  
But paint a fire, it will not therefore burn.  
Light one in me, I'll find it food enough !  
Why, to be Luther—that's a life to lead,  
Incomparably better than my own.

He comes, reclaims God's earth for God, he  
says,

Sets up God's rule again by simple means,  
Re-opens a shut book, and all is done.  
He flared out in the flaring of mankind ;  
Such Luther's luck was : how shall such be  
mine ?

If he succeeded, nothing's left to do :  
And if he did not altogether—well,  
Strauss is the next advance. All Strauss  
should be

I might be also. But to what result ?  
He looks upon no future : Luther did.  
What can I gain on the denying side ?  
Ice makes no conflagration. State the facts,  
Read the text right, emancipate the world—  
The emancipated world enjoys itself  
With scarce a thank-you : Blougram told it  
first

It could not owe a farthing,—not to him  
More than Saint Paul ! 'twould press its pay,  
you think ?

Then add there's still that plaguy hundredth  
chance

Strauss may be wrong. And so a risk is run—  
For what gain ? not for Luther's, who  
secured

A real heaven in his heart throughout his life,  
Supposing death a little altered things.

"Ay, but since really you lack faith," you  
cry,

"You run the same risk really on all sides,

"In cool indifference as bold unbelief.

"As well be Strauss as swing 'twixt Paul and  
him.

"It's not worth having, such imperfect faith,  
"No more available to do faith's work

"Than unbelief like mine. Whole faith, or  
none !"

Softly, my friend ! I must dispute that  
point.

Once own the use of faith, I'll find you faith.  
We're back on Christian ground. You call  
for faith :

I show you doubt, to prove that faith exists.  
The more of doubt, the stronger faith, I say,  
If faith o'ercomes doubt. How I know it  
does ?

By life and man's free will, God gave for that !  
To mould life as we choose it, shows our  
choice :

That's our one act, the previous work's his  
own.

You criticize the soul ? it reared this tree—  
This broad life and whatever fruit it bears !  
What matter though I doubt at every pore,  
Head-doubts, heart-doubts, doubts at my  
fingers' ends,

Doubts in the trivial work of every day,  
Doubts at the very bases of my soul  
In the grand moments when she probes her  
self—

If finally I have a life to show,  
The thing I did, brought out in evidence  
Against the thing done to me underground  
By hell and all its brood, for aught I know ?  
I say, whence sprang this ? shows it faith or  
doubt ?

All's doubt in me ; where's break of faith in  
this ?

It is the idea, the feeling and the love,  
God means mankind should strive for and  
show forth

Whatever be the process to that end,—  
And not historic knowledge, logic sound,  
And metaphysical acumen, sure !

"What think ye of Christ," friend ? when  
all's done and said,

Like you this Christianity or not ?

It may be false, but will you wish it true ?

Has it your vote to be so if it can?  
 Trust you an instinct silenced long ago  
 That will break silence and enjoin you love  
 What mortified philosophy is hoarse,  
 And all in vain, with bidding you despise?  
 If you desire faith—then you've faith enough:  
 What else seeks God—nay, what else seek  
 ourselves?

You form a notion of me, we'll suppose,  
 On hearsay; it's a favourable one:  
 "But still" (you add), "there was no such  
 good man,

"Because of contradiction in the facts.

"One proves, for instance, he was born in  
 Rome,

"This Blougram; yet throughout the tales  
 of him

"I see he figures as an Englishman."

Well, the two things are reconcilable.

But would I rather you discovered that,  
 Subjoining—"Still, what matter though  
 they be?

"Blougram concerns me nought, born here  
 or there."

Pure faith indeed—you know not what you  
 ask!

Naked belief in God the Omnipotent,  
 Omniscient, Omnipresent, sears too much  
 The sense of conscious creatures to be borne.  
 It were the seeing him, no flesh shall dare.  
 Some think, Creation's meant to show him  
 forth:

I say it's meant to hide him all it can,  
 And that's what all the blessed evil's for.

Its use in Time is to environ us,  
 Our breath, our drop of dew, with shield  
 enough

Against that sight till we can bear its stress.  
 Under a vertical sun, the exposed brain  
 And lidless eye and disemprisoned heart  
 Less certainly would wither up at once  
 Than mind, confronted with the truth of him.  
 But time and earth case-harden us to live;  
 The feeblest sense is trusted most; the child  
 Feels God a moment, ichors o'er the place,  
 Plays on and grows to be a man like us.  
 With me, faith means perpetual unbelief

Kept quiet like the snake 'neath Michael's  
 foot

Who stands calm just because he feels it  
 writhe.

Or, if that's too ambitious,—here's my box—  
 I need the excitation of a pinch  
 Threatening the torpor of the inside-nose  
 Nigh on the imminent sneeze that never  
 comes.

"Leave it in peace" advise the simple folk:  
 Make it aware of peace by itching-fits,  
 Say I—let doubt occasion still more faith!

You'll say, once all believed, man, woman,  
 child,

In that dear middle-age these noodles praise.  
 How you'd exult if I could put you back  
 Six hundred years, blot out cosmogony,  
 Geology, ethnology, what not,  
 (Greek endings, each the little passing-bell  
 That signifies some faith's about to die),  
 And set you square with Genesis again,—

When such a traveller told you his last  
 news,

He saw the ark a-top of Ararat  
 But did not climb there since 'twas getting  
 dusk

And robber-bands infest the mountain's foot!  
 How should you feel, I ask, in such an age,  
 How act? As other people felt and did;  
 With soul more blank than this decanter's  
 knob,

Believe—and yet lie, kill, rob, fornicate  
 Full in belief's face, like the beast you'd be!

No, when the fight begins within himself,  
 A man's worth something. God stoops o'er  
 his head,

Satan looks up between his feet—both tug—  
 He's left, himself, i' the middle: the soul  
 wakes

And grows. Prolong that battle through his  
 life!

Never leave growing till the life to come!  
 Here, we've got callous to the Virgin's winks  
 That used to puzzle people wholesomely:  
 Men have outgrown the shame of being fools.  
 What are the laws of nature, not to bend

If the Church bid them?—brother Newman asks.

Up with the Immaculate Conception, then—  
On to the rack with faith!—is my advice.  
Will not that hurry us upon our knees,  
Knocking our breasts, "It can't be—yet it  
shall!

"Who am I, the worm, to argue with my  
Pope?

"Low things confound the high things!"  
and so forth.

That's better than acquitting God with grace  
As some folk do. He's tried—no case is  
proved,  
Philosophy is lenient—he may go!

You'll say, the old system's not so obsolete  
But men believe still: ay, but who and  
where?

King Bomba's lazzaroni foster yet  
The sacred flame, so Antonelli writes;  
But even of these, what ragamuffin-saint  
Believes God watches him continually,  
As he believes in fire that it will burn,  
Or rain that it will drench him? Break fire's  
law,

Sin against rain, although the penalty  
Be just a singe or soaking? "No," he smiles;  
"Those laws are laws that can enforce them-  
selves."

The sum of all is—yes, my doubt is great,  
My faith's still greater, then my faith's enough.  
I have read much, thought much, experienced  
much,

Yet would die rather than avow my fear  
The Naples' liquefaction may be false,  
When set to happen by the palace-clock  
According to the clouds or dinner-time.  
I hear you recommend, I might at least  
Eliminate, declassify my faith  
Since I adopt it; keeping what I must  
And leaving what I can—such points as this.  
I won't—that is, I can't throw one away.  
Supposing there's no truth in what I hold  
About the need of trial to man's faith,  
Still, when you bid me purify the same,  
To such a process I discern no end.

Clearing off one excrescence to see two,  
There's ever a next in size, now grown as big,  
That meets the knife: I cut and cut again!  
First cut the Liquefaction, what comes last  
But Fichte's clever cut at God himself?  
Experimentalize on sacred things!  
I trust nor hand nor eye nor heart nor brain  
To stop betimes: they all get drunk alike.  
The first step, I am master not to take.

You'd find the cutting-process to your taste  
As much as leaving growths of lies unpruned,  
Nor see more danger in it,—you retort.  
Your taste's worth mine; but my taste proves  
more wise

When we consider that the steadfast hold  
On the extreme end of the chain of faith  
Gives all the advantage, makes the difference  
With the rough purblind mass we seek to rule:  
We are their lords, or they are free of us,  
Just as we tighten or relax our hold.  
So, other matters equal, we'll revert  
To the first problem—which, if solved my way  
And thrown into the balance, turns the scale—  
How we may lead a comfortable life,  
How suit our luggage to the cabin's size.

Of course you are remarking all this time  
How narrowly and grossly I view life,  
Respect the creature-comforts, care to rule  
The masses, and regard complacently  
"The cabin," in our old phrase. Well, I do.  
I act for, talk for, live for this world now,  
As this world prizes action, life and talk:  
No prejudice to what next world may prove,  
Whose new laws and requirements, my best  
pledge

To observe then, is that I observe these now,  
Shall do hereafter what I do meanwhile.  
Let us concede (gratuitously though)  
Next life relieves the soul of body, yields  
Pure spiritual enjoyment: well, my friend,  
Why lose this life if the meantime, since its use  
May be to make the next life more intense?

Do you know, I have often had a dream  
(Work it up in your next month's article)  
Of man's poor spirit in its progress, still

Losing true life for ever and a day.  
 Through ever trying to be and ever being—  
 In the evolution of successive spheres—  
*Before its actual sphere and place of life,*  
 Halfway into the next, which having reached;  
 It shoots with corresponding foolery.  
 Halfway into the next still, on and off!  
 As when a traveller, bound from North to  
 South,  
 Scouts fur in Russia: what's its use in  
 France?  
 In France spurns flannel: where's its need  
 in Spain?  
 In Spain drops cloth, too cumbrous for  
 Algiers!  
 Linen goes next, and last the skin itself,  
 A superfluity at Timbuctoo.  
 When, through his journey, was the fool at  
 ease?  
 I'm at ease now, friend; worldly in this world,  
 I take and like its way of life; I think  
 My brothers, who administer the means,  
 Live better for my comfort—that's good too;  
 And God, if he pronounce upon such life,  
 Approves my service, which is better still.  
 If he keep silence,—why, for you or me  
 Or that brute beast pulled-up in to-day's  
 "Times,"  
 What odds is't, save to ourselves, what life  
 we lead?

You meet me at this issue: you declare,—  
 All special-pleading done with—truth is truth,  
 And justifies itself by undreamed ways.  
 You don't fear but it's better, if we doubt,  
 To say so, act up to our truth perceived  
 However feebly. Do then,—act away!  
 'Tis there I'm on the watch for you. How  
 one acts  
 Is, both of us agree, our chief concern:  
 And how you'll act is what I fain would see.  
 If, like the candid person you appear,  
 You dare to make the most of your life's  
 scheme.  
 As I of mine, live up to its full law.  
 Since there's no higher law that counter-  
 checks.  
 Put natural religion to the test

You've just demolished the revealed with-  
 quick;  
 Down to the root of all that checks your will  
 All prohibition to lie, kill and thieve;  
 Or even to be an atheistic priest!  
 Suppose a pricking to incontinence—  
 Philosophers deduce you chastity  
 Or shame, from just the fact that at the first  
 Whoso embraced a woman in the field,  
 Threw club down and forewent his brains  
 beside,  
 So, stood a ready victim in the reach  
 Of any brother savage, club in hand;  
 Hence saw the use of going out of sight  
 In wood or cave to prosecute his loves:  
 I read this in a French book t'other day.  
 Does law so analysed coerce you much?  
 Oh, men spin clouds of fuzz where matters end,  
 But you who reach where the first thread  
 begins,  
 You'll soon cut that!—which means you can,  
 but won't,  
 Through certain instincts, blind, unreasoned-  
 out,  
 You dare not set aside, you can't tell why,  
 But there they are, and so you let them rule.  
 Then, friend, you seem as much a slave as I,  
 A liar, conscious coward and hypocrite,  
 Without the good the slave expects to get,  
 In case he has a master after all!  
 You own your instincts? why, what else do I,  
 Who want, am made for, and must have a  
 God.  
 Ere I can be aught, do aught?—no mere name  
 Want, but the true thing with what proves  
 its truth,  
 To wit, a relation from that thing to me,  
 Touching from head to foot—which touch I  
 feel,  
 And with it take the rest, this life of ours!  
 I live my life here; yours you dare not live!  
 —Not as I state it, who (you please subjoin)  
 Disfigure such a life and call it names.  
 While, to your mind, remains another way  
 For simple men: knowledge and power have  
 rights,  
 But ignorance and weakness have rights too!



There needs no crucial effort to find truth  
 If here or there or anywhere about :  
 We ought to turn each side, try hard and see,  
 And if we can't, be glad we've earned at least  
 The right, by one laborious proof the more,  
 To graze in peace earth's pleasant pasturage.  
 Men are not angels, neither are they brutes :  
 Something we may see, all we cannot see.  
 What need of lying? I say, I see all,  
 And swear to each detail the most minute  
 In what I think a Pan's face—you, mere cloud :  
 I swear I hear him speak and see him wink,  
 For fear, if once I drop the emphasis,  
 Mankind may doubt there's any cloud at all.  
 You take the simple life—ready to see,  
 Willing to see (for no cloud's worth a face)—  
 And leaving quiet what no strength can move,  
 And which, who bids you move? who has  
 the right?

I bid you; but you are God's sheep, not mine :  
 "*Pastor est tui Dominus.*" You find  
 In this the pleasant pasture of our life  
 Much you may eat without the least offence.  
 Much you don't eat because your maw objects,  
 Much you would eat but that your fellow-  
 flock

Open great eyes at you and even butt,  
 And thereupon you like your mates so well  
 You cannot please yourself, offending them ;  
 Though when they seem exorbitantly sheep,  
 You weigh your pleasure with their butts  
 and bleats

And strike the balance. Sometime certain  
 fears

Restrain you, real checks since you find  
 them so ;

Sometimes you please yourself and nothing  
 checks :

And thus you graze through life with not one  
 lie,

And like it best.

But do you, in truth's name?

If so, you beat—which means you are not I—  
 Who needs must make earth mine and feed  
 my fill

Not simply unbutted at, unbickered with,  
 But motioned to the velvet of the sword

By those obsequious wethers' very selves.  
 Look at me, sir ; my age is double yours ;  
 At yours, I knew beforehand, so enjoyed,  
 What now I should be—as, permit the word,  
 I pretty well imagine your whole range  
 And stretch of tether twenty years to come.  
 We both have minds and bodies much alike :  
 In truth's name, don't you want my bishopric,  
 My daily bread, my influence and my state?  
 You're young. I'm old ; you must be old  
 one day ;

Will you find then, as I do hour by hour,  
 Women their lovers kneel to, who cut curls  
 From your fat lap-dog's ear to grace a brooch—  
 Dukes, who petition just to kiss your ring—  
 With much beside you know or may conceive?  
 Suppose we die to-night : well, here am I,  
 Such were my gains, life bore this fruit to me,  
 While writing all the same my articles  
 On music, poetry, the fictile vase  
 Found at Albano, chess, Anacreon's Greek.  
 But you—the highest honour in your life,  
 The thing you'll crown yourself with, all your  
 days,

Is—dining here and drinking this last glass  
 I pour you out in sign of amity  
 Before we part for ever. Of your power  
 And social influence, worldly worth in short,  
 Judge what's my estimation by the fact,  
 I do not condescend to enjoin, beseech,  
 Hint secrecy on one of all these words !  
 You're shrewd and know that should you  
 publish one

The world would brand the lie—my enemies  
 first,

Who'd sneer—"the bishop's an arch-hypo-  
 crite

"And knave perhaps, but not so frank a  
 fool."

Whereas I should not dare for both my ears  
 Breathe one such syllable, smile one such  
 smile,

Before the chaplain who reflects myself—  
 My shade's so much more potent than your  
 flesh.

What's your reward, self-abnegating friend?  
 Stood you confessed of those exceptional  
 And privileged great natures that dwarf mine—

A zealot with a mad ideal in reach,  
A poet just about to print his ode,  
A statesman with a scheme to stop this war,  
An artist whose religion is his art—  
I should have nothing to object: such men  
Carry the fire, all things grow warm to them,  
Their druggot's worth my purple, they beat  
me.

But you,—you're just as little those as I—  
You, Gigadibs, who, thirty years of age,  
Write stately for Blackwood's Magazine,  
Believe you see two points in Hamlet's soul  
Unseized by the Germans yet—which view  
you'll print—

Meantime the best you have to show being  
still

That lively lightsome article we took  
Almost for the true Dickens,—what's its  
name?

"The Slum and Cellar, or Whitechapel life  
"Limned after dark!" it made me laugh, I  
know,

And pleased a month, and brought you in  
ten pounds.

—Success I recognize and compliment,  
And therefore give you, if you choose, three  
words

(The card and pencil-scratch is quite enough)  
Which whether here, in Dublin or New York,  
Will get you, prompt as at my eyebrow's wink,  
Such terms as never you aspired to get

In all our own reviews and some not ours.  
Go write your lively sketches! be the first  
"Blougram, or The Eccentric Confidence"—  
Or better simply say, "The Outward-bound."

Why, men as soon would throw it in my teeth  
As copy and quote the infamy chalked broad  
About me on the church-door opposite.

You will not wait for that experience though,  
I fancy, howsoever you decide,  
To discontinue—not detesting, not  
Defaming, but at least—despising me!

Over his wine so smiled and talked his hour  
Sylvester Blougram, styled in *partibus*  
*Episcopus, nec non*—(the deuce knows what  
It's changed to by our novel hierarchy)

With Gigadibs the literary man,  
Who played with spoons, explored his plate's  
design,  
And ranged the olive-stones about its edge,  
While the great bishop rolled him out a mind  
Long crumpled, till creased consciousness lay  
smooth.

For Blougram, he believed, say, half he  
spoke.

The other portion, as he shaped it thus  
For argumentary purposes,  
He felt his foe was foolish to dispute.  
Some arbitrary accidental thoughts  
That crossed his mind, amusing because new,  
He chose to represent as fixtures there,  
Invariable convictions (such they seemed  
Beside his interlocutor's loose cards  
Flung daily down, and not the same way  
twice)

While certain hell-deep instincts, man's weak  
tongue

Is never bold to utter in their truth  
Because styled hell-deep ('tis an old mistake  
To place hell at the bottom of the earth)  
He ignored these,—not having in readiness  
Their nomenclature and philosophy:

He said true things, but called them by  
wrong names.

"On the whole," he thought, "I justify  
myself

"On every point where cavillers like this  
"Oppugn my life: he tries one kind of fence,  
"I close, he's worsted, that's enough *for*  
him.

"He's on the ground: if ground should break  
away

"I take my stand on, there's a firmer yet  
"Beneath it, both of us may sink and reach.

"His ground was over mine and broke 'the  
first:

"So, let him sit with me this many a year!"

He did not sit five minutes. Just a week  
Sufficed his sudden healthy vehemence.  
Something had struck him in the "Outward-  
bound"

Another way than Blougram's purpose was:

And having bought, not cabin-furniture  
 But settler's implements (enough for three)  
 And started for Australia—there, I hope,  
 By this time he has tested his first plough,  
 And studied his last chapter of St. John.

### CLEON.

"As certain also of your own poets have  
 said"—

[An Imaginary person. The poet quoted by  
 St. Paul was Aratus, a native of Tarsus.]

CLEON the poet (from the sprinkled isles,  
 Lily on lily, that o'erlace the sea,  
 And laugh their pride when the light wave  
 lisps "Greece")—

To Protus in his Tyranny: much health!

They give thy letter to me, even now:  
 I read and seem as if I heard thee speak.  
 The master of thy galley still unladen  
 Gift after gift; they block my court at last  
 And pile themselves along its portico  
 Royal with sunset, like a thought of thee:  
 And one white she-slave from the group dis-  
 persed

Of black and white slaves (like the chequer-  
 work

Pavement, at once my nation's work and gift,  
 Now covered with this settle-down of doves),  
 One lyric woman, in her crocus vest  
 Woven of sea-wools, with her two white hands  
 Commends to me the strainer and the cup  
 Thy lip hath bettered ere it blesses mine.

Well-counselled, king, in thy munificence!  
 For so shall men remark, in such an act  
 Of love for him whose song gives life its joy,  
 Thy recognition of the use of life;  
 Nor call thy spirit barely adequate  
 To help on life in straight ways, broad enough  
 For vulgar souls, by ruling and the rest.  
 Thou, in the daily building of thy tower,—  
 Whether in fierce and sudden spasms of toil,  
 Or through dim lulls of unapparent growth,  
 Or when the general work had good acclaim

Climbed with the eye to cheer the architect,—  
 Didst ne'er engage in work for mere work's  
 sake—

Hadst ever in thy heart the luring hope  
 Of some eventual rest a-top of it,  
 Whence, all the tumult of the building hushed,  
 Thou first of men mightst look out to the

East:

The vulgar saw thy tower, thou sawest the sun.  
 For this, I promise on thy festival  
 To pour libation, looking o'er the sea,  
 Making this slave narrate thy fortunes, speak  
 Thy great words, and describe thy royal face—  
 Wishing thee wholly where Zeus lives the most,  
 Within the eventual element of calm.

Thy letter's first requirement meets me here.  
 It is as thou hast heard: in one short life

I, Cleon, have effected all those things  
 Thou wonderingly dost enumerate.  
 That epos on thy hundred plates of gold  
 Is mine,—and also mine the little chant,  
 So sure to rise from every fishing-bark  
 When, lights at prow, the seamen haul their  
 net.

The image of the sun-god on the phare,  
 Men turn from the sun's self to see, is mine;  
 The Poecile,<sup>1</sup> o'er-storied its whole length,  
 As thou didst hear, with painting, is mine too.  
 I know the true proportions of a man  
 And woman also, not observed before;  
 And I have written three books on the soul,  
 Proving absurd all written hitherto,  
 And putting us to ignorance again.  
 Formusic,—why, I have combined the moods,  
 Inventing one. In brief, all arts are mine;  
 Thus much the people know and recognize,  
 Throughout our seventeen islands. Marvel  
 not.

We of these latter days, with greater mind  
 Than our forerunners, since more composite;  
 Look not so great, beside their simple way,  
 To a judge who only sees one way at once,  
 One mind-point and no other at a time,—  
 Compares the small part of a man of us  
 With some whole man of the heroic age,

<sup>1</sup> The famous painted Porch on the Agora in  
 Athens.

Great in his way—not ours, nor meant for ours.  
 And ours is greater, had we skill to know :  
 For, what we call this life of men on earth,  
 This sequence of the soul's achievements here  
 Being, as I find much reason to conceive,  
 Intended to be viewed eventually  
 As a great whole, not analyzed to parts,  
 But each part having reference to all,—  
 How shall a certain part, pronounced complete,

Endure effacement by another part?  
 Was the thing done?—then, what's to do  
 again?

See, in the chequered pavement opposite,  
 Suppose the artist made a perfect rhomb,  
 And next a lozenge, then a trapezoid—  
 He did not overlay them, superimpose  
 The new upon the old and blot it out,  
 But laid them on a level in his work,  
 Making at last a picture; there it lies.  
 So, first the perfect separate forms were made,  
 The portions of mankind; and after, so,  
 Occurred the combination of the same.  
 For where had been a progress, otherwise?  
 Mankind, made up of all the single men,—  
 In such a synthesis the labour ends.  
 Now mark me! those divine men of old time  
 Have reached, thou sayest well, each at one  
 point

The outside verge that rounds our faculty;  
 And where they reached, who can do more  
 than reach?

It takes but little water just to touch  
 At some one point the inside of a sphere,  
 And, as we turn the sphere, touch all the rest  
 In due succession: but the finer air  
 Which not so palpably nor obviously,  
 Though no less universally, can touch  
 The whole circumference of that emptied  
 sphere,

Fills it more fully than the water did;  
 Holds thrice the weight of water in itself  
 Resolved into a subtler element.  
 And yet the vulgar call the sphere first full  
 Up to the visible height—and after, void;  
 Not knowing air's more hidden properties.  
 And thus our soul, misknown, cries out to  
 Zeus

To vindicate his purpose in our life:  
 Why stay we on the earth unless to grow?  
 Long since, I imaged, wrote the fiction out,  
 That he or other god descended here  
 And, once for all, showed simultaneously  
 What, in its nature, never can be shown,  
 Piecemeal or in succession;—showed, I say,  
 The worth both absolute and relative:  
 Of all his children from the birth of time,  
 His instruments for all appointed work.  
 I now go on to image,—might we hear  
 The judgment which should give the due to  
 each,

Show where the labour lay and where the ease,  
 And prove Zeus' self, the latent everywhere!  
 This is a dream:—but no dream, let us hope,  
 That years and days, the summers and the  
 springs,

Follow each other with unwaning powers.  
 The grapes which dye thy wine are richer far,  
 Through culture, than the wild wealth of the  
 rock;

The suave plum than the savage-tasted drupe;  
 The pastured honey-bee drops choicer, sweet;  
 The flowers turn double, and the leaves turn  
 flowers;

That young and tender crescent-moon, thy  
 slave,

Sleeping above her robe as budged by clouds,  
 Refines upon the women of my youth.

What, and the soul alone deteriorates?  
 I have not chanted verse like Homer, no—  
 Nor swept string like Terpander, no—nor  
 carved

And painted men like Phidias and his friend:  
 I am not great as they are, point by point.

But I have entered into sympathy  
 With these four, running these into one soul,  
 Who, separate, ignored each other's art.

Say, is it nothing that I know them all?  
 The wild flower was the larger; I have  
 dashed

Rose-blood upon its petals, pricked its cup's  
 Honey with wine, and driven its seed to fruit,  
 And show a better flower if not so large:  
 I stand myself. Refer this to the gods  
 Whose gift alone it is! which, shall I dare  
 (All pride apart) upon the absurd pretext

That such a gift by chance lay in my hand,  
Discourse of lightly or depreciate?  
It might have fallen to another's hand : what  
then?  
I pass too surely : let at least truth stay !

And next, of what thou followest on to ask.  
This being with me as I declare, O king,  
My works, in all these varicoloured kinds,  
So done by me, accepted so by men—  
Thou askest, if (my soul thus in men's hearts)  
I must not be accounted to attain  
The very crown and proper end of life?  
Inquiring thence how, now life closeth up,  
I face death with success in my right hand :  
Whether I fear death less than dost thyself  
The fortunate of men? "For" (writest thou)  
"Thou leavest much behind, while I leave  
nought."  
"Thy life stays in the poems men shall sing,  
"The pictures men shall study; while my  
life,  
"Complete and whole now in its power and  
joy,  
"Dies altogether with my brain and arm,  
"Is lost indeed; since, what survives myself?  
"The brazen statue to o'erlook my grave,  
"Set on the promontory which I named.  
"And that—some supple courtier of my heir  
"Shall use its robed and sceptred arm, perhaps,  
"To fix the rope to, which best drags it down.  
"I go then: triumph thou, who dost not go!"

Nay, thou art worthy of hearing my whole  
mind.

Is this apparent, when thou turn'st to muse  
Upon the scheme of earth and man in chief,  
That admiration grows as knowledge grows?  
That imperfection means perfection hid,  
Reserved in part, to grace the after-time?  
If, in the morning of philosophy,  
Ere aught had been recorded, nay perceived,  
Thou, with the light now in thee, couldst have  
looked  
On all earth's tenantry, from worm to bird,  
Ere man, her last, appeared upon the stage—  
Thou wouldst have seen them perfect, and  
deduced

The perfectness of others yet unseen.  
Conceding which,—had Zeus then questioned  
thee

"Shall I go on a step, improve on this,  
"Do more for visible creatures than is done?"  
Thou wouldst have answered, "Ay, by  
making each

"Grow conscious in himself—by that alone.  
"All's perfect else: the shell sucks fast the  
rock,

"The fish strikes through the sea, the snake  
both swims

"And slides, forth range the beasts, the birds  
take flight,

"Till life's mechanics can no further go—

"And all this joy in natural life is put

"Like fire from off thy finger into each,

"So exquisitely perfect is the same.

"But 'tis pure fire, and they mere matter are

"It has them, not they it: and so I choose

"For man, thy last premeditated work

"(If I might add a glory to the scheme)

"That a third thing should stand apart from  
both,

"A quality arise within his soul,

"Which, intro-active, made to supervise

"And feel the force it has, may view itself,

"And so be happy." Man might live at first

The animal life: but is there nothing more?

In due time, let him critically learn

How he lives; and, the more he gets to know

Of his own life's adaptabilities,

The more joy-giving will his life become.

Thus man, who hath this quality, is best.

But thou, king, hadst more reasonably said:

"Let progress end at once,—man make no step

"Beyond the natural man, the better beast,

"Using his senses, not the sense of sense."

In man there's failure, only since he left

The lower and inconscious forms of life.

We called it an advance, the rendering plain

Man's spirit might grow conscious of man's life,

And, by new lore so added to the old,

Take each step higher over the brute's head.

This grew the only life, the pleasure-house,

Watch-tower and treasure-fortress of the soul,

Which whole surrounding flats of natural life

Seemed only fit to yield subsistence to ;  
 A tower that crowns a country. But alas,  
 The soul now climbs it just to perish there !  
 Forthence we have discovered ('tis no dream—  
 We know this, which we had not else perceived)  
 That there's a world of capability  
 For joy, spread round about us, meant for us,  
 Inviting us ; and still the soul craves all,  
 And still the flesh replies, "Take no jot more  
 "Than ere thou clombst the tower to look  
 abroad !

"Nay, so much less as that fatigue has brought  
 "Deduction to it." We struggle, fain to en-  
 large

Our bounded physical reciprocity,  
 Increase our power, supply fresh oil to life,  
 Repair the waste of age and sickness : no,  
 It skills not ! life's inadequate to joy,  
 As the soul sees joy, tempting life to take.  
 They praise a fountain in my garden here  
 Wherein a Naiad sends the water-bow  
 Thin from her tube ; she smiles to see it rise.  
 What if I told her, it is just a thread  
 From that great river which the hills shut up,  
 And mock her with my leave to take the same?  
 The artificer has given her one small tube  
 Past power to widen or exchange—what boots  
 To know she might spout oceans if she could?  
 She cannot lift beyond her first thin thread :  
 And so a man can use but a man's joy  
 While he sees God's. Is it for Zeus to boast,  
 "See, man, how happy I live, and despair—  
 "That I may be still happier—for thy use !"   
 If this were so, we could not thank our lord,  
 As hearts beat on to doing ; 'tis not so—  
 Malice it is not. Is it carelessness?  
 Still, no. If care—where is the sign? I ask,  
 And get no answer, and agree in sum,  
 O king, with thy profound discouragement,  
 Who seest the wider but to sigh the more.  
 Most progress is most failure : thou sayest well.

The last point now :—thou dost except a  
 case—

Holding joy not impossible to one  
 With artist-gifts—to such a man as I  
 Who leave behind me living works indeed ;  
 For, such a poem, such a painting lives.

What ? dost thou verily trip upon a word,  
 Confound the accurate view of what joy is  
 (Caught somewhat clearer by my eyes than  
 thine)

With feeling joy ? confound the knowing how  
 And showing how to live (my faculty)  
 With actually living ?—Otherwise  
 Where is the artist's vantage o'er the king ?  
 Because in my great epos I display  
 How divers men young, strong, fair, wise,  
 can act—

Is this as though I acted ? if I paint,  
 Carve the young Phœbus, am I therefore  
 young ?

Methinks I'm older that I bowed myself  
 The many years of pain that taught me art !  
 Indeed, to know is something, and to prove  
 How all this beauty might be enjoyed, is more :  
 But, knowing nought, to enjoy is something  
 too.

Yon rower, with the moulded muscles there,  
 Lowering the sail, is nearer it than I.  
 I can write love-odes : thy fair slave's an ode.  
 I get to sing of love, when grown too grey  
 For being beloved : she turns to that young  
 man,

The muscles all a-ripple on his back.  
 I know the joy of kingship : well, thou art king !

"But," sayest thou—(and I marvel, I  
 repeat,

To find thee trip on such a mere word) "what  
 "Thou writest, paintest, stays ; that does  
 not die :

"Sappho survives, because we sing her songs,  
 "And Æschylus, because we read his plays !"   
 Why, if they live still, let them come and take  
 Thy slave in my despite, drink from thy cup,  
 Speak in my place. Thou diest while I  
 survive ?

Say rather that my fate is deadlier still,  
 In this, that every day my sense of joy  
 Grows more acute, my soul (intensified  
 By power and insight) more enlarged, more  
 keet ;

While every day my hairs fall more and more,  
 My hand shakes, and the heavy years in-  
 crease—

The horror quickening still from year to year,  
The consummation coming past escape  
When I shall know most, and yet least enjoy—  
When all my works wherein I prove my worth,  
Being present still to mock me in men's  
mouths,

Alive still, in the praise of such as thou,  
I, I the feeling, thinking, acting man,  
The man who loved his life so over-much,  
Sleep in my urn. It is so horrible,  
I dare at times imagine to my need  
Some future state revealed to us by Zeus,  
Unlimited in capability  
For joy, as this is in desire for joy,  
—To seek which, the joy-hunger forces us :  
That, stung by straitness of our life, made  
strait

On purpose to make prized the life at large—  
Freed by the throbbing impulse we call death,  
We burst there as the worm into the fly,  
Who, while a worm still, wants his wings.  
But no !

Zeus has not yet revealed it ; and alas,  
He must have done so, were it possible !

Live long and happy, and in that thought  
die :

Glad for what was ! Farewell. And for the  
rest,

I cannot tell thy messenger aright  
Where to deliver what he bears of thine  
To one called Paulus ; we have heard his  
fame

Indeed, if Christ be not one with him—  
I know not, nor am troubled much to know.  
Thou canst not think a mere barbarian Jew,  
As Paulus proves to be, one circumcized,  
Hath access to a secret shut from us ?  
Thou wrongest our philosophy, O king,  
In stooping to inquire of such an one,  
As if his answer could impose at all !  
He writeth, doth he ? well, and he may  
write.

Oh, the Jew findeth scholars ! certain slaves  
Who touched on this same isle, preached him  
and Christ ;

And (as I gathered from a bystander)  
Their doctrine could be held by no sane man.

# RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI.

I KNOW a Mount, the gracious Sun perceives  
First, when he visits, last, too, when he leaves  
The world ; and, vainly favoured, it repays  
The day-long glory of his steadfast gaze  
By no change of its large calm front of snow.  
And underneath the Mount, a Flower I  
know,

He cannot have perceived, that changes even  
At his approach ; and, in the lost endeavour  
To live his life, has parted, one by one,  
With all a flower's true graces, for the grace  
Of being but a foolish mimic sun,  
With ray-like florets round a disk-like face.  
Men nobly call by many a name the Mount  
As over many a land of theirs its large  
Calm front of snow like a triumphal targe  
Is reared, and still with old names, fresh  
names vie,

Each to its proper praise and own account :  
Men call the Flower, the Sunflower, sportively.

Oh, Angel of the East, one, one gold look  
Across the waters to this twilight nook,  
—The far sad waters, Angel, to this nook !

Dear Pilgrim, art thou for the East indeed ?  
Go !—saying ever as thou dost proceed,  
That I, French Rudel, choose for my device  
A sunflower outspread like a sacrifice  
Before its idol. See ! These inexpert  
And hurried fingers could not fail to hurt  
The woven picture ; 'tis a woman's skill  
Indeed ; but nothing baffled me, so, ill  
Or well, the work is finished. Say, men feed  
On songs I sing, and therefore bask the bees  
On my flower's breast as on a platform broad :  
But, as the flower's concern is not for these  
But solely for the sun, so men applaud  
In vain this Rudel, he not looking here,  
But to the East—the East ! Go, say this,  
Pilgrim dear !

ONE WORD MORE.<sup>1</sup>

TO E. B. R.

1855.

THERE they are, my fifty men and women  
Naming me the fifty poems finished !  
Take them, Love, the book and me together :  
Where the heart lies, let the brain lie also.

II.

Rafael made a century of sonnets,<sup>2</sup>  
Made and wrote them in a certain volume  
Dinted with the silver-pointed pencil  
Else he only used to draw Madonnas :  
These, the world might view—but one, the  
volume.

Who that one, you ask ? Your heart in-  
structs you.

Did she live and love it all her life-time ?  
Did she drop, his lady of the sonnets,<sup>3</sup>  
Die, and let it drop beside her pillow  
Where it lay in place of Rafael's glory,  
Rafael's cheek so duteous and so loving—  
Cheek, the world was wont to hail a painter's,  
Rafael's cheek, her love had turned a poet's ?

You and I would rather read that volume,  
(Taken to his beating bosom by it)  
Lean and list the bosom-beats of Rafael,  
Would we not ? than wonder at Madonnas—  
Her, San Sisto<sup>4</sup> names, and Her, Foligno,<sup>5</sup>  
Her, that visits Florence<sup>6</sup> in a vision,  
Her, that's left with lilies in the Louvre<sup>7</sup>—  
Seen by us and all the world in circle.

<sup>1</sup> [Originally appended to the collection of Poems called "Men and Women," the greater portion of which has now been, more correctly, distributed under the other titles of this edition.—R. B.]

<sup>2</sup> There is no reason to believe this to be the fact.

<sup>3</sup> La Fornarina.

<sup>4</sup> In Dresden.

<sup>5</sup> In the Vatican.

<sup>6</sup> In the Pitti Palace.

<sup>7</sup> La Belle Jardinière, in the Louvre.

IV.

You and I will never read that volume.<sup>8</sup>  
Guido Reni, like his own eye's apple  
Guarded long the treasure-book and loved it,  
Guido Reni dying, all Bologna  
Cried, and the world cried too, "Ours, the  
treasure !"

Suddenly, as rare things will, it vanished.

V.

Dante once prepared to paint an angel :  
Whom to please ? You whisper "Beatrice."  
While he mused and traced it and retraced it,  
(Peradventure with a pen corroded  
Still by drops of that hot ink he dipped for,  
When, his left-hand i' the hair o' the wicked,  
Back he held the brow and pricked its stigma,  
Bit into the live man's flesh for parchment,  
Loosed him, laughed to see the writing rattle,  
Let the wretch go festering through  
Florence)—

Dante, who loved well because he hated,  
Hated wickedness that hinders loving,  
Dante standing, studying his angel,—  
In there broke the folk of his Inferno.  
Says he—"Certain people of importance"  
(Such he gave his daily dreadful line to)  
"Entered and would seize, forsooth, the poet."  
Says the poet—"Then I stopped my painting."

You and I would rather see that angel,  
Painted by the tenderness of Dante,  
Would we not ?—than read a fresh Inferno.

VII.

You and I will never see that picture.  
While he mused on love and Beatrice,  
While he softened o'er his outlined angel,  
In they broke, those "people of importance,"  
We and Bice<sup>9</sup> bear the loss for ever.

What of Rafael's sonnets, Dante's picture ?  
This : no artist lives and loves, that longs not  
Once, and only once, and for one only,

<sup>8</sup> Really a book of drawings, not sonnets.

<sup>9</sup> Beatrice.



(Ah, the prize!) to find his love a language  
Fit and fair and simple and sufficient—  
Using nature that's an art to others,  
Not, this one time, art that's turned his  
nature.

Ay, of all the artists living, loving,  
None but would forego his proper dowry,—  
Does he paint? he fain would write a poem,—  
Does he write? he fain would paint a picture,  
Put to proof art alien to the artist's,  
Once, and only once, and for one only,  
So to be the man and leave the artist,  
Gain the man's joy, miss the artist's sorrow.

## IX.

Wherefore? Heaven's gift takes earth's  
abatement!

He who smites the rock and spreads the  
water,

Bidding drink and live a crowd beneath him,  
Even he, the minute makes immortal,  
Proves, perchance, but mortal in the minute,  
Desecrates, belike, the deed in doing.  
While he smites, how can he but remember,  
So he smote before, in such a peril,  
When they stood and mocked—"Shall smit-  
ing help us?"

When they drank and sneered—"A stroke is  
easy!"

When they wiped their mouths and went  
their journey,

Throwing him for thanks—"But drought was

Thus old memories mar the actual triumph;  
Thus the doing savours of disrelish;  
Thus achievement lacks a gracious some-  
what;

O'er-importuned brows becloud the mandate,  
Carelessness or consciousness—the gesture.  
For he bears an ancient wrong about him,  
Sees and knows again those phalanxed faces,  
Hears, yet one time more, the 'customed pre-  
lude—

"How shouldst thou, of all men, smite, and  
save us?"

Guesses what is like to prove the sequel—  
"Egypt's flesh-pots—nay, the drought was  
better."

Oh, the crowd must have emphatic warrant!  
Theirs, the Sinai-forehead's cloven brilliance,  
Right-arm's rod-sweep, tongue's imperial fiat.  
Never dares the man put off the prophet.

## XI.

Did he love one face from out the thousands,  
(Were she Jethro's daughter, white and wisely,  
Were she but the Ethiopian bondslave,)  
He would envy yon dumb patient camel,  
Keeping a reserve of scanty water  
Meant to save his own life in the desert;  
Ready in the desert to deliver  
(Kneeling down to let his breast be opened)  
Hoard and life together for his mistress.

## XII.

I shall never, in the years remaining,  
Paint you pictures, no, nor carve you statues,  
Make you music that should all-express me;  
So it seems: I stand on my attainment.  
This of verse alone, one life allows me;  
Verse and nothing else have I to give you.  
Other heights in other lives, God willing:  
All the gifts from all the heights, your own,  
Love!

## XIII.

Yet a semblance of resource avails us—  
Shade so finely touched, love's sense must  
seize it.

Take these lines, look lovingly and nearly,  
Lines I write the first time and the last time.  
He who works in fresco, steals a hair-brush,  
Curbs the liberal hand, subservient proudly,  
Cramps his spirit, crowds its all in little,  
Makes a strange art of an art familiar,  
Fills his lady's missal-marge with flowerets.  
He who blows thro' bronze, may breathe  
thro' silver,  
Fittly serenade a slumbrous princess.  
He who writes, may write for once as I do.

Love, you saw me gather men and women,  
Live or dead or fashioned by my fancy,  
Enter each and all, and use their service,  
Speak from every mouth,—the speech, a poem.

## ONE WORD MORE

Hardly shall I tell my joys and sorrows,  
Hopes and fears, belief and disbelieving :  
I am mine and yours—the rest be all men's,  
Karshish, Cleon, Norbert and the fifty.  
Let me speak this once in my true person,  
Not as Lippo, Roland or Andrea,  
Though the fruit of speech be just this  
sentence :

Pray you, look on these my men and women,  
Take and keep my fifty poems finished ;  
Where my heart lies, let my brain lie also !  
Poor the speech ; be how I speak, for all  
things :

### XV.

Not but that you know me ! Lo, the moon's  
self !

Here in London, yonder late in Florence,  
Still we find her face, the thrice-transfigured.  
Curving on a sky imbrued with colour,  
Drifted over Fiesole by twilight,  
Came she, our new crescent of a hair's-  
breadth.

Full she flared it, lamping Samminiato,<sup>1</sup>  
Rounder 'twixt the cypresses and rounder,  
Perfect till the nightingales applauded.  
Now, a piece of her old self, impoverished,  
Hard to greet, she traverses the houseroofs,  
Hurries with unhandsome thrift of silver,  
Goes spiritedly, glad to finish.

What, there's nothing in the moon note-  
worthy ?

Nay : for if that moon could love a mortal,  
Use, to charm him (so to fit a fancy),  
All her magic ('tis the old sweet mythos),  
She would turn a new side to her mortal,  
Side unseen of herdsman, huntsman, steers-  
man—

Blank to Zoroaster on his terrace,  
Blind to Galileo on his turret,  
Dumb to Homer, dumb to Keats—him, even !  
Think, the wonder of the moonstruck mortal—  
When she turns round, comes again in heaven,  
Opens out anew for worse or better !

<sup>1</sup> San Miniato, the famous church in  
Florence.

Proves she like some portent of an iceberg  
Swimming full upon the ship it founders,  
Hungry with huge teeth of splintered crystals  
Proves she as the paved work of a sapphire  
Seen by Moses when he climbed the moun-  
tain ?

Moses, Aaron, Nadab and Abihu  
Climbed and saw the very God, the Highest,  
Stand upon the paved work of a sapphire.  
Like the bodied heaven in his clearness  
Shone the stone, the sapphire of that paved  
work,  
When they ate and drank and saw God also !

### XVII.

What were seen ? None knows, none ever  
shall know.

Only this is sure—the sight were other,  
Not the moon's same side, born late in  
Florence,

Dying now impoverished here in London.  
God be thanked, the meanest of his creatures  
Boasts two soul-sides, one to face the world  
with,

One to show a woman when he loves her !

### XVIII.

This I say of me, but think of you, Love !  
This to you—yourself my moon of poets !  
Ah, but that's the world's side, there's the  
wonder,

Thus they see you, praise you, think they  
know you !

There, in turn I stand with them and praise  
you—

Out of my own self, I dare to phrase it.  
But the best is when I glide from out them,  
Cross a step or two of dubious twilight,  
Come out on the other side, the novel  
Silent silver lights and darks undreamed of,  
Where I hush and bless myself with silence.

### XIX.

Oh, their Rafael of the dear Madonnas,  
Oh, their Dante of the dread Inferno,  
Wrote one song—and in my brain I sing it,  
Drew one angel—borne, see, on my bosom !

R. B.

# IN A BALCONY.

1855.

## IN A BALCONY.

### PERSONS.

NORBERT.  
CONSTANCE.  
THE QUEEN.

### CONSTANCE and NORBERT.

*Norbert.* Now!

*Constance.* Not now!

*Norbert.* Give me them  
again, those hands:

Put them upon my forehead, how it throbs!  
Press them before my eyes, the fire comes  
through!

You cruellest, you dearest in the world,  
Let me! The Queen must grant whate'er I  
ask—

How can I gain you and not ask the Queen?  
There she stays waiting for me, here stand  
you;

Some time or other this was to be asked;  
Now is the one time—what I ask, I gain:  
Let me ask now, Love!

*Constance.* Do, and ruin us.

*Norbert.* Let it be now, Love! All my  
soul breaks forth.

How I do love you! Give my love its way!  
A man can have but one life and one death,  
One heaven, one hell. Let me fulfil my fate—  
Grant me my heaven now! Let me know  
you mine,

Prove you mine, write my name upon your  
brow,

Hold you and have you, and then die away,  
If God please, with completion in my soul!

*Constance.* I am not yours then? How  
content this man!

I am not his—who change into himself,  
Have passed into his heart and beat its beats,

Who give my hands to him, my eyes, my  
hair,

Give all that was of me away to him—

So well, that now, my spirit turned his own,

Takes part with him against the woman here,

Bids him not stumble at so mere a straw

As caring that the world be cognizant

How he loves her and how she worships him.

You have this woman, not as yet that world.

Go on, I bid, nor stop to care for me

By saying what I cease to care about,

The courtly name and pride of circumstance—

The name you'll pick up and be cumbered  
with

Just for the poor parade's sake, nothing  
more;

Just that the world may slip from under you—

Just that the world may cry "So much for  
him—

"The man predestined to the heap of crowns:

"There goes his chance of winning one, at  
least!"

*Norbert.* The world!

*Constance.* You love it. Love  
me quite as well,

And see if I shall pray for this in vain!

Why must you ponder what it knows or  
thinks?

*Norbert.* You pray for—what, in vain?

*Constance.* Oh my heart's heart,

How I do love you, Norbert! 'That is right:

But listen, or I take my hands away!

You say, "let it be now": you would go now

And tell the Queen, perhaps six steps from us,

You love me—so you do, thank God!

*Norbert.* Thank God!

*Constance.* Yes, Norbert,—but you *vain*  
would tell your love,

And, what succeeds the telling, ask of her

My hand. Now take this rose and look at it,

Listening to me. You are the minister,

The Queen's first favourite, nor without a cause.

To-night completes your wonderful year's-work

(This palace-feast is held to celebrate)

Made memorable by her life's success,  
The junction of two crowns, on her sole head,  
Her house had only dreamed of anciently :  
That this mere dream is grown a stable truth,  
To-night's feast makes authentic. Whose the praise ?

Whose genius, patience, energy, achieved  
What turned the many heads and broke the hearts ?

You are the fate, your minute's in the heaven.  
Next comes the Queen's turn. "Name your own reward !"

With leave to clench the past, chain the to-come,

Put out an arm and touch and take the sun  
And fix it ever full-faced on your earth,  
Possess yourself supremely of her life,—  
You choose the single thing she will not grant ;  
Nay, very declaration of which choice  
Will turn the scale and neutralize your work :  
At best she will forgive you, if she can.

You think I'll let you choose—her cousin's hand ?

*Norbert.* Wait. First, do you retain your old belief

The Queen is generous,—nay, is just ?

*Constance.* There, there !

So men make women love them, while they know

No more of women's hearts than . . . look you here,

You that are just and generous beside,  
Make it your own case ! For example now,  
I'll say—I let you kiss me, hold my hands—  
Why ? do you know why ? I'll instruct you, then—

The kiss, because you have a name at court ;  
This hand and this, that you may shut in each  
A jewel, if you please to pick up such.

That's horrible ? Apply it to the Queen—  
Suppose I am the Queen to whom you speak :

"I was a nameless man ; you needed me :  
"Why did I proffer you my aid ? there stood

"A certain pretty cousin at your side.

"Why did I make such common cause with you ?

"Access to her had not been easy else.

"You give my labour here abundant praise ?

"Faith, labour, which she overlooked, grew play.

"How shall your gratitude discharge itself ?

"Give me her hand !"

*Norbert.* And still I urge the same.  
Is the Queen just ? just—generous or no !

*Constance.* Yes, just. You love a rose ;  
no harm in that :

But was it for the rose's sake or mine  
You put it in your bosom ? mine, you said—

Then, mine you still must say or else be false.  
You told the Queen you served her for herself ;

If so, to serve her was to serve yourself ;  
She thinks, for all your unbelieving face !

I know her. In the hall, six steps from us,  
One sees the twenty pictures ; there's a life

Better than life, and yet no life at all.  
Conceive her born in such a magic dome,

Pictures all round her ! why, she sees the world,

Can recognize its given things and facts,  
The fight of giants or the feast of gods,

Sages in senate, beauties at the bath,  
Chases and battles, the whole earth's display,

Landscape and sea-piece, down to flowers  
and fruit—

And who shall question that she knows them all,  
In better semblance than the things outside ?

Yet bring into the silent gallery  
Some live thing to contrast in breath and blood,

Some lion, with the painted lion there—  
You think she'll understand composedly ?

—Say, "that's his fellow in the hunting-piece  
"Yonder, I've turned to praise a hundred

times ?"

Not so. Her knowledge of our actual earth,  
Its hopes and fears, concerns and sympathies,

Must be too far, too mediate, too unreal.  
The real exists for us outside, not her :

How should it, with that life in these four walls—

That father and that mother, first to last  
No father and no mother—friends, a heap,

Lovers, no lack—a husband in due time,  
And every one of them alike a lie !  
Things painted by a Rubens out of nought  
Into what kindness, friendship, love should be ;  
All better, all more grandiose than the life,  
Only no life ; mere cloth and surface-paint,  
You feel, while you admire. How should  
she feel ?

Yet now that she has stood thus fifty years  
The sole spectator in that gallery,  
You think to bring this warm real struggling  
love

In to her of a sudden, and suppose  
She'll keep her state untroubled ? Here's  
the truth—

She'll apprehend truth's value at a glance,  
Prefer it to the pictured loyalty ?

You only have to say, "so men are made,  
"For this they act ; the thing has many names,  
"But this the right one : and now, Queen,  
be just !"

Your life slips back ; you lose her at the word :  
You do not even for amends gain me.  
He will not understand ; oh, Norbert, Norbert,  
Do you not understand ?

*Norbert.* The Queen's the Queen :  
I am myself—no picture, but alive  
In every nerve and every muscle, here  
At the palace-window o'er the people's street,  
As she in the gallery where the pictures glow :  
The good of life is precious to us both.  
She cannot love ; what do I want with rule ?  
When first I saw your face a year ago  
I knew my life's good, my soul heard one  
voice—

"The woman yonder, there's no use of life  
"But just to obtain her ! heap earth's woes  
in one

"And bear them—make a pile of all earth's  
joys

"And spurn them, as they help or help not  
this ;

"Only, obtain her !" How was it to be ?  
I found you were the cousin of the Queen ;  
I must then serve the Queen to get to you.  
No other way. Suppose there had been one,  
And I, by saying prayers to some white star  
With promise of my body and my soul,

Might gain you,—should I pray the star or no ?  
Instead, there was the Queen to serve ! I  
served,

Helped, did what other servants failed to do,  
Neither she sought nor I declared my end.  
Her good is hers, my recompense be mine,—  
I therefore name you as that recompense.  
She dreamed that such a thing could never be ?  
Let her wake now. She thinks there was  
more cause

In love of power, high fame, pure loyalty ?  
Perhaps she fancies men wear out their lives  
Chasing such shades. Then, I've a fancy too ;  
I worked because I want you with my soul :  
I therefore ask your hand. Let it be now !

*Constance.* Had I not loved you from the  
very first,

Were I not yours, could we not steal out thus  
So wickedly, so wildly, and so well,  
You might become impatient. What's con-  
ceived

Of us without here, by the folk within ?  
Where are you now ? immersed in cares of  
state—

Where am I now ? intent on festal robes—  
We two, embracing under death's spread  
hand !

What was this thought for, what that scruple  
of yours

Which broke the council up ?—to bring about  
One minute's meeting in the corridor !

And then the sudden sleights, strange  
secrecies,

Complots inscrutable, deep telegraphs,  
Long-planned chance-meetings, hazards of a  
look,

"Does she know ? does she not know ? saved  
or lost ?"

A year of this compression's ecstasy  
All goes for nothing ! you would give this up  
For the old way, the open way, the world's,  
His way who beats, and his who sells his  
wife !

What tempts you ?—their notorious happiness  
Makes you ashamed of ours ? The best you'll  
gain

Will be—the Queen grants all that you  
require,

Concedes the cousin, rids herself of you  
And me at once, and gives us ample leave  
To live like our five hundred happy friends.  
The world will show us with officious hand  
Our chamber-entry, and stand sentinel  
Where we so oft have stolen across its traps !  
Get the world's warrant, ring the falcons'  
feet,

And make it duty to be bold and swift,  
Which long ago was nature. Have it so !  
We never hawked by rights till flung from  
fist ?

Oh, the man's thought ! no woman's such a  
fool.

*Norbert.* Yes, the man's thought and my  
thought, which is more—

One made to love you, let the world take  
note !

Have I done worthy work ? be love's the  
praise,

Though hampered by restrictions, barred  
against

By set forms, blinded by forced secrecies !  
Set free my love, and see what love can do  
Shown in my life—what work will spring  
from that !

The world is used to have its business done  
On other grounds, find great effects produced  
For power's sake, fame's sake, motives in  
men's mouth.

So, good : but let my low ground shame their  
high !

Truth is the strong thing. Let man's life be  
true !

And love's the truth of mine. Time prove  
the rest !

I choose to wear you stamped all over me,  
Your name upon my forehead and my breast,  
You, from the sword's blade to the ribbon's  
edge,

That men may see, all over, you in me—  
That pale loves may die out of their pretence  
In face of mine, shames thrown on love fall  
off.

Permit this, Constance ! Love has been so  
long  
Subdued in me, eating me through and  
through,

That now 'tis all of me and must have way.  
Think of my work, that chaos of intrigues,  
Those hopes and fears, surprises and delays,  
That long endeavour, earnest, patient, slow,  
Trembling at last to its assured result :  
Then think of this revulsion ! I resume  
Life after death, (it is no less than life,  
After such long unlovely labouring days)  
And liberate to beauty life's great need  
O' the beautiful, which, while it prompted  
work,

Suppressed itself erewhile. This eve's the  
time,

This eve intense with yon first trembling star  
We seem to pant and reach ; scarce aught  
between

The earth that rises and the heaven that  
bends ;

All nature self-abandoned, every tree  
Flung as it will, pursuing its own thoughts  
And fixed so, every flower and every weed,  
No pride, no shame, no victory, no defeat ;  
All under God, each measured by itself.  
These statues round us stand abrupt, distinct,  
The strong in strength, the weak in weakness  
fixed,

The Muse for ever wedded to her lyre,  
Nymph to her fawn, and Silence to her rose :  
See God's approval on his universe !  
Let us do so—aspire to live as these

In harmony with truth, ourselves being true !  
Take the first way, and let the second come !  
My first is to possess myself of you ;

The music sets the march-step—forward,  
then !

And there's the Queen, I go to claim you of,  
The world to witness, wonder and applaud.  
Our flower of life breaks open. No delay !

*Constance.* And so shall we be ruined, both  
of us.

*Norbert.* I know her to the skin and bone :  
You do not know her, were not born to it,  
To feel what she can see or cannot see.  
Love, she is generous,—ay, despite your  
smile,

Generous as you are : for, in that thin frame  
Pain-twisted, punctured through and through  
with cares,

There lived a lavish soul until it starved,  
Debarred of healthy food. Look to the soul—  
Pity that, stoop to that, ere you begin  
(The true man's-way) on justice and your  
rights,

Exactions and acquittance of the past !  
Begin so—see what justice she will deal !  
We women hate a debt as men a gift.  
Suppose her some poor keeper of a school  
Whose business is to sit thro' summer months  
And dole out children leave to go and play,  
Herself superior to such lightness—she  
In the arm-chair's state and pedagogic pomp—  
To the life, the laughter, sun and youth  
outside :

We wonder such a face looks black on us ?  
I do not bid you wake her tenderness,  
(That were vain truly—none is left to wake)  
But let her think her justice is engaged  
To take the shape of tenderness, and mark  
If she'll not coldly pay its warmest debt !  
Does she love me, I ask you ? not a whit :  
Yet, thinking that her justice was engaged  
To help a kinswoman, she took me up—  
Did more on that bare ground than other loves  
Would do on greater argument. For me,  
I have no equivalent of such cold kind  
To pay her with, but love alone to give  
If I give anything. I give her love :  
I feel I ought to help her, and I will.  
So, for her sake, as yours, I tell you twice  
That women hate a debt as men a gift.  
If I were you, I could obtain this grace—  
Could lay the whole I did to love's account,  
Nor yet be very false as courtiers go—  
Declaring my success was recompense ;  
It would be so, in fact : what were it else ?  
And then, once loose her generosity,—  
Oh, how I see it !—then, were I but you,  
To turn it, let it seem to move itself,  
And make it offer what I really take,  
Accepting just, in the poor cousin's hand,  
Her value as the next thing to the Queen's—  
Since none love Queens directly, none dare  
that,

And a thing's shadow or a name's mere echo  
Suffices those who miss the name and thing !  
You pick up just a ribbon she has worn,

To keep in proof how near her breath you  
came.

Say, I'm so near I seem a piece of her—  
Ask for me that way—(oh, you understand)  
You'd find the same gift yielded with a grace,  
Which, if you make the least show to ex-  
tort . . .

—You'll see ! and when you have ruined  
both of us,

Dissertate on the Queen's ingratitude !

Norbert. Then, if I turn it that way, you  
consent ?

'Tis not my way ; I have more hope in truth :  
Still, if you won't have truth—why, this  
indeed,

Were scarcely false, as I'd express the sense.  
Will you remain here ?

Constance. O best heart of mine,  
How I have loved you ! then, you take my  
way ?

Are mine as you have been her minister,  
Work out my thought, give it effect for me,  
Paint plain my poor conceit and make it serve ?  
I owe that withered woman everything—  
Life, fortune, you, remember ! Take my  
part—

Help me to pay her ! Stand upon your  
rights ?

You, with my rose, my hands, my heart on  
you ?

Your rights are mine—you have no rights but  
mine.

Norbert. Remain here. How you know  
me !

Constance. Ah, but still—

[*He breaks from her : she remains.*  
*Dance-music from within.*

*Enter the QUEEN.*

Queen. Constance ? She is here as he  
said. Speak quick !

Is it so ? Is it true or false ? One word !

Constance. True.

Queen. Mercifullest Mother, thanks  
to thee !

Constance. Madam ?

Queen. I love you, Con-  
stance, from my soul.

Now say once more, with any words you will,  
'Tis true, all true, as true as that I speak.

*Constance.* Why should you doubt it?

*Queen.* Ah, why doubt?  
why doubt?

Dear, make me see it! Do you see it so?  
None see themselves; another sees them best.  
You say "whydoubt it?"—you see him and me.  
It is because the Mother has such grace  
That if we had but faith—wherein we fail—  
Whate'er we yearn for would be granted us;  
Yet still we let our whims prescribe despair,  
Our fancies thwart and cramp our will and  
power,

And while, accepting life, abjure its use.  
Constance, I had abjured the hope of love  
And being loved, as truly as yon palm  
The hope of seeing Egypt from that plot.

*Constance.* Heaven!

*Queen.* But it was so, Con-  
stance, it was so!

Men say—or do men say it? fancies say—  
"Stop here, your life is set, you are grown old.  
"Too late—no love for you, too late for  
love—

"Leave love to girls. Be queen: let Con-  
stance love."

One takes the hint—half meets it like a child,  
Ashamed at any feelings that oppose.

"Oh love, true, never think of love again!

"I am a queen: I rule, not love forsooth."

So it goes on; so a face grows like this,  
Hair like this hair, poor arms as lean as  
these,

Till,—nay, it does not end so, I thank God!

*Constance.* I cannot understand—

*Queen.* The happier you!

Constance, I know not how it is with men:  
For women (I am a woman now like you)  
There is no good of life but love—but love!  
What else looks good, is some shade flung  
from love;

Love gilds it, gives it worth. Be warned  
by me,

Never you cheat yourself one instant! Love,  
Give love, ask only love, and leave the rest!  
O Constance, how I love you!

*Constance.*

I love you.

*Queen.* I do believe that all is come through  
you.

I took you to my heart to keep it warm  
When the last chance of love seemed dead in  
me;

I thought your fresh youth warmed my  
withered heart.

Oh, I am very old now, am I not?

Not so! it is true and it shall be true!

*Constance.* Tell it me: let me judge if true  
or false.

*Queen.* Ah, but I fear you! you will look  
at me

And say, "she's old, she's grown unlovely  
quite

"Who ne'er was beautiful: men want beauty  
still."

Well, so I feared—the curse! so I felt sure!

*Constance.* Be calm. And now you feel  
not sure, you say?

*Queen.* Constance, he came,—the coming  
was not strange—

Do not I stand and see men come and go?

I turned a half-look from my pedestal  
Where I grow marble—"one young man the  
more!

"He will love some one; that is nought to  
me:

"What would he with my marble stateliness?"

Yet this seemed somewhat worse than here-  
tofore;

The man more gracious, youthful, like a  
god,

And I still older, with less flesh to change—

We two those dear extremes that long to  
touch.

It seemed still harder when he first began  
To labour at those state-affairs, absorbed

The old way for the old end—interest.

Oh, to live with a thousand beating hearts

Around you, swift eyes, servicable hands,

Professing they've no care but for your cause,

Thought but to help you, love but for your-  
self,—

And you the marble statue all the time

They praise and point at as preferred to life,

Yet leave for the first breathing woman's  
smile,



First dancer's, gipsy's or street baladine's !<sup>1</sup>  
 Why, how I have ground my teeth to hear  
 men's speech

Stifled for fear it should alarm my ear,  
 Their gait subdued lest step should startle me,  
 Their eyes declined, such queendom to  
 respect,

Their hands alert, such treasure to preserve,  
 While not a man of them broke rank and  
 spoke,

Wrote me a vulgar letter all of love,  
 Or caught my hand and pressed it like a hand !  
 There have been moments, if the sentinel  
 Lowering his halbert to salute the queen,  
 Had flung it brutally and clasped my knees,  
 I would have stooped and kissed him with  
 my soul.

*Constance.* Who could have comprehended?

*Queen.* Ay, who—who?

Why, no one, Constance, but this one who  
 did.

Not they, not you, not I. Even now perhaps  
 It comes too late—would you but tell the  
 truth.

*Constance.* I wait to tell it.

*Queen.* Well, you see, he came,  
 Outfaced the others, did a work this year  
 Exceeds in value all was ever done,  
 You know—it is not I who say it—all  
 Say it. And so (a second pang and worse)  
 I grew aware not only of what he did,  
 But why so wondrously. Oh, never work  
 Like his was done for work's ignoble sake—  
 Souls need a finer aim to light and lure !  
 I felt, I saw, he loved—loved somebody.

And Constance, my dear Constance, do you  
 know,

I did believe this while 'twas you he loved.

*Constance.* Me, madam?

*Queen.* It did seem to me, your face  
 Met him where'er he looked : and whom but  
 you

Was such a man to love ? It seemed to me,  
 You saw he loved you, and approved his love,  
 And both of you were in intelligence.  
 You could not loiter in that garden, step

Into this balcony, but I straight was stung  
 And forced to understand. It seemed so true,  
 So right, so beautiful, so like you both,  
 That all this work should have been done by  
 him

Not for the vulgar hope of recompense,  
 But that at last—suppose, some night like  
 this—

Borne on to claim his due reward of me,  
 He might say "Give her hand and pay me  
 so."

And I (O Constance, you shall love me now !)  
 I thought, surmounting all the bitterness,  
 —"And he shall have it. I will make her blest,  
 "My flower of youth, my woman's self that  
 was,

"My happiest woman's self that might have  
 been !

"These two shall have their joy and leave  
 me here."

Yes—yes !

*Constance.* Thanks !

*Queen.* And the word was on my lips  
 When he burst in upon me. I looked to hear  
 A mere calm statement of his just desire  
 For payment of his labour. When—O heaven,  
 How can I tell you ? lightning on my eyes  
 And thunder in my ears proved that first word  
 Which told 'twas love of me, of me, did all—  
 He loved me—from the first step to the last,  
 Loved me !

*Constance.* You hardly saw, scarce heard  
 him speak

Of love : what if you should mistake ?

*Queen.* No, no—

No mistake ! Ha, there shall be no mistake !  
 He had not dared to hint the love he felt—  
 You were my reflex—(how I understood !)  
 He said you were the ribbon I had worn,  
 He kissed my hand, he looked into my eyes,  
 And love, love came at end of every phrase.  
 Love is begun ; this much is come to pass :  
 The rest is easy. Constance, I am yours !

I will learn, I will place my life on you,  
 Teach me but how to keep what I have won !  
 Am I so old ? This hair was early grey ;  
 But joy ere now has brought hair brown again,  
 And joy will bring the cheek's red back, I feel.

<sup>1</sup> Dancers.

I could sing *once* too; that was in my youth.  
Still, when men paint me, they declare me

. . . yes,  
Beautiful—for the last French painter did!  
I know they flatter somewhat; you are  
frank—

I trust you. How I loved you from the first!  
Some queens would hardly seek a cousin out  
And set her by their side to take the eye:  
I must have felt that good would come from  
you.

I am not generous—like him—like you!  
But he is not your lover after all:

It was not you he looked at. Saw you him?  
You have not been mistaking words or looks?  
He said you were the reflex of myself.

And yet he is not such a paragon  
To you, to younger women who may choose  
Among a thousand Norberts. Speak the  
truth!

You know you never named his name to me:  
You know, I cannot give him up—ah God,  
Not up now, even to you!

*Constance.* Then calm yourself.

*Queen.* See, I am old—look here, you  
happy girl!

I will not play the fool, deceive—ah, whom?  
'Tis all gone: put your cheek beside my cheek  
And what a contrast does the moon behold!  
But then I set my life upon one chance,  
The last chance and the best—am I not left,  
My soul, myself? All women love great men  
If young or old; it is in all the tales:  
Young beauties love old poets who can love—  
Why should not he, the poems in my soul,  
The passionate faith, the pride of sacrifice,  
Life-long, death-long? I throw them at his  
feet.

Who cares to see the fountain's very shape,  
Whether it be a Triton's or a Nymph's  
That pours the foam, makes rainbows all  
around?

You could not praise indeed the empty conch;  
But I'll pour floods of love and hide myself.  
How I will love him! Cannot men love love?  
Who was a queen and loved a poet once  
Humpbacked, a dwarf? ah, women can do  
that!

Well, but men too; at least, they tell you so.  
They love so many women in their youth,  
And even in age they all love whom they  
please;

And yet the best of them confide to friends  
That 'tis not beauty makes the lasting love—  
They spend a day with such and tire the next:  
They like soul,—well then, they like phantasy,  
Novelty even. Let us confess the truth,  
Horrible though it be, that prejudice,  
Prescription . . . curses! they will love a  
queen.

They will, they do: and will not, does not  
—he?

*Constance.* How can he? You are wedded:  
'tis a name

We know, but still a bond. Your rank  
remains,

His rank remains. How can he, nobly souled  
As you believe and I incline to think,  
Aspire to be your favourite, shame and all?

*Queen.* Hear her! There, there now—  
could she love like me?

What did I say of smooth-cheeked youth and  
grace?

See all it does or could do! so youth loves!  
Oh, tell him, Constance, you could never do  
What I will—you, it was not born in! I  
Will drive these difficulties far and fast  
As yonder mists curdling before the moon.  
I'll use my light too, gloriously retrieve  
My youth from its enforced calamity,  
Dissolve that hateful marriage, and be his,  
His own in the eyes alike of God and man.

*Constance.* You will do—dare do . . . pause  
on what you say!

*Queen.* Hear her! I thank you, sweet, for  
that surprise.

You have the fair face: for the soul, see mine!  
I have the strong soul: let me teach you, here.  
I think I have borne enough and long enough,  
And patiently enough, the world remarks,  
To have my own way now, unblamed by all.  
It does so happen (I rejoice for it)  
This most unhopèd-for issue cuts the knot.  
There's not a better way of settling claims  
Than this; God sends the accident express:  
And were it for my subjects' good, no more,

'Twere best thus ordered. I am thankful now,  
Mute, passive, acquiescent. I receive,  
And bless God simply, or should almost fear  
To walk so smoothly to my ends at last.  
Why, how I baffle obstacles, spurn fate!  
How strong I am! Could Norbert see me  
now!

*Constance.* Let me consider. It is all too  
strange.

*Queen.* You, Constance, learn of me; do  
you, like me!

You are young, beautiful: my own, best girl,  
You will have many lovers, and love one—  
Light hair, not hair like Norbert's, to suit  
yours:

Taller than he is, since yourself are tall.  
Love him, like me! Give all away to him;  
Think never of yourself; throw by your pride,  
Hope, fear,—your own good as you saw it once,  
And love him simply for his very self.  
Remember, I (and what am I to you?)  
Would give up all for one, leave throne, lose  
life,

Do all but just unlove him! He loves me.

*Constance.* He shall.

*Queen.* You, step inside my  
inmost heart!

Give me your own heart: let us have one heart!  
I'll come to you for counsel; "this he says,  
"This he does; what should this amount to,  
pray?

"Beseech you, change it into current coin!

"Is that worth kisses? Shall I please him  
there?"

And then we'll speak in turn of you—what else?  
Your love, according to your beauty's worth,  
For you shall have some noble love, all gold:  
Whom choose you? we will get him at your  
choice.

—Constance, I leave you. Just a minute since,  
I felt as I must die or be alone.

Breathing my soul into an ear like yours:

Now, I would face the world with my new life,  
Wear my new crown. I'll walk around the  
rooms.

And then come back and tell you how it feels.  
How soon a smile of God can change the world!  
How we are made for happiness—how work

Grows play, adversity a winning fight!  
True, I have lost so many years: what then;  
Many remain: God has been very good.  
You, stay here! 'Tis as different from dreams,  
From the mind's cold calm estimate of bliss,  
As these stone statues from the flesh and blood.  
The comfort thou hast caused mankind, God's  
moon!

[*She goes out, leaving* CONSTANCE.

*Dance-music from within.*

NORBERT enters.

*Norbert.* Well? we have but one minute  
and one word!

*Constance.* I am yours, Norbert!

*Norbert.* Yes, mine.

*Constance.* Not till now!

You were mine. Now I give myself to you.

*Norbert.* Constance?

*Constance.* Your own! I know  
the thriftier way

Of giving—haply, 'tis the wiser way.  
Meaning to give a treasure, I might dole  
Coin after coin out (each, as that were all,  
With a new largess still at each despair)  
And force you keep in sight the deed, preserve  
Exhaustless till the end my part and yours,  
My giving and your taking; both our joys  
Dying together. Is it the wiser way?  
I choose the simpler; I give all at once.  
Know what you have to trust to, trade upon!  
Use it, abuse it,—anything but think  
Hereafter, "Had I known she loved me so,  
'And what my means, I might have thriven  
with it."

This is your means. I give you all myself,

*Norbert.* I take you and thank God.

*Constance.* Look on through years!  
We cannot kiss, a second day like this;  
Else were this earth no earth.

*Norbert.* With this day's heat  
We shall go on through years of cold.

*Constance.* So, best!

I try to see those years—I think I see.  
You walk quick and new warmth comes; you  
look back.

And lay all to the first glow—not sit down  
For ever brooding on a day like this.

While seeing embers whiten and love die.  
Yes, love lives best in its effect ; and mine,  
Full in its own life, yearns to live in yours.

*Norbert.* Just so. I take and know you  
all at once.

Your soul is disengaged so easily,  
Your face is there, I know you ; give me time,  
Let me be proud and think you shall know me.  
My soul is slower : in a life I roll  
The minute out whereto you condense yours—  
The whole slow circle round you I must move,  
To be just you. I look to a long life  
To decompose this minute, prove its worth.  
'Tis the sparks' long succession one by one  
Shall show you, in the end, what fire was  
crammed

In that mere stone you struck : how could  
you know,

If it lay ever unproved in your sight,  
As now my heart lies? your own warmth  
would hide

Its coldness, were it cold.

*Constance.* But how prove, how?

*Norbert.* Prove in my life, you ask?

*Constance.* Quick, Norbert—how?

*Norbert.* That's easy told. I count life  
just a stuff

To try the soul's strength on, educe the man.  
Who keeps one end in view makes all things  
serve.

As with the body—he who hurls a lance  
Or heaps up stone on stone, shows strength  
alike :

So must I seize and task all means to prove  
And show this soul of mine, you crown as yours,  
And justify us both.

*Constance.* Could you write books,  
Paint pictures ! One sits down in poverty  
And writes or paints, with pity for the rich.

*Norbert.* And loves one's painting and  
one's writing, then,

And not one's mistress ! All is best, believe,  
And we best as no other than we are.

We live, and they experiment on life—  
Those poets, painters, all who stand aloof

To overlook the farther. Let us be  
The thing they look at ! I might take your  
face

And write of it and paint it—to what end?  
For whom? what pale dictatress in the air  
Feeds, smiling sadly, her fine ghost-like form  
With earth's real blood and breath, the beau-  
teous life

She makes despised for ever? You are mine,  
Made for me, not for others in the world,  
Nor yet for that which I should call my art,  
The cold calm power to see how fair you look.  
I come to you ; I leave you not, to write  
Or paint. You are, I am : let Rubens there  
Paint us !

*Constance.* So, best !

*Norbert.* I understand your soul.  
You live, and rightly sympathize with life,  
With action, power, success. This way is  
straight ;  
And time were short beside, to let me change  
The craft my childhood learnt : my craft shall  
serve.

Men set me here to subjugate, enclose,  
Manure their barren lives, and force thence  
fruit

First for themselves, and afterward for me  
In the due tithe ; the task of some one soul,  
Through ways of work appointed by the world.

I am not bid create—men see no star  
Transfiguring my brow to warrant that—  
But find and bind and bring to bear their wills.  
So I began : to-night sees how I end.

What if it see, too, power's first outbreak here  
Amid the warmth, surprise and sympathy,  
And instincts of the heart that teach the head?

What if the people have discerned at length  
The dawn of the next nature, novel brain  
Whose will they venture in the place of theirs,  
Whose work, they trust, shall find them as  
novel ways

To untried heights which yet he only sees?  
I felt it when you kissed me. See this Queen,  
This people—in our phrase, this mass of men—  
See how the mass lies passive to my hand  
Now that my hand is plastic, with you by  
To make the muscles iron ! Oh, an end  
Shall crown this issue as this crowns the first !  
My will be on this people ! then, the strain  
The grappling of the potter with his clay,  
The long uncertain struggle,—the success

And consummation of the spirit-work,  
Some vase shaped to the curl of the god's lip,  
While rounded fair for human sense to see  
The Graces in a dance men recognize  
With turbulent applause and laughs of heart !  
So triumph ever shall renew itself ;  
Ever shall end in efforts higher yet,  
Ever begin . . .

*Constance.* I ever helping ?

*Norbert.* Thus !

[As he embraces her, the QUEEN enters.]

*Constance.* Hist, madam ! So have I performed my part.

You see your gratitude's true decency,

*Norbert ?* A little slow in seeing it !

Begin, to end the sooner ! What's a kiss ?

*Norbert.* Constance ?

*Constance.* Why, must I teach it you again ?

You want a witness to your dulness, sir ?

What was I saying these ten minutes long ?

Then I repeat—when some young handsome man

Like you has acted out a part like yours,

Is pleased to fall in love with one beyond,

So very far beyond him, as he says—

So hopelessly in love that but to speak

Would prove him mad,—he thinks judiciously,

And makes some insignificant good soul,

Like me, his friend, adviser, confidant,

And very stalking-horse to cover him

In following after what he dares not face.

When his end's gained—(sir, do you understand ?)

When she, he dares not face, has loved him first,

—May I not say so, madam ?—tops his hope,

And overpasses so his wildest dream,

With glad consent of all, and most of her

The confidant who brought the same about—

Why, in the moment when such joy explodes,

I do hold that the merest gentleman

Will not start rudely from the stalking-horse,

Dismiss it with a "There, enough of you !"

Forget it, show his back unmannerly :

But like a liberal heart will rather turn

And say, "A tingling time of hope was ours ;

"Betwixt the fears and falterings, we two lived

"A chanceful time in waiting for the prize :

"The confidant, the Constance, served not ill,

"And though I shall forget her in due time,

"Her use being answered now, as reason bids,

"Nay as herself bids from her heart of hearts,—

"Still, she has rights, the first thanks go to her,

"The first good praise goes to the prosperous tool,

"And the first—which is the last—rewarding kiss."

*Norbert.* Constance, it is a dream—ah, see, you smile !

*Constance.* So, now his part being properly performed,

Madam, I turn to you and finish mine

As duly ; I do justice in my turn.

Yes, madam, he has loved you—long and well ;

He could not hope to tell you so—'twas I

Who served to prove your soul accessible,

I led his thoughts on, drew them to their place

When they had wandered else into despair,  
And kept love constant toward its natural aim.

Enough, my part is played ; you stoop half way

And meet us royally and spare our fears :

'Tis like yourself. He thanks you, so do I.

Take him—with my full heart ! my work is praised

By what comes of it. Be you happy, both !

Yourself—the only one on earth who can—

Do all for him, much more than a mere heart

Which though warm is not useful in its warmth

As the silk vesture of a queen ! fold that

Around him gently, tenderly. For him—

For him,—he knows his own part !

*Norbert.* Have you done ?

I take the jest at last. Should I speak now ?

Was yours the wager, Constance, foolish child,

Or did you but accept it ? Well—at least

You lose by it.

*Constance.* Nay, madam, 'tis your turn !

Restrain him still from speech a little more,

And make him happier as more confident !

Pity him, madam, he is timid yet !

Mark, Norbert ! Do not shrink now ! Here

I yield

My whole right in you to the Queen, observe !  
With her go put in practice the great schemes  
You teem with, follow the career else closed—  
Be all you cannot be except by her !

Behold her !—Madam, say for pity's sake  
Anything—frankly say you love him ! Else  
He'll not believe it : there's more earnest in  
His fear than you conceive : I know the man !

*Norbert.* I know the woman somewhat,  
and confess

I thought she had jested better : she begins  
To overcharge her part. I gravely wait  
Your pleasure, madam : where is my reward ?

*Queen.* Norbert, this wild girl (whom I  
recognize

Scarce more than you do, in her fancy-fit,  
Eccentric speech and variable mirth,  
Not very wise perhaps and somewhat bold,  
Yet suitable, the whole night's work being  
strange)

—May still be right : I may do well to speak  
And make authentic what appears a dream  
To even myself. For, what she says, is true :  
Yes, Norbert—what you spoke just now of  
love,

Devotion, stirred no novel sense in me,  
But justified a warmth felt long before.  
Yes, from the first—I loved you, I shall say :  
Strange ! but I do grow stronger, now 'tis  
said.

Your courage helps mine : you did well to  
speak

To-night, the night that crowns your twelve-  
months' toil :

But still I had not waited to discern  
Your heart so long, believe me ! From the  
first

The source of so much zeal was almost plain,  
In absence even of your own words just now  
Which hazarded the truth. 'Tis very strange,  
But takes a happy ending—in your love  
Which mine meets : be it so ! as you chose me,  
So I choose you.

*Norbert.* And worthily you choose.  
I will not be unworthy your esteem,  
No, madam. I do love you ; I will meet  
Your nature, now I know it. This was well.  
I see,—you dare and you are justified :

VOL. I.

But none had ventured such experiment,  
Less versed than you in nobleness of heart,  
Less confident of finding such in me.

I joy that thus you test me ere you grant  
The dearest richest *beauteousest* and best  
Of women to my arms : 'tis like yourself.

So—back again into my part's set words—  
Devotion to the uttermost is yours,  
But no, you cannot, madam, even you,  
Create in me the love our Constance does.

Or—something truer to the tragic phrase—  
Not yon magnolia-bell superb with scent  
Invites a certain insect—that's myself—  
But the small eye-flower nearer to the ground,  
I take this lady.

*Constance.* Stay—not hers, the trap—  
Stay, Norbert—that mistake were worst of all !  
He is too cunning, madam ! It was I,  
I, Norbert, who . . .

*Norbert.* You, was it, Constance ?

Then,  
But for the grace of this divinest hour  
Which gives me you, I might not pardon here !  
I am the Queen's ; she only knows my brain :  
She may experiment upon my heart  
And I instruct her too by the result.

But you, sweet, you who know me, who so long  
Have told my heart-beats over, held my life  
In those white hands of yours,—it is not well !

*Constance.* Tush ! I have said it, did I not  
say it all ?

The life, for her—the heart-beats, for her sake !

*Norbert.* Enough ! my cheek grows red, I  
think. Your test ?

There's not the meanest woman in the world,  
Not she I least could love in all the world,  
Whom, did she love me, had love proved  
itself,

I dare insult as you insult me now.

Constance, I could say, if it must be said,

“Take back the soul you offer, I keep mine !”

But—“Take the soul still quivering on your  
hand,

“The soul so offered, which I cannot use,

“And, please you, give it to some playful  
friend,

“For—what's the trifle he requites me with ?”

I, tempt a woman, to amuse a man,

That two may mock her heart if it succumb?  
No: staring God and standing 'neath his  
heaven,

I would not dare insult a woman so,  
Were she the meanest woman in the world,  
And he, I cared to please, ten emperors!

*Constance.* Norbert!

*Norbert.* I love once as I live  
but once.

What case is this to think or talk about?  
I love you. Would it mend the case at all  
If such a step as this killed love in me?  
Your part were done: account to God for it!  
But mine—could murdered love get up again,  
And kneel to whom you please to designate,  
And make you mirth? It is too horrible.

You did not know this, Constance? now you  
know

That body and soul have each one life, but  
one:

And here's my love, here, living, at your feet.

*Constance.* See the Queen! Norbert—this  
one more last word—

If thus you have taken jest for earnest—thus  
Loved me in earnest . . .

*Norbert.* Ah, no jest holds here!  
Where is the laughter in which jests break up,  
And what this horror that grows palpable?

Madam—why grasp you thus the balcony?  
Have I done ill? Have I not spoken truth?

How could I other? Was it not your test,  
To try me, what my love for Constance meant?

Madam, your royal soul itself approves,  
The first, that I should choose thus: so one

takes  
A beggar,—asks him, what would buy his  
child?

And then approves the expected laugh of  
scorn

Returned as something noble from the rags.  
Speak, Constance, I'm the beggar! Ha,

what's this?

You two glare each at each like panthers now.  
Constance, the world fades; only you stand  
there!

You did not, in to-night's wild whirl of things,  
Sell me—your soul of souls, for any price?

No—no—'tis easy to believe in you!  
Was it your love's mad trial to o'ertop

Mine by this vain self-sacrifice? well, still—  
Though I might curse, I love you. I am love

And cannot change: love's self is at your feet!  
[*The QUEEN goes out.*]

*Constance.* Feel my heart; let it die against  
your own!

*Norbert.* Against my own. Explain not;  
let this be!

This is life's height.  
*Constance.* Yours, yours, yours!

*Norbert.* You and I—  
Why care by what meanders we are here

I the centre of the labyrinth? Men have  
died

Trying to find this place, which we have  
found.

*Constance.* Found, found!  
*Norbert.* Sweet, never fear

what she can do!  
We are past harm now.

*Constance.* On the breast of God.  
I thought of men—as if you were a man.

Tempting him with a crown!  
*Norbert.* This must end here:

It is too perfect.  
*Constance.* There's the music stopped.

What measured heavy tread? It is one blaze  
About me and within me.

*Norbert.* Oh, some death  
Will run its sudden finger round this spark

And sever us from the rest!  
*Constance.* And so do well.

Now the doors open.  
*Norbert.* 'Tis the guard comes.

*Constance.* Kiss!

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

1864.

## JAMES LEE'S WIFE.

### I.—JAMES LEE'S WIFE SPEAKS AT THE WINDOW.

AH, Love, but a day  
And the world has changed !  
The sun's away,  
And the bird estranged ;  
The wind has dropped,  
And the sky's deranged :  
Summer has stopped.

#### II.

Look in my eyes !  
Wilt thou change too ?  
Should I fear surprise ?  
Shall I find aught new  
In the old and dear,  
In the good and true,  
With the changing year ?

#### III.

Thou art a man,  
But I am thy love.  
For the lake, its swan ;  
For the dell, its dove ;  
And for thee—(oh, haste !)  
Me, to bend above,  
Me, to hold embraced.

### II.—BY THE FIRESIDE.

#### I.

Is all our fire of shipwreck wood,  
Oak and pine ?  
Oh, for the ill's half-understood,  
The dim dead woe  
Long ago

Befallen this bitter coast of France !  
Well, poor sailors took their chance ;  
I take mine.

#### II.

A ruddy shaft our fire must shoot  
O'er the sea :  
Do sailors eye the casement—mute,  
Drenched and stark,  
From their bark—  
And envy, gnash their teeth for hate  
O' the warm safe house and happy freight  
—Thee and me ?

#### III.

God help you, sailors, at your need !  
Spare the curse !  
For some ships, safe in port indeed,  
Rot and rust,  
Run to dust,  
All through worms i' the wood, which crept,  
Gnawed our hearts out while we slept :  
That is worse.

Who lived here before us two ?  
Old-world pairs.  
Did a woman ever—would I knew !—  
Watch the man  
With whom began  
Love's voyage full-sail,—(now, gnash your  
teeth !)  
When planks start, open hell beneath  
Unawares ?

### III.—IN THE DOORWAY.

THE swallow has set her six young on the  
rail,  
And looks sea-ward :



The water's in stripes like a snake, olive-pale

To the leeward,—

On the weather-side, black, spotted white  
with the wind.

"Good fortune departs, and disaster's be-  
hind,"—

Hark, the wind with its wants and its infinite  
wail !

II.

Our fig-tree, that leaned for the saltness, has  
furled

Her five fingers,

Each leaf like a hand opened wide to the  
world

Where there lingers

No glint of the gold, Summer sent for her  
sake :

How the vines writhe in rows, each impaled  
on its stake !

My heart shrivels up and my spirit shrinks  
curled.

III.

Yet here are we two ; we have love, house  
enough,

With the field there,

This house of four rooms, that field red and  
rough,

Though it yield there,

For the rabbit that robs, scarce a blade or a  
bent ;

If a magpie alight now, it seems an event ;

And they both will be gone at November's  
rebuff.

IV.

But why must cold spread ? but wherefore  
bring change

To the spirit,

God meant should mate his with an infinite  
range,

And inherit

His power to put life in the darkness and  
cold ?

Oh, live and love worthily, bear and be  
bold !

Whom Summer made friends of, let Winter  
estrangle !

IV.—ALONG THE BEACH.

I WILL be quiet and talk with you,

And reason why you are wrong.

You wanted my love—is that much true ?

And so I did love, so I do :

What has come of it all along ?

I took you—how could I otherwise ?

For a world to me, and more ;

For all, love greatens and glorifies

Till God's a-glow, to the loving eyes,

In what was mere earth before.

III.

Yes, earth—yes, mere ignoble earth !

Now do I mis-state, mistake ?

Do I wrong your weakness and call it worth ?

Expect all harvest, dread no dearth,

Seal my sense up for your sake ?

IV.

Oh, Love, Love, no, Love ! not so, indeed !

You were just weak earth, I knew :

With much in you waste, with many a weed,

And plenty of passions run to seed,

But a little good grain too.

And such as you were, I took you for mine :

Did not you find me yours,

To watch the olive and wait the vine,

And wonder when rivers of oil and wine

Would flow, as the Book assures ?

Well, and if none of these good things came,

What did the failure prove ?

The man was my whole world, all the same,

With his flowers to praise or his weeds to

blame,

And, either or both, to love.

Yet this turns now to a fault—there! there!

That I do love, watch too long,  
And wait too well, and weary and wear;  
And 'tis all an old story, and my despair  
Fit subject for some new song:

## VIII.

"How the light, light love, he has wings to  
fly

"At suspicion of a bond:

"My wisdom has bidden your pleasure good-  
bye,

"Which will turn up next in a laughing eye,

"And why should you look beyond?"

## V.—ON THE CLIFF.

## I.

I LEANED on the turf,  
I looked at a rock  
Left dry by the surf;  
For the turf, to call it grass were to mock:  
Dead to the roots, so deep was done  
The work of the summer sun.

## II.

And the rock lay flat  
As an anvil's face:  
No iron like that!  
Baked dry; of a weed, of a shell, no trace:  
Sunshine outside, but ice at the core,  
Death's altar by the lone shore.

## III.

On the turf, sprang gay  
With his films of blue,  
No cricket, I'll say,  
But a warhorse, barded and chanfroned too,  
The gift of a quixote-mage to his knight,  
Real fairy, with wings all right.

## IV.

On the rock, they scorch  
Like a drop of fire

From a brandished torch,  
Fall two red fans of a butterfly:  
No turf, no rock: in their ugly stead,  
See, wonderful blue and red!

## V.

Is it not so  
With the minds of men?  
The level and low,  
The burnt and bare, in themselves; but then  
With such a blue and red grace, not theirs,—  
Love settling unawares!

VI.—READING A BOOK, UNDER  
THE CLIFF.

## I.

"STILL ailing, Wind? Wilt be appeased or no?  
"Which needs the other's office, thou or I?  
"Dost want to be disburthened of a woe,  
"And can, in truth, my voice untie  
"Its links, and let it go?

## II.

"Art thou a dumb wronged thing that would  
be righted,  
"Entrusting thus thy cause to me? For-  
bear!  
"No tongue can mend such pleadings; faith,  
requited  
"With falsehood,—love, at last aware  
"Of scorn,—hopes, early blighted,—

## III.

"We have them; but I know not any tone  
"So fit as thine to falter forth a sorrow:  
"Dost think men would go mad without a  
moan,  
"If they knew any way to borrow  
"A pathos like thy own?

## IV.

"Which sigh wouldst mock, of all the sighs?  
The one  
"So long escaping from lips starved and  
blue,

"That lasts while on her pallet-bed the nun

"Stretches her length; her foot comes through

"The straw she shivers on;

## V.

"You had not thought she was so tall; and spent,

"Her shrunk lids open, her lean fingers shut

"Close, close, their sharp and livid nails indent

"The clammy palm; then all is mute:

"That way, the spirit went.

## VI.

"Or wouldst thou rather that I understand

"Thy will to help me?—like the dog I found

"Once, pacing sad this solitary strand,

"Who would not take my food, poor hound,

"But whined and licked my hand."

## VII.

All this, and more, comes from some young man's pride

Of power to see,—in failure and mistake,

Relinquishment, disgrace, on every side,—

Merely examples for his sake,

Helps to his path untried:

## VIII.

Instances he must—simply recognize?

Oh, more than so!—must, with a learner's zeal,

Make doubly prominent, twice emphasize,

By added touches that reveal

The god in babe's disguise.

## IX.

Oh, he knows what defeat means, and the rest!

Himself the undefeated that shall be:

Failure, disgrace, he flings them you to test,—

His triumph, in eternity

Too plainly manifest!

Whence, judge if he learn forthwith what the wind

Means in its moaning—by the happy prompt Instinctive way of youth, I mean; for kind

Calm years, exacting their accompt

Of pain, mature the mind:

## XI.

And some midsummer morning, at the lull

Just about daybreak, as he looks across

A sparkling foreign country, wonderful

To the sea's edge for gloom and gloss,

Next minute must annul,—

## XII.

Then, when the wind begins among the vines,

So low, so low, what shall it say but this?

"Here is the change beginning, here the lines

"Circumscribe beauty, set to bliss

"The limit time assigns."

## XIII.

Nothing can be as it has been before;

Better, so call it, only not the same.

To draw one beauty into our hearts' core,

And keep it changeless! such our claim;

So answered,—Never more!

## XIV.

Simple? Why this is the old woe o' the world;

Tune, to whose rise and fall we live and die.

Rise with it, then! Rejoice that man is hurled

From change to change unceasingly,

His soul's wings never furled!

That's a new question; still replies the fact,  
Nothing endures: the wind moans, saying

so;

We moan in acquiescence: there's life's pact

Perhaps probation—do I know?

God does: endure his act!

## XVI.

Only, for man, how bitter not to grave  
 On his soul's hands' palms one fair good  
 wise thing  
 Just as he grasped it ! For himself, death's  
 wave ;  
 While time first washes—ah, the sting !—  
 O'er all he'd sink to save.

## VII.—AMONG THE ROCKS,

OH, good gigantic smile o' the brown old  
 earth,  
 This autumn morning ! How he sets his  
 bones  
 To bask i' the sun, and thrusts out knees and  
 feet  
 For the ripple to run over in its mirth ;  
 Listening the while, where on the heap of  
 stones  
 The white breast of the sea-lark twitters sweet.

## II.

That is the doctrine, simple, ancient, true ;  
 Such is life's trial, as old earth smiles and  
 knows.  
 If you loved only what were worth your love,  
 Love were clear gain, and wholly well for  
 you :  
 Make the low nature better by your throes !  
 Give earth yourself, go up for gain above !

## VIII.—BESIDE THE DRAWING BOARD.

## I.

"As like as a Hand to another Hand !"  
 Whoever said that foolish thing,  
 Could not have studied to understand  
 The counsels of God in fashioning  
 Out of the infinite love of his heart,  
 This Hand, whose beauty I praise, apart  
 From the world of wonder left to praise,  
 If I tried to learn the other ways

Of love in its skill, or love in its power.  
 "As like as a Hand to another Hand" :  
 Who said that, never took his stand,  
 Found and followed, like me, an hour,  
 The beauty in this,—how free, how fine  
 To fear, almost,—of the limit-line !  
 As I looked at this, and learned and drew,  
 Drew and learned, and looked again,  
 While fast the happy minutes flew,  
 Its beauty mounted into my brain,  
 And a fancy seized me ; I was fain  
 To efface my work, begin anew,  
 Kiss what before I only drew ;  
 Ay, laying the red chalk 'twixt my lips,  
 With soul to help if the mere lips failed,  
 I kissed all right where the drawing ailed,  
 Kissed fast the grace that somehow slips  
 Still from one's soulless finger-tips.

## II.

'Tis a clay cast, the perfect thing,  
 From Hand live once, dead long ago :  
 Princess-like it wears the ring  
 To fancy's eye, by which we know  
 That here at length a master found.  
 His match, a proud lone soul its mate,  
 As soaring genius sank to ground,  
 And pencil could not emulate  
 The beauty in this,—how free, how fine  
 To fear almost !—of the limit-line.  
 Long ago the god, like me  
 The worm, learned, each in our degree :  
 Looked and loved, learned and drew,  
 Drew and learned and loved again,  
 While fast the happy minutes flew,  
 Till beauty mounted into his brain  
 And on the finger which outvied  
 His art he placed the ring that's there,  
 Still by fancy's eye descried,  
 In token of a marriage rare :  
 For him on earth, his art's despair,  
 For him in heaven, his soul's fit bride.

## III.

Little girl with the poor coarse hand,  
 I turned from to a cold clay cast—  
 I have my lesson, understand  
 The worth of flesh and blood at last.

Nothing but beauty in a Hand?

Because he could not change the hue,  
Mend the lines and make them true  
To this which met his soul's demand,—  
Would Da Vinci turn from you?  
I hear him laugh my woes to scorn—  
"The fool forsooth is all forlorn  
"Because the beauty, she thinks best,  
"Lived long ago or was never born,—  
"Because no beauty bears the test  
"In this rough peasant Hand! Confessed!  
"Art is null and study void!"  
"So sayest thou? So said not I,  
"Who threw the faulty pencil by,  
"And years instead of hours employed,  
"Learning the veritable use  
"Of flesh and bone and nerve beneath  
"Lines and hue of the outer sheath,  
"If haply I might reproduce  
"One motive of the powers profuse,  
"Flesh and bone and nerve that make  
"The poorest coarsest human hand  
"An object worthy to be scanned  
"A whole life long for their sole sake.  
"Shall earth and the cramped moment-space  
"Yield the heavenly crowning grace?  
"Now the parts and then the whole!  
"Who art thou, with stunted soul  
"And stunted body, thus to cry  
"I love,—shall that be life's strait dole?  
"I must live beloved or die!"  
"This peasant hand that spins the wool  
"And bakes the bread, why lives it on,  
"Poor and coarse with beauty gone,—  
"What use survives the beauty?" Fool!

Go, little girl with the poor coarse hand!  
I have my lesson, shall understand.

#### IX.—ON DECK.

##### I.

THERE is nothing to remember in me,  
Nothing I ever said with a grace,  
Nothing I did that you care to see,  
Nothing I was that deserves a place  
In your mind, now I leave you, set you free.

##### II.

Conceded! In turn, concede to me,  
Such things have been as a mutual flame.  
Your soul's locked fast; but, love for a key,  
You might let it loose, till I grew the  
same  
In your eyes, as in mine you stand: strange  
plea!

##### III.

For then, then, what would it matter to me  
That I was the harsh ill-favoured one?  
We both should be like as pea and pea;  
It was ever so since the world begun:  
So, let me proceed with my reverie.

How strange it were if you had all me,  
As I have all you in my heart and brain,  
You, whose least word brought gloom or  
glee,  
Who never lifted the hand in vain—  
Will hold mine yet, from over the sea!

##### V.

Strange, if a face, when you thought of me,  
Rose like your own face present now,  
With eyes as dear in their due degree,  
Much such a mouth, and as bright a  
brow,  
Till you saw yourself, while you cried "'Tis  
She!"

##### VI.

Well, you may, you must, set down to me  
Love that was life, life that was love;  
A tenure of breath at your lips' decree,  
A passion to stand as your thoughts  
approve,  
A rapture to fall where your foot might be.

##### VII.

But did one touch of such love for me  
Come in a word or a look of yours,  
Whose words and looks will, circling, flee  
Round me and round while life en-  
dures,—  
Could I fancy "As I feel, thus feels he";

## VIII.

Why, fade you might to a thing like me,  
 And your hair grow these coarse hanks of  
 hair,  
 Your skin, this bark of a gnarled tree,—  
 You might turn myself!—should I know  
 or care  
 When I should be dead of joy, James Lee?

## GOLD HAIR:

## A STORY OF PORNIC.

## I.

OH, the beautiful girl, too white,  
 Who lived at Pornic, down by the sea,  
 Just where the sea and the Loire unite!  
 And a boasted name in Brittany  
 She bore, which I will not write.

## II.

Too white, for the flower of life is red;  
 Her flesh was the soft seraphic screen  
 Of a soul that is meant (her parents said)  
 To just see earth, and hardly be seen,  
 And blossom in heaven instead.

## III.

Yet earth saw one thing, one how fair!  
 One grace that grew to its full on earth:  
 Smiles might be sparse on her cheek so  
 spare,  
 And her waist want half a girdle's girth,  
 But she had her great gold hair.

## IV.

Hair, such a wonder of flax and floss,  
 Freshness and fragrance—floods of it, too!  
 Gold, did I say? Nay, gold's mere dross:  
 Here, Life smiled, "Think what I meant  
 to do!"  
 And Love sighed, "Fancy my loss!"

## V.

So, when she died, it was scarce more strange  
 Than that, when delicate evening dies,

And you follow its spent sun's pallid range,  
 There's a shoot of colour, startles the skies  
 With sudden, violent change,—

## VI.

That, while the breath was nearly to seek,  
 As they put the little cross to her lips,  
 She changed; a spot came out on her  
 cheek,  
 A spark from her eye in mid-eclipse,  
 And she broke forth, "I must speak!"

## VII.

"Not my hair!" made the girl her moan—  
 "All the rest is gone or to go;  
 "But the last, last grace, my all, my own,  
 "Let it stay in the grave, that the ghosts  
 may know!  
 "Leave my poor gold hair alone!"

## VIII.

The passion thus vented, dead lay she;  
 Her parents sobbed their worst on that;  
 All friends joined in, nor observed degree:  
 For indeed the hair was to wonder at,  
 As it spread—not flowing free,

## IX.

But curled around her brow, like a crown,  
 And coiled beside her cheeks, like a cap,  
 And calmed about her neck—ay, down  
 To her breast, pressed flat, without a gap  
 I' the gold, it reached her gown.

All kissed that face, like a silver wedge  
 'Mid the yellow wealth, nor disturbed its  
 hair:

E'en the priest allowed death's privilege,  
 As he planted the crucifix with care  
 On her breast, 'twixt edge and edge.

## X.

And thus was she buried, inviolate  
 Of body and soul, in the very space  
 By the altar; keeping saintly state.  
 In Pornic church, for her pride of race,  
 Pure life and piteous fate.

## XII.

And in after-time would your fresh tear fall,  
 Though your mouth might twitch with a  
 dubious smile,  
 As they told you of gold, both robe and pall,  
 How she prayed them leave it alone awhile,  
 So it never was touched at all.

## XIII.

Years flew ; this legend grew at last  
 The life of the lady ; all she had done,  
 All been, in the memories fading fast  
 Of lover and friend, was summed in one  
 Sentence survivors !

## XIV.

To wit, she was meant for heaven, not earth ;  
 Had turned an angel before the time ;  
 Yet, since she was mortal, in such dearth  
 Of frailty, all you could count a crime  
 Was—she knew her gold hair's worth.

## XV.

At little pleasant Pornic church,  
 It chanced, the pavement wanted repair,  
 Was taken to pieces : left in the lurch,  
 A certain sacred space lay bare,  
 And the boys began research.

'Twas the space where our sires would lay a  
 saint,  
 A benefactor,—a bishop, suppose,  
 A baron with armour-adornments quaint,  
 Dame with chased ring and jewelled rose,  
 Things sanctity saves from taint ;

## XVII.

So we come to find them in after-days  
 When the corpse is presumed to have done  
 with gauds  
 Of use to the living, in many ways ;  
 For the boys get pelf, and the town ap-  
 plauds,  
 And the church deserves the praise.

## XVIII.

They grubbed with a will : and at length—  
*O cor* Humanum, pectora caca, and the rest !—  
 They found—no gaud they were prying for,  
 No ring, no rose, but—who would have  
 guessed ?—  
 A double Louis-d'or !

## XIX.

Here was a case for the priest : he heard,  
 Marked, inwardly digested, laid  
 Finger on nose, smiled, "There's a bird  
 "Chirps in my ear": then, "Bring a  
 spade,  
 "Dig deeper !"—he gave the word.

## XX.

And lo, when they came to the coffin-lid,  
 Or rotten planks which composed it once,  
 Why, there lay the girl's skull wedged amid  
 A mint of money, it served for the nonce  
 To hold in its hair-heaps hid !

## XXI.

Hid there ? Why ? Could the girl be wont  
 (She the stainless soul) to treasure up  
 Money, earth's trash and heaven's affront ?  
 Had a spider found out the communion-cup,  
 Was a toad in the christening-font ?

## XXII.

Truth is truth : too true it was.  
 Gold ! She hoarded and hugged it first,  
 Longed for it, leaned o'er it, loved it—  
 alas—  
 Till the humour grew to a head and burst,  
 And she cried, at the final pass,—

## XXIII.

"Talk not of God, my heart is stone,  
 "Nor lover nor friend—be gold for both !  
 "Gold I lack ; and, my all, my own,  
 "It shall hide in my hair. I scarce die  
 loth—  
 "If they let my hair alone !"

## XXIV.

Louis-d'or, some six times five,  
And duly double; every piece.  
Now do you see? With the priest to thrive,  
With parents preventing her soul's release  
By kisses that kept alive,—

## XXV.

With heaven's gold gates about to ope,  
With friends' praise, gold-like, lingering  
still,  
An instinct had bidden the girl's hand grope  
For gold, the true sort—"Gold in heaven,  
if you will;  
"But I keep earth's too, I hope."

Enough! The priest took the grave's grim  
yield:

The parents, they eyed that price of sin  
As if *thirty pieces* lay revealed  
On the place to bury *strangers in*,  
The hideous Potter's Field.

## XXVII.

But the priest bethought him: "'Milk that's  
spilt'  
"—You know the adage! Watch and  
pray!  
"Saints tumble to earth with so slight a tilt!  
"It would build a new altar; that, we  
may!"  
And the altar therewith was built.

## XXVIII.

Why I deliver this horrible verse?  
As the text of a sermon, which now I  
preach:  
Evil or good may be better or worse  
In the human heart, but the mixture of  
each  
Is a marvel and a curse.

## XXIX.

The candid incline to surmise of late  
That the Christian faith proves false, I  
find;

For our Essays-and-Reviews' debate  
Begins to tell on the public mind,  
And Colenso's words have weight:

## XXX.

I still, to suppose it true, for my part,  
See reasons and reasons; this, to begin:  
'Tis the faith that launched point-blank her  
dart  
At the head of a lie—taught Original Sin,  
The Corruption of Man's Heart.

## THE WORST OF IT.

WOULD it were I had been false, not you!  
I that am nothing, not you that are all:  
I, never the worse for a touch or two  
On my speckled hide; not you, the  
pride  
Of the day, my swan, that a first fleck's fall  
On her wonder of white must unswan,  
undo!

## II.

I had dipped in life's struggle and, out-  
again,  
Bore specks of it here, there, easy to see,  
When I found my swan and the cure was  
plain;  
The dull turned bright as I caught your  
white  
On my bosom: you saved me—saved in  
vain  
If you ruined yourself, and all through me!

## III.

Yes, all through the speckled beast that I am,  
Who taught you to stoop; you gave me  
yourself,  
And bound your soul by the vows that  
damn:  
Since on better thought you break, as you  
ought,  
Vows—words, no angel set down, some elf  
Mistook,—for an oath, an epigram!



## IV.

Yes, might I judge you, here were my heart,  
And a hundred its like, to treat as you  
pleased !

I choose to be yours, for my proper part,  
Yours, leave or take, or mar me or make ;  
If I acquiesce, why should you be teased  
With the conscience-prick and the memory-  
smart ?

## V.

But what will God say ? Oh, my sweet,  
Think, and be sorry you did this thing  
Though earth were unworthy to feel your  
feet,

There's a heaven above may deserve your  
love :  
Should you forfeit heaven for a snapt gold  
ring  
And a promise broke, were it just or meet ?

## VI.

And I to have tempted you ! I, who tired  
Your soul, no doubt, till it sank ! Un-  
wise,

I loved and was lowly, loved and aspired,  
Loved, grieving or glad, till I made you  
mad,

And you meant to have hated and despised—  
Whereas, you deceived me nor inquired !

## VII.

She, ruined ? How ? No heaven for her ?  
Crowns to give, and none for the brow  
That looked like marble and smelt like  
myrrh ?

Shall the robe be worn, and the palm-  
branch borne,

And she go graceless, she graced now  
Beyond all saints, as themselves aver ?

## VIII.

Hardly ! That must be understood !  
The earth is your place of penance, then ;  
And what will it prove ? I desire your good,

But, plot as I may, I can find no way  
How a blow should fall, such as falls on  
men,

Nor prove too much for your womanhood.

## IX.

It will come, I suspect, at the end of life ;

When you walk alone, and review the past ;  
And I, who so long shall have done with strife,  
And journeyed my stage and earned my  
wage

And retired as was right,—I am called at last  
When the devil stabs you, to lend the knife.

## X.

He stabs for the minute of trivial wrong,  
Nor the other hours are able to save,  
The happy, that lasted my whole life long :  
For a promise broke, not for first words  
spoke,  
The true, the only, that turn my grave  
To a blaze of joy and a crash of song.

Witness beforehand ! Off I trip

On a safe path gay through the flowers  
you flung :

My very name made great by your lip,  
And my heart a-glow with the good I know  
Of a perfect year when we both were young,  
And I tasted the angels' fellowship.

And witness, moreover . . . Ah, but wait !  
I spy the loop whence an arrow shoots !

It may be for yourself, when you meditate,  
That you grieve—for slain ruth, murdered  
truth.

“ Though falsehood escape in the end, what  
boots ?

“ How truth would have triumphed ! ”—  
you sigh too late.

Ay, who would have triumphed like you, I  
say !

Well, it is lost now ; well, you must bear,  
Abide and grow fit for a better day :  
You should hardly grudge, could I be your  
judge !

But hush ! For you, can be no despair :  
There's amends : 'tis a secret : hope and  
pray !

For I was true at least—oh, true enough!  
And, Dear, truth is not as good as it  
seems!

Commend me to conscience! Idle stuff!  
Much help is in mine, as I mope and pine,  
And skulk through day, and scowl in my  
dreams  
At my swan's obtaining the crow's rebuff.

## xv.

Men tell me of truth now—"False!" I cry:  
Of beauty—"A mask, friend! Look  
beneath!"

We take our own method, the devil and I,  
With pleasant and fair and wise and  
rare:

And the best we wish to what lives, is—death;  
Which even in wishing, perhaps we lie!

## xvi.

Far better commit a fault and have done—  
As you, Dear!—for ever; and choose the  
pure,  
And look where the healing waters run,  
And strive and strain to be good again,  
And a place in the other world ensure,  
All glass and gold, with God for its sun.

## xvii.

Misery! What shall I say or do?  
I cannot advise, or, at least, persuade:  
Most like, you are glad you deceived me—  
rue  
No whit of the wrong: you endured too  
long,  
Have done no evil and want no aid,  
Will live the old life out and chance the  
new.

## xviii.

And your sentence is written all the same,  
And I can do nothing,—pray, perhaps:  
But somehow the world pursues its game,—  
If I pray, if I curse,—for better or worse:  
And my faith is torn to a thousand scraps,  
And my heart feels ice while my words  
breathe flame.

## xix.

Dear, I look from my hiding-place.  
Are you still so fair? Have you still the  
eyes?

Be happy! Add but the other grace,  
Be good! Why want what the angels vaunt?  
I knew you once: but in Paradise,  
If we meet, I will pass nor turn my face.

DÏS ALITER VISUM; OR, LE BYRON  
DE NOS JOURS.

STOP, let me have the truth of that!  
Is that all true? I say, the day  
Ten years ago when both of us  
Met on a morning, friends—as thus  
We meet this evening, friends or what?—

## ii.

Did you—because I took your arm  
And sillily smiled, "A mass of brass  
"That sea looks, blazing underneath!"  
While up the cliff-road edged with heath,  
We took the turns nor came to harm—

## iii.

Did you consider "Now makes twice  
"That I have seen her, walked and talked  
"With this poor pretty thoughtful thing,  
"Whose worth I weigh: she tries to sing;  
"Draws, hopes in time the eye grows nice;

## iv.

"Reads verse and thinks she understands;  
"Loves all, at any rate, that's great,  
"Good, beautiful; but much as we  
"Down at the bath-house love the sea,  
"Who breathe its salt and bruise its sands:

## v.

"While . . . do but follow the fishing-gull  
"That flaps and floats from wave to cave!  
"There's the sea-lover, fair my friend!  
"What then? Be patient, mark and mend!  
"Had you the making of your skull?"

## VI.

And did you, when we faced the church  
 With spire and sad slate roof, aloof  
 From human fellowship so far,  
 Where a few graveyard crosses are,  
 And garlands for the swallows' perch,—

## VII.

Did you determine, as we stepped  
 O'er the lone stone fence, "Let me get  
 Her for myself, and what's the earth  
 "With all its art, verse, music, worth—  
 "Compared with love, found, gained, and  
 kept?

## VIII.

"Schumann's our music-maker now;  
 "Has his march-movement youth and  
 mouth?  
 "Ingres's the modern man that paints;  
 "Which will lean on me, of his saints?  
 "Heine for songs; for kisses, how?"

And did you, when we entered, reached  
 The votive frigate, soft aloft  
 Riding on air this hundred years,  
 Safe-smiling at old hopes and fears,—  
 Did you draw profit while she preached?

## X.

Resolving, "Fools we wise men grow!  
 "Yes, I could easily blurt out curt  
 "Some question that might find reply  
 "As prompt in her stopped lips, dropped eye,  
 "And rush of red to cheek and brow:

## XI.

"Thus were a match made, sure and fast,  
 "Mid the blue weed-flowers round the  
 mound  
 "Where, issuing, we shall stand and stay  
 "For one more look at baths and bay,  
 "Sands, sea-gulls, and the old church last—

## XII.

"A match 'twixt me, bent, wiggled and  
 blamed,  
 "Famous, however, for verse and worse,

"Sure of the Fortieth spare Arm-chair  
 "When gout and glory seat me there,  
 "So, one whose love-freaks pass unblamed,—

## XIII.

"And this young beauty, round and sound  
 "As a mountain-apple, youth and truth  
 "With loves and doves, at all events  
 "With money in the Three per Cents;  
 "Whose choice of me would seem pro-  
 found:—

## XIV.

"She might take me as I take her.  
 "Perfect the hour would pass, alas!  
 "Climb high, love high, what matter? Still,  
 "Feet, feelings, must descend the hill:  
 "An hour's perfection can't recur.

## XV.

"Then follows Paris and full time  
 "For both to reason: 'Thus with us!'  
 "She'll sigh, 'Thus girls give body and  
 soul  
 "'At first word, think they gain the goal,  
 "'When 'tis the starting-place they climb!

## XVI.

"My friend makes verse and gets renown;  
 "'Have they all fifty years, his peers?  
 "'He knows the world, firm, quiet and gay;  
 "'Boys will become as much one day:  
 "'They're fools; he cheats, with beard less  
 brown.

## XVII.

"For boys say, *Love me or I die!*  
 "'He did not say, *The truth is, youth*  
 "'I want, *who am old and know too much;*  
 "'I'd catch youth: *lend me sight and*  
*touch!*  
 "'Drop heart's blood where life's wheels  
 grate dry!"

## XVIII.

"While I should make rejoinder"—(then  
 It was, no doubt, you ceased that least  
 Light pressure of my arm in yours)  
 "'I can conceive of cheaper cures  
 "'For a yawning-fit o'er books and men.

XIX.

"What? All I am, was, and might be,  
 "All, books taught, art brought, life's  
 whole strife,  
 "Painful results since precious, just  
 "Were fitly exchanged, in wise disgust,  
 "For two cheeks freshened by youth and  
 sea?  
 XX.  
 "All for a nosegay!—what came first;  
 "With fields on flower, untried each side;  
 "I rally, need my books and men,  
 "And find a nosegay's drop it, then,  
 "No match yet made for best or worst."

That ended me. You judged the porch  
 We left by, Norman; took our look  
 At sea and sky; wondered so few  
 Find out the place for air and view;  
 Remark'd the sun began to scorch;

XXII.

Descended, soon regained the baths,  
 And then, good-bye! Years ten since then:  
 Ten years! We meet: you tell me, now,  
 By a window-seat for that cliff-brow,  
 On carpet-stripes for those sand-paths.

XXIII.

Now I may speak: you fool, for all  
 Your lore! WHO made things plain in  
 vain?  
 What was the sea for? What, the grey  
 Sad church, that solitary day,  
 Crosses and graves and swallows' call?

XXIV.

Was there nought better than to enjoy?  
 No feat which, done, would make time  
 break,  
 And let us pent-up creatures through  
 Into eternity, our due?  
 No forcing earth teach heaven's employ?

XXV.

No wise beginning, here and now,  
 What cannot grow complete (earth's feat)

And heaven must finish, there and then?  
 No tasting earth's true food for men,  
 Its sweet in sad, its sad in sweet?

XXVI.

No grasping at love, gaining a share  
 O' the sole spark from God's life at strife  
 With death, so, sure of range above  
 The limits here? For us and love,  
 Failure; but, when God fails, despair.

XXVII.

This you call wisdom? Thus you add  
 Good unto good again, in vain?  
 You loved, with body worn and weak;  
 I loved, with faculties to seek:  
 Were both loves worthless since ill-clad?

XXVIII.

Let the mere star-fish in his vault  
 Crawl in a wash of weed, indeed,  
 Rose-jacynth to the finger-tips:  
 He, whole in body and soul, outstrips  
 Man, found with either in default.

XXIX.

But what's whole, can increase no more,  
 Is dwarfed and dies, since here's its sphere.  
 The devil laughed at you in his sleeve!  
 You knew not? That I well believe;  
 Or you had saved two souls: nay, four.

XXX.

For Stephanie sprained last night her wrist,  
 Ankle or something. "Pooh," cry you?  
 At any rate she danced, all say,  
 Vilely; her vogue has had its day.  
 Here comes my husband from his whist.

TOO LATE.

I.

HERE was I with my arm and heart  
 And brain, all yours for a word, a want  
 Put into a look—just a look, your part,—  
 While mine, to repay it . . . vainest  
 vaunt,

Were the woman, that's dead, alive to hear,  
Had her lover, that's lost, love's proof to  
show !

But I cannot show it ; you cannot speak  
From the churchyard neither, miles re-  
moved,

Though I feel by a pulse within my cheek,  
Which stabs and stops, that the woman I  
loved

Needs help in her grave and finds none near,  
Wants warmth from the heart which sends  
it—so !

## II.

Did I speak once angrily, all the drear days  
You lived, you woman I loved so well,  
Who married the other ? Blame or praise,  
Where was the use then ? Time would  
tell,

And the end declare what man for you,  
What woman for me, was the choice of  
God.

But, Edith dead ! no doubting more !  
I used to sit and look at my life  
As it rippled and ran till, right before,  
A great stone stopped it : oh, the strife  
Of waves at the stone some devil threw  
In my life's midcurrent, thwarting God !

But either I thought, " They may churn and  
chide

" Awhile, my waves which came for their  
joy

" And found this horrible stone full-tide :

" Yet I see just a thread escape, deploy

" Through the evening-country, silent and  
safe,

" And it suffers no more till it finds the  
sea."

Or else I would think, " Perhaps some night

" When new things happen, a meteor-ball

" May slip through the sky in a line of light,

" And earth breathe hard, and landmarks  
fall,

" And my waves no longer champ nor chafe,

" Since a stone will have rolled from its  
place : let be !"

## IV.

But, dead ! All's done with : wait who  
may,

Watch and wear and wonder who will.

Oh, my whole life that ends to-day !

Oh, my soul's sentence, sounding still,

" The woman is dead that was none of his ;

" And the man that was none of hers  
may go !"

There's only the past left : worry that !

Wreak ; like a bull, on the empty coat,

Rage, its late wearer is laughing at !

Tear the collar to rags, having missed his  
throat ;

Strike stupidly on—" This, this and this,

" Where I would that a bosom received  
the blow !"

I ought to have done more : once my speech,  
And once your answer, and there, the end,  
And Edith was henceforth out of reach !

Why, men do more to deserve a friend,

Be rid of a foe, get rich, grow wise,

Nor, folding their arms, stare fate in the  
face.

Why, better even have burst like a thief

And borne you away to a rock for us two,

In a moment's horror, bright, bloody and  
brief :

Then changed to myself again—" I slew

" Myself in that moment ; a ruffian lies

" Somewhere : your slave, see, born in his  
place !"

## VI.

What did the other do ? You be judge !

Look at us, Edith ! Here are we both !

Give him his six whole years : I grudge

None of the life with you, nay, loathe

Myself that I grudged his start in advance

Of me who could overtake and pass.

But, as if he loved you ! No, not he,

Nor anyone else in the world, 'tis plain :

Who ever heard that another, free

As I, young, prosperous, sound and sane,

Poured life out, proffered it—" Half a glance

" Of those eyes of yours and I drop the  
glass !"

## VII.

Handsome, were you? 'Tis more than they held,

More than they said; I was 'ware and watched:

I was the 'scapegrace, this rat belled

The cat, this fool got his whiskers scratched:

The others? No head that was turned, no heart

Broken, my lady, assure yourself!

Each soon made his mind up; so and so

Married a dancer, such and such

Stole his friend's wife, stagnated slow,

Or maundered, unable to do as much,

And muttered of peace where he had no part:

While, hid in the closet, laid on the shelf,—

## VIII.

On the whole, you were let alone, I think!

So, you looked to the other, who acquiesced;

My rival, the proud man,—prize your pink

Of poets! A poet he was! I've guessed:

He rhymed you his rubbish nobody read,

Loved you and doted you—did not I laugh!

There was a prize! But we both were tried.

Oh, heart of mine, marked broad with her mark,

Tekel, found wanting, set aside,

Scorned! See, I bleed these tears in the dark

Till comfort come and the last be bled:

He? He is tagging your epitaph.

If it would only come over again!

—Time to be patient with me, and probe

This heart till you punctured the proper vein,

Just to learn what blood is: twitch the robe

From that blank lay-figure your fancy draped,

Prick the leathern heart till the—verses spirt!

And late it was easy; late, you walked

Where a friend might meet you; Edith's name

Arose to one's lip if one laughed or talked;

If I heard good news, you heard the same;

When I woke, I knew that your breath escaped;

I could bide my time, keep alive, alert.

## X.

And alive I shall keep and long, you will see!

I knew a man, was kicked like a dog

From gutter to cesspool; what cared he

So long as he picked from the filth his prog?

He saw youth, beauty and genius die,

And jollily lived to his hundredth year.

But I will live otherwise: none of such life!

At once I begin as I mean to end.

Go on with the world, get gold in its strife,

Give your spouse the slip and betray your friend!

There are two who decline, a woman and I,

And enjoy our death in the darkness here.

I liked that way you had with your curls

Wound to a ball in a net behind:

Your cheek was chaste as a quaker-girl's,

And your mouth—there was never, to my mind,

Such a funny mouth, for it would not shut;

And the dented chin too—what a chin!

There were certain ways when you spoke, some words

That you know you never could pronounce:

You were thin, however; like a bird's

Your hand seemed—some would say, the pounce<sup>1</sup>

Of a scaly-footed hawk—all but!

The world was right when it called you thin.

## XII.

But I turn my back on the world: I take

Your hand, and kneel, and lay to my lips

Bid me live, Edith! Let me slake

Thirst at your presence! Fear no slips:

'Tis your slave shall pay, while his soul endures,

Full due, love's whole debt, *summius finis*.

<sup>1</sup> Talon.

My queen shall have high observance, planned  
Courtship made perfect, no least line  
Crossed without warrant. There you stand,  
Warm too, and white too : would this wine  
Had washed all over that body of yours,  
Ere I drank it, and you down with it,  
thus !

### ABT VÖGLER.

(AFTER HE HAS BEEN EXTEMPORIZING  
UPON THE MUSICAL INSTRUMENT OF  
HIS INVENTION.)

[The Abbé Vogler, born 1749. Court  
Chaplain at Mannheim. Improved the organ.  
Visited London, 1790. Died at Darmstadt,  
1844.]

#### I.

Would that the structure brave, the mani-  
fold music I build,  
Bidding my organ obey, calling its keys to  
their work,  
Claiming each slave of the sound, at a touch,  
as when Solomon willed  
Armies of angels that soar, legions of  
demons that lurk,  
Man, brute, reptile, fly,—alien of end and  
of aim;  
Adverse, each from the other heaven-high,  
hell-deep removed,—  
Should rush into sight at once as he named  
the ineffable Name,  
And pile him a palace straight, to pleasure  
the princess he loved !

#### II.

Would it might tarry like his, the beautiful  
building of mine,  
This which my keys in a crowd pressed  
and impetuned to raise !  
Ah, one and all, how they helped, would  
dispart now and now combine,  
Zealous to hasten the work, heighten their  
master his praise !  
And one would bury his brow with a blind  
plunge down to hell,  
Burrow awhile and build, broad on the  
roots of things,

Then up again swim into sight, having based  
me my palace well,  
Founded it, fearless of flame, flat on the  
nether springs.

#### III.

And another would mount and march, like  
the excellent minion he was,  
Ay, another and yet another, one crowd  
but with many a crest,  
Raising my rampired walls of gold as trans-  
parent as glass,  
Eager to do and die, yield each his place  
to the rest :  
For higher still and higher (as a runner tips  
with fire,  
When a great illumination surprises a festal  
night—  
Outlining round and round Rome's dome  
from space to spire)  
Up, the pinnacled glory reached, and the  
pride of my soul was in sight.

#### IV.

In sight? Not half! for it seemed, it was  
certain, to match man's birth,  
Nature in turn conceived, obeying an im-  
pulse as I ;  
And the emulous heaven yearned down, made  
effort to reach the earth,  
As the earth had done her best, in my  
passion, to scale the sky :  
Novel splendours burst forth, grew familiar  
and dwelt with mine,  
Not a point nor peak but found and fixed  
its wandering star ;  
Meteor-moons, balls of blaze : and they did  
not pale nor pine,  
For earth had attained to heaven, there  
was no more near nor far.

Nay more ; for there wanted not who walked  
in the glare and glow,  
Presences plain in the place ; or, fresh from  
the Protoplast,

Furnished for ages to come, when a kindlier  
wind should blow;  
Lured now to begin and live, in a house  
to their liking at last;  
Or else the wonderful Dead who have passed  
through the body and gone,  
But were back once more to breathe in an  
old world worth their new:  
What never had been, was now; what was,  
as it shall be anon;  
And what is,—shall I say, matched both?  
for I was made perfect too.

VI.

All through my keys that gave their sounds  
to a wish of my soul,  
All through my soul that praised as its  
wish flowed visibly forth,  
All through music and me! For think, had  
I painted the whole,  
Why, there it had stood, to see, nor the  
process so wonder-worth:  
Had I written the same, made verse—still,  
effect proceeds from cause,  
Ye know why the forms are fair, ye hear  
how the tale is told;  
It is all triumphant art, but art in obedience  
to laws,  
Painter and poet are proud in the artist-list  
enrolled:—

VII.

But here is the finger of God, a flash of the  
will that can,  
Existent behind all laws, that made them  
and, lo, they are!  
And I know not if, save in this, such gift be  
allowed to man,  
That out of three sounds he frame, not a  
fourth sound, but a star.  
Consider it well: each tone of our scale in  
itself is nought;  
It is everywhere in the world—loud, soft,  
and all is said:  
Give it to me to use! I mix it with two in  
my thought:  
And, there! Ye have heard and seen:  
consider and bow the head!

VIII.

Well, it is gone at last, the palace of music I  
reared;  
Gone! and the good tears start, the praises  
that come too slow;  
For one is assured at first, one scarce can say  
that he feared,  
That he even gave it a thought, the gone  
thing was to go.  
Never to be again! But many more of the  
kind  
As good, nay, better perchance: is this  
your comfort to me?  
To me, who must be saved because I cling  
with my mind  
To the same, same self, same love, same  
God: ay, what was, shall be.

Therefore to whom turn I but to thee, the  
ineffable Name?  
Builder and maker, thou, of houses not  
made with hands!  
What, have fear of change from thee who art  
ever the same?  
Doubt that thy power can fill the heart that  
thy power expands?  
There shall never be one lost good! What  
was, shall live as before;  
The evil is null, is nought, is silence  
implying sound;  
What was good shall be good, with, for evil,  
so much good more;  
On the earth the broken arcs; in the  
heaven, a perfect round.  
All we have willed or hoped or dreamed of  
good shall exist;  
Not its semblance, but itself; no beauty,  
nor good, nor power  
Whose voice has gone forth, but each survives  
for the melodist  
When eternity affirms the conception of an  
hour.



The high that proved too high, the heroic for  
earth too hard,

The passion that left the ground to lose  
itself in the sky,

Are music sent up to God by the lover and  
the bard ;

Enough that he heard it once : we shall  
hear it by-and-by.

## XI.

And what is our failure here but a triumph's  
evidence

For the fulness of the days ? Have we  
withered or agonized ?

Why else was the pause prolonged but that  
singing might issue thence ?

Why rushed the discords in but that har-  
mony should be prized ?

Sorrow is hard to bear, and doubt is slow to  
clear,

Each sufferer says his say, his scheme of  
the weal and woe :

But God has a few of us whom he whispers  
in the ear ;

The rest may reason and welcome : 'tis we  
musicians know.

## XII.

Well, it is earth with me ; silence resumes  
her reign :

I will be patient and proud, and soberly  
acquiesce.

Give me the keys. I feel for the common  
chord again,

Sliding by semitones, till I sink to the  
minor,—yes,

And I blunt it into a ninth, and I stand on  
alien ground,

Surveying awhile the heights I rolled from  
into the deep ;

Which, hark, I have dared and done, for my  
resting-place is,

The C Major of this life : so, now I will  
try to sleep.

## RABBI BEN EZRA.

## I.

GROW old along with me !

The best is yet to be,

The last of life, for which the first was made :

Our times are in His hand

Who saith "A whole I planned,

"Youth shows but half ; trust God : see  
all nor be afraid !"

## II.

Not that, amassing flowers,

Youth sighed "Which rose make ours,

"Which lily leave and then as best recall ?"

Not that, admiring stars,

It yearned "Nor Jove, nor Mars ;

"Mine be some figured flame which blends,  
transcends them all !"

Not for such hopes and fears

Annulling youth's brief years,

Do I remonstrate : folly wide the mark !

Rather I prize the doubt

Low kinds exist without,

Finished and finite clods, untroubled by a  
spark.

## IV.

Poor vaunt of life indeed,

Were man but formed to feed

On joy, to solely seek and find and feast :

Such feasting ended, then

As sure an end to men ;

Irks care the crop-full bird ? Frets doubt the  
maw-crammed beast ?

Rejoice we are allied

To That which doth provide

And not partake, effect and not receive !

A spark disturbs our clod ;

Nearer we hold of God

Who gives, than of His tribes that take, I  
must believe.

VI.

Then, welcome each rebuff  
That turns earth's smoothness rough,  
Each sting that bids nor sit nor stand but go !  
Be our joys three-parts pain !  
Strive, and hold cheap the strain ;  
Learn, nor account the pang ; dare, never  
grudge the throe !

VII.

For thence,—a paradox  
Which comforts while it mocks,—  
Shall life succeed in that it seems to fail :  
What I aspired to be,  
And was not, comforts me :  
A brute I might have been, but would not sink  
i' the scale.

VIII.

What is he but a brute  
Whose flesh has soul to suit,  
Whose spirit works lest arms and legs want  
play ?  
To man, propose this test—  
Thy body at its best,  
How far can that project thy soul on its lone  
way ?

IX.

Yet gifts should prove their use :  
I own the Past profuse  
Of power each side, perfection every turn :  
Eyes, ears took in their dole,  
Brain treasured up the whole ;  
Should not the heart beat once " How good  
to live and learn ? "

X.

Not once beat " Praise be Thine !  
" I see the whole design,  
" I, who saw power, see now love perfect too :  
" Perfect I call Thy plan :  
" Thanks that I was a man !  
" Maker, remake, complete,—I trust what  
Thou shalt do ! "

XI.

For pleasant is this flesh ;  
Our soul, in its rose-mesh  
Pulled ever to the earth, still yearns for rest ;

Would we some prize might hold  
To match those manifold  
Possessions of the brute,—gain most, as we  
did best !

XII.

Let us not always say  
" Spite of this flesh to-day  
" I strove, made head, gained ground upon  
the whole ! "  
As the bird wings and sings,  
Let us cry " All good things  
" Are ours, nor soul helps flesh more, now.  
than flesh helps soul ! "

XIII.

Therefore I summon age  
To grant youth's heritage,  
Life's struggle having so far reached its  
term :  
Thence shall I pass, approved  
A man, for aye removed  
From the developed brute ; a god though in  
the germ.

XIV.

And I shall thereupon  
Take rest, ere I be gone  
Once more on my adventure brave and  
new :  
Fearless and unperplexed,  
When I wage battle next,  
What weapons to select, what armour to  
indue.

XV.

Youth ended, I shall try  
My gain or loss thereby ;  
Leave the fire ashes, what survives is gold :  
And I shall weigh the same,  
Give life its praise or blame :  
Young, all lay in dispute ; I shall know, being  
old.

XVI.

For note, when evening shuts,  
A certain moment cuts  
The deed off, calls the glory from the grey :  
A whisper from the west  
Shoots—" Add this to the rest,  
" Take it and try its worth : here dies another  
day."

## XVII.

So, still within this life,  
Though lifted o'er its strife,  
Let me discern, compare, pronounce at  
last,

"This rage was right if the main,

"That acquiescence vain :

"The Future I may face now I have proved  
the Past."

## XVIII.

For more is not reserved

To man, with soul just nerved  
To act to-morrow what he learns to-day :

Here, work enough to watch

The Master work, and catch

Hints of the proper craft, tricks of the tool's  
true play.

## XIX.

As it was better, youth

Should strive, through acts uncouth,

Toward making, than repose on aught found  
made :

So, better, age, exempt

From strife, should know, than tempt

Further. Thou waitedest age : wait death  
nor be afraid !

## XX.

Enough now, if the Right

And Good and Infinite

Be named here, as thou callest thy hand thine  
own,

With knowledge absolute,

Subject to no dispute

From fools that crowded youth, nor let thee  
feel alone.

## XXI.

Be there, for once and all,

Severed great minds from small,

Announced to each his station in the Past !

Was I, the world arraigned,

Were they, my soul disdained,

Right? Let age speak the truth and give  
us peace at last !

## XXII.

Now, who shall arbitrate?

Ten men love what I hate,  
Shun what I follow, slight what I receive ;

Ten, who in ears and eyes

Match me : we all surmise,

They this thing, and I that : whom shall  
my soul believe?

## XXIII.

Not on the vulgar mass

Called "work," must sentence pass,

Things done, that took the eye and had the  
price ;

O'er which, from level stand,

The low world laid its hand,

Found straightway to its mind, could value  
in a trice :

## XXIV.

But all, the world's coarse thumb

And finger failed to plumb,

So passed in making up the main account ;

All instincts immature,

All purposes unsure,

That weighed not as his work, yet swelled the  
man's amount :

## XXV.

Thoughts hardly to be packed

Into a narrow act,

Fancies that broke through language and  
escaped ;

All I could never be,

All, men ignored in me,

This, I was worth to God, whose wheel the  
pitcher shaped.

## XXVI.

Ay, note that Potter's wheel,

That metaphor ! and feel

Why time spins fast, why passive lies our  
clay,—

Thou, to whom fools propound,

When the wine makes its round,

"Since life fleets, all is change ; the Past  
gone, seize to-day !"

## XXVII.

Fool ! All that is, at all,

Lasts ever, past recall ;

Earth changes, but thy soul and God stand  
sure :

What entered into thee,  
That was, is, and shall be :  
Time's wheel runs, back to stop : Potter and  
clay endure.

## XXVIII.

He fixed thee mid this dance  
Of plastic circumstance,  
This Present, thou, forsooth, wouldst fain  
arrest :  
Machinery just meant  
To give thy soul its bent,  
Try thee and turn thee forth, sufficiently im-

## XXIX.

What though the earlier grooves  
Which ran the laughing loves  
Around thy base, no longer pause and  
press ?  
What though, about thy rim,  
Skull-things in order grim  
Grow out, in graver mood, obey the sterner  
stress ?

## XXX.

Look not thou down but up !  
To uses of a cup,  
The festal board, lamp's flash and trumpet's  
peal,  
The new wine's foaming flow,  
The Master's lips a-glow !  
Thou, heaven's consummate-cup, what need'st  
thou with earth's wheel ?

## XXXI.

But I need, now as then,  
Thee, God, who mouldst men ;  
And since, not even while the whirl was  
worst,  
Did I,—to the wheel of life  
With shapes and colours rife,  
Bound dizzily,—mistake my end, to slake  
Thy thirst :

## XXXII.

So, take and use Thy work :  
Amend what flaws may lurk,  
What strain o' the stuff, what warpings past  
the aim !

My times be in Thy hand !  
Perfect the cup as planned !  
Let age approve of youth, and death com-  
plete the same !

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT.

[SUPPOSED of Pamphylax the Antiochene :  
It is a parchment, of my rolls the fifth,  
Hath three skins glued together, is all Greek  
And goeth from *Epsilon* down to *Mu* :  
Lies second in the surnamed Chosen Chest,  
Stained and conserved with juice of terebinth,  
Covered with cloth of hair, and lettered *Xi*,  
From Xanthus, my wife's uncle, now at  
peace :

*Mu* and *Epsilon* stand for my own name.  
I may not write it, but I make a cross  
To show I wait His coming, with the rest,  
And leave off here : beginneth Pamphylax.]

I said, " If one should wet his lips with wine,  
" And slip the broadest plantain-leaf we find,  
" Or else the lapet of a linen robe,  
" Into the water-vessel, lay it right,  
" And cool his forehead just above the eyes,  
" The while a brother, kneeling either side,  
" Should chafe each hand and try to make it  
warm,—  
" He is not so far gone but he might speak."

This did not happen in the outer cave,  
Nor in the secret chamber of the rock  
Where, sixty days since the decree was out,  
We had him, bedded on a camel-skin;  
And waited for his dying all the while ;  
But in the midmost grotto : since noon's light  
Reached there a little, and we would not lose  
The last of what might happen on his face.

I at the head, and Xanthus at the feet,  
With Valens and the Boy, had lifted him,  
And brought him from the chamber in the  
depths,  
And laid him in the light where we might see :  
For certain smiles began about his mouth,  
And his lids moved, presageful of the end.

Beyond, and half way up the mouth o' the cave;

The Bactrian convert, having his desire,  
Kept watch, and made pretence to graze a goat

That gave us milk, on rags of various herb,  
Plantain and quitch, the rocks' shade keeps alive :

So that if any thief or soldier passed,  
(Because the persecution was aware)  
Yielding the goat up promptly with his life,  
Such man might pass on, joyful at a prize,  
Nor care to pry into the cool o' the cave.  
Outside was all noon and the burning blue.

"Here is wine," answered Xanthus,—  
dropped a drop ;

I stooped and placed the lap of cloth aright,  
Then chafed his right hand, and the Boy his left :

But Valens had bethought him, and produced  
And broke a ball of nard, and made perfume.  
Only, he did—not so much wake, as—turn  
And smile a little, as a sleeper does  
If any dear one call him, touch his face—  
And smiles and loves, but will not be disturbed.

Then Xanthus said a prayer, but still he slept :

It is the Xanthus that escaped to Rome,  
Was burned, and could not write the chronicle.

Then the Boy sprang up from his knees, and ran,

Stung by the splendour of a sudden thought,  
And fetched the seventh plate of graven lead  
Out of the secret chamber, found a place,  
Pressing with finger on the deeper dints,  
And spoke, as 'twere his mouth proclaiming first,

"I am the Resurrection and the Life."

Whereat he opened his eyes wide at once,  
And sat up of himself, and looked at us ;  
And thenceforth nobody pronounced a word :  
Only, outside, the Bactrian cried his cry  
Like the lone desert-bird that wears the ruff,  
As signal we were safe, from time to time.

First he said, "If a friend declared to me,  
"This my son Valens, this my other son,  
"Were James and Peter,—nay, declared as well

"This lad was very John,—I could believe !  
"—Could, for a moment, doubtlessly believe :

"So is myself withdrawn into my depths,  
"The soul retreated from the perished brain  
"Whence it was wont to feel and use the world

"Through these dull members, done with long ago.

"Yet I myself remain ; I feel myself :  
"And there is nothing lost. Let be, awhile !"

[This is the doctrine he was wont to teach,  
How divers persons witness in each man,  
Three souls which make up one soul : first, to wit,

A soul of each and all the bodily parts,  
Seated therein, which works, and is what Does,

And has the use of earth, and ends the man  
Downward : but, tending upward for advice,  
Grows into, and again is grown into  
By the next soul, which, seated in the brain,  
Useth the first with its collected use,  
And feeleth, thinketh, willeth,—is what Knows :

Which, duly tending upward in its turn,  
Grows into, and again is grown into  
By the last soul, that uses both the first,  
Subsisting whether they assist or no,  
And, constituting man's self, is what Is—  
And leans upon the former, makes it play,  
As that played off the first : and, tending up,  
Holds, is upheld by, God, and ends the man  
Upward in that dread point of intercourse,  
Nor needs a place, for it returns to Him.  
What Does, what Knows, what Is ; three souls, one man.

I give the glossa of Theotypas.]

And then, "A stick, once fire from end to end ;

"Now, ashes save the tip that holds a spark !  
"Yet, blow the spark, it runs back, spreads itself

- "A little where the fire was : thus I urge  
 "The soul that served me, till it task once  
 more  
 "What ashes of my brain have kept their  
 shape;  
 "And these make effort on the last o' the  
 flesh,  
 "Trying to taste again the truth of things—"  
 (He smiled)—"their very superficial truth ;  
 "As that ye are my sons, that it is long  
 "Since James and Peter had release by death,  
 "And I am only he, your brother John;  
 "Who saw and heard, and could remember  
 all.  
 "Remember all ! It is not much to say.  
 "What if the truth broke on me from above  
 "As once and oft-times ? Such might hap  
 again : "  
 "Doubtlessly He might stand in presence  
 here,  
 "With head wool-white, eyes flame, and feet  
 like brass,  
 "The sword and the seven stars, as I have  
 seen—  
 "I who now shudder only and surmise  
 "How did your brother bear that sight and  
 live ?"  
 "If I live yet, it is for good, more love  
 "Through me to men : be nought but ashes  
 here  
 "That keep awhile my semblance, who was  
 John,—  
 "Still, when they scatter, there is left on  
 earth  
 "No one alive who knew (consider this !)  
 "—Saw with his eyes and handled with his  
 hands  
 "That which was from the first, the Word  
 of Life.  
 "How will it be when none more saith 'I  
 saw' ?  
 "Such ever was love's way : to rise, it stoops.  
 "Since I, whom Christ's mouth taught, was  
 bidden teach,  
 "I went, for many years, about the world,  
 "Saying 'It was so ; so I heard and saw,'  
 "Speaking, as the case asked : and men  
 believed.  
 "Afterward came the message to myself  
 "In Patmosisle ; I was not bidden teach,  
 "But simply listen ; take a book and write,  
 "Nor set down other than the given word,  
 "With nothing left to my arbitrament  
 "To choose or change : I wrote, and men  
 believed.  
 "Then, for my time grew brief, no message  
 more,  
 "No call to write again, I found a way,  
 "And, reasoning from my knowledge, merely  
 taught  
 "Men should, for love's sake, in love's  
 strength believe ;  
 "Or I would pen a letter to a friend : "  
 "And urge the same as friend, nor less nor  
 more :  
 "Friends said I reasoned rightly, and be-  
 lieved.  
 "But at the last, why, I seemed left alive  
 "Like a sea-jelly weak on Patmos strand,  
 "To tell dry sea-beach gazers how I fared  
 "When there was mid-sea, and the mighty  
 things ;  
 "Left to repeat, 'I saw, I heard, I knew,'  
 "And go all over the old ground again,  
 "With Antichrist already in the world,  
 "And many Antichrists, who answered  
 prompt  
 "Am I not Jasper as thyself art John ?  
 "Nay, young, whereas through age thou  
 mayest forget :  
 "Wherefore, explain, or how shall we be-  
 lieve ?"  
 "I never thought to call down fire on such,  
 "Or, as in wonderful and early days,  
 "Pick up the scorpion, tread the serpent  
 dumb ;  
 "But patient stated much of the Lord's life  
 "Forgotten or misdelivered, and let it  
 work :  
 "Since much that at the first, in dead and  
 word,  
 "Lay simply and sufficiently exposed,  
 Had grown (or else my soul was grown to  
 match,

- "Fed through such years, familiar with such light,  
 "Guarded and guided still to see and speak)  
 "Of new significance and fresh result;  
 "What first were guessed as points, I now knew stars,  
 "And named them in the Gospel I have writ.  
 "For men said, 'It is getting long ago :  
 "'Where is the promise of His coming?'—asked  
 "These young ones in their strength, as loth to wait,  
 "Of me who, when their sires were born, was old.  
 "I, for I loved them, answered, joyfully,  
 "Since I was there, and helpful in my age ;  
 "And, in the main, I think such men believed.  
 "Finally, thus endeavouring, I fell sick,  
 "Ye brought me here, and I supposed the end,  
 "And went to sleep with one thought that, at least,  
 "Though the whole earth should lie in wickedness,  
 "We had the truth, might leave the rest to God.  
 "Yet now I wake in such decrepitude  
 "As I had slidden down and fallen afar,  
 "Past even the presence of my former self,  
 "Grasping the while for stay at facts which snap,  
 "Till I am found away from my own world,  
 "Feeling for foot-hold through a blank profound,  
 "Along with unborn people in strange lands,  
 "Who say—I hear said or conceive they say—  
 "'Was John at all, and did he say he saw?  
 "'Assure us, ere we ask what he might see!"  
 "And how shall I assure them? Can they share  
 "—They, who have flesh, a veil of youth and strength  
 "About each spirit, that needs must bide its time,  
 "Living and learning still as years assist.  
 "Which wear the thickness thin, and let man  
 "With me who hardly ~~am~~ withheld at all,  
 "But shudderingly, scarce a shroud between,  
 "Lie bare to the universal prick of light?  
 "Is it for nothing we grow old and weak,  
 "We whom God loves? When pain ends, gain ends too.  
 "To me, that story—ay, that Life and Death  
 "Of which I wrote 'it was'—to me, it is ;  
 "—Is, here and now : I apprehend nought else.  
 "Is not God now? the world His power first made?  
 "Is not His love at issue still with sin,  
 "Visibly when a wrong is done on earth?  
 "Love, wrong, and pain, what see I else around?  
 "Yea, and the Resurrection and Uprise  
 "To the right hand of the throne—what is it beside,  
 "When such truth, breaking bounds, o'er-floods my soul,  
 "And, as I saw the sin and death, even so  
 "See I the need yet transiency of both,  
 "The good and glory consummated thence?  
 "I saw the power ; I see the Love, once weak,  
 "Resume the Power : and in this word 'I see,'  
 "Lo, there is recognized the Spirit of both  
 "That moving o'er the spirit of man, unblinds  
 "His eye and bids him look. These are, I see ;  
 "But ye, the children, His beloved ones too,  
 "Ye need,—as I should use an optic glass  
 "I wondered at erewhile, somewhere i' the world,  
 "It had been given a crafty smith to make ;  
 "A tube, he turned on objects brought too close,  
 "Lying confusedly insubordinate  
 "For the unassisted eye to master once :  
 "Look through his tube, at distance now they lay,  
 "Become succinct, distinct, so small, so clear!  
 "Just thus, ye needs must apprehend what truth  
 "I see, reduced to plain historic fact,  
 "Diminished into clearness, proved a point"

- "And far away: ye would withdraw your sense  
 "From out eternity; strain it upon time,  
 "Then stand before that fact, that Life and Death,  
 "Stay there at gaze, till it dispart, dispread,  
 "As though a star should open out, all sides,  
 "Grow the world on you, as it is my world.  
  
 "For life, with all it yields of joy and woe,  
 "And hope and fear, —believe the aged friend,—  
 "Is just our chance o' the prize of learning love,  
 "How love might be, hath been indeed, and is;  
 "And that we hold thenceforth to the uttermost  
 "Such prize despite the envy of the world,  
 "And, having gained truth, keep truth: that is all.  
 "But see the double way wherein we are led,  
 "How the soul learns diversely from the flesh!  
 "With flesh, that hath so little time to stay,  
 "And yields mere basement for the soul's emprise,  
 "Expect prompt teaching. Helpful was the light,  
 "And warmth was cherishing and food was choice  
 "To every man's flesh, thousand years ago,  
 "As now to yours and mine; the body sprang  
 "At once to the height, and stayed: but the soul,—no!  
 "Since sages who, this noontide, meditate  
 "In Rome or Athens, may descry some point  
 "Of the eternal power, hid yestereve;  
 "And, as thereby the power's whole mass extends,  
 "So much extends the æther floating o'er,  
 "The love that tops the might, the Christ in God.  
 "Then, as new lessons shall be learned in these  
 "Till earth's work stop and useless time run out,  
 "So duly, daily, needs provision be  
 "For keeping the soul's prowess possible,
- 'Building new barriers as the old decay,  
 'Saving us from evasion of life's proof,  
 'Putting the question ever, 'Does God love,  
 'And will ye hold that truth against the world?'  
 'Ye know there needs no second proof with good  
 'Gained for our flesh from any earthly source:  
 'We might go freezing, ages,—give us fire,  
 'Thereafter we judge fire at its full worth,  
 'And guard it safe through every chance, ye know!  
 'That fable of Prometheus and his theft,  
 'How mortals gained Jove's fiery flower, grows old  
 '(I have been used to hear the pagans own)  
 'And out of mind; but fire, howe'er its birth,  
 'Here is it, precious to the sophist now  
 'Who laughs the myth of Æschylus to scorn,  
 'As precious to those satyrs of his play,  
 'Who touched it in gay wonder at the thing.  
 'While were it so with the soul,—this gift of truth  
 'Once grasped, were this our soul's gain safe, and sure  
 'To prosper as the body's gain is wont,—  
 'Why, man's probation would conclude, his earth  
 'Crumble; for he both reasons and decides,  
 'Weighs first, then chooses: will he give up fire  
 'For gold or purple once he knows its worth?  
 'Could he give Christ up were His worth as plain?  
 'Therefore, I say, to test man, the proofs shift,  
 'Nor may he grasp that fact like other fact,  
 'And straightway in his life acknowledge it,  
 'As, say, the indubitable bliss of fire.  
 'Sigh ye, 'It had been easier once than now?'  
 'To give you answer I am left alive;  
 'Look at me who was present from the first!  
 'Ye know what things I saw; then came a test,  
 'My first, befitting me who so had seen:  
 'Forsake the Christ thou sawest transfigured, Him



- "Who trod the sea and brought the dead to life?  
 "What should wring this from thee!—ye laugh and ask.  
 "What wrung it? Even a torchlight and a noise,  
 "The sudden Roman faces, violent hands,  
 "And fear of what the Jews might do! Just that,  
 "And it is written, 'I forsook and fled.'  
 "There was my trial, and it ended thus.  
 "Ay, but my soul had gained its truth, could grow:  
 "Another year or two,—what little child,  
 "What tender woman that had seen no least  
 "Of all my sights, but barely heard them told,  
 "Who did not clasp the cross with a light laugh,  
 "Or wrap the burning robe round, thanking God?  
 "Well, was truth safe for ever, then? Not so.  
 "Already had begun the silent work  
 "Whereby truth, deadened of its absolute blaze,  
 "Might need love's eye to pierce the over-stretched doubt.  
 "Teachers were busy, whispering 'All is true  
 "As the aged ones report; but youth can reach  
 "Where age gropes dimly, weak with stir and strain,  
 "And the full doctrine slumbers till to-day.'  
 "Thus, what the Roman's lowered spear was found,  
 "A bar to me who touched and handled truth,  
 "Now proved the glozing of some new shrewd tongue,  
 "This Ebion, this Cerinthus or their mates,  
 "Till imminent was the outcry 'Save our Christ!'  
 "Whereon I stated much of the Lord's life  
 "Forgotten or misdelivered, and let it work.  
 "Such work done, as it will be, what comes next?  
 "What do I hear say, or conceive men say,  
 "Was John at all, and did he say he saw?  
 "Assure us, ere we ask what he might see!  
 "Is this indeed a burthen for late days,  
 "And may I help to bear it with you all,  
 "Using my weakness which becomes your strength?  
 "For if a babe were born inside this grot,  
 "Grew to a boy here, heard us praise the sun,  
 "Yet had but yon sole glimmer in light's place,—  
 "One loving him and wishful he should learn,  
 "Would much rejoice himself was blinded first  
 "Month by month here, so made to understand  
 "How eyes, born darkling, apprehend amiss:  
 "I think I could explain to such a child  
 "There was more glow outside than gleams he caught,  
 "Ay, nor need urge 'I saw it, so believe!'  
 "It is a heavy burthen you shall bear  
 "In latter days, new lands, or old grown strange,  
 "Left without me, which must be very soon.  
 "What is the doubt, my brothers? Quick with it!  
 "I see you stand conversing, each new face,  
 "Either in fields, of yellow summer eyes,  
 "On islets yet unnamed amid the sea;  
 "Or pace for shelter 'neath a portico  
 "Out of the crowd in some enormous town  
 "Where now the larks sing in a solitude;  
 "Or muse upon blank heaps of stone and sand  
 "Idly conjectured to be Ephesus:  
 "And no one asks his fellow any more  
 "Where is the promise of His coming?' but  
 "Was he revealed in any of His lives,  
 "As Power, as Love, as Influencing Soul?  
 "Quick, for time presses, tell the whole mind out,  
 "And let us ask and answer and be saved!  
 "My book speaks on, because it cannot pass;  
 "One listens quietly, nor scoffs but pleads  
 "Here is a tale of things done ages since;  
 "What truth was ever told the second day?  
 "Wonders, that would prove doctrine, go for nought.  
 "Remains the doctrine, love; well, we must love,

- "And what we love most, power and love  
 in one,  
 "Let us acknowledge on the record here,  
 "Accepting these in Christ; must Christ  
 then be?  
 "Has He been? Did not we ourselves  
 make Him?  
 "Our mind receives but what it holds, no  
 more.  
 "First of the love, then; we acknowledge  
 Christ—  
 "A proof we comprehend His love, a proof  
 "We had such love already in ourselves,  
 "Knew first what else we should not  
 recognize.  
 "'Tis mere projection from man's inmost  
 mind,  
 "And, what he loves, thus falls reflected  
 back,  
 "Becomes accounted somewhat out of him;  
 "He throws it up in air, it drops down  
 earth's,  
 "With shape, name, story added, man's  
 old way.  
 "How prove you Christ came otherwise at  
 least?  
 "Next try the power: He made and rules  
 the world:  
 "Certes there is a world once made, now  
 ruled,  
 "Unless things have been ever as we see.  
 "Our sires declared a charioteer's yoked steeds  
 "Brought the sun up the east and down the  
 west,  
 "Which only of itself now rises, sets,  
 "As if a hand impelled it and a will,—  
 "Thus they long thought, they who had  
 will and hands:  
 "But the new question's whisper is distinct,  
 "Wherefore must all force needs be like  
 ourselves?  
 "We have the hands, the will; what made  
 and drives  
 "The sun is force, is law, is named, not  
 known,  
 "While will and love we do know; marks  
 of these,  
 "Eye-witnesses attest, so books declare—
- "As that, to punish or reward our race,  
 "The sun at undue times arose or set  
 "Or else stood still: what do not men affirm?  
 "But earth requires as urgently reward  
 "Or punishment to-day as years ago,  
 "And none expects the sun will interpose:  
 "Therefore it was mere passion and mistake,  
 "Or erring zeal for right, which changed  
 the truth.  
 "Go back, far, farther, to the birth of things;  
 "Ever the will, the intelligence, the love,  
 "Man's!—which he gives, supposing he but  
 finds,  
 "As late he gave head, body, hands and feet,  
 "To help these in what forms he called his  
 gods.  
 "First, Jove's brow, Juno's eyes were swept  
 away,  
 "But Jove's wrath, Juno's pride continued  
 long;  
 "As last, will, power, and love discarded  
 these,  
 "So law in turn discards power, love, and  
 will.  
 "What proveth God is otherwise at least?  
 "All else, projection from the mind of man!  
 "Nay, do not give me wine, for I am strong,  
 "But place my gospel where I put my hands.  
 "I say that man was made to grow, not stop;  
 "That help, he needed once, and needs no  
 more,  
 Having grown but an inch by, is withdrawn:  
 "For he hath new needs, and new helps to  
 these.  
 "This imports solely, man should mount on  
 each  
 New height in view; the help whereby he  
 mounts,  
 "The ladder-rung his foot has left, may fall,  
 "Since all things suffer change save God the  
 Truth.  
 Man apprehends Him newly at each stage:  
 "Whereat earth's ladder drops, its service  
 done;  
 And nothing shall prove twice what once  
 was proved.

- "You stick a garden-plot with ordered twigs  
 "To show inside lie germs of herbs unborn,  
 "And check the careless step would spoil  
 their birth;  
 "But when herbs wave, the guardian twigs  
 may go,  
 "Since should ye doubt of virtues, question  
 kinds,  
 "It is no longer for old twigs ye look,  
 "Which proved once underneath lay store  
 of seed,  
 "But to the herb's self, by what light ye boast,  
 "For what fruit's signs are. This book's  
 fruit is plain,  
 "Nor miracles need prove it any more.  
 "Doth the fruit show? Then miracles bade  
 'ware  
 "At first of root and stem, saved both till now  
 "From trampling ox, rough boar and wanton  
 goat.  
 "What? Was man made a wheelwork to  
 wind up,  
 "And be discharged, and straight wound up  
 anew?  
 "No!—grown, his growth lasts; taught, he  
 ne'er forgets:  
 "May learn a thousand things, not twice  
 the same.  
 "This might be pagan teaching: now hear  
 mine.  
 "I say, that as the babe, you feed awhile,  
 "Becomes a boy and fit to feed himself,  
 "So, minds at first must be spoon-fed with  
 truth:  
 "When they can eat, babe's-nurture is with-  
 drawn.  
 "I fed the babe whether it would or no:  
 "I bid the boy or feed himself or starve.  
 "I cried once, 'That ye may believe in Christ,  
 "Behold this blind man shall receive his  
 sight!'  
 "I cry now, 'Urgest thou, for I am shrewd  
 "And smile at stories how John's word could  
 cure—  
 "Repeat that miracle and take my faith?'  
 "I say, that miracle was duly wrought  
 "When, save for it, no faith was possible.  
 "Whether a change were wrought i' the  
 shows o' the world,  
 "Whether the change came from our minds  
 which see  
 "Ofshows o' the world so much as and no more  
 "Than God wills for His purpose,—(what do I  
 "See now, suppose you, there where you see  
 rock  
 "Round us?)—I know not; such was the  
 effect,  
 "So faith grew, making void more miracles  
 "Because too much: they would compel,  
 not help.  
 "I say, the acknowledgment of God in Christ  
 "Accepted by thy reason, solves for thee  
 "All questions in the earth and out of it,  
 "And has so far advanced thee to be wise.  
 "Wouldst thou unprove this to re-prove the  
 proved?  
 "In life's mere minute, with power to use  
 that proof,  
 "Leave knowledge and revert to how it  
 sprung?  
 "Thou hast it; use it and forthwith, or die!  
 "For I say, this is death and the sole death,  
 "When a man's loss comes to him from his  
 gain,  
 "Darkness from light, from knowledge  
 ignorance,  
 "And lack of love from love made manifest;  
 "A lamp's death when, replete with oil, it  
 chokes;  
 "A stomach's when, surcharged with food,  
 it starves.  
 "With ignorance was surety of a cure.  
 "When man, appalled at nature, questioned  
 first  
 "What if there lurk a might behind this  
 might?  
 "He needed satisfaction God could give,  
 "And did give, as ye have the written word:  
 "But when he finds might still redouble might,  
 "Yet asks, 'Since all is might, what use of  
 will?'  
 "—Will, the one source of might,—he being  
 man.

"With a man's will and a man's might, to teach  
 "In little how the two combine in large,  
 "That man has turned round on himself and  
 stands,  
 "Which in the course of nature is, to die.

"And when man questioned, 'What if there  
 be love

"Behind the will and might, as real as  
 they?'—

"He needed satisfaction God could give,

"And did give, as ye have the written word :

"But when, beholding that love everywhere,

"He reasons, 'Since such love is everywhere,

"And since ourselves can love and would  
 be loved,

"We ourselves make the love, and Christ  
 was not,—

"How shall ye help this man who knows  
 himself,

"That he must love and would be loved  
 again,

"Yet, owning his own love that proveth  
 Christ,

"Rejecteth Christ through very need of Him?

"The lamp o'erswims with oil, the stomach

"Loaded with nurture, and that man's soul  
 dies.

"If he rejoins, 'But this was all the while

"A trick; the fault was, first of all, in thee,

"Thy story of the places, names and dates,

"Where, when and how the ultimate truth  
 had rise,

"—Thy prior truth, at last discovered none,

"Whence now the second suffers detriment.

"What good of giving knowledge if,  
 because

"O' the manner of the gift, its profit fall?

"And why refuse what modicum of help

"Had stopped the after-doubt, impossible

"I the face of truth—truth absolute,  
 uniform?

"Why must I hit of this and miss of that,

"Distinguish just as I be weak or strong,

"And not ask of thee and have answer  
 prompt,

"Was this once, was it not once?—then  
 and now

"And evermore, plain truth from man to  
 man.

"Is John's procedure just the heathen  
 bard's?

"Put question of his famous play again

"How for the ephemerals' sake, Jove's fire  
 was filched,

"And carried in a cane and brought to  
 earth:

"The fact is in the fable, cry the wise,

"Mortals obtained the boon, so much is fact,

"Though fire be spirit and produced on  
 earth.

"As with the Titan's, so now with thy tale:

"Why breed in us perplexity, mistake,

"Nor tell the whole truth in the proper  
 words?"

"I answer, Have ye yet to argue out

"The very primal thesis, plainest law,

"—Man is not God but hath God's end to  
 serve,

"A master to obey, a course to take,

"Somewhat to cast off, somewhat to become?

"Grant this, then man must pass from old  
 to new,

"From vain to real, from mistake to fact,

"From what once seemed good, to what  
 now proves best.

"How could man have progression otherwise?

"Before the point was mooted 'What is  
 God?'

"No savage man inquired 'What am  
 myself?'

"Much less replied, 'First, last, and best of  
 things.'

"Man takes that title now if he believes

"Might can exist with neither will nor love,

"In God's case—what he names now  
 Nature's Law—

"While in himself he recognizes love:

"No less than might and will: and rightly  
 takes.

"Since if man prove the sole existent thing

"Where these combine, whatever their  
 degree.

- 'However weak the might or will or love,  
 'So they be found there, put in evidence,—  
 'He is as surely higher in the scale  
 'Than any might with neither love nor will,  
 'As life, apparent in the poorest midge,  
 '(When the faint dust-speck flits, ye guess  
 'Its wing?)  
 'Is marvellous beyond dead Atlas' self—  
 'Given to the nobler midge for resting-  
 'place!  
 'Thus, man proves best and highest—God,  
 'in fine,  
 'And thus the victory leads but to defeat,  
 'The gain to loss, best rise to the worst fall,  
 'His life becomes impossible, which is  
 'death.  
 'But if, appealing thence, he cower, avouch  
 'He is mere man, and in humility  
 'Neither may know God nor mistake  
 'himself;  
 'I point to the immediate consequence  
 'And say, by such confession straight he  
 'falls  
 'Into man's place, a thing nor God nor  
 'beast,  
 'Made to know that he can know and not  
 'more:  
 'Lower than God who knows all and can all,  
 'Higher than beasts which know and can  
 'so far  
 'As each beast's limit, perfect to an end,  
 'Nor conscious that they know, nor craving  
 'more;  
 'While man knows partly but conceives  
 'beside,  
 'Creeps ever on from fancies to the fact,  
 'And in this striving, this converting air  
 'Into a solid he may grasp and use,  
 'Finds progress, man's distinctive mark  
 'alone,  
 'Not God's, and not the beasts': God is,  
 'they are,  
 'Man partly is and wholly hopes to be.  
 'Such progress could no more attend his  
 'soul  
 'Were all its struggles after found at first  
 'And guesses changed to knowledge absolute,  
 'Than motion wait his body, were all else  
 'Than it the solid earth on every side,  
 'Where now through space he moves from  
 'rest to rest.  
 'Man, therefore, thus conditioned, must  
 'expect  
 'He could not, what he knows now, know  
 'at first;  
 'What he considers that he knows to-day,  
 'Come but to-morrow, he will find mis-  
 'known;  
 'Getting increase of knowledge, since he  
 'learns  
 'Because he lives, which is to be a man,  
 'Set to instruct himself by his past self:  
 'First, like the brute, obliged by facts to  
 'learn,  
 'Next, as man may, obliged by his own mind,  
 'Bent, habit, nature, knowledge turned to  
 'law.  
 'God's gift was that man should conceive of  
 'truth  
 'And yearn to gain it, catching at mistake,  
 'As midway help till he reach fact indeed.  
 'The statuary ere he mould a shape  
 'Boasts a like gift, the shape's idea, and next  
 'The aspiration to produce the same;  
 'So, taking clay, he calls his shape thereout,  
 'Cries ever 'Now I have the thing I see':  
 'Yet all the while goes changing what was  
 'wrought,  
 'From falsehood like the truth, to truth it-  
 'self.  
 'How were it had he cried 'I see no face,  
 'No breast, no feet i' the ineffectual clay'?  
 'Rather commend him that he clapped his  
 'hands,  
 'And laughed: 'It is my shape and lives  
 'again!  
 'Enjoyed the falsehood, touched it on to  
 'truth,  
 'Until yourselves applaud the flesh indeed  
 'In what is still flesh-imitating clay.  
 'Right in you, right in him, such way be  
 'man's!  
 'God only makes the live shape at a jet.  
 'Will ye renounce this pact of creatureship?  
 'The pattern on the Mount subsists no more.

"Seemed awhile, then returned to nothing-  
ness ;

"But copies, Moses strove to make thereby,  
"Serve still and are replaced as time requires :

"By these, make newest vessels, reach the  
type !

"If ye demur, this judgment on your head,  
"Never to reach the ultimate, angels' law,  
"Indulging every instinct of the soul  
"There where law, life, joy, impulse are one  
thing !

"Such is the burthen of the latest time.  
"I have survived to hear it with my ears,  
"Answer it with my lips : does this suffice ?  
"For if there be a further woe than such,  
"Wherein my brothers struggling need a  
hand,  
"So long as any pulse is left in mine,  
"May I be absent even longer yet,  
"Plucking the blind ones back from the  
abyss,  
"Though I should tarry a new hundred years !"

But he was dead ; 'twas about noon, the day  
Somewhat declining : we five buried him  
That eve, and then, dividing, went five ways,  
And I, disguised, returned to Ephesus.

By this, the cave's mouth must be filled with  
sand.

Valens is lost, I know not of his trace ;  
The Bactrian was but a wild childish man,  
And could not write nor speak, but only  
loved :

So, lest the memory of this go quite,  
Seeing that I to-morrow fight the beasts,  
I tell the same to Phœbas, whom believe !  
For many look again to find that face,  
Beloved John's to whom I ministered,  
Somewhere in life about the world ; they  
err :

Either mistaking what was darkly spoke  
At ending of his book, as he relates,  
Or misconceiving somewhat of this speech  
Scattered from mouth to mouth, as I suppose.  
Believe ye will not see him any more  
About the world with his divine regard !

VOL. I.

For all was as I say, and now the man  
Lies as he lay once, breast to breast with God.

[Cerinthus read and mused ; one added this :

"If Christ, as thou affirmest, be of men  
"Mere man, the first and best but nothing  
more,—

"Account Him, for reward of what He was,  
"Now and for ever, wretchedest of all.

"For see ; Himself conceived of life as love,

"Conceived of love as what must enter in,

"Fill up, make one with His each soul He  
loved :

"Thus much for man's joy, all men's joy for  
Him.

"Well, He is gone, thou sayest, to fit reward.

"But by this time are many souls set free,

"And very many still retained alive :

"Nay, should His coming be delayed awhile,

"Say, ten years longer (twelve years, some  
compute)

"See if, for every finger of thy hands,

"There be not found, that day the world  
shall end,

"Hundreds of souls, each holding by Christ's  
word

"That He will grow incorporate with all,

"With me as Pamphylax, with him as John,

"Groom for each bride ! Can a mere man  
do this ?

"Yet Christ saith, this He lived and died to do.

"Call Christ, then, the illimitable God,

"Or lost !"

But 'twas Cerinthus that is lost.]

# CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS ; OR, NATURAL THEOLOGY IN THE ISLAND.

"Thou thoughtest that I was altogether such  
a one as thyself."

[WILL sprawl, now that the heat of day is  
best,

Flat on his belly in the pit's much mire,

With elbows wide, fists clenched to prop his chin.

And, while he kicks both feet in the cool slush,  
And feels about his spine small eft-things  
course,

Run in and out each arm, and make him laugh :  
And while above his head a pompion-plant,  
Coasting the cave-top as a brow its eye,  
Creeps down to touch and tickle hair and beard,  
And now a flower drops with a bee inside,  
And now a fruit to snap at, catch and crunch,—  
He looks out o'er yon sea which sunbeams  
cross

And recross till they weave a spider-web  
(Meshes of fire, some great fish breaks at  
times)

And talks to his own self, howe'er he please,  
Touching that other, whom his dam called  
God.

Because to talk about Him, vexes—ha,  
Could He but know ! and time to vex is now,  
When talk is safer than in winter-time.  
Moreover Prosper and Miranda sleep  
In confidence he drudges at their task,  
And it is good to cheat the pair, and gibe,  
Letting the rank tongue blossom into speech.]

Setebos, Setebos, and Setebos !

'Thinketh, He dwelleth i' the cold o' the  
moon.

'Thinketh He made it, with the sun to match,  
But not the stars ; the stars came otherwise ;  
Only made clouds, winds, meteors, such as  
that :

Also this isle, what lives and grows thereon,  
And snaky sea which rounds and ends the

'Thinketh, it came of being ill at ease :  
He hated that He cannot change His cold,  
Nor cure its ache. 'Hath spied an icy fish  
That longed to 'scape the rock-stream where  
she lived,

And thaw herself within the lukewarm brine  
O' the lazy sea her stream thrusts far amid,  
A crystal spike 'twixt two warm walls of wave ;  
Only, she ever sickened, found repulse

At the other kind of water, not her life,  
(Green-dense and dim-delicious, bred o' the  
sun)

Flounced back from bliss she was not born  
to breathe,

And in her old bounds buried her despair,  
Hating and loving warmth alike ; so He,

'Thinketh, He made thereat the sun, this isle,  
Trees and the fowls here, beast and creeping  
thing.

Yon otter, sleek-wet, black, lithe as a leech ;  
Yon auk, one fire-eye in a ball of foam,  
That floats and feeds ; a certain badger brown  
He hath watched hunt with that slant white-  
wedge eye

By moonlight ; and the pie with the long  
tongue

That pricks deep into oakwards for a worm,  
And says a plain word when she finds her  
prize,

But will not eat the ants ; the ants themselves  
That build a wall of seeds and settled stalks  
About their hole—He made all these and  
more,

Made all we see, and us, in spite : how else ?  
He could not, Himself, make a second self  
To be His mate ; as well have made Himself:  
He would not make what he mislikes or  
slights,

An eyesore to Him, or not worth His pains :  
But did, in envy, listlessness or sport,  
Make what Himself would fain, in a manner,  
be—

Weaker in most points, stronger in a few,  
Worthy, and yet mere playthings all the  
while,

Things He admires and mocks too,—that  
is it.

Because, so brave, so better though they be,  
It nothing skills if He begin to plague.

Look now, I melt a gourd-fruit into mash,  
Add honeycomb and pods, I have perceived,  
Which bite like finches when they bill and  
kiss,—

Then, when froth rises bladdery, drink up all,  
Quick, quick, till maggots scamper through  
my brain ;

Last, throw me on my back i' the seeded  
thyme,

And wanton, wishing I were born a bird.  
Put case, unable to be what I wish,  
I yet could make a live bird out of clay :  
Would not I take clay, pinch my Caliban  
Able to fly?—for, there, see, he hath wings,  
And great comb like the hoopoe's to admire,  
And there, a sting to do his foes offence,  
There, and I will that he begin to live,  
Fly to yon rock-top, nip me off the horns  
Of grigs high up that make the merry din,  
Saucy through their veined wings, and mind  
me not.

In which feat, if his leg snapped, brittle clay,  
And he lay stupid-like,—why, I should laugh;  
And if he, spying me, should fall to weep,  
Beseech me to be good, repair his wrong,  
Bid his poor leg smart less or grow again,—  
Well, as the chance were, this might take or  
else

Not take my fancy : I might hear his cry,  
And give the mankin three sound legs for  
one,

Or pluck the other off, leave him like an egg,  
And lessoned he was mine and merely  
clay.

Were this no pleasure, lying in the thyme,  
Drinking the mash, with brain become alive,  
Making and marring clay at will? So He.

'Thinketh, such shows nor right nor wrong  
in Him,

Nor kind, nor cruel : He is strong and Lord.  
'Am strong myself compared to yonder crabs  
That march now from the mountain to the sea ;  
'Let twenty pass, and stone the twenty-first,  
Loving not, hating not, just choosing so.

'Say, the first straggler that boasts purple  
spots

Shall join the file, one pincer twisted off ;  
'Say, this bruised fellow shall receive a worm,  
And two worms he whose nippers end in red ;  
As it likes me each time, I do : so He.

Well then, 'supposeth He is good i' the main,  
Placable if His mind and ways were guessed,  
But rougher than His handiwork, be sure !

Oh, He hath made things worthier than  
Himself,

And envieth that, so helped, such things do  
more

Than He who made them ! What consoles  
but this?

That they, unless through Him, do nought  
at all,

And must submit : what other use in things ?  
'Hath cut a pipe of pithless elder-joint

That, blown through, gives exact the scream  
o' the jay

When from her wing you twitch the feathers  
blue :

Sound this, and little birds that hate the jay  
Flock within' stone's throw, glad their foe is  
hurt :

Put case such pipe could prattle and boast  
forsooth

"I catch the birds, I am the crafty thing,

"I make the cry my maker cannot make

"With his great round mouth ; he must blow  
through mine !"

Would not I smash it with my foot ? So He.

But wherefore rough, why cold and ill at  
ease?

Aha, that is a question ! Ask, for that,  
What knows,—the something over Setebos  
That made Him, or He, may be, found and  
fought,

Worsted, drove off and did to nothing, per-  
chance.

There may be something quiet o'er His head,  
Out of His reach, that feels nor joy nor grief,  
Since both derive from weakness in some way.  
I joy because the quails come ; would not joy  
Could I bring quails here when I have a  
mind :

This Quiet, all it hath a mind to, doth.

'Esteemeth stars the outposts of its couch,  
But never spends much thought nor care that  
way.

It may look up, work up,—the worse for those  
It works on ! 'Careth but for Setebos

The many-handed as a cuttle-fish,  
Who, making Himself feared through what  
He does,



Looks up, first, and perceives he cannot soar  
To what is quiet and hath happy life ;  
Next looks down here, and out of very spite  
Makes this a bauble-world to ape yon real,  
These good things to match those as hips do  
grapes.

'Tis solace making baubles, ay, and sport.  
Himself peeped late, eyed Prosper at his  
books

Careless and lofty, lord now of the isle :  
Vexed, 'stitched a book of broad leaves,  
arrow-shaped,

Wrote thereon, he knows what, prodigious  
words ;

Has peeled a wand and called it by a name ;  
Weareth at whiles for an enchanter's robe

The eyed skin of a supple oncelot ;  
And hath an ounce sleeker than youngling  
mole,

A four-legged serpent he makes cower and  
couch,

Now snarl, now hold its breath and mind  
his eye,

And saith she is Miranda and my wife :  
'Keeps for his Ariel a tall pouch-bill crane  
He bids go wade for fish and straight dis-  
gorge ;

Also a sea-beast, lumpish, which he snared,  
Blinded the eyes of, and brought somewhat  
tame,

And split its toe-webs, and now pens the  
'drudge

In a hole o' the rock and calls him Caliban ;  
A bitter heart that bides its time and bites.

'Plays thus at being Prosper in a way,  
Taketoh his mirth with make-believes : so He.

His dam held that the Quiet made all things  
Which Setebos vexed only : 'holds not so.

Who made them weak, meant weakness He  
might vex.

I had He meant other, while His hand was in,  
Why not make horny eyes no thorn could  
prick,

Or plate my scalp with bone against the snow,  
Or overscale my flesh 'neath joint and joint,  
Like an orc's armour? Ay, —so spoil His sport!  
He is the One now : only He doth all.

'Saith, He may like, perchance, what profits  
Him.

Ay, himself loves what does him good ; but  
why?

'Gets good no otherwise. This blinded beast  
Loves whoso places flesh-meat on his nose,  
But, had he eyes, would want no help, but  
hate

Or love, just as it liked him : He hath eyes.  
Also it pleaseth Setebos to work,  
Use all His hands, and exercise much craft,  
By no means for the love of what is worked.

'Tasteth, himself, no finer good i' the world  
When all goes right, in this safe summer-time,  
And he wants little, hungers, aches not much,  
Than trying what to do with wit and strength.

'Falls to make something : 'piled yon pile of  
turfs,

And squared and stuck there squares of soft  
white chalk,

And, with a fish-tooth, scratched a moon on  
each,

And set up endwise certain spikes of tree,  
And crowned the whole with a sloth's skull  
a-top,

Found dead i' the woods, too hard for one  
to kill.

No use at all i' the work, for work's sole sake ;  
'Shall some day knock it down again : so He.

'Saith He is terrible : watch His feats in  
proof!

One hurricane will spoil six good months'  
hope.

He hath a spite against me, that I know,  
Just as He favours Prosper, who knows why?  
So it is, all the same, as well I find.

'Wove wattles half the winter, fenced them  
firm

With stone and stake to stop she-tortoises  
Crawling to lay their eggs here : well, one  
wave,

Feeling the foot of Him upon its neck, . . .  
Gaped as a snake does, lolled out its large  
tongue,

And licked the whole labour flat : so much  
for spite.

'Saw a ball flame down late (yonder it lies)

Where, half an hour before, I slept i' the shade :

Often they scatter sparkles : there is force !

'Dug up a newt He may have envied once

And turned to stone, shut up inside a stone.

Please Him and hinder this ?—What Prosper does ?

Aha, if He would tell me how ! Not He !

There is the sport : discover how or die !

All need not die, for of the things o' the isle

Some flee afar, some dive, some run up trees ;

Those at His mercy,—why, they please Him most

When . . . when . . . well, never try the same way twice !

Repeat what act has pleased, He may grow wroth.

You must not know His ways, and play Him off,

Sure of the issue. 'Doth the like himself :

'Spareth a squirrel that it nothing fears

But steals the nut from underneath my thumb,

And when I threat, bites stoutly in defence :

'Spareth an urchin that contrariwise,

Curls up into a ball, pretending death

For fright at my approach : the two ways please.

But what would move my choler more than this,

That either creature counted on its life

To-morrow and next day and all days to come,

Saying, forsooth, in the inmost of its heart,

"Because he did so yesterday with me,

"And otherwise with such another brute,

"So must he do henceforth and always."—  
Ay ?

Would teach the reasoning couple what  
"must" means !

'Doth as he likes, or wherefore Lord ? So He.

'Conceiveth all things will continue thus,

And we shall have to live in fear of Him

So long as He lives, keeps His strength : no  
change,

If He have done His best, make no new  
world

To please Him more, so leave off watching  
this,—

If He surprise not even the Quiet's self  
Some strange day,—or, suppose, grow into :  
As grubs grow butterflies : else, here are we,  
And there is He, and nowhere help at all.

'Believeth with the life, the pain shall stop.  
His dam held different, that after death  
He both plagued enemies and feasted friends  
Idly ! He doth His worst in this our life,  
Giving just respite lest we die through pain,  
Saving last pain for worst,—with which, an  
end.

Meanwhile, the best way to escape His ire  
Is, not to seem too happy. 'Sees, himself,  
Yonder two flies, with purple films and pink,  
Bask on the pompon-bell above : kills both.  
'Sees two black painful beetles roll their ball  
On head and tail as if to save their lives :  
Moves them the stick away they strive to  
clear.

Even so, 'would have Him misconceive,  
suppose

This Caliban strives hard and ails no less,  
And always, above all else, envies Him ;

Wherefore he mainly dances on dark nights,  
Moans in the sun, gets under holes to

laugh,  
And never speaks his mind save housed as  
now :

Outside, 'groans, curses. If He caught me  
here,

O'erheard this speech, and asked "What  
chucklest at ?"

'Would, to appease Him, cut a finger off,  
Or of my three kid yearlings burn the best,

Or let the toothsome apples rot on tree,  
Or push my tame beast for the orc to taste :

While myself lit a fire, and made a song  
And sung it, "*What I hate, be consecrate*

*"To celebrate Thee and Thy state, no mate :*  
*"For Thee ; what see for envy in poor me ?"*

Hoping the while, since evils sometimes  
mend,

Warts rub away and sores are cured with  
slime,

That some strange day, will either the Quiet  
catch

And conquer Setebos, or likelier He  
Decrépit may doze, doze, as good as die.

[What, what? A curtain o'er the world at  
once!

Crickets stop hissing; not a bird—or, yes,  
There scuds His raven that has told Him all!  
It was fool's play, this prattling! Ha! The  
wind

Shoulders the pillared dust, death's house o'  
the move,

And fast invading fires begin! White  
blaze—

A tree's head snaps—and there, there, there,  
there, there,

His thunder follows! Fool to gibe at Him!  
Lo! 'Lieth flat and loveth Setebos!

'Maketh his teeth meet through his upper lip,  
Will let those quails fly, will not eat this month  
One little mess of whelks, so he may 'scape!]

### CONFESSIONS.

WHAT is lie buzzing in my ears?

"Now that I come to die,

"Do I view the world as a vale of tears?"

Ah, reverend sir, not I!

#### II.

What I viewed there once, what I view again

Where the physic bottles stand

On the table's edge,—is a suburb lane,

With a wall to my bedside hand.

#### III.

That lane sloped, much as the bottles do,

From a house you could descry

O'er the garden-wall: is the curtain blue

Or green to a healthy eye?

To mine, it serves for the old June weather

Blue above lane and wall;

And that farthest bottle labelled "Ether":

Is the house o'ertopping all.

At a terrace, somewhere near the stopper,

There watched for me, one June,

A girl: I know, sir, it's improper,

My poor mind's out of tune.

Only, there was a way . . . you crept

Close by the side, to dodge

Eyes in the house, two eyes except:

They styled their house "The Lodge."

#### VII.

What right had a lounge up their lane?

But, by creeping very close,

With the good wall's help,—their eyes might  
strain

And stretch themselves to Oes,

Yet never catch her and me together,

As she left the attic, there,

By the rim of the bottle labelled "Ether,"

And stole from stair to stair,

#### IX.

And stood by the rose-wreathed gate.

Alas,

We loved, sir—used to meet:

How sad and bad and mad it was—

But then, how it was sweet!

### MAY AND DEATH.

#### I.

I WISH that when you died last May,

Charles, there had died along with you

Three parts of spring's delightful things;

Ay, and, for me, the fourth part too,

A foolish thought, and worse, perhaps!

There must be many a pair of friends

Who, arm in arm, deserve the warm

Moon-births and the long evening-ends.

## III.

So, for their sake, be May still May !  
 Let their new time, as mine of old,  
 Do all it did for me : I bid  
 Sweet sights and sounds throng manifold.

## IV.

Only, one little sight, one plant,  
 Woods have in May, that starts up green.  
 Save a sole streak which, so to speak,  
 Is spring's blood, spilt its leaves between,—

That, they might spare ; a certain wood  
 Might miss the plant ; their loss were small :  
 But I,—where'er the leaf grows there,  
 Its drop comes from my heart, that's all.

## DEAF AND DUMB.

A GROUP BY WOOLNER.

ONLY the prism's obstruction shows aright  
 The secret of a sunbeam, breaks its light  
 Into the jewelled bow from blankest white ;  
 So may a glory from defect arise :  
 Only by Deafness may the vexed Love wreak  
 Its insuppressive sense on brow and cheek,  
 Only by Dumbness adequately speak  
 As favoured mouth could never, through  
 the eyes.

## PROSPICE.

FEAR death?—to feel the fog in my throat,  
 The mist in my face,  
 When the snows begin, and the blasts denote  
 I am nearing the place,  
 The power of the night, the press of the storm,  
 The post of the foe ;  
 Where he stands, the Arch Fear in a visible  
 form,  
 Yet the strong man must go :  
 For the journey is done and the summit  
 attained,  
 And the barriers fall,

Though a battle's to fight ere the guerdon be  
 gained,

The reward of it all.

I was ever a fighter, so—  
 one fight more,  
 The best and the last !

I would hate that death bandaged my eyes,  
 and forbore,

And bade me creep past.

No ! let me taste the whole of it, fare like  
 my peers

The heroes of old,

Bear the brunt, in a minute pay glad life's arrears  
 Of pain, darkness and cold.

For sudden the worst turns the best to the brave,  
 The black minute's at end,

And the elements' rage, the fiend-voices that  
 rave,

Shall dwindle, shall blend,

Shall change, shall become first a peace out  
 of pain,

Then a light, then thy breast,

O thou soul of my soul ! I shall clasp thee  
 again,

And with God be the rest !

## EURYDICE TO ORPHEUS.

A PICTURE BY LEIGHTON.

BUT give them me, the mouth, the eyes, the  
 brow !

Let them once more absorb me ! One look now  
 Will lap me round for ever, not to pass.

Out of its light, though darkness lie beyond—  
 Hold me but safe again within the bond

Of one immortal look ! All woe that was,  
 Forgotten, and all terror that may be,

Defied,—no past is mine, no future : look at  
 me !

## YOUTH AND ART.

## I.

It once might have been, once only :

We lodged in a street together,

You, a sparrow on the housetop lonely,

I, a lone she-bird of his feather.

## II.

Your trade was with sticks and clay,  
 You thumbed, thrust, patted and polished,  
 Then laughed "They will see some day  
 "Smith made, and Gibson demolished."

Why did not you pinch a flower  
 In a pellet of clay and fling it?  
 Why did not I put a power  
 Of thanks in a look, or sing it?

## III.

My business was song, song, song;  
 I chirped, cheeped, trilled and twittered,  
 "Kate Brown's on the boards ere long,  
 "And Grisi's existence embittered!"

I did look, sharp as a lynx,  
 (And yet the memory rankles)  
 When models arrived, some minx  
 Tripped up-stairs, she and her ankles.

## IV.

I earned no more by a warble  
 Than you by a sketch in plaster;  
 You wanted a piece of marble,  
 I needed a music-master.

But I think I gave you as good!  
 "That foreign fellow,—who can know  
 "How she pays, in a playful mood,  
 "For his tuning her that piano?"

## XIII.

We studied hard in our styles,  
 Chipped each at a crust like Hindoos,  
 For air looked out on the tiles,  
 For fun watched each other's windows.

Could you say so, and never say  
 "Suppose we join hands and fortunes,  
 "And I fetch her from over the way.  
 "Her, piano, and long tunes and short  
 tunes?"

## VI.

You lounged, like a boy of the South,  
 Cap and blouse—nay, a bit of beard too;  
 Or you got it, rubbing your mouth  
 With fingers the clay adhered to.

XIV.  
 No, no: you would not be rash,  
 Nor I rasher and something over:  
 You've to settle yet Gibson's hash,  
 And Grisi yet lives in clover.

## XV.

And I—soon managed to find  
 Weak points in the flower-fence facing,  
 Was forced to put up a blind  
 And be safe in my corset-lacing.

But you meet the Prince at the Board,  
 I'm queen myself at *bals-paré*,  
 I've married a rich old lord,  
 And you're dubbed knight and an R.A.

## VIII.

No harm! It was not my fault  
 If you never turned your eye's tail up  
 As I shook upon E *in alt*,  
 Or ran the chromatic scale up:

XVI.  
 Each life unfulfilled, you see;  
 It hangs still, patchy and scrappy:  
 We have not sighed deep, laughed free,  
 Starved, feasted, despaired,—been happy.

## IX.

For spring bade the sparrows pair,  
 And the boys and girls gave guesses,  
 And stalls in our street looked rare  
 With bulrush and watercresses.

And nobody calls you a dunce,  
 And people suppose me clever:  
 This could but have happened once,  
 And we missed it, lost it for ever.

## A FACE.

If one could have that little head of hers  
Painted upon a background of pale gold,  
Such as the Tuscan's early art prefers!

No shade encroaching on the matchless  
mould

Of those two lips, which should be opening  
soft

In the pure profile; not as when she laughs,  
For that spoils all: but rather as if aloft

Yon hyacinth, she loves so, leaned its  
staff's

Burthen of honey-coloured buds to kiss  
And capture 'twixt the lips apart for this.

Then her lithe neck, three fingers might sur-  
round,

How it should waver on the pale gold ground  
Up to the fruit-shaped, perfect chin it lifts!

I know, Correggio loves to mass, in rifts  
Of heaven, his angel faces, orb on orb

Breaking its outline, burning shades absorb:  
But these are only massed there, I should

think,  
Waiting to see some wonder momentarily

Grow out, stand full, fade slow against the  
sky

(That's the pale ground you'd see this  
sweet face by),

All heaven, meanwhile, condensed into  
one eye

Which fears to lose the wonder, should it  
wink.

## A LIKENESS.

SOME people hang portraits up  
In a room where they dine or sup:

And the wife clinks tea-things under,  
And her cousin, he stirs his cup,

Asks, "Who was the lady, I wonder?"  
"Tis a daub John bought at a sale,"

Quoth the wife,—looks black as thunder:  
"What a shade beneath her nose!"

"Snuff-taking, I suppose,—"  
Adds the cousin, while John's corns ail.

Or else, there's no wife in the case,  
But the portrait's queen of the place,  
Alone 'mid the other spoils

Of youth,—masks, gloves and foils,  
And pipe-sticks, rose, cherry-tree, jasmine,

And the long whip, the tandem-lasher,  
And the cast from a fist ("not, alas!

mine,  
"But my master's, the Tipton Slasher"),

And the cards where pistol-balls mark ace,  
And a satin shoe used for cigar-case,

And the chamois-horns ("shot in the Cha-  
blais")

And prints—Rarey drumming on Cruiser,  
And Sayers, our champion, the bruiser,

And the little edition of Rabelais:  
Where a friend, with both hands in his

pockets,  
May saunter up close to examine it,

And remark a good deal of Jane Lamb  
in it,

"But the eyes are half out of their sockets;  
"That hair's not so bad, where the gloss is,

"But they've made the girl's nose a pro-  
boscis:

"Jane Lamb, that we danced with at Vichy!  
"What, is not she Jane? Then, who is she?"

All that I own is a print,  
An etching, a mezzotint;

'Tis a study, a fancy, a fiction,  
Yet a fact (take my conviction)

Because it has more than a hint  
Of a certain face, I never

Saw elsewhere touch or trace of  
In women I've seen the face of:

Just an etching, and, so far, clever.

I keep my prints, an imbroglio,  
Fifty in one portfolio.

When somebody tries my claret,  
We turn round chairs to the fire,

Chirp over days in a garret,  
Chuckle o'er increase of salary,

Taste the good fruits of our leisure,  
Talk about pencil and lyre,

And the National Portrait Gallery;  
Then I exhibit my treasure.

After we've turned over twenty,  
 And the debt of wonder my crony owes  
 Is paid to my Marc Antonios,<sup>1</sup>  
 He stops me—" *Festina lente!*  
 "What's that sweet thing there, the etching?"  
 How my waistcoat-strings want stretching,  
 How my cheeks grow red as tomatos,  
 How my heart leaps! But hearts, after  
 leaps, ache.

"By the by, you must take, for a keepsake,  
 "That other, you praised, of Volpato's."<sup>1</sup>  
 The fool! would he try a flight further and  
 say—  
 He never saw, never before to-day,  
 What was able to take his breath away,  
 A face to lose youth for, to occupy age  
 With the dream of, meet death with,—why,  
 I'll not engage  
 But that, half in a rapture and half in a rage,  
 I should toss him the thing's self—" 'Tis only  
 a duplicate,  
 "A thing of no value! Take it, I supplicate!"

#### MR. SLUDGE, "THE MEDIUM."

Now, don't, sir! Don't expose me! Just  
 this once!  
 This was the first and only time, I'll swear,—  
 Look at me,—see, I kneel,—the only time,  
 I swear, I ever cheated,—yes, by the soul  
 Of Her who hears—(your sainted mother,  
 sir!)  
 All, except this last accident, was truth—  
 This little kind of slip!—and even this,  
 It was your own wine, sir, the good champagne,  
 (I took it for Catawba, you're so kind)  
 Which put the folly in my head!

"Get up?"

You still inflict on me that terrible face?  
 You show no mercy?—Not for Her dear sake,  
 The sainted spirit's, whose soft breath even  
 now

<sup>1</sup> Engravers, held in repute by collectors.

Blows on my cheek—(don't you feel some-  
 thing, sir?)  
 You'll tell?

Go tell, then! Who the devil cares  
 What such a rowdy chooses to . . .  
 Aie—aie—aie!  
 Please, sir! your thumbs are through my  
 windpipe, sir!  
 Ch—ch!

Well, sir, I hope you've done it now!  
 Oh Lord! I little thought, sir, yesterday,  
 When your departed mother spoke those  
 words  
 Of peace through me, and moved you, sir,  
 so much,  
 You gave me—(very kind it was of you)  
 These shirt-studs—(better take them back  
 again,  
 Please, sir)—yes, little did I think so soon  
 A trifle of trick, all through a glass too much  
 Of his own champagne, would change my  
 best of friends  
 Into an angry gentleman!

Though, 'twas wrong.  
 I don't contest the point; your anger's just:  
 Whatever put such folly in my head,  
 I know 'twas wicked of me. There's a thick  
 Dusk undeveloped spirit (I've observed)  
 Owes me a grudge—a negro's, I should say,  
 Or else an Irish emigrant's; yourself  
 Explained the case so well last Sunday, sir,  
 When we had summoned Franklin to clear up  
 A point about those shares i' the telegraph:  
 Ay, and he swore . . . or might it be Tom  
 Paine?  
 Thumping the table close by where I crouched,  
 He'd do me soon a mischief: that's come  
 true!  
 Why, now your face clears! I was sure it  
 would!  
 Then, this one time . . . don't take your  
 hand away,  
 Through yours I surely kiss your mother's  
 hand . . .  
 You'll promise to forgive me?—or, at least,

Tell nobody of this? Consider, sir!  
What harm can mercy do? Would but the  
shade

Of the venerable dead-one just vouchsafe  
A rap or tip! What bit of paper's here?  
Suppose we take a pencil, let her write,  
Make the least sign, she urges on her child  
Forgiveness? There now! Eh? Oh! 'Twas  
your foot,  
And not a natural creak, sir?

Answer, then!

Once, twice, thrice . . . see, I'm waiting to  
say "thrice!"

All to no use? No sort of hope for me?  
It's all to post to Greeley's newspaper?

What? If I told you all about the tricks?  
Upon my soul!—the whole truth, and nought  
else,

And how there's been some falsehood—for  
your part,

Will you engage to pay my passage out,  
And hold your tongue until I'm safe on  
board?

England's the place, not Boston—no offence!  
I see what makes you hesitate: don't fear!  
I mean to change my trade and cheat no more,  
Yes, this time really it's upon my soul!  
Be my salvation!—under Heaven, of course.  
I'll tell some queer things. Sixty Vs must do.  
A trifle, though, to start with! We'll refer  
The question to this table?

How you're changed!

Then split the difference; thirty more, we'll  
say.

Ay, but you leave my presents! Else I'll  
swear

'Twas all through those: you wanted yours  
again,

So, picked a quarrel with me, to get them  
back!

Tread on a worm, it turns, sir! If I turn,  
Your fault! 'Tis you'll have forced me!  
Who's obliged

To give up life yet try no self-defence?  
At all events, I'll run the risk. Eh?

Done!

May I sit, sir? This dear old table, now!  
Please, sir, a parting egg-nogg and cigar!

I've been so happy with you! Nice stuffed  
chairs,

And sympathetic sideboards; what an end  
To all the instructive evenings! (It's alright.)

Well, nothing lasts, as Bacon came and said.  
Here goes,—but keep your temper, or I'll  
scream!

Fol-lol-the-rido-liddle-iddle-ol!

You see, sir, it's your own fault more than  
mine;

It's all your fault, you curious gentlefolk!  
You're prigs,—excuse me,—like to look so  
spry,

So clever, while you cling by half a claw  
To the perch whereon you puff yourselves at  
roost,

Such piece of self-conceit as serves for perch  
Because you chose it, so it must be safe.

Oh, otherwise you're sharp enough! You  
spy

Who slips, who slides, who holds by help of  
wing,

Wanting real foothold,—who can't keep up-  
right

On the other perch, your neighbour chose,  
not you:

There's no outwitting you respecting him!  
For instance, men love money—that, you  
know

And what men do to gain it: well, suppose  
A poor lad, say a help's son in your house,

Listening at keyholes, hears the company  
Talk grand of dollars, V-notes, and so forth,

How hard they are to get, how good to hold,  
How much they buy,—if, suddenly, in pops  
he—

"I've got a V-note!"—what do you say to  
him?

What's your first word which follows your last  
kick?

"Where did you steal it, rascal?" That's  
because

He finds you, fain would fool you, off your  
perch,



Not on the special piece of nonsense, sir,  
 Elected your parade-ground : let him try  
 Lies to the end of the list,—“ He picked it up,  
 “ His cousin died and left it him by will,  
 “ The President flung it to him, riding by,  
 “ An actress trucked it for a curl of his hair,  
 “ He dreamed of luck and found his shoe  
   enriched,  
 “ He dug up clay, and out of clay made  
   gold ”—

How would you treat such possibilities?  
 Would not you, prompt, investigate the case  
 With cow-hide? “ Lies, lies, lies,” you’d  
   shout : and why?

Which of the stories might not prove mere  
   truth?

This last, perhaps, that clay was turned to  
   coin!

Let’s see, now, give him me to speak for him!  
 How many of your rare philosophers,  
 In plaguy books I’ve had to dip into,  
 Believed gold could be made thus, saw it  
   made

And made it? Oh, with such philosophers  
 You’re on your best behaviour! While the  
   lad—

With him, in a trice, you settle likelihoods,  
 Nor doubt a moment how he got his prize :  
 In his case, you hear, judge and execute,  
 All in a breath : so would most men of sense.

But let the same lad hear you talk as grand  
 At the same keyhole, you and company,  
 Of signs and wonders, the invisible world ;  
 How wisdom scouts our vulgar unbelief  
 More than our vulgarest credulity ;  
 How good men have desired to see a ghost,  
 What Johnson used to say, what Wesley did,  
 Mother Goose thought, and fiddle-diddle-  
   dee :—

If he break in with, “ Sir, I saw a ghost!”  
 Ah, the ways change! He finds you perched  
   and prim ;

It’s a conceit of yours that ghosts may be :  
 There’s no talk now of cow-hide. “ Tell it  
   out!

“ Don’t fear us! Take your time and re-  
   collect!

“ Sit down first : try a glass of wine, my boy!

“ And, David, (is not that your Christian  
   name?)

“ Of all things, should this happen twice—  
   it may—

“ Be sure, while fresh in mind, you let us  
   know!”

Does the boy blunder, blurt out this, blab that,  
 Break down in the other, as beginners will?  
 All’s candour, all’s considerateness — “ No  
   haste!

“ Pause and collect yourself! We under-  
   stand!

“ That’s the bad memory, or the natural shock,  
 “ Or the unexplained *phenomena*!”

Egad,

The boy takes heart of grace ; finds, never  
   fear,

The readiest way to ope your own heart wide.  
 Show—what I call your peacock-perch, pet  
   post

To strut, and spread the tail, and squawk upon!  
 “ Just as you thought, much as you might  
   expect!

“ There be more things in heaven and earth,  
   Horatio,” . . .

And so on. Shall not David take the hint,  
 Grow bolder, stroke you down at quickened  
   rate?

If he ruffle a feather, it’s “ Gently, patiently!  
 “ Manifestations are so weak at first!

“ Doubting, moreover, kills them, cuts all  
   short,

“ Cures with a vengeance!”

There, sir, that’s your style!

You and your boy—such pains bestowed on  
   him,

Or any headpiece of the average worth,  
 To teach, say, Greek, would perfect him apace,  
 Make him a Person (“ Porson?” thank you,  
   sir!)

Much more, proficient in the art of lies.  
 You never leave the lesson! Fire a light,  
 Catch you permitting it to die! You’ve friends;  
 There’s no withholding knowledge,—least  
   from those

Apt to look elsewhere for their souls' supply :  
 Why should not you parade your lawful prize?  
 Who finds a picture, digs a medal up,  
 Hits on a first edition,—he henceforth  
 Gives it his name, grows notable : how much  
 more,  
 Who ferrets out a "medium"? "David's  
 yours,  
 "You highly-favoured man? Then, pity souls  
 "Less privileged! Allow us share your luck!"  
 So, David holds the circle, rules the roast,  
 Narrates the vision, peeps in the glass ball,  
 Sets-to the spirit-writing, hears the raps,  
 As the case may be.

Now mark! To be precise—  
 Though I say, "lies" all these, at this first  
 stage,

'Tis just for science' sake : I call such grubs  
 By the name of what they'll turn to, dragonflies.  
 Strictly, it's what good people style untruth ;  
 But yet, so far, not quite the full-grown thing :  
 It's fancying, fable-making, nonsense-work—  
 What never meant to be so very bad—  
 The knack of story-telling, brightening up  
 Each dull old bit of fact that drops its shine.  
 One does see somewhat when one shuts one's  
 eyes,

If only spots and streaks ; tables do tip  
 In the oddest way of themselves : and pens,  
 good Lord,

Who knows if you drive them or they drive you?  
 'Tis but a foot in the water and out again ;  
 Not that duck-under which decides your dive.  
 Note this, for it's important : listen why.

I'll prove, you push on David till he dives  
 And ends the shivering. Here's your circle,  
 now :

Two-thirds of them, with heads like you their  
 host,

Turn up their eyes, and cry, as you expect,  
 "Lord, who'd have thought it!" But  
 there's always one

Looks wise, compassionately smiles, submits  
 "Of your veracity no kind of doubt,

"But—do you feel so certain of that boy's?  
 "Really, I wonder! I confess myself

"More chary of my faith!" That's galling,  
 sir!

What, he the investigator, he the sage,  
 When all's done? Then, you just have shut  
 your eyes,

Opened your mouth, and gulped down David  
 whole,

You! Terrible were such catastrophe!  
 So, evidence is redoubled, doubled again,  
 And doubled besides; once more, "He  
 heard, we heard,

"You and they heard, your mother and your  
 wife,

"Your children and the stranger in your gates :  
 "Did they or did they not?" So much for him,  
 The black sheep, guest without the wedding-  
 garb,

The doubting Thomas! Now's your turn to  
 crow :

"He's kind to think you such a fool : Sludge  
 cheats?

"Leave you alone to take precautions!"

Straight

The rest join chorus. Thomas stands abashed,  
 Sips silent some such beverage as this,  
 Considers if it be harder, shutting eyes  
 And gulping David in good fellowship,  
 Than going elsewhere, getting, in exchange,  
 With no egg-nogg to lubricate the food,  
 Some just as tough a morsel. "Over the way,  
 I hold Captain Sparks his court : is it better  
 there?

Have not you hunting-stories, scalping-scenes,  
 And Mexican War exploits to swallow plump  
 If you'd be free o' the stove-side, rocking-chair,  
 And trio of affable daughters?

Doubt succumbs!

Victory! All your circle's yours again!  
 Out of the clubbing of submissive wits,  
 David's performance rounds, each chink gets  
 patched,

Every protrusion of a point's filed fine,  
 All's fit to set a-rolling round the world,  
 And then return to David finally,  
 Lies seven-feet thick about his first half-inch.  
 Here's a choice birth o' the supernatural,  
 Poor David's pledged to! You've employed  
 no tool

That laws exclaim at, save the devil's own,  
Yet screwed him into henceforth gulling you  
To the top o' your bent,—all out of one half-lie!

You hold, if there's one half or a hundredth part  
Of a lie, that's his fault,—his be the penalty!  
I dare say! You'd prove firmer in his place?  
You'd find the courage,—that first flurry over,  
That mild bit of romancing-work at end,—  
To interpose with "It gets serious, this;

"Must stop here. Sir, I saw no ghost at all.  
"Inform your friends I made . . . well,  
fools of them,

"And found you ready-made. I've lived in  
clover

"These three weeks: take it out in kicks  
of me!"

I doubt it. Ask your conscience! Let me  
know,

Twelve months hence, with how few em-  
bellishments

You've told almighty Boston of this passage  
Of arms between us, your first taste o' the  
foil

From Sludge who could not fence, sir!  
Sludge, your boy!

I lied, sir,—there! I got up from my gorge  
On offal in the gutter, and preferred.

Your canvas-backs: I took their carver's size,  
Measured his modicum of intelligence,

Tickled him on the cockles of his heart  
With a raven feather, and next week found

myself  
Sweet and clean, dining daintily, dizen'd

smart,  
Set on a stool buttressed by ladies' knees,  
Every soft smiler calling me her pet,

Encouraging my story to uncoil  
And creep out from its hole, inch after inch,

"How last night, I no sooner snug in bed,  
"Tucked up, just as they left me,—than

came raps!

"While a light whisked" . . . "Shaped  
somewhat like a star?"

"Well, like some sort of stars, ma'am."—  
"So we thought!

"And any voice? Not yet? Try hard,  
next time,

"If you can't hear a voice; we think you  
may:

"At least, the Pennsylvanian 'mediums'  
did."

Oh, next time comes the voice! "Just as  
we hoped!"

Are not the hoppers proud now, pleased,  
profuse

O' the natural acknowledgment?

Of course!

So, off we push, illy-oh-yo, trim the boat,  
On we sweep with a cataract ahead,

We're midway to the Horseshoe: stop, who  
can,

The dance of bubbles gay about our prow!  
Experiences become worth waiting for,

Spirits now speak up, tell their inmost mind,  
And compliment the "medium" properly,

Concern themselves about his Sunday coat,  
See rings on his hand with pleasure. Ask

yourself  
How you'd receive a course of treats like  
these!

Why, take the quietest hack and stall him up,  
Cram him with corn a month, then out with

him  
Among his mates on a bright April morn,  
With the turf to tread; see if you find or no

A caper in him, if he bucks or bolts!  
Much more a youth whose fancies sprout as

rank  
As toadstool-clump from melon-bed. 'Tis

soon,  
"Sirrah, you spirit, come, go, fetch and carry,  
"Read, write, rap, rub-a-dub, and hang

yourself!"

I'm spared all further trouble; all's arranged;  
Your circle does my business; I may rave

Like an epileptic dervish in the books,  
Foam, fling myself flat, rend my clothes to

shreds;

No matter: lovers, friends and countrymen  
Will lay down spiritual laws, read wrong

things right  
By the rule o' reverse. If Francis Verulam

Styles himself Bacon, spells the name beside  
With a y and a z, says he drew breath in York,

## MR. SLUDGE, "THE MEDIUM"

Gave up the ghost in Wales when Cromwell reigned,

(As, sir, we somewhat fear he was apt to say,  
Before I found the useful book that knows)

Why, what harm's done? The circle smiles  
apace,

"It was not Bacon, after all, you see!

"We understand; the trick's but natural:

"Such spirits' individuality

"Is hard to put in evidence: they incline

"To gibe and jeer, these undeveloped sorts.

"You see, their world's much like a jail  
broke loose,

"While this of ours remains shut, bolted,  
barred,

"With a single window to it. Sludge, our  
friend,

"Serves as this window, whether thin or  
thick,

"Or stained or stainless; he's the medium-  
pane

"Through which, to see us and be seen, they  
peep:

"They crowd each other, hustle for a chance,

"Tread on their neighbour's kibes, play  
tricks enough!

"Does Bacon, tired of waiting, swerve aside?

"Up in his place jumps Barnum—'I'm your  
man,

"'I'll answer you for Bacon!' Try once  
more!"

Or else it's—"What's a 'medium'? He's a  
means,

"Good, bad, indifferent, still the only means

"Spirits can speak by; he may misconceive,

"Stutter and stammer,—he's their Sludge  
and drudge,

"Take him or leave him; they must hold  
their peace,

"Or else, put up with having knowledge  
strained

"To half-expression through his ignorance.

"Suppose, the spirit Beethoven wants to shed

"New music he's brimful of; why, he turns

"The handle of this organ, grinds with Sludge,

"And what he poured in at the mouth o' the  
mill

"As a 'Thirty-third Sonata, (fancy now!)"

"Comes from the hopper as bran-new Sludge,  
nought else,

"The Shakers' Hymn in G, with a natural F,

"Or the 'Stars and Stripes' set to conse-  
cutive fourths."

Sir, where's the scrape you did not help me  
through,

You that are wise? And for the fools, the folk  
Who came to see,—the guests, (observe that  
word!)

Pray do you find guests criticize your wine,  
Your furniture, your grammar, or your nose?

Then, why your "medium"? What's the  
difference?

Prove your madeira red-ink and gamboge,—  
Your Sludge, a cheat—then, somebody's a  
goose

For vaunting both as genuine. "Guests!"  
Don't fear!

They'll make a wry face, nor too much of that,  
And leave you in your glory.

"No, sometimes

"They doubt and say as much!" Ay,  
doubt they do!

And what's the consequence? "Of course  
they doubt"—

(You triumph) "that explains the hitch at once!"  
"Doubt posed our 'medium,' puzzled his  
pure mind;

"He gave them back their rubbish: pitch  
chaff in,

"Could flour come out o' the honest mill?"  
So, prompt

Applaud the faithful: cases flock in point,  
"How, when a mocker willed a 'medium'

once

"Should name a spirit James whose name  
was George,

"'James' cried the 'medium,'—'twas the  
test of truth!"

In short, a hit proves much, a miss proves more.  
Does this convince? The better: does it fail?

Time for the double-shotted broadside, then—  
The grand means, last resource. Look black  
and big!

"You style us idiots, therefore—why stop short?"

"Accomplices in rascality: this we hear

"In our own house, from our invited guest

"Found brave enough to outrage a poor boy

"Exposed by our good faith! Have you been heard?"

"Now, then, hear us; one man's not quite worth twelve.

"You see a cheat? Here's some twelve see an ass:

"Excuse me if I calculate: good day!"

Out slinks the sceptic, all the laughs explode,  
Sludge waves his hat in triumph!

Or—he don't.

There's something in real truth (explain who can!)

One casts a wistful eye at, like the horse  
Who mopes beneath stuffed hay-racks and won't munch

Because he spies a corn-bag: hang that truth,  
It spoils all dainties proffered in its place!  
I've felt at times when, cockered, cosseted  
And coddled by the aforesaid company,  
Bidden enjoy their bullying,—never fear,  
But o'er their shoulders spit at the flying man,—  
I've felt a child; only, a fractious child  
That, dandled soft by nurse, aunt, grandmother,  
Who keep him from the kennel, sun and wind,  
Good fun and wholesome mud,—enjoined be sweet,

And comely and superior,—eyes askance  
The ragged sons o' the gutter at their game,  
Fain would be down with them i' the thick  
o' the filth,

Making dirt-pics, laughing free, speaking plain,  
And calling granny the grey old cat she is.  
I've felt a spite, I say, at you, at them,  
I luggings and humbug—gnashed my teeth to mark

A decent dog pass! It's too bad, I say,  
Ruining a soul so!

But what's "so," what's fixed,  
Where may one stop? Nowhere! The  
cheating's nursed  
Out of the lying, softly and surely spun

To just your length, sir! I'd stop soon enough;  
But you're for progress. "All old, nothing new?"

"Only the usual talking through the mouth,

"Or writing by the hand? I own, I thought

"This would develop, grow demonstrable,

"Make doubt absurd, give figures we might see,

"Flowers we might touch. There's no one doubts you, Sludge!

"You dream the dreams, you see the spiritual sights,

"The speeches come in your head, beyond dispute.

"Still, for the sceptics' sake, to stop all mouths,

"We want some outward manifestation!—well,

"The Pennsylvanians gained such; why not Sludge?

"He may improve with time!"

Ay, that he may!

He sees his lot: there's no avoiding fate.

'Tis a trifle at first. "Eh, David? Did you hear?"

"You jogged the table, your foot caused the squeak,

"This time you're . . . joking, are you not, my boy?"

"N-n-no!"—and I'm done for, bought and sold henceforth.

The old good easy jog-trot way, the . . . eh?  
The . . . not so very false, as falsehood goes,  
The spinning out and drawing fine, you know,—

Really mere novel-writing of a sort,  
Acting, or improvising, make-believe,  
Surely not downright cheaterly,—any how,  
'Tis done with and my lot cast; Cheat's my name:

The fatal dash of brandy in your tea  
Has settled what you'll have the souchong's smack:

The caddy gives way to the dram-bottle.

Then, it's so cruel easy! Oh, those tricks  
That can't be tricks, those feats by sleight of hand,

Clearly no common conjuror's !—no indeed !  
A conjuror ? Choose me any craft ? the world  
A man puts hand to ; and with six months' pains  
I'll play you twenty tricks miraculous  
To people untaught the trade : have you seen  
glass blown,

Pipes pierced ? Why, just this biscuit that I  
chip,

Did you ever watch a baker toss one flat  
To the oven ? Try and do it ! Take my word,  
Practise but half as much, while limbs are  
lithe,

To turn, shove, tilt a table, crack your joints,  
Manage your feet, dispose your hands aright,  
Work wires that twitch the curtains, play the  
glove

At end o' your slipper,—then put out the lights  
And . . . there, there, all you want you'll  
get, I hope !

I found it slip, easy as an old shoe.

Now, lights on table again ! I've done my  
part,

You take my place while I give thanks and rest.

"Well, Judge Humgruffin, what's your ver-  
dict, sir ?

"You, hardest head in the United States,—

"Did you detect a cheat here ? Wait ! Let's  
see !

"Just an experiment first, for candour's sake !

"I'll try and cheat you, Judge ! The table  
tilts :

"Is it I that move it ? Write ! I'll press  
your hand :

"Cry when I push, or guide your pencil,  
Judge !"

Sludge still triumphant ! "That a rap, indeed ?

"That, the real writing ? Very, like a whale !

"Then, if, sir, you—a most distinguished man,

"And, were the Judge not here, I'd say, . . .  
no matter !

"Well, sir, if you fail, you can't take us in,—

"There's little fear that Sludge will !"

Won't he, ma'am ?

But what if our distinguished host, like Sludge,  
Bade God bear witness that he played no  
trick,

While you believed that what produced the  
raps

Was just a certain child who died, you know,  
And whose last breath you thought your lips  
had felt ?

Eh ? That's a capital point, ma'am : Sludge  
begins

At your entreaty with your dearest dead,  
The little voice set lisping once again,  
The tiny hand made feel for yours once more,  
The poor lost image brought back, plain as  
dreams,

Which image, if a word had chanced recall,  
The customary cloud would cross your eyes,  
Your heart return the old tick, pay its pang !  
A right mood for investigation, this !

One's at one's ease with Saul and Jonathan,  
Pompey and Cæsar ; but one's own lost  
child . . .

I wonder, when you heard the first clod drop  
From the spadeful at the grave-side, felt you  
free

To investigate who twitched your funeral scarf  
Or brushed your flounces ? Then, it came of  
course

You should be stunned and stupid ; then,  
(how else ?)

Your breath stopped with your blood, your  
brain struck work.

But now, such causes fail of such effects,  
All's changed,—the little voice begins afresh,  
Yet you, calm, consequent, can test and try  
And touch the truth. "Tests ? Didn't the  
creature tell

"Its nurse's name, and say it lived six years,  
"And rode a rocking-horse ? Enough of  
tests !

"Sludge never could learn that !"

He could not, eh ?

You compliment him. "Could not ?" Speak  
for yourself !

I'd like to know the man I ever saw  
Once,—never mind where, how, why, when,  
—once saw,

Of whom I do not keep some matter in mind  
He'd swear I "could not" know, sagacious  
soul !

What? Do you live in this world's blow of blacks,

Palaver, gossipry, a single hour  
Nor find one smut has settled on your nose,  
Of a smut's worth, no more, no less—one fact  
Out of the drift of facts, whereby you learn  
What someone was, somewhere, somewhen,  
somewhy?

You don't tell folk—"See what has stuck to me!

"Judge Humgruffin, our most distinguished man,

"Your uncle was a tailor, and your wife  
"Thought to have married Miggs, missed him, hit you!"—

Do you, sir, though you see him twice a-week?  
"No," you reply, "what use retailing it?

"Why should I?" But, you see, one day  
you *should*,

Because one day there's much 'use,—when  
this fact

Brings you the Judge upon both gouty knees  
Before the supernatural; proves that Sludge  
Knows, as you say, a thing he "could not"  
know:

Will not Sludge thenceforth keep an out-  
stretched face

The way the wind drives?

"Could not!" Look you now,  
I'll tell you a story! There's a whiskered chap,  
A foreigner, that teaches music here  
And gets his bread,—knowing no better way:  
He says, the fellow who informed of him  
And made him fly his country and fall West  
Was a hunchback cobbler, sat, stitched soles  
and sang,

In some outlandish place, the city Rome,  
In a cellar by their Broadway, all day long;  
Never asked questions, stopped to listen or  
look,

Nor lifted nose from lapstone; let the world  
Roll round his three-legged stool, and news  
run in

The ears he hardly seemed to keep pricked up.  
Well, that man went on Sundays, touched his  
pay,

And took his praise from government; you see;

For something like two dollars every week,  
He'd engage tell you some one little thing  
Of some one man, which led to many more,  
(Because one truth leads right to the world's  
end)

And make you that man's master—when he  
dined

And on what dish, where walked to keep his  
health

And to what street. His trade was, throwing  
thus

His sense out, like an ant-eater's long tongue,  
Soft, innocent, warm, moist, impassible,

And when 'twas crusted o'er with creatures—  
slick,

Their juice enriched his palate. "Could not  
Sludge!"

I'll go yet a step further, and maintain,  
Once the imposture plunged its proper depth  
I' the rotten of your natures, all of you,—  
(If one's not mad nor drunk, and hardly then)  
It's impossible to cheat—that's, be found out!  
Go tell your brotherhood this first slip of mine,  
All to-day's tale, how you detected Sludge,  
Behaved unpleasantly, till he was fain confess,  
And so has come to grief! You'll find, I think,  
Why Sludge still snaps his fingers in your face.  
There now, you've told them! What's their  
prompt reply?

"Sir, did that youth confess he had cheated me,  
"I'd disbelieve him. He may cheat at times;

"That's in the 'medium'-nature, thus they're  
made,

"Vain and vindictive, cowards, prone to  
scratch.

"And so all cats are; still, a cat's the beast  
"You coax the strange electric sparks from out,

"By rubbing back its fur; not so a dog,

"Nor lion, nor lamb: 'tis the cat's nature, sir!  
"Why not the dog's? Ask God, who made  
them beasts!

"D'ye think the sound, the nicely-balanced  
man

"(Like me"—aside)—"like you yourself,"—  
(aloud)

"—He's stuff to make a 'medium'? Bless  
your soul,

"'Tis these hysteric, hybrid half-and-halfs,  
 "Equivocal, worthless vermin yield the fire !  
 "We take such as we find them, 'ware their  
   tricks,  
 "Wanting their service. Sir, Sludge took in  
   you—  
 "How, I can't say, not being there to watch :  
 "He was tried, was tempted by your easiness,—  
 "He did not take in me !"

Thank you for Sludge !

I'm to be grateful to such patrons, eh,  
 When what you hear's my best word ? 'Tis  
   a challenge

"Snap at all strangers, half-tamed prairie-dog,  
 "So you cower duly at your keeper's beck !  
 "Cat, show what claws were made for, muf-  
   fling them

"Only to me ! Cheat others if you can,  
 "Me, if you dare !" And, my wise sir, I  
   dared—

Did cheat you first, made you cheat others next,  
 And had the help o' your vaunted manliness  
 To bully the incredulous. You used me ?  
 Have not I used you, taken full revenge,  
 Persuaded folk they knew not their own name,  
 And straight they'd own the error ! Who was  
   the fool

When, to an awe-struck wide-eyed open-  
   mouthed

Circle of sages, Sludge would introduce  
 Milton composing baby-rhymes, and Locke  
 Reasoning in gibberish, Homer writing Greek  
 In noughts and crosses, Asaph setting psalms  
 To crotchet and quaver ? I've made a spirit  
   squeak

In sham voice for a minute, then outbroke  
 Bold in my own, defying the imbeciles—  
 Have copied some ghost's pothooks, half a  
   page,

Then ended with my own scrawl undisguised.  
 "All right ! The ghost was merely using  
   Sludge,

"Suiting itself from his imperfect stock !"  
 Don't talk of gratitude to me ! For what ?  
 For being treated as a showman's ape,  
 Encouraged to be wicked and make sport,  
 Fret or sulk, grin or whimper, any mood

So long as the ape be in it and no man—  
 Because a nut pays every mood alike.

Curse your superior, superintending sort,  
 Who, since you hate smoke, send up boys  
   that climb

To cure your chimney, bid a "medium" lie  
 To sweep you truth down ! Curse your women  
   too,

Your insolent wives and daughters, that fire up  
 Or faint away if a male hand squeeze theirs  
 Yet, to encourage Sludge, may play with  
   Sludge

As only a "medium," only the kind of thing  
 They must humour, fondle . . . oh, to mis-  
   conceive

Were too preposterous ! But I've paid them  
   out !

They've had their wish—called for the naked  
   truth,

And in she tripped, sat down and badè them  
   stare :

They had to blush a little and forgive !

"The fact is, children talk so ; in next world

"All our conventions are reversed,—perhaps

"Made light of : something like old prints,  
   my dear !

"The Judge has one, he brought from Italy,

"A metropolis in the background,—o'er a  
   bridge,

"A team of trotting roadsters,—cheerful  
   groups

"Of wayside travellers, peasants at their work,

"And, full in front, quite unconcerned, why  
   not ?

"Three nymphs conversing with a cavalier,

"And never a rag among them : 'fine,' folk  
   cry—

"And heavenly manners seem not much  
   unlike !

"Let Sludge go on ; we'll fancy it's in print !"

If such as came for wool, sir, went home shorn,  
 Where is the wrong I did them ? 'Twas their  
   choice ;

They tried the adventure, ran the risk, tossed  
   up

And lost, as some one's sure to do in games ;  
 They fancied I was made to lose,—smoked



Useful to spy the sun through, spare their eyes :

And had I proved a red-hot iron plate

They thought to pierce, and, for their pains, grew blind,

Whose were the fault but theirs? While, as things go,

Their loss amounts to gain, the more's the shame!

They've had their peep into the spirit-world, And all this world may know it! They've fed fat Their self-conceit which else had starved : what chance

Save this, of cackling o'er a golden egg

And compassing distinction from the flock, Friends of a feather? Well, they paid for it,

And not prodigiously; the price o' the play, Not counting certain pleasant interludes,

Was scarce a vulgar play's worth. When you buy

The actor's talent, do you dare propose

For his soul beside? Whereas my soul you buy!

Sludge acts Macbeth, obliged to be Macbeth, Or you'll not hear his first word! Just go through

That slight formality, swear himself's the Thane,

And thenceforth he may strut and fret his hour,

Spout, spawl, or spin his target, no one cares! Why hadn't I leave to play tricks, Sludge as

Sludge?

Enough of it all! I've wiped out scores with you—

Vented your fustian, let myself be streaked Like tom-fool with your ochre and carmine,

Worn patchwork your respectable fingers sewed

To metamorphose somebody,—yes, I've earned

My wages, swallowed down my bread of shame,

And shake the crumbs off—where but in your face?

As for religion—why, I served it, sir! I'll stick to that! With my *phenomena*

I laid the atheist sprawling on his back, Propped up Saint Paul, or, at least, Swedenborg!

In fact, it's just the proper way to baulk These troublesome fellows—liars, one and all, Are not these sceptics? Well, to baffle them, No use in being squeamish: lie yourself!

Erect your buttress just as wide o' the line, Your side, as they build up the wall on theirs; Where both meet, midway in a point, is truth High overhead: so, take your room, pile bricks,

Lie! Oh, there's titillation in all shame!

What snow may lose in white, snow gains in rose!

Miss Stokes turns—Rahab,—nor a bad exchange!

Glory be on her, for the good she wrought, Breeding belief anew 'neath ribs of death, Browbeating now the unabashed before, Ridding us of their whole life's gathered straws By a live coal from the altar! Why, of old, Great men spent years and years in writing books

To prove we've souls, and hardly proved it then:

Miss Stokes with her live coal, for you and me!

Surely, to this good issue, all was fair—

Not only fondling Sludge, but, even suppose He let escape some spice of knavery,—well,

In wisely being blind to it! Don't you praise Nelson for setting spy-glass to blind eye

And saying . . . what was it—that he could not see

The signal he was bothered with? Ay, indeed!

I'll go beyond: there's a real love of a lie,

Liars find ready-made for lies they make, As hand for glove, or tongue for sugar-plum.

At best, 'tis never pure and full belief; Those furthest in the quagmire,—don't

suppose

They strayed there with no warning, got no chance

Of a filth-speck in their face, which they clenched teeth,

Bent brow against ! Be sure they had their doubts,

And fears, and fairest challenges to try  
The floor o' the seeming solid sand ! But no !  
Their faith was pledged, acquaintance too  
apprised,

All but the last step ventured, kerchiefs waved,  
And Sludge called "pet" : 'twas easier  
marching on

To the promised land ; join those who,  
Thursday next,

Meant to meet Shakespeare ; better follow  
Sludge—

Prudent, oh sure !—on the alert, how else ?—

But making for the mid-bog, all the same !

To hear your outcries, one would think I  
caught

Miss Stokes by the scruff o' the neck, and  
pitched her flat,

Foolish-face-foremost ! Hear these simple-  
tons,

That's all I beg, before my work's begun,

Before I've touched them with my finger-tip !

Thus they await me (do but listen, now !

It's reasoning, this is,—I can't imitate

The baby voice, though) "In so many tales

"Must be some truth, truth though a pin-  
point big,

"Yet, some : a single man's deceived,  
perhaps—

"Hardly, a thousand : to suppose one cheat

"Can gull all these, were more miraculous far

"Than aught we should confess a miracle"—

And so on. Then the Judge sums up—(it's  
rare)

Bids you respect the authorities that leap

To the judgment-seat at once,—why don't  
you note

The limpid nature, the unblemished life,

The spotless honour, indisputable sense

Of the first upstart with his story ? What—

Outrage a boy on whom you ne'er till now

Set eyes, because he finds raps trouble him ?

Fools, these are : ay, and how of their  
opposites

Who never did, at bottom of their hearts,

Believe for a moment ?—Men emasculate,

Blank of belief, who played, as eunuchs use,  
With superstition safely,—cold of blood,

Who saw what made for them i' the mystery,

Took their occasion, and supported Sludge

—As proselytes ? No, thank you, far too  
shrewd !

—But promisers of fair play, encouragers

O' the claimant ; who in candour needs must  
hoist

Sludge up on Mars' Hill, get speech out of  
Sludge

To carry off, criticize, and cant about !

Didn't Athens treat Saint Paul so ?—at any  
rate,

It's "a new thing" philosophy fumbles at.

Then there's the other picker-out of pearl

From dung-heaps,—ay, your literary man,

Who draws on his kidgloves to deal with Sludge

Daintily and discreetly,—shakes a dust

O' the doctrine, flavours thence, he well knows  
how,

The narrative or the novel,—half-believes,

All for the book's sake, and the public's stare,

And the cash that's God's sole solid in this  
world !

Look at him ! Try to be too bold, too gross

For the master ! Not you ! He's the man  
for muck ;

Shovel it forth, full-splash, he'll smooth your  
brown

Into artistic richness, never fear !

Find him the crude stuff ; when you recognize

Your lie again, you'll doff your hat to it,

Dressed out for company ! "For company,"

I say, since there's the relish of success :

Let all pay due respect, call the lie truth,

Save the soft silent smirking gentleman

Who ushered in the stranger : you must sigh

"How melancholy, he, the only one

"Fails to perceive the bearing of the truth .

"Himself gave birth to !" —There's the  
triumph's smack !

That man would choose to see the whole world  
roll

I' the slime o' the slough, so he might touch  
the tip

Of his brush with what I call the best of  
browns—

Tint ghost-tales, spirit-stories, past the power  
Of the outworn umber and bistre !

Yet I think

There's a more hateful form of foolery—  
The social sage's, Solomon of saloons  
And philosophic diner-out, the fribble  
Who wants a doctrine for a chopping-block  
To try the edge of his faculty upon,  
Prove how much common sense he'll hack and  
    heh

I'th critical minute 'twixt the soup and fish !  
These were my patrons : these, and the like  
    of them

Who, rising in my soul now, sicken it,—  
These I have injured ! Gratitude to these ?  
The gratitude, forsooth, of a prostitute  
To the greenhorn and the bully—friends of  
    hers,

From the wag that wants the queer jokes for  
    his club,

To the snuff-box-decorator, honest man,  
Who just was at his wits' end where to find  
So genial a Pasiphae ! All and each  
Pay, compliment, protect from the police :  
And how she hates them for their pains, like  
    me !

So much for my remorse at thanklessness  
Toward a deserving public !

But, for God ?

Ay, that's a question ! Well, sir, since you  
    press—

(How you do tease the whole thing out of me !  
I don't mean you, you know, when I say  
    "them" :)

Hate you, indeed ! But that Miss Stokes,  
    that Judge !

Enough, enough—with sugar : thank you, sir !  
Now for it, then ! Will you believe me,  
    though ?

You've heard what I confess ; I don't unsay  
A single word : I cheated when I could,  
Rapped with my toe-joints, set sham hands at  
    work ;

Wrote down names weak in sympathetic ink,  
Rubbed odic lights with ends of phosphor-  
    match,

And all the rest ; believe that : believe this,  
By the same token, though it seem to set  
The crooked straight again, unsay the said,  
Stick up what I've knocked down ; I can't  
    help that

It's truth ! I somehow vomit truth to-day.  
This trade of mine—I don't know, can't be sure  
But there was something in it, tricks and all !  
Really, I want to light up my own mind.  
They were tricks ;—true, but what I mean to  
    add

Is also true. First,—don't it strike you, sir ?  
Go back to the beginning,—the first fact  
We're taught is, there's a world beside this  
    world,

With spirits, not mankind, for tenantry ;  
That much within that world once sojourned  
    here,

That all upon this world will visit there,  
And therefore that we, bodily here below,  
Must have exactly such an interest

In learning what may be the ways o' the world  
Above us, as the disembodied folk  
Have (by all analogic likelihood)

In watching how things go in the old home  
With us, their sons, successors, and what not.  
Oh yes, with added powers probably,

Fit for the novel state,—old loves grown pure,  
Old interests understood aright,—they watch !  
Eyes to see, ears to hear, and hands to help,

Proportionate to advancement : they're ahead,  
That's all—do what we do, but noblier  
    done—

Use plate, whereas we eat our meals off delf,  
(To use a figure).

Concede that, and I ask

Next what may be the mode of intercourse  
Between us 'men here, and those once-men  
    there ?

First comes the Bible's speech ; then, history  
With the supernatural element,—you know—  
All that we sucked in with our mothers'  
    milk,

Grew up with, got inside of us at last,  
Till it's found bone of bone and flesh of flesh.  
See now, we start with the miraculous,  
And know it used to be, at all events :

What's the first step we take, and can't but take,

In arguing from the known to the obscure?

Why this: "What was before, may be to-day.

"Since Samuel's ghost appeared to Saul, of course

"My brother's spirit may appear to me."

Go tell your teacher that! What's his reply?

What brings a shade of doubt for the first time

O'er his brow late so luminous with faith?

"Such things have been," says he, "and there's no doubt

"Such things may be: but I advise mistrust

"Of eyes, ears, stomach, and, more than all, your brain,

"Unless it be of your great-grandmother,

"Whenever they propose a ghost to you!"

The end is, there's a composition struck;

'Tis settled, we've some way of intercourse

Just as in Saul's time; only, different:

How, when and where, precisely,—find it out!

I want to know, then, what's so natural

As that a person born into this world

And seized on by such teaching, should begin

With firm expectancy and a frank look-out

For his own allotment, his especial share

I' the secret,—his particular ghost, in fine?

I mean, a person born to look that way,

Since natures differ: take the painter-sort.

One man lives fifty years in ignorance

Whether grass be green or red,—"No kind of eye

"For colour," say you; while another picks

And puts away even pebbles, when a child,

Because of bluish spots and pinky veins—

"Give him forthwith a paint-box!" Just the same

Was I born . . . "medium," you won't let me say,—

Well, seer of the supernatural

Everywhen, everyhow and everywhere,—

Will that do?

Only,—what in the rest you style their sense, Instinct, blind reasoning but imperative,

This, betimes, taught them the old world had one law

And ours another: "New world, new laws," cried they:

"None but old laws, seen everywhere at work,"

Cried I, and by their help explained my life

The Jews' way, still a working way to me.

Ghosts made the noises, fairies waved the lights,

Or Santa Claus slid down on New Year's Eve

And stuffed with cakes the stocking at my bed,

Changed the worn shoes, rubbed clean the fingered slate

O' the sum that came to grief the day before.

This could not last long: soon enough I found

Who had worked wonders thus, and to what end:

But did I find all easy, like my mates?

Henceforth no supernatural any more?

Not a whit: what projects the billiard-balls?

"A cue," you answer: "Yes, a cue," said I;

"But what hand, off the cushion, moved the cue?"

"What unseen agency, outside the world,

"Prompted its puppets to do this and that,

"Put cakes and shoes and slates into their mind,

"These mothers and aunts, nay even school-masters?"

Thus high I sprang, and there have settled since.

Just so I reason, in sober earnest still,

About the greater godsend, what you call

The serious gains and losses of my life.

What do I know or care about your world.

Which either is or seems to be? This snap

O' my fingers, sir! My care is for myself;

Myself am whole and sole reality

Inside a raree-show and a market-mob

Gathered about it: that's the use of things.

'Tis easy saying they serve vast purposes,

I and all such boys of course  
Started with the same stock of Bible-truth;

Advantage their grand selves : be it true or false,

Each thing may have two uses. What's a star?

A world, or a world's sun : doesn't it serve  
As taper also, time-piece, weather-glass,  
And almanac? Are stars not set for signs  
When we should shear our sheep, sow corn,  
prune trees?

The Bible says so.

Well, I add one use

To all the acknowledged uses, and declare  
If I spy Charles's Wain at twelve to-night,  
It warns me, "Go, nor lose another day,  
"And have your hair cut, Sludge!" You  
laugh : and why?

Were such a sign too hard for God to give?  
No : but Sludge seems too little for such  
grace :

Thank you, sir ! So you think, so does not  
Sludge !

When you and good men gape at Providence,  
Go into history and bid us mark  
Not merely powder-plots prevented, crowns  
Kept on kings' heads by miracle enough,  
But private mercies—oh, you've told me, sir,  
Of such interpositions ! How yourself  
Once, missing on a memorable day  
Your handkerchief—just setting out, you  
know,—

You must return to fetch it, lost the train,  
And saved your precious self from what befell  
The thirty-three whom Providence forgot.  
You tell, and ask me what I think of this?  
Well, sir, I think then, since you needs must  
know,

What matter had you and Boston city to boot  
Sailed skyward, like burnt onion-peelings?  
Much

To you, no doubt : for me—undoubtedly  
The cutting of my hair concerns me more,  
Because, however sad the truth may seem,  
Sludge is of all-importance to himself.  
You set apart that day in every year

For special thanksgiving, were a heathen else :  
Well, I who cannot boast the like escape,  
Suppose I said "I don't thank Providence"

"For my part, owing it no gratitude"?

"Nay, but you owe as much"—you'd tutor  
me,

"You, every man alive, for blessings gained

"In every hour o' the day, could you but know!

"I saw my crowning mercy : all have such,

"Could they but see !" Well, sir, why don't  
they see?

"Because they won't look,—or perhaps, they  
can't."

Then, sir, suppose I can, and will, and do  
Look, microscopically as is right,  
Into each hour with its infinitude  
Of influences at work to profit Sludge?

For that's the case : I've sharpened up my  
sight

To spy a providence in the fire's going out,  
The kettle's boiling, the dime's sticking fast  
Despite the hole i' the pocket. Call such facts  
Fancies, too petty a work for Providence,  
And those same thanks which you exact  
from me

Prove too prodigious payment : thanks for  
what,

If nothing guards and guides us little men?

No, no, sir ! You must put away your pride,  
Resolve to let Sludge into partnership !

I live by signs and omens : looked at the roof  
Where the pigeons settle—"If the further  
bird,

"The white, takes wing first, I'll confess  
when thrashed ;

"Not, if the blue does"—so I said to myself  
Last week, lest you should take me by surprise:  
Off flapped the white,—and I'm confessing,  
sir !

Perhaps 'tis Providence's whim and way  
With only me, i' the world : how can you tell?

"Because unlikely !" Was it likelier, now,  
That this our one out of all worlds beside,  
The what-d'you-call-'em millions, should be  
just

Precisely chosen to make Adam for,  
And the rest o' the tale? Yet the tale's true,  
you know :

Such undeserving clod was graced so once ;  
Why not graced likewise undeserving Sludge?  
Are we merit-mongers, flaunt we filthy rags?

All you can bring against my privilege  
Is, that another way was taken with you,—  
Which I don't question. It's pure grace, my  
luck :

I'm broken to the way of nods and winks,  
And need no formal summoning. You've a  
help ;

Holloa his name or whistle, clap your hands,  
Slam with your foot or pull the bell : all's one,  
He understands you want him, here he comes.  
Just so, I come at the knocking : you, sir, wait  
The tongue o' the bell, nor stir before you  
catch

Reason's clear tingle, nature's clapper brisk,  
Or that traditional peal was wont to cheer  
Your mother's face turned heavenward : short  
of these

There's no authentic intimation, eh ?

Well, when you hear, you'll answer them,  
start up

And stride into the presence, top of toe,  
And there find Sludge beforehand, Sludge  
that sprang

At noise o' the knuckle on the partition-wall !

I think myself the more religious man.

Religion's all or nothing ; it's no mere smile

O' contentment, sigh of aspiration, sir—

No quality o' the finelier-tempered clay

Like its whiteness or its lightness ; rather, stuff

O' the very stuff, life of life, and self of self.

I tell you, men won't notice ; when they do,

They'll understand. I notice nothing else :

I'm eyes, ears, mouth of me, one gaze and gape,

Nothing eludes me, everything's a hint,

Handle and help. It's all absurd, and yet

There's something in it all, I know : how  
much ?

No answer ! What does that prove ? Man's  
still man,

Still meant for a poor blundering piece of work  
When all's done ; but, if somewhat's done,  
like this,

Or not done, is the case the same ? Suppose

I blunder in my guess at the true sense

O' the knuckle-summons, nine times out of  
ten,—

What if the tenth guess happen to be right ?

If the tenth shovel-load of powdered quartz

Yield me the nugget ? I gather, crush, sift all,  
Pass o'er the failure, pounce on the success.

To give you a notion, now—(let who wins,  
laugh !)

When first I see a man, what do I first ?

Why, count the letters which make up his  
name,

And as their number chances, even or odd,

Arrive at my conclusion, trim my course :

Hiram H. Horsefall is your honoured name,

And haven't I found a patron, sir, in you ?

"Shall I cheat this stranger ?" I take  
apple-pips,

Stick one in either canthus of my eye,

And if the left drops first—(your left, sir,  
stuck)

I'm warned, I let the trick alone this time.

You, sir, who smile, superior to such trash,

You judge of character by other rules :

Don't your rules sometimes fail you ? Pray,  
what rule

Have you judged Sludge by hitherto ?

Oh, be sure,

You, everybody blunders, just as I,

In simpler things than these by far ! For see :

I knew two farmers,—one, a wisacre

Who studied seasons, rummaged almanacs,

Quoted the dew-point, registered the frost,

And then declared, for outcome of his pains,

Next summer must be dampish : 'twas a  
drought.

His neighbour prophesied such drought would  
fall,

Saved hay and corn, made cent. per cent.  
thereby,

And proved a sage indeed : how came his lore ?

Because one brindled heifer, late in March,

Stiffened her tail of evenings, and somehow

He got into his head that drought was meant !

I don't expect all men can do as much :

Such kissing goes by favour. You must take

A certain turn of mind for this,—a twist !

I' the flesh, as well. Be lazily alive,

Open-mouthed, like my friend the ant-eater,

Letting all nature's loosely-guarded notes

Settle and, slick, be swallowed ! Think  
yourself

The one of the world, the one for whom the world

Was made, expect it tickling at your mouth !  
Then will the swarm of busy buzzing flies,  
Clouds of coincidence, break egg-shell, thrive,  
Breed, multiply, and bring you food enough.

I can't pretend to mind your smiling, sir !  
Oh, what you mean is this ! Such intimate way,  
Close converse, frank exchange of offices,  
Strict sympathy of the immeasurably great  
With the infinitely small, betokened here  
By a course of signs and omens, raps and  
sparks,—

How does it suit the dread traditional text  
O' the "Great and Terrible Name" ? Shall  
the Heaven of Heavens  
Stoop to such child's play ?

Please, sir, go with me  
A moment, and I'll try to answer you.  
The "*Magnum et terribile*" (is that right ?)  
Well, folk began with this in the early day ;  
And all the acts they recognized in proof  
Were thunders, lightnings, earthquakes,  
whirlwinds, dealt

Indisputably on men whose death they caused.  
There, and there only, folk saw Providence  
At work,—and seeing it, 'twas right enough  
All heads should tremble, hands wring hands  
amain,

And knees knock hard together at the-breath  
O' the Name's first letter ; why, the Jews,  
I'm told,

Won't write it down, no, to this very hour,  
Nor speak aloud : you know best if't be so.  
Each ague-fit of fear at end, they crept  
(Because somehow people once born must  
live)

Out of the sound, sight, swing and sway o'  
the Name,

Into a corner, the dark rest of the world,  
And safe space where as yet no fear had  
reached ;

'Twas there they looked about them, breathed  
again,

And felt indeed at home, as we might say.  
The current o' common things, the daily life,

This had their due contempt ; no Name  
pursued

Man from the mountain-top where fires abide,  
To his particular mouse-hole at its foot  
Where he ate, drank, digested, lived in short :  
Such was man's vulgar business, far too small  
To be worth thunder : "small," folk kept on,  
"small,"

With much complacency in those great days !  
A mote of sand, you know, a blade of grass—  
What was so despicable as mere grass,  
Except perhaps the life o' the worm or fly  
Which fed there ? These were "small" and  
men were great.

Well, sir, the old way's altered somewhat since,  
And the world wears another aspect now :  
Somebody turns our spyglass round, or else  
Puts a new lens in it : grass, worm, fly grow  
big :

We find great things are made of little things,  
And little things go lessening till at last  
Comes God behind them. Talk of mountains  
now ?

We talk of mould that heaps the mountain,  
mites

That throng the mould, and God that makes  
the mites.

The Name comes close behind a stomach-cyst,  
The simplest of creations, just a sac  
That's mouth, heart, legs and belly at once,  
yet lives

And feels, and could do neither, we conclude,  
If simplified still further one degree :  
The small becomes the dreadful and immense !  
Lightning, forsooth ? No word more upon  
that !

A tin-foil bottle, a strip of greasy silk,  
With a bit of wire and knob of brass, and  
there's

Your dollar's-worth of lightning ! But the  
cyst—

The life of the least of the little things ?

No, no !

Preachers and teachers try another tack,  
Come near the truth this time : they put aside  
Thunder and lightning : "That's mistake,"  
they cry,

"Thunderbolts fall for neither fright nor sport,  
 "But do appreciable good, like tides,  
 "Changes o' the wind, and other natural facts—  
 "'Good' meaning good to man, his body or soul.  
 "Mediate, immediate, all things minister  
 "To man,—that's settled: be our future text  
 "'We are His children!'" So, they now harangue  
 About the intention, the contrivance, all  
 That keeps up an incessant play of love,—  
 See the Bridgewater book.

Amen to it!

Well, sir, I put this question: I'm a child?  
 I lose no time, but take you at your word:  
 How shall I act a child's part properly?  
 Your sainted mother, sir,—used you to live  
 With such a thought as this a-worrying you?  
 "She has it in her power to throttle me,  
 "Or stab or poison: she may turn me out,  
 "Or lock me in,—nor stop at this to-day,  
 "But cut me off to-morrow from the estate  
 "I look for"—(long may you enjoy it, sir!)  
 "In brief, she may unchild the child I am."  
 You never had such crotchets? Nor have I!  
 Who, frank confessing childship from the first,  
 Cannot both fear and take my ease at once,  
 So, don't fear,—know what might be, well  
 enough,

But know too, child-like, that it will not be,  
 At least in my case, mine, the son and heir  
 O' the kingdom, as yourself proclaim my style.  
 But do you fancy I stop short at this?  
 Wonder if suit and service, son and heir  
 Needs must expect, I dare pretend to find?  
 If, looking for signs proper to such an one,  
 I straight perceive them irresistible?  
 Concede that homage is a son's plain right,  
 And, never mind the nods and raps and winks,  
 'Tis the pure obvious supernatural  
 Steps forward, does its duty: why, of course!  
 I have presentiments; my dreams come true:  
 Fancy a friend stands whistling all in white  
 Blithe as a boblink, and he's dead I learn.  
 I take dislike to a dog my favourite long,

And sell him; he goes mad next week and snaps.  
 I guess that stranger will turn up to-day.  
 I have not seen these three years; there's his knock  
 I wager "sixty peaches on that tree!"—  
 That I pick up a dollar in my walk,  
 That your wife's brother's cousin's name was George—  
 And win on all points. Oh, you wince at this?  
 You'd fain distinguish between gift and gift,  
 Washington's oracle and Sludge's itch  
 O' the elbow when at whist he ought to trump?  
 With Sludge it's too absurd? *Fine, draw the line*  
*Somewhere, but, sir, your somewhere is not mine!*  
 Bless us, I'm turning poet! It's time to end.  
 How you have drawn me out, sir! All I ask  
 Is—am I heir or not heir? If I'm he,  
 Then, sir, remember, that same personage  
 (To judge by what we read i' the newspaper)  
 Requires, beside one nobleman in gold  
 To carry up and down his coronet,  
 Another servant, probably a duke,  
 To hold egg-nogg in readiness: why want  
 Attendance, sir, when helps in his father's house  
 Abound, I'd like to know?

Enough of talk!

My fault is that I tell too plain a truth.  
 Why, which of those who say they disbelieve,  
 Your clever people, but has dreamed his dream,  
 Caught his coincidence, stumbled on his fact  
 He can't explain, (he'll tell you smilingly)  
 Which he's too much of a philosopher.  
 To count as supernatural, indeed,  
 So calls a puzzle and problem, proud of it:  
 Bidding you still be on your guard, you know,  
 Because one fact don't make a system stand,  
 Nor prove this an occasional escape  
 Of spirit beneath the matter: that's the way!  
 Just so wild Indians picked up, piece by piece,



The fact in California, the fine gold  
That underlay the gravel—hoarded these,  
But never made a system stand, nor dug !  
So wise men hold out in each hollowed palm  
A handful of experience, sparkling fact  
They can't explain ; and since their rest of life  
Is all explainable, what proof in this ?  
Whereas I take the fact, the grain of gold,  
And fling away the dirty rest of life,  
And add this grain to the grain each fool has  
found

O' the million other such philosophers,—  
Till I see gold, all gold and only gold,  
Truth questionless though unexplainable,  
And the miraculous proved the commonplace !  
The other fools believed in mud, no doubt—  
Failed to know gold they saw : was that so  
strange ?

Are all men born to play Bach's fiddle-fugues,  
"Time" with the foil in carte, jump their  
own height,

Cut the mutton with the broadsword, skate a  
five,

Make the red hazard with the cue, clip nails  
While swimming, in five minutes row a mile,  
Pull themselves three feet up with the left  
arm,

Do sums of fifty figures in their head,  
And so on, by the scores of instances ?  
The Sludge with luck, who sees the spiritual  
facts

His fellows strive and fail to see, may rank  
With these, and share the advantage.

    Ay, but share

The drawback ! Think it over by yourself ;  
I have not heart, sir, and the fire's gone grey.  
Defect somewhere compensates for success,  
Everyone knows that. Oh, we're equals, sir !  
The big-legged fellow has a little arm  
And a less brain, though big legs win the  
race :

Do you suppose I 'scape the common lot ?  
Say, I was born with flesh so sensitive,  
Soul so alert, that, practice helping both,  
I guess what's going on outside the veil,  
Just as a prisoned crane feels pairing-time  
In the islands where his kind are, so must fall

To capering by himself some shiny night,  
As if your back-yard were a plot of spice—  
Thus am I 'ware o' the spirit-world : while  
you,

Blind as a beetle that way,—for amends,  
Why, you can double fist and floor me, sir !  
Ride that hot hardmouthed horrid horse of  
yours,

Laugh while it lightens, play with the great  
dog,

Speak your mind though it vex some friend  
to hear,

Never brag, never bluster, never blush,—  
In short, you've pluck, when I'm a coward—  
there !

I know it, I can't help it,—folly or no,  
I'm paralyzed, my hand's no more a hand,  
Nor my head a head, in danger : you can  
smile

And change the pipe in your cheek. Your  
gift's not mine.

Would you swap for mine ? No ! but you'd  
add my gift

To yours : I dare say ! I too sigh at times,  
Wish I were stouter, could tell truth nor  
flinch,

Kept cool when threatened, did not mind so  
much

Being dressed gaily, making strangers stare,  
Eating nice things ; when I'd amuse myself,  
I shut my eyes and fancy in my brain

I'm—now the President, now Jenny Lind,  
Now Emerson, now the Benicia Boy—  
With all the civilized world a-wondering.

And worshipping. I know it's folly and  
worse ;

I feel such tricks sap, honeycomb the soul,  
But I can't cure myself : despond, despair,  
And then, hey, presto, there's a turn o' the  
wheel,

Under comes uppermost, fate makes full  
amends ;

Sludge knows and sees and hears a hundred  
things

You all are blind to,—I've my taste of truth,  
Likewise my touch of falsehood,—vice no  
doubt,

But you've your vices also : I'm content.

What, sir? You won't shake hands? "Because I cheat!"

"You've found me out in cheating!" That's enough

To make an apostle swear! Why, when I cheat,

*Mean to cheat, do cheat, and am caught in the act,*

*Are you, or, rather, am I sure o' the fact?*  
(There's verse again, but I'm inspired somehow.)

Well then I'm not sure! I may be, perhaps,  
Free as a babe from cheating: how it began,  
My gift,—no matter; what 'tis got to be  
In the end now, that's the question; answer that!

Had I seen, perhaps, what hand was holding mine,

Leading me whither, I had died of fright:  
So, I was made believe I led myself.

If I should lay a six-inch plank from roof  
To roof, you would not cross the street, one step,

Even at your mother's summons: but, being shrewd,

If I paste paper on each side the plank  
And swear 'tis solid pavement, why, you'll cross

Humming a tune the while, in ignorance  
Beacon Street stretches a hundred feet below:  
I walked thus, took the paper-cheat for stone.  
Some impulse made me set a thing o' the move

Which, started once, ran really by itself;  
Beer flows thus, suck the siphon; toss the kite,

It takes the wind and floats of its own force.  
Don't let truth's lump rot stagnant for the lack

Of a timely helpful lie to leaven it!  
Put a chalk-egg beneath the clucking hen,  
She'll lay a real one, laudably deceived,  
Daily for weeks to come. I've told my lie,  
And seen truth follow, marvels none of mine;  
All was not cheating, sir, I'm positive!  
I don't know if I move your hand sometimes  
When the spontaneous writing spreads so far,  
If my knee lifts the table all that height,

Why the inkstand don't fall off the desk a-tilt,

Why the accordion plays a prettier waltz  
Than I can pick out on the piano-forte,  
Why I speak so much more than I intend,  
Describe so many things I never saw.

I tell you, sir, in one sense, I believe  
Nothing at all,—that everybody can,  
Will, and does cheat: but in another sense:  
I'm ready to believe my very self—  
That every cheat's inspired, and every lie  
Quick with a germ of truth.

You ask perhaps

Why I should condescend to trick at all  
If I know a way without it? This is why!  
There's a strange secret sweet self-sacrifice  
In any desecration of one's soul

To a worthy end,—isn't it Herodotus  
(I wish I could read Latin!) who describes  
The single gift o' the land's virginity,  
Demanded in those old Egyptian rites,  
(I've but a hazy notion—help me, sir!)  
For one purpose in the world, one day in a life,  
One hour in a day—thereafter, purity,  
And a veil thrown o'er the past for evermore!  
Well, now, they understood a many things  
Down by Nile city, or wherever it was!

I've always vowed, after the minute's lie,  
And the end's gain,—truth should be mine  
henceforth.

This goes to the root o' the matter, sir,—this plain

Plump fact: accept it and unlock with it  
The wards of many a puzzle!

Or, finally,

Why should I set so fine a gloss on things?  
What need I care? I cheat in self-defence,  
And there's my answer to a world of cheats!  
Cheat? To be sure, sir! : What's the world  
worth else?

Who takes it as he finds, and thanks his stars?

Don't it want trimming, turning, furbishing-up  
And polishing over? Your so-styled great  
men,

Do they accept one truth as truth is found,

Or try their skill at tinkering? What's your world?

Here are you born, who are, I'll say at once,  
Of the luckiest kind, whether in head and heart,

Body and soul, or all that helps them both.

Well, now, look back: what faculty of yours  
Came to its full, had ample justice done

By growing when rain fell, biding its time,

Solidifying growth when earth was dead,

Spiring up, broadening wide, in seasons due?

Never! You shot up and frost nipped you  
off,

Settled to sleep when sunshine bade you  
sprout;

One faculty thwarted its fellow: at the end,

All you boast is "I had proved a topping  
tree

"In other climes"—yet this was the right  
clime

Had you foreknown the seasons. Young,  
you've force

Wasted like well-streams: old,—oh, then  
indeed,

Behold a labyrinth of hydraulic pipes

Through which you'd play off wondrous  
waterwork;

Only, no water's left to feed their play.

Young,—you've a hope, an aim, a love: it's  
tossed

And crossed and lost: you struggle on, some

Shut in your heart against the puffs around,

Through cold and pain; these in due time  
subside,

Now then for age's triumph, the hoarded  
light

You mean to loose on the altered face of  
things,—

Up with it on the tripod! It's extinct.

Spend your life's remnant asking, which was  
best,

Light smothered up that never peeped forth  
once,

Or the cold cresset with full leave to shine?

Well, accept this too,—seek the fruit of it

Not in enjoyment, proved a dream on earth,

But knowledge, useful for a second chance,

Another life,—you've lost this world—you've  
gained

Its knowledge for the next. What know-  
ledge, sir,

Except that you know nothing? Nay, you  
doubt

Whether 'twere better have made you man  
or brute,

If aught be true, if good and evil clash.

No foul, no fair, no inside, no outside,

There's your world!

Give it me! I slap it brisk

With harlequin's pasteboard sceptre: what's  
it now?

Changed like a rock-flat, rough with rusty  
weed,

At first wash-over o' the returning wave!

All the dry dead impracticable stuff

Starts into life and light again; this world

Pervaded by the influx from the next.

I cheat, and what's the happy consequence?

You find full justice straightway dealt you  
out,

Each want supplied, each ignorance set at  
ease,

Each folly fooled. No life-long labour now

As the price of worse than nothing! No  
mere film

Holding you chained in iron, as it seems,

Against the outstretch of your very arms

And legs if the sunshine moralists forbid!

What would you have? Just speak and,  
there, you see!

You're supplemented, made a whole at last,

Bacon advises, Shakespeare writes you songs,

And Mary Queen of Scots embraces you.

Thus it goes on, not quite like life perhaps,

But so near, that the very difference piques,

Shows that e'en better than this best will  
be—

This passing entertainment in a hut

Whose bare walls take your taste since, one  
stage more,

And you arrive at the palace: all half real,

And you, to suit it, less than real beside,

In a dream, lethargic kind of death in life,

That helps the interchange of natures, flesh

Transfused by souls, and such souls! Oh,  
'tis choice!

And if at whiles the bubble, blown too thin,  
Seem nigh on bursting,—if you nearly see  
The real world through the false,—what do  
you see?

Is the old so ruined? You find you're in a flock  
O' the youthful, earnest, passionate—genius,  
beauty,

Rank and wealth also, if you care for these:  
And all depose their natural rights, hail you,  
(That's me, sir) as their mate and yoke-fellow,  
Participate in Sludgehood—nay, grow mine,  
I veritably possess them—banish doubt,  
And reticence and modesty alike!

Why, here's the Golden Age, old Paradise  
Or new Eutopia! Here's true life indeed,  
And the world well won now, mine for the  
first time!

And all this might be, may be, and with good  
help

Of a little lying shall be: so, Sludge lies!  
Why, he's at worst your poet who sings how  
Greeks

That never were, in Troy which never was,  
Did this or the other impossible great thing!  
He's Lowell—it's a world (you smile applause),  
Of his own invention—wondrous Longfellow,  
Surprising Hawthorne! Sludge does more  
than they,

And acts the books they write: the more his  
praise!

But why do I mount to poets? Take plain  
prose—

Dealers in common sense, set these at work,  
What can they do without their helpful lies?  
Each states the law and fact and face o' the  
thing

Just as he'd have them, finds what he thinks fit,  
Is blind to what misleads him, just records  
What makes his case out, quite ignores the rest.  
It's a History of the World, the Lizard Age,  
The Early Indians, the Old Country War,  
Jerome Napoleon, whatsoever you please,  
All as the author wants it. Such a scribe  
You pay and praise for putting life in stones,

Fire into fog, making the past your world.  
There's plenty of "How did you contrive to  
grasp

"The thread which led you through this  
labyrinth?

"How build such solid fabric out of air?

"How on so slight foundation found this tale,

"Biography, narrative?" or, in other words,

"How many lies did it require to make

"The portly truth you here present us with?"

"Oh," quoth the penman, purring at your  
praise,

"'Tis fancy all; no particle of fact:

"I was poor and threadbare when I wrote  
that book

"Bliss in the Golden City.' I, at Thebes?

"We writers paint out of our heads, you see!"

"—Ah, the more wonderful the gift in you,

"The more creativeness and godlike craft!"

But I, do I present you with my piece,

It's "What, Sludge? When my sainted  
mother spoke

"The verses Lady Jane Grey last composed

"About the rosy bower in the seventh heaven

"Where she and Queen Elizabeth keep  
house,—

"You made the raps? 'Twas your invention  
that?

"Cur, slave and devil!"—eight fingers and  
two thumbs

Stuck in my throat!

Well, if the marks seem gone,

'Tis because stiffish cock-tail, taken in time,

Is better for a bruise than arnica.

There, sir! I bear no malice: 't isn't in me.

I know I acted wrongly: still, I've tried

What I could say in my excuse,—to show

The devil's not all devil . . . I don't pretend,

He's angel, much less such a gentleman.

As you, sir! And I've lost you, lost myself,

Lost all-I-I-I- . . .

No—are you in earnest, sir?

O yours, sir, is an angel's part! I know

What prejudice prompts, and what's the  
common course

Men take to soothe their ruffled self-conceit;

Only you rise superior to it all !  
No, sir, it don't hurt much ; it's speaking long  
That makes me choke a little : the marks  
will go !

What ? Twenty V-notes more, and outfit too,  
And not a word to Greeley ? One—one kiss  
O' the hand that 'saves me ! You'll not let  
me speak,

I well know, and I've lost the right, too true !  
But I must say, sir, if She hears (she does)  
Your sainted . . . Well, sir,—be it so !  
That's, I think,  
My bed-room candle. Good-night ! Bl-I-less  
you, sir !

R-r-r, you brute-beast and blackguard !  
Cowardly scamp !

I only wish I dared burn down the house  
And spoil your sniggering ! Oh what, you're  
the man ?

You're satisfied at last ? You've found out  
Sludge ?

We'll see that presently : my turn, sir, next !  
I too can tell my story : brute,—do you hear ?—  
You throttled your sainted mother, that old  
hag,

In just such a fit of passion : no, it was . . .  
To get this house of hers, and many a note  
Like these . . . I'll pocket them, however  
. . . five,

Ten, fifteen . . . ay, you gave her throat  
the twist,

Or else you poisoned her ! Confound the cuss !  
Where was my head ? I ought to have pro-  
phesied

He'll die in a year and join her : that's the way.

I don't know where my head is : what had I  
done ?

How did it all go ? I said he poisoned her,  
And hoped he'd have grace given him to  
repent,

Whereon he picked this quarrel, bullied me  
And called me cheat : I thrashed him,—who  
'could help ?

He howled for mercy, prayed me on his knees  
To cut and run and save him from disgrace :  
I db so, and once off, he slanders me.

An end of him ! Begin elsewhere anew !  
Boston's a hole, the herring-pond is wide,  
V-notes are something, liberty still more.  
Beside, is he the only fool in the world ?

## APPARENT FAILURE.

" We shall soon lose a celebrated building."  
*Paris Newspaper.*

### I.

No, for I'll save it ! Seven years since,  
I passed through Paris, stopped a day  
To see the baptism of your Prince ;  
Saw, made my bow, and went my way :  
Walking the heat and headache off,  
I took the Seine-side, you surmise,  
Thought of the Congress, Gortschakoff,  
Cavour's appeal and Buol's replies,  
So sauntered till—what met my eyes ?

Only the Doric little Morgue !

The dead-house where you show your  
drowned :

Petrarch's Vaucluse makes proud the Sorgue,  
Your Morgue has made the Seine renowned.

One pays one's debt in such a case ;

I plucked up heart and entered,—stalked,  
Keeping a tolerable face

Compared with some whose cheeks were  
chalked :

Let them ! No Briton's to be baulked !

First came the silent gazers ; next,

A screen of glass, we're thankful for ;  
Last, the sight's self, the sermon's text,

The three men who did most abhor  
Their life in Paris yesterday,

So killed themselves : and now, enthroned  
Each on his copper couch, they lay

Fronting me, waiting to be owned.  
I thought, and think, their sin's atoned.

### IV.

Poor men, God made, and all for that !

The reverence struck me ; o'er each head  
Religiously was hung its hat,

Each coat dripped by the owner's bed,

Sacred from touch : each had his berth,  
 His bounds, his proper place of rest,  
 Who last night tenanted on earth  
 Some arch, where twelve such slept  
 abreast,—  
 Unless the plain asphalte seemed best.

## V.

How did it happen, my poor boy?  
 You wanted to be Buonaparte  
 And have the Tuileries for toy,  
 And could not, so it broke your heart?  
 You, old one by his side, I judge,  
 Were, red as blood, a socialist,  
 A leveller! Does the Empire grudge  
 You've gained what no Republic missed?  
 Be quiet, and unclench your fist!

## VI.

And this—why, he was red in vain,  
 Or black,—poor fellow that is blue!  
 What fancy was it turned your brain?  
 Oh, women were the prize for you!  
 Money gets women, cards and dice  
 Get money, and ill-luck gets just  
 The copper couch and one clear nice  
 Cool squirt of water o'er your bust,  
 The right thing to extinguish lust!

## VII.

It's wiser being good than bad;  
 It's safer being meek than fierce:  
 It's fitter being sane than mad.  
 My own hope is, a sun will pierce  
 The thickest cloud earth ever stretched;  
 That, after Last, returns the First,  
 Though a wide compass round be fetched;  
 That what began best, can't end worst,  
 Nor what God blessed once, prove accurst.

## EPILOGUE.

FIRST SPEAKER, *as David.*

## I.

ON the first of the Feast of Feasts,  
 The Dedication Day,  
 When the Levites joined the Priests  
 At the Altar in robed array,  
 Gave signal to sound and say,—  
 VOL. L

When the thousands, rear and van,  
 Swarming with one accord  
 Became as a single man  
 (Look, gesture, thought and word)  
 In praising and thanking the Lord,—

## III.

When the singers lift up their voice,  
 And the trumpets made endeavour,  
 Sounding, "In God rejoice!"  
 Saying, "In Him rejoice  
 "Whose mercy endureth for ever!"—

## IV.

Then the Temple filled with a cloud,  
 Even the House of the Lord;  
 Porch bent and pillar bowed:  
 For the presence of the Lord,  
 In the glory of His cloud,  
 Had filled the House of the Lord.

SECOND SPEAKER, *as Renan.*

Gone now! All gone across the dark so far,  
 Sharpening fast, shuddering ever, shutting  
 still,  
 Dwindling into the distance, dies that star  
 Which came, stood, opened once! We  
 gazed our fill  
 With upturned faces on as real a Face  
 That, stooping from grave music and mild  
 fire,  
 Took in our homage, made a visible place  
 Through many a depth of glory, gyre on gyre,  
 For the dim human tribute. Was this true?  
 Could man indeed avail, mere praise of his,  
 To help by rapture God's own rapture too,  
 Thrill with a heart's red tinge that pure  
 pale bliss?  
 Why did it end? Who failed to beat the breast,  
 And shriek, and throw the arms protesting  
 wide,  
 When a first shadow showed the star addressed  
 Itself to motion, and on either side  
 The rims contracted as the rays retired;  
 The music, like a fountain's sickening pulse,  
 Subsided on itself; awhile transpired  
 Some vestige of a Face no panga convulse,

No prayers retard; then even this was gone,  
 Lost in the night at last: 'We, lone and left  
 Silent through centuries, ever and anon  
 Venture to probe again the vault bereft  
 Of all now save the lesser lights, a mist  
 Of multitudinous points, yet suns, mensay—  
 And this leaps ruby, this lurks amethyst,  
 But where may hide what came and loved  
 our clay?

How shall the sage detect in yon expanse  
 The star which chose to stoop and stay  
 for us?

Unroll the records! Hailed ye such advance  
 Indeed, and did your hope evanish thus?  
 Watchers of twilight, is the worst averred?

We shall not look up, know ourselves are  
 seen,  
 Speak, and be sure that we again are heard,  
 Acting or suffering, have the disk's serene  
 Reflect our life, absorb an earthly flame,  
 Nor doubt that, were mankind inert and  
 numb,

Its core had never crimsoned all the same,  
 Nor, missing ours, its music fallen dumb?  
 Oh, dread succession to a dizzy post,

Sad sway of sceptre whose mere touch  
 appals,  
 Ghastly dethronement, cursed by those the  
 most  
 On whose repugnant brow the crown next  
 falls!

## THIRD SPEAKER.

## I.

Witless alike of will and way divine,  
 How heaven's high with earth's low should  
 intertwine!

Friends, I have seen through your eyes:  
 now use mine!

## II.

Take the least man of all mankind, as I;  
 Look at his head and heart, find how and why  
 He differs from his fellows utterly:

Then, like me, watch when nature by degrees  
 Grows alive round him, as in Arctic seas  
 (They said of old) the instinctive water flees

## IV.

Toward some elected point of central rock,  
 As though, for its sake only, roamed the flock  
 Of waves about the waste: awhile they mock

## V.

With radiance caught for the occasion,—hues  
 Of blackest hell now, now such reds and blues  
 As only heaven could fitly interfuse,—

## VI.

The mimic monarch of the whirlpool, king  
 O' the current for a minute: then they wring  
 Up by the roots and oversweep the thing,

And hasten off, to play again elsewhere  
 The same part, choose another peak as bare.  
 They find and flatter, feast and finish there.

## VIII.

When you see what I tell you,—nature dance  
 About each man of us, retire, advance,  
 As though the pageant's end were to enhance

His worth, and—once the life, his product,  
 gained—

Roll away elsewhere, keep the strife sustained,  
 And show thus real, a thing the North but  
 feigned—

## X.

When you acknowledge that one world could do  
 All the diverse work, old yet ever new,  
 Divide us, each from other, me from you,—

## XI.

Why, where's the need of Temple, when the  
 walls

O' the world are that? What use of swells  
 and falls

From Levites' choir, Priests' cries, and  
 trumpet-calls?

## XII.

That one Face, far from vanish, rather grows,  
 Or decomposes but to recompose,  
 Become my-universe that feels and knows.

# BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE;

INCLUDING

A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES.

1871.

[After the ill-starred expedition under Nikias against Sicily and the crowning disaster of Syracuse had become known to the inhabitants of Rhodes, a great reaction against the supremacy of Athens set in, and a general determination to side with Sparta was expressed. Against this the girl Balaustion (Wild-pomegranate-flower) vehemently protested, and calling together those whom she could muster, they took ship for Athens. Encountering storms and pursued by pirates, they were driven upon Syracuse Harbour, where, however, they were at first refused admission and thrust back upon the pirates. At the last moment, however, curiosity was expressed as to Euripides, and Balaustion came forward and offered to recite the *Alkestis*, which she did before the whole listening city.]

## TO THE COUNTESS COWPER.

If I mention the simple truth: that this poem absolutely owes its existence to you,—who not only suggested, but imposed on me as a task, what has proved the most delightful of May-month amusements—I shall seem honest, indeed, but hardly prudent; for, how good and beautiful ought such a poem to be!

Euripides might fear little; but I, also, have an interest in the performance; and what wonder if I beg you to suffer that it make, in another and far easier sense, its nearest possible approach to those Greek qualities of goodness and beauty, by laying itself gratefully at your feet? R. B.

LONDON: July 23, 1871.

## BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE.

Our Euripides, the human,  
With his droppings of warm tears,  
And his touches of things common  
Till they rose to touch the spheres.

ABOUT that strangest, saddest, sweetest song  
I, when a girl, heard in Kameiros once,  
And, after, saved my life by? Oh, so glad  
To tell you the adventure!

Petalé,

Phullis, Charopé, Chrusion! You must know,  
This "after" fell in that unhappy time

When poor reluctant Nikias, pushed by fate,  
Went falteringly against Syracuse;  
And there shamed Athens, lost her ships and  
men,

And gained a grave, or death without a grave.  
I was at Rhodes—the isle, not Rhodes the  
town,

Mine was Kameiros—when the news arrived:  
Our people rose in tumult, cried "No more  
Duty to Athens, let us join the League  
And side with Sparta, share the spoil,—at  
worst,

Abjure a headship that will ruin Greece!"

And so, they sent to Knidos for a fleet  
To come and help revolvers. Ere help came,—  
Girl as I was, and never out of Rhodes  
The whole of my first fourteen years of life,  
But nourished with Ilissian<sup>1</sup> mother's-milk,—  
I passionately cried to who would hear  
And those who loved me at Kameiros—"No!  
Never throw Athens off for Sparta's sake—  
Never disloyal to the life and light  
Of the whole world worth calling world  
at all!

Rather go die at Athens, lie outstretched  
For feet to trample on, before the gate  
Of Diomedes or the Hippadai,

<sup>1</sup> Athenian.



Before the temples and among the tombs,  
Than tolerate the grim felicity  
Of harsh Lakonia ! Ours the fasts and feasts,  
Choës and Chutroi ;<sup>1</sup> ours the sacred grove,  
Agora, Dikasteria, Poikilé,  
Pnux, Keramikos ; Salamis in sight,  
Psuttalia, Marathon itself, not far !  
Ours the great Dionusiæ theatre,  
And tragic triad of immortal fames,  
Aischulos, Sophokles, Euripides !

To Athens, all of us that have a soul,  
Follow me !” And I wrought so with my  
prayer,

That certain of my kinsfolk crossed the strait  
And found a ship at Kaunos ; well-disposed  
Because the Captain—where did he draw  
breath

First but within Psuttalia ? Thither fled  
A few like-minded as ourselves. We turned  
The glad prow westward, soon were out at  
sea,

Pushing, brave ship with the vermilion cheek,  
Proud for our heart's true harbour. But a  
wind

Lay ambushed by Point Malea of bad fame,  
And leapt out, bent us from our course.

Next day

Broke stormless, so broke next blue day and  
next.

“ But whither bound in this white waste ?”  
we planged

The pilot's old experience : “ Cos or Crete ?”  
Because he promised us the land ahead.

While we strained eyes to share in what he  
saw,

The Captain's shout startled us ; round we  
rushed :

What hung behind us but a pirate-ship  
Panting for the good prize ! “ Row ! harder  
row !

Row for dear life !” the Captain cried :  
“ 'tis Crete,

Friendly Crete looming large there ! Beat  
this craft

That's but a keles, one-benched pirate-bark,  
Lokrian, or that bad breed off Thessaly !

Only, so cruel are such water-thieves,  
No man of you, no woman, child, or slave,  
But falls their prey, once let them board our  
boat !”

So, furiously our oarsmen rowed and rowed ;  
And when the oars flagged somewhat, dash  
and dip,

As we approached the coast and safety, so  
That we could hear behind us plain the  
threats

And curses of the pirate panting up  
In one more throe and passion of pursuit,—  
Seeing our oars flag in the rise and fall,  
I sprang upon the altar by the mast  
And sang aloft,—some genius prompting  
me,—

That song of ours which saved at Salamis :  
“ O sons of Greeks, go, set your country free,  
Free your wives, free your children, free the  
fanes

O' the Gods, your fathers founded,—sepul-  
chres

They sleep in ! Or save all, or all be lost !”  
Then, in a frenzy, so the noble oars  
Churned the black water white, that well  
away

We drew, soon saw land rise, saw hills grow  
up,

Saw spread itself a sea-wide town with towers,  
Not fifty stadia distant ; and, betwixt  
A large bay and a small, the islet-bar,  
Even Ortugia's self—oh, luckless we !  
For here was Sicily and Syracuse :  
We ran upon the lion from the wolf.

Ere we drew breath, took counsel, out there  
came

A galley, hailed us. “ Who asks entry here  
In war-time ? Are you Sparta's friend or foe ?”  
“ Kaunians”—our Captain judged his best  
reply,

“ The mainland-seaport that belongs to  
Rhodes ;

Rhodes that casts in her lot now with the  
League,

Forsaking Athens,—you have heard belike !”  
“ Ay, but we heard all Athens in one ode  
Just now ! we heard her in that Aischulos !

You bring a boatful of Athenians here,

<sup>1</sup> Feasts of the god.

Kaunians although you be : and prudence  
bids,

For Kaunos' sake, why, carry them unhurt  
To Kaunos, if you will : for Athens' sake,  
Back must you, though ten pirates blocked  
the bay !

We want no colony from Athens here,  
With memories of Salamis, forsooth,  
To spirit up our captives, that pale crowd  
I' the quarry, whom the daily pint of corn  
Keeps in good order and submissiveness."  
Then the grey Captain prayed them by the  
Gods,

And by their own knees, and their fathers'  
beards,

They should not wickedly thrust suppliants  
back,

But save the innocent on traffic bound —

Or, may be, some Athenian family

Perishing of desire to die at home,—

From that vile foe still lying on its oars,  
Waiting the issue in the distance. Vain !

Words to the wind ! And we were just about  
To turn and face the foe, as some tired bird

Barbarians pelt at, drive with shouts away  
From shelter in what rocks, however rude,

She makes for, to escape the kindled eye,  
Split beak, crook'd claw o' the creature,

cormorant

Or ossifrage,<sup>1</sup> that, hardly baffled, hangs

Afloat i' the foam, to take her if she turn.

So were we at destruction's very edge,

When those o' the galley, as they had dis-  
cussed

A point, a question raised by somebody,

A matter mooted in a moment,—“Wait !”

Cried they (and wait we did, you may be  
sure).

“That song was veritable Aischulos,

Familiar to the mouth of man and boy,

Old glory : how about Euripides ?

The newer and not yet so famous bard,

He that was born upon the battle-day

While that song and the salpinx<sup>2</sup> sounded him

Into the world, first sound, at Salamis—

Might you know any of his verses too ?”

<sup>1</sup> The osprey.

<sup>2</sup> A trumpet.

Now, some one of the Gods inspired this  
speech :

Since ourselves knew what happened but  
last year—

How, when Gulippos gained his victory

Over poor Nikias, poor Demosthenes,

And Syracuse condemned the conquered force

To dig and starve i' the quarry, branded  
them—

Freeborn Athenians, brute-like in the front

With horse-head brands,—ah, “Region of  
the Steed” !<sup>3</sup>—

Of all these men immersed in misery,

It was found none had been advantaged so

By aught in the past life he used to prize

And pride himself concerning,—no rich man

By riches, no wise man by wisdom, no

Wiser man still (as who loved more the Muse)

By storing, at brain's edge and tip of tongue,

Old glory, great plays that had long ago

Made themselves wings to fly about the  
world,—

Not one such man was helped, so at his need

As certain few that (wisest they of all)

Had, at first summons, oped heart, flung door  
wide

At the new knocking of Euripides,

Nor drawn the bolt with who cried “De-  
cadence !

And, after Sophokles, be nature dumb !”

Such,—and I see in it God Bacchus' boon

To souls that recognized his latest child,

He who himself, born latest of the Gods,

Was stoutly held impostor by mankind,—

Such were in safety : any who could speak

A chorus to the end, or prologize,

Roll out a rhesis,<sup>4</sup> wield some golden length

Stiffened by wisdom out into a line,

Or thrust and parry in bright monostich,<sup>5</sup>

Teaching Euripides to Syracuse—

Any such happy man had prompt reward :

If he lay bleeding on the battle-field

They staunched his wounds and gave him  
drink and food ;

If he were slave i' the house, for reverence

<sup>3</sup> Attica was famous for horses.

<sup>4</sup> A speech in a play.

<sup>5</sup> A dialogue in which each speaker speaks a  
single line in turn.

They rose up, bowed to who proved master  
 now,  
 And bade him go free, thank Euripides!  
 Ay, and such did so: many such, he said,  
 Returning home to Athens, sought him out,  
 The old bard in the solitary house,  
 And thanked him ere they went to sacrifice.  
 I say, we knew that story of last year!

Therefore, at mention of Euripides,  
 The Captain crowed out "Euoi, praise the  
 God!

Oöp, boys, bring our owl-shield to the fore!  
 Out with our Sacred Anchor! Here she  
 stands,

Balaustion! Strangers, greet the lyric girl!  
 Euripides? Babai! what a word there 'scaped  
 Your teeth's enclosure, quoth my grandsire's  
 song!

Why, fast as snow in Thrace, the voyage  
 through,

Has she been falling thick in flakes of him!  
 Frequent as figs at Kaunos, Kaunians said.  
 Balaustion, stand forth and confirm my speech!  
 Now it was some whole passion of a play;  
 Now, peradventure, but a honey-drop  
 That slipt its comb i' the chorus. If there rose  
 A star, before I could determine steer  
 Southward or northward—if a cloud surprised  
 Heaven, ere I fairly hollaed 'Furl the sail!—'  
 She had at fingers' end both cloud and star;  
 Some thought that perched there, tame and  
 tuneable,

Fitted with wings; and still, as off it flew,  
 'So sang Euripides,' she said, 'so sang  
 The meteoric poet of air and sea,  
 Planets and the pale populace of heaven,  
 The mind of man, and all that's made to soar!'  
 And so, although she has some other name,  
 We only call her Wild-pomegranate-flower,  
 Balaustion; since, where'er the red bloom  
 burns

I' the dull dark verdure of the bounteous tree,  
 Dethroning, in the Rosy Isle,<sup>1</sup> the rose;  
 You shall find food, drink, odour, all at once;  
 Cool leaves to bind about an aching brow,

<sup>1</sup> Rhodes.

And, never much away, the nightingale.  
 Sing them a strophe, with the turn-again,  
 Down to the verse that ends all, proverb-  
 like,  
 And save us, thou Balaustion, bless the name!"

But I cried "Brother Greek! better than so,—  
 Save us, and I have courage to recite  
 The main of a whole play from first to last;  
 That strangest, saddest, sweetest song of his,  
 ALKESTIS; which was taught, long years ago  
 At Athens, in Glaukinos' archonship;  
 But only this year reached our Isle o' the Rose.  
 I saw it, at Kameiros, played the same,  
 They say, as for the right Lenean feast  
 In Athens; and beside the perfect piece—  
 Its beauty and the way it makes you weep,—  
 There is much honour done your own loved  
 God

Herakles, whom you house i' the city here  
 Nobly, the Temple wide Greece talks about!  
 I come a suppliant to your Herakles!  
 Take me and put me on his temple-steps  
 To tell you his achievement as I may,  
 And, that told, he shall bid you set us free!"

Then, because Greeks are Greeks, and hearts  
 are hearts,

And poetry is power,—they all outbroke  
 In a great joyous laughter with much love:  
 "Thank Herakles for the good holiday!  
 Make for the harbour! Row, and let voice  
 ring,

'In we row, bringing more Euripides!'"  
 All the crowd, as they lined the harbour now,  
 "More of Euripides!"—took up the cry.  
 We landed; the whole city, soon astir,  
 Came rushing out of gates in common joy  
 To the suburb temple; there they stationed  
 me

O' the topmost step: and plain I told the  
 play,

Just as I saw it; what the actors said,  
 And what I saw, or thought I saw the while,  
 At our Kameiros theatre, clean-scooped  
 Out of a mill-side, with the sky above  
 And sea before our seats in marble row:  
 Told it; and, two days more, repeated it,

Until they sent us on our way again  
With good words and great wishes.

Oh, for me—

A wealthy Syracusan brought a whole  
Talent and bade me take it for myself:  
I left it on the tripod in the fane,  
—For had not Herakles a second time  
Wrestled with Death and saved devoted  
ones?—

Thank-offering to the hero. And a band  
Of captives, whom their lords grew kinder to  
Because they called the poet countryman,  
Sent me a crown of wild-pomegranate-flower:  
So, I shall live and die Balaustion now.  
But one—one man—one youth,—three days,  
each day,—

(If, ere I lifted up my voice to speak,  
I gave a downward glance by accident)  
Was found at foot o' the temple. When we  
sailed,

There, in the ship too, was he found as well,  
Having a hunger to see Athens too.  
We reached Peiraieus; when I landed—Io,  
He was beside me. Anthesterion-month  
Is just commencing: when its moon rounds  
full,

We are to marry. O Euripides!

I saw the master; when we found ourselves  
(Because the young man needs must follow  
me)

Firm on Peiraieus, I demanded first  
Whither to go and find him. Would you  
think?

The story how he saved us made some smile:  
They wondered strangers were exorbitant  
In estimation of Euripides.

He was not Aischulos nor Sophokles:  
—"Then, of our younger bards who boast  
the bay,

Had I sought Agathon, or Iophon,  
Or, what now had it been Kephisophon?  
A man that never kept good company,  
The most unsociable of poet-kind,  
All beard that was not freckle in his face!"

I soon was at the tragic house, and saw  
The master, held the sacred hand of him

And laid it to my lips. Men love him not:  
How should they? Nor do they much love  
his friend

Sokrates: but those two have fellowship:  
Sokrates often comes to hear him read,  
And never misses if he teach a piece.

Both, being old, will soon have company,  
Sit with their peers above the talk. Mean-  
time,

He lives as should a statue in its niche;  
Cold walls enclose him, mostly darkness  
there,

Alone, unless some foreigner uncouth  
Breaks in, sits, stares an hour, and so  
departs,

Brain-stuffed with something to sustain his  
life,

Dry to the marrow 'mid much merchandise.  
How should such know and love the man?

Why, mark!

Even when I told the play and got the praise,  
There spoke up a brisk little somebody,  
Critic and whippersnapper, in a rage  
To set things right: "The girl departs from  
truth!

Pretends she saw what was not to be seen,  
Making the mask of the actor move, forsooth!  
'Then a fear flitted o'er the wife's white  
face,'—

'Then frowned the father,'—'then the  
husband shook,'—

'Then from the festal forehead slipt each  
spray,

'And the heroic mouth's gay grace was  
gone';—

As she had seen each naked fleshly face,  
And not the merely-painted mask it wore!  
Well, is the explanation difficult?

What's poetry except a power that makes?  
And, speaking to one sense, inspires the rest,  
Pressing them all into its service; so  
That who sees painting, seems to hear as well  
The speech that's proper for the painted  
mouth;

And who hears music, feels his solitude  
Peopled at once—for how count heart-beats  
plain

Unless a company, with hearts which beat,

Come close to the musician, seen or no?  
And who receives true verse at eye or ear,  
Takes in (with verse) time, place, and person  
too,

So, links each sense on to its sister-sense,  
Grace-like: and what if but one sense of  
three

Front you at once? The sidelong pair  
conceive

Thro' faintest touch of finest finger-tips,—  
Hear, see and feel, in faith's simplicity,  
Alike, what one was sole recipient of:  
Who hears the poem, therefore, sees the  
play.

Enough and too much! Hear the play  
itself!

Under the grape-vines, by the streamlet-side,  
Close to Baccheion; till the cool increase,  
And other stars steal on the evening-star,  
And so, we homeward flock i' the dusk, we  
five!

You will expect, no one of all the words  
O' the play but is grown part now of my  
soul,

Since the adventure. 'Tis the poet speaks:  
But if I, too, should try and speak at times,  
Leading your love to where my love, per-  
chance,

Climbed earlier, found a nest before you  
knew—

Why, bear with the poor climber, for love's  
sake!

Look at Baccheion's beauty opposite,  
The temple with the pillars at the porch!  
See you not something beside masonry?

What if my words wind in and out the stone  
As yonder ivy, the God's parasite?

Though they leap all the way the pillar leads,  
Festoon about the marble, foot to frieze,  
And serpentinaing enrich the roof,

Toy with some few bees and a bird or two,—  
What then? The column holds the cornice up.

There slept a silent palace in the sun,  
With plains adjacent and Thessalian peace—  
Pherai, where King Admetos ruled the land.

Out from the portico there gleamed a God,  
Apollon: for the bow was in his hand,  
The quiver at his shoulder, all his shape  
One dreadful beauty. And he hailed the  
house

As if he knew it well and loved it much:  
"O Admetean domes, where I endured,  
Even the God I am, to drudge awhile,  
Do righteous penance for a reckless deed,  
Accepting the slaves' table thankfully!"  
Then told how Zeus had been the cause of all,  
Raising the wrath in him which took revenge  
And slew those forgers of the thunderbolt  
Wherewith Zeus blazed the life from out the  
breast

Of Phoibos' son Asklepios (I surmise,  
Because he brought the dead to life again)  
And so, for punishment, must needs go slave,  
God as he was, with a mere mortal lord:  
—Told how he came to King Admetos' land,  
And played the ministrant, was herdsman  
there,

Warding all harm away from him and his  
Till now; "For, holy as I am," said he,  
"The lord I chanced upon was holy too:  
Whence I deceived the Moirai, drew from  
death

My master, this same son of Pheres,—ay,  
The Goddesses conceded him escape  
From Hades, when the fated day should fall,  
Could he exchange lives, find some friendly  
one

Ready, for his sake, to content the grave.  
But trying all in turn, the friendly list,  
Why, he found no one, none who loved so  
much,

Nor father, nor the aged mother's self  
That bore him, no, not any save his wife,  
Willing to die instead of him and watch  
Never a sunrise nor a sunset more:  
And she is even now within the house,  
Upborne by pitying hands, the feeble frame  
Gasping its last of life out; since to-day  
Destiny is accomplished, and she dies,  
And I, lest here pollution light on me,  
Leave, as ye witness, all my wonted joy  
In this dear dwelling. Ay,—for here comes  
Death

Close on us of a sudden ! who, pale priest  
Of the mute people, means to bear his prey  
To the house of Hades. The symmetric  
step !

How he treads true to time and place and  
thing,  
Dogging day, hour and minute, for death's-  
due !"

And we observed another Deity,  
Half in, half out the portal, — watch and  
ward, —

Eyeing his fellow : formidably fixed,  
Yet faltering too at who affronted him,  
As somehow disadvantaged, should they  
strive.

Like some dread heapy blackness, ruffled  
wing,

Convulsed and cowering head that is all eye,  
Which proves a ruined eagle who, too blind  
Swooping in quest o' the quarry, fawn or kid,  
Descried deep down the chasm 'twixt rock  
and rock,

Has wedged and mortised, into either wall  
O' the mountain, the pent earthquake of his  
power ;

So lies, half hurtless yet still terrible,  
Just when—who stalks up, who stands front  
to front,

But the great lion-guarder of the gorge,  
Lord of the ground, a stationed glory there ?  
Yet he too pauses ere he try the worst  
O' the frightful unfamiliar nature, new  
To the chasm, indeed, but elsewhere known  
enough,

Among the shadows and the silences  
Above i' the sky : so each antagonist  
Silently faced his fellow and forbore.  
Till Death shrilled, hard and quick, in spite  
and fear :

"Ha ha, and what mayst thou do at the  
domes,

Why hauntest here, thou Phoibos ? Here  
again

At the old injustice, limiting our rights,  
Baulking of honour due us Gods o' the grave ?  
Was't not enough for thee to have delayed

Death from Admetos,—with thy crafty art  
Cheating the very Fates,—but thou must arm  
The bow-hand and take station, press 'twixt me  
And Pelias' daughter, who then saved her  
spouse,—

Did just that, now thou comest to undo,—  
Taking his place to die, Alkestis here ?"

But the God sighed "Have courage ! All  
my arms,

This time, are simple justice and fair words."

Then each plied each with rapid interchange :

"What need of bow, were justice arms  
enough ?"

"Ever it is my wont to bear the bow."

"Ay, and with bow, not justice, help this  
house !"

"I help it, since a friend's woe weighs me too."

"And now,—wilt force from me this second  
corpse ?"

"By force I took no corpse at first from thee."

"How then is he above ground, not beneath ?"

"He gave his wife instead of him, thy prey."

"And prey, this time at least, I bear below !"

"Go take her !—for I doubt persuading  
thee . . ."

"To kill the doomed one ? What my function  
else ?"

"No ! Rather, to despatch the true mature."

"Truly I take thy meaning, see thy drift !"

"Is there a way then she may reach old age ?"

"No way ! I glad me in my honours too !"

"But, young or old, thou tak'st one life, no more!"

"Younger they die, greater my praise-reounds!"

"If she die old,—the sumptuous funeral!"

"Thou layest down a law the rich would like."

"How so? Did wit lurk there and 'scape thy sense?"

"Who could buy substitutes would die old men."

"It seems thou wilt not grant me, then, this grace?"

"This grace I will not grant: thou know'st my ways."

"Ways harsh to men, hateful to Gods, at least!"

"All things thou canst not have: my rights for me!"

And then Apollon prophesied,—I think,  
More to himself than to impatient Death,  
Who did not hear or would not heed the while,—

For he went on to say "Yet even so,  
Cruel above the measure, thou shalt clutch  
No life here! Such a man do I perceive  
Advancing to the house of Pheres now,  
Sent by Eurustheus to bring out of Thrace,  
The winter world, a chariot with its steeds!"

He indeed, when Admetos proves the host,  
And he the guest, at the house here,—he it is  
Shall bring to bear such force, and from thy hands

Rescue this woman. Grace no whit to me  
Will that prove, since thou dost thy deed the same,

And earnest too my hate, and all for nought!"

But how should Death or stay or understand?  
Doubtless, he only felt the hour was come,  
And the sword free; for he but flung some taunt—

"Having talked much, thou wilt not gain the more!"

This woman, then, descends to Hades' hall  
Now that I rush on her, begin the rites  
O' the sword; for sacred, to us Gods below,  
That head whose hair this sword shall sanctify!"

And, in the fire-flash of the appalling sword,  
The uprush and the outburst, the onslaught  
Of Death's portentous passage through the door,

Apollon stood a pitying moment-space:  
I caught one last gold gaze upon the night  
Nearing the world now: and the God was gone,

And mortals left to deal with misery,  
As in came stealing slow, now this, now that  
Old sojourner throughout the country-side,  
Servants grown friends to those unhappy here:  
And, cloudlike in their increase, all these griefs

Broke and began the over-brimming wall,  
Out of a common impulse, word by word.

"What now may mean the silence at the door?  
Why is Admetos' mansion stricken dumb?  
Not one friend near, to say if we should mourn  
Our mistress dead, or if Alkestis lives  
And sees the light still, Pelias' child—to me  
To all, conspicuously the best of wives  
That ever was toward husband in this world!  
Hears anyone or wail beneath the roof,  
Or hands that strike each other, or the groan  
Announcing all is done and nought to dread?  
Still not a servant stationed at the gates!  
O Paian, that thou wouldst dispart the wave  
O' the woe, be present! Yet, had woe o'erwhelmed

The housemates, they were hardly silent thus:  
It cannot be, the dead is forth and gone.  
Whence comes thy gleam of hope? I dare not hope:

What is the circumstance that heartens thee?

How could Admetos have dismissed a wife  
So worthy, unescorted to the grave?  
Before the gates I see no hallowed vase  
Of fountain-water, such as suits death's door;  
Nor any clipt locks strew the vestibule,  
Though surely these drop when we grieve the  
dead,  
Nor hand sounds smitten against youthful  
hand,  
The women's way. And yet—the appointed  
time—

How speak the word?—this day is even the day  
Ordained her for departing from its light.  
O touch calamitous to heart and soul!  
Needs must one, when the good are tortured so,  
Sorrow,—one reckoned faithful from the first."

Then their souls rose together, and one sigh  
Went up in cadence from the common mouth:  
How "Vainly—anywhither in the world  
Directing or land-labour or sea-search—  
To Lukia or the sand-waste, Ammon's seat—  
Might you set free their hapless lady's soul  
From the abrupt Fate's footstep instant now.  
Not a sheep-sacrificer at the hearths  
Of Gods had they to go to: one there was  
Who, if his eyes saw light still,—Phoibos'  
son,—

Had wrought so she might leave the shadowy  
place

And Hades' portal; for he propped up Death's  
Subdued ones till the Zeus-flung thunder-flame  
Struck him; and now what hope of life were  
hailed

With open arms? For, all the king could do  
Is done already,—not one God whereof  
The altar fails to reek with sacrifice:  
And for assuagement of these evils—nought!"

But here they broke off, for a matron moved  
Forth from the house: and, as her tears  
flowed fast,

They gathered round. "What fortune shall  
we hear?

For mourning thus, if aught affect thy lord,  
We pardon thee: but lives the lady yet  
Or has she perished?—that we fain would  
know."

"Call her dead, call her living, each style  
serves,"

The matron said: "though grave-ward bowed,  
she breathed;

Nor knew her husband what the misery meant  
Before he felt it: hope of life was none:

The appointed day pressed hard; the funeral  
pomp

He had prepared too."

When the friends broke out:

"Let her in dying know herself at least  
Sole wife, of all the wives 'neath the sun wide,  
For glory and for goodness!"—"Ah, how else  
Than best? who controverts the claim?"  
quoth she:

"What kind of creature should the woman  
prove

That has surpassed Alkestis?—surelier shown  
Preference for her husband to herself

Than by determining to die for him?  
But so much all our city knows indeed:

Hear what she did indoors and wonder then!  
For, when she felt the crowning day was come,  
She washed with river-waters her white skin,  
And, taking from the cedar closets forth  
Vesture and ornament, bedecked herself  
Nobly, and stood before the hearth, and  
prayed:

"Mistress, because I now depart the world,  
Falling before thee the last time, I ask—

Be mother to my orphans! wed the one  
To a kind wife, and make the other's mate

Some princely person: nor, as I who bore  
My children perish, suffer that they too

Die all untimely, but live, happy pair,  
Their full glad life out in the fatherland!"

And every altar through Admetos' house  
She visited and crowned and prayed before,

Stripping the myrtle-foliage from the boughs,  
Without a tear, without a groan,—no change

At all to that skin's nature, fair to see,  
Caused by the imminent evil. But this done—

Reaching her chamber, falling on her bed,  
There, truly, burst she into tears and spoke:

"O bride-bed, where I loosened from my life  
Virginity for that same husband's sake—

Because of whom I die now—fare thee well!  
Since nowise do I hate thee: me alone



Hast thou destroyed ; for, shrinking to betray  
Thee and my spouse, I die : but thee, O bed,  
Some other woman shall possess as wife—  
Truer, no ! but of better fortune, say !

—So falls on, kisses it till all the couch  
Is moistened with the eyes' sad overflow.  
But, when of many tears she had her fill,  
She flings from off the couch, goes headlong  
forth,

Yet,—forth the chamber,—still keeps turning  
back

And casts her on the couch again once more.  
Her children, clinging to their mother's robe,  
Wept meanwhile : but she took them in her  
arms,

And, as a dying woman might, embraced  
Now one and now the other : 'neath the roof,  
All of the household servants wept as well,  
Moved to compassion for their mistress ; she  
Extended her right hand to all and each,  
And there was no one of such low degree  
She spoke not to nor had an answer from.  
Such are the evils in Admetos' house.  
Dying,—why, he had died ; but, living, gains  
Such grief as this he never will forget !

And when they questioned of Admetos,  
" Well—

Holding his dear wife in his hands, he weeps ;  
Entreats her not to give him up, and seeks  
The impossible, in fine : for there she wastes  
And withers by disease, abandoned now,  
A mere dead weight upon her husband's arm.  
Yet, none the less, although she breathe so  
faint,

Her will is to behold the beams o' the sun :  
Since never more again, but this last once,  
Shall she see sun, its circlet or its ray.  
But I will go, announce your presence,—  
friends

Indeed ; since 'tis not all so love their lords  
As seek them in misfortune, kind the same :  
But you are the old friends I recognise."

And at the word she turned again to go  
The while they waited, taking up the plaint  
To Zeus again : " What passage from this  
strait ?

What loosing of the heavy fortune fast  
About the palace ? Will such help appear,  
Or must we clip the locks and cast around  
Each form already the black peplos' fold ?  
Clearly the black robe, clearly ! All the same,  
Pray to the Gods !—like Gods' no power so  
great !

O thou king Paian, find some way to save !  
Reveal it, yea, reveal it ! Since of old  
Thou found'st a cure, why, now again become  
Releaser from the bonds of Death, we beg,  
And give the sanguinary Hades pause !"  
So the song dwindled into a mere moan,  
How dear the wife, and what her husband's  
woe ;

When suddenly—

" Behold, behold ! " breaks forth :  
" Here is she coming from the house indeed !  
Her husband comes, too ! Cry aloud, lament,  
Pheraian land, this best of women, bound—  
So is she withered by disease away—  
For realms below and their infernal king !  
Never will we affirm there's more of joy  
Than grief in marriage ; making estimate  
Both from old sorrows anciently observed,  
And this misfortune of the king we see—  
Admetos who, of bravest spouse bereaved,  
Will live life's remnant out, no life at all ! "

So waited they, while a sad procession wound  
Slow from the innermost o' the palace, stopped  
At the extreme verge of the platform-front :  
There opened, and disclosed Alkestis' self,  
The consecrated lady, borne to look  
Her last—and let the living look their last—  
She at the sun, we at Alkestis.

We !

For would you note a memorable thing ?  
We grew to see in that severe regard,—  
I hear in that hard dry pressure to the point,  
Word slow pursuing word in monotone,—  
What Death meant when he called her con-  
secrate

Henceforth to Hades. I believe, the sword—  
Its office was to cut the soul at once  
From life,—from something in this world  
which hides

Truth, and hides falsehood, and so lets us live

Somehow. Suppose a rider furls a cloak  
About a horse's head; unfrightened, so,  
Between the menace of a flame, between  
Solicitation of the pasturage,  
Untempted equally, he goes his gait  
To journey's end: then pluck the pharos off!  
Show what delusions steadied him i' the  
straight

O' the path, made grass seem fire and fire  
seem grass,

All through a little bandage o'er the eyes!  
As certainly with eyes unbanded now  
Alkestis looked upon the action here,  
Self-immolation for Admetos' sake;  
Saw, with a new sense, all her death would do,  
And which of her survivors had the right,  
And which the less right, to survive thereby.  
For, you shall note, she uttered no one word  
Of love more to her husband, though he  
wept

Plenteously, waxed importunate in prayer—  
Folly's old fashion when its seed bears fruit.  
I think she judged that she had bought the  
ware

O' the seller at its value,—nor praised him  
Nor blamed herself, but, with indifferent eye,  
Saw him purse money up, prepare to leave  
The buyer with a solitary bale—

True purple—but in place of all that coin,  
Had made a hundred others happy too,  
If so willed fate or fortune! What remained  
To give away, should rather go to these  
Than one with coin to clink and contemplate.  
Admetos had his share and might depart,  
The rest was for her children and herself.  
(Charopé makes a face: but wait awhile!)  
She saw things plain as Gods do: by one  
stroke

O' the sword that rends the life-long veil  
away.

(Also Euripides saw plain enough:  
But you and I, Charopé!—you and I  
Will trust his sight until our own grow clear.)

“Sun, and thou light of day, and heavenly  
dance

O' the fleet cloud-figure!” (so her passion  
paused,

While the awe-stricken husband made his  
moan,

Muttered now this now that ineptitude:  
“Sun that sees thee and me, a suffering pair,  
Who did the Gods no wrong whence thou  
shouldst die!”)

Then, as if caught up, carried in their course,  
Fleeting and free as cloud and sunbeam are,  
She missed no happiness that lay beneath:

“O thou wide earth, from these my palace  
roofs,

To distant nuptial chambers once my own  
In that folk of my ancestry!”—

There the flight failed her. “Raise thee,  
wretched one!

Give us not up! Pray pity from the Gods!”

Vainly Admetos: for “I see it—see  
The two-oared boat! The ferryer of the dead,  
Charon, hand hard upon the boatman's pole,  
Calls me—even now calls—‘Why delayest  
thou?

Quick! Thou obstructest all made ready here  
For prompt departure: quick, then!”

“Woe is me!

A bitter voyage this to undergo,  
Even i' the telling! Adverse powers above,  
How do ye plague us!”

Then a shiver ran:

“He has me—seest not?—hales me,—who  
is it?—

To the hall o' the Dead—ah, who but Hades'  
self,

He, with the wings there, glares at me, one gaze  
All that blue brilliance, under the eyebrow!  
What wilt thou do? Unhand me! Such a way  
I have to traverse, all unhappy one!”

“Way—piteous to thy friends, but, most of all,  
Me and thy children: ours assuredly  
A common partnership in grief like this!”

Whereat they closed about her; but “Let be!  
Leave, let me lie now! Strength forsakes  
my feet.

Hades is here, and shadowy on my eyes  
Comes the night creeping. Children—child-  
dren, now

Indeed, a mother is no more for you !  
Farewell, O children, long enjoy the light !”

“ Ah me, the melancholy word I hear,  
Oppressive beyond every kind of death !  
No, by the Deities, take heart nor dare  
To give me up—no, by our children too  
Made orphans of ! But rise, be resolute,  
Since, thou departed, I no more remain !  
For in thee are we bound up, to exist  
Or cease to be—so we adore thy love !”

—Which brought out truth to judgment. At  
this word

And protestation, all the truth in her  
Claimed to assert itself: she waved away  
The blue-eyed black-wing'd phantom, held  
in check

The advancing pageantry of Hades there,  
And, with no change in her own countenance,  
She fixed her eyes on the protesting man,  
And let her lips unlock their sentence,—so !

“ Admetos,—how things go with me thou  
seest,—

I wish to tell thee, ere I die, what things  
I will should follow. I—to honour thee,  
Secure for thee, by my own soul's exchange,  
Continued looking on the daylight here—  
Die for thee—yet, if so I pleased, might live,  
Nay, wed what man of Thessaly I would,  
And dwell i' the dome with pomp and  
queenliness.

I would not,—would not live bereft of thee,  
With children orphaned, neither shrank at all,  
Though having gifts of youth wherein I joyed.  
Yet, who begot thee and who gave thee birth,  
Both of these gave thee up ; no less, a term  
Of life was reached when death became them  
well,

Ay, well—to save their child and glorious die :  
Since thou wast all they had, nor hope remained  
Of having other children in thy place.

So, I and thou had lived out our full time,  
Nor thou, left lonely of thy wife, wouldst groan  
With children reared in orphanage ; but thus  
Some God disposed things, willed they so  
should be.

Be they so ! Now do thou remember this,  
Do me in turn a favour—favour, since  
Certainly I shall never claim my due,  
For nothing is more precious than a life :  
But a fit favour, as thyself wilt say,  
Loving our children here no less than I,  
If head and heart be sound in thee at least.  
Uphold them, make them masters of my house,  
Nor wed and give a step-dame to the pair,  
Who, being a worse wife than I, thro' spite  
Will raise her hand against both thine and mine.  
Never do this at least, I pray to thee !

For hostile the new-comer, the step-dame,  
To the old brood—a very viper she  
For gentleness ! Here stand they, boy and  
girl ;

The boy has got a father, a defence  
Tower-like, he speaks to and has answer from:  
But thou, my girl, how will thy virginhood  
Conclude itself in marriage fittingly ?  
Upon what sort of sire-found yoke-fellow  
Art thou to chance ? with all to apprehend—  
Lest, casting on thee some unkind report,  
She blast thy nuptials in the bloom of youth.  
For neither shall thy mother watch thee wed,  
Nor hearten thee in childbirth, standing by  
Just when a mother's presence helps the most !  
No, for I have to die : and this my ill  
Comes to me, nor to-morrow, no, nor yet  
The third day of the month, but now, even  
now,

I shall be reckoned among those no more.  
Farewell, be happy ! And to thee, indeed,  
Husband, the boast remains permissible  
Thou hadst a wife was worthy ! and to you,  
Children ; as good a mother gave you birth.”

“ Have courage !” interposed the friends,  
“ For him

I have no scruple to declare—all this  
Will he perform, except he fail of sense.”

“ All this shall be—shall be !” Admetos  
sobbed :

“ Fear not ! And, since I had thee living  
dead

Alone wilt thou be called my wife : no fear  
That some Thessalian ever styles herself

Bride, hail this man for husband in thy place  
 No woman, be she of such lofty line  
 Or such surpassing beauty otherwise !  
 Enough of children : gain from these I have,  
 Such only may the Gods grant ! since in thee  
 Absolute is our loss, where all was gain.  
 And I shall bear for thee no year-long grief,  
 But grief that lasts while my own days last,  
 love !

Love ! For my hate is she who bore me,  
 now :

And him I hate, my father : loving-ones  
 Truly, in word not deed ! But thou didst pay  
 All dearest to thee down, and buy my life,  
 Saving me so ! Is there not cause enough  
 That I who part with such companionship  
 In thee, should make my moan ? I moan,  
 and more :

For I will end the feasting—social flow  
 O' the wine friends flock for, garlands and  
 the Muse

That graced my dwelling. Never now for me  
 To touch the lyre, to lift my soul in song  
 At summons of the Lydian flute ; since thou  
 From out my life hast emptied all the joy !  
 And this thy body, in thy likeness wrought  
 By some wise hand of the artificers,  
 Shall lie disposed within my marriage-bed :  
 This I will fall on, this enfold about,  
 Call by thy name,—my dear wife in my arms  
 Even though I have not, I shall seem to  
 have—

A cold delight, indeed, but all the same  
 So should I lighten of its weight my soul !  
 And, wandering my way in dreams perchance,  
 Thyself wilt bless me : for, come when they  
 will,

Even by night our loves are sweet to see.  
 But were the tongue and tune of Orpheus  
 mine,

So that to Koré<sup>1</sup> crying, or her lord,  
 In hymns, from Hades I might rescue thee—  
 Down would I go, and neither Plouton's dog  
 Nor Charon, he whose oar sends souls across,  
 Should stay me till again I made thee stand  
 Living, within the light ! But, failing this,

There, where thou art, await me when I die,  
 Make ready our abode, my house-mate still !  
 For in the self-same cedar, me with thee  
 Will I provide that these our friends shall  
 place,  
 My side lay close by thy side ! Never, corpse  
 Although I be, would I division bear  
 From thee, my faithful one of all the world !"

So he stood sobbing : nowise insincere,  
 But somehow child-like, like his children, like  
 Childishness the world over. What was new  
 In this announcement that his wife must die ?  
 What particle of pain beyond the pact  
 He made, with eyes wide open, long ago—  
 Made and was, if not glad, content to make ?  
 Now that the sorrow, he had called for, came,  
 He sorrowed to the height : none heard him  
 say,

However, what would seem so pertinent,  
 "To keep this pact, I find surpass my power.  
 Rescind it, Moirai ! Give me back her life,  
 And take the life I kept by base exchange !  
 Or, failing that, here stands your laughing-  
 stock

Fooled by you, worthy just the fate o' the fool  
 Who makes a pother to escape the best  
 And gain the worst you wiser Powers allot !"  
 No, not one word of this : nor did his wife  
 Despite the sobbing, and the silence soon  
 To follow, judge so much was in his thought—  
 Fancy that, should the Moirai acquiesce,  
 He would relinquish life nor let her die.  
 The man was like some merchant who, in  
 storm,

Throws the freight over to redeem the ship :  
 No question, saving both were better still.  
 As it was,—why, he sorrowed, which sufficed.  
 So, all she seemed to notice in his speech  
 Was what concerned her children. Children,  
 too,

Bear the grief and accept the sacrifice.  
 Rightly rules nature : does the blossomed bough  
 O' the grape-vine, or the dry grape's self,  
 bleed wine ?

So, bending to her children all her love,  
 She fastened on their father's only word

- To purpose now, and followed it with this. "Ah, willingly indeed I leave them not !  
 "O children, now yourselves have heard But—fare ye well, my children !"  
 these things—
- Your father saying he will never wed "Look on them—  
 Another woman to be over you, Look !"  
 Nor yet dishonour me !"
- "And now at least "I am nothingness."  
 I say it, and I will accomplish too !" "What dost thou ? Leav'st . . ."
- "Then, for such promise of accomplishment, "Farewell !"  
 Take from my hand these children !" And in the breath she passed away.  
 "Undone—me miserable !" moaned the king,  
 "Thus I take— While friends released the long-suspended sigh  
 Dear gift from the dear hand !" Gone is she : no wife for Admetos more !"
- "Do thou become Such was the signal : how the woe broke  
 Mother, now, to these children in my place !" forth,  
 Why tell?—or how the children's tears ran  
 "Great the necessity I should be so, fast  
 At least, to these bereaved of thee !" Bidding their father note the eyelids' stare,  
 Hands' droop, each dreadful circumstance of  
 death.
- "Child—child ! Just when I needed most to live, below  
 Am I departing from you both !" "Ay, she hears not, she sees not : I and you,  
 'Tis plain, are stricken hard and have to  
 bear !"
- "Ah me ! Was all Admetos answered ; for, I judge,  
 And what shall I do, then, left lonely thus ?" He only now began to taste the truth :  
 The thing done lay revealed, which undone  
 thing,
- "Time will appease thee : who is dead is Rehearsed for fact by fancy, at the best,  
 nought." Never can equal. He had used himself  
 This long while (as he muttered presently)  
 To practise with the terms, the blow involved  
 By the bargain, sharp to bear, but bearable  
 Because of plain advantage at the end.
- "Take me with thee—take, by the Gods Now that, in fact not fancy, the blow fell—  
 below !" Needs must he busy him with the surprise.  
 "Alkestis—not to see her nor be seen,  
 Hear nor be heard of by her, any more  
 To-day, to-morrow, to the end of time—  
 Did I mean this should buy my life ?"  
 thought he.
- "We are sufficient, we who die for thee." So, friends came round him, took him by  
 the hand,  
 Bade him remember our mortality,
- "Oh, Powers, ye widow me of what a wife !" "She once was—now is nothing, thou mayst  
 say."
- "And truly the dimmed eye draws earth-ward now !"
- "Wife, if thou leav'st me, I am lost indeed !"
- "Raise thy face nor forsake thy children thus !" "So, friends came round him, took him by  
 the hand,  
 Bade him remember our mortality,

Its due, its doom : how neither was he first,  
Nor would be last, to thus deplore the loved.

"I understand" slow the words came at last.  
"Nor of a sudden did the evil here  
Fly on me : I have known it long ago,  
Ay, and essayed myself in misery ;  
Nothing is new. You have to stay, you  
friends,

Because the next need is to carry forth  
The corpse here : you must stay and do your  
part,

Chant proper pæan to the God below ;  
Drink-sacrifice he likes not. I decree  
That all Thessalians over whom I rule  
Hold grief in common with me ; let them shear  
Their locks, and be the peplos black they  
show !

And you who to the chariot yoke your steeds,  
Or manage steeds one-frontleted,—I charge,  
Clip from each neck with steel the mane away !  
And through my city, nor of flute nor lyre  
Bethere a sound till twelve full moons succeed.  
For I shall never bury any corpse  
Dearer than this to me, nor better friend :  
One worthy of all honour from me, since  
Me she has died for, she and she alone."

With that, he sought the inmost of the house,  
He and his dead, to get grave's garniture,  
While the friends sang the pæan that should  
peal.

"Daughter of Pelias, with farewell from me,  
I the house of Hades have thy unsunned home !  
Let Hades know, the dark-haired deity,—  
And he who sits to row and steer alike,  
Old corpse-conductor, let him know he bears  
Over the Acherontian lake, this time,  
I the two-oared boat, the best—oh, best by  
far

Of womankind ! For thee, Alkestis Queen !  
Many a time those hauntings of the Muse  
Shall sing thee to the seven-stringed mountain-  
shell,

And glorify in hymns that need no harp,  
At Sparta when the cycle comes about,  
And that Karneian month wherein the moon  
Rises and never sets the whole night through :

So too at splendid and magnificent  
Athenai. Such the spread of thy renown,  
And such the lay that, dying, thou hast left  
Singer and sayer. O that I availed  
Of my own might to send thee once again  
From Hades' hall, Kokutos' stream, by help  
O' the oar that dips the river, back to day !"

So, the song sank to prattle in her praise :  
"Light, from above thee, lady, fall the earth,  
Thou only one of womankind to die,  
Wife for her husband ! If Admetos take  
Anything to him like a second spouse—  
Hate from his offspring and from us shall be  
His portion, let the king assure himself !  
No mind his mother had to hide in earth  
Her body for her son's sake, nor his sire  
Had heart to save whom he begot,—not they,  
The white-haired wretches ! only thou it was,  
I the bloom of youth, didst save him and so  
die !

Might it be mine to chance on such a mate  
And partner ! For there's penury in life  
Of such allowance : were she mine at least,  
So wonderful a wife, assuredly  
She would companion me throughout my days  
And never once bring sorrow !"

A great voice—

"My hosts here !"

Oh, the thrill that ran through us  
Never was aught so good and opportune  
As that great interrupting voice ! For see !  
Here maundered this dispirited old age  
Before the palace ; whence a something crept  
Which told us well enough without a word  
What was a doing inside, every touch  
O' the garland on those temples, tenderest  
Disposure of each arm along its side,  
Came putting out what warmth if the world  
was left.

Then, as it happens at a sacrifice  
When, drop by drop, some lustral bath is  
brimmed :

Into the thin and clear and cold, at once  
They slaughter a whole wine-skin : Bacchos'  
blood

Sets the white water all a-flame ; even so,  
Sudden into the midst of sorrow, leapt

Along with the gay cheer of that great voice,  
 Hope, joy, salvation : Herakles was here !  
 Himself, o' the threshold, sent his voice on first  
 To herald all that human and divine  
 I' the weary happy face of him,—half God,  
 Half man, which made the god-part God the

"Hosts mine," he broke upon the sorrow with,  
 "Inhabitants of this Pheraian soil,  
 Chance I upon Admetos inside here?"

The irresistible sound wholesome heart  
 O' the hero,—more than all the mightiness  
 At labour in the limbs that, for man's sake,  
 Laboured and meant to labour their life long,—  
 This drove back, dried up sorrow at its source.  
 How could it brave the happy weary laugh  
 Of who had bantered sorrow "Sorrow here?  
 What have you done to keep your friend from  
 harm?"

Could no one give the life I see he keeps?  
 Or, say there's sorrow here past friendly help,  
 Why waste a word or let a tear escape.  
 While other sorrows wait you in the world,  
 And want the life of you, though helpless here?"  
 Clearly there was no telling such an one  
 How, when their monarch tried who loved  
 him more

Than he loved them, and found they loved,  
 as he,

Each man, himself, and held, no otherwise,  
 That, of all evils in the world, the worst  
 Was—being forced to die, what'er death gain:  
 How all this selfishness in him and them  
 Caused certain sorrow which they sang  
 about,—

I think that Herakles, who held his life  
 Out on his hand, for any man to take—  
 I think his laugh had marred their threnody.

"He is in the house" they answered, After all,  
 They might have told the story, talked their  
 beat.

About the inevitable sorrow here,  
 Nor changed nor checked the kindly nature,  
 —no!

So long as men were merely weak, not bad,

He loved men : were they Gods, he used to  
 help?

"Yea, Pheres' son is in-doors, Herakles.  
 But say, what sends thee to Thessalian soil,  
 Brought by what business to this Pherai  
 town?"

"A certain labour that I have to do.  
 Eurustheus the Tirunthian," laughed the God.

"And whither wendest—on what wandering  
 Bound now?" (they had an instinct, guessed  
 what meant  
 Wanderings, labours, in the God's light  
 mouth.)

"After the Thrakian Diomedes' car  
 With the four horses."

"Ah, but canst thou that?  
 Art inexperienced in thy host to be?"

"All-inexperienced : I have never gone  
 As yet to the land o' the Bistones."

"Then, look  
 By no means to be master of the steeds  
 Without a battle!"

"Battle there may be :  
 I must refuse no labour, all the same."

"Certainly, either having slain a foe  
 Wilt thou return to us, or, slain thyself,  
 Stay there!"

"And, even if the game be so,  
 The risk in it were not the first I run."

"But, say thou overpower the lord o' the place,  
 What more advantage dost expect thereby?"

"I shall drive off his horses to the king."

"No easy handling them to bit the jaw!"

"Easy enough, except, at least, they breathe  
 Fire from their nostrils!"

"But they mince up men  
 With those quick jaws!"

"You talk of provender  
For mountain-beasts, and not mere horses'  
food!"

"Thou mayst behold their mangers caked  
with gore!"

"And of what sire does he who bred them boast  
Himself the son?"

"Of Ares, king o' the targe—  
Thrakian, of gold throughout."

Another laugh.

"Why, just the labour, just the lot for me  
Dost thou describe in what I recognize!  
Since hard and harder, high and higher yet,  
Truly this lot of mine is like to go  
If I must needs join battle with the brood  
Of Ares: ay, I fought Lukaon first,  
And again, Kuknos: now engage in strife  
This third time, with such horses and such  
lord.

But there is nobody shall ever see  
Alkmene's son shrink foemen's hand before!"

—"Overhear him say" (the Chorus thought)  
"That death is terrible; and help us so  
To chime in—'terrible beyond a doubt,  
And, if to thee, why, to ourselves much more:  
Know what has happened, then, and sym-  
pathise'!"

Therefore they gladly stopped the dialogue,  
Shifted the burthen to new shoulder straight,  
As, "Look where comes the lord o' the  
land, himself,  
Admetos, from the palace!" they outbroke  
In some surprise, as well as much relief.  
What had induced the king to waive his right  
And luxury of woe in loneliness?

Out he came quietly; the hair was clipt,  
And the garb sable; else no outward sign  
Of sorrow as he came and faced his friend.  
Was truth fast terrifying tears away?  
"Hail, child of Zeus, and sprung from Per-  
seus too!"

The salutation ran without a fault.

"And thou, Admetos, King of Thessaly!"

"Would, as thou wishest me, the grace  
might fall!  
But my good-wisher, that thou art, I know."

"What's here? these shorn locks, this sad  
show of thee?"

"I must inter a certain corpse to-day."

"Now, from thy children God avert mis-  
chance!"

"They live, my children; all are in the house!"

"Thy father—if 'tis he departs indeed,  
His age was ripe at least."

"My father lives,  
And she who bore me lives too, Herakles."

"It cannot be thy wife Alkestis gone?"

"Two-fold the tale is, I can tell of her."

"Dead dost thou speak of her, or living yet?"

"She is—and is not: hence the pain to me!"

"I learn no whit the more, so dark thy speech!"

"Know'st thou not on what fate she needs  
must fall?"

"I know she is resigned to die for thee."

"How lives she still, then, if submitting so?"

"Eh, weep her not beforehand! wait till  
then!"

"Who is to die is dead; doing is done."

"To be and not to be are thought diverse."

"Thou judgest this—I, that way, Herakles!"

"Well, but declare what causes thy complaint!  
Who is the man has died from out thy friends?"



"No man : I had a woman in my mind."

"Alien, or someone born akin to thee?"

"Alien : but still related to my house."

"How did it happen then that here she died?"

"Her father dying left his orphan here."

"Alas, Admetos—would we found thee gay,  
Not grieving!"

"What as if about to do  
Subjoinest thou that comment?"

"I shall seek  
Another hearth, proceed to other hosts."

"Never, O king, shall that be ! No such ill  
Betide me !"

"Nay, to mourners should there come  
A guest, he proves importunate !"

"The dead—  
Dead are they : but go thou within my house!"

"'Tis base carousing beside friends who  
mourn."

"The guest-rooms, whither we shall lead  
thee, lie  
Apart from ours."

"Nay, let me go my way !  
Ten thousandfold the favour I shall thank !"

"It may not be thou goest to the hearth  
Of any man but me !" so made an end  
Admetos, softly and decisively,  
Of the altercation. Herakles forbore :  
And the king bade a servant lead the way,  
Open the guest-rooms ranged remote from view  
O' the main hall ; tell the functionaries, next,  
They had to furnish forth a plenteous feast,  
And then shut close the doors o' the hall,  
midway,

"Because it is not proper friends who feast  
Should hear a groaning or be grieved," quoth  
he.

Whereat the hero, who was truth itself,  
Let out the smile again, repressed awhile  
Like fountain-brilliance one forbids to play.  
He did too many grandnesses, to note  
Much in the meaner things about his path :  
And stepping there, with face towards the sun,  
Stopped seldom to pluck weeds or ask their  
names.

Therefore he took Admetos at the word :  
This trouble must not hinder any more  
A true heart from good will and pleasant ways.  
And so, the great arm, which had slain the  
snake,

Strained his friend's head a moment in embrace  
On that broad breast beneath the lion's hide,  
Till the king's cheek winced at the thick  
rough gold ;

And then strode off, with who had care of him,  
To the remote guest-chamber : glad to give  
Poor flesh and blood their respite and relief  
In the interval 'twixt fight and fight again—  
All for the world's sake. Our eyes followed  
him,

Be sure, till those mid-doors shut us outside.  
The king, too, watched great Herakles go off  
All faith, love, and obedience to a friend.

And when they questioned him, the simple  
ones,

"What dost thou ? Such calamity to face,  
Lies full before thee—and thou art so bold  
As play the host, Admetos ? Hast thy wits?"

He replied calmly to each chiding tongue :  
"But if from house and home I forced away  
A coming guest, wouldst thou have praised  
me more ?

No, truly ! since calamity were mine,  
Nowise diminished ; while I showed myself  
Unhappy and inhospitable too :  
So adding to my ills this other ill,  
That mine were styled a stranger-hating house.  
Myself have ever found this man the best  
Of entertainers when I went his way  
To parched and thirsty Argos."

"If so be—  
Why didst thou hide what destiny was here,  
When one came that was kindly, as thou  
say'st ?"

"He never would have willed to cross my door

Had he known aught of my calamities.  
And probably to some of you I seem  
Unwise enough in doing what I do ;  
Such will scarce praise me : but these halls  
of mine  
Know not to drive off and dishonour guests."

And so, the duty done, he turned once more  
To go and busy him about his dead.  
As for the sympathisers left to muse,  
There was a change, a new light thrown on  
things,

(Contagion from the magnanimity  
(O' the man whose life lay on his hand so light,  
As up he stepped, pursuing duty still  
"Higher and harder," as he laughed and said.  
Somehow they found no folly now in the act  
They blamed erewhile : Admetos' private  
grief

Shrank to a somewhat pettier obstacle  
I' the way o' the world : they saw good days  
had been,

And good days, peradventure, still might be,  
Now that they overlooked the present cloud  
Heavy upon the palace opposite.  
And soon the thought took words and music  
thus.

"Harbour of many a stranger, free to friend,  
Ever and always, O thou house o' the man  
We mourn for ! Thee, Apollon's very self,  
The lyric Puthian,<sup>1</sup> deigned inhabit once,  
Become a shepherd here in thy domains,  
And pipe, adown the winding hill-side paths,  
Pastoral marriage-poems to thy flocks  
At feed : while with them fed in fellowship,  
Through joy i' the music, spot-skin lynxes ;  
ay,  
And lions too, the bloody company,  
Came, leaving Othrus' dell ;<sup>2</sup> and round thy  
lyre,  
Phoibos, there danced the speckle-coated  
fawn,

<sup>1</sup> Apollo was so called on account of his victory over the Python.

<sup>2</sup> The home of the Centaurs in Thessaly.

Pacing on lightsome fetlock past the pines  
Tress-topped, the creature's natural boundary,  
Into the open everywhere ; such heart  
Had she within her, beating joyous beats,  
At the sweet reassurance of thy song !  
Therefore the lot o' the master is, to live  
In a home multitudinous with herds,  
Along by the fair-flowing Boibian lake,<sup>3</sup>  
Limited, that ploughed land and pasture-plain,  
Only where stand the sun's steeds, stabled  
west

I' the cloud, by that mid-air which makes  
the clime

Of those Molossoi : and he rules as well  
O'er the Aigaian, up to Pelion's shore,—  
Sea-stretch without a port ! Such lord have  
we :

And here he opens house now, as of old,  
Takes to the heart of it a guest again :  
Though moist the cyclid of the master, still  
Mourning his dear wife's body, dead but  
now !"

And they admired : nobility of soul  
Was self-impelled to reverence, they saw :  
The best men ever prove the wisest too :  
Something instinctive guides them still aright.  
And on each soul this boldness settled now,  
That one, who revered the Gods so much,  
Would prosper yet : (or—I could wish it  
ran—

Who venerates the Gods, i' the main will  
still

Practise things honest though obscure to  
judge).

They ended, for Admetos entered now ;  
Having disposed all duteously indoors,  
He came into the outside world again,  
Quiet as ever : but a quietude  
Bent on pursuing its descent to truth,  
As who must grope until he gain the ground  
O' the dungeon doomed to be his dwelling  
now.

Already high o'er head was piled the dusk,  
When something pushed to stay his down-  
ward step,

<sup>3</sup> In Thessaly.

Pluck back despair just reaching its repose.  
He would have bidden the kind presence  
there.

Observe that,—since the corpse was coming  
out,

Cared for in all things that befitted the case,  
Carried aloft, in decency and state,  
To the last burial place and burning pile,—  
'Twere proper friends addressed, as custom  
prompts,  
Alkestis bound on her last journeying.

"Ay, for we see thy father" they subjoined  
"Advancing as the aged foot best may;  
His servants, too: each bringing in his hand  
Adornments for thy wife, all pomp that's due  
To the downward-dwelling people." And  
in truth,

By slow procession till they filled the stage,  
Came Pheres, and his following, and their  
gifts.

You see, the worst of the interruption was,  
It plucked back, with an over-hasty hand,  
Admetos from descending to the truth,  
(I told you)—put him on the brink again,  
Full of the noise and glare where late he  
stood:

With no fate fallen and irrevocable,  
But all things subject still to chance and  
change:

And that chance—life, and that change—  
happiness.

And with the low strife came the little mind:  
He was once more the man might gain so  
much,

Life too and wife too, would his friends but  
help!

All he felt now was that there faced him one  
Supposed the likeliest, in emergency,  
To help: and help, by mere self-sacrifice  
So natural, it seemed as if the sire  
Must needs lie open still to argument,  
Withdraw the rash decision, not to die  
But rather live, though death would save his  
son:—

Argument like the ignominious grasp  
Of the drowner whom his fellow grasps as  
fierce,

Each marvelling that the other needs must  
hold

Head out of water, though friend choke  
thereby

And first the father's salutation fell.  
Burthened, he came, in common with his  
child,

Who lost, none would gainsay, a good chaste  
spouse:

Yet such things must be borne, though hard  
to bear.

"So, take this tribute of adornment, deep  
In the earth let it descend along with her!  
Behoves we treat the body with respect  
—Of one who died, at least, to save thy life,  
Kept me from being childless, nor allowed  
That I, bereft of thee, should peak and pine  
In melancholy age! she, for the sex,  
All of her sisters, put in evidence,  
By daring such a feat, that female life  
Might prove more excellent than men sup-  
pose.

O thou Alkestis!" out he burst in fine,  
"Who, while thou savedst this my son, didst  
raise

Also myself from sinking,—hail to thee!  
Well be it with thee even in the house  
Of Hades! I maintain, if mortals must  
Marry, this sort of marriage is the sole  
Permitted those among them who are wise!"

So his oration ended. Like hates like:  
Accordingly Admetos,—full of the face  
Of Pheres, his true father, outward shape  
And inward fashion, body matching soul,—  
Saw just himself when years should do their  
work

And reinforce the selfishness inside  
Until it pushed the last disguise away:  
As when the liquid metal cools in the mould,  
Stands forth a statue: bloodless, hard, cold  
bronze.

So, in old Pheres, young Admetos showed,  
Pushed to completion: and a shudder ran,  
And his repugnance soon had vent in speech:  
Glad to escape outside, nor, pent within,  
Find itself there fit food for exercise.

"Neither to this interment called by me  
Comest thou, nor thy presence I account  
Among the covetable proofs of love.  
As for thy tribute of adornment,—no !  
Ne'er shall she don it, ne'er in debt to thee  
Be buried ! What is thine, that keep thou  
still !

Then it behoved thee to commiserate  
When I was perishing : but thou—who  
stood'st !

Foot-free o' the snare, wast acquiescent then  
That I, the young, should die, not thou, the  
old—

Wilt thou lament this corpse thyself hast  
slain ?

Thou wast not, then, true father to this flesh ;  
Nor she, who makes profession of my birth  
And styles herself my mother, neither she  
Bore me : but, come of slave's blood, I was  
cast

Stealthily 'neath the bosom of thy wife !  
Thou showedst, put to touch, the thing thou  
art,

Nor I esteem myself born child of thee !  
Otherwise, thine is the preëminence  
O'er all the world in cowardice of soul :  
Who, being the old man thou art, arrived  
Where life should end, didst neither will nor  
dare

Die for thy son, but left the task to her,  
The alien woman, whom I well might think  
Own, only mother both and father too !  
And yet a fair strife had been thine to strive,  
—Dying for thy own child ; and brief for thee  
In any case, the rest of time to live ;  
While I had lived, and she, our rest of time,  
Nor I been left to groan in solitude.

Yet certainly all things which happy man  
Ought to experience, thy experience grasped.  
Thou wast a ruler through the bloom of youth,  
And I was son to thee, recipient due  
Of sceptre and demesne,—no need to fear  
That dying thou shouldst leave an orphan  
house

For strangers to despoil. Nor yet wilt thou  
Allege that as dishonouring, forsooth,  
Thy length of days, I gave thee up to die,—  
I, who have held thee in such reverence !

And in exchange for it, such gratitude  
Thou, father,—thou award'st me, mother  
mine !

Go, lose no time, then, in begetting sons !  
Shall cherish thee in age, and, when thou  
diest,

Deck up and lay thee out as corpses claim !  
For never I, at least, with this my hand  
Will bury thee : it is myself am dead  
So far as lies in thee. But if I light  
Upon another saviour, and still see  
The sunbeam,—his, the child I call myself,  
His, the old age that claims my cherishing.  
How vainly do these aged pray for death,  
Abuse the slow drag of senility !  
But should death step up, nobody inclines  
To die, nor age is now the weight it was !"

You see what all this poor pretentious talk  
Tried at,—how weakness strove to hide itself  
In bluster against weakness,—the loud word  
To hide the little whisper, not so low  
Already in that heart beneath those lips !  
Ha, could it be, who hated cowardice  
Stood confessed craven, and who lauded so  
Self-immolating love, himself had pushed  
The loved one to the altar in his place ?  
Friends interposed, would fain stop further  
play

O' the sharp-edged tongue : they felt love's  
champion here

Had left an undefended point or two,  
The antagonist might profit by ; bade  
"Pause !

Enough the present sorrow ! Nor, O son,  
Whet thus against thyself thy father's soul !"

Ay, but old Pheres was the stouter stuff !  
Admetos, at the flintiest of the heart,  
Had so much soft in him as held a fire :  
The other was all iron, clashed from flint  
Its fire, but shed no spark and showed no  
bruise.

Did Pheres crave instruction as to facts ?  
He came, content, the ignoble word, for him,  
Should lurk still in the blackness of each  
breast,

As sleeps the water-serpent half surprised :

Not brought up to the surface at a bound,  
By one touch of the idly-probing spear,  
Reed-like against unconquerable scale,  
He came pacific, rather, as strength should,  
Bringing the decent praise, the due regret,  
And each banality prescribed of old.  
Did he commence "Why let her die for  
you?"

And rouse the coiled and quiet ugliness  
"What is so good to man as man's own  
life?"

No: but the other did: and, for his pains,  
Out, full in face of him, the venom leapt.

"And whom dost thou make bold, son—  
Ludian slave,  
Or Phrugian whether, money made thy ware,  
To drive at with revilings? Know'st thou  
not

I, a Thessalian, from Thessalian sire  
Spring and am born legitimately free?  
Too arrogant art thou; and, youngster words  
Casting against me, having had thy fling,  
Thou goest not off as all were ended so!  
I gave thee birth indeed and mastership  
I' the mansion, brought thee up to boot:  
there ends

My owing, nor extends to die for thee!  
Never did I receive it as a law  
Hereditary, no, nor Greek at all,  
That sires in place of sons were bound to die.  
For, to thy sole and single self wast thou  
Born, with whatever fortune, good or bad;  
Such things as bear bestowment, those thou  
hast;

Already ruling widely, broad-lands, too,  
Doubt not but I shall leave thee in due time:  
For why? My father left me them before.  
Well then, where wrong I thee?—of what  
defraud?

Neither do thou die for this man, myself,  
Nor let him die for thee!—is all I beg.  
Thou joyest seeing daylight: dost suppose  
Thy father joys not too? Undoubtedly,  
Long I account the time to pass below,  
And brief my span of days; yet sweet the  
same:

Is it otherwise to thee who, impudent,

Didst fight off this same death, and livest now  
Through having sneaked past fate appor-  
tioned thee,

And slain thy wife so? Cryest cowardice  
On me, I wonder, thou—whom, poor  
poltroon,

A very woman worsted, daring death  
Just for the sake of thee, her handsome spark?  
Shrewdly hast thou contrived how not to die  
For evermore now: 'tis but still persuade  
The wife, for the time being, to take thy  
place!

What, and thy friends who would not do the  
like,

These dost thou carp at, craven thus thyself?  
Crouch and be silent, craven! Comprehend  
That, if thou lovest so that life of thine,  
Why, everybody loves his own life too:  
So, good words, henceforth! If thou speak  
us ill,

Many and true an ill thing shalt thou hear!"

There you saw leap the hydra at full length!  
Only, the old kept glorying the more,  
The more the portent thus uncoiled itself,  
Whereas the young man shuddered head to  
foot,

And shrank from kinship with the creature.

Why  
Such horror, unless what he hated most,  
Vaunting itself outside, might fairly claim  
Acquaintance with the counterpart at home?  
I would the Chorus here had plucked up  
heart,

Spoken out boldly and explained the man,  
If not to men, to Gods. That way, I think,  
Sophokles would have led their dance and  
song.

Here, they said simply "Too much evil spoke  
On both sides!" As the young before, so now  
They bade the old man leave abusing thus.

"Let him speak,—I have spoken!" said the  
youth:

And so died out the wrangle by degrees  
In wretched bickering. "If thou wince at  
fact,

Behoved thee not prove faulty to myself!"

"Had I died for thee I had faulted more!"

"True!

"All's one, then, for youth's bloom and age  
to die?"

Thou couldst not call thy young wife im-  
pudent:

She was found foolish merely."

"Get thee gone!

"Our duty is to live one life, not two!"

And let me bury this my dead!"

"I go.

"Go then, and outlive Zeus, for aught I

Thou buriest her whom thou didst murder  
first;

"What, curse thy parents with no sort of  
cause?"

Whereof there's some account to render yet  
Those kinsfolk by the marriage-side! I think,

Brother Akastos may be classed with me,

Among the beasts, not men, if he omit

Avenging upon thee his sister's blood!"

"Curse, truly! All thou lovest is long life!"

"And dost not thou, too, all for love of life,  
Carry out now, in place of thine, this corpse?"

"Go to perdition, with thy housemate too!

Grow old all childlessly, with child alive,

Just as ye merit! for to me, at least,

Beneath the same roof ne'er do ye return.

And did I need by heralds' help renounce

The ancestral hearth, I had renounced the  
same!

"Monument, rather, of thy cowardice,  
Thou worst one!"

"Not for me she died, I hope!  
That, thou wilt hardly say!"

"No, simply this:  
Would, some day, thou mayst come to need  
myself!"

But we—since this woe, lying at our feet  
P' the path, is to be borne—let us proceed  
And lay the body on the pyre."

I think,

"Meanwhile, woo many wives—the more  
will die!"

What, thro' this wretched wrangle, kept the  
man

"And so shame thee who never dared the  
like!"

From seeing clear—beside the cause I gave—

Was, that the woe, himself described as full

I' the path before him, there did really lie—

Not roll into the abyss of dead and gone.

"Dear is this light o' the sun-god—dear, I  
say!"

How, with Alkestis present, calmly crowned,

Was she so irrecoverable yet—

The bird, escaped, that's just on bough above,

The flower, let flutter half-way down the  
brink?

"Proper conclusion for a beast to draw!"

"One thing is certain: there's no laughing  
now,

As out thou bearest the poor dead old man!"

Not so detached seemed lifelessness from life  
But—one dear stretch beyond all straining  
yet—

And he might have her at his heart once

more,

When, in the critical minute, up there comes

The father and the fact, to trifle time!

"Die when thou wilt, thou wilt die in-  
famous!"

"And once dead, whether famed or infamous,  
I shall not care!"

"Alas and yet again!

How full is age of impudency!"

"To the pyre!" an instinct prompted: pallid  
face,

And passive arm and pointed foot, when these

No longer shall absorb the sight, O friends,  
Admetos will begin to see indeed  
Who the true foe was, where the blows should  
fall!

So, the old selfish Pheres went his way,  
Case-hardened as he came; and left the  
youth,  
(Only half-selfish now, since sensitive)  
To go on learning by a light the more,  
As friends moved off, renewing dirge the  
while:

"Unhappy in thy daring! Noble dame,  
Best of the good, farewell! With favouring  
face

May Hermes the infernal, Hades too,  
Receive thee! And if there,—ay, there,—  
some touch

Of further dignity await the good,  
Sharing with them, mayst thou sit throned  
by her

The Bride of Hades, in companionship!"

Wherewith, the sad' procession wound away,  
Made slowly for the suburb sepulchre.  
And lo,—while still one's heart, in time and  
tune,

Paced after that symmetric step of Death  
Mute-marching, to the mind's eye, at the head  
O' the mourners—one hand pointing out  
their path

With the long pale terrific sword we saw,  
The other leading, with grim tender grace,  
Alkestis quieted and consecrate,—  
Lo, life again knocked laughing at the door!  
The world goes on, goes ever, in and through,  
And out again o' the cloud. We faced about,  
Fronted the palace where the mid-hall-gate  
Opened—not half, nor half of half, perhaps—  
Yet wide enough to let out light and life,  
And warmth and bounty and hope and joy,  
at once.

Festivity burst wide, fruit rare and ripe  
Crushed in the mouth of Bacchos, pulpy-prime,  
All juice and flavour, save one single seed  
Duly ejected from the God's nice lip,  
Which lay o' the red edge, blackly visible—

To wit, a certain ancient servitor  
On whom the festal jaws o' the palace shut,  
So, there he stood, a much-bewildered man.  
Stupid? Nay, but sagacious in a sort:  
Learned, life long, i' the first outside of things,  
Though bat for blindness to what lies beneath  
And needs a nail-scratch ere 'tis laid you bare.  
This functionary was the trusted one  
We saw deputed by Admetos late  
To lead in Herakles and help him, soul  
And body, to such snatched repose, snapped-  
up

Sustainment, as might do away the dust  
O' the last encounter, knit each nerve anew  
For that next onset sure to come at cry  
O' the creature next assailed,—nay, should  
it prove  
Only the creature that came forward now  
To play the critic upon Herakles!

"Many the guests"—so he soliloquized  
In musings burdensome to breast before,  
When it seemed not too prudent tongue  
should wag—

"Many, and from all quarters of this world,  
The guests I now have known frequent our  
house,  
For whom I spread the banquet; but, than  
this,  
Never a worse one did I yet receive.  
At the hearth here! One who seeing, first  
of all,

The master's sorrow, entered gate the same,  
And had the hardihood to house himself.  
Did things stop there! But, modest by no  
means,  
He took what entertainment lay to hand,  
Knowing of our misfortune,—did we fail  
In aught of the fit service, urged us serve  
Just as a guest expects! And in his hands  
Taking the ivied goblet, drinks and drinks  
The unmixed product of black mother-earth,  
Until the blaze o' the wine went round about  
And warmed him: then he crowns with myrtle  
sprigs

His head, and howls discordance—twofold lay!  
Was thereupon for us to listen to—  
This fellow singing, namely, nor restrained:

A jot by sympathy with sorrows here—  
While we o' the household mourned our  
mistress—mourned,

That is to say, in silence—never showed  
The eyes, which we kept wetting, to the  
guest—

For there Admetos was imperative.

And so, here am I helping make at home  
A guest, some fellow ripe for wickedness,  
Robber or pirate, while she goes her way  
Out of our house : and neither was it mine  
To follow in procession, nor stretch forth  
Hand, wave my lady dear a last farewell,  
Lamenting who to me and all of us  
Domestics was a mother : myriad harms  
She used to ward away from everyone,  
And mollify her husband's ireful mood.  
I ask then, do I justly hate or no  
This guest, this interloper on our grief?"

"Hate him and justly !" Here's the proper  
judge

Of what is due to the house from Herakles !  
This man of much experience saw the first  
O' the feeble duckings-down at destiny,  
When King Admetos went his rounds, poor  
soul,

A-begging somebody to be so brave

As die for one afraid to die himself—

"Thou, friend ? Thou, love ? Father or  
mother, then !

None of you ? What, Alkestis must Death  
catch ?

O best of wives, one woman in the world !  
But nowise droop : our prayers may still assist :  
Let us try sacrifice ; if those avail  
Nothing and Gods avert their countenance,  
Why, deep and durable our grief will be !"

Whereat the house, this worthy at its head,  
Re-echoed "deep and durable our grief !"

This sage, who justly hated Herakles,  
Did he suggest once "Rather I than she !"

Admonish the Turannos—"Be a man !

Bear thine own burden, never think to thrust  
Thy fate upon another and thy wife !

It were a dubious gain could death be doomed  
That other, and no passionatest plea

Of thine, to die instead, have force with fate ;

Seeing thou lov'st Alkestis : what were life  
Unlighted by the loved one ? But to live—  
Not merely live unsolaced by some thought,  
Some word so poor—yet solace all the same—

As 'Thou i' the sepulchre, Alkestis, say !

Would I, or would not I, to save thy life,

Die, and die on, and die for evermore ?"

No ! but to read red-written up and down  
The world 'This is the sunshine, this the  
shade,

This is some pleasure of earth, sky or sea,  
Due to that other, dead that thou mayst  
live !"

Such were a covetable gain to thee ?

Go die, fool, and be happy while 'tis time !"

One word of counsel in this kind, methinks,

Had fallen to better purpose than Ai, ai,

Pheu, pheu, e, papai, and a poth of praise

O' the best, best, best one ! Nothing was to  
hate

In King Admetos, Pheres, and the rest

O' the household down to his heroic self !

This was the one thing hateful : Herakles

Had flung into the presence, frank and free,

Out from the labour into the repose,

Ere out again and over head and ears

I' the heart of labour, all for love of men :

Making the most o' the minute, that the soul

And body, strained to height a minute since,

Might lie relaxed in joy, this breathing-space,

For man's sake more than ever ; till the bow,

Restrung o' the sudden, at first cry for help,

Should send some unimaginable shaft

True to the aim and shatteringly through

The plate-mail of a monster, save man so.

He slew the pest o' the marish yesterday :

To-morrow he would bit the flame-breathed  
stud

That fed on man's-flesh : and this day be-  
tween—

Because he held it natural to die,

And fruitless to lament a thing past cure,

So, took his fill of food, wine, song and  
flowers,

Till the new labour claimed him soon  
enough,—

"Hate him and justly !"

True, Charopé mine !



The man surmised not Herakles lay hid  
 I' the guest ; or, knowing it, was ignorant  
 That still his lady lived—for Herakles ;  
 Or else judged lightness needs must indicate  
 This or the other caitiff quality :  
 And therefore—had been right if not so  
 wrong !

For who expects the sort of him will scratch  
 A nail's depth, scrape the surface just to see  
 What peradventure underlies the same ?

So, he stood petting up his puny hate,  
 Parent-wise, proud of the ill-favoured babe.  
 Not long ! A great hand, careful lest it crush,  
 Startled him on the shoulder : up he stared,  
 And over him, who stood but Herakles !  
 There smiled the mighty presence, all one  
 smile

And no touch more of the world-weary God,  
 Through the brief respite. Just a garland's  
 grace

About the brow, a song to satisfy  
 Head, heart and breast, and trumpet-lips at  
 once,

A solemn draught of true religious wine,  
 And,—how should I know ? half a mountain  
 goat

Torn up and swallowed down,—the feast was  
 fierce

But brief : all cares and pains took wing and  
 flew,

Leaving the hero ready to begin  
 And help mankind, whatever woe came next,  
 Even though what came next should be  
 nought more

Than the mean querulous mouth o' the man,  
 remarked

Pursing its grievance up till patience failed  
 And the sage needs must rush out, as we saw  
 To sulk outside and pet his hate in peace.  
 By no means would the Helper have it so :

He who was just about to handle brutes  
 In Thrace, and bit the jaws which breathed  
 the flame,—

Well, if a good laugh and a jovial word  
 Could bridle age which blew bad humours  
 forth,

That were a kind of help, too !

"Thou, there !" hailed

This grand benevolence the ungracious one—  
 "Why look'st so solemn and so thought-  
 absorbed ?

To guests a servant should not sour-faced be,  
 But do the honours with a mind urbane.

While thou, contrariwise, beholding here  
 Arrive thy master's comrade, hast for him  
 A churlish visage, all one beetle-brow—  
 Having regard to grief that's out-of-door !  
 Come hither, and so get to grow more wise !  
 Things mortal—know'st the nature that they  
 have ?

No, I imagine ! whence could knowledge  
 spring ?

Give ear to me, then ! For all flesh to die,  
 Is nature's due ; nor is there any one  
 Of mortals with assurance he shall last  
 The coming morrow : for, what's born of  
 chance

Invisibly proceeds the way it will,  
 Not to be learned, no fortune-teller's prize.

This, therefore, having heard and known  
 through me,

Gladdden thyself ! Drink ! Count the day-  
 by-day

Existence thine, and all the other—chance !

Ay, and pay homage also to by far  
 The sweetest of divinities for man,

Kupris !<sup>1</sup> Benignant Goddess will she prove !  
 But as for aught else, leave and let things be !

And trust my counsel, if I seem to speak  
 To purpose—as I do, apparently.

Wilt not thou, then,—discarding overmuch  
 Mournfulness, do away with this shut door,

Come drink along with me, be-garlanded  
 This fashion ? Doso, and—I well know what—

From this stern mood, this shrunk-up state  
 of mind,

The pit-pat fall o' the flagon-juice down  
 throat

Soon will dislodge thee from bad harbourage !

Men being mortal should think mortal-like :  
 Since to your solemn, brow-contracting sort,  
 All of them,—so I lay down law at least,—  
 Life is not truly life but misery."

<sup>1</sup> The Cyprian Venus

Whereto the man with softened surliness :

"We know as much : but deal with matters,  
now,  
Hardly befitting mirth and revelry."

"No intimate, this woman that is dead :

Mourn not too much ! For, those o' the house  
itself,  
Thy masters live, remember !"

"Live indeed ?

Ah, thou know'st nought o' the woe within  
these walls !"

"I do—unless thy master spoke me false  
Somehow !"

"Ay, ay, too much he loves a guest,  
Too much, that master mine !" so muttered he.

"Was it improper he should treat me well,  
Because an alien corpse was in the way ?"

"No alien, but most intimate indeed !"

"Can it be, some woe was, he told me not ?"

"Farewell and go thy way ! Thy cares for  
thee—

To us, our master's sorrow is a care."

"This word begins no tale of alien woe !"

"Had it been other woe than intimate,  
I could have seen thee feast, nor felt amiss."

"What ! have I suffered strangely from my  
host ?"

"Thou cam'st not at a fit reception-time :  
With sorrow here beforehand : and thou seest  
Shorn hair, black robes."

"But who is it that's dead ?  
Some child gone? or the aged sire perhaps ?"

"Admetos' wife, then ! she has perished, guest !"

"How sayest ? And did ye house me, all the  
same ?"

"Ay : for he had thee in that reverence  
He dared not turn thee from his door away !"

"O hapless, and bereft of what a mate !"

"All of us now are dead, not she alone !"

"But I divined it ! seeing, as I did,  
His eye that ran with tears, his close-clipt hair,  
His countenance ! Though he persuaded me,  
Saying it was a stranger's funeral  
He went with to the grave : against my wish,  
He forced on me that I should enter doors,  
Drink in the hall o' the hospitable man  
Circumstanced so ! And do I revel yet  
With wreath on head ? But—thou to hold  
thy peace

Nor tell me what a woe oppressed my friend !  
Where is he gone to bury her ? Where am I  
To go and find her ?"

"By the road that lead-  
Straight to Larissa, thou wilt see the tomb,  
Out of the suburb, a carved sepulchre."

So said he, and therewith dismissed himself  
Inside to his lamenting : somewhat soothed,  
However, that he had adroitly spoilt  
The mirth of the great creature : oh, he marked  
The movement of the mouth, how lip pressed  
lip,

And either eye forgot to shine, as, fast,  
He plucked the chaplet from his forehead,  
dashed

The myrtle-sprays down, trod them underfoot !  
And all the joy and wonder of the wine  
Withered away, like fire from off a brand  
The wind blows over—beacon though it be,  
Whose merry ardour only meant to make  
Somebody all the better for its blaze,  
And save lost people in the dark : quenched  
now !

Not long quenched ! As the flame, just  
hurried off

The brand's edge, suddenly renews its bite,  
Tasting some richness caked i' the core o' the  
tree,—  
Pine, with a blood that's oil,—and triumphs up

Pillar-wise to the sky and saves the world :  
So, in a spasm and splendour of resolve,  
All at once did the God surmount the man.

"O much-enduring heart and hand of mine !  
Now show what sort of son she bore to Zeus,  
That daughter of Elektruon, Tiruns' child,  
Alkméné ! for that son must needs save now  
The just-head lady : ay, establish here  
I' the house again Alkestis, bring about  
Comfort and succour to Admetos so !  
I will go lie in wait for Death, black-stoled  
King of the corpses ! I shall find him, sure,  
Drinking, beside the tomb, o' the sacrifice :  
And if I lie in ambushade, and leap  
Out of my lair, and seize—encircle him  
Till one hand join the other round about—  
There lives not who shall pull him out from me,  
Rib-mauled, before he let the woman go !  
But even say I miss the booty,—say,  
Death comes not to the bolted blood,—why  
then,

Down go I, to the unsunned dwelling-place  
Of Koré and the king there,—make demand,  
Confident I shall bring Alkestis back,  
So as to put her in the hands of him  
My host, that housed me, never drove me off :  
Though stricken with sore sorrow, hid the  
stroke,

Being a noble heart and honouring me !  
Who of Thessalians, more than this man, loves  
The stranger ? Who, that now inhabits  
Greece ?

Wherefore he shall not say the man was vile  
Whom he befriended,—native noble heart !"

So, one look upward, as if Zeus might laugh  
Approval of his human progeny,—  
One summons of the whole magnific frame,  
Each sinew to its service,—up he caught,  
And over shoulder cast, the lion-shag,  
Let the club go,—for had he not those hands ?  
And so went striding off, on that straight way  
Leads to Larissa and the suburb tomb.  
Gladness be with thee, Helper of our world !  
I think this is the authentic sign and seal  
Of Godship, that it ever waxes glad,  
And more glad, until gladness blossoms, bursts

Into a rage to suffer for mankind,  
And recompence at sorrow : drops like seed  
After the blossom, ultimate of all.  
Say, does the seed scorn earth and seek the  
sun ?

Surely it has no other end and aim  
Than to drop, orice more die into the ground,  
Taste cold and darkness and oblivion there :  
And thence rise, tree-like grow through pain  
to joy,  
More joy and most joy,—do man good again.

So, to the struggle off strode Herakles.  
When silence closed behind the lion-garb,  
Back came our dull fact settling in its place,  
Though heartiness and passion half-dispersed  
The inevitable fate. And presently  
In came the mourners from the funeral,  
One after one, until we hoped the last  
Would be Alkestis and so end our dream.  
Could they have really left Alkestis lone  
I' the wayside sepulchre ! Home, all save she !  
And when Admetos felt that it was so,  
By the stand-still : when he lifted head and face  
From the two hiding hands and peplos' fold,  
And looked forth, knew the palace, knew the  
hills,  
Knew the plains, knew the friendly frequency  
there,  
And no Alkestis any more again,  
Why, the whole woe billow-like broke on him.

"O hateful entry, hateful countenance  
O' the widowed halls !"—he moaned. "What  
was to be ?

Go there ? Stay here ? Speak, not speak ?  
All was now

Mad and impossible alike ; one way  
And only one was sane and safe—to die :  
Now he was made aware how dear is death,  
How loveable the dead are, how the heart  
Yearns in us to go hide where they repose,  
When we find sunbeams do no good to see,  
Nor earth rests rightly where our footsteps fall.  
His wife had been to him the very pledge,  
Sun should be sun, earth—earth ; the pledge  
was robbed,  
Fact broken, and the world was left no world."

He stared at the impossible mad life :

Stood, while they urged "Advance—advance!  
Go deep!

Into the utter dark, thy palace-core !"  
They tried what they called comfort, "touched  
the quick

Of the ulceration in his soul," he said,  
With memories,—“once thy joy was thus and  
thus !”

True comfort were to let him fling himself  
Into the hollow grave o' the tomb, and so  
Let him lie dead along with all he loved.

One bade him note that his own family  
Boasted a certain father whose sole son,  
Worthy bewailment, died : and yet the sire  
Bore stoutly up against the blow and lived ;  
For all that he was childless now, and prone  
Already to grey hairs, far on in life.  
Could such a good example miss effect ?  
Why fix foot, stand so, staring at the house,  
Why not go in, as that wise kinsman would ?

“O that arrangement of the house I know !  
How can I enter, how inhabit thee  
Now that one cast of fortune changes all ?  
Oh me, for much divides the then from now !  
Then—with those pine-tree torches, Pelian  
pomp

And marriage-hymns, I entered, holding high  
The hand of my dear wife ; while many-voiced  
The revelry that followed me and her  
That's dead now,—friends felicitating both,  
As who were lofty-lineaged, each of us  
Born of the best, two wedded and made one ;  
Now—wail is wedding-chant's antagonist,  
And, for white peplos, stoles in sable state  
Herald my way to the deserted couch !”

The one word more they ventured was “This  
grief

Befell thee witless of what sorrow means,  
Close after prosperous fortune : but, reflect !  
Thou hast saved soul and body. Dead, thy  
wife—

Living, the love she left. What's novel here ?  
Many the man, from whom Death long ago  
Loosed the life-partner !”

Then Admetos spoke :

Turned on the comfort, with no tears, this time.  
He was beginning to be like his wife.

I told you of that pressure to the point,  
Word slow pursuing word in monotone,  
Alkestis spoke with ; so Admetos, now,  
Solemnly bore the burden of the truth.

And as the voice of him grew, gathered  
strength,

And groaned on, and persisted to the end,  
We felt now deep had been descent in grief,  
And with what change he came up now to  
light,

And left behind such littleness as tears.

“Friends, I account the fortune of my wife  
Happier than mine, though it seem otherwise :  
For, her indeed no grief will ever touch,  
And she from many a labour pauses now,  
Renowned one ! Whereas I, who ought not  
live,

But do live, by evading destiny,  
Sad life am I to lead, I learn at last !  
For how shall I bear going in-doors here ?  
Accosting whom ? By whom saluted back,  
Shall I have joyous entry ? Whither turn ?  
Inside, the solitude will drive me forth,  
When I behold the empty bed—my wife's—  
The seat she used to sit upon, the floor  
Unsprinkled as when dwellers loved the cool,  
The children that will clasp my knees about,  
Cry for their mother back : these servants too  
Moaning for what a guardian they have lost !  
Inside my house such circumstance awaits.  
Outside,—Thessalian people's marriage-feasts  
And gatherings for talk will harass me,  
With overflow of women everywhere ;  
It is impossible I look on them—  
Familiars of my wife and just her age !

And then, whoever is a foe of mine,  
And lights on me—why, this will be his word—  
‘See there ! alive ignobly, there he skulks  
That played the dastard when it came to die,  
And, giving her he wedded, in exchange,  
Kept himself out of Hades safe and sound,  
The coward ! Do you call that creature—  
man ?

He hates his parents for declining death,

Just as if he himself would gladly die !  
 This sort of reputation shall I have,  
 Beside the other ills enough in store.  
 Ill-famed, ill-faring, — what advantage,  
     friends,  
 Do you perceive I gain by life for death ? ”

That was the truth. Vexed waters sank to  
 smooth :

’Twas only when the last of bubbles broke,  
 The latest circlet widened all away  
 And left a placid level, that up swam  
 To the surface the drowned truth, in dreadful  
     change.

So, through the quiet and submission,—ay,  
 Spite of some strong words—(for you miss  
     the tone)

The grief was getting to be infinite—  
 Grief, friends fell back before. Their office  
     shrank

To that old solace of humanity—  
 “ Being born mortal, bear grief ! Why born  
     else ? ”

And they could only meditate anew.

“ They, too, upborne by airy help of song,  
 And haply science, which can find the stars,  
 Had searched the heights : had sounded  
     depths as well

Bycatching much at books where logic lurked,  
 Yet nowhere found they aught could overcome  
 Necessity : not any medicine served,

Which Thrakian tablets treasure, Orphic voice  
 Wrote itself down upon : nor remedy.

Which Phoibos gave to the Asklepiadai ;

Cutting the roots of many a virtuous herb

To solace overburdened mortals. None !

Of this sole goddess, never may we go

To altar nor to image : sacrifice

She hears not. All to pray for is—‘ Approach !

But, oh, no harder on me, awful one,

Than heretofore ! Let life endure thee still !

For, whatsoe’er Zeus’ nod decree, that same

In concert with thee hath accomplishment.

Iron, the very stuff o’ the Chaluboi,

Thou, by sheer strength, dost conquer and  
     subdue.

Nor, of that harsh abrupt resolve of thine,  
 Any relenting is there ! ”

“ O my king !

Thee also, in the shackles of those hands,  
 Not to be shunned, the Goddess grasped !

Yet, bear !

Since never wilt thou lead from underground  
 The dead ones, wail thy worst ! If mortals  
     die,—

The very children of immortals, too,  
 Dropped ’mid our darkness, these decay assure !

Dear indeed was she while among us : dear,  
 Now she is dead, must she for ever be :

Thy portion was to clasp, within thy couch,  
 The noblest of all women as a wife.

Nor be the tomb of her supposed some heap  
 That hides mortality : but like the Gods

Honoured, a veneration to a world

Of wanderers ! Oft the wanderer, struck  
     thereby,

Who else had sailed past in his merchant-ship,  
 Ay, he shall leave ship, land, long wind his way

Up to the mountain-summit, till there break  
 Speech forth ‘ So, this was she, then, died

of old

To save her husband ! now, a deity  
 She bends above us. Hail, benignant one !

Give good ! ’ Such voices so will supplicate.

“ But—can it be ? Alkmene’s offspring comes,  
 Admetos !—to thy house advances here ! ”

I doubt not, they supposed him decently  
 Dead somewhere in that winter world of  
     Thrace—

Vanquished by one o’ the Bistones, or else

Victim to some mad steed’s voracity—

For did not friends prognosticate as much ?

It were a new example to the point,

That “ children of immortals, dropped by  
     stealth

Into our darkness, die as sure as we ! ”

A case to quote and comfort people with :

But, as for lamentation, ai and pheu,

Right-minded subjects kept them for their lord.

Ay, he it was advancing ! In he strode,  
 And took his stand before Admetos,—turned

Now by despair to such a quietude,  
He neither raised his face nor spoke, this time,  
The while his friend surveyed him steadily.  
That friend looked rough with fighting : had  
he strained

Worst brute to breast was ever strangled yet?  
Somehow, a victory — for there stood the  
strength,

Happy, as always ; something grave, perhaps ;  
The great vein-cordage on the fret-worked  
front,

Black-swollen, beaded yet with battle-dew  
The yellow hair o' the hero ! — his big frame  
A-quiver with each muscle sinking back  
Into the sleepy smooth it leaped from late.

Under the great guard of one arm, there leant  
A shrouded something, live and woman-like,  
Propped by the heart-beats 'neath the lion-  
coat.

When he had finished his survey, it seemed,  
The heavings of the heart began subside,  
The helpful breath returned, and last the smile  
Shone out, all Herakles was back again,  
As the words followed the saluting hand.

" To friendly man, behoves we freely speak,  
Admetos ! — nor keep buried, deep in breast,  
Blame we leave silent. I assuredly  
Judged myself proper, if I should approach  
By accident calamities of thine,  
To be demonstrably thy friend : but thou  
Told'st me not of the corpse then claiming care,  
That was thy wife's, but didst instal me guest  
In the house here, as though busied with a grief  
Indeed, but then, mere grief beyond thy gate :  
And so, I crowned my head, and to the Gods  
Poured my libations in thy dwelling-place,  
With such misfortune round me. And I  
blame —

Certainly blame thee, having suffered thus !  
But still I would not pain thee, pained enough :  
So let it pass ! Wherefore I seek thee now,  
Having turned back again though onward  
bound,

That I will tell thee. Take and keep for me  
This woman, till I come thy way again,  
Driving before me, having killed the king  
O' the Bistones, that drove of Thracian steeds :

VOL. I.

In such case, give the woman back to me !  
But should I fare, — as fare I fain would not,  
Seeing I hope to prosper and return, —  
Then, I bequeath her as thy household slave.  
She came into my hands with good hard toil !  
For, what find I, when started on my course,  
But certain people, a whole country-side,  
Holding a wrestling-bout ? as good to me  
As a new labour : whence I took, and here  
Come keeping with me, this, the victor's prize.  
For, such as conquered in the easy work,  
Gained horses which they drove away : and  
such

As conquered in the harder, — those who boxed  
And wrestled, — cattle ; and, to crown the  
prize,

A woman followed. Chancing as I did,  
Base were it to forego this fame and gain !  
Well, as I said, I trust her to thy care :  
No woman I have kidnapped, understand !  
But good hard toil has done it : here I come !  
Some day, who knows ? even thou wilt praise  
the feat ! "

Admetos raised his face and eyed the pair :  
Then, hollowly and with submission, spoke,  
And spoke again, and spoke time after time,  
When he perceived the silence of his friend  
Would not be broken by consenting word.  
As a tired slave goes adding stone to stone  
Until he stop some current that molests,  
So poor Admetos piled up argument  
Vainly against the purpose all too plain  
In that great brow acquainted with command.

" Nowise dishonouring, nor amid my foes  
Ranking thee, did I hide my wife's ill fate ;  
But it were grief superimposed on grief,  
Shouldst thou have hastened to another home.  
My own woe was enough for me to weep !  
But, for this woman, — if it so may be, —  
Bid some Thessalian, — I entreat thee, king ! —  
Keep her, — who has not suffered like myself !  
Many of the Pheraioi welcome thee.  
Be no reminder to me of my ills !  
I could not, if I saw her come to live,  
Restrain the tear ! Inflict on me diseased  
No new disease : woe bends me down enough

Then, where could she be sheltered in my house,

Female and young too? For that she is young,  
The vesture and adornment prove. Reflect!  
Should such an one inhabit the same roof  
With men? And how, mixed up, a girl,  
with youths,

Shall she keep pure, in that case? No light task

To curb the May-day youngster, Herakles!  
I only speak because of care for thee.

Or must I, in avoidance of such harm,  
Make her to enter, lead her life within  
The chamber of the dead one, all apart?  
How shall I introduce this other, couch  
This where Alkestis lay? A double blame  
I apprehend: first, from the citizens—  
Lest some tongue of them taunt that I betray  
My benefactress, fall into the snare  
Of a new fresh face: then, the dead one's  
self,—

Will she not blame me likewise? Worthy,  
sure,

Of worship from me! circumspect my ways,  
And jealous of a fault, are bound to be.  
But thou,—O woman, whosoe'er thou art,—  
Know, thou hast all the form, art like as like  
Alkestis, in the bodily shape! Ah me!  
Take,—by the Gods,—this woman from my  
sight,

Lest thou undo me, the undone before!  
Since I seem—seeing her—as if I saw  
My own wife! And confusions cloud my heart,  
And from my eyes the springs break forth!

Ah me  
Unhappy—how I taste for the first time  
My misery in all its bitterness!

Whereat the friends conferred: "The chance,  
in truth,

Was an untoward one—none said otherwise.  
Still, what a God comes giving, good or bad,  
That, one should take and bear with. Take  
her, then!"

Herakles,—not unfastening his hold  
On that same misery, beyond mistake  
Hears in the words, convulsive in the face,—

"I would that I had such a power," said he,  
"As to lead up into the light again  
Thy very wife, and grant thee such a grace."

"Well do I know thou wouldst: but where  
the hope?  
There is no bringing back the dead to light."

"Be not extravagant in grief, no less!  
Bear it, by augury of better things!"

"'Tis easier to advise 'bear up,' than bear!"

"But how carve way i' the life that lies before,  
If bent on groaning ever for the past?"

"I myself know that: but a certain love  
Allures me to the choice I shall not change."

"Ay, but, still loving dead ones, still makes  
weep."

"And let it be so! She has ruined me,  
And still more than I say: that answers all."

"Oh, thou hast lost a brave wife: who  
disputes?"

"So brave a one—that he whom thou  
behold'st  
Will never more enjoy his life again!"

"Time will assuage! The evil yet is young!"

"Time, thou mayst say, will; if time mean  
—to die."

"A wife—the longing for new marriage-joys  
Will stop thy sorrow!"

"Hush, friend,—hold thy peace!  
What hast thou said! I could not credit ear!"

"How then? Thou wilt not marry, then,  
but keep  
A widowed couch?"

"There is not anyone  
Of womankind shall couch with whom thou  
seest!"

"Dost think to profit thus in any way  
The dead one?"

"Her, wherever she abide,  
My duty is to honour."

"And I praise—  
Indeed I praise thee! Still, thou hast to pay  
The price of it, in being held a fool!"

"Fool call me—only one name call me not!  
Bridegroom!"

"No: it was praise, I portioned thee,  
Of being good true husband to thy wife!"

"When I betray her, though she is no more,  
May I die!"

And the thing he said was true:  
For out of Herakles a great glow broke.  
There stood a victor worthy of a prize:  
The violet-crown that withers on the brow  
Of the half-hearted claimant. Oh, he knew  
The signs of battle hard fought and well won,  
This queller of the monsters!—knew his friend  
Planted firm foot, now, on the loathly thing  
That was Admetos late! "would die," he knew,  
Ere let the reptile raise its crest again.  
If that was truth, why try the true friend more?

"Then, since thou canst be faithful to the  
death,  
Take, deep into thy house, my dame!" smiled  
he.

"Not so!—I pray, by thy Progenitor!"

"Thou wilt mistake in disobeying me!"

"Obeying thee, I have to break my heart!"

"Obey me! Who knows but the favour done  
May fall into its place as duty too?"

So, he was humble, would decline no more  
Bearing a burden: he just sighed "Alas!  
Wouldst thou hadst never brought this prize  
from game!"

"Yet, when I conquered there, thou con-  
queredst!"

"All excellently urged! Yet—spite of all,  
Bear with me! let the woman go away!"

"She shall go, if needs must: but ere she go,  
See if there is need!"

"Need there is! At least,  
Except I make thee angry with me, so!"

"But I persist, because I have my spice  
Of intuition likewise: take the dame!"

"Be thou the victor, then! But certainly  
Thou dost thy friend no pleasure in the  
act!"

"Oh, time will come when thou shalt praise  
me! Now—  
Only obey!"

"Then, servants, since my house  
Must needs receive this woman, take her  
there!"

"I shall not trust this woman to the care  
Of servants."

"Why, conduct her in, thyself,  
If that seem preferable!"

"I prefer,  
"With thy good leave, to place her in thy  
hands!"

"I would not touch her! Entry to the house—  
That, I concede thee."

"To thy sole right hand,  
I mean to trust her!"

"King! Thou wrenchest this  
Out of me by main force, if I submit!"

"Courage, friend! Come, stretch hand forth!  
Good! Now touch  
The stranger-woman!"

"There! A hand I stretch—  
As though it meant to cut off Gorgon's head!"

"Hast hold of her?"

"Fast hold."  
"Why, then, hold fast  
And have her! and, one day, aseverate  
Thou wilt, I think, thy friend, the son of Zeus"



He was the gentle guest to entertain !  
 Look at her ! See if she, in any way,  
 Present thee with resemblance of thy wife !”

Ah, but the tears come, find the words at fault !  
 There is no telling how the hero twitched  
 The veil off : and there stood, with such fixed  
 eyes

And such slow smile, Alkestis' silent self !  
 It was the crowning grace of that great heart,  
 To keep back joy : procrastinate the truth  
 Until the wife, who had made proof and  
 found

The husband wanting, might essay once  
 more,

Hear, see, and feel him renovated now—  
 Able to do, now, all herself had done,  
 Risen to the height of her : so, hand in  
 hand,  
 The two might go together, live and die.

Beside, when he found speech, you guess the  
 speech.

He could not think he saw his wife again :  
 It was some mocking God that used the bliss  
 To make him mad ! Till Herakles must  
 help :

Assure him that no spectre mocked at all :  
 He was embracing whom he buried once.  
 Still,—did he touch, might he address the  
 true,—

True eye, true body of the true live wife ?

And Herakles said, smiling, “ All was truth.  
 Spectre ? Admetos had not made his guest  
 One who played ghost-invoker, or such  
 cheat !

Oh, he might speak and have response, in  
 time !

All heart could wish was gained now—life  
 for death :

Only, the rapture must not grow immense :  
 Take care, nor wake the envy of the Gods !”

“ Oh thou, of greatest Zeus true son,”—so  
 spoke

Admetos when the closing word must come,  
 “ Go ever in a glory of success,

And save, that sire, his offspring to the end !  
 For thou hast—only thou—raised me and  
 mine

Up again to this light and life !” Then  
 asked

Tremblingly, how was trod the perilous path  
 Out of the dark into the light and life :  
 How it had happened with Alkestis there.

And Herakles said little, but enough—  
 How he engaged in combat with that king  
 O' the dæmons : how the field of contest lay  
 By the tomb's self : how he sprang from  
 ambushade,  
 Captured Death, caught him in that pair of  
 hands.

But all the time, Alkestis moved not once  
 Out of the set gaze and the silent smile ;  
 And a cold fear ran through Admetos' frame :  
 “ Why does she stand and front me, silent  
 thus ?”

Herakles solemnly replied “ Not yet  
 Is it allowable thou hear the things  
 She has to tell thee ; let vanish quite  
 That consecration to the lower Gods,  
 And on our upper world the third day rise !  
 Lead her in, meanwhile ; good and true thou  
 art,

Good, true, remain thou ! Practise piety  
 To stranger-guests the old way ! So, fare-  
 well !

Since forth I fare, fulfil my urgent task  
 Set by the king, the son of Sthenelos.”

Fain would Admetos keep that splendid  
 smile

Ever to light him. “ Stay with us, thou  
 heart !

Remain our house-friend !”

“ At some other day !  
 Now, of necessity, I haste !” smiled he.

“ But mayst thou prosper, go forth on a foot  
 Sure to return ! Through all the tetrarchy  
 Command my subjects that they institute

Thanksgiving-dances for the glad event,  
And bid each altar smoke with sacrifice !  
For we are minded to begin a fresh  
Existence, better than the life before ;  
Seeing I own myself supremely blest."

Whereupon all the friendly moralists  
Drew this conclusion : chirped, each beard to  
each :

"Manifold are thy shapings, Providence !  
Many a hopeless matter Gods arrange.  
What we expected never came to pass :  
What we did not expect, Gods brought to  
bear ;  
So have things gone, this whole experience  
through !"

Ah, but if you had seen the play itself !  
They say, my poet failed to get the prize :  
Sophokles got the prize,—great name ! They  
say,

Sophokles also means to make a piece,  
Model a new Admetos, a new wife :  
Success to him ! One thing has many sides.  
The great name ! But no good supplants a  
good,

Nor beauty undoes beauty. Sophokles  
Will carve and carry a fresh cup, brimful  
Of beauty and good, firm to the altar-foot,  
And glorify the Dionusiad shrine :  
Not clash against this crater in the place  
Where the God put it when his mouth had  
drained,

To the last dregs, libation life-blood-like,  
And praised Euripides for evermore—  
*The Human with his droppings of warm  
tears.*

Still, since one thing may have so many  
sides,

I think I see how,—far from Sophokles,—  
You, I, or anyone might mould a new  
Admetos, new Alkestis. Ah, that brave  
Bounty of poets, the one royal race  
That ever was, or will be, in this world !  
They give no gift that bounds itself and ends  
I' the giving and the taking : theirs so breeds

I' the heart and soul o' the taker, so trans-  
mutes

The man who only was a man before,  
That he grows godlike in his turn, can give—  
He also : share the poets' privilege,  
Bring forth new good, new beauty, from the  
old.

As though the cup that gave the wine, gave,  
too,

The God's prolific giver of the grape,  
That vine, was wont to find out, fawn around  
His footstep, springing still to bless the  
dearth,

At bidding of a Mainad.<sup>1</sup> So with me :  
For I have drunk this poem, quenched my  
thirst,

Satisfied heart and soul—yet more remains !  
Could we too make a poem ? Try at least,  
Inside the head, what shape the rose-mists  
take !

When God Apollon took, for punishment,  
A mortal form and sold himself a slave  
To King Admetos till a term should end,—  
Not only did he make, in servitude,  
Such music, while he fed the flocks and herds,  
As saved the pasturage from wrong or fright,  
Curing rough creatures of ungentleness :  
Much more did that melodious wisdom work  
Within the heart o' the master : there, ran  
wild

Many a lust and greed that grow to strength  
By preying on the native pity and care,  
Would else, all undisturbed, possess the land.

And these, the God so tamed, with golden  
tongue,

That, in the plenitude of youth and power,  
Admetos vowed himself to rule thenceforth  
In Pherai solely for his people's sake,  
Subduing to such end each lust and greed  
That dominates the natural charity.

And so the struggle ended. Right ruled  
might :

And soft yet brave, and good yet wise, the  
man

<sup>1</sup> Dionysian priestess.

Stood up to be a monarch ; having learned  
The worth of life, life's worth would he  
bestow

On all whose lot was cast, to live or die,  
As he determined for the multitude.  
So stands a statue : pedestalled sublime,  
Only that it may wave the thunder off,  
And ward, from winds that vex, a world  
below.

And then,—as if a whisper found its way  
I'en to the sense o' the marble,—“ Vain thy  
vow !

The royalty of its resolve, that head  
Shall hide within the dust ere day be done :  
That arm, its outstretch of beneficence,  
Shall have a speedy ending on the earth :  
Lie patient, prone, while light some cricket  
leaps

And takes possession of the masterpiece,  
To sit, sing louder as more near the sun.  
For why ? A flaw was in the pedestal ;  
Who knows ? A worm's work ! Sapped, the  
certain fate  
O' the statue is to fall, and thine to die ! ”

Whereat the monarch, calm, addressed him-  
self

To die, but bitterly the soul outbroke—  
“ O prodigality of life, blind waste  
I' the world, of power profuse without the  
will

To make life do its work, deserve its day !  
My ancestors pursued their pleasure, poured  
The blood o' the people out in idle war,  
Or took occasion of some weary peace  
To bid men dig down deep or build up high,  
Spend bone and marrow that the king might  
feast

Entrenched and buttressed from the vulgar  
gaze.

Yet they all lived, nay, lingered to old age :  
As though Zeus loved that they should laugh  
to scorn

The vanity of seeking other ends  
In rule than just the ruler's pastime. They  
Lived ; I must die.”

And, as some long last moan

Of a minor suddenly is propped beneath  
By note which, new-struck, turns the wail,  
that was,

Into a wonder and a triumph, so  
Began Alkestis : “ Nay, thou art to live !  
The glory that, in the disguise of flesh,  
Was helpful to our house,—he prophesied  
The coming fate : whereon, I pleaded sore  
That he,—I guessed a God, who to his couch  
Amid the clouds must go and come again,  
While we were darkling,—since he loved us  
both,  
He should permit thee, at whatever price,  
To live and carry out to heart's content  
Soul's purpose, turn each thought to very  
deed,  
Nor let Zeus lose the monarch meant in thee.”

“ To which Apollon, with a sunset smile,  
Sadly—‘ And so should mortals arbitrate !  
It were unseemly if they aped us Gods,  
And, mindful of our chain of consequence,  
Lost care of the immediate earthly link :  
Forwent the comfort of life's little hour,  
In prospect of some cold abysmal blank  
Alien eternity,—unlike the time  
They know, and understand to practise with,—  
No,—our eternity—no heart's blood, bright  
And warm outpoured in its behoof, would  
tinge

Never so palely, warm a whit the more :  
Whereas retained and treasured—left to beat  
Joyously on, a life's length, in the breast  
O' the loved and loving—it would throb itself  
Through, and suffuse the earthly tenement,  
Transform it, even as your mansion here  
Is love-transformed into a temple-home  
Where I, a God, forget the Olumpian glow,  
I' the feel of human richness like the rose :  
Your hopes and fears, so blind and yet so  
sweet

With death about them. Therefore, well in  
thee

To look, not on eternity, but time :  
To apprehend that, should Admetos die,  
All, we Gods purposed in him, dies as sure :  
That, life's link snapping, all our chain is  
lost.

And yet a mortal glance might pierce,  
methinks,

Deeper into the seeming dark of things,  
And learn, no fruit, man's life can bear, will  
fade :

Learn, if Admetos die now, so much more  
Will pity for the frailness found in flesh,  
Will terror at the earthly chance and change  
Frustrating wisest scheme of noblest soul,  
Will these go wake the seeds of good asleep  
Throughout the world : as oft a rough wind  
sheds

The unripe promise of some field-flower,—  
true !

But loosens too the level, and lets breathe  
A thousand captives for the year to come.  
Nevertheless, obtain thy prayer, stay fate !  
Admetos lives—if thou wilt die for him !”

“So was the pact concluded that I die,  
And thou live on, live for thyself, for me,  
For all the world. Embrace and bid me hail,  
Husband, because I have the victory—  
Am, heart, soul, head to foot, one happiness !”

Whereto Admetos, in a passionate cry,  
“Never, by that true word Apollon spoke !  
All the unwise wish is unwished, oh wife !  
Let purposes of Zeus fulfil themselves,  
If not through me, then through some other  
man !

Still, in myself he had a purpose too,  
Inalienably mine, to end with me :  
This purpose—that, throughout my earthly  
life,  
Mine should be mingled and made up with  
thine,—

And we two prove one force and play one  
part  
And do one thing. Since death divides the  
pair,

‘Tis well that I depart and thou remain  
Who wast to me as spirit is to flesh :  
Let the flesh perish, be perceived no more,  
So thou, the spirit that informed the flesh,  
Bend yet awhile, a very flame above  
The rift I drop into the darkness by,—  
And bid remember, flesh and spirit once

Worked in the world, one body, for man's  
sake.

Never be that abominable show  
Of passive death without a quickening life—  
Admetos only, no Alkestis now !”

Then she : “O thou Admetos, must the pile  
Of truth on truth, which needs but one truth  
more

To tower up in completeness, trophy-like,  
Emprise of man, and triumph of the world,  
Must it go ever to the ground again  
Because of some faint heart or faltering hand,  
Which we, that breathless world about the  
base,

Trusted should carry safe to altitude,  
Superimpose o' the summit, our supreme  
Achievement, our victorious coping-stone ?  
Shall thine, Beloved, prove the hand and  
heart

That fail again, flinch backward at the truth  
Would cap and crown the structure this last  
time,—

Precipitate our monumental hope  
And strew the earth ignobly yet once more ?  
See how, truth piled on truth, the structure  
wants,

Waits just the crowning truth I claim of thee !  
Wouldst thou, for any joy to be enjoyed,  
For any sorrow that thou mightst escape,  
Unwill thy will to reign a righteous king ?  
Nowise ! And were there two lots, death and  
life,—

Life, wherein good resolve should go to air,  
Death, whereby finest fancy grew plain fact  
I' the reign of thy survivor,—life or death ?  
Certainly death, thou chooseth. Here stand I  
The wedded, the beloved one : hadst thou loved  
Her who less worthily could estimate  
Both life and death than thou ? Not so  
should'st say

Admetos, whom Apollon made come court  
Alkestis in a car, submissive brutes  
Of blood were yoked to, symbolizing soul  
Must dominate unruly sense in man.  
Then, shall Admetos and Alkestis see  
Good alike, and alike choose, each for each,  
Good,—and yet, each for other, at the last,

Choose evil? What? thou soundest in my  
soul

To depths below the deepest, reachest good  
In evil, that makes evil good again,  
And so allottest to me that I live  
And not die—letting die, not thee alone,  
But all true life that lived in both of us?  
Look at me once ere thou decree the lot!"

Therewith her whole soul entered into his,  
He looked the look back, and Alkestis died.

And even while it lay, i' the look of him,  
Dead, the dimmed body, bright Alkestis'  
soul

Had penetrated through the populace  
Of ghosts, was got to Koré,—throned and  
crowned

The pensive queen o' the twilight, where  
she dwells

Forever in a muse, but half away  
From flowery earth she lost and hankers  
for,—

And there demanded to become a ghost  
Before the time.

Whereat the softened eyes  
Of the lost maidenhood that lingered still  
Straying among the flowers in Sicily,  
Sudden was startled back to Hades' throne  
By that demand: broke through humanity  
Into the orb'd omniscience of a God,  
Searched at a glance Alkestis to the soul,  
And said—while a long slow sigh lost itself  
I' the hard and hollow passage of a laugh:

"Hence, thou deceiver! This is not to  
die,

If, by the very death which mocks me now,  
The life, that's left behind and past my  
power,

Is formidably doubled. Say, there fight  
Two athletes, side by side, each athlete  
armed

With only half the weapons, and no more,  
Adequate to a contest with their foe:

If one of these should fling helm, sword and  
shield

To fellow—shieldless, swordless, helmless  
late—

And so leap naked o'er the barrier, leave  
A combatant equipped from head to heel,  
Yet cry to the other side 'Receive a friend  
Who fights no longer!' 'Back, friend, to  
the fray!'

Would be the prompt rebuff; I echo it.  
Two souls in one were formidable odds:  
Admetos must not be himself and thou!"

And so, before the embrace relaxed a whit,  
The lost eyes opened, still beneath the look;  
And lo, Alkestis was alive again,  
And of Admetos' rapture who shall speak?

So, the two lived together long and well.  
But never could I learn, by word of scribe  
Or voice of poet, rumour wafts our way,  
That—of the scheme of rule in righteousness,  
The bringing back again the Golden Age,  
Which, rather than renounce, our pair would  
die—

That ever one faint particle came true,  
With both alive to bring it to effect:  
Such is the envy Gods still bear mankind!

So might our version of the story prove,  
And no Euripidean pathos plague  
Too much my critic-friend of Syracuse.

"Besides your poem failed to get the prize:  
(That is, the first prize: second prize is none).  
Sophokles got it!" Honour the great name!  
All cannot love two great names; yet some  
do:

I know the poetess who graved in gold,  
Among her glories that shall never fade,  
This style and title for Euripides,  
*The Human with his droppings of warm  
tears.*

I know, too, a great Kaunian painter,<sup>1</sup> strong  
As Herakles, though rosy with a robe  
Of grace that softens down the sinewy  
strength:

<sup>1</sup> The famous Protogenes, the rival of  
Apelles.

And he has made a picture of it all.  
 There lies Alkestis dead, beneath the sun,  
 She longed to look her last upon, beside  
 The sea, which somehow tempts the life  
 in us

To come trip over its white waste of waves,  
 And try escape from earth, and fleet as free.  
 Behind the body, I suppose there bends  
 Old Pheres in his hoary impotence ;

And women-wailers, in a corner crouch  
 —Four, beautiful as you four—yes, indeed !—  
 Close, each to other, agonizing all,  
 As fastened, in fear's rhythmic sympathy,  
 To two contending opposite. There strains  
 The might o' the hero 'gainst his more than  
 match,

Death, dreadful not in thew and bone, but  
 like  
 The envenomed substance that exudes some  
 dew

Whereby the merely honest flesh and blood  
 Will fester up and run to ruin straight,  
 Ere they can close with, clasp and overcome  
 The poisonous impalpability  
 That simulates a form beneath the flow  
 Of those grey garments ; I pronounce that  
 piece  
 Worthy to set up in our Poikilé !

And all came,—glory of the golden verse,  
 And passion of the picture, and that fine  
 Frank outgush of the human gratitude  
 Which saved our ship and me, in Syracuse,—  
 Ay, and the tear or two which slipt perhaps  
 Away from you, friends, while I told my  
 tale,

—It all came of this play that gained no  
 prize !

Why crown whom Zeus has crowned in soul  
 before ?

# ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY;

INCLUDING A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES: BEING

## THE LAST ADVENTURE OF BALAUCTION.

1875.

[Is a defence of Comedy as understood and practised by Aristophanes; that is, as a broad expression of the natural life and a satire upon those who condemn it. See Mrs. Orr's Handbook.]

### PERSONS IN THE TRANSCRIBED PLAY OF "HERAKLES."

AMPHITRUON.

MEGARA.

LUKOS.

HERAKLES.

IRIS.

LUTTA (*Madness*).

*Messenger.*

THESEUS.

*Choros of Aged Thebans.*

### ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY.

οὐκ ἐσθω κενέβρει' · ὁπότεν δὲ θύῃς τι, κἀλει με.

I eat no carrion; when you sacrifice  
Some cleanly creature—call me for a slice!

WIND, wave, and bark, bear Euthukles<sup>1</sup> and  
me,

Balaustion, from—not sorrow but despair,  
Not memory but the present and its pang!  
Athenai, live thou hearted in my heart:  
Never, while I live, may I see thee more,  
Never again may these repugnant orbs  
Ache themselves blind before the hideous  
pomp,

The ghastly mirth which mocked thine over-  
throw

—Death's entry, Haides' outrage!

Doomed to die,—

Fire should have flung a passion of embrace  
About thee till, resplendently inarmed,

(Temple by temple folded to his breast,  
All thy white wonder fainting out in ash)  
Lightly some vaporous sigh of soul escaped,  
And so the Immortals bade Athenai back!  
Or earth might sunder and absorb thee,  
save,

Buried below Olumpos and its gods,  
Akropolis to dominate her realm  
For Koré,<sup>2</sup> and console the ghosts; or, sea,  
What if thy watery plural vastitude,  
Rolling unanimous advance, had rushed,  
Might upon might, a moment,—stood, one  
stare,

Sea-face to city-face, thy glaucous wave  
Glassing that marbled last magnificence,—  
Till fate's pale tremulous foam-flower tipped  
the grey,

And when wave broke and overswarmed and,  
sucked

To bounds back, multitudinously ceased,  
Let land again breathe unconfused with sea,  
Attiké was, Athenai was not now!

Such end I could have borne, for I had shared.  
But this which, glanced at, aches within my  
orbs

To blinding,—bear me thence, bark, wind  
and wave!

Me, Euthukles, and, hearted in each heart,  
Athenai, undisgraced as Pallas' self,  
Bear to my birthplace, Helios' island-bride,  
Zeus' darling: thither speed us, homeward-  
bound,

<sup>1</sup> Balaustion's husband.

<sup>2</sup> Proserpine.

Wafted already twelve hours' sail away  
From horror, nearer by one sunset Rhodes!

Why should despair be? Since, distinct above  
Man's wickedness and folly, flies the wind  
And floats the cloud, free transport for our  
soul

Out of its fleshly durance dim and low,—  
Since disembodied soul anticipates  
(Thought-borne as now, in rapturous un-  
restraint)

Above all crowding, crystal silentness,  
Above all noise, a silver solitude :—  
Surely, where thought so bears soul, soul in  
time

May permanently bide, "assert the wise,"  
There live in peace, there work in hope once  
more—

O nothing doubt, Philemon! Greed and  
strife,

Hatred and cark and care, what place have  
they

In yon blue liberality of heaven?

How the sea helps! How rose-smit earth  
will rise

Breast-high thence, some bright morning, and  
be Rhodes!

Heaven, earth and sea, my warrant—in their  
name,

Believe—o'er falsehood, truth is surely  
sphered,

O'er ugliness beams beauty, o'er this world  
Extends that realm where, "as the wise  
assert,"

Philemon, thou shalt see Euripides  
Clearer than mortal sense perceived the man!

A sunset nearer Rhodes, by twelve hours'  
sweep

Of surge secured from horror? Rather say,  
Quieted out of weakness into strength.

I dare invite, survey the scene my sense  
Staggered to apprehend: for, disinvolved

From the mere outside anguish and contempt,  
Slowly a justice centred in a doom

Reveals itself. Ay, pride succumbed to pride,  
Oppression met the oppressor and was  
matched.

Athenai's vaunt braved Sparte's violence  
Till, in the shock, prone fell Peiraios, low  
Rampart and bulwark lay, as,—timing stroke  
Of hammer, axe, and beam hoist, poised and  
swung,—

The very flute-girls blew their laughing best,  
In dance about the conqueror while he bade  
Music and merriment help enginery  
Batter down, break to pieces all the trust  
Of citizens once, slaves now. See what walls  
Play substitute for the long double range  
Themistoklean, heralding a guest  
From harbour on to citadel! Each side  
Their senseless walls demolished stone by  
stone,

See,—outer wall as stonelike,—heads and  
hearts,—

Athenai's terror-stricken populace!  
Prattlers, tongue-tied in crouching abject-  
ness,—

Braggarts, who wring hands wont to flourish  
swords—

Sophist and rhetorician, demagogue,  
(Argument dumb, authority a jest)

Dikast and heliast,<sup>1</sup> pleader, litigant,  
Quack-priest, sham-prophecy-retailer, scout

O' the customs, sycophant, whate'er the style,  
Altar-scrap-snatcher, pimp and parasite,—

Rivalities at truce now each with each,  
Stupefied mud-banks,—such an use they  
serve!

While the one order which performs exact  
To promise, functions faithful last as first,  
What is it but the city's lyric troop,  
Chantress and psaltress, flute-girl, dancing-  
girl?

Athenai's harlotry takes laughing care  
Their patron miss no pipings, late she loved,  
But deathward tread at least the kordax-step.<sup>2</sup>

Die then, who pulled such glory on your  
heads!

There let it grind to powder! Perikles!  
The living are the dead now: death be life!  
Why should the sunset yonder waste its  
wealth?

<sup>1</sup> Judge and juryman.

<sup>2</sup> Cancan.



Prove thee Olympian ! If my heart supply  
 Inviolatè the structure,—true to type,  
 Build me some spirit-place no flesh shall find,  
 As Pheidias may inspire thee : slab on slab,  
 Renew Athenai, quarry out the cloud,  
 Convert to gold yon west extravagance !  
 'Neath P'ropulæia,<sup>1</sup> from Akropolis  
 By vapoury grade and grade, gold all the  
 way,

Step to thy snow-Pnux,<sup>2</sup> mount thy Bema<sup>3</sup>  
 cloud,  
 Thunder and lighten thence a Hellas through  
 That shall be better and more beautiful  
 And too august for Spartè's foot to spurn !  
 Chasmed in the crag, again our Theatre  
 Predominates, one purple : Staghunt-month,  
 Brings it not Dionusia ? Hail, the Three !  
 Aischulos, Sophokles, Euripides  
 Compete, gain prize or lose prize, godlike  
 still.

Nay, lest they lack the old god-exercise—  
 Their noble want the unworthy,—as of old,  
 (How otherwise should patience crown their  
 might ?)

What if each find his ape promoted man,  
 His censor raised for antic service still ?  
 Some new Hermippos to pelt Perikles,  
 Kratinos to swear Pheidias robbed a shrive,  
 Eruxis—I suspect, Euripides,  
 No brow will ache because with mop and  
 mow

He gibes my poet ! There's a dog-faced  
 dwarf

That gets to godship somehow, yet retains  
 His apehood in the Egyptian hierarchy,  
 More decent, indecorous just enough :  
 Why should not dog-ape, graced in due  
 degree,

Grow Momos as thou Zeus ? Or didst thou  
 sigh

Rightly with thy Makaria ? "After life,  
 Better no sentiency than turbulence ;  
 Death cures the low contention." Be it so !  
 Yet progress means contention, to my mind.

<sup>1</sup> Part of the Acropolis.

<sup>2</sup> A rocky eminence in Athens frequented by  
 orators and their audiences.

<sup>3</sup> The platform used by the orator.

Euthukles, who, except for love that speaks,  
 Art silent by my side while words of mine  
 Provoke that foe from which escape is vain  
 Henceforward, wake Athenai's fate and fall,—  
 Memories asleep as, at the altar-foot  
 Those Furies in the Oresteian song,—  
 Do I amiss who, wanting strength, use craft,  
 Advance upon the foe I cannot fly,  
 Nor feign a snake is dormant though it gnaw ?  
 That fate and fall, once bedded in our brain,  
 Roots itself past upwrenching ; but coaxed  
 forth,

Encouraged out to practise fork and fang,—  
 Perhaps, when satiate with promptsustenance,  
 It may pine, likelier die than if left swell  
 In peace by our pretension to ignore,  
 Or pricked to threefold fury, should our stamp  
 Bruise and not brain the pest.

A middle course !

What hinders that we treat this tragic theme  
 As the Three taught when either woke some  
 woe,

—How Klutaimnestra hated, what the pride  
 Of Iokastè, why Medeia clove  
 Nature asunder. Small rebuked by large,  
 We felt our puny hates refine to air,  
 Our poor prides sink, prevent the humbling  
 hand,

Our petty passions purify their tide.  
 So, Euthukles, permit the tragedy  
 To re-enact itself, this voyage through,  
 Till sunsets end and sunrise brighten Rhodes !  
 Majestic on the stage of memory,  
 Peplosed and kothorned, let Athenai fall  
 Once more, nay, oft again till life conclude,  
 Lent for the lesson : Choros, I and thou !  
 What else in life seems piteous any more  
 After such pity, or proves terrible  
 Beside such terror ?

Still—since Phrunichos<sup>4</sup>

Offended, by too premature a touch  
 Of that Milesian snarl-place freshly frayed—  
 (Ah, my poor people, whose prompt remedy  
 Was—fine the poet, not reform thyself !)

<sup>4</sup> An Athenian poet who was fined for re-  
 ferring to the defeat at Miletus.

Beware precipitate approach ! Rehearse  
 Rather the prologue, well a year away,  
 Than the main misery, a sunset old.  
 What else but fitting prologue to the piece  
 Style an adventure, stranger than my first  
 By so much as the issue it enwombed  
 Lurked big beyond Balaustion's littleness ?  
 Second supreme adventure ! O that Spring,  
 That eve I told the earlier to my friends !  
 Where are the four now, with each red-ripe  
 mouth

Crumpled so close, no quickest breath it fetched  
 Could disengage the lip-flower furred to bud  
 For fear Admetos,—shivering head and foot,  
 As with sick soul and blind averted face  
 He trusted hand forth to obey his friend,—  
 Should find no wife in her cold hand's response,  
 Nor see the disenshrouded statue start  
 Alkestis, live the life and love the love !

I wonder, does the streamlet ripple still,  
 Outsmoothing galingale and watermint  
 Its mat-floor ? while at brim, 'twixt sedge  
 and sedge,

What lubblings past Baccheion, broadened  
 much,

Pricked by the reed and fretted by the fly,  
 Oared by the boatman-spider's pair of arms !  
 Lenaia<sup>1</sup> was a gladsome month ago—  
 Euripides had taught "Andromedé :"  
 Next month, would teach "Kresphontes"—  
 which same month

Someone from Phokis, who companioned me  
 Since all that happened on those temple-steps,  
 Would marry me and turn Athenian too.  
 Now ! if next year the masters let the slaves  
 Do Bacchic service and restore mankind  
 That trilogy whereof, 'tis noised, one play  
 Presents the Bacchai,—no Euripides  
 Will teach the choros, nor shall we be tinged  
 By any such grand sunset of his soul,  
 Exiles from dead Athenai,—not the live  
 That's in the cloud there with the new-born  
 star !

Speak to the infinite intelligence,  
 Sing to the everlasting sympathy !

<sup>1</sup> A Bacchic festival.

Winds belly sail, and drench of dancing brine  
 Buffet our boat-side, so the prone bound free !  
 Condense our voyage into one great day  
 Made up of sunset-closes : eve by eve,  
 Resume that memorable night-discourse  
 When,—like some meteor-brilliance, fire and  
 filth,

Or say, his own Amphyteos, deity  
 And dung, who, bound on the gods' embassy,  
 Got men's acknowledgment in kick and cuff—  
 We made acquaintance with a visitor  
 Ominous, apparitional, who went  
 Strange as he came, but shall not pass away.  
 Let us attempt that memorable talk,  
 Clothe the adventure's every incident  
 With due expression : may not looks be told,  
 Gesture made speak, and speech so amplified  
 That words find blood-warmth which, cold-  
 writ, they lose ?

Recall the night we heard the news from  
 Thrace,  
 One year ago, Athenai still herself.

We two were sitting silent in the house,  
 Yet cheerless hardly. Euthukles, forgive !  
 I somehow speak to unseen auditors.  
 Not *you*, but—Euthukles had entered, grave,  
 Grand, may I say, as who brings laurel-branch  
 And message from the tripod : such it proved.

He first removed the garland from his brow,  
 Then took my hand and looked into my face.

"Speak good words !" much misgiving fal-  
 tered I.

"Good words, the best, Balaustion ! He is  
 crowned,  
 Gone with his Attic ivy home to feast,  
 Since Aischulos required companionship.  
 Pour a libation for Euripides !"

When we had sat the heavier silence out—  
 "Dead and triumphant still !" began reply  
 To my eye's question. "As he willed he  
 worked :  
 And, as he worked, he wanted not, be sure,

Triumph his whole life through, submitting  
work.

To work's right judges, never to the wrong—  
To competency, not ineptitude.

When he had run life's proper race and worked  
Quite to the stade's end, there remained to try  
The stade's turn, should strength dare the  
double course.

Half the diaulos reached, the hundred plays  
Accomplished, force in its rebound sufficed  
To lift along the athlete and ensure  
A second wreath, proposed by fools for first,  
The statist's olive as the poet's bay.

Wiselier, he suffered not a twofold aim  
Retard his pace, confuse his sight ; at once  
Poet and statist ; though the multitude  
Girded him ever ' All thine aim thine art ?  
The idle poet only ? No regard  
For civic duty, public service, here ?  
We drop our ballot-bean for Sophokles !  
Not only could he write " Antigóné,"

But—since (we argued) whoso penned that  
piece  
Might just as well conduct a squadron,—  
straight

Good-naturedly he took on him command,  
Got laughed at, and went back to making plays,  
Having allowed us our experiment  
Respecting the fit use of faculty.

No whit the more did athlete slacken pace.  
Soon the jeers grew : ' Cold hater of his kind,  
A sea-cave suits him, not the vulgar hearth !  
What need of tongue-talk, with a bookish store  
Would stock ten cities ? ' Shadow of an ass !  
No whit the worse did athlete touch the mark  
And, at the turning-point, consign his scorn  
O' the scorners to that final trilogy  
' Hupsipule,'<sup>1</sup> ' Phoinissai,' and the Match  
Of Life Contemplative with Active Life,  
Zethos against Amphion. Ended so ?  
Nowise !—began again ; for heroes rest  
Dropping shield's oval o'er the entire man,  
And he who thus took Contemplation's prize  
Turned stade-point but to face Activity.  
Out of all shadowy hands extending help  
For life's decline pledged to youth's labour still,

Whatever renovation flatter age,—  
Society with pastime, solitude

With peace,—he chose the hand that gave the  
heart,

Bade Macedonian Archelaos take  
The leavings of Athenai, ash once flame.  
For fifty politicians' frosty work,  
One poet's ash proved ample and to spare :  
He propped the state and filled the treasury,  
Counselled the king as might a meaner soul,  
Furnished the friend with what shall stand in  
stead

Of crown and sceptre, star his name about  
When these are dust ; for him, Euripides  
Last the old hand on the old phorminx<sup>2</sup> flung,  
Clashed thence ' Alkaion,' maddened ' Pen-  
theus' up ;

Then music sighed itself away, one moan  
Iphigeneia made by Aulis' strand ;  
With her and music died Euripides.

" The poet-friend who followed him to Thrace,  
Agathon, writes thus much : the merchant-ship  
Moreover brings a message from the king  
To young Euripides, who went on board  
This morning at Mounuchia : all is true."

I said " Thank Zeus for the great news and  
good ! "

" Nay, the report is running in brief fire  
Through the town's stubbly furrow," he re-  
sumed :

—" Entertains brightly what their favourite  
styles

' The City of Gapers' <sup>3</sup> for a week perhaps,  
Supplants three luminous tales, but yesterday  
Pronounced sufficient lamps to last the month :  
How Glauketes, outbidding Morsimos,  
Paid market-price for one Kopaic eel  
A thousand drachmai, and then cooked his prize  
Not proper conger-fashion but in oil  
And nettles, as man fries the foam-fish-kind ;  
How all the captains of the triremes, late  
Victors at Arginousai, on return  
Will, for reward, be straightway put to death ;

<sup>1</sup> Queen of Lemnos and entertainer of Jason.

<sup>2</sup> Guitar.

<sup>3</sup> Athens.

How Mikon ~~wagered~~ a Thessalian mime  
Trained him by Lais, looked on as complete,  
Against Leogoras' blood-mare-koppa-marked,  
Valued six talents,—swore, accomplished so,  
The girl could swallow at a draught, nor  
breathe,

A choinix of unmixed Mendesian wine;  
And having lost the match will—dine on herbs!  
Three stories late a-flame, at once extinct,  
Outblazed by just 'Euripides is dead'!

"I met the concourse from the Theatre,  
The audience flocking homeward: victory  
Again awarded Aristophanes  
Precisely for his old play chopped and changed  
'The Female Celebrators of the Feast'—  
That Thesmophoria, tried a second time.  
'Never such full success!'—assured the folk,  
Who yet stopped praising to have word of  
mouth

With 'Euthukles, the bard's own intimate,  
Balaustion's husband, the right man to ask.'

"'Dead, yes, but how dead, may acquaint-  
ance know?

You were the couple constant at his cave:  
Tell us now, is it true that women, moved  
By reason of his liking Krateros . . .'

"I answered 'He was loved by Sokrates.

"'Nay,' said another, 'envy did the work!  
For, emulating poets of the place,  
One Arridaios, one Krateues, both  
Established in the royal favour, these . . .'

"Protagoras instructed him," said I.

"'Phu,' whistled Comic Platon, 'hear the  
fact!

'Twas well said of your friend by Sophokles  
'He hate our women? In his verse, belike:  
But when it comes to prose-work,—ha, ha, ha!"  
New climes don't change old manners: so, it  
chanced,

Pursuing an intrigue one moonless night

With Arethousian Nikodikos' wife,  
(Come now, his years were simply seventy-five)  
Crossing the palace-court, what haps he on  
But Archelaos' pack of hungry hounds?  
Who tore him piecemeal ere his cry brought  
help.'

"I asked: Did not you write 'The Festivals'?  
You best know what dog tore him when alive.  
You others, who now make a ring to hear,  
Have not you just enjoyed a second treat,  
Proclaimed that ne'er was play more worthy  
prize

Than this, myself assisted at, last year,  
And gave its worth to,—spitting on the same?  
Appraise no poetry,—price cuttlefish,  
Or that seaweed-alphestes, scorpion-sort,  
Much famed for mixing mud with fantasy  
On midnights! I interpret no foul dreams."

If so said Euthukles, so could not I,  
Balaustion, say. After "Lusistrate,"  
No more for me of "people's privilege,"  
No witnessing "the Grand old Comedy  
Coëval with our freedom, which, curtailed,  
Were freedom's deathblow: relic of the past,  
When Virtue laughingly told truth to Vice,  
Uncensored, since the stern mouth, stuffed  
with flowers,

Through poetry breathed satire, perfumed blast  
Which sense snuffed up while searched unto  
the bone!"

I was a stranger: "For first joy," urged  
friends,

"Go hear our Comedy, some patriot piece  
That plies the selfish advocates of war  
With argument so unevadable  
That crash fall Kleons whom the finer play  
Of reason, tickling, deeper wounds no whit  
Than would a spear-thrust from a savory  
stalk!

No: you hear knave and fool told crime and  
fault,

And see each scourged his quantity of stripes.  
'Rough dealing, awkward language,' whine  
our fops:

The world's too squeamish now to bear plain  
words

Concerning deeds it acts with gust enough :  
But, thanks to wine-les and democracy,  
We've still our stage where truth calls spade  
a spade !

Ashamed ? Phuromachos' decree provides  
The sex may sit discreetly, witness all,  
Sortel, the good with good, the gay with gay,  
Themselves unseen, no need to force a blush.  
A Rhodian wife and ignorant so long ?  
Go hear next play !"

I heard "Lusistraté."  
Waves, said to wash pollution from the world,  
Take that plague-memory, cure that pustule  
caught

As, past escape, I sat and saw the piece  
Byone appalled at Phaidra's fate,—the chaste,  
Whom, because chaste, the wicked goddess  
chained

To that same serpent of unchastity  
She loathed most, and who, coiled so, died  
distraught

Rather than make submission, loose one limb  
Love-wards, at lambency of honeyed tongue,  
Or torture of the scales which scraped hers now  
—Isay, the piece by him who charged this piece  
(Because Euripides shrank not to teach,  
If gods be strong and wicked, man, though  
weak,

May prove their match by willing to be good)  
With infamies the Scythian's whip should  
cure—

"Such outrage done the public—Phaidra  
named !

Such purpose to corrupt ingenuous youth,  
Such insult cast on female character !"—

Why, when I saw that bestiality—  
So beyond all brute-beast imagining,  
That when, to point the moral at the close,  
Poor Salabaccho, just to show how fair  
Was "Reconciliation," stripped her charms,  
That exhibition simply bade us breathe,  
Seemed something healthy and commendable  
After obscenity grotesqued so much  
It slunk away revolted at itself.

Henceforth I had my answer when our sage  
Pattern-proposing seniors pleaded grave  
"You fail to fathom here the deep design !  
All's acted in the interest of truth,

Religion, and those manners old and dear  
Which made our city great when citizens  
Like Aristoides and like Miltiades  
Wore each a golden tectix<sup>1</sup> in his hair."  
What do they wear now under—Kleophon ?

Well, for such reasons,—I am out of breath,  
But loathsomeness we needs must hurry past,—  
I did not go to see, nor then nor now,  
The "Thesmophoriazousai." But, since males  
Choose to brave first, blame afterward, nor  
brand

Without fair taste of what they stigmatize,  
Euthukles had not missed the first display,  
Original portrait of Euripides  
By "Virtue laughingly reproving Vice":  
"Virtue,"—the author, Aristophanes,  
Who mixed an image out of his own depths,  
Ticketed as I tell you. Oh, this time  
No more pretension to recondite worth !  
No joke in aid of Peace, no demagogue  
Pun-pelleted from Pnux, no kordax-dance  
Overt helped covertly the Ancient Faith !  
All now was muck, home-produce, honestman  
The author's soul secreted to a play  
Which gained the prize that day we heard  
the death.

I thought "How thoroughly death alters  
things !  
Where is the wrong now, done our dead and  
great ?

I how natural seems grandeur in relief,  
Cliff-base with frothy spites against its calm !"

Euthukles interposed—he read my thought—

"O'er them, too, in a moment came the change.  
The crowd's enthusiastic, to a man :  
Since, rake as such may please the ordure-heap  
Because of certain sparkles presumed ore,  
At first flash of true lightning overhead,  
They look up, nor resume their search too  
soon.

The insect-scattering sign is evident,  
And nowhere winks a fire-fly rival now,

<sup>1</sup> Grasshopper, used as a badge of honour.

Nor bustles any beetle of the brood  
With trundled dung-ball meant to menace  
heaven.

Contrariwise, the cry is 'Honour him !'  
'A statue in the theatre !' wants one ;  
Another 'Bring the poet's body back,  
Bury him in Peiraios : o'er his tomb  
Let Alkamenos carve the music-witch,  
The songstress-seiren, meed of melody :  
Thoukudides invent his epitaph !'  
To-night the whole town pays its tribute thus."

Our tribute should not be the same, my friend !  
Statue ? Within our heart he stood, he stands !  
As for the vest outgrown now by the form,  
Low flesh that clothed high soul,—a vesture's  
fate—

Why, let it fade, mix with the elements  
There where it, falling, freed Euripides !  
But for the soul that's tutelary now  
Till time end, o'er the world to teach and  
bless—

How better hail its freedom than by first  
Singing, we two, its own song back again,  
Up to that face from which flowed beauty—  
face

Now abler to see triumph and take love  
Than when it glorified Athenai once ?

The sweet and strange Alkestis, which saved  
me,

Secured me—you, ends nowise, to my mind,  
In pardon of Admetos. Hearts are fain  
To follow cheerful weary Herakles  
Striding away from the huge gratitude,  
Club shouldered, lion-fleece round loin and  
flank,

Bound on the next new labour "height o'er  
height

Ever surmounting,—destiny's decree !"  
Thither He helps us : that's the story's end ;  
He smiling said so, when I told him mine—  
My great adventure, how Alkestis helped.  
Afterward, when the time for parting fell,  
He gave me, with two other precious gifts,  
This third and best, consummating the grace,  
"Herakles," writ by his own hand, each  
line.

"If it have worth, reward is still to seek.  
Somebody, I forget who, gained the prize  
And proved arch-poet : time must show !"  
he smiled :

"Take this, and, when the noise tires out,  
judge me—

Someday, not slow to dawn, when somebody—  
Who ? I forget—proves nobody at all !"

Is not that day come ? What if you and I  
Re-sing the song, inaugurate the fame ?  
We have not waited to acquaint ourselves  
With song and subject ; we can prologuize  
How, at Eurustheus' bidding,—hate strained  
hard,—

Herakles had departed, one time more,  
On his last labour, worst of all the twelve ;  
Descended into Haidēs, thence to drag  
The triple-headed hound, which sun should see  
Spite of the god whose darkness whelped the  
Fear.

Down went the hero, "back—how should he  
come ?"

So laughed King Lukos, an old enemy,  
Who judged that absence testified defeat  
Of the land's loved one,—since he saved the  
land

And for that service wedded Megara  
Daughter of Thebai, realm her child should  
rule.

Ambition, greed and malice seized their prey,  
The Heracleian House, defenceless left,  
Father and wife and child, to trample out  
Trace of its hearth-fire : since extreme old age  
Wakes pity, woman's wrong wins champion-  
ship,

And child may grow up man and take revenge.  
Hence see we that, from out their palace-home  
Hunted, for last resource they cluster now  
Couched on the cold ground, hapless suppli-  
cants

About their courtyard altar,—Household Zeus  
It is, the Three in funeral garb beseech,  
Delaying death so, till deliverance come—  
When did it ever ?—from the deep and dark.  
And thus breaks silence old Amphitruon's  
voice. . . .

Say I not true thus far, my Euthukles ?

Suddenly, torch-light ! knocking at the door,  
 Loud, quick, "Admittance for the revels'  
 lord !"

Some unintelligible Komos-cry—  
*Raw-flesh red, no cap upon his head,*  
*Dionusos, Bacchos, Phales, Iacchos,*  
*In let him reel with the kid-skin at his heel,*  
*Where it buries in the spread of the bushy*  
*myrtle-bed !*

(Our Rhodian Jackdaw-song was sense to  
 that !)

Then laughter, outbursts ruder and more rude,  
 Through which, with silver point, a fluting  
 pierced,  
 And ever "Open, open, Bacchos bids !"

But at last—one authoritative word,  
 One name of an immense significance :  
 For Euthukles rose up, threw wide the door.

There trooped the Choros of the Comedy  
 Crowned and triumphant ; first, those flushed  
 Fifteen

Men that wore women's garb, grotesque dis-  
 guise.

'Then marched the Three,—who played  
 Mnesilochos,

Who, Toxotes, and who, robed right, masked  
 rare,

Monkeyed our Great and Dead to heart's  
 content

That morning in Athenai. Masks were down  
 And robes doffed now ; the sole disguise was  
 drink.

Mixing with these—I know not what gay  
 crowd,

Girl-dancers, flute-boys, and pre-eminent  
 Among them,—doubtless draped with such  
 reserve

As stopped fear of the fifty-drachma fine  
 (Beside one's name on public fig-tree nailed)  
 Which women pay who in the streets walk  
 bare,—

Behold Elaphion of the Persic dance !  
 Who lately had frisked fawn-foot, and the rest,  
 —All for the Patriot Cause, the Antique  
 Faith,

The Conservation of True Poesy—  
 Could I but penetrate the deep design !  
 Elaphion, more Peiraios-known as "Phaps,"  
 Tripped at the head of the whole banquet-band  
 Who came in front now, as the first fell back ;  
 And foremost—the authoritative voice,  
 The revels-leader, he who gained the prize,  
 And got the glory of the Archon's feast—  
 There stood in person Aristophanes.

And no ignoble presence ! On the bulge  
 Of the clear baldness,—all his head one  
 brow,—

True, the veins swelled, blue network, and  
 there surged

A red from cheek to temple,—then retired  
 As if the dark-leaved chaplet damped a flame,—  
 Was never nursed by temperance or health.  
 But huge the eyeballs rolled back native fire,  
 Imperiously triumphant : nostrils wide  
 Waited their incense ; while the pursed  
 mouth's pout

Aggressive, while the beak supreme above,  
 While the head, face, nay, pillared throat  
 thrown back,

Beard whitening under like a vinous foam,  
 These made a glory, of such insolence—

I thought,—such domineering deity  
 Hephaistos might have carved to cut the brine

For his gay brother's prow, imbrue that path  
 Which, purpling, recognized the conqueror.

Impudent and majestic : drunk, perhaps,  
 But that's religion ; sense too plainly snuffed :  
 Still, sensuality was grown a rite.

What I had disbelieved most proved most true.  
 There was a mind here, mind a-wantoning

At ease of undisputed mastery  
 Over the body's brood, those appetites.

Oh but he grasped them grandly, as the god  
 His either struggling handful,—hurtless snakes  
 Held deep down, strained hard off from side  
 and side !

Mastery his, theirs simply servitude,  
 So well could firm fist help intrepid eye.

Fawning and felseome, had they licked and  
 hissed ?

At mandate of one muscle, order reigned.

They had been wreathing much familiar now  
About him on his entry; but a squeeze  
Choked down the pests to place: their lord  
stood free.

Forward he stepped: I rose and fronted him.

"Hail, house, the friendly to Euripides!"  
(So he began) "Hail, each inhabitant!  
You, lady? What, the Rhodian? Form  
and face,  
Victory's self upsoaring to receive  
The poet? Right they named you . . . some  
rich name,

Vowel-buds thorned about with consonants,  
Fragrant, felicitous, rose-glow enriched  
By the Isle's ungent: some diminished end  
In *ion*, Kallistion? delicater still,  
Kubelion or Melittion,—or, suppose  
(Less vulgar love than bee or violet)  
Phibalion, for the mouth split red-fig-wise,  
Korakinidion for the coal-black hair,  
Nettarion, Phabion for the darlingness?  
But no, it was some fruit-flower, Rhoidion  
. . . ha,

We near the balsam-bloom — Balaustion!  
Thanks,

Rhodes! Folk have called me Rhodian, do  
you know?

Not fools so far! Because, if Helios wived,  
As Pindaros sings somewhere prettily,  
Here blooms his offspring, earth-flesh with  
sun-fire,

Rhodes' blood and Helios' gold. My phor-  
minx, boy!

Why does the boy hang back and baulk an ode  
Tiptoe at spread of wing? But like enough,  
Sunshine frays torchlight. Witness whom  
you scare,

Superb Balaustion! Look outside the house!  
*Pho*, you have quenched my Komos by first  
frown

Struck dead all joyance: not a fluting puffs  
From idle cheekband! Ah, my Choros too?  
You've eaten cuckoo-apple?<sup>1</sup> Dumb, you  
dogs?

<sup>1</sup> *Aram maculatum*, to eat which makes a  
fool of you.

So much good Thasian wasted on your throat  
And out of them not one *Threttanelo*?  
*Nebaretai*!<sup>2</sup> Because this earth-and-sun  
Product looks wormwood and all bitter herbs?  
Well, do I blench, though me she hates the  
most

Of mortals? By the cabbage, off they sink!  
You, too, my Chrusomelolonthion-Phaps,  
Girl-golding-beetle-beauty? You, abashed,  
Who late, supremely unabashable,  
Propped up my play at that important point  
When Artamouxia tricks the Toxotes?  
Ha, ha, — thank Hermes for the lucky  
throw,—

We came last comedy of the whole seven,  
So went all fresh to judgment well-disposed  
For who should fatly feast them, eye and ear,  
We two between us! What, you fail your  
friend?

Away then, free me of your cowardice!  
Go, get you the goat's breakfast!<sup>3</sup> Fare afield,  
Ye circumcised of Egypt, pigs to sow,  
Back to the Priest's or forward to the crows,  
So you but rid me of such company!  
Once left alone, I can protect myself  
From statuesque Balaustion pedestalled  
On much disapprobation and mistake!  
She dares not beat the sacred brow, beside!  
Bacchos' equipment, ivy safeguards well  
As Phoibos' bay.

"They take me at my word!  
One comfort is, I shall not want them long,  
The Archon's cry creaks, creaks, 'Curtail  
expense!'

The war wants money, year the twenty-sixth!  
Cut down our Choros number, clip costume,  
Save birds' wings, beetles' armour, spend the  
cash

In three-crest skull-caps, three days' salt-fish-  
slice,

Three-banked-ships for these sham-ambassa-  
dors,

And what not: any cost but Comedy's!  
'No Choros'—soon will follow; what care I?

<sup>2</sup> Vulgar noises imitating familiar sounds.  
<sup>3</sup> Vulgar expression connected with the wor-  
ship of the god.



Archinos and Agurrios, scrape your flint,  
Flay your dead dog, and curry favour so !  
Choros in rags, with loss of leather next,  
We lose the boys' vote, lose the song and dance,

Lose my Elaphion ! Still, the actor stays.  
Save but my acting, and the baldhead bard<sup>1</sup>  
Kudathenaian and Pandionid,  
Son of Philippos, Aristophanes

Surmounts his rivals now as heretofore,  
Though stunted to mere sober prosy verse—  
'Manners and men,' so squeamish gets the world !

No more 'Step forward, strip for anapæsts !'  
No calling naughty people by their names,  
No tickling audience into gratitude

With chickpease, barleygroats and nuts and plums,

No setting Salabaccho . . . "

As I turned—

" True, lady, I am tolerably drunk :  
The proper inspiration ! Otherwise,—  
Phrunichos, Choirilos !—had Aischulos  
So foiled you at the goat-song ? Drink's a god.

How else did that old doating driveller  
Kratinos foil me, match my masterpiece  
The 'Clouds' ? I swallowed cloud-distilment  
—dew

Undimmed by any grape-blush, knit my brow  
And gnawed my style and laughed my learnedest ;

While he worked at his 'Willow-wicker-flask,'  
Swigging at that same flask by which he swore.

Till, sing and empty, sing and fill again,  
Somehow result was—what it should not be  
Next time, I promised him and kept my word !  
Hence, brimful now of Thasian . . . I'll be bound,

Mendesian, merely : triumph-night, you know,  
The High Priest entertains the conqueror,  
And, since war worsens all things, stingily  
The rascal starves whom he is bound to stuff,

Choros and actors and their lord and king  
The poet ; supper, still he needs must spread —  
And this time all was conscientious fare :  
He knew his man, his match, his master — made

Amends, spared neither fish, flesh, fowl nor wine :

So merriment increased, I promise you,  
Till—something happened."

Here he strangely paused.

" After that,—well, it either was the cup  
To the Good Genius, our concluding pledge,  
That wrought me mischief, decently un-  
mixed,—

Or, what if, when *that* happened, need arose  
Of new libation ? Did you only know  
What happened ! Little wonder I am drunk."

Euthukles, o'er the boat-side, quick, what change,

Watch, in the water ! But a second since,  
It laughed a ripply spread of sun and sea,  
Ray fused with wave, to never disunite.  
Now, sudden all the surface, hard and black,  
Lies a quenched light, dead motion : what the cause ?

Look up and lo, the menace of a cloud  
Has solemnized the sparkling, spoiled the sport !

Just so, some overshadow, some new care  
Stopped all the mirth and mocking on his face  
And left there only such a dark surmise  
—No wonder if the revel disappeared,  
So did his face shed silence every side !  
I recognized a new man fronting me.

" So !" he smiled, piercing to my thought at once,

" You see myself ? Balaustion's fixed regard  
Can strip the proper Aristophanes  
Of what our sophists, in their jargon, style  
His accidents ? My soul sped forth but now  
To meet your hostile survey,—soul unseen,  
Yet veritably cinct for soul-defence  
With satyr sportive quips, cranks, boss and spike,

<sup>1</sup> Aristophanes himself.

Just as my visible body paced the street,  
 Environed by a boon companionship  
 Your apparition also puts to flight.  
 Well, what care I if, unaccounted twice,  
 I front my foe—no comicality  
 Round soul, and body-guard in banishment?  
 Thank your eyes' searching, undisguised I  
 stand :

The merest female child may question me.  
 Spare not, speak bold, Balaustion !"

I did speak :

" Bold speech be—welcome to this honoured  
 hearth,

Good Genius ! Glory of the poet, glow  
 O' the humourist who castigates his kind,  
 Suave summer-lightning lambency which  
 plays

On stag-horned tree, misshapen crag askew,  
 Then vanishes with unvindictive smile  
 After a moment's laying black earth bare.

Splendour of wit that springs a thunderball—  
 Satire—to burn and purify the world,

True aim, fair purpose : just wit justly strikes  
 Injustice,—right, as rightly quells the wrong,  
 Finds out in knaves', fools', cowards' armoury

The tricky tinselled place fire flashes through,  
 No damage else, sagacious of true ore ;

Wit, learned in the laurel, leaves each wreath  
 O'er lyric shell or tragic barbiton,<sup>1</sup>—

Though alien gauds be singed.—undecorate,  
 The genuine solace of the sacred brow.

Ay, and how pulses flame a patriot-star  
 Steadfast athwart our country's night of things,

To beacon, would she trust no meteor-blaze,  
 Athenai from the rock she steers for straight !

O light, light, light, I hail light everywhere,  
 No matter for the murk that was,—perchance,

That will be,—certes, never should have been  
 Such orb's associate !

" Aristophanes !

'The merest female child may question you?'

Once, in my Rhodes, a portent of the wave  
 Appalled our coast : for many a darkened day,

Intolerable mystery and fear.

Who snatched a furtive glance through cran-  
 nied peak,

Could but report of snake-scale, lizard-limb,—  
 So swam what, making whirlpools as it went,  
 Madded the brine with wrath or monstrous  
 sport.

"Tis Tuphon, loose, unmanacled from mount,  
 Declared the priests, 'no way appeasable  
 Unless perchance by virgin-sacrifice !'

Thus grew the terror and o'erhung the doom—  
 Until one eve a certain female-child

Strayed in safe ignorance to seacoast edge,  
 And there sat down and sang to please herself.

When all at once, large-looming from his  
 wave,

Out leaned, chin hand-propped, pensive on  
 the ledge,

A sea-worn face, sad as mortality,  
 Divine with yearning after fellowship.

He rose but breast-high. So much god she  
 saw ;

So much she sees now, and does reverence !"

Ah, but there followed tail-splash, frisk of fin !  
 Let cloud pass, the sea's ready laugh out-  
 breaks.

No very godlike trace retained the mouth  
 Which mocked with—

" So, He taught you tragedy !

I always asked 'Why may not women act?'  
 Nay, wear the comic visor just as well ;

Or, better, quite cast off the face-disguise  
 And voice-distortion, simply look and speak,

Real women playing women as men—men !  
 I shall not wonder if things come to that,

Some day when I am distant far enough.  
 Do you conceive the quite new Comedy

When laws allow ? laws only let girls dance,  
 Pipe, posture,—above all, Elaphionize,

Provided they keep decent—that is, dumb.  
 Ay, and, conceiving, I would execute,

Had I but two lives : one were overworked !  
 How penetrate encrusted prejudice,

Pierce ignorance three generations thick  
 Since first Sousarion crossed our boundary ?

He battered with a big Megaric stone ;

<sup>1</sup> A lyre.

Chionides felled oak and rough-hewed thence  
This club I wield now, having spent my life  
In planing knobs and sticking studs to shine;  
Somebody else must try mere polished steel!

Emboldened by the sober mood's return,  
"Meanwhile," said I, "since planed and  
studded club

Once more has pashed competitors to dust,  
And poet proves triumphant with that play  
Euthukles found last year unfortunate,—  
Does triumph spring from smoothness still  
more smoothed,

Fresh studs sown thick and threefold? In  
plain words,

Have you exchanged brute-blows,—which  
teach the brute

Man may surpass him in brutality,—  
For human fighting, or true god-like force  
Which breathes persuasion nor needs fight at  
all?

Have you essayed attacking ignorance,  
Convicting folly, by their opposites,  
Knowledge and wisdom? not by yours for ours,  
Fresh ignorance and folly, new for old,  
Greater for less, your crime for our mistake!  
If so success at last have crowned desert,  
Bringing surprise (dashed haply by concern  
At your discovery such wild waste of strength  
—And what strength!—went so long to keep  
in vogue

Such warfare—and what warfare!—shamed  
so fast,

So soon made obsolete, as fell their foe  
By the first arrow native to the orb,  
First onslaught worthy Aristophanes)—  
Was this conviction's entry that same strange  
'Something that happened' to confound your  
feast?"

"Ah, did he witness then my play that failed,  
First 'Thesmophoriazousai'? Well and good!  
But did he also see,—your Euthukles,—  
My 'Grasshoppers' which followed and failed  
too,

Three months since, at the 'Little-in-the-  
Fields'?"

<sup>1</sup> Country Dionysian revels.

"To say that he did see that First—should  
say  
He never cared to see its following."

"There happens to be reason why I wrote  
First play and second also. Ask the cause!  
I warrant you receive ere talk be done,  
Fit answer, authorizing either act.  
But here's the point: as Euthukles made vow  
Never again to taste my quality,  
So I was minded next experiment  
Should tickle palate—yea, of Euthukles!  
Not by such utter change, such absolute  
A topsyturvy of stage-habitude  
As you and he want,—Comedy built fresh,  
By novel brick and mortar, base to roof,—  
No, for I stand too near and look too close!  
Pleasure and pastime yours, spectators brave,  
Should I turn art's fixed fabric upside down!  
Little you guess how such tough work tasks  
soul!

Not overtasks, though: give fit strength fair  
play,  
And strength's a demiourgos! Art renewed?  
Ay, in some closet where strength shuts out  
—first

The friendly faces, sympathetic cheer:  
'More of the old provision none supplies  
So bounteously as thou,—our love, our pride,  
Our author of the many a perfect piece!  
Stick to that standard, change were de-  
cadence!'

Next, the unfriendly: 'This time, strain will  
tire,  
He's fresh, Ameipsias thy antagonist!'  
—Or better, in some Salaminian cave  
Where sky and sea and solitude make earth  
And man and noise one insignificance,  
Let strength propose itself,—behind the  
world,—

Sole prize worth winning, work that satisfies  
Strength it has dared and done strength's  
utmost!

After which,—clap to closet and quit cave,—  
Strength may conclude in Archelaos' court,  
And yet esteem the silken company  
So much sky-scud, sea-froth, earth-thistle-  
down,

For aught their praise or blame should joy  
or grieve.

Strength amid crowds as late in solitude  
May lead the still life, ply the wordless task:  
Then only, when seems need to move or speak,  
Moving—for due respect, when statesmen pass,  
(Strength, in the closet, watched how spiders  
spin)

Speaking—when fashion shows intelligence,  
(Strength, in the cave, oft whistled to the  
gulls)

In short, has learnt first, practised afterwards!  
Despise the world and reverence yourself,—  
Why, you may unmake things and remake  
things,

And throw behind you, unconcerned enough,  
What's made or marred: 'you teach men,  
are not taught!'

So marches off the stage Euripides!

"No such thin fare feeds flesh and blood like  
mine,

No such faint fume of fancy sates my soul,  
No such seclusion, closet, cave or court,  
Suits either: give me Iostephanos<sup>1</sup>  
Worth making happy what coarse way she  
will—

O happy-maker, when her cries increase  
About the favourite! 'Aristophanes!

More grist to mill, here's Kleophon to grind!  
He's for refusing peace, though Sparté cede

Even Dekeleia! Here's Kleonumos  
Declaring—though he threw away his shield,

He'll thrash you till you lay your lyre aside!  
Orestes bids mind where you walk of nights—

He wants your cloak as you his cudgelling:  
Here's, finally, Melanthios fat with fish,

The gormandizer-spendthrift-dramatist!  
So, bustle! Pounce on opportunity!

Let fun a-screaming in Parabasis,<sup>2</sup>  
Find food for folk agape at either end,

Mad for amusement! Times grow better too,  
And should they worsen, why, who laughs,  
forgets.

In no case, venture boy-experiments!  
Old wine's the wine: new poetry drinks raw:

<sup>1</sup> Violet-crowned Athens.

<sup>2</sup> Comic chorus.

Two plays a season is your pledge, beside;  
So, give us 'Wasps' again, grown hornets  
now!"

Then he changed.

"Do you so detect in me—  
Brow-bald, chin-bearded, me, curved cheek,  
carved lip,

Or where soul sits and reigns in either eye—  
What suits the—stigma, I say,—style say  
you,

Of 'Wine-lees-poet'? Bravest of buffoons,  
Less blunt than Telekleides, less obscene  
Than Murtilos, Hermippos: quite a match  
In elegance for Eupolis himself,

Yet pungent as Kratinos at his best?  
Graced with traditional immunity  
Ever since, much about my grandsire's time,  
Some funny village-man in Megara,

Lout-lord and clown-king, used a privilege,  
As due religious drinking-bouts came round,  
To daub his phyz,—no, that was afterward,—

He merely mounted cart with mates of choice  
And traversed country, taking house by house,  
At night,—because of danger in the freak,—  
Then hollaed 'Skin-flint starves his labourers!

Clench-fist stows figs away, cheats govern-  
ment!

Such an one likes to kiss his neighbour's  
wife,

And beat his own; while such another . . .  
Boh!

Soon came the broad day, circumstantial tale,  
Dancing and verse, and there's our Comedy,  
There's Mullos, there's Euetes, there's the  
stock

I shall be proud to graft my powers upon!  
Protected? Punished quite as certainly  
When Archons pleased to lay down each his  
law,—

Your Morucheides-Surakosios sort,—  
Each season, 'No more naming citizens,

Only abuse the vice, the vicious spare!  
Observe, henceforth no Areopagite

Demean his rank by writing Comedy!  
(They one and all could write the 'Clouds'  
of course.)

'Needs must we nick expenditure, allow  
Comedy half a choros, supper—none,  
Times being hard, while applicants increase  
For, what costs cash, the Tragic Trilogy.'  
Lofty Tragedians! How they lounge aloof  
Each with his Triad, three plays to my one,  
Not counting the contemptuous fourth, the  
frank

Concession to mere mortal levity,  
Satyric pittance tossed our beggar-world!  
Your proud Euripides from first to last  
Doled out some five such, never deigned us  
more!

And these—what curds and whey for mar-  
rowy wine!

That same Alkestis you so rave about  
Passed muster with him for a Satyr-play,  
The prig!—why trifle time with toys and  
skits

When he could stuff four ragbags sausage-  
wise

With sophistry, with bookish odds and  
ends,

Sokrates, meteors, moonshine, 'Life's not  
Life,'

'The tongue swore, but unsworn the mind  
remains,'

And fifty such concoctions, crab-tree-fruit  
Digested while, head low and heels in heaven,  
He lay, let Comics laugh—for privilege!

Looked puzzled on, or pityingly off,  
But never dreamed of paying gibe by jeer,  
Buffet by blow: plenty of proverb-pokes  
At vice and folly, wicked kings, mad mobs!

No sign of wincing at my Comic lash,  
No protest against infamous abuse,  
Malignant censure,—nought to prove I  
scourged

With tougher thong than leek-and-onion-  
plait!

If ever he glanced gloom, aggrieved at all,  
The aggrieved must be—Aischulos perhaps:  
Or Sophokles he'd take exception to.

—Do you detect in me—in me, I ask,  
The man like to accept this measurement  
Of faculty, contentedly sit classed

Mere Comic Poet—since I wrote 'The  
Birds'?

I thought there might lurk truth in jest's  
disguise.

"Thanks!" he resumed, so quick to construe  
smile!

"I answered—in my mind—these gapers  
thus:

Since old wine's ripe and new verse raw,  
you judge—

What if I vary vintage-mode and mix  
Blossom with must, give nosegay to the  
brew,

Fining, refining, gently, surely, till  
The educated taste turns unawares  
From customary dregs to draught divine?

Then answered—with my lips: More  
'Wasps' you want?

Come next year and I give you 'Grass-  
hoppers'!

And 'Grasshoppers' I gave them,—last  
month's play.

They formed the Choros. Alkibiades,  
No longer Triphalos but Trilophos,  
(Whom I called Darling-of-the-Summertime,  
Born to be nothing else but beautiful  
And brave, to eat, drink, love his life  
away)

Persuades the Tettix (our Autochthon-brood,  
That sip the dew and sing on olive-branch  
Above the ant-and-emmet populace)  
To summon all who meadow, hill and dale  
Inhabit—bee, wasp, woodlouse, dragonfly—  
To band themselves against red nipper-  
nose

Stagbeetle, huge Tailgetan (you guess—  
Sparté) Athenai needs must battle with,  
Because her sons are grown effeminate  
To that degree—so morbidifies their flesh  
The poison-drama of Euripides,  
Morals and music—there's no antidote  
Occurs save warfare which inspirits blood,  
And brings us back perchance the blessed  
time

When (Choros takes up tale) our commonalty  
Firm in primæval virtue, antique faith,  
Ere earwig-sophist plagued or pismire-sage,  
Cockered no noddle up with A, b, g,  
Book-learning, logic-chopping, and the moon,

But just employed their brains on 'Ruppapai,'<sup>1</sup>  
Row, boys, munch barley-bread, and take  
your ease—

Mindful, however, of the tier beneath !  
Ah, golden epoch ! while the nobler sort  
(Such needs must study, no contesting that !)  
Wore no long curls but used to crop their  
hair,

Gathered the tunic well about the ham,  
Remembering 'twas soft sand they used for  
seat

At school-time, while—mark this—the lesson  
long,

No learner ever dared to cross his legs !  
Then, if you bade him take the myrtle-bough  
And sing for supper—'twas some grave  
romant

*How man of Mitulené, wondrous wise,  
Jumped into hedge, by mortals quickset called,  
And there, anticipating Oideipous,  
Scratched out his eyes and scratched them in  
again.*

None of your Phaidras, Augés, Kanakés,  
To mincing music, turn, trill, tweedle-trash,  
Whence comes that Marathon is obsolete !  
Next, my Antistrophé was—praise of Peace :  
Ah, could our people know what Peace  
implies !

Home to the farm and furrow ! Grub one's  
vine,

Romp with one's Thratta, pretty serving-girl,  
When wife's busy bathing ! Eat and drink,  
And drink and eat, what else is good in life ?  
Slice hare, toss pancake, gaily gurgle down  
The Thasian grape in celebration due  
Of Bacchos ! Welcome, dear domestic rite,  
When wife and sons and daughters, Thratta  
too,

Pour peasoup as we chant delectably  
*In Bacchos reels, his tunic at his heels !*  
Enough, you comprehend,—I do at least !  
Then,—he but patient,—the Parabasis !  
Pray ! For in that I also pushed reform.  
None of the self-laudation, vulgar brag,  
Vainglorious rivals cultivate so much !  
No ! If some merest word in Art's defence

Justice demanded of me,—never fear !  
Claim was preferred, but dignifiedly.  
A cricket asked a locust (winged, you know)  
What he had seen most rare in foreign  
parts ?

'I have flown far,' chirped he, 'North, East,  
South, West,

And nowhere heard of poet worth a fig  
If matched with Bald-head here, Aigina's  
boast,

Who in this play bids rivalry despair  
Past, present, and to come, so marvellous  
His Tragic, Comic, Lyric excellence !

Whereof the fit reward were (not to speak  
Of dinner every day at public cost

I' the Prutaneion supper with yourselves,  
My Public, best dish offered bravest bard !'

No more ! no sort of sin against good taste !  
Then, satire,—Oh, a plain necessity !

But I won't tell you : for—could I dispense  
With one more gird at old Ariphraides ?

How scorpion-like he feeds on human flesh—  
Ever finds out some novel infamy

Unutterable, inconceivable,  
Which all the greater need was to describe

Minutely, each tail-twist at ink-shed time . . .  
Now, what's your gesture caused by ? What

you loathe,  
Don't I loathe doubly, else why take such  
pains

To tell it you ? But keep your prejudice !  
My audience justified you ! Housebreakers !

This pattern-purity was played and failed  
Last Rural Dionusia—failed ! for why ?

Ameipsias followed with the genuine stuff.  
He had been mindful to engage the Four—

Karkinos and his dwarf-crab-family—  
Father and sons, they whirled like spinning-

tops,  
Choros gigantically poked his fun,

The boys' frank laugh relaxed the seniors'  
brow,

The skies re-echoed victory's acclaim,  
Ameipsias gained his due, I got my dose

Of wisdom for the future. Purity ?  
No more of that next month, Athenai mine !

Contrive new cut of robe who will,—I patch  
The old exomis, add no purple sleeve !

<sup>1</sup> A sailor's cry.

The Thesmophoriazousai, smartened up  
With certain plaits, shall please, I promise  
you!

"Yes, I took up the play that failed last  
year,

And re-arranged things; threw adroitly in,—  
No Parachoregema,<sup>1</sup>—men to match  
My women there already; and when these  
(I had a hit at Aristullos here,  
His plan how womankind should rule the  
roast)

Drove men to plough—'A-field, ye cribbed  
of cape!'

Men showed themselves exempt from service  
straight

Stupendously, till all the boys cried 'Brave!'  
Then for the elders, I bethought me too,  
Improved upon Mnesilochos' release  
From the old Bowman, board and binding-  
strap:

I made his son-in-law Euripides  
Engage to put both shrewish wives away—  
'Gravity' one, the other 'Sophist-lore'—  
And mate with the Bald Bard's hetairai  
twain—

'Goodhumour' and 'Indulgence': on they  
tripped,

Murrhiné, Akalanthis,—'beautiful  
Their whole belongings'—crowd joined choros  
there!

And while the Toxotes wound up his part  
By shower of nuts and sweetmeats on the mob,  
The woman-choros celebrated New  
Kalligeneia, the frank last-day rite.

Brief, I was chairéd and caressed and crowned  
And the whole theatre broke out a-roar,  
Echoed my admonition—choros-cap—  
*Rivals of mine, your hands to your faces!*  
*Summon no more the Muses, the Graces,*  
*Since here by my side they have chosen their*  
*places!*

And so we all flocked merrily to feast,  
I, my choragos, choros, actors, mutes  
And flutes aforesaid, friends in crowd, no fear,  
At the Priest's supper; and hilarity

Grew none the less that, early in the piece,  
Ran a report, from row to row close-packed,  
Of messenger's arrival at the Port  
With weighty tidings, 'Of Lusandros' flight,'  
Opined one; 'That Eubolia penitent  
Sends the Confederation fifty-ships,'  
Preferred another; while 'The Great King's  
Eye'

Has brought a present for Elaphion here,  
That rarest peacock Kompolakuthes!'  
Such was the supposition of a third.

'No matter what the news,' friend Strattis  
laughed,

'It won't be worse for waiting: while each click  
Of the klepsudra sets a-shaking grave  
Resentment in our shark's-head, boiled and  
spoiled

By this time: dished in Spheetian vinegar,  
Silphion and honey, served with cocks'-brain-  
sauce!

So, swift to supper, Poet! No mistake,  
This play; nor, like the unflavoured "Grass-  
hoppers,"

Salt without thyme! Right merrily we supped,  
Till—something happened.

"Out it shall, at last!

"Mirth drew to ending, for the cup was  
crowned

To the Triumphant! 'Kleonclapper erst,  
Now, Plier of a scourge Euripides  
Fairly turns tail from, flying Attiké  
For Makedonia's rocks and frosts and bears,  
Where, furry grown, he growls to match the  
squeak

Of girl-voiced, crocus-vested Agathon!  
Ha ha, he he!' When suddenly a knock—  
Sharp, solitary, cold, authoritative.

"'Babaiax! Sokrates a-passing by,  
A-peering in for Aristullos' sake,  
To put a question touching Comic Law?'

"No! Enters an old pale-swathed majesty,  
Makes slow mute passage through two ranks  
as mute,

\* A nickname in "The Acharnians."

<sup>1</sup> Secondary choros.

(Strattis stood up with all the rest, the sneak !)  
Grey brow still bent on ground, upraised at length

When, our Priest reached, full-front the vision paused.

" 'Priest !'—the deep tone succeeded the fixed gaze—

'Thou carest that thy god have spectacle  
Decent and seemly ; wherefore I announce  
That, since Euripides is dead to-day,  
My Choros, at the Greater Feast, next month,  
Shall, clothed in black, appear ungarlanded !'

"Then the grey brow sank low, and Sophokles

Re-swathed him, sweeping doorward : mutely

'Twixt rows as mute, to mingle possibly  
With certain gods who convoy age to port ;  
And night resumed him.

"When our stupor broke,  
Chirpings took courage, and grew audible.

'Dead—so one speaks now of Euripides !  
Ungarlanded dance Choros, did he say ?  
I guess the reason : in extreme old age  
No doubt such have the gods for visitants.  
Why did he dedicate to Herakles  
An altar else, but that the god, turned Judge,  
Told him in dream who took the crown of gold ?

He who restored Akropolis the theft,  
Himself may feel perhaps a timely twinge  
At thought of certain other crowns he filched  
From—who now visits Herakles the Judge.  
Instance "Medeia" ! that play yielded palm  
To Sophokles ; and he again—to whom ?  
Euphion ! Why ? Ask Herakles the Judge !'

'Ungarlanded, just means—economy !  
Suppress robes, chaplets, everything suppress  
Except the poet's present ! An old tale  
Put capitally by Trugaioi—eh ?  
—News from the world of transformation  
strange !

How Sophokles is grown Simonides,

And,—aged, rotten,—all the same, for greed  
Would venture on a hurdle out to sea !—

So jokes Philonides. Kallistratos  
Retorts—Mistake ! Instead of stinginess,  
The fact is, in extreme decrepitude,  
He has discarded poet and turned priest,  
Priest of Half-Hero Alkon : visited  
In his own house too by Asklepios' self,  
So he avers. Meanwhile, his own estate  
Lies fallow ; Iophon's the manager,—  
Nay, touches up a play, brings out the same,  
Asserts true sonship. See to what you sink  
After your dozen-dozen prodigies !  
Looking so old—Euripides seems young,  
Born ten years later.'

'Just his tricky style !  
Since, stealing first away, he wins first word  
Out of good-natured rival Sophokles ;  
Procures himself no bad panegyric.  
Had fate willed otherwise, himself were taxed  
To pay survivor's-tribute,—harder squeezed  
From anybody beaten first to last,  
Than one who, steadily a conqueror,  
Finds that his magnanimity is tasked  
To merely make pretence and—beat itself !'

"So chirped the feasters though suppressedly.

"But I—what else do you suppose?—had  
pierced  
Quite through friends' outside-straining, foes'  
mock-praise,  
And reached conviction hearted under all.  
Death's rapid line had closed a life's account,  
And cut off, left unalterably clear  
The summed-up value of Euripides.

"Well, it might be the Thasian ! Certainly  
There sang suggestive music in my ears ;  
And, through—what sophists style—the wall  
of sense  
My eyes pierced : death seemed life and life  
seemed death,  
Envisaged that way, now, which I, before,  
Conceived was just a moonstruck mood.  
Quite plain  
There re-insisted,—ay, each prim stiff phrase



Of each old play, my still-new laughing-stock,  
I had meaning, well worth poet's pains to state,  
Should life prove half true life's term,—death,  
the rest.

As for the other question, late so large  
Now all at once so little,—he or I,  
Which better comprehended playwright  
craft,—

There, too, old admonition took fresh point.  
As clear recurred our last word-interchange  
Two years since, when I tried with 'Ploutos.'  
'Vain !'

Saluted me the cold grave-bearded bard—  
'Vain, this late trial, Aristophanes !  
None baulks the genius with impunity !  
You know what kind's the nobler, what  
makes grave

Or what makes grin ; there's yet a nobler still,  
Possibly,—what makes wise, not grave,—and  
glad,

Not grinning : whereby laughter joins with  
tears,

Tragic and Comic Poet prove one power,  
And Aristophanes becomes our Fourth—  
Nay, greatest ! Never needs the Art stand  
still,

But those Art leans on lag, and none like you,  
Her strongest of supports, whose step aside  
Undoes the march : defection checks advance  
Too late adventured ! See the "Ploutos"  
here !

This step decides your foot from old to new—  
Proves you relinquish song and dance and  
jest,

Discard the beast, and, rising from all-fours,  
Fain would paint, manlike, actual human life,  
Make veritable men think, say and do.

Here's the conception : which to execute,  
Where's force ? Spent ! Ere the race began,  
was breath

O' the runner squandered on each friendly  
fool—

Wit-fireworks fizzed off while day craved no  
flame :

How should the night receive her due of fire  
Flared out in Wasps and Horses, Clouds and  
Birds,

Prodigiously a-crackle ? Rest content !

The new adventure for the novel man  
Born to that next success myself foresee  
In right of where I reach before I rest.  
At end of a long course, straight all the way.  
Well may there tremble somewhat into ken  
The untrod path, clouds veiled from earlier  
gaze !

None may live two lives : I have lived mine  
through,

Die where I first stand still. You retrograde.  
I leave my life's work. I compete with you,  
My last with your last, my Antiope—

Phoinissai—with this Ploutos ? No, I think !  
Ever shall great and awful Victory  
Accompany my life—in Maketis

If not Athenai. Take my farewell, friend !  
Friend,—for from no consummate excellence  
Like yours, whatever fault may countervail,

Do I profess estrangement : mark the marsh,  
Yet where a solitary marble block  
Blanches the gloom, there let the eagle perch !

You show—what splinters of Pentelikos,  
Islanded by what ordure ! Eagles fly,  
Rest on the right place, thence depart as free ;

But 'ware man's footstep, would it traverse  
mire

Untainted ! Mire is safe for worms that  
crawl.'

"Balaustion ! Here are very many words,  
All to portray one moment's rush of thought,—  
And much they do it ! Still, you understand.

The Archon, the Feast-master, read their sum  
And substance, judged the banquet-glow  
extinct,

So rose, discreetly if abruptly, crowned  
The parting cup,—'To the Good Genius,  
then !'

"Up starts young Strattis for a final flash :  
'Ay the Good Genius ! To the Comic  
Muse,

She who evolves superiority,  
Triumph and joy from sorrow, unsuccess  
And all that's incomplete in human life ;

Who proves such actual failure transient  
wrong,

Since out of body uncouth, halt and maimed—

Since out of soul grotesque, corrupt or blank—  
Fancy, uplifted by the Muse, can flit  
To soul and body, re-instate them Man :  
Beside which perfect man, how clear we see  
Divergency from type was earth's effect !  
Escaping whence by laughter, — Fancy's  
feat,—

We right man's wrong, establish true for  
false,—

Above misshapen body, uncouth soul,  
Reach the fine form, the clear intelligence—  
Above unseemliness, reach decent law,—

By laughter : attestation of the Muse  
That low-and-ugly is not signed and sealed  
Incontrovertibly man's portion here,

Or, if here,—why, still high-and-fair exists  
In that ethereal realm where laughs our soul  
Lift by the Muse. Hail thou her ministrant !

Hail who accepted no deformity  
In man as normal and remediless,

But rather pushed it to such gross extreme  
That, outraged, we protest by eye's recoil  
The opposite proves somewhere rule and  
law !

Hail who implied, by limning Lamachos,  
Plenty and pastime wait on peace, not war !  
Philokleon—better bear a wrong than plead,

Play the litigious fool to stuff the mouth  
Of dikast with the due three-obel fee !

The Paphlagonian—stick to the old sway  
Of few and wise, not rabble-government !

Trugaïos, Pisthetairos, Strepsiades,—

Why multiply examples ? Hail, in fine,

The hero of each painted monster—so

Suggesting the unpictured perfect shape !

Pour out ! A laugh to Aristophanes !'

"Stay, my fine Strattis"—and I stopped  
applause—

"To the Good Genius—but the Tragic Muse !  
She who instructs her poet, bids man's soul

Play man's part merely nor attempt the gods'  
Ill-guessed of ! Task humanity to height,

Put passion to prime use, urge will, unshamed  
When will's last effort breaks in impotence !

No power forego, elude : no weakness,—  
plied

Fairly by power and will,—renounce, deny !

Acknowledge, in such miscalled weakness  
strength

Latent : and substitute thus things for words !  
Make man run life's race fairly,—legs and  
feet,

Craving no false wings to o'erfly its length !  
Trust on, trust ever, trust to end—in truth !

By truth of extreme passion, utmost will,  
Shame back all false display of either force—  
Barrier about such strenuous heat and glow,

That cowardice shall shirk contending,—  
cant,

Pretension, shrivel at truth's first approach !  
Pour to the Tragic Muse's ministrant

Who, as he pictured pure Hippolitos,  
Abolished our earth's blot Ariphrades ;

Who, as he drew Bellerophon the bold,  
Proclaimed Kleonumos incredible ;

Who, as his Theseus towered up man once  
more,

Made Alkibiades shrink boy again !  
A tear—no woman's tribute, weak exchange

For action, water spent and heart's-blood  
saved—

No man's regret for greatness gone, ungraced  
Perchance by even that poor meed, man's

praise—  
But some god's superabundance of desire,

Yearning of will to 'scape necessity,—  
Love's overbrimming for self-sacrifice,

Whence good might be, which never else  
may be,

By power displayed, forbidden this strait  
sphere,—

Effort expressible one only way—  
Such tear from me fall to Euripides !'

The Thasian !—All, the Thasian, I account !  
Whereupon outburst the whole company

Into applause and — laughter, would you  
think ?

The unrivalled one ! How, never at a loss,  
He turns the Tragic on its Comic side

Else imperceptible ! Here's death itself—  
Death of a rival, of an enemy,—

Scarce seen as Comic till the master-touch  
Made it acknowledge Aristophanes !

Lo, that Euripidean laurel-tree  
Struck to the heart by lightning ! Sokrates  
Would question us, with buzz of how and  
why,

Wherefore the berry's virtue, the bloom's  
vice,

Till we all wished him quiet with his friend ;  
Agathon would compose an elegy,  
Lyric bewailment fit to move a stone,  
And, stones responsive, we might wince, 'tis  
like ;

Nay, with more cause of all to weep the least,  
Sophokles ordains mourning for his sake  
While we confess to a remorseful twinge :—  
Suddenly, who but Aristophanes,  
Prompt to the rescue, puts forth solemn hand,  
Singles us out the tragic tree's best branch,  
Persuades it groundward and, at tip, appends,  
For votive-visor, Faun's goat-grinning face !  
Back it flies, evermore with jest a-top,  
And we recover the true mood, and laugh !”

“ I felt as when some Nikias,—ninny-like  
Troubled by sunspot-portent, moon-eclipse, —  
At fault a little, sees no choice but sound  
Retreat from foeman ; and his troops mistake  
The signal, and hail onset in the blast,  
And at their joyous answer, *alal!*  
Back the old courage brings the scattered  
wits ;

He wonders what his doubt meant, quick  
confirms

The happy error, blows the charge amain.  
So I repaired things.

“ Both be praised ” thanked I.

“ You who have laughed with Aristophanes,  
You who wept rather with the Lord of Tears !  
Priest, do thou, president alike o'er each,  
Tragic and Comic function of the god,  
Help with libation to the blended twain !  
Either of which who serving, only serves—  
Proclaims himself disqualified to pour  
To that Good Genius—complex Poetry,  
Uniting each god-grace, including both :  
Which, operant for body as for soul,  
Masters alike the laughter and the tears,  
Supreme in lowliest earth, sublimest sky.

Who dares disjoin these,—whether he ignores  
Body or soul, whichever half destroys,—  
Maims the else perfect manhood, perpetrates  
Again the inexpiable crime we curse—

Hacks at the Hermai, halves each guardian  
shape

Combining, nowise vainly, prominence  
Of august head and enthroned intellect,  
With homelier symbol of asserted sense,—  
Nature's prime impulse, earthly appetite.  
For, when our folly ventures on the freak,  
Would fain abolish joy and fruitfulness,  
Mutilate nature—what avails the Head  
Left solitarily predominant,—

Unbodied soul,—not Hermes, both in one ?

I, no more than our City, acquiesce

In such a desecration, but defend  
Man's double nature—ay, wert thou its foe !  
Could I once more, thou cold Euripides,  
Encounter thee, in nought would I abate  
My warfare, nor subdue my worst attack  
On thee whose life-work preached ‘ Raise  
soul, sink sense !

Evirate Hermes ! ’—would avenge the god,  
And justify myself. Once face to face,  
Thou, the argute and tricky, shouldst not  
wrap,

As thine old fashion was, in silent scorn  
The breast that quickened at the sting of  
truth,

Nor turn from me, as, if the tale be true,  
From Lais when she met thee in thy walks,  
And questioned why she had no rights as thou :  
Not so shouldst thou betake thee, be assured,  
To book and pencil, deign me no reply !

I would extract an answer from those lips  
So closed and cold, were mine the garden-  
chance !

Gone from the world ! Does none remain  
to take

Thy part and ply me with thy sophist-skill ?  
No sun makes proof of his whole potency  
For gold and purple in that orb we view ;  
The apparent orb does little but leave blind  
The audacious, and confused the worshipping ;  
But, close on orb's departure, must succeed  
The serviceable cloud,—must intervene,  
Induce expenditure of rose and blue,

Reveal what lay in him was lost to us.  
So, friends, what hinders, as we homeward go,  
If, privileged by triumph gained to-day,  
We clasp that cloud our sun left saturate,  
The Rhodian rosy with Euripides?  
Not of my audience on my triumph-day,  
She nor her husband! After the night's  
news

Neither will sleep but watch; I know the  
mood.

Accompany! my crown declares my right!  
And here you stand with those warm golden  
eyes!

"In honest language, I am scarce too sure  
Whether I really felt, indeed expressed  
Then, in that presence, things I now repeat:  
Nor half, nor any one word,—will that do?  
May be, such eyes must strike conviction, turn  
One's nature bottom upwards, show the base—  
The live rock latent under wave and foam:  
Superimposed these! Yet solid stuff  
Will ever and anon, obeying star,  
(And what star reaches rock-nerve like an  
eye?)

Swim up to surface, spout or mud or flame,  
And find no more to do than sink as fast.

"Anyhow, I have followed happily  
The impulse, pledged my Genius with effect,  
Since, come to see you, I am shown—my-  
self!"

I answered:

"One of us declared for both  
'Welcome the glory of Aristophanes.'  
The other adds: and,—if that glory last,  
Nor marsh-born vapour creep to veil the  
same,—  
Once entered, share in our solemnity!  
Commemorate, as we, Euripides!"

"What?" he looked round, "I darken the  
bright house?  
Profane the temple of your deity?  
That's true! Else wherefore does he stand  
portrayed?"

What Rhodian paint and pencil saved so much,  
Beard, freckled face, brow—all but breath, I  
hope!

Come, that's unfair: myself am somebody,  
Yet my pictorial fame's just potter's-work,—  
I merely figure on men's drinking-mugs!  
I and the Flat-nose, 'Sophroniskos' son,  
Oft make a pair. But what's this lies below?  
His table-book and graver, playwright's tool!  
And lo, the sweet psalterion, strung and  
screwed, .

Whereon he tried those *le-d-d-d-ds*  
And *ke-d-d-d-ds* and turns and trills,  
Lovely lark's *tirra-lirra*, lad's delight!  
Aischulos' bronze-throat eagle-bark at blood  
I has somehow spoiled my taste for twitterings!  
With . . . what, and did he leave you  
'Herakles'?

The 'Frenzied Hero,' one unfractured sheet,  
No pine-wood tablets smeared with treacher-  
ous wax—

Papuros perfect as e'er tempted pen!  
This sacred twist of bay-leaves dead and sere  
Must be that crown the fine work failed to  
catch,—

No wonder! This might crown 'Antiope.'  
'Herakles' triumph? In your heart perhaps!  
But elsewhere? Come now, I'll explain the  
case,

Show you the main mistake. Give me the  
sheet!"

I interrupted:

"Aristophanes!

The stranger-woman sues in her abode—  
'Be honoured as our guest!' But, call it—  
shrine,

Then 'No dishonour to the Daimon!' bids  
The priestess 'or expect dishonour's due!'  
You enter fresh from your worst infamy,  
Last instance of long outrage; yet I pause,  
Withhold the word a-tremble on my lip,  
Incline me, rather, yearn to reverence,—  
So you but suffer that I see the blaze  
And not the bolt,—the splendid fancy-fling,  
Not the cold iron malice, the launched lie  
Whence heavenly fire has withered; impotent,

Yet execrable, leave it 'neath the look  
Of yon impassive presence! What he scorned,  
His life long, need I touch, offend my foot,  
To prove that malice missed its mark, that lie  
Cumbers the ground, returns to whence it came?  
I marvel, I deplore,—the rest be mute!  
But, throw off hate's celestialty,—  
Show me, apart from song-flash and wit-flame,  
A mere man's hand ignobly clenched against  
Yon supreme calmness,—and I interpose,  
Such as you see me! Silk breaks lightning's  
blow!"

He seemed to scarce so much as notice me,  
Aught had I spoken, save the final phrase:  
Arrested there.

"Euripides grown calm!  
Calmness supreme means dead and therefore  
safe,"  
He muttered; then more audibly began—

"Dead! Such must die! Could people  
comprehend!

There's the unfairness of it! So obtuse  
Are all: from Solon downward with his saw  
'Let none revile the dead,—no, though the  
son,

Nay, far descendant, should revile thyself!'—  
To him who made Elektra, in the act  
Of wreaking vengeance on her worst of foes,  
Scruple to blame, since speech that blames  
insults

Too much the very villain life-released.  
Now, I say, only after death, begins  
That formidable claim,—immunity  
Of faultiness from fault's due punishment!  
The living, who defame me,—why, they live:  
Fools,—I best prove them foolish by their life,  
Will they but work on, lay their work by mine,  
And wait a little, one Olympiad, say!  
Then—where's the vital force, mine froze  
beside?

The sturdy fibre, shamed my brittle stuff?  
The school-correctness, sure of wise award  
When my vagaries cease to tickle taste?  
Where's censure that must sink me, judgment  
big

Awaiting just the word posterity  
Pants to pronounce? Time's wave breaks,  
buries—*whom*,  
Fools, when myself confronts you four years  
hence?

But die, ere next Lenaia,—safely so  
You 'scape me, slink with all your ignorance,  
Stupidity and malice, to that hole  
O'er which survivors croak 'Respect the dead!' Ay, for I needs must! But allow me clutch  
Only a carrion-handful, lend it sense,  
(Mine, not its own, or could it answer me?)  
And question 'You, I pluck from hiding-place,  
Whose cant was, certain years ago, my  
'Clouds'

Might last until the swallows came with  
Spring—

Whose chatter, 'Birds' are unintelligible,  
Mere psychologic puzzling: poetry?  
List, the true lay to rock a cradle with!  
*O man of Mituleni, wondrous wise!*

—Would not I rub each face in its own filth  
To tune of 'Now that years have come and  
gone,

How does the fact stand? What's demon-  
strable

By time, that tries things?—your own test,  
not mine

Who think men are, were, ever will be fools,  
Though somehow fools confute fools,—as  
these, you!

Don't mumble to the sheepish twos and threes  
You cornered and called 'audience'! Face  
this *me*

Who know, and can, and—helped by fifty  
years—

Do pulverize you pygmies, then as now!'

"Ay, now as then, I pulverize the brood,  
Balastion! Mindful, from the first, where  
foe

Would hide head safe when hand had flung  
its stone,

I did not turn cheek and take pleasantry,  
But flogged while skin could purple and flesh  
start,

To teach fools whom they tried conclusions  
with.

First face a-splutter at me got such splotch  
Of prompt slab mud as, filling mouth to maw,  
Made its concern thenceforward not so much  
To criticize me as go cleanse itself.

The only drawback to which huge delight,—  
(He saw it, how he saw it, that calm cold  
Sagacity you call Euripides !)

—Why, 'tis that, make a muckheap of a man,  
There, pillared by your prowess, he remains,  
Immortally immerded. Not so he !

Men pelted him but got no pellet back.  
He reasoned, I'll engage,— 'Acquaint the  
world

Certain minuteness butted at my knee ?

Dogface Eruxis, the small satirist,—  
What better would the manikin desire  
Than to strut forth on tiptoe, notable  
As who, so far up, fouled me in the flank ?'  
So dealt he with the dwarfs : we giants, too,  
Why must we emulate their pin-point play ?  
Render imperishable—impotence,

For mud throw mountains ? Zeus, by mud  
unreached,—

Well, 'twas no dwarf he heaved Olumpos  
at !"

My heart burned up within me to my tongue.

" And why must men remember, ages hence,  
Who it was rolled down rocks, but refuse  
too—

Strattis might steal from ! mixture-monu-  
ment,

Recording what ? 'I, Aristophanes,  
Who boast me much inventive in my art,  
Against Euripides thus volleyed muck  
Because, in art, he too extended bounds.

I—patriot, loving peace and hating war,—  
Choosing the rule of few, but wise and good,  
Rather than mob-dictature, fools and knaves  
However multiplied their mastery,—

Despising most of all the demagogue,  
(Noisome air-bubble, buoyed up, borne along  
By kindred breath of knave and fool below,  
Whose hearts swell proudly as each puffing

face

Grows big, reflected in that glassy ball,  
Vacuity, just bellied out to break

VOL. I.

And righteously bespatter friends the first)—  
I loathing,—beyond less puissant speech  
Than my own god-grand language to  
declare,—

The fawning, cozenage and calumny  
Wherewith such favourite feeds the populace  
That fan and set him flying for reward :—

I who, detecting what vice underlies  
Thought's superstructure,—fancy's sludge  
and slime

'Twixt fact's sound floor and thought's mere  
surface-growth

Of hopes and fears which root no deeper  
down

Than where all such mere fungi breed and  
bloat—

Namely, man's misconception of the God :—  
I, loving, hating, wishful from my soul

That truth should triumph, falsehood have  
defeat,

—Why, all my soul's supremacy of power  
Did I pour out in volley just on him

Who, his whole life long, championed every  
cause

I called my heart's cause, loving as I loved,  
Hating my hates, spurning falsehood, cham-  
pioned truth,—

Championed truth not by flagellating foe  
With simple rose and lily, gibe and jeer,

Sly wink of boon-companion o'er his bowze  
Who, while he blames the liquor, smacks the  
lip,

Blames, doubtless, but leers condonation  
too,—

No, the balled fist broke brow like thunder-  
bolt,

Battered till brain flew ! Seeing which  
descent,

None questioned that was first acquaintance-  
ship,

The avenger's with the vice he crashed  
through bone.

Still, he displeased me ; and I turned from foe  
To fellow-fighter, flung much stone, more  
mud,—

But missed him, since he lives aloof, I see.'

Pah ! stop more shame, deep-cutting glory  
through,

Not add, this poet, learned,—found no taunt  
Tell like 'That other poet studies books!'  
Wise,—cried 'At each attempt to move our  
hearts,

He uses the mere phrase of daily life!  
Witty,—'His mother was a herb-woman!'

Veracious, honest, loyal, fair and good,—  
'It was Kephisophon who helped him write!'

"Whence,—O the tragic end of comedy!—  
Balaustion pities Aristophanes.

For, who believed him? Those who laughed  
so loud?

They heard him call the sun Sicilian cheese!  
Had he called true cheese—curd, would  
muscle move?

What made them laugh but the enormous lie?  
'Kephisophon wrote Herakles? ha, ha,  
What can have stirred the wing-dregs, soured  
the soul

And set a-lying Aristophanes?  
Some accident at which he took offence!  
The Tragic Master in a moody muse  
Passed him unhailing, and it hurts—it hurts!  
Beside, there's licence for the Wine-lect-  
song!"

Blood burnt the cheek-bone, each black eye  
flashed fierce.

"But this exceeds our licence! Stay awhile—  
That's the solution! both are foreigners,  
The fresh-come Rhodian lady and her spouse  
The man of Phokis: newly resident,  
Nowise instructed—that explains it all!  
No born and bred Athenian but would smile,  
Unless frowns seemed more fit for ignorance.  
These strangers have a privilege!

"You blame"

(Presently he resumed with milder mien)  
"Both theory and practice—Comedy:  
Blame her from altitudes the Tragic friend  
Rose to, and upraised friends along with him,  
No matter how. Once there, all's cold and fine,  
Passionless, rational; our world beneath  
Shows (should you condescend to grace so  
much

As glance at poor Athenai) grimly gross—  
A population which; mere flesh and blood,  
Eats, drinks and kisses, falls to fist-cuffs,  
Then hugs as hugely: speaks too as it acts,  
Prodigiously talks nonsense, — townsmen  
needs

Must parley in their town's vernacular.  
Such world has, of two courses, one to choose:  
Unworld itself,—or, else go blackening off  
To its crow-kindred, leave philosophy  
Her heights serene, fit perch for owls like you.  
Now, since the world demurs to either course,  
Permit me,—in default of boy or girl,  
So they be reared Athenian, good and true,—  
To praise what you most blame! Hear Att's  
defence!

I'll prove our institution, Comedy,  
Coeval with the birth of freedom, matched  
So nice with our Republic, that its growth  
Measures each greatness, just as its decline  
Would signalize the downfall of the pair.  
Our Art began when Bacchos . . . nevermind!  
You and your master don't acknowledge gods:  
'They are not, no, they are not!' well,—  
began

When the rude instinct of our race outspoke,  
Found,—on recurrence of festivity  
Occasioned by black mother-earth's good will  
To children, as they took her vintage-gifts,—  
Found—not the least of many benefits—  
That wine unlocked the stiffest lip, and loosed  
The tongue late dry and reticent of joke,  
Through custom's gripe which gladness  
thrusts aside.

So, emulating liberalities,  
Heaven joined with earth for that god's day  
at least,

Renewed man's privilege, grown obsolete,  
Of telling truth nor dreading punishment.  
Whereon the joyous band disguised their forms  
With skins, beast-fashion, daubed each phyz  
with dregs,

Then hollaed 'Neighbour, you are fool, you  
—knave,

You—hard to serve, you—stingy to reward!  
The guiltless crowed, the guilty sunk their  
crest,  
And good folk gained thereby, 'twas evident.

Whence, by degrees, a birth of happier thought,

The notion came—not simply this to say,  
But this to do—prove, put in evidence,  
And act the fool, the knave, the harsh, the  
hunks,

Who *did* prate, cheat, shake fist, draw purse—  
string tight;

As crowd might see, which only heard before.

“So played the Poet, with his man of parts;  
And all the others, found unqualified  
To mount cart and be persons, made the mob,  
Joined choros, fortified their fellows’ fun,  
Anticipated the community,  
Gave judgment which the public ratified.  
Suing rough weapon doubtless to plain truth,  
They flung, for word-artillery, why—filth;  
Still, folk who wiped the unsavoury salute  
From visage, would prefer the mess to wit—  
Steel, poked through midriff with a civil  
speech,

As now the way is: then, the kindlier mode  
Was—drub not stab, ribroast not scarify!  
So did Sousarion introduce, and so  
Did I, acceding, find the Comic Art:  
(‘lub,—if I call it,—notice what’s implied!  
An engine proper for rough chastisement,  
No downright slaying: with impunity—  
Provided crabtree, steeped in oily joke,  
Deal only such a bruise as laughter cures.  
I kept the gained advantage: stickled still  
For club-law—stout fun and allowedance  
thumps:

Knocked in each knob a crevice to hold joke  
As fig-leaf holds the fat-fry.

“Next, whom thrash?

Only the coarse fool and the clownish knave?  
Higher, more artificial, composite  
Offence should prove my prowess, eye and  
arm!

Not who robs henroost, tells of untaxed figs,  
Spends all his substance on stewed ellops-fish,  
Or gives a pheasant to his neighbour’s wife:  
No! strike malpractice that affects the State,  
The common weal—intriguer or poltroon,  
Venality, corruption, what care I

If shrewd or witless merely?—so the thing  
Lay sap to aught that made Athenai bright  
And happy, change her customs, lead astray  
Youth or age, play the demagogue at Pnux,  
The sophist in Palaistra, or—what’s worst  
As widest mischief,—from the Theatre  
Preach innovation, bring contempt on oaths,  
Adorn licentiousness, despise the Cult.  
Are such to be my game? Why, then there  
wants

Quite other cunning than a cudgel-sweep!  
Grasp the old stout stock, but new tip with  
steel

Each boss, if I would bray—no callous hide  
Simply, but Lamachos in coat of proof,  
Or Kleon cased about with impudence!  
Shaft pushed no worse while point pierced  
sparkling so

That none smiled ‘Sportive, what seems  
savagely,

—Innocuous anger, spiteless rustic mirth!  
Yet spiteless in a sort, considered well,  
Since I pursued my warfare till each wound  
Went through the mere man, reached the  
principle

Worth purging from Athenai. Lamachos?  
No, I attacked war’s representative;  
Kleon? No, flattery of the populace;  
Sokrates? No, but that pernicious seed  
Of sophists whereby hopeful youth is taught  
To jabber argument, chop logic, pore  
On sun and moon, and worship Whirligig.  
O your tragedian, with the lofty grace,  
Aims at no other and effects as much?

Candidly: what’s a polished period worth,  
Filed curt sententiousness of loaded line,  
When he who deals out doctrine, primly steps  
From just that selfsame moon he maunders of,  
And, blood-thinned by his pallid nutriment,  
Proposes to rich earth-blood—purity?  
In me, ’twas equal-balanced flesh rebuked  
Excess alike in stuff-guts Glauketes  
Or starveling Chairephon; I challenged  
both,—

Strong understander of our common life,  
I urged sustainment of humanity,  
Whereas when your tragedian cries up Peace—  
He’s silent as to cheesecakes Peace may chew;



Seeing through rabble-rule, he shuts his eye  
To what were better done than crowding

Pnux—

That's—dance '*Threttanelo*, the Kuklops  
drunk !'

"My power has hardly need to vaunt itself!

Opposers peep and mutter, or speak plain :

'No naming names in Comedy !' votes one,

'Nor vilifying live folk !' legislates

Another, 'urge amendment on the dead !'

'Don't throw away hard cash,' supplies a  
third,

'But crib from actor's dresses, choros-treats !'

Then Kleon did his best to bully me :

Called me before the Law Court : 'Such a  
play

Satirized citizens with strangers there,

Such other,'—why, its fault was in myself !

I was, this time, the stranger, privileged

To act no play at all,—Egyptian, I—

Rhodian or Kameirensian, Aiginete,

Lindian, or any foreigner he liked—

Because I can't write Attic, probably !

Go ask my rivals,—how they roughed my  
fleece,

And how, shorn pink themselves, the huddled  
sheep

Shiver at distance from the snapping shears !

Why must they needs provoke me ?

"All the same,

No matter for my triumph, I foretell

Subsidence of the day-star : quench his beams

No Aias e'er was equal to the feat

By throw of shield, tough-hided seven times  
seven,

'Twixt sky and earth ! 'tis dullards soft and sure  
Who breathe against his brightest, here a  
sigh

And there a 'So let be, we pardon you !'

Till the minute mist hangs a block, has tamed

Noonblaze to 'twilight mild and equable,'

Vote the old women spinning out of doors.

Give me the earth-spasm, when the lion  
ramped

And the bull gendered in the brave gold flare !

O you shall have amusement,—better still,

Instruction ! no more horse-play, naming  
names,

Taxing the fancy when plain sense will serve !

Thearion,<sup>1</sup> now, my friend who bakes you  
bread,

What's worthier limning than his household  
life ?

His whims and ways, his quarrels with the  
spouse,

And how the son, instead of learning knead

Kilikian loaves, brings heart-break on his sire

By buying horseflesh branded *San*, each flank,

From shrewd Menippos who imports the  
ware :

While pretty daughter Kepphé too much  
haunts

The shop of Sporgilos the barber ! brave !

Out with Thearion's meal-tub politics

In lieu of Pisthetairos, Strepsiades !

That's your exchange ? O Muse of Megara !

Advise the fools '*Feed babe on weasel-lap*

*For wild-boar's marrow, Cheiron's hero-pap,*

*And rear, for man—Ariphrades, mayhap !'*

Yes, my Balaustion, yes, my Euthukles,

That's your exchange,—who, foreigners in fact

And fancy, would impose your squeamishness

On sturdy health, and substitute such brat

For the right offspring of us Rocky Ones,<sup>2</sup>

Because babe kicks the cradle,—crows, not  
mewls !

"Which brings me to the prime fault, poison-  
speck

Whence all the plague springs—that first feud  
of all

'Twixt me and you and your Euripides.

'Unworld the world' frowns he, my opposite.

I cry, 'Life !' 'Death,' he groans, 'our  
better Life !'

Despise what is—the good and graspable,

Prefer the out of sight and in at mind,

To village-joy, the well-side violet-patch,

The jolly club-feast when our field's in soak,

Roast thrushes, hare-soup, pea-soup, deep  
washed down

With Peparethian ; the prompt paying off

<sup>1</sup> A baker.

<sup>2</sup> Athenians.

That black-eyed brown-skinned country-flavoured wench

We caught among our brushwood foraging :  
On these look fig-juice, curdle up life's cream,  
And fall to magnifying misery !

Or, if you condescend to happiness,  
Why, talk, talk, talk about the empty name  
While thing's self lies neglected 'neath your nose !

I need particular discourtesy  
And private insult from Euripides  
To render contest with him credible ?  
Say, all of me is outraged ! one stretched sense,  
I represent the whole Republic,—gods,  
Heroes, priests, legislators, poets,—prone,  
And pummelled into insignificance,  
If will in him were matched with power of stroke.

For see what he has changed or hoped to change !

How few years since, when he began the fight,  
Did there beat life indeed Athenai through !  
Plenty and peace, then ! Hellas thunder-smote

The Persian. He himself had birth, you say,  
That morn salvation broke at Salamis,  
And heroes still walked earth. Themistokles—

Surely his mere back-stretch of hand could still

Find, not so lost in dark, Odusseus ?—he  
Holding as surely on to Herakles,—  
Who touched Zeus, link by link, the unruptured chain !

Were poets absent ? Aischulos might hail—  
With Pindaros, Theognis,—whom for sire ?  
Homeros' self, departed yesterday !  
While Hellas, saved and sung to, then and thus,—

Ah, people,—ah, lost antique liberty !  
We lived, ourselves, undoubted lords of earth :  
Wherever olives flourish, corn yields crop  
To constitute our title—ours such land !  
Outside of oil and breadstuff,—barbarism !  
What need of conquest ? Let barbarians starve !

Devote our whole strength to our sole defence,  
Content with peerless native products, home,

Beauty profuse in earth's mere sights and sounds,

Such men, such women, and such gods their guard !

The gods ? he worshipped best who feared them most,

And left their nature uninquired into,  
—Nature ? their very names ! pay reverence,  
Do sacrifice for our part, theirs would be  
To prove benignantest of playfellows.

With kindly humanism they countenanced  
Our emulation of divine escapes  
Through sense and soul : soul, sense are made to use ;

Use each, acknowledging its god the while !  
Crush grape, dance, drink, indulge, for Bacchos' sake !

'Tis Aphrodité's feast-day—frisk and fling,  
Provided we observe our oaths, and house  
Duly the stranger : Zeus takes umbrage else !  
Ah, the great time—had I been there to taste !

Perikles, right Olympian,—occupied  
As yet with getting an Olumpos reared  
Marble and gold above Akropolis,—  
Wisely so spends what thrifty fools amassed  
For cut-throat projects. Who carves Promachos ?<sup>1</sup>

Who writes the Oresteia ?

“ Ah, the time !

For, all at once, a cloud has blanched the blue,  
A cold wind creeps through the close vineyard-rank,

The olive-leaves curl, violets crisp and close  
Like a nymph's wrinkling at the bath's first splash

On breast. (Your pardon !) There's a restless change,

Deterioration. Larks and nightingales  
Are silenced, here and there a gor-crow grim  
Flaps past, as scenting opportunity.

Where Kimon passed to the Boulé once,  
A starveling crew, unkempt, unshorn, unwashed,

Occupy altar-base and temple-step,  
Are minded to indoctrinate our youth !

<sup>1</sup> A famous bronze statue in Athens of *Athené Promachos*, visible from afar.

How call these carrion kill-joys that intrude?  
 'Wise men,' their nomenclature! Prodikos—  
 Who scarce could, unassisted, pick his steps  
 From way Theseia to the Tripods' way,—  
 This empty noddle comprehends the sun,—  
 How he's Aigina's bigness, wheels no whit  
 His way from east to west, nor wants a steed!  
 And here's Protagoras sets wrongheads right,  
 Explains what virtue, vice, truth, falsehood  
 mean,

Makes all we seemed to know prove ignorance  
 Yet knowledge also, since, on either side  
 Of any question, something is to say,  
 Nothing to 'stablish, all things, to disturb!  
 And shall youth go and play at kottabos,  
 Leaving unsettled whether moon-spots breed?  
 Or dare keep Choes ere the problem's solved—  
 Why should I like my wife who dislikes me?  
 'But sure the gods permit this, censure that?'  
 So tell them! straight the answer's in your  
 teeth:

'You relegate these points, then, to the gods?  
 What and where are they?' What my sire  
 supposed,

And where yon cloud conceals them! 'Till  
 they 'scape

And scramble down to Leda, as a swan,  
 Europa, as a bull! why not as—ass.  
 To somebody? Your sire was Zeus perhaps!  
 Either—away with such ineptitude!

Or, wanting energy to break your bonds,  
 Stick to the good old stories, think the rain  
 Is—Zeus distilling pickle through a sieve!  
 Think thunder's thrown to break Theores' head  
 For breaking oaths first! Meanwhile let our  
 selves

Instruct your progeny you prate like fools  
 Of father Zeus, who's but the atmosphere,  
 Brother Poseidon, otherwise called—sea,  
 And son Hephaistos—fire and nothing else!  
 Over which nothings there's a something still,  
 "Necessity," that rules the universe.

And cares as much about your Choes-feast  
 Performed or intermitted, as you care  
 Whether gnats sound their trump from head  
 or tail!

When, stupefied at such philosophy,  
 We cry—Arrest the madmen, governor!

Pound hemlock and pour bulls'-blood,  
 Perikles!—

Would you believe? The Olympian lends  
 his brow,

Scarce pauses from his building! 'Say they  
 thus?

Then, they say wisely. Anaxagoras,  
 I had not known how simple proves eclipse  
 But for thy teaching! Go, fools, learn like

"Well, Zeus nods: man must reconcile  
 himself,

So, let the Charon's-company harangue,  
 And Anaxagoras be—as we wish!

A comfort is in nature: while grass grows  
 And water runs, and sesame pricks tongue,  
 And honey from Brilesian hollow melts  
 On mouth, and Bacchis' flavorful lip beats  
 both,

You will not be untaught life's use, young man?  
 Pho! My young man just proves that pan-  
 niered ass

Said to have borne Youth strapped on his  
 stout back,

With whom a serpent bargained, bade him  
 swap

The priceless boon for—water to quench thirst!  
 What's youth to my young man? In love  
 with age,

He Spartanizes, argues, fests and frowns,  
 Denies the plainest rules of life, long since  
 Proved sound; sets all authority aside,  
 Must simply recommence things, learn ere act,  
 And think out thoroughly how youth should  
 pass—

Just as if youth stops passing, all the same!

"One last resource is left us—poetry!  
 Vindicate nature, prove Plataian help,  
 Turn out, a thousand strong, all right and  
 tight,

To save Sense, poet! Bang the sophist-brood  
 Would cheat man out of wholesome sustenance  
 By swearing wine is water, honey—gall,  
 Saperdion<sup>1</sup>—the Empousa!<sup>2</sup> Panic-smit,

<sup>1</sup> A famous beauty.  
<sup>2</sup> A horror—a ghoul.

(Our juveniles abstain from Sense and starve:  
Be ye to disenchant them! Change things  
back!

(Or better, strain a point the other way  
And handsomely exaggerate wronged truth!  
Lend wine a glory never gained from grape,  
Help honey with a snatch of him we style  
The Muses' Bee, bay-bloom-fed Sophokles,  
And give Saperdion a Kimberic robe!

"I, his successor," gruff the answer grunts,  
'Incline to poetize philosophy,  
Extend it rather than restrain; as thus—

Are heroes men? No more, and scarce as  
much.

Shall mine be represented. Are men poor?  
Behold them ragged, sick, lame, halt and  
blind!

Do they use speech? Ay, street-terms,  
market-phrase!

Having thus drawn sky earthwards, what  
comes next

But dare the opposite, lift earth to sky?

Mere puppets once, I now make womankind,

For thinking, saying, doing, match the male.

Lift earth? I drop to, dally with, earth's dung!

—Recognize in the very slave—man's mate,

Declare him brave and honest, kind and true,

And reasonable as his lord, in brief.

I paint men as they are—so runs my boast—  
Not as they should be: paint—what's part of  
man.

—Women and slaves—not as, to please your  
pride,

They should be, but your equals, as they are.

O and the Gods! Instead of abject mien,

Submissive whisper, while my Choros cants

"Zeus,—with thyoubit's length of attributes,—

May I, the ephemeral, ne'er scrutinize

Who made the heaven and earth and all  
things there!"

Myself shall say' . . . Ay, Herakles may  
help!

Give me,—I want the very words,—attend!"

He read. Then "Murder's out,—There  
are no Gods."

Man has no master, owns, by consequence,

No right, no wrong, except to please or plague

His nature; what man likes be man's sole law!

Still, since he likes Saperdion, honey, figs,!

Man may reach freedom by your roundabout.

'Never believe yourselves the freer thence!'

There are no gods, but there's "Necessity,"—

Duty enjoined you, fact in figment's place,!

Throned on no mountain, native to the mind!

Therefore deny yourselves Saperdion, figs!

And honey, for the sake of—what I dream,

A-sitting with my legs up!

"Infamy!"

The poet casts in calm his lot with these

Assailants of Apollon! Sworn to serve

Each Grace, the Furies call him minister—!

He, who was born for just that roseate world

Renounced so madly, where what's false is

fact,

Where he makes beauty out of ugliness,

Where he lives, life itself disguised for him

As immortality—so works the spell,

The enthusiastic mood which marks a man

Muse-mad, dream-drunken, wrapt around by

verse,

Encircled with poetic atmosphere;

As lark emballed by its own crystal song,

Or rose enmisted by that scent it makes!

No, this were unreality! the real

life wants, not falsehood,—truth alone he

seeks,

Truth, for all beauty! Beauty, in all truth—!

That's certain somehow! Must the eagle lift

Lark-like, needs fir-tree blossom rose-like?

No!

Strength and utility charm more than grace;

And what's most ugly proves most beautiful.

So much assistance from Euripides!

"Whereupon I betake me, since needs must,

To a concluding—"Go and feed the crows!"

Do! Spoil your art as you renounce your life,

Poetize your so precious system, do,

Degrade the hero, nullify the god,

Exhibit women, slaves and men as peers,—

Your castigation follows prompt enough!

When all's concocted upstairs, heels o'er head,  
Down must submissive drop the masterpiece

For public praise or blame : so, praise away,  
 Friend Sokrates, wife's-friend Kephisophon !  
 Boast innovations, cramp phrase, uncouth  
     song,  
 Hard matter and harsh manner, gods, men,  
     slaves

And women jumbled to a laughing-stock  
 Which Hellas shall hold sides at lest she split !  
 Hellas, on these, shall have her word to say !

" She has it and she says it—there's the curse !—  
 She finds he makes the shag-rag hero-race,  
 The noble slaves, wise women, move as much  
 Pity and terror as true tragic types :  
 Applauds inventiveness—the plot so new,  
 The turn and trick subsidiary so strange !  
 She relishes that homely phrase of life,  
 That common town-talk, more than trumpet-  
     blasts :

Accords him right to chop and change a myth :  
 What better right had he, who told the tale  
 In the first instance, to embellish fact ?  
 This last may disembellish yet improve !  
 Both find a block : this man carves back to  
     bull

What first his predecessor cut to sphynx :  
 Such genuine actual roarer, nature's brute,  
 Intelligible to our time, was sure  
 The old-world artist's purpose, had he worked  
 To mind ; this both means and makes the  
     thing !

If, past dispute, the verse slips oily-bathed  
 In unctuous music—say, effeminate—  
 We also say, like Kuthereia's<sup>1</sup> self,  
 A lulling effluence which enswathes some isle  
 Where hides a nymph, not seen but felt the  
     more.

That's Hellas' verdict !

" Does Euripides  
 Even so far absolved, remain content ?  
 Nowise ! His task is to refine, refine,  
 Divide, distinguish, subtilize away  
 Whatever seemed a solid planting-place  
 For foot-fall,—not in that phantasmal sphere  
 Proper to poet, but on vulgar earth

Where people used to tread with confidence.  
 There's left no longer one plain positive  
 Enunciation incontestable  
 Of what is good, right, decent here on earth,  
 Nobody now can say ' this plot is mine,  
 Though but a plethron square,<sup>2</sup>—my duty !'  
     —' Yours ?

Mine, or at least not yours,' snaps somebody !  
 And, whether the dispute be parent-right  
 Or children's service, husband's privilege  
 Or wife's submission, there's a snarling straight,  
 Smart passage of opposing ' yea ' and ' nay,'  
 ' Should,' ' should not,' till, howe'er the con-  
     test end,

Spectators go off sighing—Clever thrust !  
 Why was I so much hurried to pay debt,  
 Attend my mother, sacrifice an ox,  
 And set my name down ' for a trireme, good ?'  
 Something I might have urged on t'other side !  
 No doubt, Chresphontes or Bellerophon  
 We don't meet every day ; but Stab-and-stitch  
 The tailor—ere I turn the drachmas o'er  
 I owe him for a chiton, as he thinks,  
 I'll pose the blockhead with an argument !

" So has he triumphed, your Euripides !  
 Oh, I concede, he rarely gained a prize :  
 That's quite another matter ! cause for that !  
 Still, when 'twas got by Ions, Iophons,  
 Off he would pace confoundedly superb,  
 Supreme, no smile at movement on his mouth  
 Till Sokrates winked, whispered : out it  
     broke !

And Aristullos jotted down the jest,  
 While Iophons or Ions, bay on brow,  
 Looked queerly, and the foreigners—like  
     you—

Asked o'er the border with a puzzled smile  
 —' And so, you value Ions, Iophons,  
 Euphorions ! How about Euripides ?'  
 (Eh, brave bard's-champion ? Does the anger  
     boil ?

Keep within bounds a moment,—eye and lip  
 Shall lose their doom on me, their fiery worst !  
 What strangers ? Archelaos heads the file !  
 He sympathizes, he concerns himself,

<sup>1</sup> Name for Venus.

<sup>2</sup> One hundred feet square.

He pens epistle, each successful play :  
 'Athenai sinks effete ; there's younger blood  
 In Makedonia. Visit where I rule !  
 Do honour to me and take gratitude !  
 Live the guest's life, or work the poet's way,  
 Which also means the statesman's : he who  
 wrote

Erechtheus may seem rawly politic  
 At home where Kleophon is ripe ; but here  
 My council-board permits him choice of seats.'

"Now this was operating,—what should  
 prove

A poison-tree, had flowered far on to fruit  
 For many a year,—when I was moved, first  
 man,

To dare the adventure, down with root and  
 branch.

So, from its sheath I drew my Comic steel,  
 And dared what I am now to justify.

A serious question first, though !

"Once again !

Do you believe, when I aspired in youth,  
 I made no estimate of power at all,  
 Not paused long, nor considered much, what  
 class

Of fighters I might claim to join, beside  
 That class wherewith I cast in company ?  
 Say, you—profuse of praise no less than  
 blame—

Could not I have competed—franker phrase  
 Might trulier correspond to meaning—still,  
 Competed with your Tragic paragon ?

Suppose me minded simply to make verse,  
 To fabricate, parade resplendent arms,  
 Flourish and sparkle out a Trilogy,—

Where was the hindrance ? But my soul  
 bade 'Fight !

Leave flourishing for mock-foe, pleasure-  
 time ;

Prove arms efficient on real heads and hearts !'  
 How ? With degeneracy sapping fast  
 The Marathonian muscle, nerved of old  
 To maul the Mede, now strung at best to  
 help

—How did I fable ?—War and Hubbub mash  
 To mincemeat Fatherland and Brotherhood,

Found in their mortar Hellas, State by State,  
 That greed might gorge, the while frivolity  
 Rubbed hands and smacked lips o'er the  
 dainty dish !

Authority, experience—pushed aside  
 By any upstart who pleads throng and press  
 O' the people ! 'Think, say, do thus !'

Wherefore, pray ?

'We are the people : who impugns our right  
 Of choosing Kleon that tans hide so well,  
 Huperbolos that turns out lamps so trim,  
 Hemp-seller Eukrates or Lusikles  
 Sheep-dealer, Kephalos the potter's son,  
 Diitriphes who weaves the willow-work  
 To go round bottles, and Nausikudes  
 The meal-man ? Such we choose and more,  
 their mates,

To think and say and do in our behalf !'  
 While sophistry wagged tongue, emboldened  
 still,

Found matter to propose, contest, defend,  
 'Stablish, turn topsyturvy,—all the same,  
 No matter what, provided the result  
 Were something new in place of something  
 old,—

Set wagging by pure insolence of soul \*  
 Which needs must pry into, have warrant for  
 Each right, each privilege good policy  
 Protects from curious eye and prating mouth !  
 Everywhere lust to shape the world anew,  
 Spurn this Athenai as we find her, build  
 A new impossible Cloudecuckooburg  
 For feather-headed birds, once solid men,  
 Where rules, discarding jolly habitude,  
 Nourished on myrtle-berries and stray ants,  
 King Tereus who, turned Hoopoe Triple-  
 Crest,

Shall terrify and bring the gods to terms !

"Where was I ? Oh ! Things ailing thus  
 —I ask,

What cure ? Cut, thrust, hack, hew at heap-  
 on-heaped

Abomination with the exquisite  
 Palaistra-tool<sup>1</sup> of polished Tragedy ?  
 Erechtheus shall harangue Amphiktuon,

<sup>1</sup> Used in wrestling.

And incidentally drop word of weight  
On justice, righteousness, so turn aside  
The audience from attacking Sicily!  
The more that Choros, after he recounts  
How Phrixos rode the ram, the far-famed

Fleece,  
Shall add—at last fall of grave dancing-foot—  
'Aggression never yet was helped by Zeus!  
That helps or hinders Alkibiades?  
As well expect, should Pheidias carve Zeus' self  
And set him up, some half a mile away,  
His frown would frighten sparrows from your  
field!

Eagles may recognize their lord, belike,  
But as for vulgar sparrows,—change the god,  
And plant some big Priapos with a pole!  
I wield the Comic weapon rather—hate!  
Hate! honest, earnest and directest hate—  
Warfare wherein I close with enemy,  
Call him one name and fifty epithets,  
Remind you his great-grandfather sold bran,  
Describe the new exomion, sleeveless coat  
He knocked me down last night and robbed  
me of,

Protest he voted for a tax on air!  
And all this hate—if I write Comedy—  
Finds tolerance, most like—applause, perhaps  
True veneration; for I praise the god  
Present in person of his minister,  
And pay—the wilder my extravagance—  
The more appropriate worship to the Power  
Adulterous, night-roaming, and the rest:  
Otherwise,—that originative force  
Of nature, impulse stirring death to life,  
Which, underlying law, seems lawlessness,  
Yet is the outbreak which, ere order be,  
Must thrill creation through, warm stocks  
and stones,  
Phaos Iacchos.

“Comedy for me!  
Why not for you, my Tragic masters? Sneaks  
Whose art is mere desertion of a trust!  
Such weapons lay to hand, the ready club,  
The clay-ball, on the ground a stone to  
spatch,—  
Arms fit to bruise the boar's neck, break the  
chine

O' the wolf,—and you must tamely—  
despise?

No, I'll say, furtively let fall that trust  
Consigned you! 'Twas not 'take or leave  
alone,'

But 'take and, wielding, recognize your god  
In his prime attributes!' And though full soon  
You sneaked, sub sided into poetry,  
Nor met your due reward, still,—heroize  
And speechify and sing-song and forego  
Far as you may your function,—still its pact  
Endures, one piece of early homage still:  
Exacted of you; after your three bouts  
At hoitytoity, great men with long words,  
And so forth,—at the end, must tack itself  
The genuine sample, the Satyric Play,  
Concession, with its wood-boys' fun and freak,  
To the true taste of the mere multitude.  
Yet, there again! What does your Still-at-it, it,  
Always-the-innovator? Shrugs and shirks!  
Out of his fifty Trilogies, some five  
Are somehow suited: Satyrs dance and sing,  
Try merriement, a grimly prank or two,  
Sour joke squeezed through pursed lips and  
teeth on edge,

Then quick on top of toe to pastoral sport,  
Goat-tending and sheep-herding, cheese and  
cream,

Soft grass and silver rillets, country-fare—  
When throats were promised Thasian! Five  
such feats,—

Then frankly off he threw the yoke; next  
Droll,

Next festive drama, covenanted fun,  
Decent reversion to indecency,  
Proved—your 'Alkestis'! There's quite fun  
enough,

Herakles drunk! From out fate's blacken-  
ing wave

Calamitous, just zigzags some shot star,  
Poor promise of faint joy, and turns the laugh  
On dupes whose fears and tears were all in  
waste!

“For which sufficient reasons, in truth's name,  
I closed with whom you count the Meaner  
Muse,

Classed me with Comic Poets who should wield

Dark with bright metal, show their blade  
may keep

Its adamantine birthright though a-blaze  
With poetry, the gold, and wit, the gem,  
And strike mere gold, unstiffened out by steel,  
Or gem, no iron joints its strength around,  
From hand of—posturer, not combatant!

“Such was my purpose: it succeeds, I say!  
Have not we beaten Kallikratidas,  
Not humbled Sparté? Peace awaits our word,  
Spite of Theramenes, and fools his like.  
Since my previsions,—warranted too well  
By the long war now waged and worn to end—  
Had spared such heritage of misery,  
My after-counsels scarce need fear repulse.  
Athenai, taught prosperity has wings,  
Cages the glad recapture. Demos, see,  
From folly's premature decrepitude  
Boiled young again, emerges from the stew  
Of twenty-five years' trouble, sits and sways,  
One brilliance and one balsam,—sways and sits  
Monarch of Hellas! ay and, sage again,  
No longer jeopardizes chieftainship,  
No longer loves the brutish demagogue  
Appointed by a bestial multitude  
But seeks out sound advisers. Who are they?  
Ourselves, of parentage proved wise and good!  
To such may hap strains thwarting quality,  
(As where shall want its flaw mere human  
stuff?)

Still, the right grain is proper to right race;  
What's contrary, call curious accident!  
Hold by the usual! Orchard-grafted tree,  
Not wildling, race-horse-sired, not rouncey-  
born,

Aristocrat, no sausage-selling snob!  
Nay, why not Alkibiades, come back  
Filled by the Genius, freed of petulance,  
Frailty,—mere youthfulness that's all at  
fault,—

Advanced, to Perikles and something more?  
—Being at least our duly born and bred,—  
Curse on what chaunoproct<sup>1</sup> first gained his  
ear

And got his . . . well, once true man in  
right place,

<sup>1</sup> A catamite.

Our commonality soon content themselves  
With doing just what they are born to do;  
Eat, drink, make merry, mind their own  
affairs

And leave state-business to the larger brain.  
I do not stickle for their punishment;  
But certain culprits have a cloak to twitch,  
A purse to pay the piper: flog, say I,  
Your fine fantastics, paragons of parts,  
Who choose to play the important! Far  
from side

With us, their natural supports, allies,—  
And, best by brain, help who are best by  
birth

To fortify each weak point in the wall  
Built broad and wide and deep for per-  
manence

Between what's high and low, what's rare  
and vile,—

They cast their lot perversely in with low  
And vile, lay flat the barrier, lift the mob  
To dizzy heights where Privilege stood firm.  
And then, simplicity become conceit,—  
Woman, slave, common soldier, artisan,  
Crazy with new-found worth, new-fangled  
claims,—

These must be taught next how to use their  
heads  
And hands in driving man's right to mob's  
rule!

What fellows thus inflame the multitude?  
Your Sokrates, still crying 'Understand!'  
Your Aristullos,—'Argue!' Last and worst,  
Should, by good fortune, mob still hesitate,  
Remember there's degree in heaven and  
earth,

Cry 'Aischulos enjoined us fear the gods,  
And Sophokles advised respect the kings!'  
Why, your Euripides informs them—'Gods?  
They are not! Kings? They are, but . . .  
do not I,

In Suppliants, make my Theseus,—yours, no  
more,—

Fire up at insult of who styles him King?  
Play off that Herald, I despise the most,  
As patronizing kings' prerogative  
Against a Theseus proud to dare no step  
Till he consult the people?



"Such as these—  
 Ah, you expect I am for strangling straight?  
 Nowise, Balaustion! All my roundabout  
 Ends at beginning, with my own defence.  
 I dose each culprit just with—Comedy.  
 Let each be doctored in exact the mode  
 Himself prescribes: by words, the word-

~~monger—~~

**My words to his words**,—my lies, if you like,  
**To his lies.** Sokrates I nickname thief,  
 Quack, necromancer; Aristullos,—say,  
 Male Kirké who bewitches and bewrays  
 And changes folk to swine; Euripides,—  
 Well, I acknowledge! Every word is false,  
 Looked close at; but stand distant and stare  
 through,

All's absolute indubitable truth  
 Behind lies, truth which only lies declare!  
 For come, concede me truth's in thing not  
 word,

Meaning not manner! Love smiles 'rogue'  
 and 'wretch'

When 'sweet' and 'dear' seem vapid: Hate  
 adopts

Love's 'sweet' and 'dear' when 'rogue'  
 and 'wretch' fall flat:

Love, Hate—are truths, then, each, in sense  
 not sound.

Further: if Love, remaining Love, fell back  
 On 'sweet' and 'dear,'—if Hate, though  
 Hate the same,

Dropped down to 'rogue' and 'wretch,'—  
 each phrase were false.

Good! and now grant I hate no matter whom  
 With reason: I must therefore fight my foe,  
 Finish the mischief which made enmity.

How? By employing means to most hurt  
 him

Who much harmed me. What way did he  
 do harm?

Through word or deed? Through word?  
 with word, wage war!

Word with myself directly? As direct  
 Reply shall follow: word to you, the wise,

Whence indirectly came the harm to me?  
 What wisdom I can muster waits on such.

Word to the populace which, misconceived  
 By ignorance and incapacity,

Ends in no such effect as follows cause  
 When I, or you the wise, are reasoned with,  
 So damages what I and you hold dear?  
 In that event, I ply the populace  
 With just such word as leavens their whole  
 lump

To the right ferment for my purpose. *They*  
 Arbitrate properly between us both?

*They* weigh my answer with his argument,  
 Match quip with quibble, wit with eloquence?  
 All they attain to understand is—blank!

Two adversaries differ: which is right  
 And which is wrong, none takes on him to  
 say,

Since both are unintelligible. Pooh!  
 Swear my foe's mother vended herbs she  
 stole,

They fall a-laughing! Add,—his household  
 drudge

Of all-work justifies that office well,  
 Kisses the wife, composing him the play,—

They grin at whom they gaped in wonderment,  
 And go off—'Was he such a sorry scrub?

This other seems to know! we praised too  
 fast!

Why then, my lies have done the work of  
 truth,

Since 'scrub,' improper designation, means  
 Exactly what the proper argument

—Had such been comprehensible—proposed  
 To proper audience—were I graced with  
 such—

Would properly result in; so your friend  
 Gets an impartial verdict on his verse

'The tongue swears, but the soul remains  
 unsworn!'

"There, my Balaustion! All is summed  
 and said.

No other cause of quarrel with yourself!  
 Euripides and Aristophanes

Differ: he needs must round our difference  
 Into the mob's ear; with the mob I plead.

You angrily start forward 'This to me?'  
 No speck of this on you the thrice refined!

Could parley be restricted to us two,  
 My first of duties were to clear up doubt  
 As to our true divergence each from each.

Does my opinion so diverge from yours?  
Probably less than little—not at all!

To know a matter, for my very self  
And intimates—that's one thing; to imply  
By 'knowledge'—loosing whatsoever I know  
Among the vulgar who, by mere mistake,  
May brain themselves and me in consequence,—

That's quite another. 'O the daring flight!  
This only bard maintains the exalted brow,  
Nor grovels in the slime nor fears the gods!'  
Did I fear—I play superstitious fool,  
Who, with the due proviso, introduced,  
Active and passive, their whole company  
As creatures too absurd for scorn itself?  
Zeus? I have styled him—'slave, mere  
thrashing-block!'

I'll tell you: in my very next of plays,  
At Bacchos' feast, in Bacchos' honour, full  
In front of Bacchos' representative,  
I mean to make main-actor—Bacchos' self!  
Fourth shall he strut, apparent, first to last,  
A blockhead, coward, braggart, liar, thief,  
Demonstrated all these by his own mere  
Xanthias the man-slave: such man shows  
such god

Shamed to brute-beastship by comparison!  
And when ears have their fill of his abuse,  
And eyes are sated with his pummelling,—  
My Choros taking care, by, all the while,  
Singing his glory, that men recognize  
A god in the abused and pummelled beast,—  
Then, should one ear be stopped of auditor,  
Should one spectator shut revolted eye,—  
Why, the Priest's self will first raise outraged  
voice

'Back, thou barbarian, thou ineptitude!  
Does not most license hallow best our day,  
And least decorum prove its strictest rite?  
Since Bacchos bids his followers play the fool,  
And there's no fooling like a majesty  
Mocked at,—who mocks the god, obeys the  
law—

Law which, impute but indiscretion to,  
And . . . why, the spirit of Euripides  
Is evidently active in the world!'  
Do I stop here? No! feat of flightier  
force!

See Hermes! what commotion raged,—  
reflect!—

When imaged god alone got injury  
By drunkards' frolic! How Athenai stared  
Aghast, then fell to frenzy, fit on fit,—  
Ever the last the longest! At this hour,  
The craze abates a little; so, my Play  
Shall have up Hermes: and a Karion, slave,  
(Since there's no getting lower) calls our friend  
The profitable god, we honour so,  
Whatever contumely fouls the mouth—  
Bids him go earn more honest livelihood  
By washing tripe in well-trough—wash he  
does,

Duly obedient! Have I dared my best?  
Asklepios, answer!—deity in vogue,  
Who visits Sophokles familiarly,  
If you believe the old man,—at his age,  
Living is dreaming, and strange guests haunt  
door

Of house, belike, peep through and tap at  
times

When a friend yawns there, waiting to be  
fetched,—

At any rate, to memorize the fact,  
He has spent money, set an altar up  
In the god's temple, now in much repute.  
That temple-service trust me to describe—  
Cheaters and choused, the god, his brace of  
girls,

Their snake, and how they manage to snap  
gifts

'And consecrate the same into a bag,'  
For whimsies done away with in the dark!  
As if, a stone's throw from that theatre  
Whereon I thus unmask their dupery,  
The thing were not religious and august!

"Of Sophokles himself—nor word nor sign  
Beyond a harmless parody or so!  
He founds no anti-school, upsets no faith,  
But, living, lets live, the good easy soul  
Who,—if he saves his cash, unpoetlike,  
Loves wine and—never mind what other  
sport,

Boasts for his father just a sword-blade-smith,  
Proves but queer captain when the people  
claim,

For one who conquered with 'Antigone',  
 The right to undertake a squadron's charge,—  
 And needs the son's help now to finish plays,  
 Seeing his dotage calls for governance  
 And Iophon to share his property,—  
 Why, of all this, reported true, I breathe  
 Not one word—true or false, I like the man.  
 Sophokles lives and lets live; long live he!  
 Otherwise,—sharp the scourge and hard the  
 blow!

"And what's my teaching but—accept the  
 old,  
 Contest the strange! acknowledge work that's  
 done,  
 Misdoubt men who have still their work to do!  
 Religions, laws and customs, poetries,  
 Are old? So much achieved victorious truth!  
 Each work was product of a life-time, wrung  
 From each man by an adverse world: for  
 why?

He worked, destroying other older work  
 Which the world loved and so was loth to lose.  
 Whom the world beat in battle—dust and ash!  
 Who beat the world, left work in evidence,  
 And wears its crown till new men live new  
 lives,  
 And fight new fights, and triumph in their  
 turn.

I mean to show you on the stage: you'll see  
 My Just Judge only venture to decide  
 Between two suitors, which is god, which man,  
 By thrashing both of them as flesh can bear.  
 You shall agree,—whichever bellows first,  
 He's human; who holds longest out, divine:  
 That is the only equitable test.  
 Cruelty? Pray, who pricked them on to court  
 My thong's award? Must they needs domi-  
 nate?

Then I—rebel. Their instinct grasps the  
 new?

Mine bids retain the old: a fight must be,  
 And which is stronger the event will show.  
 O but the pain! Your proved divinity  
 Still smarts all reddened? And the rightlier  
 served!

Was not some man's flesh in him, after all?  
 Do let us lack no frank acknowledgment

There's nature common to both gods and  
 men!

All of them—spirit? What so winced was  
 clay.

Away pretence to some exclusive sphere  
 Cloud-nourishing a sole selected few  
 Fume-fed with self-superiority!  
 I stand up for the common coarse-as-clay  
 Existence,—stamp and ramp with heel and  
 hoof

On solid vulgar life, you fools disown.  
 Make haste from your unreal eminence,  
 And measure lengths with me upon that  
 ground  
 Whence this mud-pellet sings and summons  
 you!

I know the soul, too, how the spark ascends  
 And how it drops apace and dies away.  
 I am your poet-peer, man thrice your match.  
 I too can lead an airy life when dead,  
 Fly like Kinesias when I'm cloudward bound;  
 But here, no death shall mix with life it mars.

"So, my old enemy who caused the fight,  
 Own I have beaten you, Euripides!  
 Or,—if your advocate would contravene,—  
 Helphim, Balaustion! Use the rosy strength!  
 I have not done my utmost,—treated you  
 As I might Aristullos, mint-perfumed,—  
 Still, let the whole rage burst in brave attack  
 Don't pay the poor ambiguous compliment  
 Of fearing any pearl-white knuckled fist  
 Will damage this broad buttress of a brow!  
 Fancy yourself my Aristonumos,  
 Ameipsias or Sannurion: punch and pound!  
 Three cuckoos who cry 'cuckoo'! much I  
 care!

They boil a stone! *Neblaretai! Rattai!*"

Cannot your task have end here, Euthukles?  
 Day by day glides our galley on its path:  
 Still sunrise and still sunset, Rhodes half  
 reached,

And still, my patient scribe! no sunset's peace  
 Descends more punctual than that brow's in-  
 cline  
 O'er tablets which your serviceable hand

Prepares to trace. Why treasure up, forsooth,  
These relics of a night that make me rich,  
But, half-remembered merely, leave so poor  
Each stranger to Athenai and her past?  
For—how remembered! As some greedy hind  
Persuades a honeycomb, beyond the due,  
To yield its hoarding,—heedless what alloy  
Of the poor bee's own substance taints the  
gold

Which, unforced, yields few drops, but  
purity,—

So would you fain relieve of load this brain,  
Though the hived thoughts must bring away,  
with strength;

What words and weakness, strength's re-  
ceptacle—

Wax from the store! Yet,—aching soothed  
away,—

Accept the compound! No suspected scent  
But proves some rose was rifled, though its  
ghost

Scarce lingers with what promised musk and  
myrrh.

No need of farther squeezing. What remains  
Can only be Balaustion, just her speech.

Ah, but—because speech serves a purpose  
still!—

He ended with that flourish. I replied,

Fancy myself your Aristonumos?

Advise me, rather, to remain myself,

Balaustion,—mindful what mere mouse con-  
fronts

The forest-monarch Aristophanes!

I who, a woman, claim no quality

Beside the love of all things loveable

Created by a power pre-eminent

In knowledge, as in love I stand perchance,

—You, the consummately-creative! How

Should I, then, dare deny submissive trust

To any process aiming at result

Such as you say your songs are pregnant  
with?

Result, all judge: means, let none scrutinize

Save those aware how glory best is gained

By daring means to end, ashamed of shame.

Constant in faith that only good works good,  
While evil yields no fruit but impotence!

Graced with such plain good, I accept the  
means.

Nay, if result itself in turn become  
Means,—who shall say?—to ends still loftier  
yet,—

Though still the good prove hard to under-  
stand,

The bad still seemingly predominate,—

Never may I forget which order bears

The burden, toils to win the great reward,

And finds, in failure, the grave punishment,

So, meantime, claims of me a faith I yield!

Moreover, a marie woman, I recoil

From what may prove man's-work permis-  
sible,

Imperative. Rough strokes surprise: what  
then?

Some lusty armsweep needs must cause the  
crash

Of thorn and bramble, ere those shrubs,  
those flowers,

We fain would have earth yield exclusively,

Are sown, matured and garlanded for boys

And girls, who know not how the growth  
was gained.

Finally, am I not a foreigner?

No born and bred Athenian,—isled about,

I scarce can drink, like you, at every breath;

Just some particular doctrine which may best

Explain the strange thing I revolt against—

How—by involvement, who may extricate?—

Religion perks up through impiety,

Law leers with licence, folly wise-like frowns;

The seemly lurks inside the abominable.

But opposites,—each neutralizes each

Haply by mixture: what should promise

death,

May haply give the good ingredient force,

Disperse in fume the antagonistic ill.

This institution, therefore,—Comedy,—

By origin, a rite,—by exercise,

Proved an achievement tasking poet's power

To utmost, eling legislation out.

Beyond the legislator's faculty,

Playing the censor where the moralist

Declines his function, far too dignified

For dealing with minute absurdities :  
By efficacy,—virtue's guard, the scourge  
Of vice, each folly's fly-flap, arm in aid  
Of all that's righteous, customary, sound  
And wholesome ; sanctioned therefore,—  
better say,

Prescribed for fit acceptance of this age  
By, not alone the long recorded roll  
Of earlier triumphs but, success to-day—  
(The multitude as prompt recipient still  
Of good gay teaching from that monitor  
They crowned this morning—Aristophanes—  
As when Sousarion's car first traversed street)—  
This product of Athenai—I dispute,  
Impugn ? There's just one only circumstance  
Explains that ! I, poor critic, see, hear, feel ;  
But eyes, ears, senses prove me—foreigner !  
Who shall gainsay that the raw new-come  
guest

Blames oft, too sensitive ? On every side  
Of—larger than your stage—life's spectacle,  
Convention here permits and there forbids  
Impulse and action, nor alleges more  
Than some mysterious " So do all, and so  
Does no one : " which the hasty stranger  
blames

Because, who bends the head unquestioning,  
Transgresses, turns to wrong what else were  
right,

By failure of a reference to law  
Beyond convention ; blames unjustly, too—  
As if, through that defect, all gained were lost  
And slave-brand set on brow indelibly ;—  
Blames unobservant or experienceless  
That men, like trees, if stout and sound and  
sane,

Show stem no more affected at the root  
By bough's exceptional submissive dip  
Of leaf and bell, light danced at end of spray  
To windy fitfulness in wayward sport—  
No more lie prostrate—than low files of flower  
Which, when the blast goes by, unruffled raise  
Each head again o'er ruder meadow-wreck  
Of thorn and thistle that refractory  
Demurred to cower at passing wind's caprice.  
Why shall not guest extend like charity,  
Conceive how,—even when astounded most  
That natives seem to acquiesce in muck

Changed by prescription, they affirm, to  
gold,—

Such may still bring to test, still bear away  
Safely and surely much of good and true  
Though latent ore, themselves unspiced,  
unspoiled ?

Fresh bathed i' the icebrook, any hand may  
pass

A placid moment through the lamp's fierce  
flame :

And who has read your Lemnians seen The  
Hours,

Heard Female-Playhouse-seat-Preoccupants,  
May feel no worse effect than, once a year,  
Those who leave decent vesture. dress in rags  
And play the mendicant, conform thereby  
To country's rite, and then, no beggar-taint  
Retained, don vesture due next morrow-day.  
What if I share the stranger's weakness then ?  
Well, could I also show his strength, his sense  
Untutored, ay !—but then untampered with !

I fancy, though the world seems old enough,  
Though Hellas be the sole unbarbarous land,  
Years may conduct to such extreme of age,  
And outside Hellas so isles new may lurk,  
That haply,—when and where remain a  
dream !—

In fresh days when no Hellas fills the world,  
In novel lands as strange where, all the same,  
Their men and women yet behold, as we,  
Blue heaven, black earth, and love, hate, hope  
and fear,

Over again, unhelped by Attiké—  
Haply some philanthropic god steers bark,  
Gift-laden, to the lonely ignorance  
Islanded, say, where mist and snow mass hard  
To metal—ay, those Kassiterides !

Then asks : " Ye apprehend the human form.  
What of this statue, made to Pheidias' mind,  
This picture, as it pleased our Zeuxis paint ?  
Ye too feel truth, love beauty : judge of these !"  
Such strangers may judge feebly, stranger-like :  
" Each hair too indistinct—for, see our own !  
Hands, not skin-coloured as these hands we  
have,

And lo, the want of due decorum here !  
A citizen, arrayed in civic garb,

Just as he walked your streets apparently,  
Yet wears no sword by side, adventures thus,  
In thronged Athenai ! foolish painter's-freak !  
While here's his brother-sculptor found at fault

Still more egregiously, who shames the world,  
Shows wrestler, wrestling at the public games,  
Atrociously exposed from head to foot !"

Sure, the Immortal would impart at once  
Our slow-stored knowledge, how small truths  
suppressed

Conduce to the far greater truth's display,—  
Would replace simple by instructed sense,  
And teach them how Athenai first so tamed  
The natural fierceness that her progeny  
Discarded arms nor feared the beast in man :  
Wherefore at games, where earth's wise grati-  
tude,

Proved by responsive culture, claimed the  
prize

For man's mind, body, each in excellence,—  
When mind had bared itself, came body's  
turn,

And only irreligion grudged the gods  
One naked glory of their master-work  
Where all is glorious rightly understood,—  
The human frame ; enough that man mis-  
takes :

Let him not think the gods mistaken too !

But, peradventure, if the stranger's eye  
Detected . . . Ah, too high my fancy-flight !  
Pheidias, forgive, and Zeuxis bear with me—  
How on your faultless should I fasten fault  
Of my own framing, even ? Only say,—  
Suppose the impossible were realized,  
And some as patent incongruity,  
Unseemliness,—of no more warrant, there  
And then, than now and here, whate'er the  
time

And place,—I say, the Immortal—who can  
doubt ?—

Would never shrink, but own "The blot  
escaped

Our artist : thus he shows humanity."

May stranger tax one peccant part in thee,  
Poet, three-parts divine ? May I proceed ?

"Comedy is prescription and a rite."

Since when ? No growth of the blind antique  
time,

"It rose in Attiké with liberty ;  
When freedom falls, it too will fall." Scarce  
so !

Your games,—the Olympian, Zeus gave birth  
to these ;

Your Pythian,—these were Phoibos' institute,  
Isthmian, Nemeian,—Theseus, Herakles  
Appointed each, the boys and barbers say !  
Earth's day is growing late : where's Comedy ?  
"Oh, that commenced an age since,—two,  
belike,—

In Megara, whence here they brought the  
thing !"

Or I misunderstand, or here's the fact—  
Your grandsire could recall that rustic song,  
How suchanone was thief, and miser such  
And how,—immunity from chastisement  
Once promised to bold singers of the same  
By daylight on the drunkard's holiday,—  
The clever fellow of the joyous troop  
Tried acting what before he sang about,  
Acted and stole, or hoarded, acting too :  
While his companions ranged a-row, closed up  
For Choros,—bade the general rabblement  
Sit, see, hear, laugh,—not join the dance  
themselves.

Soon, the same clever fellow found a mate,  
And these two did the whole stage-mimicking,  
Still closer in approach to Tragedy,—  
So led the way to Aristophanes,  
Whose grandsire saw Sousarion, and whose  
sire—

Chionides ; yourself wrote "Banqueters"  
When Aischulos had made "Prometheus,"  
nay,

All of the marvels ; Sophokles,—I'll cite,  
"Oidipous"—and Euripides—I bend  
The head—"Medeia" henceforth awed the  
world !

Banqueters," "Babylonians"—next come  
you !

Surely the great days that left Hellas free  
Happened before such advent of huge help,  
Eighty-years-late assistance ? Marathon,  
Platais, Salamis were fought, I think,

Before new educators stood reproved,  
Or foreign legates blushed, excepted to  
Where did the helpful rite pretend its rise?  
Did it break forth, as gifts divine are wont,  
Plainly authentic, incontestably  
Adequate to the helpful ordinance?  
Founts, dowered with virtue, pulse out pure  
from source;

'Tis there we taste the god's benign intent:  
Not when,—fatigued away by journey, foul  
With brutish trampling,—crystal sinks to  
slime,

And lymph forgets the first salubriousness.  
Sprang Comedy to light thus crystal-pure?  
"Nowise!" yourself protest with vehemence;  
"Gross, bestial, did the clowns' diversion  
break;

Every successor paddled in the slush;  
Nay, my contemporaries one and all  
Gay played the mudlark till I joined their  
game;

Then was I first to change buffoonery  
For wit, and stupid filth for cleanly sense,  
Transforming pointless joke to purpose fine,  
Transfusing rude enforcement of home-law—  
'Drop knave's-tricks, deal more neighbour-  
like, ye boors!'

With such new glory of poetic breath  
As, lifting application far past use  
O' the present, launched it o'er men's lowly  
heads

To future time, when high and low alike  
Are dead and done with, while my airy power  
Flies disengaged, as vapour from what stuff.  
It—say not, dwell in—fitlier, dallied with  
To forward work, which done,—deliverance  
brave,—

It scars away, and mud subsides to dust.  
Say then, myself invented Comedy!"

So mouths full many a famed Parabasis!  
Agreed! No more, then, of prescriptive use,  
Authorization by antiquity,  
For what offends our judgment! 'Tis your  
work,

Performed your way: not work delivered you  
Intact, intact, producible in turn.  
Everywhere have you altered old to new—

Your will, your warrant: therefore, work  
must stand.

Or stumble by intrinsic worth. What worth?  
Its aim and object! Peace you advocate,  
And war would fain abolish from the land:  
Support religion, lash irreverence,  
Yet laughingly administer rebukes.  
To superstitious folly,—equal fault!  
While innovating rashness, lust of change,  
New laws, new habits, manners, men and  
things,

Make your main quarry,—"oldest" meaning  
"best."

You check the fretful litigation-itch,  
Withstand mob-rule, expose mob-flattery,  
Punish mob-favourites; most of all press hard  
On sophists who assist the demagogue,  
And poets their accomplices in crime.  
Such your main quarry: by the way, you  
strike

Ignobler game, mere miscreants, snob or  
scamp,

Cowardly, gluttonous, effeminate:  
Still with a bolt to spare when dramatist  
Proves haply unproficient in his art.  
Such aims—alone, no matter for the means—  
Declare the unexampled excellence  
Of their first author—Aristophanes!

Whereat—Euripides, oh, not thyself—  
Augustlier than the need!—thy century  
Of subjects dreamed and dared and done,  
before

"Banqueters" gave dark earth enlightenment,  
Or "Babylonians" played Prometheus here,—  
These let me summon to defend thy cause!  
Lo, as indignantly took life and shape  
Labour by labour, all of Herakles,—  
Palpably fronting some o'erbold pretence  
"Eurustheus slew the monsters, purged the  
world!"

So shall each poem pass you and imprint  
Shame on the strange assurance. You praised  
Peace?

Sing him full-face, Kresphontes! "Peace"  
the theme?

"Peace, in whom depths of wealth lie,—of  
the best

Immortals. *beauteousest*,—

Come! for the heart within me dies away,  
So long dost thou delay!

(I have feared lest old age, much annoy,  
Conquer me, quite outstrip the tardy joy,  
Thy gracious triumph-season I would see,  
The song, the dance, the sport, profuse of  
crowns to be

But come! for my sake, goddess great and  
dear,

Come to the city here!

Hateful Sedition drive thou from our homes,  
With Her who madly roams  
Rejoicing in the steel against the life  
That's whetted—banish Strife!"

Shall I proceed? No need of next and next!

That were too easy, play so presses play,  
Trooping tumultuous, each with instance apt,  
Each eager to confute the idle boast.

What virtue but stands forth panegyriized,  
What vice, unburned by stigma, in the books  
Which bettered Hellas,—beyond graven gold  
Or gem-indenture, sung by Phoibos' self  
And saved in Kunthia's mountain treasure-  
house—

Ere you, man, moralist, were youth or boy?  
—Not praise which, in the proffer, mocks the  
praised

By sly admixture of the blameworthy  
And enforced coupling of base fellowship,—  
Not blame which gloats the while it frowning,  
laughs,

"Allow one glance on horrors—laughable!"—  
This man's entire of heart and soul, discharged  
Its love or hate, each unalloyed by each,  
On objects worthy either; earnestness,  
Attribute him, and power! but novelty?  
Nor his nor yours a doctrine—all the world's!  
What man of full-grown sense and sanity  
Holds other than the truth,—wide Hellas  
through,—

Though truth, he acts, discredit truth he holds?  
What imbecile has dared to formulate

"Love war, hate peace, become a litigant!"—  
And so preach on, reverse each rule of right  
Because he quarrels, combats, goes to law?  
No, for his comment runs, with smile or sigh

According to heart's temper, "Peace were  
best,

Except occasions when we put aside  
Peace, and bid all the blessings in her gift  
Quick join the crows, for sake of Marathon!"

"Nay," you reply; for one, whose mind  
withstands

His heart, and, loving peace, for conscience'  
sake

Wants war,—you find a crowd of hypocrites  
Whose conscience means ambition, grudge  
and greed.

On such, reproof, sonorous doctrine, melts  
Distilled like universal but thin dew

Which all too sparsely covers country: dear,  
No doubt, to universal crop and clown,  
Still, each bedewed keeps his own head-gear  
dry

With upthrust *skiadeion*, shakes adroit  
The droppings to his neighbour. No! collect  
All of the moisture, leave unhurt the heads  
Which nowise need a washing, save and store  
And dash the whole condensed to one fierce  
spout

On some one evildoer, sheltered close,—  
The fool supposed,—till you beat guard away,  
And showed your audience, not that war was  
wrong,

But Lamachos absurd,—case, crests and all,—  
Not that democracy was blind of choice,  
But Kleon and Huperbolos were shams:

Not superstition vile, but Nikias crazed,—  
The concrete for the abstract; that's the way!  
What matters Choros crying "Hence, im-  
pure!"

You cried "Ariphrades does thus and thus!"  
Now, earnestness seems never earnest more  
Than when it dons for garb—indifference;  
So there's much laughing: but, compensative,  
When frowning follows laughter, then indeed  
Scout innuendo, sarcasm, irony!

Wit's polished warfare glancing at first graze  
From off hard headpiece, coarsely-coated brain  
O' the commonalty—whom, unless you prick  
To purpose, what avails that finer pates  
Succumb to simple scratching? Those—not  
these—



Tis Multitude, which, moved, fines Lamachos,  
 Banishes Kleon and burns Sokrates,  
 House over head, or, better, poisons him.  
 Therefore in dealing with King Multitude,  
 Club-drub the callous numskulls ! In and in  
 Beat this essential consequential fact  
 That here they have a hater of the three,  
 Who hates in word, phrase, nickname, epithet  
 And illustration, beyond doubt at all !  
 And similarly, would you win assent  
 To—Peace, suppose ? You tickle the tough  
 hide

With good plain pleasure her concomitant—  
 And, past mistake again, exhibit Peace—  
 Peace, vintager and festive, cheesecake-time,  
 Hare-slice-and-peasoup-season, household  
 joy :

Theoria's<sup>1</sup> beautiful belongings match  
 Opéra's<sup>1</sup> lavish condescendings : brief,  
 Since here the people are to judge, you press  
 Such argument as people understand :  
 If with exaggeration—what care you ?

Have I misunderstood you in the main ?  
 No ! then must answer be ; such argument,  
 Such policy, no matter what good love  
 Or hate it help, in practice proves absurd,  
 Useless and null : henceforward intercepts  
 Sober effective blow at what you blame,  
 And renders nugatory rightful praise  
 Of thing or person. The coarse brush has  
 daubed—

What room for the fine limner's pencil-mark ?  
 Blame ? You curse, rather, till who blames  
 must blush—

Lean to apology or praise, more like !  
 Does garment, simpered o'er as white, prove  
 grey ?

"Black, blacker than Acharnian charcoal,  
 black

Beyond Kimmerian, Stugian blackness black,"  
 You bawl, till men sigh "nearer snowiness !"

What follows ? What one faint-rewarding fall  
 Of foe belaboured ne'er so lustily ?

Laugh Lamachos from out the people's heart ?  
 He died, commanding, "hero," say yourself !

Gibe Nikias into privacy ?—nay, shake  
 Kleon a little from his arrogance  
 By cutting him to shoe-sole-shreds ? I think,  
 He ruled his life long and, when time was ripe,  
 Died fighting for amusement,—good tough  
 hide !

Sokrates still goes up and down the streets,  
 And Aristullos puts his speech in book,  
 When both should be abolished long ago.  
 Nay, wretchedest of rags, Aripkrades—  
 You have been fouling that redoubtable  
 Harp-player, twenty years, with what effect ?  
 Still he strums on, strums ever cheerily,  
 And earns his wage,—"Who minds a joke ?"  
 men say.

No, friend ! The statues stand—mudstained  
 at most—

Titan or pygmy : what achieves their fall  
 Will be, long after mud is flung and spent,  
 Some clear thin spirit-thrust of lightning—  
 truth !

Your praise, then—honey-smearing helps  
 your friend,

More than blame's ordure-smirch hurts foe,  
 perhaps ?

Peace, now, misunderstood, ne'er prized  
 enough,

You have interpreted to ignorance  
 Till ignorance opes eye, bat-blind before,  
 And for the first time knows Peace means the  
 power

On maw of pan-cake, cheese-cake, barley-cake,  
 No stop nor stint to stuffing. While, in camp  
 Who fights chews rancid tunny, onions raw,  
 Peace sits at cosy feast with lamp and fire,  
 Complaisant smooth-sleeked flute-girls gigg-  
 ling gay.

How thick and fast the snow falls, freezing  
 War

Who shrugs, campaigns it, and may break s  
 shin

Or twist an ankle ! come, who hesitates  
 To give Peace, over War, the preference ?

Ah, friend—had this indubitable fact  
 Haply occurred to poor Leonidas,  
 How had he turned tail on Thermopylai !  
 It cannot be that even his few wits

<sup>1</sup> Characters in the "Lysistrata."

Were added to the point that, so advised,  
Preposterous he had answered—"Cakes are  
prime,

Hearth-sides are snug, sleek dancing-girls have  
worth,

And yet—for country's sake, to save our gods  
Their temples, save our ancestors their tombs,  
Save wife and child and home and liberty,—  
I would chew sliced-salt-fish, bear snow—  
nay, starve,

If need were,—and by much prefer the choice!"  
Why, friend, your genuine hero, all the while,  
Has been—who served precisely for your butt—  
Kleonumos that, wise, cast shield away  
On battle-ground; cried "Cakemy buckler be,  
Embossed with cream-clot! peace, not war,

I choose,  
Holding with Dikaiopolis!" Comedy  
Shall triumph, Dikaiopolis win assent,  
When Miltiades shall next shirk Marathon,  
Themistokles swap Salamis for—cake,  
And Kimon grunt "Peace, grant me dancing-  
girls!"

But sooner, hardly! twenty-five years since,  
The war began,—such pleas for Peace have  
reached

A reasonable age. The end shows all.  
And so with all the rest you advocate!

"Wise folk leave litigation! 'ware the wasps!  
Whoso loves law and lawyers, heliast-like,  
Wants hemlock!" None shows that so funnily.

But, once cure madness, how comports himself  
Your same exemplar, what's our gain thereby?  
Philokleon turns Bdelukleon! just this  
change,—

New sanity gets straightway drunk as sow,  
Cheats baker-wives, brawls, kicks, cuffs,  
curses folk,

Parades a shameless flute-girl, bandies filth  
With his own son who cured his father's cold  
By making him catch fever—funnily!  
But as for curing love of lawsuits—faugh!

And how does new improve upon the old  
—Your boast—in even abusing? Rough, may  
be—

Still, honest was the old mode. "Call thief  
—thief!"

But never call thief even—murderer!  
Much less call fop and fribble, worse one whit  
Than fribble and fop! Spare neither! beat  
your brains

For adequate invective,—cut the life  
Clean out each quality,—but load your lash  
With no least lie, or we pluck scourge from  
hand!

Does poet want a whipping, write bad verse,  
Inculcate foul deeds? There's the fault to  
flog!

You vow "The rascal cannot read nor write,  
Spends more in buying fish than Morsimos,  
Somebody helps his Muse and courts his wife,  
His uncle deals in crockery, and last,—  
Himself's a stranger!" That's the cap and  
crown

Of stinging-nettle, that's the master-stroke!  
What poet-rival,—after "housebreaker,"  
"Fish-gorging," "midnight footpad" and so  
forth,—

Proves not, beside, "a stranger"? Chased  
from charge

To charge, and, lie by lie, laughed out of  
court,—

Lo, wit's sure refuge, satire's grand resource—  
All, from Kratinos downward—"strangers"  
they!

Pity the trick's too facile! None so raw  
Among your playmates but have caught the ball  
And sent it back as briskly to—yourself!  
You too, my Attic, are styled "stranger"—

Rhodes,  
Aigina, Lindos or Kameiros,—nay,  
'Twas Egypt reared, if Eupolis be right,  
Who wrote the comedy (Kratinos vows)  
Kratinos helped a little! Kleon's self  
Was nigh promoted Comic, when he haled  
My poet into court, and o'er the coals  
Hauled and re-hauled "the stranger,—inso-  
lent,

Who brought out plays, usurped our privilege!"  
Why must you Comics one and all take stand  
On lower ground than truth from first to last?  
Why all agree to let folk disbelieve,  
So laughter but reward a funny lie?

Repel such onslaughts—answer, sad and  
grave,

Your fancy-fleerings—who would stoop so low?

Your own adherents whisper,—when disgust  
Too menacingly thrills Logeion through  
At—Perikles invents this present war  
Because men robbed his mistress of three  
maids—

Or—Sokrates wants burning, house o'er  
head,—

“What, so obtuse, not read between the lines?  
Our poet means no mischief! All should  
know—

Ribaldry here implies a compliment!

He deals with things, not men,—his men are  
things—

Each represents a class, plays figure-head  
And names the ship: no meaner than the first  
Would serve; he styles a trireme ‘Sokrates’—  
Fears ‘Sokrates’ may prove unseaworthy  
(That’s merely—‘Sophists are the bane of  
boys’)

Rat-riddled (‘they are capable of theft’),  
Rotten or whatsoe’er shows ship-disease,  
(‘They war with gods and worship whirligig’).  
You never took the joke for earnest? scarce  
Supposed mere figure-head meant entire ship,  
And Sokrates—the whole fraternity?”

This then is Comedy, our sacred song,  
Censor of vice, and virtue’s guard as sure:  
Manners-instructing, morals’ stop-estray,  
Which, born a twin with public liberty,  
Thrives with its welfare, dwindles with its  
wane!

Liberty? what so exquisitely framed  
And fitted to suck dry its life of life  
To last faint fibre?—since that life is truth.  
You who profess your indignation swells  
At sophistry, when specious words confuse  
Deeds right and wrong, distinct before, you  
say—

(Though all that’s done is—dare veracity,  
Show that the true conception of each deed  
Affirmed, in vulgar parlance, “wrong” or  
“right.”

Proves to be neither, as the hasty hold,  
But, change your side, shoots light, where  
dark alone

Was apprehended by the vulgar sense)  
You who put sophistry to shame, and shout  
“There’s but a single side to man and thing;  
A side so much more big than thing or man  
Possibly can be, that—believe ’tis true?  
Such were too marvellous simplicity!”—  
Confess, those sophists whom yourself depict,  
(—Abide by your own painting!) what they  
teach,

They wish at least their pupil to believe,  
And, what believe, to practise! Did you wish  
Hellas should haste, as taught, with torch in  
hand,

And fire the horrid Speculation-shop?  
Straight the shop’s master rose and showed  
the mob

What man was your so monstrous Sokrates;  
Himself received amusement, why not they?  
Just as did Kleon first play magistrate  
And bid you put your birth in evidence—  
Since no unbadged buffoon is licensed here  
To shame us all when foreign guests may  
mock—

Then,—birth established, fooling licensed  
you,—

He, duty done, resumed mere auditor,  
Laughed with the loudest at his Lamia-shape,  
Kukloboros-roaring, and the camel-rest.  
Nay, Aristullos,—once your volley spent  
On the male-Kirké and her swinish crew,—  
PLATON,—so others call the youth we love,—  
Sends your performance to the curious king—

“Do you desire to know Athenai’s knack  
At turning seriousness to pleasantry?  
Read this! One Aristullos means myself.  
The author is indeed a merry grig!”

Nay, it would seem as if yourself were bent  
On laying down the law “Tell lies I must—  
Aforethought and of purpose, no mistake!”  
When forth yourself step, tell us from the stage  
“Here you behold the King of Comedy—  
Me, who, the first, have purged my every  
piece.

From each and all my predecessors’ filth,  
Abjured those satyr-adjuncts sewn to bid  
The boys laugh, satyr-jokes whereof not one  
Least sample but would make my hair turn  
grey

Beyond a twelve-month's savage I renounce  
Mountebank-adapt, such as firework-fizz  
And torchflare, or else nuts and barleycorns  
Scattered among the crowd, to scramble for  
And stop their mouths with; no such stuff  
shames me!

Who, — what's more serious, — know both  
when to strike

And when to stay my hand: once dead, my foe,  
Why, done, my fighting! / attack a corpse?  
I spare the corpse-like even, I punish age?  
I pity from my soul that sad effete

Toothless old mumbler called Kratinos! once  
My rival, — now, alack, the dotard slinks  
Ragged and hungry to what hole's his home;  
Ay, slinks thro' byways where no passenger  
Flings him a bone to pick. You formerly  
Adored the Muses' darling: dotard now,  
Why, he may starve! O mob most mutable!  
So you harangued in person; while, — to point  
Precisely out, these were but lies you  
launched, —

Prompt, a play followed primed with satyr-  
frisks,

No spice spared of the stomach-turning stew,  
Full-fraught with torch-display, and barley-  
throw,

And Kleon, dead enough, bedaubed afresh;  
While daft Kratinos — home to hole trudged he,  
Wrung dry his wit to the last vinous dregs,  
Decanted them to "Bottle," — beat, next  
year, —

"Bottle" and dregs — your best of "Clouds"  
and dew!

Where, Comic King, may keenest eye detect  
Improvement on your predecessors' work  
Except in lying more audaciously?

Why — genius! That's the grandeur, that's  
the gold —

That's *you* — superlatively true to touch —  
Gold, leaf or lump — gold, anyhow the mass  
Takes manufacture and proves Pallas' casque  
Or, at your choice, simply a cask to keep  
Corruption from decay. Your rivals' hoard  
May pose forth, lacking such preservative;  
Yours cannot — gold plays guardian far too  
well!

Gepios, I call *you*! dress, your rivals share;  
Ay, share and share alike, too! says the world,  
However you pretend supremacy  
In aught beside that gold, your very own.  
Satire? "Kratinos for our satirist!"  
The world cries. Elegance? "Who elegant  
As Eupolis?" resounds as noisily.  
Artistic fancy? Choros-creatures quaint?  
Magnes invented "Birds" and "Frogs"  
enough,

Archippos punned, Hegemon parodied,  
To heart's content, before you stepped on stage.  
Moral invective? Eupolis exposed —  
"That prating beggar, he who stole the cup,"  
Before your "Clouds" rained grime on Sok-  
rates;

Nay, what beat "Clouds" but "Konnos,"  
muck for mud?

Courage? How long before, well-masked,  
you poured

Abuse on Eukrates and Lusikles,  
Did Telekleides and Hermippos pelt —  
Their Perikles and Kumon? standing forth,  
Bareheaded, not safe crouched behind a  
name, —

Philonides or else Kallistratos,  
Put forth, when danger threatened, — mask  
for face,

To bear the brunt, — if blame fell, take the  
blame, —

If praise — why, frank laughed Aristop-  
phanes

"They write such rare stuff? No, I promise  
you!"

Rather, I see all true improvements, made  
Or making, go against you — tooth and nail  
Contended with; 'tis still Moruchides,  
'Tis Euthumenes, Surakosios, nay,  
Argurkhios and Kinesias, — common sense!  
And public shame, these only cleanse your style!

Coerced, prohibited, — you grin and bear,  
And, soon as may be, hug to heart again

The banished nastiness too dear to drop!  
Krates could teach and practise festive song  
Yet scorn scurrility; as gay and good,

Pherekrates could follow. *Who* loosed hold,  
Must let fall rose-wreath, stoop to muck once  
more?

Did your particular self advance in aught,  
 Task the sad genius—steady slave the while—  
 To further—say, the patriotic aim?  
 No, there's deterioration manifest  
 Year by year, play by play! survey them all,  
 From that boy's triumph when "Acharnes"

dawned,

To "Thesmophoriazousai,"—this man's—  
 shame!

There, truly, patriot zeal so prominent  
 Allowed friends' plea perhaps: the baser stuff  
 Was but the nobler spirit's vehicle.

Who would imprison, unvolatilize  
 A violet's perfume, blends with fatty oils  
 Essence too fugitive in flower alone;  
 So, calling unguent—violet, call the play—  
 Obscenity impregnated with "Peace"!  
 But here's the boy grown bald, and here's  
 the play

With twenty years' experience: where's one  
 spice

Of odour in the hog's-lard? what pretends  
 To aught except a grease-pot's quality?  
 Friend, sophist-hating! know,—worst soph-  
 istry

Is when man's own soul plays its own self false,  
 Reasons a vice into a virtue, pleads  
 "I detail sin to shame its author"—not  
 "I shame AIPHRADES for sin's display"!  
 "I show OPORA to commend Sweet Home"—  
 Not "I show BACCHIS for the striplings' sake!"

Yet all the same—O genius and O gold—  
 Had genius ne'er diverted gold from use  
 Worthy the temple, to do copper's work  
 And coat a swine's trough—which abundantly  
 Might furnish PHOIBOS' tripod, PALLAS' throne!  
 Had you, I dream, discarding all the base,  
 The brutish, spurned alone convention's watch  
 And ward against invading decency  
 Disguised as license, law in lawlessness,  
 And so, re-ordinating outworn rule,  
 Made Comedy and Tragedy combine,  
 Prove some new Both-yet-neither, all one  
 bard,

Euripides with Aristophanes  
 Coöperant! this, reproducing Now

As that gave Then existence: Life to-day,

This, as that other—Life dead long ago!  
 The mob decrees such feat no crown, per-  
 chance,

But—why call crowning the reward of quest?  
 Tell him, my other poet,—where thou walk'st  
 Some rarer world than e'er Ilios washed!

But dream goes idly in the air. To earth!  
 Earth's question just amounts to—which  
 succeeds,

Which fails of two life-long antagonists?  
 Suppose my charges all mistake! assume  
 Your end, despite ambiguous means, the  
 best—

The only! you and he, a patriot-pair,  
 Have striven alike for one result—say, Peace!  
 You spoke your best straight to the arbiters—  
 Our people: have you made them end this war  
 By dint of laughter and abuse and lies  
 And postures of OPORA? Sadly—No!  
 This war, despite your twenty-five years' work,  
 May yet endure until Athenai falls,  
 And freedom falls with her. So much for you!  
 Now, the antagonist EURIPIDES—  
 Has he succeeded better? Who shall say?  
 Hespoke quite o'er the heads of KLEON's crowd  
 To a dim future, and if there he fail,  
 Why, you are fellows in adversity.  
 But that's unlike the fate of wise words  
 launched

By music on their voyage. Hail, Depart,  
 Arrive, Glad Welcome! Not my single  
 wish—

Yours also wafts the white sail on its way,  
 Your nature too is kingly. All beside  
 I call pretension—no true potentate,  
 Whatever intermediary be crowned,  
 Zeus or Poseidon, where the vulgar sky  
 Lacks not TRIBALLOS<sup>1</sup> to complete the group.  
 I recognize,—behind such phantom-crew,—  
 Necessity, Creation, Poet's Power,  
 Else never had I dared approach, appeal  
 To poetry, power, Aristophanes!  
 But I trust truth's inherent kingliness,  
 Trust who, by reason of much truth, shall reign  
 More or less royally—may prayer but push

<sup>1</sup> A clownish god.

His sway past limit, purge the false from true !  
 Nor, even so, had boldness nerved my tongue  
 But that the other king stands suddenly,  
 In all the grand investiture of death,  
 Bowing your knee beside my lowly head—  
 Equals one moment !

Now, arise and go !  
 Both have done homage to Euripides !

Silence pursued the words : till he broke out—

“ Scarce so ! This constitutes, I may believe,  
 Sufficient homage done by who defames  
 Your poet's foe, since you account me such ;  
 But homage-proper,—pay it by defence  
 Of him, direct defence and not oblique,  
 Not by mere mild admonishment of me ! ”

Defence ? The best, the only ! I replied.  
 A story goes—When Sophokles, last year,  
 Cited before tribunal by his son  
 (A poet—to complete the parallel)  
 Was certified unsound of intellect,  
 And claimed as only fit for tutelage,  
 Since old and doating and incompetent  
 To carry on this world's work,—the defence  
 Consisted just in his reciting (calm  
 As the verse bore, which sets our heart a-swell  
 And voice a-heaving too tempestuously)  
 That choros-chant “ The station of the steed,  
 Stranger ! thou comest to,—Kolonos white ! ”  
 Then he looked round and all revolt was dead.  
 You know the one adventure of my life—  
 What made Euripides Balaustion's friend.  
 When I last saw him, as he bade farewell,  
 “ I sang another ‘ Herakles, ’ ” smiled he ;  
 “ It gained no prize : your love be prize I gain !  
 Take it—the tablets also where I traced  
 The story first with stulos pendent still—  
 Nay, the psalterion may complete the gift,  
 So, should you croon the ode bewailing Age,  
 Yourself shall modulate—same notes, same  
 strings—  
 With the old friend who loved Balaustion  
 once.”

There they lie ! When you broke our solitude,  
 We were about to honour him once more

By reading the consummate Tragedy.  
 Night is advanced ; I have small mind to sleep ;  
 May I go on, and read,—so make defence,  
 So test true godship ? You affirm, not I,  
 —Beating the god, affords such test : / hold  
 That when rash hands but touch divinity,  
 The chains drop off, the prison-walls dispart,  
 And—fire—he fronts mad Pentheus ! Dare  
 we try ?

Accordingly I read the perfect piece.

## HERAKLES.

## AMPHITRUON.

Zeus' Couchmate,—who of mortals knows  
 not me,  
 Argive Amphitruon whom Alkaios sired  
 Of old, as Perseus him, I—Herakles ?  
 My home, this Thebai where the earth-born  
 spike  
 Of Sown-ones burgeoned : Ares saved from  
 these  
 A handful of their seed that stocks to-day  
 With children's children Thebai, Kadmos  
 built.  
 Of these had Kreon birth, Menoikeus' child,  
 King of the country,—Kreon that became  
 The father of this woman, Megara,  
 Whom, when time was, Kadmeians one and  
 all  
 Pealed praise to, marriage-songs with fluted  
 help,  
 While to my dwelling that grand Herakles  
 Bore her, his bride. But, leaving Thebes—  
 where I  
 Abode perforce—this Megara and those  
 Her kinsmen, the desire possessed my son  
 Rather to dwell in Argos, that walled work,  
 Kuklopiian city, which I fly, myself,  
 Because I slew Elektruon. Seeking so  
 To ease away my hardships and once more  
 Inhabit his own land, for my return  
 Heavy the price he pays Eurustheus there—  
 The letting in of light on this choked world !  
 Either he promised, vanquished by the good

Of Here, or because fate willed it thus.  
The other labours—why, he toiled them  
through;

But for this last one—down by Tainaros,  
Its mouth, to Haides' realm descended he  
To drag into the light the three-shaped hound  
Of Hell: whence Herakles returns no more.  
Now, there's an 'old-world' tale, Kadmeians  
have,

How Dirke's husband was a Lukos once,  
Holding the seven-towered city here in sway  
Before they ruled the land, white-steeded  
pair,

The twins Amphion, Zethos, born to Zeus.  
This Lukos' son,—named like his father too,  
No born Kadmeian but Euboi'a's gift,—  
Comes and kills Kreon, lords it o'er the land,  
Falling upon our town's sedition-sick.

To us, akin to Kreon, just that bond  
Becomes the worst of evils, seemingly;  
For, since my son is in the earth's abysses,  
This man of valour, Lukos, lord and king,  
Seeks now to slay these sons of Herakles,  
And slay his wife as well,—by murder thus  
Thinking to stamp out murder,—slay too me,  
(If me 'tis fit you count among men still,—  
Useless old age) and all for fear lest these;  
Grown men one day, exact due punishment  
Of bloodshed and their mother's father's fate.  
I therefore, since he leaves me in these domes;  
The children's household guardian,—left,  
when earth's

Dark dread he underwent, that son of mine,—  
I, with their mother, lest his boys should die,  
Sit at this altar of the saviour Zeus.  
Which, glory of triumphant spear, he raised  
Conquering—my nobly-born I—the Minuai.  
Here do we guard our station, destitute  
Of all things, drink, food, raiment, on bare  
ground.

Couched side by side: sealed out of house  
and home.

Sit we in a resourcelessness of help.  
Our friends—why, some are no true friends,  
I see.

The rest, that are true, want the means to  
aid.

So, appointed in man adversity:

Whereof may never anybody—  
Though half of him should really wish me  
well,—  
Happen to taste! a friend-test faultless, that!

#### MEGARA.

Old man, who erst didst raze the Taphian  
town,

Illustriously, the army-leader, thou,  
Of speared Kadmeians—how gods play men  
false!

I, now, missed nowise fortune in my sire,  
Who, for his wealth, was boasted mighty  
once;

Having supreme rule,—for the love of which  
Leap the long lances forth at favoured  
breasts,—

And having children too: and me he gave  
Thy son, his house with that of Herakles  
Uniting by the far-famed marriage-bed.  
And now these things are dead and flown  
away,

While thou and I await our death, old man,  
These Herakleian boys too, whom—my  
chicks—

I save beneath my wings like brooding bird.  
But one or other falls to questioning  
"O mother," cries he, "where in all the  
world

Is father gone to? What's he doing? when  
Will he come back?" At fault through  
tender years,

They seek their sire. For me, I put them  
off,

Telling them stories; at each creak of doors,  
All wonder "Does he come?"—and all  
afoot

Make for the fall before the parent knee.

Now then, what hope, what method of escape  
Facilitatest thou?—for, thee, old man,

I look to,—since we may not leave by stealth  
The limits of the land, and guards, more strong  
Than we, are at the outlets: nor in friends  
Remain to us the hopes of safety more.

Therefore, whatever thy decision be,  
Impart it for the common good of all:  
Lest now should prove the proper time to die,  
Though, being weak, we spin it out and live.

AMPHITRUON.

Daughter, it scarce is easy, do one's best,  
To blurt out counsel, things at such a pass.

MEGARA.

You want some sorrow more, or so love life?

AMPHITRUON.

I both enjoy life, and love hopes beside.

MEGARA.

And I; but hope against hope—no, old man!

AMPHITRUON.

In these delayings of an ill lurks cure.

MEGARA.

But bitter is the meantime, and it bites.

AMPHITRUON.

O there may be a run before the wind  
From out these present ills, for me and thee,  
Daughter, and yet may come my son, thy  
spouse!

But hush! and from the children take away  
Their founts a-flow with tears, and talk them  
calm,

Steal them by stories—sad theft, all the same!  
For, human troubles—they grow weary too;  
Neither the wind-blasts always have their  
strength

Nor happy men keep happy to the end:  
Since all things change—their natures part  
in twain;

And that man's bravest, therefore, who  
hopes on,

Hopes ever: to despair is coward-like.

CHOROS.

These domes that overroof,  
This long-used couch, I come to, having made  
A staff my prop, that song may put to proof  
The swan-like power, age-whitened,—poet's  
aid

Of sobbed-forth dirges—words that stand aloof  
From action now; such am I—just a shade  
With night for all its face, a mere night-  
dream—

And words that tremble too; howe'er they  
seem,  
Devoted words, I deem.

O, of a father ye unfathered ones,  
O thou old man, and thou whose groaning  
stuns—

Unhappy mother—only us above,  
Nor reaches him below in Haides' realm, thy  
love!

—(Faint not too soon, urge forward foot and  
limb

Way-weary, nor lose courage—as some horse  
Yoked to the car whose weight recoils on him  
Just at the rock-ridge that concludes his course!  
Take by the hand, the peplos, anyone  
Whose foothold fails him, printless and fer-  
done!

Aged, assist along me aged too,  
Who,—mate with thee in toils when life was  
new,

And shields and spears first made acquaint-  
anceship,—

Stood by thyself and proved no bastard-slip  
Of fatherland when loftiest glory grew.)—  
See now, how like the sire's  
Each cycball fiercely fires!

What though ill-fortune have not left his race?  
Neither is gone the grand paternal grace!  
Hellas! O what—what combatants, destroyed  
In these, wilt thou one day seek—seek, and  
find all void!

Pause! for I see the ruler of this land,  
Lukos, now passing through the palace-gate.

LUKOS.

The Herakleian couple—father, wife—  
If needs I must, I question: "must" forsooth?  
Being your master—all I please, I ask.

To what time do you seek to spin out life?  
What hope, what help see, so as not to die?  
Is it you trust the sire of these, that's sunk

In Haides, will return? How past the pitch,  
Suppose you have to die, you pile the woe—  
Thou, casting, Hellas through, thy empty  
vaunts

As though Zeus helped thee to a god for son;



And thou, that thou wast styled our best  
man's wife !

Where was the awful in his work wound up,  
If he did quell and quench the marshy snake  
Or the Nemeian monster whom he snared  
And—says, by throttlings of his arm, he slew?  
With these do you outwrestle me? Such feats  
Shall save from death the sons of Herakles  
Who got praise, being nought, for bravery  
In wild-beast-battle, otherwise a blank?  
No man to throw on left arm buckler's weight,  
Not he, nor get in spear's reach ! bow he bore—  
True coward's-weapon : shoot first and then  
fly !

No bow-and-arrow proves a man is brave,  
But who keeps rank,—stands, one unwinking  
stare

As, ploughing up, the darts come,—brave is  
he.

My action has no impudence, old man !  
Providence, rather : for I own I slew  
Kreon, this woman's sire, and have his seat.  
Nowise I wish, then, to leave, these grown  
up,  
Avengers on me, payment for my deeds.

#### AMPHITRUON.

As to the part of Zeus in his own child,  
Let Zeus defend that ! As to mine, 'tis me  
The care concerns to show by argument  
The folly of this fellow,—Herakles,  
Whom I stand up for ! since to hear thee  
styled—

Cowardly—that is unendurable.  
First then, the infamous (for I account  
Amongst the words denied to human speech,  
Timidity ascribed thee, Herakles !)  
This I must put from thee, with gods in proof.  
Zeus' thunder I appeal to, those four steeds  
Whereof he also was the charioteer  
When, having shot down the earth's Giant-  
growth—

(Never shaft flew but found and fitted flank)  
Triumph he sang in common with the gods.  
The Kentaur-race, four footed insolence—  
Go ask at Pholoë, vilest thou of kings,  
Whom they would pick out and pronounce  
best man,

If not my son, "the seeming-brave," say'st  
thou !

But Dirphus, thy Abantid mother-town,  
Question her, and she would not praise,  
I think !

For there's no spot, where having done some  
good,

Thy country thou mightst call to witness  
worth.

Now, that all-wise invention, archer's-gear,  
Thou blamest : hear my teaching and grow  
sage !

A man in armour is his armour's slave,  
And, mixed with rank and file that want  
to run,

He dies because his neighbours have lost  
heart.

Then, should he break his spear, no way  
remains

Of warding death off,—gone that body-  
guard,

His one and only ; while, whatever folk  
Have the true bow-hand,—here's the one  
main good,—

Though he have sent ten thousand shafts  
abroad,

Others remain wherewith the archer saves  
His limbs and life, too,—stands afar and  
wards

Away from flesh the foe that vainly stares  
Hurt by the viewless arrow, while himself  
Offers no full front to those opposite,  
But keeps in thorough cover : there's the  
point

That's capital in combat—damage foe,  
Yet keep a safe skin—foe not out of reach  
As you are ! Thus my words contrast with  
thine,

And such, in judging facts, our difference.  
These children, now, why dost thou seek to  
slay ?

What have they done thee ? In a single  
point

I count thee wise—if, being base thyself,  
Thou dread'st the progeny of nobleness.  
Yet this bears hard upon us, all the same,  
If we must die—because of fear in thee—  
A death 'twere fit thou suffer at our hands,

Thy betters, did Zeus rightly judge us all.  
If therefore thou art bent on sceptre-sway,  
Thyself, here—suffer us to leave the land,  
Fugitives! nothing do by violence,  
Or violence thyself shalt undergo  
When the gods' gale may chance to change  
for thee!

Alas, O land of Kadmos,—for 'tis thee  
I mean to close with, dealing out the due  
Revilement,—in such sort dost thou defend  
Herakles and his children? Herakles  
Who, coming, one to all the world, against  
The Minuai, fought them and left Thebes an  
eye

Unblinded henceforth to front freedom with!  
Neither do I praise Hellas, nor shall brook  
Ever to keep in silence that I count  
Towards my son, craven of cravens—her  
Whom it behoved go bring the young ones  
here

Fire, spears, arms—in exchange for seas  
made safe,  
And cleansings of the land—his labour's  
price.

But fire, spears, arms,—O children, neither  
Thebes

Nor Hellas has them for you! 'Tis myself,  
A feeble friend, ye look to: nothing now  
But a tongue's murmur, for the strength is  
gone

We had once, and with age are limbs a-shake  
And force a-flicker! Were I only young,  
Still with the mastery o'er bone and thew,  
Grasping first spear that came, the yellow  
locks

Of this insulter would I bloody so—  
Should send him skipping o'er the Atlantic  
bounds

Out of my arm's reach through poltroonery!

## CHOROS.

Have not the really good folk starting-points  
For speech to purpose,—though rare talkers  
they?

## LUKOS.

Say thou against us words thou towerest with!  
I, for thy words, will deal thee blows, their  
due.

Go, some to Helikon, to Parnasos  
Some, and the clefts there! Bid the wood-  
men fell

Oak-trunks, and, when the same are brought  
inside

The city, pile the altar round with logs,  
Then fire it, burn the bodies of them all,  
That they may learn thereby, no dead man  
rules

The land here, but 'tis I, by acts like these!  
As for you, old sirs, who are set against  
My judgments, you shall groan for—not alone  
The Herakleian children, but the fate  
Of your own house beside, when faring ill  
By any chance: and you shall recollect  
Slaves are you of a tyranny that's mine!

## CHOROS.

O progeny of earth,—whom Ares sowed  
When he laid waste the dragon's greedy jaw—  
Will ye not lift the staves, right-hand sup-  
ports,

And bloody this man's irreligious head?  
Who, being no Kadmeian, rules,—the  
wretch,—

Our easy youth: an interloper too!  
But not of me, at least, shalt thou enjoy  
Thy lordship ever; nor my labour's fruit,—  
Hand worked so hard for,—have! A curse  
with thee,

Whence thou didst come, there go and  
tyrannize!

For never while I live shalt thou destroy  
The Herakleian children: not so deep  
Hides he below ground, leaving thee their  
lord!

But we bear both of you in mind,—that  
thou,

The land's destroyer, dost possess the land,  
While he who saved it, loses every right.

I play the busybody—for I serve  
My dead friends when they need friends'  
service most?

O right-hand, how thou yearnest to snatch  
spear

And serve indeed! in weakness dies the  
wish,

Or I had stayed thee calling me a slave,

And nobly drawn my breath at home in  
Thebes

Where thou exultest!—city that's insane,  
Sick through sedition and bad government,  
Else never had she gained for master—thee!

MEGARA.

Old friends, I praise you: since a righteous  
wrath

For friend's sake well becomes a friend.

But no!

On our account in anger with your lord,  
Suffer no injury! Hear my advice,  
Amphitruon, if I seem to speak aright.  
O yes, I love my children! how not love  
What I brought forth, what toiled for? and  
to die—

Sad I esteem too; still, the fated way  
Who stiffens him against, that man I count  
Poor creature; us, who are of other mood,  
Since we must die, behoves us meet our death  
Not burnt to cinders, giving foes the laugh—  
To me, worse ill than dying, that! We owe  
Our houses many a brave deed, now to pay.  
Thee, indeed, gloriously men estimate  
For spear-work, so that unendurable  
Were it that thou shouldst die a death of  
shame.

And for my glorious husband, where wants he  
A witness that he would not save his boys  
If touched in their good fame thereby?

Since birth

Bears ill with baseness done for children's  
sake,

My husband needs must be my pattern here.  
See now thy hope—how much I count  
thereon!

Thou thinkest that thy son will come to light:  
And, of the dead, who came from Haides  
back?

But we with talk this man might mollify:  
Never! Of all foes, fly the foolish one!  
Wise, well-bred people, make concession to!  
Sooner you meet respect by speaking soft.

Already it was in my mind—perchance  
We might beg off these children's banish-  
ment;

But even that is sad, involving them

In safety, ay—and piteous poverty!  
Since the host's visage for the flying friend  
Has, only one day, the sweet look, 'tis said,  
Dare with us death, which waits thee, dared  
or no!

We call on thine ancestral worth, old man!  
For who outlabours what the gods appoint  
Shows energy, but energy gone mad.  
Since what must—none e'er makes what  
must not be.

CHOROS.

Had anyone, while yet my arms were strong,  
Been scorning thee, he easily had ceased.  
But we are nought, now; thine henceforth  
to see—  
Amphitruon, how to push aside these fates!

AMPHITRUON.

Nor cowardice nor a desire of life  
Stops me from dying: but I seek to save  
My son his children. Vain! I set my heart,  
It seems, upon impossibility.  
See, it is ready for the sword, this throat  
To pierce, divide, dash down from precipice!  
But one grace grant us, king, we supplicate!  
Slay me and this unhappy one before  
The children, lest we see them—impious  
sight!—

Gasping the soul forth, calling all the while  
On mother and on father's father! Else,  
Do as thy heart inclines thee! No resource  
Have we from death, and we resign our  
selves.

MEGARA.

And I too supplicate: add grace to grace,  
And, though but one man, doubly serve us  
both!

Let me bestow adornment of the dead  
Upon these children! Throw the palace  
wide!

For now we are shut out. Thence these  
shall share  
At least so much of wealth was once their  
sire's!

LUKOS.

These things shall be. Withdraw the bolts,  
I bid

My servants! Enter and adorn yourselves!

I grudge no peploi; but when these ye wind  
About your bodies,—that adornment done,—  
Then I shall come and give you to the grave.

## MEGARA.

O children, follow this unhappy foot:  
Your mother's, into your ancestral home;  
Where others have the power, are lords in  
truth,  
Although the empty name is left us yet!

## AMPHITRUON.

O Zeus, in vain I had thee marriage-mate,  
In vain I called thee father of my child!  
Thou wast less friendly far than thou didst  
seem.

I, the mere man, o'ermatch in virtue thee  
The mighty god: for I have not betrayed  
The Herakleian children,—whereas thou  
Hast wit enough to come clandestinely  
Into the chamber, take what no man gave,  
Another's place; and when it comes to help  
Thy loved ones, there thou lackest wit indeed!  
Thou art some stupid god or born unjust.

## CHOROS.

Even a dirge, can Phoibos suit  
In song to music jubilant  
For all its sorrow: making shoot  
His golden plectron o'er the lute,  
Melodious ministrant.  
And I, too, am of mind to raise,  
Despite the imminence of doom,  
A song of joy, outpour thy praise.  
To him—what is it rumour says?  
Whether—now buried in the ghostly gloom  
Below ground,—he was child of Zeus indeed,  
Or mere Amphitruon's mortal seed—  
To him I weave the wreath of song, his  
labour's meed.  
For, is my hero perished in the feat?  
The virtues of brave toils, in death complete,  
These save the dead in song,—their glory-  
garland meet!  
First, then, he made the wood  
Of Zeus a solitude,  
Slaying its lion-tenant; and he spread

The lawlessness behind his yellow head  
Enmuffled by the brute's, backed by that  
grin of dread.

The mountain-roving savage Kentauros;  
He strewed with deadly bow about their  
place,

Slaying with winged shafts: Peneios knew,  
Beauteously-eddyng, and the long tracts top  
Of pasture trampled fruitless, and as well  
Those desolated haunts Mount Pelion under,  
And, grassy up to Homolé, each dell  
Whence, having filled their hands with pine-  
tree plunder,

Horse-like was wont to prance from, and  
subdue

The land of Thessaly, that bestial crew.  
The golden-headed spot-back'd stag he slew,  
That robber of the rustics: glorified  
Therewith the goddess who, in hunter's pride  
Slaughters the game along Oinoë's side.  
And, yoked abreast, he brought the chariot-  
breed

To pace submissive to the bit, each steed,  
That in the bloody cribs of Diomedes,  
Champed and, unbridled, hurried down that  
gore

For grain, exultant the dread feast before—  
Of man's flesh: hideous feeders they of  
yore!

All as he crossed the Hebeos' silver-flow  
Accomplished he such labour, toiling so  
For Mukenaijan tyrant; ay, and more—  
He crossed the Melian shore  
And, by the sources of Amauros, shot  
To death that strangers'-pest  
Kuknos, who dwelt in Amphangia: not  
Of fame for good to guest

And next, to the melodious maids he came,  
Inside the Hesperian court-yard: hand must  
aim  
At plucking gold fruit from the appled leaves,  
Now he had killed the dragon, backed like  
flame,

Who guards the unapproachable; he weaves  
Himself all round, one spire about the same.  
And into those sea-troughs of ocean dived  
The hero, and for mortals calm contrived

Whatever oars should follow in his wake.  
 And under heaven's mid-seat his hands thrust  
 he,  
 At home with Atlas : and, for valour's sake,  
 Held the gods up their star-faced mansionry.  
 Also, the rider-host of Amazons  
 About Maiotis many-streamed, he went  
 To conquer through the billowy Euxin once,  
 Having collected what an armament  
 Of friends from Hellas, all on conquest bent  
 Of that gold-garnished cloak, dread girdle-  
 chase !

So Hellas gained the girl's barbarian grace  
 And at Mukenai saves the trophy still—  
 Go wonder there, who will !

And the ten thousand-headed hound  
 Of many a murder, the Lernaian snake  
 He burned out, head by head, and cast  
 around

His darts a poison thence,—darts soon to  
 slake

Their rage in that three-bodied herdsman's  
 gore

Of Erutheia. Many a running more  
 He made for triumph and felicity,  
 And, last of toils, to Haides, never dry  
 Of tears, he sailed : and there he, luckless,  
 ends

His life completely, nor returns again.  
 The house and home are desolate of friends,  
 And where the children's life-path leads  
 them, plain

I see,—no step retraceable, no god  
 Availing, and no law to help the lost !  
 The oar of Charon marks their period,  
 Waits to end all. Thy hands, these roofs  
 accost !—

To thee, though absent, look their uttermost !

But if in youth and strength I flourished still,  
 Still shook the spear in fight, did power  
 match will

In these Kadmeian co-mates of my age,  
 They would,—and I,—when warfare was to  
 wage,

Stand by these children ; but I am bereft  
 Of youth now, lone of that good genius left !

But hist, desist ! for here come these,—  
 Draped as the dead go, under and over,—  
 Children long since,—now hard to discover,—  
 Of the once so potent Herakles !  
 And the loved wife dragging, in one tether  
 About her feet, the boys together ;  
 And the hero's aged sire comes last !  
 Unhappy that I am ! Of tears which rise,—  
 How am I all unable to hold fast,  
 Longer, the aged fountains of these eyes !

## MEGARA.

Be it so ! Who is priest, who butcher here  
 Of these ill-fated ones, or stops the breath  
 Of me, the miserable ? Ready, see,  
 The sacrifice—to lead where Haides lives !  
 O children, we are led—no lovely team  
 Of corpses—age, youth, motherhood, all  
 mixed !

O sad fate of myself and these my sons  
 Whom with these eyes I look at, this last  
 time !

I, indeed, bore you : but for enemies  
 I brought you up to be a laughing-stock,  
 Matter for merriment, destruction-stuff !  
 Woe's me !  
 Strangely indeed my hopes have struck me  
 down

From what I used to hope about you once—  
 The expectation from your father's talk !  
 For thee, now, thy dead sire dealt Argos to :  
 Thou wast to have Eurustheus' house one  
 day,

And rule Pelasgia where the fine fruits grow ;  
 And, for a stole of state, he wrapped about  
 Thy head with that the lion-monster bore,  
 That which himself went wearing armour-  
 wise.

And thou wast King of Thebes—such chariots  
 there !

Those plains I had for portion—all for thee,  
 As thou hadst coaxed them out of who gave  
 birth

To thee, his boy : and into thy right hand  
 He thrust the guardian-club of Daidalos,—  
 Poor guardian proves the gift that plays thee  
 false !

And upon thee he promised to bestow

Oichalia — what, with those far-shooting shafts,  
He ravaged once; and so, since three you were,

With threefold kingdoms did he build you up  
To very towers, your father,—proud enough  
Prognosticating, from your manliness  
In boyhood, what the manhood's self would be.

For my part, I was picking out for you  
Brides, suiting each with his alliance—this  
From Athens, this from Sparte, this from  
Thebes—

Whence; suited—as stern-cables steady ship—  
You might have hold on life gods' bless.

All gone!

Fortune turns round and gives us—you, the  
Fates

Instead of brides—me, tears for nuptial baths,  
Unhappy in my hoping! And the sire  
Of your sire—he prepares the marriage-  
feast

Be-fitting Haides who plays father now—  
Bitter relationship! Oh me! which first—  
Which last of you shall I to bosom fold?  
To whom shall I fit close, his mouth to mine?  
Of whom shall I lay hold and ne'er let go?  
How would I gather, like the brown-winged  
bee,

The groans from all, and, gathered into one,  
Give them you back again, a crowded tear!  
Dearest, if any voice be heard of men  
Dungeoned in Haides, thee—to thee I speak!  
Here is thy father dying, and thy boys!  
And I too perish, famed as fortunate  
By mortals once, through thee! Assist them!  
Come!

But come! though just a shade, appear to  
me!

For, coming, thy ghost grandeur would suffice,  
Such cowards are they in thy presence, these  
Who kill thy children now thy back is turned!

AMPHITRUON.

Ay, daughter, bid the powers below assist!  
But I will rather, raising hand to heaven,  
Call thee to help, O Zeus, if thy intent  
Be, to these children, helpful in my way.

VOL. I.

Since soon thou wilt be valueless enough!  
And yet thou hast been called and called; I  
know it.

I labour for we needs must die, it seems,  
Well; aged brothers—life's a little thing!  
Such as it is, then, pass life pleasantly!

From day to night, nor once grieve all the  
while!

Since Time concerns him not about our  
hopes,—

To save them,—but his own work done, flies  
off.

Witness myself, looked up to among men,  
Doing noteworthy deeds: when here comes  
fate

Lifts me away, like feather skyward borne,  
In one day! Riches then and glory,—whom  
These are found constant to, I know not  
Friends,

Farewell! the man who loved you all so much!  
Now, this last time, my mates, ye look upon!

MEGARA.

Ha!

O father, do I see my dearest? Speak!

AMPHITRUON.

No more than thou canst, daughter—dunn,  
like thee!

MEGARA.

Is this he whom we heard was under ground!

AMPHITRUON.

Unless at least some dream in day we see!

MEGARA.

What do I say? what, dreams insanely view!  
This is no other than thy son, old sire!

Here children! hang to these paternal robes,  
Quick, haste, hold hard on him, since here's

you, true  
Zeus that can save—and every whit as well

HERAKLES.

O hail, my palace, my hearth's propyla,—  
How glad I see thee as I come to light!

Ha, what means this? My children I behold  
Before the house in garments of the grave,

A A

Chapleted, and, amid a crowd of men,  
My very wife—my father weeping too,  
Whatever the misfortune! Come, best take  
My station nearer these and learn it all!  
Wife, what new sorrow has approached our  
home?

MEGARA.

O dearest! light flashed on thy father now!  
Art thou come? art thou saved and dost thou  
fall

On friends in their supreme extremity?

HERAKLES.

How say'st thou? Father! what's the trouble  
here?

MEGARA.

Undone are we!—but thou, old man, forgive  
If first I snatch what thou shouldst say to him!  
For somehow womanhood wakes pity more.  
Here are my children killed and I undone!

HERAKLES.

Apollon, with what preludes speech begins!

MEGARA.

Dead are my brothers and old father too.

HERAKLES.

How say'st thou?—doing what?—by spear-  
stroke whence?

MEGARA.

Lukos destroyed them—the land's noble king!

HERAKLES.

Met them in arms? or through the land's  
disease?

MEGARA.

Sedition: and he sways seven-gated Thebes.

HERAKLES.

Why then came fear on the old man and thee?

MEGARA.

He meant to kill thy father, me, our boys.

HERAKLES.

How say'st thou? Fearing what from orphan-  
age?

MEGARA.

Lest they should some day pay back Kreon's  
death.

HERAKLES.

And why trick out the boys corpse-fashion  
thus?

MEGARA.

These wraps of death we have already donned.

HERAKLES.

And you had died through violence? Woe's  
me!

MEGARA.

Left bare of friends: and thou wast dead, we  
heard.

HERAKLES.

And whence came on you this faintheartedness?

MEGARA.

The heralds of Eurustheus brought the news.

HERAKLES.

And why was it you left my house and hearth?

MEGARA.

Forced thence; thy father—from his very  
couch!

HERAKLES.

And no shame at insulting the old man?

MEGARA.

Shame, truly! no near neighbours *he* and  
Shame!

HERAKLES.

And so much, in my absence, lacked I friends?

MEGARA.

Friends,—are there any to a luckless man?

HERAKLES.

The Minuai-war I waged,—they spat forth  
these?

MEGARA.

Friendless,—again I tell thee,—is ill-luck.

HERAKLES.

Will not you cast these hell-wraps from your  
hair

And look on light again, and with your eyes

Taste the sweet change from nether dark to day?

While I—for now there needs my handiwork—  
First I shall go, demolish the abodes  
Of these new lordships; next hew off the head  
Accurst and toss it for the dogs to trail.  
Then, such of the Kadmeians as I find  
Were craven though they owed me gratitude,—  
Some I intend to handle with this club  
Renowned for conquest; and with winged shafts

Scatter the others, fill Ismenos full  
With bloody corpses,—Dirké's flow so white  
Shall be incarnadined. For, whom, I pray,  
Behoves me rather help than wife and child  
And aged father? Farewell, "Labours"  
mine!

Vainly I wrought them: my true work lay here!

My business is to die defending these,—  
If for their father's sake they meant to die.  
Or how shall we call brave the battling it  
With snake and lion, as Eurustheus bade,  
If yet I must not labour death away  
From my own children? "Conquering  
Herakles"

Folk will not call me as they used, I think!  
The right thing is for parents to assist  
Children, old age, the partner of the couch.

AMPHITRUON.

True, son! thy duty is—be friend to friends  
And foe to foes: yet—no more haste than needs!

HERAKLES.

Why, father, what is over hasty here?

AMPHITRUON.

Many a pauper,—seeming to be rich,  
As the word goes,—the king calls partisan.  
Such made a riot, ruined Thebes to rob  
Their neighbour: for, what good they had  
at home  
Wasspent and gone—flew off through idleness.  
You came to trouble Thebes, they saw: since  
seen,

Beware lest, raising foes, a multitude,  
You stumble where you apprehend no harm.

HERAKLES.

If all Thebes saw me, not a whit care I.  
But seeing as I did a certain bird  
Not in the lucky seats, I knew some woe  
Was fallen upon the house: so, purposely,  
By stealth I made my way into the land.

AMPHITRUON.

And now, advancing, hail the hearth with praise  
And give the ancestral home thine eye to see!

For he himself will come, thy wife and sons  
To drag-forth—slaughter—slay me too,—this king!

But, here remaining, all succeeds with thee—  
Gain lost by no false step. So, this thy town  
Disturb not, son, ere thou right matters here!

HERAKLES.

Thus will I do, for thou say'st well; my home  
Let me first enter! Since at the due time  
Returning from the unsunned depths where dwells  
Haides' wife Koré, let me not affront  
Those gods beneath my roof I first should hail!

AMPHITRUON.

For didst thou really visit Haides, son?

HERAKLES.

Ay—dragged to light, too, his three-headed  
beast.

AMPHITRUON.

By fight didst conquer, or through Koré's gift?

HERAKLES.

Fight: well for me, I saw the Orgies first!

AMPHITRUON.

And is he in Eurustheus' house, the brute?

HERAKLES.

Chthonia's grove, Hermion's city, hold him  
now.

AMPHITRUON.

Does not Eurustheus know thee back on earth?



HERAKLES.

No: I would come first and see matters here.

AMPHITRUON.

But how wast thou below ground such a time?

HERAKLES.

I stopped, from Hades, bringing Theseus up.

AMPHITRUON.

And where is he?—bound o'er the plain for home?

HERAKLES.

Gone glad to Athens—Hades' fugitive!

But, up, boys! follow father into house!

There's a far better going-in for you

Truly, than going-out was! Nay, take heart,

And let the eyes no longer run and run!

And thou, O wife, my own, collect thy soul

Nor tremble now! Leave grasping, all of you,

My garments! I'm not winged, nor fly from

friends!

Alas—

No letting go for these, who all the more

Hang to my garments! Did you foot indeed

The razor's edge? Why, then I'll carry them—

Take with my hands these small craft up, and

tow

Just as a ship would. There! don't fear I shirk

My children's service! this way, men are men,

No difference! best and worst, they love their

boys

After one fashion: wealth they differ in—

Some have it, others not; but each and all

Combine to form the children-loving race.

CHOROS.

Youth is a pleasant burthen to me;

But age on my head, more heavily

Than the crags of Aitna, weighs and weighs,

And darkening cloaks the lids and intercepts

the rays.

Never be mine the preference

Of an Asian empire's wealth, nor yet

Of a house all gold, to youth, to youth

That's beauty, whatever the gods dispense!

Whether in wealth we joy, or fret

Paupers,—of all God's gifts most beautiful, in

truth!

But miserable murderous age I hate!

Let it go to wreck, the waves adown,

Nor ever by rights plague tower or town

Where mortals bide, but still elate

With wings, on ether, precipitate,

Wander them round—nor wait!

But if the gods, to man's degree,

Had wit and wisdom, they would bring

Mankind a twofold youth, to be

Their virtue's sign-mark, all should see,

In those with whom life's winter thus grew

spring.

For when they died, into the sun once more

Would they have traversed twice life's race

course o'er;

While ignobility had simply run

Existence through, nor second life begun.

And so might we discern both bad and good

As surely as the starry multitude

Is numbered by the sailors, one and one.

But now the gods by no apparent line

Limit the worthy and the base define;

Only, a certain period rounds, and so

Brings man more wealth, — but youthful

vigour, no!

Well! I am not to pause

Mingling together—wine and wine in cup—

The Graces with the Muses up—

Most dulcet marriage: loosed from music's

laws,

No life for me!

But where the wreaths abound, there ever may

I be!

And still, an aged bard, I shout Mnemosyne—

Still chant of Herakles the triumph-chant,

Companioned by the seven-stringed tortoise

shell

And Libuan flute, and Bromios' self as well

God of the grape, with man participant!

Not yet will we arrest their glad advance—

The Muses who so long have led me forth to

dance!

A paian—hymn the Delian girls indeed,

Weaving a beauteous measure in and out

His temple-gates, Latona's goodly seed;

And paian—I too, these thy domes about,

From these grey cheeks, my king, will swan-  
like shout—  
Old songster! Ay, in song it starts off  
brave—

"Zeus' son is he!" and yet, such grace of birth  
Surpassing far, to man his labours gave,  
Existence, one calm flow without a wave,  
Having destroyed the beasts, the terrors of  
the earth.

LUKOS.

From out the house Amphitruon comes—  
in time!

For 'tis a long while now since ye bedecked  
Your bodies with the dead-folk's finery.  
But quick! the boys and wife of Herakles—  
Bid them appear outside this house, keep pact  
To die, and need no bidding but your own!

AMPHITRUON.

King! you press hard on me sore-pressed  
enough,  
And give me scorn—beside my dead ones here.  
Meet in such matters were it, though you reign,  
To temper zeal with moderation. Since  
You do impose on us the need to die—  
Needs must we love our lot, obey your will.

LUKOS.

Where's Megara, then? Alkmené's grand-  
sons, where?

AMPHITRUON.

She, I think,—as one figures from outside,—

LUKOS.

Well, this same thinking,—what affords its  
ground?

AMPHITRUON.

—Sits suppliant on the holy altar-steps,—

LUKOS.

Idly indeed a suppliant to save life!

AMPHITRUON.

—And calls on her dead husband, vainly too!

LUKOS.

For he's not come, nor ever will arrive.

AMPHITRUON.

Never—at least, if no god raise him up.

LUKOS.

Go to her, and conduct her from the house!

AMPHITRUON.

I should partake the murder, doing that.

LUKOS.

We,—since thou hast a scruple in the case,—  
Outside of fears, we shall march forth these lads,  
Mother and all. Here, follow me, my folk—  
And gladly so remove what stops our toils!

AMPHITRUON.

Thou—go then! March where needs must!  
What remains—  
Perhaps concerns another. Doing ill,  
Expect some ill be done thee.

Ha, old friends!

On he strides beautifully! in the toils.  
O' the net, where swords spring forth, will  
he be fast—

Minded to kill his neighbours—the arch-  
knave!

I go, too—I must see the falling corpse!  
For he has sweets to give—a dying man,  
Your foe, that pays the price of deeds he did.

CHOROS.

Troubles are over! Lie the great king once  
Turns the point, tends for Haides, goal of life!  
O justice, and the gods' back-flowing fate!

AMPHITRUON.

Thou art come, late indeed, where death pays  
crime—  
These insults heaped on better than thyself!

CHOROS.

Joy gives this outburst to my tears! Again  
Come round those deeds, his doing, which  
of old

He never dreamed himself was to endure—  
King of the country! But enough, old man!  
Indoors, now, let us see how matters stand—  
If somebody be faring as I wish!

Ah me—me !  
 LUKOS.

CHOROS.  
 This strikes the keynote—music to my mind,  
 Merry i' the household ! Death takes up the  
 tune !

The king gives voice, groans murder's pre-  
 lude well !

LUKOS.  
 O, all the land of Kadmos ! slain by guile !

CHOROS.  
 Ay, for who slew first ? Paying back thy due,  
 Resign thee ! make, for deeds done, mere  
 amends !

Who was it grazed the gods through lawless-  
 ness—

Mortal himself, threw up his fool's-conceit  
 Against the blessed heavenly ones—as though  
 Gods had no power ? Old friends, the im-  
 pious man

Exists not any more ! The house is mute.  
 Turn we to song and dance ! For, those I  
 love,

Those I wish well to, well fare they, to wish !

Dances, dances and banqueting  
 To Thebes, the sacred city through,  
 Are a care ! for, change and change  
 Of tears to laughter, old to new,  
 Our lays, glad birth, they bring, they bring !  
 He is gone and past, the mighty king !  
 And the old one reigns, returned—O strange !  
 From the Acherontian harbour too !

Advent of hope, beyond thought's widest  
 range !

To the gods, the gods, are crimes a care,  
 And they watch our virtue, well aware  
 That gold and that prosperity drive man  
 Out of his mind—those charioteers who hale  
 Might-without-right behind them : face who  
 can

Fortune's reverse which time prepares, nor  
 quail ?

—He who evades law and in lawlessness  
 Delights him,—he has broken down his trust—  
 The chariot, riches haled—now blackening in  
 the dust !

Ismenos, go thou garlanded !  
 Break into dance, ye ways, the polished bed  
 O' the seven-gated city ! Dirké, thou  
 Fair-flowing, with the Asopiad sisters all,  
 Leave your sire's stream, attend the festival  
 Of Herakles, one choir of nymphs, sing  
 triumph now !

O woody rock of Puthios<sup>1</sup> and each home  
 O' the Helikonian Muses, ye shall come  
 With joyous shouting to my walls, my town  
 Where saw the light that Spartan race, those  
 "Sown,"

Brazen-shield-bearing chiefs, whereof the band  
 With children's children renovates our land,  
 To Thebes a sacred light !

O combination of the marriage rite—  
 Bed of the mortal-born and Zeus, who couched  
 Beside the nymph of Perseus' progeny !  
 For credible, past hope, becomes to me  
 That nuptial story long ago avouched,  
 O Zeus ! and time has turned the dark to  
 bright,

And made one blaze of truth the Herakleidan  
 might—

His, who emerged from earth's pavilion, left  
 Plouton's abode, the nether palace-cleft.

Thou wast the lord that nature gave me—not  
 That baseness born and bred—my king, by  
 lot !

—Baseness made plain to all, who now regard  
 The match of sword with sword in fight,—  
 If to the gods the Just and Right  
 Still pleasing be, still claim the palm's award.

Horror !

Are we come to the self-same passion of fear,  
 Old friends ?—such a phantasm fronts me here  
 Visible over the palace-roof !

In flight, in flight, the laggard limb  
 Bestir ! and haste aloof

From that on the roof there—grand and grim !  
 O Paian, king !

Be thou my safeguard from the woeful thing !

IRIS.

Courage, old men ! beholding here—Night's  
 birth—

<sup>1</sup> Surname of Apollo.

Madness, and me the handmaid of the gods,  
Iris: since to your town we come, no plague—  
Wage war against the house of but one man  
From Zeus and from Alkmené sprung, they  
say.

Now, till he made an end of bitter toils,  
Fate kept him safe, nor did his father Zeus  
Let us once hurt him, Heré nor myself.  
But, since he has toiled through Eurustheus'  
task,  
Heré desires to fix fresh blood on him—  
Slaying his children: I desire it too.

Up then, collecting the unsoftened heart,  
Unwedded virgin of black Night! Drive, drag  
Frenzy upon the man here—whirls of brain  
Big with child-murder, while his feet leap  
gay!  
Let go the bloody cable its whole length!  
So that,—when o'er the Acherousian ford  
He has sent floating, by self-homicide,  
His beautiful boy-garland,—he may know  
First, Heré's anger, what it is to him,  
And then learn mine. The gods are vile  
indeed  
And mortal matters vast, if he 'scape free!

## MADNESS.

Certes, from well-born sire and mother too  
Had I my birth, whose blood is Night's and  
Heaven's;  
But here's my glory,—not to grudge the good!  
Nor love I raids against the friends of man.  
I wish, then, to persuade,—before I see  
You stumbling, you and Heré! trust my words!  
This man, the house of whom ye hound me to,  
Is not unflamed on earth nor gods among;  
Since, having quelled waste land and savage  
sea,  
He alone raised again the falling rights  
Of gods—gone ruinous through impious men.  
Desire no mighty mischief, I advise!

Give thou no thought to Heré's faulty schemes!

## MADNESS.

Changing her step from faulty to fault-free!

## IRIS.

Not to be wise, did Zeus' wife send thee here.

## MADNESS.

Sun, thee I cite to witness—doing what I  
loathe to do!  
But since indeed to Heré and thyself I must  
subserve,  
And follow you quick, with a whizz, as the  
hounds a-hunt with the huntsman,  
—Go I will! and neither the sea, as it groans  
with its waves so furiously,  
Nor earthquake, no, nor the bolt of thunder  
gasping out heaven's labour-throe,  
Shall cover the ground as I, at a bound, rush  
into the bosom of Herakles!  
And home I scatter, and house I batter,  
Having first of all made the children fall,—  
And he who felled them is never to know  
He gave birth to each child that received the  
blow,  
Till the Madness, I am, have let him go!

Ha, behold! already he rocks his head—he  
is off from the starting-place!  
Not a word, as he rolls his frightful orbs,  
from their sockets wrenched in the  
ghastly race!  
And the breathings of him he tempers and  
times no more than a bull in act to toss,  
And hideously he bellows invoking the Keres,  
daughters of Tartaros.  
Ay, and I soon will dance thee madder, and  
pipe thee quite out of thy mind with fear!  
So, up with the famous foot, thou Iris, march  
to Olumpos, leave me here!  
Me and mine, who now combine, in the  
dreadful shape no mortal sees,  
And now are about to pass, from without,  
inside of the home of Herakles!

## CHOROS.

Otototoi,—groan!  
Away is mown  
Thy flower, Zeus' offspring, City!  
Unhappy Hellas, who dost cast (the pity!)  
Who worked thee all the good,  
Away from thee,—destroyed in a mood

Of madness him, to death whom pipings dance!  
There goes she, in her chariot,—groans, her  
brood,—

And gives her team the goad, as though adrift  
For doom, Night's Gorgon, Madness, she  
whose glance

Turns man to marble! with what hissings lift  
Their hundred heads the snakes, her head's  
inheritance!

Quick has the god changed fortune: through  
their sire

Quick will the children, that he saved, expire!  
O miserable me! O Zeus! thy child—  
Childless himself—soon vengeance, hunger-  
wild,

Graving for punishment, will lay how low—  
Loaded with many a woe!

O palace-roofs! your courts about,  
A measure begins all unrejoiced!

By the tympanies and the thyrsos hoist  
Of the Bromian revel-rout!

O ye domes! and the measure proceeds  
For blood, not such as the cluster bleeds  
Of the Dionusian pouring-out!

Break forth, fly, children! fatal this—  
Fatal the lay that is piped, I wis!  
Ay, for he hunts a children-chase—  
Never shall Madness lead her revel  
And leave no trace in the dwelling-place!  
Ai ai, because of the evil!

Ai ai, the old man—how I groan  
For the father, and not the father alone!  
She who was nurse of his children,—small  
Her gain that they ever were born at all!

See! See!  
A whirlwind shakes hither and thither  
The house—the roof falls in together!  
Ha, ha, what dost thou, son of Zeus?  
A trouble of Tartaros broke loose,  
Such as once Pallas on the Titan thundered,  
Thou sendest on thy domes, roof-shattered  
and wall-sundered!

MESSENGER.  
O bodies white with age!

CHOROS.  
What cry, to me—  
What, dost thou call with?

MESSENGER.  
There's a curse indoors

CHOROS.  
I shall not bring a prophet: you suffice.

MESSENGER.  
Dead are the children:

CHOROS.  
Ai ai!

MESSENGER.  
Groan! for, groans  
Suit well the subject. Dire the children's  
death,  
Dire too the parent's hands that dealt the fate.  
No one could tell worse woe than we have  
borne.

CHOROS.  
How dost thou that same curse—curse, cause  
for groan—  
The father's on the children, make appear?  
Tell in what matter they were hurled from  
heaven  
Against the house—these evils; and recount  
The children's hapless fate, O Messenger!

MESSENGER.  
The victims were before the hearth of Zeus,  
A household-expiation: since the king  
O' the country, Herakles had killed and cast  
From out the dwelling; and a beautiful  
choir

Of boys stood by his sire, too, and his wife.  
And now the basket had been carried round  
The altar in a circle, and we used  
The consecrated speech: Alkmenes son,—  
Just as he was about, in his right hand,  
To bear the torch, that he might dip into  
The cleansing-water,—came to a stand-still;  
And, as their father yet delayed, his boys  
Had their eyes on him. But he was himself  
No longer: lost in rollings of the eyes!

Outthrusting eyes—their very roots—like blood!

Froth he dropped down his bushy-bearded cheek,

And said—together with a madman's laugh—

“Father! why sacrifice, before I slay

Eurustheus? why have twice the lustral fire,

And double pains, when 'tis permitted me

To end, with one good hand-sweep, matters here?

Then,—when I hither bring Eurustheus' head,—

Then for these just slain, wash hands once for all!

Now,—cast drink-offerings forth, throw baskets down!

Who gives me bow and arrows, who my club?

I go to that Mukenai. One must match

Crowbars and mattocks, so that—those sunk stones

The Kuklops squared with picks and plumb-line red—

I, with my bent steel, may o'ertumble town.”

Which said, he goes and—with no car to have—

Affirms he has one! mounts the chariot-board,

And strikes, as having really goad in hand!

And two ways laughed the servants—laugh with awe;

And one said, as each met the other's stare,

“Playing us boys' tricks? or is master mad?”

But up he climbs, and down along the roof,

And, dropping into the men's place, maintains

He's come to Nisos city, when he's come

Only inside his own house! then reclines

On floor, for couch, and, as arrived indeed,

Makes himself supper; goes through some brief stay,

Then says he's traversing the forest-flats

Of Isthmos; thereupon lays body bare

Of bucklings, and begins a contest with

—No one! and is proclaimed the conqueror—

He by himself—having called out to hear

—Nobody! Then, if you will take his word,

Blaring against Eurustheus horribly,

He's at Mukenai. But his father laid

Hold of the strong hand and addressed him thus:

“O son, what ails thee? Of what sort is this Extravagance? Has not some murder-craze, Bred of those corpses thou didst just despatch, Danted thee drunk?” But he,—taking him to crouch;

Eurustheus' sire, that apprehensive touched His hand, a suppliant,—pushes him aside, Gets ready quiver, and bends bow against His children—thinking them Eurustheus' boys

He means to slay. They, horrified with fear, Rushed here and there,—this child, into the robes

O' the wretched mother—this, beneath the shade

O' the column,—and this other, like a bird, Cowered at the altar-foot. The mothers shrieks

“Parent—what dost thou?—kill thy children?” So

Shriek the old sire and crowd of servitors.

But he, unwinding him, as round about

The column ran the boy,—a horrid whirl

O' the lathe his foot described!—stands opposite,

Strikes through the liver; and supine the boy Bedews the stone shafts, breathing out his life.

But “Victory!” he shouted—boasted thus:

“Well, this one nestling of Eurustheus—dead—

Falls by me, pays back the paternal hate!”

Then bends bow on another who was crouched

At base of altar—overlooked, he thought—

And now prevents him, falls at father's knee,

Throwing up hand to beard and cheek above.

O dearest!” cries he; “father, kill me not!

Yours I am—your boy: not Eurustheus' boy

You kill now!” But he, rolling the wild eye

Of Gorgon,—as the boy stood all too close

For deadly bowshot,—mimicry of smith

Who batters red-hot iron,—hand o'er head

Heaving his club, on the boy's yellow hair

Hurls it and breaks the bone. This second

caught,—

He goes, would slay the third, one sacrifice

He and the couple; but, beforehand here,

The miserable mother catches up,

Carries him inside house and bars the gate.

Then he, as he were at those Kuklops' work,

Digs at, heaves doors up, wrenches doorposts out,

Lays wife and child low with the selfsame shaft.  
And this done, at the old man's death he drives;  
But there came, as it seemed to us who saw,  
A statue—Pallas with the crested head,  
Swinging her spear—and threw a stone which smote

Herakles' breast and stayed his slaughter-rage,  
And sent him safe to sleep. He falls to ground—

Striking against the column with his back—  
Column which, with the falling of the roof,  
Broken in two, lay by the altar-base.

And we, foot-free now from our several flights,  
Along with the old man, we fastened bonds  
Of rope-noose to the column, so that he,  
Ceasing from sleep, might not go adding deeds  
To deeds done. And he sleeps a sleep, poor wretch,

No gift of any god! since he has slain  
Children and wife. For me, I do not know  
What mortal has more misery to bear.

CHOROS.

A murder there was which Argolis  
Holds in remembrance, Hellas through,  
As, at that time, best and famous est:  
Of those, the daughters of Danaos slew.  
A murder indeed was that! but this  
Outstrips it, straight to the goal has pressed.  
I am able to speak of a murder done  
To the hapless Zeus-born offspring, too—  
Prokne's son, who had but one—  
Or a sacrifice to the Muses, say  
Rather, who Itus sing alway,  
Her single child. But thou, the sire  
Of children three—O thou consuming fire!—  
In one outrageous fate hast made them all expire.

And this outrageous fate—  
What groan, or wail, or deadmen's dirge,  
Or choric dance of Haidēs shall I urge  
The Muse to celebrate?

Woe! woe! behold!  
The portalled palace lies unrolled,  
This way and that way, each prodigious fold!

Alas for me! these children, see,  
Stretched, hapless group, before their father—  
he

The all-unhappy, who lies sleeping out  
The murder of his sons, a dreadful sleep!  
And bonds, see, all about,—  
Rope-tangle, ties and tether,—these  
Tightenings around the body of Herakles  
To the stone columns of the house made fast!

But—like a bird that grieves  
For callow nestlings some rude hand be-  
reaves—  
See, here, a bitter journey overpast,  
The old man—all too late—is here at last!

AMPHITRUON.

Silently, silently, aged Kadmeians!  
Will ye not suffer my son, diffused  
Yonder, to slide from his sorrows in sleep?

CHOROS.

And thee, old man, do I, groaning, weep,  
And the children too, and the head there—  
used  
Of old to the wreaths and paians!

AMPHITRUON.

Farther away! Nor beat the breast,  
Nor wail aloud, nor rouse from rest  
The slumberer—asleep, so best!

CHOROS.

Ah me—what a slaughter!

AMPHITRUON.

Refrain—refrain!

Ye will prove my perdition.

CHOROS.

Unlike water,  
Bloodshed rises from earth again.

AMPHITRUON.

Do I bid you bate your breath, in vain—  
Ye elders? Lament in a softer strain!  
Lest he rouse himself, burst every chain,  
And bury the city in ravage—bray  
Father and house to dust away!

CHOROS.

I cannot forbear—I cannot forbear !

AMPHITRUON.

Hush ! I will learn his breathings : there !  
I will lay my ears close.

CHOROS.

What, he sleeps ?

AMPHITRUON.

Ay,—sleeps ! A horror of slumber keeps  
The man who has piled  
On wife and child  
Death and death, as he shot them down  
With clang o' the bow.

CHOROS.

Wail—

AMPHITRUON.

Even so !

CHOROS.

—The fate of the children—

AMPHITRUON.

Triple woe !

CHOROS.

—Old man, the fate of thy son !

AMPHITRUON.

Hush, hush ! Have done !  
He is turning about !  
He is breaking out !  
Away ! I steal  
And my body conceal,  
Before he arouse,  
In the depths of the house.

CHOROS.

Courage ! The Night  
Maintains her right  
On the lids of thy son there, sealed from sight !

AMPHITRUON..

See, see ! To leave the light  
And, wretch that I am, bear one last ill,  
I do not avoid ; but if he kill  
Me his own father, and devise

Beyond the present miseries

A misery more ghastly still—

And to haunt him, over and above  
Those here who, as they used to love,  
Now hate him, what if he have with these  
My murder, the worst of Erinues ?

CHOROS.

Then was the time to die, for thee,  
When ready to wreak in the full degree  
Vengeance on those  
Thy consort's foes  
Who murdered her brothers : glad, life's  
close,  
With the Taphioi down,  
And sacked their town  
Clustered about with a wash of sea !

AMPHITRUON.

To flight—to flight !  
Away from the house, troop off, old men !  
Save yourselves out of the maniac's sight !  
He is rousing himself right up : and then,  
Murder on murder heaping anew,  
He will revel in blood your city through !

CHOROS.

O Zeus, why hast, with such unmeasured  
hate,  
Hated thy son, whelmed in this sea of woes ?

HERAKLES.

Ha,—  
In breath indeed I am—see things I ought—  
Æther, and earth, and these the sunbeam-  
shafts !  
But then—some billow and strange whirl of  
sense  
I have fallen into ! and breathings hot I  
breathe—  
Smoked upwards, not the steady work from  
lungs.  
See now ! Why bound,—at moorings like a  
ship,—  
About my young breast and young arm, to  
this  
Stone piece of carved work broke in half,  
do I



Sit, have my rest in corpses' neighbour-  
hood?

Strown on the ground are winged darts, and  
bow

Which played my brother-shieldman, held in  
hand,—

Guarded my side, and got my guardianship!  
I cannot have gone back to Haides—twice  
Begun Eurustheus' race I ended thenoc?

But I nor see the Sisupheian stone,  
Nor Plouton, nor Demeter's sceptred maid!  
I am struck witless sure! Where can I be?  
Ho there! what friend of mine is near or  
far—

Some one to cure me of bewilderment?  
For nought familiar do I recognize.

AMPHITRUON.

Old friends, shall I go close to these my  
woes?

CHOROS.

Ay, and let me too,—nor desert your ills!

HERAKLES.

Father, why weepest thou, and buriest up  
Thine eyes, aloof so from thy much-loved  
son?

AMPHITRUON.

O child!—for, faring badly, mine thou art!

HERAKLES.

Do I fare somehow ill, that tears should  
flow?

AMPHITRUON.

Ill,—would cause any god who bore, to  
groan!

HERAKLES.

That's boasting, truly! still, you state no hap.

AMPHITRUON.

For, thyself seest—if in thy wits again.

HERAKLES.

Heyday! How riddlingly that hint returns!

AMPHITRUON.

Well, I am trying—art thou sane and sound!

HERAKLES.

Say if thou lay'st aught strange to my life's  
charge!

AMPHITRUON.

If thou no more art Haides-drunk,—I tell!

HERAKLES.

I bring to mind no drunkenness of soul.

AMPHITRUON.

Shall I unbind my son, old men, or what?

HERAKLES.

And who was binder, tell!—not *that*, my  
deed!

AMPHITRUON.

Mind that much of misfortune—pass the rest!

HERAKLES.

Enough! from silence, I nor learn nor wish.

AMPHITRUON.

O Zeus, dost witness here throned Her's  
work?

HERAKLES.

But have I had to bear aught hostile thence?

AMPHITRUON.

Let be the goddess—bury thine own guilt!

HERAKLES.

Undone! What is the sorrow thou wilt say?

AMPHITRUON.

Look! See the ruins of thy children here!

HERAKLES.

Ah me! What sight do wretched I behold!

AMPHITRUON.

Unfair fight, son, this fight thou fastenedst  
On thine own children!

HERAKLES.

What fight? Who slew these?

AMPHITRUON.

Thou and thy bow, and who of gods was cause.

HERAKLES.  
How say'st? What did I? Ill-announcing  
sire!

AMPHITRUON.  
—Go mad! Thou askest a sad clearing up.

HERAKLES.  
And am I also murderer of my wife?

AMPHITRUON.  
All the work here was just one hand's work—  
thine!

HERAKLES.  
Ai ai—for groans encompass me—a cloud!

AMPHITRUON.  
For these deeds' sake do I begroan thy fate.

HERAKLES.  
Did I break up my house or dance it down?

AMPHITRUON.  
I know just one thing—all's a woe with thee.

HERAKLES.  
But where did the craze catch me? where  
destroy?

AMPHITRUON.  
When thou didst cleanse hands at the altar-  
flame.

HERAKLES.  
Ah me! why is it then I save my life—  
Proved murderer of my dearest ones, my boys?  
Shall not I rush to the rock-level's leap,  
Or, darting sword through breast and all,  
become  
My children's blood-avenger? or, this flesh  
Burning away with fire, so thrust away  
The infamy, which waits me there, from life?

Ah but,—a hindrance to my purposed death,  
Theseus arrives, my friend and kinsman, here!  
Eyes will be on me! my child-murder-plague  
In evidence before friends loved so much!  
O me, what shall I do? Where, taking wing  
Or gliding underground, shall I seek out  
A solitariness from misery?  
I will pull night upon my muffled head!

Let this wretch here contest him with his curse  
Of blood: I would pollute no innocents.

THESEUS.

I come,—with others who await beside  
Asopos' stream, the armed Athenian youth,—  
Bring thy son, old man, spear's fight-fellow-  
ship!

For a bruit reached the Erechtheidae's town  
That, having seized the sceptre of this realm,  
Lukos prepares you battle-violence.  
So, paying good back,—Herakles began  
Saving me down there,—I have come, old  
man,

If aught, of my hand or my friends', you want.  
What's here? Why all these corpses on the  
ground?

Am I perhaps behindhand—come too late  
For newer ill? Who killed these children  
now?

Whose wife was she, this woman I behold?  
Boys, at least, take no stand in reach of spear!  
Some other woe than war, I chance upon.

AMPHITRUON.

O thou, who sway'st the olive-bearing  
height!—

THESEUS.

Why hail'st thou me with woeful prelude thus?

AMPHITRUON.

Dire sufferings have we suffered from the gods.

THESEUS.

These boys,—who are they thou art weeping  
o'er?

AMPHITRUON.

He gave them birth, indeed, my hapless son!  
Begot, but killed them—dared their bloody  
death.

THESEUS.

Speak no such horror!

AMPHITRUON.

Would I might obey!

THESEUS.

O teller of dread tidings!

AMPHITRUON.  
Lost—flown away from life !

THESEUS.

What did he ?

AMPHITRUON.

Erring through a frenzy-fit,  
He did all, with the arrows dipt in dye  
Of hundred-headed Hudra.

THESEUS.

Here's strife !  
But who is this among the dead, old man ?

AMPHITRUON.

Mine, mine, this progeny—the labour-plagued,  
Who went with gods once to Phlegrua's plain,  
And in the giant-slaying war bore shield.

THESEUS.

Woe—woe ! What man was born mis-  
chanceful thus !

AMPHITRUON.

Thou couldst not know another mortal man  
Toil-weary, more outworn by wanderings.

THESEUS.

And why i' the peploi hides he his sad head ?

AMPHITRUON.

Not daring meet thine eye, thy friendliness  
And kinship,—nor that children's-blood  
about.

THESEUS.

But / come to who shared my woe with me !  
Uncover him !

AMPHITRUON.

O child, put from thine eyer  
The peplos, throw it off, show face to sun !  
Woe's weight well matched contends with  
tears in thee.

I supplicate thee, falling at thy cheek  
And knee and hand, and shedding this old tear !

O son, remit the savage lion's mood,  
Since to a bloody, an unholy race  
Art thou led forth, if thou be resolute  
To go on adding ill to ill, my child !

THESEUS.

Let me speak ! Thee, who sittest—seated  
woe—

I call upon to show thy friends thine eye !  
For there's no darkness has a cloud so black  
May hide thy misery thus absolute.  
Why, waving hand, dost sign me—murder's  
done ?

Lest a pollution strike me, from thy speech ?  
Nought care I to—with thee, at least—fare ill :  
For I had joy once ! *Then*,—soul rises to,—  
When thou didst save me from the dead to  
light !

Friends' gratitude that tastes old age, I  
loathe,  
And him who likes to share when things  
look fine,

But, sail along with friends in trouble—no !  
Arise, uncover thine unhappy head !  
Look on us ! Every man of the right race  
Bears what, at least, the gods inflict, nor  
shrinks.

HERAKLES.

Theseus, hast seen this match—my boys with  
me ?

THESEUS.

I heard of, now I see the ills thou sign'st.

HERAKLES.

Why then hast thou displayed my head to sun ?

THESEUS.

Why ? mortals bring no plague on aught  
divine.

HERAKLES.

Fly, O unhappy, this my impious plague !

THESEUS.

No plague of vengeance flits to friends from  
friends.

HERAKLES.

I praise thee. But I helped thee,—that is  
truth.

THESEUS.

And I, advantaged then, now pity thee.

HERAKLES.

—The pitiable,—my children's murderer !

THESEUS.

I mourn for thy sake, in this altered lot.

HERAKLES.

Hast thou found others in still greater woe ?

THESEUS.

Thou, from earth, touchest heaven, one huge  
distress !

HERAKLES.

Accordingly, I am prepared to die.

THESEUS.

Think'st thou thy threats at all import the  
gods ?

HERAKLES.

Gods please themselves : to gods I give their  
like.

THESEUS.

Shut thy mouth, lest big words bring bigger  
woe !

HERAKLES.

I am full fraught with ills—no stowing more !

THESEUS.

Thou wilt do—what, then ? Whither moody  
borne ?

HERAKLES.

Dying, I go below earth whence I came.

THESEUS.

Thou hast used words of—what man turns up  
first !

HERAKLES.

While thou, being outside sorrow, schoolest  
me.

THESEUS.

The much-enduring Herakles talks thus ?—

HERAKLES.

Not the so much-enduring : measure's past.

THESEUS.

—Mainstay to mortals, and their mighty  
friend ?

HERAKLES.

They nowise profit me : but Heré rules.

THESEUS.

Hellas forbids thou shouldst ineptly die.

HERAKLES.

But hear, then, how I strive by arguments  
Against thy teachings ! I will ope thee out  
My life—past, present—as unliveable.First, I was born of this man, who had slain  
His mother's aged sire, and, sullied so,  
Married Alkmené, she who gave me birth.Now, when the basis of a family  
Is not laid right, what follows needs must fall ;  
And Zeus, whoever Zeus is, formed me foe  
To Heré (take not thou offence, old man !  
Since father, in Zeus' stead, account I thee),  
And, while I was at suck yet, frightful snakes  
She introduced among my swaddling-  
clothes,—That bedfellow of Zeus !—to end me so.  
But when I gained the youthful garb of flesh,  
The labours I endured—what need to tell ?  
What lions ever, or three-bodied brutes,  
Tuphons or giants, or the four-legg'd swarms  
Of Kentaur-battle, did not I end out ?  
And that hound, headed all about with heads  
Which cropped up twice, the Hudra, having  
slain—I both went through a myriad other toils  
In full drove, and arrived among the dead  
To convoy, as Eurustheus bade, to light  
Haides' three-headed dog and doorkeeper.  
But then I,—wretch,—dared this last labour  
—see !Slew my sons, keystone-coped my house with  
ills.To such a strait I come ! nor my dear  
Thebès

Dare I inhabit : and, suppose I stay ?

Into what fane or festival of friends

Am I to go ? My curse scarce courts accost !

Shall I seek Argos ? How, if fled from home ?

But say—I hurry to some other town !

And there they eye me, as notorious now,—  
Kept by sharp tongue-taunts under lock and  
key—

“Is not this he, Zeus’ son, who murdered once  
Children and wife? Let him go rot else-  
where!”

To any man renowned as happy once,  
Reverses are a grave thing; but to whom,  
Evil is old acquaintance there’s no hurt  
To speak of, he and misery are twins.

To this degree of woe I think to come:  
For earth will utter voice forbidding me  
To touch the ground, and sea—to pierce the  
wave,

The river-springs—to drink, and I shall play  
Ixion’s part quite out, the chained and  
wheeled!

And best of all will be, if so I ’scape  
Sight from one man of those Hellenes,—once  
I lived among, felicitous and rich!

Why ought I, then, to live? What gain  
accrues

From good-for-nothing, wicked life I lead?  
In fine, let Zeus’ brave consort dance and  
sing,

Stamp foot, the Olympian Zeus’ own sandal-  
trick!

What she has willed, that brings her will to  
pass—

The foremost man of Hellas, pedestalled,  
Up, over, and down whirling! Who would  
pray

To such a goddess?—that, begrudging Zeus  
Because he loved a woman, ruins me—  
Lover of Hellas, faultless of the wrong!

#### THESEUS.

This strife is from no other of the gods  
Than Zeus’ wife; rightly apprehend, as well,  
Why, to no death—thou meditatest now—  
I would persuade thee, but to bear thy woes!  
None, none of mortals boasts a fate unmixed,  
Nor gods—if poets’ teaching be not false.  
Have not they joined in wedlock against law  
With one another? not, for sake of rule,  
Branded their sires in bondage? Yet they  
house

All the same, in Olumpos, carry heads

High there, notorious sinners though they be!  
What wilt thou say, then, if thou, mortal  
born,

Bearst outrageously fate gods endure?  
Leave Thebes, now, pay obedience to the  
law

And follow me to Pallas’ citadel!  
There, when thy hands are purified from  
stain,

House will I give thee, and goods shared  
alike.

What gifts I hold too from the citizens  
For saving twice seven children, when I slew  
The Knosian bull, these also give I thee.

And everywhere about the land are plots  
Apportioned me: these, named by thine own  
name,

Shall be henceforward styled by all men—  
thine,

Thy life long; but at death, when Haides-  
bound,

All Athens shall uphold the honoured one  
With sacrifices, and huge marble heaps;  
For that’s a fair crown our Hellenes grant  
Their people—glory, should they help the  
brave!

And I repay thee back this grace for thine  
That saved me, now that thou art torn of  
friends—

Since, when the gods give honour, friends  
may flit:

For, a god’s help suffices, if he please.

#### HERAKLES.

Ah me, these words are foreign to my woes!  
I neither fancy gods love lawless beds,  
Nor, that with chains they bind each other’s  
hands,

Have I judged worthy faith, at any time;  
Nor shall I be persuaded—one is born  
His fellows’ master!—since God stands in  
need—

If he is really God—of nought at all—  
These are the poets’ pitiful conceits!

But this it was I pondered, though wor-  
whelmed—

“Take heed lest thou be taxed with cowardice  
Somehow in leaving thus the light of day!”

For whoso cannot make a stand against  
These same misfortunes, neither could with-  
stand

A mere man's dart, oppose death, strength  
to strength.

Therefore unto thy city I will go  
And have the grace of thy ten thousand gifts.  
There! I have tasted of ten thousand toils  
As truly—never waived a single one,  
Nor let these runnings drop from out my  
eyes:

Nor ever thought it would have come to this—  
That I from out my eyes do drop tears.  
Well!

At present, as it seems, one bows to fate.  
So be it! Old man, thou seest my exile—  
Seest, too, me—my children's murderer!  
These give thou to the tomb, and deck the  
dead,

Doing them honour with thy tears—since me  
Law does not sanction. Propping on her  
breast,

And giving them into their mother's arms,  
—Re-institute the sad community  
Which I, unhappy, brought to nothingness—  
Not by my will! And, when earth hides  
the dead,

Live in this city!—sad, but, all the same,  
Force thy soul to bear woe along with me!  
O children, who begat and gave you birth—  
Your father—has destroyed you! nought you  
gain

By those fair deeds of mine I laid you up,  
As by main-force I laboured glory out  
To give you,—that fine gift of fatherhood!  
And thee, too, O my poor one, I destroyed,  
Not rendering like for like, as when thou  
kept'st

My marriage-bed inviolate,—those long  
Household-seclusions draining to the dregs  
Inside my house! O me, my wife, my boys—  
And—O myself, how, miserably moved,  
Am I disyoked now from both boys and wife!  
O bitter those delights of kisses now—  
And bitter these my weapons' fellowship!  
For I am doubtful whether shall I keep  
Or cast away these arrows which will clang  
Ever such words out, as they knock my side—

"Us—thou didst murder wife and children  
with  
Us—child-destroyers—still thou keepest  
thine!"

Ha, shall I bear them in my arms, then? What  
Say for excuse? Yet, naked of my darts  
Wherewith I did my bravest, Hellas through,  
Throwing myself beneath foot to my foes,  
Shall I die basely? No! relinquishment  
Of these must never be,—companions once,  
We sorrowfully must observe the pact.  
In just one thing, co-operate with me  
Thy sad friend, Theseus! Go along with him  
To Argos, and in concert get arranged  
The price my due for bringing there the  
Hound!

O land of Kadmos, Theban people all,  
Shear off your locks, lament one wide lament,  
Go to my children's grave and, in one strain,  
Lament the whole of us—my dead and me—  
Since all together are fordone and lost,  
Smitten by Heré's single stroke of fate!

THESEUS.

Rise up now from thy dead ones! Tears  
enough,  
Poor friend!

HERAKLES.

I cannot: for my limbs are fixed.

THESEUS.

Ay: even these strong men fate overthrows,

HERAKLES.

Woe!  
Heré might I grow a stone, nor mind woes  
more!

THESEUS.

Cease! Give thy hand to friendly helpmate  
now!

HERAKLES.

Nay, but I wipe off blood upon thy robes.

THESEUS.

Squeeze out and spare no drop! I take it all!

HERAKLES.

Of sons bereaved, I have thee like my son.

- You don't know? Once and only once, trod  
 Sang and touched lyre in person, in his  
 youth,  
 Our Sophokles,—youth, beauty, dedicate  
 To Thamuris who named the tragedy.  
 The voice of him was weak; face, limbs and  
 lyre,  
 These were worth saving: Thamuris stands  
 yet  
 Perfect as painting helps in such a case.  
 At least you know the story, for 'best friend'  
 Enriched his 'Rhesos' from the Blind Bard's  
 store;  
 So haste and see the work, and lay to heart  
 What it was struck me when I eyed the  
 piece!  
 Here stands a poet punished for rash strife  
 With Powers above his power, who see with  
 sight  
 Beyond his vision, sing accordingly  
 A song, which he must needs dare emulate.  
 Poet, remain the man nor ape the Muse!
- "But—lend me the psalterion! Nay, for  
 once—  
 Once let my hand fall where the other's lay!  
 I see it, just as I were Sophokles,  
 That sunrise and combustion of the east!"
- And then he sang—are these unlike the  
 words?  
 Thamuris marching,—lyre and song of  
 Thrace—  
 (Perpend the first, the worst of woes that were  
 Allotted 'lyre and song, ye poet-race!)
- Thamuris from Oichalia, feasted there  
 By kingly Eurutos of late, now bound  
 For Dorion at the uprise broad and bare
- Of Mount Pangaïos (ore with earth enwound  
 Glittered beneath his footstep)—marching  
 gay  
 And glad, Thessalia through, came, robed  
 and crowned,
- From triumph on to triumph, mid a' ray  
 Of early morn,—came, saw and knew the  
 spot  
 Assigned him for his worst of woes, that day.  
 Balura—happier while its name was not—  
 Met him, but nowise menaced; slipt aside,  
 Obsequious river to pursue its lot  
 Of solacing the valley—say, some wide  
 Thick busy human cluster, house and home,  
 Embanked for peace, or thrift that thanks  
 the tide.
- Thamuris, marching, laughed "Each flake  
 of foam"  
 (As 'sparklingly the ripple raced him by)  
 "Mocks slower clouds adrift in the blue  
 dome!"
- For Autumn was the season; red the sky  
 Held morn's conclusive signet of the sun  
 To break the mists up, bid them blaze and  
 die.
- Morn had the mastery as, one by one  
 All pomps produced themselves along the  
 tract  
 From earth's far ending to near heaven  
 begun.
- Was there a ravaged tree? it laughed com-  
 pact  
 With gold, a leaf-ball crisp, high-brandished  
 now,  
 Tempting to onset frost which late attacked.
- Was there a wizened shrub, a starveling  
 bough,  
 A fleecy thistle filched from by the wind,  
 A weed, Pan's trampling hoof would dis-  
 allow?
- Each, with a glory and a rapture twined!  
 About it, joined the rush of air and light  
 And force; the world was of one joyous  
 mind.

Say not the birds flew ! they forebore their  
right—

Swam, revelling onward in the roll of things.  
Say not the beasts' mirth bounded ! that was  
flight—

How could the creatures leap, no lift of wings ?  
Such earth's community of purpose, such  
The ease of earth's fulfilled imaginings,—

So did the near and far appear to touch  
I' the moment's transport,—that an inter-  
change

Of function, far with near, seemed scarce too  
much ;

And had the rooted plant aspired to range  
With the snake's license, while the insect  
yearned

To glow fixed as the flower, it were not  
strange—

No more than if the fluttery tree-top turned  
To actual music, sang itself aloft ;  
Or if the wind, impassioned chantress, earned

The right to soar embodied in some soft  
Fine form all fit for cloud-companionship,  
And, blissful, once touch beauty chased so oft.

Thamuris, marching, let no fancy slip  
Born of the fiery transport ; lyre and song  
Were his, to smite with hand and launch  
from lip—

Peerless recorded, since the list grew long  
Of poets (saith Homeros) free to stand  
Pedestalled mid the Muses' temple-throng,

A statued service, laurelled, lyre in hand,  
(Ay, for we see them)—Thamuris of Thrace  
Predominating foremost of the band.

Therefore the morn-ray that enriched his  
face,

If it gave lumbent chill, took flame again  
From flash of pride ; he saw, he knew the  
place.

What wind arrived with all the rhythms from  
plain,

Hill, dale, and that rough wildwood inter-  
sprersed ?

Compounding these to one consummate strain,

It reached him, music ; but his own outburst  
Of victory concluded the account,  
And that grew song which was mere music erst.

"Be my Parnassos, thou Pangaian mount !  
And turn thee, river, nameless hitherto !  
Famed shalt thou vie with famed Pieria's fount !

"Here I await the end of this ado :  
Which wins—Earth's poet or the Heavenly  
Muse."

But song broke up in laughter. "Tell the rest  
Who may ! I have not spurned the common  
life,

Nor vaunted mine a lyre to match the Muse  
Who sings for gods, not men ! Accordingly,  
I shall not decorate her vestibule—

Mute marble, blind the eyes and quenched  
the brain,

Loose in the hand a bright, a broken lyre !  
—Not Thamuris but Aristophanes !

"There ! I have sung content back to myself,  
And started subject for a play beside.  
My next performance shall content you both.  
Did 'Prelude-Battle' maul 'best friend' too  
much ?

Then 'Main-Fight' be my next song, fairness'  
self !

Its subject—Contest for the Tragic Crown.  
Ay, you shall hear none else but Aischulos  
Lay down the law of Tragedy, and prove

'Best friend' a stray-away,—no praise denied  
His manifold deservings, never fear—  
Nor word more of the old fun ! Death defends.  
Sound admonition has its due effect.

Oh, you have uttered weighty words, believe !  
Such as shall bear abundant fruit, next year,  
In judgment, regular, legitimate.

Let Bacchos' self preside in person ! Ay—  
For there's a buzz about these 'Bacchanals'



Rumour attributes to your great and dead  
For final effort : just the prodigy  
Great dead men leave, to lay survivors low !  
—Until we make acquaintance with our fate  
And find, fate's worst done, we, the same,  
survive

Perchance to honour more the patron-god,  
Fittler inaugurate a festal year.  
Now that the cloud has broken, sky laughs  
blue,

Earth blossoms youthfully. Athenai breathes.  
After a twenty-six years' wintry blank  
Struck from her life,—war-madness, one long  
swoon,

She wakes up : Arginousai bids good cheer.  
We have disposed of Kallikratidas ;  
Once more will Sparté sue for terms,—who  
knows ?

Cede Dekeleia, as the rumour runs :  
Terms which Athenai, of right mind again,  
Accepts—she can no other. Peace declared,  
Have my long labours borne their fruit or no ?  
Grinned coarse buffoonery so oft in vain ?  
Enough—it simply saved you. Saved ones,  
praise

Theoria's beauty and Opora's breadth !  
Nor, when Peace realizes promised bliss,  
Forget the Bald Bard, Envy ! but go burst  
*As the cup goes round and the cates abound,  
Collops of hare with roast spinks<sup>1</sup> rare !*  
Confess my pipings, dancings, posings served  
A purpose : guttlings, guzzlings, had their use !  
Say whether light Muse, Rosy-finger-tips,  
Or 'best friend's' heavy-hand, Melpomené,  
Touched lyre to purpose, played Amphion's  
part,  
And built Athenai to the skies once more !  
Farewell, brave couple ! Next year, welcome  
me !"

No doubt, in what he said that night, sincere !  
One story he referred to, false or fact,  
Was not without adaptability.  
They do say—*Lais* the Corinthian once  
Chancing to see Euripides (who paced  
Composing in a garden, tablet-book

<sup>1</sup> *Chaffinches*

In left hand, with appended stulos prompt)  
"Answer me," she began, "O Poet,—this !  
What didst intend by writing in thy play  
*Go hang, thou filthy doer !*" Struck on heap,  
Euripides, at the audacious speech—  
"Well now," quoth he, "thyself art just the one  
I should imagine fit for deeds of filth !"  
She laughingly retorted his own line  
"What's filth,—unless who does it, thinks it  
so ?"

So might he doubtless think. "Farewell,"  
said we.

And he was gone, lost in the morning-grey,  
Rose-streaked and gold to eastward. Did  
we dream ?

Could the poor twelve-hours hold this argu-  
ment

We render durable from fugitive,  
As duly at each sunset's droop of sail,  
Delay of oar, submission to sea-might,  
I still remember, you as duly dint  
Remembrance, with the punctual rapid style,  
Into—what calm cold page !

Thus soul escapes  
From eloquence made captive : thus mere  
words

—Ah, would the lifeless body stay ! But no :  
Change upon change till,—who may recognize  
What did soul service, in the dusty heap ?  
What energy of Aristophanes  
Inflames the wreck Balaustion saves to show ?  
Ashes be evidence how fire—with smoke—  
All night went lamping on ! But morn must  
rise.

The poet—I shall say—burned up and, blank  
Smouldered this ash, now white and cold  
enough.

Nay, Euthukles ! for best, though mine it be,  
Comes yet. Write on, write ever, wrong no  
word !

Add, first,—he gone, if jollity went too,  
Some of the graver mood, which mixed and  
marred,

Departed likewise. Sight of narrow scope  
Has this meek consolation : neither ills  
We dread, nor joys we dare anticipate,  
Perform to promise. Each soul sows a seed—  
Euripides and Aristophanes ;  
Seed bears crop, scarce within our little lives ;  
But germinates,—perhaps enough to judge,—  
Next year ?

Whereas, next year brought harvest time !  
For, next year came, and went not, but is now,  
Still now, while you and I are bound for  
Rhodes  
That's all but reached—and harvest has it  
brought,  
Dire as the homicidal dragon-crop.  
Sophokles had dismissal ere it dawned,  
Happy as ever ; though men mournfully  
Plausible,—when only soul could triumph now,  
And Iophon produced his father's play,—  
Crowned the consummate song where Oidipous  
Dared the descent mid earthquake-thundering,  
And hardly Theseus' hands availed to guard  
Eyes from the horror, as their grove disgorged  
Its dread ones, while each daughter sank to  
ground.

Then Aristophanes, on heel of that,  
Triumphant also, followed with his "Frogs :"  
Produced at next Lenaia, —three months  
since,—  
The promised Main-Fight, loyal, license-free !  
As if the poet, primed with Thasian juice,  
(Himself swore — wine that conquers every  
kind  
For long abiding in the head) could fix  
Thenceforward any object in its truth,  
Through eyeballs bathed by mere Castalian  
dew,  
Nor miss the borrowed medium,—vinous drop  
That colours all to the right crimson pitch  
When mirth grows mockery, censure takes  
the tinge  
Of malice !

All was Aristophanes :  
There blazed the glory, there shot black the  
shame.

Ay, Bacchos did stand forth, the Tragic God  
In person ! and when duly dragged through  
mire,—  
Having lied, filched, played fool, proved  
coward, flung  
The boys their dose of fit indecency,  
And finally got trounced to heart's content,  
At his own feast, in his own theatre  
(—Oh never fear ! 'Twas consecrated sport,  
Exact tradition, warranted no whit  
Offensive to instructed taste,—indeed,  
Essential to Athenai's liberty,  
Could the poor stranger understand !) why,  
then—  
He was pronounced the rarely-qualified  
To rate the work, adjust the claims to  
worth,  
Of Aischulos (of whom, in other mood,  
This same appreciative poet pleased  
To say "He's all one stiff and gluey piece  
Of back of swine's neck !")—and of Chatterbox  
Who, "twisting words like wool," usurped  
his seat  
In Plouton's realm : "the arch-rogue, liar,  
scamp  
That lives by snatching-up of altar-orts,"  
—Who failed to recognize Euripides ?

Then came a contest for supremacy—  
Crammed full of genius, wit and fun and freak.  
No spice of undue spite to spoil the dish  
Of all sorts,—for the Mystics matched the  
Frogs

In poetry, no Siren sang so sweet !—  
Till, pressed into the service (how dispense  
With Phaps-Elaphion and free foot-display ?)  
The Muse of dead Euripides danced frank,  
Rattled her bits of tile, made all too plain  
How baby-work like "Herakles" had birth !  
Last, Bacchos,—candidly disclaiming brains  
Able to follow finer argument,—  
Confessed himself much moved by three  
main facts :

First,—if you stick a "Lost his flask of oil"  
At pause of period, you perplex the sense—  
Were it the Elegy for Marathon !  
Next, if you weigh two verses, "car"—the  
word,

Will outweigh "club"—the word, in each  
packed line!

And—last, worst fact of all!—in rivalry  
The younger poet dared to improvise

Laudation less distinct of—Triphales?

(Nay, that served when ourself abused the  
youth!)

Phcidippides? (nor that's appropriate now!)

Then, Alkibiades, our city's hope

Since times change and we, Comies, should  
change too!

These three main facts, well weighed, drew  
judgment down,

Conclusively assigned the wretch his fate—

"Fate due" admonished the sage Mysis  
choir,

"To sitting, prate-apace, with Sokrates,  
Neglecting music and each tragic aid!"

—All wound-up by a wish "We soon may  
cease

From certain griefs, and warfare, worst of  
them!"

—Since, deaf to Comedy's persistent voice,  
War still raged, still was like to rage. In vain

Had Sparté cried once more "But grant us  
Peace

We give you Dekleia back!" Too shrewd  
Was Kleophon to let escape, forsooth,

The enemy—at final gasp, besides

So, Aristophanes obtained the prize,  
And so Athenai felt she had a friend

Far better than her "best friend," lost last  
year;

And so, such fame had "Frogs" that, when  
came round

This present year, those Frogs croaked gay  
again

At the great Feast, Elaphebolion-month.  
Only there happened Aigisporanai!

And, in the midst of the frog-merriment,  
Plump o' the sudden, pounces stein King

On the light-hearted people of the marsh!  
Spartan Lusandros swooped precipitate,

Stag-hunting time.

Ended Athenai, rowed her sacred bay

With oars which brought a hundred triremes  
back

Captive!

And first word of the conqueror  
Was "Down with those Long Walls, Peiraios'  
pride!

Destroy, yourselves, your bulwarks! Peace  
needs none!

And "We obey" they shuddered in their  
dream.

But, at next quick imposture of decree—

"No longer democratic government!  
Henceforth such oligarchy as ourselves

I please to appoint you?"—then the horror  
stung

Dreamers awake; they started up a-stare  
At the half-helmet captain and his crew

—Spartans, "men used to let their hair grow  
long,

To fast, be dirty, and just—Sokratizo?"

Whose word was "Trample on Themistokles!"

So, as the way is with much misery,  
The heads swam, hands refused their office,

Sunk as they stood in stupor. "Wreck the  
Walls?

Ruin Peiraios?—with our Pallas armed  
For interference?—Herakles apprised,

And Theseus hasting? Lay the Long Walls  
low?"

Three days they stood, started, stonier than  
their walls,

Whereupon, sleep who might, Lusandros  
awoke

Saw the prostration of his enemy,  
Utter and absolute beyond belief,

Past hope of hatred even. I surmise  
He also probably saw fade in fume

Certain fears, bred of Bakis<sup>2</sup>-prophecy,  
Nor apprehending any more that gods

Bakis was a foolish soothsayer, an Athenian  
"red-faced Nixon."

And heroes,—fire, must glow forth, guard  
the ground

Where prone, by sober day-dawn, corpse-like  
lay

Powerless Athenai, late predominant

Lady of Hellas,—Sparté's slave-prize now!

Where should a menace lurk in those slack  
limbs?

What was to move his circumspection? Why  
Demolish just Peizaia's?

"Stay!" bade he:

"Already promise-breakers? True to type;  
Athenians! past and present and to come—  
The fickle and the false! No stone dislodged,  
No implement applied, yet three days' grace  
Expire!—Forbearance is no longer-lived.

By breaking promise, terms of peace you  
break—

Too gently framed for falsehood, fickleness!  
All must be reconsidered—yours the fault!"

Wherewith, he called a council of allies.  
Pent-up resentment used its privilege, —  
Outburst at ending: this the summed result.

"Because we would avenge no transient  
wrong

But an eternity of insolence,

Aggression,—folly, no disasters mend,

Pride, no reverses teach humility,—

Because too plainly were all punishment,

Such as comports with less obdurate crime,

Evadable by falsehood, fickleness—

Experience proves the true Athenian type;—

Therefore, 'tis need we dig deep down into

The foot of evil; lop nor bole nor branch.

Look up, look round and see, on every side,

What nurtured the rank tree to noisome

fruit!

We who live hutted (so they laugh) not  
housed,

Build barns for temples, prize mud-monu-  
ments,

Nor show the sneering stranger aught but—  
men,—

Spartans take insult of Athenians just

Because they loathe Akropolis to mount,

And Propylaea to make entry by;

Through a mad maze of marble arrogance

Such as you see—such as let none see more!

Abolish the detested luxury!

Leave not one stone upon another, raze

Athenai to the rock! Let hill and plain

Become a waste, a grassy pasture-ground

Where sheep may wander, grazing goats  
depend!

From shapeless crags once columns! so at  
last

Shall peace inhabit there, and peace enough."

Whereon, a shout approved "Such peace  
bestow!"

Then did a Man of Phokis rise—O heart!

Rise—when no bolt of Zeus disparted sky,

No omen-bird from Pallas scared the crew,

Rise—when mere human argument could  
stem

No foam-fringe of the passion surging fierce,

Baffle no wrath-wave that o'er barrier broke—

It was the Man of Phokis rose and flung

A flower in the way of that fierce fool's  
advance,

Which—stop for?—nay, had stamped down  
sword's assault!

Could it be He stayed Sparté with the snatch

"Daughter of Agamemnon, late my liege,

Elektra, palaced once, a visitant

To thy poor rustic dwelling, now I come?"

Ay, facing fury of revenge, and lust

Of hate, and malice moaning to appease

Hunger on prey presumptuous, prostrate

now—

Full in the hideous faces—last resource,

You flung that choric flower, my Bathukles!

And see, as through some pinhole, should  
the wind

Wedgingly pierce but once, in with a rush

Hurries the whole wild weather, rends to  
rag

The weak sail stretched against the outside  
storm—

So did the power of that triumphant play



With breast bethumped, as Tragic lyre And press to other earth, new heaven, by  
 prefers, sea  
 But Comedy shall sound the flute, and That somehow ever prompts to 'scape despair.  
 . crow  
 At kordax-end—the hearty slapping-dance ! Help rose to heart's wish ; at the harbour-  
 Collect those flute-girls—trash who flattered side,  
 ear  
 The old grey mariner did reverence  
 With whistlings and fed eye with caper-cuts To who had saved his ship, still weather-  
 While we Lakonians supped black broth or tight  
 crunched As when with prow gay-garlanded she praised  
 Sea-urchin, conchs and all, unpricked—coarse The hospitable port and pushed to sea.  
 brutes ! “Convoy Balaustion back to Rhodes, for  
 Command they lead off step, time steady sake  
 stroke Of her and her Euripides !” laughed he.  
 To spade and pickaxe, till demolished lie  
 Athenai's pride in powder !”

Done that day—  
 That sixteenth famed day of Munuchion-  
 month !  
 The day when Hellas fought at Salamis,  
 The very day Euripides was born,  
 Those flute-girls—Phaps-Elaphion at their  
 head—  
 Did blow their best, did dance their worst,  
 the while  
 Sparté pulled down the walls, wrecked wide  
 the works,  
 Laid low each merest molehill of defence.  
 And so the Power, Athenai, passed away !

We would not see its passing. Ere I knew  
 The issue of their counsels,—crouching low  
 And shrouded by my peplos,—I conceived,  
 Despite the shut eyes, the stopped ears,—by  
 count

Only of heart-beats, telling the slow time,— I sent the tablets, the psalterion, so  
 Athenai's doom was signed and signified Rewarded Sicily ; the tyrant there  
 In that assembly,—ay, but knew there Bestowed them worthily in Phoibos' shrine.  
 watched A gold-graved writing tells—“I also loved  
 One who would dare and do, nor bate at all The poet, Free Athenai cheaply prized—  
 The stranger's licensed duty,—speak the King Dionusios,—Archelaos-like !”

Allowed the Man from Phokis ! Nought And see if young Philemon,—sure one day  
 remained To do good service and be loved himself,—  
 But urge departure, flee the sights and If he too have not made a votive verse !  
 sounds, “Grant, in good sooth, our great dead, all  
 Hideous exultings, wailings worth contempt, the same,

Retain their sense, as certain wise men say,	And yonder dares the citied ridge of Rhodes,
I'd hang myself—to see Euripides!"	Its headlong plunge from sky to sea, dis-
Hands off, Philemon! nowise hang thyself,	on parts
But pen the prime plays, labour the right	North bay from south,—each guarded calm,
life,	that guest
And die at good old age as grand men	May enter gladly, blow what wind there
use,—	will,—
Keeping thee, with that great thought, warm	Boiled round with breakers, to no other
the while,—	'cry!
That he does live, Philemon! Ay, most	All in one chorus,—what the master-word
sure!	They take up?—hark! "There are no gods,
"He lives!" hark,—waves say, winds sing	no gods!
out the same,	Glory to God—who saves Euripides!"

THE POETICAL WORKS OF  
ROBERT BROWNING



## ROBERT BROWNING

OXFORD INDIA PAPER EDITION OF COMPLETE POETICAL WORKS. With Portraits. In 1 Volume.

POCKET EDITION. In 8 volumes, on India Paper, with Portraits. (*Vols. IV and V out of print.*)

UNIFORM EDITION. In 17 volumes, With Portraits and illustrations. (*Vols. VII, VIII and XVII out of print.*)

SELECTIONS. Small F'cap 8vo.

## ELIZABETH B. BROWNING

UNIFORM EDITION. In 6 volumes. With Portraits and Illustrations. (*Vols. I, II, IV out of print.*)

NEW POEMS BY ROBERT BROWNING AND ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING. Edited by SIR FREDERIC G. KENYON. With 2 Portraits. (This vol. being the same size and style as the 17-vol. Edition of Robert Browning's works and the 6-vol. Edition of Mrs. Browning's Poems, may be added for completeness to either of those Editions).

THE BROWNING LOVE LETTERS. Letters of Robert Browning and Elizabeth Barratt Browning 1845-1846. These letters are all that ever passed between the poets for after their marriage they were never separated. With Portraits and Facsimiles.

NEW LETTERS OF ROBERT BROWNING. Edited with Introduction and Notes by WILLIAM CLYDE DE VANE and KENNETH LESLIE KNICKERBOCKER.





# CONTENTS OF VOLUME II.

## THE RING AND THE BOOK—

	PAGE
I. THE RING AND THE BOOK.	1
II. HALF-ROME . . . .	21
III. THE OTHER HALF-ROME .	41
IV. TERTIUM QUID . . . .	64
V. COUNT GUIDO FRANCES-	
CHINI . . . . .	87
VI. GIUSEPPE CAPONSACCHI .	116
VII. POMPILIA . . . . .	146
VIII. DOMINUS HYACINTHUS DE	
ARCHANGELIS . . . .	173
IX. JURIS DOCTOR JOHANNES-	
BAPTISTA BOTTINIUS .	195
X. THE POPE . . . . .	216
XI. GUIDO. . . . .	245
XII. THE BOOK AND THE	
RING . . . . .	279

## PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWAN-

GAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY 292

FIFINE AT THE FAIR. 320

RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP  
COUNTRY, OR TURF AND  
TOWERS . . . . . 371

## PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER, ET CETERA—

	PAGE
PROLOGUE . . . . .	469
OF PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE	
WORKED IN DISTEMPER. .	469
AT THE "MERMAID" . . . .	477
HOUSE . . . . .	479
SHOP . . . . .	479
PISGAH-SIGHTS. I. . . . .	481
" II. . . . .	482
FEARS AND SCRUPLES . . . .	482
NATURAL MAGIC . . . . .	483
MAGICAL NATURE . . . . .	484
BIFURCATION . . . . .	484
NUMPHOLEPTOS . . . . .	484
APPEARANCES . . . . .	487
ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER . . . .	487
HERVÉ RIEL . . . . .	488
A FORGIVENESS . . . . .	491
CENCIAJA . . . . .	496
FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE	
PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL . .	500
EPILOGUE . . . . .	507

THE AGAMEMNON OF  
ÆSCHYLUS . . . . . 511

THE INN ALBUM .

426 | LA SAISIAZ

542

	PAGE		PAGE
THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC.	556	FERISHTAH'S FANCIES— <i>Continued.</i>	
DRAMATIC IDYLS: FIRST SERIES—		SHAH ABBAS . . . . .	659
MARTIN REIPH . . . . .	579	THE FAMILY . . . . .	661
PHEIDIPPIDES . . . . .	582	THE SUN . . . . .	662
HALBERT AND HOB . . . . .	585	MIHRAB SHAH . . . . .	665
IVAN IVANOVITCH . . . . .	587	A CAMEL-DRIVER . . . . .	667
TRAY . . . . .	596	TWO CAMELS . . . . .	669
NED BRATTS . . . . .	596	CHERRIES . . . . .	671
DRAMATIC IDYLS: SECOND SERIES—		PLOT-CULTURE . . . . .	673
ECHETLOS . . . . .	604	A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR . . . . .	674
CLIVE . . . . .	605	A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE- EATING . . . . .	676
MULÉYKEH . . . . .	610	EPILOGUE . . . . .	683
PIETRO OF ABANO . . . . .	613	PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY—	
DOCTOR — . . . . .	623	APOLLO AND THE FATES: A PRO- LOGUE . . . . .	684
PAN AND LUNA . . . . .	628	WITH BERNARD DE MANDEVILLE . . . . .	690
IOCOSERIA—		WITH DANIEL BARTOLI . . . . .	695
"WANTING IS—WHAT?" . . . . .	630	WITH CHRISTOPHER SMART . . . . .	700
DONALD . . . . .	630	WITH GEORGE HUBB DODINGTON . . . . .	704
SOLOMON AND BALKIS . . . . .	633	WITH FRANCIS FURINI . . . . .	709
CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI . . . . .	635	WITH GERARD DE LAIRESSE . . . . .	718
MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT AND FUSELI . . . . .	637	WITH CHARLES AVISON . . . . .	724
ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE . . . . .	637	FUST AND HIS FRIENDS: AN EPILOGUE . . . . .	731
IXION . . . . .	637	ASOLANDO: FANCIES AND FACTS—	
JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH . . . . .	640	PROLOGUE . . . . .	743
NEVER THE TIME AND THE PLACE . . . . .	655	ROSNY . . . . .	744
PAMBO . . . . .	655	DUBIETY . . . . .	744
FERISHTAH'S FANCIES—		NOW . . . . .	745
PROLOGUE . . . . .	657	HUMILITY . . . . .	745
THE EAGLE . . . . .	657	POETICS . . . . .	745
THE MELON-SELLER . . . . .	658		

# CONTENTS

vii

## ASOLANDO—Continued.

	PAGE
SUMMUM BONUM . . . . .	745
A PEARL, A GIRL . . . . .	745
SPECULATIVE . . . . .	746
WHITE WITCHCRAFT . . . . .	746
BAD DREAMS. I. . . . .	746
"    II. . . . .	746
"    III. . . . .	747
"    IV. . . . .	748
INAPPREHENSIVENESS . . . . .	748
WHICH? . . . . .	749
THE CARDINAL AND THE DOG . . . . .	750
THE POPE AND THE NET . . . . .	750
THE BEAN-FEAST . . . . .	751
MUCKLE-MOUTH MEG . . . . .	752
ARCADES AMBO . . . . .	753
THE LADY AND THE PAINTER . . . . .	753
PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE . . . . .	753
BEATRICE SIGNORINI . . . . .	757
FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT . . . . .	761
"IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS EST—" . . . . .	764
DEVELOPMENT . . . . .	766
REPHAN . . . . .	768
REVERIE . . . . .	770
EPILOGUE . . . . .	773

## NEW POEMS, Edited by Sir F. G.

### KENYON (1914)—

THE FIRST-BORN OF EGYPT (1826)	774
THE DANCE OF DEATH (1826)	775
SONNET (1834)	776
A FOREST THOUGHT (1837)	776
THE "MOSES" OF MICHAEL ANGELO (1850)	777
BEN KARSHOOK'S WISDOM (1854)	777
ON BEING DEFIED TO EXPRESS IN A HEXAMETER: "YOU OUGHT TO SIT ON THE SAFETY-VALVE" (1866)	778

## NEW POEMS—Continued.

	PAGE
LINES TO THE MEMORY OF HIS PARENTS (1866)	778
A ROUND ROBIN (1869)	778
HELEN'S TOWER (1870)	779
"OH LOVE, LOVE" (1879)	779
VERSES FROM "THE HOUR WILL COME" (1879)	779
TRANSLATION FROM PINDAR'S SEVENTH OLYMPIAN (1883)	779
SONNET TO RAWDON BROWN (1883)	
GOLDONI (1883)	780
TRANSLATION FROM HORACE "ON SINGERS" (1883)	780
GEROUSIOS OINOS (1883)	780
THE FOUNDER OF THE FEAST (TO ARTHUR CHAPPELL) (1884)	781
THE NAMES (TO SHAKESPEARE) (1884)	781
WHY I AM A LIBERAL (1885)	781
LINES FOR THE TOMB OF LEVI LINCOLN THAXTER (1885)	782
EPPS (1886)	782
LINES ON FELIX MOSCHELES' PAINTING "THE ISLE'S ENCHANTRESS" (1889)	783
ÆSCHYLUS' SOLILOQUY: AN UNFINISHED DRAFT OF A POEM	783
JOAN OF ARC AND THE KINGFISHER	785
A SCENE IN THE BUILDING OF THE INQUISITORS AT ANTWERP	785
REPLY TO A TELEGRAPHIC GREETING	785
REPLIES TO CHALLENGES TO RHYME . . . . .	785
DIALOGUE BETWEEN FATHER AND DAUGHTER . . . . .	786
THE DOGMA TRIUMPHANT: EPIGRAM OF THE VOLUNTARY IMPRISONMENT ON THE POPE AS PROVING HIS INFALLIBILITY	786

	PAGE
A CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS	787
INDEX TO FIRST LINES OF SHORTER POEMS AND SONGS	791
GENERAL INDEX	795
PORTRAIT OF ROBERT BROWNING (1881)	<i>Frontispiece</i>

# THE RING AND THE BOOK.

1868-9.

["The Ring and the Book" appeared at the end of 1868, after a four years' silence since the publication of "Dramatis Personæ." It was issued in four volumes, which were published singly, the first in November 1868, the others between that date and February 1869. The composition of it had occupied the poet for more than three years since the "memorable day" in June 1862, when he picked up, at a stall in the Piazza San Lorenzo in Florence, the "square old yellow book" with the "crumpled vellum covers," containing the record of the murder, by Count Guido Franceschini, of Pompilia his wife and her reputed parents, Pietro and Violante Comparini, in January 1698. The story of the genesis of the poem is told in the first book, which also gives an outline of the whole work. Putting aside the first and last books, which serve as prologue and epilogue, it consists of ten dramatic monologues, in each of which the story of the murder, and of the events and motives which led up to it, is told from a different point of view. Books II. and III. reproduce the gossip of Rome, first on the side favourable to Guido, and next on that hostile to him—in both cases incomplete and inaccurate, but serving to introduce the reader to the general facts of the case. Book IV. gives the conversation of aristocratic society, indifferent, cynical, excusing and condemning both parties. The next three books rise to a higher level, alike of poetry and dramatic interest. The principals are brought upon the stage. In Book V., Count Guido makes his defence before his judges; in Book VI., Giuseppe Caponsacchi, the priest whom Guido charges with being Pompilia's lover, shrivels the accuser's sophistries with his indignant eloquence; in Book VII., Pompilia, dying in the hospital, tells her story in all simplicity and forgivingness. Books VIII. and IX. are devoted to the speeches of counsel on either side, whose sole object is to display their own ingenuity, without much regard to what their clients may have said; and, being full of law Latin and classical allusions, may be scarcely intelligible to some readers, and can be omitted without much loss. Book X., on the other hand, is the fine soliloquy of the Pope, to whom, in the last resort, Guido makes appeal; while Book XI. shows Guido in his prison, the night before his execution, defiantly haranguing the two ecclesiastics who have been sent to administer to him the consolations of religion.]

Throughout the poem Browning adheres closely to the facts as narrated in the book which first suggested the theme, and in a contemporary pamphlet, which he obtained shortly afterwards in London, giving a consecutive narrative of the murder and the execution. The meaning of the title is explained in the first lines of the poem.]

## THE RING AND THE BOOK.

### I.—THE RING AND THE BOOK.

Do you see this Ring?

'Tis Rome-work, made to match  
By Castellani's imitative craft)  
Etrurian circlets found, some happy morn;  
After a dropping April; found alive  
Spark-like 'mid unearthed slope-side figtree-  
roots

That roof old tombs at Chiusi: soft, you see,

VOL. II.

Yet crisp as jewel-cutting. There's one trick,  
(Craftsmen instruct me) one approved device  
And but one, fits such slivers of pure gold  
As this was,—such mere oozings from the mine,  
Virgin as oval tawny pendent tear

At beehive-edge when ripened combs o'er-  
flow,—

To bear the file's tooth and the hammer's tap:  
Since hammer needs must widen out the  
round,

And file emboss it fine with lily-flowers,  
Ere the stuff grow a ring-thing right to wear.

A 2



## THE RING AND THE BOOK

That trick is, the artificer melts up wax  
With honey, so to speak; he mingles gold  
With gold's alloy, and, duly tempering both, of  
Effects a manageable mass, then works:  
But his work ended, once the thing a ring;  
Oh, there's reprimostation! <sup>1</sup> Just a spirt  
O' the proper fiery acid o'er its face,  
And forth the alloy unfastened flies in fume; <sup>20</sup>  
While, self-sufficient now, the shape remains,  
The rondure, brave, the lilled loveliness,  
Gold as it was, is, shall be evermore:  
Prime nature with an added artistry—  
No parat lost, and you have gained a ring. <sup>30</sup>  
What of it? 'Tis a figure, a symbol, say;  
A thing's sign: now for the thing signified.

Do you see this square old yellow Book, I toss  
I' the air, and catch again, and twirl about  
By the crumpled vellum covers,—pure crude  
fact 35

Secreted from man's life when hearts beat hard,  
And brains, high-blooded, ticked two cen-  
turies since?

Examine it yourselves! I found this book,  
Gave a *lira* for it, eightpence English just,  
(Mark the predestination!) when a Hand, <sup>40</sup>  
Always above my shoulder, pushed me once,  
One day still fierce 'mid many a day struck  
calm,

Across a Square in Florence, crammed with  
booths,

Buzzing and blaze, noontide and market-time,  
Toward Baccio's marble, <sup>2</sup>—ay, the basement-  
ledge 45

O' the pedestal where sits and menaces  
John of the Black Bands with the upright spear,  
'Twixt palace and church,—Riccardi where  
they lived,

His race, and San Lorenzo where they lie.  
This book,—precisely on that palace-step <sup>50</sup>  
Which, meant for lounging knaves o' the  
Medici,

<sup>1</sup> *Reprimostation*: restoration to its earlier  
nature.

<sup>2</sup> *Baccio's marble*: the statue of Giovanni  
delle Bande Nere (father of Cosimo de' Medici),  
by Baccio Bandinelli, in the Piazza San Lorenzo,  
between the Palazzo Riccardi (the palace of the  
Medici) and the church of San Lorenzo.

Now serves re-venders to display their ware,—  
'Mongst odds and ends of ravage, picture-  
frames 55

White through the worn gilt, mirror-sconces  
chipped,

Bronze angel-heads once knobs attached to  
chests, 60

(Handled when ancient dames chose forth  
brocade)

Modern chalk drawings, studies from the nude,  
Samples of stone, jet, breccia, porphyry  
Polished and rough, sundry amazing busts  
In baked earth, (broken, Providence be  
praised!) 65

A wreck of tapestry, proudly-purposed web  
When reds and blues were indeed red and blue,  
Now offered as a mat to save bare feet  
(Since carpets constitute a cruel cost)  
Treading the chill scagliola <sup>3</sup> bedward: then <sup>70</sup>  
A pile of brown-etched prints, two *crazie* <sup>4</sup> each,  
Stopped by a conch a-top from fluttering forth  
—Sowing the Square with works of one and  
the same

Master, the imaginative Siennese <sup>5</sup>  
Great in the scenic backgrounds—(name and  
fame 75)

None of you know, nor does he fare the worse: <sup>70</sup>  
From these . . . Oh, with a Lionard going  
cheap

If it should prove, as promised, that Joconde <sup>6</sup>  
Whereof a copy contents the Louvre!—these  
I picked this book from. Five compeers in  
flank 80

Stood left and right of it as tempting more—  
A dogseared Spicilegium, the fond tale  
O' the Frail One of the Flower, <sup>7</sup> by young  
Dumas,

Vulgarized Horace for the use of schools,  
The Life, Death, Miracles of Saint Somebody,  
Saint Somebody Else, his Miracles, Death  
and Life, — 85

<sup>3</sup> *Scagliola*: marble or stone flooring.

<sup>4</sup> *Two crazie*: about 12d.

<sup>5</sup> *The imaginative Siennese*: Ademollo (see  
L. 369).

<sup>6</sup> *Joconde*: the portrait of Mona Lisa Gio-  
conda, by Leonardo da Vinci, in the Louvre.

<sup>7</sup> *The Frail One of the Flower*: *La Dame  
aux Camélias*.

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

With this, one glance at the lettered back of  
which,  
And "Stall!" cried I: a /irs made it mine.

Here it is, this I toss and take again;  
Small-quarto size, part print part manuscript:  
A book in shape but, really, pure crude fact  
Secrated from man's life when hearts beat hard,  
And brains, high-blooded, ticked two cen-  
turies since.

Give it me back! The thing's restorative  
I' the touch and sight.

That memorable day,  
(June was the month, Lorenzo named the  
Square)

I leaned a little and overlooked my prize  
By the low railing round the fountain-source  
Close to the statue, where a step descends:  
While clicked the cans of copper, as stooped  
and rose

Thick-ankled girls who brimmed them, and  
made place

For marketmen glad to pitch basket down,  
Dip a broad melon-leaf that holds the wet,  
And whisk their faded fresh. And on I read  
Presently, though my path grew perilous  
Between the outspread straw-work, piles of  
plait

Soon to be flapping, each o'er two black eyes  
And swathe of Tuscan hair, on festas fine:  
Through fire-irons, tribes of tongs, shovels in  
sheaves,

Skeleton bedsteads, wardrobe-drawers agape,  
Rows of tall slim brass lamps with dangling  
gear,—

And worse, cast clothes a-sweetening in the  
sun:

None of them took my eye from off my prize.  
Still read I on, from written title-page  
To written index, on, through street and street,  
At the Strozzi, at the Pillar, at the Bridge;  
Till, by the time I stood at home again

In Casa Guidi by Felice Church,  
Under the doorway where the black begins  
With the first stone-slab of the staircase cold,  
I had mastered the contents, knew the whole  
truth

Gathered together, bound up in this book,  
Print three-fifths, written supplement the rest.

"*Romana Homicidiorum*"—nay,  
Better translate—"A Roman murder-case:

"Position of the entire criminal cause

"Of Guido Franceschini, nobleman,

"With certain Four the cutthroats in his pay,

"Tried, all five, and found guilty and put to  
death

"By heading or hanging as befitted ranks,

"At Rome on February Twenty Two,

"Since our salvation Sixteen Ninety Eight:

"Wherein it is disputed if, and when,

"Husbands may kill adulterous wives, yet  
'scape

"The customary forfeit."

Word for word,

So ran the title-page: murder, or else

Legitimate punishment of the other crime,

Accounted murder by mistake,—just that

And no more, in a Latin cramp enough

When the law had her eloquence to launch,

But interfilleted with Italian streaks

When testimony stooped to mother-tongue,—

That, was this old square yellow book  
about.

Now, as the ingot, ere the ring was forged,

Lay gold, (beseech you, hold that figure fast!)

So, in this book lay absolutely truth,

Fanciless fact, the documents indeed,

Primary lawyer-pleadings for, against,

The aforesaid Five; real summed-up circum-  
stance

Adduced in proof of these on either side,

Put forth and printed, as the practice was,

At Rome, in the Apostolic Chamber's type,

And so submitted to the eye o' the Court

Presided over by His Reverence

Rome's Governor and Criminal Judge,—the  
trial

Itself, to all intents, being then as now

Here in the book and nowise out of it;

Seeing, there properly was no judgment-bar,

No bringing of accuser and accused,

And whoso judged both parties, face to face

Before some court, as we conceive of courts.

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

There was a Hall of Justice ; that came last :  
 For Justice had a chamber by the hall 160  
 Where she took evidence first, summed up  
 the same,  
 Then sent accuser and accused alike,  
 In person of the advocate of each,  
 To weigh its worth, thereby arrange, array  
 The battle. 'Twas the so-styled Fisc<sup>1</sup> began,  
 Pleaded (and since he only spoke in print 165  
 The printed voice of him lives now as then)  
 The public Prosecutor—"Murder's proved ;  
 "With five . . . what we call qualities of bad,  
 "Worse, worst, and yet worse still, and still  
 worse yet ; 170  
 "Crest over crest crowning the cockatrice,  
 "That beggar hell's regalia to enrich  
 "Count Guido Franceschini : punish him !"  
 Thus was the paper put before the court  
 In the next stage, (no noisy work at all,) 175  
 To study at ease. In due time like reply  
 Came from the so-styled Patron of the Poor,  
 Official mouthpiece of the five accused  
 Too poor to fee a better,—Guido's luck  
 Or else his fellows',—which, I hardly know,—  
 An outbreak as of wonder at the world, 181  
 A fury-fit of outraged innocence,  
 A passion of betrayed simplicity :  
 "Punish Count Guido ? For what crime,  
 what hint  
 "O' the colour of a crime, inform us first ! 185  
 "Reward him rather ! Recognize, we say,  
 "In the deed done, a righteous judgment dealt !  
 "All conscience and all courage,—there's  
 our Count  
 "Charactered in a word ; and, what's more  
 strange,  
 "He had companionship in privilege, 190  
 "Found four courageous conscientious friends :  
 "Absolve, applaud all five, as props of law,  
 "Sustainers of society !—perchance  
 "A trifle over-hasty with the hand 194  
 "To hold her tottering ark, had tumbled else ;  
 "But that's a splendid fault whereat we wink,  
 "Wishing your cold correctness sparkled so !"  
 Thus paper second followed paper first,  
 Thus did the two join issue—nay, the four,

<sup>1</sup> *Fisc* : i.e., Counsel for the Treasury, or Public Prosecutor.

Each pleader having an adjunct. "True,  
 he killed 200

"—So to speak—in a certain sort—his wife,  
 "But laudably, since thus it happened !" quoth  
 one :

Whereat, more witness and the case postponed.  
 "Thus it happened not, since thus he did the deed,  
 "And proved himself thereby portentousest  
 "Of cutthroats and a prodigy of crime, 205  
 "As the woman that he slaughtered was a saint,  
 "Martyr and miracle !" quoth the other to  
 match :

Again, more witness, and the case postponed.  
 "A miracle, ay—of lust and impudence ; 210  
 "Hear my new reasons !" interposed the first :  
 "—Coupled with more of mine !" pursued his  
 peer.

"Beside, the precedents, the authorities !"   
 From both at once a cry with an echo, that !  
 That was a firebrand at each fox's tail 215  
 Unleashed in a cornfield : soon spread flare  
 enough,

Ashurtled thither and there heaped themselves  
 From earth's four corners, all authority  
 And precedent for putting wives to death,  
 Or letting wives live, sinful as they seem. 220  
 How legislated, now, in this respect,  
 Solon and his Athenians ? Quote the code  
 Of Romulus and Rome ! Justinian speak !  
 Nor modern Baldo, Bartolo be dumb !

The Roman voice was potent, plentiful ; 225  
*Cornelia de Sicariis*<sup>2</sup> hurried to help  
*Pompeia de Parricidiis* ; *Julia de*  
 Something-or-other jostled *Lex* this-and-that ;  
 King Solomon confirmed Apostle Paul :  
 That nice decision of Dolabella, eh ? 230  
 That pregnant instance of Theodoric, oh !  
 Down to that choice example *Ælian*<sup>3</sup> gives  
 (An instance I find much insisted on)  
 Of the elephant who, brute-beast though he  
 were,  
 Yet understood and punished on the spot 235  
 His master's naughty spouse and faithless  
 friend ;

<sup>2</sup> *Cornelia de Sicariis*, *Pompeia de Parricidiis* : the titles of Roman laws dealing with homicide.

<sup>3</sup> *Ælian* : *De Animalium Natura*, xi. 15.

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

A true tale which has edified each child,  
Much more shall flourish favoured by our court !  
Pages of proof this way, and that way proof,  
And always—once again the case postponed.  
240

Thus wrangled, brangled, jangled they a  
month,  
—Only on paper, pleadings all in print,  
Nor ever was, except i' the brains of men,  
More noise by word of mouth than you hear  
now—

Till the court cut all short with "Judged,  
your cause."  
245

"Receive our sentence ! Praise God ! We  
pronounce

"Count Guido devilish and damnable :

"His wife Pompilia in thought, word and deed,

"Was perfect pure, he murdered her for that :

"As for the Four who helped the One, all  
Five—  
250

"Why, let employer and hirelings share alike

"In guilt and guilt's reward, the death their  
due !"

So was the trial at end, do you suppose ?

"Guilty you find him, death you doom him to ?

"Ay, were not Guido, more than needs, a  
priest,  
255

"Priest and to spare !"—this was a shot  
reserved ;

I learn this from epistles which begin

Here where the print ends,—see the pen and  
ink

Of the advocate, the ready at a pinch !—

"My client boasts the clerkly privilege," 260

"Has taken minor orders many enough,

"Shows still sufficient chrism upon his pate

"To neutralize a blood-stain : *presbyter*,<sup>1</sup>

"*Prima tonsura, subdiaconus,*

"*Sacerdos*, so he slips from underneath 265

<sup>1</sup> *Presbyter*, &c. : the names of orders in the Roman Church, of which the minor ones can be assumed without causing the holder to cease to be a layman ; thus (a point of importance in Count Guido's case) they do not prevent him from marrying, yet they are sufficient to entitle him to appeal to the Pope, as head of the Church.

"Your power, the temporal, slides inside  
the robe

"Of mother Church : to her we make appeal

"By the Pope, the Church's head !"

A parlous plea,

Put in with noticeable effect, it seems ; 270

"Since straight,"—resumes the zealous orator,

Making a friend acquainted with the facts,—

"Once the word 'clericality' let fall,

"Procedure stopped and freer breath was  
drawn

"By all considerate and responsible Rome."

Quality took the decent part, of course ; 275

Held by the husband, who was noble too :

Or, for the matter of that, a churl would side

With too-refined susceptibility,

And honour which, tender in the extreme, 280

Stung to the quick, must roughly right itself

At all risks, not sit still and whine for law

As a Jew would, if you squeezed him to the  
wall,

Brisk-trotting through the Ghetto. Nay, it  
seems,

Even the Emperor's Envoy had his say 285

To say on the subject ; might not see, un-  
moved,

Civility menaced throughout Christendom

By too harsh measure dealt her champion here.

Lastly, what made all safe, the Pope was kind,

From his youth up, reluctant to take life, 290

If mercy might be just and yet show grace ;

Much more unlikely then, in extreme age,

To take a life the general sense bade spare.

'Twas plain that Guido would go scatheless  
yet.  
295

But human promise, oh, how short of shine !

How topple down the piles of hope we rear !

How history provcs . . . nay, read *Herodotus* !<sup>2</sup>

Suddenly starting from a nap, as it were,

A dog-sleep with one shut, one open orb,

Cried the Pope's<sup>3</sup> great self,—Innocent by

<sup>2</sup> *Herodotus* : e.g., the stories of Croesus or of Xerxes.

<sup>3</sup> *The Pope* : Innocent XII., pope 1691-1700

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

And nature too, and eighty-six years old,  
Antonio Pignatelli of Naples, Pope  
Who had trod many lands, known many deeds,  
Probed many hearts, beginning with his own,  
And now was far in readiness for God,— 305  
'Twas he who first bade leave those souls in  
peace,

Those Jansenists, re-nicknamed Molinists,<sup>1</sup>  
(Gainst whom the cry went, like a frowsytune,  
Tickling men's ears—the sect for a quarter  
of an hour

I' the teeth of the world which, clown-like,  
loves to chew 310

Be it but a straw 'twixt work and whistling-  
while,

Taste some vituperation, bite away,  
Whether at marjoram-sprig or garlic-clove,  
Aught it may sport with, spoil, and then spit  
forth)

"Leave them alone," bade he, "those  
Molinists! 315

"Who may have other light than we perceive,  
"Or why is it the whole world hates them  
thus?"

Also he peeled off that last scandal-rag  
Of Nepotism; and so observed the poor  
That men would merrily say, "Halt, deaf  
and blind, 320

"Who feed on fat things, leave the master's  
self

"To gather up the fragments of his feast,  
"These be the nephews of Pope Innocent!—

"His own meal costs but five carlines<sup>2</sup> a day,  
"Poor-priest's allowance, for he claims no  
more." 325

—He cried of a sudden, this great good old  
Pope,

When they appealed in last resort to him,

"I have mastered the whole matter: I no-  
thing doubt.

"Though Guido stood forth priest from head  
to heel,

"Instead of, as alleged, a piece of one,— 330

"And further, were he, from the tonsured  
scalp

"To the sandaled sole of him, my son and  
Christ's,

"Instead of touching us by finger-tip

"As you assert, and pressing up so close

"Only to set a blood-smutch on our robe,—

"I and Christ would renounce all right in  
him. 335

"Am I not Pope, and presently to die,

"And busied how to render my account,

"And shall I wait a day ere I decide

"On doing or not doing justice here? 340

"Cut off his head to-morrow by this time,

"Hang up his four mates, two on either hand,

"And end one business more!"

So said, so done—

Rather so writ, for the old Pope bade this, 345

I find, with his particular chirograph,

His own no such infirm hand, Friday night;

And next day, February Twenty Two,

Since our salvation Sixteen Ninety Eight,

—Not at the proper head-and-hanging-place

On bridge-foot close by Castle Angelo, 350

Where custom somewhat staled the spectacle,

('Twas not so well I' the way of Rome, beside.

The noble Rome, the Rome of Guido's rank)

But at the city's newer gayer end,— 355

The cavalcading promenading place

Beside the gate and opposite the church

Under the Pincian gardens green with Spring,

'Neath the obelisk<sup>3</sup> 'twixt the fountains in the

Square,

Did Guido and his fellows find their fate, 360

All Rome for witness, and—my writer adds—

Remonstrant in its universal grief,

Since Guido had the suffrage of all Rome.

<sup>1</sup> *Molinists*: followers of Miguel Molinos, a Spaniard, who published at Rome in 1675 a work of mystical or "quietistic" theology, entitled the *Guida Spirituale* or *Spiritual Guide*, which attracted much attention, but was declared heretical by the heads of the Church. Allusions to the orthodox dislike or dread of Molinism at this time recur frequently in this poem.

<sup>2</sup> *Carlines*: a small silver coin, worth about twopence.

<sup>3</sup> *Obelisk*: the obelisk brought from Egypt by Augustus and placed in the Circus Maximus; whence, having fallen down, it was removed by Pope Sixtus V. in 1589, and set up in the Piazza del Popolo, below the Monte Pincio.

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

This is the bookful; thus far take the truth,  
The untempered gold, the fact untampered  
with,  
The mere ring-metal ere the ring be made!  
And what has hitherto come of it? Who  
preserves

The memory of this Guido, and his wife  
Pompilia, more than Ademollo's name,  
The etcher of those prints, two *crasse* each, 370  
Saved by a stone from snowing broad the  
Square

With scenic backgrounds? Was this truth  
of force?

Able to take its own part as truth should,  
Sufficient, self-sustaining? Why, if so—  
Yonder's a fire, into it goes my book, 375  
As who shall say me nay, and what the loss?  
You know the tale already: I may ask,  
Rather than think to tell you, more thereof,—  
Ask you not merely who were he and she, 379  
Husband and wife, what manner of mankind,  
But how you hold concerning this and that  
Other yet-unnamed actor in the piece.  
The young frank handsome courtly Canon,  
now,

The priest, declared the lover of the wife,  
He who, no question, did elope with her, 385  
For certain, bring the tragedy about,  
Giuseppe Caponsacchi;—his strange course  
I' the matter, was it right or wrong or both?  
Then the old couple, slaughtered with the wife  
By the husband as accomplices in crime, 390  
Those Comparini, Pietro and his spouse,—  
What say you to the right or wrong of that,  
When, at a known name whispered through  
the door

Of a lone villa on a Christmas night,  
It opened that the joyous hearts inside 395  
Might welcome as it were an angel-guest  
Come in Christ's name to knock and enter,  
sup

And satisfy the loving ones he saved;  
And so did welcome devils and their death?  
I have been silent on that circumstance 400  
Although the couple passed for close of kin  
To wife and husband, were by some accounts  
Pompilia's very parents: you know best.  
Also that infant the great joy was for,

That Gaetano, the wife's two-weeks' babe. 405  
The husband's first-born child, his son and  
heir,

Whose birth and being turned his night to  
day—

Why must the father kill the mother thus  
Because she bore his son and saved himself?

Well, British Public, ye who like me not, 410  
(God love you!) and will have your proper  
laugh

At the dark question, laugh it! I laugh first.  
Truth must prevail, the proverb vows; and  
truth

—Here is it all i' the book at last, as first.  
There it was all i' the heads and hearts of  
Rome 415

Gentle and simple, never to fall nor fade  
Nor be forgotten. Yet, a little while,  
The passage of a century or so,  
Decads thrice five, and here's time paid his tax,  
Oblivion gone home with her harvesting, 420  
And all left smooth again as scythe could  
shave.

Far from beginning with you London folk,  
I took my book to Rome first, tried truth's  
power

On unlikely people. "Have you met such names?  
"Is a tradition extant of such facts? 425

"Your law-courts stand, your records frown  
a-row:

"What if I rove and rummage?" "—Why,  
you'll waste

"Your pains and end as wise as you began!"  
Everyone snickered: "names and facts thus  
old 430

"Are newer much than Europe news we find  
"Down in to-day's *Diario*. Records, quotha?

"Why, the French burned them, what else  
do the French?

"The rap-and-rending nation! And it tells  
"Against the Church, no doubt,—another  
gird 435

"At the Temporality, your Trial, of course?"  
"—Quite otherwise this time," submitted I;

"Clean for the Church and dead against the  
world,

"The flesh and the devil, does it tell for once."

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

"—The rarer and the happier ! Allthesame,  
 "Content you with your treasure of a book, 440  
 "And waive what's wanting ! Take a  
 "friend's advice !  
 "It's not the custom of the country. Mend  
 "Your ways indeed and we may stretch a  
 "point :  
 "Go get you manned by Manning and new-  
 "manned  
 "By Newman and, mayhap, wise-manned  
 "to boot 445  
 "By Wiseman, and we'll see or else we won't !  
 "Thanks meantime for the story, long and  
 "strong,  
 "A pretty piece of narrative enough,  
 "Which scarce ought so to drop out, one  
 "would think, 449  
 "From the more curious annals of our kind.  
 "Do you tell the story, now, in off-hand style,  
 "Straight from the book ? Or simply here  
 "and there,  
 " (The while you vault it through the loose  
 "and large)  
 "Hang to a hint ? Or is there book at all,  
 "And don't you deal in poetry, make-believe,  
 "And the white lies it sounds like ?" 450

Yes and no !

From the book, yes ; thence bit by bit I dug  
 The lingot<sup>1</sup> truth, that memorable day,  
 Assayed and knew my piecemeal gain was  
 gold,— 460  
 Yes ; but from something else surpassing that,  
 Something of mine which, mixed up with  
 the mass,  
 Made it bear hammer and be firm to file.  
 Fancy with fact is just one fact the more ; 464  
 To-wit, that fancy has informed, transpierced,  
 Thridded and so thrown fast the facts else free,  
 As right through ring and ring runs the  
 djereed<sup>2</sup>  
 And binds the locse, one bar without a break.  
 I fused my live soul and that inert stuff,  
 Before attempting smithcraft, on the night 470

<sup>1</sup> *Lingot* : the same word as *lingot* ; here =  
 the solid mass of truth.

<sup>2</sup> *Djereed* : an Arab spear. The allusion is  
 to a game analogous to tilting at a ring.

After the day when,—truth thus grasped and  
 gained,—

The book was shut and done with and laid by  
 On the cream-coloured massive agate, broad  
 'Neath the twin cherubs in the tarnished frame  
 O' the mirror, tall thence to the ceiling-top. 475  
 And from the reading, and that slab I leant  
 My elbow on, the while I read and read,  
 I turned, to free myself and find the world,  
 And stepped out on the narrow terrace, built  
 Over the street and opposite the church, 480  
 And paced its lozenge-brickwork sprinkled  
 cool ;

Because Felice-church-side stretched, a-glow  
 Through each square window fringed for  
 festival,

Whence came the clear voice of the cloistered  
 ones

Chanting a chant made for midsummer  
 nights— 485

I know not what particular praise of God,  
 It always came and went with June. Beneath  
 I' the street, quick shown by openings of the  
 sky

When flame fell silently from cloud to cloud,  
 Richer than that gold snow<sup>3</sup> Jove rained on  
 Rhodes, 490

The townsmen walked by twos and threes,  
 and talked,

Drinking the blackness in default of air—  
 A busy human sense beneath my feet :

While in and out the terrace-plants, and round  
 One branch of tall datura, waxed and waned  
 The lamp-fly lured there, wanting the white  
 flower. 496

Over the roof o' the lighted church I looked  
 A bowshot to the street's end, north away  
 Out of the Roman gate to the Roman road  
 By the river, till I felt the Apennine. 500

And there would lie Arezzo,<sup>4</sup> the man's town,  
 The woman's trap and cage and torture-place,  
 Also the stage where the priest played his part,  
 A spectacle for angels,—ay, indeed ;  
 There lay Arezzo ! Farther then I fared, 505

<sup>3</sup> *That gold snow* : the shower of gold in  
 which Jove visited Danaë.

<sup>4</sup> *Arezzo* : in Tuscany, about 40 miles south-  
 east of Florence.

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

Feeling my way on through the hot and dense,  
 Romeward, until I found the wayside inn  
 By Castelnovo's few mean hut-like homes  
 Huddled together on the hill-foot bleak,  
 Bare, broken only by that tree or two 510  
 Against the sudden bloody splendour poured  
 Cursewise in day's departure by the sun  
 O'er the low house-roof of that squalid inn  
 Where they three, for the first time and the  
 last, 514

Husband and wife and priest, met face to face.  
 Whence I went on again, the end was near,  
 Step by step, missing none and marking all,  
 Till Rome itself, the ghastly goal, I reached.  
 Why, all the while,—how could it otherwise?—  
 The life in me abolished the death of things,  
 Deep calling unto deep: as then and there 521  
 Acted itself over again once more  
 The tragic piece. I saw with my own eyes  
 In Florence as I trod the terrace, breathed  
 The beauty and the fearfulness of night, 525  
 How it had run, this round from Rome to  
 Rome—

Because, you are to know, they lived at Rome,  
 Pompilia's parents, as they thought them-  
 selves,

Two poor ignoble hearts who did their best  
 Part God's way, part the other way than  
 God's, 530

To somehow make a shift and scramble through  
 The world's mud, careless if it splashed and  
 spoiled,

Provided they might so hold high, keep clean  
 Their child's soul, one soul white enough for  
 three,

And lift it to whatever star should stoop, 535  
 What possible sphere of purer life than theirs  
 Should come in aid of whiteness hard to save.  
 I saw the star stoop, that they strained to  
 touch,

And did touch and depose their treasure on,  
 As Guido Franceschini took away 540

Pompilia to be his for evermore,  
 While they sang "Now let us depart in peace,  
 "Having beheld thy glory, Guido's wife!"

I saw the star supposed, but fog o' the fen,  
 Gilded star-fashion by a glint from hell; 545  
 Having been heaved up, haled on its gross way,

By hands unguessed before, invisible help  
 From a dark brotherhood, and specially  
 Two obscure goblin creatures, fox-faced this,  
 Cat-clawed the other, called his next of kin 550  
 By Guido the main monster,—cloaked and  
 caped,  
 Making as they were priests, to mock God  
 more,—

Abate Paul, Canon Girolamo.  
 These who had rolled the starlike pest to Rome  
 And stationed it to suck up and absorb 555  
 The sweetness of Pompilia, rolled again  
 That bloated bubble, with her soul inside,  
 Back to Arezzo and a palace there—  
 Or say, a fissure in the honest earth  
 Whence long ago had curled the vapour first,  
 Blown big by nether fires to appal day: 561  
 It touched home, broke, and blasted far and  
 wide.

I saw the cheated couple find the cheat  
 And guess what foul rite they were captured  
 for,—

Too fain to follow over hill and dale 565  
 That child of theirs caught up thus in the cloud  
 And carried by the Prince o' the Power of  
 the Air

Whither he would, to wilderness or sea.  
 I saw them, in the potency of fear,  
 Break somehow through the satyr-family 570  
 (For a grey mother with a monkey-mien,  
 Mopping and mowing, was apparent too,  
 As, confident of capture, all took hands  
 And danced about the captives in a ring)  
 —Saw them break through, breathe safe, at  
 Rome again, 575

Saved by the selfish instinct, losing so  
 Their loved one left with haters. These I saw,  
 In recrudescency of baffled hate,  
 Prepare to wring the uttermost revenge  
 From body and soul thus left them: all was  
 sure, 580  
 Fire laid and cauldron set, the obscene ring  
 traced,  
 The victim stripped and prostrate: what of  
 God?

The cleaving of a cloud, a cry, a crash,  
 Quenched lay their cauldron, cowered i' the  
 dust the crew,



As, in a glory of armour like Saint George, 398  
 Out again sprang the young good beauteous  
 priest  
 Bearing away the lady in his arms,  
 Saved for a splendid minute and no more.  
 For, whom if the path did that priest come  
 upon,  
 He and the poor lost lady borne so brave, 399  
 —Checking the song of praise in me, had else  
 Swelled to the full for God's will done on  
 earth—  
 Whom but a dusk misfeatured messenger,  
 No other than the angel of this life, 394  
 Whose care is lest men see too much at once.  
 He made the sign, such God-glimpse must  
 suffice,  
 Nor prejudice the Prince o' the Power of the  
 Air,  
 Whose ministration piles us overhead  
 What we call, first, earth's roof and, last,  
 heaven's floor,  
 Now grate o' the trap, then outlet of the  
 cage : 395  
 So took the lady, left the priest alone,  
 And once more canopied the world with  
 black.  
 But through the blackness I saw Rome again,  
 And where a solitary villa stood  
 In a lone garden-quarter : it was eve, 396  
 The second of the year, and oh so cold !  
 Ever and anon there flittered through the air  
 A snow-flake, and a scanty couch of snow  
 Crusted the grass-walk and the garden-mould.  
 All was grave, silent, sinister,—when, ha ? 397  
 Glimmeringly did a pack of were-wolves pad  
 The snow, those flames were Guido's eyes in  
 front,  
 And all five found and footed it, the track,  
 To where a threshold-streak of warmth and  
 light  
 Betrayed the villa-door with life inside, 398  
 While an inch outside were those blood-  
 bright eyes,  
 And black lips wrinkling o'er the flash of teeth,  
 And tongues that lolled—Oh God that madest  
 man !  
 They parleyed in their language. Then one  
 whined—  
 That was the policy and master-stroke— 399  
 Deep in his throat whispered what seemed a  
 name—  
 “Open to Caponsacchi !” Guido cried :  
 “Gabriel !” cried Lucifer at Eden-gate.  
 Wide as a heart, opened the door at once,  
 Showing the joyous couple, and their child 400  
 The two-weeks' mother, to the wolves, the  
 wolves  
 To them. Close eyes ! And when the  
 corpses lay  
 Stark-stretched, and those the wolves, their  
 wolf-work done,  
 Were safe-embosomed by the night again,  
 I knew a necessary change in things ; 401  
 As when the worst watch of the night gives way,  
 And there comes duly, to take cognizance,  
 The scrutinizing eye-point of some star—  
 And who despairs of a new daybreak now ?  
 Lo, the first ray protruded on those five ! 402  
 It reached them, and each felon writhed  
 transfixed  
 Awhile they palpitated on the spear  
 Motionless over Tophet : stand or fall ?  
 “I say, the spear should fall—should stand,  
 I say !”  
 Cried the world come to judgment, granting  
 grace 403  
 Or dealing doom according to world's wont,  
 Those world's-bystanders grouped on Rome's  
 cross-road  
 At prick and summons of the primal curse  
 Which bids man love as well as make a lie.  
 There prattled they, discoursed the right and  
 wrong, 404  
 Turned wrong to right, proved wolves sheep  
 and sheep wolves,  
 So that you scarce distinguished fell from  
 fleece ;  
 Till out spoke a great guardian of the fold,  
 Stood up, put forth his hand that held the crook,  
 And motioned that the arrested point de-  
 cline : 405  
 Horribly off the wriggling dead-weight reeled,  
 Rushed to the bottom and lay ruined there.  
 Though still at the pit's mouth, despite the  
 smoke  
 O' the burning, barriers turned again to talk

And trim the balance, and detect at least 655  
 A touch of wolf in what showed whitest sheep,  
 A cross of sheep redeeming the whole wolf,—  
 Vex truth a little longer :—less and less,  
 Because years came and went, and more and  
 more

Brought new lies with them to be loved in  
 turn. 660

Till all at once the memory of the thing,—  
 The fact that, wolves or sheep, such creatures  
 were,—

Which hitherto, however men supposed,  
 Had somehow plain and pillar-like prevailed  
 I' the midst of them, indisputably fact, 665  
 Granite, time's tooth should grate against,  
 not graze,—

Why, this proved sandstone, friable, fast to fly  
 And give its grain away at wish o' the wind.  
 Ever and ever more diminutive,  
 Base gone, shaft lost, only entablature, 670  
 Dwindled into no bigger than a book,  
 Lay of the column ; and that little, left  
 By the roadside 'mid the ordure, shards and  
 weeds.

Until I haply, wandering that lone way,  
 Kicked it up, turned it over, and recognized,  
 For all the crumblement, this abacus, 675  
 This square old yellow book,—could calculate  
 By this the lost proportions of the style.

This was it from, my fancy with those facts,  
 I used to tell the tale, turned gay to grave, 680  
 But lacked a listener seldom ; such alloy,  
 Such substance of me interfused the gold  
 Which, wrought into a shapely ring therewith,  
 Hammered and filed, fingered and favoured,  
 last

Lay ready for the renovating wash 685  
 O' the water. "How much of the tale was  
 true?"

I disappeared ; the book grew all in all ;  
 The lawyers' pleadings swelled back to their  
 size,—

Doubled in two, the crease upon them yet,  
 For more commodity of carriage, see I— 690

<sup>1</sup> *Abacus*: the upper part of the capital of  
 a pillar, on which the architrave rests. In its  
 earliest forms it is generally square in shape.

And these are letters, veritable sheets  
 That brought posthaste the news to Flor-  
 ence, writ

At Rome the day Count Guido died, we find,  
 To stay the craving of a client there,  
 Who bound the same and so produced my  
 book. 695

Lovers of dead truth, did ye fare the worse?  
 Lovers of live truth, found ye false my tale?

Well, now ; there's nothing in nor out o' the  
 world

Good except truth : yet this, the something else,  
 What's this then, which proves good yet  
 seems untrue? 700

This that I mixed with truth, motions of mine  
 That quickened, made the inertness malleo-  
 lable

O' the gold was not mine,—what's your  
 name for this?

Are means to the end, themselves in part the  
 end?

Is fiction which makes fact alive, fact too? 705  
 The somehow may be thishow.

I find first

Writ down for very A B C of fact,  
 "In the beginning God made heaven and  
 earth ;" 705

From which, no matter with what lisp, I spell  
 And speak you out a consequence—that man,  
 Man,—as befits the made, the inferior thing,—  
 Purposed, since made, to grow, not make in  
 turn,

Yet forced to try and make, else fail to grow,—  
 Formed to rise, reach at, if not grasp and  
 gain 715

The good beyond him,—which attempt is  
 growth,—

Repeats God's process in man's due degree,  
 Attaining man's proportionate result,—  
 Creates, no, but resuscitates, perhaps.

Inalienable, the arch-prerogative 720  
 Which turns thought, act—conceives, ex-  
 presses too!

No less, man, bounded, yearning to be free,  
 May so project his surplusage of soul  
 In search of body, so add self to self  
 By owning what lay ownerless before, 725

So find, so fill full, so appropriate forms—  
 That, although nothing which had never life  
 Shall get life from him, be, not having been,  
 Yet, something dead may get to live again,  
 Something with too much life or not enough,  
 Which, either way imperfect, ended once : 731  
 An end whereat man's impulse intervenes,  
 Makes new beginning, starts the dead alive,  
 Completes the incomplete and saves the thing.  
 Man's breath were vain to light a virgin  
 wick,— 735

Half-burned-out, all but quite-quenched wicks  
 o' the lamp

Stationed for temple-service on this earth,  
 These indeed let him breathe on and relume !  
 For such man's feat is, in the due degree,  
 —Mimic creation, galvanism for life, 740  
 But still a glory portioned in the scale.  
 Why did the mage say,—feeling as we are  
 wont

For resting, and stopping midway short of truth,  
 And trutling on a lie,—“ I raise a ghost ” ?  
 “ Because,” he taught adepts, “ man makes  
 not man. 745

“ Yet by a special gift, an art of arts,  
 “ More insight and more outsize and much  
 more

Will to use both of these than boast my  
 mates,

“ I can detach from me, commission forth

“ Half of my soul ; which in its pilgrimage 750

“ O'er old unwandered waste ways of the  
 world,

“ May chance upon some fragment of a whole,

“ Rag of flesh, scrap of bone in dim disuse,

“ Smoking flax that fed fire once : prompt  
 therein 754

“ I enter, spark-like, put old powers to play,

“ Push lines out to the limit, lead forth last

“ (By a moonrise through a ruin of a crypt)

“ What shall be mistily seen, murmuringly  
 heard,

“ Mistakenly felt : then write my name with  
 Faust's ! ”

Oh, Faust, why Faust ? Was not Elisha  
 once ?— 760

Who bade them lay his staff on a corpse-face,  
 There was no voice, no hearing : he went in

Therefore, and shut the door upon them twain,  
 And prayed unto the Lord : and he went  
 up 764

And lay upon the corpse, dead on the couch,  
 And put his mouth upon its mouth, his eyes  
 Upon its eyes, his hands upon its hands,  
 And stretched him on the flesh ; the flesh  
 waxed warm :

And he returned, walked to and fro the house,  
 And went up, stretched him on the flesh again,  
 And the eyes opened. 'Tis a credible feat 771  
 With the right man and way.

Enough of me !

The Book ! I turn its medicinale leaves  
 In London now till, as in Florence erst, 775  
 A spirit laughs and leaps through every limb,  
 And lights my eye, and lifts me by the hair,  
 Letting me have my will again with these  
 —How title I the dead alive once more ?

Count Guido Franceschini the Aretine, 780  
 Descended of an ancient house, though poor,  
 A beak-nosed bushy-bearded black-haired  
 lord,

Lean, pallid, low of stature yet robust,  
 Fifty years old,—having four years ago  
 Married Pompilia Comparini, young, 785

Good, beautiful, at Rome, where she was born,  
 And brought her to Arezzo, where they lived  
 Unhappy lives, whatever curse the cause,—

This husband, taking four accomplices,  
 Followed this wife to Rome, where she was fled  
 From their Arezzo to find peace again, 791

In convoy, eight months earlier, of a priest,  
 Aretine also, of still nobler birth,

Giuseppe Caponsacchi,—caught her there  
 Quiet in a villa on a Christmas night, 795

With only Pietro and Violante by,

Both her putative parents ; killed the three,

Aged, they, seventy each, and she, seventeen,

And, two weeks since, the mother of his babe  
 First-born and heir to what the style was

worth 800

O' the Guido who determined, dared and did

This deed just as he purposed point by point.

Then, bent upon escape, but hotly pressed,

And captured with his co-mates that same night,

He, brought to trial, stood on this defence—

Injury to his honour caused the act ; 806  
 And since his wife was false, (as manifest  
 By flight from home in such companionship,) Death, punishment deserved of the false wife  
 And faithless parents who abetted her 810  
 I' the flight aforesaid, wronged nor God nor man.

"Nor false she, nor yet faithless they," replied  
 The accuser ; "cloaked and masked this murder glooms ;

"True was Pompilia, loyal too the pair ; 814  
 "Out of the man's own heart a monster curled  
 "Which—crime coiled with connivancy at crime—

"His victim's breast, he tells you, hatched and reared ;

"Uncoil we and stretch stark the worm of hell!"  
 A month the trial swayed this way and that  
 Ere judgment settled down on Guido's guilt ; 820

Then was the Pope, that good Twelfth Innocent,

Appealed to : who well weighed what went before,

Affirmed the guilt and gave the guilty doom.

Let this old woe step on the stage again !  
 Act itself o'er anew for men to judge, 825  
 Not by the very sense and sight indeed—  
 (Which take at best imperfect cognizance,  
 Since, how heart moves brain, and how both move hand,

What mortal ever in entirety saw ?)

—No dose of purer truth than man digests, 830  
 But truth with falsehood, milk that feeds him now,

Not strong meat he may get to bear someday—  
 To-wit, by voices we call evidence,  
 Uproar in the echo, live fact deadened down,  
 Talked over, bruited abroad, whispered away,  
 Yet helping us to all we seem to hear : 835  
 For how else know we save by worth of word ?

Here are the voices presently shall sound  
 In due succession. First, the world's outcry  
 Around the rush and ripple of any fact 840  
 Fallen stonewise, plumb on the smooth face of things ;

The world's guess, as it crowds the bank o' the pool,

At what were figure and substance, by their splash :

Then, by vibrations in the general mind,  
 At depth of deed already out of reach. 845

This threefold murder of the day before,—  
 Say, Half-Rome's feel after the vanished truth ;

Honest enough, as the way is : all the same,  
 Harbours in the centre of its sense

A hidden germ of failure, shy but sure, 850  
 To neutralize that honesty and leave

That feel for truth at fault, as the way is too.  
 Some prepossession such as starts amiss,

By but a hair's breadth at the shoulder-blade,  
 The arm o' the feeler, dip he ne'er so bold ;

So leads arm waveringly, lets fall wide 855  
 O' the mark its finger, sent to find and fix

Truth at the bottom, that deceptive speck.  
 With this Half-Rome,—the source of swerving,

call  
 Over-belief in Guido's right and wrong 860  
 Rather than in Pompilia's wrong and right :

Who shall say how, who shall say why ? 'Tis there—

The instinctive theorizing whence a fact  
 Looks to the eye as the eye likes the look.

Gossip in a public place, a sample-speech. 865  
 Some worthy, with his previous hint to find

A husband's side the safer, and no whit  
 Aware he is not Æacus<sup>1</sup> the while,—

How such an one supposes and states fact  
 To whosoever of a multitude 870

Will listen, and perhaps prolong thereby  
 The not-unpleasant flutter at the breast,

Born of a certain spectacle shut in  
 By the church Lorenzo opposite. So, they lounge

Midway the mouth o' the street, on Corso side, 875

'Twixt palace Fiano and palace Ruspoli,  
 Linger and listen ; keeping clear o' the crowd,

Yet wishful one could lend that crowd one's eyes,

<sup>1</sup> Æacus : the colleague of Minos and Rhadamanthus as judge of the nether world ; hence a type of impartiality.

(So universal is its plague of squint)  
And make hearts beat our time that flutter  
false :

—All for the truth's sake, mere truth, nothing  
else !

How Half-Rome found for Guido much  
excuse.

Next, from Rome's other half, the opposite  
feel

For truth with a like swerve, like unsuccess,—  
Or if success, by no skill but more luck 885  
This time, through siding rather with the wife,  
Because a fancy-fit inclined that way,  
Than with the husband. One wears drab,  
one pink ;

Who wears pink, ask him "Which shall win  
the race, 890

"Of coupled runners like as egg and egg?"

"—Why, if I must choose, he with the pink  
scarf."

Doubtless for some such reason choice fell  
here.

A piece of public talk to correspond  
At the next stage of the story ; just a day  
Let pass and new day brings the proper  
change. 895

Another sample-speech i' the market-place  
O' the Barberini by the Capucins ;  
Where the old Triton, at his fountain-sport,  
Bernini's creature plated to the paps,  
Puffs up steel sleet which breaks to diamond  
dust, 900

A spray of sparkles snorted from his conch,  
High over the caritellas, out o' the way  
O' the motley merchandizing multitude.  
Our murder has been done three days ago,  
The frost is over and gone, the south wind  
laughs, 905

And, to the very tiles of each red roof  
A-smoke i' the sunshine, Rome lies gold and  
glad :

So, listen how, to the other half of Rome,  
Pompilia seemed a saint and martyr both !

Then, yet another day let come and go, 910  
With pause prelude still of novelty,  
Hear a fresh speaker !—neither this nor that

Half-Rome aforesaid ; something bred of  
both :

One and one breed the inevitable three.  
Such is the personage harangues you next ; 915  
The elaborated product, *tertium quid* :  
Rome's first commotion in subsidence gives  
The curd o' the cream, flower o' the wheat,  
as it were,

And finer sense o' the city. Is this plain ?  
You get a reasoned statement of the case, 920

Eventual verdict of the curious few  
Who care to sift a business to the bran  
Nor coarsely bolt it like the simpler sort.  
Here, after ignorance, instruction speaks ;  
Here, clarity of candour, history's soul, 925  
The critical mind, in short : no gossip-guess.  
What the superior social section thinks,  
In person of some man of quality

Who,—breathing musk from lace-work and  
brocade,

His solitaire amid the flow of frill, 930  
Powdered peruke on nose, and bag at back,  
And cane dependent from the ruffled wrist,—  
Harangues in silvery and selectest phrase  
'Neath waxlight in a glorified saloon  
Where mirrors multiply the girandole :<sup>1</sup> 935  
Courting the approbation of no mob,  
But Eminence This and All-Illustrious That  
Who take snuff softly, range in well-bred  
ring,

Card-table-quitters for observance' sake,  
Around the argument, the rational word— 940  
Still, spite its weight and worth, a sample-  
speech.

How Quality dissertated on the case.

So much for Rome and rumour ; smoke  
comes first :

Once let smoke rise untroubled, we descry  
Clearlier what tongues of flame may spire  
and spit 945

To eye and ear, each with appropriate tinge  
According to its food, or pure or foul.  
The actors, no mere rumours of the act,  
Intervene. First you hear Count Guido's voice,  
In a small chamber that adjoins the court, 950

<sup>1</sup> *Girandole* : a branched candlestick.

Where Governor and Judges, summoned thence,  
 Tommatt, Venturini and the rest,  
 Find the accused ripe for declaring truth.  
 Soft-cushioned sits he, yet shifts seat, shirks touch,  
 As, with a twitchy brow and wincing lip 555  
 And cheek that changes to all kinds of white,  
 He proffers his defence, in tones subdued  
 Neartomock-mildnessnow, somournful seems  
 The obtuser sense truth fails to satisfy;  
 Now, moved, from pathos at the wrong  
 endured, 560  
 To passion; for the natural man is roused  
 At fools who first do wrong then pour the blame  
 Of their wrong-doing, Satan-like, on Job.  
 Also his tongue at times is hard to curb;  
 Incisive, nigh satiric bites the phrase, 565  
 Rough-raw, yet somehow claiming privilege  
 —It is so hard for shrewdness to admit  
 Folly means no harm when she calls black  
 white!  
 —Eruption momentary at the most,  
 Modified forthwith by a fall o' the fire, 570  
 Sage acquiescence; for the world's the world,  
 And, what it errs in, Judges rectify:  
 He feels he has a fist, then folds his arms  
 Crosswise and makes his mind up to be meek.  
 And never once does he detach his eye 575  
 From those ranged there to slay him or to save,  
 But does his best man's-service for himself,  
 Despite,—what twitches brow and makes  
 lip wince,—  
 His limbs' late taste of what was called the Cord,  
 Or Vigil-torture more facetiously. 580  
 Even so; they were wont to tease the truth  
 Out of loth witness (toying, trifling time)  
 By torture: 'twas a trick, a vice of the age,  
 Here, there and everywhere, what would you  
 have?  
 Religion used to tell Humanity 585  
 She gave him warrant or denied him course.  
 And since the course was much to his own mind,  
 Of pinching flesh and pulling bone from bone  
 To unhusk truth a-hiding in its hulls,  
 Nor whisper of a warning stopped the way, 590  
 He, in their joint behalf, the burly slave,  
 Bestirred him, mauled and maimed all  
 recusants,  
 While, prim in place, Religion overlooked;  
 And so had done till doomsday, never a sign  
 Nor sound of interference from her mouth, 595  
 But that at last the burly slave wiped brow,  
 Let eye give notice as if soul were there,  
 Muttered "'Tis a vile trick, foolish more  
 than vile,  
 "Should have been counted sin; I make it so:  
 "At any rate no more of it for me— 1000  
 "Nay, for I break the torture-engine thus!"  
 Then did Religion start up, stare amain,  
 Look round for help and see none, smile  
 and say  
 "What, broken is the rack? Well done of thee!  
 "Did I forget to abrogate its use? 1005  
 "Be the mistake in common with us both!  
 "—One more fault our blind age shall answer  
 for,  
 "Down in my book denounced though it  
 must be  
 "Somewhere. Henceforth find truth by  
 milder means!"  
 Ah but, Religion, did we wait for thee 1010  
 To ope the book, that serves to sit upon,  
 And pick such place out; we should wait  
 indeed!  
 That is all history: and what is not now,  
 Was then, defendants found it to their cost.  
 How Guido, after being tortured, spoke. 1015  
 Also hear Caponsacchi who comes next,  
 Man and priest—could you comprehend the  
 coil!—  
 In days when that was rife which now is rare.  
 How, mingling each its multifarious wires,  
 Now heaven, now earth, now heaven and  
 earth at once, 1020  
 Had plucked at and perplexed their puppet  
 here,  
 Played off the young frank personable priest;  
 Sworn fast and tonsured plain heaven's celibate,  
 And yet earth's clear-accepted servitor,  
 A courtly spiritual Cupid, squire of dames 1025  
 By law of love and mandate of the mode.  
 The Church's own, or why parade her seal,  
 Wherefore that chrism and consecrative work?

Yet verily the world's, or why go badged  
 A prince of sonneteers and lutanists,<sup>1</sup> 1080  
 Show colour of each vanity in vogue  
 Borne with decorum due on blameless breast?  
 All that is changed now, as he tells the court  
 How he had played the part excepted at;  
 Tells it, moreover, now the second time: 1085  
 Since, for his cause of scandal, his own share  
 I' the flight from home and husband of the wife,  
 He has been censured, punished in a sort.  
 By relegation,—exile, we should say,  
 To a short distance for a little time,— 1090  
 Whence he is summoned on a sudden now,  
 Informed that she, he thought to save, is lost,  
 And, in a breath, bidden re-tell his tale,  
 Since the first telling somehow missed effect,  
 And then advise in the matter. There stands 1095  
 he,  
 While the same grim black-panelled chamber  
 blinks  
 As though rubbed shiny with the sins of Rome  
 Told the same oak for ages—wave-washed  
 wall  
 Against which sets a sea of wickedness. 1099  
 There, where you yesterday heard Guido speak,  
 Speaks Caponsacchi; and there face him too  
 Tommati, Venturini and the rest  
 Who, eight months earlier, scarce repressed  
 the smile,  
 Forewent the wink; waived recognition so  
 Of peccadillos incident to youth, 1105  
 Especially youth high-born; for youth means  
 love,  
 Vows can't change nature, priests are only men,  
 And love likes stratagem and subterfuge  
 Which age, that once was youth, should 1109  
 recognize,  
 May blame, but needs not press too hard upon.  
 Here sit the old Judges then, but with no grace  
 Of reverend carriage, magisterial port:  
 For why? The accused of eight months  
 since,—the same  
 Who cut the conscious figure of a fool,  
 Changed countenance, dropped bashful gaze  
 to ground, 1115  
 While, hesitating for an answer then,—  
<sup>1</sup> *Lutanist*: player on the lute.

Now is grown judge himself, terrifies now  
 This, now the other culprit called a judge,  
 Whose turn it is to stammer and look strange,  
 As he speaks rapidly, angrily, speech that  
 smites: 1079  
 And they keep silence, bear blow after blow,  
 Because the seeming-solitary man,  
 Speaking for God, may have an audience too,  
 Invisible, no discreet judge provokes.  
 How the priest Caponsacchi said his say. 1075  
 Then a soul sighs its lowest and its last  
 After the loud ones,—so much breath remains  
 Unused by the four-days'-dying; for she lived  
 Thus long, miraculously long, 'twas thought,  
 Just that Pompilia might defend herself. 1089  
 How, while the hireling and the alien stoop,  
 Comfort, yet question,—since the time is brief,  
 And folk, allowably inquisitive,  
 Encircle the low pallet where she lies 1094  
 In the good house that helps the poor to die,—  
 Pompilia tells the story of her life.  
 For friend and lover,—leech and man of law  
 Do service; busy helpful ministrants  
 As varied in their calling as their mind, 1098  
 Temper and age: and yet from all of these,  
 About the white bed under the arched roof,  
 Is somehow, as it were, evolved a one,—  
 Small separate sympathies combined and large,  
 Nothing that were, grown something very  
 much:  
 As if the bystanders gave each his straw, 1106  
 All he had, though a trifle in itself,  
 Which, plaited all together, made a Cross  
 Fit to die looking on and praying with,  
 Just as well as if ivory or gold.  
 So, to the common kindness she speaks, 1109  
 There being scarce more privacy at the last  
 For mind than body: but she is used to bear,  
 And only unused to the brotherly look.  
 How she endeavoured to explain her life.  
 Then, since a Trial ensued, a touch o' the same  
 To sober us, flustered with frothy talk, 1116  
 And teach our common sense its helplessness.  
 For why deal simply with divining-rod,  
 Scrape where we fancy secret sources flow,  
 And ignore law, the recognized machine, 1119

Elaborate display of pipe and wheel  
 Framed to unchoke, pump up and pour apace  
 Truth till a flowery foam shall wash the world?  
 The patent truth-extracting process,—ha?  
 Let us make that grave mystery turn one wheel;  
 Give you a single grind of law at least! 1116  
 One orator, of two on either side,  
 Shall teach us the puissance of the tongue  
 —That is, o' the pen which simulated tongue  
 On paper and saved all except the sound 1120  
 Which never was. Law's speech beside law's  
 thought?

That were too stunning, too immense an odds:  
 That point of vantage law lets nobly pass.  
 One lawyer shall admit us to behold  
 The manner of the making out a case, 1125  
 First fashion of a speech; the chick in egg,  
 The masterpiece law's bosom incubates.  
 How Don Giacinto of the Arcangeli,  
 Called Procurator of the Poor at Rome,  
 Now advocate for Guido and his mates,— 1130  
 The jolly learned man of middle age,  
 Cheek and jowl all in laps with fat and law,  
 Mirthful as mighty, yet, as great hearts use,  
 Despite the name and fame that tempt our flesh,  
 Constant to that devotion of the hearth, 1135  
 Still captive in those dear domestic ties!—  
 How he,—having a cause to triumph with,  
 All kind of interests to keep intact,  
 More than one efficacious personage  
 To tranquillize, conciliate and secure, 1140  
 And above all, public anxiety  
 To quiet, show its Guido in good hands,—  
 Also, as if such burdens were too light,  
 A certain family-feast to claim his care,  
 The birthday-banquet for the only son— 1145  
 Paternity at smiling strife with law—  
 How he brings both to buckle in one bond;  
 And, thick at throat, with waterish under-  
 eye,  
 Turns to his task and settles in his seat 1150  
 And puts his utmost means in practice now:  
 Wheezes out law-phrase, whiffles Latin forth,  
 And, just as though roast lamb would never  
 be,  
 Makes logic levigate<sup>1</sup> the big crime small:

<sup>1</sup> *Levigato*: make light.

Rubs palm on palm, rakes foot with itchy  
 foot,  
 Conceives and inchoates the argument, 1155  
 Sprinkling each flower appropriate to the  
 time,  
 —Ovidian quip or Ciceronian crank,  
 A-bubble in the larynx while he laughs,  
 As he had fritters deep down frying there. 1160  
 How he turns, twists, and tries the oily thing  
 Shall be—first speech for Guido 'gainst the  
 Fisc.

Then with a skip as it were from heel to  
 head,  
 Leaving yourselves fill up the middle bulk:  
 O' the Trial, reconstruct its shape august,  
 From such exordium clap we to the close; 1165  
 Give you, if we dare wing to such a height,  
 The absolute glory in some full-grown speech  
 On the other side, some finished butterfly,  
 Some breathing diamond-flake with leaf-gold  
 fans, 1170  
 That takes the air, no trace of worm it was,  
 Or cabbage-bed it had production from.  
 Giovambattista o' the Bottini, Fisc,  
 Pompilia's patron by the chance of the hour,  
 To-morrow her persecutor,—composite, he,  
 As becomes who must meet such various  
 calls— 1175  
 Odds of age joined in him with ends of youth.  
 A man of ready smile and facile tear,  
 Improvised hopes, despairs at nod and beck,  
 And language—ah, the gift of eloquence!  
 Language that goes, goes, easy as a glove, 1180  
 O'er good and evil, smoothens both to one.  
 Rashness helps caution with him, fires the  
 straw,  
 In free enthusiastic careless fit,  
 On the first proper pinnacle of rock  
 Which offers, as reward for all that zeal, 1185  
 To lure some bark to founder and bring gain:  
 While calm sits Caution, rapt with heaven-  
 ward eye,  
 A true confessor's gaze, amid the glare  
 Beaconing to the breaker, death and hell.  
 "Well done, thou good and faithful!" she  
 approves:  
 "Hadst thou let slip a faggot to the beach, 1191



"The crew might surely spy thy precipice,  
And save their boat; the simple and the slow

"Might so, forsooth, forestall the wrecker's fee!

"Let the next crew be wise and hail in time!" 1186

Just so compounded is the outside man,  
Blue juvenile pure eye and pippin cheek,  
And brow all prematurely soiled and seamed  
With sudden age, bright devastated hair. 1189  
Ah, but you miss the very tones o' the voice,  
The scranell pipe that screams in heights of head,

As, in his modest studio, all alone,  
The tall wight stands a-tiptoe, strives and strains,

Both eyes shut, like the cockerel that would crow,

Tries to his own self amorously o'er 1195  
What never will be uttered else than so—

Since to the four walls, Forum and Mars' Hill,  
Speaks out the poesy which, penned, turns prose.

Clavecinist<sup>1</sup> debarred his instrument,  
He yet thrums—shirking neither turn nor trill, 1199

With desperate finger on dumb table-edge—  
The sovereign rondo, shall conclude his *Suite*,  
Charm an imaginary audience there,  
From old Corelli to young Haendel, both 1204  
I' the flesh at Rome, ere he perforce go print  
The cold black score, mere music for the mind—

The last speech against Guido and his gang,  
With special end to prove Pompilia pure.  
How the Fisc vindicates Pompilia's fame.

Then comes the all but end, the ultimate, 1209  
Judgment save yours. Pope Innocent the Twelfth,

Simple, sagacious, mild yet resolute,  
With prudence, probity and—what beside  
From the other world he feels impress at times,  
Having attained to fourscore years and

How, when the court found Guido and the rest  
Guilty, but law supplied a subterfuge

And passed the final sentence to the Pope,  
He, bringing his intelligence to bear 1192  
This last time on what ball behoves him drop  
In the urn, or white or black, does drop a black,

Send five souls more to just precede his own,  
Stand him in stead and witness, if need were,  
How he is wont to do God's work on earth.  
The manner of his sitting out the dim 1199  
Droop of a sombre February day.

In the plain closet where he does such work,  
With, from all Peter's treasury, one stool,  
One table and one lathen crucifix, 1208

There sits the Pope, his thoughts for company;  
Grave but not sad,—nay, something like a cheer

Leaves the lips free to be benevolent,  
Which, all day long, did duty firm and fast.  
A cherishing there is of foot and knee.

A chafing, loose-skinned, large-veined hand  
with hand,— 1204

What steward but knows when stewardship  
earns its wage,

May levy praise, anticipate the lord?  
He reads, notes, lays the papers down at last,  
Muses, then takes a turn about the room;  
Unclasps a huge tome<sup>2</sup> in an antique guise, 1209  
Primitive print and tongue half obsolete,  
That stands him in diurnal stead; ope page,  
Finds place where falls the passage to be conned.

According to an order long in use; 1204  
And, as he comes upon the evening's chance,  
Starts somewhat, solemnizes straight his smile,  
Then reads aloud that portion first to last,  
And at the end lets flow his own thoughts forth  
Likewise aloud, for respite and relief.  
Till by the dreary relics of the west 1209  
Wan through the half-moon window, all his light,

He bows the head while the lips move in prayer,

Writes some three brief lines, signs and seals  
the same,

<sup>1</sup> A *clavecinist*: the history of the Popes;  
see the opening of Book X.

<sup>1</sup> *Clavecinist*: player on the harpsichord.

Tinkles a hand-bell, bids the obsequious Sir  
Who puts foot presently o' the closet-shelf 1266  
He watched outside of, bear as superscribed  
That mandate to the Governor forthwith :  
Then heaves abroad his cares in one good sigh,  
Traverses corridor with no arm's help, 1269  
And so to sup as a clear conscience should.  
The manner of the judgment of the Pope.

Then must speak Guido yet a second time,  
Satan's old saw being apt here—skin for skin,  
All a man hath that will he give for life.  
While life was graspable and gainable, 1275  
And bird-like buzzed her wings round Guido's  
brow,

Not much truth stiffened out the web of words  
He wove to catch her : when away she flew  
And death came, death's breath rivelled up  
the lies,

Left bare the metal thread, the fibre fine 1280  
Of truth, if the spinning : the true words  
shone last.

How Guido, to another purpose quite,  
Speaks and despairs, the last night of his life,  
In that New Prison by Castle Angelo  
At the bridge foot : the same man, another  
voice. 1285

On a stone bench in a close fetid cell,  
Where the hot vapour of an agony,  
Struck into drops on the cold wall, runs  
down—

Horrible worms made out of sweat and tears—  
There crouch, well nigh to the knees in dun-  
geon-straw, 1290  
Lit by the sole lamp suffered for their sake,  
Two awe-struck figures, this a Cardinal,  
That an Abate, both of old styled friends  
O' the thing part man part monster in the  
midst,

So changed is Franceschini's gentle blood. 1295  
The tiger-cat screams now, that whined before,  
That pried and tried and trod so gingerly,  
Till in its silkiness the trap-teeth joined ;  
Then you know how the bristling fury foams.  
They listen, this wrapped in his folds of red,  
While his feet fumble for the filth below ; 1301  
The other, as becoms a stouter heart,  
Working his best with beads and cross to baf-

The enemy that comes in like a flood  
Spite of the standard set up, verily 1299  
And in no trope at all, against him there :  
For at the prison-gate, just a few steps  
Outside, already, in the doubtful dawn,  
Thither, from this side and from that, slow  
sweep

And settle down in silence solidly, 1305  
Crow-wise, the frightful Brotherhood of Death.  
Black-hatted and black-hooded huddle they,  
Black rosaries a-dangling from each waist ;  
So take they their grim station at the door,  
Torches lit, skull-and-cross-bones-banner  
spread, 1315

And that gigantic Christ with open arms,  
Grounded. Nor lacks there aught but that  
the group

Break forth, intone the lamentable psalm,  
"Out of the deeps, Lord, have I cried to  
thee !" — 1319

When inside, from the true profound, a sign  
Shall bear intelligence that the foe is foiled,  
Count Guido Franceschini has confessed,  
And is absolved and reconciled with God.  
Then they, intoning, may begin their march,  
Make by the longest way for the People's  
Square, 1325

Carry the criminal to his crime's award :  
A mob to cleave, a scaffolding to reach,  
Two gallows and Mannaia<sup>1</sup> crowning all.  
How Guido made defence a second time.

Finally, even as thus by step and step 1330  
I led you from the level of to-day  
Up to the summit of so long ago,  
Here, whence I point you the wide prospect  
round—

Let me, by like steps, slope you back to  
smooth, 1334

Land you on mother-earth, no whit the worse,  
To feed o' the fat o' the furrow : free to dwell,  
Taste our time's better things profusely spread  
For all who love the level, corn and wine,  
Much cattle and the many-folded fleece. 1339  
Shall not my friends go feast again on sward,  
Though cognizant of country in the clouds

<sup>1</sup> Mannaia : a kind of guillotine.

Higher than wistful eagle's horny eye  
 Ever unclosed for, 'mid ancestral crags,  
 When morning broke and Spring was back  
     once more,  
 And he died, heaven, save by his heart, un-  
     reached? 1345  
 Yet heaven my fancy lifts to, ladder-like,—  
 As Jack reached, holpen of his beanstalk-  
     rungs!

A novel country: I might make it mine  
 By choosing which one aspect of the year  
 Suited mood best, and putting solely that 1350  
 On panel somewhere in the House of Fame,  
 Landscaping what I saved, not what I saw :  
 —Might fix you, whether frost in goblin-time  
 Startled the moon with his abrupt bright laugh,  
 Or, August's hair afloat in filmy fire, 1355  
 She fell, arms wide, face foremost on the world,  
 Swooned there and so singed out the strength  
     of things.

Thus were abolished Spring and Autumn both,  
 The land dwarfed to one likeness of the land,  
 Life cramped corpse-fashion. Rather learn  
     and love 1360

Each facet-flash of the revolving year!—  
 Red, green and blue that whirl into a white,  
 The variance now, the eventual unity,  
 Which make the miracle. See it for your-  
     selves, 1364

This man's act, changeable because alive!  
 Action now shrouds, nor shows the informing  
     thought;

Man, like a glass ball with a spark a-top,  
 Out of the magic fire that lurks inside,  
 Shows one tint at a time to take the eye :  
 Which, let a finger touch the silent sleep, 1370  
 Shifted a hair's-breadth shoots you dark for  
     bright,

Suffuses bright with dark, and baffles so  
 Your sentence absolute for shine or shade,  
 Once set such orbs,—white styled, black  
     stigmatized,—

A-rolling, see them once on the other side 1375  
 Your good men and your bad men every one  
 From Guido Franceschini to Guy Faux,  
 Oft would you rub your eyes and change  
     your names.

Such, British Public, ye who like me not,  
 (God love you!)—whom I yet have laboured  
     for, 1380

Perchance more careful whoso runs may read  
 Than erst when all, it seemed, could read  
     who ran,—

Perchance more careless whoso reads may  
     praise

Than late when he who praised and read and  
     wrote 1384

Was apt to find himself the self-same me,—  
 Such labour had such issue, so I wrought  
 This arc, by furtherance of such alloy,  
 And so, by one spirt, take away its trace  
 Till, justifiably golden, rounds my ring.

A ring without a posy,<sup>1</sup> and that ring mine? 1390

O lyric Love, half angel and half bird  
 And all a wonder and a wild desire,—  
 Boldest of hearts that ever braved the sun,  
 Took sanctuary within the holier blue,  
 And sang a kindred soul out to his face,— 1395  
 Yet human at the red-ripe of the heart—  
 When the first summons from the darkling  
     earth

Recherched thee amid thy chambers, blanched  
     their blue,

And bared them of the glory—to drop down,  
 To toil for man, to suffer or to die,— 1400

This is the same voice: can thy soul know  
     change?

Hail then, and hearken from the realms of  
     help!

Never may I commence my song, my due  
 To God who best taught song by gift of thee,  
 Except with bent head and beseeching  
     hand— 1405

That still, despite the distance and the dark,  
 What was, again may be; some interchange  
 Of grace, some splendour once thy very  
     thought,

Some benediction anciently thy smile: 1409

—Never conclude, but raising hand and head  
 Thither where eyes, that cannot reach, yet yearn  
 For all hope, all sustenance, all reward,

<sup>1</sup> *Posy*: a motto or rhyme, engraved inside  
 a ring.

Their utmost up and on,—so blessing back  
In those thy realms of help, that heaven thy  
home,  
Some whiteness which, I judge, thy face  
makes proud, 145  
Some wanness where, I think, thy foot may  
fall !

## II.—HALF-ROME.

WHAT, you, Sir, come too? (Just the man  
I'd meet.)

Be ruled by me and have a care o' the crowd:  
This way, while fresh folk go and get their  
gaze :

I'll tell you like a book and save your shins.  
Fie, what a roaring day we've had ! Whose  
fault ?

Lorenzo in Lucina,—here's a church  
To hold a crowd at need, accommodate  
All comers from the Corso ! If this crush  
Make not its priests ashamed of what they show  
For temple-room, don't prick them to draw  
purse 10

And down with bricks and mortar, eke us out  
The beggarly transept with its bit of apse  
Into a decent space for Christian ease,  
Why, to-day's lucky pearl is cast to swine.  
Listen and estimate the luck they've had ! 15  
(The right man, and I hold him.)

Sir, do you see,  
They laid both bodies in the church, this morn  
The first thing, on the chancel two steps up,  
Behind the little marble balustrade ; 20  
Disposed them, Pietro the old murdered fool  
To the right of the altar, and his wretched wife  
On the other side. In trying to count stabs,  
People supposed Violante showed the most,  
Till somebody explained us that mistake ; 25  
His wounds had been dealt out indifferent  
where,

But she took all her stabbings in the face,  
Since punished thus solely for honour's sake,  
*Honoris causa*, that's the proper term.

A delicacy there is, our gallants hold, 30  
When you avenge your honour and only then,  
That you disfigure the subject, fray the face,

Not just take life and end, in clownish guise.  
It was Violante gave the first offence,  
Got therefore the conspicuous punishment : 35  
While Pietro, who helped merely, his mere  
death

Answered the purpose, so his face went free.  
We fancied even, free as you please, that face  
Showed itself still intolerably wronged ;  
Was wrinkled over with resentment yet, 40  
Nor calm at all, as murdered faces use,  
Once the worst ended : an indignant air  
O' the head there was—'tis said the body turned  
Round and away, rolled from Violante's side  
Where they had laid it loving-husband-like.

If so, if corpses can be sensitive, 45  
Why did not he roll right down altar-step,  
Roll on through nave, roll fairly out of church,  
Deprive Lorenzo of the spectacle,  
Pay back thus the succession of affronts 50  
Whereto this church had served as theatre ?  
For see : at that same altar where he lies,  
To that same inch of step, was brought the  
babe

For blessing after baptism, and there styled  
Pompilia, and a string of names beside, 55  
By his bad wife, some seventeen years ago,  
Who purchased her simply to palm on him,  
Flatter his dotage and defraud the heirs.  
Wait awhile ! Also to this very step  
Did this Violante, twelve years afterward, 60  
Bring, the mock-mother, that child-cheat  
full-grown,

Pompilia, in pursuance of her plot,  
And there brave God and man a second time  
By linking a new victim to the lie. 65  
There, having made a match unknown to him,  
She, still unknown to Pietro, tied the knot  
Which nothing cuts except this kind of knife ;  
Yes, made her daughter, as the girl was held,  
Marry a man, and honest man beside,  
And man of birth to boot,—clandestinely 70  
Because of this, because of that, because  
O' the devil's will to work his worst for once,—  
Confident she could top her part at need  
And, when her husband must be told in turn,  
Ply the wife's trade, play off the sex's trick 75  
And, alternating worry with quiet qualms,  
Bravado with submissiveness, prettily fool

Her Pietro into patience : so it proved.  
 Ay, 'tis four years since man and wife they  
     grew,  
 This Guido Franceschini and this same 80  
 Pompilia, foolishly thought, falsely declared  
 A Comparini and the couple's child :  
 Just at this altar, where, beneath the piece  
 Of Master Guido Reni, Christ on cross,  
 Second to nought observable in Rome, 85  
 That couple lie now, murdered yestereve.  
 Even the blind can see a providence here.

From dawn till now that it is growing dusk  
 A multitude has flocked and filled the church,  
 Coming and going, coming back again, 90  
 Till to count crazed one. Rome was at the  
     show.

People climbed up the columns, fought for  
     spikes

O' the chapel-rail to perch themselves upon,  
 Jumped over and so broke the wooden work  
 Painted like porphyry to deceive the eye ; 95  
 Serve the priests right ! The organ-loft was  
     crammed,

Women were fainting, no few fights ensued,  
 In short, it was a show repaid your pains :  
 For, though their room was scant undoubtedly,  
 Yet they did manage matters, to be just, 100  
 A little at this Lorenzo. Body o' me !  
 I saw a body exposed once . . . never mind !  
 Enough that here the bodies had their due.  
 No stinginess in wax, a row all round,  
 And one big taper at each head and foot. 105

So, people pushed their way, and took their  
     turn,

Saw, threw their eyes up, crossed themselves,  
     gave place

To pressure from behind, since all the world  
 Knew the old pair, could talk the tragedy  
 Over from first to last : Pompilia too, 110  
 Those who had known her—what 'twas worth  
     to them !

Guido's acquaintance was in less request ;  
 The Count had lounged somewhat too long  
     in Rome,

Made himself cheap ; with him were hand  
     and glove

Barbers and blear-eyed, as the ancient<sup>1</sup> sings.  
 Also he is alive and like to be : 115

Had he considerably died,—aha !  
 I jostled Luca Cini on his staff,

Mute in the midst, the whole man one  
     amaze, 119

Staring amain and crossing brow and breast.  
 "How now?" asked I. "'Tis seventy  
     years," quoth he,

"Since I first saw, holding my father's hand,  
 "Bodies set forth : a many have I seen,  
 "Yet all was poor to this I live and see. 124

"Here the world's wickedness seals up the sum:  
 "What with Molinos' doctrine and this deed,

"Antichrist surely comes and doomsday's near.  
 "May I depart in peace, I have seen my see."

"Depart then," I advised, "nor block the road  
 "For youngsters still behindhand with such  
     sights !" 130

"Why no," rejoins the venerable sire,  
 "I know it's horrid, hideous past belief,

"Burdensome far beyond what eye can bear ;  
 "But they do promise, when Pompilia dies

"I' the course o' the day,—and she can't  
     outlive night,— 135

"They'll bring her body also to expose  
 "Beside the parents, one, two, three a-braist !

"That were indeed a sight, which might I see,  
 "I trust I should not last to see the like !"

Whereat I bade the senior spare his shanks, 140  
 Since doctors give her till to-night to live,

And tell us how the butchery happened. "Ah,  
 "But you can't know!" sighs he, "I'll not

    despair :  
 "Beside I'm useful at explaining things—

"As, how the dagger laid there at the feet, 145  
 "Caused the peculiar cuts ; I mind its make,

"Triangular i' the blade, a Genoese,  
 "Armed with those little hook-teeth on the

    edge  
 "To open in the flesh nor shut again :

"I like to teach a novice : I shall stay !" 150  
 And stay he did, and stay be sure he will.

A personage came by the private door  
 At noon to have his look : I name no names :

<sup>1</sup> *The ancient* : Horace (*Sat.* i. 7, 3, "Omnibus et lippis notum et tonsoribus").

Well then, His Eminence the Cardinal,  
Whose servitor in honourable sort  
Guido was once, the same who made the  
match,  
(Will you have the truth?) whereof we see  
effect.

No sooner whisper ran he was arrived  
Than up pops Curate Carlo, a brisk lad,  
Who never lets a good occasion slip,  
And volunteers improving the event.  
We looked he'd give the history's self some  
help,

Treat us to how the wife's confession went  
(This morning she confessed her crime, we  
know)

And, may-be, throw in something of the  
Priest—

If he's not ordered back, punished anew,  
The gallant, Caponsacchi, Lucifer  
I' the garden where Pompilia, Eve-like, lured  
Her Adam Guido to his fault and fall!

Think you we got a sprig of speech akin  
To this from Carlo, with the Cardinal there?  
Too wary he was, too widely awake, I trow.  
He did the murder in a dozen words;  
Then said that all such outrages crop forth  
I' the course of nature when Molinos' tares  
Are sown for wheat, flourish and choke the  
Church:

So slid on to the abominable sect  
And the philosophic sin—we've heard all that,  
And the Cardinal too, (who book-made on  
the same)

But, for the murder, left it where he found.  
Oh but he's quick, the Curate, minds his game!  
And, after all, we have the main o' the fact:  
Case could not well be simpler,—mapped, as  
it were,

We follow the murder's maze from source  
to sea,

By the red line, past mistake: one sees indeed  
Not only how all was and must have been,  
But cannot other than be to the end of time.  
Turn out here by the Ruspoli! Do you hold  
Guido was so prodigiously to blame?

A certain cousin of yours has told you so?  
Exactly! Here's a friend shall set you right,  
Let him but have the handseel of your ear.

These wretched Comparini were once gay!  
And galliard, of the modest middle class:  
Born in this quarter seventy years ago  
And married young, they lived the accustomed  
life,

Citizens as they were of good repute:  
And, childless, naturally took their ease:  
With only their two selves to care about  
And use the wealth for: wealthy is the word,  
Since Pietro was possessed of house and land—  
And specially one house, when good days  
smiled,

In Via Vittoria, the aspectable street  
Where he lived mainly; but another house  
Of less pretension did he buy betimes,  
The villa, meant for jaunts and jollity,  
I' the Pauline district, to be private there—  
Just what puts murder in an enemy's head.  
Moreover,—here's the worm i' the core, the  
germ

O' the rottenness and ruin which arrived,  
He owned some usufruct, had moneys' use  
Lifelong, but to determine with his life  
In heirs' default: so, Pietro craved an heir,  
(The story always old and always new)  
Shut his fool's-eyes fast on the visible good  
And wealth for certain, opened them owl-wide  
On fortune's sole piece of forgetfulness,  
The child that should have been and would  
not be.

Hence, seventeen years ago, conceive his glee  
When first Violante, 'twixt a smile and blush,  
With touch of agitation proper too,  
Announced that, spite of her unpromising age,  
The miracle would in time be manifest,  
An heir's birth was to happen: and it did.  
Somehow or other,—how, all in good time!  
By a trick, a sleight of hand you are to hear,  
A child was born! Pompilia, for his joy,  
Playing at once and prop, a fairy-gift,  
A saints' grace or, say, grant of the good  
God,—

A fiddle-pin's end! What imbecities are we!  
Look now: if some one could have prophesied,  
"For love of you, for liking to your wife,  
"I undertake to crush a snake I spy  
"Settling itself i' the soft of both your breasts.

"Give me you babe to strangle painlessly!  
 "She'll soon to the safe: you'll have your  
 crying out,

"Then sleep, then wake, then sleep, then  
 end your days

"In peace and plenty, mixed with mild regret,  
 "Thirty years hence when Christmas takes  
 old folk"—

How had old Pietro sprung up, crossed him-  
 self,

And kicked the conjuror! Whereas you and I,  
 Being wise with after-wit, had clapped our  
 hands;

Nay, added, in the old fool's interest,

"Strangle the black-eyed babe, so far so good,

"But on condition you relieve the man

"O' the wife and throttle him Violante too—

"She is the mischief!"

We had hit the mark.

She, whose trick brought the babe into the  
 world,

She it was, when the babe was grown a girl,  
 Judged a new trick should reinforce the old,  
 Send vigour to the lie now somewhat spent  
 By twelve years' service; lest Eve's rule  
 decline

Over this Adam of hers, whose cabbage-plot  
 Throve dubiously since turned fools'-paradise,  
 Spite of a nightingale on every stump.

Pietro's estate was dwindling day by day,  
 While he, rapt far above such mundane care,  
 Crawled all-fours with his baby pick-a-back,  
 Sat at serene cats'-cradle with his child,  
 Or took the measured tallness, top to toe,  
 Of what was grown a great girl twelve years  
 old:

Till sudden at the door a tap discreet,  
 A visitor's premonitory cough,  
 And poverty had reached him in her rounds.

This came when he was past the working-  
 time,

Had learned to dandle and forgot to dig,  
 And who must but Violante cast about,  
 Contrive and task that head of hers again?  
 She who had caught one fish, could make  
 that catch

A bigger still, in angler's policy:  
 So, with an angler's mercy for the bait,  
 Her minnow was set wriggling on its barb  
 And tossed to mid-stream; which means,  
 this grown girl

With the great eyes and bounty of black hair  
 And first crisp youth that tempts a jaded taste,  
 Was whisked i' the way of a certain man,  
 who snapped.

Count Guido Franceschini the Aretine<sup>1</sup>  
 Was head of an old noble house enough,  
 Not over-rich, you can't have everything,  
 But such a man as riches rub against,  
 Readily stick to,—one with a right to them  
 Born in the blood: 'twas in his very brow  
 Always to knit itself against the world,  
 Beforehand so, when that world stinted due  
 Service and suit: the world ducks and defers.  
 As such folks do, he had come up to Rome  
 To better his fortune, and, since many years,  
 Was friend and follower of a cardinal;  
 Waiting the rather thus on providence  
 That a shrewd younger poorer brother yet,  
 The Abate Paolo, a regular priest,  
 Had long since tried his powers and found  
 he swam

With the deftest on the Galilean pool:  
 But then he was a web-foot, free o' the wave,  
 And no ambiguous dab-chick hatched to strut,  
 Humbled by any fond attempt to swim  
 When fiercer fowl usurped his dunghill top—  
 A whole priest, Paolo, no mere piece of one  
 Like Guido tacked thus to the Church's tail!  
 Guido moreover, as the head o' the house,  
 Claiming the main prize, not the lesser luck,  
 The centre lily, no mere chickweed fringe.

He waited and learned waiting, thirty years;  
 Got promise, missed performance — what  
 would you have?

No petty post rewards a nobleman  
 For spending youth in splendid lackey-work,  
 And there's concurrence for each rarer prize:  
 When that falls, rougher hand and readier foot  
 Push aside Guido spite of his black looks.

<sup>1</sup> *Aretine*: native of Arezzo.

## HALF-ROME

The end was, Guido, when the warning  
showed,  
The first white hair i' the glass, gave up the  
game,  
Determined on returning to his town,  
Making the best of bad incurable, 314  
Patching the old palace up and lingering there  
The customary life out with his kin,  
Where honour helps to spice the scanty bread.

Just as he trimmed his lamp and girt his loins  
To go his journey and be wise at home,  
In the right mood of disappointed worth, 320  
Who but Violante sudden spied her prey  
(Where was I with that angler-sinile?)  
And threw her bait, Pompilia, where he  
sulked—  
A gleam i' the gloom !

What if he gained thus much,  
Wrung out this sweet drop from the bitter  
Past, 326  
Bore off this rose-bud from the prickly brake  
To justify such torn clothes and scratched  
hands,  
And, after all, brought something back from  
Rome ?  
Would not a wife serve at Arezzo well 330  
To light the dark house, lend a look of youth  
To the mother's face grown meagre, left alone  
And famished with the emptiness of hope,  
Old Donna Beatrice ? Wife you want  
Would you play family-representative, 335  
Carry you elder-brotherly, high and right  
O'er what may prove the natural petulance  
Of the third brother, younger, greedier still,  
Girolamo, also a fledgeling priest,  
Beginning life in turn with callow beak 340  
Agape for luck, no luck had stopped and  
stilled.  
Such were the pinks and greys about the bait  
Persuaded Guido gulp down hook and all.

What constituted him so choice a catch,  
You question ? Past his prime and poor  
beside ! 345  
Ask that of any she who knows the trade.  
Why first, here was a nobleman with friends,

A palace one might run to and be safe  
When presently the threatened fate should fall,  
A big-browed master to block door-way up,  
Parley with people bent on pushing by 351  
And praying the mild Pietro quick clear  
scores :  
Is birth a privilege and power or no ?  
Also,—but judge of the result desired,  
By the price paid and manner of the sale. 355  
The Count was made woo, win and wed at  
once :  
Asked, and was haled for answer, lest the  
heat  
Should cool, to San Lorenzo, one blind eve,  
And had Pompilia put into his arms  
O' the sly there, by a hasty candle-blink, 360  
With sanction of some priest-confederate  
Properly paid to make short work and sure.

So did old Pietro's daughter change her style  
For Guido Franceschini's lady-wife  
Ere Guido knew it well ; and why this haste  
And scramble and indecent secrecy ? 365  
" Lest Pietro, all the while in ignorance,  
" Should get to learn, gainsay and break the  
match :  
" His peevishness had promptly put aside  
" Such honour and refused the proffered  
boon, 370  
" Pleased to become authoritative once.  
" She remedied the wilful man's mistake—"  
Did our discreet Violante. Rather say,  
Thus did she, lest the object of her game, 374  
Guido the gulled one, give him but a chance,  
A moment's respite, time for thinking twice,  
Might count the cost before he sold himself,  
'And try the clink of coin they paid him with.  
But coin paid, bargain struck and business  
done,  
Once the clandestine marriage over thus, 380  
All parties made perforce the best o' the fact ;  
Pietro could play vast indignation off,  
Be ignorant and astounded, dupe, poor soul,  
Please you, of daughter, wife and son-in-law,  
While Guido found himself in flagrant fault, 385  
Must e'en do suit and service, soothe, subdue  
A father not unreasonably chafed



# THE RING AND THE BOOK

Bring him to terms by paying son's devoir.  
Pleasant initiation !

The end, this : 380

Guido's broad back was saddled to bear all—  
Pietro, Violante, and Pompilia too,—  
Three lots cast confidently in one lap,  
Three dead-weights with one arm to lift the  
three

Out of their limbo up to life again. 385  
The Roman household was to strike fresh  
root

In a new soil, graced with a novel name,  
Gilt with an alien glory, Aretine  
Henceforth and never Roman any more,  
By treaty and engagement ; thus it ran : 400  
Pompilia's dowry for Pompilia's self  
As a thing of course,—she paid her own  
expense ;

No loss nor gain there : but the couple, you  
see,

They, for their part, turned over first of all  
Their fortune in its rags and rottenness 405  
To Guido, fusion and confusion, he  
And his with them and theirs,—whatever rag  
With coin residuary fell on floor  
When Brother Paolo's energetic shake  
Should do the relics justice : since 'twas  
thought, 410

Once vulnerable Pietro out of reach,  
That, left at Rome as representative,  
The Abate, backed by a potent patron here,  
And otherwise with purple flushing him,  
Might play a good game with the creditor, 415  
Make up a moiety which, great or small,  
Should go to the common stock—if anything,  
Guido's, so far repayment of the cost  
About to be,—and if, as looked more like,  
Nothing,—why, all the nobler cost were his  
Who guaranteed, for better or for worse, 421  
To Pietro and Violante, house and home,  
Kith and kin, with the pick of company  
And life o' the fat o' the land while life should  
last.

How say you to the bargain at first blush ? 425  
Why did a middle-aged not-silly man  
Show himself thus besotted all at once ?  
Quoth Solomon, one black eye does it all.

They went to Arezzo,—Pietro and his spouse,  
With just the dusk o' the day of life to spend,  
Eager to use the twilight, taste a treat, 431  
Enjoy for once with neither stay nor stint  
The luxury of lord-and-lady-ship,  
And realize the stuff and nonsense long  
A-simmer in their noddles ; vent the fume 435  
Born there and bred, the citizen's conceit  
How fares nobility while crossing earth,  
What rampart or invisible body-guard  
Keeps off the taint of common life from such.  
They had not fed for nothing on the tales 440  
Of grandees who give banquets worthy Jove,  
Spending gold as if Plutus paid a whim,  
Served with obeisances as when . . . what  
God ?

I'm at the end of my tether ; 'tis enough  
You understand what they came primed to  
see : 445

While Guido who should minister the sight,  
Stay all this qualmish greediness of soul  
With apples and with flagons—for his part,  
Was set on life diverse as pole from pole : 450  
Lust of the flesh, lust of the eye,—what else  
Was he just now awake from, sick and sage,  
After the very debauch they would begin ?—  
Suppose such stuff and nonsense really were.  
That bubble, they were bent on blowing big,  
He had blown already till he burst his  
cheeks, 455

And hence found soapsuds bitter to the tongue.  
He hoped now to walk softly all his days  
In soberness of spirit, if haply so,  
Pinching and paring he might furnish forth  
A frugal board, bare sustenance, no more, 460  
Till times, that could not well grow worse,  
should mend.

Thus minded then, two parties mean to meet  
And make each other happy. The first week,  
And fancy strikes fact and explodes in full.  
"This," shrieked the Comparini, "this the  
Count, 465  
"The palace, the signorial privilege,  
"The pomp and pageantry were promised us ?  
"For this have we exchanged our liberty,  
"Our competence, our darling of a child ?  
"To house as spectres in a sepulchre 470

"Under this black stone-heap, the street's disgrace,

"Grimmest as that is of the gruesome town,

"And here pick garbage on a pewter plate

"Or cough at verjuice dripped from earthen-ware?

"Oh Via Vittoria, oh the other place 475

"I' the Pauline, did we give you up for this?

"Where's the foregone housekeeping good and gay,

"The neighbourliness, the companionship,

"The treat and feast when holidays came round, 479

"The daily feast that seemed no treat at all,

"Called common by the uncommon fools we were!

"Even the sun that used to shine at Rome,

"Where is it? Robbed and starved and frozen too,

"We will have justice, justice if there be!"

Did not they shout, did not the town resound!

Guido's old lady-mother Beatrice, 488

Who since her husband, Count Tommaso's death,

Had held sole sway i' the house,—the doited crone

Slow to acknowledge, curtsy and abdicate,—

Was recognized of true novercal type, 490

Dragon and devil. His brother Girolamo

Came next in order: priest was he? The worse!

No way of winning him to leave his mumps

And help the laugh against old ancestry

And formal habits long since out of date, 495

Letting his youth be patterned on the mode

Approved of where Violante laid down law.

Or did he brighten up by way of change,

Dispose himself for affability?

The malapert, too complaisant by half 500

To the alarmed young novice of a bride!

Let him go buzz, betake himself elsewhere

Nor singe his fly-wings in the candle-flame!

Four months' probation of this purgatory,

Dog-snap and bat-claw, curse and counterblast, 505

The devil's self were sick of his own din;

And Pietro, after trumpeting huge wrongs.

At church and market-place, pillar and post,  
Square's corner, street's end, now the palace-  
step

And now the wine-house bench—while, on

her side, 510

Violante up and down was voluble

In whatsoever pair of ears would perk

From goody, gossip, cater-cousin and sib,

Curious to peep at the inside of things

And catch in the act pretentious poverty 515

At its wits' end to keep appearance up,

Make both ends meet,—nothing the vulgar

loves

Like what this couple pitched them right and

left.

Then, their worst done that way, both struck

tent, marched:

—Renounced their share o' the bargain, flung

what dues 520

Guido was bound to pay, in Guido's face,

Left their hearts'-darling, treasure of the twain

And so forth, the poor inexperienced bride,

To her own devices, bade Arezzo rot,

Cursed life signorial, and sought Rome once

more. 525

I see the comment ready on your lip,

"The better fortune, Guido's—free at least

"By this defection of the foolish pair,

"He could begin make profit in some sort 530

"Of the young bride and the new quietness,

"Lead his own life now, henceforth breathe

unplagued."

Could he? You know the sex like Guido's self.

Learn the Violante-nature!

Once in Rome,

By way of helping Guido lead such life, 540

Her first act to inaugurate return

Was, she got pricked in conscience: Jubilee

Gave her the hint. Our Pope, as kind as just,

Attained his eighty years, announced a boon

Should make us bless the fact, held Jubi-

lee— 545

Short shrift, prompt pardon for the light

offence,

And no rough dealing with the regular crime

So this occasion were not suffered slip—

Otherwise, sins commuted as before,  
Without the least abatement in the price. 345  
Now, who had thought it? All this while,  
it seems,

Our sage Violante had a sin of a sort  
She must compound for now or not at all.  
Now be the ready riddance! She confessed  
Pompilia was a fable not a fact: 350  
She never bore a child in her whole life.  
Had this child been a changeling, that were  
grace

In some degree, exchange is hardly theft,  
You take your stand on truth ere leap your lie:  
Here was all lie, no touch of truth at all, 355  
All the lie hers—not even Pietro guessed  
He was as childless still as twelve years since.  
The babe had been a find i' the filth-heap, Sir,  
Catch from the kennel! There was found at  
Rome,

Down in the deepest of our social dregs, 360  
A woman who professed the wanton's trade  
Under the requisite thin coverture,  
*Communis meretrix* and washer-wife:  
The creature thus conditioned found by chance  
Motherhood like a jewel in the muck, 365  
And straightway either trafficked with her prize  
Or listened to the tempter and let be,—  
Made pact abolishing her place and part  
In womankind, beast-fellowship indeed. 369  
She sold this babe eight months before its birth  
To our Violante, Pietro's honest spouse,  
Well-famed and widely-instanced as that  
crown

To the husband, virtue in a woman's shape.  
She it was, bought, paid for, passed off the  
thing

As very flesh and blood and child of her 375  
Despite the flagrant fifty years,—and why?  
Partly to please old Pietro, fill his cup  
With wine at the late hour when lees are left,  
And send him from life's feast rejoicingly,—  
Partly to cheat the rightful heirs, agape, 380  
Each uncle's cousin's brother's son of him,  
For that same principal of the usufruct<sup>1</sup>  
It vexed him he must die and leave behind.

<sup>1</sup> *Principal of the usufruct*: i.e., the principal sum, in which Pietro had only a life-interest or usufruct.

Such was the sin had come to be confessed,  
Which of the tales, the first or last, was true?  
Did she so sin once, or, confessing now, 385  
Sin for the first time? Either way you will,  
One sees a reason for the cheat: one sees  
A reason for a cheat in owning cheat  
Where no cheat had been. What of the  
revenge? 390

What prompted the contrition all at once,  
Made the avowal easy, the shame slight?  
Why, prove they but Pompilia not their child,  
No child, no dowry! this, supposed their  
child,  
Had claimed what this, shown alien to their  
blood; 395  
Claimed nowise: Guido's claim was through  
his wife,  
Null then and void with hers. The bitter bit,  
Do you see! For such repayment of the past,  
One might conceive the penitential pair  
Ready to bring their case before the courts, 400  
Publish their infamy to all the world  
And, arm in arm, go chuckling thence content.

Is this your view? 'Twas Guido's anyhow  
And colourable: he came forward then,  
Protested in his very bride's behalf 405  
Against this lie and all it led to, least  
Of all the loss o' the dowry; no! From her  
And him alike he would expunge the blot,  
Erase the brand of such a bestial birth,  
Participate in no hideous heritage 410  
Gathered from the gutter to be garnered up  
And glorified in a palace. Peter and Paul!  
But that who likes may look upon the pair  
Exposed in yonder church, and show his skill  
By saying which is eye and which is mouth 415  
Thro' those stabs thick and threefold,—but  
for that—

A strong word on the liars and their lie  
Might crave expression and obtain it, Sir!  
—Though prematurely, since there's more to  
come, 419  
More that will shake your confidence in things  
Your cousin tells you,—may I be so bold?

This makes the first act of the farce,—anon  
The sombre element comes stealing in!

Till all is black or blood-red in the piece.  
 Guido, thus made a laughing-stock abroad, 638  
 A proverb for the market-place at home,  
 Left alone with Pompilia now, this graft  
 So reputable on his ancient stock,  
 This plague-seed set to fester his sound flesh,  
 What does the Count? Revenge him on his  
 wife? 639

Unfasten at all risks to rid himself  
 The noisome lazar-badger, fall foul of fate,  
 And, careless whether the poor rag was 'ware  
 O' the part it played, or helped unwittingly,  
 Bid it go burn and leave his frayed flesh free?  
 Plainly, did Guido open both doors wide, 638  
 Spurn thence the cur-cast creature and clear  
 scores

As man might, tempted in extreme like this?  
 No, birth and breeding, and compassion too  
 Saved her such scandal. She was young, he  
 thought, 640

Not privy to the treason, punished most  
 I' the proclamation of it; why make her  
 A party to the crime she suffered by?  
 Then the black eyes were now her very own,  
 Not any more *Violante's*: let her live, 645  
 Lose in a new air, under a new sun,  
 The taint of the imputed parentage  
 Truly or falsely, take no more the touch  
 Of *Pietro* and his partner anyhow!  
 All might go well yet. 350

So she thought, herself,  
 It seems, since what was her first act and deed  
 When news came how these kindly ones at  
 Rome  
 Had stripped her naked to amuse the world  
 With spots here, spots there and spots every-  
 where? 655

—For I should tell you that they noised abroad  
 Not merely the main scandal of her birth,  
 But slanders written, printed, published wide,  
 Pamphlets which set forth all the pleasantries  
 Of how the promised glory was a dream, 660  
 The power a bubble, and the wealth—why,  
 dust.

There was a picture, painted to the life,  
 Of those rare doings, that superlative  
 Initiation in magnificence

Conferred on a poor Roman family 665  
 By favour of *Arezzo* and her first  
 And famous, the *Franceschini* there.  
 You had the Countship holding head aloft  
 Bravely although bespattered, shifts and straits  
 In keeping out o' the way o' the wheels o'  
 the world, 670

The comic of those home-contrivances  
 When the old lady-mother's wit was taxed  
 To find six clamorous mouths in food more real  
 Than fruit plucked off the cobwebbed family-  
 tree, 674

Or acorns shed from its gilt mouldered frame—  
 Cold glories served up with stale fame for sauce.  
 What, I ask,—when the drunkenness of hate  
 Hiccaped return for hospitality,  
 Befouled the table they had feasted on,  
 Or say,—God knows I'll not prejudice the  
 case,— 680

Grievances thus distorted, magnified,  
 Coloured by quarrel into calumny,—  
 What side did our *Pompilia* first espouse?  
 Her first deliberate measure was—she wrote,  
 Pricked by some loyal impulse, straight to  
 Rome 685

And her husband's brother the *Abate* there,  
 Who, having managed to effect the match,  
 Might take men's censure for its ill success.  
 She made a clean breast also in her turn,  
 And qualified the couple properly, 690  
 Since whose departure, hell, she said, was  
 heaven,

And the house, late distracted by their peals,  
 Quiet as *Carmel* where the lilies live.  
 Herself had oftentimes complained: but why?  
 All her complaints had been their prompting,  
 tales 695

Trumped up, devices to this very end.  
 Their game had been to thwart her husband's  
 love

And cross his will, malign his words and ways,  
 To reach this issue, furnish this pretence 699  
 For impudent withdrawal from their bond,—  
 Theft, indeed murder, since they meant no less  
 Whose last injunction to her simple self  
 Had been—what parents'-precept do you  
 think?

That she should follow after with all speed,

Fly from her husband's house clandestinely,  
 Join them at Rome again, but first of all: 705  
 Pick up a fresh companion in her flight,  
 So putting youth and beauty to fit use,  
 Some gay dare-devil cloak-and-rapier spark  
 Capable of adventure,—helped by whom 710  
 She, some fine eve when lutes were in the air,  
 Having put poison in the posset-cup,  
 Laid hands on money, jewels and the like,  
 And, to conceal the thing with more effect,  
 By way of parting benediction too, 715  
 Fired the house,—one would finish famously  
 I' the tumult, slip out, scurry off and away  
 And turn up merrily at home once more.  
 Fact this, and not a dream o' the devil, Sir!  
 And more than this, a fact none dare dispute,  
 Word for word, such a letter did she write, 720  
 And such the Abate read, nor simply read  
 But gave all Rome to ruminate upon,  
 In answer to such charges as, I say,  
 The couple sought to be beforehand with. 725

The cause thus carried to the courts at Rome,  
 Guido away, the Abate had no choice  
 But stand forth, take his absent brother's part,  
 Defend the honour of himself beside. 730  
 He made what head he might against the pair,  
 Maintained Pompilia's birth legitimate  
 And all her rights intact—hers, Guido's now:  
 And so far by his policy turned their flank,  
 (The enemy being beforehand in the place)  
 That,—though the courts allowed the cheat  
 for fact, 735  
 Suffered Violante to parade her shame,  
 Publish her infamy to heart's content,  
 And let the tale o' the feigned birth pass for  
 proved,—  
 Yet they stopped there, refused to intervene  
 And dispossess the innocents, befooled 740  
 By gifts o' the guilty, at guilt's new caprice.  
 They would not take away the dowry now  
 Wrongfully given at first, nor bar at all  
 Succession to the aforesaid usufruct,  
 Established on a fraud, nor play the game 745  
 Of Pietro's child and now not Pietro's child  
 As it might suit the gamester's purpose. Thus  
 Was justice ever ridiculed in Rome:  
 Such be the double verdicts favoured here

Which send away both parties to a suit 750  
 Nor puffed up nor cast down,—for each a crumb  
 Of right, for neither of them the whole loaf.  
 Whence, on the Compasini's part, appeal—  
 Counter-appeal on Guido's,—that's the game:  
 And so the matter stands, even to this hour,  
 Banded as balls are in a tennis-court, 755  
 And so might stand, unless some heart broke  
 first,  
 Till doomsday.

Leave it thus, and now revert  
 To the old Arezzo whence we moved to  
 Rome. 760  
 We've had enough o' the parents, false or true,  
 Now for a touch o' the daughter's quality.  
 The start's fair henceforth, every obstacle  
 Out of the young wife's footpath, she's alone,  
 Left to walk warily now: how does she  
 walk? 765  
 Why, once a dwelling's threshold marked and  
 crossed  
 In rubric by the enemy on his rounds  
 As eligible; as fit place of prey,  
 Baffle him henceforth, keep him out who can!  
 Stop up the door at the first hint of hoof, 770  
 Presently at the window taps a horn,  
 And Satan's by your fireside, never fear!  
 Pompilia, left alone now, found herself;  
 Found herself young too, sprightly, fair enough,  
 Matched with a husband old beyond his age  
 (Though that was something like four times  
 her own) 775  
 Because of cares past, present and to come:  
 Found too the house dull and its inmates dead,  
 So, looked outside for light and life. 779  
 And love  
 Did in a trice turn up with life and light,—  
 The man with the aureole, sympathy made  
 flesh,  
 The all-consoling Caponsacchi, Sir!  
 A priest—what else should the consoler be?  
 With goodly shoulderblade and proper leg, 785  
 A portly make and a symmetric shape,  
 And curls that clustered to the tonsure quite.  
 This was a bishop in the bud, and now  
 A canon full-blown so far, priest, and priest  
 Nowise exorbitantly overworked, 790

The courtly Christian, not so much Saint Paul  
As a saint of Caesar's household: there posed he  
Sending his god-glance after his shot shaft,  
Apollon turned Apollo, while the snake  
Pompilia writhed transfixed through all her  
spires.

He, not a visitor at Guido's house,  
Scarce an acquaintance, but in prime request  
With the magnates of Arezzo, was seen here,  
Heard there, felt everywhere in Guido's path  
If Guido's wife's path be her husband's too.  
Now he threw comfits at the theatre  
Into her lap,—what harm in Carnival?  
Now he pressed close till his foot touched  
her gown,

His hand brushed hers,—how help on prom-  
enade?  
And, ever on weighty business, found his steps  
Incline to a certain haunt of doubtful fame  
Which fronted Guido's palace by mere chance;  
While—how do accidents sometimes com-  
bine!—

Pompilia chose to cloister up her charms  
Just in a chamber that overlooked the street,  
Sat there to pray, or peep thence at mankind.

This passage of arms and wits amused the  
town.

At last the husband lifted eyebrow,—bent  
On day-book and the study how to wring  
Half the due vintage from the worn-out vines  
At the villa, tease a quarter the old rent  
From the farmstead, tenants swore would  
tumble soon,—

Pricked up his ear a-singing day and night  
With "ruin, ruin;"—and so surprised at  
last—

Why, what else but a titter? Up he jumps.  
Back to mind come those scratchings at the  
grange,

Prints of the paw about the outhouse; rife  
In his head at once again are word and wink,  
Mum here and budget<sup>1</sup> there, the smell o'  
the fox,

The musk o' the gallant. "Friends, there's  
falseness here!"

<sup>1</sup> *Mum, budget*: see Shakespeare, *Merry  
Wives of Windsor*, V. ii. 7.

The proper help of friends in such a strait  
Is waggery, the world over. Laugh him free  
O' the regular jealous-fit that's incident  
To all old husbands that wed brisk young  
wives,

And he'll go duly docile all his days.

"Somebody courts your wife, Count? Where  
and when?"

"How and why? Mere horn-madness!  
have a care!"

"Your lady loves her own room, sticks to it,  
Locks herself in for hours, you say yourself."

"And—what, it's Caponsacchi means you  
harm?"

"The Canon? We caress him, he's the  
world's,

"A man of such acceptance—never dream,  
"Though he were fifty times the fox you fear,  
"He'd risk his brush for your particular chick,  
"When the wide town's his hen-roost! Fie  
o' the fool!"

So they dispensed their comfort of a kind.  
Guido at last cried "Something is in the air,  
"Under the earth, some plot against my  
peace.

"The trouble of eclipse hangs overhead;  
"How it should come of that officious orb

"Your Canon in my system, you must say:  
"I say—that from the pressure of this spring

"Began the chime and interchange of bells,  
"Ever one whisper, and one whisper more,

"And just one whisper for the silvery last,  
"Till all at once a-row the bronze-throats  
burst

"Into a larum both significant  
"And sinister: stop it I must and will.

"Let Caponsacchi take his hand away  
"From the wire!—disport himself in other  
paths

"Than lead precisely to my palace-gate,  
"Look where he likes except one window's  
way

"Where, cheek on hand, and elbow set  
on sill,

"Happens to lean and say her litanies  
"Every day and all day long, just my wife—

"Or wife and Caponsacchi may fare the  
worse!"

Admire the man's simplicity, "I'll do this, .  
 "I'll not have that, I'll punish and prevent!"—  
 'Tis easy saying. But to a fray, you see, 864  
 Two parties go. The badger shows his teeth:  
 The fox nor lies down sheep-like nor dates  
 fight.

Oh, the wife knew the appropriate warfare  
 well,

The way to put suspicion to the blush !  
 At first hint of remonstrance, up and out  
 I' the face of the world, you found her : she  
 could speak, 870

State her case,—Franceschini was a name,  
 Guido had his full share of foes and friends—  
 Why should not she call these to arbitrate ?  
 She bade the Governor do governance,  
 Cried out on the Archbishop,—why, there  
 now, 875

Take him for sample ! Three successive times,  
 Had he to reconduct her by main-force  
 From where she took her station opposite  
 His shut door,—on the public steps thereto,  
 Wringing her hands, when he came out to  
 see, 880

And shrieking all her wrongs forth at his  
 foot,—

Back to the husband and the house she fled :  
 Judge if that husband warmed him in the face  
 Of friends or frowned on foes as heretofore !  
 Judge if he missed the natural grin of folk,  
 Or lacked the customary compliment 885  
 Of cap and bells, the luckless husband's fit !

So it went on and on till—who was right ?  
 One merry April morning, Guido woke  
 After the cuckoo, so late, near noonday, 890  
 With an inordinate yawning of the jaws,  
 Ears plugged, eyes gummed together, palate,  
 tongue

And teeth one mud-paste made of poppy-milk ;  
 And found his wife flown, his scritoire the  
 worse 894

For a rummage,—jewelry that was, was not,  
 Some money there had made itself wings  
 too,—

The door lay wide and yet the servants slept  
 Sound as the dead, or dosed which does  
 as well.

In short, Pompilia, she who, candid soul,  
 Had not so much as spoken all her life 890  
 To the Canon, nay, so much as peeped at him  
 Between her fingers while she prayed in  
 church,—

This lamb-like innocent of fifteen years  
 (Such she was grown to by this time of day)  
 Had simply put an opiate in the drink 900  
 Of the whole household overnight, and then  
 Got up and gone about her work secure,  
 Laid hand on this waif and the other stray,  
 Spoiled the Philistine and marched out of  
 doors 905

In company of the Canon who, Lord's love,  
 What with his daily duty at the church,  
 Nightly devoir where ladies congregate,  
 Had something else to mind, assure yourself,  
 Beside Pompilia, paragon though she be,  
 Or notice if her nose were sharp or blunt ! 915  
 Well, anyhow, albeit impossible,  
 Both of them were together jollily  
 Jaunting it Rome-ward, half-way there by this,  
 While Guido was left go and get undrugged,  
 Gather his wits up, groaningly give thanks 920  
 When neighbours crowded round him to  
 condole.

"Ah," quoth a gossip, "well I mind me now,  
 "The Count did always say he thought he felt  
 "He feared as if this very chance might fall !  
 "And when a man of fifty finds his corns 925  
 "Ache and his joints throb, and foresees a  
 storm,

"Though neighbours laugh and say the sky  
 is clear,

"Let us henceforth believe him weatherwise !"  
 Then was the story told, I'll cut you short :  
 All neighbours knew : no mystery in the world.  
 The lovers left at nightfall—over night 935  
 Had Caponsacchi come to carry off  
 Pompilia,—not alone, a friend of his,  
 One Guillichini, the more conversant 934  
 With Guido's housekeeping that he was just  
 A cousin of Guido's and might play a prank—  
 (Have not you too a cousin that's a wag ?)  
 —Lord and a Canon also,—what would you  
 have ?

Such are the red-clothed milk-swollen poppy-  
 heads

That stand and stiffen 'mid the wheat o' the  
Church !—

This worthy came to aid, abet his best.  
And so the house was ransacked, booty bagged,  
The lady led downstairs and ~~the~~ doors  
Guided and guarded till, the city passed,  
A carriage lay convenient at the gate. 945  
Good-bye to the friendly Canon ; the loving one  
Could peradventure do the rest himself.  
In jumps Pompilia, after her the priest,  
" Whip, driver ! Money makes the mare to go,  
" And we've a bagful. Take the Roman  
road ! " 950  
So said the neighbours. This was eight hours  
since.

Guido heard all, swore the befitting oaths,  
Shook off the relics of his poison-drench,  
Got horse, was fairly started in pursuit 954  
With never a friend to follow, found the track  
Fast enough, 'twas the straight Perugia way,  
Trode soon upon their very heels, too late  
By a minute only at Camoscia, reached  
Chiusi, Foligno, ever the fugitives  
Just ahead, just out as he galloped in, 960  
Getting the good news ever fresh and fresh,  
Till, lo, at the last stage of all, last post  
Before Rome,—as we say, in sight of Rome  
And safety (there's impunity at Rome  
For priests, you know) at—what's the little  
place ?— 965

What some call Castelnovo, some just call  
The Osteria, because o' the post-house inn,  
There, at the journey's all but end, it seems,  
Triumph deceived them and undid them both,  
Secure they might foretaste felicity 970  
Nor fear surprisal : so, they were surprised.  
There did they halt at early evening, there  
Did Guido overtake them : 'twas day-break ;  
He came in time enough, not time too much,  
Since in the courtyard stood the Canon's self  
Urging the drowsy stable-grooms to haste 975  
Harness the horses, have the journey end,  
The trifling four-hours'-running, so reach  
Rome.

And the other runaway, the wife ? Upstairs,  
Still on the couch where she had spent the  
night, 980

VOL. II.

One couch in one room, and one room for both.  
So gained they six hours, so were lost thereby.

Sir, what's the sequel ? Lover and beloved  
Fell on their knees ? No impudence serves  
here ? 984

They beat their breasts and beg for easy death,  
Confess this, that and the other ?—anyhow  
Confess there wanted not some likelihood  
To the supposition so preposterous,  
That, O Pompilia, thy sequestered eyes  
Had noticed, straying o'er the prayerbook's  
edge, 990

More of the Canon than that black his coat,  
Buckled his shoes were, broad his hat of brim :  
And that, O Canon, thy religious care  
Had breathed too soft a *benedicite*  
To banish trouble from a lady's breast 995  
So lonely and so lovely, nor so lean !  
This you expect ? Indeed, then, much you err.  
Not to such ordinary end as this  
Had Caponsacchi flung the cassock far, 999  
Doffed the priest, donned the perfect cavalier.  
The die was cast : over shoes over boots :  
And just as she, I presently shall show,  
Pompilia, soon looked Helen to the life,  
Recumbent upstairs in her pink and white,  
So, in the inn-yard, bold as 'twere Troy-town,  
There strutted Paris in correct costume, 1005  
Cloak, cap and feather, no appointment missed,  
Even to a wicked-looking sword at side,  
He seemed to find and feel familiar at.

Nor wanted words as ready and as big 1010  
As the part he played, the bold abashless one.  
" I interposed to save your wife from death ;  
" Yourself from shame, the true and only  
shame :

" Ask your own conscience else !—or, failing  
that,

" What I have done I answer, anywhere, 1015

" Here, if you will ; you see I have a sword :

" Or, since I have a tonsure as you taunt,

" At Rome, by all means,—priests to try a  
priest.

" Only, speak where your wife's voice can  
reply ! "

And then he fingered at the sword again. 1020  
So, Guido called, in aid and witness both.



The Public Force. The Commissary came,  
Officers also; they secured the priest;  
Then, for his more confusion, mounted up  
With him, a guard on either side, the stair 1088  
To the bed-room where still slept or feigned  
a sleep

His paramour and Guido's wife: in burst  
The company and bade her wake and rise.

Her defence? This. She woke, saw, sprang  
upright  
I' the midst and stood as terrible as truth, 1090  
Sprang to her husband's side, caught at the  
sword

That hung there useless,—since they held  
each hand

O' the lover, had disarmed him properly,—  
And in a moment out flew the bright thing  
Full in the face of Guido: but for help 1095  
O' the guards who held her back and pinioned  
her

With pains enough, she had finished you my  
tale

With a flourish of red all round it, pinked her  
man

Prettily; but she fought them one to six.  
They stopped that,—but her tongue con-  
tinued free: 1040

She spat forth such invective at her spouse,  
O'erfrothed him with such foam of murderer,  
Thief, pandar—that the popular tide soon  
turned,

The favour of the very *sbirri*, straight 1044  
Ebbd from the husband, set toward his wife,  
People cried "Hands off, pay a priest re-  
spect!"

And "persecuting fiend" and "martyred  
saint"

Began to lead a measure from lip to lip.

But facts are facts and flinch not; stubborn  
things,

And the question "Prithee, friend, how  
comes my purse 1080

"I' the poke of you?"—admits of no reply.  
Here was a priest found out in masquerade,  
A wife caught playing truant if no more;  
While the Count, mortified in mien enough;

And, nose to face, an added palm in length,  
Was plain writ "husband" every piece of  
him: 1088

Capture once made, release could hardly be.  
Beside, the prisoners both made appeal,  
"Take us to Rome!"

Taken to Rome they were;  
The husband trooping after, piteously, 1041  
Tail between legs, no talk of triumph now—  
No honour set firm on its feet once more  
On two dead bodies of the guilty,—nay,  
No dubious salve to honour's broken pate 1085  
From chance that, after all, the hurt might seem  
A skin-deep matter, scratch that leaves no  
scar:

For Guido's first search,—ferreting, poor soul,  
Here, there and everywhere in the vile place  
Abandoned to him when their backs were  
turned, 1070

Found,—furnishing a last and best regale,—  
All the love-letters bandied 'twixt the pair  
Since the first timid trembling into life  
O' the love-star till its stand at fiery full.

Mad prose, mad verse, fears, hopes, triumph,  
despair, 1075

Avowal, disclaimer, plans, dates, names,—  
was nought

Wanting to prove, if proof consoles at all,  
That this had been but the fifth act o' the  
piece

Whereof the due proemium, months ago  
These playwrights had put forth, and ever  
since 1080

Matured the middle, added 'neath his nose.  
He might go cross himself: the case was clear.

Therefore to Rome with the clear case; there  
plead

Each party its best, and leave law do each  
right,

Let law shine forth and show, as God in  
heaven, 1085

Vice prostrate, virtue pedestalled at last,  
The triumph of truth! What else shall glad  
our gaze

When once authority has knit the brow  
And set the brain behind it to decide 1090  
Between the wolf and sheep turned litigants?

- "This is indeed a business!" law shook head:  
 "A husband charges hard things on a wife,  
 "The wife as hard o' the husband: whose  
 fault here?  
 "A wife that flies her husband's house, does  
 wrong: 1084  
 "The male friend's interference looks amiss,  
 "Lends a suspicion: but suppose the wife,  
 "On the other hand, be jeopardized at  
 home—  
 "Nay, that she simply hold, ill-groundedly,  
 "An apprehension she is jeopardized,—  
 "And further, if the friend partake the fear,  
 "And, in a commendable charity 1101  
 "Which trusteth all, trust her that she mis-  
 trusts,—  
 "What do they but obey law—natural law?  
 "Pretence may this be and a cloak for sin, 1104  
 "And circumstances that concur i' the close  
 "Hint as much, loudly—yet scarce loud  
 enough  
 "To drown the answer 'strange may yet be  
 true:'  
 "Innocence often looks like guiltiness.  
 "The accused declare that in thought, word  
 and deed,  
 "Innocent were they both from first to last 1110  
 "As male-babe haply laid by female-babe  
 "At church on edge of the baptismal font  
 "Together for a minute, perfect-pure.  
 "Difficult to believe, yet possible, 1114  
 "As witness Joseph, the friend's patron-saint.  
 "The night at the inn—there charity nigh  
 chokes  
 "Ere swallow what they both asseverate;  
 "Though down the gullet faith may feel it go,  
 "When mindful of what flight fatigued the  
 flesh  
 "Out of its faculty and fleshliness, 1120  
 "Subdued it to the soul, as saints assure:  
 "So long a flight necessitates a fall  
 "On the first bed, though in a lion's den,  
 "And the first pillow, though the lion's back:  
 "Difficult to believe, yet possible. 1128  
 "Last come the letters' bundled beastliness—  
 "Authority repugns give glance to—nay,  
 "Turns head, and almost lets her whip-lash  
 fall;  
 "Yet here a voice cries 'Respite!' from the  
 clouds—  
 "The accused, both in a tale, protest, dis-  
 claim, 1130  
 "Abominate the horror: 'Not my hand'  
 "Asserts the friend—'Nor mine' chimes in  
 the wife,  
 "Seeing I have no hand, nor write at all.  
 "Illiterate—for she goes on to ask,  
 "What if the friend did pen now verse now  
 prose, 1138  
 "Commend it to her notice now and then?  
 "'Twas pearls to swine: she read no more  
 than wrote,  
 "And kept no more than read, for as they fell  
 "She ever brushed the burr-like things away,  
 "Or, better, burned them, quenched the fire  
 in smoke. 1140  
 "As for this fardel, filth and foolishness,  
 "She sees it now the first time: burn it too!  
 "While for his part the friend vows ignorance  
 "Alike of what bears his name and bears hers:  
 "'Tis forgery, a felon's masterpiece, 1148  
 "And, as 'tis said the fox still finds the stench,  
 "Home-manufacture and the husband's work.  
 "Though he confesses, the ingenuous friend;  
 "That certain missives, letters of a sort,  
 "Flighty and feeble, which assigned them-  
 selves 1150  
 "To the wife, no less have fallen, far too oft,  
 "In his path: wherefrom he understood just  
 this—  
 "That were they verily the lady's own.  
 "Why, she who penned them, since he never  
 saw  
 "Save for one minute the mere face of her, 1158  
 "Since never had there been the interchange  
 "Of word with word between them all their  
 life,  
 Why, she must be the fondest of the frail,  
 And fit, she for the 'apage' he flung, 1160  
 "Her letters for the flame they went to feed!  
 But, now he sees her face and hears her  
 speech,  
 Much he repents him if, in fancy-freak  
 For a moment the minutest measurable,  
 "Apape: "away with thee!"

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

- 'He coupled her with the first flimsy word  
'O' the self-spun fabric some mean spider-  
soul 1165
- 'Furnished forth: stop his films and stamp  
on him!
- 'Never was such a tangled knottness,  
'But thus authority cuts the Gordian through,  
'And mark how her decision suits the need!  
'Here's troublesomeness, scandal on both  
sides, 1170
- 'Plenty of fault to find, no absolute crime:  
'Let each side own its fault and make amends!  
'What does a priest in cavalier's attire  
'Consorting publicly with vagrant wives  
'In quarters close as the confessional, 1175  
'Though innocent of harm? 'Tis harm  
enough:
- 'Let him pay it,—say, be relegate a good  
'Three years, to spend in some place not  
too far
- 'Nor yet too near, midway 'twixt near and far,  
'Rome and Arezzo,—Civita we choose, 1180  
'Where he may lounge away time, live at  
large,  
'Find out the proper function of a priest,  
'Nowise an exile,—that were punishment,—  
'But one our love thus keeps out of harm's  
way
- 'Not more from the husband's anger than,  
mayhap 1185
- 'His own . . . say, indiscretion, waywardness,  
'And wanderings when Easter eves grow  
warm.
- 'For the wife,—well; our best step to take  
with her,  
'On her own showing, were to shift her root  
'From the old cold shade and unhappy  
soil 1190
- 'Into a generous ground that fronts the south  
'Where, since her callow soul, a-shiver late,  
'Craved simply warmth and called mere  
passers-by
- 'To the rescue, she should have her fill of  
shine.
- 'Do house and husband hinder and not  
help? 1195
- 'Why then, forget both and stay here at peace,  
'Come into our community, enroll
- "Herself along with those good Convertites,<sup>1</sup>  
"Those sinners saved, those Magdalens re-  
made,
- "Accept their ministration, well bestow 1200  
"Her body and patiently possess her soul,  
"Until we see what better can be done.  
"Last for the husband: if his tale prove true,  
"Well is he rid of two domestic plagues—  
"Both wife that ailed, do whatsoever he  
would, 1205
- "And friend of hers that undertook the cure.  
"See, what a double load we lift from breast!  
"Off he may go, return, resume old life,  
"Laugh at the priest here and Pompilia there  
"In limbo each and punished for their pains,  
"And grateful tell the inquiring neighbour-  
hood— 1211
- "In Rome, no wrong but has its remedy."  
The case was closed. Now, am I fair or no  
In what I utter? Do I state the facts, 1214  
Having forechosen a side? I promised you!
- The Canon Caponsacchi, then, was sent  
To change his garb, re-trim his tonsure, tie  
The clerklly silk round, every plait correct,  
Make the impressive entry on his place  
Of relegation, thrill his Civita, 1220  
As Ovid, a like sufferer in the cause,  
Planted a primrose-patch by Pontus: where,—  
What with much culture of the sonnet-stave  
And converse with the aborigines,  
Soft savagery of eyes unused to roll 1225  
And hearts that all awry went pit-a-pat  
And wanted setting right in charity,—  
What were a couple of years to while away?  
Pompilia, as enjoined, betook herself 1230  
To the aforesaid Convertites, soft sisterhood  
In Via Lungara, where the light ones live,  
Spin, pray, then sing like linnets o'er the flax.  
"Anywhere, anyhow, out of my husband's  
house  
"Is heaven," cried she,—was therefore suited  
so.  
But for Count Guido Franceschini, he— 1235  
The injured man thus righted—found no  
heaven

<sup>1</sup> *Convertites*: a society maintaining a peni-  
tentiary for women.

I the house when he returned there, I engage,  
Was welcomed by the city turned upside down  
In a chorus of inquiry. "What, back—you?"

"And no wife? Left her with the Peni-  
tents?" 1240

"Ah, being young and pretty, 'twere a shame  
"To have her whipped in public: leave the job  
"To the priests who understand! Such  
priests as yours—

"(Pontifex Maximus<sup>1</sup> whipped Vestals once)

"Our madcap Caponsacchi: think of him! 1245

"So, he fired up, showed fight and skill of  
fence?

"Ay, you drew also, but you did not fight!

"The wiser, 'tis a word and a blow with him,

"True Caponsacchi, of old Head-i'-the-Sack

"That fought at Fiesole ere Florence was: 1250

"He had done enough, to firk you were too  
much.

"And did the little lady menace you,

"Make at your breast with your own harm-  
less sword?

"The spitfire! Well, thank God you're safe  
and sound,

"Have kept the sixth commandment whether  
or no 1255

"The lady broke the seventh: I only wish

"I were as saint-like, could contain me so.

"I, the poor sinner, fear I should have left

"Sir Priest no nose-tip to turn up at me!"

You, Sir, who listen but interpose no word, 1260

Ask yourself, had you borne a baiting thus?

Was it enough to make a wise man mad?

Oh, but I'll have your verdict at the end!

Well, not enough, it seems: such mere hurt falls,  
Frets awhile, aches long, then grows less and  
less, 1265

And so gets done with. Such was not the  
scheme

O' the pleasant Comparini: on Guido's wound  
Ever in due succession, drop by drop,  
Came slow distilment from the alembic here  
Set on to simmer by Canidian<sup>2</sup> hate, 1270

<sup>1</sup> *Pontifex Maximus*: in ancient Rome, any  
Vestal Virgin who let the sacred fire go out  
was scourged by the Pontifex Maximus.

<sup>2</sup> *Canidian*: from Canidia, described by  
Horace as a malicious witch:

Corrosives keeping the man's misery raw.

First fire-drop,—when he thought to make  
the best

O' the bad, to wring from out the sentence  
passed,

Poor, pitiful, absurd although it were,  
Yet what might eke him out result enough 1275  
And make it worth while to have had the right  
And not the wrong i' the matter judged at  
Rome.

Inadequate her punishment, no less

Punished in some slight sort his wife had been;

Then, punished for adultery, what else? 1280

On such admitted crime he thought to seize,

And institute procedure in the courts

Which cut corruption of this kind from man,

Cast loose a wife proved loose and castaway:

He claimed in due form a divorce at least. 1285

This claim was met now by a counterclaim:

Pompilia sought divorce from bed and board

Of Guido, whose outrageous cruelty,

Whose mother's malice and whose brother's  
hate

Were just the white o' the charge, such  
dreadful depths 1290

Blackened its centre,—hints of worse than hate,

Love from that brother, by that Guido's guile,

That mother's prompting. Such reply was  
made,

So was the engine loaded, wound up, sprung

On Guido, who received bolt full in breast;

But no less bore up, giddily perhaps. 1295

He had the Abate Paolo still in Rome,

Brother and friend and fighter on his side:

They rallied in a measure, met the foe 1299

Manlike, joined battle in the public courts,

As if to shame supine law from her sloth:

And waiting her award, let beat the while

Arezzo's banter, Rome's buffoonery,

On this ear and on that ear, deaf alike, 1304

Safe from worse outrage. Let a scorpion nip,

And never mind till he contorts his tail!

But there was sting i' the creature; thus it  
struck.

Guido had thought in his simplicity—

That lying declaration of remorse, 1309

That story of the child which was no child

And motherhood no motherhood at all,  
 —That even this sin might have its sort of  
 good

Inasmuch as no question more could be,—  
 Call it false, call the story true,—no claim  
 Of further parentage pretended now : 1215  
 The parents had abjured all right, at least,  
 I' the woman owned his wife : to plead right  
 still

Were to declare the abjuration false :  
 He was relieved from any fear henceforth  
 Their hands might touch, their breath defile  
 again 1220

Pompilia with his name upon her yet.  
 Well, no : the next news was, Pompilia's health  
 Demanded change after full three long weeks  
 Spent in devotion with the Sisterhood,—  
 Which rendered sojourn,—so the court  
 opined,— 1225

Too irksome, since the convent's walls were  
 high

And windows narrow, nor was air enough  
 Nor light enough, but all looked prison-like,  
 The last thing which had come in the court's  
 head.

Propose a new expedient therefore,—this ! 1230  
 She had demanded—had obtained indeed,  
 By intervention of her pitying friends  
 Or perhaps lovers—(beauty in distress,  
 Beauty whose tale is the town-talk beside,  
 Never lacks friendship's arm about her neck)—  
 Obtained remission of the penalty, 1235  
 Permitted transfer to some private place  
 Where better air, more light, new food might  
 soothe—

Incarcerated (call it, all the same)  
 At some sure friend's house she must keep  
 inside, 1240

Be found in at requirement fast enough,—  
*Domus pro carcere*, in Roman style.  
 You keep the house i' the main, as most  
 men do

And all good women : but free otherwise,  
 Should friends arrive, to lodge them and  
 what not ? 1245

And such a *domum*, such a dwelling-place,  
 Having all Rome to choose from, where  
 chose she ?

What house obtained Pompilia's preference ?  
 Why, just the Comparini's—just, do you mark,  
 Theirs who renounced 'all part and lot  
 in her 1250

So long as Guido could be robbed thereby,  
 And only fell back on relationship  
 And found their daughter safe and sound again  
 When that might surelier stab him : yes, the  
 pair

Who, as I told you, first had baited hook 1255  
 With this poor gilded fly Pompilia-thing,  
 Then caught the fish, pulled Guido to the shore  
 And gutted him,—now found a further use  
 For the bait, would trail the gauze wings yet  
 again

I' the way of what new swimmer passed their  
 stand. 1260

They took Pompilia to their hiding-place—  
 Not in the heart of Rome as formerly,  
 Under observance, subject to control—  
 But out o' the way,—or in the way, who  
 knows ?

That blind mute villa lurking by the gate 1265  
 At Via Paulina, not so hard to miss  
 By the honest eye, easy enough to find  
 In twilight by marauders : where perchance  
 Some muffled Caponsacchi might repair,  
 Employ odd moments when he too tried  
 change, 1270

Found that a friend's abode was pleasanter  
 Than relegation, penance and the rest.

Come, here's the last drop does its worst to  
 wound :

Here's Guido poisoned to the bone, you say,  
 Your boasted still's full strain and strength :  
 not so ! 1275

One master-squeeze from screw shall bring  
 to birth

The hoard i' the heart o' the toad, hell's quint-  
 essence.

He learned the true convenience of the change,  
 And why a convent lacks the cheerful hearts  
 And helpful hands which female straits require,  
 When, in the blind mute villa by the gate, 1280

Pompilia—what ? sang, danced, saw company ?  
 —Gave birth, Sir, to a child, his son and heir,  
 Or Guido's heir and Caponsacchi's son.

I want your word now: what do you say to this? 1385

What would say little Arezzo and great Rome,  
And what did God say and the devil say  
One at each ear o' the man, the husband, now  
The father? Why, the overburdened mind  
Broke down, what was a brain became a blaze:  
In fury of the moment—(that first news 1381  
Fell on the Count among his vines, it seems,  
Doing his farm-work,)—why, he summoned  
steward,

Called in the first four hard hands and stout  
hearts 1384

From field and furrow, poured forth his appeal,  
Not to Rome's law and gospel any more,  
But this clown with a mother or a wife,  
That clodpole with a sister or a son:  
And, whereas law and gospel held their peace,  
What wonder if the sticks and stones cried  
out? 1400

All five soon somehow found themselves at  
Rome,  
At the villa door: there was the warmth and  
light—  
The sense of life so just an inch inside—  
Some angel must have whispered "One more  
chance!"

He gave it: bade the others stand aside: 1405  
Knocked at the door,—"Who is it knocks?"  
cried one.

"I will make," surely Guido's angel urged,  
"One final essay, last experiment,  
"Speak the word, name the name from out  
all names 1409

"Which, if,—as doubtless strong illusions are,  
"And strange disguisings whereby truth seems  
false,

"And, since I am but man, I dare not do  
"God's work until assured I see with God,—  
"If I should bring my lips to breathe that name  
"And they be innocent,—nay, by one mere  
touch 1415

"Of innocence redeemed from utter guilt,—  
"That name will bar the door and bid fate  
pass.

"I will not say "It is a messenger,

"A neighbour, even a belated man,  
"Much less your husband's friend, your  
husband's self;" 1420

"At such appeal the door is bound to open.  
"But I will say"—here's rhetoric and to spare!  
Why, Sir, the stumbling-block is cursed and  
kicked,

Block though it be; the name that brought  
offence

Will bring offence: the burnt child dreads  
the fire 1425

Although that fire feed on some taper-wick:  
Which never left the altar nor singed a fly:  
And had a harmless man tripped you by chance,  
How would you wait him, stand or step aside,  
When next you heard he rolled your way?  
Enough. 1435

"Giuseppe Caponsacchi!" Guido cried;  
And open flew the door: enough again.  
Vengeance, you know, burst, like a mountain-  
wave

That holds a monster in it, over the house;  
And wiped its filthy four walls free at last 1438  
With a wash of hell-fire,—father, mother, wife,  
Killed them all, bathed his name clean in  
their blood,

And, reeking so, was caught, his friends and he,  
Haled hither and imprisoned yesternight  
O' the day all this was. 1440

Now, Sir, tale is told,  
Of how the old couple come to lie in state  
Though hacked to pieces,—never, the expert  
say,

So thorough a study of stabbing—while the  
wife  
(Viper-like, very difficult to slay) 1445

Writhes still through every ring of her, poor  
wretch,

At the Hospital hard by—survives, we'll hope,  
To somewhat purify her putrid soul  
By full confession, make so much amends  
While time lasts; since at day's end die she  
must. 1450

For Caponsacchi,—why, they'll have him here,  
As hero of the adventure, who so fit  
To figure in the coming Carnival?

'Twill make the fortune of whate'er saloon  
Hears him recount, with helpful cheek, and eye  
Hotly indignant now, now dewy-dimmed, 1486  
The incidents of flight, pursuit, surprise,  
Capture, with hints of kisses all between—  
While Guido, wholly unromantic spouse,  
No longer fit to laugh at since the blood 1490  
Gave the broad farce an all too brutal air,  
Why, he and those four luckless friends of his  
May tumble in the straw this bitter day—  
Laid by the heels i' the New Prison, I hear,  
To bide their trial, since trial, and for the  
life, 1495  
Follows if but for form's sake : yes, indeed !

But with a certain issue : no dispute,  
"Try him," bids law : formalities oblige :  
But as to the issue,—look me in the face !—  
If the law thinks to find them guilty, Sir, 1470  
Master or men—touch one hair of the five,  
Then I say in the name of all that's left  
Of honour in Rome, civility i' the world  
Whereof Rome boasts herself the central  
source,—

There's an end to all hope of justice more. 1475  
Astræa's<sup>1</sup> gone indeed, let hope go too !  
Who is it dares impugn the natural law,  
Deny God's word "the faithless wife shall  
die" ?

What, are we blind ? How can we fail to learn  
This crowd of miseries make the man a mark,  
Accumulate on one devoted head 1481  
For our example ?—yours and mine who read  
Its lesson thus—"Henceforward let none dare  
"Stand, like a natural in the public way,  
"Letting the very urchins twitch his beard 1485  
"And tweak his nose, to earn a nickname so,  
"Be styled male-Grissel or else modern Job !"  
Had Guido, in the twinkling of an eye,  
Summed up the reckoning, promptly paid  
himself, 1490

That morning when he came up with the pair  
At the wayside inn,—exact his just debt  
By aid of what first mattock, pitchfork, axe  
Came to hand in the helpful stable-yard,

1 Astræa : daughter of Zeus and Themis,  
whose departure from earth marked the ending  
of the golden age.

And with that axe, if providence so pleased,  
Cloven each head, by some Rolando-stroke,  
In one clean cut from crown to clavicle,<sup>2</sup> 1496  
—Slain the priest-gallant, the wife-paramour,  
Sticking, for all defence, in each skull's cleft  
The rhyme and reason of the stroke thus dealt,  
To-wit, those letters and last evidence 1500  
Of shame, each package in its proper place,—  
Bidding, who pitied, undistend the skulls,—  
I say, the world had praised the man. But no !  
That were too plain, too straight, too simply  
just !

He hesitates, calls law forsooth to help. 1505  
And law, distasteful to who calls in law  
When honour is beforehand and would serve,  
What wonder if law hesitate in turn,  
Plead her disuse to calls o' the kind, reply  
(Smiling a little) "'Tis yourself assess 1510  
"The worth of what's lost, sum of damage  
done.

"What you touched with so light a finger-tip,  
"You whose concern it was to grasp the thing,  
"Why must law gird herself and grapple  
with ? 1514

"Law, alien to the actor whose warm blood  
"Asks heat from law whose veins run luke-  
warm milk,—

"What you dealt lightly with, shall law make  
out

"Heinous forsooth ?"

Sir, what's the good of law  
In a case o' the kind ? None, as she all but  
says. 1520

Call in law when a neighbour breaks your fence,  
Cribs from your field, tampers with rent or  
lease,

Touches the purse or pocket,—but wooes  
your wife ?

No : take the old way trod when men were  
men ! 1524

Guido preferred the new path,—for his pains,  
Stuck in a quagmire, floundered worse and  
worse

Until he managed somehow scramble back  
Into the safe sure rutted road once more,  
Revenged his own wrong like a gentleman. 1530

<sup>2</sup> Clavicle : collar-bone.

Once back 'mid the familiar prints, no doubt 1330  
 He made too rash amends for his first fault,  
 Vaulted too loftily over what barred him late,  
 And lit 't the mire again,—the common chance,  
 The natural over-energy : the deed  
 Maladroit yields three deaths instead of  
 one, 1335

And one life left : for where's the Canon's  
 corpse ?

All which is the worse for Guido, but, be  
 frank—

The better for you and me and all the world,  
 Husbands of wives, especially in Rome.

The thing is put right, in the old place,—ay, 1340

The rod hangs on its nail behind the door,

Fresh from the brine : a matter I commend

To the notice, during Carnival that's near,

Of a certain what's-hus-name and jackanapes

Somewhat too civil of eves with lute and  
 song 1345

About a house here, where I keep a wife.

(You, being his cousin, may go tell him so.)

### III.—THE OTHER HALF-ROME.

ANOTHER day that finds her living yet,  
 Little Pompilia, with the patient brow  
 And lamentable smile on those poor lips,  
 And, under the white hospital-array,  
 A flower-like body, to frighten at a bruise 5  
 You'd think, yet now, stabbed through and  
 through again,

Alive ! the ruins. 'Tis a miracle.

It seems that, when her husband struck her first,  
 She prayed Madonna just that she might live  
 So long as to confess and be absolved ; 10

And whether it was that, all her sad life long  
 Never before successful in a prayer, ..

This prayer rose with authority too dread,—

Or whether, because earth was hell to her, 14

By compensation, when the blackness broke

She got one glimpse of quiet and the cool blue,

To show her for a moment such things were,—

Or else,—as the Augustinian Brother thinks,

The friar who took confession from her lip,—

When a probationary soul that moved 20

From nobleness to nobleness, as she,  
 Over the rough way of the world, succumbs,  
 Bloodies its last thorn with unflinching foot,  
 The angel's love to do their work betimes,  
 Staunch some wounds here nor leave so much  
 for God. 25

Who knows? However it be, confessed,  
 absolved,

She lies, with overplus of life beside

To speak and right herself from first to last,

Right the friend also, lamb-pure, lion-brave,

Care for the boy's concerns, to save the son 30

From the sire, her two-weeks' infant orphaned  
 thus,

And—with best smile of all reserved for him—

Pardon that sire and husband from the heart.

A miracle, so tell your Molinists !

There she lies in the long white lazar-house.

Rome has besieged, these two days, never  
 doubt, 35

Saint Anna's where she waits her death, to hear  
 Though but the chink o' the bell, turn o' the  
 hinge

When the reluctant wicket opes at last,

Lets in, on now this and now that pretence, 40

Too many by half,—complain the men of art,—

For a patient in such plight. The lawyers first

Paid the due visit—justice must be done ;

They took her witness, why the murder was.

Then the priests followed properly,—a soul 45

To shrive ; 'twas Brother Celestine's own right,

The same who noises thus her gifts abroad.

But many more, who found they were old  
 friends,

Pushed in to have their stare and take their talk

And go forth boasting of it and to boast. 50

Old Monna Baldi chatters like a jay,

Swears—but that, prematurely trundled out

Just as she felt the benefit begin,

The miracle was snapped up by somebody,—

Her palsied limb 'gan prick and promise life 55

At touch o' the bedclothes merely,—how

much more

Had she but brushed the body as she tried :

Cavalier Carlo—well, there's some excuse

For him—Maratta who paints Virgins 60—

He too must fee the porter and slip by 60



With pencil cut and paper squared, and

There was he figuring away at face :

"A lovelier face is not in Rome," cried he,

"Shaped like a peacock's egg, the pure as  
pearl,"

"That hatches you anon a snow-white chick."

Then, oh that pair of eyes, that pendent hair,  
Black this and black the other ! Mighty fine—

But nobody cared ask to paint the same,

Nor grew a poet over hair and eyes

Four little years ago when, ask and have, 70

The woman who wakes all this rapture  
leaned

Flower-like from out her window long enough,

As much uncomplimented as uncropped

By comers and goers in Via Vittoria : eh ?

'Tis just a flower's fate : past parterre wetrip, 75

Till peradventure someone plucks our sleeve—

"Yon blossom at the briar's end, that's the  
rose

"Two jealous people fought for yesterday

"And killed each other : see, there's un-  
disturbed

"A pretty pool at the root, of rival red !" 80

Then cry we "Ah, the perfect paragon !"

Then crave we "Just one keepsake-leaf for  
us !"

Truth lies between : there's anyhow a child  
Of seventeen years, whether a flower or weed,

Ruined ; who did it shall account to Christ—

Having no pity on the harmless life 85

And gentle face and girlish form he found,

And thus flings back. Go practise if you  
please

With men and women : leave a child alone

For Christ's particular love's sake !—so I say.

Somebody, at the bedside, said much more, 91

Took on him to explain the secret cause

O' the crime : quoth he, "Such crimes are  
very rife,

"Explode nor make us wonder now-a-days,

"Seeing that Antichrist disseminates 95

"That doctrine of the Philosophic Sin :

"Molinos' sect will soon make earth too  
hot !"

"Nay," groaned the Augustinian, "what's  
there new ?

"Crime will not fail to flare up from men's  
hearts

"While hearts are men's and so born criminal ;

"Which one fact, always old yet ever new, 101

"Accounts for so much crime that, for my part,

"Molinos may go whistle to the wind

"That waits outside a certain church, you  
know !"

Though really it does seem as if she here, 105

Pompilia, living so and dying thus,

Has had undue experience how much crime

A heart can hatch. Why was she made to  
learn

—Not you, not I, not even Molinos' self—

What Guido Franceschini's heart could hold ?

Thus saintship is effected probably ; 111

No sparing saints the process !—which the  
more

Tends to the reconciling us, no saints,

To sinnership, immunity and all.

For see now : Pietro and Violante's life 115

Till seventeen years ago ; all Rome might note

And quote for happy—see the signs distinct

Of happiness as we yon Triton's<sup>1</sup> trump.

What could they be but happy ?—balanced so,

Nor low i' the social scale nor yet too high, 120

Nor poor nor richer than comports with ease,

Nor bright and envied, nor obscure and scorned,

Nor so young that their pleasures fell too  
thick,

Nor old past catching pleasure when it fell,

Nothing above, below the just degree, 125

All at the mean where joy's components mix.

So again, in the couple's very souls

You saw the adequate half with half to match,

Each having and each lacking somewhat, both

Making a whole that had all and lacked  
nought. 130

The round and sound, in whose composure  
just

<sup>1</sup> *Yon Triton* : see Book I, l. 898. The speaker is represented as being in the Piazza Barberini, near Bernini's fountain, composed of a Triton supported by dolphins.

The acquiescent and recipient side  
Was Pietro's, and the stirring striving one  
Violante's: both in union gave the due  
Quietude, enterprise, craving and content, 135  
Which go to bodily health and peace of mind.  
But, as 'tis said a body, rightly mixed,  
Each element in equipoise, would last  
Too long and live for ever,—accordingly  
Holds a germ—sand-grain weight too much  
i' the scale— 140

Ordained to get predominance one day  
And so bring all to ruin and release,—  
Not otherwise a fatal germ lurked here :  
“With mortals much must go, but something  
stays ;  
“Nothing will stay of our so happy selves.” 145  
Out of the very ripeness of life's core  
A worm was bred—“Our life shall leave no  
fruit.”

Enough of bliss, they thought, could bliss  
bear seed,  
Yield its like, propagate a bliss in turn  
And keep the kind up ; not supplant them-  
selves 150

But put in evidence, record they were,  
Show them, when done with, i' the shape of  
a child.

“Tis in a child, man and wife grow com-  
plete,  
“One flesh ; God says so : let him do his  
work !”

Now, one reminder of this gnawing want, 155  
One special prick o' the maggot at the core,  
Always befell when, as the day came round,  
A certain yearly sum,—our Pietro being,  
As the long name runs, an usufructuary,—  
Dropped in the common bag as interest 160  
Of money, his till death, not afterward,  
Failing an heir : an heir would take and take,  
A child of theirs be wealthy in their place  
To nobody's hurt—the stranger else seized all.  
Prosperity rolled river-like and stopped, 165  
Making their mill go ; but when wheel wore  
out,

The wave would find a space and sweep on free  
And, half-a-mile off, grind some neighbour's  
corn.

Adam-like, Pietro sighed and said no more :  
Eve saw the apple was fair and good to  
taste, 170  
So, plucked it, having asked the snake advice.  
She told her husband God was merciful,  
And his and her prayer granted at the last :  
Let the old mill-stone moulder,—wheel un-  
worn, 174

Quartz from the quarry, shot into the stream  
Adroitly, as before should go bring grist—  
Their house continued to them by an heir,  
Their vacant heart replenished with a child.  
We have her own confession at full length  
Made in the first remorse : 'twas Jubilee 180  
Pealed in the ear o' the conscience and it woke.  
She found she had offended God no doubt,  
So much was plain from what had happened  
since,

Misfortune on misfortune ; but she harmed  
No one i' the world, so far as she could see.  
The act had gladdened Pietro to the height, 185  
Her spouse whom God himself must gladden so  
Or not at all : thus much seems probable.  
From the implicit faith, or rather say  
Stupid credulity of the foolish man 190  
Who swallowed such a tale nor strained a whit  
Even at his wife's far-over-fifty years  
Matching his sixty-and-under. Him she  
blessed ;

And as for doing any detriment  
To the veritable heir,—why, tell her first 195  
Who was he ? Which of all the hands held up  
I' the crowd, one day would gather round  
their gate,

Did she so wrong by intercepting thus  
The ducat, spendthrift fortune thought to fling  
For a scramble just to make the mob break  
shins ? 200

She kept it, saved them kicks and cuffs thereby.  
While at the least one good work had she  
wrought,

Good, clearly and incontestably ! Her cheat—  
What was it to its subject, the child's self,  
But charity and religion ? See the girl ! 205  
A body most like—a soul too probably—  
Doomed to death, such a double death as waits  
The illicit offspring of a common trull,  
Sure to resent and forthwith rid herself

Of a mere interruption to sin's trade, 210  
 In the efficacious way old Tiber knows.  
 Was not so much proved by the ready sale  
 O' the child, glad transfer of this irksome  
 chance?  
 Well then, she had caught up this castaway:  
 This fragile egg, some careless wild bird  
 dropped, 215  
 She had picked from where it waited the  
 foot-fall,  
 And put in her own breast till forth broke finch  
 Able to sing God praise on mornings now.  
 What so excessive harm was done?—she asked.  
  
 To which demand the dreadful answer  
 comes— 220  
 For that same deed, now at Lorenzo's church,  
 Both agents, conscious and unconscious, lie;  
 While she, the deed was done to benefit,  
 Lies also, the most lamentable of things,  
 Yonder where curious people count her  
 breaths, 225  
 Calculate how long yet the little life  
 Unspilt may serve their turn nor spoil the show,  
 Give them their story, then the church its group.  
  
 Well, having gained Pompilia, the girl grew  
 I' the midst of Pietro here, Violante there, 230  
 Each, like a semicircle with stretched arms,  
 Joining the other round her preciousness—  
 Two walls that go about a garden-plot  
 Where a chance sliver, branchlet split from bole  
 Of some tongue-leaved eye-figured Eden tree,  
 Filched by two exiles and borne far away, 235  
 Patiently glorifies their solitude,—  
 Year by year mounting, grade by grade sur-  
 mounts  
 The builded brick-work, yet is compassed still,  
 Still hidden happily and shielded safe,— 240  
 Else why should miracle have graced the  
 ground?  
 But on the twelfth sun that brought April there  
 What meant that laugh? The coping-stone  
 was reached;  
 Nay, above towered a light tuft of bloom  
 To be toyed with by butterfly or bee, 245  
 Done good to or else harm to from outside:  
 Pompilia's root, stalk and a branch or two  
 Home enclosed still, the rest would be the  
 world's.  
 All which was taught our couple though  
 obtuse,  
 Since walls have ears, when one day brought  
 a priest, 250  
 Smooth - mannered soft - speeched sleek-  
 cheeked visitor,  
 The notable Abate Paolo—known  
 As younger brother of a Tuscan house  
 Whereof the actual representative, 254  
 Count Guido, had employed his youth and age  
 In culture of Rome's most productive plant—  
 A cardinal: but years pass and change comes,  
 In token of which, here was our Paolo brought  
 To broach a weighty business. Might he  
 speak?  
 Yes—to Violante somehow caught alone 260  
 While Pietro took his after-dinner doze,  
 And the young maiden, busily as befits,  
 Minded her broider-frame three chambers off.  
  
 So—giving now his great flap-hat a gloss  
 With fiat o' the hand between-whiles, sooth-  
 ing now 265  
 The silk from out its creases o'er the calf,  
 Setting the stocking clerical again,  
 But never disengaging, once engaged,  
 The thin clear grey hold of his eyes on her—  
 He dissertated on that Tuscan house, 270  
 Those Franceschini,—very old they were—  
 Not rich however—oh, not rich, at least,  
 As people look to be who, low i' the scale  
 One way, have reason, rising all they can  
 By favour of the money-bag! 'tis fair— 275  
 Do all gifts go together? But don't suppose  
 That being not so rich means all so poor!  
 Say rather, well enough—i' the way, indeed,  
 Ha, ha, to fortune better than the best:  
 Since if his brother's patron-friend kept faith,  
 Put into promised play the Cardinalate, 281  
 Their house might wear the red cloth that  
 keeps warm,  
 Would but the Count have patience—there's  
 the point!  
 For he was slipping into years apace,  
 And years make men restless—they needs  
 must spy 285

Some certainty, some sort of end assured,  
 Some sparkle, tho' from topmost beacon-tip,  
 That warrants life a harbour through the haze.  
 In short, call him fantastic as you choose, 289  
 Guido was home-sick, yearned for the old sights  
 And usual faces,—fain would settle himself  
 And have the patron's bounty when it fell  
 Irrigate far rather than deluge near,  
 Go fertilize Arezzo, not flood Rome. 294  
 Sooth to say, 'twas the wiser wish: the Count  
 Proved wanting in ambition,—let us avouch,  
 Since truth is best,—in callousness of heart,  
 And winced at pin-pricks whereby honours  
 hang

A ribbon 'o'er each puncture : his—no soul  
 Ecclesiastic (here the hat was brushed) 300  
 Humble but self-sustaining, calm and cold,  
 Having, as one who puts his hand to the plough,  
 Renounced the over-vivid family-feel—  
 Poor brother Guido ! All too plain, he pined  
 Amid Rome's pomp and glare for dinginess 305  
 And that dilapidated palace-shell  
 Vast as a quarry and, very like, as bare—  
 Since to this comes old grandeur now-a-days—  
 Or that absurd wild villa in the waste  
 O' the hillside, breezy though, for who likes air,  
 Vittiano, nor unpleasant with its vines, 311  
 Outside the city and the summer heats.  
 And now his harping on this one tense chord  
 The villa and the palace, palace this  
 And villa the other, all day and all night 315  
 Creaked like the implacable cicala's cry  
 And made one's ear-drum ache : nought else  
 would serve

But that, to light his mother's visage up  
 With second youth, hope, gaiety again, 319  
 He must find straightway, woo and haply win  
 And bear away triumphant back, some wife.  
 Well now, the man was rational in his way :  
 He, the Abate,—ought he to interpose ?  
 Unless by straining still his tutelage  
 (Priesthood leaps over elder-brothership) 325  
 Across this difficulty : then let go,  
 Leave the poor fellow in peace ! Would that  
 be wrong ?

There was no making Guido great, it seems,  
 Spite of himself : then happy be his dole !  
 Indeed, the Abate's little interest 330

Was somewhat nearly touched i' the case,  
 they saw :

Since if his simple kinsman so were bent,  
 Began his rounds in Rome to catch a wife,  
 Full soon would such unworldliness surprise  
 The rare bird, sprinkle salt on phoenix' tail, 335  
 And so secure the nest a sparrow-hawk.  
 No lack of mothers here in Rome,—no dread  
 Of daughters lured as larks by looking-glass !  
 The first name-pecking credit-scratching fowl  
 Would dropher unfledged cuckoo in our nest 340  
 To gather greyness there, give voice at length  
 And shame the brood . . . but it was long ago  
 When crusades were, and we sent eagles forth !  
 No, that at least the Abate could forestall.

He read the thought within his brother's  
 word, 345

Knew what he purposed better than himself.  
 We want no name and fame—having our own :  
 No worldly aggrandizement—such we fly :  
 But if some wonder of a woman's heart  
 Were yet untainted on this grimy earth, 350  
 Tender and true—tradition tells of such—  
 Prepared to pant in time and tune with ours—  
 If some good girl (a girl, since she must take  
 The new bent, live new life, adopt new modes)  
 Not wealthy (Guido for his rank was poor) 355  
 But with whatever dowry came to hand,—  
 There were the lady-love predestinate !  
 And somehow the Abate's guardian eye—  
 Scintillant, rutilant, fraternal fire,—  
 Roving round every way had seized the prize 360  
 —The instinct of us, we, the spirituality !  
 Come, cards on table ; was it true or false  
 That here—here in this very tenement—

Yea, Via Vittoria did a marvel hide,  
 Lily of a maiden, white with intact leaf 365  
 Guessed thro' the sheath that saved it from  
 the sun ?  
 A daughter with the mother's hands still clasped  
 Over her head for fillet virginal,  
 A wife worth Guido's house and hand and  
 heart ?

He came to see ; had spoken, he could no  
 less— 370

(A final cherish of the stockinged calf)  
 If harm were,—well, the matter was off his  
 mind.

Then with the great air did he kiss, devout,  
Violante's hand, and rise up his whole height  
(A certain purple gleam about the black) 375  
And go forth grandly,—as if the Pope came  
next.

And so Violante rubbed her eyes awhile,  
Got up too, walked to wake her Pietro soon  
And pour into his ear the mighty news  
How somebody had somehow somewhere  
seen 380

Their tree-top-tuft of bloom above the wall,  
And came now to apprise them the tree's self  
Was no such crab-sort as should go feed  
swine,

But veritable gold, the Hesperian ball<sup>1</sup>  
Ordained for Hercules to haste and pluck, 385  
And bear and give the Gods to banquet with—  
Hercules standing ready at the door.  
Whereon did Pietro rub his eyes in turn,  
Look very wise, a little woeful too,  
Then, periwig on head, and cane in hand, 390  
Sally forth dignifiedly into the Square  
Of Spain<sup>2</sup> across Babbuino the six steps,  
Toward the Boat-fountain where our idlers  
lounge,—

Ask, for form's sake, who Hercules might be,  
And have congratulation from the world. 395

Heartily laughed the world in his fool's-face  
And told him Hercules was just the heir  
To the stubble once a corn-field, and brick-  
heap

Where used to be a dwelling-place now  
burned.

Guido and Franceschini; a Count,—ay: 400  
But a cross<sup>3</sup> ? the poke to bless the Count-  
ship? No!

All gone except sloth, pride, rapacity,  
Humours of the imposthume incident

<sup>1</sup> *The Hesperian ball*: the golden apple which Hercules was required to fetch from the garden of the Hesperides.

<sup>2</sup> *The Square of Spain*: the Piazza di Spagna, in the present "English quarter" of Rome. The Via del Babuino runs into it, and the "Boat-fountain" (Fontana della Barcaccia) stands in it.

<sup>3</sup> *Cross*: i.e., a coin; an old expression, found in Goldsmith, Dryden, and earlier writers.

To rich blood that runs thin,—nursed to a  
head

By the rankly-salted soil—a cardinal's court  
Where, parasite and picker-up of crumbs, 405  
He had hung on long, and now, let go, said  
some,

Shaken off, said others,—but in any case  
Tired of the trade and something worse for  
wear,

Was wanting to change town for country  
quick, 410

Go home again: let Pietro help him home!  
The brother, Abate Paolo, shrewder mouse,  
Had pricked for comfortable quarters, inched  
Into the core of Rome, and fattened so;  
But Guido, over-burly for rat's hole 415  
Suited to clerical slimness, starved outside,  
Must shift for himself: and so the shift was  
this!

What, was the snug retreat of Pietro tracked,  
The little provision for his old age snuffed?

"Oh, make your girl a lady, an you list, 420  
"But have more mercy on our wit than vaunt  
"Your bargain as we burgesses who brag!

"Why, Goodman Dullard, if a friend must  
speak,

"Would the Count, think you, stoop to you  
and yours

"Were there the value of one penny-piece 425

"To rattle 'twixt his palms—or likelier laugh,  
"Bid your Pompilia help you black his shoe?"

Home again, shaking off the puzzled pate,  
Went Pietro to announce a change indeed,  
Yet point Violante where some solace lay 430  
Of a rueful sort,—the taper, quenched so soon,  
Had ended merely in a snuff, not stink—  
Congratulate there was one hope the less  
Not misery the more: and so an end.

The marriage thus impossible, the rest 435  
Followed: our spokesman, Paolo, heard his  
fate,

Resignedly Count Guido bore the blow:  
Violante wiped away the transient tear.

Renounced the playing Danae to gold dreams,  
Praised much her Pietro's prompt sagacious-  
ness, 440

Found neighbours' envy natural, lightly  
laughed

At gossips' malice, fairly wrapped herself  
In her integrity three folds about,  
And, letting pass a little day or two,  
Threw, even over that integrity, 445

Another wrappage, namely one thick veil  
That hid her, matron-wise, from head to foot,  
And, by the hand holding a girl veiled too,  
Stood, one dim end of a December day,

In Saint Lorenzo on the altar-step— 450  
Just where she lies now and that girl will lie—

Only with fifty candles' company  
Now, in the place of the poor winking one  
Which saw,—doors shut and sacristan made  
sure,—

A priest—perhaps Abate Paolo—wed 455  
Guido clandestinely, irrevocably  
To his Pompilia aged thirteen years  
And five months,—witness the church  
register,—

Pompilia, (thus become Count Guido's wife  
(clandestinely, irrevocably his,) 460

Who all the while had borne, from first to last,  
As brisk a part i' the bargain, as yon lamb,  
Brought forth from basket and set out for sale,  
Bears while they chaffer, wary market-man  
And voluble housewife, o'er it,—each in turn  
Patting the curly calm unconscious head, 465  
With the shambles ready round the corner  
there,

When the talk's talked out and a bargain struck.

Transfer complete, why, Pietro was apprised.  
Violante sobbed the sobs and prayed the  
prayers 470

And said the serpent tempted so she fell,  
Till Pietro had to clear his brow apace  
And make the best of matters: wrath at first,—  
How else? pacification presently,  
Why not?—could flesh withstand the im-  
purpled one, 475

The very Cardinal, Paolo's patron-friend?  
Who, justifiably surnamed "a hinge,"<sup>1</sup>  
Knew where the mollifying oil should drop  
To cure the creak o' the valve,—considerate

For frailty, patient in a naughty world. 480  
He even volunteered to supervise

The rough draught of those marriage-articles  
Signed in a hurry by Pietro, since revoked:  
Trust's politic, suspicion does the harm, 484  
There is but one way to brow-beat this world,  
Dumb-founder doubt, and repay scorn in  
kind,—

To go on trusting, namely, till faith move  
Mountains.

And faith here made the mountains move.  
Why, friends whose zeal cried "Caution ere  
too late!"— 490

Bade "Pause ere jump, with both feet joined,  
on slough!"—

Counselled "If rashness then, now temper-  
ance!"—

Heard for their pains that Pietro had closed  
eyes,

Jumped and was in the middle of the mire, 494

Money and all, just what should sink a man.  
By the mere marriage, Guido gained forthwith  
Dowry, his wife's right; no rescinding there:  
But Pietro, why must he needs ratify  
One gift Violante gave, pay down one doit 498  
Promised in first fool's-flurry? Grasp the bag  
Lest the son's service flag,—is reason and  
rhyme,

Above all when the son's a son-in-law.  
Words to the wind! The parents cast their lot

Into the lap o' the daughter: and the son 504

Now with a right to lie there, took what fell,  
Pietro's whole having and holding, house and  
field,

Goods, chattels and effects, his worldly worth  
Present and in perspective, all renounced

In favour of Guido. As for the usufruct—

The interest now, the principal anon, 510

Would Guido please to wait, at Pietro's death:

Till when, he must support the couple's charge,

Bear with them, housemates, pensionaries,

pawned

To an alien for fulfilment of their pact. 514

Guido should at discretion deal them orts,<sup>2</sup>

Bread-bounty in Arezzo the strange place,—

<sup>1</sup> A *Hinge*: the title *Cardinal* is derived from  
*cardo*, "a hinge."

<sup>2</sup> *Orts*: scraps.

They who had lived deliciously and rolled  
Rome's choicest comfit 'neath the tongue  
before.

Into this quag, "jump" bade the Cardinal!  
And neck-deep in a minute there flounced  
they.

But they touched bottom at Arezzo: there—  
Four months' experience of how craft and greed  
Quickened by penury and pretentious hate  
Of plain truth, brutify and bestialize,—  
Four months' taste of apportioned insolence,  
Cruelty graduated, dose by dose  
Of ruffianism dealt out at bed and board,  
And lo, the work was done, success clapped  
hands.

The starved, stripped, beaten brace of stupid  
dupes

Broke at last in their desperation loose,  
Fled away for their lives, and lucky so;  
Found their account in casting coat afar  
And bearing off a shred of skin at least:  
Left Guido lord o' the prey, as the lion is,  
And, careless what came after, carried their  
wrongs

To Rome,—I nothing doubt, with such re-  
morse

As folly feels, since pain can make it wise,  
But crime, past wisdom, which is innocence,  
Needs not be plagued with till a later day.

Pietro went back to beg from door to door,  
In hope that memory not quite extinct  
Of cheery days and festive nights would move  
Friends and acquaintance—after the natural  
laugh,

And tributary "Just as we foretold—"   
Toshowsome bowels, give the dregs o' the cup,  
Scraps of the trencher, to their host that was,  
Or let him share the mat with the mastiff, he  
Who lived large and kept open house so long.  
Not so Violante: ever a-head i' the march,  
Quick at the bye-road and the cut-across,  
She went first to the best adviser, God—  
Whose finger unmistakably was felt  
In all this retribution of the past.  
Here was the prize of sin, luck of a lie!  
But here too was what Holy Year would help,

Bound to rid sinners of sin vulgar, sin  
Abnormal, sin prodigious, up to sin  
Impossible and supposed for Jubilee' sake:  
To lift the leadenest of lies, let soar  
The soul unhampered by a feather-weight.  
"I will" said she "go burn out this bad hole  
That breeds the scorpion, baulk the plague  
at least

"Of hope to further plague by progeny:  
"I will confess my fault, be punished, yes,  
"But pardoned too: Saint Peter pays for  
all."

So, with the crowd she mixed, made for the  
dome,  
Through the great door new-broken for the  
nonce

Marched, muffled more than ever matron-wise,  
Up the left nave to the formidable throne,  
Fell into file with this the poisoner  
And that the paricide, and reached in turn  
The poor repugnant Penitentiary  
Set at this gully-hole o' the world's discharge  
To help the frightfullest of filth have vent,  
And then knelt down and whispered in his ear  
How she had bought Pompilia, palmed the babe  
On Pietro, passed the girl off as their child  
To Guido, and defrauded of his due  
This one and that one,—more than she could  
name,

Until her solid piece of wickedness  
Happened to split and spread woe far and  
wide:  
Contritely now she brought the case for cure.

Replied the throne—"Ere God forgive the  
guilt,  
"Make man some restitution! Do your part!  
"The owners of your husband's heritage,  
"Barred thence by this pretended birth and  
heir,—  
"Tell them, the bar came so, is broken so,  
"Theirs be the due reversion as before!  
"Your husband who, no partner in the guilt,  
"Suffers the penalty, led blindfold thus  
"By love of what he thought his flesh and  
blood  
"To alienate his all in her behalf,—

"Tell him too such contract is null and void !  
 "Last, he who personates your son-in-law,  
 "Who with sealed eyes and stopped ears,  
     tame and mute 595  
 "Took at your hand that bastard of a whore  
 "You called your daughter and he calls his  
     wife,—  
 "Tell him, and bear the anger which is just !  
 "Then, penance so performed, may pardon  
     be ! " 599

Who could gainsay this just and right award ?  
 Nobody in the world : but, out o' the world,  
 Who knows ?—might timid intervention be  
 From any makeshift of an angel-guide,  
 Substitute for celestial guardianship,  
 Pretending to take care of the girl's self : 605  
 "Woman, confessing crime is healthy work,  
 "And telling truth relieves a liar like you,  
 "But how of my quite unconsidered charge ?  
 "No thought if, while this good befalls your-  
     self, 609  
 "Aught in the way of harm may find out  
     her ?"  
 No least thought, I assure you : truth being  
     truth,  
 Tell it and shame the devil !

Said and done :

Home went Violante, disbosomed all : 614  
 And Pietro who, six months before, had borne  
 Word after word of such a piece of news  
 Like so much cold steel inched through his  
     breast-blade,  
 Now at its entry gave a leap for joy,  
 As who—what did I say of one in a quag ?—  
 Should catch a hand from heaven and spring  
     thereby 620  
 Out of the mud. On ten toes stand once more.  
 "What ? All that used to be, may be again ?  
 "My money mine again, my house, my land,  
 "My chairs and tables, all mine evermore ?  
 "What, the girl's dowry never was the girl's,  
 "And, unpaid yet, is never now to pay ? 625  
 "Then the girl's self, my pale Pompilia child  
 "That used to be my own with her great  
     eyes—  
 "He who drove us forth, why should he keep  
     her

"When proved as very a pauper as himself ?  
 "Will she come back, with nothing changed  
     at all, 631  
 "And laugh 'But how you dreamed uneasily !  
 "'I saw the great drops stand here on your  
     brow—  
 "'Did I do wrong to wake you with a kiss ?'  
 "No, indeed, darling ! No, for wide awake  
 "I see another outburst of surprise : 636  
 "The lout-lord, bully-beggar, braggart-sneak,  
 "Who not content with cutting purse, crops

ear—

"Assuredly it shall be salve to mine  
 "When this great news red-letters him, the  
     rogue ! 640

"Ay, let him taste the teeth o' the trap, this  
     fox,

"Give us our lamb back, golden fleece and all,  
 "Let her creep in and warm our breasts again !

"Why care for the past ? We three are our  
     old selves,

"And know now what the outside world is  
     worth." 645

And so, he carried case before the courts ;  
 And there Violante, blushing to the bone,  
 Made public declaration of her fault,  
 Renounced her motherhood, and prayed the  
     law

To interpose, frustrate of its effect 650  
 Her folly, and redress the injury done.

Whereof was the disastrous consequence,  
 That though indisputably clear the case  
 (For thirteen years are not so large a lapse,  
 And still six witnesses survived in Rome  
 To prove the truth o' the tale)—yet, patent  
     wrong 655

Seemed Guido's ; the first cheat had chanced  
     on him :

Here was the pity that, deciding right,  
 Those who began the wrong would gain the  
     prize.

Guido pronounced the story one long lie 660  
 Lied to do robbery and take revenge :  
 Or say it were no lie at all but truth,  
 Then, it both robbed the right heirs and  
     shamed him

Without revenge to humanize the deed :



What had he done when first they shamed  
him thus?

But that were too fantastic: Isols they,  
And leasing this world's wonder of a lie,  
They tied to blot him, though it brand them-  
selves.

So answered Guido through the Abate's mouth.  
Wherefore the court, its customary way,  
Inclined to the middle course the sage affect.  
They held the child to be a changeling,—good:  
But, lest the husband got no good thereby,  
They willed the dowry, though not hers at all,  
Should yet be his, if not by right then grace—  
Part-payment for the plain injustice done.  
As for that other contract, Pietro's work,  
Renunciation of his own estate,  
That must be cancelled—give him back his  
gifts,

He was no party to the cheat at least!  
So ran the judgment:—whence a prompt  
appeal

On both sides, seeing right is absolute.  
Cried Pietro "Is the child no child of mine?  
"Why give her a child's dowry?"—"Have  
I right.

"To the dowry, why not to the rest as well?"  
Cried Guido, or cried Paolo in his name:  
Till law said "Reinvestigate the case!"  
And so the matter pends, to this same day.

Hence new disaster—here no outlet seemed;  
Whatever the fortune of the battle-field,  
No path whereby the fatal man might march  
Victorious, wreath on head and spoils in hand,  
And back turned full upon the baffled foe,—  
Nor cranny whence, desperate and disgraced,  
Stripped to the skin, he might be fain to crawl  
Worm-like, and so away with his defeat  
To other fortune and a novel prey.

No, he was pinned to the place there, left alone  
With his immense hate and, the solitary  
Subject to satisfy that hate, his wife.

"Cast her off? Turn her naked out of doors?  
"Easily said! But still the action pends,  
"Still dowry, principal and interest,  
"Pietro's possessions, all I bargained for,—  
"Any good day, be but my friends alert,

"May give them me if she continue mine!

"Yet, keep her? Keep the puppet of my  
foes—

"Her voice that lisp me back their curse—  
her eye

"They lend their leer of triumph to—her lip  
"I touch and taste their very filth upon?"

In short, he also took the middle course  
Rome taught him—did at last excogitate  
How he might keep the good and leave the  
bad

Twined in revenge, yet extricable,—may  
Make the very hate's eruption, very rush  
Of the unpent sluice of cruelty relieve  
His heart first, then go fertilize his field.

What if the girl-wife, tortured with due care,  
Should take, as though spontaneously, the road  
It were impolitic to thrust her on?

If, goaded, she broke out in full revolt,  
Followed her parents in the face of the world,  
Branded as runaway not castaway,  
Self-sentenced and self-punished in the act?  
So should the loathed form and detested  
face

Launch themselves into hell and there be lost  
While he looked o'er the brink with folded  
arms;

So should the heaped-up shames go shudder-  
ing back

O' the head o' the heapers, Pietro and his wife,  
And bury in the breakage three at once:  
While Guido, left free, no one right renounced,  
Gain present, gain prospective, all the gain,  
None of the wife except her rights absorbed,  
Should ask law what it was law paused about—  
If law were dubious still whose word to take.  
The husband's—dignified and derelict,  
Or the wife's—the . . . what I tell you: It  
should be.

Guido's first step was to take pen, indite  
A letter to the Abate,—not his own,  
His wife's,—she should re-write, sign, seal  
and send.

She liberally told the household news,  
Rejoiced her vile progenitors were gone,  
Revealed their malice—how they even laid

A last injunction on her, when they fled,  
That she should forthwith find a paramour, 745  
Complot with him to gather spoil enough,  
Then burn the house down,—taking previous  
care

To poison all its inmates overnight,—  
And so companioned, so provisioned too,  
Follow to Rome and there join fortunes  
gay. 750

This letter, traced in pencil-characters,  
Guido as easily got re-traced in ink  
By his wife's pen, guided from end to end,  
As if it had been just so much Chinese.  
For why? That wife could broider, sing  
perhaps, 755

Pray certainly, but no more read than write  
This letter "which yet write she must," he  
said,

"Being half courtesy and compliment,  
"Half sisterliness: take the thing on trust!"  
She had as readily re-traced the words. 760  
Of her own death-warrant,—in some sort  
'twas so.

This letter the Abate in due course  
Communicated to such curious souls  
In Rome as needs must pry into the cause  
Of quarrel, why the Comparini fled 765  
The Franceschini, whence the grievance grew,  
What the hubbub meant: "Nay,—see the  
wife's own word,

"Authentic answer! Tell detractors too  
"There's a plan formed, a programme  
figured here 769

"—Pray God no after-practice put to proof,  
"This letter cast no light upon, one day!"

So much for what should work in Rome:  
back now.

To Arezzo, follow up the project there,  
Forward the next step with as bold a foot, 774  
And plague Pompilia to the height, you see!  
Accordingly did Guido set himself  
To worry up and down, across, around,  
The woman, hemmed in by her household-  
bars,—

Chase her about the coop of daily life,  
Having first stopped each outlet thence save  
one 780

Which, like bird with a ferret in her haunt,  
She needs must seize as sole way of escape  
Though there was tied and twittering a decoy  
To seem as if it tempted,—just the plume  
O' the popinjay, not a real respite there 785  
From toot and claw of something in the  
dark,—

Giuseppe Caponsacchi.

Now begins

The tenebrific passage of the tale: 789  
How hold a light, display the cavern's gorge?  
How, in this phase of the affair, show truth?  
Here is the dying wife who smiles and says  
"So it was,—so it was not,—how it was,  
"I never knew nor ever care to know—"

Till they all weep, physician, man of law, 795  
Even that poor old bit of battered brass  
Beaten out of all shape by the world's sins,  
Common utensil of the lazar-house—  
Confessor Celestino groans "'Tis truth,  
"All truth and only truth: there's some-  
thing here, 800

"Some presence in the room beside us all,  
"Something that every lie expires before:  
"No question she was pure from first to last."  
So far is well and helps us to believe: 804  
But beyond, she the helpless, simple-sweet  
Or silly-sooth, unskilled to break one blow  
At her good fame by putting finger forth,—  
How can she render service to the truth?  
The bird says "So I fluttered where a springe  
"Caught me: the springe did not contrive  
itself, 810

"That I know: who contrived it, God for-  
give!"

But we, who hear no voice and have dry eyes,  
Must ask,—we cannot else, absolving her,—  
How of the part played by that same decoy  
I' the catching, caging? Was himself caught  
first? 815

We deal here with no innocent at least,  
No witless victim,—he's a man of the age  
And priest beside,—persuade the mocking  
world.

Mere charity boiled over in this sort!  
He whose own safety too,—(the Pope's  
apprised— 820

Good-natured with the secular offence;

The Pope looks grave on priesthood in a scrape)  
Our priest's own safety therefore, may-be life,  
Hangs on the issue ! You will find it hard.

Guido is here to meet you with fixed foot, 835  
Stiff like a statue—"Leave what went before !

"My wife fled i' the company of a priest,  
"Spent two days and two nights alone with  
him :

"Leave what came after !" He stands hard  
to throw. 839

Moreover priests are merely flesh and blood ;  
When we get weakness, and no guilt beside,  
'Tis no such great ill-fortune : finding grey,  
We gladly call that white which might be  
black,

Too used to the double-dye. So, if the priest,  
Moved by Pompilia's youth and beauty, gave 838  
Way to the natural weakness. . . . Anyhow  
Here be facts, character ; what they spell  
Determine, and thence pick what sense you  
may !

There was a certain young bold handsome  
priest

Popular in the city, far and wide 840  
Famed, since Arezzo's but a little place,  
As the best of good companions, gay and  
grave

At the decent minute ; settled in his stall,  
Or sidling, lute on lap, by lady's couch,  
Ever the courtly Canon ; see in him 845  
A proper star to climb and culminate,

Have its due handbreadth of the heaven at  
Rome,

Though meanwhile pausing on Arezzo's edge,  
As modest candle does 'mid mountain fog,  
To rub off redness and rusticity 850  
Ere it sweep chastened, gain the silver-sphere !  
Whether through Guido's absence or what  
else,

This Caponsacchi, favourite of the town,  
Was yet no friend of his nor free o' the house,  
Though both moved in the regular magnates'  
march : 855

Each must observe the other's tread and halt  
At church, saloon, theatre, house of play.

Who could help noticing the husband's slouch,  
The black of his brow—or miss the news that  
buzzed

Of how the little solitary wife 860  
Wept and looked out of window all day  
long ?

What need of minute search into such springs  
As start men, set o' the move ?—machinery  
Old as earth, obvious as the noonday sun.  
Why, take men as they come,—an instance  
now,— 865

Of all those who have simply gone to see  
Pompilia on her deathbed since four days,  
Half at the least are, call it how you please,  
In love with her—I don't except the priests  
Nor even the old confessor whose eyes run  
Over at what he styles his sister's voice 871  
Who died so early and weaned him from the  
world.

Well, had they viewed her ere the paleness  
pushed

The last o' the red o' the rose away, while yet  
Some hand, adventurous 'twixt the wind and  
her, 875

Might let shy life run back and raise the flower  
Rich with reward up to the guardian's face, —  
Would they have kept that hand employed  
all day

At fumbling on with prayer-book pages ? No !  
Men are men : why then need I say one word  
More than that our mere man the Canon here  
Saw, pitied, loved Pompilia ? 883

This is why ;

This startling why : that Caponsacchi's self—  
Whom foes and friends alike avouch, for good  
Or ill, a man of truth whate'er betide, 885  
Intrepid altogether, reckless too  
How his own fame and fortune, tossed to the  
winds,

Suffer by any turn the adventure take,  
Nay, more—not thrusting, like a badge to hide,  
'Twixt shirt and skin a joy which shown is  
shame— 891

But flirting flag-like i' the face o' the world  
This tell-tale kerchief, this conspicuous love  
For the lady,—oh, called innocent love, I know !  
Only, such scarlet fiery innocence 895

As most folk would try muffle up in shade,—  
—'Tis strange then that this else abashless  
mouth

Should yet maintain, for truth's sake which  
is God's,

That it was not he made the first advance,  
That, even ere word had passed between the  
two,

Pompilia penned him letters, passionate  
prayers,

If not love, then so simulating love  
That he, no novice to the taste of thyme,  
Turned from such over-luscious honey-clot  
At end o' the flower, and would not lend  
his lip

Till . . . but the tale here frankly outsoars  
faith :

There must be falsehood somewhere. For  
her part,

Pompilia quietly constantly avers  
She never penned a letter in her life  
Nor to the Canon nor any other man,

Being incompetent to write and read :  
Nor had she ever uttered word to him, nor he  
To her till that same evening when they met,  
She on her window-terrace, he beneath  
I' the public street, as was their fateful chance,  
And she adjured him in the name of God  
To find' out, bring to pass where, when and  
how

Escape with him to Rome might be contrived.  
Means were found, plan laid, time fixed, she  
avers,

And heart assured to heart in loyalty,  
All at an impulse ! All extemporized  
As in romance-books ! Is that credible ?

Well, yes : as she avers this with calm mouth  
Dying, I do think "Credible !" you'd cry—  
Did not the priest's voice come to break the  
spell.

They questioned him apart, as the custom is,  
When first the matter made a noise at Rome,  
And he, calm, constant then as she is now,  
For truth's sake did assert and re-assert  
These letters called him to her and he came,  
—Which damns the story credible otherwise.  
Why should this man,—mad to devote himself,  
Careless what comes of his own fame, the  
first,—

Be studious thus to publish and declare  
Just what the lightest nature loves to hide,

So screening lady from the byword's laugh  
"First spoke the lady, last the cavalier !"

—I say,—why should the man tell truth just  
now

When graceful lying meets such ready shrift ?  
Or is there a first moment for a priest

As for a woman, when invaded shame  
Must have its first and last excuse to show ?

Do both contrive love's entry in the mind—  
Shall look, i' the manner of it, a surprise,—

That after, once the flag o' the fort hauled  
down,

Effrontery may sink drawbridge, open gate,  
Welcome and entertain the conqueror ?

Or what do you say to a touch of the devil's  
worst ?

Can it be that the husband, he who wrote  
The letter to his brother I told you of,

I' the name of her it meant to criminate,—  
What if he wrote those letters to the priest ?

Further the priest says, when it first befell,  
This folly o' the letters, that he checked the flow,

Put them back lightly each with its reply.  
Here again vexes new discrepancy :

There never reached her eye a word from him :  
He did write but she could not read—could just

Burn the offence to wifeness, womanhood,  
So did burn : never bade him come to her,

Yet when it proved he must come, let him  
come,

And when he did come though uncalled,—  
why, spoke

Prompt by an inspiration : thus it chanced.  
Will you go somewhat back to understand ?

When first, pursuant to his plan, there  
sprang,

Like an uncaged beast, Guido's cruelty  
On soul and body of his wife, she cried

To those whom law appoints resource for such,  
The secular guardian,—that's the Governor,

And the Archbishop,—that's the spiritual  
guide,

And prayed them take the claws from out  
her flesh.

Now, this is ever the ill consequence  
Of being noble, poor and difficult,

Ungainly, yet too great to disregard,—

This—that born peers and friends hereditary,— 875

Though disinclined to help from their own store

The opprobrious wight, put penny in his poke  
From private purse or leave the door ajar  
When he goes wistful by at dinner-time,—

Yet, if his needs conduct him where they sit  
Smugly in office, judge this, bishop that; 981  
Dispensers of the shine and shade o' the place—

And if, friend's door shut and friend's purse undrawn,

Still potentates may find the office-seat  
Do as good service at no cost—give help 985  
By-the-bye, pay up traditional dues at once  
Just through a feather-weight too much i' the scale,

Or finger-tip forgot at the balance-tongue,—  
Why, only churls refuse, or Molinists.

Thus when, in the first roughness of surprise 990

At Guido's wolf-face whence the sheepskin fell,  
The frightened couple, all bewilderment,  
Rushed to the Governor,—who else rights wrong?

Told him their tale of wrong and craved redress—

Why, then the Governor woke up to the fact 995

That Guido was a friend of old, poor Count!—  
So, promptly paid his tribute, promised the pair,

Wholesome chastisement should soon cure their qualms

Next time they came, wept, prated and told lies:

So stopped all prating, sent them dumb to Rome. 1000

Well, now it was Pompilia's turn to try:  
The troubles pressing on her, as I said,  
Three times she rushed, maddened by misery,  
To the other mighty man, sobbed out her prayer

At footstool of the Archbishop—fast the friend 1005

Of her husband also! Oh, good, friends of yore!

So, the Archbishop, not to be outdone  
By the Governor, break custom more than he,  
Thrice bade the foolish woman stop her tongue, 1000

Unloosed her hands from harassing his gout,  
Coached her and carried her to the Count again,

—His old friend should be master in his house,  
Rule his wife and correct her faults at need!  
Well, driven from post to pillar in this wise,  
She, as a last resource, betook herself. 1010

To one, should be no family-friend at least,  
A simple friar o' the city; confessed to him,  
Then told how fierce temptation of release  
By self-dealt death was busy with her soul,  
And urged that he put this in words, write plain 1020

For one who could not write, set down her prayer

That Pietro and Violante, parent-like  
If somehow not her parents, should for love  
Come save her, pluck from out the flame the brand

Themselves had thoughtlessly thrust in so deep 1025

To send gay-coloured sparkles up and cheer  
Their seat at the chimney-corner. The good friar

Promised as much at the moment; but, alack,  
Night brings discretion: he was no one's friend, 1030

Yet presently found he could not turn about  
Nor take a step i' the case and fail to tread  
On someone's toe who either was a friend,  
Or a friend's friend, or friend's friend thrice-removed,

And woe to friar by whom offences come!  
So, the course being plain,—with a general sigh 1035

At matrimony the profound mistake,—  
He threw reluctantly the business up,  
Having his other penitents to mind.

If then, all outlets thus secured save one,  
At last she took to the open, stood and stared 1040

With her wan face to see where God might wait—

And there found Caponsacchi wait as well  
For the precious something at perdition's sedge,  
He only was predestinate to save,—  
And if they recognized in a critical flash 1045  
From the zenith, each the other, her need  
of him.

His need of . . . say, a woman to perish for,  
The regular way o' the world, yet break no  
vow,

Do no harm save to himself,—if this were  
thus?

How do you say? It were improbable; 1050  
So is the legend of my patron-saint.

Anyhow, whether, as Guido states the case,  
Pompilia,—like a starving wretch i' the street  
Who stops and rifles the first passenger 1054  
In the great right of an excessive wrong,—  
Did somehow call this stranger and he came,—  
Or whether the strange sudden interview  
Blazed as when star and star must needs go  
close

Till each hurts each and there is loss in  
heaven— 1059

Whatever way in this strange world it was,—  
Pompilia and Caponsacchi met, in fine,  
She at her window, he i' the street beneath,  
And understood each other at first look.

All was determined and performed at once.  
And on a certain April evening, late 1065  
I' the month, this girl of sixteen, bride and  
wife

Three years and over,—she who hitherto  
Had never taken twenty steps in Rome  
Beyond the church, pinned to her mother's  
gown, 1069

Nor, in Arezzo, knew her way through street  
Except what led to the Archbishop's door,—  
Such an one rose up in the dark, laid hand  
On what came first, clothes and a trinket or two,  
Belongings of her own in the old day,—  
Stole from the side o' the sleeping spouse—  
who knows? 1075

Sleeping perhaps, silent for certain,—slid  
Ghost-like from great dark room to great  
dark room

In through the tapestries and out again

And onward, unembarrassed as a fate,  
Descended staircase, gained last door of all,  
Sent it wide open at first push of palm, 1081  
And there stood, first time, last and only time,  
At liberty, alone in the open street,—  
Unquestioned, unmolested found herself  
At the city gate, by Caponsacchi's side, 1085  
Hope there, joy there, life and all good again,  
The carriage there, the convoy there, light there  
Broadening ever into blaze at Rome  
And breaking small what long miles lay  
between;

Up she sprang, in he followed, they were  
safe. 1090

The husband quotes this for incredible,  
All of the story from first word to last :  
Sees the priest's hand throughout upholding  
hers,

Traces his foot to the alcove, that night,  
Whither and whence blindfold he knew the  
way, 1094

Proficient in all craft and stealthiness ;  
And cites for proof a servant, eye that watched  
And ear that opened to purse secrets up,  
A woman-spy,—suborned to give and take  
Letters and tokens, do the work of shame 1098  
The more adroitly that herself, who helped  
Communion thus between a tainted pair,  
Had long since been a leper thick in spot,  
A common trull o' the town: she witnessed all,  
Helped many meetings, partings, took her  
wage 1103

And then told Guido the whole matter. Lies!  
The woman's life confutes her word,—her word  
Confutes itself: "Thus, thus and thus I lied."  
"And thus, no question, still you lie," we say.

"Ay, but at last, e'en have it how you  
will, 1112

"Whatever the means, whatever the way,  
explodes

"The consummation"—the accusers shriek :  
"Here is the wife avowedly found in flight,

"And the companion of her flight, a priest ;  
"She flies her husband, he the church his  
spouse : 1123

"What is this?"

- Wife and priest alike reply  
 "This is the simple thing it claims to be,  
 "A course we took for life and honour's sake,  
 "Very strange, very justifiable." 1120  
 She says, "God put it in my head to fly,  
 "As when the martin migrates: autumn claps  
 "Her hands, cries 'Winter's coming, will  
 be here,  
 "Off with you ere the white teeth overtake!  
 "Flee!' So I fled: this friend was the  
 warm day, 1125  
 "The south wind and whatever favours flight;  
 "I took the favour, had the help, how else?  
 "And so we did fly rapidly all night,  
 "All day, all night—a longer night—again,  
 "And then another day, longest of days, 1130  
 "And all the while, whether we fled or stopped,  
 "I scarce know how or why; one thought  
 filled both,  
 "Fly and arrive!' So long as I found  
 strength  
 "I talked with my companion, told him much,  
 "Knowing that he knew more, knew me,  
 knew God 1135  
 "And God's disposal of me,—but the sense  
 "O' the blessed flight absorbed me in the main,  
 "And speech became mere talking through  
 a sleep,  
 "Till at the end of that last longest night  
 "In a red daybreak, when we reached an  
 inn 1140  
 "And my companion whispered 'Next stage  
 —Rome!'  
 "Sudden the weak flesh fell like piled-up  
 cards,  
 "All the frail fabric at a finger's touch,  
 "And prostrate the poor soul too, and I said  
 "But though Count Guido were a furlong  
 off, 1145  
 "'Just on me, I must stop and rest awhile!'  
 "Then something like a huge white wave  
 o' the sea  
 "Broke o'er my brain and buried me in sleep  
 "Blessedly, till it ebbed and left me loose,  
 "And where was I found but on a strange  
 bed 1150  
 "In a strange room like hell, roaring with  
 noise,  
 "Ruddy with flame, and filled with men, in  
 front  
 "Who but the man you call my husband? ay—  
 "Count Guido once more between heaven  
 and me,  
 "For there my heaven stood, my salvation,  
 yes— 1155  
 "That Caponsacchi all my heaven of help,  
 "Helpless himself, held prisoner in the hands  
 "Of men who looked up in my husband's face  
 "To take the fate thence he should signify,  
 "Just as the way was at Arezzo. Then, 1160  
 "Not for my sake but his who had helped me—  
 "I sprang up, reached him with one bound,  
 and seized  
 "The sword o' the felon, trembling at his side  
 "Fit creature of a coward, unsheathed the  
 thing  
 "And would have pinned him through the  
 poison-bag 1165  
 "To the wall and left him there to palpitate,  
 "As you serve scorpions, but men interposed—  
 "Disarmed me, gave his life to him again  
 "That he might take mine and the other lives,  
 "And he has done so. I submit myself!" 1170  
 The priest says—oh, and in the main result  
 The facts asseverate, he truly says,  
 As to the very act and deed of him,  
 However you mistrust the mind o' the man—  
 The flight was just for flight's sake, no pre-  
 text 1175  
 For aught except to set Pompilia free.  
 He says "I cite the husband's self's worst charge  
 "In proof of my best word for both of us.  
 "Be it conceded that so many times  
 "We took our pleasure in his palace  
 then, 1180  
 "What need to fly at all?—or flying no less,  
 "What need to outrage the lips sick and  
 white  
 "Of a woman, and bring ruin down beside,  
 "By halting when Rome lay one stage  
 beyond?"  
 So does he vindicate Pompilia's fame, 1185  
 Confirm her story in all points but one—  
 This; that, so fleeing and so breathing forth  
 Her last strength in the prayer to halt awhile,  
 She makes confusion of the reddening white

Which was the sunset when her strength  
gave way, 1190

And the next sunrise and its whitening red  
Which she revived in when her husband came:  
She mixes both times, morn and eve, in one,  
Having lived through a blank of night 'twixt  
each

Though dead-asleep, unaware as a corpse, 1195  
She on the bed above; her friend below  
Watched in the doorway of the inn the while,  
Stood i' the red o' the morn, that she mistakes,  
In act to rouse and quicken the tardy crew  
And hurry out the horses, have the stage  
Over, the last league, reach Rome and be  
safe: 1201

When up came Guido.

Guido's tale begins—

How he and his whole household, drunk to  
death 1204

By some enchanted potion, poppied drugs  
Plied by the wife, lay powerless in gross sleep  
And left the spoilers unimpeded way,  
Could not shake off their poison and pursue,  
Till noontide, then made shift to get on horse  
And did pursue: which means he took his  
time, 1210

Pressed on no more than lingered after, step  
by step, just making sure o' the fugitives,  
Till at the nick of time, he saw his chance,  
Seized it, came up with and surprised the pair.  
How he must needs have gnawn lip and  
gnashed teeth, 1215

Taking successively at tower and town,  
Village and roadside, still the same report  
"Yes, such a pair arrived an hour ago,  
"Sat in the carriage just where now you stand,  
"While we got horses ready,—turned deaf  
ear 1220

"To all entreaty they would even alight;  
"Counted the minutes and resumed their  
course."

Would they indeed escape, arrive at Rome,  
Leave no least loop-hole to let murder  
through,

But foil him of his captured infamy, 1225  
Prize of guilt proved and perfect? So it  
seemed.

Till, oh the happy chance, at last stage, Rome

VOL. II.

But two short hours off, Castelnuovo reached,  
The guardian angel gave reluctant place,  
Satan stepped forward with alacrity, 1230  
Pompilia's flesh and blood succumbed, per-  
force

A halt was, and her husband had his will.  
Perdue he couched, counted out hour by hour  
Till he should spy in the east a signal-streak—  
Night had been, morrow was, triumph would  
be. 1235

Do you see the plan deliciously complete?  
The rush upon the unsuspecting sleep,  
The easy execution, the outcry  
Over the deed "Take notice all the world!  
"These two dead bodies, locked still in  
embrace,— 1240

"The man is Caponsacchi and a priest,  
"The woman is my wife: they fled me late,  
"Thus have I found and you behold them  
thus,  
"And may judge me: do you approve or  
no?"

Success did seem not so improbable, 1245  
But that already Satan's laugh was heard,  
His black back turned on Guido—left i' the  
lurch

Or rather, balked of suit and service now,  
Left to improve on both by one deed more,  
Burn up the better at no distant day, 1250  
Body and soul one holocaust to hell.

Anyhow, of this natural consequence  
Did just the last link of the long chain snap:  
For an eruption was o' the priest, alive 1255  
And alert, calm, resolute and formidable,  
Not the least look of fear in that broad brow—  
One not to be disposed of by surprise,  
And armed moreover—who had guessed as  
much?

Yes, there stood he in secular costume  
Complete from head to heel, with sword at  
side, 1260

He seemed to know the trick of perfectly.  
There was no prompt suppression of the man.  
As he said calmly "I have saved your wife  
"From death; there was no other way but  
this; 1265

"Of what do I defraud you except death?"



"Charge any wrong beyond, I answer it."  
 Guido, the valorous, had met his match,  
 Was forced to demand help instead of fight,  
 Bid the authorities o' the place lend aid  
 And make the best of a broken matter so. 1270  
 They soon obeyed the summons—I suppose,  
 Apprised and ready, or not far to seek—  
 Laid hands on Caponsacchi, found in fault,  
 A priest yet flagrantly accounted thus,—  
 Then, to make good Count Guido's further  
 charge, 1275  
 Proceeded, prisoner made lead the way,  
 In a crowd, upstairs to the chamber-door  
 Where wax-white, dead asleep, deep beyond  
 dream,  
 As the priest laid her, lay Pompilia yet.

And as he mounted step and step with the  
 crowd 1280  
 How I see Guido taking heart again!  
 He knew his wife so well and the way of  
 her—

How at the outbreak she would shroud her  
 shame

In hell's heart, would it mercifully yawn—  
 How, failing that, her forehead to his foot,  
 She would crouch silent till the great doom  
 fell, 1285

Leave him triumphant with the crowd to see  
 Guilt motionless or writhing like a worm!

No! Second misadventure, this worm turned,  
 I told you: would have slain him on the  
 spot 1290

With his own weapon, but they seized her  
 hands:

Leaving her tongue free, as it tolled the knell  
 Of Guido's hope so lively late. The past  
 Took quite another shape now. She who  
 shrieked 1294

"At least and for ever I am mine and God's,  
 "Thanks to his liberating angel Death—

"Never again degraded to be yours

"The ignoble noble, the unmanly man,

"The beast below the beast in brutish-  
 ness!"—

This was the froward child, "the restif lamb  
 "Used to be cherished in his breast," he  
 groaned— 1301

"Eat from his hand and drink from out his  
 cup,

"The while his fingers pushed their loving  
 way.

"Through curl on curl of that soft coat—alas,

"And she all silverly beaded gratitude 1305

"While meditating mischief!"—and so forth.

He must invent another story now!

The ins and outs o' the rooms were searched;  
 he found

Or showed for found the abominable prize—

Love-letters from his wife who cannot write,

Love-letters in reply o' the priest—thank  
 God!— 1311

Who can write and confront his character

With this, and prove the false thing forged  
 throughout:

Spitting whereat, he needs must spatter whom

But Guido's self?—that forged and falsi-  
 fied 1315

One letter called Pompilia's, past dispute:

Then why not these to make sure still more  
 sure?

So was the case concluded then and there:

Guido preferred his charges in due form, 1319

Called on the law to adjudicate, consigned

The accused ones to the Prefect of the place,

(Oh mouse-birth of that mountain-like re-  
 venge!)

And so to his own place betook himself

After the spring that failed,—the wildcat's  
 way. 1324

The captured parties were conveyed to Rome;

Investigation followed here i' the court—

Soon to review the fruit of its own work,

From then to now being eight months and  
 no more.

Guido kept out of sight and safe at home:

The Abate, brother Paolo, helped most 1330

At words when deeds were out of question,  
 pushed

Nearest the purple,<sup>1</sup> best played deputy,

So, pleaded, Guido's representative

At the court shall soon try Guido's self,—  
 what's more, 1334

<sup>1</sup> *The purple*: the colour of the cardinals.

The court that also took—I told you, Sir—  
That statement of the couple, how a cheat  
Had been 't the birth of the babe, no child  
of theirs.

That was the prelude; this, the play's first act:  
Whereof we wait what comes, crown, close  
of all.

Well, the result was something of a shade  
On the parties thus accused,—how other-  
wise? 1341

Shade, but with shine as unmistakable.  
Each had a prompt defence: Pompilia first—  
"Earth was made hell to me who did no  
harm: 1344

"I only could emerge one way from hell  
"By catching at the one hand held me, so  
"I caught at it and thereby stepped to heaven:  
"If that be wrong, do with me what you will!"  
Then Caponsacchi with a grave grand sweep  
O' the arm as though his soul warned base-  
ness off— 1350

"If as a man, then much more as a priest  
"I hold me bound to help weak innocence:  
"If so my worldly reputation burst,  
"Doing the bubble it is, why, burst it may:  
"Blame I can bear though not blameworthy-  
ness. 1355

"But use your sense first, see if the miscreant  
proved,

"The man who tortured thus the woman,  
thus

"Have not both laid the trap and fixed the  
lure

"Over the pit should bury body and soul!

"His facts are lies: his letters are the fact—

"An infiltration flavoured with himself! 1361

"As for the fancies—whether . . . what is  
it you say?

"The lady loves me, whether I love her

"In the forbidden sense of your surmise,—

"If, with the midday blaze of truth above, 1365

"The unblinded eye of God awake, aware,

"You needs must pry about and trace the  
birth

"Of each stray beam of light may traverse  
night,

"To the night's sun that's Lucifer himself,

"Do so, at other time, in other place, 1370

"Not now nor here! Enough that first to last

"I never touched her lip nor she my hand

"Nor either of us thought a thought, much less

"Spoke a word which the Virgin might not  
hear. 1374

"Be such your question, thus I answer it."

Then the court had to make its mind up, spoke.

"It is a thorny question, yea, a tale

"Hard to believe, but not impossible; 1377

"Who can be absolute for either side?

"A middle course is happily open yet. 1381

"Here has a blot surprised the social blank,—

"Whether through favour, feebleness or fault,

"No matter, leprosy has touched our robe

"And we unclean must needs be purified.

"Here is a wife makes holiday from home, 1385

"A priest caught playing truant to his church

"In masquerade moreover: both allege

"Enough excuse to stop our lifted scourge

"Which else would heavily fall. On the  
other hand, 1389

"Here is a husband, ay and man of mark,

"Who comes complaining here, demands  
redress

"As if he were the pattern of desert—

"The while those plaguy allegations frown,

"Forbid we grant him the redress he seeks.

"To all men be our moderation known! 1393

"Rewarding none while compensating each,

"Hurting all round though harming nobody,

"Husband, wife, priest, scot-free not one  
shall scape,

"Yet priest, wife, husband, boast the un-  
broken head

"From application of our excellent oil: 1397

"So that, whatever be the fact, in fine,

"We make no miss of justice in a sort.

"First, let the husband stomach as he may,

"His wife shall neither be returned him, no—

"Nor branded, whipped and caged, but just  
consigned. 1401

"To a convent and the quietude she craves;

"So is he rid of his domestic plague:

"What better thing can happen to a man?

"Next, let the priest retire—unshout, un-  
shamed.

"Unpunished as for perpetrating crime, 1410  
 "But relegated (not imprisoned, Sirs!)  
 "Sent for three years to clarify his youth  
 "At Civita, a rest by the way to Rome:  
 "There let his life skim off its last of lees  
 "Nor keep this dubious colour. Judged the  
     cause: 1415  
 "All parties may retire, content, we hope."  
 That's Rome's way, the traditional road of  
     law;  
 Whither it leads is what remains to tell.

The priest went to his relegation-place,  
 The wife to her convent, brother Paolo 1420  
 To the arms of brother Guido with the news  
 And this beside—his charge was counter-  
     charged;  
 The Comparini, his old brace of hates,  
 Were breathed and vigilant and venomous  
     now— 1424  
 Had shot a second bolt where the first stuck,  
 And followed up the pending dowry-suit  
 By a procedure should release the wife  
 From so much of the marriage-bond as barred  
 Escape when Guido turned the screw too  
     much  
 On his wife's flesh and blood, as husband  
     may. 1430  
 No more defence, she turned and made attack,  
 Claimed now divorce from bed and board, in  
     short:  
 Pleading such subtle strokes of cruelty,  
 Such slow sure siege laid to her body and  
     soul,  
 As, proved,—and proofs seemed coming thick  
     and fast,— 1435  
 Would gain both freedom and the dowry back  
 Even should the first suit leave them in his  
     grasp:  
 So urged the Comparini for the wife.  
 Guido had gained not one of the good things  
 He grasped at by his creditable plan 1440  
 O' the flight and following and the rest: the  
     suit  
 That smouldered late was fanned to fury new,  
 This adjunct came to help with fiercer fire,  
 While he had got himself a quite new plague—  
 Found the world's face an universal grin 1445

At this last best of the Hundred Merry Tales<sup>1</sup>  
 Of how a young and spritely clerk devised  
 To carry off a spouse that moped too much,  
 And cured her of the vapours in a trice:  
 And how the husband, playing Vulcan's part,<sup>2</sup>  
 Told by the Sun, started in hot pursuit 1450  
 To catch the lovers, and came halting up,  
 Cast his net and then called the Gods to see  
 The convicts in their rosy impudence—  
 Whereat said Mercury "Would that I were  
     Mars!" 1458  
 Oh it was rare, and naughty all the same!  
 Brief, the wife's courage and cunning,—the  
     priest's show  
 Of chivalry and adroitness,—last not least,  
 The husband—how he ne'er showed teeth at  
     all,  
 Whose bark had promised biting; but just  
     sneaked 1468  
 Back to his kennel, tail 'twixt legs, as 'twere,—  
 All this was hard to gulp down and digest.  
 So pays the devil his liegeman, brass for gold.  
 But this was at Arezzo: here in Rome  
 Brave Paolo bore up against it all— 1465  
 Battled it out, nor wanting to himself  
 Nor Guido nor the House whose weight he bore  
 Pillar-like, by no force of arm but brain.  
 He knew his Rome, what wheels to set to  
     work;  
 Plied influential folk, pressed to the ear 1470  
 Of the efficacious purple, pushed his way  
 To the old Pope's self,—past decency indeed,—  
 Praying him take the matter in his hands  
 Out of the regular court's incompetence.  
 But times are changed and nephews out of  
     date 1475  
 And favouritism unfashionable; the Pope  
 Said "Render Cæsar what is Cæsar's due!"  
 As for the Comparini's counter-plea,  
 He met that by a counter-plea again,  
 Made Guido claim divorce—with help so far

<sup>1</sup> *The Hundred Merry Tales*: referring to the "Decameron" of Boccaccio, in which ten tales are told on each of ten days, many of them of the type described in the next lines.  
<sup>2</sup> *Vulcan's part*: referring to Homer (*Od.* viii. 266 ff.), where Hephæstus (Vulcan) is deceived by Aphrodite (Venus), his wife, and Ares (Mars), her lover.

By the trial's issue : for, why punishment  
 However slight unless for guiltiness 1482  
 However slender?—and a molehill serves  
 Much as a mountain of offence this way.  
 So was he gathering strength on every side  
 And growing more and more to menace—  
 when 1486

All of a terrible moment came the blow  
 That beat down Paolo's fence, ended the play  
 O' the foil and brought mannaia on the stage.

Five months had passed now since Pompilia's  
 flight, 1490

Months spent in peace among the Convert  
 nuns.

This,—being, as it seemed, for Guido's sake  
 Solely, what pride might call imprisonment  
 And quote as something gained, to friends at  
 home,—

This naturally was at Guido's charge : 1495  
 Grudge it he might, but penitential fare,  
 Prayers, preachings, who but he defrayed  
 the cost ?

So, Paolo dropped, as proxy, do it by do it  
 Like heart's blood, till—what's here ? What  
 notice comes ? 1499

The convent's self makes application bland  
 That, since Pompilia's health is fast o' the wane,  
 She may have leave to go combine her cure  
 Of soul with cure of body, mend her mind  
 Together with her thin arms and sunk eyes  
 That want fresh air outside the convent-  
 wall, 1505

Say in a friendly house,—and which so fit  
 As a certain villa in the Pauline way,  
 That happens to hold Pietro and his wife,  
 The natural guardians ? “ Oh, and shift the  
 care

“ You shift the cost, too ; Pietro pays in  
 turn, 1510

“ And lightens Guido of a load ! And then,  
 “ Villa or convent, two names for one thing,  
 “ Always the sojourn means imprisonment,  
 “ *Domus pro carcere*<sup>1</sup>—nowise we relax,  
 “ Nothing abate : how answers Paolo ?” 1515

You,

<sup>1</sup> *Domus pro carcere*. “ a house in place of  
 a prison.”

What would you answer ? All so smooth  
 and fair,  
 Even Paul's astuteness sniffed no harm i' the  
 world.

He authorized the transfer, saw it made  
 And, two months after, reaped the fruit of  
 the same, 1520

Having to sit down, rack his brain and find  
 What phrase should serve him best to notify  
 Our Guido that by happy providence  
 A son and heir, a babe was born to him  
 I' the villa,—go tell sympathizing friends ! 1525  
 Yes, such had been Pompilia's privilege :

She, when she fled, was one month gone  
 with child,

Known to herself or unknown, either way  
 Availing to explain (say men of art)  
 The strange and passionate precipitance 1530  
 Of maiden startled into motherhood  
 Which changes body and soul by nature's law.  
 So when the she-dove breeds, strange yearn-  
 ings come

For the unknown shelter by undreamed-of  
 shores, 1534

And there is born a blood-pulse in her heart  
 To fight if needs be, though with flap of wing,  
 For the wool-flock or the fur-tuft, though a  
 hawk

Contest the prize,—wherefore, she knows  
 not yet.

Anyhow, thus to Guido came the news. 1539

“ I shall have quitted Rome ere you arrive  
 “ To take the one step left,”—wrote Paolo.  
 Then did the winch o' the winepress of all  
 hate,

Vanity, disappointment, grudge and greed,  
 Take the last turn that screws out pure revenge  
 With a bright bubble at the brim beside— 1545  
 By an heir's birth he was assured at once

O' the main prize, all the money in dispute :  
 Pompilia's dowry might revert to her  
 Or stay with him as law's caprice should  
 point,—

But now—now—what was Pietro's shall be  
 hers, 1550

What was hers shall remain her own,—if hers,  
 Why then,—oh, not her husband's but—her  
 heir's !

That, heir being his too, all grew his at last  
By this road or by that road, since they join.  
Before, why, push he Pietro out o' the  
world,— 1555

The current of the money stopped, you see,  
Pompilia being proved no Pietro's child :  
Or let it be Pompilia's life he quenched,  
Again the current of the money stopped,—  
Guido debarred his rights as husband soon,  
So the new process threatened ;—now, the  
chance, 1561

Now, the resplendent minute ! Clear the  
earth,

Cleanse the house, let the three but disappear  
A child remains, depositary of all,  
That Guido may enjoy his own again, 1565  
Repair all losses by a master-stroke,

Wipe out the past, all done all left undone,  
Swell the good present to best evermore,  
Die into new life, which let blood baptize !

So, i' the blue of a sudden sulphur-blaze, 1570  
Both why there was one step to take at Rome,  
And why he should not meet with Paolo there,  
He saw—the ins and outs to the heart of  
hell—

And took the straight line thither swift and  
sure.

He rushed to Vittiano, found four sons o'  
the soil, 1575

Brutes of his breeding, with one spark i' the  
clod

That served for a soul, the looking up to him  
Or aught called Franceschini as life, death,  
Heaven, hell,—lord paramount, assembled  
these,

Harangued, equipped, instructed, pressed  
each clod 1580

With his will's imprint ; then took horse,  
plied spur,

And so arrived, all five of them, at Rome  
On Christmas-Eve, and forthwith found  
themselves

Instilled i' the vacancy and solitude,  
Left them by Paolo, the considerate man

Who, good as his word, had disappeared at  
once 1585

As if to leave the stage free. A whole week

Did Guido spend in study of his part,  
Then played it fearless of a failure. One,  
Struck the year's clock whereof the hours are  
days, 1590

And off was rung o' the little wheels the chime  
"Good will on earth and peace to man :"  
but, two,

Proceeded the same bell and, evening come,  
The dreadful five felt finger-wise their way  
Across the town by blind cuts and black  
turns 1595

To the little lone suburban villa ; knocked—  
"Who may be outside?" called a well-known  
voice.

"A friend of Caponsacchi's bringing friends,  
"A letter."

That's a test, the excusers say :  
Ay, and a test conclusive, I return. 1600  
What? Had that name brought touch of  
guilt or taste

Of fear with it, aught to dash the present joy  
With memory of the sorrow just at end,—  
She, happy in her parents' arms at length  
With the new blessing of the two weeks'  
babe,— 1605

How had that name's announcement moved  
the wife?

Or, as the other slanders circulate,  
Were Caponsacchi no rare visitant  
On nights and days whither safe harbour lured,  
What bait had been i' the name to ope the  
door? 1610

The promise of a letter? Stealthy guests  
Have secret watchwords, private entrances :  
The man's own self might have been found  
inside

And all the scheme made frustrate by a word.  
No : but since Guido knew, none knew so  
well, 1615

The man had never since returned to Rome  
Nor seen the wife's face more than villa's  
front,

So, could not be at hand to warn or save,—  
For that, he took this sure way to the end.

"Come in," bade poor Violante cheerfully,  
Drawing the door-bolt : that death was the  
first, 1620

Stabbed through and through: Pietro, close  
on her heels,

Set up a cry—"Let me confess myself!

"Grant but confession!" Cold steel was the  
grant.

Then came Pompilia's turn. 1825

Then they escaped.

The noise o' the slaughter roused the neigh-  
bourhood.

They had forgotten just the one thing more  
Which saves i' the circumstance, the ticket  
to-wit 18

Which puts post-horses at a traveller's use:

So, all on foot, desperate through the dark  
Reeled they like drunkards along open road,  
Accomplished a prodigious twenty miles  
Homeward, and gained Baccano very near;  
Stumbled at last, deaf, dumb, blind through  
the feat, 1

Into a grange and, one dead heap, slept there  
Till the pursuers hard upon their trace  
Reached them and took them, red from head  
to heel,

And brought them to the prison where they lie.  
The couple were laid i' the church two days ago,  
And the wife lives yet by miracle. 1841

All is told.

You hardly need ask what Count Guido says,  
Since something he must say. "I own the  
deed—"

(He cannot choose,—but—) "I declare the  
same 1845

"Just and inevitable,—since no way else

"Was left me, but by this of taking life,

"To save my honour which is more than life.

"I exercised a husband's rights." To which  
The answer is as prompt—"There was no  
fault 1850

"In any one o' the three to punish thus:

"Neither i' the wife, who kept all faith to you,

"Nor in the parents, whom yourself first  
duped,

"Robbed and maltreated, then turned out of  
doors.

"You wronged and they endured wrong;  
yours the fault. 1855

"Next, had endurance overpassed the mark

"And turned resentment needing remedy,—  
"Nay, put the absurd impossible case, for  
once—

"You were all blameless of the blame alleged  
"And they blameworthy where you fix all  
blame, 1860

"Still, why this violation of the law?

"Yourself elected law should take its course,  
"Avenge wrong, or show vengeance not your  
right;

"Why, only when the balance in law's hand  
"Trembles against you and inclines the  
way 1865

"O' the other party, do you make protest,

"Renounce arbitrament, flying out of court,

"And crying 'Honour's hurt the sword must  
cure'?"

"Aha, and so i' the middle of each suit

"Trying i' the courts,—and you had three  
in play 1870

"With an appeal to the Pope's self beside,—

"What, you may chop and change and right  
your wrongs,

"Leaving the law to lag as she thinks fit?"

That were too temptingly commodious, Count!

One would have still a remedy in reserve 1875

Should reach the safest oldest sinner, you see!

One's honour forsooth? Does that take hurt  
alone

From the extreme outrage? I who have no wife,  
Being yet sensitive in my degree 1879

As Guido,—must discover hurt elsewhere

Which, half compounded-for in days gone by,

May profitably break out now afresh,

Need cure from my own expeditious hands.

The lie that was, as it were, imputed me 1884

When you objected to my contract's clause;—

The theft as good as, one may say, alleged,

When you, co-heir in a will, excepted, Sir,

To my administration of effects,

—Aha, do you think law disposed of these?

My honour's touched and shall deal death  
around! 1890

Count, that were too commodious, I repeat!

If any law be imperative on us all,

Of all are you the enemy: out with you

From the common light and air and life of man!

## IV.—TERTIUM QUID.

TRUE, Excellency—as his Highness says,  
Though she's not dead yet, she's as good as  
stretched

Symmetrical beside the other two ;  
Though he's not judged yet, he's the same  
as judged,

So do the facts abound and superabound :  
And nothing hinders that we lift the case  
Out of the shade into the shine, allow  
Qualified persons to pronounce at last,  
Nay, edge in an authoritative word  
Between this rabble's-brabble of dolts and  
fools

Who make up reasonless unreasoning Rome.  
“Now for the Trial!” they roar: “the  
Trial to test

“The truth, weigh husband and weigh wife  
alike

“I' the scales of law, make one scale kick  
the beam!”

Law's a machine from which, to please the  
mob,

Truth the divinity must needs descend  
And clear things at the play's fifth act—aha !  
Hammer into their noddles who was who  
And what was what. I tell the simpletons

“Could law be competent to such a feat  
“‘Tweredone already: what begins next week

“Is end o' the Trial, last link of a chain

“Whereof the first was forged three years ago

“When law addressed herself to set wrong  
right,

“And proved so slow in taking the first step

“That ever some new grievance,—tort, retort,

“On one or the other side,—o'ertook i' the  
game,

“Retarded sentence, till this deed of death

“Is thrown in, as it were, last bale to boat

“Crammed to the edge with cargo—or  
passengers?

“*Trecientos inseris*:<sup>1</sup> *ohé, jam satis est!*

“*Huc appelle!*”—passengers, the word  
must be.”

<sup>1</sup> *Trecientos inseris*, &c.: Horace, *Sat.* I.  
5. 12.

Long since, the boat was loaded to my eyes.  
To hear the rabble and brabble, you'd call  
the case

Fused and confused past human finding out.  
One calls the square round, t'other the round  
square—

And pardonably in that first surprise  
O' the blood that fell and splashed the diagram:  
But now we've used our eyes to the violent hue  
Can't we look through the crimson and trace  
lines?

It makes a man despair of history,  
Eusebius and the established fact—fig's end !  
Oh, give the fools their Trial, rattle away  
With the leash of lawyers, two on either side—  
One barks, one bites,—Masters Arcangeli  
And Spreti,—that's the husband's ultimate  
hope

Against the Fisc and the other kind of Fisc,  
Bound to do barking for the wife: bow—wow!  
Why, Excellency, we and his Highness here  
Would settle the matter as sufficiently  
As ever will Advocate This and Fiscal That  
And Judge the Other, with even—a word  
and a wink—

We well know who for ultimate arbiter.  
Let us beware o' the basset-table<sup>2</sup>—lest  
We jog the elbow of Her Eminence,<sup>3</sup>  
Jostle his cards,—he'll rap you out a . . . st !  
By the window-seat ! And here's the Mar-  
quis too !

Indulge me but a moment : if I fail  
—Favoured with such an audience, under-  
stand .—

To set things right, why, class me with the  
mob

As understander of the mind of man !

The mob,—now, that's just how the error  
comes !

Bethink you that you have to deal with *plebs*,  
The commonalty ; this is an episode

<sup>2</sup> *Basset*: a game of cards, fashionable in  
the seventeenth century.

<sup>3</sup> *Her Eminence*: an imitation of the Italian  
idiom, in which “His Eminence,” as we should  
say, becomes “Sua Eminenza.” Browning  
uses this idiom occasionally in the present book  
(e.g., ll. 1632, 1634), but not regularly.

In burgess-life,—why seek to aggrandize, 65  
 Idealize, denaturalize the class?  
 People talk just as if they had to do  
 With a noble pair that . . . Excellency,  
 your ear!  
 Stoop to me, Highness,—listen and look  
 yourselves!  
 This Pietro, this Violante, live their life 70  
 At Rome in the easy way that's far from worst  
 Even for their betters,—themselves love  
 themselves,  
 Spend their own oil in feeding their own  
 lamp  
 That their own faces may grow bright thereby.  
 They get to fifty and over: how's the lamp?  
 Full to the depth o' the wick,—moneys so  
 much; 75  
 And also with a remnant,—so much more  
 Of moneys,—which there's no consuming  
 now,  
 But, when the wick shall moulder out some  
 day,  
 Failing fresh twist of tow to use up dregs, 80  
 Will lie a prize for the passer-by,—to-wit  
 Anyone that can prove himself the heir,  
 Seeing, the couple are wanting in a child:  
 Meantime their wick swims in the safe broad  
 bowl  
 O' the middle rank,—not raised a beacon's  
 height 85  
 For wind to ravage, nor dropped till lamp  
 graze ground  
 Like cresset, mudlarks poke now here now  
 there,  
 Going their rounds to probe the ruts i' the  
 road  
 Or fish the luck o' the puddle. Pietro's soul  
 Was satisfied when cronies smirked, "No  
 wine 90  
 "Like Pietro's, and he drinks it every day!"  
 His wife's heart swelled her boddice, joyed  
 its fill  
 When neighbours turned heads wistfully at  
 church,  
 Sighed at the load of lace that came to pray.  
 Well, having got through fifty years of flare,  
 They burn out so, indulge so their dear  
 selves, 95

That Pietro finds himself in debt at last,  
 As he were any lordling of us all:  
 And, now that dark begins to creep on day,  
 Creditors grow uneasy, talk aside, 100  
 Take counsel, then impose all at once.  
 For if the good fat rosy careless man,  
 Who has not laid a ducat by, decease—  
 Let the lamp fall, no heir at hand to catch—  
 Why, being childless, there's a spilt i' the  
 street 105  
 O' the remnant, there's a scramble for the  
 dregs  
 By the stranger: so, they grant him no long  
 day  
 But come in a body, clamour to be paid.  
 What's his resource? He asks and straight  
 obtains  
 The customary largess, dole dealt out 110  
 To, what we call our "poor dear shame-  
 faced ones,"  
 In secret once a month to spare the shame  
 O' the slothful and the spendthrift,—pauper-  
 saints  
 The Pope puts meat i' the mouth of, ravens  
 they,  
 And providence he—just what the mob  
 admires! 115  
 That is, instead of putting a prompt foot  
 On selfish worthless human slugs whose slime  
 Has failed to lubricate their path in life,  
 Why, the Pope picks the first ripe fruit that  
 falls 119  
 And gracious puts it in the vermin's way.  
 Pietro could never save a dollar? Straight  
 He must be subsidized at our expense:  
 And for his wife—the harmless household  
 sheep  
 One ought not to see harass'd in her age—  
 Judge, by the way she bore adversity, 125  
 O' the patient nature you ask pity for!  
 How long, now, wou'd the roughest market-  
 man,  
 Handling the creatures huddled to the knife,  
 Harass a mutton ere she made a mouth  
 Or menaced biting? Yet the poor sheep  
 here, 130  
 Violante, the old innocent burgess-wife,



In her first difficulty showed great teeth  
Fit to crunch up and swallow a good round  
crime.

She meditates the tenure of the Trust,  
*Fidei commissum* is the lawyer-phrasé, 135  
These funds that only want an heir to take—  
Goes o'er the gamut o' the creditor's cry  
By semitones from whine to snarl high up  
And growl down low, one scale in sundry  
keys,— 139

Pauses with a little compunction for the face  
Of Pietro frustrate of its ancient cheer,—  
Never a bottle now for friend at need,—  
Comes to a stop on her own frittered lace  
And neighbourly condolences thereat,  
Then makes her mind up, sees the thing  
to do : 146

And so, deliberate, snaps house-book clasp,  
Posts off to vespers, missal beneath arm,  
Passes the proper San Lorenzo by,  
Dives down a little lane to the left, is lost  
In a labyrinth of dwellings best unnamed, 150  
Selects a certain blind one, black at base,  
Blinking at top,—the sign of we know what,—  
One candle in a casement set to wink  
Streetward, do service to no shrine inside,—  
Mounts thither by the filthy flight of stairs, 155  
Holding the cord by the wall, to the tip-top,  
Gropes for the door i' the dark, ajar of course,  
Raps, opens, enters in : up starts a thing  
Naked as needs be—"What, you rogue, 'tis  
you?"

"Back,—how can I have taken a farthing  
yet?" 130

"Mercy on me, poor sinner that I am !

"Here's . . . why, I took you for Madonna's  
self

"With all that sudden swirl of silk i' the  
place !

"What may your pleasure be, my bonny  
dame?" 164

Your Excellency supplies aught left obscure?  
One of those women that abound in Rome,  
Whose needs oblige them eke out one poor  
trade

By another vile one : her ostensible work  
Was washing clothes, out in the open air  
At the cistern by Citorio ; her true trade—

Whispering to idlers, when they stopp'd and  
praised 171

The ankles she let liberally shine  
In kneeling at the slab by the fountain-side,  
That there was plenty more to criticize  
At home, that eve, i' the house where candle  
blinked 175

Decorously above, and all was done  
I' the holy fear of God and cheap beside.  
Violante, now, had seen this woman wash,  
Noticed and envied her propitious shape,  
Tracked her home to her house-top, noted  
too, 180

And now was come to tempt her and propose  
A bargain far more shameful than the first  
Which trafficked her virginity away  
For a melon and three pauls at twelve years  
old.

Five minutes' talk with this poor child of  
Eve, 185

Struck was the bargain, business at an end—  
"Then, six months hence, that person whom  
you trust,

"Comes, fetches whatsoever babe it be ;  
"I keep the price and secret, you the babe,  
"Paying beside for mass to make all  
straight : 190

"Meantime, I pouch the earnest-money-  
piece."

Down stairs again goes fumbling by the rope  
Violante, triumphing in a flourish of fire  
From her own brain, self-lit by such success,—  
Gains church in time for the "*Magnificat*" 195  
And gives forth "My reproof is taken away,  
"And blessed shall mankind proclaim me  
now,"

So that the officiating priest turns round  
To see who proffers the obstreperous praise :  
Then home to Pietro, the enraptured-much  
But puzzled-more when told the wondrous  
news— 201

How orisons and works of charity,  
(Beside that pair of pinners and a coil,  
Birth-day surprise last Wednesday was five  
weeks) 204

Had borne fruit in the autumn of his life,—  
They, or the Orvieto in a double dose.

Anyhow, she must keep house next six months,  
Lie on the settle, avoid the three-legged stool,  
And, chiefly, not be crossed in wish or whim,  
And the result was like to be an heir. 215

Accordingly, when time was come about,  
He found himself the sire indeed of this  
Francesca Vittoria Pompilia and the rest  
O' the names whereby he sealed her his, next  
day.

A crime complete in its way is here, I hope?  
Lies to God, lies to man, every way lies 216  
To nature and civility and the mode:

Flat robbery of the proper heirs thus foiled  
O' the due succession,—and, what followed  
thence,

Robbery of God, through the confessor's  
ear 220

Debarred the most note-worthy incident,  
When all else done and undone twelve-month  
through

Was put in evidence at Easter-time.  
All other peccadillos!—but this one  
To the priest who comes next day to dine  
with us? 225

'Twere inexpedient; decency forbade.

Is so far clear? You know Violante now,  
Compute her capability of crime  
By this authentic instance? Black hard cold  
Crime like a stone you kick up with your  
foot 230

I' the middle of a field?

I thought as much.

But now, a question,—how long does it lie,  
The bad and barren bit of stuff you kick,  
Before encroached on and encompassed  
round 235

With minute moss, weed, wild-flower—made  
alive

By worm, and fly, and foot of the free bird?  
Your Highness,—healthy minds let bygones  
be,

Leave old crimes to grow young and virtuous  
like

I' the sun and air; so time treats ugly  
deeds; 240

They take the natural blessing of all change.  
There was the joy o' the husband silly-sooth,  
The softening of the wife's old wicked heart,  
Virtues to right and left, profusely paid  
If so they might compensate the saved  
sin. 245

And then the sudden existence, dewy-dear,  
O' the rose above the dunghheap, the pure  
child

As good as new created, since withdrawn  
From the horror of the pre-appointed lot  
With the unknown father and the mother  
known 250

Too well,—some fourteen years of squalid  
youth,

And then libertinage, disease, the grave—  
Hell in life here, hereafter life in hell:  
Look at that horror and this soft repose!

Why, moralist, the sin has saved a soul! 255  
Then, even the palpable grievance to the  
heirs—

'Faith, this was no frank setting hand to throat  
And robbing a man, but . . . Excellency,  
by your leave,

How did you get that marvel of a gem,  
The sapphire with the Graces grand and  
Greek? 260

The story is, stooping to pick a stone  
From the pathway through a vineyard—no  
man's-land—

To pelt a sparrow with, you chanced on this:  
Why now, do those five clowns o' the family,  
O' the vinedresser digest their porridge  
worse 265

That not one keeps it in his goatskin pouch  
To do flint's-service with the tinder-box?  
Don't cheat me, don't cheat you, don't cheat  
a friend,

But are you so hard on who jostles just  
A stranger with no natural sort of claim 270  
To the havings and the holdings (here's the  
point)

Unless by misadventure, and defect  
Of that which ought to be—nay, which there's  
none

Would dare so much as wish to profit by—  
Since who dares put in just so many words 275  
"May Pietro fail to have a child, please God!

"So shall his house and goods belong to me,  
 "The sooner that his heart will pine be-  
 times"?

Well then, God doesn't please, nor heart  
 shall pine!

Because he has a child at last, you see, 280  
 Or selfsame thing as though a child it were,  
 He thinks, whose sole concern it is to think:  
 If he accepts it why should you demur?

Moreover, say that certain sin there seem,  
 The proper process of unsinning sin 285  
 Is to begin well-doing somehow else.  
 Pietro,—remember, with no sin at all  
 I' the substitution,—why, this gift of God—  
 Flung in his lap from over Paradise 290  
 Steadied him in a moment, set him straight  
 On the good path he had been straying from.  
 Henceforward no more wilfulness and waste,  
 Cuppings, carousings,—these a sponge wiped  
 out.

All sort of self-denial was easy now  
 For the child's sake, the *châtelaine* to be, 295  
 Who must want much and might want who  
 knows what?

And so, the debts were paid, habits reformed,  
 Expense curtailed, the dowry set to grow.  
 As for the wife,—I said, hers the whole sin:  
 So, hers the exemplary penance. 'Twas a  
 text 300

Whereon folk preached and praised, the dis-  
 trict through:

"Oh, make us happy and you make us good!  
 "It all comes of God giving her a child:  
 "Such graces follow God's best earthly gift!"

Here you put by my guard, pass to my  
 heart 305  
 By the home-thrust—"There's a lie at base  
 of all."

Why, thou exact Prince, is it a pearl or no,  
 Yon globe upon the Principessa's neck?  
 That great round glory of pellucid stuff,  
 A fish secreted round a grain of grit! 310  
 Do you call it worthless for the worthless core?  
 (She doesn't, who well knows what she  
 changed for it.)  
 So, to our brace of burgesses again!

You see so far i' the story, who was right,  
 Who wrong, who neither, don't you? What,  
 you don't? 315

Eh? Well, admit there's somewhat dark i'  
 the case,

Let's on—the rest shall clear, I promise you.  
 Leap over a dozen years: you find, these past,  
 An old good easy creditable sire, 320  
 A careful housewife's beaming, bustling face,  
 Both wrapped up in the love of their one child,  
 The strange tall pale beautiful creature grown  
 Lily-like out o' the cleft i' the sun-smit rock  
 To bow its white miraculous birth of buds  
 I' the way of wandering Joseph and his  
 spouse,— 325

So painters fancy: here it was a fact.  
 And this their lily,—could they but transplant  
 And set in vase to stand by Solomon's porch  
 'Twixt lion and lion!—this *Pompilia* of theirs,  
 Could they see worthily married, well be-  
 stowed, 330

In house and home! And why despair of  
 this

With Rome to choose from, save the topmost  
 rank?

Themselves would help the choice with heart  
 and soul,

Throw their late savings in a common heap  
 To go with the dowry, and be followed in  
 time 335

By the heritage legitimately hers:  
 And when such paragon was found and fixed,  
 Why, they might chant their "*Nunc dimittis*,"  
 straight.

Indeed the prize was simply full to a fault,  
 Exorbitant for the suitor they should seek,  
 And social class should choose among, these  
 cits. 340

Yet there's a latitude: exceptional white,  
 Amid the general brown o' the species, lurks  
 A burgess nearly an aristocrat,  
 Legitimately in reach: look out for him! 345  
 What banker, merchant, has seen better days,  
 What second-rate painter a-pushing up,  
 Poet a-slipping down, shall bid the best  
 For this young beauty with the thumping  
 purse?

Alack, were it but one of such as these 350  
 So like the real thing that they pass for it,  
 All had gone well ! Unluckily, poor souls,  
 It proved to be the impossible thing itself,  
 Truth and not sham : hence ruin to them all.

For, Guido Franceschini was the head 35  
 Of an old family in Arezzo, old  
 To that degree they could afford be poor  
 Better than most : the case is common too.  
 Out of the vast door 'scutcheoned overhead,  
 Creeps out a serving-man on Saturdays 360  
 To cater for the week,—turns up anon  
 I' the market, chaffering for the lamb's  
 least leg,  
 Or the quarter-fowl, less entrails, claws and  
 comb :

Then back again with prize,—a liver begged  
 Into the bargain, gizzard overlooked. 365  
 He's mincing these to give the beans a taste,  
 When, at your knock, he leaves the simmering  
 soup,  
 Waits on the curious stranger-visitant,  
 Napkin in half-wiped hand, to show the  
 rooms,  
 Point pictures out have hung their hundred  
 years, 370  
 "Priceless," he tells you,—puts in his place  
 at once  
 The man of money : yes, you're banker-king  
 Or merchant-kaiser, wallow in your wealth  
 While patron, the house-master, can't afford  
 To stop our ceiling-hole that rain so rots :  
 But he's the man of mark, and there's his  
 shield, 375  
 And yonder's the famed Rafael, first in kind,  
 The painter painted for his grandfather,  
 And you have paid to see : "Good morning,  
 Sir !"

Such is the law of compensation. Still 380  
 The poverty was getting nigh acute ;  
 There gaped so many noble mouths to feed,  
 Beans must suffice unflavoured of the fowl.  
 The mother,—hers would be a spun-out life  
 I' the nature of things ; the sisters had done  
 well 385  
 And married men of reasonable rank :  
 But that sort of illumination stops,

Throws back no heat upon the parent-hearth.  
 The family instinct felt out for its fire  
 To the Church,—the 'Church traditionally  
 helps 390  
 A second son : and such was Paolo,  
 Established here at Rome these thirty years,  
 Who played the regular game,—priest and  
 Abate,  
 Made friends, owned house and land, became  
 of use 394  
 To a personage : his course lay clear enough.  
 The youngest caught the sympathetic flame,  
 And, though unfledged wings kept him still  
 i' the cage,  
 Yet he shot up to be a Canon, so  
 Clung to the higher perch and crowed in  
 hope.  
 Even our Guido, eldest brother, went 400  
 As far i' the way o' the Church as safety  
 seemed,  
 He being Head o' the House, ordained to  
 wive,—  
 So, could but dally with an Order or two  
 And testify good-will i' the cause : he clipped  
 His top-hair and thus far affected Christ. 405  
 But main promotion must fall otherwise,  
 Though still from the side o' the Church :  
 and here was he  
 At Rome, since first youth, worn threadbare  
 of soul  
 By forty-six years' rubbing on hard life,  
 Getting fast tired o' the game whose word is  
 —"Wait !" 410  
 When one day,—he too having his Cardinal  
 To serve in some ambiguous sort, as serve  
 To draw the coach the plumes o' the horses'  
 heads,—  
 The Cardinal saw fit to dispense with him,  
 Ride with one plume the less ; and off it  
 dropped. 415

Guido thus left,—with a youth spent in vain  
 And not a penny in purse to show for it,—  
 Advised with Paolo, bent no doubt in chafe  
 The black brows somewhat formidably,  
 growled 419  
 "Where is the good I came to get at Rome?  
 Where the repayment of the servitude

"To a purple popinjay, whose feet I kiss,  
"Knowing his father wiped the shoes of mine?"

"Patience," pats Paolo the recalcitrant—  
"You have not had, so far, the proper  
luck,!" 425

"Nor do my gains suffice to keep us both:  
"A modest competency is mine, not more.  
"You are the Count however, yours the style,  
"Heirdom and state,—you can't expect all  
good.

"Had I, now, held your hand of cards . . .  
well, well— 430

"What's yet unplayed, I'll look at, by your  
leave,

"Over your shoulder,—I who made my game,  
"Let's see, if I can't help to handle yours.

"Fie on you, all the Honours in your fist,  
"Countship, Househeadship,—how have you  
misdealt! 435

"Why, in the first place, these will marry a  
man!

"*Nolum tonsoribus*!<sup>1</sup> To the Tonsor then!  
"Come, clear your looks, and choose your  
freshest suit,

"And, after function's done with, down we go  
"To the woman-dealer in perukes, a wench

"I and some others settled in the shop 441  
"At Place Colonna: she's an oracle. Hmm!

"Dear, 'tis my brother: brother, 'tis my dear.  
"Dear, give us counsel! Whom do you  
suggest

"As properest party in the quarter round  
"For the Count here?—he is minded to  
take wife, 446

"And further tells me he intends to slip  
"Twenty zucchiniens under the bottom-scalp

"Of his old wig when he sends it to revive  
"For the wedding: and I add a trifle too.

"You know what personage I'm potent  
with." 451

And so plumped out Pompilia's name the first.  
She told them of the household and its ways,  
The easy husband and the shrewder wife

In Via Vittoria,—how the tall young girl, 455  
With hair black as yon patch and eyes as big  
As yon pomander to make freckles fly,

<sup>1</sup> *Nolum tonsoribus*: "known to the barbers."  
See note on *il. 215*.

Would have so much for certain, and so much  
more

In likelihood,—why, it suited, slipped as  
smooth

As the Pope's pantoufle does on the Pope's  
foot. 460

"I'll to the husband!" Guido ups and cries.  
"Ay, so you'd play your last court-card, no  
doubt!"

Puts Paolo in with a groan—"Only, you see,  
"Tis I, this time, that supervise your lead.

"Priests play with women, maids, wives,  
mothers—why? 465

"These play with men and take them off our  
hands.

"Did I come, counsel with some cut-beard  
gruff

"Or rather this sleek young-old barberess?  
"Go, brother, stand you rapt in the ante-room

"Of Her Efficacy my Cardinal 470  
"For an hour,—he likes to have lord-suitors  
lounge,—

"While I betake myself to the grey mare,  
"The better horse,—how wise the people's  
word!—

"And wait on Madam Violante."

Said and done.

He was at Via Vittoria in three skips: 475  
Proposed at once to fill up the one want  
O' the burgess-family which, wealthy enough,  
And comfortable to heart's desire, yet crouched  
Outside a gate to heaven,—locked, bolted,  
barred, 480

Whereof Count Guido had a key he kept  
Under his pillow, but Pompilia's hand  
Might slide behind his neck and pilfer thence.  
The key was fairy; its mere mention made  
Violante feel the thing shoot one sharp ray  
That reached the womanly heart: so—"I  
assent! 485

"Yours be Pompilia, hers and ours that key  
"To all the glories of the greater life!  
"There's Pietro to convince: leave that to  
me!" 490

Then was the matter broached to Pietro:  
then 495

Did Pietro make demand and get response  
 That in the Countship was a truth, but in  
 The counting up of the Count's cash, a lie.  
 He thereupon stroked grave his chin, looked  
 great,  
 Declined the honour. Then the wife wiped  
 tear,  
 Winked with the other eye turned Paolo-ward.  
 Whispered Pompilia, stole to church at eve,  
 Found Guido there and got the marriage done,  
 And finally begged pardon at the feet  
 Of her dear lord and master. Whereupon  
 Quoth Pietro—"Let us make the best of  
 things!"  
 "I knew your love would license us," quoth  
 she:  
 Quoth Paolo once more, "Mothers, wives  
 and maids,  
 "These be the tools wherewith priests manage  
 men."  
 Now, here take breath and ask,—which bird  
 o' the brace  
 Decoyed the other into clapnet? Who  
 Was fool, who knave? Neither and both,  
 perchance.  
 There was a bargain mentally proposed  
 On each side, straight and plain and fair  
 enough;  
 Mind knew its own mind: but when mind  
 must speak,  
 The bargain have expression in plain terms,  
 There came the blunder incident to words,  
 And in the clumsy process, fair turned foul.  
 The straight backbone-thought of the crooked  
 speech  
 Were just—"I Guido truck my name and rank  
 "For so much money and youth and female  
 charms.—  
 "We, Pietro and Violante give our child  
 "And wealth to you for a rise i' the world  
 thereby."  
 Such naked truth while chambered in the brain  
 Shocks nowise: walk it forth by way of  
 tongue,—  
 Out on the cynical unseemliness!  
 Hence was the need, on either side, of a lie  
 To serve as decent wrappage: so, Guido gives  
 Money for money,—and they, bride for groom,  
 Having, he, not a doit, they, not a child  
 Honestly theirs, but this poor waif and stray.  
 According to the words, each cheated each;  
 But in the inexpressive barter of thoughts,  
 Each did give and did take the thing designed,  
 The rank on this side and the cash on that—  
 Attained the object of the traffic, so.  
 The way of the world, the daily bargain struck  
 In the first market! Why sells Jack his ware?  
 "For the sake of serving an old customer."  
 Why does Jill buy it? "Simply not to  
 break  
 "A custom, pass the old stall the first time."  
 Why, you know where the gist is of the  
 exchange:  
 Each sees a profit, throws the fine words in.  
 Don't be too hard o' the pair! Had each pre-  
 tence  
 Been simultaneously discovered, stript  
 From off the body o' the transaction, just  
 As when a cook (will Excellency forgive?)  
 Strips away those long rough superfluous legs  
 From either side the crayfish, leaving folk  
 A meal all meat henceforth, no garnishry,  
 (With your respect, 'Prince!')—balance had  
 been kept,  
 No party blamed the other,—so, starting fair,  
 All subsequent fence of wrong returned by  
 wrong  
 I' the matrimonial thrust and parry, at least  
 Had followed on equal terms. But, as it  
 chanced,  
 One party had the advantage, saw the cheat  
 Of the other first and kept its own concealed:  
 And the luck o' the first discovery fell, beside,  
 To the least adroit and self-possessed o' the  
 pair.  
 'Twas foolish Pietro and his wife saw first  
 The nobleman was penniless, and screamed  
 "We are cheated!"  
 Such unprofitable noise  
 Angers at all times: but when those who  
 plague,  
 Do it from inside your own house and home,  
 Gnats which yourself have closed the curtain  
 round,

Noise goes too near the brain and makes you mad.

The gnats say, Guido used the candle-flame  
Unfairly,—worsened that first bad of his,  
By practising all kinds of cruelty 565  
To oust them and suppress the wail and  
whine,—

That speedily he so scared and bullied them,  
Fain were they, long before five months had  
passed,

To beg him grant, from what was once their  
wealth,

Just so much as would help them back to  
Rome 570

Where, when they finished paying the last doit  
O' the dowry, they might beg from door to  
door.

So say the Comparini—as if it came  
Of pure resentment for this worse than bad,  
That then Violante, feeling conscience prick,  
Confessed her substitution of the child 575  
Whence all the harm fell,—and that Pietro  
first

Bethought him of advantage to himself  
I' the deed, as part revenge, part remedy  
For all miscalculation in the pact. 580

On the other hand "Not so!" Guido retorts—  
"I am the wronged, solely, from first to last,  
"Who gave the dignity I engaged to give,  
"Which was, is, cannot but continue gain.  
"My being poor was a bye-circumstance,  
"Miscalculated piece of untowardness, 585  
"Might end to-morrow did heaven's windows  
ope,

"Or uncle die and leave me his estate.  
"You should have put up with the minor  
flaw,

"Getting the main prize of the jewel. If  
wealth, 590

"Not rank, had been prime object in your  
thoughts,

"Why not have taken the butcher's son, the  
boy.

"O' the baker or candlestick-maker? In all  
the rest,

"It was yourselves broke compact and played  
false, 594

"And made a life in common impossible.

"Show me the stipulation of our bond

"That you should make your profit of being  
inside

"My house, to hustle and edge me out o' the  
same,

"First make a laughing-stock of mine and me,

"Then round us in the ears from morn to  
night 600

"(Because we show wry faces at your mirth)

"That you are robbed, starved, beaten and  
what not!

"You fled a hell of your own lighting-up,

"Pay for your own miscalculation too: 604

"You thought nobility, gained at any price,

"Would suit and satisfy,—find the mistake,

"And now retaliate, not on yourselves, but me.

"And how? By telling me, i' the face of  
the world,

"I it is have been cheated all this while,

"Abominably and irreparably,—my name 610

"Given to a cur-cast mongrel, a drab's brat,

"A beggar's bye-blow,—thus depriving me

"Of what yourselves allege the whole and sole

"Aim on my part i' the marriage,—money  
to-wit.

"This thrust I have to parry by a guard 615

"Which leaves me open to a counter-thrust

"On the other side,—no way but there's a pass

"Clean through me. If I prove, as I hope  
to do,

"There's not one truth in this your odious tale

"O' the buying, selling, substituting—prove

"Your daughter was and is your daughter,—  
well, 621

"And her dowry hers and therefore mine,—  
what then?

"Why, where's the appropriate punishment  
for this

"Enormous lie hatched for mere malice' sake

"To ruin me? Is that a wrong or no? 625

"And if I try revenge for remedy,

"Can I well make it strong and bitter  
enough?"

I anticipate however—only ask,  
Which of the two here sinned most? A nice  
point! 630

Which brownness is least black,—decide who  
can, 630

Wager-by-battle-of-cheating! What do you  
say,

Highness? Suppose, your Excellency, we  
leave

The question at this stage, proceed to the  
next,

Both parties step out, fight their prize upon,  
In the eye o' the world? 635

They brandish law 'gainst law;  
The grinding of such blades, each parry of  
each,

Throws terrible sparks off, over and above  
the thrusts,

And makes more sinister the fight, to the eye,  
Than the very wounds that follow. Beside  
the tale 640

Which the Comparini have to re-assert,  
They needs must write, print, publish all  
abroad

The straitnesses of Guido's household life—  
The petty nothings we bear privately  
But break down under when fools flock to  
jeer. 645

What is it all to the facts o' the couple's case,  
How helps it prove Pompilia not their child,  
If Guido's mother, brother, kith and kin  
Fare ill, lie hard, lack clothes, lack fire, lack  
food?

That's one more wrong than needs. 650

On the other hand,  
Guido,—whose cue is to dispute the truth  
O' the tale, reject the shame it throws on  
him,—

He may retaliate, fight his foe in turn  
And welcome, we allow. Ay, but he can't!  
He's at home, only acts by proxy here: 655  
Law may meet law,—but all the gibes and jeers,  
The superfluity of naughtiness,  
Those libels on his House,—how reach at  
them?

Two hateful faces, grinning all a-glow, 660  
Not only make parade of spoil they filched,  
But foul him from the height of a tower, you  
see.

Unluckily temptation is at hand—

To take revenge on a trifle overlooked,  
A pet lamb they have left in reach outside, 665  
Whose first bleat, when he plucks the wool  
away,

Will strike the grinners grave: his wife  
remains

Who, four months earlier, some thirteen years  
old,

Never a mile away from mother's house  
And petted to the height of her desire, 670  
Was told one morning that her fate had come,  
She must be married—just as, a month before,  
Her mother told her she must comb her hair  
And twist her curls into one knot behind.

These fools forgot their pet lamb, fed with  
flowers, 675

Then 'ticed as usual by the bit of cake  
Out of the bower into the butchery.  
Plague her, he plagues them threefold: but  
how plague?

The world may have its word to say to that:  
You can't do some things with impunity. 680  
What remains . . . well, it is an ugly  
thought. . . .

But that he drive herself to plague herself—  
Herself disgrace herself and so disgrace  
Who seek to disgrace Guido?

There's the clue  
To what else seems gratuitously vile, 685

If, as is said, from this time forth the rack  
Was tried upon Pompilia: 'twas to wrench  
Her limbs into exposure that brings shame.  
The aim o' the cruelty being so crueller still, 690  
That cruelty almost grows compassion's self  
Could one attribute it to mere return  
O' the parents' outrage, wrong avenging  
wrong.

They see in this a deeper deadlier aim,  
Not to vex just a body they held dear, 695  
But blacken too a soul they boasted white,  
And show the world their saint in a lover's  
arms,

No matter how driven thither,—so they say.

On the other hand, so much is easily said,  
And Guido lacks not an apologist. 700  
The pair had nobody but themselves to blame,



Being selfish beasts throughout, no less, no more :

—Cared for themselves, their supposed good, nought else,

And brought about the marriage ; good proved bad,

As little they cared for her its victim—nay, Meant she should stay behind and take the chance,

If haply they might wriggle themselves free.

They baited their own hook to catch a fish With this poor worm, failed o' the prize, and then

Sought how to unbait tackle, let worm float Or sink, amuse the monster while they 'scaped.

Under the best stars Hymen brings above, Had all been honesty on either side,

A common sincere effort to good end,

Still, this would prove a difficult problem, Prince !

—Given, a fair wife, aged thirteen years,

A husband poor, care-bitten, sorrow-sunk,

Little, long-nosed, bush-bearded, lantern-jawed,

Forty-six years old,—place the two grown one,

She, cut off sheer from every natural aid,

In a strange town with no familiar face—

He, in his own parade-ground or retreat

If need were, free from challenge, much less check

To an irritated, disappointed will—

How evolve happiness from such a match ?

'Twere hard to serve up a congenial dish

Out of these ill-agreeing morsels, Duke,

By the best exercise of the cook's craft,

Best interspersions of spice, salt and sweet !

But let two ghastly scullions concoct mess

With brimstone, pitch, vitriol and devil's dung—

Throw in abuse o' the man, his body and soul,

Kith, kin and generation, shake all slab

At Rome, Arezzo, for the world to nose ;

Then end by publishing, for nend's arch-prank,

That, over and above sauce to the meat's self,

Why, even the meat, bedevilled thus in dish,

Was never a pheasant but a carrion-crow—

Prince, what will then the natural loathing be ?

What wonder if this ?—the compound plague o' the pair

Pricked Guido,—not to take the course they hoped,

That is, submit him to their statement's truth,

Accept its obvious promise of relief,

And thrust them out of doors the girl again

Since the girl's dowry would not enter there,

—Quit of the one if balked of the other : no !

Rather did rage and hate so work in him,

Their product proved the horrible conceit

That he should plot and plan and bring to pass

His wife might, of her own free will and deed,

Relieve him of her presence, get her gone,

And yet leave all the dowry safe behind,

Confirmed his own henceforward past dispute,

While blotting out, as by a belch of hell,

Their triumph in her misery and death.

You see, the man was Aretine, had touch

O' the subtle air that breeds the subtle wit ;

Was noble too, of old blood thrice-refined

That shrinks from clownish coarseness in

Allow that such an one may take revenge,

You don't expect he'll catch up stone and fling,

Or try cross-buttock, or whirl quarter-staff ?

Instead of the honest drubbing clowns bestow,

When out of temper at the dinner spoilt,

On meddling mother-in-law and tiresome wife,—

Substitute for the clown a nobleman,

And you have Guido, practising, 'tis said,

Immitigably from the very first,

The finer vengeance : this, they say, the fact

O' the famous letter shows—the writing traced

At Guido's instance by the timid wife

Over the pencilled words himself writ first—

Wherein she, who could neither write nor read,

Was made unblushingly declare a tale

To the brother, the Abate then in Rome,

How her putative parents had impressed,

On their departure, their enjoinder; bade  
 "We being safely arrived here, follow, you!"

"Poison your husband, rob, set fire to all,  
 "And then by means o' the gallant you procure

"With ease, by helpful eye and ready tongue,  
 "Some brave youth ready to dare, do and die,  
 "You shall run off and merrily reach Rome  
 "Where we may live like flies in honey-  
 pot:"—

Such being exact the programme of the course  
 Imputed her as carried to effect.

They also say,—to keep her straight therein,  
 All sort of torture was piled, pain on pain,  
 On either side Pompilia's path of life,  
 Built round about and over against by fear,  
 Circumvallated month by month, and week  
 By week, and day by day, and hour by hour,  
 Close, closer and yet closer still with pain,  
 No outlet from the encroaching pain save just  
 Where stood one saviour like a piece of  
 heaven,

Hell's arms would strain round but for this  
 blue gap.

She, they say further, first tried every chink,  
 Every imaginable break i' the fire,  
 As way of escape: ran to the Commissary,  
 Who bade her not malign his friend her  
 spouse;

Flung herself thrice at the Archbishop's feet,  
 Where three times the Archbishop let her lie,  
 Spend her whole sorrow and sob full heart  
 forth,

And then took up the slight load from the  
 ground

And bore it back for husband to chastise,—  
 Mildly of course,—but natural right is right:  
 So went she slipping ever yet catching at  
 help,

Missing the high till come to lowest and last,  
 To wit a certain friar of mean degree,  
 Who heard her story in confession, wept,  
 Crossed himself, showed the man within the  
 monk.

"Then, will you save me, you the one i' the  
 world?"

"I cannot even write my woes, nor put

"My prayer for help in words a friend may  
 read,—

"I no more own a coin than have an hour  
 "Free of observance,—I was watched to  
 church,

"Am watched now, shall be watched back  
 presently,—

"How buy the skill of scribe i' the market-  
 place?

"Pray you, write down and send whatever  
 I say

"O' the need I have my parents take me  
 hence!"

The good man rubbed his eyes and could not  
 choose—

Let her dictate her letter in such a sense  
 That parents, to save breaking down a wall,  
 Might lift her over: she went back, heaven  
 in heart.

Then the good man took counsel of his couch,  
 Woke and thought twice, the second thought  
 the best:

"Here am I, foolish body that I be,  
 "Caught all but pushing, teaching, who but I,  
 "My betters their plain duty,—what, I dare  
 "I help a case the Archbishop would not  
 help,

"Mend matters, peradventure, God love  
 mar?

"What hath the married life but strifes and  
 plagues.

"For proper dispensation? So a fool  
 "Once touched the ark,—poor Uzzah that  
 I am!

"Oh married ones, much rather should I bid,  
 "In patience all of ye possess your souls!  
 "This life is brief and troubles die with it:

"Where were the prick to soar up homeward  
 else?"

So saying, he burnt the letter he had writ,  
 Said *Ave* for her intention, in its place,  
 Took snuff and comfort, and had done with  
 all.

Then the grim arms stretched yet a little more  
 And each touched each, all but one streak  
 i' the midst,

Whereat stood Caponsacchi, who cried, "This  
 way,

"Out by me! Hesitate one moment more  
 "And the fire shuts out me and shuts in you!  
 "Here my hand holds you life out!" Where-  
 upon  
 She clasped the hand, which closed on hers  
 and drew  
 Pompilia out o' the circle now complete.  
 Whose fault or shame but Guido's?—ask her  
 friends. 880

But then this is the wife's—Pompilia's tale—  
 Eve's . . . no, not Eve's, since Eve, to speak  
 the truth,  
 Was hardly fallen (our candour might pro-  
 nounce)

When simply saying in her own defence  
 "The serpent tempted me and I did eat."  
 So much of paradisaal nature, Eve's! 885  
 Her daughters ever since prefer to urge  
 "Adam so starved me I was fain accept  
 "The apple any serpent pushed my way."

What an elaborate theory have we here, 890  
 Ingeniously nursed up, pretentiously  
 Brought forth, pushed forward amid trumpet-  
 blast,

To account for the thawing of an icicle,  
 Show us there needed Ætna vomit flame  
 Ere run the crystal into dew-drops! Else, 895  
 How, unless hell broke loose to cause the step,  
 How could a married lady go astray?  
 Bless the fools! And 'tis just this way they  
 are blessed,

And the world wags still,—because fools are  
 sure 899

—Oh, not of my wife nor your daughter! No!  
 But of their own: the case is altered quite.  
 Look now,—last week, the lady we all love,—  
 Daughter o' the couple we all venerate,  
 Wife of the husband we all cap before,  
 Mother o' the babes we all breathe blessings  
 on,— 875

Was caught in converse with a negro page.  
 Hell thawed that icicle, else "Why was it—  
 "Why?" asked and echoed the fools. "Be-  
 cause, you fools,—"

So did the dame's self answer, she who could,  
 With that fine candour only forthcoming 900  
 When 'tis no odds whether withheld or no—

"Because my husband was the saint you say,  
 "And,—with that childish goodness, absurd  
 faith,

"Stupid self-satisfaction, you so praise,—  
 "Saint to you, insupportable to me. 885

"Had he,—instead of calling me fine names,  
 "Lucretia and Susanna and so forth,

"And curtaining Correggio carefully  
 "Lest I be taught that Leda had two legs,—

"—But once never so little tweaked my nose  
 "For peeping through my fan at Carnival, 891

"Confessing thereby 'I have no easy task—  
 "I need use all my powers to hold you mine,

"And then,—why 'tis so doubtful if they  
 serve,

"That—take this, as an earnest of despair!'  
 "Why, we were quits: I had wiped the

harm away, 896  
 "Thought 'The man fears me!' and fore-  
 gone revenge."

We must not want all this elaborate work  
 To solve the problem why young Fancy-and-  
 flesh

Slips from the dull side of a spouse in years,  
 Betakes it to the breast of Brisk-and-bold 901  
 Whose love-scrapes furnish talk for all the  
 town!

Accordingly one word on the other side  
 Tips over the piled-up fabric of a tale.

Guido says—that is, always, his friends say—  
 It is unlikely, from the wickedness, 906

That any man treat any woman so.  
 The letter in question was her very own,

Unprompted and unaided: she could write—  
 As able to write as ready to sin, or free, 910

When there was danger, to deny both facts.  
 He bids you mark, herself from first to last

Attributes all the so-styled torture just  
 To jealousy,—jealousy of whom but just

This very Caponsacchi! How suits here 915  
 This with the other alleged motive, Prince?

Would Guido make a terror of the man  
 He meant should tempt the woman, as they

charge?  
 Do you fright your hare that you may catch  
 your hare?

Consider too, the charge was made and met

At the proper time and place where proofs  
were plain— 92  
Heard patiently and disposed of thoroughly  
By the highest powers, possessors of most  
light,  
The Governor for the law, and the Archbishop  
For the gospel : which acknowledged prima-  
cies, 925  
Tis impudently pleaded, he could warp  
Into a tacit partnership with crime—  
He being the while, believe their own account,  
Impotent, penniless and miserable !  
He further asks — Duke, note the knotty  
point !— 930  
How he,—concede him skill to play such part  
And drive his wife into a gallant's arms,—  
Could bring the gallant to play his part too  
And stand with arms so opportunely wide ?  
How bring this Caponsacchi,—with whom,  
friends 935  
And foes alike agree, throughout his life  
He never interchanged a civil word  
Nor lifted courteous cap to—him how bend  
To such observancy of beck and call,  
—To undertake this strange and perilous feat  
For the good of Guido, using, as the lure, 941  
Pompilia whom, himself and she avouch,  
He had nor spoken with nor seen, indeed,  
Beyond sight in a public theatre,  
When she wrote letters (she that could not  
write !) 945  
The importunate shamelessly-protested love  
Which brought him, though reluctant, to her  
feet,  
And forced on him the plunge which, how-  
soe'er  
She might swim up i' the whirl, must bury him  
Under abysmal black : a priest contrive 950  
No better, no amour to be hushed up,  
But open flight and noon-day infamy ?  
Try and concoct defence for such revolt !  
Take the wife's tale as true, say she was  
wronged,—  
Pray, in what rubric of the breviary 955  
Do you find it registered—the part of a priest  
Is—that to right wrongs from the church he  
skip,  
Go journeying with a woman that's a wife,  
And be pursued, o'ertaken and captured . . .  
how ?  
In a lay-dress, playing the kind sentinel 960  
Where the wife sleeps (says he who best  
should know)  
And sleeping, sleepless, both have spent the  
night !  
Could no one else be found to serve at need—  
No woman—or if man, no safer sort  
Than this not well-reputed turbulence ? 965  
Then, look into his own account o' the case !  
He, being the stranger and astonished one,  
Yet received protestations of her love  
From lady neither known nor cared about :  
Love, so protested, bred in him disgust 970  
After the wonder,—or incredulity,  
Such impudence seeming impossible.  
But, soon assured such impudence might be,  
When he had seen with his own eyes at last  
Letters thrown down to him i' the very street  
From behind lattice where the lady lurked, 975  
And read their passionate summons to her  
side—  
Why then, a thousand thoughts swarmed up  
and in,—  
How he had seen her once, a moment's space,  
Observed she was both young and beautiful,  
Heard everywhere report she suffered much  
From a jealous husband thrice her age,—in  
short 981  
There flashed the propriety, expediency  
Of treating, trying might they come to terms,  
—At all events, granting the interview 985  
Prayed for, one so adapted to assist  
Decision as to, whether he advance,  
Stand or retire, in his benevolent mood !  
Therefore the interview befell at length ;  
And at this one and only interview, 990  
He saw the sole and single course to take—  
Bade her dispose of him, head, heart and hand,  
Did her behest and braved the consequence,  
Not for the natural end, the love of man  
For woman whether love be virtue or vice, 995  
But, please you, altogether for pity's sake—  
Pity of innocence and helplessness !  
And how did he assure himself of both ?  
Had he been the house-inmate, visitor,

Eye-witness of the described martyrdom, 1000  
So, competent to pronounce its remedy  
Ere rush on such extreme and desperate  
courage—

Involving such enormity of harm,  
Moreover, to the husband judged thus,  
doomed 1004

And damned without a word in his defence?  
Not he! the truth was felt by instinct here,  
—Process which saves a world of trouble and  
time.

There's the priest's story: what do you say  
to it,

Trying its truth by your own instinct too,  
Since that's to be the expeditious mode? 1010

"And now, do hear my version," Guido  
cries:

"I accept argument and inference both.

"It would indeed have been miraculous

"Had such a confidency sprung to birth

"With no more fanning from acquaintance-  
ship 1015

"Than here avowed by my wife and this  
priest.

"Only, it did not: you must substitute

"The old stale unromantic way of fault,

"The commonplace adventure, mere intrigue

"In prose form with the unpoetic tricks,

"Cheatings and lies: they used the hackney  
chair 1021

"Satan jaunts forth with, shabby and service-  
able,

"No gilded gimcrack-novelty from below,

"To bowl you along thither, swift and sure,

"That same officious go-between, the wench

"Who gave and took the letters of the two, 1026

"Now offers self and service back to me:

"Bears testimony to visits night by night

"When all was safe, the husband far and  
away,—

"To many a timely slipping out at large

"By light o' the morning-star, ere he should  
wake. 1031

"And when the fugitives were found at last,

"Why, with them were found also, to belie

"What protest they might make of inno-  
cence,

"All documents yet wanting, if need were,

"To establish guilt in them, disgrace in  
me— 1036

"The chronicle o' the converse from its rise

"To culmination in this outrage: read!

"Letters from wife to priest, from priest to  
wife,—

"Here they are, read and say where they  
chime in 1040

"With the other tale, superlative purity

"O' the pair of saints! I stand or fall by  
these."

But then on the other side again,—how say  
The pair of saints? That not one word is  
theirs—

No syllable o' the batch or writ or sent 1046  
Or yet received by either of the two.

"Found," says the priest, "because he  
needed them,

"Failing all other proofs, to prove our fault:

"So, here they are, just as is natural. 1048

"Oh yes—we had our missives, each of us!

"Not these, but to the full as vile, no doubt:

"Hers as from me,—she could not read, so  
burnt,—

"Mine as from her,—I burnt because I read.

"Who forged and found them? *Cui pro-  
fuert!*"<sup>1</sup>

(I take the phrase out of your Highness'  
mouth) 1055

"He who would gain by her fault and my  
fall,

"The trickster, schemer and pretender—he

"Whose whole career was lie entailing lie

"Sought to be sealed truth by the worst lie  
last!"

Guido rejoins—"Did the other end o' the  
tale 1060

"Match this beginning! 'Tis alleged I prove

"A murderer at the end, a man of force

"Prompt, indiscriminate, effectual: good!

"Then what need all this trifling woman's-  
work,

"Letters and embassies and weak intrigue,

<sup>1</sup> *Cui profuerint*: "he who would profit by  
them?"

- "When will and power were mine to end at  
once 1066
- "Safely and surely? Murder had come first
- "Not last with such a man, assure your-  
selves!
- "The silent *acquetta*,<sup>1</sup> stilling at command—
- "A drop a day i' the wine or soup, the  
dose,— 1070
- "The shattering beam that breaks above the  
bed
- "And beats out brains, with nobody to blame
- "Except the wormy age which eats even  
oak,—
- "Nay, the staunch steel or trusty cord,—  
who cares
- "I' the blind old palace, a pitfall at each  
step, 1075
- "With none to see, much more to interpose
- "O' the two, three, creeping house-dog-  
servant-things
- "Born mine and bred mine? Had I willed  
gross death,
- "I had found nearer paths to thrust him prey
- "Than this that goes meandering here and  
there 1080
- "Through half the world and calls down in  
its course
- "Notice and noise,—hate, vengeance, should  
it fail,
- "Derision and contempt though it succeed!
- "Moreover, what o' the future son and heir?
- "The unborn babe about to be called  
mine,— 1085
- "What end in heaping all this shame on  
him,
- "Were I indifferent to my own black share?
- "Would I have tried these crookednesses,  
say,
- "Willing and able to effect the straight?"
- "Ay, would you!"—one may hear the  
priest retort, 1090
- "Being as you are, i' the stock, a man of  
guile,
- "And ruffianism but an added graft.
- "You, a born coward, try a coward's arms,
- "Trick and chicane,—and only when these  
fail
- "Does violence follow, and like fox you  
bite 1095
- "Caught out in stealing. Also, the disgrace
- "You hardly shrunk at, wholly shrivelled  
her:
- "You plunged her thin white delicate hand  
i' the flame
- "Along with your coarse horny brutish fist,
- "Held them a second there, then drew out  
both 1100
- "—Yours roughed a little, hers ruined  
through and through.
- "Your hurt would heal forthwith at oint-  
ment's touch—
- "Namely, succession to the inheritance
- "Which bolder crime had lost you: let  
things change,
- "The birth o' the boy warrant the bolder  
crime, 1105
- "Why, murder was determined, dared and  
done,
- "For me," the priest proceeds with his reply,
- "The look o' the thing, the chances of  
mistake,
- "All were against me,—that, I knew the  
first:
- "But, knowing also what my duty was, 1110
- "I did it: I must look to men more skilled
- "In reading hearts than ever was the world."
- Highness, decide! Pronounce, Her Excel-  
lency!
- Or . . . even leave this argument in doubt,  
Account it a fit matter, taken up 1115
- With all its faces, manifold enough,
- To ponder on—what fronts us, the next stage,  
Next legal process? Guido, in pursuit,
- Coming up with the fugitives at the inn, 1119
- Caused both to be arrested then and there
- And sent to Rome for judgment on the case—
- Thither, with all his armoury of proofs,
- Betook himself: 'tis there we'll meet him now,  
Waiting the further issue.
- Here you smile
- "And never let him henceforth dare to  
plead,— 1125

<sup>1</sup> *Acquetta*: a kind of slow poison.

- "Of all pleas and excuses in the world  
 "For any deed hereafter to be done,—  
 "His irrepressible wrath at honour's wound !  
 "Passion and madness irrepressible? 1130  
 "Why, Count and cavalier, the husband  
     comes  
 "And catches foe i' the very act of shame !  
 "There's man to man,—nature must have her  
     way,—  
 "We look he should have cleared things on  
     the spot.  
 "Yes, then, indeed—even tho' it prove he  
     erred— 1135  
 "Though the ambiguous first appearance,  
     mount  
 "Of solid injury, melt soon to mist,  
 "Still,—had he slain the lover and the wife—  
 "Or, since she was a woman and his wife,  
 "Slain him, but stript her naked to the skin  
 "Or at best left no more of an attire 1141  
 "Than patch sufficient to pin paper to,  
 "Some one love-letter, infamy and all,  
 "As passport to the Paphos<sup>1</sup> fit for such,  
 "Safe-conduct to her natural home the  
     stews,— 1145  
 "Good ! One had recognized the power o'  
     the pulse.  
 "But when he stands, the stock-fish,—sticks  
     to law—  
 "Offers the hole in his heart, all fresh and  
     warm,  
 "For scrivener's pen to poke and play about—  
 "Can stand, can stare, can tell his beads  
     perhaps, 1150  
 "Oh, let us hear no syllable o' the rage !  
 "Such rage were a convenient afterthought  
 "For one who would have shown his teeth  
     belike,  
 "Exhibited unbridled rage enough,  
 "Had but the priest been found, as was to  
     hope, 1155  
 "In serge, not silk, with crucifix, not sword :  
 "Whereas the grey innocuous grub, of yore,  
 "Had hatched a hornet, tickle to the touch,
- "The priest was metamorphosed into knight,  
 "And even the timid wife, whose cue was—  
     shriek, 1160  
 "Bury her brow beneath his trampling foot,—  
 "She too sprang at him like a pythoress :  
 "So, gulp down rage, passion must be post-  
     poned,  
 "Calm be the word ! Well, our word is—  
     we brand  
 "This part o' the business, howsoever the rest  
 "Befall." 1165  
 "Nay," interpose as prompt his friends—  
 "This is the world's way ! So you adjudge  
     reward  
 "To the forbearance and legality  
 "Yourselves begin by inculcating—ay, 1170  
 "Exacting from us all with knife at throat !  
 "This one wrong more you add 'to wrong's  
     amount,—  
 "You publish all, with the kind comment  
     here,  
 " "Its victim was too cowardly for revenge."  
 Make it your own case,—you who stand apart !  
 The husband wakes one morn from heavy  
     sleep, 1175  
 With a taste of poppy in his mouth,—rub eyes,  
 Finds his wife flown, his strong box ransacked  
     too,  
 Follows as he best can, overtakes i' the end.  
 You bid him use his privilege : well, it seems  
 He's scarce cool-blooded enough for the right  
     move— 1181  
 Does not shoot when the game were sure, but  
     stands  
 Bewildered at the critical minute,—since  
 He has the first flash of the fact alone 1184  
 To judge from, act with, not the steady lights  
 Of after-knowledge,—yours who stand at ease  
 To try conclusions : he's in smother and smoke,  
 You outside, with explosion at an end :  
 The sulphur may be lightning or a squib—  
 He'll know in a minute, but till then, he  
     doubts. 1190  
 Back from what you know to what he knew  
     not !  
 Hear the priest's lofty "I am innocent."  
 The wife's as resolute "You are guilty !"  
     Come !

<sup>1</sup> *Paphos*: Paphos, in Cyprus, was the headquarters of the worship of Aphrodite, which was there accompanied by licentious rites and practices.

Are you not staggered?—pause, and you lose  
the move ! 1194

Nought left you but a low appeal to law,  
“Coward” tied to your tail for compliment !  
Another consideration : have it your way !  
Admit the worst : his courage failed the Count,  
He’s cowardly like the best o’ the burgesses  
He’s grown incorporate with,—a very cur, 1200  
Kick him from out your circle by all means !  
Why, trundled down this reputable stair,  
Still, the Church-door lies wide to take him in,  
And the Court-porch also : in he sneaks to  
each,— 1204

“Yes, I have lost my honour and my wife,  
“And, being moreover an ignoble hound,  
“I dare not jeopardize my life for them !”  
Religion and Law lean forward from their  
chairs,

“Well done, thou good and faithful servant !”  
Ay,

Not only applaud him that he scorned the  
world, 1210

But punish should he dare do otherwise.  
If the case be clear or turbid,—you must say !

Thus, anyhow, it mounted to the stage  
In the law-courts,—let’s see clearly from this  
point !— 1214

Where the priest tells his story true or false,  
And the wife her story, and the husband his,  
All with result as happy as before.

The courts would nor condemn nor yet acquit  
This, that or the other, in so distinct a sense  
As end the strife to either’s absolute loss : 1220  
Pronounced, in place of something definite,  
“Each of the parties, whether goat or sheep  
“I’ the main, has wool to show and hair to  
hide.

“Each has brought somehow trouble, is  
somehow cause

“Of pains enough,—even though no worse  
were proved. 1225

“Here is a husband, cannot rule his wife

“Without provoking her to scream and scratch

“And scour the fields,—causelessly, it may  
be :

“Here is that wife,—who makes her sex our  
plague,

“Wedlock, our bugbear,—perhaps with cause  
enough : 1230

“And here is the truant priest o’ the trio,  
worst

“Or best—each quality being conceivable.

“Let us impose a little mulct on each.

“We punish youth in state of pupillage

“Who talk at hours when youth is bound to  
sleep, 1238

“Whether the prattle turn upon Saint Rose

“Or Donna Olimpia of the Vatican :

“Tis talk, talked wisely or unwisely talked,

“I’ the dormitory where to talk at all,

“Transgresses, and is mulct : as here we  
mean. 1240

“For the wife,—let her betake herself, for  
rest,

“After her run, to a House of Convertites—

“Keep there, as good as real imprisonment :

“Being sick and tired, she will recover so.

“For the priest, spritely strayer out of  
bounds, 1245

“Who made Arezzo hot to hold him,—Rome

“Profits by his withdrawal from the scene.

“Let him be relegate to Civita,

“Circumscribed by its bounds till matters  
mend :

“There he at least lies out o’ the way of  
harm 1250

“From foes—perhaps from the too friendly  
fair.

“And finally for the husband, whose rash rule

“Has but itself to blame for this ado,—

“If he be vexed that, in our judgments dealt,

“He fails obtain what he accounts his right,

“Let him go comforted with the thought, no  
less, 1255

“That, turn each sentence howsoever he  
may,

“There’s satisfaction to extract therefrom.

“For, does he wish his wife proved innocent?

“Well, she’s not guilty, he may safely urge.

“Has missed the stripes dishonest wives  
endure— 1260

“This being a fatherly pat o’ the cheek, no  
more.

“Does he wish her guilty? Were she other-



- "Would she be locked up, set to say her prayers,  
 "Prevented intercourse with the outside world, 1285  
 "And that suspected priest in banishment,  
 "Whose portion is a further help i' the case?  
 "Oh, ay, you all of you want the other thing,  
 "The extreme of law, some verdict neat, complete,—  
 "Either, the whole o' the dowry in your poke 1270  
 "With full release from the false wife, to boot,  
 "And heading, hanging for the priest, beside—  
 "Or, contrary, claim freedom for the wife,  
 "Repayment of each penny paid her spouse,  
 "Amends for the past, release for the future !  
 Such 1275  
 "Is wisdom to the children of this world ;  
 "But we've no mind, we children of the light,  
 "To miss the advantage of the golden mean,  
 "And push things to the steel point." Thus the courts.
- Is it settled so far? Settled or disturbed,  
 Console yourselves : 'tis like . . . an instance, now ! 1281  
 You've seen the puppets, of Place Navona, play,—  
 Punch and his mate,—how threats pass, blows are dealt,  
 And a crisis comes : the crowd or clap or hiss  
 Accordingly as disposed for man or wife— 1285  
 When down the actors duck awhile perdue,  
 Donning what novel rag-and-feather trim  
 Best suits the next adventure, new effect :  
 And,—by the time the mob is on the move,  
 With something like a judgment *pro* and *con*,— 1290  
 There's a whistle, up again the actors pop  
 In t'other tatter with fresh-tinseled staves,  
 To re-engage in one last worst fight more  
 Shall show, what you thought tragedy was farce.  
 Note, that the climax and the crown of things 1295  
 Invariably is, the devil appears himself,
- Armed and accoutred, horns and hoofs and tail !  
 Just so, nor otherwise it proved—you'll see :  
 Move to the murder, never mind the rest !
- Guido, at such a general duck-down, 1300  
 I' the breathing-space,—of wife to convent here,  
 Priest to his relegation, and himself  
 To Arezzo,—had resigned his part perforce  
 To brother Abate, who bustled, did his best,  
 Retrieved things somewhat, managed the three suits— 1305  
 Since, it should seem, there were three suits-at-law  
 Behoved him look to, still, lest bad grow worse :  
 First civil suit,—the one the parents brought,  
 Impugning the legitimacy of his wife,  
 Affirming thence the nullity of her rights :  
 This was before the Rota,—Molinès, 1310  
 That's judge there, made that notable decree  
 Which partly leaned to Guido, as I said,  
 But Pietro had appealed against the same  
 To the very court will judge what we judge now— 1315  
 Tommati and his fellows,—Suit the first.  
 Next civil suit,—demand on the wife's part  
 Of separation from the husband's bed  
 On plea of cruelty and risk to life—  
 Claims restitution of the dowry paid, 1320  
 Immunity from paying any more :  
 This second, the Vicegerent has to judge.  
 Third and last suit,—this time, a criminal one,—  
 Answer to, and protection from, both these,—  
 Guido's complaint of guilt against his wife  
 In the Tribunal of the Governor, 1325  
 Venturini, also judge of the present cause.  
 Three suits of all importance plaguing him,  
 Beside a little private enterprise  
 Of Guido's,—essay at a shorter cut. 1330  
 For Paolo, knowing the right way at Rome,  
 Had, even while superintending these three suits  
 I' the regular way, each at its proper court,  
 Ingeniously made interest with the Pope  
 To set such tedious regular forms aside, 1335

And, acting the supreme and ultimate judge,  
 Declare for the husband and against the wife.  
 Well, at such crisis and extreme of straits,—  
 The man at bay, buffeted in this wise,—  
 Happened the strangest accident of all. 1340

"Then," sigh friends, "the last feather broke  
 his back,

"Made him forget all possible remedies  
 "Save one—he rushed to, as the sole relief  
 "From horror and the abominable thing."

"Or rather," laugh foes, "then did there  
 befall 1345

"The luckiest of conceivable events,  
 "Most pregnant with impunity for him,  
 "Which henceforth turned the flank of all  
 attack,

"And bade him do his wickedest and worst."  
 —The wife's withdrawal from the Convertites,  
 Visit to the villa where her parents lived, 1351  
 And birth there of his babe. Divergence  
 here!

I simply take the facts, ask what they show."

First comes this thunderclap of a surprise :  
 Then follow all the signs and silences 1355  
 Premonitory of earthquake. Paolo first  
 Vanished, was swept off somewhere, lost to  
 Rome :

(Wells dry up, while the sky is sunny and blue.)

Then Guido girds himself for enterprise,  
 Hies to Vittiano, counsels with his steward,  
 Comes to ter as with four peasants young and  
 bold, 1361

And starts for Rome the Holy, reaches her  
 At very holiest, for 'tis Christmas Eve,  
 And makes straight for the Abate's dried-up  
 font,

The lodge where Paolo ceased to work the  
 pipes. 1365

And then, rest taken, observation made  
 And plan completed, all in a grim week,  
 The five proceed in a body, reach the place,  
 —Pietro's, at the Paolina, silent, lone,  
 And stupefied by the propitious snow. 1370  
 'Tis one ! the evening : knock : a voice  
 "Who's there?"

"Friends with a letter from the priest your  
 friend."

At the door, straight smiles old Violante's self.  
 She falls,—her son-in-law stabs through and  
 through,

Reaches through her at Pietro—"With your  
 son 1375

"This is the way to settle suits, good sire !"

He bellows "Mercy for heaven, not for earth !

"Leave to confess and save my sinful soul,"

"Then do your pleasure on the body of me !"

—"Nay, father, soul with body must take its  
 chance !" 1380

He presently got his portion and lay still.

And last, Pompilia rushes here and there  
 Like a dove among the lightnings in her  
 brake,

Falls also : Guido's, this last husband's-act.

He lifts her by the long dishevelled hair,  
 Holds her away at arm's length with one  
 hand, 1385

While the other tries if life come from the  
 mouth—

Looks out his whole heart's hate on the shut  
 eyes,

Draws a deep satisfied breath, "So—dead at  
 last !"

Throws down the burden on dead Pietro's  
 knees, 1390

And ends all with "Let us away, my boys !"

And, as they left by one door, in at the other  
 Tumbled the neighbours—for the shrieks had  
 pierced

To the mill and the grange, this cottage and  
 that shed.

Soon followed the Public Force ; pursuit  
 began 1395

Though Guido had the start and chose the  
 road :

So, that same night was he, with the other  
 four,

Overtaken near Baccano,—where they sank  
 By the way-side, in some shelter meant for  
 beasts,

And now lay heaped together, nuzzling  
 swine, 1400

Each wrapped in bloody cloak, each grasping  
 still

His unwiped weapon, sleeping all the same

The sleep o' the just,—a journey of twenty miles

Brought just and unjust to a level, you see.  
The only one i' the world that suffered aught  
By the whole night's toil and trouble, flight  
and chase, 1408

Was just the officer who took them, Head  
O' the Public Force,—Patrizj, zealous soul,  
Who, having but duty to sustain weak flesh,  
Got heated, caught a fever and so died : 1410  
A warning to the over-vigilant,  
—Virtue in a chafe should change her linen  
quick,  
Lest pleurisy get start of providence.  
(That's for the Cardinal, and told, I think !)

Well, they bring back the company to Rome,  
Says Guido, "By your leave, I fain would  
ask 1416

"How you found out 'twas I who did the deed ?

"What put you on my trace, a foreigner,  
"Supposed in Arezzo,—and assuredly safe  
"Except for an oversight : who told you,  
pray ?" 1420

"Why, naturally your wife !" Down Guido  
drops

O' the horse he rode,—they have to steady  
and stay,

At either side the brute that bore him, bound,  
So strange it seemed his wife should live and  
speak !

She had prayed—at least so people tell you  
now— 1425

For but one thing to the Virgin for herself,  
Not simply,—as did Pietro 'mid the stabs,—  
Time to confess and get her own soul saved—  
But time to make the truth apparent, truth  
For God's sake, lest men should believe a  
lie : 1430

Which seems to have been about the single  
prayer

She ever put up, that was granted her.  
With this hope in her head, of telling truth,—  
Being familiarized with pain, beside,—  
She bore the stabbing to a certain pitch 1435  
Without a useless cry, was flung for dead  
On Pietro's lap, and so attained her point.

Her friends subjoin this—have I done with  
them ?—

And cite the miracle of continued life  
(She was not dead when I arrived just now)  
As attestation to her probity. 1441

Does it strike your Excellency ? Why, your  
Highness,

The self-command and even the final prayer,  
Our candour must acknowledge explicable  
As easily by the consciousness of guilt. 1445  
So, when they add that her confession runs  
She was of wifehood one white innocence  
In thought, word, act, from first of her short  
life

To last of it ; praying, i' the face of death,  
That God forgive her other sins—not this,  
She is charged with and must die for, that  
she failed 1451

Anyway to her husband : while thereon  
Comments the old Religious—"So much good,  
"Patience beneath enormity of ill,

"I hear to my confusion, woe is me, 1455  
"Sinner that I stand, shamed in the walk  
and gait

"I have practised and grown old in, by a  
child !"—

Guido's friends shrug the shoulder, "Just  
this same

"Prodigious absolute calm in the last hour

"Confirms us,—being the natural result 1460

"Of a life which proves consistent to the close.

"Having braved heaven and deceived earth  
throughout,

"She braves still and deceives still, gains  
thereby

"Two ends, she prizes beyond earth or heaven :

"First sets her lover free, imperilled sore 1465

"By the new turn things take : he answers yet

"For the part he played : they have sum-  
moned him indeed :

"The past ripped up, he may be punished  
still :

"What better way of saving him than this ?

"Then,—thus she dies revenged to the utter  
most 1470

"On Guido, drags him with her in the dark ;

"The lower still the better, do you doubt ?

"Thus, two ways, does she love her love to  
the end,

"And hate her hate,—death, hell is no such  
price 1474

"To pay for these,—lovers and haters hold."

But there's another parry for the thrust.

"Confession," cry folks — "a confession,  
think !

"Confession of the moribund is true !"

Which of them, my wise friends? This  
public one, 1479

Or the private other we shall never know ?

The private may contain,—your casuists  
teach,—

The acknowledgment of, and the penitence for,  
That other public one, so people say.

However it be,—we trench on delicate ground,  
Her Eminence is peeping o'er the cards,—

Can one find nothing in behalf of this 1486

Catastrophe? Deaf folks accuse the dumb !

You criticize the drunken reel, fool's speech,  
Maniacal gesture of the man,—we grant !

But who poured poison in his cup, we ask? 1490  
Recall the list of his excessive wrongs,

First cheated in his wife, robbed by her kin,

Rendered anon the laughing-stock o' the world

By the story, true or false, of his wife's birth,—

The last seal publicly apposed to shame 1495

By the open flight of wife and priest,—why,  
Sirs,

Step out of Rome a furlong, would you know

What another guess tribunal than ours here,

Mere worldly Court without the help of grace,

Thinks of just that one incident o' the  
flight? 1500

Guido preferred the same complaint before

The court at Arezzo, bar of the Granduke,—

In virtue of it being Tuscany

Where the offence had rise and flight began,—

Self-same complaint he made in the sequel  
here 1505

Where the offence grew to the full, the flight

Ended: offence and flight, one fact judged twice

By two distinct tribunals,—what result?

There was a sentence passed at the same time

By Arezzo and confirmed by the Granduke,

Which nothing baulks of swift, and sure  
effect 1511

But absence of the guilty, (flight to Rome  
Frees them from Tuscan jurisdiction now)

—Condemns the wife to the opprobrious doom  
Of all whom law just lets escape from

death. 1515

The Stinche, House of Punishment, for life,—

That's what the wife deserves in Tuscany :

Here, she deserves—remitting with a smile

To her father's house, main object of the  
flight ! 1519

The thief presented with the thing he steals !

At this discrepancy of judgments—mad,

The man took on himself the office, judged ;

And the only argument against the use

O' the law he thus took into his own hands

Is . . . what, I ask you?—that, revenging  
wrong, 1525

He did not revenge sooner, kill at first

Whom he killed last ! That is the final charge.

Sooner? What's soon or late i' the case?—  
ask we.

A wound i' the flesh no doubt wants prompt  
redress ;

It smarts a little to-day, well in a week, 1536

Forgotten in a month ; or never, or now,  
revenge !

But a wound to the soul? That rankles worse  
and worse.

Shall I comfort you, explaining—"Not this  
once

"But now it may be some five hundred times

"I called you ruffian, pandar, liar and  
rogue : 1538

"The injury must be less by lapse of time?"

The wrong is a wrong, one and immortal  
too,

And that you bore it those five hundred  
times,

Let it rankle unrevenged five hundred years,

Is just five hundred wrongs the more and  
worse ! 1540

Men, plagued this fashion, get to explode  
this way,

If left no other.

"But we left this man

"Many another way, and there's his fault,"

'Tis answered—"He himself preferred our  
 arm. 1848  
 "O' the law to fight his battle with. No  
 doubt  
 "We did not open him an armoury  
 "To pick and choose from, use, and then  
 reject.  
 "He tries one weapon and fails,—he tries  
 the next  
 "And next : he flourishes wit and common  
 sense, 1850  
 "They fail him,—he plies logic doughtily,  
 "It fails him too,—thereon, discovers last  
 "He has been blind to the combustibles—  
 "That all the while he is a-glow with ire,  
 "Boiling with irrepressible rage, and so 1855  
 "May try explosives and discard cold steel,—  
 "So hires assassins, plots, plans, executes !  
 "Is this the honest self-forgetting rage  
 "We are called to pardon? Does the  
 furious bull  
 "Pick out four help-mates from the grazing  
 herd 1860  
 "And journey with them over hill and dale  
 "Till he find his enemy?"

What rejoinder? save  
 That friends accept our bull-similitude.  
 Bull-like,—the indiscriminate slaughter, rude  
 And reckless aggravation of revenge, 1866  
 Were all i' the way o' the brute who never  
 once  
 Ceases, amid all provocation more,  
 To bear in mind the first tormentor, first  
 Giver o' the wound that goaded him to  
 fight : 1870  
 And, though a dozen follow and reinforce  
 The aggressor, wound in front and wound in  
 flank,  
 Continues undisturbedly pursuit,  
 And only after prostrating his prize 1874  
 Turns on the pettier, makes a general prey.  
 So Guido rushed against Violante, first  
 Author of all his wrongs, *fons et origo*  
*Malorum*—drops first, deluge since,—which  
 done,  
 He finished with the rest. Do you blame a  
 bull? 1879

In truth you look as puzzled as ere I preached !  
 How is that? There are difficulties perhaps  
 On any supposition, and either side.  
 Each party wants too much, claims sympathy  
 For its object of compassion, more than just.  
 Cry the wife's friends, "O the enormous  
 crime 1885  
 "Caused by no provocation in the world !"  
 "Was not the wife a little weak?"—inquire—  
 "Punished extravagantly, if you please,  
 "But meriting a little punishment?  
 "One treated inconsiderately; say, 1890  
 "Rather than one deserving not at all  
 "Treatment and discipline o' the harsher  
 sort?"  
 No, they must have her purity itself,  
 Quite angel,—and her parents angels too  
 Of an aged sort, immaculate, word and  
 deed : 1895  
 At all events, so seeming, till the fiend,  
 Even Guido, by his folly, forced from them  
 The untoward avowal of the trick o' the birth,  
 Which otherwise were safe and secret now.  
 Why, here you have the awfulest of crimes  
 For nothing ! Hell broke loose on a  
 butterfly ! 1901  
 A dragon born of rose-dew and the moon !  
 Yet here is the monster ! Why he's a mere  
 man—  
 Born, bred and brought up in the usual way.  
 His mother loves him, still his brothers  
 stick 1905  
 To the good fellow of the boyish games ;  
 The Governor of his town knows and approves,  
 The Archbishop of the place knows and  
 assists :  
 Here he has Cardinal This to vouch for the  
 past,  
 Cardinal That to trust for the future,—  
 match 1910  
 And marriage were a Cardinal's making,—  
 in short,  
 What if a tragedy be acted here  
 Impossible for malice to improve,  
 And innocent Guido with his innocent four  
 Be added, all five, to the guilty three, 1915  
 That we of these last days be edified  
 With one full taste o' the justice of the world?

The long and the short is, truth seems what  
I show :—

Undoubtedly no pains ought to be spared  
To give the mob an inkling of our lights. 1820  
It seems unduly harsh to put the man  
To the torture, as I hear the court intends,  
Though readiest way of twisting out the  
truth ;

He is noble, and he may be innocent.  
On the other hand, if they exempt the man  
(As it is also said they hesitate 1825  
On the fair ground, presumptive guilt is weak  
I' the case of nobility and privilege),—  
What crime that ever was, ever will be,  
Deserves the torture? Then abolish it ! 1830  
You see the reduction *ad absurdum*, Sirs?

Her Excellency must pronounce, in fine !  
What, she prefers going and joining play ?  
Her Highness finds it late, intends retire ?  
I am of their mind : only, all this talk  
talked, 1835  
T'was not for nothing that we talked, I hope?  
Both know as much about it, now, at least,  
As all Rome : no particular thanks, I beg !  
(You'll see, I have not so advanced myself,  
After my teaching the two idiots here !) 1840

#### V.—COUNT GUIDO FRANCESCHINI.

THANKS, Sir, but, should it please the re-  
verend Court,  
I feel I can stand somehow, half sit down  
Without help, make shift to even speak, you  
see,  
Fortified by the sip of . . . why, 'tis wine,  
Velletri,—and not vinegar and gall, 1845  
So changed and good the times grow ! Thanks,  
kind Sir !  
Oh, but one sip's enough ! I want my head  
To save my neck, there's work awaits me still.  
How cautious and considerate . . . aie, aie,  
aie,  
Nor your fault, sweet Sir ! Come, you take  
to heart 1850  
An ordinary matter. Law is law.

Noblemen were exempt, the vulgar thought;  
From racking ; but, since law thinks other-  
wise,

I have been put to the rack : all's over now,  
And neither wrist—what men style, out of  
joint : 1855

If any harm be, 'tis the shoulder-blade,  
The left one, that seems wrong i' the socket,  
—Sirs,

Much could not happen, I was quick to faint,  
Being past my prime of life, and out of health.  
In short, I thank you,—yes, and mean the  
word. 1860

Needs must the Court be slow to understand  
How this quite novel form of taking pain,  
This getting tortured merely in the flesh,  
Amounts to almost an agreeable change  
In my case, me fastidious, plied too much 1865  
With opposite treatment, used (forgive the  
joke)

To the rasp-tooth toying with this brain of mine,  
And, in and out my heart, the play' the probe.  
Four years have I been operated on  
I' the soul, do you see—its tense or tremulous  
part— 1870

My self-respect, my care for a good name,  
Pride in an old one, love of kindred—just  
A mother, brothers, sisters, and the like,  
That looked up to my face when days were  
dim,

And fancied they found light there—no one  
spot, 1875

Foppishly sensitive, but has paid its pang.  
That, and not this you now oblige me with,  
That was the Vigil-torment, if you please !  
The poor old noble House that drew the rags  
O' the Franceschini's once superb array 1880  
Close round her, hoped to slink unchallenged  
by,—

Pluck off these ! Turn the drapery inside out  
And teach the tittering town how scarlet  
wears !

Show men the lucklessness, the improvidence  
Of the easy-natured Count before this Count,  
The father I have some slight feeling for, 1885  
Who let the world slide, nor foresaw that  
friends

Then proud to cap and kiss their patron's shoe,

Would, when the purse he left held spider-webs,

Properly push his child to wall one day ! 50

Mimic the tetchy humour, furtive glance,  
And brow where half was furious, half fatigued,  
O' the same son got to be of middle age,  
Sour, saturnine,—your humble servant here,—  
When things go cross and the young wife,  
he finds 55

Take to the window at a whistle's bid,  
And yet demurs thereon, preposterous fool !—  
Whereat the worthies judge he wants advice  
And beg to civilly ask what's evil here,  
Perhaps remonstrate on the habit they deem  
He's given unduly to, of beating her : 61

. . . Oh, sure he beats her—why says John  
so else,

Who is cousin to George who is sib to Tecla's  
self

Who cooks the meal and combs the lady's  
hair ? 64

What ! 'Tis my wrist you merely dislocate  
For the future when you mean me martyrdom ?  
—Let the old mother's economy alone,  
How the brocade-strips saved o' the seamyside  
O' the wedding-gown buy raiment for a year ?  
—How she can dress and dish up—lordly  
dish 70

Fit for a duke, lamb's head and putenance—  
With her proud hands, feast household so a  
week ?

No word o' the wine rejoicing God and man  
The less when three-parts water ? Then, I say,  
A trifle of torture to the flesh, like yours, 75  
While soul is spared such foretaste of hell-fire,  
Is naught. But I curtail the catalogue  
Through policy,—a rhetorician's trick,—  
Because I would reserve some choicer points  
O' the practice, more exactly parallel 80  
(Having an eye to climax) with what gift,  
Eventual grace the Court may have in store  
I' the way of plague—what crown of punish-  
ments.

When I am hanged or headed, time enough  
To prove the tenderness of only that, 85  
More heading, hanging—not their counter-  
part,

Not demonstration public and precise

That I, having married the mongrel of a drab,  
Am bound to grant that mongrel-brat, my  
wife, 89

Her mother's birthright-license as is just,—  
Let her sleep undisturbed, i' the family style,  
Her sleep out in the embraces of a priest,  
Nor disallow their bastard as my heir !

Your sole mistake,—dare I submit so much  
To the reverend Court?—has been in all this  
pains 95

To make a stone roll down hill,—rack and  
wrench

And rend a man to pieces, all for what ?  
Why—make him ope mouth in his own  
defence,

Show cause for what he has done, the  
irregular deed,

(Since that he did it, scarce dispute can be) 100

And clear his fame a little, beside the luck  
Of stopping even yet, if possible,

Discomfort to his flesh from noose or axe—  
For that, out come the implements of law !

May it content my lords the gracious Court 105  
To listen only half so patient-long  
As I will in that sense profusely speak,  
And—fie, they shall not call in screws to  
help !

I killed Pompilia Franceschini, Sirs ;  
Killed too the Comparini, husband, wife, 110  
Who called themselves, by a notorious lie,  
Her father and her mother to ruin me.

There's the irregular deed : you want no  
more

Than right interpretation of the same,  
And truth so far—am I to understand ? 115

To that then, with convenient speed,—because  
Now I consider,—yes, despite my boast,  
There is an ailing in this omoplat<sup>1</sup>

May clip my speech all too abruptly short,  
Whatever the good-will in me. Now for  
truth ! 120

I' the name of the indivisible Trinity !  
Will my lords, in the plenitude of their light,  
Weigh well that all this trouble has come  
on me

<sup>1</sup> Omoplat : shoulder-blade.

Through my persistent treading in the paths  
 Where I was trained to go,—wearing that  
 yoke 125  
 My shoulder was predestined to receive,  
 Born to the hereditary stoop and crease?  
 Noble, I recognized my nobler still,  
 The Church, my suzerain; no mock-mistress,  
 she;  
 The secular owned the spiritual: mates of  
 mine 130  
 Have thrown their careless hoofs up at her call  
 "Forsake the clover and come drag my  
 wain!"  
 There they go cropping: I protruded nose  
 To halter, bent my back of docile beast,  
 And now am wheeled, one wide wound all  
 of me, 135  
 For being found at the eleventh hour o' the  
 day  
 Padding the mill-track, not neck-deep in grass:  
 —My one fault, I am stiffened by my work,  
 —My one reward, I help the Court to smile!

I am representative of a great line, 140  
 One of the first of the old families  
 In Arezzo, ancientest of Tuscan towns.  
 When my worst foe is fain to challenge this,  
 His worst exception runs—not first in rank  
 But second, noble in the next degree 145  
 Only; not malice' self maligns me more.  
 So, my lord opposite has composed, we know,  
 A marvel of a book, sustains the point  
 That Francis boasts the primacy 'mid saints;  
 Yet not inaptly hath his argument 150  
 Obtained response from yon my other lord  
 In thesis published with the world's applause  
 —Rather 'tis Dominic such post befits:  
 Why, at the worst, Francis stays Francis still,  
 Second in rank to Dominic it may be, 155  
 Still, very saintly, very like our Lord;  
 And I at least descend from Guido once  
 Homager to the Empire, nought below—  
 Of which account as proof that, none o' the  
 line  
 Having a single gift beyond brave blood, 160  
 Or able to do aught but give, give, give  
 In blood and brain, in house and land and  
 cash,

Not get and garner as the vulgar may,  
 We became poor as Francis or our Lord.  
 Be that as it likes you, Sirs,—whenever it  
 chanced 165  
 Myself grew capable anyway of remark,  
 (Which was soon—penury makes wit pre-  
 mature)  
 This struck me, I was poor who should be  
 rich  
 Or pay that fault to the world which trifles  
 not 169  
 When lineage lacks the flag yet lifts the pole:  
 On, therefore, I must move forthwith, transfer  
 My stranded self, born fish with gill and fin  
 Fit for the deep sea, now left flap bare-backed  
 In slush and sand, a show to crawlers vile  
 Reared of the low-tide and aright therein. 175  
 The enviable youth with the old name,  
 Wide chest, stout arms, sound brow and  
 pricking veins,  
 A heartful of desire, man's natural load,  
 A brainful of belief, the noble's lot,—  
 All this life, cramped and gasping, high and  
 dry 180  
 I' the wave's retreat,—the misery, good my  
 lords,  
 Which made you merriment at Rome of late,—  
 It made me reason, rather—muse, demand  
 —Why our bare dropping palace, in the street  
 Where such-an-one whose grandfather sold  
 tripe 185  
 Was adding to his purchased pile a fourth  
 Tall tower, could hardly show a turret sound?  
 Why Countess Beatrice, whose son I am,  
 Cowered in the winter-time as she spun flax,  
 Blew on the earthen basket of live ash, 190  
 Instead of jaunting forth in coach and six  
 Like such-another widow who ne'er was wed?  
 I asked my fellows, how came this about?  
 "Why, Jack, the sutler's child, perhaps the  
 camp's,  
 "Went to the wars, fought sturdily, took a  
 town 195  
 "And got rewarded as was natural.  
 "She of the coach and six—excuse me there!  
 "Why, don't you know the story of her  
 friend?  
 "A clown dressed vines on somebody's estate,



"His boy recoiled from muck, liked Latin  
more, 200

"Stuck to his pen and got to be a priest;

"Till one day . . . don't you mind that  
telling tract

"Against Molinos, the old Cardinal wrote?

"He penned and dropped it in the patron's  
desk

"Who, deep in thought and absent much of  
mind, 205

"Licensed the thing, allowed it for his own;

"Quick came promotion,—*suum cuique*,  
Count!

"Oh, he can pay for coach and six, be sure!"

"—Well, let me go, do likewise: war's the  
word—

"That way the Franceschini worked at first,  
"I'll take my turn, try soldiership."—"What,  
you? 211

"The eldest son and heir and prop o' the  
house,  
"So do you see your duty? Here's your post,  
"Hard by the hearth and altar. (Roam from  
roof,

"This youngster, play the gipsy out of doors,

"And who keeps kith and kin that fall on  
us?) 216

"Stand fast, stick tight, conserve your gods  
at home!"

"—Well then, the quiet course, the contrary  
trade!

"We had a cousin amongst us once was Pope,  
"And minor glories manifold. Try the  
Church, 220

"The tonsure, and,—since heresy's but half-  
slain

"Even by the Cardinal's tract he thought he  
wrote,—

"Have at Molinos!"—"Have at a fool's  
head!

"You a priest? How were marriage pos-  
sible?

"There must be Franceschini till time ends—  
"That's your vocation. Make your brothers  
priests, 228

"Paul shall be porporate,<sup>1</sup> and Girolamo step

<sup>1</sup> *Porporate*: wearing purple, the colour of  
a cardinal.

"Red-stockinged in the presence when you  
choose,

"But save one Franceschini for the age!

"Be not the vine but dig and dung its root,

"Be not a priest but gird up priesthood'  
loins, 231

"With one foot in Arezzo stride to Rome,  
"Spend yourself there and bring the purchase  
back!

"Go hence to Rome, be guided!"

So I was.

I turned alike from the hill-side zig-zag thread  
Of way to the table-land a soldier takes, 237

Alike from the low-lying pasture-place  
Where churchmen graze, recline and ruminant,

—Ventured to mount no platform like my  
lords 240

Who judge the world, bear brain I dare not  
brag—

But stationed me, might thus the expression  
serve,

As who should fetch and carry, come and go,  
Meddle and make i' the cause my lords love  
most—

The public weal, which hangs to the law,  
which holds 246

By the Church, which happens to be through  
God himself.

Humbly I helped the Church till here I  
stand,—

Or would stand but for the omoplat, you see!

Bidden qualify for Rome, I, having a field,  
Went, sold it, laid the sum at Peter's foot:

Which means—I settled home-accounts with  
spread, 251

Set apart just a modicum should suffice  
To hold the villa's head above the waves

Of weed inundating its oil and wine,  
And prop roof, stanchion wall o' the palace

so 255

As to keep breath i' the body, out of heart  
Amid the advance of neighbouring loftiness—  
(People like building where they used to  
beg)—

Till succoured one day,—shared the residue  
Between my mother and brothers and sisters  
there, 260

Black-eyed babe Donna This and Donna  
That,

As near to starving as might decently be,  
—Left myself journey-charges, change of suit,  
A purse to put i' the pocket of the Groom  
O' the Chamber of the patron, and a glove 205  
With a ring to it for the digits of the niece  
Sure to be helpful in his household,—then  
Started for Rome, and led the life prescribed.  
Close to the Church, though clean of it, I  
assumed

Three or four orders of no consequence, 270  
—They cast out evil spirits and exorcise,  
For example; bind a man to nothing more,  
Give clerical savour to his layman's-salt,  
Facilitate his claim to loaf and fish  
Should miracle leave, beyond what feeds the  
flock, 275  
Fragments to brim the basket of a friend—  
While, for the world's sake, I rode, danced  
and gamed,

Quitted me like a courtier, measured mine  
With whatsoever blade had fame in fence,  
—Ready to let the basket go its round 280  
Even though my turn was come to help myself,  
Should Dives count on me at dinner-time  
As just the understander of a joke  
And not immoderate in repartee.

*Utrique sic paratus*,<sup>1</sup> Sirs, I said, 285  
“Here,” (in the fortitude of years fifteen,  
So good a pedagogue is penury)  
“Here wait, do service,—serving and to serve!  
“And, in due time, I nowise doubt at all,  
“The recognition of my service comes. 290  
“Next year I'm only sixteen. I can wait.”

I waited thirty years, may it please the Court :  
Saw meanwhile many a denizen o' the dung  
Hop, skip, jump o'er my shoulder, make him  
wings 294

And fly aloft,—succeed, in the usual phrase.  
Everyone soon or late comes round by Rome :  
Stand still here, you'll see all in turn succeed.  
Why, look you, so and so, the physician here,  
My father's lacquey's son we sent to school,  
Doctored and dosed this Eminence and that,

<sup>1</sup> *Utrique sic paratus*: “thus prepared for  
either (Church or world).”

Salved the last Pope his certain obstinate  
sore, 301

Soon bought land as became him, names it  
now :

I grasp bell at his griffin-guarded gate,  
Traverse the half-mile avenue,—a term,<sup>2</sup>  
A cypress, and a statue, three and three,— 305  
Deliver message from my Monsignor,  
With varletry at lounge i' the vestibule  
I'm barred from who bear mud upon my shoe.  
My father's chaplain's nephew, Chamber-  
lain,—

Nothing less, please you !—courteous all the  
same, 310

—He does not see me though I wait an hour  
At his staircase-landing 'twixt the brace of  
busts,

A noseless Sylla, Marius maimed to match,  
My father gave him for a hexastich<sup>3</sup>  
Made on my birthday,—but he sends me  
down, 315

To make amends, that relic I prize most—  
The unburnt end o' the very candle, Sirs,  
Purpled with paint so prettily round and round,  
He carried in such state last Peter's-day,—  
In token I, his gentleman and squire, 320  
Had held the bridle, walked his managed  
mule

Without a tittup the procession through.  
Nay, the official,—one you know, sweet  
lords !—

Who drew the warrant for my transfer late  
To the New Prisons from Tordinona,—he  
Graciously had remembrance — “Francesco  
... ha? 325

“His sire, now—how a thing shall come  
about !—

Paid me a dozen florins above the fee,  
“For drawing deftly up a deed of sale  
“When troubles fell so thick on him, good  
heart, 330  
“And I was prompt and pushing ! By all  
means !  
“At the New Prisons be it his son shall lie,—

<sup>2</sup> *Term*: a figure of Terminus, the god of  
boundaries, consisting of only a bust, ending in  
a rectangular pedestal.

<sup>3</sup> *Hexastich*: stanza of six lines.

"Anything for an old friend!" and thereat  
Signed name with triple flourish underneath.  
These were my fellows, such their fortunes  
now, 335

While I—kept fasts and feasts innumerable,  
Matins and vespers, functions to no end  
I' the train of Monsignor and Eminence,  
As gentleman-squire, and for my zeal's reward  
Have rarely missed a place at the table-foot 340  
Except when some Ambassador, or such like,  
Brought his own people. Brief, one day I felt  
The tick of time inside me, turning-point  
And slight sense there was now enough of  
this:

That I was near my seventh climacteric, 345  
Hard upon, if not over, the middle life,  
And, although fed by the east-wind, fulsome-  
fine

With foretaste of the Land of Promise, still  
My gorge-gave symptom it might play me false;  
Better not press it further,—be content 350  
With living and dying only a nobleman,  
Who merely had a father great and rich,  
Who simply had one greater and richer yet,  
And so on back and back till first and best  
Began i' the night; I finish in the day. 355  
"The mother must be getting old," I said;  
"The sisters are well wedded away, our name  
"Can manage to pass a sister off, at need,  
"And do for dowry: both my brothers  
thrive— 360

"Regular priests they are, nor, bat-like, 'bide  
"Twixt flesh and fowl with neither privilege.  
"My spare revenue must keep me and mine.  
"I am tired: Arezzo's air is good to breathe;  
"Vittiano,—one limes flocks of thrushes  
there; 364

"A leathern coat costs little and lasts long:  
"Let me bid hope good-bye, content at  
home!"

Thus, one day, I disbosomed me and bowed.  
Whereat began the little buzz and thrill  
O' the gazers round me; each face brightened  
up:

As when at your Casino, deep in dawn, 370  
A gamester says at last, "I play no more,  
"Forego gain, acquiesce in loss, withdraw  
"Anyhow:" and the watchers of his ways,

A trifle struck compunctious at the word,  
Yet sensible of relief, breathe free once more,  
Break up the ring, venture polite advice—

"How, Sir? So scant of heart and hope  
indeed? 377

"Retire with neither cross nor pile from  
play?—

"So incurious, so short-casting?—give your  
chance

"To a younger, stronger, bolder spirit be-  
like, 380

"Just when luck turns and the fine throw  
sweeps all?"

Such was the chorus: and its goodwill  
meant—

"See that the loser leave door handsomely!

"There's an ill look,—it's sinister, spoils  
sport,

"When an old bruised and battered year-by-  
year 385

"Fighter with fortune, not a penny in poke,

"Reels down the steps of our establishment

"And staggers on broad daylight and the  
world,

"In shagrag beard and doleful doublet, drops

"And breaks his heart on the outside:  
people prate 390

"Such is the profit of a trip upstairs!"

"Contrive he sidle forth, baulked of the blow

"Best dealt by way of moral, bidding down

"No curse but blessings rather on our heads

"For some poor prize he bears at tattered  
breast, 395

"Some palpable sort of kind of good to set

"Over and against the grievance: give him  
quick!"

Whereon protested Paul, "Go hang your-  
selves!

"Leave him to me. Count Guido and  
brother of mine,

"A word in your ear! Take courage, since  
faint heart 400

"Ne'er won . . . aha, fair lady, don't men  
say?

"There's a *sors*, there's a right Virgilian dip!

"Do you see the happiness o' the hint? At  
worst,

"If the Church want no more of you, the Court

"No more, and the Camp as little, the in-  
grates,—come," 405

"Count you are counted: still you've coat to  
back,

"Not cloth of gold and tissue, as we hoped,

"But cloth with sparks and spangles on its  
frieze

"From Camp, Court, Church, enough to  
make a shine,

"Entitle you to carry home a wife 410

"With the proper dowry, let the worst betide!

"Why, it was just a wife you meant to take!"

Now, Paul's advice was weighty: priests  
should know:

And Paul apprised me, ere the week was out,

That Pietro and Violante, the easy pair, 415

The cits enough, with stomach to be more,

Had just the daughter and exact the sum

To truck for the quality of myself: "She's  
young,

"Pretty and rich: you're noble, classic,  
choice. 419

"Is it to be a match?" "A match," said I.

Done! He proposed all, I accepted all,

And we performed all. So I said and did

Simply. As simply followed, not at first

But with the outbreak of misfortune, still

One comment on the saying and doing—

"What? 425

"No blush at the avowal you dared buy

"A girl of age beseems your granddaughter,

"Like ox or ass? Are flesh and blood a ware?

"Are heart and soul a chattel?" 429

Softly, Sirs!

Will the Court of its charity teach poor me

Anxious to learn, of any way i' the world,

Allowed by custom and convenience, save

This same which, taught from my youth up,

I trod?

Take me along with you; where was the  
wrong step? 435

If what I gave in barter, style and state

And all that hangs to Franceschinihood,

Were worthless,—why, society goes to ground,

Its rules are idiot's-rambling. Honour of  
birth,—

If that thing has no value, cannot buy 440

Something with value of another sort,

You've no reward nor punishment to give

I' the giving or the taking honour; straight

Your social fabric, pinnacle to base, 444

Comes down a-clatter like a house of cards.

Get honour, and keep honour free from flaw,

Aim at still higher honour,—gabble o' the

goose!

Go bid a second blockhead like myself

Spend fifty years in guarding bubbles of breath,

Soapsuds with air i' the belly, gilded brave, 450

Guarded and guided, all to break at touch

O' the first young girl's hand and first old  
fool's purse!

All my privation and endurance, all

Love, loyalty and labour dared and did, 454

Fiddle-de-dee!—why, doer and darer both,—

Count Guido Franceschini had hit the mark

Far better, spent his life with more effect,

As a dancer or a prizier, trades that pay!

On the other hand, bid this buffoonery cease,

Admit that honour is a privilege, 460

The question follows, privilege worth what?

Why, worth the market-price,—now up, now  
down,

Just so with this as with all other ware:

Therefore essay the market, sell your name,

Style and condition to who buys them best!

"Does my name purchase," had I dared  
inquire, 466

"Your niece, my lord?" there would have  
been rebuff

Though courtesy, your Lordship cannot else—

"Not altogether! Rank for rank may stand:

"But I have wealth beside, you—poverty; 470

"Your scale flies up there: bid a second bid

"Rank too and wealth too!" Reasoned like  
yourself!

But was it to you I went with goods to sell?

This time 'twas my scale quietly kissed the  
ground,

Mere rank against mere wealth—some youth  
beside, 476

Some beauty too, thrown into the bargain, just

As the buyer likes or lets alone. I thought

To deal o' the square: others find fault; it  
seems:

The thing is, those my offer most concerned,

Pietro, Violante, cried they fair or foul? 480  
 What did they make o' the terms? Prepos-  
 terous terms?

Why then accede so promptly, close with such  
 Nor take a minute to chaffer? Bargain struck,  
 They straight grew bilious, wished their money  
 back,

Repented them, no doubt: why, so did I, 485  
 So did your Lordship, if town-talk be true,  
 Of paying a full farm's worth for that piece  
 By Pietro of Cortona—probably  
 His scholar Ciro Ferri may have retouched—  
 You caring more for colour than design— 490  
 Getting a little tired of cupids too.  
 That's incident to all the folk who buy!

I am charged, I know, with gilding fact by  
 fraud;

I falsified and fabricated, wrote  
 Myself down roughly richer than I prove, 495  
 Rendered a wrong revenue,—grant it all!  
 Mere grace, mere coquetry such fraud, I say:  
 A flourish round the figures of a sum  
 For fashion's sake, that deceives nobody.

The veritable back-bone, understood 500  
 Essence of this same bargain, blank and bare,  
 Being the exchange of quality for wealth,—  
 What may such fancy-flights be? Flecks of  
 oil

Flirted by chapmen where plain dealing grates.  
 I may have dripped a drop—"My name I  
 sell;

"Not but that I too boast my wealth"—as  
 they,

"—We bring you riches; still our ancestor  
 "Was hardly the rapsallion folk saw flogged,  
 "But heir to we know who, were rights of  
 force!"

They knew and I knew where the backbone  
 lurked 510

I the writhings of the bargain, lords, believe!  
 I paid down all engaged for, to a doit,  
 Delivered them just that which, their life long,  
 They hungered in the hearts of them to gain—  
 Incorporation with nobility thus 515  
 In word and deed: for that they gave me  
 wealth.

But when they came to try their gain, my gift,  
 Quit Rome and qualify for Arezzo, take

The tone o' the new sphere that absorbed the  
 old,

Put away gossip Jack and goody Joan 520  
 And go become familiar with the Great,  
 Greatness to touch and taste and handle  
 now,—

Why then,—they found that all was vanity,  
 Vexation, and what Solomon describes!  
 The old abundant city-fare was best, 525  
 The kindly warmth o' the commons, the  
 glad clap

Of the equal on the shoulder, the frank grin  
 Of the underling at all so many spoons  
 Fire-new at neighbourly treat,—best, best  
 and best 530

Beyond compare!—down to the loll itself  
 O' the pot-house settle,—better such a bench  
 Than the stiff crucifixion by my dais  
 Under the piecemeal damask canopy  
 With the coroneted coat of arms a-top!  
 Poverty and privation for pride's sake, 535  
 All they engaged to easily brave and bear,—  
 With the fit upon them and their brains  
 a-work,—

Proved unendurable to the sobered sots.  
 A banished prince, now, will exude a juice  
 And salamander-like support the flame: 540  
 He dines on chestnuts, chucks the husks to help  
 The broil o' the brazier, pays the due baioc,<sup>1</sup>  
 Goes off light-hearted: his grimace begins  
 At the funny humours of the christening-feast  
 Of friend the money-lender,—then he's  
 touched 545

By the flame and frizzles at the babe to kiss!  
 Here was the converse trial, opposite mind:  
 Here did a petty nature split on rock  
 Of vulgar wants predestinate for such—  
 One dish at supper and weak wine to boot!  
 The prince had grinned and borne: the  
 citizen shrieked, 551

Summoned the neighbourhood to attest the  
 wrong,  
 Made noisy protest he was murdered,—stoned  
 And burned and drowned and hanged,—  
 then broke away,  
 He and his wife, to tell their Rome the rest!

<sup>1</sup> Baioc: about a halfpenny.

And this you admire, you men o' the world,  
 my lords?  
 This moves compassion, makes you doubt  
 my faith?  
 Why, I appeal to . . . sun and moon?  
 Not I!  
 Rather to Plautus, Terence, Boccaccio's Book,  
 My townsman, frank Ser Franco's<sup>1</sup> merry  
 Tales,— 560  
 To all who strip a vizard from a face,  
 A body from its padding, and a soul  
 From froth and ignorance it styles itself,—  
 If this be other than the daily hap  
 Of purblind greed that dog-like still drops  
 bone, 565  
 Grasps shadow, and then howls the case is  
 hard!

So much for them so far: now for myself,  
 My profit or loss i' the matter: married am I:  
 Text whereon friendly censors burst to preach.  
 Ay, at Rome even, long ere I was left 570  
 To regulate her life for my young bride  
 Alone at Arezzo, friendliness outbroke  
 (Sifting my future to predict its fault)  
 "Purchase and sale being thus so plain a  
 point,  
 "How of a certain soul bound up, may-be,  
 "I' the barter with the body and money-

"From the bride's soul what is it you expect?"  
 Why, loyalty and obedience,—wish and will  
 To settle and suit her fresh and plastic mind  
 To the novel, not disadvantageous mould! 580  
 Father and mother shall the woman leave,  
 Cleave to the husband, be it for weal or woe:  
 There is the law: what sets this law aside  
 In my particular case? My friends submit  
 "Guide, guardian, benefactor,—fee, faw, fum,  
 "The fact is you are forty-five years old,  
 "Nor very comely even for that age: 587  
 "Girls must have boys." Why, let girls say  
 so then,

<sup>1</sup> *Ser Franco*: apparently Sacchetti, see l.  
 1153. Petrarch, to whom the term "towns-  
 man" better applies (since Sacchetti, though a  
 Tuscan, was a Florentine), wrote nothing that  
 can be described as "merry tales."

Nor call the boys and men, who say the same,  
 Brute this and beast the other as they do!  
 Come, cards on table! When you chaunt us  
 next 591  
 Epithalamium full to overflow  
 With praise and glory of white womanhood,  
 The chaste and pure—troll no such lies o'er  
 lip!  
 Put in their stead a crudity or two, 595  
 Such short and simple statement of the case  
 As youth chalks on our walls at spring of  
 year!  
 No! I shall still think nobler of the sex,  
 Believe a woman still may take a man 599  
 For the short period that his soul wears flesh,  
 And, for the soul's sake, understand the fault  
 Of armour frayed by fighting. Tush, it tempts  
 One's tongue too much! I'll say—the law's  
 the law:  
 With a wife I look to find all wifeliness,  
 As when I buy, timber and twig, a tree— 605  
 I buy the song o' the nightingale inside.

Such was the pact: Pompilia from the first  
 Broke it, refused from the beginning day  
 Either in body or soul to cleave to mine,  
 And published it forthwith to all the world.  
 No rupture,—you must join ere you can  
 break,— 611  
 Before we had cohabited a month  
 She found I was a devil and no man,—  
 Made common cause with those who found  
 as much, 614  
 Her parents, Pietro and Violante,—moved  
 Heaven and earth to the rescue of all three.  
 In four months' time, the time o' the parents'  
 stay,  
 Arezzo was a-ringing, bells in a blaze.  
 With the unimaginable story rife  
 I' the mouth of man, woman and child—  
 to-wit 620  
 My misdemeanour. First the lighter side,  
 Ludicrous face of things,—how very poor  
 The Franceschini had become at last,  
 The meanness and the misery of each shift  
 To save a soldo,<sup>2</sup> stretch and make ends  
 meet. 625

<sup>2</sup> *Soldo*: about a penny.

Next, the more hateful aspect,—how myself  
With cruelty beyond Caligula's  
Had stripped and beaten, robbed and murdered them,

The good old couple, I decoyed, abused,  
Plundered and then cast out, and happily  
so, 630

Since,—in due course the abominable  
comes,—

Woe worth the poor young wife left lonely  
here !

Repugnant in my person as my mind,  
I sought,—was ever heard of such revenge ?  
—To lure and bind her to so cursed a couch,  
Such co-embrace with sulphur, snake and  
toad, 636

That she was fain to rush forth, call the stones  
O' the common street to save her, not from  
hate

Of mine merely, but . . . must I burn my lips  
With the blister of the lie ? . . . the satyr-  
love 640

Of who but my own brother, the young priest,  
Too long enforced to lenten fare belike,  
Now tempted by the morsel tossed him full  
I' the trencher where lay bread and herbs at  
best.

Mark, this yourselves say !—this, none dis-  
allows, 645

Was charged to me by the universal voice  
At the instigation of my four-months' wife !—

And then you ask "Such charges so preferred,  
" (Truly or falsely, here concerns us not)

"Pricked you to punish now if not before ?—  
"Did not the harshness double itself, the  
hate 651

"Harden ?" I answer "Have it your way  
and will !"

Say my resentment grew apace : what then ?  
Do you cry out on the marvel ? When I find  
That pure smooth egg which, laid within my  
nest, 655

Could not but hatch a comfort to us all,  
Issues a cockatrice for me and mine,  
Do you stare to see me stamp on it ? Swans  
are soft :

Is it not clear that she you call my wife,  
That any wife of any husband, caught 660

Whetting a sting like this against his breast,—  
Speckled with fragments of the fresh-broke  
shell,

Married a month and making outcry thus,—  
Proves a plague-prodigy to God and man ?  
She married : what was it she married for, 665  
Counted upon and meant to meet thereby ?  
"Love" suggests some one, "love, a little  
word

"Whereof we have not heard one syllable."  
So, the Pompilia, child, girl, wife, in one,  
Wanted the beating pulse, the rolling eye, 670  
The frantic gesture, the devotion due  
From Thyrsis to Neæra ! Guido's love—  
Why not Provençal roses in his shoe,  
Plume to his cap, and trio of guitars  
At casement, with a bravo close beside ? 675  
Good things all these are, clearly claimable  
When the fit price is paid the proper way.  
Had it been some friend's wife, now, threw  
her fan

At my foot, with just this pretty scrap attached,  
"Shame, death, damnation—fall! these as  
they may, 680

"So I find you, for a minute ! Come this  
eve !"

—Why, at such sweet self-sacrifice,—who  
knows ?

I might have fired up, found me at my post,  
Ardent from head to heel, nor feared catch  
cough.

Nay, had some other friend's . . . say,  
daughter, tripped 685

Upstairs and tumbled flat and frank on me,  
Bareheaded and barefooted, with loose hair  
And garments all at large,—cried "Take me  
thus !

"Duke So-and-So, the greatest man in  
Rome—

"To escape his hand and heart have I broke  
bounds, 690

"Traversed the town and reached you !"—  
then, indeed,

The lady had not reached a man of ice !

I would have rummaged, ransacked at the  
word

Those old odd corners of an empty heart  
For remnants of dim love the long disused,

And dusty crumbings of romance ! But  
 here, 696  
 We talk of just a marriage, if you please—  
 The every-day conditions and no more ;  
 Where do these bind me to bestow one drop  
 Of blood shall dye my wife's true-love-knot  
 pink ? 700  
 Pompilia was no pigeon, Venus' pet,  
 That shuffled from between her pressing paps  
 To sit on my rough shoulder,—but a hawk,  
 I bought at a hawk's price and carried home  
 To do hawk's service—at the Rotunda,  
 say, 706  
 Where, six o' the callow nestlings in a row,  
 You pick and choose and pay the price for  
 such.  
 I have paid my pound, await my penny's  
 worth,  
 So, hoodwink, starve and properly train my  
 bird,  
 And, should she prove a haggard,—twist her  
 neck ! 710  
 Did I not pay my name and style, my hope  
 And trust, my all ? Through spending these  
 amiss  
 I am here ! 'Tis scarce the gravity of the  
 Court  
 Will blame me that I never piped a tune,  
 Treated my falcon-gentle like my finch. 715  
 The obligation I incurred was just  
 To practise mastery, prove my mastership :—  
 Pompilia's duty was—submit herself,  
 Afford me pleasure, perhaps cure my bile.  
 Am I to teach my lords what marriage means,  
 What God ordains thereby and man fulfils 721  
 Who, docile to the dictate, treads the house ?  
 My lords have chosen the happier part with  
 Paul  
 And neither marry nor burn,—yet priestliness  
 Can find a parallel to the marriage-bond 725  
 In its own blessed special ordinance  
 Whereof indeed was marriage made the type :  
 The Church may show her insubordinate,  
 As marriage her refractory. How of the Monk  
 Who finds the claustral regimen too sharp  
 After the first month's essay ? What's the  
 mode 731  
 With the Deacon who supports indifferently  
 The rod o' the Bishop when he tastes its smart  
 Full four weeks ? Do you straightway slacken  
 hold  
 Of the innocents, the all-unwary ones 735  
 Who, eager to profess, mistook their mind ?—  
 Remit a fast-day's rigour to the Monk  
 Who fancied Francis' manna meant roast  
 quails,—  
 Concede the Deacon sweet society,  
 Heneverthought the Levite-ruler renounced,—  
 Or rather prescribe short chain and sharp  
 scourge 741  
 Corrective of such peccant humours ? This—  
 I take to be the Church's mode, and mine.  
 If I was over-harsh,—the worse i' the wife  
 Who did not win from harshness as she  
 ought, 746  
 Wanted the patience and persuasion, lore  
 Of love, should cure me and console herself.  
 Put case that I mishandle, flurry and fright  
 My hawk through clumsiness in sportsman-  
 ship,  
 Twitch out five pens where plucking one  
 would serve— 750  
 What, shall she bite and claw to mend the  
 case ?  
 And, if you find I pluck five more for that,  
 Shall you weep "How he roughs the turtle  
 there" ?  
 Such was the starting ; now of the further step.  
 In lieu of taking penance in good part, 755  
 The Monk, with hue and cry, summons a mob  
 To make a bonfire of the convent, say,—  
 And the Deacon's pretty piece of virtue (save  
 The ears o' the Court ! I try to save my head)  
 Instructed by the ingenuous postulant, 760  
 Taxes the Bishop with adultery, (mud  
 Needs must pair off with mud, and filth with  
 filth)—  
 Such being my next experience. Who knows  
 not—  
 The couple, father and mother of my wife,  
 Returned to Rome, published before my  
 lords, 765  
 Put into print, made circulate far and wide  
 That they had cheated me who cheated them ?  
 Pompilia, I supposed their daughter, drew



Breath first 'mid Rome's worst rankness,  
 through the deed  
 Of a drab and a rogue, was by-blow bastard-  
 babe 770  
 Of a nameless strumpet, passed off, palmed  
 on me  
 As the daughter with the dowry. Daughter?  
 Dirt  
 O' the kennel! Dowry? Dust o' the street!  
 Nought more,  
 Nought less, nought else but—oh—ah—  
 assuredly  
 A Franceschini and my very wife! 775  
 Now take this charge as you will, for false or  
 true,—  
 This charge, preferred before your very selves  
 Who judge me now,—I pray you, adjudge  
 again,  
 Classing it with the cheats or with the lies,  
 By which category I suffer most! 780  
 But of their reckoning, theirs who dealt with  
 me  
 In either fashion,—I reserve my word,  
 Justify that in its place; I am now to say,  
 Whichever point o' the charge might poison  
 most,  
 Pompilia's duty was no doubtful one. 785  
 You put the protestation in her mouth  
 "Henceforward and forevermore, avault  
 "Ye fiends, who drop disguise and glare  
 revealed  
 "In your own shape, no longer father mine  
 "Nor mother mine! Too nakedly you hate  
 "Me whom you looked as if you loved once,  
 —me 791  
 "Whom, whether true or false, your tale now  
 damns,  
 "Divulged thus to my public infamy,  
 "Private perdition, absolute overthrow.  
 "For, hate my husband to your hearts' con-  
 tent, 795  
 "I, spoil and prey of you from first to last,  
 "I who have done you the blind service,  
 lured  
 "The lion to your pitfall,—I, thus left  
 "To answer for my ignorant bleating there,  
 "I should have been remembered and with-  
 drawn 800

"From the first o' the natural fury, not flung  
 loose  
 "A proverb and a by-word men will mouth  
 "At the cross-way, in the corner, up and down  
 "Rome and Arezzo,—there, full in my face,  
 "If my lord, missing them and finding  
 me, 805  
 "Content himself with casting his reproach  
 "To drop i' the street where such impostors  
 die.  
 "Ah, but—that husband, what the wonder  
 were!—  
 "If, far from casting thus away the rag  
 "Smeared with the plague his hand had  
 chanced upon, 810  
 "Sewn to his pillow by Locusta's<sup>1</sup> wile,—  
 "Far from abolishing, root, stem and branch,  
 "The misgrowth of infectious mistletoe  
 "Foisted into his stock for honest graft,—  
 "If he repudiate not, renounce nowise, 815  
 "But, guarding, guiding me, maintain my  
 cause  
 "By making it his own, (what other way?)  
 "—To keep my name for me, he call it his,  
 "Claim it of who would take it by their lie,—  
 "To save my wealth for me—or babe of  
 mine 820  
 "Their lie was framed to beggar at the birth—  
 "He bid them loose grasp, give our gold  
 again:  
 "If he become no partner with the pair  
 "Even in a game which, played adroitly,  
 gives  
 "Its winner life's great wonderful new  
 chance,— 825  
 "Of marrying, to-wit, a second time,—  
 "Ah, if he did thus, what a friend were he!  
 "Anger he might show,—who can stamp  
 out flame  
 "Yet spread no black o' the brand?—yet,  
 rough albeit  
 "In the act, as whose bare feet feel embers  
 scorch, 830  
 "What grace were his, what gratitude were  
 mine!"

<sup>1</sup> *Locusta*: the name of a notorious female poisoner at Rome in the first century; hence typical of any poisoner.

Such protestation should have been my wife's.  
Looking for this, do I exact too much?

Why, here's the,—word for word, so much,  
no more,—

Avowal she made, her pure spontaneous  
speech 835

To my brother the Abate at first blush,  
Ere the good impulse had begun to fade :

So did she make confession for the pair,  
So pour forth praises in her own behalf. 839

"Ay, the false letter," interpose my lords—

"The simulated writing,—'twas a trick :

"You traced the signs, she merely marked  
the same,

"The product was not hers but yours."

Alack,

I want no more impulsion to tell truth  
From the other trick, the torture inside  
there ! 845

I confess all—let it be understood—  
And deny nothing ! If I baffle you so,  
Can so fence, in the plenitude of right,  
That my poor lathen dagger puts aside  
Each pass o' the Bilboa, beats you all the  
same,— 850

What matters inefficiency of blade ?

Mine and not hers the letter,—conceded,  
lords !

Impute to me that practice !—take as proved  
I taught my wife her duty, made her see

What it behoved her see and say and do, 855  
Feel in her heart and with her tongue de-  
clare,

And, whether sluggish or recalcitrant,  
Forced her to take the right step, I myself  
Was marching in marital rectitude !

Why who finds fault here, say the tale be  
true ? 860

Would not my lords commend the priest  
whose zeal

Seized on the sick, morose or moribund,  
By the palsy-smitten finger, made it cross  
His brow correctly at the critical time ?

—Or answered for the inarticulate babe 865

At baptism, in its stead declared the faith,  
And saved what else would perish unpro-  
fessed ?

True, the incapable hand may rally yet,

Renounce the sign with renovated strength,—

The babe may grow up man and Molinist,—

And so Pompilia, set in the good path 871

And left to go alone there, soon might see

That too frank-forward, all too simple-straight

Her step was, and decline to tread the rough,

When here lay, tempting foot, the meadow-  
side, 875

And there the coppice rang with singing-  
birds !

Soon she discovered she was young and fair,

That many in Arezzo knew as much.

Yes, this next cup of bitterness, my lords,

Had to begin go filling, drop by drop, 880

Its measure up of full disgust for me,

Filtered into by every noisome drain—

Society's sink toward which all moisture runs.

Would not you prophesy—"She on whose  
brow is stamped

"The note of the imputation that we  
know,— 885

"Rightly or wrongly mothered with a  
whore,—

"Such an one, to disprove the frightful  
charge,

"What will she but exaggerate chastity,

"Err in excess of wifehood, as it were,

"Renounce even levities permitted youth, 890

"Though not youth struck to age by a  
thunderbolt ?

"Cry 'wolf' i' the sheepfold, where's the  
sheep dares bleat,

"Knowing the shepherd listens for a growl?"

So you expect. How did the devil decree ?

Why, my lords, just the contrary of course !

It was in the house from the window, at the  
church 895

From the hassock,—where the theatre lent  
its lodge,

Or staging for the public show left space,—

That still Pompilia needs must find herself

Launching her looks forth, letting looks  
reply 900

As arrows to a challenge ; on all sides

Ever new contribution to her lap,

Till one day, what is it knocks at my clenched  
teeth

But the cup full, curse-collected all for me ?

And I must needs drink, drink this gallant's  
praise, 908  
That minion's prayer, the other fop's reproach,  
And come at the dregs to—Caponsacchi!  
Sirs,  
I,—chin-deep in a marsh of misery,  
Struggling to extricate my name and fame  
And fortune from the marsh would drown  
them all, 910  
My face the sole unstrangled part of me,—  
I must have this new gad-fly in that face,  
Must free me from the attacking lover too!  
Men say I battled ungracefully enough— 914  
Was harsh, uncouth and ludicrous beyond  
The proper part o' the husband: have it so!  
Your lordships are considerate at least—  
You order me to speak in my defence  
Plainly, expect no quavering tuneful trills  
As when you bid a singer solace you,— 920  
Nor look that I shall give it, for a grace,  
*Stans pede in uno*:<sup>1</sup>—you remember well  
In the one case, 'tis a plain-song too severe,  
This story of my wrongs,—and that I ache  
And need a chair, in the other. Ask you  
me 925  
Why, when I felt this trouble flap my face,  
Already pricked with every shame could  
perch,—  
When, with her parents, my wife plagued  
me too,—  
Why I enforced not exhortation mild  
To leave whore's-tricks and let my brows  
alone, 930  
With mulct of comfits, promise of perfume?  
“Far from that! No, you took the opposite  
course,  
“Breathed threatenings, rage and slaughter!”  
What you will!  
And the end has come, the doom is verily here,  
Unhindered by the threatening. See fate's  
flare. 935  
Full on each face of the dead guilty three!  
Look at them well, and now, lords, look at  
this!

Tell me: if on that day when I found first  
That Caponsacchi thought the nearest way  
To his church was some half-mile round by  
my door, 940  
And that he so admired, shall I suppose,  
The manner of the swallows' come-and-go  
Between the props o' the window over-  
head,—  
That window happening to be my wife's,—  
As to stand gazing by the hour on high, 945  
Of May-eves, while she sat and let him  
smile,—  
If I,—instead of threatening, talking big,  
Showing hair-powder, a prodigious pinch,  
For poison in a bottle,—making believe  
At desperate doings with a bauble-sword,  
And other bugaboo-and-baby-work,— 951  
Had, with the vilest household implement,  
Calmly and quietly cut off, clean thro' bone  
But one joint of one finger of my wife,  
Saying “For listening to the serenade, 955  
‘Here's your ring-finger shorter a full third:  
‘Be certain I will slice away next joint,  
‘Next time that anybody underneath  
‘Seems somehow to be sauntering as he  
hoped  
“A flower would eddy out of your hand to  
his 960  
“While you please fidget with the branch  
above  
“O' the rose-tree in the terrace!”—had I  
done so,  
Why, there had followed a quick sharp  
scream, some pain,  
Much calling for plaister, damage to the  
dress, 964  
A somewhat sulky countenance next day,  
Perhaps reproaches,—but reflections too!  
I don't hear much of harm that Malchus did  
After the incident of the ear, my lords!  
Saint Peter took the efficacious way;  
Malchus was sore but silenced for his life: 970  
He did not hang himself i' the Potter's Field  
Like Judas, who was trusted with the bag  
And treated to sops after he proved a thief.  
So, by this time, my true and obedient wife  
Might have been telling beads with a gloved  
hand; 975

<sup>1</sup> *Stans pede in uno*: “standing on one foot,”  
a metaphor descriptive of anything done easily  
or off-hand; from Horace, *Sat.* 1. 4. 10.

Awkward a little at pricking hearts and darts  
On sampler possibly, but well otherwise :  
Not where Rome shudders now to see her lie.  
I give that for the course a wise man takes ;  
I took the other however, tried the fool's,  
The lighter remedy, brandished rapier  
dread

With cork-ball at the tip, boxed Malchus' ear  
Instead of severing the cartilage,  
Called her a terrible nickname, and the like,  
And there an end : and what was the end of  
that ? 985

What was the good effect o' the gentle  
course ?

Why, one night I went drowsily to bed,  
Dropped asleep suddenly, not suddenly woke,  
But did wake with rough rousing and loud cry,  
To find noon in my face, a crowd in my  
room, 990

Fumes in my brain, fire in my throat, my wife  
Gone God knows whither,—rifed vesture-  
chest,

And ransacked money-coffer. "What does  
it mean ?"

The servants had been drugged too, stared  
and yawned

"It must be that our lady has eloped !" 995

—"Whither and with whom ?"—"With  
whom but the Canon's self ?

"One recognizes Caponsacchi there !"—

(By this time the admiring neighbourhood  
Joined chorus round me while I rubbed my  
eyes)

"'Tis months since their intelligence began,—

"A comedy the town was privy to,— 1001

"He wrote and she wrote, she spoke, he  
replied,

"And going in and out your house last night

"Was easy work for one . . . to be plain  
with you . . .

"Accustomed to do both, at dusk and dawn

"When you were absent,—at the villa, you  
know, 1006

"Where husbandry required the master-  
mind.

"Did not you know ? Why, we all knew,  
you see !"

And presently, bit by bit, the full and true

Particulars of the tale were volunteered 1010  
With all the breathless zeal of friendship—

"Thus

"Matters were managed : at the seventh  
hour of night" . . .

—"Later, at daybreak" . . . "Caponsacchi  
came" . . .

—"While you and all your household slept  
like death,

"Drugged as your supper was with drowsy  
stuff" . . . 1015

—"And your own cousin Guillichini too—

"Either or both entered your dwelling-place,  
"Plundered it at their pleasure, made prize  
of all,

"Including your wife . . ."—"Oh, your  
wife led the way,

"Out of doors, on to the gate . . ."—"But  
gates are shut, 1020

"In a decent town, to darkness and such  
deeds :

"They climbed the wall—your lady must be  
lithe—

"At the gap, the broken bit . . ."—"Tor-  
rione, true !

"To escape th' questioning guard at the  
proper gate,

"Clemente, where at the inn, hard by, 'the  
Horse,' 1025

"Just outside, a calash in readiness

"Took the two principals, all alone at last,

"To gate San Spirito, which o'erlooks the  
road,

"Leads to Perugia, Rome and liberty."

Bit by bit thus made-up mosaic-wise, 1030

Flat lay my fortune,—tesselated floor,  
Imperishable tracery devils should foot

And frolic it on, around my broken gods,  
Over my desecrated hearth.

So much 1035

For the terrible effect of threatening, Sirs !

Well, this way I was shaken wide awake,

Doctored and drenched, somewhat un-  
poisoned so.

Then, set on horseback and bid seek the lost,

I started alone, head of me, heart of me

Fire, and each limb as languid . . . ah,  
sweet lords, 1041

Beshink you !—poison-torture, try persuade  
 The next refractory Molinist with that ! . . .  
 Floundered thro' day and night, another day  
 And yet another night, and so at last, 1045  
 As Lucifer kept falling to find hell,  
 Tumbled into the court-yard of an inn  
 At the end, and fell on whom I thought to  
 find,  
 Even Caponsacchi,—what part once was  
 priest,  
 Cast to the winds now with the cassock-  
 rags. 1050  
 In cape and sword a cavalier confessed,  
 There stood he chiding dilatory grooms,  
 Chafing that only horseflesh and no team  
 Of eagles would supply the last relay,  
 Whirl him along the league, the one post  
 more 1055  
 Between the couple and Rome and liberty.  
 'Twas dawn, the couple were rested in a sort,  
 And though the lady, tired,—the tenderer  
 sex,—  
 Still lingered in her chamber,—to adjust  
 The limp hair, look for any blush  
 astray,— 1060  
 She would descend in a twinkling,—“Have  
 you out  
 “The horses therefore !”  
 So did I find my wife.  
 Is the case complete? Do your eyes here  
 see with mine?  
 Even the parties dared deny no one 1065  
 Point out of all these points.  
 What follows next?  
 “Why, that then was the time,” you inter-  
 pose,  
 “Or then or never, while the fact was fresh,  
 “To take the natural vengeance: there and  
 thus 1070  
 “They and you,—somebody had stuck a  
 sword.  
 “Beside you while he pushed you on your  
 horse,—  
 “’Twas requisite to slay the couple, Count !”  
 Just so my friends say. “Kill !” they cry  
 in a breath,  
 Who presently, when matters grow to a  
 head 1075

And I do kill the offending ones indeed,—  
 When crime of theirs, only surmised before,  
 Is patent, proved indisputably now,—  
 When remedy for wrong, untried at the time,  
 Which law professes shall not fail a friend, 1080  
 Is thrice tried now, found threefold worse  
 than null,—  
 When what might turn to transient shade  
 who knows?  
 Solidifies into a blot which breaks  
 Hell’s black off in pale flakes for fear of  
 mine,—  
 Then, when I claim and take revenge—“So  
 rash ?” 1085  
 They cry—“so little reverence for the law?”  
 Listen, my masters, and distinguish here !  
 At first, I called in law to act and help :  
 Seeing I did so, “Why, ’tis clear,” they cry,  
 “You shrank from gallant readiness and  
 risk, 1090  
 “Were coward: the thing’s inexplicable else.”  
 Sweet my lords, let the thing be ! I fall flat,  
 Play the reed, not the oak, to breath of man.  
 Only inform my ignorance ! Say I stand  
 Convicted of the having been afraid, 1095  
 Proved a poltroon, no lion but a lamb,—  
 Does that deprive me of my right of lamb  
 And give my fleece and flesh to the first wolf?  
 Are eunuchs, women, children, shieldless  
 quite 1099  
 Against attack their own timidity tempts ?  
 Cowardice were mistortune and no crime !  
 —Take it that way, since I am fallen so low  
 I scarce dare brush the fly that blows my face,  
 And thank the man who simply spits no  
 there,—  
 Unless the Court be generous, compre-  
 hend 1105  
 How one brought up at the very feet of law  
 As I, awaits the grave Gamaliel’s nod  
 Ere he clench fist at outrage,—much less,  
 stab !  
 —How, ready enough to rise at the right time,  
 I still could recognise no time mature 1115  
 Unsanctioned by a move o’ the judgment-seat,  
 So, mute in misery, eyed my masters here  
 Motionless till the authoritative word

Pronounced amercement. There's the riddle solved :

This is just why I slew nor her nor him, 1115  
But called in law, law's delegate in the place,  
And bade arrest the guilty couple, Sirs !  
We had some trouble to do so—you have heard

They braved me,—he with arrogance and scorn,

She, with a volubility of curse, 1120  
A conversancy in the skill of tooth  
And claw to make suspicion seem absurd,  
Nay, an alacrity to put to proof

At my own throat my own sword, teach me so  
To try conclusions better the next time,— 1125  
Which did the proper service with the mob.  
They never tried to put on mask at all :

Two avowed lovers forcibly torn apart,  
Upbraided the tyrant as in a playhouse scene,  
Ay, and with proper clapping and applause  
From the audience that enjoys the bold and free. 1131

I kept still, said to myself, "There's law !"   
Anon

We searched the chamber where they passed the night,

Found what confirmed the worst was feared before,

However needless confirmation now— 1135  
The witches' circle intact, charms undisturbed  
That raised the spirit and succubus,—letters,  
to-wit,

Love-laden, each the bag o' the bee that bore  
Honey from lily and rose to Cupid's hive,—  
Now, poetry in some rank blossom-burst,  
Now, prose,—“Come here, go there, wait  
such a while, 1141

“He's at the villa, now he's back again :  
“We are saved, we are lost, we are lovers  
all the same !”

All in order, all complete,—even to a clue  
To the drowsiness that happened so oppor-  
tune— 1145

No mystery, when I read “Of all things, find  
“What wine Sir Jealousy decides to drink—  
“Red wine ? Because a sleeping-potion, dust  
“Dropped into white, discolours wine and  
shows.”

—“Oh, but we did not write a single word !  
“Somebody forged the letters in our  
name !—” 1151

Both in a breath protested presently.  
Aha, Sacchetti<sup>1</sup> again !—“Dame,”—quoth  
the Duke,

“What meaneth this epistle, counsel me,  
“I pick from out thy placket and peruse, 1155  
“Wherein my page averreth thou art white  
“And warm and wonderful 'twixt pap and  
pap ?”

“Sir,” laughed the Lady, “'tis a counterfeit !  
“Thy page did never stroke but Dian's breast,  
“The pretty hound I nurture for thysake : 1160  
“To lie were losel,—by my fay, no more !”  
And no more say I too, and spare the Court.

Ah, the Court ! yes, I come to the Court's  
self ;

Such the case, so complete in fact and proof,  
I laid at the feet of law,—there sat my lords,  
Here sit they now, so may they ever sit 1165  
In easier attitude than suits my haunch !

In this same chamber did I bare my sores  
O' the soul and not the body,—shun no  
shame,

Shrink from no probing of the ulcerous  
part, 1170

Since confident in Nature,—which is God,—  
That she who, for wise ends, concocts a  
plague,

Curbs, at the right time, the plague's viru-  
lence too :

Law renovates even Lazarus,—cures me !  
Cæsar thou seekest ? To Cæsar thou shalt  
go ! 1175

Cæsar's at Rome : to Rome accordingly !

The case was soon decided : both weights,  
cast

I' the balance, vibrate, neither kicks the  
beam,

Here away, there away, this now and now  
that.

To every one o' my grievances law gave 1180

<sup>1</sup> *Sacchetti* : Franco Sacchetti, who lived  
about 1335-1410, author of stories in the  
manner of Boccaccio.

Redress, could purblind eye but see the point.  
 The wife stood a convicted runagate  
 From house and husband,—driven to such a  
     course  
 By what she somehow took for cruelty,  
 Oppression and imperilment of life— 1185  
 Not that such things were, but that so they  
     seemed :  
 Therefore, the end conceded lawful, (since  
 To save life there's no risk should stay our  
     leap)  
 It follows that all means to the lawful end  
 Are lawful likewise,—poison, theft and flight.  
 As for the priest's part, did he meddle or  
     make, 1191  
 Enough that he too thought life jeopardized ;  
 Concede him then the colour charity  
 Casts on a doubtful course,—if blackish white  
 Or whitish black, will charity hesitate ? 1195  
 What did he else but act the precept out,  
 Leave, like a provident shepherd, his safe  
     flock  
 To follow the single lamb and strayaway ?  
 Best hope so and think so,—that the ticklish  
     time  
 I' the carriage, the tempting privacy, the  
     last 1200  
 Somewhat ambiguous accident at the inn,  
 --All may bear explanation : may ? then,  
     must !  
 The letters,—do they so incriminate ?  
 But what if the whole prove a prank o' the pen,  
 Flight of the fancy, none of theirs at all, 1205  
 Bred of the vapours of my brain belike,  
 Or at worst mere exercise of scholar's-wit  
 In the courtly Caponsacchi : verse, convict ?  
 Did not Catullus write less seemly once ?  
 Yet *doctus* and unblemished he abides. 1210  
 Wherefore so ready to infer the worst ?  
 Still, I did righteously in bringing doubts  
 For the law to solve,—take the solution now !  
 " Seeing that the said associates, wife and  
     priest,  
 " Bear themselves not without some touch of  
     blame 1215  
 " —Else why the pother, scandal and outcry  
 " Which trouble our peace and require chas-  
     tisement ?

" We, for complicity in Pompilia's flight  
 " And deviation, and carnal intercourse 1219  
 " With the same, do set aside and relegate  
 " The Canon Caponsacchi for three years  
 " At Civita in the neighbourhood of Rome :  
 " And we consign Pompilia to the care  
 " Of a certain Sisterhood of penitents 1224  
 " I' the city's self, expert to deal with such."  
 Word for word, there's your judgment !  
     Read it, lords,  
 Re-utter your deliberate penalty  
 For the crime yourselves establish ! Your  
     award—  
 Who chop a man's right-hand off at the wrist  
 For tracing with forefinger words in wine 1230  
 O' the table of a drinking-booth that bear  
 Interpretation as they mocked the Church !  
 —Who brand a woman black between the  
     breasts  
 For sinning by connection with a Jew : 1234  
 While for the Jew's self—pudency be dumb !  
 You mete out punishment such and such,  
     yet so  
 Punish the adultery of wife and priest !  
 Take note of that, before the Molinists do,  
 And read me right the riddle, since right  
     must be ! 1239  
 While I stood rapt away with wonderment,  
 Voices broke in upon my mood and muse.  
 " Do you sleep ? " began the friends at either  
     ear,  
 " The case is settled,—you willed it should  
     be so—  
 " None of our counsel, always recollect !  
 " With law's award, budge ! Back into  
     your place ! 1245  
 " Your betters shall arrange the rest for you.  
 " We'll enter a new action, claim divorce :  
 " Your marriage was a cheat themselves allow :  
 " You erred i' the person,—might have  
     married thus  
 " Your sister or your daughter unaware. 1250  
 " We'll gain you, that way, liberty at least,  
 " Sure of so much by law's own showing.  
     Up  
 " And off with you and your unluckiness—  
 " Leave us to bury the blunder, sweep things  
     smooth ! "

I was in humble frame of mind, be sure ! 1255  
I bowed, betook me to my place again.

Station by station I retraced the road,  
Touched at this hostel, passed this post-house  
by,

Where, fresh-remembered yet, the fugitives  
Had risen to the heroic stature : still— 1260

"That was the bench they sat on,—there's  
the board

"They took the meal at,—yonder garden-  
ground

"They leaned across the gate of,"—ever a  
word

O' the Helen and the Paris, with "Ha !  
you're he,

"The . . . much-commiserated husband ?"  
Step 1265

By step, across the pelting, did I reach  
Arezzo, underwent the archway's grin,

Traversed the length of sarcasm in the street,  
Found myself in my horrible house once more,

And after a colloquy . . . no word assists !  
With the mother and the brothers, stiffened  
me 1271

Straight out from head to foot as dead man  
does,

And, thus prepared for life as he for hell,  
Marched to the public Square and met the  
world.

Apologize for the pincers, palliate screws ?  
Ply me with such toy-trifles, I entreat ! 1276

Trust who has tried both sulphur and sops-  
in-wine !

I played the man as I best might, bade friends  
Put non-essentials by and face the fact.

"What need to hang myself as you advise ?  
"The paramour is banished,—the ocean's  
width, 1281

"Or the suburb's length,—to Ultima Thule,  
say,

"Or Proxima Civitas, what's the odds of  
name

"And place ? He's banished, and the fact's  
the thing.

"Why should law banish innocence an inch ?  
"Here's guilt then, what else do I care to  
know ? 1286

"The adulteress lies imprisoned,—whether  
in a well

"With bricks above and a snake for company,  
"Or tied by a garter to a bed-post,—much

"I mind what's little,—least's enough and to  
spare ! 1290

"The little fillip on the coward's cheek  
"Serves as though crab-tree cudgel broke his  
pate.

"Law has pronounced there's punishment,  
less or more :

"And I take note o' the fact and use it thus—  
"For the first flaw in the original bond, 1295

"I claim release. My contract was to wed  
"The daughter of Pietro and Violante. Both

"Protest they never had a child at all.  
"Then I have never made a contract : good !

"Cancel me quick the thing pretended one.  
"I shall be free. What matter if hurried  
over 1301

"The harbour-boom by a great favouring tide,  
"Or the last of a spent ripple that lifts and  
leaves ?

"The Abate is about it. Laugh who wins !  
"You shall not laugh me out of faith in  
law ! 1305

"I listen, through all your noise, to Rome !"   
Rome spoke.

In three months letters thence admonished  
me,

"Your plan for the divorce is all mistake.  
"It would hold, now, had you, taking  
thought to wed 1310

"Rachel of the blue eye and golden hair,  
"Found swarth-skinned Leah cumber couch  
next day :

"But Rachel, blue-eyed golden-haired aright,  
"Proving to be only Laban's child, not Lot's,

"Remains yours all the same for ever more.  
"No whit to the purpose is your plea : you  
err 1316

"I' the person and the quality—nowise  
"In the individual,—that's the case in point !

"You go to the ground,—are met by a cross-  
suit

"For separation, of the Rachel here, 1320  
"From bed and board,—she is the injured  
one,



- "You did the wrong and have to answer it.  
 "As for the circumstance of imprisonment  
 "And colour it lends to this your new  
 attack, 1324  
 "Never fear, that point is considered too !  
 "The durance is already at an end ;  
 "The convent-quiet preyed upon her health,  
 "She is transferred now to her parents' house  
 "—No- parents, when that cheats and  
 plunders you,  
 "But parentage again confessed in full, 1330  
 "When such confession pricks and plagues  
 you more—  
 "As now—for, this their house is not the  
 house  
 "In Via Vittoria wherein neighbours' watch  
 "Might incommode the freedom of your wife,  
 "But a certain villa smothered up in vines  
 "At the town's edge by the gate i' the  
 Pauline Way, 1336  
 "Out of eye-reach, out of ear-shot, little and  
 lone,  
 "Whither a friend,—at Civita, we hope,  
 "A good half-dozen-hours' ride off,—might,  
 some eve,  
 "Betake himself, and whence ride back, some  
 morn, 1340  
 "Nobody the wiser : but be that as it may,  
 "Do not afflict your brains with trifles now.  
 "You have still three suits to manage, all  
 and each  
 "Ruinous truly should the event play false.  
 "It is indeed the likelier so to do, 1346  
 "That brother Paul, your single prop and  
 stay,  
 "After a vain attempt to bring the Pope  
 "To set aside procedures, sit himself  
 "And summarily use prerogative,  
 "Afford us the infallible finger's tact 1350  
 "To disentwine your tangle of affairs,  
 "Paul,—finding it moreover past his strength  
 "To stem the irruption, bear Rome's ridicule  
 "Of . . . since friends must speak . . . to  
 be round with you . . .  
 "Of the old outwitted husband, wronged  
 and wroth, 1355  
 "Fitted against a brace of juveniles—  
 "A brisk priest who is versed in Ovid's art
- "More than his Summa, and a gamesome  
 wife  
 "Able to act Corinna without book,  
 "Beside the waggish parents who played  
 dupes 1360  
 "To dupe the duper—(and truly divers scenes  
 "Of the Arezzo palace, tickle rib  
 "And tease eye till the tears come, so we  
 laugh ;  
 "Nor wants the shock at the inn its comic  
 force,  
 "And then the letters and poetry—*merum*  
*sal !* 1365  
 "—Paul, finally, in such a state of things,  
 "After a brief temptation to go jump  
 "And join the fishes in the Tiber, drowns  
 "Sorrow another and a wiser way :  
 "House and goods, he has sold all off, is  
 gone, 1370  
 "Leaves Rome,—whether for France or  
 Spain, who knows ?  
 "Or Britain almost divided from our orb.  
 "You have lost him anyhow."
- Now,—I see my lords  
 Shift in their seat,—would I could do the  
 same ! 1375  
 They probably please expect my bile was  
 moved  
 To purpose, nor much blame me : now, they  
 judge,  
 The fiery titillation urged my flesh  
 Break through the bonds. By your pardon,  
 no, sweet Sirs !  
 I got such missives in the public place ; 1380  
 When I sought home,—with such news,  
 mounted stair  
 And sat at last in the sombre gallery,  
 ('Twas Autumn, the old mother in bed  
 betimes,  
 Having to bear that cold, the finer frame  
 Of her daughter-in-law had found intoler-  
 able— 1385  
 The brother, walking misery away  
 O' the mountain-side with dog and gun belike)  
 As I supped, ate the coarse bread, drank the  
 wine  
 Weak once, now acrid with the toad's-head-  
 squeeze, 1390

- My wife's bestowment,—I broke silence thus :  
 " Let me, a man, manfully meet the fact,  
 " Confront the worst o' the truth, end, and  
   have peace !  
 " I am irremediably beaten here,—  
 " The gross illiterate vulgar couple,—bah !  
 " Why, they have measured forces, mastered  
   mine, 1385  
 " Made me their spoil and prey from first to  
   last.  
 " They have got my name,—'tis nailed now  
   fast to theirs,  
 " The child or changeling is anyway my wife ;  
 " Point by point as they plan they execute,  
 " They gain all, and I lose all—even to the  
   lure 1400  
 " That led to loss,—they have the wealth  
   again  
 " They hazarded awhile to hook me with,  
 " Have caught the fish and find the bait entire :  
 " They even have their child or changeling  
   back  
 " To trade with, turn to account a second  
   time. 1405  
 " The brother presumably might tell a tale  
 " Or give a warning,—he, too, flies the field,  
 " And with him vanish help and hope of help.  
 " They have caught me in the cavern where  
   I fell,  
 " Covered my loudest cry for human aid 1410  
 " With this enormous paving-stone of shame.  
 " Well, are we demigods or merely clay ?  
 " Is success still attendant on desert ?  
 " Is this, we live on, heaven and the final  
   state,  
 " Or earth which means probation to the  
   end ? 1415  
 " Why claim escape from man's predestined  
   lot  
 " Of being beaten and baffled ?—God's decree,  
 " In which I, bowing bristled head, acquiesce.  
 " One of us Franceschini fell long since  
 " I' the Holy Land, betrayed, tradition runs,  
 " To Paynims by the feigning of a girl 1420  
 " He rushed to free from ravisher, and found  
 " Lay safe enough with friends in ambuscade  
 " Who slayed him while she clapped her hands  
   and laughed ;  
 " Let me end, falling by a like device. 1425  
 " It will not be so hard. I am the last  
 " O' my line which will not suffer any more.  
 " I have attained to my full fifty years,  
 " (About the average of us all, 'tis said,  
 " Though it seems longer to the unlucky man)  
 " —Lived through my share of life ; let all  
   end here, 1431  
 " Me and the house and grief and shame at  
   once.  
 " Friends my informants,—I can bear your  
   blow !"  
 And I believe 'twas in no unmeet match  
 For the stoic's mood, with something like a  
   smile, 1435  
 That, when morose December roused me  
   next,  
 I took into my hand, broke seal to read  
 The new epistle from Rome. " All to no  
   use !  
 " Whate'er the turn next injury take," smiled I,  
 " Here's one has chosen his part and knows  
   his cue. 1441  
 " I am done with, dead now ; strike away,  
   good friends !  
 " Are the three suits decided in a trice ?  
 " Against me,—there's no question ! How  
   does it go ?  
 " Is the parentage of my wife demonstrated  
 " Infamous to her wish ? Parades she now  
 " Loosed of the cincture that so irked the  
   loin ? 1446  
 " Is the last penny extracted from my purse  
 " To mulct me for demanding the first pound  
 " Was promised in return for value paid ?  
 " Has the priest, with nobody to court be-  
   side, 1450  
 " Courted the Muse in exile, hitched my hap  
 " Into a rattling ballad-rhyme which, bawled  
 " At tavern-doors, wakes rapture everywhere,  
 " And helps cheap wine down throat this  
   Christmas time,  
 " Beating the bagpipes ? Any or all of these !  
 " As well, good friends, you cursed my palace  
   here 1456  
 " To its old cold stone face,—stuck your cap  
   for crest  
 " Over the shield that's extant in the Square

- "Or spat on the statue's cheek, the impatient world 1439  
 "Sees cumber tomb-top in our family church :  
 "Let him creep under covert as I shall do,  
 "Half below-ground already indeed. Good-bye !  
 "My brothers are priests, and childless so ; that's well—  
 "And, thank God most for this, no child leave I— 1464  
 "None after me to bear till his heart break  
 "The being a Franceschini and my son !"  
 "Nay," said the letter, "but you have just that !  
 "A babe, your veritable son and heir—  
 "Lawful,—'tis only eight months since your wife  
 "Left you,—so, son and heir, your babe was born 1470  
 "Last Wednesday in the villa,—you see the cause  
 "For quitting Convent without beat of drum,  
 "Stealing a hurried march to this retreat  
 "That's not so savage as the Sisterhood  
 "To slips and stumbles : Pietro's heart is soft, 1475  
 "Violante leans to pity's side,—the pair  
 "Ushered you into life a bouncing boy :  
 "And he's already hidden away and safe  
 "From any claim on him you mean to make—  
 "They need him for themselves,—don't fear, they know 1480  
 "The use o' the bantering,—the nerve thus laid bare  
 "To nip at, new and nice, with finger-nail !"  
 Then I rose up like fire, and fire-like roared.  
 What, all is only beginning not ending now ?  
 The worm which wormed its way from skin through flesh 1485  
 To the bone and there lay biting, did its best,—  
 What, it goes on to scrape at the bone's self,  
 Will wind to inmost marrow and madden me ?  
 There's to be yet my representative, 1490  
 Another of the name shall keep displayed  
 The flag with the ordure on it, brandish still.  
 The broken sword has served to stir a jakes ?  
 Who will he be, how will you call the man ?  
 A Franceschini,—when who cut my purse,  
 Filched my name, hemmed me round, hustled me hard 1495  
 As rogues at a fair some fool they strip i' the midst,  
 When these count gains, vaunt pillage presently :—  
 But a Caponsacchi, oh, be very sure !  
 When what demands its tribute of applause  
 Is the cunning and impudence o' the pair of cheats, 1500  
 The lies and lust o' the mother, and the brave  
 Bold carriage of the priest, worthily crowned  
 By a witness to his feat i' the following age,—  
 And how this three-fold cord could hook and fetch  
 And land leviathan that king of pride ! 1505  
 Or say, by some mad miracle of chance,  
 Is he indeed my flesh and blood, this babe ?  
 Was it because fate forged a link at last  
 Betwixt my wife and me, and both alike  
 Found we had henceforth some one thing to love, 1510  
 Was it when she could damn my soul indeed  
 She unlatched door, let all the devils o' the dark  
 Dance in on me to cover her escape ?  
 Why then, the surplusage of disgrace, the spilth  
 Over and above the measure of infamy, 1515  
 Failing to take effect on my coarse flesh  
 Seasoned with scorn now, saturate with shame,—  
 Is saved to instil on and corrode the brow,  
 The baby-softness of my first-born child—  
 The child I had died to see though in a dream, 1520  
 The child I was bid strike out for, beat the wave  
 And baffle the tide of troubles where I swam,  
 So I might touch shore, lay down life at last  
 At the feet so dim and distant and divine  
 Of the apparition, as 'twere Mary's Babe  
 Had held, through night and storm, the torch aloft,— 1525  
 Born now in very deed to bear this brand

On forehead and curse me who could not  
save !

Rather be the town-talk true, square's jest,  
street's jeer 1539

True, my own inmost heart's confession true,  
And he the priest's bastard and none of mine !

Ay, there was cause for flight, swift flight  
and sure !

The husband gets unruly, breaks all bounds  
When he encounters some familiar face, 1534

Fashion of feature, brow and eyes and lips  
Where he least looked to find them,—time  
to fly !

This bastard then, a nest for him is made,  
As the manner is of vermin, in my flesh :

Shall I let the filthy pest buzz, flap and sting,  
Busy at my vitals and, nor hand nor foot 1540

Lift, but let be, lie still and rot resigned ?  
No, I appeal to God,—what says Himself,

How lessons Nature when I look to learn ?  
Why, that I am alive, am still a man

With brain and heart and tongue and right-  
hand too— 1545

Nay, even with friends, in such a cause as this,  
To right me if I fail to take my right.

No more of law ; a voice beyond the law  
Enters my heart, *Quis est pro Domino* ?<sup>1</sup>

Myself, in my own Vittiano, told the tale 1550  
To my own serving-people summoned there :

Told the first half of it, scarce heard to end  
By judges who got done with judgment quick

And clamoured to go execute her 'hest—  
Who cried "Not one of us that dig your soil

"And dress your vineyard, prune your olive-  
trees, 1556

"But would have brained the man debauched  
our wife,

"And staked the wife whose lust allured  
the man,

"And paunched the Duke, had it been  
possible,

"Who ruled the land yet barred us such  
'revenge !" 1560

I fixed on the first whose eyes caught mine,  
some four

<sup>1</sup> *Quis est pro Domino*: "Who is on the  
Lord's side?"

Resolute youngsters with the heart still fresh,  
Filled my purse with the residue o' the coin

Uncaught-up by my wife whom haste made  
blind,

Donned the first rough and rural garb I  
found, 1565

Took whatsoever weapon came to hand,  
And out we flung and on we ran or reeled

Romeward. I have no memory of our way,  
Only that, when at intervals the cloud

Of horror about me opened to let in life, 1570  
I listened to some song in the ear, some snatch

Of a legend, relic of religion, stray  
Fragment of record very strong and old

Of the first conscience, the anterior right,  
The God's-gift to mankind, impulse to

quench 1575  
The antagonistic spark of hell and tread

Satan and all his malice into dust,  
Declare to the world the one law, right is

right.  
Then the cloud re-encompassed me, and so

I found myself, as on the wings of winds, 1580  
Arrived : I was at Rome on Christmas Eve.

Festive bells—everywhere the Feast o' the  
Babe,

Joy upon earth, peace and good will to man !  
I am baptized. I started and let drop

The dagger. "Where is it, His promised  
peace ?" 1585

Nine days o' the Birth-Feast did I pause and  
pray

To enter into no temptation more.  
I bore the hateful house, my brother's once,

Deserted,—let the ghost of social joy  
Mock and make mouths at me from empty

room 1590  
And idle door that missed the master's step,—

Bore the frank wonder of incredulous eyes,  
As my own people watched without a word,

Waited, from where they huddled round the  
hearth

Black like all else, that nod so slow to come.  
I stopped my ears even to the inner call 1595

Of the dread duty, only heard the song  
"Peace upon earth," saw nothing but the face

O' the Holy Infant and the halo there

Able to cover yet another face 1600

Behind it, Satan's which I else should see.

But, day by day, joy waned and withered off:

The Babe's face, premature with peak and pine,

Sank into wrinkled ruinous old age,

Suffering and death, then mist-like disappeared, 1605

And showed only the Cross at end of all,

Left nothing more to interpose 'twixt me

And the dread duty: for the angels' song, "Peace upon earth," louder and louder pealed

"O Lord, how long, how long be un-  
avenged?" 1610

On the ninth day, this grew too much for man.

I started up—"Some end must be!" At once,

Silence: then, scratching like a death-watch-tick,

Slowly within my brain was syllabled, 1614

"One more concession, one decisive way

"And but one, to determine thee the truth,—

"This way, in fine, I whisper in thy ear:

"Now doubt, anon decide, thereupon act!"

"That is a way, thou whisperest in my ear!

"I doubt, I will decide, then act," said I— 1620

Then beckoned my companions: "Time is come!"

And so, all yet uncertain save the will

To do right, and the daring ought save leave

Right undone, I did find myself at last 1624

I' the dark before the villa with my friends,

And made the experiment, the final test,

Ultimate chance that ever was to be

For the wretchedness inside. I knocked, pronounced

The name, the predetermined touch for truth,

"What welcome for the wanderer? Open straight—" 1630

To the friend, physician, friar upon his rounds,

Traveller belated, beggar lame and blind?

No, but—"to Caponsacchi!" And the door  
Opened.

And then,—why, even then, I think,

I' the minute that confirmed my worst of  
fears, 1634

Surely,—I pray God that I think aright!—

Had but Pompilia's self, the tender thing  
Who once was good and pure, was once my

lamb

And lay in my bosom, had the well-known  
shape 1640

Fronted me in the door-way,—stood there  
faint

With the recent pang perhaps of giving birth  
To what might, though by miracle, seem my

child,—

Nay more, I will say, had even the aged fool

Pietro, the dotard, in whom folly and age 1644

Wrought, more than enmity or malevolence,

To practise and conspire against my peace,—

Had either of these but opened, I had paused.

But it was she the hag, she that brought hell

For a dowry with her to her husband's  
house, 1650

She the mock-mother, she that made the  
match

And married me to perdition, spring and  
source

O' the fire inside me that boiled up from  
heart

To brain and hailed the Fury gave it birth,—

Violante Comparini, she it was, 1654

With the old grin amid the wrinkles yet,

Opened: as if in turning from the Cross,

With trust to keep the sight and save my  
soul,

I had stumbled, first thing, on the serpent's  
head

Coiled with a leer at foot of it. 1660

There was the end!

Then was I rapt away by the impulse, one

immeasurable everlasting wave of a need

To abolish that detested life. 'Twas done:

You know the rest and how the folds of the  
thing, 1664

Twisting for help, involved the other two

More or less serpent-like: how I was mad,

Blind, stamped on all, the earth-worms with

the asp,

And ended so. 1668

You came on me that night,

Your officers of justice,—caught the crime  
In the first natural frenzy of remorse?  
Twenty miles off, sound sleeping as a child  
On a cloak i' the straw which promised  
shelter first,

With the bloody arms beside me,—was it  
not so? 1675  
Wherefore not? Why, how else should I be  
found?

I was my own self, had my sense again,  
My soul safe from the serpents. I could  
sleep:

Indeed and, dear my lords, I shall sleep now,  
Spite of my shoulder, in five minutes'  
space, 1680

When you dismiss me, having truth enough!  
It is but a few days are passed, I find,  
Since this adventure. Do you tell me, four?  
Then the dead are scarce quiet where they lie,  
Old Pietro, old Violante, side by side 1685  
At the church Lorenzo,—oh, they know it  
well!

So do I. But my wife is still alive,  
Has breath enough to tell her story yet,  
Her way, which is not mine, no doubt at all.  
And Caponsacchi, you have summoned  
him,— 1690

Was he so far to send for? Not at hand?  
I thought some few o' the stabs were in his  
heart,

Or had not been so lavish: less had served.  
Well, he too tells his story,—florid prose  
As smooth as mine is rough. You see, my  
lords, 1695

There will be a lying intoxicating smoke  
Born of the blood,—confusion probably,—  
For lies breed lies—but all that rests with  
you!

The trial is no concern of mine; with me  
The main of the care is over: I at least 1700  
Recognize who took that huge burthen off,  
Let me begin to live again. I did  
God's bidding and man's duty, so, breathe  
free;

Look you to the rest! I heard Himself  
prescribe,  
That great Physician, and dared lance the  
cort 1705

Of the bad ulcer; and the rage abates,  
I am myself and whole now: I prove cured  
By the eyes that see, the ears that hear again,  
The limbs that have relearned their youthful  
play, 1710

The healthy taste of food and feel of clothes  
And taking to our common life once more,  
All that now urges my defence from death.  
The willingness to live, what means it else?  
Before,—but let the very action speak!  
Judge for yourselves, what life seemed worth  
to me 1715

Who, not by proxy but in person, pitched  
Head-foremost into danger as a fool  
That never cares if he can swim or no—  
So he but find the bottom, braves the brook.  
No man omits precaution, quite neglects 1720  
Secresy, safety, schemes not how retreat,  
Having schemed he might advance. Did I  
so scheme?

Why, with a warrant which 'tis ask and have,  
With horse thereby made mine without a  
word,

I had gained the frontier and slept safe that  
night. 1725  
Then, my companions,—call them what you  
please,

Slave or stipendiary,—what need of one  
To me whose right-hand did its owner's work?  
Hire an assassin yet expose yourself?  
As well buy glove and then thrust naked hand  
I' the thorn-bush. No, the wise man stays  
at home, 1731

Sends only agents out, with pay to earn:  
At home, when they come back,—he straight  
discards

Or else disowns. Why use such tools at all  
When a man's foes are of his house, like  
mine, 1735

Sit at his board, sleep in his bed? Why noise,  
When there's the *acquetta* and the silent way?  
Clearly my life was valueless.

But now:

Health is returned, and sanity of soul 1740  
Nowise indifferent to the body's harm.  
I find the instinct bids me save my life;  
My wits, too, rally round me; I pick up

And use the arms that strewed the ground before,  
 Unnoticed or spurned aside: I take my stand, 1745  
 Make my defence. God shall not lose a life  
 May do Him further service, while I speak  
 And you hear, you my judges and last hope! You are the law: 'tis to the law I look.  
 I began life by hanging to the law, 1750  
 To the law it is I hang till life shall end.  
 My brother made appeal to the Pope, 'tis true,  
 To stay proceedings, judge my cause himself  
 Nor trouble law,—some fondness of conceit  
 That rectitude, sagacity sufficed 1755  
 The investigator in a case like mine,  
 Dispensed with the machine of law. The Pope  
 Knew better, set aside my brother's plea  
 And put me back to law,—referred the cause  
*Ad iudices meos*,—doubtlessly did well. 1760  
 Here, then, I clutch my judges,—I claim law—  
 Cry, by the higher law whereof your law  
 O' the land is humbly representative, —  
 Cry, on what point is it, where either accuse,  
 I fail to furnish you defence? I stand 1765  
 Acquitted, actually or virtually,  
 By every intermediate kind of court  
 That takes account of right or wrong in man,  
 Each unit in the series that begins  
 With God's throne, ends with the tribunal here. 1770  
 God breathes, not speaks, his verdicts, felt not heard,  
 Passed on successively to each court I call  
 Man's conscience, custom, manners, all that make  
 More and more effort to promulgate, mark  
 God's verdict in determinable words, 1775  
 Till last come human jurists—solidify  
 Fluid result,—what's fixable lies forged,  
 Statute,—the residue escapes in fume,  
 Yet hangs aloft, a cloud, as palpable  
 To the finer sense as word the legist welds.  
 Justinian's Pandects only make precise 1780  
 What simply sparkled in men's eyes before,  
 Twitched in their brow or quivered on their lip,  
 Waited the speech they called but would not come.  
 These courts then, whose decree your own confirms,— 1785  
 Take my whole life, not this last act alone,  
 Look on it by the light reflected thence!  
 What has Society to charge me with?  
 Come, unreservedly,—favour none nor fear,—  
 I am Guido Franceschini, am I not? 1790  
 You know the courses I was free to take?  
 I took just that which let me serve the Church,  
 I gave it all my labour in body and soul  
 Till these broke down i' the service.  
 "Specify?"  
 Well, my last patron was a Cardinal. 1795  
 I left him unconvicted of a fault—  
 Was even helped, by way of gratitude,  
 Into the new life that I left him for,  
 This very misery of the marriage,—he  
 Made it, kind soul, so far as in him lay—  
 Signed the deed where you yet may see his name. 1800  
 He is gone to his reward,—dead, being my friend  
 Who could have helped here also,—that, of course!  
 So far, there's my acquittal, I suppose.  
 Then comes the marriage itself—no question, lords, 1805  
 Of the entire validity of that!  
 In the extremity of distress, 'tis true,  
 For after-reasons, furnished abundantly,  
 I wished the thing invalid, went to you  
 Only some months since, set you duly forth  
 My wrong and prayed your remedy, that a cheat 1811  
 Should not have force to cheat my whole life long.  
 "Annul a marriage? 'Tis impossible!  
 "Though ring about your neck be brass not gold,  
 "Needs must it clasp, gangrene you all the same!" 1815  
 Well, let me have the benefit, just so far,  
 O' the fact announced,—my wife then is my wife,  
 I have allowance for a husband's right.

- I am charged with passing right's due bound,  
—such acts
- As I thought just, my wife called cruelty,  
Complained of in due form,—convoked no  
court 1821
- (Of common gossipry, but took her wrongs—  
And not once, but so long as patience served—  
To the town's top, jurisdiction's pride of place,  
To the Archbishop and the Governor. 1825  
These heard her charge with my reply, and  
found
- That futile, this sufficient : they dismissed  
The hysteric querulous rebel, and confirmed  
Authority in its wholesome exercise,  
They, with directest access to the facts. 1830
- “—Ay, for it was their friendship favoured  
you,  
“Hereditary alliance against a breach  
“I' the social order : prejudice for the name  
“Of Franceschini !”—So I hear it said :  
But not here. You, lords, never will you  
say 1835
- “Such is the nullity of grace and truth,  
“Such the corruption of the faith, such lapse  
“Of law, such warrant have the Molinists  
“For daring reprehend us as they do,—  
“That we pronounce it just a common case,  
“Two dignitaries, each in his degree 1841  
“First, foremost, this the spiritual head, and  
that
- “The secular arm o' the body politic,  
“Should, for mere wrongs' love and injus-  
tice' sake,  
“Side with, aid and abet in cruelty 1845  
“This broken beggarly noble,—bribed per-  
haps  
“By his watered wine and mouldy crust of  
bread—  
“Rather than that sweet tremulous flower-  
like wife  
“Who kissed their hands and curled about  
their feet  
“Looking the irresistible loveliness 1850  
“In tears that takes man captive, turns”  
... enough !
- Do you blast your predecessors? What forbids  
Posterity to trebly blast yourselves  
Whoset the example and instruct their tongue?
- You dreaded the crowd, succumbed to the  
popular cry, 1855  
Or else, would nowise seem defer thereto  
And yield to public clamour though i' the  
right !  
You ridded your eye of my unseemliness,  
The noble whose misfortune wearied you,—  
Or, what's more probable, made common  
cause 1860  
With the cleric section, punished in myself  
Maladroit uncomplaisant laity,  
Defective in behaviour to a priest  
Who claimed the customary partnership  
I' the house and the wife. Lords, any lie  
will serve ! 1865  
Look to it,—or allow me freed so far !
- Then I proceed a step, come with clean hands  
Thus far, re-tell the tale told eight months  
since.  
The wife, you allow so far, I have not wronged,  
I'as fled my roof, plundered me and de-  
camped 1870  
In company with the priest her paramour :  
And I gave chase, came up with, caught the  
two  
At the wayside inn where both had spent the  
night,  
Found them in flagrant fault, and found as  
well, 1874  
By documents with name and plan and date,  
The fault was furtive then that's flagrant now,  
Their intercourse a long established crime.  
I did not take the license law's self gives  
To slay both criminals o' the spot at the time.  
But beld my hand,—preferred play prodigy  
Of patience which the world calls cowardice,  
Rather than seem anticipate the law 1882  
And cast discredit on its organs,—you.  
So, to your bar I brought both criminals,  
And made my statement : heard their counter-  
charge. 1885
- Nay,—their corroboration of my tale,  
Nowise disputing its allegements, not  
I' the main, not more than nature's decency  
Compels men to keep silence in this kind,—  
Only contending that the deeds avowed 1890  
Would take another colour and bear excuse.



You were to judge between us ; so you did.  
 You disregard the excuse, you breathe away  
 The colour of innocence and leave guilt black,  
 "Guilty" is the decision of the court, 1806  
 And that I stand in consequence untouched,  
 One white integrity from head to heel.  
 Not guilty ? Why then did you punish them ?  
 True, punishment has been inadequate—  
 'Tis not I only, not my friends that joke, 1900  
 My foes that jeer, who echo "inadequate"—  
 For, by a chance that comes to help for once,  
 The same case simultaneously was judged  
 At Arezzo, in the province of the Court 1904  
 Where the crime had its beginning but not end.  
 They then, deciding on but half o' the crime,  
 The effraction, robbery,—features of the fault  
 I never cared to dwell upon at Rome,—  
 What was it they adjudged as penalty 1909  
 To Pompilia,—the one criminal o' the pair  
 Amenable to their judgment, not the priest  
 Who is Rome's ? Why, just imprisonment  
 for life  
 I' the Stinche. There was Tuscany's award  
 To a wife that robs her husband : you at  
 Rome—  
 Having to deal with adultery in a wife 1915  
 And, in a priest, breach of the priestly vow—  
 Give gentle sequestration for a month  
 In a manageable Convent, then release,  
 You call imprisonment, in the very house  
 O' the very couple, which the aim and end  
 Of the culprits' crime was—just to reach and  
 rest 1921  
 And there take solace and defy me : well,—  
 This difference 'twixt their penalty and yours  
 Is immaterial : make your penalty less—  
 Merely that she should henceforth wear black  
 gloves 1926  
 And white fan, she who wore the opposite—  
 Why, all the same the fact o' the thing sub-  
 sists.  
 Reconcile to your conscience as you may,  
 Be it on your own heads, you pronounced but  
 half  
 O' the penalty for heinousness like hers 1930  
 And his, that pays a fault at Carnival  
 Of comfit-pelting past discretion's law,  
 Or accident to handkerchief in Lent  
 Which falls perversely as a lady kneels  
 Abruptly, and but half conceals her neck ! 1932  
 I acquiesce for my part : punished, though  
 By a pin-point scratch, means guilty : guilty  
 means  
 —What have I been but innocent hitherto ?  
 Anyhow, here the offence, being punished,  
 ends.  
 Ends?—for you deemed so, did you not,  
 sweet lords ? 1940  
 That was throughout the veritable aim  
 O' the sentence light or heavy,—to redress  
 Recognized wrong ? You righted me, I think ?  
 Well then,—what if I, at this last of all,  
 Demonstrate you, as my whole pleading  
 proves, 1945  
 No particle of wrong received thereby  
 One atom of right?—that cure grew worse  
 disease ?  
 That in the process you call "justice done"  
 All along you have nipped away just inch 1949  
 By inch the creeping climbing length of plague  
 Breaking my tree of life from root to branch,  
 And left me, after all and every act  
 Of your interference,—lightened of what load ?  
 At liberty wherein ? Mere words and wind !  
 "Now I was saved, now I should feel no  
 more 1955  
 "The hot breath, find a respite from fixed eye  
 "And vibrant tongue !" Why, scarce your  
 back was turned,  
 There was the reptile, that feigned death at  
 first,  
 Renewing its detested spire and spire  
 Around me, rising to such heights of hate 1960  
 That, so far from mere purpose now to crush  
 And coil itself on the remains of me,  
 Body and mind, and there flesh fang content,  
 Its aim is now to evoke life from death,  
 Make me anew, satisfy in my son 1965  
 The hunger I may feed but never sate,  
 Tormented on to perpetuity,—  
 My son, whom, dead, I shall know, understand,  
 Feel, hear, see, never more escape the sight  
 In heaven that's turned to hell, or hell returned  
 (So rather say) to this same earth again,— 1971  
 Moulded into the image and made one,

fashioned of soul as featured like in face,  
 I first taught to laugh and lisp and stand and go  
 By that thief, poisoner and adulteress 1975  
 I call Pompilia, he calls . . . sacred name,  
 Be unpronounced, be unpolluted here !  
 And last led up to the glory and prize of hate  
 By his . . . foster-father, Caponsacchi's self,  
 The perjured priest, pink of conspirators,  
 Tricksters and knaves, yet polished, superfine,  
 Manhood to model adolescence by ! 1982  
 Lords, look on me, declare,—when, what I  
 show,  
 Is nothing more nor less than what you deemed  
 And doled me out for justice,—what did you  
 say ? 1985  
 For reparation, restitution and more,—  
 Will you not thank, praise, bid me to your  
 breasts  
 For having done the thing you thought to do,  
 And thoroughly trampled out sin's life at last ?  
 I have heightened phrase to make your soft  
 speech serve, 1990  
 Doubled the blow you but essayed to strike,  
 Carried into effect your mandate here  
 That else had fallen to ground : mere duty  
 done,  
 Oversight of the master just supplied  
 By zeal i' the servant. I, being used to serve,  
 I have simply . . . what is it they charge me  
 with ? 1995  
 Blackened again, made legible once more  
 Your own decree, not permanently writ,  
 Rightly conceived but all too faintly traced.  
 It reads efficient, now, comminatory, 2000  
 A terror to the wicked, answers so  
 The mood o' the magistrate, the mind of law.  
 Absolve, then, me, law's mere executant !  
 Protect your own defender,—save me, Sirs !  
 Give me my life, give me my liberty, 2005  
 My good name and my civic rights again !  
 It would be too fond, too complacent play  
 Into the hands o' the devil, should we lose  
 The game here, I for God : a soldier-bee  
 That yields his life, exenterate<sup>1</sup> with the stroke  
 O' the sting that saves the hive. I need that  
 life. 2011

<sup>1</sup> *Exenterate*: disembowelled.

Oh, never fear ! I'll find life plenty use  
 Though it should last five years more, aches  
 and all !  
 For, first thing, there's the mother's age to  
 help— 2014  
 Let her come break her heart upon my breast,  
 Not on the blank stone of my nameless tomb !  
 The fugitive brother has to be bidden back  
 To the old routine, repugnant to the tread,  
 Of daily suit and service to the Church,—  
 Thro' gibe and jest, those stones that Shimei  
 flung ! 2020  
 Ay, and the spirit-broken youth at home,  
 The awe-struck altar-ministrant, shall make  
 Amends for faith now palsied at the source,  
 Shall see truth yet triumphant, justice yet  
 A victor in the battle of this world ! 2025  
 Give me—for last, best gift—my son again,  
 Whom law makes mine,—I take him at your  
 word,  
 Mine be he, by miraculous mercy, lords !  
 Let me lift up his youth and innocence  
 To purify my palace, room by room 2030  
 Purged of the memories, lend from his bright  
 brow  
 Light to the old proud paladin my sire . . .  
 Shrunk now for shame into the darkest shade  
 O' the tapestry, showed him once and shrouds  
 him now !  
 Then may we,—strong from that rekindled  
 smile,— 2035  
 Go forward, face new times, the better day.  
 And when, in times made better through your  
 brave  
 Decision now,—might but Utopia be !—  
 Rome rife with honest women and strong men,  
 Manners reformed, old habits back once  
 more, 2040  
 Customs that recognize the standard worth,—  
 The wholesome household rule in force again,  
 Husbands once more God's representative,  
 Wives like the typical Spouse once more, and  
 Priests  
 No longer men of Belial, with no aim 2045  
 At leading silly women captive, but  
 Of rising to such duties as yours now,—  
 Then will I set my son at my right-hand  
 And tell his father's story to this point, 2050

Adding "The task seemed superhuman, still  
 "I dared and did it, trusting God and law :  
 "And they approved of me : give praise to  
 both !"

And if, for answer, he shall stoop to kiss  
 My hand, and peradventure start thereat,—  
 I engage to smile "That was an accident 2055  
 "I' the necessary process,—just a trip  
 "O' the torture-irons in their search for  
 truth,—  
 "Hardly misfortune, and no fault at all."

# VI.—GIUSEPPE CAPONSACCHI.

ANSWER you, Sirs ? Do I understand aright ?  
 Have patience ! In this sudden smoke from  
 hell,—

So things disguise themselves,—I cannot see  
 My own hand held thus broad before my face  
 And know it again. Answer you ? Then  
 that means

Tell over twice what I, the first time, told  
 Six months ago : 'twas here, I do believe,  
 Fronting you same three in this very room,  
 I stood and told you : yet now no one laughs,  
 Who then . . . nay, dear my lords, but  
 laugh you did,

As good as laugh, what in a judge we style  
 Laughter—no levity, nothing indecorous,  
 lords !

Only,—I think I apprehend the mood :  
 There was the blameless shrug, permissible  
 smirk,

The pen's pretence at play with the pursed  
 mouth,

The titter stifled in the hollow palm  
 Which rubbed the eyebrow and caressed the  
 nose,

When I first told my tale : they meant, you  
 know,

"The sly one, all this we are bound believe !  
 "Well, he can say no other than what he  
 says.

"We have been young, too,—come, there's  
 greater guilt !

"Let him but decently disembroil himself,

"Scramble from out the scrape nor move  
 the mud,—

"We solid ones may risk a finger-stretch !"  
 And now you sit as grave, stare as aghast 25  
 As if I were a phantom : now 'tis—"Friend,  
 "Collect yourself !" —no laughing matter  
 more—

"Counsel the Court in this extremity,  
 "Tell us again !" —tell that, for telling which,  
 I got the jocular piece of punishment, 30  
 Was sent to lounge a little in the place  
 Whence now of a sudden here you summon  
 me

To take the intelligence from just—your lips !  
 You, Judge Tommati, who then tittered  
 most,—

That she I helped eight months since to escape  
 Her husband, was retaken by the same, 35  
 Three days ago, if I have seized your sense,—  
 (I being disallowed to interfere,  
 Meddle or make in a matter none of mine,  
 For you and law were guardians quite enough  
 O' the innocent, without a pert priest's  
 help) —

And that he has butchered her accordingly,  
 As she foretold and as myself believed,—  
 And, so foretelling and believing so,  
 We were punished, both of us, the merry  
 way :

Therefore, tell once again the tale ! For  
 what ?

Pompilia is only dying while I speak !  
 Why does the mirth hang fire and miss the  
 smile ?

My masters, there's an old book, you should  
 con

For strange adventures, applicable yet, 40  
 'Tis stuffed with. Do you know that there  
 was once

This thing : a multitude of worthy folk  
 Took recreation, watched a certain group  
 Of soldiery intent upon a game,—

How first they wrangled, but soon fell to  
 play,

Threw dice,—the best diversion in the world.  
 A word in your ear,—they are now casting  
 lots,

Ay, with that gesture quaint and cry uncouth,

For the coat of One murdered an hour ago !  
 I am a priest,—talk of what I have learned.  
 Pompilia is bleeding out her life belike, 61  
 Gasping away the latest breath of all,  
 This minute, while I talk—not while you  
 laugh ?

Yet, being sobered now, what is it you ask  
 By way of explanation ? There's the fact ! 65  
 It seems to fill the universe with sight  
 And sound,—from the four corners of this  
 earth

Tells itself over, to my sense at least.  
 But you may want it lower set 'i' the scale,—  
 Too vast, too close it clangs in the ear,  
 perhaps ; 70  
 You'd stand back just to comprehend it more.  
 Well then, let me, the hollow rock, condense  
 The voice o' the sea and wind, interpret you  
 The mystery of this murder. God above !  
 It is too paltry, such a transference 75  
 O' the storm's roar to the cranny of the stone !

This deed, you saw begin—why does its end  
 Surprise you ? Why should the event enforce  
 The lesson, we ourselves learned, she and I,  
 From the first o' the fact, and taught you,  
 all in vain ? 80

This Guido from whose throat you took my  
 grasp,

Was this man to be favoured, now, or feared,  
 Let do his will, or have his will restrained,  
 In the relation with Pompilia ? Say !

Did any other man need interpose 85  
 —Oh, though first comer, though as strange  
 at the work

As fribble must be, coxcomb, fool that's near  
 To knave as, say, a priest who fears the  
 world—

Was he bound brave the peril, save the  
 doomed,

Or go on, sing his snatch and pluck his  
 flower, 90

Keep the straight path and let the victim die ?  
 I held so ; you decided otherwise,

Saw no such peril, therefore no such need  
 To stop song, loosen flower, and leave path.

Law,

Law was aware and watching, would suffice,  
 Wanted no priest's intrusion, palpably 95  
 Pretence, too manifest a subterfuge !

Whereupon I, priest, coxcomb, fribble and  
 fool,

Ensconced me in my corner, thus rebuked,  
 A kind of culprit, over-zealous hound 100

Kicked for his pains to kennel ; I gave place  
 To you, and let the law reign paramount :

I left Pompilia to your watch and ward,  
 And now you point me—there and thus she  
 lies !

Men, for the last time, what do you want  
 with me ? 105

Is it,—you acknowledge, as it were, a use,  
 A profit in employing me ?—at length

I may conceivably help the august law ?  
 I am free to break the blow, next hawk that  
 swoops

On next dove, nor miss much of good repute ?  
 Or what if this your summons, after all, 111  
 Be but the form of mere release, no more,

Which turns the key and lets the captive go ?  
 I have paid enough in person at Civita,

Am free,—what more need I concern me  
 with ? 115

Thank you ! I am rehabilitated then,  
 A very reputable priest. But she—

The glory of life, the beauty of the world,  
 The splendour of heaven, . . . well, Sirs,

does no one move ?  
 Do I speak ambiguously ? The glory, I say,

And the beauty, I say, and splendour, still  
 say I, 121

Who, priest and trained to live my whole  
 life long

On beauty and splendour, solely at their  
 source,

God,—have thus recognized my food in her,  
 You tell me, that's fast dying while we talk,

Pompilia ! How does lenity to me, 125  
 Remit one death-bed pang to her ? Come,

smile !  
 The proper wink at the hot-headed youth

Who lets his soul show, through transparent  
 words, 129

The mundane love that's sin and scandal too !

You are all struck acquiescent now, it seems :  
 It seems the oldest, gravest signor here,  
 Even the redoubtable Tommati, sits  
 Chop-fallen, — understands how law might  
 take  
 Service like mine, of brain and heart and  
 hand, 136  
 In good part. Better late than never, law  
 You understand of a sudden, gospel too  
 Has a claim here, may possibly pronounce  
 Consistent with my priesthood, worthy Christ,  
 That I endeavoured to save Pompilia ? 140

Then,

You were wrong, you see : that's well to see,  
 though late :  
 That's all we may expect of man, this side  
 The grave : his good is—knowing he is bad :  
 Thus will it be with us when the books ope 145  
 And we stand at the bar on judgment-day.  
 Well then, I have a mind to speak, see cause  
 To resume the quenched flax by this dreadful  
 light,  
 Burn my soul out in showing you the truth.  
 I heard, last time I stood here to be judged, 150  
 What is priest's-duty,—labour to pluck tares  
 And weed the corn of Molinism ; let me  
 Make you hear, this time, how, in such a case,  
 Man, be he in the priesthood or at plough,  
 Mindful of Christ or marching step by step 155  
 With . . . what's his style, the other potentate  
 Who bids have courage and keep honour safe,  
 Nor let minuter admonition tease ?—  
 How he is bound, better or worse, to act.  
 Earth will not end through this misjudgment,  
 no ! 160

For you and the others like you sure to come,  
 Fresh work is sure to follow,—wickedness  
 That wants withstanding. Many a man of  
 blood,  
 Many a man of guile will clamour yet, 164  
 Bid you redress his grievance,—as he clutched  
 The prey, forsooth a stranger stepped between,  
 And there's the good gripe in pure waste !  
 My part  
 Is done ; if the doing it, I pass away  
 Out of the world. I want no more with  
 earth. 168

Let me, in heaven's name, use the very snuff  
 O' the taper in one last spark shall show truth  
 For a moment, show Pompilia who was true !  
 Not for her sake, but yours : if she is dead,  
 Oh, Sirs, she can be loved by none of you 174  
 Most or least priestly ! Saints, to do us good,  
 Must be in heaven, I seem to understand :  
 We never find them saints before, at least.  
 Be her first prayer then presently for you—  
 She has done the good to me . . .  
 What is all this ?  
 There, I was born, have lived, shall die, a  
 fool ! 181

This is a foolish outset :—might with cause  
 Give colour to the very lie o' the man,  
 The murderer,—make as if I loved his wife,  
 In the way he called love. He is the fool  
 there ! 187

Why, had there been in me the touch of taint,  
 I had picked up so much of knaves'-policy  
 As hide it, keep one hand pressed on the place  
 Suspected of a spot would damn us both.  
 Or no, not her !—not even if any of you 190  
 Dares think that I, i' the face of death, her  
 death  
 That's in my eyes and ears and brain and  
 heart,  
 Lie,—if he does, let him ! I mean to say,  
 So he stop there, stay thought from smirching  
 her  
 The snow-white soul that angels fear to take  
 Untenderly. But, all the same, I know 194  
 I too am taintless, and I bare my breast.  
 You can't think, men as you are, all of you,  
 But that, to hear thus suddenly such an end  
 Of such a wonderful white soul, that comes  
 Of a man and murderer calling the white  
 black, 201  
 Must shake me, trouble and disadvantage.  
 Sirs,  
 Only seventeen !

Why, good and wise you are !

You might at the beginning stop my mouth :  
 So, none would be to speak for her, that  
 knew. 206  
 I talk impertinently, and you bear,  
 All the same. This it is to have to do

With honest hearts : they easily may err,  
But in the main they wish well to the truth.  
You are Christians ; somehow, no one ever  
plucked 211

A rag, even, from the body of the Lord,  
To wear and mock with, but, despite himself,  
He looked the greater and was the better.

Yes,  
I shall go on now. Does she need or not  
I keep calm ? Calm I'll keep as monk that  
croons 216

Transcribing battle, earthquake, famine,  
plague,

From parchment to his cloister's chronicle.

Not one word more from the point now !

I begin.

Yes, I am one of your body and a priest. 221

Also I am a younger son o' the House  
Oldest now, greatest once, in my birth-town  
Arezzo, I recognize no equal there—

(I want all arguments, all sorts of arms 225  
That seem to serve,—use this for a reason,  
wait !)

Not therefore thrust into the Church, because  
O' the piece of bread one gets there. We  
were first

Of Fiesole, that rings still with the fame  
Of Capo-in-Sacco our progenitor : 230

When Florence ruined Fiesole, our folk  
Migrated to the victor-city, and there  
Flourished,—our palace and our tower attest,  
In the Old Mercato,—this was years ago,  
Four hundred, full,—no, it wants fourteen  
just. 235

Our arms are those of Fiesole itself,  
The shield quartered with white and red : a  
branch

Are the Salviati of us, nothing more.  
That were good help to the Church ? But  
better still—

Not simply for the advantage of my birth 240  
I' the way of the world, was I proposed for  
priest ;

But because there's an illustration, late  
I' the day, that's loved and looked to as a saint  
Still in Arezzo, he was bishop of,  
Sixty years since : he spent to the last do it

His bishop's-revenue among the poor, 246  
And used to tend the needy and the sick,  
Barefoot, because of his humility.

He it was,—when the Granduke Ferdinand<sup>1</sup>  
Swore he would raze our city, plough the  
place 250

And sow it with salt, because we Aretines  
Had tied a rope about the neck, to hale  
The statue of his father from its base  
For hate's sake,—he availed by prayers and  
tears

To pacify the Duke and save the town. 255  
This was my father's father's brother. You  
see,

For his sake, how it was I had a right  
To the self-same office, bishop in the egg,  
So, grew i' the garb and prattled in the school,  
Was made expect, from infancy almost, 260  
The proper mood o' the priest ; till time  
ran by

And brought the day when I must read the  
vows,

Declare the world renounced and undertake  
To become priest and leave probation,—leap  
Over the ledge into the other life, 265  
Having gone trippingly hitherto up to the  
height

O'er the wan water. Just a vow to read !

I stopped short awe-struck. “How shall  
holiest flesh

“Engage to keep such vow inviolate,  
“How much less mine ? I know myself too  
weak, 270

“Unworthy ! Choose a worthier stronger  
man !”

And the very Bishop smiled and stopped my  
mouth

In its mid-protestation. “Incapable ?  
“Qualmish of conscience ? Thou ingenuous  
boy !

“Clear up the clouds and cast thy scruples  
far ! 275

“I satisfy thee there's an easier sense  
“Wherein to take such vow than suits the  
first

<sup>1</sup> *Ferdinand* : Ferdinand II., Grand-duke of  
Tuscany 1621-1670, one of the Medici.

- "Rough rigid reading. Mark what makes  
all smooth,
- "Nay, has been even a solace to myself!
- "The Jews who needs must, in their syna-  
gogue, 280
- "Utter sometimes the holy name of God,  
"A thing their superstition boggles at,  
"Pronounce aloud the ineffable sacrosanct,  
"How does their shrewdness help them?  
In this wise;
- "Another set of sounds they substitute, 285  
"Jumble so consonants and vowels—how  
"Should I know?—that there grows from  
out the old
- "Quite a new word that means the very  
same—  
"And o'er the hard place slide they with a  
smile.
- "Giuseppe Maria Caponsacchi mine, 290  
"Nobody wants you in these latter days  
"To prop the Church by breaking your  
back-bone,—  
"As the necessary way was once, we know,  
"When Diocletian flourished and his like.  
"That building of the buttress-work was  
done 295
- "By martyrs and confessors: let it hide,  
"Add not a brick, but, where you see a chink,  
"Stick in a sprig of ivy or root a rose  
"Shall make amends and beautify the pile!  
"We profit as you were the painfulest 300  
"O' the martyrs, and you prove yourself a  
match  
"For the cruellest confessor ever was,  
"If you march boldly up and take your stand  
"Where their blood soaks, their bones yet  
strew the soil, 304  
"And cry 'Take notice, I the young and free  
"And well-to-do i' the world, thus leave  
the world,  
"Cast in my lot thus with no gay young  
world  
"But the grand old Church: she tempts  
me of the two!
- "Renounce the world? Nay, keep and give  
it us!  
"Let us have you, and boast of what you  
bring. 310
- "We want the pick o' the earth to practise  
with,  
"Not its offscouring, halt and deaf and blind  
"In soul and body. There's a rubble-stone  
"Unfit for the front o' the building, stuff to  
stow 314  
"In a gap behind and keep us weather-tight;  
"There's porphyry for the prominent place.  
Good luck!  
"Saint Paul has had enough and to spare,  
I trow,  
"Of ragged run-away Onesimus:  
"He wants the right-hand with the signet-  
ring  
"Of King Agrippa, now, to shake and use.  
"I have a heavy scholar cloistered up, 321  
"Close under lock and key, kept at his task  
"Of letting Fénelon know the fool he is,  
"In a book I promise Christendom next  
Spring. 324  
"Why, if he covets so much meat, the clown,  
"As a lark's wing next Friday, or, any day,  
"Diversion beyond catching his own fleas,  
"He shall be properly swinged, I promise  
him.  
"But you, who are so quite another paste  
"Of a man,—do you obey me? Cultivat?  
"Assiduous that superior gift you have 33:  
"Of making madrigals—(who told me? Ah!)  
"Get done a *Marinesque Adoniat*<sup>1</sup> straight  
"With a pulse o' the blood a-pricking, here  
and there,  
"That I may tell the lady 'And he's ours!'
- So I became a priest: those terms changed!  
all, 334  
I was good enough for that, nor cheated so;  
I could live thus and still hold head erect.  
Now you see why I may have been before  
A fribble and coxcomb, yet, as priest, break  
word 340  
Nowise, to make you disbelieve me now.  
I need that you should know my truth.  
Well, then,
- <sup>1</sup> *A Marinesque Adoniat*: alluding to the  
*Adone* of Giovanni Battista Marin (or Marini),  
published in 1623, and very popular during the  
seventeenth century.

According to prescription did I live,  
 —Conformed myself, both read the breviary  
 And wrote the rhymes, was punctual to my  
 place 345  
 I the Pieve,<sup>1</sup> and as diligent at my post  
 Where beauty and fashion rule. I throw  
 apace,  
 Sub-deacon, Canon, the authority  
 For delicate play at tarocs,<sup>2</sup> and arbiter  
 (I) the magnitude of fan-mounts: all the  
 while 350  
 Wanting no whit the advantage of a hint  
 Benignant to the promising pupil,—thus:  
 "Enough attention to the Countess now,  
 "The young one; 'tis her mother rules the  
 roast,  
 "We know where, and puts in a word: go  
 pay 355  
 "Devoir to-morrow morning after mass!  
 "Break that rash promise to preach, Passion-  
 week!  
 "Has it escaped you the Archbishop grunts  
 "And snuffles when one grieves to tell his  
 Grace 359  
 "No soul dares treat the subject of the day  
 "Since his own masterly handling it (ha, ha!)  
 "Five years ago,—when somebody could  
 help  
 "And touch up an odd phrase in time of need,  
 "(He, he!)"—and somebody helps you, my  
 son!  
 "Therefore, don't prove so indispensable  
 "At the Pieve, sit more loose i' the seat, nor  
 grow 366  
 "A fixture by attendance morn and eve!  
 "Arezzo's just a haven midway Rome—  
 "Rome's the eventual harbour,—make for  
 port,  
 "Crowd sail, crack cordage! And your  
 cargo be 370  
 "A polished presence, a genteel manner, wit  
 "At will, and tact at every pore of you!  
 "I sent our lump of learning, Brother Clout,  
 "And Father Slouch, our piece of piety,  
 "To see Rome and try suit the Cardinal.

<sup>1</sup> *Pieve*: Sta. Maria della Pieve, one of the principal churches in Arezzo.

<sup>2</sup> *Tarocs*: a card game.

"Thither they clump-clumped, beads and  
 book in hand, 376  
 "And ever since 'tis meat for man and maid  
 "How both flopped down, prayed blessing  
 on bent pate  
 "Bald many an inch beyond the tonsure's  
 need,  
 "Never once dreaming, the two moony dolts,  
 "There's nothing moves his Eminence so  
 much 381  
 "As—far from all this awe at sanctitude—  
 "Heads that wag, eyes that twinkle, modified  
 mirth  
 "At the closet-lectures on the Latin tongue  
 "A lady learns so much by, we know where.  
 "Why, body o' Bacchus, you should crave  
 his rule 386  
 "For pauses in the elegiac couplet, chasms  
 "Permissible only to Catullus! There!  
 "Now go to duty: brisk, break Priscian's  
 head!<sup>3</sup> 389  
 "By reading the day's office—there's no help.  
 "You've Ovid in you: poke to plaster that;  
 "Amen's at the end of all: then sup with me!"

Well, after three or four years of this life,  
 In prosecution of my calling, I  
 Found myself at the theatre one night 395  
 With a brother Canon, in a mood and mind  
 Proper enough for the place, amused or no:  
 When I saw enter, stand, and seat herself  
 A lady, young, tall, beautiful, strange and sad.  
 It was as when, in our cathedral once, 400  
 As I got yawningly through matin-song,  
 I saw *facchini*<sup>4</sup> bear a burden up,  
 Base it on the high-altar, break away  
 A board or two, and leave the thing inside  
 Lofty and lone: and lo, when next I  
 looked, 405  
 There was the Rafael! I was still one stare,  
 When—"Nay, I'll make her give you back  
 your gaze"—  
 Said Canon Conti; and at the word he tossed  
 A paper-twist of comfits to her lap,

<sup>3</sup> *Break Priscian's head*: break the rules of classical Latin grammar, on which Priscian was the most famous ancient authority.

<sup>4</sup> *Facchini*: porters.



And dodged and in a trice was at my back:  
Nodding from over my shoulder. Then she  
turned, 411

Looked our way, smiled the beautiful sad  
strange smile.

"Is not she fair? 'Tis my new cousin,"  
said he:

"The fellow lurking there i' the black o'  
the box

"Is Guido, the old scapegrace: she's his wife,

"Married three years since: how his Count-  
ship sulks! 413

"He has brought little back from Rome  
beside,

"After the bragging, bullying. A fair face,

"And—they do say—a pocketful of gold

"When he can worry both her parents  
dead. 420

"I don't go much there, for the chamber's  
cold

"And the coffee pale. I got a turn at first

"Paying my duty: I observed they crouched

"—The two old frightened family spectres—  
close

"In a corner, each on each like mouse on  
mouse 423

"I' the cat's cage: ever since, I stay at home.

"Hallo, there's Guido, the black, mean and  
small,

"Bends his brows on us—please to bend  
your own

"On the shapely nether limbs of Light-skirts  
there

"By way of a diversion! I was a fool 430

"To fling the sweetmeats. Prudence, for  
God's love!

"To-morrow I'll make my peace, e'en tell  
some fib,

"Try if I can't find means to take you there."

That night and next day did the gaze endure,  
Burnt to my brain, as sunbeam thro' shut  
eyes, 435

And not once changed the beautiful sad  
strange smile.

At vespers Conti leaned beside my seat  
I' the choir,—part said, part sung—"In  
*ex-cel-sis*—

"All's to no purpose; I have louted low,  
"But he saw you staring—*quia sub*—don't  
incline 440

"To know you nearer: him we would not  
hold

"For Hercules,—the man would lick your  
shoe

"If you and certain efficacious friends

"Managed him warily,—but there's the wife:

"Spare her, because he beats her, as it is,

"She's breaking her heart quite fast enough—  
*jam tu*— 446

"So, be you rational and make amends

"With little Light-skirts yonder—*in secula*

"*Secu-lo-o-o-o-rum*. Ah, you rogue! Every  
one knows

"What great dame she makes jealous: one  
against one, 450

"Play, and win both!"

Sirs, ere the week was out,  
I saw and said to myself "Light-skirts hides  
teeth

"Would make a dog sick,—the great dame  
shows spite

"Should drive a cat mad: 'tis but poor work  
this— 455

"Counting one's fingers till the sonnet's  
crowned.

"I doubt much if Marino really be

"A better bard than Dante after all.

"'Tis more amusing to go pace at eve

"I' the Duomo,—watch the day's last gleam  
outside 460

"Turn, as into a skirt of God's own robe,

"Those lancet-windows' jewelled miracle,—

"Than go eat the Archbishop's ortolans,

"Digest his jokes. Luckily Lent is near:

"Who cares to look will find me in my  
stall 465

"At the Pieve, constant to this faith at least—

"Never to write a canzonet any more."

So, next week, 'twas my patron spoke abrupt,  
In altered guise. "Young man, can it be true

"That after all your promise of sound fruit,

"You have kept away from Countess young  
or old 471

"And gone play truant in church all day long?

"Are you turning Molinist?" I answered quick :

"Sir, what if I turned Christian? It might be.

"The fact is, I am troubled in my mind,

"Beset and pressed hard by some novel thoughts. 476

"This your Arezzo is a limited world ;

"There's a strange Pope,—'tis said, a priest who thinks.

"Rome is the port, you say : to Rome I go.

"I will live alone, one does so in a crowd, 480

"And look into my heart a little." "Lent

"Ended,"—I told friends—"I shall go to Rome."

One evening I was sitting in a muse  
Over the opened "Summa,"<sup>1</sup> darkened round

By the mid-March twilight, thinking how my life 485

Had shaken under me,—broke short indeed  
And showed the gap 'twixt what is, what should be,—

And into what abysm the soul may slip,  
Leave aspiration here, achievement there,  
Lacking omnipotence to connect extremes—  
Thinking moreover . . . oh, thinking, if you like, 491

How utterly dissociated was I  
A priest and celibate, from the sad strange wife

Of Guido,—just as an instance to the point,  
Nought more,—how I had a whole store of strengths 495

Eating into my heart, which craved employ,  
And she, perhaps, need of a finger's help,—  
And yet there was no way in the wide world  
To stretch out mine and so relieve myself,—  
How when the page o' the Summa preached its best, 500

Her smile kept glowing out of it, as to mock  
The silence we could break by no one word,—  
There came a tap without the chamber-door,  
And a whisper ; when I bade who tapped speak out.

<sup>1</sup> *Summa* : the *Summa Theologiae* of Thomas Aquinas.

And, in obedience to my summons, last 505

In glided a masked muffled mystery,

Laid lightly a letter on the opened book,

Then stood with folded arms and foot demure,

Pointing as if to mark the minutes' flight.

I took the letter, read to the effect 510

That she, I lately flung the comfits to,

Had a warm heart to give me in exchange,

And gave it,—loved me and confessed it thus,

And bade me render thanks by word of mouth,

Going that night to such a side o' the house 515

Where the small terrace overhangs a street

Blind and deserted, not the street in front :

Her husband being away, the surly patch,

At his villa of Vittiano.

"And you?"—I asked :  
"What may you be?" "Count Guido's kind of maid— 521

"Most of us have two functions in his house.

"We all hate him, the lady suffers much,

"'Tis just we show compassion, furnish help,

"Specially since her choice is fixed so well. 525

"What answer may I bring to cheer the sweet  
"Pompilia?"

Then I took a pen and wrote  
"No more of this ! That you are fair, I know : 530

"But other thoughts now occupy my mind.

"I should not thus have played the insensible

"Once on a time. What made you,—may one ask,—

"Marry your hideous husband? 'Twas a fault,

"And now you taste the fruit of it. Farewell."

"There !" smiled I as she snatched it and was gone— 535

"There, let the jealous miscreant,—Guido's self,

"Whose mean soul grins through this transparent trick,—

"Be baulked so far, defrauded of his aim !

"What fund of satisfaction to the knave,

- "Had I kicked this his messenger down stairs, 540  
 "Trussed to the middle of her impudence,  
 "And set his heart at ease so! No, indeed!  
 "There's the reply which he shall turn and twist  
 "At pleasure, snuff at till his brain grow drunk,  
 "As the bear does when he finds a scented glove 545  
 "That puzzles him,—a hand and yet no hand,  
 "Of other perfume than his own foul paw!  
 "Last month, I had doubtless chosen to play the dupe,  
 "Accepted the mock-invitation, kept  
 "The sham appointment, cudgel beneath cloak, 550  
 "Prepared myself to pull the appointer's self  
 "Out of the window from his hiding-place  
 "Behind the gown of this part-messenger  
 "Part-mistress who would personate the wife.  
 "Such had seemed once a jest permissible:  
 "Now I am not i' the mood." 555  
 Back next morn brought  
 The messenger, a second letter in hand.  
 "You are cruel, Thyrsis, and Myrtila moans  
 "Neglected but adores you, makes request 560  
 "For mercy: why is it you dare not come?  
 "Such virtue is scarce natural to your age.  
 "You must love someone else; I hear you do,  
 "The Baron's daughter or the Advocate's wife,  
 "Or both,—all's one, would you make me the third— 565  
 "I take the crumbs from table gratefully  
 "Nor grudge who feasts there. 'Faith, I blush and blaze!  
 "Yet if I break all bounds, there's reason sure.  
 "Are you determined bent on Rome?  
 "I am wretched here, a monster tortures me: 570  
 "Carry me with you! Come and say you will!  
 "Concert this very evening! Do not write!  
 "I am ever at the window of my room  
 "Over the terrace, at the *Arco*. Come!"
- I questioned—lifting half the woman's mask  
 To let her smile loose. "So, you gave my line 575  
 "To the merry lady?" "She kissed off the wax,  
 "And put what paper was not kissed away,  
 "In her bosom to go burn: but merry, no!  
 "She wept all night when evening brought no friend, 580  
 "Alone, the unkind missive at her breast;  
 "Thus Philomel, the thorn at her breast too,  
 "Sings" . . . "Writes this second letter?"  
 "Even so!  
 "Then she may peep at vespers forth?"—  
 "What risk  
 "Do we run o' the husband?"—"Ah,—no risk at all! 585  
 "He is more stupid even than jealous.  
 Ah—  
 "That was the reason? Why, the man's away!  
 "Beside, his bugbear is that friend of yours,  
 "Fat little Canon Conti. He fears him,  
 "How should he dream of you? I told you truth: 590  
 "He goes to the villa at Vittiano—'tis  
 "The time when Spring-sap rises in the vine—  
 "Spends the night there. And then his wife's a child:  
 "Does he think a child outwits him? A mere child:  
 "Yet so full grown, a dish for any duke. 595  
 "Don't quarrel longer with such cates, but come!"
- I wrote "In vain do you solicit me.  
 "I am a priest: and you are wedded wife,  
 "Whatever kind of brute your husband prove.  
 "I have scruples, in short. Yet should you really show 600  
 "Sign at the window . . . but nay, best be good!  
 "My thoughts are elsewhere." "Take her that!"  
 "Again  
 "Let the incarnate meanness, cheat and spy,

"Mean to the marrow of him, make his heart

"His food, anticipate hell's worm once more !

"Let him watch shivering at the window—ay,

"And let this hybrid, this his light-of-love

"And lackey-of-lies,—a sage economy,—

"Paid with embracings for the rank brass coin,— 610

"Let her report and make him chuckle o'er

"The break-down of my resolution now,

"And lour at disappointment in good time !

"—So tantalize and so enrage by turns,

"Until the two fall each on the other like 615

"Two famished spiders, as the coveted fly

"That toys long, leaves their net and them at last !"

And so the missives followed thick and fast  
For a month, say,—I still came at every turn  
On the soft sly adder, endlong 'neath my tread. 620

I was met i' the street, made sign to in the church,

A slip was found i' the door-sill, scribbled word

'Twixt page and page o' the prayer-book in my place.

A crumpled thing dropped even before my feet,

Pushed through the blind, above the terrace-rail, 625

As I passed, by day, the very window once.

And ever from corners would be peering up

The messenger, with the self-same demand

"Obdurate still, no flesh but adamant ?

"Nothing to cure the wound, assuage the throe 630

"O' the sweetest lamb that ever loved a bear ?"

And ever my one answer in one tone—

"Go your ways, temptress ! Let a priest read, pray,

"Unplagued of vain talk, visions not for him !

"In the end, you'll have your will and ruin me !" 635

One day, a variation : thus I read :

"You have gained little by timidity.

"My husband has found out my love at length,

"Sees cousin Conti was the stalking-horse,

"And you the game he covered, poor fat soul ! 640

"My husband is a formidable foe,

"Will stick at nothing to destroy you. Stand

"Prepared, or better, run till you reach Rome !

"I bade you visit me, when the last place

"My tyrant would have turned suspicious at, 645

"Or cared to seek you in, was . . . why say, where ?

"But now all's changed : beside, the season's past

"At the villa,—wants the master's eye no more.

"Anyhow, I beseech you, stay away

"From the window ! He might well be posted there." 650

I wrote—"You raise my courage, or call up  
"My curiosity, who am but man.

"Tell him he owns the palace, not the street

"Under—that's his and yours and mine alike.

"If it should please me pad the path this eve,

"Guido will have two troubles, first to get

"Into a rage and then get out again. 655

"Be cautious, though : at the *Ave* !"

You of the Court !

When I stood question here and reached this point 660

O' the narrative,—search notes and see and say

If someone did not interpose with smile

And sneer, "And prithee why so confident :

That the husband must, of all needs, not the wife, 665

"Fabricate thus,—what if the lady loved ?

What if she wrote the letters ?"

Learned Sir,

I told you there's a picture in our church.

Well, if a low-browed verger sidled up 670

Bringing me, like a blotch, on his prod's point,

A transfixed scorpion, let the reptile writhe,

And then said "See a thing that Rafael made—

"This venom issued from Madonna's mouth !"

I should reply, "Rather, the soul of you

"Has issued from your body, like from like,  
"By way of the ordure-corner!" 676

But no less,  
I tired of the same long black teasing lie  
Obtruded thus at every turn; the pest  
Was far too near the picture, anyhow: 680

One does Madonna service, making clowns  
Remove their dung-heap from the sacristy.

"I will to the window, as he tempts," said I:  
"Yes, whom the easy love has failed allure,

"This new bait of adventure tempts,—thinks  
he. 685

"Though the imprisoned lady keeps afar,  
"There will they lie in ambush, heads alert,  
"Kith, kin, and Count mustered to bite my  
heel.

"No mother nor brother viper of the brood  
"Shall scuttle off without the instructive  
bruise!"

So I went: crossed street and street: "The  
next street's turn,

"I stand beneath the terrace, see, above,  
"The black of the ambush-window. Then,  
in place

"Of hand's throw of soft prelude over lute,  
"And cough that clears way for the ditty  
last,"— 685

I began to laugh already—"he will have  
"Out of the hole you hide in, on to the front,  
"Count Guido Franceschini, show yourself!  
"Hear what a man thinks of a thing like you,  
"And after, take this foulness in your face!"

The words lay living on my lip, I made 701  
The one-turn more—and there at the window  
stood,

Framed in its black square length, with lamp  
in hand,

Pompilia; the same great, grave, grievful air  
As stands it the dusk, on altar that I know, 705  
Left alone with one moonbeam in her cell,  
Our Lady of all the Sorrows. Ere I knelt—  
Assured myself that she was flesh and blood—  
She had looked one look and vanished.

I thought—"Just so"  
"It was herself, they have set her there to  
watch— 711

"Stationed to see some wedding-band go by,  
"On fair pretence that she must bless the bride,  
"Or wait some funeral with friends wind past,  
"And crave peace for the corpse that claims  
its due. 715

"She never dreams they used her for a snare,  
"And now withdraw the bait has served its  
turn.

"Well done, the husband, who shall fare the  
worse!"

And on my lip again was—"Out with thee,  
"Guido!" When all at once she re-appeared;  
But, this time, on the terrace overhead, 721  
So close above me, she could almost touch  
My head if she bent down; and she did bend,  
While I stood still as stone, all eye, all ear.

She began—"You have sent me letters, Sir:  
"I have read none, I can neither read nor  
write; 725

"But she you gave them to, a woman here,  
"One of the people in whose power I am,  
"Partly explained their sense, I think, to me  
"Obliged to listen while she inculcates 730  
"That you, a priest, can dare love me, a wife,  
"Desire to live or die as I shall bid,  
"(She makes me listen if I will or no)

"Because you saw my face a single time. 734  
"It cannot be she says the thing you mean;  
"Such wickedness were deadly to us both:  
"But good true love would help me now so  
much—

"I tell myself, you may mean good and true.  
"You offer me, I seem to understand,  
"Because I am in poverty and starve, 740  
"Much money, where one piece would save  
my life.

"The silver cup upon the altar-cloth  
"Is neither yours to give nor mine to take;  
"But I might take one bit of bread therefrom,  
"Since I am starving, and return the rest,  
"Yet do no harm: this is my very case. 745  
"I am in that strait, I may not dare abstain  
"From so much of assistance as would bring  
"The guilt of theft on neither you nor me;  
"But no superfluous particle of aid. 750

"I think, if you will let me state my case,  
"Even had you been so fancy-fettered here,

- "Not your sound self, you must grow healthy  
 now—  
 "Care only to bestow what I can take.  
 "That it is only you in the wide world, 755  
 "Knowing me nor in thought nor word nor  
 deed,  
 "Who, all unprompted save by your own  
 heart,  
 "Come proffering assistance now, — were  
 strange  
 "But that my whole life is so strange: as  
 strange  
 "It is, my husband whom I have not wronged  
 "Should hate and harm me. For his own  
 soul's sake, 761  
 "Hinder the harm! But there is something  
 more,  
 "And that the strangest: it has got to be  
 "Somehow for my sake too, and yet not  
 mine, 764  
 "—This is a riddle—for some kind of sake  
 "Not any clearer to myself than you,  
 "And yet as certain as that I draw breath,—  
 "I would fain live, not die—oh no, not die!  
 "My case is, I was dwelling happily 769  
 "At Rome with those dear Comparini, called  
 "Father and mother to me; when at once  
 "I found I had become Count Guido's wife:  
 "Who then, not waiting for a moment,  
 changed  
 "Into a fury of fire, if once he was 774  
 "Merely a man: his face threw fire at mine,  
 "He laid a hand on me that burned all peace,  
 "All joy, all hope, and last all fear away,  
 "Dipping the bough of life, so pleasant once,  
 "In fire which shrivelled leaf and bud alike,  
 "Burning not only present life but past, 780  
 "Which you might think was safe beyond  
 his reach.  
 "He reached it, though, since that beloved  
 pair,  
 "My father once, my mother all those years,  
 "That loved me so, now say I dreamed a  
 dream  
 "And bid me wake, henceforth no child of  
 theirs, 785  
 "Never in all the time their child at all.  
 "Do you understand? I cannot: yet so it is.
- "Just so I say of you that proffer help:  
 "I cannot understand what prompts your soul,  
 "I simply needs must see that it is so, 790  
 "Only one strange and wonderful thing more.  
 "They came here with me, those two dear  
 ones, kept  
 "All the old love up, till my husband, till  
 "His people here so tortured them, they fled.  
 "And now, is it because I grow in flesh 795  
 "And spirit one with him their torturer,  
 "That they, renouncing him, must cast off  
 me?  
 "If I were graced by God to have a child,  
 "Could I one day deny God graced me so?  
 "Then, since my husband hates me, I shall  
 break 800  
 "No law that reigns in this fell house of hate,  
 "By using—letting have effect so much  
 "Of hate as hides me from that whole of hate  
 "Would take my life which I want and must  
 have—  
 "Just as I take from your excess of love 805  
 "Enough to save my life with, all I need.  
 "The Archbishop said to murder me were  
 sin:  
 "My leaving Guido were a kind of death  
 "With no sin,—more death, he must answer  
 for. 809  
 "Hear now what death to him and life to you  
 "I wish to pay and owe. Take me to Rome!  
 "You go to Rome, the servant makes me  
 hear.  
 "Take me as you would take a dog, I think,  
 "Masterless left for strangers to maltreat:  
 "Take me home like that—leave me in the  
 house 815  
 "Where the father and the mother are; and  
 soon  
 "They'll come to know and call me by my  
 name,  
 "Their child once more; since child I am,  
 for all  
 "They now forget me, which is the worst of  
 the dream—  
 "And the way to end dreams is to break  
 them, stand, 820  
 "Walk, go: then help me to stand; walk  
 and go!

- "The Governor said the strong should help the weak :
- "You know how weak the strongest women are.
- "How could I find my way there by myself?
- "I cannot even call out, make them hear—
- "Just as in dreams : I have tried and proved the fact. 836
- "I have told this story and more to good great men,
- "The Archbishop and the Governor : they smiled.
- "Stop your mouth, fair one !"—presently they frowned,
- "Get you gone, disengage you from our feet !" 839
- "I went in my despair to an old priest,
- "Only a friar, no great man like these two,
- "But good, the Augustinian, people name
- "Romano,—he confessed me two months since :
- "He fears God, why then needs he fear the world ? 835
- "And when he questioned how it came about
- "That I was found in danger of a sin—
- "Despair of any help from providence,—
- "Since, though your husband outrage you," said he, 839
- "That is a case too common, the wives die
- "Or live, but do not sin so deep as this"—
- "Then I told—what I never will tell you—
- "How, worse than husband's hate, I had to bear
- "The love,—soliciting to shame called love,—
- "Of his brother,—the young idle priest i' the house 845
- "With only the devil to meet there. 'This is grave—
- "Yes, we must interfere : I counsel,—write
- "To those who used to be your parents once,
- "Of dangers here, bid them convey you hence !"
- "But," said I, "when I neither read nor write?" 850
- "Then he took pity and promised 'I will write.'
- "If he did so,—why, they are dumb or dead :
- "Either they give no credit to the tale,
- "Or else, wrapped wholly up in their own joy
- "Of such escape, they care not who cries, still 855
- "I' the clutches. Anyhow, no word arrives,
- "All such extravagance and dreadfulness
- "Seems incident to dreaming, cured one way,—
- "Wake me ! The letter I received this morn,
- "Said—if the woman spoke your very sense— 861
- "You would die for me : 'I can believe it now :
- "For now the dream gets to involve yourself,
- "First of all, you seemed wicked and not good,
- "In writing me those letters : you came in
- "Like a thief upon me. I this morning said
- "In my extremity, entreat the thief ! 866
- "Try if he have in him no honest touch !
- "A thief might save me from a murderer.
- "Twas a thief said the last kind word to Christ :
- "Christ took the kindness and forgave the theft : 870
- "And so did I prepare what I now say.
- "But now, that you stand and I see your face,
- "Though you have never uttered word yet, —well, I know,
- "Here too has been dream-work, delusion too, 874
- "And that at no time, you with the eyes here,
- "Ever intended to do wrong by me,
- "Nor wrote such letters therefore. It is false,
- "And you are true, have been true, will be true.
- "To Rome then,—when is it you take me there ? 879
- "Each minute lost is mortal. When?—I ask."
- I answered "It shall be when it can be.
- "I will go hence and do your pleasure, find
- "The sure and speedy means of travel, then
- "Come back and take you to your friends in Rome.
- "There wants a carriage, money and the rest,— 885

"A day's work by to-morrow at this time.  
"How shall I see you and assure escape?"

She replied, "Pass, to-morrow at this hour.

"If I am at the open window, well :

"If I am absent, drop a handkerchief 890

"And walk by ! I shall see from where I watch,

"And know that all is done. Return next eve,

"And next, and so till we can meet and speak !"

"To-morrow at this hour I pass," said I.

She was withdrawn. 895

Here is another point  
I bid you pause at. When I told thus far,  
Someone said, subtly, "Here at least was found

"Your confidence in error,—you perceived

"The spirit of the letters, in a sort, 900

"Had been the lady's, if the body should be

"Supplied by Guido : say, he forged them all !

"Here was the unforger fact—she sent for you,

"Spontaneously elected you to help,

"—What men call, loved you : Guido read her mind, 905

"Gave it expression to assure the world

"The case was just as he foresaw : he wrote,

"She spoke."

Sirs, that first simile serves still,—  
That falsehood of a scorpion hatched, I say, 910

Nowhere i'th world but in Madonna's mouth.

Go on ! Suppose, that falsehood foiled, next eve

Pictured Madonna raised her painted hand,

Fixed the face Rafael bent above the Babe,

On my face as I flung me at her feet : 915

Such miracle vouchsafed and manifest,

Would that prove the first lying tale was true?

Pompilia spoke, and I at once received,

Accepted my own fact, my miracle

Self-authorized and self-explained,—she chose 920

To summon me and signify her choice.

Afterward,—oh ! I gave a passing glance

To a certain ugly cloud-shape, goblin-shred

Of hell-smoke hurrying past the splendid moon

Out now to tolerate no darkness more, 925

And saw right through the thing that tried to pass

For truth and solid, not an empty lie :

"So, he not only forged the words for her

"But words for me, made letters he called mine :

"What I sent, he retained, gave these in place, 930

"All by the mistress-messenger ! As I

"Recognized her, at potency of truth,

"So she, by the crystalline soul, knew me,

"Never mistook the signs. Enough of this—

"Let the wraith go to nothingness again, 935

"Here is the orb, have only thought for her !"

"Thought?" nay, Sirs, what shall follow was not thought :

I have thought sometimes, and thought long and hard.

I have stood before, gone round a serious thing,

Tasked my whole mind to touch and clasp it close, 940

As I stretch forth my arm to touch this bar.

God and man, and what duty I owe both,—

I dare to say I have confronted these

In thought : but no such faculty helped here.

I put forth no thought,—powerless, all that night 945

I paced the city : it was the first Spring.

By the invasion I lay passive to,

In rushed new things, the old were rapt away ;

Alike abolished—the imprisonment

Of the outside air, the inside weight o' the world 950

That pulled me down. Death meant, to spurn the ground,

Soar to the sky,—die well and you do that.

The very immolation made the bliss ;

Death was the heart of life, and all the harm

My folly had crouched to avoid, now proved a veil 955

Hiding all gain my wisdom strove to grasp :

As if the intense centre of the flame

Should turn a heaven to that devoted fly



Which hitherto, sophist alike and sage,  
Saint Thomas<sup>1</sup> with his sober grey goose-  
quill,

And sinner Plato by Cephisian reed,<sup>2</sup>  
Would fain, pretending just the insect's good,  
Whisk off, drive back, consign to shade again.  
Into another state, under new rule  
I knew myself was passing swift and sure;  
Whereof the initiatory pang approached, 966  
Felicitous annoy, as bitter-sweet  
As when the virgin-band, the victors chaste,  
Feel at the end the earthly garments drop,  
And rise with something of a rosy shame 970  
Into immortal nakedness: so I  
Lay, and let come the proper throe would  
thrill

Into the ecstasy and outthrob pain.

I' the grey of dawn it was I found myself  
Facing the pillared front o' the Pieve—mine,  
My church: it seemed to say for the first  
time 976

"But am not I the Bride, the mystic love  
"O' the Lamb, who took thy plighted troth,  
my priest,

"To fold thy warm heart on my heart of stone  
"And freeze thee nor unfasten any more?

"This is a fleshly woman,—let the free 981  
"Bestow their life-blood, thou art pulseless  
now!"

See! Day by day I had risen and left this  
church

At the signal waved me by some foolish fan,  
With half a curse and half a pitying smile 985  
For the monk I stumbled over in my haste,  
Prostrate and corpse-like at the altar-foot  
Intent on his *corona*: then the church  
Was ready with her quip, if word conducted,  
To quicken my pace nor stop for prating—

"There! 990

"Be thankful you are no such ninny, go  
"Rather to teach a black-eyed novice cards  
"Than gabble Latin and protrude that nose  
"Smoothed to a sheep's through no brains  
and much faith!"

<sup>1</sup> Saint Thomas: Aquinas. See note on L 484.  
<sup>2</sup> Cephisian reed: the reeds of Cephissus, one  
of the rivers of Athens.

That sort of insentive! Now the church  
changed tone— 995

Now, when I found out first that life and  
death

Are means to an end, that passion uses both,  
Indisputably mistress of the man

Whose form of worship is self-sacrifice:  
Now, from the stone lungs sighed the acranell  
voice 1000

"Leave that live passion, come be dead with  
me!"

As if, i' the fabled garden,<sup>3</sup> I had gone  
On great adventure, plucked in ignorance  
Hedge-fruit, and feasted to satiety,  
Laughing at such high fame for hips and  
haws, 1005

And scorned the achievement: then come all  
at once

O' the prize o' the place, the thing of perfect  
gold,

The apple's self: and, scarce my eye on that,  
Was 'ware as well o' the seven-fold dragon's  
watch. 1009

Sirs, I obeyed. Obedience was too strange,—  
This new thing that had been struck into me  
By the look o' the lady,—to dare disobey  
The first authoritative word. 'Twas God's.  
I had been lifted to the level of her,  
Could take such sounds into my sense. I  
said 1015

"We two are cognisant o' the Master now;  
"She it is bids me bow the head: how true,  
"I am a priest! I see the function here;  
"I thought the other way self-sacrifice: 1019  
"This is the true, seals up the perfect sum.  
"I pay it, sit down, silently obey."

So, I went home. Dawn broke, noon  
broadened, I—

I sat stone-still, let time run over me. 1025  
The sun slanted into my room, had reached  
The west. I opened book,—Aquinas blazed  
With one black name only on the white page.  
I looked up, saw the sunset: vespers rang:

<sup>3</sup> The fabled garden: of the Hesperides,  
where the golden apple was guarded by a  
dragon.

- "She counts the minutes till I keep my word  
 "And come say all is ready. I am a priest.  
 "Duty to God is duty to her: I think 1030  
 "God, who created her, will save her too  
 "Some new way, by one miracle the more,  
 "Without me. Then, prayer may avail per-  
 haps."
- I went to my own place i' the Pieve, read  
 The office: I was back at home again 1035  
 Sitting i' the dark. "Could she but know—  
 but know  
 "That, were there good in this distinct from  
 God's,  
 "Really good as it reached her, though pro-  
 cured  
 "By a sin of mine,—I should sin: God for-  
 gives.  
 "She knows it is no fear withholds me:  
 fear? 1040  
 "Of what? Suspense here is the terrible  
 thing.  
 "If she should, as she counts the minutes,  
 come  
 "On the fantastic notion that I fear  
 "The world now, fear the Archbishop, fear  
 perhaps  
 "Count Guido, he who, having forged the  
 lies, 1045  
 "May wait the work, attend the effect,—I  
 fear  
 "The sword of Guido! Let God see to that—  
 "Hating lies, let not her believe a lie!"
- Again the morning found me. "I will work,  
 "Tie down my foolish thoughts. Thank  
 God so far! 1050  
 "I have saved her from a scandal, stopped  
 the tongues  
 "Had broken else into a cackle and hiss  
 "Around the noble name. Duty is still  
 "Wisdom: I have been wise." So the day  
 wore.
- At evening—"But, achieving victory, 1055  
 "I must not blink the priest's peculiar part,  
 "Nor shrink to counsel, comfort: priest and  
 friend—  
 "How do we discontinue to be friends?
- "I will go minister, advise her seek 1060  
 "Help at the source,—above all, not despair:  
 "There may be other happier help at hand.  
 "I hope it,—wherefore then neglect to say?"
- There she stood—leaned there, for the second  
 time,  
 Over the terrace, looked at me, then spoke:  
 "Why is it you have suffered me to stay  
 "Breaking my heart two days more than was  
 need? 1065  
 "Why delay help, your own heart yearns to  
 give?  
 "You are again here, in the self-same mind,  
 "I see here, steadfast in the face of you,—  
 "You grudge to do no one thing that I ask.  
 "Why then is nothing done? You know my  
 need. 1070  
 "Still, through God's pity on me, there is time  
 "And one day more: shall I be saved or no?"  
 I answered—"Lady, waste no thought, no  
 word  
 "Even to forgive me! Care for what I  
 care— 1075  
 "Only! Now follow me as I were fate!  
 "Leave this house in the dark to-morrow  
 night,  
 "Just before daybreak:—there's new moon  
 this eve—  
 "It sets, and then begins the solid black.  
 "Descend, proceed to the Torrione, step  
 "Over the low dilapidated wall, 1080  
 "Take San Clemente, there's no other gate  
 "Unguarded at the hour: some paces thence  
 "An inn stands; cross to it; I shall be there."
- She answered, "If I can but find the way.  
 But I shall find it. Go now!" 1085
- I did go,  
 Took rapidly the route myself prescribed,  
 Stopped at Torrione, climbed the ruined place,  
 Proved that the gate was practicable, reached  
 The inn, no eye, despite the dark, could  
 miss, 1090  
 Knocked there and entered, made the host  
 secure:  
 "With Caponsacchi it is ask and have;

"I know my betters. Are you bound for  
 Rome? 1094  
 "I get swift horse and trusty man," said he.  
 Then I retraced my steps, was found once more  
 In my own house for the last time: there lay  
 The broad pale opened Summa. "Shut his  
 book,  
 "There's other showing! 'Twas a Thomas  
 too  
 "Obtained,—more favoured than his name-  
 sake here,— 1100  
 "A gift, tied faith fast, foiled the tug of  
 doubt,—  
 "Our Lady's girdle; down he saw it drop  
 "As she ascended into heaven, they say:  
 "He kept that safe and bade all doubt adieu.  
 "I too have seen a lady and hold a grace."  
 I know not how the night passed: morning  
 broke; 1106  
 Presently came my servant. "Sir, this eve—  
 "Do you forget?" I started. "How forget?  
 "What is it you know?" "With due sub-  
 mission, Sir,  
 "This being last Monday in the month but  
 one 1110  
 "And a vigil, since to-morrow is Saint George,  
 "And feast day, and moreover day for copes,  
 "And Canon Conti now away a month,  
 "And Canon Crispi sour because, forsooth,  
 "You let him sulk in stall and bear the  
 brunt 1115  
 "Of the octave . . . Well, Sir, 'tis impor-  
 tant!"  
 "True!  
 "Hearken, I have to start for Rome this night.  
 "No word, lest Crispi overboil and burst!  
 "Provide me with a laic dress! Throw dust  
 "I' the Canon's eye, stop his tongue's scandal  
 so! 1121  
 "See there's a sword in case of accident."  
 I knew the knave, the knave knew me.  
 And thus  
 Through each familiar hindrance of the  
 day 1125  
 Did I make steadily for its hour and end,—  
 Felt time's old barrier-growth of right and fit  
 Give way through all its twines, and let me go.  
 Use and wont recognized the excepted man,  
 Let speed the special service,—and I sped  
 Till, at the dead between midnight 1131  
 morn,  
 There was I at the goal, before the gate,  
 With a tune in the ears, low leading up to loud,  
 A light in the eyes, faint that would soon be  
 flare,  
 Ever some spiritual witness new and new  
 In faster frequency, crowding solitude 1136  
 To watch the way o' the warfare,—till, at last,  
 When the ecstatic minute must bring birth,  
 Began a whiteness in the distance, waxed  
 Whiter and whiter, near grew and more  
 near, 1141  
 Till it was she: there did Pompilia come:  
 The white I saw shine through her was her  
 soul's,  
 Certainly, for the body was one black,  
 Black from head down to foot. She did not  
 speak,  
 Glided into the carriage,—so a cloud 1145  
 Gathers the moon up. "By San Spirito,  
 "To Rome, as if the road burned under  
 neath!  
 "Reach Rome, then hold my head in pledge.  
 I pay  
 "The run and the risk to heart's content!"  
 Just that  
 I said,—then, in another tick of time, 1151  
 Sprang, was beside her, she and I alone.  
 So it began, our flight thro' dusk to clear,  
 Through day and night and day again to night  
 Once more, and to last dreadful dawn of all.  
 Sirs, how should I lie quiet in my grave 1155  
 Unless you suffer me wring, drop by drop,  
 My brain dry, make a riddance of the drench  
 Of minutes with a memory in each,  
 Recorded motion, breath or look of hers,  
 Which poured forth would present you one  
 pure glass, 1160  
 Mirror you plain,—as God's sea, glassed in  
 gold,  
 His saints,—the perfect soul Pompilia?  
 Men,

You must know that a man gets drunk with  
truth  
Stagnant inside him! Oh, they've killed  
her, Sirs!  
Can I be calm? 1185  
Calmly! Each incident  
Proves, I maintain, that action of the flight  
For the true thing it was. The first faint  
scratch  
O' the stone will test its nature, teach its  
worth  
To idiots who name Parian—coprolite. 1170  
After all, I shall give no glare—at best  
Only display you certain scattered lights  
Lamping the rush and roll of the abyss:  
Nothing but here and there a fire-point pricks  
Wavelet from wavelet: well! 1175  
For the first hour  
We both were silent in the night, I know:  
Sometimes I did not see nor understand.  
Blackness engulfed me,—partial stupor,  
say—  
Then I would break way, breathe through  
the surprise, 1180  
And be aware again, and see who sat  
In the dark vest with the white face and  
hands.  
I said to myself—"I have caught it, I  
conceive  
"The mind o' the mystery: 'tis the way  
they wake  
"And wait, two martyrs somewhere in a  
tomb 1185  
"Each by each as their blessing was to die;  
"Some signal they are promised and expect,—  
"When to arise before the trumpet scares:  
"So, through the whole course of the world  
they wait  
"The last day, but so fearless and so safe!  
"No otherwise, in safety and not fear, 1190  
"I lie, because she lies too by my side."  
You know this is not love, Sirs,—it is faith,  
The feeling that there's God, he reigns and  
rules  
Out of this low world: that is all; no  
harm! 1195  
At times she drew a soft sigh—music  
seemed  
Always to hover just above her lips,  
Not settle,—break a silence music too.  
In the determined morning, I first found  
Her head erect, her face turned full to  
me, 1200  
Her soul intent on mine through two wide  
eyes.  
I answered them. "You are saved hitherto.  
"We have passed Perugia,—gone round by  
the wood,  
"Not through, I seem to think,—and op-  
posite  
"I know Assisi; this is holy ground."  
Then she resumed. "How long since we  
both left 1205  
"Arezzo?" "Years—and certain hours  
beside."  
It was at . . . ah, but I forget the names!  
'Tis a mere post-house and a hovel or two;  
I left the carriage and got bread and wine  
And brought it her. "Does it detain to  
eat?" 1211  
"They stay perforce, change horses,—there-  
fore eat!  
"We lose no minute: we arrive, be sure!"  
This was—I know not where—there's a great  
hill 1214  
Close over, and the stream has lost its bridge,  
One fords it. She began—"I have heard say  
"Of some sick body that my mother knew,  
"Twas no good sign when in a limb diseased  
"All the pain suddenly departs,—as if  
"The guardian angel discontinued pain 1220  
"Because the hope of cure was gone at last:  
"The limb will not again exert itself,  
"It needs be pained no longer: so with me,  
"—My soul whence all the pain is past at  
once:  
"All pain must be to work some good in  
the end. 1225  
"True, this I feel now, this may be that  
good,  
"Pain was because of,—otherwise, I fear!"  
She said,—a long while later in the day,  
When I had let the silence be,—abrupt—

"Have you a mother?" "She died, I was born." 1280

"A sister then?" "No sister." "Who was it—

"What woman were you used to serve this way,

"Be kind to, till I called you and you came?"

[I did not like that word. Soon afterward—

"Tell me, are men unhappy, in some kind

"Of mere unhappiness at being men, 1285

"As women suffer, being womanish?

"Have you, now, some unhappiness, I mean,

"Born of what may be man's strength overmuch,

"To match the undue susceptibility, 1290

"The sense at every pore when hate is close?

"It hurts us if a baby hides its face

"Or child strikes at us punily, calls names

"Or makes a mouth,—much more if stranger men

"Laugh or frown,—just as that were much to bear! 1295

"Yet rocks split,—and the blow-ball does no more,

"Quivers to feathery nothing at a touch;

"And strength may have its drawback weakness 'scapes."

Once she asked "What is it that made you smile,

"At the great gate with the eagles and the snakes, 1299

"Where the company entered, 'tis a long time since?"

"—Forgive—I think you would not understand:

"Ah, but you ask me,—therefore, it was this.

"That was a certain bishop's villa-gate,

"I knew it by the eagles,—and at once 1305

"Remembered this same bishop was just he

"People of old were wont to bid me please

"If I would catch preferment: so, I smiled

"Because an impulse came to me, a whim—

"What if I prayed the prelate leave to speak,

"Began upon him in his presence-hall 1311

"—What, still at work so grey and obsolete?

"Still roched and mitred more or less?

"Don't you feel all that out of fashion now?

"I find out when the day of things is done!" 1265

At eve we heard the *angelus*: she turned—

"I told you I can neither read nor write.

"My life stopped with the play-time; I will learn,

"If I begin to live again: but you—

"Who are a priest—wherefore do you not read 1270

"The service at this hour? Read Gabriel's song,

"The lesson, and then read the little prayer

"To Raphael, proper for us travellers!"

I did not like that, neither, but I read.

When we stopped at Foligno it was dark. 1275

The people of the post came out with lights:

The driver said, "This time to-morrow, may

"Saints only help, relays continue good,

"Nor robbers hinder, we arrive at Rome."

I urged, "Why tax your strength a second night? 1280

"Trust me, alight here and take brief repose!

"We are out of harm's reach, past pursuit: go sleep

"If but an hour! I keep watch, guard the while

"Here in the doorway." But her whole face changed,

The misery grew again about her mouth,

The eyes burned up from faintness, like the fawn's 1285

Tired to death in the thicket, when she feels

The probing spear o' the huntsman. "Oh, no stay!"

She cried, in the fawn's cry, "On to Rome, on, on—

"Unless 'tis you who fear,—which cannot be!" 1290

We did go on all night; but at its close

She was troubled, restless, moaned low, talked at whites

To herself, her brow on quiver with the dream:

Once, wide awake, she menaced, at arms'  
length

Waved away something—"Never again with  
you!" 1296

"My soul is mine, my body is my soul's:

"You and I are divided ever more

"In soul and body: get you gone!" Then I—

"Why, in my whole life I have never prayed!

"Oh, if the God, that only can, would  
help!" 1

"Am I his priest with power to cast out  
fiends?

"Let God arise and all his enemies

"Be scattered!" By morn, there was peace,  
no sigh

Out of the deep sleep.

When she woke at last,  
I answered the first look—"Scarce twelve  
hours more," 1306

"Then, Rome! There probably was no  
pursuit,

"There cannot now be peril: bear up brave!

"Just some twelve hours to press through to  
the prize:

"Then, no more of the terrible journey!"

"Then," 1310

"No more o' the journey: if it might but last!

"Always, my life-long, thus to journey still!

"It is the interruption that I dread,—

"With no dread, ever to be here and thus!

"Never to see a face nor hear a voice!

"Yours is no voice; you speak when you  
are dumb;" 1316

"Nor face, I see it in the dark. I want

"No face nor voice that change and grow  
unkind."

That I liked, that was the best thing she said.

In the broad day, I dared entreat, "De-  
scend!" 1320

I told a woman, at the garden-gate

By the post-house, white and pleasant in the  
sun,

"It is my sister,—talk with her apart!

"She is married and unhappy, you perceive;

"I take her home because her head is  
hurt;" 1325

"Comfort her as you women understand!"

So, there I left them by the garden-wall,

Faced the road, then bade put the horses to,

Cameback, and there she sat: close to her knee,

A black-eyed child still held the bowl of  
milk, 1330

Wondered to see how little she could drink,

And in her arms the woman's infant lay.

She smiled at me "How much good this  
has done!

"This is a whole night's rest and how much  
more!"

"I can proceed now, though I wish to stay.

"How do you call that tree with the thick  
top" 1336

"That holds in all its leafy green and gold

"The sun now like an immense egg of fire?"

(It was a million-leaved mimosa.) "Take

"The babe away from me and let me  
go!" 1340

And in the carriage "Still a day, my friend!

"And perhaps half a night, the woman fears.

"I pray it finish since it cannot last:

"There may be more misfortune at the close,

"And where will you be? God suffice me  
then!" 1346

And presently—for there was a roadside-  
shrine—

"When I was taken first to my own church

"Lorenzo in Lucina, being a girl,

"And bid! confess my faults, I interposed

"But teach me what fault to confess and  
know!" 1350

"So, the priest said—"You should bethink  
yourself:—

"Each human being needs must have done  
wrong!"

"Now, be you candid and no priest but  
friend—

"Were I surprised and killed here on the spot,

"A runaway from husband and his home,

"Do you account it were in sin I died?" 1356

"My husband used to seem to harm me.  
not . . .

"Not on pretence he punished sin of mine,

"Nor for sin's sake and lust of cruelty, 1359

"But as I heard him bid a farming-man

"At the villa take a lamb once to the wood

"And there ill-treat it, meaning that the wolf  
"Should hear its cries, and so come, quick  
be caught,

"Enticed to the trap: he practised thus with  
me 1364

"That so, whatever were his gain thereby,  
"Others than I might become prey and spoil.

"Had it been only between our two selves,—

"His pleasure and my pain,—why, pleasure  
him

"By dying, nor such need to make a coil!

"But this was worth an effort, that my pain

"Should not become a snare, prove pain  
threefold 1371

"To other people—strangers—or unborn—

"How should I know? I sought release  
from that—

"I think, or else from,—dare I say, some  
cause

"Such as is put into a tree, which turns

"Away from the north wind with what nest  
it holds,— 1376

"The woman said that trees so turn: now,  
friend,

"Tell me, because I cannot trust myself!

"You are a man: what have I done amiss?"

You must conceive my answer,—I forget— 1380

Taken up wholly with the thought, perhaps,

This time she might have said,—might, did  
not say—

"You are a priest." She said, "my friend."

Day wore,

We passed the places, somehow the calm  
went, 1385

Again the restless eyes began to rove

In new fear of the foe mine could not see.

She wandered in her mind,—addressed me  
once

"Gaetano!"<sup>1</sup>—that is not my name: whose  
name?

I grew alarmed, my head seemed turning too.

I quickened pace with promise now, now  
threat: 1391

Bade drive and drive, nor any stopping more.

"Too deep!" the thick of the struggle, struggle  
through!

"Then drench her in repose though death's  
self pour

"The plenitude of quiet,—help us, God, 1396

"Whom the winds carry!"

Suddenly I saw

The old tower, and the little white-walled  
clump

Of buildings and the cypress-tree or two,—

"Already Castelnuovo—Rome!" I cried,

"As good as Rome,—Rome is the next stage,  
think! 1401

"This is where travellers' hearts are wont to  
beat.

"Say you are saved, sweet lady!" Up she  
woke.

The sky was fierce with colour from the sun  
Setting. She screamed out "No, I must

not die! 1405

"Take me no farther, I should die: stay here!

"I have more life to save than mine!"

She swooned.

We seemed safe: what was it foreboded so?

Out of the coach into the inn I bore 1410

The motionless and breathless pure and pale

Pompilia,—bore her through a pitying group

And laid her on a couch, still calm and cured

By deep sleep of all woes at once. The host

Was urgent "Let her stay an hour or two! 1415

"Leave her to us, all will be right by morn!"

Oh, my foreboding! But I could not choose.

I paced the passage, kept watch all night  
long.

I listened,—not one movement, not one sigh.

"Fear not: she sleeps so sound!" they said:  
but I 1420

Feared, all the same, kept fearing more and  
more,

Found myself throb with fear from head to  
foot,

Filled with a sense of such impending woe,

That, at first pause of night, pretence of gray,

I made my mind up it was morn.—"Reach  
Rome, 1425

"Lest hell reach her! A dozen miles to  
make,

"Another long breath, and we emerge!" I  
stood

<sup>1</sup> *Gaetano*: see Book VII. ll. 100-105.

- I' the court-yard, roused the sleepy grooms.  
 "Have out  
 "Carriage and horse, give haste, take gold!"  
 said I. 1429  
 While they made ready in the doubtful morn,—  
 'Twas the last minute,—needs must I ascend  
 And break her sleep; I turned to go.  
 And there  
 Faced me Count Guido, there posed the mean  
 man  
 As master,—took the field, encamped hi  
 rights, 143  
 Challenged the world: there leered new  
 triumph, there  
 Scowled the old malice in the visage bad  
 And black o' the scamp. Soon triumph  
 supplied the tongue  
 A little, malice glued to his dry throat,  
 And he part howled, part hissed . . . oh,  
 how he kept 1440  
 Well out o' the way, at arm's length and to  
 spare!—  
 "My salutation to your priesthood! What?  
 "Matutinal, busy with book so soon  
 "Of an April day that's damp as tears that  
 now  
 "Deluge Arezzo at its darling's flight!— 1445  
 "'Tis unfair, wrongs femininity at large,  
 "To let a single dame monopolize  
 "A heart the whole sex claims, should share  
 alike:  
 "Therefore I overtake you, Canon! Come!  
 "The lady,—could you leave her side so  
 soon? 1450  
 "You have not yet experienced at her hands  
 "My treatment, you lay down undrugged,  
 I see!  
 "Hence this alertness—hence no death-in-life  
 "Like what held arms fast when she stole  
 from mine. 1454  
 "To be sure, you took the solace and repose  
 "That first night at Foligno!—news abound  
 "O' the road by this time,—men regaled me  
 much,  
 "As past them I came halting after you,  
 "Vulcan pursuing Mars, as poets sing,—  
 "Still at the last here pant I, but arrive, 1460  
 "Vulcan—and not without my Cyclops too,  
 "The Commissary and the unpoisoned arm  
 "O' the Civil Force, should Mars turn  
 mutineer.  
 "Enough of fooling: capture the culprits,  
 friend! 1464  
 "Here is the lover in the smart disguise  
 "With the sword,—he is a priest, so mine  
 lies still.  
 "There upstairs hides my wife the runaway,  
 "His leman: the two plotted, poisoned first,  
 "Plundered me after, and eloped thus far .  
 "Where now you find them. Do your duty  
 quick! 1470  
 "Arrest and hold him! That's done: now  
 catch her!"  
 During this speech of that man,—well, I  
 stood  
 Away, as he managed,—still, I stood as near  
 The throat of him,—with these two hands,  
 my own,—  
 As now I stand near yours, Sir,—one quick  
 spring, 1475  
 One great good satisfying gripe, and lo!  
 There had he lain abolished with his lie,  
 Creation purged o' the miscreate, man re-  
 deemed,  
 A spittle wiped off from the face of God!  
 I, in some measure, seek a poor excuse 1480  
 For what I left undone, in just this fact  
 That my first feeling at the speech I quote  
 Was—not of what a blasphemy was dared,  
 Not what a bag of venomous purulence 1484  
 Was split and noisome,—but how splendidly  
 Mirthful, how ludicrous a lie was launched!  
 Would Molière's self wish more than hear  
 such man  
 Call, claim such woman for his own, his wife,  
 Even though, in due amazement at the boast  
 He had stammered, she moreover was divine  
 She to be his,—were hardly less absurd 1488  
 Than that he took her name into his mouth  
 Licked, and then let it go again, the beast,  
 Signed with his slaver. Oh, she poisoned  
 him,  
 Plundered him, and the rest! Well, what I  
 wished 1495  
 Was, that he would but go on, say once more  
 So to the world, and get his meed of men,



The fist's reply to the filth. And while I  
mused,

The minute, oh the misery, was gone !  
On either idle hand of me there stood 1800  
Really an officer, nor laughed i' the least :  
Nay, rendered justice to his reason, laid  
Logic to heart, as 'twere submitted them  
"Twice two makes four."

"And now, catch her !" he cried.  
That sobered me. "Let myself lead the  
way— 1806

"Ere you arrest me, who am somebody,  
"Being, as you hear, a priest and privi-  
leged,—

"To the lady's chamber ! I presume you—  
men 1809

"Expert, instructed how to find out truth,  
"Familiar with the guise of guilt. Detect  
"Guilt on her face when it meets mine, then  
judge

"Between us and the mad dog howling  
there !"

Up we all went together, in they broke  
O' the chamber late my chapel. There she  
lay, 1815

Composed as when I laid her, that last eve,  
O' the couch, still breathless, motionless,  
sleep's self,

Wax-white, seraphic, saturate with the sun  
O' the morning that now flooded from the  
front

And filled the window with a light like  
blood. 1820

"Behold the poisoner, the adulteress,  
"—And feigning sleep too ! Seize, bind !"  
Guido hissed.

She started up, stood erect, face to face  
With the husband : back he fell, was but-  
tressed there 1824

By the window all a flame with morning-red,  
He the black figure, the opprobrious blur  
Against all peace and joy and light and life.  
"Away from between me and hell !" she  
cried :

"Hell for me, no embracing any more !  
"I am God's, I love God, God—whose knees  
I clasp, 1830

"Whose utterly most just award I take,  
"But bear no more love-making devils :  
hence !"

I may have made an effort to reach her side  
From where I stood i' the door-way,—anyhow  
I found the arms, I wanted, pinioned fast,  
Was powerless in the clutch to left and  
right 1836

O' the rabble pouring in, rascality  
Enlisted, rampant on the side of hearth  
Home and the husband,—pay in prospect  
too !

They heaped themselves upon me. "Ha !  
—and him 1840

"Also you outrage ? Him, too, my sole  
friend,

"Guardian and saviour ? That I baulk you of,  
"Since—see how God can help at last and  
worst !"

She sprang at the sword that hung beside  
him, seized,

Drew, brandished it, the sunrise burned for  
joy 1845

O' the blade, "Die," cried she, "devil, in  
God's name !"

Ah, but they all closed round her, twelve to  
one

—The unmanly men, no woman-mother  
made,

Spawned somehow ! Dead-white and dis-  
armed she lay. 1849

No matter for the sword, her word sufficed  
To spike the coward through and through :  
he shook,

Could only spit between the teeth—"You see ?  
"You hear ? Bear witness, then ! Write  
down . . . but no—

"Carry these criminals to the prison-house,  
"For first thing ! I begin my search mean-  
while 1855

"After the stolen effects, gold, jewels, plate,  
"Money and clothes, they robbed me of and  
fled,

"With no few amorous pieces, verse and prose,  
"I have much reason to expect to find."

When I saw that—no more than the first mad  
speech, 1860

Made out the speaker mad and a laughing-stock,

So neither did this next device explode  
One listener's indignation,—that a scribe  
Did sit down, set himself to write indeed,  
While sundry knaves began to peer and pry  
In corner and hole,—that Guido, wiping  
brow

And getting him a countenance, was fast  
Losing his fear, beginning to strut free  
O' the stage of his explicit, snuff here, sniff  
there,—

Then I took truth in, guessed sufficiently  
The service for the moment. "What I say,  
"Slight at your peril! We are aliens here,  
"My adversary and I, called noble both;  
"I am the nobler, and a name men know.  
"I could refer our cause to our own Court  
"In our own country, but prefer appeal  
"To the nearer jurisdiction. Being a priest,  
"Though in a secular garb,—for reasons good  
"I shall adduce in due time to my peers,—  
"I demand that the Church I serve, de-  
cide  
"Between us, right the slandered lady there.  
"A Tuscan noble, I might claim the Duke:  
"A priest, I rather choose the Church,—bid  
Rome

"Cover the wronged with her inviolate shield."

There was no refusing this: they bore me  
off,

They bore her off, to separate cells o' the same  
Ignoble prison, and, separate, thence to Rome.  
Pompilia's face, then and thus, looked on me  
The last time in this life: not one sight since,  
Never another sight to be! And yet  
I thought I had saved her. I appealed to  
Rome:

It seems I simply sent her to her death.  
You tell me she is dying now, or dead;  
I cannot bring myself to quite believe  
This is a place you torture people in:  
What if this your intelligence were just  
A subtlety, an honest wile to work  
On a man at unawares? "Twere worthy you.  
No, Sirs, I cannot have the lady dead!  
That erect form, flashing brow, fulgurant eye,

That voice immortal (oh, that voice of hers!)  
That vision in the blood-red day-break—that  
Leap to life of the pale electric sword  
Angels go armed with,—that was not the last  
O' the lady! Come, I see through it, you  
find—

Know the manoeuvre! Also herself said  
I had saved her: do you dare say she spoke  
false?

Let me see for myself if it be so!  
Though she were dying, a Priest might be of  
use,

The more when he's a friend too,—she called  
me  
Far beyond "friend." Come, let me see her  
—indeed

It is my duty, being a priest: I hope  
I stand confessed, established, proved a priest?  
My punishment had motive that, a priest  
I, in a laic garb, a mundane mode,  
Did what were harmlessly done otherwise.  
I never touched her with my finger-tip  
Except to carry her to the couch, that eve,  
Against my heart, beneath my head, bowed  
low,

As we priests carry the paten: that is why  
—To get leave and go see her of your grace—  
I have told you this whole story over again.  
Do I deserve grace? For I might lock lips,  
Laugh at your jurisdiction: what have you  
To do with me in the matter? I suppose  
You hardly think I donned a bravo's dress  
To have a hand in the new crime; on the old,  
Judgment's delivered, penalty imposed,  
I was chained fast at Civita hand and foot—  
She had only you to trust to, you and Rome,  
Rome and the Church, and no pert meddling  
priest

Two days ago, when Guido, with the right,  
Hacked her to pieces. One might well be  
wroth;

I have been patient, done my best to help:  
I come from Civita and punishment  
As friend of the Court—and for pure friend-  
ship's sake

Have told my tale to the end,—nay, not the  
end—

For, wait—'I'll end—not leave you that excuse!

When we were parted,—shall I go on there?  
I was presently brought to Rome—yes, here

I stood 1640

Opposite yonder very crucifix—

And there sat you and you, Sirs, quite the  
same.

I heard charge, and bore question, and told  
tale

Noted down in the book there,—turn and  
see

If, by one jot or tittle, I vary now! 1645

I' the colour the tale takes, there's change  
perhaps;

'Tis natural, since the sky is different,  
Eclipse in the air now; still, the outline  
stays.

I showed you how it came to be my part  
To save the lady. Then your clerk pro-  
duced 1650

Papers, a pack of stupid and impure  
Banalities called letters about love—

Love, indeed,—I could teach who styled  
them so,

Better, I think, though priest and loveless  
both! 1654

—How was it that a wife, young, innocent,  
“And stranger to your person, wrote this  
page?”—

—She wrote it when the Holy Father wrote

“The bestiality that posts thro' Rome,

“Put in his mouth by Pasquin.”<sup>1</sup> “Nor  
perhaps

“Did you return these answers, verse and  
prose, 1660

“Signed, sealed and sent the lady? There's  
your hand!”

—This precious piece of verse, I really judge,

“Is meant to copy my own character,

“A clumsy mimic; and this other prose,

“Not so much even; both rank forgery:

“Verse, quotha? Bembo's<sup>2</sup> verse! When  
Saint John wrote 1665

“The tract ‘*De Tribus*,’<sup>3</sup> I wrote this to  
match.”

—How came it, then, the documents were  
found

“At the inn on your departure?”—“I opine,

“Because there were no documents to find

“In my presence,—you must hide before  
you find. 1671

“Who forged them hardly practised in my  
view;

“Who found them waited till I turned my  
back.”

—And what of the clandestine visits paid,

“Nocturnal passage in and out the house

“With its lord absent? 'Tis alleged you  
climbed . . .” 1675

—Flew on a broomstick to the man i' the  
moon!

“Who witnessed or will testify this trash?”

—The trusty servant, Margherita's self,

“Even she who brought you letters, you  
confess, 1680

“And, you confess, took letters in reply:

“Forget not we have knowledge of the facts!”

—Sirs, who have knowledge of the facts.  
defray

“The expenditure of wit I waste in vain,

“Trying to find out just one fact of all!

“She who brought letters from who could  
not write, 1685

“And took back letters to who could not  
read,—

“Who was that messenger, of your charity?”

—Well, so far favours you the circumstance

“That this same messenger . . . how shall  
we say? . . . 1690

*Sub imputatione meretricis*

“*Laborat*,<sup>4</sup>—which makes accusation null:

“We waive this woman's: nought makes  
void the next.

“Borsi, called Venerino, he who drove,

“O' the first night when you fled away, at  
length 1695

<sup>1</sup> *Pasquin*: the name given to a statue in Rome (from Pasquino, a cobbler, whose shop opposite to it was a centre of gossip) on which anonymous squibs were posted.

<sup>2</sup> *Bembo*: secretary to Pope Leo X., and a well-known man of letters (1470-1547).

<sup>3</sup> *De Tribus*: the tract “*De Tribus Impostoribus*” (Moses, Mahomet, and Christ), often referred to in the Middle Ages.

<sup>4</sup> *Sub imputatione meretricis laborat*: “labours under the imputation of unchastity.”

"Deposes to your kissings in the coach,  
 "—Frequent, frenetic . . ." "When de-  
 posed he so?"

"After some weeks of sharp imprison-  
 ment . . ."

"—Granted by friend the Governor, I  
 engage—"

"—For his participation in your flight ! 1700

"At length his obduracy melting made

"The avowal mentioned . . ." "Was dis-  
 missed forthwith

"To liberty, poor knave, for recompense.

"Sirs, give what credit to the lie you can !

"For me, no word in my defence I speak,

"And God shall argue for the lady !" 1703

So

Did I stand question, and make answer, still

With the same result of smiling disbelief,

Polite impossibility of faith 1710

In such affected virtue in a priest ;

But a showing fair play, an indulgence, even,

To one no worse than others after all—

Who had not brought disgrace to the order,  
 played

Discreetly, ruffled gown nor ripped the cloth

In a bungling game at romps : I have told  
 you, Sirs— 1718

If I pretended simply to be pure

Honest and Christian in the case,—absurd !

As well go boast myself above the needs

O' the human nature, careless how meat  
 smells, 1720

Wine tastes,—a saint above the smack ! But  
 once

Abate my crest, own flaws i' the flesh, agree

To go with the herd, be hog no more nor less,

Why, hogs in common herd have common  
 rights :

I must not be unduly borne upon, 1725

Who just romanced a little, sowed wild oats,

But 'scaped without a scandal, flagrant fault.

My name helped to a mirthful circumstance :

'Joseph' would do well to amend his plea :

Undoubtedly—some toying with the wife,

But as for ruffian violence and rape, 1731

Potiphar pressed too much on the other side !

The intrigue, the elopement, the disguise,—  
 well charged !

The letters and verse looked hardly like the  
 truth. 1734

Your apprehension was—of guilt enough

To be compatible with innocence,

So, punished best a little and not too much.

Had I struck Guido Franceschini's face,

You had counselled me withdraw for my own  
 sake,

Baulk him of bravo-hiring. Friends came  
 round, 1740

Congratulated, "Nobody mistakes !

"The pettiness o' the forfeiture defines .

"The peccadillo : Guido gets his share :

"His wife is free of husband and hook-nose,

"The mouldy viands and the mother-in-law.

"To Civita with you and amuse the time,

"Travesty us '*De Raptu Helena* !' 1747

"A funny figure must the husband cut

"When the wife makes him skip,—too  
 ticklish, eh ?

"Do it in Latin, not the Vulgar, then !

"Scasons<sup>1</sup>—we'll copy and send his Emi-  
 nence. 1751

"Mind—one iambus in the final foot !

"He'll rectify it, be your friend for life !"

Oh, Sirs, depend on me for much new light

Thrown on the justice and religion here

By this proceeding, much fresh food for  
 thought ! 1754

And I was just set down to study these

In relegation, two short days ago,

Admiring how you read the rules, when, clap,  
 A thunder comes into my solitude— 1760

I am caught up in a whirlwind and cast here,

Told of a sudden, in this room where so late

You dealt out law adroitly, that those scales,

I meekly bowed to, took my allotment from,

Guido has snatched at, broken in your hands,

Metes to himself the murder of his wife, 1768

Full measure, pressed down, running over now !

Can I assist to an explanation ?—Yes,

I rise in your esteem, sagacious Sirs,

Stand up a renderer of reasons, not 1774

The officious priest would personate Saint  
 George

<sup>1</sup> *Scasons*: iambic verses, with a spondee in the final foot instead of an iambus.

For a mock Princess in undragoned days. :  
 What, the blood startles you? What, after all  
 The priest who needs must carry sword on thigh  
 May find imperative use for it? Then, there  
 was 1776  
 A Princess, was a dragon belching flame,  
 And should have been a Saint George also?  
 Then,  
 There might be worse schemes than to break  
 the bonds  
 At Arezzo, lead her by the little hand,  
 Till she reached Rome, and let her try to live?  
 But you were law and gospel,—would one  
 please 1781  
 Stand back, allow your faculty elbow-room?  
 You blind guides who must needs lead eyes  
 that see!  
 Fools, alike ignorant of man and God!  
 What was there here should have perplexed  
 your wit 1785  
 For a wink of the owl-eyes of you? How  
 miss, then,  
 What's now forced on you by this flarc of fact—  
 As if Saint Peter failed to recognize  
 Nero as no apostle, John or James, 1789  
 Till someone burned a martyr, made a torch  
 O' the blood and fat to show his features by!  
 Could you fail read this cartulary aright  
 On head and front of Franceschini there,  
 Large-lettered like hell's masterpiece of  
 print,— 1794  
 That he, from the beginning pricked at heart  
 By some lust, letch of hate against his wife,  
 Plotted to plague her into overt sin  
 And shame, would slay Pompilia body and  
 soul,  
 And save his mean self—miserably caught  
 I' the quagmire of his own tricks, cheats and  
 lies? 1800  
 —That himself wrote those papers,—from  
 himself  
 To himself,—whilst, i' the name of me and her,  
 His mistress-messenger gave her and me,  
 Touching us with such pustules of the soul  
 That she and I might take the taint, be  
 shown 1805  
 To the world and shuddered over, speckled so?  
 —That the agent put her sense into my words,  
 Made substitution of the thing she hoped,  
 For the thing she had and held, its opposite,  
 While the husband in the background bit his  
 lips 1810  
 At each fresh failure of his precious plot?  
 —That when at the last we did rush each on  
 each,  
 By no chance but because God willed it so—  
 The spark of truth was struck from out our  
 souls— 1814  
 Made all of me, descried in the first glance,  
 Seem fair and honest and permissible love  
 O' the good and true—as the first glance told  
 me  
 There was no duty patent in the world  
 Like daring try be good and true myself,  
 Leaving the shows of things to the Lord of  
 Show 1820  
 And Prince o' the Power of the Air. Our  
 very flight,  
 Even to its most ambiguous circumstance,  
 Irrefragably proved how futile, false . . .  
 Why, men—men and not boys—boys and not  
 babes—  
 Babes and not beasts—beasts and not stocks  
 and stones!— 1825  
 Had the liar's lie been true one pin-point speck,  
 Were I the accepted suitor, free o' the place,  
 Disposer of the time, to come at a call  
 And go at a wink as who should say me nay,—  
 What need of flight, what were the gain  
 therefrom 1830  
 But just damnation, failure or success?  
 Damnation pure and simple to her the wife  
 And me the priest—who bartered private bliss  
 For public reprobation, the safe shade 1834  
 For the sunshine which men see to pelt me by:  
 What other advantage,—we who led the days  
 And nights alone i' the house,—was flight to  
 find?  
 In our whole journey did we stop an hour,  
 Diverge a foot from straight road till we  
 reached  
 Or would have reached—but for that fate of  
 ours— 1840  
 The father and mother, in the eye of Rome,  
 The eye of yourselves we made aware of us  
 At the first fall of misfortune? And indeed

You did so far give sanction to our flight,  
Confirm its purpose, as lend helping hand,  
Deliver up Pompilia not to him 1866  
She fled, but those the flight was ventured  
for.

Why then could you, who stopped short, not  
go on

One poor step more, and justify the means,  
Having allowed the end?—not see and say  
“Here’s the exceptional conduct that should  
claim 1881

“To be exceptionally judged on rules  
“Which, understood, make no exception  
here”—

Why play instead into the devil’s hands  
By dealing so ambiguously as gave 1835  
Guido the power to intervene like me,  
Prove one exception more? I saved his wife  
Against law : against law he slays her now :  
Deal with him !

I have done with being judged.  
I stand here guiltless in thought, word and  
deed, 1861  
To the point that I apprise you,—in contempt  
For all misapprehending ignorance  
O’ the human heart, much more the mind of  
Christ,—

That I assuredly did bow, was blessed 1865  
By the revelation of Pompilia. There !  
Such is the final fact I fling you, Sirs,  
To mouth and mumble and misinterpret :  
there !

“The priest’s in love,” have it the vulgar  
way !

Unpriest me, rend the rags o’ the vestment,  
do— 1870

Degrade deep, disenfranchise all you dare—  
Remove me from the midst, no longer priest  
And fit companion for the like of you—  
Your gay Abati with the well-turned leg  
And rose i’ the hat-rim, Canons, cross at  
neck 1875

And silk mask in the pocket of the gown,  
Brisk Bishops with the world’s musk still  
unbrushed

From the rochet ; I’ll no more of these good  
things :

There’s a crack somewhere, something that’s  
unsound  
I’ the rattle ! 1880

For Pompilia—be advised,  
Build churches, go pray ! You will find me  
there,  
I know, if you come,—and you will come ; I  
know.

Why, there’s a Judge weeping ! Did not I say  
You were good and true at bottom ? You see  
the truth— 1885  
I am glad I helped you : she helped me just  
so.

But for Count Guido,—you must counsel  
there !

I bow my head, bend to the very dust,  
Break myself up in shame of faultiness. 1889  
I had him one whole moment, as I said—  
As I remember, as will never out

O’ the thoughts of me,—I had him in arm’s  
reach

There,—as you stand, Sir, now you cease to  
sit,— 1888

I could have killed him ere he killed his wife,  
And did not : he went off alive and well  
And then effected this last feat—through me !  
Me—not through you—dismiss that fear !  
’Twas you

Hindered me staying here to save her,—not  
From leaving you and going back to him  
And doing service in Arezzo. Come, 1890  
Instruct me in procedure ! I conceive—  
In all due self-abasement might I speak—

How you will deal with Guido : oh, not death  
Death, if it let her life be : otherwise

Not death,—your lights will teach you  
clearer ! I 1895

Certainly have an instinct of my own  
I’ the matter : bear with me and weigh its  
worth !

Let us go away—leave Guido all alone  
Back on the world again that knows him now !  
I think he will be found (indulge so far !)  
Not to die so much as slide out of life, 1891  
Pushed by the general horror and common  
hate

Low, lower,—left o' the very ledge of things,  
 I seem to see him catch convulsively  
 One by one at all honest forms of life, 1915  
 At reason, order, decency and use—  
 To cramp him and get foothold by at least ;  
 And still they disengage them from his clutch.  
 "What, you are he, then, had Pompilia once  
 "And so forwent her? Take not up with 1920  
 us !"  
 And thus I see him slowly and surely edged  
 Off all the table-land whence life upsprings  
 Aspiring to be immortality,  
 As the snake, hatched on hill-top by mis-  
 chance,  
 Despite his wriggling, slips, slides, slidders 1925  
 down  
 Hill-side, lies low and prostrate on the smooth  
 Level of the outer place, lapsed in the vale :  
 So I lose Guido in the loneliness,  
 Silence and dusk, till at the doleful end,  
 At the horizontal line, creation's verge, 1930  
 From what just is to absolute nothingness—  
 Whom is it, straining onward still, he meets ?  
 What other man deep further in the fate,  
 Who, turning at the prize of a footfall  
 To flatter him and promise fellowship, 1935  
 Discovers in the act a frightful face—  
 Judas, made monstrous by much solitude !  
 The two are at one now ! Let them love  
 their love  
 That bites and claws like hate, or hate their  
 hate  
 That mops and mows and makes as it were  
 love ! 1940  
 There, let them each tear each in devil's-fun,  
 Or fondle this the other while malice aches—  
 Both teach, both learn detestability !  
 Kiss him the kiss, Iscariot ! Pay that back,  
 That smatch o' the slaver blistering on your  
 lip, 1945  
 By the better trick, the insult he spared  
 Christ—  
 Lure him the lure o' the letters, Aretine !  
 Lick him o'er slimy-smooth with jelly-filth  
 O' the verse-and-prose pollution in love's  
 guise !  
 The cockatrice is with the basilisk ! 1950  
 There let them grapple, denizens o' the dark,  
 Foes or friends, but indissolubly bound,  
 In their one spot out of the ken of God  
 Or care of man, for ever and ever more !  
 Why, Sirs, what's this ? Why, this is sorry  
 and strange ! 1955  
 Futility, divagation : this from me  
 Bound to be rational, justify an act  
 Of sober man !—whereas, being moved so  
 much,  
 I give you cause to doubt the lady's mind :  
 A pretty sarcasm for the world ! I fear 1960  
 You do her wit injustice,—all through me !  
 Like my fate all through,—ineffective help !  
 A poor rash advocate I prove myself.  
 You might be angry with good cause : but sure  
 At the advocate,—only at the undue zeal 1965  
 That spoils the force of his own plea, I think ?  
 My part was just to tell you how things stand,  
 State facts and not be flustered at their fume.  
 But then 'tis a priest speaks : as for love,—no !  
 If you let buzz a vulgar fly like that 1970  
 About your brains, as if I loved, forsooth,  
 Indeed, Sirs, you do wrong ! We had no  
 thought  
 Of such infatuation, she and I :  
 There are many points that prove it : do be  
 just ! 1975  
 I told you,—at one little roadside-place  
 I spent a good half-hour, paced to and fro  
 The garden ; just to leave her free awhile,  
 I plucked a handful of Spring herb and  
 bloom :  
 I might have sat beside her on the bench  
 Where the children were : I wish the thing  
 had been, 1980  
 Indeed : the event could not be worse, you  
 know :  
 One more half-hour of her saved ! She's  
 dead now, Sirs !  
 While I was running on at such a rate,  
 Friends should have plucked me by the  
 sleeve : I went 1985  
 Too much o' the trivial outside of her face  
 And the purity that shone there—plain to  
 me,  
 Not to you, what more natural ? Nor am I  
 Infatuated,—oh, I saw, be sure !

Her brow had not the right line, leaned too much,  
 Painters would say; they like the straight-up Greek :  
 This seemed bent somewhat with an invisible crown  
 Of martyr and saint, not such as art approves.  
 And how the dark orbs dwelt deep underneath,  
 Looked out of such a sad sweet heaven on me !  
 The lips, compressed a little, came forward too,  
 Careful for a whole world of sin and pain.  
 That was the face, her husband makes his plea,  
 He sought just to disfigure,—no offence  
 Beyond that ! Sirs, let us be rational !  
 He needs must vindicate his honour,—ay,  
 Yet shirks, the coward, in a clown's disguise,  
 Away from the scene, endeavours to escape.  
 Now, had he done so, slain and left no trace  
 O' the slayer,—what were vindicated, pray ?  
 You had found his wife disfigured or a corpse,  
 For what and by whom ? It is too palpable !  
 Then, here's another point involving law :  
 I use this argument to show you meant  
 No calumny against us by that title  
 O' the sentence,—liars try to twist it so :  
 What penalty it bore, I had to pay  
 Till further proof should follow of innocence—  
*Probationis ob defectum*,<sup>1</sup>—proof ?  
 How could you get proof without trying us ?  
 You went through the preliminary form,  
 Stopped there, contrived this sentence to amuse  
 The adversary. If the title ran  
 For more than fault imputed and not proved,  
 That was a simple penman's error, else  
 A slip i' the phrase,—as when we say of you  
 "Charged with injustice"—which may either be  
 Or not be,—'tis a name that sticks meanwhile.  
 Another relevant matter : fool that I am !  
 Not what I wish true, yet a point friends urge :

It is not true,—yet, since friends think it helps,—  
 She only tried me when some others failed—  
 Began with Conti, whom I told you of,  
 And Guillichini, Guido's kinsfolk both,  
 And when abandoned by them, not before,  
 Turned to me. That's conclusive why she turned.  
 Much good they got by the happy cowardice !  
 Conti is dead, poisoned a month ago :  
 Does that much strike you as a sin ? Not much,  
 After the present murder,—one mark more  
 On the Moor's skin,—what is black by blacker still ?  
 Conti had come here and told truth. And so  
 With Guillichini ; he's condemned of course  
 To the galleys, as a friend in this affair,  
 Tried and condemned for no one thing i' the world,  
 A fortnight since by who but the Governor ?—  
 The just judge, who refused Pompilia help  
 At first blush, being her husband's friend, you know.  
 There are two tales to suit the separate courts,  
 Arezzo and Rome : he tells you here, we fled  
 Alone, unhelpt,—lays stress on the main fault,  
 The spiritual sin, Rome looks to : but elsewhere  
 He likes best we should break in, steal, bear off,  
 Be fit to brand and pillory and flog—  
 That's the charge goes to the heart of the Governor :  
 If these unpriest me, you and I may yet  
 Converse, Vincenzo Marzi-Medici !  
 Oh, Sirs, there are worse men than you, I say !  
 More easily duped, I mean ; this stupid lie,  
 Its liar never dared propound in Rome,  
 He gets Arezzo to receive,—nay more,  
 Gets Florence and the Duke to authorize !  
 This is their Rota's sentence, their Granduke  
 Signs and seals ! Rome for me henceforward—Rome,  
 Where better men are,—most of all, that man  
 The Augustinian of the Hospital,  
 Who writes the letter,—he confessed, he says,

<sup>1</sup> *Probationis ob defectum* : "for want of sufficient proof."



Many a dying person, never one  
 So sweet and true and pure and beautiful.  
 A good man ! Will you make him Pope one  
 day ?

Not that he is not good too, this we have—  
 But old,—else he would have his word to  
 speak,

His truth to teach the world : I thirst for  
 truth,

But shall not drink it till I reach the source.

Sirs, I am quiet again. You see, we are  
 So very pitiable, she and I,  
 Who had conceivably been otherwise.  
 Forget distemperature and idle heat !  
 Apart from truth's sake, what's to move so  
 much ?

Pompilia will be presently with God ;  
 I am, on earth, as good as out of it,  
 A relegated priest ; when exile ends,  
 I mean to do my duty and live long.  
 She and I are mere strangers now : but priests  
 Should study passion ; how else cure man-  
 kind,

Who come for help in passionate extremes ?  
 I do but play with an imagined life  
 Of who, unfettered by a vow, unblest  
 By the higher call,—since you will have it  
 so,—

Leads it companioned by the woman there.  
 To live, and see her learn, and learn by her,  
 Out of the low obscure and petty world—  
 Or only see one purpose and one will  
 Evolve themselves i' the world, change wrong  
 to right :

To have to do with nothing but the true,  
 The good, the eternal—and these, not alone  
 In the main current of the general life,  
 But small experiences of every day,  
 Concerns of the particular hearth and home :  
 To learn not only by a comet's rush  
 But a rose's birth,—not by the grandeur,  
 God—  
 But the comfort, Christ. All this, how far  
 away !

Mere delectation, meet for a minute's dream !—  
 Just as a drudging student trims his lamp,  
 Opens his Plutarch, puts him in the place

Of Roman, Grecian ; draws the patched gown  
 close,

Dreams, " Thus should I fight, save or rule  
 the world !"—

Then smilingly, contentedly, awakes

To the old solitary nothingness.

So I, from such communion, pass content . . .

O great, just, good God ! Miserable me !

## VII.—POMPILIA.

[In this Book scarcely any explanatory  
 notes are necessary. With dramatic appropriateness, the speech of Pompilia is expressed  
 in language of exceptional simplicity and  
 directness.]

I AM just seventeen years and five months  
 old,

And, if I lived one day more, three full  
 weeks ;

'Tis writ so in the church's register,  
 Lorenzo in Lucina, all my names  
 At length, so many names for one poor child,  
 —Francesca Camilla Vittoria Angela  
 Pompilia Comparini,—laughable !

Also 'tis writ that I was married there  
 Four years ago : and they will add, I hope,  
 When they insert my death, a word or two,—  
 Omitting all about the mode of death,—  
 This, in its place, this which one cares to  
 know,

That I had been a mother of a son  
 Exactly two weeks. It will be through grace  
 O' the Curate, not through any claim I have ;  
 Because the boy was born at, so baptized  
 Close to, the Villa, in the proper church :  
 A pretty church, I say no word against,  
 Yet stranger-like,—while this Lorenzo seems  
 My own particular place, I always say,  
 I used to wonder, when I stood scarce high  
 As the bed here, what the marble lion meant,  
 With half his body rushing from the wall,  
 Eating the figure of a prostrate man—

(To the right, it is, of entry by the door)   
 An ominous sign to one baptized like me,  
 Married, and to be buried there, I hope.

And they should add, to have my life complete,

He is a boy and Gaetan by name—

Gaetano, for a reason,—if the friar 30

Don Celestine will ask this grace for me

Of Curate Ottoboni: he it was

Baptized me: he remembers my whole life

As I do his grey hair.

All these few things

I know are true,—will you remember them?

Because time flies. The surgeon cared for

me, 37

To count my wounds,—twenty-two dagger-wounds,

Five deadly, but I do not suffer much—

Or too much pain,—and am to die to-night. 40

Oh how good God is that my babe was born,

— Better than born, baptized and hid away

Before this happened, safe from being hurt!

That had been sin God could not well forgive: 44

He was too young to smile and save himself.

When they took, two days after he was born,

My babe away from me to be baptized

And hidden awhile, for fear his foe should find,—

The country-woman, used to nursing babes,

Said “Why take on so? where is the great loss? 50

“These next three weeks he will but sleep and feed,

“Only begin to smile at the month’s end;

“He would not know you, if you kept him here,

“Sooner than that; so, spend three merry weeks - 54

“Snug in the Villa, getting strong and stout,

“And then I bring him back to be your own,

“And both of you may steal to—we know where!”

The month—there wants of it two weeks this day!

Still, I half fancied when I heard the knock

At the Villa in the dusk, it might prove she—

Come to say “Since he smiles before the time, 61

“Why should I cheat you out of one good hour?

“Back I have brought him; speak to him and judge!”

Now I shall never see him; what is worse,

When he grows up and gets to be my age, 65

He will seem hardly more than a great boy;

And if he asks “What was my mother like?”

People may answer “Like girls of seventeen”—

And how can he but think of this and that,

Lucias, Marias, Sofias, who titter or blush

When he regards them as such boys may do? 71

Therefore I wish someone will please to say

I looked already old though I was young;

Do I not . . . say, if you are by to speak . . .

Look nearer twenty? No more like, at least, 75

Girls who look arch or redden when boys laugh,

Than the poor Virgin that I used to know

At our street-corner in a lonely niche,—

The babe, that sat upon her knees, broke off,—

Thin white glazed clay, you pitied her the more: 80

She, not the gay ones, always got my rose.

How happy those are who know how to write!

Such could write what their son should read in time,

Had they a whole day to live out like me.

Also my name is not a common name, 85

“Pompilia,” and may help to keep apart

A little the thing I am from what girls are.

But then how far away, how hard to find

Will anything about me have become,

Even if the boy bethink himself and ask!

No father that he ever knew at all, 91

Nor never had—no, never had, I say!

That is the truth,—nor any mother left,

Out of the little two weeks that she lived,

Fit for such memory as might assist: 95

As good too as no family, no name,

Not even poor old Pietro’s name, not hers,

Poor kind unwise Violante, since it seems

They must not be my parents any more. 99

That is why something put it in my head

To call the boy "Gaetano"—no old name  
 For sorrow's sake ; I looked up to the sky  
 And took a new saint<sup>1</sup> to begin anew.  
 One who has only been made saint—how long?  
 Twenty-five years : so, carefuller, perhaps,  
 To guard a namesake than those old saints  
 grow, 106  
 Tired out by this time,—see my own five  
 saints !

On second thoughts, I hope he will regard  
 The history of me as what someone dreamed,  
 And get to disbelieve it at the last : 110  
 Since to myself it dwindles fast to that,  
 Sheer dreaming and impossibility,—  
 Just in four days too ! All the seventeen  
 years,  
 Not once did a suspicion visit me  
 How very different a lot is mine 115  
 From any other woman's in the world.  
 The reason must be, 'twas by step and step  
 It got to grow so terrible and strange.  
 These strange woes stole on tiptoe, as it  
 were,  
 Into my neighbourhood and privacy, 120  
 Sat down where I sat, laid them where I lay ;  
 And I was found familiarised with fear,  
 When friends broke in, held up a torch and  
 cried  
 "Why, you Pompilia in the cavern thus,  
 "How comes that arm of yours about a  
 wolf? 125  
 "And the soft length,—lies in and out your  
 feet  
 "And laps you round the knee,—a snake  
 it is !"  
 And so on.

Well, and they are right enough,  
 By the torch they hold up now : for first,  
 observe, 130  
 I never had a father,—no, nor yet  
 A mother : my own boy can say at least  
 "I had a mother whom I kept two weeks !"  
 Not I, who little used to doubt . . . I doubt

<sup>1</sup> *A new saint* : St. Gaetan or Cajetan, founder  
 of the order of Theatins, who lived 1480-1547,  
 and was canonised by Clement X. in 1671.

Good Pietro, kind Violante, gave me  
 birth? 135  
 They loved me always as I love my babe  
 (—Nearly so, that is—quite so could not  
 be—)  
 Did for me all I meant to do for him,  
 Till one surprising day, three years ago,  
 They both declared, at Rome, before some  
 judge 140  
 In some Court where the people flocked to  
 hear,  
 That really I had never been their child,  
 Was a mere castaway, the careless crime  
 Of an unknown man, the crime and care too  
 much 141  
 Of a woman known too well,—little to these,  
 Therefore, of whom I was the flesh and blood :  
 What then to Pietro and Violante, both  
 No more my relatives than you or you?  
 Nothing to them ! You know what they  
 declared.

So with my husband,—just such a surprise,  
 Such a mistake, in that relationship ! 153  
 Everyone says that husbands love their wives,  
 Guard them and guide them, give them  
 happiness ;  
 'Tis duty, law, pleasure, religion : well,  
 You see how much of this comes true in  
 mine ! 155  
 People indeed would fain have somehow  
 proved  
 He was no husband : but he did not hear,  
 Or would not wait, and so has killed us all.  
 Then there is . . . only let me name one  
 more ! 159

There is the friend,—men will not ask about,  
 But tell untruths of, and give nicknames to,  
 And think my lover, most surprise of all !  
 Do only hear, it is the priest they mean,  
 Giuseppe Caponsacchi : a priest—love, 164  
 And love me ! Well, yet people think he did.  
 I am married, he has taken priestly vows,  
 They know that, and yet go on, say, the same,  
 "Yes, how he loves you !" "That was  
 love"—they say,  
 When anything is answered that they ask :  
 Or else "No wonder you love him"—they say.

Then they shake heads, pity much, scarcely  
 blame— 171  
 As if we neither of us lacked excuse,  
 And anyhow are punished to the full,  
 And downright love atones for everything !  
 Nay, I heard read out in the public Court 175  
 Before the judge, in presence of my friends,  
 Letters 'twas said the priest had sent to me,  
 And other letters sent him by myself,  
 We being lovers !

Listen what this is like !

When I was a mere child, my mother . . .  
 that's 181  
 Violante, you must let me call her so  
 Nor wastetime, trying to unlearn the word . . .  
 She brought a neighbour's child of my own age  
 To play with me of rainy afternoons ; 185  
 And, since there hung a tapestry on the wall,  
 We two agreed to find each other out  
 Among the figures. "Tisbe, that is you,  
 "With half-moon on your hair-knot, spear  
 in hand, 189  
 "Flying, but no wing; only the great scarf  
 "Blown to a bluish rainbow at your back :  
 "Call off your hound and leave the stag alone!"  
 "—And there are you, Pompilia, such green  
 leaves 193  
 "Flourishing out of your five finger-ends,  
 "And all the rest of you so brown and rough :  
 "Why is it you are turned a sort of tree?"  
 You know the figures never were ourselves  
 Though we nicknamed them so. Thus, all  
 my life,—  
 As well what was, as what, like this, was not,—  
 Looks old, fantastic and impossible : 200  
 I touch a fairy thing that fades and fades.  
 —Even to my babe ! I thought, when he  
 was born,  
 Something began for once that would not end,  
 Nor change into a laugh at me, but stay  
 For evermore, eternally quite mine. 205  
 Well, so he is,—but yet they bore him off,  
 The third day, lest my husband should lay traps  
 And catch him, and by means of him catch me.  
 Since they have saved him so, it was well done:  
 Yet thence comes such confusion of what  
 was 210  
 With what will be,—that late seems long ago,

And, what years should bring round, already  
 come,  
 Till even he withdraws into a dream  
 As the rest do : I fancy him grown great,  
 Strong, stern, a tall young man who tutors me,  
 Frowns with the others "Poor imprudent  
 child ! 215  
 "Why did you venture out of the safe street ?  
 "Why go so far from help to that lone house ?  
 "Why open at the whisper and the knock ?"

Six days ago when it was New Year's-  
 day, 220  
 We bent above the fire and talked of him,  
 What he should do when he was grown and  
 great.  
 Violante, Pietro, each had given the arm  
 I leant on, to walk by, from couch to chair  
 And fireside,—laughed, as I lay safe at last,  
 'Pompilia's march from bed to board is  
 made, 225  
 "Pompilia back again and with a babe,  
 "Shall one day lend his arm and help her  
 walk !"  
 Then we all wished each other more New  
 Years.  
 Pietro began to scheme—"Our cause is  
 gained ; 230  
 "The law is stronger than a wicked man :  
 "Let him henceforth go his way, leave us  
 ours !  
 "We will avoid the city, tempt no more  
 "The greedy ones by feasting and parade,—  
 "Live at the other villa, we know where, 235  
 "Still farther off, and we can watch the babe  
 "Grow fast in the good air ; and wood is  
 cheap  
 "And wine sincere outside the city gate.  
 "I still have two or three old friends will  
 grope 240  
 "Their way along the mere half-mile of road,  
 "With staff and lantern on a moonless night  
 "When one needs talk : they'll find me,  
 never fear,  
 "And I'll find them a flask of the old sort yet !"  
 Violante said "You chatter like a crow :  
 "Pompilia tires o' the tattle, and shall to  
 bed : 245

"Do not too much the first day,—somewhat more

"To-morrow, and, the next, begin the cape

"And hood and coat! I have spun wool enough."

Oh what a happy friendly eve was that! 240

And, next day, about noon, out Pietro went—  
He was so happy and would talk so much,  
Until Violante pushed and laughed him forth  
Sight-seeing in the cold,—“So much to see

“‘T the churches! Swathe your throat three times!” she cried, 254

“And, above all, beware the slippery ways,  
“And bring us all the news by supper-time!”

He came back late, laid by cloak, staff and hat,

Powdered so thick with snow it made us laugh,  
Rolled a great log upon the ash o’ the hearth,  
And bade Violante treat us to a flask, 260

Because he had obeyed her faithfully,  
Gone sight-see through the seven, and found  
no church

To his mind like San Giovanni—“There’s the fold,

“And all the sheep together, big as cats!

“And such a shepherd, half the size of life,

“Starts up and hears the angel!”—when, at the door, 266

A tap: we started up: you know the rest.

Pietro at least had done no harm, I know;  
Nor even Violante, so much harm as makes  
Such revenge lawful. Certainly she erred—  
Did wrong, how shall I dare say otherwise?—  
In telling that first falsehood, buying me 272  
From my poor faulty mother at a price,  
To pass off upon Pietro as his child.

If one should take my babe, give him a name,  
y he was not Gaetano and my own, 276

it that some other woman made his mouth  
And hands and feet,—how very false were that!

No good could come of that; and all harm did.  
Yet if a stranger were to represent 280

“Needs must you either give your babe to me

“And let me call him mine for evermore,

“Or let your husband get him”—ah, my God,

That were a trial I refuse to face!

Well, just so here: it proved wrong but seemed right. 282

To poor Violante—for there lay, she said,  
My poor real dying mother in her rags,  
Who put me from her with the life and all,  
Poverty, pain, shame and disease at once,  
To die the easier by what price I fetched—  
Also (I hope) because I should be spared  
Sorrow and sin,—why may not that have helped? 292

My father,—he was no one, any one,—  
The worse, the likelier,—call him—he who came,

Was wicked for his pleasure, went his way,  
And left no trace to track by; there remained  
Nothing but me, the unnecessary life, 297  
To catch up or let fall,—and yet a thing  
She could make happy, be made happy with,  
This poor Violante,—who would frown  
thereat? 300

Well, God, you see! God plants us where we grow.

It is not that because a bud is born  
At a wild briar’s end, full i’ the wild beast’s way,

We ought to pluck and put it out of reach  
On the oak-tree top,—say “There the bud belongs!” 305

She thought, moreover, real lies were lies told

For harm’s sake; whereas this had good at heart,

Good for my mother, good for me, and good  
For Pietro who was meant to love a babe,  
And needed one to make his life of use, 310  
Receive his house and land when he should die.  
Wrong, wrong and always wrong! how plainly wrong!

For see, this fault kept pricking, as faults do,  
All the same at her heart: this falsehood hatched,

She could not let it go nor keep it fast. 315

She told me so,—the first time I was found  
Locked in her arms once more after the pain,  
When the nuns let me leave them and go home,

And both of us cried all the cares away,—  
This it was set her on to make amends, 320  
This brought about the marriage—simply  
this!

Do let me speak for her you blame so much!  
When Paul, my husband's brother, found me  
out,

Heard there was wealth for who should  
marry me,

So, came and made a speech to ask 'my  
hand 325

For Guido,—she, instead of piercing straight  
Through the pretence to the ignoble truth,  
Fancied she saw God's very finger point,  
Designate just the time for planting me  
(The wild-briar slip she plucked to love and  
wear) 330

In soil where I could strike real root, and  
grow,

And get to be the thing I called myself:  
For, wife and husband are one flesh, God  
says,

And I, whose parents seemed such and were  
none,

Should in a husband have a husband now,  
Find nothing, this time, but was what it  
seemed, 335

—All truth and no confusion any more.

I know she meant all good to me, all pain  
To herself,—since how could it be aught  
but pain

To give me up, so, from her very breast,  
The wilding flower-tree-branch that, all  
those years, 341

She had got used to feel for and find fixed?  
She meant well: has it been so ill i' the  
main?

That is but fair to ask: one cannot judge  
Of what has been the ill or well of life, 345

The day that one is dying,—sorrows change  
Into not altogether sorrow-like;

I do see strangeness but scarce misery,  
Now it is over, and no danger more.

My child is safe; there seems not so much  
pain. 350

It comes, most like, that I am just absolved,  
Purged of the past, the foul in me, washed  
fair,—

One cannot both have and not have, you  
know,—

Being right now, I am happy and colour  
things.

Yes, everybody that leaves life sees all 355  
Softened and bettered: so with other sights:  
To me at least was never evening yet  
But seemed far beautifuller than its day,  
For past is past.

There was a fancy came,  
When somewhere, in the journey with my  
friend, 361

We stepped into a hovel to get food;  
And there began a yelp here, a bark there,—  
Misunderstanding creatures that were wroth  
And vexed themselves and us till we re-  
tired. 365

The hovel is life: no matter what dogs bit  
Or cats scratched in the hovel I break from,  
All outside is lone field, moon and such  
peace—

Flowing in, filling up as with a sea  
Whereon comes Someone, walks fast on the  
white, 370

Jesus Christ's self, Don Celestine declares,  
To meet me and calm all things back again.

Beside, up to my marriage, thirteen years  
Were, each day, happy as the day was long:  
This may have made the change too terrible.

I know that when Violante told me first 375  
The cavalier—she meant to bring next morn,  
Whom I must also let take, kiss my hand—

Would be at San Lorenzo the same eve  
And marry me,—which over, we should  
go 380

Home both of us without him as before,  
And, till she bade speak, I must hold my  
tongue,

Such being the correct way with girl-brides,  
From whom one word would make a father  
blush,— 385

I know, I say, that when she told me this,  
—Well, I no more saw sense in what she said

Than a lamb does in people clipping wool;  
Only lay down and let myself be clipped.

And when next day the cavalier who came—

(Tisbe had told me that the slim young man  
With wings at head, and wings at feet, and  
sword

Threatening a monster, in our tapestry,  
Would eat a girl else,—was a cavalier)  
When he proved Guido Franceschini,—old  
And nothing like so tall as I myself,  
Hook-nosed and yellow in a bush of beard,  
Much like a thing I saw on a boy's wrist,  
(He called an owl and used for catching birds,—  
And when he took my hand and made a  
smile—

Why, the uncomfortableness of it all  
Seemed hardly more important in the case  
Than,—when one gives you, say, a coin to  
spend,—

Its newness or its oldness ; if the piece  
Weigh properly and buy you what you wish,  
No matter whether you get grime or glare !  
Men take the coin, return you grapes and  
figs.

Here, marriage was the coin, a dirty piece  
Would purchase me the praise of those I loved :  
About what else should I concern myself ?

So, hardly knowing what a husband meant,  
I supposed this or any man would serve,  
No whit the worse for being so uncouth :  
For I was ill once and a doctor came  
With a great ugly hat, no plume thereto,  
Black jerkin and black buckles and black  
sword,

And white sharp beard over the ruff in front,  
And oh so lean, so sour-faced and austere !—  
Who felt my pulse, made me put out my  
tongue ;

Then oped a phial, dripped a drop or two  
Of a black bitter something,—I was cured !  
What mattered the fierce beard or the grim  
face ?

It was the physic beautified the man,  
Master Malpichi,—never met his match  
In Rome, they said,—so ugly all the same !

However, I was hurried through a storm, 435  
Next dark eve of December's deadest day—  
How it rained !—through our street and the  
Lion's-mouth

And the bit of Corso,—cloaked round,  
covered close,

I was like something strange or contraband,—  
Into blank San Lorenzo, up the aisle, 430  
My mother keeping hold of me so tight,  
I fancied we were come to see a corpse  
Before the altar which she pulled me toward,  
There we found waiting an unpleasant priest  
Who proved the brother, not our parish  
friend,

But one with mischief-making mouth and eye,  
Paul, whom I know since to my cost. And  
then

I heard the heavy church-door lock out help  
Behind us : for the customary warmth,  
Two tapers shivered on the altar. "Quick—  
"Lose no time !" cried the priest. And  
straightway down

From . . . what's behind the altar where he  
hid—

Hawk-nose and yellowness and bush and all,  
Stepped Guido, caught my hand, and there  
was I

O' the chancel, and the priest had opened  
book,

Read here and there, made me say that and  
this,

And after, told me I was now a wife,  
Honoured indeed, since Christ thus weds the  
Church,

And therefore turned he water into wine,  
To show I should obey my spouse like  
Christ.

Then the two slipped aside and talked apart,  
And I, silent and scared, got down again  
And joined my mother who was weeping  
now.

Nobody seemed to mind us any more,  
And both of us on tiptoe found our way 455  
To the door which was unlocked by this,  
and wide.

When we were in the street, the rain had  
stopped,  
All things looked better. At our own house-  
door,

Violante whispered "No one syllable  
"To Pietro! Girl-brides never breathe a  
word!"

"—Well treated to a wetting, draggletails!"

Laughed Pietro as he opened—"Very near  
"You made me brave the gutter's roaring sea  
"To carry off from roost old dove and young,  
"Trussed up in church, the cote, by me,  
the kite!" 465

"What do these priests mean, praying folk  
to death

"On stormy afternoons, with Christmas close  
"To wash our sins off nor require the rain?"

Violante gave my hand a timely squeeze, 469  
Madonna saved me from immodest speech,  
I kissed him and was quiet, being a bride.

When I saw nothing more, the next three  
weeks,

Of Guido—"Nor the Church sees Christ"  
thought I:

"Nothing is changed however, wine is wine  
"And water only water in our house. 475

"Nor did I see that ugly doctor since

"That cure of the illness: just as I was  
cured,

"I am married,—neither scarecrow will  
return."

Three weeks, I chuckled—"How would  
Giulia stare, 479

"And Tecla smile and Tisbe laugh outright,  
"Were it not impudent for brides to talk!"—

Until one morning, as I sat and sang  
At the broidery-frame alone in the chamber,—  
loud

Voices, two, three together, sobbings too,  
And my name, "Guido," "Paolo," flung  
like stones 485

From each to the other! In I ran to see.  
There stood the very Guido and the priest  
With sly face,—formal but nowise afraid,—  
While Pietro seemed all red and angry,  
scarce

Able to stutter out his wrath in words; 490  
And this it was that made my mother sob,  
As he reproached her—"You have murdered  
us,

"Me and yourself and this our child beside!"  
Then Guido interposed "Murdered or not,

"Be it enough your child is now my  
wife!" 495

"I claim and come to take her." Paul  
put in,

"Consider—kinsman, dare I term you so?"—

"What is the good of your sagacity

"Except to counsel in a strait like this?"

"I guarantee the parties man and wife 500

"Whether you like or loathe it, bless or ban.

"May spilt milk be put back within the  
bowl—

"The done thing, undone? You, it is, we  
look

"For counsel to, you fittest will advise!

"Since milk, though spilt and spoilt, does  
marble good, 505

"Better we down on knees and scrub the floor,

"Than sigh, 'the waste would make a  
syllabub!'

"Help us so turn disaster to account,

"So predispose the groom, he needs shall  
grace 509

"The bride with favour from the very first,

"Not begin marriage an embittered man!"

He smiled,—the game so wholly in his  
hands!

While fast and faster sobbed Violante—"Ay,

"All of us murdered, past averting now!

"O my sin, O my secret!" and such like.

Then I began to half surmise the truth; 515  
Something had happened, low, mean, under-  
hand,

False, and my mother was to blame, and I  
To pity, whom all spoke of, none addressed:

I was the chattel that had caused a crime. 520

I stood mute,—those who tangled must untie  
The embroilment. Pietro cried "Withdraw,  
my child!

"She is not helpful to the sacrifice

"At this stage,—do you want the victim  
by 525

"While you discuss the value of her blood?

"For her sake, I consent to hear you talk:

"Go, child, and pray God help the innocent!"

I did go and was praying God, when came  
Violante, with eyes swollen and red enough,



But movement on her mouth for make-believe 580

Matters were somehow getting right again.

She bade me sit down by her side and hear.

"You are too young and cannot understand,

"Nor did your father understand at first.

"I wished to benefit all three of us, 585

"And when he failed to take my meaning,—why,

"I tried to have my way at unaware—

"Obtained him the advantage he refused.

"As if I put before him wholesome food

"Instead of broken victual,—he finds change 590

"I the viands, never cares to reason why,

"But falls to blaming me, would fling the plate

"From window, scandalize the neighbour-hood,

"Even while he smacks his lips,—men's way, my child ! 594

"But either you have prayed him unperverse

"Or I have talked him back into his wits :

"And Paolo was a help in time of need,—

"Guido, not much—my child, the way of men !

"A priest is more a woman than a man,

"And Paul did wonders to persuade. In short, 599

"Yes, he was wrong, your father sees and says ;

"My scheme was worth attempting : and bears fruit,

"Gives you a husband and a noble name,

"A palace and no end of pleasant things.

"What do you care about a handsome youth ? 605

"They are so volatile, and tease their wives !

"This is the kind of man to keep the house.

"We lose no daughter,—gain a son, that's all :

"For 'tis arranged we never separate, 610

"Nor miss, in our grey time of life, the tints

"Of you that colour eve to match with morn.

"In good or ill, we share and share alike,

"And cast our lots into a common lap, 615

"And all three die together as we lived !

"Only, at Arezzo,—that's a Tuscan town,

"Not so large as this noisy Rome, no doubt,

"But older far and finer much, say folk.—

"In a great palace where you will be queen,

"Know the Archbishop and the Governor,

"And we see homage done you ere we die.

"Therefore, be good and pardon !"—"Pardon what ? 621

"You know things, I am very ignorant :

"All is right if you only will not cry !"

And so an end ! Because a blank begins

From when, at the word, she kissed me hard and hot, 625

And took me back to where my father leaned Opposite Guido—who stood eyeing him,

As eyes the butcher the cast panting ox

That feels his fate is come, nor struggles more,—

While Paul looked archly on, pricked brow at whites 630

With the pen-point as to punish triumph there,—

And said "Count Guido, take your lawful wife

"Until death part you !"

All since is one blank,

Over and ended ; a terrific dream. 635

It is the good of dreams—so soon they go !

Wake in a horror of heart-beats, you may—

Cry "The dread thing will never from my thoughts !"

Still, a few daylight doses of plain life,

Cock-crow and sparrow-chirp, or bleat and bell 640

Of goats that trot by, tinkling, to be milked ;

And when you rub your eyes awake and wide,

Where is the harm o' the horror ? Gone ! So here.

I know I wake,—but from what ? Blank, I say !

This is the note of evil : for good lasts. 645

Even when Don Celestine bade "Search and find !

"For your soul's sake, remember what is past,

"The better to forgive it,"—all in vain !

What was fast getting indistinct before, 650

Vanished outright. By special grace perhaps,

Between that first calm and this last, four years

Vanish,—one quarter of my life, you know.  
 I am held up, amid the nothingness, 603  
 By one or two truths only—thence I hang,  
 And there I live,—the rest is death or dream,  
 All but those points of my support. I think  
 Of what I saw at Rome once in the Square  
 O' the Spaniards, opposite the Spanish House:  
 There was a foreigner had trained a goat,  
 A shuddering white woman of a beast, 610  
 To climb up, stand straight on a pile of sticks  
 Put close, which gave the creature room  
 enough:

When she was settled there he, one by one,  
 Took away all the sticks, left just the four  
 Whereon the little hoofs did really rest, 615  
 There she kept firm, all underneath was air.  
 So, what I hold by, are my prayer to God,  
 My hope, that came in answer to the prayer,  
 Some hand would interpose and save me—  
 hand

Which proved to be my friend's hand: and,—  
 blest bliss,— 620

That fancy which began so faint at first,  
 That thrill of dawn's suffusion through my  
 dark,

Which I perceive was promise of my child,  
 The light his unborn face sent long before,—  
 God's way of breaking the good news to  
 flesh. 625

That is all left now of those four bad years.  
 Don Celestine urged "But remember more!  
 "Other men's faults may help me find your  
 own.

"I need the cruelty exposed, explained,  
 "Or how can I advise you to forgive?" 630  
 He thought I could not properly forgive  
 Unless I ceased forgetting,—which is true:  
 For, bringing back reluctantly to mind  
 My husband's treatment of me,—by a light  
 That's later than my life-time, I review 635  
 And comprehend much and imagine more,  
 And have but little to forgive at last.  
 For now,—be fair and say,—is it not true  
 He was ill-used and cheated of his hope  
 To get enriched by marriage? Marriage  
 gave 640

Me and no money, broke the compact so:  
 He had a right to ask me on those terms,

As Pietro and Violante to declare  
 They would not give me: so the bargain  
 stood: 644

They broke it, and he felt himself aggrieved,  
 Became unkind with me to punish them.  
 They said 'twas he began deception first,  
 Nor, in one point whereto he pledged him-  
 self,

Kept promise: what of that, suppose it were?  
 Echoes die off, scarcely reverberate 650  
 For ever,—why should ill keep echoing ill,  
 And never let our ears have done with  
 noise?

Then my poor parents took the violent way  
 To thwart him,—he must needs retaliate,—  
 wrong, 654

Wrong, and all wrong,—better say, all blind!  
 As I myself was, that is sure, who else  
 Had understood the mystery: for his wife  
 Was bound in some sort to help somehow  
 there.

It seems as if I might have interposed,  
 Blunted the edge of their resentment so, 660  
 Since he vexed me because they first vexed  
 him;

"I will entreat them to desist, submit,  
 "Give him the money and be poor in  
 peace,—

"Certainly not go tell the world: perhaps  
 "He will grow quiet with his gains." 665

Yes, say

Something to this effect and you do well!  
 But then you have to see first: I was blind.  
 That is the fruit of all such wormy ways,  
 The indirect, the unapproved of God: 670  
 You cannot find their author's end and aim,  
 Not even to substitute your good for bad,  
 Your straight for the irregular; you stand  
 Stupefied, profitless, as cow or sheep  
 That miss a man's mind, anger him just twice  
 By trial at repairing the first fault. 675  
 Thus, when he blamed me, "You are a  
 coquette,

A lure-owl posturing to attract birds,  
 "You look love-lures at theatre and church,  
 In walk, at window!"—that, I knew, was  
 false: 680

But why he charged me falsely, whither I sought  
 To drive me by such charge,—how could I know?  
 So, unaware, I only made things worse.  
 I tried to soothe him by abjuring walk, Window, church, theatre, for good and all,  
 As if he had been in earnest: that, you know,  
 Was nothing like the object of his charge.  
 Yes, when I got my maid to supplicate  
 The priest, whose name she read when she would read  
 Those feigned false letters I was forced to hear  
 Though I could read no word of,—he should cease  
 Writing,—nay, if he minded prayer of mine,  
 Cease from so much as even pass the street  
 Whereon our house looked,—in my ignorance  
 I was just thwarting Guido's true intent;  
 Which was, to bring about a wicked change  
 Of sport to earnest, tempt a thoughtless man  
 To write indeed, and pass the house, and more,  
 Till both of us were taken in a crime.  
 He ought not to have wished me thus act lies,  
 Simulate folly: but,—wrong or right, the wish,—  
 I failed to apprehend its drift. How plain  
 It follows,—if I fell into such fault,  
 He also may have overreached the mark,  
 Made mistake, by perversity of brain,  
 I' the whole sad strange plot, the grotesque intrigue  
 To make me and my friend unself ourselves,  
 Be other man and woman than we were!  
 Think it out, you who have the time! for me,—  
 I cannot say less; more I will not say.  
 Leave it to God to cover and undo!  
 Only, my dulness should not prove too much!  
 —Not prove that in a certain other point  
 Wherein my husband blamed me,—and you blame,  
 If I interpret smiles and shakes of head,—  
 I was dull too. Oh, if I dared but speak!  
 Must I speak? I am blamed that I forwent  
 A way to make my husband's favour come.

That is true: I was firm, withstood, refused . . .  
 —Women as you are, how can I find the words?  
 I felt there was just one thing Guido claimed  
 I had no right to give nor he to take;  
 We being in estrangement, soul from soul:  
 Till, when I sought help, the Archbishop smiled,  
 Inquiring into privacies of life,  
 —Said I was blameable—(he stands for God)  
 Nowise entitled to exemption there.  
 Then I obeyed,—as surely had obeyed  
 Were the injunction "Since your husband bids,  
 "Swallow the burning coal he proffers you!"  
 But I did wrong, and he gave wrong advice  
 Though he were thrice Archbishop,—that, I know!—  
 Now I have got to die and see things clear.  
 Remember I was barely twelve years old—  
 A child at marriage: I was let alone  
 For weeks, I told you, lived my child-life still  
 Even at Arezzo, when I woke and found  
 First . . . but I need not think of that again—  
 Over and ended! Try and take the sense  
 Of what I signify, if it must be so.  
 After the first, my husband, for hate's sake,  
 Said one eve, when the simpler cruelty  
 Seemed somewhat dull at edge and fit to bear,  
 "We have been man and wife six months almost:  
 "How long is this your comedy to last?  
 "Go this night to my chamber, not your own!"  
 At which word, I did rush—most true the charge—  
 And gain the Archbishop's house—he stands for God—  
 And fall upon my knees and clasp his feet,  
 Praying him hinder what my estranged soul  
 Refused to bear, though patient of the rest:  
 "Place me within a convent," I implored—  
 "Let me henceforward lead the virgin life  
 "You praise in Her you bid me imitate!"  
 What did he answer? "Folly of ignorance!"

- "Know, daughter, circumstances make or mar  
 "Virginity,—'tis virtue or 'tis vice.  
 "That which was glory in the Mother of God  
 "Had been, for instance, damnable in Eve  
 "Created to be mother of mankind. 760  
 "Had Eve, in answer to her Maker's speech  
 "'Be fruitful, multiply, replenish earth'—  
 "'Pouted 'But I choose rather to remain  
 "'Single'—why, she had spared herself forth-  
 with 764  
 "Further probation by the apple and snake,  
 "Been pushed straight out of Paradise! For  
 see—  
 "If motherhood be qualified impure,  
 "I catch you making God command Eve sin!  
 "—A blasphemy so like these Molinists',  
 "I must suspect you dip into their books." 770  
 Then he pursued "'Twas in your covenant!"
- No! There my husband never used deceit.  
 He never did by speech nor act imply  
 "Because of our souls' yearning that we meet  
 "And mix in soul through flesh, which yours  
 and mine 775  
 "Wear and impress, and make their visible  
 selves,  
 "—All which means, for the love of you  
 and me,  
 "Let us become one flesh, being one soul!"  
 He only stipulated for the wealth; 779  
 Honest so far. But when he spoke as plain—  
 Dreadfully honest also—"Since our souls  
 "Stand each from each, a whole world's  
 width between,  
 "Give me the fleshly vesture I can reach  
 "And rend and leave just fit for hell to  
 burn!"—  
 Why, in God's name, for Guido's soul's own  
 sake 785  
 Imperilled by polluting mine,—I say,  
 I did resist; would I had overcome!
- My heart died out at the Archbishop's smile;  
 —It seemed so stale and worn a way o' the  
 world,  
 As though 'twere nature frowning—"Here  
 is Spring, 790  
 "The sun shines as he shone at Adam's fall,
- "The earth requires that warmth reach every-  
 where:  
 "What, must your patch of snow be saved  
 forsooth  
 "Because you rather fancy snow than  
 flowers?"  
 Something in this style he began with me.  
 Last he said, savagely for a good man, 796  
 "This explains why you call your husband  
 harsh,  
 "Harsh to you, harsh to whom you love.  
 God's Bread!  
 "The poor Count has to manage a mere  
 child  
 "Whose parents leave untaught the simplest  
 things 800  
 "Their duty was and privilege to teach,—  
 "Goodwives' instruction, gossips' lore: they  
 laugh  
 "And leave the Count the task,—or leave it  
 me!"
- Then I resolved to tell a frightful thing.  
 "I am not ignorant,—know what I say, 805  
 "Declaring this is sought for hate, not love.  
 "Sir, you may hear things like almighty God.  
 "I tell you that my housemate, yes—the  
 priest  
 "My husband's brother, Canon Girolamo—  
 "Has taught me what depraved and misnamed  
 love 810  
 "Means, and what outward signs denote the  
 sin,  
 "For he solicits me and says he loves,  
 "The idle young priest with nought else to do.  
 "My husband sees this, knows this, and  
 lets be.  
 "Is it your counsel I bear this beside?" 815  
 "—More scandal, and against a priest this  
 time!  
 "What, 'tis the Canon now?"—less snap-  
 pishly—  
 "Rise up, my child, for such a child you are,  
 "The rod were too advanced a punishment!  
 "Let's try the honeyed cake. A parable! 820  
 "'Without a parable spake He not to them.'  
 "There was a ripe round long black tooth-  
 some fruit,  
 "Even a flower-fig, the prime boast of May;

"And, to the tree, said . . . either the spirit  
o' the fig,

"Or, if we bring in men, the gardener, 825

"Archbishop of the orchard—had I time

"To try o' the two which fits in best : indeed

"It might be the Creator's self, but then

"The tree should bear an apple, I suppose,—

"Well, anyhow, one with authority said 830

"'Ripe fig, burst skin, regale the fig-pecker—

"'The bird whereof thou art a perquisite !'

"'Nay,' with a founce, replied the restif fig,

"'I much prefer to keep my pulp myself :

"'He may go breakfastless and dinnerless,

"'Supperless of one crimson seed, for  
me !' 836

"So, back she flopped into her lunch of  
leaves.

"He flew off, left her, — did the natural  
lord,—

"And lo, three hundred thousand bees and  
wasps 839

"Found her out, feasted on her to the shuck :

"Such gain the fig's that gave its bird no bite !

"The moral,—fools elude their proper lot,

"Tempt other fools, get ruined all alike.

"Therefore go home, embrace your husband  
quick ! 844

"Which if his Canon brother chance to see,

"He will the sooner back to book again."

So, home I did go ; so, the worst befell :

So, I had proof the Archbishop was just man,

And hardly that, and certainly no more.

For, miserable consequence to me, 850

My husband's hatred waxed nor waned at all,

His brother's boldness grew effrontery soon,

And my last stay and comfort in myself

Was forced from me : henceforth I looked to  
God

Only, nor cared my desecrated soul 856

Should have fair walls, gay windows for the  
world.

God's glimmer, that came through the ruin-  
top,

Was witness why all lights were quenched  
inside :

Henceforth I asked God counsel, not man-  
kind.

So, when I made the effort, freed myself, 860  
They said—"No care to save appearance  
here !

"How cynic, — when, how wanton, were  
enough !"

—Adding, it all came of my mother's life—

My own real mother, whom I never knew,

Who did wrong (if she needs must have done  
wrong) 866

Through being all her life, not my four years,

At mercy of the hateful : every beast

O' the field was wont to break that fountain-  
fence,

Trample the silver into mud so murk

Heaven could not find itself reflected there.

Now they cry "Out on her, who, plashy  
pool, 871

"Bequeathed turbidity and bitterness

"To the daughter-stream where Guido dipt  
and drank !"

Well, since she had to bear this brand—let  
me !

The rather do I understand her now, 875

From my experience of what hate calls love,—

Much love might be in what their love called  
hate.

If she sold . . . what they call, sold . . .  
me her child—

I shall believe she hoped in her poor heart

That I at least might try be good and pure, 880

Begin to live untempted, not go doomed

And done with ere once found in fault, as she.

Oh and, my mother, it all came to this ?

Why should I trust those that speak ill of you,

When I mistrust who speaks even well of  
them ? 888

Why, since all bound to do me good, did  
harm,

May not you, seeming as you harmed me  
most,

Have meant to do most good—and feed your  
child

From bramble-bush, whom not one orchard-  
tree

But drew bough back from, nor let one fruit  
fall ? 890

This it was for you sacrificed your babe ?

Gained just this, giving your heart's hope  
away.

As I might give mine, loving it as you,  
If . . . but that never could be asked of me !

There, enough ! I have my support again, 895  
Again the knowledge that my babe was, is,  
Will be mine only. Him, by death, I give  
Outright to God, without a further care,—  
But not to any parent in the world,—  
So to be safe : why is it we repine ? 900

What guardianship were safer could we  
choose ?

All human plans and projects come to nought :  
My life, and what I know of other lives,  
Prove that : no plan nor project ! God shall  
care !

And now you are not tired ? How patient  
then 905

All of you,—Oh yes, patient this long while  
Listening, and understanding, I am sure !  
Four days ago, when I was sound and well  
And like to live, no one would understand.  
People were kind, but smiled " And what of  
him, 910

" Your friend, whose tonsure the rich dark-  
brown hides ?

" There, there !—your lover, do we dream he  
was ?

" A priest too—never were such naughtiness !

" Still, he thinks many a long think, never  
fear,

" After the shy pale lady,—lay so light 915

" For a moment in his arms, the lucky one ! "

And so on : wherefore should I blame you  
much ?

So we are made, such difference in minds,  
Such difference too in eyes that see the minds !

That man, you misinterpret and misprise—  
The glory of his nature, I had thought, 921  
Shot itself out in white light, blazed the truth  
Through every atom of his act with me :  
Yet where I point you, through the crystal  
shrine,

Purity in quintessence, one dew-drop, 925  
You all descry a spider in the midst.

One says " The head of it is plain to see, "

And one, " They are the feet by which I  
judge, "

All say, " Those films were spun by nothing  
else. "

Then, I must lay my babe away with God,  
Nor think of him again, for gratitude. 931  
Yes, my last breath shall wholly spend itself  
In one attempt more to disperse the stain,  
The mist from other breath fond mouths have  
made,

About a lustrous and pellucid soul : 935

So that, when I am gone but sorrow stays,  
And people need assurance in their doubt  
If God yet have a servant, man a friend,  
The weak a saviour and the vile a foe,—  
Let him be present, by the name invoked,  
Giuseppe-Maria Caponsacchi ! 941

There,

Strength comes already with the utterance !  
I will remember once more for his sake  
The sorrow : for he lives and is belied. 945  
Could he be here, how he would speak for  
me !

I had been miserable three drear years  
In that dread palace and lay passive now,  
When I first learned there could be such a  
man.

Thus it fell : I was at a public play, 950  
In the last days of Carnival last March,  
Brought there I knew not why, but now  
know well.

My husband put me where I sat, in front ;  
Then crouched down, breathed cold through  
me from behind,

Stationed i' the shadow,—none in front could  
see,— 955

I, it was, faced the stranger-throng beneath,  
The crowd with upturned faces, eyes one stare,  
Voices one buzz. I looked but to the stage,  
Whereon two lovers sang and interchanged  
" True life is only love, love only bliss "

" I love thee—thou I love ! " then they em-  
braced. 961

I looked thence to the ceiling and the walls,—  
Over the crowd, those voices and those eyes,—

My thoughts went through the roof and out,  
to Rome 964

On wings of music, waft of measured words,—  
Set me down there, a happy child again .  
Sure that to-morrow would be festa-day,  
Hearing my parents praise past festas more,  
And seeing they were old if I was young,  
Yet wondering why they still would end dis-  
course 970

With "We must soon go, you abide your time,  
"And,—might we haply see the proper friend  
"Throw his arm over you and make you  
safe!"

Sudden I saw him; into my lap there fell  
A foolish twist of comfits, broke my dream  
And brought me from the air and laid me  
low, 976

As ruined as the soaring bee that's reached  
(So Pietro told me at the Villa once)  
By the dust-handful. There the comfits lay:  
I looked to see who flung them, and I faced  
This Caponsacchi, looking up in turn. 981  
Ere I could reason out why, I felt sure,  
Whoever flung them, his was not the hand,—  
Up rose the round face and good-natured  
grin 984

Of one who, in effect, had played the prank,  
From covert close beside the earnest face,—  
Fat waggish Conti, friend of all the world.  
He was my husband's cousin, privileged  
To throw the thing: the other, silent, grave,  
Solemn almost, saw me, as I saw him. 990

There is a psalm Don Celestine recites,  
"Had I a dove's wings, how I fain would  
flee!"

The psalm runs not "I hope, I pray for  
wings,"—

Not "If wings fall from heaven, I fix them  
fast,"—

Simply "How good it were to fly and rest,  
"Have hope now, and one day expect con-  
tent!" 996

"How well to do what I shall never do!"  
So I said "Had there been a man like that,  
"To lift me with his strength out of all strife  
"Into the calm, how I could fly and rest!

"I have a keeper in the garden here 1001

"Whose sole employment is to strike me low

"If ever I, for solace, seek the sun.

"Life means with me successful feigning  
death,

"Lying stone-like, eluding notice so, 1006

"Forgoing here the turf and there the sky.

"Suppose that man had been instead of this!"

Presently Conti laughed into my ear,  
—Had tripped up to the raised place where  
I sat— 1009

"Cousin, I flung them brutishly and hard!

"Because you must be hurt, to look austere

"As Caponsacchi yonder, my tall friend

"A-gazing now. Ah, Guido, you so close?

"Keep on your knees, do! Beg her to for-  
give!

"My cornet<sup>1</sup> battered like a cannon-ball.

"Good-bye, I'm gone!"—nor waited the  
reply. 1016

That night at supper, out my husband broke,  
"Why was that throwing, that buffoonery?

"Do you think I am your dupe? What man  
would dare

"Throw comfits in a stranger lady's lap?

"'Twas knowledge of you bred such inso-  
lence 1021

"In Caponsacchi; he dared shoot the bolt,

"Using that Conti for his stalking-horse.

"How could you see him this once and no  
more, 1024

"When he is always haunting hereabout

"At the street-corner or the palace-side,

"Publishing my shame and your impudence?

"You are a wanton,—I a dupe, you think?

"O Christ, what hinders that I kill her  
quick?"

Whereat he drew his sword and feigned a  
thrust. 1030

All this, now,—being not so strange to me,  
Used to such misconception day by day  
And broken-in to bear,—I bore, this time,

<sup>1</sup> Cornet: a piece of paper twisted into a  
conical shape (such as is commonly used by  
grocers).

More quietly than woman should perhaps ;  
Repeated the mere truth and held my tongue.

Then he said, "Since you play the ignorant,  
"I shall instruct you. This amour,"—com-  
menced 1087

"Or finished or midway in act, all's one,—  
"Tis the town-talk ; so my revenge shall be.

"Does he presume because he is a priest ?

"I warn him that the sword I wear shall  
pink 1041

"His lily-scented cassock through and  
through,

"Next time I catch him underneath your  
eaves !"

But he had threatened with the sword so oft  
And, after all, not kept his promise. All

I said was "Let God save the innocent ! 1048

"Moreover death is far from a bad fate.

"I shall go pray for you and me, not him ;

"And then I look to sleep, come death or,  
worse,

"Life." So, I slept. 1050

There may have elapsed a week,  
When Margherita,—called my waiting-maid,  
Whom it is said my husband found too fair—  
Who stood and heard the charge and the

reply, 1054

Who never once would let the matter rest  
From that night forward, but rang changes  
still

On this the thrust and that the shame, and  
how

Good cause for jealousy cures jealous fools,  
And what a paragon was this same priest

She talked about until I stopped my ears,—  
She said, "A week is gone ; you comb your

hair, 1061

"Then go mope in a corner, cheek on palm,

"Till night comes round again,—so, waste a  
week

"As if your husband menaced you in sport.

"Have not I some acquaintance with his  
tricks ? 1063

"Oh no, he did not stab the serving-man

"Who made and sang the rhymes about me  
once !

"For why ? They sent him to the wars next  
day.

"Nor poisoned he the foreigner, my friend  
"Who wagered on the whiteness of my  
breast,— 1070

"The swarth skins of our city in dispute :

"For, though he paid me proper compli-  
ment,

"The Count well knew he was besotted with

"Somebody else, a skin as black as ink,

"(As all the town knew save my foreigner)

"He found and wedded presently,—' Why  
need 1074

"'Better revenge ?'—the Count asked. But  
what's here ?

"A priest that does not fight, and cannot wed,

"Yet must be dealt with ! If the Count took  
fire 1078

"For the poor pastime of a minute,—me—

"What were the conflagration for yourself,

"Countess and lady-wife and all the rest ?

"The priest will perish ; you will grieve too  
late :

"So shall the city-ladies' handsomes"

"Frankest and liberalest gentleman 1080

"Die for you, to appease a scurvy dog

"Hanging's too good for. Is there no  
escape ?

"Were it not simple Christian charity

"To warn the priest be on his guard,—save  
him 1089

"Assured death, save yourself from causing it ?

"I meet him in the street. Give me a glove,

"A ring to show for token ! Mum's the  
word !"

I answered "If you were, as styled, my  
maid, 1093

"I would command you : as you are, you say,

"My husband's intimate,—assist his wife

"Who can do nothing but entreat 'Be still !'

"Even if you speak truth and a crime is  
planned,

"Leave help to God as I am forced to do !

"There is no other help, or we should craze,

"Seeing such evil with no human cure. 1100

"Reflect that God, who makes the storm  
desist,



"Can make an angry violent heart subside.  
 "Why should we venture teach Him govern-  
 -ance?"

\*Never address me on this subject more!"

Next night she said "But I went, all the  
 same, 1106

"—Ay, saw your Caponsacchi in his house,  
 "And come back stuffed with news I must  
 outpour.

"I told him 'Sir, my mistress is a stone:

"Why should you harm her for no good  
 you get?"

"For you do harm her—prowl about our  
 place 1110

"With the Count never distant half the  
 street,

"Lurking at every corner, would you look!

"'Tis certain she has witched you with a  
 spell.

"Are there not other beauties at your beck?"

"We all know, Donna This and Monna  
 That 1115

"Die for a glance of yours, yet here you  
 gaze!

"Go make them grateful, leave the stone  
 its cold!"

"And he—oh, he turned first white and then  
 red, 1118

"And then—"To her behest I bow myself,

"Whom I love with my body and my soul:

"Only a word! the bowing! See, I write

"One little word, no harm to see or hear!

"Then, fear no further!" This is what he  
 wrote.

"I know you cannot read,—therefore, let me!

"My idol!" . . . 1125

But I took it from her hand

And tore it into shreds. "Why join the rest

"Who harm me? Have I ever done you  
 wrong?"

"People have told me 'tis you wrong my-  
 self:

"Let it suffice I either feel no wrong 1130

"Or else forgive it,—yet you turn my foe!

"The others hunt me and you throw a  
 noose!"

She muttered "Have your wilful way!" I  
 slept.

Whereupon . . . no, I leave my husband out!

It is not to do him more hurt, I speak. 1135

Let it suffice, when misery was most,

One day, I swooned and got a respite so.

She stooped as I was slowly coming to,

This Margherita, ever on my trace,

And whispered—"Caponsacchi!" 1140

If I drowned,

But woke afloat! the wave with upturned  
 eyes,

And found their first sight was a star! I  
 turned—

For the first time, I let her have her will,

Heard passively,—“The imposthume at such  
 head, 1145

“One touch, one lancet-puncture would re-  
 lieve,—

“And still no glance the good physician's  
 way

“Who rids you of the torment in a trice!

“Still he writes letters you refuse to hear.

“He may prevent your husband, kill himself,

“So desperate and all fordone is he! 1151

“Just hear the pretty verse he made to-day!

“A sonnet from Mirtillo. ‘Peerless fair . . .’

“All poetry is difficult to read, 1154

“—The sense of it is, anyhow, he seeks

“Leave to contrive you an escape from hell,

“And for that purpose asks an interview.

“I can write, I can grant it in your name,

“Or, what is better, lead you to his house.

“Your husband dashes you against the  
 stones; 1160

“This man would place each fragment in a  
 shrine:

“You hate him, love your husband!”

I returned

“It is not true I love my husband,—no,

“Nor hate this man. I listen while you  
 speak, 1165

“—Assured that what you say is false, the  
 same:

“Much as when once, to me a little child,

"A rough gaunt man in rags, with eyes on  
 fire,  
 "A crowd of boys and idlers at his heels;  
 "Rushed as I crossed the Square, and held  
 my head 1170  
 "In his two hands, 'Here's she will let me  
 speak!  
 "'You little girl, whose eyes do good to  
 mine,  
 "'I am the Pope, am Sextus, now the Sixth;  
 "'And that Twelfth Innocent, proclaimed  
 to-day,  
 "'Is Lucifer disguised in human flesh! 1175  
 "'The angels, met in conclave, crowned  
 me!—thus  
 "He gibbered and I listened; but I knew  
 'All was delusion, ere folk interposed  
 "'Unfasten him, the maniac!' Thus I know  
 'All your report of Caponsacchi false, 1180  
 'Folly or dreaming; I have seen so much  
 'By that adventure at the spectacle,  
 'The face I fronted that one first, last time:  
 'He would belie it by such words and  
 thoughts. 1184  
 "Therefore while you profess to show him me,  
 "I ever see his own face. Get you gone!"  
 "—That will I, nor once open mouth  
 again,—  
 "No, by Saint Joseph and the Holy Ghost!  
 "On your head be the damage, so adieu!"  
 And so more days, more deeds I must forget,  
 Till . . . what a strange thing now is to  
 declare! 1191  
 Since I say anything, say all if true!  
 And how my life seems lengthened as to serve!  
 It may be idle or inopportune,  
 But, true?—why, what was all I said but  
 truth, 1195  
 Even when I found that such as are untrue  
 Could only take the truth in through a lie?  
 Now—I am speaking truth to the Truth's self:  
 God will lend credit to my words this time.  
 It had got half through April. I arose 1200  
 One vivid daybreak,—who had gone to bed  
 In the old way my wont those last three years,  
 Careless until, the cup drained, I should die.  
 The last sound in my ear, the over-night,  
 Had been a something let drop on the sly 1205  
 In prattle by Margherita, "Soon enough  
 "Gaieties end, now Easter's past: a week,  
 "And the Archbishop gets him back to  
 Rome,—  
 "Everyone leaves the town for Rome, this  
 Spring,— 1209  
 "Even Caponsacchi, out of heart and hope,  
 "Resigns himself and follows with the flock."  
 I heard this drop and drop like rain outside  
 Fast-falling through the darkness while she  
 spoke:  
 So had I heard with like indifference,  
 "And Michael's pair of wings will arrive first  
 "At Rome, to introduce the company, 1215  
 "And bear him from our picture where he  
 fights  
 "Satan,—expect to have that dragon loose  
 "And never a defender!"—my sole thought  
 Being still, as night came, "Done, another  
 day! 1220  
 "How good to sleep and so get nearer  
 death!"—  
 When, what, first thing at daybreak, pierced  
 the sleep  
 With a summons to me? Up I sprang alive,  
 Light in me, light without me, everywhere  
 Change! A broad yellow sunbeam was let  
 fall 1225  
 From heaven to earth,—a sudden drawbridge  
 lay,  
 Along which marched a myriad merry motes,  
 Mocking the flies that crossed them and re-  
 crossed  
 In rival dance, companions new-born too.  
 On the house-eaves, a dripping shag of weed  
 Shook diamonds on each dull grey lattice-  
 square, 1232  
 As first one, then another bird leapt by,  
 And light was off, and lo was back again,  
 Always with one voice,—where are two such  
 joys?—  
 The blessed building-sparrow! I stepped  
 forth, 1236  
 Stood on the terrace,—o'er the roofs such  
 sky!

What did I care?—who felt myself of force  
To play with silk, and spurn the horsehair-  
springe.

"But—do you know that I have bade him  
come, 1870

"And in your own name? I presumed so  
much,

"Knowing the thing you needed in your  
heart.

"But somehow—what had I to show in  
proof?

"He would not come: half-promised, that  
was all,

"And wrote the letters you refused to read.

"What is the message that shall move him  
now?" 1876

"After the Ave Maria, at first dark,

"I will be standing on the terrace, say!"

"I would I had a good long lock of hair

"Should prove I was not lying! Never  
mind!" 1880

Off she went—"May he not refuse, that's  
all—

"Fearing a trick!"

I answered, "He will come."

And, all day, I sent prayer-like incense up  
To God the strong, God the beneficent; 1885  
God ever mindful in all strife and strait,  
Who, for our own good, makes the need  
extreme,

Till at the last He puts forth might and saves.  
An old rhyme came into my head and rang  
Of how a virgin, for the faith of God, 1890  
Hid herself, from the Paynims that pursued,  
In a cave's heart; until a thunderstone,  
Wrapped in a flame, revealed the couch and  
prey

And they laughed—"Thanks to lightning,  
ours at last!"

And she cried "Wrath of God, assert His  
love!" 1895

"Servant of God, thou fire, befriend His  
child!"

And lo, the fire she grasped at, fixed its flash,  
Lay in her hand a calm cold dreadful sword  
She brandished till pursuers strewed the  
ground,

So did the souls within them die away, 1400  
As o'er the prostrate bodies, sworded, safe,  
She walked forth to the solitudes and Christ:  
So should I grasp the lightning and be saved!

And still, as the day wore, the trouble grew  
Whereby I guessed there would be born a  
star, 1405

Until at an intense throe of the dusk,  
I started up, was pushed, I dare to say,  
Out on the terrace, leaned and looked at last  
Where the deliverer waited me: the same  
Silent and solemn face, I first descried 1410  
At the spectacle, confronted mine once more.

So was that minute twice vouchsafed me, so  
The manhood, wasted then, was still at watch  
To save me yet a second time: no change  
Here, though all else changed in the changing  
world! 1415

I spoke on the instant, as my duty bade,  
In some such sense as this, whatever the  
phrase.

"Friend, foolish words were borne from you  
to me;

"Your soul behind them is the pure strong  
wind,

"Not dust and feathers which its breath  
may bear: 1420

"These to the witless seem the wind it-  
self,

"Since proving thus the first of it they feel.

"If by mischance you blew offence my way,

"The straws are dropt, the wind desists no  
whit,

"And how such strays were caught up in  
the street 1425

"And took a motion from you, why in-  
quire?

"I speak to the strong soul, no weak disguise.

"If it be truth,—why should I doubt it  
truth?—

- "You serve God specially, as priests are bound, But I prayed through the darkness till it broke 1400  
 "And care about me, stranger as I am, 1430 And let him shine. The second night, he came.  
 "So far as wish my good,—that miracle  
 "I take to intimate He wills you serve  
 "By saving me,—what else can He direct?  
 "Here is the service. Since a long while now,  
 "I am in course of being put to death: 1435  
 "While death concerned nothing but me, I bowed  
 "The head and bade, in heart, my husband strike.  
 "Now I imperil something more, it seems,  
 "Something that's truelier me than this myself,  
 "Something I trust in God, and you to save. 1440  
 "You go to Rome, they tell me: take me there,  
 "Put me back with my people!"

He replied—

The first word I heard ever from his lips,  
 All himself in it,—an eternity 1445  
 Of speech, to match the immeasurable depth  
 O' the soul that then broke silence—"I am yours."

So did the star rise, soon to lead my step,  
 Lead on, nor pause before it should stand still  
 Above the House o' the Babe,—my babe to be, 1450

That knew me first and thus made me know him,

That had his right of life and claim on mine,  
 And would not let me die till he was born,  
 But pricked me at the heart to save us both,

Saying "Have you the will? Leave God the way!" 1455

And the way was Caponsacchi—"mine,"  
 thank God!

He was mine, he is mine, he will be mine.

No pause i' the leading and the light! I know,  
 Next night there was a cloud came, and not he:

"The plan is rash; the project desperate:  
 "In such a flight needs must I risk your life,  
 "Give food for falsehood, folly or mistake,  
 "Ground for your husband's rancour and revenge"— 1465

So he began again, with the same face.  
 I felt that, the same loyalty—one star  
 Turning now red that was so white before—  
 One service apprehended newly: just  
 A word of mine and there the white was back! 1470

"No, friend, for you will take me! 'Tis yourself

"Risk all, not I,—who let you, for I trust  
 "In the compensating great God: enough!  
 "I know you: when is it that you will come?"

"To-morrow at the day's dawn." Then I heard 1475

What I should do: how to prepare for flight  
 And where to fly.

That night my husband bade

"—You, whom I loathe, beware you break my sleep

"This whole night! Couch beside me like the corpse 1480

"I would you were!" The rest you know, I think—

How I found Caponsacchi and escaped.

And this man, men call sinner? Jesus Christ!  
 Of whom men said, with mouths Thyself mad'st once,

"He hath a devil"—say he was Thy saint,  
 My Caponsacchi! Shield and show—unshroud 1485

In Thine own time the glory of the soul  
 If aught obscure,—if ink-spot, from vile pens  
 Scribbling a charge against him—(I was glad  
 Then, for the first time, that I could not write)— 1490

Flirted his way, have flected the blaze!

For me, Petal by petal, crude and colourless, 1828  
 'Tis otherwise: let men take, sift my thoughts  
 Tore me? This one heart gave me all the  
 —Thoughts I throw like the flax for sun to  
 Spring!

I did pray, do pray, in the prayer shall  
 die, 1405  
 "Oh, to have Caponsacchi for my guide!"  
 Ever the face upturned to mine, the hand  
 Holding my hand across the world,—a sense  
 That reads, as only such can read, the mark  
 (God sets on woman, signifying so 1200  
 She should—shall peradventure—be divine;  
 Yet 'ware, the while, how weakness mars the  
 print  
 And makes confusion, leaves the thing men  
 see,  
 —Not this man sees,—who from his soul, re-  
 writes  
 The obliterated charter,—love and strength  
 Mending what's marred. "So kneels a  
 votarist, 1306  
 "Weeds some poor waste traditionary plot  
 "Where shrine once was, where temple yet  
 may be,  
 "Purging the place but worshipping the while,  
 "By faith and not by sight, sight clearest  
 so,— 1510  
 "Such way the saints work,"—says Don  
 Celestine.  
 But I, not privileged to see a saint  
 Of old when such walked earth with crown  
 and palm,  
 If I call "saint" what saints call something  
 else—  
 The saints must bear with me, impute the  
 fault 1515  
 To a soul i' the bud, so starved by ignorance,  
 Stinted of warmth, it will not blow this year  
 Nor recognize the orb which Spring-flowers  
 know.  
 But if meanwhile some insect with a heart  
 Worth floods of lazy music, spendthrift joy—  
 Some fire-fly renounced Spring for my dwarfed  
 cup, 1521  
 Crept close to me, brought lustre for the dark,  
 Comfort against the cold,—what though excess  
 Of comfort should miscall the creature—sun?  
 What did the sun to hinder while harsh hands

Is all told? There's the journey: and where's  
 time  
 To tell you how that heart burst out in  
 shine?  
 Yet certain points do press on me too hard.  
 Each place must have a name, though I  
 forget: 1521  
 How strange it was—there where the plain  
 begins  
 And the small river mitigates its flow—  
 When eve was fading fast, and my soul sank,  
 And he divined what surge of bitterness, 1535  
 In overtaking me, would float me back  
 Whence I was carried by the striding day—  
 So,—“This grey place was famous once,”  
 said he—  
 And he began that legend of the place  
 As if in answer to the unspoken fear, 1540  
 And told me all about a brave man dead,  
 Which lifted me and let my soul go on!  
 How did he know too,—at that town's ap-  
 proach  
 By the rock-side,—that in coming near the  
 signs  
 Of life, the house-roofs and the church and  
 tower, 1545  
 I saw the old boundary and wall o' the world  
 Rise plain as ever round me, hard and cold,  
 As if the broken circlet joined again,  
 Tightened itself about me with no break,—  
 As if the town would turn Arezzo's self,—  
 The husband there,—the friends my enemies,  
 All ranged against me, not an avenue 1552  
 To try, but would be blocked and drive me  
 back  
 On him,—this other, . . . oh the heart in  
 that!  
 Did not he find, bring, put into my arms 1555  
 A new-born babe?—and I saw faces beam  
 Of the young mother proud to teach me joy,  
 And gossips round expecting my surprise  
 At the sudden hole through earth that lets in  
 heaven.  
 I could believe himself by his strong will

Had woven around me what I thought the world 1361  
 We went along in, every circumstance, Towns, flowers and faces, all things helped so well !  
 For, through the journey, was it natural Such comfort should arise from first to last ? 1365  
 As I look back, all is one milky way ; Still bettered more, the more remembered, so Do new stars bud while I but search for old, And fill all gaps i' the glory, and grow him—Him I now see make the shine every-where. 1370  
 Even at the last when the bewildered flesh, The cloud of weariness about my soul Clogging too heavily, sucked down all sense,—Still its last voice was, " He will watch and care ;  
 " Let the strength go, I am content : he stays ! " 1375  
 I doubt not he did stay and care for all—From that sick minute when the head swam round,  
 And the eyes looked their last and died on him,  
 As in his arms he caught me, and, you say, Carried me in, that tragical red eve, 1380  
 And laid me where I next returned to life In the other red of morning, two red plates That crushed together, crushed the time between,  
 And are since then a solid fire to me,—When in, my dreadful husband and the world 1385  
 Broke,—and I saw him, master, by hell's right,  
 And saw my angel helplessly held back By guards that helped the malice—the lamb prone,  
 The serpent towering and triumphant—then Came all the strength back in a sudden swell, 1390  
 I did for once see right, do right, give tongue The adequate protest : for a worm must turn If it would have its wrong observed by God. I did spring up, attempt to thrust aside That ice-block 'twixt the sun and me, lay low .  
 The neutralizer of all good and truth. 1395  
 If I sinned so,—never obey voice more O' the Just and Terrible, who bids us—" Bear ! "  
 Not—" Stand by, bear to see my angels bear ! " 1399  
 I am clear it was on impulse to serve God Not save myself,—no—nor my child unborn !  
 Had I else waited patiently till now ?—Who saw my old kind parents, silly-sooth And too much trustful, for their worst of faults,  
 Cheated, brow-beaten, stripped and starved, cast out 1405  
 Into the kennel : I remonstrated, Then sank to silence, for,—their woes at end,  
 Themselves gone,—only I was left to plague. If only I was threatened and belied, 1409  
 What matter ? I could bear it and did bear ; It was a comfort, still one lot for all :  
 They were not persecuted for my sake And I, estranged, the single happy one.  
 But when at last, all by myself I stood 1414  
 Obeying the clear voice which bade me rise, Not for my own sake but my babe unborn,  
 And take the angel's hand was sent to help—And found the old adversary athwart the path—  
 Not my hand simply struck from the angel's, but 1419  
 The very angel's self made foul i' the face By the fiend who struck there,—that I would not bear,  
 That only I resisted ! So, my first And last resistance was invincible.  
 Prayers move God ; threats, and nothing else, move men ! 1424  
 I must have prayed a man as he were God When I implored the Governor to right  
 My parents' wrongs : the answer was a smile. The Archbishop,—did I clasp his feet enough,  
 Hide my face hotly on them, while I told More than I dared make my own mother know ? 1430  
 The profit was—compassion and a jest. This time, the foolish prayers were done with, right

Used might, and solemnized the sport 'at  
once.

All was against the combat : vantage,  
mine ? 1634

The runaway avowed, the accomplice-wife,  
In company with the plan-contriving priest ?  
Yet, shame thus rank and patent, I struck,  
bare,

At foe from head to foot in magic mail,  
And off it withered, cobweb-armoury  
Against the lightning ! 'Twas truth singed  
the lies 1640

And saved me, not the vain sword nor weak  
speech !

You see, I will not have the service fail !  
I say, the angel saved me : I am safe !  
Others may want and wish, I wish nor  
want

One point o' the circle plainer, where I  
stand 1645

Traced round about with white to front the  
world.

What of the calumny I came across,  
What o' the way to the end ?—the end  
crowns all.

The judges judged aright i' the main, gave me  
The uttermost of my heart's desire, a truce  
From torture and Arezzo, balm for hurt, 1651  
With the quiet nuns,—God recompense the  
good !

Who said and sang away the ugly past.  
And, when my final fortune was revealed,  
What safety while, amid my parents' arms,  
My babe was given me ! Yes, he saved my  
babe : 1656

It would not have peeped forth, the bird-like  
thing,

Through that Arezzo noise and trouble : back  
Had it returned nor ever let me see ! 1659  
But the sweet peace cured all, and let me live  
And give my bird the life among the leaves  
God meant him ! Weeks and months of  
quietude,

I could lie in such peace and learn so much—  
Begin the task, I see how needful now, 1664  
Of understanding somewhat of my past,—  
Know life a little, I should leave so soon.

Therefore, because this man restored my  
soul,

All has been right ; I have gained my gain,  
enjoyed

As well as suffered,—nay, got foretaste too  
Of better life beginning where this ends—  
All through the breathing-while allowed me  
thus, 1671

Which let good premonitions reach my soul  
Unthwarted, and benignant influence flow  
And interpenetrate and change my heart,  
Uncrossed by what was wicked,—nay, un-  
kind. 1675

For, as the weakness of my time drew nigh,  
Nobody did me one disservice more,  
Spoke coldly or looked strangely, broke the  
love

I lay in the arms of, till my boy was born,  
Born all in love, with nought to spoil the  
bliss 1680

A whole long fortnight : in a life like mine  
A fortnight filled with bliss is long and much.  
All women are not mothers of a boy,  
Though they live twice the length of my  
whole life, 1684

And, as they fancy, happily all the same.  
There I lay, then, all my great fortnight  
long,

As if it would continue, broaden out  
Happily more and more, and lead to heaven :  
Christmas before me,—was not that a chance ?  
I never realized God's birth before— 1690  
How he grew likest God in being born.  
This time I felt like Mary, had my babe  
Lying a little on my breast like hers.  
So all went on till, just four days ago—  
The night and the tap. 1695

Oh it shall be success  
To the whole of our poor family ! My friends  
. . . Nay, father and mother,—give me back  
my word !

They have been rudely stripped of life, dis-  
graced  
Like children who must needs go clothed too  
fine, 1700

Carry the garb of Carnival in Lent.  
If they too much affected frippery,

They have been punished and submit them-  
selves, 1708

Say no word : all is over, they see God  
Who will not be extreme to mark their fault  
Or He had granted respite : they are safe.

For that most woeful man my husband once,  
Who, needing respite, still draws vital breath,  
I—pardon him? So far as lies in me, 1709

I give him for his good the life he takes,  
Praying the world will therefore acquiesce.  
Let him make God amends,—none, none to me  
Who thank him rather that, whereas strange  
fate

Mockingly styled him husband and me wife,  
Himself this way at least pronounced divorce,  
Blotted the marriage-bond : this blood of  
mine 1716

Flies forth exultingly at any door,  
Washes the parchment white, and thanks the  
blow.

We shall not meet in this world nor the next,  
But where will God be absent? In His face  
Is light, but in His shadow healing too : 1721  
Let Guido touch the shadow and be healed !  
And as my presence was importunate,—  
My earthly good, temptation and a snare,—  
Nothing about me but drew somehow down  
His hate upon me,—somewhat so excused  
Therefore, since hate was thus the truth of  
him,— 1727

May my evanishment for evermore  
Help further to relieve the heart that cast  
Such object of its natural loathing forth ! 1730  
So he was made ; he nowise made himself :  
I could not love him, but his mother did.  
His soul has never lain beside my soul :  
But for the unresisting body,—thanks ! 1734  
He burned that garment spotted by the flesh.  
Whatever he touched is rightly ruined : plague  
It caught, and disinfection it had craved  
Still but for Guido ; I am saved through him  
So as by fire ; to him—thanks and farewell !

Even for my babe, my boy, there's safety  
thence— 1740

From the sudden death of me, I mean : we  
poor

Weak souls, how we endeavour to be strong !  
I was already using up my life,—

This portion, now, should do him such a  
good,

This other go to keep off such an ill ! 1746  
The great life ; see, a breath and it is gone !  
So is detached, so left all by itself

The little life, the fact which means so  
much.

Shall not God stoop the kindlier to His work,  
His marvel of creation, foot would crush, 1750  
Now that the hand He trusted to receive  
And hold it, lets the treasure fall perforce ?  
The better ; He shall have in orphanage  
His own way all the clearer : if my babe  
Outlived the hour—and he has lived two  
weeks— 1758

It is through God who knows I am not by.  
Who is it makes the soft gold hair turn black,  
And sets the tongue, might lie so long at rest,  
Trying to talk ? Let us leave God alone !  
Why should I doubt He will explain in  
time 1768

What I feel now, but fail to find the words ?  
My babe nor was, nor is, nor yet shall be  
Count Guido Franceschini's child at all—  
Only his mother's, born of love not hate !  
So shall I have my rights in after-time. 1778  
It seems absurd, impossible to-day ;  
So seems so much else, not explained but  
known !

Ah ! Friends, I thank and bless you every  
one !

No more now : I withdraw from earth and  
man 1788

To my own soul, compose myself for God.

Well, and there is more ! Yes, my end of  
breath

Shall bear away my soul in being true !  
He is still here, not outside with the world,  
Here, here, I have him in his rightful place !  
'Tis now, when I am most upon the move,

I feel for what I verily find—again 1798  
The face, again the eyes, again, through all,  
The heart and its immeasurable love  
Of my one friend, my only, all my own,



Who put his breast between the spears and  
     me. 1780  
 Ever with Caponsacchi ! Otherwise  
 Here alone would be failure, loss to me—  
 How much more loss to him, with life  
     debarred  
 From giving life, love locked from love's  
     display,  
 The day-star stopped its task that makes  
     night morn ! 1785  
 O lover of my life, O soldier-saint,  
 No work begun shall ever pause for death !  
 Love will be helpful to me more and more  
 I' the coming course, the new path I must  
     tread—  
 My weak hand in thy strong hand, strong  
     for that ! 1790  
 Tell him that if I seem without him now,  
 That's the world's insight ! Oh, he under-  
     stands !  
 He is at Civita—do I once doubt  
 The world again is holding us apart ? 1794  
 He had been here, displayed in my behalf  
 The broad brow that reverberates the truth,  
 And flashed the word God gave him, back  
     to man !  
 I know where the free soul is flown ! My  
     fate  
 Will have been hard for even him to bear :  
 Let it confirm him in the trust of God, 1800  
 Showing how holily he dared the deed !  
 And, for the rest,—say, from the deed, no  
     touch  
 Of harm came, but all good, all happiness,  
 Not one faint fleck of failure ! Why explain ?  
 What I see, oh, he sees and how much  
     more ! 1805  
 Tell him,—I know not wherefore the true  
     word  
 Should fade and fall unuttered at the last—  
 It was the name of him I sprang to meet  
 When came the knock, the summons and  
     the end.  
 " My great heart, my strong hand are back  
     again ! " 1810  
 I would have sprung to these, beckoning  
     across  
 Murder and hell gigantic and distinct  
 O' the threshold, posted to exclude me  
     heaven :  
 He is ordained to call and I to come !  
 Do not the dead wear flowers when dressed  
     for God ? 1815  
 Say,—I am all in flowers from head to  
     foot !  
 Say,—not one flower of all he said and  
     did,  
 Might seem to flit unnoticed, fade unknown,  
 But dropped a seed, has grown a balsam-  
     tree  
 Whereof the blossoming perfumes the place  
 At this supreme of moments ! He is a  
     priest ; 1821  
 He cannot marry therefore, which is right :  
 I think he would not marry if he could.  
 Marriage on earth seems such a counterfeit,  
 Mere imitation of the inimitable : 1825  
 In heaven we have the real and true and  
     sure.  
 'Tis there they neither marry nor are given  
 In marriage but are as the angels : right,  
 Oh how right that is, how like Jesus Christ  
 To say that ! Marriage-making for the  
     earth, 1830  
 With gold so much,—birth, power, repute  
     so much,  
 Or beauty, youth so much, in lack of these !  
 Be as the angels rather, who, apart,  
 Know themselves into one, are found at length  
 Married, but marry never, no, nor give 1835  
 In marriage ; they are man and wife at once  
 When the true time is : here we have to  
     wait  
 Not so long neither ! Could we by a wish  
 Have what we will and get the future now,  
 Would we wish aught done undone in the  
     past ? 1840  
 So, let him wait God's instant men call  
     years ;  
 Meantime hold hard by truth and his great  
     soul,  
 Do out the duty ! Through such souls  
     alone  
 God stooping shows sufficient of His light  
 For us i' the dark to rise by. And I

VIII.—DOMINUS HYACINTHUS DE  
ARCHANGELIS,PAUPERUM PROCURATOR.<sup>1</sup>

[This Book is so full of Latin, and the humour of it turns so much upon Latin phrases, as hardly to repay the trouble of reading to any one not acquainted with that language. Under these circumstances, it would seem to be merely cumbrous and ineffective to give a translation throughout.]

AH, my Giacinto, he's no ruddy rogue,  
Is not Cinone?<sup>2</sup> What, to-day we're eight?  
Seven and one's eight, I hope, old curly-pate!  
—Branches me out his verb-tree on the slate,  
*Amo—as—avi—atam—are—ans,* 5  
Up to *-aturus*, person, tense, and mood,  
*Quies me cum subjunctivo* (I could cry)  
And chews Corderius<sup>3</sup> with his morning crust!  
Look eight years onward, and he's perched,  
he's perched  
Dapper and deft on stool beside this chair,  
Cinozzo, Cinoncello, who but he? 11  
—Trying his milk-teeth on some crusty case  
Like this, papa shall triturate full soon  
To smooth Papinianian<sup>4</sup> pulp!

It trots 15

Already through my head, though noon be now,  
Does supper-time and what belongs to eve.  
Dispose, O Don, o' the day, first work then  
play!  
—The proverb bids. And "then" means,  
won't we hold  
Our little yearly lovesome frolic feast, 20  
Cinuolo's birth-night, Cinicello's own,  
That makes gruff January grin perform!  
For too contagious grows the mirth, the  
warmth

<sup>1</sup> *Pauperum Procurator*: the official defender of criminals, as the "Fisc" is the official prosecutor.

<sup>2</sup> *Cinone*: a pet diminutive of Giacinto, as are Cinozzo, Cinoncello, Cinino, and various other forms occurring in this Book.

<sup>3</sup> *Corderius*: Mathurin Cordier, author of the most popular Latin school-book of the sixteenth century, the *Colloquia Scholastica*.

<sup>4</sup> *Papinianian*: from Papinian, a Roman jurist of the beginning of the third century.

Escaping from so many hearts at once—  
When the good wife, buxom and bonny yet,  
Jokes the hale grandsire,—such are just the  
sort 25

To go off suddenly,—he who hides the key  
O' the box beneath his pillow every night,—  
Which box may hold a parchment (someone  
thinks)

Will show a scribbled something like a  
name 30

"Cinino, Ciniccino," near the end,  
"To whom I give and I bequeath my lands,  
"Estates, tenements, hereditaments,  
"When I de cease as honest grandsire ought."

Wherefore—yet this one time again perhaps—  
Shan't my Orvietto fuddle his old nose! 35

Then, uncles, one or the other, well I' the  
world,

May—drop in, merely?—trudge through rain  
and wind,

Rather! The smell-feasts rouse them at the  
hint 40

There's cookery in a certain dwelling-place!  
Gossips, too, each with keepsake in his poke,  
Will pick the way, thrifid lane by lantern-light,  
And so find door, put galligaskin off  
At entry of a decent domicile 45

Cornered in snug Condotti,—all for love,  
All to crush cup with Cinucciato!

Well,

Let others climb the heights o' the court, the  
camp!

How vain are chambering and wantonness,  
Revel and rout and pleasures that make  
mad! 50

Commend me to home-joy, the family board,  
Altar and hearth! These, with a brisk career,  
A source of honest profit and good fame,  
Just so much work as keeps the brain from rust,  
Just so much play as lets the heart expand, 55  
Honouring God and serving man,—I say,  
These are reality, and all else,—fluff,  
Nutshell and naught,—thank Flaccus<sup>5</sup> for the  
phrase!

Suppose I had been Fisc, yet bachelor!

<sup>5</sup> *Flaccus*: Horace, *Sat.* II. 5, 35, *quassa nuce*, a proverbial expression for something worthless.

Why, work with a will, then! Wherefore  
lazy now?

Turn up the hour-glass, whence no sand-grain  
slips

But should have done its duty to the saint  
O' the day, the son, and heir that's eight  
years old!

Let law come dimple Cinoncinio's cheek,  
And Latin duple Cinarello's chin,  
The while we spread him fine and toss him  
flat

This pulp that makes the pancake, trim our  
mass

Of matter into Argument the First,  
Prime Pleading in defence of our accused,  
Which, once a-waft on paper wing, shall  
soar,

Shall signalize before applauseive Rome  
What study, and mayhap some mother-wit,  
Can do toward making Master fop and Fisc  
Old bachelor Bottinius bite his thumb.  
Now, how good God is! How falls plumb  
to point

This murder, gives me Guido to defend  
Now, of all days i' the year, just when the boy  
Verges on Virgil, reaches the right age  
For some such illustration from his sire,  
Stimulus to himself! One might wait years  
And never find the chance which now finds  
me!

The fact is, there's a blessing on the hearth,  
A special providence for fatherhood!  
Here's a man, and what's more, a noble, kills  
—Not sneakingly but almost with parade—  
Wife's father and wife's mother and wife's  
self

That's mother's self of son and heir (like  
mine!)

—And here stand I, the favoured advocate,  
Who pluck this flower o' the field, no Solomon  
Was ever clothed in glorious gold to match,  
And set the same in Cinoncinio's cap!

I defend Guido and his comrades—I!

Pray God, I keep me humble: not to me—  
*Non nobis, Domine, sed tibi laus!*

How the fop chuckled when they made him  
Fisc!

We'll beat you, my Bottinius, all for love,

All for our tribute to Cinotto's day.

Why, 'sbuddikins, old Innocent himself

May rub his eyes at the bustle,—ask "What's  
this

"Rolling from out the rostrum, as a gust  
"O' the *Pro Milone*<sup>1</sup> had been prisoned  
there,

"And rattled Rome awake?" Awaken Rome,  
How can the Pope doze on in decency?

He needs must wake up also, speak his word.  
Have his opinion like the rest of Rome,

About this huge, this hurly-burly case:  
He wants who can excogitate the truth,

Give the result in speech, plain black and  
white,

To mumble in the mouth and make his own  
—A little changed, good man, a little  
changed!

No matter, so his gratitude be moved,  
By when my Giacintino gets of age,  
Mindful of who thus helped him at a pinch,  
Archangelus *Procurator Pauperum*—  
And proved Hortensius<sup>2</sup> *Redivivus*!

Whew!

To earn the *Est-est*, merit the minced herb  
That mollifies the liver's leathery slice,  
With here a goose-foot, there a cock's-comb  
stuck,

Cemented in an element of cheese!

I doubt if dainties do the grandsire good:  
Last June he had a sort of strangling . . .  
bah!

He's his own master, and his will is made.

So, liver fizz, law flit and Latin fly

As we rub hands o'er dish by way of grace!

May I lose cause if I vent one word more  
Except,—with fresh-cut quill we ink the  
white,—

*P-r-o-pro Guidone et Sociis.* There!

Count Guido married—or, in Latin due,

What? *Duxit in uxorem?*—commonplace!

*Tedas jugales iniit, subiit*,—ha!

He underwent the matrimonial torch?

<sup>1</sup> *Pro Milone*: Cicero's great speech in defence of Milo on a charge of murder.

<sup>2</sup> *Hortensius*: the great Roman orator, contemporary with Cicero.

*Connubio stabili sibi junxit,—hum!*

In stable bond of marriage bound his own?  
That's clear of any modern taint: and  
yet . . .

Virgil is little help to who writes prose.  
He shall attack me Terence with the dawn,  
Shall Cinuccino! Mum, mind business, Sir!  
Thus circumstantially evolve we facts,  
*Ita se habet ideo series facti:* 140  
He wedded,—ah, with owls for augury!  
*Nupserat, heu sinistris avibus,*  
One of the blood Arezzo boasts her best,  
*Dominus Guido, nobili genere ortus,* 144  
*Pompilia . . .*

But the version afterward!

Curb we this ardour! Notes alone, to-day,  
The speech to-morrow and the Latin last:  
Such was the rule in Farinacci's time.  
Indeed I hitched it into verse and good.  
Unluckily, law quite absorbs a man, 150  
Or else I think I too had poetized.  
"Law is the pork substratum of the fry,  
"Goose-foot and cock's-comb are Latinity,"—  
And in this case, if circumstance assist, 154  
We'll garnish law with idiom, never fear!  
Out-of-the-way events extend our scope:  
For instance, when Bottini brings his charge,  
"That letter which you say Pompilia wrote,—  
"To criminate her parents and herself 159  
"And disengage her husband from the coil,—  
"That, Guido Franceschini wrote, say we:  
"Because Pompilia could nor read nor write,  
"Therefore he pencilled her such letter first,  
"Then made her trace in ink the same again."  
—Ha, my Bottini, have I thee on hip? 165  
How will he turn this and break Tully's pate?  
"Existimandum" (don't I hear the dog!)  
"Quod Guido designaverit elementa  
"Dicke epistole, quæ fuerint  
"(Superinducto ab ea calamo) 170  
"Notata atramento"—there's a style!—  
"Quia ipsa scribere nesciebat." Boh!  
Now, my turn! Either, *Insulse!* (I outburst)  
Stupidly put! Inane is the response,  
*Inanis est responsio*, or the like— 175  
To wit, that each of all those characters,

*Quod singula elementa epistolæ,*  
Had first of all been traced for her by him,  
*Fuerant per eam prius designata,*  
And then, the ink applied a-top of that, 180  
*Et deinde, superinducto calamo,*  
The piece, she says, became her handiwork,  
*Per eam, efformata, ut ipsa asserit.*  
Inane were such response! (a second time :)  
Her husband outlined her the whole, for—  
sooth? 185  
*Vir ejus lineabat epistolam?*  
What, she confesses that she wrote the thing,  
*Fatetur eam scripsisse*, (scorn that scathes!)  
That she might pay obedience to her lord?  
*Ut viro obtemperaret, apices* 190  
(Here repeat charge with proper varied  
phrase)

*Eo designante, ipsaque calamum*  
*Super inducente?* By such argument,  
*Ita pariter*, she seeks to show the same,  
(Ay, by Saint Joseph and what saints you  
please) 195  
*Epistolam ostendit, medius fidius,*  
No voluntary deed but fruit of force!  
*Non voluntarie sed coacte scriptam!*  
That's the way to write Latin, friend my Fisc!  
Bottini is a beast, one barbarous: 200  
Look out for him when he attempts to say  
"Armed with a pistol, Guido followed her!"  
Will not I be beforehand with my Fisc,  
Cut away phrase by phrase from underfoot!  
*Guido Pompiliam*—Guido thus his wife 205  
Following with igneous engine, shall I have?  
*Armis munitus igneis persequens—*  
*Arma sulphurea gestans*, sulphury arms,  
Or, might one style a pistol—popping-piece?  
*Armatus breviori sclopolo?* 210  
We'll let him have been armed so, though  
it make  
Somewhat against us: I had thought to own—  
Provided with a simple travelling-sword,  
*Ense solummodo viatorio* 214  
*Instructus*: but we'll grant the pistol here:  
Better we lost the cause than lacked the gird  
At the Fisc's Latin, lost the Judge's laugh!  
It's Venturini that decides for style.  
Tommati rather goes upon the law.  
So, as to law,— 220

Ah, but with law ne'er hope  
 To level the fellow,—don't I know his trick !  
 How he draws up, ducks under, twists aside !  
 He's a lean-gutted hectic rascal, fine 224  
 As pale-haired red-eyed ferret which pretends  
 'Tis ermine, pure soft snow from tail to snout.  
 He eludes law by piteous looks aloft,  
 Lets Latin glance off as he makes appeal 228  
 To saint that's somewhere in the ceiling-top :  
 Do you suppose I don't conceive the beast ?  
 Plague of the ermine-vermin ! For it takes,  
 It takes, and here's the fellow Fisc, you see,  
 And Judge, you'll not be long in seeing next !  
 Confound the fop—he's now at work like me :  
 Enter his study, as I seem to do, 235  
 Hear him read out his writing to himself !  
 I know he writes as if he spoke : I hear  
 The hoarse shrill throat, see shut eyes, neck  
 shot-forth,

—I see him strain on tiptoe, soar and pour  
 Eloquence out, nor stay nor stint at all— 240  
 Perorate in the air, then quick to press  
 With the product ! What abuse of type and  
 sheet !

He'll keep clear of my cast, my logic-throw,  
 Let argument slide, and then deliver swift  
 Some bowl from quite an unguessed point of  
 stand— 245

Having the luck o' the last word, the reply !  
 A plaguy cast, a mortifying stroke :  
 You face a fellow—cries "So, there you stand"  
 "But I discourteous jump clean o'er your head !  
 "You take ship-carpentry for pilotage, 250  
 "Stop rat-holes, while a sea sweeps through  
 the breach,—

"Hammer and fortify at puny points ?  
 "Do, clamp and tenon, make all tight and safe !  
 "'Tis here and here and here you ship a sea,  
 "No good of your stopped leaks and little-  
 ness !" 255

Yet what do I name "little and a leak" ?  
 The main defence o' the murder's used to death,  
 By this time, dry bare bones, no scrap we pick :  
 Safer I worked the new, the unforeseen, 260  
 The nice by-stroke, the fine and improvised  
 Point that can titillate the brain o' the Bench  
 Torpid with over-teaching, long ago !

As if Tommati (that has heard, reheard  
 And heard again, first this side and then that—  
 Guido and Pietro, Pietro and Guido, din 258  
 And deafen, full three years, at each long ear)  
 Don't want amusement for instruction now,  
 Won't rather feel a flea run o'er his ribs,  
 Than a daw settle heavily on his head !  
 Oh I was young and had the trick of fence,  
 Knew subtle pass and push with careless  
 right— 271  
 My left arm ever quiet behind back,  
 With dagger ready : not both hands to blade !  
 Puff and blow, put the strength out, Blunder-  
 bore ! 274  
 There's my subordinate, young Spreti, now,  
 Pedant and prig,—he'll pant away at proof,  
 That's his way !

Now for mine—to rub some life  
 Into one's choppy fingers this cold day !  
 I trust Cinuzzo ties on tippet, guards 280  
 The precious throat on which so much  
 depends !  
 Guido must be all goose-flesh in his hole,  
 Despite the prison-straw : bad Carnival  
 For captives ! no sliced fry for him, poor  
 Count !

Carnival-time,—another providence ! 285  
 The town a-swarm with strangers to amuse,  
 To edify, to give one's name and fame  
 In charge of, till they find, some future day,  
 Cintino come and claim it, his name too,  
 Pledge of the pleasantness they owe papa—  
 Who else was it cured Rome of her great  
 qualms, 291  
 When she must needs have her own judg-  
 ment ?—ay,  
 When all her topping wits had set to work,  
 Pronounced already on the case : mere boys,  
 Twice Cineruggiolo's age with half his  
 sense, 295

As good as tell me, when I cross the court,  
 "Master Arcangeli !" (plucking at my gown)  
 "We can predict, we comprehend your play,  
 "We'll help you save your client." Tra-la-la !  
 I've travelled ground, from childhood to this  
 hour, 300

To have the town anticipate my track?  
The old fox takes the plain and velvet path,  
The young hound's predilection,—prints the dew,

Don't he, to suit their pulpy pads of paw?  
No! Burying nose deep down i' the briery bush,

Thus I defend Count Guido.

Where are we weak?

First, which is foremost in advantage too,  
Our murder,—we call, killing,—is a fact  
Confessed, defended, made a boast of: good!  
To think the Fisc claimed use of torture here,  
And got thereby avowal plump and plain  
That gives me just the chance I wanted,—scope  
Not for brute-force but ingenuity,  
Explaining matters, not denying them!  
One may dispute,—as I am bound to do,  
And shall,—validity of process here:  
Inasmuch as a noble is exempt  
From torture which plebeians undergo  
In such a case: for law is lenient, lax,  
Remits the torture to a nobleman  
Unless suspicion be of twice the strength  
Attaches to a man born vulgarly:  
We don't card silk with comb that dresses wool.

Moreover 'twas severity undue  
In this case, even had the lord been lout.  
What utters, on this head, our oracle,  
Our Farinacci,<sup>1</sup> my Gamaliel erst,  
In those immortal "Questions"? This I quote:

"Of all the tools at Law's disposal, sure  
"That named *Vigiliarum* is the best—  
"That is, the worst—to whoso needs must bear:

"Lasting, as it may do, from some seven hours

"To ten; (beyond ten, we've no precedent;  
"Certain have touched their ten, but, bah,  
they died!)

"It does so efficaciously convince,  
"That,—speaking by much observation here,—

"Out of each hundred cases, by my count,  
"Never I knew of patients beyond four  
"Withstand its taste, or less than ninety-six  
"End by succumbing: only martyrs four,  
"Of obstinate silence, guilty or no,—against  
"Ninety-six full confessors, innocent

"Or otherwise,—so shrewd a tool have we!"  
No marvel either: in unwary hands,  
Death on the spot is no rare consequence:  
As indeed all but happened in this case  
To one of ourselves, our young tough peasant-friend

The accomplice called Baldeschi: they were rough,

Dosed him with torture as you drench a horse,  
Not modify your treatment to a man:  
So, two successive days he fainted dead,  
And only on the third essay, gave up,  
Confessed like flesh and blood. We could reclaim,—

Blockhead Bottini giving cause enough!  
But no,—we'll take it as spontaneously  
Confessed: we'll have the murder beyond doubt.

Ah, fortunate (the poet's word<sup>2</sup> reversed)  
Inasmuch as we know our happiness!  
Had the antagonist left dubious,  
Here were we proving murder a mere myth,  
And Guido innocent, ignorant, absent,—ay,  
Absent! He was—why, where should Christian be?—

Engaged in visiting his proper church,  
The duty of us all at Christmas-time,  
When Caponsacchi, the seducer, stung  
To madness by his relegation, cast  
About him and contrived a remedy  
In murder: since opprobrium broke afresh,  
By birth of the babe, on him the imputed sire,

He it was quietly sought to smother up  
His shame and theirs together,—killed the three,

<sup>1</sup> *Farinacci*: Prosper Farinacci (1544-1613), author of a volume of *Variae Quaestiones* and other legal treatises, which were regarded as of very high authority during the seventeenth century. In 1599 he defended Beatrice Cenci on the charge of murdering her father.

<sup>2</sup> *The poet's word*: "O fortunatos nimium sua si bona norint, Agricolas" (Virgil, *Georg.* II. 458).

And fled—(go seek him where you please to  
search)—

Just at the time when Guido, touched by  
grace,

Devotions ended, hastened to the spot, 375  
Meaning to pardon his convicted wife,

“Neither do I condemn thee, go in peace!”—  
And thus arrived ’t the nick of time to catch  
The charge o’ the killing, though great-  
heartedly 379

He came but to forgive and bring to life.  
Doubt ye the force of Christmas on the soul?  
“Is thine eye evil because mine is good?”

So, doubtless, had I needed argue here  
But for the full confession round and sound!  
Thus might you wrong some kingly al-  
chemist,— 385

Whose concern should not be with showing  
brass

Transmuted into gold, but triumphing,  
Rather, about his gold changed out of brass,  
Not vulgarly to the mere sight and touch,  
But in the idea, the spiritual display, 390

The apparition buoyed by winged words  
Hovering above its birth-place in the brain,—  
Thus would you wrong this excellent personage  
Forced, by the gross need, to gird apron round,  
Plant forge, light fire, ply bellows,—in a word,  
Demonstrate: when a faulty pipkin’s crack  
May disconcert you his presumptive truth!

Here were I hanging to the testimony 395  
Of one of these poor rustics—four, ye gods!  
Whom the first taste of friend the Fiscal’s cord  
May drive into undoing my whole speech,  
Undoing, on his birthday,—what is worse,—  
My son and heir! 405

I wonder, all the same,  
Not so much at those peasants’ lack of heart;  
But—Guido Franceschini, nobleman, 405  
Bear pain no better! Everybody knows  
It used once, when my father was a boy,  
To form a proper, nay, important point  
F’ the education of our well-born youth, 410  
That they took torture handsomely at need,  
Without confessing in this clownish guise.  
Each noble had his rack for private use,  
And would, for the diversion of a guest,

Bid it be set up in the yard of arms, 415  
And take thereon his hour of exercise,—  
Command the varletry stretch, strain their  
best,

While friends looked on, admired my lord  
could smile

’Mid tugging which had caused an ox to roar.  
Men are no longer men! 420

—And advocates

No longer Farinacci, let us add,  
If I one more time fly from point proposed!  
So, *Vindictio*,—here begins the speech!—  
*Honoris causa*; thus we make our stand:  
Honour in us had injury, we prove. 425

Or if we fail to prove such injury  
More than misprision of the fact,—what then?  
It is enough, authorities declare,  
If the result, the deed in question now, 430  
Be caused by confidence that injury  
Is veritable and no figment: since,  
What, though proved fancy afterward, seemed  
fact

At the time, they argue shall excuse result.  
That which we do, persuaded of good cause  
For what we do, hold justifiable!— 435  
So casuists bid: man, bound to do his best,  
They would not have him leave that best  
undone

And mean to do his worst,—though fuller  
light

Show best was worst and worst would have  
been best. 440

Act by the present light!—they ask of man.  
*Ultra quod hic non agitur*, besides  
It is not anyway our business here,  
*De probatione adulterii*,

To prove what we thought crime was crime  
indeed, 445

*Ad irrogandam penam*, and require  
Its punishment: such nowise do we seek:  
*Sed ad effectum*, but ’tis our concern,  
*Excusandi*, here to simply find excuse,  
*Occisorem*, for who did the killing-work, 450  
*Et ad illius defensionem*, (mark  
The difference) and defend the man, just  
that!

*Quo casu levior probatio*

*Exuberaret*, to which end far lighter proof  
Suffices than the prior case would claim :  
It should be always harder to convict, 456  
In short, than to establish innocence.  
Therefore we shall demonstrate first of all  
That Honour is a gift of God to man  
Precious beyond compare : which natural  
sense

Of human rectitude and purity,—  
Which white, man's soul is born with,—  
brooks no touch :

Therefore, the sensitivest spot of all,  
Wounded by any wafture breathed from  
black,

Is,—honour within honour, like the eye 458  
Centred i' the ball,—the honour of our wife.

Touch us o' the pupil of our honour, then,  
Not actually,—since so you slay outright,—  
But by a gesture simulating touch,  
Presumable mere menace of such taint,—  
This were our warrant for eruptive ire 471  
"To whose dominion I impose no end."

(Virgil, now, should not be too difficult  
To Cinoncinio,—say, the early books.  
Pen, truce to further gambols ! *Poscimur* !)

Nor can revenge of injury done here 478  
To the honour proved the life and soul of us,  
Be too excessive, too extravagant :  
Such wrong seeks and must have complete  
revenge.

Show we this, first, on the mere natural  
ground : 480

Begin at the beginning, and proceed  
Incontrovertibly. Theodoric,<sup>2</sup>  
In an apt sentence Cassiodorus cites,  
Propounds for basis of all household law—  
I hardly recollect it, but it ends, 485  
"Bird mates with bird, beast genders with  
his like,  
"And brooks no interference." Bird and  
beast ?

<sup>1</sup> *To whose dominion, &c.* : "His ego nec  
metas rerum nec tempora pono; Imperium  
sine fine dedi" (Virgil, *Æn.* I. 278, 279).

<sup>2</sup> *Theodoric* : the Goth, king of Italy, 493–  
526. Cassiodorus was his secretary.

The very insects . . . if they wive or no,  
How dare I say when Aristotle doubts ? 480  
But the presumption is they likewise wive,  
At least the nobler sorts ; for take the bee  
As instance,—copying King Solomon,—  
Why that displeasure of the bee to aught  
Which savours of incontinency, makes  
The unchaste a very horror to the hive ? 485  
Whence comes it bees obtain their epithet  
Of *castæ apes*, notably "the chaste" ?  
Because, ingeniously saith Scaliger,  
(The young sage,—see his book of Table-  
talk)

"Such is their hatred of immodest act, 500  
"They fall upon the offender, sting to  
death."

I mind a passage much confirmative  
I' the *Idyllist* (though I read him Latinized).  
"Why" asks a shepherd, "is this bank unfit  
"For celebration of our vernal loves ?" 505  
"Oh swain," returns the instructed shep-  
herdess,

"Bees swarm here, and would quick resent  
our warmth !"

Only cold-blooded fish lack instinct here,  
Nor gain nor guard connubiality :  
But beasts, quadrupedal, mammiferous, 510  
Do credit to their beasthood : witness him  
That *Ælian*<sup>3</sup> cites, the noble elephant,  
(Or if not *Ælian*, somebody as sage)  
Who seeing, much offence beneath his nose,  
His master's friend exceed in courtesy 515  
The due allowance to his master's wife,  
Taught them good manners and killed both  
at once,

Making his master and the world admire.  
Indubitably, then, that master's self,  
Favoured by circumstance, had done the  
same 520

Or else stood clear rebuked by his own beast.  
*Adeo, ut qui honorem spernit*, thus,  
Who values his own honour not a straw,—  
*Et non recuperare curat*, nor  
Labours by might and main to salve its wound,  
*Se ulciscendo*, by revenging him, 525  
*Nil differat a belluis*, is a brute,

<sup>3</sup> *Ælian* : in his *De Nat. Anim.* XI. 15.



*Quinimo irrationabilior*

*Ipsismet belluis*, nay, contrariwise, 329  
 Much more irrational than brutes themselves,  
 Should be considered, *reputetur*! How?  
 If a poor animal feel honour smart,  
 Taught by blind instinct nature plants in him,  
 Shall man, — confessed creation's master-  
 stroke,

Nay, intellectual glory, nay, a god, 335  
 Nay, of the nature of my Judges here, —  
 Shall man prove the insensible, the block,  
 The blot o' the earth he crawls on to disgrace?  
 (Come, that's both solid and poetic!) Man  
 Derogate, live for the low tastes alone, 340  
 Mean creeping cares about the animal life?  
*Absit* such homage to vile flesh and blood!

(May Gigia have remembered, nothing  
 stings

Fried liver out of its monotony 344  
 Of richness, like a root of fennel, chopped  
 Fine with the parsley: parsley-sprigs, I said —  
 Was there need I should say "and fennel  
 too"?

But no, she cannot have been so obtuse!  
 To our argument! The fennel will be  
 chopped.)

From beast to man next mount we — ay, but,  
 mind, 350  
 Still mere man, not yet Christian, — that, in  
 time!

Not too fast, mark you! 'Tis on Heathen  
 grounds

We next defend our act: then, fairly urge —  
 If this were done of old, in a green tree, 354  
 Allowed in the Spring rawness of our kind,  
 What may be licensed in the Autumn dry  
 And ripe, the latter harvest-tide of man?  
 If, with his poor and primitive half-lights,  
 The Pagan, whom our devils served for gods,  
 Could stigmatise the breach of marriage-vow  
 As that which blood, blood only might  
 efface, — 361

Absolve the husband, outraged, whose revenge  
 Anticipated law, plied sword himself, —  
 How with the Christian in full blaze of noon?  
 Shall not he rather double penalty, 365

Multiply vengeance, than, degenerate,  
 Let privilege be minished, droop, decay?  
 Therefore set forth at large the ancient law!  
 Superabundant the examples be  
 To pick and choose from. The Athenian  
 Code, 370

Solon's, the name is serviceable, — then,  
 The Laws of the Twelve Tables, that fif-  
 teenth, —

"Romulus" likewise rolls out round and  
 large;

The Julian; the Cornelian;<sup>1</sup> Gracchus' Law:  
 So old a chime, the bells ring of themselves!  
 Spredi can set that going if he please, 375  
 I point you, for my part, the belfry plain,  
 Intent to rise from dusk, *diluculum*,  
 Into the Christian day shall broaden next.

First, the fit compliment to His Holiness  
 Happily reigning: then sustain the point —  
 All that was long ago declared as law 382  
 By the natural revelation, stands confirmed  
 By Apostle and Evangelist and Saint, —  
 To-wit — that Honour is man's supreme good.  
 Why should I baulk Saint Jerome of his  
 phrase? 386

*Ubi honor non est*, where no honour is,  
*Ibi contemptus est*; and where contempt,  
*Ibi injuria frequens*; and where that,  
 The frequent injury, *ibi et indignatio*; 390  
 And where the indignation, *ibi quies*  
*Nulla*: and where there is no quietude,  
 Why, *ibi*, there, the mind is often cast  
 Down from the heights where it proposed to  
 dwell,

*Mens a proposito saepe dejicitur.* 395  
 And naturally the mind is so cast down,  
 Since harder 'tis, *quam difficilior sit*,  
*Iram cohibere*, to coerce one's wrath,  
*Quam miracula facere*, than work miracles, —  
 So Gregory smiles in his First Dialogue. 400  
 Whence we infer, the ingenuous soul, the man  
 Who makes esteem of honour and repute,  
 Whenever honour and repute are touched,  
 Arrives at term of fury and despair,  
 Loses all guidance from the reason-check:

<sup>1</sup> *The Julian; the Cornelian*: see Book I.  
 ll. 226, 227.

As in delirium or a frenzy-fit,  
 Nor fury nor despair he satiates,—no,  
 Not even if he attain the impossible,  
 O'erturn the hinges of the universe  
 To annihilate—not whoso caused the smart  
 Solely, the author simply of his pain,  
 But the place, the memory, *vituperii*,  
 O' the shame and scorn : *quia*,—says Solomon,  
 (The Holy Spirit speaking by his mouth  
 In Proverbs, the sixth chapter near the end)  
 —Because, the zeal and fury of a man,  
*Zelus et furor viri*, will not spare,  
*Non parcat*, in the day of his revenge,  
*In die vindictæ*, nor will acquiesce,  
*Nec acquiescet*, through a person's prayers,  
*Cujusdani precibus,—nec suscipiet*,  
 Nor yet take, *pro redemptione*, for  
 Redemption, *dona plurimum*, gifts of friends,  
 Mere money-payment to compound for ache.  
 Who recognizes not my client's case?  
 Whereto, as strangely consentaneous here,  
 Adduce Saint Bernard in the Epistle writ  
 To Robertulus, his nephew : "Too much  
 grief,  
 "*Dolor quippe nimius non deliberat*,  
 "Does not excogitate propriety,  
 "*Non verecundatur*, nor knows shame at all,  
 "*Non consulit rationem*, nor consults  
 "Reason, *non dignitatis metuit*  
 "*Dammum*, nor dreads the loss of dignity ;  
 "*Modum et ordinem*, order and the mode,  
 "*Ignorat*, it ignores : " why, trait for trait,  
 Was ever portrait limned so like the life?  
 (By Cavalier Maratta, shall I say?  
 I hear he's first in reputation now.)  
 Yes, that of Samson in the Sacred Text  
 That's not so much the portrait as the man!  
 Samson in Gaza was the antetype  
 Of Guido at Rome : observe the Nazarite!  
 Blinded he was,—an easy thing to bear :  
 Intrepidly he took imprisonment,  
 Gyves, stripes and daily labour at the mill :  
 But when he found himself, i' the public place,  
 Destined to make the common people sport,  
 Disdain burned up with such an impetus  
 I' the breast of him that, all the man one  
 fire,  
*Moriatur*, roared he, let my soul's self die,

*Anima mea*, with the Philistines !  
 So, pulled down pillar, roof, and death and  
 all,  
*Multosque plures interfecit*, ay,  
 And many more he killed thus, *moriens*,  
 Dying, *quam vivus*, than in his whole life,  
*Occiderat*, he ever killed before.  
 Are these things writ for no example, Sirs?  
 One instance more, and let me see who  
 doubts !  
 Our Lord Himself, made all of mansue-  
 tude,  
 Sealing the sum of sufferance up, received  
 Opprobrium, contumely and buffeting  
 Without complaint : but when He found  
 Himself  
 Touched in His honour never so little for  
 once,  
 Then outbroke indignation pent before—  
 "*Honorem meum nemini dabo !*" "No,  
 "My honour I to nobody will give !"  
 And certainly the example so hath wrought,  
 That whosoever, at the proper worth,  
 Apprises worldly honour and repute,  
 Esteems it nobler to die honoured man  
 Beneath Mannaia, than live centuries  
 Disgraced in the eye o' the world. We find  
 Saint Paul  
 No recreant to this faith delivered once :  
 "Far worthier were it that I died," cries  
 he,  
*Expedit mihi magis mori*, "than  
 "That anyone should make my glory void,"  
*Quam ut gloriam meam quis evacuet !*  
 See, *ad Corinthienses* : whereupon  
 Saint Ambrose makes a comment with much  
 fruit,  
 Doubtless my Judges long since laid to heart,  
 So I desist from bringing forward here.  
 (I can't quite recollect it.)

Have I proved  
*Satis superque*, both enough and to spare,  
 That Revelation old and new admits  
 The natural man may effervesce in ire,  
 O'erflood earth, o'erfroth heaven with foamy  
 rage,  
 At the first puncture to his self-respect ?

Then, Sirs, this Christian dogma, this law.  
 bud  
 Full-blown now, soon to bask the absolute  
 flower  
 Of Papal doctrine in our blaze of day,—  
 Bethink you, shall we miss one promise-  
 streak,  
 One doubtful birth of dawn crepuscular,  
 One dew-drop comfort to humanity,  
 Now that the chalice teems with noonday  
 wine?  
 Yea, argue Molinists who bar revenge—  
 Referring just to what makes out our case!  
 Under old dispensation, argue they,  
 The doom of the adulterous wife was death,  
 Stoning by Moses' law. "Nay, stone her  
 not,  
 "Put her away!" next legislates our Lord;  
 And last of all, "Nor yet divorce a wife!"  
 Ordains the Church, "she typifies herself,  
 "The Bride no fault shall cause to fall from  
 Christ."  
 Then, as no jot nor tittle of the Law  
 Has passed away—which who presumes to  
 doubt?  
 As not one word of Christ is rendered vain—  
 Which, could it be though heaven and earth  
 should pass?  
 —Where do I find my proper punishment  
 For my adulterous wife, I humbly ask  
 Of my infallible Pope,—who now remits  
 Even the divorce allowed by Christ in lieu  
 Of lapidation Moses licensed me?  
 The Gospel checks the Law which throws  
 the stone,  
 The Church tears the divorce-bill Gospel  
 grants:  
 Shall wives sin and enjoy impunity?  
 What profits me the fulness of the days,  
 The final dispensation, I demand,  
 Unless Law, Gospel and the Church sub-  
 join  
 "But who hath barred thee primitive revenge,  
 "Which, like fire damped and dammed up,  
 burns more fierce?  
 "Use thou thy natural privilege of man,  
 "Else wert thou found like those old ingrate  
 Jews,  
 "Despite the manna-banquet on the board,  
 "A-longing after melons, cucumbers,  
 "And such like trash of Egypt left behind!"  
 (There was one melon had improved our soup:  
 But did not Cinoncino need the rind  
 To make a boat with? So I seem to think.)  
 Law, Gospel and the Church—from these we  
 leap  
 To the very last revelation, easy rule  
 Befitting the well-born and thorough-bred  
 O' the happy day we live in, not the dark  
 O' the early rude and acorn-eating race.  
 "Behold," quoth James, "we bridle in a  
 horse  
 "And turn his body as we would thereby!"  
 Yea, but we change the bit to suit the growth,  
 And rasp our colt's jaw with a rugged spike  
 We hasten to remit our managed steed  
 Who wheels round at persuasion of a touch.  
 Civilization bows to decency,  
 The acknowledged use and wont: 'tis man-  
 ners,—mild  
 But yet imperative law,—which make the man.  
 Thus do we pay the proper compliment  
 To rank, and that society of Rome,  
 Hath so obliged us by its interest,  
 Taken our client's part instinctively,  
 As unaware defending its own cause.  
 What *dictum* doth Society lay down  
 I' the case of one who hath a faithless wife?  
 Wherewithal should the husband cleanse his  
 way?  
 Be patient and forgive? Oh, language fails,—  
 Shrinks from depicting his turpitude!  
 For if wronged husband raise not hue and  
 cry,  
*Quod si maritus de adulterio non  
 Conquereretur*, he's presumed a—foh!  
*Presumitur leno*: so, complain he must.  
 But how complain? At your tribunal, lords?  
 Far weightier challenge suits your sense, I  
 wot!  
 You sit not to have gentlemen propose  
 Questions gentility can itself discuss.  
 Did not you prove that to our brother Paul?  
 The Abate, *quoniam judicialiter*

*Prosequeretur*, when he tried the law, 765 And never yet lacked ill the law's rebuke. 810  
*Guidonis causam*, in Count Guido's case,  
*Accidit ipsi*, this befell himself,  
*Quod risum moverit et cachinnos*, that  
 He moved to mirth and cachinnation, all  
 Or nearly all, *fere in omnibus* 770 then?  
*Etiā sensatis et cordatis*, men  
 Strong-sensed, sound-hearted, nay, the very  
 Court,  
*Ipsismet in iudiciis*, I might add,  
*Non tamen dicam*. In a cause like this,  
 So multiplied were reasons *pro* and *con*, 775  
 Delicate, intertwined and obscure,  
 That Law refused loan of a finger-tip  
 To unravel, re-adjust the hopeless twine,  
 Since, half-a-dozen steps outside Law's seat,  
 There stood a foolish trifler with a tool 780  
 A-dangle to no purpose by his side,  
 Had clearly cut the embroilment in a trice.  
*Asserunt enim unanimiter*  
*Doctores*, for the Doctors all assert,  
 That husbands, *quod mariti*, must be held  
*Viles, cornuti reputantur*, vile, 785  
 Fronts branching forth a florid infamy,  
*Si propriis manibus*, if with their own hands,  
*Non sumunt*, they fail straight to take revenge,  
*Vindictam*, but expect the deed be done 790  
 By the Court—*expectant illam fieri*  
*Per iudices, qui summopere rident*, which  
 Gives an enormous guffaw for reply,  
*Et cachinnantur*. For he ran away, 794  
*Deliquit enim*, just that he might 'scape  
 The censure of both counsellors and crowd,  
*Ut vulgi et doctorum evitaret*  
*Censuram*, and lest so he superadd  
 To loss of honour ignominy too,  
*Et sic ne istam quoque ignominiam* 800  
*Anisso honori superadderet*.  
 My lords, my lords, the inconsiderate step  
 Was—we referred ourselves to Law at all!  
 Twit me not with "Law else had punished  
 you!" 804  
 Each punishment of the extra-legal step,  
 To which the high-born preferably revert,  
 Is ever for some oversight, some slip  
 I' the taking vengeance, not for vengeance'  
 self.  
 A good thing, done unhandsomely, turns ill;

And never yet lacked ill the law's rebuke. 810  
 For pregnant instance, let us contemplate  
 The luck of Leonardus,—see at large  
 Of Sicily's Decisions sixty-first.  
 This Leonard finds his wife is false: what  
 then?  
 He makes her own son snare her, and entice  
 Out of the town walls to a private walk 815  
 Wherein he slays her with commodity.  
 They find her body half-devoured by dogs:  
 Leonard is tried, convicted, punished, sent  
 To labour in the galleys seven years long:  
 Why? For the murder? Nay, but for the  
 mode! 821  
*Malus modus occidendi*, ruled the Court,  
 An ugly mode of killing, nothing more!  
 Another fructuous sample,—see "*De Re*  
 "*Criminali*," in Mattheus' divine piece.  
 Another husband, in no better plight, 825  
 Simulates absence, thereby tempts his wife;  
 On whom he falls, out of sly ambushade,  
 Backed by a brother of his, and both of them  
 Armed to the teeth with arms that law had  
 blamed. 830  
*Nimis dolose*, overwily,  
*Fuisse operatum*, did they work,  
 Pronounced the law: had all been fairly done  
 Law had not found him worthy, as she did,  
 Off four years' exile. Whycite more? Enough  
 Is good as a feast—(unless a birthday-feast  
 For one's Cinuccio) so, we finish here. 837  
 My lords, we rather need defend ourselves  
 Inasmuch as, for a twinkling of an eye,  
 We hesitatingly appealed to law,— 840  
 Than need deny that, on mature advice,  
 We blushing bethought us, bade revenge  
 Back to its simple proper private way  
 Of decent self-dealt gentlemanly death.  
 Judges, here is the law, and here beside,  
 The testimony! Look to it! 845  
 Pause and breathe!  
 So far is only too plain; we must watch:  
 Bottini will scarce hazard an attack  
 Here: best anticipate the fellow's play, 850  
 And guard the weaker places—warily ask,  
 What if considerations of a sort,  
 Reasons of a kind, arise from out the strange  
 Peculiar unforeseen new circumstance

Of this our (candour owns) abnormal act,  
To bar the right of us revenging so? 886  
"Impunity were otherwise your meed:

"Go slay your wife and welcome,"—may be urged,—

"But why the innocent old couple slay, 889  
"Pietro, Violante? You may do enough,  
"Not too much, not exceed the golden mean:  
"Neither brute-beast nor Pagan, Gentile, Jew,  
"Nor Christian, no nor votarist of the mode,  
"Is justified to push revenge so far."

No, indeed? Why, thou very sciolist! 895  
The actual wrong, Pompilia seemed to do,  
Was virtual wrong done by the parents here—  
Imposing her upon us as their child—  
Themselves allow: then, her fault was their fault,

Her punishment be theirs accordingly! 870  
But wait a little, sneak not off so soon!  
Was this cheat solely harm to Guido, pray?  
The precious couple you call innocent,—  
Why, they were felons that Law failed to clutch,  
*Qui ut fraudarent*, who that they might rob,  
*Legitime vocatos*, folk law called, 876  
*Ad fidei commissum*, true heirs to the Trust,  
*Partum supposuerunt*, feigned this birth,  
*Immemores reos factos esse*, blind 879  
To the fact that, guilty, they incurred thereby,  
*Ultimi supplicii*, hanging or what's worse.  
Do you blame us that we turn Law's instru-  
ments,

Not mere self-seekers,—mind the public weal,  
Nor make the private good our sole concern?  
That having—shall I say—secured a thief,  
Not simply we recover from his pouch 886  
The stolen article our property,  
But also pounce upon our neighbour's purse  
We opportunely find reposing there,  
And do him justice while we right ourselves?  
He owes us, for our part, a drubbing say, 891  
But owes our neighbour just a dance if the air  
Under the gallows: so, we throttle him.  
That neighbour's Law, that couple are the  
Thief,

We are the over ready to help Law— 896  
Zeal of her house hath eaten us up: for which,  
Can it be, Law intends to eat up us,

*Crudum Priamum*,<sup>1</sup> devour poor Priam raw,  
('Twas Jupiter's own joke) with babes to boot,  
*Priamique pisinuos*, in Homeric phrase? 907  
Shame!—and so ends my period prettily

But even,—prove the pair not culpable,  
Free as unborn babe from connivance at,  
Participation in, their daughter's fault:  
Ours the mistake. Is that a rare event? 908  
*Non semel*, it is anything but rare,  
*In contingentia facti*, that by chance,  
*Impiunes evaserunt*, go scot-free,

*Qui*, such well-meaning people as ourselves,  
*Iusto dolore moti*, who aggrieved 910

With cause, *apposuerunt manus*, lay  
Rough hands, *in innocentes*, on wrong heads,  
Cite we an illustrative case in point:

*Mulier Smirnea quidam*, good my lords,  
A gentlewoman lived in Smyrna once, 915  
*Virum et filium ex eo conceptum*, who  
Both husband and her son begot by him  
Killed, *interfecerat*, *ex quo*, because,  
*Vir filium suum perdidit*, her spouse  
Had been beforehand with her, killed her son,  
*Matrimonii primi*, of a previous bed. 921

*Deinde accusata*, then accused,  
*Apud Dolabellam*, before him that sat  
Proconsul, *nec duobus cadibus*  
*Contaminatam liberare*, nor 928

To liberate a woman doubly-dyed  
With murder, *vult*, made he up his mind,  
*Nec condemnare*, nor to doom to death,

*Iusto dolore impulsam*, one impelled  
By just grief; *sed remisit*, but sent her up  
*Ad Areopagum*, to the Hill of Mars, 931

*Sapientissimorum judicium*  
*Cætum*, to that assembly of the sage  
Paralleled only by my judges here;  
*Ubi, cognito de causa*, where, the cause 936

Well weighed, *responsum est*, they gave reply,  
*Ut ipsa et accusator*, that both sides  
O' the suit, *redirent*, should come back again,  
*Post centum annos*, after a hundred years,

<sup>1</sup> *Crudum Priamum* . . . *Priamique pisinuos*: a line from a translation of Homer by Attius Labeo. The translation as a whole is lost, but this line (*Il. IV. 35*) is preserved by a scholiast on Persius.

For judgment ; *et sic*, by which sage decree,  
*Duplici parricidio rea*, one 941  
 Convicted of a double parricide,  
*Quamvis etiam innocentem*, though in truth  
 Out of the pair, one innocent at least  
 She, *occidisset*, plainly had put to death, 945  
*Undequaque*, yet she altogether 'scaped,  
*Evasit impunis*. See the case at length  
 In Valerius, fittingly styled *Maximus*,  
 That eighth book: of his Memorable Facts.  
 Nor Cyriacus cites beside the mark : 950  
*Similiter uxori quæ mandaverat*,  
 Just so, a lady who had taken care,  
*Homicidium viri*, that her lord be killed,  
*Ex denegatione debiti*,  
 For denegation of a certain debt,  
*Matrimonialis*, he was loth to pay,  
*Fuit pecuniaria mulcta*, was  
 Amerced in a pecuniary mulct,  
*Punita, et ad penam*, and to pains,  
*Temporalem*, for a certain space of time, 960  
*In monasterio*, in a convent.

(Ay,

*In monasterio!* He mismanages  
*In* with the ablative, the accusative !  
 I had hoped to have hitched the villain into  
 verse 965  
 For a gift, this very day, a complete list  
 O' the prepositions each with proper case,  
 Telling a story, long was in my head.  
 "What prepositions take the accusative ?  
*Ad* to or at—*who saw the cat?*—down to 970  
*Ob*, for, because of, *keep her claws off!*" Tush !  
 Law in a man takes the whole liberty :  
 The muse is fettered: just as Ovid found !)

And now, sea widens and the coast is clear.  
 What of the dubious act you bade excuse ?  
 Surely things broaden, brighten, till at  
 length 975  
 Remains—so far from act that needs defence—  
 Apology to make for act delayed  
 One minute, let alone eight mortal months  
 Of hesitation ! "Why procrastinate?" 980  
 (Out with it my Bottinius, ease thyself !)  
 "Right, promptly done, is twice right : right  
 delayed

VOL. II.

"Turns wrong. We grant you should have  
 killed your wife,  
 "But killed o' the moment, at the meeting  
 her  
 "In company with the priest : then did the  
 tongue 985  
 "O' the Brazen Head give license, 'Time is  
 now !'  
 "Wait to make mind up? 'Time is past'  
 it peals.  
 "Friend, you are competent to mastery  
 "O' the passions that confessedly explain  
 "An outbreak : you allow an interval,  
 "And then break out as if time's clock still  
 clanged.  
 "You have forfeited your chance, and flat  
 you fall  
 "Into the commonplace category  
 "Of men bound to go softly all their days,  
 "Obeying Law." 995

Now, which way make response ?  
 What was the answer Guido gave, himself ?  
 —That so to argue came of ignorance  
 How honour bears a wound. "For, wound,"  
 said he,  
 "My body, and the smart soon mends and  
 ends : 1000  
 "While, wound my soul where honour sits  
 and rules,  
 "Longer the sufferance, stronger grows the  
 pain,  
 "Being *ex incontinenti*, fresh as first."  
 But try another tack, urge common sense  
 By way of contrast : say—Too true, my lords !  
 We did demur, awhile did hesitate : 1005  
 Since husband sure should let a scruple speak  
 Ere he slay wife,—for his own safety, lords !  
 Carpers abound in this misjudging world :  
 Moreover, there's a nicety in law 1010  
 That seems to justify them should they carp.  
 Suppose the source of injury a son,—  
 Father may slay such son yet run no risk :  
 Why graced with such a privilege? Because  
 A father so incensed with his own child, 1015  
 Or must have reason, or believe he has :  
*Quia semper*, seeing that in such event,  
*Presumitur*, the law is bound suppose,  
*Quod capiat pater*, that the sire must take,

*Bonum consilium pro filio,* 1080  
 The best course as to what befits his boy,  
 Through instinct, *ex instinctu*, of mere love,  
*Amoris*, and, *paterni*, fatherhood;  
*Quam confidentiam*, which confidence,  
*Non habet*, law declines to entertain, 1085  
*De viro*, of the husband: where finds he  
 An instinct that compels him love his wife?  
 Rather is he presumably her foe.  
 So, let him ponder long in this bad world  
 Ere do the simplest act of justice. 1090

But

Again—and here we brush Bottini's breast—  
 Object you, "See the danger of delay!  
 "Suppose a man murdered my friend last  
 month:  
 "Had I come up and killed him for his  
 pains 1085  
 "In rage, I had done right, allows the law:  
 "I meet him now and kill him in cold blood,  
 "I do wrong, equally allows the law:  
 "Wherein do actions differ, yours and mine?"  
*In plenitudine intellectus es?* 1040  
 Hast thy wits, Fisc? To take such slayer's  
 life,  
 Returns it life to thy slain friend at all?  
 Had he stolen ring instead of stabbing  
 friend,—  
 To-day, to-morrow or next century, 1044  
 Meeting the thief, thy ring upon his thumb,  
 Thou justifiably hadst wrung it thence:  
 So, couldst thou wrench thy friend's life back  
 again,  
 Though prisoned in the bosom of his foe.  
 Why, law would look complacent on thy  
 wrath.  
 Our case is, that the thing we lost, we found:  
 The honour, we were robbed of eight months  
 since, 1081  
 Being recoverable at any day  
 By death of the delinquent. Go thy ways!  
 Ere thou hast learned law, will be much  
 to do,  
 As said the gaby while he shod the goose.  
 Nay, if you urge me, interval was none! 1088  
 From the inn to the villa—blank or else a bar  
 Of adverse and contrarious incident.

Solid between us and our just revenge!  
 What with the priest who flourishes his  
 blade, 1086  
 The wife who like a fury flings at us,  
 The crowd—and then the capture, the appeal  
 To Rome, the journey there, the jaunting  
 thence  
 To shelter at the House of Convertites,  
 The visits to the Villa, and so forth, 1088  
 Where was one minute left us all this while  
 To put in execution that revenge  
 We planned o' the instant?—as it were,  
 plumped down  
 O' the spot, some eight months since, which  
 round sound egg,  
 Rome, more propitious than our nest, should  
 hatch! 1070  
 Object not, "You reached Rome on Christ-  
 mas-eve,  
 "And, despite liberty to act at once,  
 "Waited a whole and indecorous week!"  
 Hath so the Molinism, the canker, lords,  
 Eaten to our bone? Is no religion left? 1075  
 No care for aught held holy by the Church?  
 What, would you have us skip and miss those  
 Feasts  
 O' the Natal Time, must we go prosecute  
 Secular business on a sacred day?  
 Should not the merest charity expect, 1085  
 Setting our poor concerns aside for once,  
 We hurried to the song matutinal  
 I' the Sistine, and pressed forward for the Mass  
 The Cardinal that's Camerlengo<sup>1</sup> chaunts,  
 Then rushed on to the blessing of the Hat  
 And Rapier, which the Pope sends to what  
 prince 1088  
 Has done most detriment to the Infidel—  
 And thereby whetted courage if 'twere  
 blunt?  
 Meantime, allow we kept the house a week,  
 Suppose not we were idle in our mew! 1090  
 Picture us raging here and raving there—  
 "Money?" I need none. "Friends?"  
 The word is null.  
 "Restore the white was on that shield of mine

<sup>1</sup> *Camerlengo*: the chamberlain of the Pope, who ranks highest among the cardinals, and presides during a vacancy in the Holy See.

"Borne at" . . . wherever might be shield  
to bear.

"I see my grandairé, he who fought so well

"At" . . . here find out and put in time  
and place, 1096

(Or else invent the fight his grandsire fought:

"I see this! I see that!")

(See nothing else,

Or I shall scarce see lamb's fry in an hour!

What to the uncle, as I bid advance 1101

The smoking dish? "Fry suits a tender tooth!

"Behoves we care a little for our kin—

"You, Sir,—who care so much for cousinship

"As come to your poor loving nephew's  
feast!" 1106

He has the reversion of a long lease yet—

Land to bequeath! He loves lamb's fry, I  
know!)

Here fall to be considered those same six

Qualities; what Bottini needs must call

So many aggravations of our crime, 1110

Parasite-growth upon mere murder's back.

We summarily might dispose of such

By some off-hand and jaunty fling, some skit—

"So, since there's proved no crime to aggra-  
vate,

"A fico for your aggravations, Fisc!" 1115

No,—handle mischief rather,—play with  
spells

Were meant to raise a spirit, and laugh the  
while

We show that did he rise we stand his match!

Therefore, first aggravation: we made up—

Over and above our simple murderous selves—

A regular assemblage of armed men, 1121

*Coadunatio armatorum*,—ay,

Unluckily it was the very judge

That sits in judgment on our cause to-day

Who passed the law as Governor of Rome:

"Four men armed,"—though for lawful pur-  
pose, mark! 1126

Much more for an acknowledged crime,—  
"shall die."

We five were armed to the teeth, meant  
murder too?

Why, that's the very point that saves us, Fisc!

Let me instruct you. Crime nor done nor  
meant,— 1129

You punish still who arm and congregate:

For wherefore use bad means to a good  
end?

Crime being meant not done,—you punish  
still

The means to crime, whereon you haply  
pounce, 1134

Though accident have balked them of effect.

But crime not only compassed but complete,

Meant and done too? Why, since you have  
the end,

Be that your sole concern, nor mind those  
means

No longer to the purpose! Murdered we?

(—Which, that our luck was in the present  
case, 1140

*Quod contigisse in prasenti casu,*

Is palpable, *manibus palpatum est*—)

Make murder out against us, nothing else!

Of many crimes committed with a view

To one main crime, Law overlooks the less,

Intent upon the large. Suppose a man 1146

Having in view commission of a theft,

Climbs the town-wall: 'tis for the theft he  
hangs,

In case he stands convicted of such theft:

Law remits whipping, due to who clomb  
wall 1150

Through bravery or wantonness alone,

Just to dislodge a daw's nest, plant a flag.

So I interpret you the manly mind

Of him about to judge both you and me,—

Our Governor, who, being no Fisc, my  
Fisc, 1156

Cannot have blundered on ineptitude!

Next aggravation,—that the arms themselves

Were specially of such forbidden sort

Through shape or length or breadth, as,  
prompt, Law plucks

From single hand of solitary man, 1160

Making him pay the carriage with his life:

*Delatio armorum*, arms against the rule,

*Contra formam constitutionis*, of

Pope Alexander's blessed memory.

Such are the poignards with the double  
prong, 1166



Horn-like, when tines make bold the antlered  
buck,  
Each prong of brittle glass—wherewith to  
stab

And break off short and so let fragment stick  
Fast in the flesh to baffle surgery :  
Such being the Genoese blade with hooked  
edge 1170

That did us service at the villa here.

*Sed parcat mihi tam eximius vir,*  
But,—let so rare a personage forgive,—  
Fisc, thy objection is a foppery !

Thy charge runs that we killed three inno-  
cents : 1175

Killed, dost see? Then, if killed, what  
matter how?

By stick or stone, by sword or dagger, tool  
Long or tool short, round or triangular—  
Poor slain folk find small comfort in the  
choice ! 1179

Means to an end, means to an end, my Fisc !  
Nature cries out, "Take the first arms you  
find !"

*Furor ministrat arma :*<sup>1</sup> where's a stone ?  
*Unde mihi lapidem,*<sup>2</sup> where darts for me ?

*Unde sagittas ?* But subdue the bard 1184  
And rationalize a little. Eight months since,  
Had we, or had we not, incurred your blame  
For letting 'scape unpunished this bad pair ?  
I think I proved that in last paragraph !  
Why did we so ? Because our courage failed.  
Wherefore ? Through lack of arms to fight  
the foe : 1190

We had no arms or merely lawful ones,  
An unimportant sword and blunderbuss,  
Against a foe, pollent in potency,  
The *amasius*, and our vixen of a wife. 1194

Well then, how culpably do we gird loin  
And once more undertake the high emprise,  
Unless we load ourselves this second time  
With handsome superfluity of arms,  
Since better is "too much" than "not enough,"  
And "*plus non vitiat*," too much does no  
harm, 1200

Except in mathematics, sages say.

<sup>1</sup> *Furor arma ministrat* : Virgil, *Æn.* I. 150.  
<sup>2</sup> *Unde mihi lapidem* . . . *unde sagittas* :

Horace, *Sat.* II. 7, 116.

Gather instruction from the parable !

At first we are advised—"A lad hath here  
"Seven barley loaves and two small fishes :  
what 1204

"Is that among so many?" Aptly asked :  
But put that question twice and, quite as apt,  
The answer is "Fragments, twelve baskets  
full !"

And, while we speak of superabundance, fling  
We word by the way to fools who cast their  
flout

On Guido—"Punishment were pardoned  
him, 1210

"But here the punishment exceeds offence :  
"He might be just, but he was cruel too !"

Why, grant there seems a kind of cruelty  
In downright stabbing people he could maim,  
(If so you stigmatize the stern and strict) 1218  
Still, Guido meant no cruelty—may plead

Transgression of his mandate, over-zeal  
O' the part of his companions : all he craved  
Was, they should fray the faces of the folk,  
Merely disfigure, nowise make them die. 1220

*Solummodo fassus est*, he owns no more,  
*Dedisse mandatum*, than that he desired,  
*Ad sfrisandum, dicam*, that they hack

And hew, i' the customary phrase, his wife,  
*Uxorem tantum*, and no harm beside. 1225

If his instructions then be misconceived,  
Nay, disobeyed, impute you blame to him ?  
Cite me no Panicollus to the point,

As adverse ! Oh, I quite expect his case—  
How certain noble youths of Sicily 1230

Having good reason to mistrust their wives,  
Killed them and were absolved in conse-  
quence :

While others who had gone beyond the need  
By mutilation of each paramour—

As Galba in the Horatian satire<sup>3</sup> grieved  
—These were condemned to the galleys, cast  
for guilt 1236

Exceeding simple murder of a wife.  
But why ? Because of ugliness, and not  
Cruelty, in the said revenge, I trow !

*Ex causa abscissionis partium ;* 1240

<sup>3</sup> *The Horatian satire* : *Sat.* I. 2, 46.

*Qui nempe id facientes reputantur*

*Natura inimici*, man revolts

Against them as the natural enemy.

Pray, grant to one who meant to slit the nose

And slash the cheek and slur the mouth, at  
most, 1245

A somewhat more humane award than these  
Obtained, these natural enemies of man !

*Objectum funditus corrui*t, fiat you fall,

My Fisc ! I waste no kick on you, but pass.

Third aggravation : that our act was  
done— 1250

Not in the public street, where safety lies,

Not in the bye-place, caution may avoid,

Wood, cavern, desert, spots contrived for  
crime,—

But in the very house, home, nook and nest,  
O' the victims, murdered in their dwelling-  
place, 1255

*In domo ac habitatione propria*,

Where all presumably is peace and joy.

The spider, crime, pronounce we twice a pest

When, creeping from congenial cottage, she

Taketh hold with her hands, to horrify 1260

His household more, i' the palace of the king.

All three were housed and safe and confident.

Moreover, the permission that our wife

Should have at length *domum pro carcere*,

Her own abode in place of prison—why, 1265

We ourselves granted, by our other self

And proxy Paolo : did we make such grant,

Meaning a lure ?—elude the vigilance

O' the jailor, lead her to commodious death,

While we ostensibly relented ? 1270

Ay,

Just so did we, nor otherwise, my Fisc !

Is vengeance lawful ? We demand our right,

But find it will be questioned or refused

By jailor, turnkey, hangdog, — what know  
we ? 1275

Pray, how is it we should conduct ourselves ?

To gain our private right—break public  
peace,

Do you bid us ?—trouble order with our  
broils ?

Endanger . . shall I shrink to own . . our-  
selves ?—

Who want no broken head nor bloody  
nose 1280

(While busied slitting noses, breaking heads)

From the first tipstaff that may interfere !

*Nam quicquid sit*, for howsoever it be,

*An de consensu nostro*, if with leave

Or not, a *monasterio*, from the nuns, 1285

*Educta esset*, she had been led forth,

*Potuimus id dissimulare*, we

May well have granted leave in pure pretence,

*Ut aditum habere*, that thereby

An entry we might compass, a free move

*Potuissemus*, to her easy death, 1290

*Ad eam occidendam*. Privacy

O' the hearth, and sanctitude of home, say  
you ?

Shall we give man's abode more privilege

Than God's ?—for in the churches where He  
dwells, 1295

*In quibus assistit Regum Rex*, by means

Of His essence, *per essentiam*, all the same,

*Et nihilominus*, therein, *in eis*,

*Ex justa via delinquens*, whoso dares

To take a liberty on ground enough, 1300

Is pardoned, *excusatur* : that's our case—

Delinquent through befitting cause. You  
hold,

To punish a false wife in her own house

Is graver than, what happens every day,

To hale a debtor from his hiding-place 1305

In church protected by the Sacrament ?

To this conclusion have I brought my Fisc ?

Foxes have holes, and fowls o' the air their  
nests ;

Praise you the impiety that follows, Fisc ?

Shall false wife yet have where to lay her  
head ? 1310

" *Contra Fiscum definitum est !*" He's done !

" *Surge et scribe*," make a note of it !

—If I may dally with Aquinas' word:

Or in the death-throe does he mutter still,

Fourth aggravation, that we changed our  
garb, 1315

And rusticized ourselves with uncouth hat,

Rough vest and goatskin wrappage ; mur-  
dered thus

*Mutatione vestium*, in disguise,

Whereby mere murder got complexed with  
wile,

Turned *homicidium ex insidiis*? Fisc,  
How often must I round thee in the ears—  
All means are lawful to a lawful end?  
Concede he had the right to kill his wife:  
The Count indulged in a travesty; why?  
*De illa ut vindictam sumeret,*

That on her he might lawful vengeance take,  
*Commodus*, with more ease, *et tutius*,  
And safer: wants he warrant for the step?  
Read to thy profit how the Apostle once

For ease and safety, when Damascus raged,  
Was let down in a basket by the wall  
To 'scape the malice of the governor  
(Another sort of Governor boasts Rome!)

—Many are of opinion,—covered close,  
Concealed with—what except that very  
cloak

He left behind at Troas afterward?  
I shall not add a syllable: Molinists may!  
Well, have we more to manage? Ay, indeed!  
Fifth aggravation, that our wife reposed

*Sub potestate judicis*, beneath  
Protection of the judge,—her house was styled  
A prison, and his power became its guard  
In lieu of wall and gate and bolt and bar.

This is a tough point, shrewd, redoubtable:  
Because we have to supplicate that judge  
Shall overlook wrong done the judgment-seat.  
Now, I might suffer my own nose be pulled,  
As man: but then as father . . . if the Fisc  
Touched one hair of my boy who held my  
hand

In confidence he could not come to harm  
Crossing the Corso, at my own desire,  
Going to see those bodies in the church—  
What would you say to that, Don Hyacinth?  
This is the sole and single knotty point:

For, bid Tommati blink his interest,  
You laud his magnanimity the while  
But balk Tommati's office,—he talks big!  
"My predecessors in the place,—those sons  
"O' the prophets that may hope succeed me  
here,—

"Shall I diminish their prerogative?  
"Count Guido Franceschini's honour!—well,  
"Has the Governor of Rome none?"

You perceive,  
The cards are all against us. Make a push,  
Kick over table, as shrewd gamblers do!  
We, do you say, encroach upon the rights,  
Deny the omnipotence o' the Judge for  
sooth?  
We, who have only been from first to last  
Intending that his purpose should prevail,  
Nay more, at times, anticipating it  
At risk of his rebuke?

But wait awhile!  
Cannot we lump this with the sixth and last  
Of the aggravations—that the Majesty  
O' the Sovereign here received a wound?  
to-wit,

*Lesa Majestas*, since our violence  
Was out of envy to the course of law,  
*In odium litis*? We cut short thereby  
Three pending suits, promoted by ourselves  
I' the main,—which worsens crime, *accedit ad  
Exasperationem criminis*!

Yes, here the eruptive wrath with full effect!  
How, did not indignation chain my tongue,  
Could I repel this last, worst charge of all!  
(There is a porcupine to barbacue;  
Gigia can jug a rabbit well enough,  
With sour-sweet sauce and pine-pips; but,  
good Lord,

Suppose the devil instigate the wench  
To stew, not roast him? Stew my porcupine?  
If she does, I know where his quills shall stick!  
Come, I must go myself and see to things:  
I cannot stay much longer stewing here.)  
Our stomach . . . I mean, our soul is stirred  
within,

And we want words. We wounded Majesty?  
Fall under such a censure, we?—who yearned  
So much that Majesty dispel the cloud  
And shine on us with healing on her wings,  
That we prayed Pope *Majestas*' very self  
To anticipate a little the tardy pack,  
Bell us forth deep the authoritative bay  
Should start the beagles into sudden yelp  
Unisonous,—and, Gospel leading Law,  
Grant there assemble in our own behoof  
A Congregation, a particular Court,

A few picked friends of quality and place,  
To hear the several matters in dispute,—  
Causes big, little and indifferent,  
Bred of our marriage like a mushroom-  
growth,—

All at once (can one brush off such too soon?)  
And so with laudable despatch decide 1410  
Whether we, in the main (to sink detail)  
Were one the Pope should hold fast or let go.  
“What, take the credit from the Law?” you  
ask?

Indeed, we did! Law ducks to Gospel here:  
Why should Law gain the glory and pronounce  
A judgment shall immortalize the Pope? 1418  
Yes: our self-abnegating policy  
Was Joab’s—we would rouse our David’s sloth,  
Bid him encamp against a city, sack  
A place whereto ourselves had long laid siege,  
Lest, taking it at last, it take our name 1421  
Nor be styled *Innocentinopolis*.

But no! The modesty was in alarm,  
The temperance refused to interfere,  
Returned us our petition with the word 1426  
“*Ad iudices suos*,” “Leave him to his Judge!”  
As who should say “Why trouble my repose?”  
“Why consult Peter in a simple case,  
“Peter’s wife’s sister in her fever-fit 1429  
“Might solve as readily as the Apostle’s self?  
“Are my Tribunals posed by aught so plain?  
“Hath not my Court a conscience? It is of age,  
“Ask it!”

We do ask,—but, inspire reply  
To the Court thou bidst me ask, as I have  
asked— 1435

Oh thou, who vigilantly dost attend  
To even the few, the ineffectual words  
Which rise from this our low and mundane  
sphere

Up to thy region out of smoke and noise,  
Seeking corroboration from thy nod 1440  
Who art all justice—which means mercy too,  
In a low noisy smoky world like ours  
Where Adam’s sin made peccable his seed!  
We venerate the father of the flock,  
Whose last faint sands of life, the frittered  
gold, 1445  
Fall noiselessly, yet all too fast, o’ the cone

And tapering heap of those collected years:  
Never have these been hurried in their flow,  
Though justice fain would jog reluctant arm,  
In eagerness to take the forfeiture 1450  
Of guilty life: much less shall mercy sue  
In vain that thou let innocence survive,  
Precipitate no minim of the mass  
O’ the all-so precious moments of thy life,  
By pushing Guido into death and doom!

(Our Cardinal engages to go read 1456  
The Pope my speech, and point its beauties  
out.

They say, the Pope has one half-hour, in  
twelve,

Of something like a moderate return  
Of the intellectuals,—never much to lose!  
If I adroitly plant this passage there, 1461  
The Fisc will find himself forestalled, I think,  
Though he stand, beat till the old ear-drum  
break!

—Ah, boy of my own bowels, Hyacinth,  
Wilt ever catch the knack, requite the pains  
Of poor papa, become proficient too 1466  
I’ the how and why and when, the time to  
laugh,

The time to weep, the time, again, to pray,  
And all the times prescribed by Holy Writ?  
Well, well, we fathers can but care, but cast  
Our bread upon the waters!) 1471

In a word,  
These secondary charges go to ground,  
Since secondary, and superfluous,—notes  
Quite from the main point: we did all and some,  
Little and much, adjunct and principal, 1476  
*Causa honoris*. Is there such a cause  
As the sake of honour? By that sole test try  
Our action, nor demand if more or less,  
Because of the action’s mode, we merit blame  
Or may-be deserve praise. The Court  
decides. 1481

Is the end lawful? It allows the means:  
What we may do, we may with safety do,  
And what means “safety” we ourselves must  
judge.

Put case a person wrongs me, past dispute:  
If my legitimate vengeance be a blow, 1486  
Mistrusting my bare arm can deal that blow,

I claim co-operation of a stick ;  
 Doubtful if stick be tough, I crave a sword ;  
 Diffident of ability in fence, 1480  
 I fee a friend, a swordsman to assist :  
 Take one—he may be coward, fool or knave :  
 Why not take fifty?—and if these exceed  
 I' the due degree of drubbing, whom accuse  
 But the first author of the aforesaid wrong  
 Who put poor me to such a world of pains?  
 Surgery would have just excised a wart ; 1487  
 The patient made such pother, struggled so  
 That the sharp instrument sliced nose and all.  
 Taunt us not that our friends performed for  
 pay ! 1500

Ourselves had toiled for simple honour's sake :  
 But country clowns want dirt they comprehend,  
 The piece of gold ! Our reasons, which suffice  
 Ourselves, be ours alone ; our piece of gold  
 Be, to the rustic, reason he approves ! 1505  
 We must translate our motives like our speech,  
 Into the lower phrase that suits the sense  
 O' the limitedly apprehensive. Let  
 Each level have its language ! Heaven  
 speaks first 1509  
 To the angel, then the angel tames the word  
 Down to the ear of Tobit : he, in turn,  
 Diminishes the message to his dog,  
 And finally that dog finds how the flea  
 (Which else, importunate, might check his  
 speed)

Shall learn its hunger must have holiday. 1515  
 By application of his tongue or paw :  
 So many varied sorts of language here,  
 Each following each with pace to match the  
 step,  
*Haud passibus æquis !* 1519

Talking of which flea,  
 Reminds me I must put in special word  
 For the poor humble following,—the four  
 friends,  
*Sicarii*, our assassins caught and caged.  
 Ourselves are safe in your approval now :  
 Yet must we care for our companions, plead  
 The cause o' the poor, the friends (of old-  
 world faith) 1525

Who lie in tribulation for our sake.  
*Pauperum Procurator* is my style :

I stand forth as the poor man's advocate :  
 And when we treat of what concerns the poor,  
*Et cum agatur de pauperibus,* 1531  
 In bondage, *carceratis*, for their sake,  
*In eorum causis*, natural piety,  
*Pietas*, ever ought to win the day,  
*Triumphare debet, quia ipsi sunt,* 1535  
 Because those very paupers constitute,  
*Thesaurus Christi*, all the wealth of Christ.  
 Nevertheless I shall not hold you long  
 With multiplicity of proofs, nor burn  
 Candle at noon-tide, clarify the clear. 1540  
 There beams a case refulgent from our books—  
 Castrensis, Butringarius,<sup>1</sup> everywhere  
 I find it burn to dissipate the dark.

'Tis this: a husband had a friend, which friend  
 Seemed to him over-friendly with his wife  
 In thought and purpose,—I pretend no more.  
 To justify suspicion or dispel, 1547  
 He bids his wife make show of giving heed,  
 Semblance of sympathy—propose, in fine,  
 A secret meeting in a private place. 1550  
 The friend, enticed thus, finds an ambuscade,  
 To-wit, the husband posted with a pack  
 Of other friends, who fall upon the first  
 And beat his love and life out both at once.  
 These friends were brought to question for  
 their help ; 1555  
 Law ruled "The husband being in the right,  
 "Who helped him in the right can scarce be  
 wrong"—

*Opinio*, an opinion every way,  
*Multum tenenda cordi*, heart should hold !  
 When the inferiors follow as befits 1560  
 The lead o' the principal, they change their  
 name,

And, *non dicuntur*, are no longer called  
 His mandatories, *mandatorii*,  
 But helpmates, *sed auxiliares* ; since  
 To that degree does honour's sake lend aid,  
*Adeo honoris causa est efficax,* 1565  
 That not alone, *non solum*, does it pour  
 Itself out, *se diffundat*, on mere friends  
 We bring to do our bidding of this sort,

<sup>1</sup> *Castrensis, Butringarius*: Paulus de Castro and Jacobus Butringarius (as the name should be spelt), jurists of the sixteenth century.

*In mandatorios simplices*, but sucks 1570  
 Along with it in wide and generous whirl,  
*Sed etiam assassinii qualitate*  
*Qualificatos*, people qualified  
 By the quality of assassination's self,  
 Dare I make use of such neologism, 1575  
*Ut utar verbo*.

Haste we to conclude.

Of the other points that favour, leave some  
 few

For Spreti; such as the delinquents' youth.  
 One of them falls short, by some months, of  
 age 1580

Fit to be managed by the gallows; two  
 May plead exemption from our law's award,  
 Being foreigners, subjects of the Granduke—  
 I spare that bone to Spreti, and reserve  
 Myself the juicier breast of argument— 1585  
 Flinging the breast-blade i' the face o' the  
 Fisc,

Who furnished me the tid-bit: he must needs  
 Play off his privilege and rack the clowns,—  
 And they, at instance of the rack, confess  
 All four unanimously made resolve,— 1590  
 The night o' the murder, in brief minute  
 snatched

Behind the back of Guido as he fled,—  
 That, since he had not kept his promise, paid  
 The money for the murder on the spot, 1594  
 So, reaching home again, might please ignore  
 The pact or pay them in improper coin,—  
 They one and all resolved, these hopeful  
 friends,

'Twere best inaugurate the morrow's light,  
 Nature recruited with her due repose,  
 By killing Guido as he lay asleep 1600  
 Pillowed on wallet which contained their fee.

I thank the Fisc for knowledge of this fact:  
 What fact could hope to make more manifest  
 Their rectitude, Guido's integrity? 1604  
 For who fails recognize the touching truth  
 That these poor rustics bore no envy, hate,  
 Malice nor yet uncharitableness  
 Against the people they had put to death?  
 In them, did such an act reward itself?  
 All done was to deserve the simple pay, 1610

Obtain the bread clowns earn by sweat of  
 brow,  
 And missing which, they missed of every-  
 thing—

Hence claimed pay, even at expense of life  
 To their own lord, so little warped (admire!)  
 By prepossession, such the absolute 1615  
 Instinct of equity in rustic souls!

Whereas our Count, the cultivated mind,  
 He, wholly rapt in his serene regard  
 Of honour, he contemplating the sun 1619

Who hardly marks if taper blink below,—  
 He, dreaming of no argument for death  
 Except a vengeance worthy noble hearts,—  
 Dared not so desecrate the deed, forsooth,  
 Vulgarize vengeance, as defray its cost,  
 By money dug from out the dirty earth, 1625  
 Irritant mere, in Ovid's phrase, to ill.  
 What though he lured base hinds by lucre's  
 hope,—

The only motive they could masticate,  
 Milk for babes, not strong meat which men  
 require?

The deed done, those coarse hands were  
 soiled enough, 1630

He spared them the pollution of the pay.  
 So much for the allegement, thine, my Fisc,  
*Quo nil absurdius*, than which nought more  
 mad,

*Excogitari potest*, may be squeezed  
 From out the cogitative brain of thee! 1635  
 And now, thou excellent the Governor!

(Push to the peroration) *caterum*  
*Enixe supplico*, I strive in prayer,  
*Ut dominis meis*, that unto the Court,  
*Benigna fronte*, with a gracious brow, 1640  
*Et oculis serenis*, and mild eyes,

*Perpendere placeat*, it may please them weigh,  
*Quod dominus Guido*, that our noble Count,  
*Occidit*, did the killing in dispute,  
*Ut ejus honor tumulatus*, that 1645

The honour of him buried fathom-deep  
 In infamy, *in infamia*, might arise,  
*Resurgeret*, as ghost breaks sepulchre!

*Occidit*, for he killed, *uxorem*, wife,  
*Quia illi juit*, since she was to him, 1650  
*Opprobrio*, a disgrace and nothing more!  
*Et genitores*, killed her parents too,

*Qui*, who, *postposita verecundia*,  
Having thrown off all sort of decency,  
*Filiam repudiavit*, had renounced 1865  
Their daughter, *atque declarare non*  
*Erubuerunt*, nor felt blush tinge cheek,  
Declaring, *meretricis genitam*  
*Esse*, she was the offspring of a drab,  
*Ut ipse dehonorearetur*, just 1860  
That so himself might lose his social rank !  
*Cujus mentem*, and which daughter's heart  
and soul,

They, *perverterunt*, turned from the right  
course,

*Et ad illicitos amores non*  
*Duntaxat pellexerunt*, and to love 1865  
Not simply did alluringly incite,  
*Sed vi obedientia*, but by force  
O' the duty, *filialis*, daughters owe,  
*Coegerunt*, forced and drove her to the deed :  
*Occidit*, I repeat he killed the clan, 1870  
*Ne scilicet amplius in dedecore*,  
Lest peradventure longer life might trail,  
*Viveret*, link by link his turpitude,  
*Invisus consanguineis*, hateful so  
To kith and kindred, *a nobilibus* 1875  
*Notatus*, shunned by men of quality,  
*Relictus ab amicis*, left i' the lurch  
By friends, *ab omnibus derisus*, turned  
A common hack-block to try edge of jokes.  
*Occidit*, and he killed them here in Rome,  
*In Urbe*, the Eternal City, Sirs, 1881  
*Nempe quæ alias spectata est*,  
The appropriate theatre which witnessed  
once,

*Matronam nobilem*, Lucretia's self,  
*Abluere pudicitia maculas*, 1885  
Wash off the spots of her pudicity,  
*Sanguine proprio*, with her own pure blood ;  
*Qua vidit*, and which city also saw,  
*Patrem*, Virginius, *undequaque*, quite,  
*Impunam*, with no sort of punishment, 1890  
Nor, *et non illaudatum*, lacking praise,  
*Sed polluentem parricidio*,  
Imbrue his hands with butchery, *filia*,  
Of chaste Virginia, to avoid a rape,  
*Ne raperetur ad stupra* ; so to heart, 1895  
*Tanti illi cordi fuit*, did he take,  
*Suspicio*, the mere fancy men might have,

*Honoris amittendi*, of fame's loss,  
*Ut potius voluerit filia*  
*Orbati*, he preferred to lose his child, 1790  
*Quam illa incederet*, rather than she walk  
The ways an, *inhonesta*, child disgraced,  
*Licet non sponte*, though against her will.  
*Occidit*—killed them, I reiterate—  
*In propria domo*, in their own abode, 1795  
*Ut adultera et parentes*, that each wretch,  
*Conscii agnoscerent*, might both see and say,  
*Nullum locum*, there's no place, *nullumque*  
*esse*

*Asylum*, nor yet refuge of escape,  
*Impenetrabilem*, shall serve as bar, 1710  
*Honori læso*, to the wounded one  
In honour ; *neve ibi opprobria*  
*Continuarentur*, killed them on the spot,  
Moreover, dreading lest within those walls  
The opprobrium peradventure be prolonged,  
*Et domus quæ testis fuit turpium*, 1715  
And that the domicile which witnessed crime,  
*Esset et parva*, might watch punishment :  
*Occidit*, killed, I round you in the ears,  
*Quia alio modo*, since by other mode, 1720  
*Non poterat ejus existimatio*,  
There was no possibility his fame,  
*Læsa*, gashed grievously, *tam enormiter*,  
*Ducere cicatrices*, might be healed :  
*Occidit ut exemplum præberet* 1725  
*Uxoribus*, killed her, so to lesson wives  
*Jura conjugii*, that the marriage-oath,  
*Esse servanda*, must be kept henceforth :  
*Occidit denique*, killed her, in a word,  
*Ut pro posse honestus viveret*, 1730  
That he, please God, might creditably live,  
*Sin minus*, but if fate willed otherwise,  
*Proprii honoris*, of his outraged fame,  
*Offensi*, by Mannaia, if you please,  
*Commiseranda victima caderet*, 1735  
The pitiable victim he should fall !

Done ! I' the rough, i' the rough ! But  
done ! And, lo,  
Landed and stranded lies my very speech,  
My miracle, my monster of defence—  
Leviathan into the nose whereof 1740  
I have put fish-hook, pierced his jaw with  
thorn,

And given him to my maidens for a play !  
 I' the rough : to-morrow I review my piece,  
 Tame here and there undue floridity.  
 It's hard : you have to plead before these  
 priests 1745  
 And poke at them with Scripture, or you pass  
 For heathen and, what's worse, for ignorant  
 O' the quality o' the Court and what it likes  
 By way of illustration of the law.  
 To-morrow stick in this, and throw out that,  
 And, having first ecclesiasticized, 1751  
 Regularize the whole, next emphasize,  
 Then latinize, and lastly Cicero-ize,  
 Giving my Fisc his finish. There's my  
 speech ! 1754  
 And where's my fry, and family and friends ?  
 Where's that huge Hyacinth I mean to hug  
 Till he cries out, "*Jam satis !* Let me  
 breathe !"  
 Now, what an evening have I earned to-day !  
 Hail, ye true pleasures, all the rest are false !  
 Oh the old mother, oh the fattish wife ! 1760  
 Rogue Hyacinth shall put on paper toque,  
 And wrap himself around with mamma's veil  
 Done up to imitate papa's black robe,  
 (I'm in the secret of the comedy,— 1764  
 Part of the program leaked out long ago !)  
 And call himself the Advocate o' the Poor,  
 Mimic Don father that defends the Count :  
 And for reward shall have a small full glass  
 Of manly red rosolio to himself,  
 —Always provided that he conjugate 1770  
*Bibo*, I drink, correctly—nor be found  
 Make the *perfectum*, *bipsi*, as last year !  
 How the ambitious do so harden heart  
 As lightly hold by these home-sanctitudes,  
 To me is matter of bewilderment— 1775  
 Bewilderment ! Because ambition's range  
 Is nowise tethered by domestic tie.  
 Am I refused an outlet from my home  
 To the world's stage ? — whereon a man  
 should play  
 The man in public, vigilant for law, 1780  
 Zealous for truth, a credit to his kind,  
 Nay,—since, employing talent so, I yield  
 The Lord His own again with usury,—  
 A satisfaction, yea, to God Himself !  
 Well, I have modelled me by Agur's wish,

"Remove far from me vanity and lies, 1785  
 "Feed me with food convenient for me !"  
 What  
 I' the world, should a wise man require  
 beyond ?  
 Can I but coax the good fat little wife  
 To tell her fool of a father the mad prank  
 His scapegrace nephew played this time last  
 year 1791  
 At Carnival ! He could not choose, I think,  
 But modify that inconsiderate gift  
 O' the cup and cover (somewhere in the will  
 Under the pillow, someone seems to guess)  
 —Correct that clause in favour of a boy 1795  
 The trifle ought to grace, with name engraved,  
 Would look so well, produced in future years  
 To pledge a memory, when poor papa  
 Latin and law are long since laid at rest—  
*Hyacintho dono dedit avus !* Why, 1801  
 The wife should get a necklace for her pains,  
 The very pearls that made Violante proud,  
 And Pietro pawned for half their value once,—  
 Redeemable by somebody, *ne sit* 1805  
*Marita quæ rotundioribus*  
*Onusta mammis . . . baccis ambulet :*  
 Her bosom shall display the big round balls,  
 No braver proudly borne by wedded wife !  
 With which Horatian promise <sup>1</sup> I con-  
 clude. 1810

Into the pigeon-hole with these, my speech !  
 Off and away, first work then play, play, play !  
 Bottini, burn thy books, thou blazing ass !  
 Sing "Tra-la-la, for, lambkins, we must live !"

# IX.—JURIS DOCTOR JOHANNES- BAPTISTA BOTTINIUS,

FISCI ET REV. CAM. APOSTOL. ADVOCATUS.

HAD I God's leave, how I would alter things !  
 If I might read instead of print my speech,—  
 Ay, and enliven speech with many a flower  
 Refuses obstinate to blow in print,  
 As wildings planted in a prim parterre,—

*Horatian promise : Horace, Epodes, 8, 13.*



This scurvy room were turned an immense hall ;  
 Opposite, fifty judges in a row ;  
 This side and that of me, for audience—  
 Rome :  
 And, where yon window is, the Pope should  
 hide—  
 Watch, curtained, but peep visibly enough.  
 A buzz of expectation ! Through the crowd,  
 Jingling his chain and stumping with his  
 staff,  
 Up comes an usher, louts him low, "The  
 Court  
 "Requires the allocution of the Fisc !"  
 I rise, I bend, I look about me, pause 15  
 O'er the hushed multitude : I count—One,  
 two—

Have ye seen, Judges, have ye, lights of  
 law,—  
 When it may hap some painter, much in  
 vogue  
 Throughout our city nutritive of arts,  
 Ye summon to a task shall test his worth, 20  
 To manufacture, as he knows and can,  
 A work may decorate a palace-wall,  
 Afford my lords their Holy Family,—  
 Hath it escaped the acumen of the Court  
 How such a painter sets himself to paint ? 25  
 Suppose that Joseph, Mary and her Babe  
 A-journeying to Egypt, prove the piece :  
 Why, first he sedulously practiseth,  
 This painter, —girding loin and lighting  
 lamp,— 28  
 On what may nourish eye, make facile hand ;  
 Getteth him studies (styled by draughtsmen so)  
 From some assistant corpse of Jew or Turk  
 Or, haply, Molinist, he cuts and carves,—  
 This Luca or this Carlo or the like.  
 To him the bones their inmost secret yield,  
 Each notch and nodule signify their use : 30  
 On him the muscles turn, in triple tier,  
 And pleasantly entreat the entrusted man  
 "Familiarize thee with our play that lifts  
 "Thus, and thus lowers again, leg, arm and  
 foot !" 40  
 —Easuring due correctness in the nude.

Which done, is all done ? Not a whit, ye  
 know !  
 He,—to art's surface rising from her depth,—  
 If some flax-poll'd soft-bearded sire be found,  
 May simulate a Joseph, (happy chance !)—  
 Limneth exact each wrinkle of the brow, 45  
 Loseth no involution, cheek or chap,  
 Till lo, in black and white, the senior lives !  
 Is it a young and comely peasant-nurse  
 That poseth ? (be the phrase accorded me !)  
 Each feminine delight of florid lip, 51  
 Eyes brimming o'er and brow bowed down  
 with love,  
 Marmoreal neck and bosom uberous,—  
 Glad on the paper in a trice they go  
 To help his notion of the Mother-maid : 55  
 Methinks I see it, chalk a little stumped !  
 Yea and her babe—that flexure of soft limbs,  
 That budding face imbued with dewy sleep,  
 Contribute each an excellence to Christ. 58  
 Nay, since he humbly lent companionship,  
 Even the poor ass, unpanniered and elate  
 Stands, perks an ear up, he a model too ;  
 While clouted shoon, staff, scrip and water-  
 gourd,—  
 Aught may betoken travel, heat and haste,—  
 No jot nor tittle of these but in its turn 65  
 Ministers to perfection of the piece :  
 Till now, such piece before him, part by  
 part,—  
 Such prelude ended,—pause our painter may,  
 Submit his fifty studies one by one,  
 And in some sort boast "I have served my  
 lords." 70

But what ? And hath he painted once this  
 while ?  
 Or when ye cry "Produce the thing required,  
 "Show us our picture shall rejoice its niche,  
 "Thy Journey through the Desert done in  
 oils !" — 74  
 What, doth he fall to shuffling 'mid his sheets,  
 Fumbling for first this, then the other fact  
 Consigned to paper,—"studies," bear the  
 term !—  
 And stretch a canvas, mix a pot of paste,  
 And fasten here a head and there a tail,  
 (The ass hath one, any Judges !) so dove-tail

Or, rather, ass-tail in, piece sorrily out— 81  
By bits of reproduction of the life—  
The picture, the expected Family?  
I trow not! do I miss with my conceit  
The mark, my lords?—not so my lords were  
served! 85

Rather your artist turns abrupt from these,  
And preferably buries him and broods  
(Quite away from aught vulgar and extern)  
On the inner spectrum, filtered through the  
eye,

His brain-deposit, bred of many a drop, 90  
*E pluribus unum*:<sup>1</sup> and the wiser he!

For in that brain,—their fancy sees at work,  
Could my lords peep indulged,—results alone,  
Not processes which nourish such results,  
Would they discover and appreciate,—life  
Fed by digestion, not raw food itself, 95  
No gobbets but smooth comfortable chyme<sup>2</sup>  
Secreted from each snapped-up crudity,—  
Less distinct, part by part, but in the whole  
Truer to the subject,—the main central  
truth 100

And soul o' the picture, would my Judges  
spy,—

Not those mere fragmentary studied facts  
Which answer to the outward frame and flesh—  
Not this nose, not that eyebrow, the other fact  
Of man's staff, woman's stole or infant's  
clout, 105

But lo, a spirit-birth conceived of flesh,  
Truth rare and real, not transcripts, fact and  
false.

The studies—for his pupils and himself!  
The picture be for our eximious Rome  
And—who knows?—satisfy its Governor, 110  
Whose new wing to the villa he hath bought  
(God give him joy of it) by Capena, soon  
(Tis bruited) shall be glowing with the brush  
Of who hath long surpassed the Florentine,<sup>3</sup>  
The Urbinat<sup>4</sup> and . . . what if I dared  
acid, 115

Even his master, yea the Cortonese,<sup>5</sup>—  
I mean the accomplished *Ciro Ferri*,<sup>6</sup> *Sirs!*  
(—Did not he die? I'll see before I print.)

End we exordium, Phoebus plucks my ear!  
Thus then, just so and no whit otherwise,  
Have I,—engaged as I were *Ciro's self*, 121  
To paint a parallel, a Family,  
The patriarch Pietro with his wise old wife  
To boot (as if one introduced Saint Anne  
By bold conjecture to complete the group)  
And juvenile *Pompilia* with her babe, 125  
Who, seeking safety in the wilderness,  
Were all surprised by Herod, while out-  
stretched

In sleep beneath a palm-tree by a spring, 129  
And killed—the very circumstance I paint,  
Moving the pity and terror of my lords—  
Exactly so have I, a month at least,  
Your Fiscal, made me cognizant of facts,  
Searched out, pried into, pressed the meaning  
forth

Of every piece of evidence in point, 135  
How bloody Herod slew these innocents,—  
Until the glad result is gained, the group  
Demonstrably presented in detail,  
Their slumber and his onslaught,—like as life.  
Yea and, availing me of help allowed 140  
By law, discreet provision lest my lords  
Be too much troubled by effrontery,—  
The rack, law plies suspected crime withal—  
(Law that hath listened while the lyrist sang  
“*Lene tormentum ingenio admoveo*,” 145

Gently thou joggest by a twinge the wit,  
“*Plerumque duro*,” else were slow to blab!)  
Through this concession my full cup runs o'er:  
The guilty owns his guilt without reserve.  
Therefore by part and part I clutch my  
case 150  
Which, in entirety now,—momentous task,—  
My lords demand, so render them I must,  
Since, one poor pleading more and I have  
done.

But shall I ply my papers, play my proofs,

<sup>1</sup> *E pluribus unum*: “one made out of many” (Virgil, *Moretum*, 103).

<sup>2</sup> *Chyme*: the matter into which food is reduced by the juices of the stomach.

<sup>3</sup> *The Florentine*: Michel Angelo.

<sup>4</sup> *The Urbinat*: Rafael.

<sup>5</sup> *The Cortonese*: Pietro da Cortona.

<sup>6</sup> *Ciro Ferri*: a painter, who lived 1634–1689, a pupil of Pietro da Cortona. He had now been dead some nine years.

Parade my studies, fifty in a row,  
As though the Court were yet in pupilage,  
Claimed not the artist's ultimate appeal?  
Much rather let me soar the height prescribed  
And, bowing low, proffer my picture's self!  
No more of proof, disproof,—such virtue  
was,

Such vice was never in Pompilia, now!  
Far better say "Behold Pompilia!"—(for  
I leave the family as unmanageable,  
And stick to just one portrait, but life-size.)  
Hath calumny imputed to the fair  
A blemish, mole on cheek or wart on chin,  
Much more, blind hidden horrors best un-  
named?

Shall I descend to prove you, point by  
point,  
Never was knock-knee known nor splay-foot  
found

In Phryne? (I must let the portrait go,  
Content me with the model, I believe)—  
—I prove this? An indignant sweep of hand,  
Dash at and doing away with drapery,  
And,—use your eyes, Athenians, smooth she  
smiles!<sup>1</sup>

Or,—since my client can no longer smile,  
And more appropriate instances abound,—  
What is this Tale of Tarquin, how the slave  
Was caught by him, preferred to Collatine?  
Thou, even from thy corpse-clothes virginal,  
Look'st the lie dead, Lucretia!

Thus at least

I, by the guidance of antiquity,  
(Our one infallible guide) now operate,  
Sure that the innocence thus shown is safe;  
Sure, too, that, while I plead, the echoes  
cry

!Lend my weak voice thy trump, sonorous  
Fame!

"Monstrosity the Phrynean shape shall mar,  
"Lucretia's soul comport with Tarquin's lie,  
"When thistles grow on vines or thorns yield  
figs,

"Or oblique sentence leave this judgment-  
seat!"

<sup>1</sup> Alluding to the defence of the courtesan Phryne by Hyperides, who secured a verdict by displaying her unveiled beauty to the court.

A great theme: may my strength be adequate!  
For—paint Pompilia, dares my feebleness?  
How did I unaware engage so much  
—Find myself undertaking to produce  
A faultless nature in a flawless form?  
What's here? Oh, turn aside nor dare the  
blaze

Of such a crown, such constellation, say,  
As jewels here thy front, Humanity!  
First, infancy, pellucid as a pearl;  
Then childhood—stone which, dew-drop at  
the first,

(An old conjecture) sucks, by dint of gaze,  
Blue from the sky and turns to sapphire so:  
Yet both these gems eclipsed by, last and best,  
Womanliness and wifehood opaline,  
Its milk-white pallor,—chastity,—suffused  
With here and there a tint and hint of flame,—  
Desire,—the lapidary loves to find.

Such jewels bind conspicuously thy brow,  
Pompilia, infant, child, maid, woman, wife  
Crown the ideal in our earth at last!  
What should a faculty like mine do here?  
Close eyes, or else, the rashier hurry hand!

Which is to say,—lose no time but begin!  
*Sermocinando ne declament*, Sirs,  
*Ultra clepsydrum*, as our preachers smile,  
Lest I exceed my hour-glass. Whereupon,  
As Flaccus prompts, I dare the epic plunge—  
Begin at once with marriage, up till when  
Little or nothing would arrest your love,  
In the easeful life o' the lady; lamb and  
lamb,

How do they differ? Know one, you know all  
Manners of maidenhood: mere maiden she.  
And since all lambs are like in more than  
fleece,

Prepare to find that, lamb-like, she too frisks—  
O' the weaker sex, my lords, the weaker sex!  
To whom, the Teian<sup>2</sup> teaches us, for gift,  
Not strength,—man's dower,—but beauty,  
nature gave,

"Beauty in lieu of spears, in lieu of shields!"  
And what is beauty's sure concomitant,  
Nay, intimate essential character,

<sup>2</sup> *The Teian*: Anacreon.

But melting wiles, deliciousest deceits,  
 The whole redoubted armoury of love?  
 Therefore of vernal pranks, dishevellings  
 O' the hair of youth that dances April in,  
 And easily-imagined Hebe-slips 235  
 O'er sward which May makes over-smooth  
 for foot—  
 These shall we pry into?—or wiselier wink,  
 Though numerous and dear they may have  
 been?

For lo, advancing Hymen and his pomp!  
*Discedunt nunc amores*, loves, farewell!  
*Maneat amor*, let love, the sole, remain!  
 Farewell to dewiness and prime of life!  
 Remains the rough determined day: dance  
 done,

To work, with plough and harrow! What  
 comes next? 244

'Tis Guido henceforth guides Pompilia's step,  
 Cries "No more friskings o'er the foodful  
 glebe,

"Else, 'ware the whip!" Accordingly,—  
 first crack

O' the thong,—we hear that his young wife  
 was barred,

*Colibita fuit*, from the old free life,  
*Vitam liberiores ducere.* 250

Demur we? Nowise: heifer brave the hind?  
 We seek not there should lapse the natural  
 law,

The proper piety to lord and king  
 And husband: let the heifer bear the yoke!  
 Only, I crave he cast not patience off, 255  
 This hind; for deem you she endures the whip,  
 Nor winces at the goad, nay, restive, kicks?  
 What if the adversary's charge be just,  
 And all untowardly she pursue her way  
 With groan and grunt, though hind strike  
 ne'er so hard? 260

If petulant remonstrance made appeal,  
 Unseasonable, o'erprotracted,—if  
 Importunate challenges taxed the public ear  
 When silence more decorously had served  
 For protestation,—if Pompilian plaint 265  
 Wrought but to aggravate Guidonian ire,—  
 Why, such mishaps, ungainly though they be,  
 Ever companion change, are incident

To altered modes and novelty of life:  
 The philosophic mind expects no less, 270  
 Smilingly knows and names the crisis, sits  
 Waiting till old things go and new arrive.  
 Therefore, I hold a husband but inept  
 Who turns impatient at such transit-time,  
 As if this running from the rod would  
 last! 275

Since, even while I speak, the end is reached:  
 Success awaits the soon-disheartened man.  
 The parents turn their backs and leave the  
 house,  
 The wife may wail but none shall intervene:  
 He hath attained his object, groom and  
 bride 280

Partake the nuptial bower no soul can see,  
 Old things are passed and all again is new,  
 Over and gone the obstacles to peace,  
*Novorum*—tenderly the Mantuan<sup>1</sup> turns  
 The expression, some such purpose in his  
 eye— 285

*Nascitur ordo!* Every storm is laid,  
 And forth from plain each pleasant herb may  
 peep,  
 Each bloom of wifehood in abeyance late:  
 (Confer a passage in the Canticles.) 290

But what if, as 'tis wont with plant and wife,  
 Flowers,—after a suppression to good end,  
 Still, when they do spring forth,—sprout  
 here, spread there,

Anywhere likelier than beneath the foot.  
 O' the lawful good-man gardener of the ground?  
 He dug and dibbled, sowed and watered,—  
 still 295

'Tis a chance wayfarer shall pluck the increase.  
 Just so, respecting persons not too much,  
 The lady, foes allege, put forth each charm  
 And proper floweret of femininity  
 To whosoever had a nose to smell 300  
 Or breast to deck: what if the charge be true?  
 The fault were graver had she looked with  
 choice,

Fastidiously appointed who should grasp,  
 Who, in the whole town, go without the prize!

<sup>1</sup> The Mantuan: Virgil, *Ecl.* 4, 5—*Magnus  
 ab integro sæclorum nascitur ordo.*

To nobody she destined donative,  
But, first come was first served, the accuser  
saith.

Put case her sort of . . . in this kind . . .  
escapes

Were many and oft and indiscriminate—  
Impute ye as the action were prepen-  
se,

The gift particular, arguing malice so? 310  
Which butterfly of the wide air shall brag

"I was preferred to Guido"—when 'tis clear  
The cup, he quaffs at, lay with olent<sup>1</sup> breast

Open to gnat, midge, bee and moth as well?  
One chalice entertained the company; 315

And if its peevish lord object the more,  
Mistake, misname such bounty in a wife,

Haste we to advertise him—charm of cheek,  
Lustre of eye, allowance of the lip,

All womanly components in a spouse, 320  
These are no household-bread each stranger's  
bite

Leaves by so much diminished for the mouth  
O' the master of the house at supper-time:

But rather like a lump of spice they lie,  
Morsel of myrrh, which scents the neighbour-  
hood 325

Yet greets its lord no lighter by a grain.

Nay, even so, he shall be satisfied!  
Concede we there was reason in his wrong,

Grant we his grievance and content the man!  
For lo, Pompilia, she submits herself; 330

Ere three revolving years have crowned their  
course,

Off and away she puts this same reproach  
Of lavish bounty, inconsiderate gift

O' the sweets of wifehood stored to other ends:  
No longer shall he blame "She none excludes,"

But substitute "She laudably sees all, 335  
"Searches the best out and selects the same."

For who is here, long sought and latest found,  
Waiting his turn unmoved amid the whirl,

"*Constans in levitate*,"—Ha, my lords? 340  
Calm in his levity,—indulge the quip!—

Since 'tis a levite bears the bell away,  
Parades him henceforth as Pompilia's choice.

'Tis no ignoble object, husband! Doubt'st?

When here comes tripping Flaccus<sup>2</sup> with his  
phrase 345

"Trust me, no miscreant singled from the mob,  
*Crede non illum tibi de scelestis*

"*Plebe delectum*," but a man of mark,  
A priest, dost hear? Why then, submit  
thyself!

Priest, ay and very phoenix of such fowl, 350  
Well-born, of culture, young and vigorous,

Comely too, since precise the precept points—  
On the selected levite be there found

Nor mole nor scar nor blemish, lest the mind  
Come all uncandid through the thwarting flesh!

Was not the son of Jesse ruddy, sleek, 355  
Pleasant to look on, pleasant every way?

Since well he smote the harp and sweetly sang,  
And danced till Abigail came out to see,

And seeing smiled and smiling ministered  
The raisin-cluster and the cake of figs, 361

With ready meal refreshed the gifted youth,  
Till Nabal, who was absent shearing sheep,

Felt heart sink, took to bed (discreetly done—  
They might have been beforehand with him  
else) 365

And died—would Guido have behaved as well!  
But ah, the faith of early days is gone,

*Heu prisca fides!* Nothing died in him  
Save courtesy, good sense and proper trust,

Which, when they ebb from souls they should  
o'erflow, 370

Discover stub, weed, sludge and ugliness.  
(The Pope, we know, is Neapolitan

And relishes a sea-side simile.)  
Deserted by each charitable wave, 375

Guido, left high and dry, shows jealous now!  
Jealous avouched, paraded: tax the fool

With any peccadillo, he responds  
"Truly I beat my wife through jealousy,

"Imprisoned her and punished otherwise,  
"Being jealous: now would threaten, sword  
in hand, 380

"Now manage to mix poison in her sight,  
"And so forth: jealously I dealt, in fine."

Concede thus much, and what remains to  
prove?

Have I to teach my masters what effect

<sup>1</sup> *Olent*: odorous.

<sup>2</sup> *Flaccus*: Horace, *Odes*, II. 4, 17.

Hath jealousy, and how, befooling men, 385  
It makes false true, abuses eye and ear,  
Turns mere mist adamant, loads with sound  
Silence, and into void and vacancy  
Crowds a whole phalanx of conspiring foes?  
Therefore who owns "I watched with jeal-  
ousy 390

"My wife," adds "forno reason in the world!"  
What need that, thus proved madman, he  
remark

"The thing I thought a serpent proved an  
eel?"—

Perchance the right Comacchian, six foot  
length,

And not an inch too long for that rare pie  
(Master Arcangeli has heard of such) 395

Whose succulence makes fasting bearable;  
Meant to regale some moody splenetic

Who, pleasing to mistake the donor's gift,  
Spying I know not what Lernæan snake<sup>1</sup>

I' the luscious Lenten creature, stamps for-  
sooth 401

The dainty in the dust.

Enough! Prepare,  
Such lures announced, for downright lunacy!

*Insanit homo*, threat succeeds to threat, 405  
And blow redoubles blow,—his wife, the  
block.

But, if a block, shall not she jar the hand  
That buffets her? The injurious idle stone

Rebounds and hits the head of him who  
flung.

Causeless rage breeds, i' the wife now, raging  
cause, 410

Tyranny wakes rebellior. from its sleep.  
Rebellion, say I?—rather, self-defence,

Laudable wish to live and see good days,  
Pricks our Pompilia now to fly the fool

By any means, at any price,—nay, more, 415  
Nay, most of all, i' the very interest

O' the fool that, baffled of his blind desire  
At any price, were truest victor so.

Shall he effect his crime and lose his soul?  
No, dictates duty to a loving wife! 420

Far better that the unconsummated blow,

<sup>1</sup> *Lernæan snake*: a reference to the hydra  
of Lerna, killed by Hercules.

Adroitly baulked by her, should back again,  
Correctively admonish his own pate!

Crime then,—the Court is with me?—she  
must crush: 424

How crush it? By all efficacious means;  
And these,—why, what in woman should

they be?  
"With horns the bull, with teeth the lion

fight;  
"To woman," quoth the lyrist<sup>2</sup> quoted late,

"Nor teeth, nor horns, but beauty, Nature  
gave."

Pretty i' the Pagan! Who dares blame the  
use 430

Of armoury thus allowed for natural,—  
Exclaim against a seeming-dubious play

O' the sole permitted weapon, spear and  
shield

Alike, resorted to i' the circumstance  
By poor Pompilia? Grant she somewhat

plied 435  
Arts that allure, the magic nod and wink,

The witchery of gesture, spell of word,  
Whereby the likelier to enlist this friend,

Yea stranger, as a champion on her side?  
Such man, being but mere man, ('twas all

she knew), 440  
Must be made sure by beauty's silken bond,

The weakness that subdues the strong, and  
bows

Wisdom alike and folly. Grant the tale  
O' the husband, which is false, were proved

and true  
To the letter—or the letters, I should say,

Abominations he professed to find 445  
And fix upon Pompilia and the priest,—

Allow them hers—for though she could not  
write,

In early days of Eve-like innocence  
That plucked no apple from the knowledge-

tree, 450  
Yet, at the Serpent's word, Eve plucks and

eats  
And knows—especially how to read and

write:

<sup>2</sup> *The lyrist*: Anacreon. See l. 225.

And so Pompilia,—as the move o' the maw,  
Quoth Persius,<sup>1</sup> makes a parrot bid "Good  
day!"

A crow salute the concave, and a pie 465  
Endeavour at proficiency in speech,—  
So she, through hunger after fellowship,  
May well have learned, though late, to play  
the scribe :

As indeed, there's one letter on the list  
Explicitly declares did happen here. 460

"You thought my letters could be none of  
mine,"

She tells her parents—"mine, who wanted  
skill ;

"But now I have the skill, and write, you  
see !"

She needed write love-letters, so she learned,  
"*Negatus artifex sequi voces*"—though 465  
This letter nowise 'scapes the common lot,  
But lies i' the condemnation of the rest,  
Found by the husband's self, who forged them  
all.

Yet, for the sacredness of argument,  
For this once, an exemption shall it plead—  
Anything, anything to let the wheels 471  
Of argument run glybly to their goal !  
Concede she wrote (which were preposterous)  
This and the other epistle,—what of it ?

Where does the figment touch her candid  
fame ? 475

Being in peril of her life—"my life,  
"Not an hour's purchase," as the letter  
runs,—

And having but one stay in this extreme,  
Out of the wide world but a single friend—  
What could she other than resort to him, 480  
And how with any hope resort but thus ?  
Shall modesty dare bid a stranger brave  
Danger, disgrace, nay death in her behalf—  
Think to entice the sternness of the steel  
Yet spare love's loadstone moving manly  
mind ? 485

—Most of all, when such mind is hampered so  
By growth of circumstance athwart the life  
O' the natural man, that decency forbids  
He stoop and take the common privilege,

Say frank "I love," as all the vulgar do. 489

A man is wedded to philosophy,  
Married to statesmanship ; a man is old ;

A man is fettered by the foolishness  
He took for wisdom and talked ten years  
since ; 494

A man is, like our friend the Canon here,  
A priest, and wicked if he break his vow :  
Shall he dare love, who may be Pope one  
day ?

Despite the coil of such encumbrance here,  
Suppose this man could love, unhappily,  
And would love, dared he only let love  
show ! 500

In case the woman of his love speaks first,  
From what embarrassment she sets him free !  
"Tis I who break reserve, begin appeal,

"Confess that, whether you love me or no,  
"I love you!" What an ease to dignity,  
What help of pride from the hard high-  
backed chair 505

Down to the carpet where the kittens bask,  
All under the pretence of gratitude !

From all which, I deduce—the lady here  
Was bound to proffer nothing short of love  
To the priest whose service was to save her.  
What ? 511

Shall she propose him lucre, dust o' the mine,  
Rubbish o' the rock, some diamond, muck-  
worms prize, ..

Some pearl secreted by a sickly fish ? 514  
Scarcely ! She caters for a generous taste.  
'Tis love shall beckon, beauty bid to breast,  
Till all the Samson sink into the snare !  
Because, permit the end—permit therewith  
Means to the end ! 519

How say you, good my lords ?

I hope you heard my adversary ring  
The changes on this precept : now, let me  
Reverse the peal ! *Quia dato licito fine,*  
*Ad illum assequendum ordinata*  
*Non sunt damnanda media*,—licit end. 525  
Enough was found in mere escape from  
death,

To legalize our means illicit else :  
Of feigned love, false allurement, fancied fact  
Thus Venus losing Cupid on a day,

<sup>1</sup> *Persius* : Prologue to *Satires*, 6-13.

(See that *Idyllium Moschi*<sup>1</sup>) seeking help,  
In the anxiety of motherhood,  
Allowably promised "Who shall bring re-  
port

"Where he is wandered to, my winged babe,  
"I give him for reward a nectared kiss;  
"But who brings safely back the truant's  
self,  
"His bea super-sweet makes kiss seem cold!"  
Are not these things writ for example-sake?

To such permitted motive, then, refer  
All those professions, else were hard explain,  
Of hope, fear, jealousy, and the rest of love!  
He is Myrtillus, Amaryllis<sup>2</sup> she,  
She burns, he freezes,—all a mere device  
To catch and keep the man, may save her life,  
Whom otherwise nor catches she nor keeps!  
Worst, once, turns best now: in all faith,  
she feigns:

Feigning,—the liker innocence to guilt,  
The truer to the life in what she feigns!  
How if Ulysses,—when, for public good  
He sunk particular qualms and played the spy,  
Entered Troy's hostile gate in beggar's  
garb—

How if he first had boggled at this clout,  
Grown dainty o'er that clack-dish? Grime  
is grace

To who so gropes amid the dung for gold.

Hence, beyond promises, we praise each proof  
That promise was not simply made to break,  
Mere moonshine-structure meant to fade at  
dawn:

We praise, as consequent and requisite,  
What, enemies allege, were more than words,  
Deeds—meetings at the window, twilight-  
trysts,

Nocturnal entertainments in the dim  
Old labyrinthine palace; lies, we know—  
Inventions we, long since, turned inside out.  
Must such external semblance of intrigue  
Demonstrate that intrigue there lurks perdue?  
Does every hazel-sheath disclose a nut?

<sup>1</sup> *Idyllium Moschi*: Moschus, *Idyll* I. 4, 5.  
<sup>2</sup> *Myrtillus*, *Amaryllis*: typical pastoral  
lovers.

He were a Molinist who dared maintain  
That midnight meetings in a screened alcove  
Must argue folly in a matron—since  
So would he bring a slur on Judith's self,  
Commended beyond women, that she lured  
The lustful to destruction through his lust.  
Pompilia took not Judith's liberty,  
No faulchion find you in her hand to smite,  
No damsel to convey in dish the head  
Of Holophernes,—style the Canon so—  
Or is it the Count? If I entangle me  
With my similitudes,—if wax wings melt,  
And earthward down I drop, not mine the  
fault:

Blame your beneficence, O Court, O sun,  
Whereof the beamy smile affects my flight!  
What matter, so Pompilia's fame revive  
I' the warmth that proves the bane of Icarus?

Yea, we have shown it lawful, necessary  
Pompilia leave her husband, seek the house  
O' the parents: and because 'twixt home  
and home

Lies a long road with many a danger rife,  
Lions by the way and serpents in the path,  
To rob and ravish,—much behoves she keep  
Each shadow of suspicion from fair fame,  
For her own sake much, but for his sake  
more,

The ingrate husband's. Evidence shall be,  
Plain witness to the world how white she  
walks

I' the mire she wanders through ere Rome  
she reach.

And who so proper witness as a priest?  
Gainsay ye? Let me hear who dares gainsay!  
I hope we still can punish heretics!  
'Give me the man' I say with him of Gath;  
'That we may fight together!' None, I  
think:

The priest is granted me.

Then, if a priest,  
One juvenile and potent: else, mayhap,  
That dragon, our Saint George would slay,  
slays him.

And should fair face accompany strong hand;  
The more complete equipment: nothing man's



Work, else praiseworthy, like a bodily flaw  
I' the worker : as 'tis said Saint Paul him-  
self

Deplored the check o' the puny presence,  
still

Cheating his fulmination of its flash,  
Albeit the bolt therein went true to oak.

Therefore the agent, as prescribed, she  
takes,—

Both juvenile and potent, handsome too,—  
In all obedience : "good," you grant again.  
Do you ? I would you were the husband,  
lords !

How prompt and facile might departure be !  
How boldly would Pompilia and the priest  
March out of door, spread flag at beat of  
drum,

But that inapprehensive Guido grants  
Neither premiss nor yet conclusion here,  
And, purblind, dreads a bear in every bush !  
For his own quietude and comfort, then,  
Means must be found for flight in masquerade  
At hour when all things sleep.—"Save  
jealousy !"

Right, Judges ! Therefore shall the lady's wit  
Supply the boon thwart nature baulks him of,  
And do him service with the potent drug  
(Helen's nepenthe,<sup>1</sup> as my lords opine)  
Which respites blessedly each fretted nerve  
O' the much-enduring man : accordingly,  
There lies he, duly dosed and sound asleep,  
Relieved of woes or real or raved about.  
While soft she leaves his side, he shall not  
wake ;

Nor stop who steals away to join her friend,  
Nor do him mischief should he catch that  
friend

Intent on more than friendly office,—nay,  
Nor get himself raw head and bones laid  
bare

In payment of his apparition !

Thus

Would I defend the step,—were the thing true  
Which is a fable,—see my former speech,—

<sup>1</sup> *Nepenthe* : a drug given to Helen by the  
Egyptian Polydamna, producing forgetfulness  
of pain (Homer, *Od.* IV. 220-230).

That Guido slept (who never slept a  
wink)

Through treachery, an opiate from his wife,  
Who not so much as knew what opiates mean.

Now she may start : or hist,—a stoppage  
still !

A journey is an enterprise of cost !  
As in campaigns, we fight but others pay,  
*Suis expensis, nemo militat.*<sup>2</sup>

'Tis Guido's self we guard from accident,  
Ensuring safety to Pompilia, versed  
Nowise in misadventures by the way,  
Hard riding and rough quarters, the rude  
fare,

The unready host. What magic mitigates  
Each plague of travel to the unpractised wife?  
Money, sweet Sirs ! And were the fiction fact  
She helped herself thereto with liberal hand  
From out her husband's store,—what fitter  
use

Was ever husband's money destined to ?  
With bag and baggage thus did Dido once  
Decamp,—for more authority, a queen !

So is she fairly on her route at last,  
Prepared for either fortune : nay and if  
The priest, now all a-glow with enterprise,  
Cool somewhat presently when fades the flush  
O' the first adventure, clouded o'er belike  
By doubts, misgivings how the day may die,  
Though born with such auroral brilliance,  
—if

The brow seem over-pensive and the lip  
'Gin lag and lose the prattle lightsome late,—  
Vanquished by tedium of a prolonged jaunt  
In a close carriage o'er a jolting road,  
With only one young female substitute  
For seventeen other Canons of ripe age  
Were wont to keep him company in church,—  
Shall not Pompilia haste to dissipate  
The 'silent cloud that, gathering, bodes her  
bale ?—

Prop the irresoluteness may portend  
Suspension of the project, check the flight,  
Bring ruin on them both ? Use every means,

<sup>2</sup> *Suis expensis, nemo militat* : "no one goeth  
a warfare at his own cost."

Since means to the end are lawful! What if the way  
 Of wile should have allowance like a kiss  
 Sagely and sisterly administered, 680  
*Sororia saltem oscula?* We find  
 Such was the remedy her wit applied  
 To each incipient scruple of the priest,  
 If we believe,—as, while my wit is mine  
 I cannot,—what the driver testifies, 685  
 Borsi, called Venerino, the mere tool  
 Of Guido and his friend the Governor,—  
 Avowal I proved wrung from out the wretch,  
 After long rotting in imprisonment,  
 As price of liberty and favour: long 690  
 They tempted, he at last succumbed, and lo  
 Counted them out full tale each kiss and more,  
 “The journey being one long embrace,”  
 quoth he.  
 Still, though we should believe the driver’s  
 lie,  
 Nor even admit as probable excuse, 695  
 Right reading of the riddle,—as I urged  
 In my first argument, with fruit perhaps—  
 That what the owl-like eyes (at back of head!)  
 Of the driver, drowsed by driving night and  
 day,  
 Supposed a vulgar interchange of lips, 700  
 This was but innocent jog of head ’gainst head,  
 Cheek meeting ’cowl as apple may touch pear  
 From branch and branch contiguous in the  
 wind,  
 When Autumn blusters and the orchard  
 rocks:—  
 That rapid run and the rough road were  
 cause 705  
 Of the casual ambiguity, no harm  
 If the world to eyes awake and penetrative.  
 Say,—not to grasp a truth I can release  
 And safely fight without, yet conquer still,—  
 Say, she kissed him, say, he kissed her  
 again! 710  
 Such osculation was a potent means,  
 A very efficacious help, no doubt:  
 Such with a third part of her nectar did  
 Venus imbue: why should Pompilia fling  
 The poet’s declaration in his teeth?— 715  
 Pause to employ what—since it had success,  
 And kept the priest her servant to the end—

We must presume of energy enough,  
 No whit superfluous, so permissible?  
 The goal is gained: day, night and yet a  
 day 720  
 Have run their round: a long and devious  
 road  
 Is traversed,—many manners, various men  
 Passed in review, what cities did they see,  
 What hamlets mark, what profitable food  
 For after-meditation cull and store! 725  
 Till Rome, that Rome whereof—this voice  
 Would it might make our Molinists observe,  
 That she is built upon a rock nor shall  
 Their powers prevail against her!—Rome,  
 I say,  
 Is all but reached; one stage more and they  
 stop 730  
 Saved: pluck up heart, ye pair, and forward,  
 then!  
 Ah, Nature—baffled she recurs, alas!  
 Nature imperiously exacts her due,  
 Spirit is willing but the flesh is weak: 735  
 Pompilia needs must acquiesce and swoon,  
 Give hopes alike and fears a breathing-while.  
 The innocent sleep soundly: sound she sleeps,  
 So let her slumber, then, unguarded save  
 By her own chastity, a triple mail,  
 And his good hand whose stalwart arms have  
 borne 740  
 The sweet and senseless burthen like a babe  
 From coach to couch,—the serviceable  
 strength!  
 Nay, what and if he gazed rewardedly  
 On the pale beauty prisoned in embrace, 745  
 Stooped over, stole a balmy breath perhaps  
 For more assurance sleep was not decrease—  
 “*Ut vidi,*” “how I saw!” succeeded by  
 “*Ut perii,*” “how I sudden lost my brains!”  
 —What harm ensued to her unconscious quite?  
 For, curiosity—how natural! 750  
 Importunateness—what a privilege  
 In the ardent sex! And why curb ardour  
 here?  
 How can the priest but pity whom he saved?  
 And pity is so near to love, and love  
 So neighbourly to all unreasonableness! 755

As to love's object, whether love were sage  
 Or foolish, could Pompilia know or care,  
 Being still sound asleep, as I premised?  
 Thus the philosopher absorbed by thought;  
 Even Archimedes, busy o'er a book 760  
 The while besiegers sacked his Syracuse,  
 Was ignorant of the imminence o' the point  
 O' the sword till it surprised him: let it stab,  
 And never knew himself was dead at all.  
 So sleep thou on, secure whate'er betide!  
 For thou, too, hast thy problem hard to  
 solve— 766  
 How so much beauty is compatible  
 With so much innocence!

Fit place, methinks,

While in this task she rosily is lost, 770  
 To treat of and repel objection here  
 Which,—frivolous, I grant,—my mind mis-  
 gives,  
 May somehow still have flitted, gadfly-like,  
 And teased the Court at times—as if, all said  
 And done, there seemed, the Court might  
 nearly say, 775  
 In a certain acceptation, somewhat more  
 Of what may pass for insincerity,  
 Falsehood, throughout the course Pompilia  
 took,  
 Than befits Christian. Pagans held, we know,  
 Man always ought to aim at good and truth,  
 Not always put one thing in the same words:  
*Non idem semper dicere sed spectare* 780  
*Debemus.* But the Pagan yoke was light;  
 "Lie not at all," the exacter precept bids:  
 Each least lie breaks the law,—is sin, we  
 hold. 785  
 I humble me, but venture to submit—  
 What prevents sin, itself is sinless, sure:  
 And sin, which hinders sin of deeper dye,  
 Softens itself away by contrast so.  
 Conceive me! Little sin, by none at all,  
 Were properly condemned for great: but  
 great, 791  
 By greater, dwindles into small again.  
 Now, what is greatest sin of womanhood?  
 That which unwomans it, abolishes  
 The nature of the woman,—impudence. 796  
 Who contradicts me here? Concede me, then,

Whatever friendly fault may interpose  
 To save the sex from self-abolishment  
 Is three-parts on the way to virtue's rank!  
 And, what is taxed here as duplicity, 800  
 Feint, wile and trick,—admitted for the  
 nonce,—  
 What worse do one and all than interpose,  
 Hold, as it were, a deprecating hand,  
 Statuesquely, in the Medicean mode,<sup>1</sup> 804  
 Before some shame which modesty would veil?  
 Who blames the gesture prettily perverse?  
 Thus,—lest ye miss a point illustrative,—  
 Admit the husband's calumny—allow  
 That the wife, having penned the epistle  
 fraught  
 With horrors, charge on charge of crime she  
 heaped 810  
 O' the head of Pietro and Violante—(still  
 Presumed her parents)—having despatched  
 the same  
 To their arch-enemy Paolo, through free choice  
 And no sort of compulsion in the world—  
 Put case she next discards simplicity 815  
 For craft, denies the voluntary act,  
 Declares herself a passive instrument  
 I' the husband's hands; that, duped by  
 knavery,  
 She traced the characters she could not write,  
 And took on trust the unread sense which, read,  
 And recognized were to be spurned at once:  
 Allow this calumny, I reiterate! 820  
 Who is so dull as wonder at the pose  
 Of our Pompilia in the circumstance?  
 Who sees not that the too-ingenuous soul, 825  
 Repugnant even at a duty done  
 Which brought beneath too scrutinizing glare  
 The misdemeanours,—buried in the dark,—  
 Of the authors of her being, as believed,—  
 Stung to the quick at her impulsive deed, 830  
 And willing to repair what harm it worked,  
 She—wise in this beyond what Nero proved,  
 Who when folk urged the candid juvenile  
 To sign the warrant, doom the guilty dead,  
 "Would I had never learned to write,"  
 quoth he! 835  
 —Pompilia rose above the Roman, cried

<sup>1</sup> In the Medicean mode: i.e., like the statue known as the Venus de' Medici.

"To read or write I never learned at all!"  
O splendidly mendacious!

But time fleets:

Let us not linger: hurry to the end, 840  
Since flight does end, and that disastrously.  
Beware ye blame desert for unsuccess,  
Disparage each expedient else to praise,  
Call failure folly! Man's best effort fails.  
After ten years' resistance Troy succumbed:  
Could valour save a town, Troy still had stood.  
Pompilia came off halting in no point 847  
Of courage, conduct, her long journey through:  
But nature sank exhausted at the close,  
And as I said, she swooned and slept all  
night. 850

Morn breaks and brings the husband: we  
assist

At the spectacle. Discovery succeeds.  
Ha, how is this? What moonstruck rage is  
here?

Though we confess to partial frailty now,  
To error in a woman and a wife, 855  
Is't by the rough way she shall be reclaimed?  
Who bursts upon her chambered privacy?  
What crowd profanes the chaste *cubiculum*?  
What outcries and lewd laughter, scurril gibe  
And ribald jest to scare the ministrant 860  
Good angels that commerce with souls in sleep?  
Why, had the worst crowned Guido to his wish,  
Confirmed his most irrational surmise,  
Yet there be bounds to man's emotion, checks  
To an immoderate astonishment. 865

'Tis decent horror, regulated wrath,  
Befit our dispensation: have we back  
The old Pagan license? Shall a Vulcan clap  
His net o' the sudden and expose the pair  
To the unquenchable universal mirth? 870  
A feat, antiquity saw scandal in  
So clearly, that the nauseous tale thereof—  
Demodocus his nugatory song?<sup>1</sup>—  
Hath ever been concluded modern stuff  
Impossible to the mouth of the grave Muse,  
So, foisted into that Eighth Odyssey 875  
By some impertinent pickthank. O thou fool,  
Count Guido Franceschini, what didst gain

<sup>1</sup> *Demodocus his nugatory song*: in Homer, *Od. VIII.* 266-366.

By publishing thy secret to the world? 875  
Were all the precepts of the wise a waste—  
Bred in thee not one touch of reverence?  
Admit thy wife—admonish we the fool,—  
Were falseness' self, why chronicle thy shame?  
Much rather should thy teeth bite out thy  
tongue,

Dumb lip consort with desecrated brow, 880  
Silence become historiographer,  
And thou—thine own Cornelius Tacitus!  
But virtue, barred, still leaps the barrier, lords!  
—Still, moon-like, penetrates the encroaching  
mist

And bursts, all broad and bare, on night, ye  
know! 890

Surprised, then, in the garb of truth, perhaps,  
Pompilia, thus opposed, breaks obstacle,  
Springs to her feet, and stands Thalassian-  
pure,<sup>2</sup>

Confronts the foe,—nay, catches at his sword  
And tries to kill the intruder, he complains.

Why, so she gave her lord his lesson back, 895  
Crowned him, this time, the virtuous woman's  
way,

With an exact obedience; he brought sword,  
She drew the same, since swords are meant  
to draw. 900

Tell not me 'tis sharp play with tools on edge!  
It was the husband chose the weapon here.

Why did not he inaugurate the game  
With some gentility of apophthegm

Still pregnant on the philosophic page,  
Some captivating cadence still a-lisp 905

O' the poet's lyre? Such spells subdue the  
surge,

Make tame the tempest, much more mitigate  
The passions of the mind, and probably  
Had moved Pompilia to a smiling blush.

No, he must needs prefer the argument 910  
O' the blow: and she obeyed, in duty bound,  
Returned him buffet ratiocinative—

Ay, in the reasoner's own interest,  
For wife must follow whither husband leads,

Vindicate honour as himself prescribes, 915  
Save him the very way himself bids save!  
No question but who jumps into a quag

<sup>2</sup> *Thalassian-pure*: pure as the sea; from *thalassa*, the Greek word for sea.

Should stretch forth hand and pray us "Pull  
me out  
"By the hand!" such were the customary cry:  
But Guido pleased to bid "Leave hand  
alone!" 920  
"Join both feet, rather, jump upon my head:  
"I extricate myself by the rebound!"  
And dutifully as enjoined she jumped—  
Drew his own sword and menaced his own  
life,  
Anything to content a wilful spouse. 925

And so he was contented—one must do  
Justice to the expedient which succeeds,  
Strange as it seem: at flourish of the blade,  
The crowd drew back, stood breathless and  
abashed,  
Then murmured "This should be no wanton  
wife," 930  
"No conscience-stricken sinner, caught i' the  
act,  
"And patiently awaiting our first stone:  
"But a poor hard-pressed all-bewildered thing,  
"Has rushed so far, misguidedly perhaps,  
"Meaning no more harm than a frightened  
sheep. 935  
"She sought for aid; and if she made mistake  
"I' the man could aid most, why—so mortals  
do:  
"Even the blessed Magdalen mistook  
"Far less forgiveably: consult the place—  
"Supposing him to be the gardener, 940  
"Sir," said she, and so following." Why  
more words?  
Forthwith the wife is pronounced innocent:  
What would the husband more than gain his  
cause,  
And find that honour flash in the world's  
eye, 944  
His apprehension was lest soil had smirched?

So, happily the adventure comes to close  
Whereon my fat opponent grounds his charge  
Preposterous: at mid-day he groans "How  
dark!"  
Listen to me, thou Archangelic swine!  
Where is the ambiguity to blame, 950  
The flaw to find in our Pompilia? Safe

She stands, see! Does thy comment follow  
quick  
"Safe, inasmuch as at the end proposed;  
"But thithershe picked way by devious path—  
"Stands dirtied, no dubiety at all! 955  
"I recognize success, yet, all the same,  
"Importunately will suggestion prompt—  
"Better Pompilia gained the right to boast  
"No devious path, no doubtful patch was  
mine,  
"I saved my head nor sacrificed my foot!"  
"Why, being in a peril, show mistrust 961  
"Of the angels set to guard the innocent?  
"Why rather hold by obvious vulgar help  
"Of stratagem and subterfuge, excused  
"Somewhat, but still no less a foil, a fault,  
"Since low with high, and good with bad is  
linked? 964  
"Methinks I view some ancient bas-relief.  
"There stands Hesione<sup>1</sup> thrust out by Troy,  
"Her father's hand has chained her to a crag,  
"Her mother's from the virgin plucked the  
vest, 970  
"At a safe distance both distressful watch,  
"While near and nearer comes the snorting  
orc.  
"I look that, white and perfect to the end,  
"She wait till Jove despatch some demigod;  
"Not that,—impatient of celestial club 975  
"Alcmene's son should brandish at the beast,—  
"She daub, disguise her dainty limbs with  
pitch,  
"And so elude the purblind monster! Ay,  
"The trick succeeds, but 'tis an ugly trick,  
"Where needs have been no trick!" 980

My answer? Faugh;  
*Nimis incongrue!* Too absurdly put!  
*Sententiam ego teneo contrariam,*  
Trick, I maintain, had no alternative.  
The heavens were bound with brass,—Jove  
far at least 985  
(No feast like that thou didst not ask me to,  
Arcangeli,—I heard of thy regale!)

<sup>1</sup> *Hesione*: daughter of Laomedon, king of  
Troy, exposed on a rock to avert a plague  
caused by her father's breach of faith, and  
saved by Hercules, son of Alcmene.

With the unblamed *Æthiop*,<sup>1</sup>—Hercules spun  
wool

I' the lap of Omphale, while Virtue shrieked—  
The brute came paddling all the faster.

You 990

Of Troy, who stood at distance, where's the aid  
You offered in the extremity? Most and least,  
Gentle and simple, here the Governor,  
There the Archbishop, everywhere the friends,  
Shook heads and waited for a miracle,  
Or went their way, 'left Virtue to her fate.

Just this one rough and ready man leapt forth!

—Was found, sole anti-Fabius<sup>2</sup> (dare I say)

Who restored things, with no delay at all,

*Qui haud cunctando rem restituit!* He,

He only, Caponsacchi 'mid a crowd, 1001

Caught Virtue up, carried Pompilia off

Through gaping impotence of sympathy

In ranged Arezzo: what you take for pitch,

Is nothing worse, belike, than black and

blue, 1005

Mere evanescent proof that hardy hands

Did yeoman's service, cared not where the

gripe

Was more than duly energetic; bruised,

She smarts a little, but her bones are saved

A fracture, and her skin will soon show

sleek. 1010

How it disgusts when weakness, false-refined,

Censures the honest rude effective strength,—

When sickly dreamers of the impossible

Decry plain sturdiness which does the feat

With eyes wide open! 1015

Did occasion serve,

I could illustrate, if my lords allow;

*Quid vetat*, what forbids I aptly ask

With Horace, that I give my anger vent,

While I let breathe, no less, and recreate,

The gravity of my Judges, by a tale? 1021

A case in point—what though an apologue

Graced by tradition?—possibly a fact:

Tradition must precede all scripture, words

<sup>1</sup> *With the unblamed Æthiop*: as described by Homer, *Il. I.* 423.

<sup>2</sup> *Anti-Fabius*: the antithesis of Q. Fabius Maximus, *qui cunctando restituit rem*, who, in the second Punic war, restored the fortunes of Rome by delay, i.e. by avoiding pitched battles.

Serve as our warrant ere our books can be:

So, to tradition back we needs must go 1025

For any fact's authority: and this

Hath lived so far (like jewel hid in muck)

On page of that old lying vanity

Called "Sepher Toldoth Yeschu": God be

praised, 1030

I read no Hebrew,—take the thing on trust:

But I believe the writer meant no good

(Blind as he was to truth in some respects)

To our pestiferous and schismatic . . . well,

My lords' conjecture be the touchstone,

show 1035

The thing for what it is! The author lacks

Discretion, and his zeal exceeds: but zeal,—

How rare in our degenerate day! Enough!

Here is the story: fear not, I shall chop

And change a little, else my Jew would

press 1040

All too unmannerly before the Court.

It happened once,—begins this foolish Jew,

Pretending to write Christian history,—

That three, held greatest, best and worst of

men,

Peter and John and Judas, spent a day 1045

In toil and travel through the country-side

On some sufficient business—I suspect,

Suppression of some Molinism i' the bud.

Foot-sore and hungry, dropping with fatigue,

They reached by nightfall a poor lonely

grange, 1050

Hostel or inn: so, knocked and entered there.

"Your pleasure, great ones?"—"Shelter,

rest and food!"

For shelter, there was one bare room above;

For rest therein, three beds of bundled straw:

For food, one wretched starveling fowl, no

more— 1055

Meat for one mouth, but mockery for three.

"You have my utmost." How should

supper serve?

Peter broke silence: "To the spit with

fowl!

"And while 'tis cooking, sleep!—since beds

there be,

"And, so far, satisfaction of a want. 1060

Sleep we an hour, awake at supper-time,

"Then each of us narrate the dream he had,  
 "And he whose dream shall prove the  
 happiest, point

"The clearest out the dreamer as ordained  
 "Beyond his fellows to receive the fowl, 1085  
 "Him let our shares be cheerful tribute to,  
 "His the entire meal, may it do him good!"  
 Who could dispute so plain a consequence?  
 So said, so done: each hurried to his  
 straw,

Slept his hour's-sleep and dreamed his dream,  
 and woke. 1070

"I," commenced John, "dreamed that I  
 gained the prize

"We all aspire to: the proud place was  
 mine,

"Throughout the earth and to the end of  
 time

"I was the Loved Disciple: mine the  
 meal!"

"But I," proceeded Peter, "dreamed, a  
 word 1075

"Gave me the headship of our company,  
 "Made me the Vicar and Vice-gerent, gave

"The keys of heaven and hell into my  
 hand,

"And o'er the earth, dominion: mine the  
 meal!" 1079

"While I," submitted in soft under-tone  
 The Iscariot—sense of his unworthiness

Turning each eye up to the inmost white—  
 With long-drawn sigh, yet letting both lips

smack,  
 "I have had just the pitifullest dream

"That ever proved man meanest of his  
 mates, 1085

"And born foot-washer and foot-wiper, nay  
 "Foot-kisser to each comrade of you all!

"I dreamed I dreamed; and in that mimic  
 dream

"(Impalpable to dream as dream to fact)  
 "Methought I meanly chose to sleep no

wink 1090

"But wait until I heard my brethren snore;  
 "Then stole from couch, slipped noiseless  
 o'er the planks,

"Slid downstairs, furtively approached the  
 hearth,

"Found the fowl duly brown, both back and  
 breast,

"Hissing in harmony with the cricket's  
 chirp, 1095

"Grilled to a point; said no grace but fell to,  
 "Nor finished till the skeleton lay bare.

"In penitence for which ignoble dream,  
 "Lo, I renounce my portion cheerfully!

"Fie on the flesh—be mine the ethereal gust,  
 "And yours the sublunary sustenance! 1101

"See that whate'er be left ye give the poor!"  
 Down the two scuttled, one on other's heel,

Stung by a fell surmise; and found, alack,  
 A goodly savour, both the drumstick bones,

And that which henceforth took the appro-  
 priate name 1106

O' the Merry-thought, in memory of the fact  
 That to keep wide awake is man's best dream.

So,—as was said once of Thucydides  
 And his sole joke, "The lion, lo, hath  
 laughed!"— 1110

Just so, the Governor and all that's great  
 I' the city, never meant that Innocence

Should quite starve while Authority sat at  
 meat;

They meant to fling a bone at banquet's end;  
 Wished well to our Pompilia—in their  
 dreams, 1115

Nor bore the secular sword in vain—asleep.  
 Just so the Archbishop and all good like him

Went to bed meaning to pour oil and wine  
 I' the wounds of her, next day,—but long

ere day,  
 They had burned the one and drunk the  
 other, while 1120

Just so, again, contrariwise, the priest  
 Sustained poor Nature in extremity

By stuffing barley-bread into her mouth,  
 Saving Pompilia (grant the parallel)

By the plain homely and straightforward  
 way 1125

Taught him by common sense. Let others  
 shriek

"Oh what refined expedients did we dream  
 "Proved us the only fit to help the fair!"

He cried "A carriage waits, jump in with  
 me!" 1130

And now, this application pardoned, lords,—  
This recreative pause and breathing-while,—  
Back to beseeemingness and gravity !

For Law steps in : Guido appeals to Law,  
Demands she arbitrate,—does well for once.

O Law, of thee how neatly was it said 1135

By that old Sophocles,<sup>1</sup> thou hast thy seat

I' the very breast of Jove, no meanlier throned !

Here is a piece of work now, hitherto

Begun and carried on, concluded near, 1139

Without an eye-glance cast thy sceptre's way ;

And, lo the stumbling and discomfiture !

Well may you call them "lawless" means,  
men take

To extricate themselves through mother-wit

When tangled haply in the toils of life !

Guido would try conclusions with his foe, 1145

Whoe'er the foe was and whate'er the offence ;

He would recover certain dowry-dues :

Instead of asking Law to lend a hand,

What pother of sword drawn and pistol cocked,

What peddling with forged letters and paid  
spies, 1150

Politie circumvention !—all to end

As it began—by loss of the fool's head,

First in a figure, presently in a fact.

It is a lesson to mankind at large. 1154

How other were the end, would men be sage

And bear confidingly each quarrel straight,

O Law, to thy recipient mother-knees !

How would the children light come and  
prompt go,

This with a red-cheeked apple for reward,

The other, peradventure red-cheeked too 1160

I' the rear, by taste of birch for punishment.

No foolish brawling murder any more !

Peace for the household, practice for the Fisc,

And plenty for the exchequer of my lords !

Too much to hope, in this world : in the next,

Who knows? Since, why should sit the

Twelve enthroned 1166

To judge the tribes, unless the tribes be  
judged?

And 'tis impossible but offences come :

So, all's one lawsuit, all one long leet-day !<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sophocles : *Ced. Col.* 1382, *Δίκη ξυεδρος*  
*Ζηρος ἀρχαίος νόμος.*

<sup>2</sup> *Leet-day* : day on which the court sits.

Forgive me this digression—that I stand  
Entranced awhile at Law's first beam, out-  
break 1171

O' the business, when the Count's good angel  
bade

"Put up thy sword, born enemy to the ear,

"And let Law listen to thy difference!" 1174

And Law does listen and compose the strife,

Settle the suit, how wisely and how well !

On our Pompilia, faultless to a fault,

Law bends a brow maternally severe,

Implies the worth of perfect chastity,

By fancying the flaw she cannot find. 1180

Superfluous sifting snow, nor helps nor harms:

'Tis safe to censure levity in youth,

Tax womanhood with indiscretion, sure !

Since toys, permissible to-day, become 1184

Follies to-morrow : prattle shocks in church :

And that curt skirt which lets a maiden skip,

The matron changes for a trailing robe.

Mothers may aim a blow with half-shut eyes

Nodding above their spindles by the fire,

And chance to hit some hidden fault, else  
safe. 1196

Just so, Law hazarded a punishment—

If applicable to the circumstance,

Why, well ! if not so apposite, well too.

"Quit the gay range o' the world," I hear

her cry,

"Enter, in lieu, the penitential pound : 1198

"Exchange the gauds of pomp for ashes, dust !

"Leave each mollitious haunt of luxury !

"The golden - garnished silken - couched  
alcove,

"The many-columned terrace that so tempts

"Feminine soul put foot forth, extend ear 1200

"To fluttering joy of lover's serenade,—

"Leave these for cellular seclusion ! mask

"And dance no more, but fast and pray !  
avaunt—

"Be burned, thy wicked townsman's sonnet-  
book !

"Welcome, mild hymnal by . . . some better  
scribe ! 1206

"For the warm arms were wont enfold thy  
flesh,

"Let wire-shirt plough and whiplash dis-  
cipline !"



If such an exhortation proved, perchance,  
Inapplicable, words bestowed in waste,  
What harm, since Law has store, can spend  
nor miss? 1210

And so, our paragon submits herself,  
Goes at command into the holy house,  
And, also at command, comes out again:  
For, could the effect of such obedience prove  
Too certain, too immediate? Being healed,  
Go blaze abroad the matter, blessed one! 1218  
Art thou sound forthwith? Speedily vacate  
The step by pool-side, leave Bethesda free  
To patients plentifully posted round, 1219  
Since the whole need not the physician! Brief,  
She may betake her to her parents' place.  
Welcome her, father, with wide arms once  
more,

Motion her, mother, to thy breast again!  
For why? Since Law relinquishes the charge,  
Grants to your dwelling-place a prison's style,  
Rejoice you with Pompilia! golden days, 1226  
*Redeunt Saturnia regna.* Six weeks slip,  
And she is domiciled in house and home  
As though she thence had never budged at all.  
And thither let the husband,—joyous, ay,  
But contrite also—quick betake himself, 1231  
Proud that his dove which lay among the pots  
Hath mued<sup>1</sup> those dingy feathers,—moulted  
now,

Shows silver bosom clothed with yellow gold!  
So shall he tempt her to the perch she fled,  
Bid to domestic bliss the truant back. 1236

But let him not delay! Time fleets how fast,  
And opportunity, the irrevocable,  
Once flown will flout him! Is the furrow  
traced?

If field with corn ye fail preoccupy, 1240  
Darnel for wheat and thistle-beards for grain,  
*Infelix lolium, carduus horridus,*  
Will grow apace in combination prompt,  
Defraud the husbandman of his desire. 1244  
Already—hist—what murmurs 'monish now  
The laggard?—doubtful, nay, fantastic bruit  
Of such an apparition, such return

<sup>1</sup> *Mued*: moulted.

*Interdum*, to anticipate the spouse,  
Of Caponsacchi's very self! 'Tis said,  
When nights are lone and company is rare,  
His visitations brighten winter up. 1251

If so they did—which nowise I believe—  
(How can I?—proof abounding that the priest,  
Once fairly at his relegation-place,  
Never once left it) still, admit he stole 1255  
A midnight march, would fain see friend  
again,

Find matter for instruction in the past,  
Renew the old adventure in such chat  
As cheers a fireside! He was lonely too,  
He, too, must need his recreative hour. 1260  
Shall it amaze the philosophic mind  
If he, long wont the empurpled cup to quaff,  
Have feminine society at will,  
Being debarred abruptly from all drink  
Save at the spring which Adam used for wine,  
Dreads harm to just the health he hoped to  
guard, 1266

And, trying abstinence, gains malady?  
Ask Tozzi, now physician to the Pope!  
"Little by little break"—(I hear he bids  
Master Arcangeli my antagonist, 1276  
Who loves good cheer, and may indulge too  
much:

So I explain the logic of the plea  
Wherewith he opened our proceedings late)—  
"Little by little break a habit, Don,  
"Become necessity to feeble flesh!" 1275  
And thus, nocturnal taste of intercourse  
(Which never happened,—but, suppose it did)  
May have been used to dishabituate  
By sip and sip this drainer to the dregs  
O' the draught of conversation,—heady stuff,  
Brewage which, broached, it took two days  
and nights 1281

To properly discuss i' the journey, Sirs!  
Such power has second-nature, men call use,  
That undelightful objects get to charm  
Instead of chafe: the daily colocynt 1285  
Tickles the palate by repeated dose,  
Old sores scratch kindly, the ass makes a push,  
Although the mill-yoke-wound be smarting  
yet,  
For mill-door bolted on a holiday: 1290  
Nor must we marvel here if impulse urge

To talk the old story over now and then,  
The hopes and fears, the stoppage and the  
haste,—

Subjects of colloquy to surfeit once.

"Here did you bid me twine a rosy wreath!"

"And there you paid my lips a compliment!"

"Here you admired the tower could be so  
tall!" 1286

"And there you likened that of Lebanon

"To the nose of the beloved!" Trifles! still,

"*Forsan et hæc olim*,"<sup>1</sup>—such trifles serve

To make the minutes pass in winter-time.

Husband, return then, I re-counsel thee!

For, finally, of all glad circumstance 1302

Should make a prompt return imperative,

What in the world awaits thee, dost suppose?

O' the sudden, as good gifts are wont be-  
fall, 1305

What is the hap of our unconscious Count?

That which lights bonfire and sets cask a-tilt,

Dissolves the stubborn'st heart in jollity.

O admirable, there is born a babe,

A son, an heir, a Franceschini last 1310

And best o' the stock! Pompilia, thine the  
palm!

Repaying incredulity with faith,

Ungenerous thrift of each marital debt

With bounty in profuse expenditure, 1314

Pompilia scorns to have the old year end

Without a present shall ring in the new—

Bestows on her too-parsimonious lord

An infant for the apple of his eye, 1318

Core of his heart, and crown completing life,

True *summum bonum* of the earthly lot!

"We," saith ingeniously the sage, "are born

"Solely that others may be born of us."

So, father, take thy child, for thine that  
child,

Oh nothing doubt! In wedlock born, law  
holds

Baseness impossible: since "*filius est* 1326

"*Quem nuptiæ demonstrant*," twits the text

Whoever dares to doubt.

<sup>1</sup> *Forsan et hæc olim meminisse iuvabit*:  
Virgil, *Æn.* I. 203—"Perchance one day we  
shall take pleasure in recalling even these  
experiences."

Yet doubt he dares!  
O faith, where art thou flown from out the  
world?

Already on what an age of doubt we fall!

Instead of each disputing for the prize, 1331

The babe is bandied here from that to this.

Whose the babe? "*Cujum pecus?*"<sup>2</sup> Guido's  
lamb?

"*An Melibæi?*" Nay, but of the priest!

"*Non sed Ægonis!*" Someone must be

sire: 1335

And who shall say, in such a puzzling strait,

If there were not vouchsafed some miracle

To the wife who had been harassed and abused

More than enough by Guido's family

For non-production of the promised fruit 1340

Of marriage? What if Nature, I demand,

Touched to the quick by taunts upon her sloth,

Had roused herself, put forth recondite power,

Bestowed this birth to vindicate her sway,

Like the strange favour, Maro memorized

As granted Aristæus when his hive 1346

Lay empty of the swarm? not one more bee—

Not one more babe to Franceschini's house!

And lo, a new birth filled the air with joy,

Sprung from the bowels of the generous steer,

A novel son and heir rejoiced the Count!

Spontaneous generation, need I prove 1352

Were facile feat to Nature at a pinch?

Let whoso doubts, steep horsehair certain  
weeks

In water, there will be produced a snake;

Spontaneous product of the horse, which

horse 1356

Happens to be the representative—

Now that I think on't—of Arezzo's self,

The very city our conception blessed:

Is not a prancing horse the City-arms? 1360

What sane eye fails to see coincidence?

*Cur ego*, boast thou, my Pompilia, then,

*Desperem fieri sine conjuge*

*Mater*—how well the Ovidian distich suits!—

*Et parere intacto dummodo* 1365

*Casto viro?* Such miracle was wrought!

<sup>2</sup> *Cujum pecus*, &c.: a quotation from Virgil,  
*Ecl.* 3, 1, except that *sed* should be *verum*;  
"Whose is this flock,—Melibæus?" "Nay  
Ægon's."

Notes, further, as to mark the prodigy,  
The babe in question neither took the name  
Of Guido, from the sire presumptive, nor  
Giuseppe, from the sire potential, but 1370  
Gaetano—last saint of our hierarchy,  
And newest namer for a thing so new !  
What other motive could have prompted  
choice ?

Therefore be peace again : exult, ye hills !  
Ye vales rejoicingly break forth in song ! 1375  
*Incipe, parve puer*, begin, small boy,  
*Risu cognoscere patrem*, with a laugh  
To recognize thy parent ! Nor do thou  
Boggle, oh parent, to return the grace !  
*Nec anceps hære, pater, puero* 1380  
*Cognoscendo*—one may well eke out the  
prayer !  
In vain ! The perverse Guido doubts his  
eyes,

Distrusts assurance, lets the devil drive.  
Because his house is swept and garnished  
now, 1384  
He, having summoned seven like himself,  
Must hurry thither, knock and enter in,  
And make the last worse than the first, indeed !  
Is he content ? We are : No further blame  
O' the man and murder ! They were stig-  
matized

Befittingly : the Court heard long ago 1390  
My mind o' the matter, which, outpouring  
full,  
Has long since swept like surge, i' the simile  
Of Homer, overborne both dyke and dam,  
And whelmed alike client and advocate : 1394  
His fate is sealed, his life as good as gone,  
On him I am not tempted to waste word.  
Yet though my purpose holds,—which was  
and is

And solely shall be to the very end,  
To draw the true *effigies* of a saint,  
Do justice to perfection in the sex,— 1400  
Yet let not some gross pamperer of the flesh  
And niggard in the spirit's nourishment,  
Whose feeding hath ofuscated his wit  
Rather than law,—he never had, to lose—  
Let not such advocate object to me 1405  
I leave my proper function of attack !

"What's this to Bacchus ?"—(in the classic  
phrase,  
Well used, for once) he hiccups probably.  
O Advocate o' the Poor, thou born to make  
Their blessing void—*beati pauperes* ! 1410  
By painting saintship I depicture sin :  
Beside my pearl, I prove how black thy jet,  
And, through Pompilia's virtue, Guido's crime.

Back to her, then,—with but one beauty  
more, 1414  
End we our argument,—one crowning grace  
Pre-eminent 'mid agony and death.  
For to the last Pompilia played her part,  
Used the right means to the permissible end,  
And, wily as an eel that stirs the mud 1419  
Thick overhead, so baffling spearman's thrust,  
She, while he stabbed her, simulated death,  
Delayed, for his sake, the catastrophe,  
Obtained herself a respite, four days' grace,  
Whereby she told her story to the world,  
Enabled me to make the present speech, 1424  
And, by a full confession, saved her soul.

Yet hold, even here would malice leer its last,  
Gurgle his choked remonstrance : snake, hiss  
free !  
Oh, that's the objection ? And to whom ?—  
not her  
But me, forsooth—as, in the very act 1430  
Of both confession and (what followed close)  
Subsequent talk, chatter and gossipry,  
Babble to sympathizing he and she  
Whoever chose besiege her dying bed,—  
As this were found at variance with my  
tale, 1435  
Falsified all I have adduced for truth,  
Admitted not one peccadillo here,  
Pretended to perfection, first and last,  
O' the whole procedure—perfect in the end,  
Perfect i' the means, perfect in everything,  
Leaving a lawyer nothing to excuse, 1441  
Reason away and show his skill about !  
—A flight, impossible to Adamic flesh,  
Just to be fancied, scarcely to be wished,  
And, anyhow, unpleadable in court ! 1445  
"How reconcile," gasps Malice, "that with  
this ?"

Your "this," friend, is extraneous to the law,  
(Comes of men's outsidemeddling, the unskilled  
Interposition of such fools as press 1449  
Out of their province. Must I speak my mind?  
Far better had Pompilia died o' the spot  
Than found a tongue to wag and shame the law,  
Shame most of all herself,—could friendship  
fail

And advocacy lie less on the alert : 1454  
But no, they shall protect her to the end !  
Do I credit the alleged narration ? No !  
Lied our Pompilia then, to laud herself ?  
Still, no ! Clear up what seems discrepancy ?  
The means abound : art's long, though time  
is short ;

So, keeping me in compass, all I urge 1460  
Is—since, confession at the point of death,  
*Nam in articulo mortis*, with the Church  
Passes for statement honest and sincere,  
*Nemo presumitur reus esse*,—then, 1464  
If sure that all affirmed would be believed,  
'Twas charity, in her so circumstanced,  
To spend the last breath in one effort more  
For universal good of friend and foe :  
And,—by pretending utter innocence, 1469  
Nay, freedom from each foible we forgive,—  
Re-integrate—not solely her own fame,  
But do the like kind office for the priest  
Whom telling the crude truth about might vex,  
Haply expose to peril, abbreviate  
Indeed the long career of usefulness 1475  
Presumably before him : while her lord,  
Whose fleeting life is forfeit to the law,—  
What mercy to the culprit if, by just  
The gift of such a full certificate  
Of his immitigable guiltiness, 1480  
She stifled in him the absurd conceit  
Of murder as it were a mere revenge  
—Stopped confirmation of that jealousy

Which, did she but acknowledge the first flaw,  
The faintest foible, had emboldened him 1485  
To battle with the charge, baulk penitence,  
Bar preparation for impending fate !  
Whereas, persuaded him that he slew a saint  
Who sinned not even where she may have  
sinned,

You urge him all the brisklier to repent 1490  
Of most and least and aught and everything !

Still, if this view of mine content you not,  
Lords, nor excuse the genial falsehood here,  
We come to our *Triarii*,<sup>1</sup> last resource :  
We fall back on the inexpugnable, 1496  
Submitting,—she confessed before she talked !  
The sacrament obliterates the sin :  
What is not,—was not, therefore, in a sense.  
Let Molinists distinguish, "Souls washed  
white 1499  
"But red once, still show pinkish to the eye !"  
We say, abolishment is nothingness,  
And nothingness has neither head nor tail,  
End nor beginning ! Better estimate  
Exorbitantly, than disparage aught  
Of the efficacy of the act, I hope ! 1506

*Solvuntur tabulae*?<sup>2</sup> May we laugh and go !  
Well,—not before (in filial gratitude  
To Law, who, mighty mother, waves adieu)  
We take on us to vindicate Law's self !  
For,—yea, Sirs,—curb the start, curtail the  
stare !— 1510

Remains that we apologize for haste  
I the Law, our lady who here bristles up  
"Blame my procedure ? Could the Court  
mistake ?

"(Which were indeed a misery to think) 1514  
"Did not my sentence in the former stage  
"O' the business bear a title plain enough ?  
"Decretum"—I translate it word for word—  
"Decreed : the priest, for his complicity  
"I the flight and deviation of the dame,  
"As well as for unlawful intercourse, 1520  
"Is banished three years : 'crime and  
penalty,

"Declared alike. If he be taxed with guilt,  
"How can you call Pompilia innocent ?  
"If both be innocent, have I been just ?"

Gently, O mother, judge men—whose  
mistake 1526  
Is in the mere misapprehensiveness !

<sup>1</sup> *Triarii* : the third rank in the old formation of the Roman legion, containing the oldest soldiers, and only called upon at the crisis of a battle.

<sup>2</sup> *Solvuntur tabulae* : from Horace, *Sat. II. 1. 86*—*solvuntur risu tabulae*, "the court will break up in laughter."

The *Titulus* a-top of your decree  
Was but to ticket there the kind of charge  
You in good time would arbitrate upon.  
Title is one thing,—arbitration's self, 1580  
*Probatio*, quite another possibly.

*Substitutit*, there holds good the old response,  
*Responsio tradita*, we must not stick,  
*Quod non sit attendendus Titulus*,  
To the Title, *sed Probatio*, but the Proof,  
*Resultans ex processu*, the result 1586  
O' the Trial, and the style of punishment,  
*Et pena per sententiam imposita*.

All is tentative, till the sentence come :  
An indication of what men expect, 1640  
But nowise an assurance they shall find.  
Lords, what if we permissibly relax

The tense bow, as the law-god Phœbus bids,  
Relieve our gravity at labour's close? 1644  
I traverse Rome, feel thirsty, need a draught,  
Look for a wine-shop, find it by the bough  
Projecting as to say "Here wine is sold!"  
So much I know,—"sold:" but what sort  
of wine?

Strong, weak, sweet, sour, home-made or  
foreign drink?

That much must I discover by myself. 1650  
"Wine is sold," quoth the bough, "but good  
or bad,

"Find, and inform us when you smack your  
lips!"

Exactly so, Law hangs her title forth,  
To show she entertains you with such case  
About such crime. Come in! she pours,  
you quaff. 1655

You find the Priest good liquor in the main,  
But heady and provocative of brawls :  
Remand the residue to flask once more,  
Lay it low where it may deposit lees, 1659  
I' the cellar : thence produce it presently,  
Three years the brighter and the better !

Thus,

Law's son, have I bestowed my filial help,  
And thus I end, *tenax propositio* ;  
Point to point as I purposed have I drawn  
Pompilia, and implied as terribly 1666  
Guide : so, gazing, let the world crown

LAW—

Able once more, despite my impotence,  
And helped by the acumen of the Court,  
To eliminate, display, make triumph truth !  
What other prize than truth were worth the  
pains ? 1571

There's my oration—much exceeds in length  
That famed panegyric of Isocrates,  
They say it took him fifteen years to pen.  
But all those ancients could say anything !  
He put in just what rushed into his head :  
While I shall have to prune and pare and  
print. 1577

This comes of being born in modern times  
With priests for auditory. Still, it pays.

## X.—THE POPE.

LIKE to Ahasuerus, that shrewd prince,  
I will begin,—as is, these seven years now,  
My daily wort,—and read a History  
(Written by one whose deft right hand was  
dust

To the last digit, ages ere my birth) 5  
Of all my predecessors, Popes of Rome :  
For though mine ancient early dropped the  
pen,

Yet others picked it up and wrote it dry,  
Since of the making books there is no end.  
And so I have the Papacy complete 10  
From Peter first to Alexander last ;  
Can question each and take instruction so.  
Have I to dare?—I ask, how dared this  
Pope?

To suffer?—Suchanone, how suffered he?  
Being about to judge, as now, I seek 15  
How judged once, well or ill, some other  
Pope ;

Study some signal judgment that subsists  
To blaze on, or else blot, the page which seals  
The sum up of what gain or loss to God  
Came of His one more Vicar in the world. 20  
So, do I find example, rule of life ;  
So, square and set in order the next page,  
Shall be stretched smooth o'er my own  
funeral cyst.

Eight hundred years exact before the year  
 I was made Pope, men made Formosus  
 Pope, 25  
 Say Sigebert and other chroniclers.  
 Ere I confirm or quash the Trial here  
 Of Guido Franceschini and his friends,  
 Read,—How there was a ghastly Trial once  
 Of a dead man by a live man, and both,  
 Popes : 30  
 Thus—in the antique penman's very phrase.

“Then Stephen, Pope and seventh of the  
 name,  
 “Cried out, in synod as he sat in state,  
 “While choler quivered on his brow and  
 beard,  
 “‘Come into court, Formosus, thou lost  
 wretch, 35  
 “‘That claimedst to be late Pope as even I!’

“And at the word the great door of the church  
 “Flew wide, and in they brought Formosus’  
 self,  
 “The body of him, dead, even as embalmed  
 “And buried duly in the Vatican 40  
 “Eight months before, exhumed thus for the  
 nonce.  
 “They set it, that dead body of a Pope,  
 “Clothed in pontific vesture now again,  
 “Upright on Peter’s chair as if alive 44

“And Stephen, springing up, cried furiously  
 “‘Bishop of Porto, wherefore didst presume  
 “‘To leave that see and take this Roman see,  
 “‘Exchange the lesser for the greater see,  
 “‘—A thing against the canons of the  
 Church?’

“Then one—(a Deacon who, observing  
 forms, 50  
 “Was placed by Stephen to repel the charge,  
 “Be advocate and mouthpiece of the corpse)—  
 “Spoke as he dared, set stammeringly forth  
 “With white lips and dry tongue,—as but a  
 youth,  
 “For frightful was the corpse-face to behold,—  
 “How nowise lacked there precedent for  
 this. 56

“But when, for his last precedent of all,  
 “Emboldened by the Spirit, out he blurted  
 “‘And, Holy Father, didst not thou thyself  
 “‘Vacate the lesser for the greater see, 60  
 “‘Half a year since change Arago for  
 Rome?’  
 “‘—Ye have the sin’s defence now, Synod  
 mine!’  
 “Shrieks Stephen in a beastly froth of rage :  
 “‘Judge now betwixt him dead and me alive!  
 “‘Hath he intruded, or do I pretend? 65  
 “‘Judge, judge!’—breaks wavelike one  
 whole foam of wrath.

“Whereupon they, being friends and fol-  
 lowers,  
 “Said ‘Ay, thou art Christ’s Vicar, and not  
 he!  
 “‘Away with what is frightful to behold!  
 “‘This act was uncanonic and a fault.’ 70

“Then, swallowed up in rage, Stephen ex-  
 claimed  
 “‘So, guilty! So, remains I punish guilt!  
 “‘He is unpoped, and all he did I damn :  
 “‘The Bishop, that ordained him, I degrade:  
 “‘Depose to laics those he raised to priests :  
 “‘What they have wrought is mischief nor  
 shall stand, 76  
 “‘It is confusion, let it vex no more!  
 “‘Since I revoke, annul and abrogate  
 “‘All his decrees in all kinds : they are void!  
 “‘In token whereof and warning to the  
 world, 80  
 “‘Strip me yon miscreant of those robes  
 usurped,  
 “‘And clothe him with vile serge befitting  
 such!  
 “‘Then hale the carrion to the market-place:  
 “‘Let the town-hangman chop from his  
 right hand  
 “‘Those same three fingers which he blessed  
 withal; 86  
 “‘Next cut the head off once was crowned  
 forsooth :  
 “‘And last go fling them, fingers, head and  
 trunk,  
 “‘To Tiber that my Christian fish may sup!’

"—Either because of IXOTE which means  
Fish

"And very aptly symbolizes Christ, 90

"Or else because the Pope is Fisherman,

"And seals with Fisher's-signet.

"Anyway,

"So said, so done : himself, to see it done,

"Followed the corpse they trailed from  
street to street 95

"Till into Tiber wave they threw the thing.

"The people, crowded on the banks to see,

"Were loud or mute, wept or laughed, cursed  
or jeered,

"According as the deed addressed their  
sense ;

"A scandal verily : and out spake a Jew

"Wot ye your Christ had vexed our Herod  
thus ?' 101

"Now when, Formosus being dead a year,

"His judge Pope Stephen tasted death in  
turn,

"Made captive by the mob and strangled  
straight,

"Romanus, his successor for a month, 105

"Did make protest. Formosus was with God,

"Holy, just, true in thought and word and  
deed.

"Next Theodore, who reigned but twenty  
days,

"Therein convoked a synod, whose decree

"Did reinstate, repope the late unpoped, 110

"And do away with Stephen as accursed.

"So that when presently certain fisher-folk

"(As if the queasy river could not hold

"Its swallowed Jonas, but discharged the  
meal) 114

"Produced the timely product of their nets,

"The mutilated man, Formosus,—saved

"From putrefaction by the embalmer's spice,

"Or, as some said, by sanctity of flesh,—

"Why, lay the body again,' bade Theodore,

"Among his predecessors, in the church

"A burial-place of Peter !' which was  
done. 121

"And, addeth Luitprand, 'many of repute,

"Plena and still alive, avouch to me

"That, as they bore the body up the aisle,

"The saints in imaged row bowed each his  
head 125

"For welcome to a brother-saint come back,'

"As for Romanus and this Theodore,

"These two Popes, through the brief reign  
granted each,

"Could but initiate what John came to  
close 129

"And give the final stamp to : he it was

"Ninth of the name, (I follow the best guides)

"Who,—in full synod at Ravenna held

"With Bishops seventy-four, and present too

"Eude King of France with his Arch-  
bishopry,—

"Did condemn Stephen, anathematize 135

"The disinterment, and make all blots blank,

"For, argueth here Auxilius in a place

"*De Ordinationibus*, 'precedents

"Had been, no lack, before Formosus  
long, 139

"Of Bishops so transferred from see to see,—

"Marinus, for example : ' read the tract.

"But, after John, came Sergius, reaffirmed

"The right of Stephen, cursed Formosus,  
nay

"Cast out, some say, his corpse a second  
time.

"And here,—because the matter went to  
ground, 145

"Fretted by new griefs, other cares of the  
age,—

"Here is the last pronouncing of the Church,

"Her sentence that subsists unto this day.

"Yet constantly opinion hath prevailed

"I' the Church, Formosus was a holy man."

Which of the judgments was infallible? 151

Which of my predecessors spoke for God?

And what availed Formosus that this cursed,

That blessed, and then this other cursed  
again?

"Fear ye not those whose power can kill  
the body 155

"And not the soul," saith Christ, "but  
rather those

"Can cast both soul and body into hell !"

John judged thus in Eight Hundred Ninety  
Eight,

Exact eight hundred years ago to-day 180  
When, sitting in his stead, Vice-gerent here,  
I must give judgment on my own behoof.  
So worked the predecessor : now, my turn !

In God's name ! Once more on this earth  
of God's,

While twilight lasts and time wherein to work,  
I take His staff with my uncertain hand, 185  
And stay my six and fourscore years, my due  
Labour and sorrow, on His judgment-seat,  
And forthwith think, speak, act, in place of  
Him—

The Pope for Christ. Once more appeal is  
made 189

From man's assize to mine : I sit and see  
Another poor weak trembling human wretch  
Pushed by his fellows, who pretend the right,  
Up to the gulf which, where I gaze, begins  
From this world to the next,—gives way and  
way,

Just on the edge over the awful dark : 175  
With nothing to arrest him but my feet.  
He catches at me with convulsive face,  
Cries "Leave to live the natural minute  
more !"

While hollowly the avengers echo "Leave ?  
"None ! So has he exceeded man's due  
share 190

"In man's fit license, wrung by Adam's fall,  
"To sin and yet not surely die;—that we,  
"All of us sinful, all with need of grace,  
"All chary of our life,—the minute more  
"Or minute less of grace which saves a soul,—  
"Bound to make common cause with who  
craves time, 186

"—We yet protest against the exorbitance  
"Of sin in this one sinner, and demand  
"That his poor sole remaining piece of time  
"Be plucked from out his clutch : put him  
to death ! 190

"Punish him now ! As for the weal or woe  
"Hereafter, God grant mercy ! Man be just,  
"Nor let the felon boast he went scot-free !"  
And I am bound, the solitary judge,  
To weigh the worth, decide upon the plea,

And either hold a hand out, or withdraw 195  
A foot and let the wretch drift to the fall.

Ay, and while thus I dally, dare perchance  
Put fancies for a comfort 'twixt this calm  
And yonder passion that I have to bear,—  
As if reprieve were possible for both 201  
Prisoner and Pope,—how easy were reprieve !  
A touch o' the hand-bell here, a hasty word  
To those who wait, and wonder they wait  
long,

I' the passage there, and I should gain the  
life !— 205

Yea, though I flatter me with fancy thus, . . .  
I know it is but nature's craven-trick.  
The case is over, judgment at an end,  
And all things done now and irrevocable :  
A mere dead man is Franceschini here, 210  
Even as Formosus centuries ago.

I have worn through this sombre wintry day,  
With winter in my soul beyond the world's,  
Over these dismalest of documents  
Which drew night down on me ere eve be-  
fell,— 215

Pleadings and counter-pleadings, figure of fact  
Beside fact's self, these summaries to-wit,—  
How certain three were slain by certain five:  
I read here why it was, and how it went,  
And how the chief o' the five preferred ex-  
cuse, 220  
And how law rather chose defence should  
lie,—

What argument he urged by wary word  
When free to play off wile, start subterfuge,  
And what the unguarded groan told, torture's  
feat

When law grew brutal, outbroke, over-  
bore 225

And glutted hunger on the truth, at last,—  
No matter for the flesh and blood between.  
All's a clear rede and no more riddle now:  
Truth, nowhere, lies yet everywhere in these—  
Not absolutely in a portion, yet 230  
Evolvable from the whole : evolved at last  
Painfully, held tenaciously by me.

Therefore there is not any doubt to clear  
When I shall write the brief word presently  
And chink the hand-bell, which I pause to  
do. 235



Irresolute? Not I, more than the mound  
With the pine-trees on it yonder! Some  
surmise,

Perchance, that since man's wit is fallible,  
Mine may fail here? Suppose it so,—what  
then? 280

Say,—Guido, I count guilty, there's no babe  
So guiltless, for I misconceive the man!

What's in the chance should move me from  
my mind?

If, as I walk in a rough country-side,  
Peasants of mine cry "Thou art he can help,  
"Lord of the land and counted wise to  
boot: 245

"Look at our brother, strangling in his foam,  
"He fell so where we find him,—prove thy  
worth!"

I may presume, pronounce, "A frenzy-fit,  
"A falling-sickness or a fever-stroke!

"Breathe a vein, copiously let blood at  
once!" 280

So perishes the patient, and anon  
I hear my peasants—"All was error, lord!

"Our story, thy prescription: for there  
crawled

"In due time from our hapless brother's  
breast

"The serpent which had stung him: bleeding  
slew 285

"Whom a prompt cordial had restored to  
health."

What other should I say than "God so  
willed:

"Mankind is ignorant, a man am I:

"Call ignorance my sorrow, not my sin!"

So and not otherwise, in after-time, 290

If some acuter wit, fresh probing, sound

This multifarious mass of words and deeds

Deeper, and reach through guilt to innocence,

I shall face Guido's ghost nor blench a jot.

"God who set me to judge thee, meted out

"So much of judging faculty, no more: 295

"Ask Him if I was slack in use thereof!"

I hold a heavier fault imputable

Inasmuch as I changed a chaplain once,

For no cause,—no, if I must bare my  
heart,— 270

Save that he snuffled somewhat saying mass.

For I am ware it is the seed of act,  
God holds appraising in His hollow palm,  
Not act grown great thence on the world  
below, 274

Leafage and branchage, vulgar eyes admire.

Therefore I stand on my integrity,

Nor fear at all: and if I hesitate,

It is because I need to breathe awhile,

Rest, as the human right allows, review

Intent the little seeds of act, my tree,— 285

The thought, which, clothed in deed, I give  
the world

At chink of bell and push of arrased door.

O pale departure, dim disgrace of day!

Winter's in wane, his vengeful worst art thou,

To dash the boldness of advancing March!

Thy chill persistent rain has purged our  
streets 288

Of gossipry; pert tongue and idle ear

By this, consort 'neath archway, portico.

But wheresoe'er Rome gathers in the grey,

Two names now snap and flash from mouth  
to mouth— 290

(Sparks, flint and steel strike) Guido and the  
Pope.

By this same hour to-morrow eve—aha,

How do they call him?—the sagacious Swede

Who finds by figures how the chances prove,

Why one comes rather than another thing,

As, say, such dots turn up by throw of  
dice, 295

Or, if we dip in Virgil here and there

And prick for such a verse, when such shall  
point.

Take this Swede, tell him, hiding name and  
rank,

Two men are in our city this dull eve; 300

One doomed to death,—but hundreds in such  
plight

Slip aside, clean escape by leave of law

Which leans to mercy in this latter time;

Moreover in the plenitude of life

Is he, with strength of limb and brain  
adroit, 305

Presumably of service here: beside,

The man is noble, backed by nobler friends:

Nay, they so wish him well, the city's self

Makes common cause with who—house-  
magistrate,

Patron of hearth and home, domestic  
lord— 310

But ruled his own, let aliens cavil. Die?  
He'll bribe a gaoler or break prison first!  
Nay, a sedition may be helpful, give  
Hint to the mob to batter wall, burn gate,  
And bid the favourite malefactor march. 315  
Calculate now these chances of escape!  
"It is not probable, but well may be."

Again, there is another man, weighed now  
By twice eight years beyond the seven-times-  
ten,

Appointed overweight to break our branch.  
And this man's loaded branch lifts, more  
than snow, 321

All the world's cark and care, though a  
bird's nest

Were a superfluous burthen: notably  
Hath he been pressed, as if his age were  
youth, 324

From to-day's dawn till now that day departs,  
Trying one question with true sweat of soul  
"Shall the said doomed man fittier die or  
live?"

When a straw swallowed in his posset,  
stool

Stumbled on where his path lies, any puff  
That's incident to such a smoking flax, 330

Hurries the natural end and quenches him!  
Now calculate, thou sage, the chances here,  
Say, which shall die the sooner, this or that?  
"That, possibly, this in all likelihood."

I thought so: yet thou tripp'st, my foreign  
friend! 335

No, it will be quite otherwise,—to-day  
Is Guido's last: my term is yet to run.

But say the Swede were right, and I forthwith  
Acknowledge a prompt summons and lie  
dead:

Why, then I stand already in God's face 340  
And hear "Since by its fruit a tree is judged,  
"Show me thy fruit, the latest act of  
thine!

"For in the last is summed the first and all,—  
"What thy life last put heart and soul into,

"There shall I taste thy product." I must  
plead 345

This condemnation of a man to-day.

Not so! Expect nor question nor reply  
At what we figure as God's judgment-bar!  
None of this vile way by the barren words  
Which, more than any deed, characterize 350  
Man as made subject to a curse: no speech—  
That still bursts o'er some lie which lurks  
inside,

As the split skin across the coppery snake,  
And most denotes man! since, in all beside,  
In hate or lust or guile or unbelief, 355  
Out of some core of truth the excrescence  
comes,

And, in the last resort, the man may urge  
"So was I made, a weak thing that gave way  
"To truth, to impulse only strong since true,  
"And hated, lusted, used guile, forwent  
faith." 360

But when man walks the garden of this world  
For his own solace, and, unchecked by law,  
Speaks or keeps silence as himself sees fit,  
Without the least incumbency to lie, 365  
—Why, can he tell you what a rose is like,  
Or how the birds fly, and not slip to false  
Though truth serve better? Man must tell  
his mate

Of you, me and himself, knowing he lies,  
Knowing his fellow knows the same,—will  
think

"He lies, it is the method of a man!" 370  
And yet will speak for answer "It is truth"  
To him who shall rejoin "Again a lie!"

Therefore these filthy rags of speech, this coil  
Of statement, comment, query and response,  
Tatters all too contaminate for use, 375  
Have no renewing: He, the Truth, is, too,  
The Word. We men, in our degree, may  
know

There, simply, instantaneously, as here  
After long time and amid many lies, 380  
Whatever we dare think we know indeed  
—That I am I, as He is He,—what else?  
But be man's method for man's life at least!  
Wherefore, Antonio Pignatelli, thou  
My ancient self, who wast no Pope so long

But studiedst God and man, the many years  
 I' the school, i' the cloister, in the diocese  
 Domestic, legate-rule in foreign lands,— 387  
 Thou other force in those old busy days  
 Than this grey ultimate decrepitude,—  
 Yet sensible of fires that more and more 390  
 Visit a soul, in passage to the sky,  
 Left naked than when flesh-robe was new—  
 Thou, not Pope but the mere old man o' the  
 world,  
 Supposed inquisitive and dispassionate,  
 Wilt thou, the one whose speech I somewhat  
 trust, 395  
 Question the after-me, this self now Pope,  
 Hear his procedure, criticize his work?  
 Wise in its generation is the world.

This is why Guido is found reprobate.  
 I see him furnished forth for his career, 400  
 On starting for the life-chance in our world,  
 With nearly all we count sufficient help:  
 Body and mind in balance, a sound frame,  
 A solid intellect: the wit to seek,  
 Wisdom to choose, and courage wherewithal  
 To deal in whatsoever circumstance 405  
 Should minister to man, make life succeed.  
 Oh, and much drawback! what were earth  
 without?  
 Is this our ultimate stage, or starting-place  
 To try man's foot, if it will creep or climb,  
 Mid obstacles in seeming, points that  
 prove 411  
 Advantage for who vaults from low to high  
 And makes the stumbling-block a stepping-  
 stone?  
 So, Guido, born with appetite, lacks food:  
 Is poor, who yet could deftly play-off  
 wealth: 415  
 Straitened, whose limbs are restless till at  
 large.  
 He, as he eyes each outlet of the cirque  
 And narrow penfold for probation, pines  
 After the good thing just outside its grate,  
 With less monition, fainter conscience-  
 twitch, 420  
 Rarer instinctive qualm at the first feel  
 Of greed unseemly, prompting grasp undue,  
 Than nature furnishes her main mankind,—

Making it harder to do wrong than right  
 The first time, careful lest the common ear  
 Break measure, miss the 'outstep of life's  
 march. 425  
 Wherein I see a trial fair and fit  
 For one else too unfairly fenced about,  
 Set above sin, beyond his fellows here:  
 Guarded from the arch-tempter all must  
 fight, 430  
 By a great birth, traditionary name,  
 Diligent culture, choice companionship,  
 Above all, conversancy with the faith  
 Which puts forth for its base of doctrine just  
 "Man is born nowise to content himself,  
 "But please God." He accepted such a  
 rule, 435  
 Recognized man's obedience; and the Church,  
 Which simply is such rule's embodiment,  
 He clave to, he held on by,—nay, indeed,  
 Near pushed inside of, deep as layman  
 durst, 440  
 Professed so much of priesthood as might sue  
 For priest's-exemption where the layman  
 sinned,—  
 Got his arm frocked which, bare, the law  
 would bruise.  
 Hence, at this moment, what's his last  
 resource,  
 His extreme stay and utmost stretch of  
 hope 445  
 But that,—convicted of such crime as law  
 Wipes not away save with a worldling's  
 blood,—  
 Guido, the three-parts consecrate, may  
 'scape?  
 Nay, the portentous brothers of the man  
 Are veritably priests, protected each 450  
 May do his murder in the Church's pale,  
 Abate Paul, Canon, Girolamo!  
 This is the man proves irreligiouslest  
 Of all mankind, religion's parasite!  
 This may forsooth plead dinned ear, jaded  
 sense, 455  
 The vice o' the watcher who bides near the  
 bell,  
 Sleeps sound because the clock is vigilant,  
 And cares not whether it be shade or shine,  
 Doling out day and night to all men else!

Why was the choice o' the man to niche  
himself 460

Perversely 'neath the tower where Time's  
own tongue.

Thus undertakes to sermonize the world?

Why, but because the solemn is safe too,

The belfry proves a fortress of a sort,

Has other uses than to teach the hour : 465

Turns sunscreen, paravent and ombrifuge<sup>1</sup>

To whoso seeks a shelter in its pale,

--Ay, and attractive to unwary folk

Who gaze at storied portal, statued spire,

And go home with full head but empty  
purse, 470

Nor dare suspect the sacristan the thief!

Shall Judas,—hard upon the donor's heel,

To flch the fragments of the basket,—plead

He was too near the preacher's mouth, nor  
sat

Attent with fifties in a company? 475

No,—closer to promulgated decree,

Clearer the censure of default. Proceed!

I find him bound, then, to begin life well;

Fortified by propitious circumstance,

Great birth, good breeding, with the Church  
for guide, 480

How lives he? Cased, thus in a coat of  
proof,

Mailed like a man-at-arms, though all the  
while

A puny starveling,—does the breast pant big,

The limb swell to the limit, emptiness

Strive to become solidity indeed? 485

Rather, he shrinks up like the ambiguous fish,

Detaches flesh from shell and outside show,

And steals by moonlight (I have seen the  
thing)

In and out, now to prey and now to skulk.

Armour he boasts when a wave breaks on  
beach, 490

Or bird stoops for the prize: with peril  
nigh,—

The man of rank, the much-befriended-man,

The man almost affiliate to the Church,

Such is to deal with, let the world beware!

<sup>1</sup> *Paravent and ombrifuge*: protection against  
wind and rain.

Does the world recognize, pass prudently?

Do tides abate and sea-fowl hunt i' the deep?

Already is the slug from out its mew, 497

Ignobly faring with all loose and free,

Sand-fly and slush-worm at their garbage-feast,

A naked blotch no better than they all: 500

Guido has dropped nobility, slipped the  
Church,

Plays trickster if not cut-purse, body and soul

Prostrate among the filthy feeders—faugh!

And when Law takes him by surprise at last,

Catches the foul thing on its carrion-prey, 505

Behold, he points to shell left high and dry,

Pleads "But the case out yonder is myself!"

Nay, it is thou, Law prongs amid thy peers,

Congenial vermin; that was none of thee,

Thine outside,—give it to the soldier-crab! 510

For I find this black mark impinge the man,

That he believes in just the vile of life.

Low instinct, base pretension, are these truth?

Then, that aforesaid armour, probity 514

He figures in, is falsehood scale on scale;

Honour and faith,—a lie and a disguise,

Probably for all livers in this world,

Certainly for himself! All say good words

To who will hear, all do thereby bad deeds

To who must undergo; so thrive mankind!

See this habitual creed exemplified 521

Most in the last deliberate act; as last,

So, very sum and substance of the soul

Of him that planned and leaves one perfect  
piece,

The sin brought under jurisdiction now, 525

Even the marriage of the man: this act

I sever from his life as sample, show

For Guido's self, intend to test him by,

As, from a cup filled fairly at the fount,

By the components we decide enough 530

Or to let flow as late, or staunch the source.

He purposes this marriage, I remark,

On no one motive that should prompt thereto—

Farthest, by consequence, from ends alleged

Appropriate to the action; so they were:

The best, he knew and feigned, the worst he  
took. 535

Not one permissible impulse moves the man,

From the mere liking of the eye and ear,  
 To the true longing of the heart that loves,  
 No trace of these : but all to instigate, 540  
 Is what sinks man past level of the brute  
 Whose appetite if brutish is a truth.  
 All is the lust for money : to get gold, — 543  
 Why, lie, rob, if it must be, murder ! Make  
 Body and soul wring gold out, lured within  
 The clutch of hate by love, the trap's pretence !  
 What good else get from bodies and from souls ?  
 This got, there were some life to lead thereby,  
 —What, where or how, appreciate those who  
 tell 549  
 How the toad lives : it lives, — enough for me !  
 To get this good, — with but a groan or so,  
 Then, silence of the victims, — were the feat.  
 He foresaw, made a picture in his mind, —  
 Of father and mother stunned and echoless  
 To the blow, as they lie staring at fate's jaws  
 Their folly danced into, till the woe fell ; 556  
 Edged in a month by strenuous cruelty  
 From even the poor nook whence they  
 watched the wolf  
 Feast on their heart, the lamb-like child his  
 prey ; 559  
 Plundered to the last remnant of their wealth,  
 (What daily pittance pleased the plunderer  
 dole)  
 Hunted forth to go hide head, starve and die,  
 And leave the pale awe-stricken wife, past  
 hope 563  
 Of help i' the world now, mute and motionless,  
 His slave, his chattel, to first use, then destroy.  
 All this, he bent mind how to bring about,  
 Put plain in act and life, as painted plain,  
 So have success, reach crown of earthly good,  
 In this particular enterprise of man,  
 By marriage — undertaken in God's face 570  
 With all these lies so opposite God's truth,  
 For end so other than man's end.

Thus schemes

Guido, and thus would carry out his scheme :  
 But when an obstacle first blocks the path,  
 When he finds none may boast monopoly 575  
 Of lies and trick i' the tricking lying world, —  
 That sorry timid natures, even this sort  
 Of the Comparini, want nor trick nor lie

Proper to the kind, — that as the gor-crow  
 treats 580  
 The bramble-finch so treats the finch the moth,  
 And the great Guido is minutely matched  
 By this same couple, — whether true or false  
 The revelation of Pompilia's birth,  
 Which in a moment brings his scheme to  
 nought, — 585  
 Then, he is piqued, advances yet a stage,  
 Leaves the low region to the finch and fly,  
 Soars to the zenith whence the fiercer fowl  
 May dare the inimitable swoop. I see.  
 He draws now on the curious crime, the fine  
 Felicity and flower of wickedness ; 591  
 Determines, by the utmost exercise  
 Of violence, made safe and sure by craft,  
 To satiate malice, pluck one last arch-pang  
 From the parents, else would triumph out of  
 reach, 595  
 By punishing their child, 'within reach yet,  
 Who, by thought, word or deed, could no-  
 wise wrong  
 I' the matter that now moves him. So plans he,  
 Always subordinating (note the point !)  
 Revenge, the manlier sin, to interest 600  
 The meaner, — would pluck pang forth, but  
 unclench  
 No gripe in the act, let fall no money-piece.  
 Hence a plan for so plaguing, body and soul,  
 His wife, so putting, day by day, hour by hour,  
 The untried torture to the untouched place,  
 As must precipitate an end foreseen, 606  
 Goad her into some plain revolt, most like  
 Plunge upon patent suicidal shame,  
 Death to herself, damnation by rebound  
 To those whose hearts he, holding hers,  
 holds still : 610  
 Such plan as, in its bad completeness, shall  
 Ruin the three together and alike,  
 Yet leave himself in luck and liberty,  
 No claim renounced, no right a forfeiture,  
 His person unendangered, his good fame 615  
 Without a flaw, his pristine worth intact, —  
 While they, with all their claims and rights  
 that cling,  
 Shall forthwith crumble off him every side,  
 Scorched into dust, a plaything for the winds.  
 As when, in our Campagna, there is fired

The nest-like work that overruns a hut ;  
And, as the thatch burns here, there, every-  
where,

Even to the ivy and wild vine, that bound  
And blessed the home where men were  
happy once,

There rises gradual, black amid the blaze,  
Some grim and unscathed nucleus of the  
nest,—

Some old malicious tower, some obscene tomb  
They thought a temple in their ignorance,  
And clung about and thought to lean upon—  
There laughs it o'er their ravage,—where are  
they?

So did his cruelty burn life about,  
And lay the ruin bare in dreadful-ness,  
Try the persistency of torment so  
Upon the wife, that, at extremity,  
Some crisis brought about by fire and  
flame,

The patient frenzy-stung must needs break  
loose,

Fly anyhow, find refuge anywhere,  
Even in the arms of who should front her first,  
No monster but a man—while nature shrieked  
“Or thus escape, or die!” The spasm  
arrived,

Not the escape by way of sin,—O God,  
Who shall pluck sheep Thou holdest, from  
Thy hand?

Therefore she lay resigned to die,—so far  
The simple cruelty was foiled. Why then,

Craft to the rescue, let craft supplement  
Cruelty and show hell a masterpiece!

Hence this consummate lie, this love-intrigue,  
Unmanly simulation of a sin,

With place and time and circumstance to  
suit—

These letters false beyond all forgery—  
Not just handwriting and mere authorship,  
But false to body and soul they figure forth—  
As though the man had cut out shape and  
shape

From fancies of that other Aretine,<sup>1</sup>  
To paste below—incorporate the filth  
With cherub faces on a missal-page!

<sup>1</sup> *That other Aretine*: Pietro Aretino, author  
of various obscene writings.

Whereby the man so far attains his end  
That strange temptation is permitted,—see!  
Pompilia wife, and Caponsacchi priest,  
Are brought together as nor priest nor wife  
Should stand, and there is passion in the place,  
Power in the air for evil as for good,  
Promptings from heaven and hell, as if the  
stars

Fought in their courses for a fate to be.  
Thus stand the wife and priest, a spectacle,  
I doubt not, to unseen assemblage there.  
No lamp will mark that window for a shrine,  
No tablet signalize the terrace, teach  
New generations which succeed the old  
The pavement of the street is holy ground;  
No bard describe in verse how Christ prevailed  
And Satan fell like lightning! Why repine?  
What does the world, told truth, but lie the  
more?

A second time the plot is foiled; nor, now,  
By corresponding sin for countercheck,  
No wile and trick that baffle trick and wile,—  
The play o' the parents! Here the blot is  
blanched

By God's gift of a purity of soul  
That will not take pollution, ermine-like  
Armed from dishonour by its own soft snow.  
Such was this gift of God who showed for once  
How He would have the world go white: it  
seems

As a new attribute were born of each  
Champion of truth, the priest and wife I  
praise,—

As a new safeguard sprang up in defence  
Of their new noble nature: so a thorn  
Comes to the aid of and completes the rose—  
Courage to-wit, no woman's gift nor priest's,  
I' the crisis; might leaps vindicating right.  
See how the strong aggressor, bad and  
bold,

With every vantage, preconcerts surprise,  
Leaps of a sudden at his victim's throat  
In a byeway,—how fares he when face to face  
With Caponsacchi? Who fights, who fears  
now?

There quails Count Guido armed to the  
chattering teeth,

Cowers at the steadfast eye and quiet word  
O' the Canon of the Pieve! There skulks  
crime

Behind law called in to back cowardice :  
While out of the poor trampled worm the wife,  
Springs up a serpent ! 700

But anon of these.

Him I judge now,—of him proceed to note,  
Failing the first, a second chance befriends  
Guido, gives pause ere punishment arrive.  
The law he called, comes, hears, adjudi-  
cates, 705  
Nor does amiss i' the main,—secludes the wife  
From the husband, respites the oppressed one,  
grants

Probation to the oppressor, could he know  
The mercy of a minute's fiery purge !  
The furnace-coals alike of public scorn, 710  
Private remorse, heaped glowing on his head,  
What if,—the force and guile, the ore's alloy,  
Eliminate, his baser soul refined—

The lost be saved even yet, so as by fire ?  
Let him, rebuked, go softly all his days 715  
And, when no graver musings claim their due,  
Meditate on a man's immense mistake  
Who, fashioned to use feet and walk, deigns  
crawl—

Takes the unmanly means—ay, though to ends  
Man scarce should make for, would but reach  
thro' wrong,— 720

May sin, but nowise needs shame manhood so:  
Since fowlers hawk, shoot, nay and snare the  
game,

And yet eschew vile practice, nor find sport  
In torch-light treachery or the luring owl.

But how hunts Guido? Why, the fraudulent  
trap— 725

Late spurned to ruin by the indignant feet  
Of fellows in the chase who loved fair play—  
Here he picks up its fragments to the least,  
Lades him and hies to the old lurking-place  
Where haply he may patch again, refit 730  
The mischief, file its blunted teeth anew,  
Make sure, next time, first snap shall break  
the bone.

Craft, greed and violence complot revenge :

Craft, for its quota, schemes to bring about  
And seize occasion and be safe withal : 735  
Greed craves its act may work both far and  
near,

Crush the tree, branch and trunk and root,  
beside.

Whichever twig or leaf arrests a streak  
Of possible sunshine else would coin itself,  
And drop down one more gold piece in the  
path : 740

Violence stipulates " Advantage proved  
" And safety sure, be pain the overplus !  
" Murder with jagged knife ! Cut but tear too !  
" Foiled oft, starved long, glut malice for  
amends ! "

And what, craft's scheme? scheme sorrowful  
and strange 745

As though the elements, whom mercy checked,  
Had mustered hate for one eruption more,  
One final deluge to surprise the Ark  
Cradled and sleeping on its mountain-top :  
Their outbreak-signal—what but the dove's  
coo, 750

Back with the olive in her bill for news  
Sorrow was over? 'Tis an infant's birth,  
Guido's first born, his son and heir, that gives  
The occasion : other men cut free their souls  
From care in such a case, fly up in thanks 755  
To God, reach, recognize His love for once :  
Guido cries " Soul, at last the mire is thine !  
" Lie there in likeness of a money-bag  
" My babe's birth so pins down past moving  
now,

" That I dare cut adrift the lives I late 760  
" Scrupled to touch lest thou escape with  
them !

" These parents and their child my wife,—  
touch one,

" Lose all ! Their rights determined on a  
head

" I could but hate, not harm, since from  
each hair

" Dangled a hope for me : now—chance and  
change ! 765

" No right was in their child but passes plain  
" To that child's child and through such  
child to me.

" I am a father now,—come what, come will,

"I represent my child; he comes between—  
 "Cuts sudden off the sunshine of this life 770  
 "From those three: why, the gold is in his  
 curls!  
 "Not with old Pietro's, Violante's head,  
 "Not his grey horror, her more hideous  
 black—  
 "Go these, devoted to the knife!" 774  
 'Tis done :  
 Wherefore should mind misgive, heart hesitate?  
 He calls to counsel, fashions certain four  
 Colourless natures counted clean till now,  
 --Rustic simplicity, uncorrupted youth,  
 Ignorant virtue! Here's the gold o' the  
 prime 780  
 When Saturn ruled, shall shock our leaden  
 day—  
 The clown abash the courtier! Mark it,  
 bards!  
 The courtier tries his hand on clownship here,  
 Speaks a word, names a crime, appoints a  
 price,— 784  
 Just breathes on what, suffused with all himself,  
 Is red-hot henceforth past distinction now  
 I' the common glow of hell. And thus they  
 break  
 And blaze on us at Rome, Christ's birth-  
 night-eve!  
 Oh angels that sang erst "On the earth, peace!  
 "To man, good will!"—such peace finds  
 earth to-day! 790  
 After the seventeen hundred years, so man  
 Wills good to man, so Guido makes complete  
 His murder! what is it I said?—cuts loose  
 Three lives that hitherto he suffered clear,  
 Simply because each served to nail secure, 795  
 By a corner of the money-bag, his soul,—  
 Therefore, lives sacred till the babe's first  
 breath  
 O'erweights them in the balance,—off they fly!  
 So is the murder managed, sin conceived  
 To the full: and why not crowned with  
 triumph too? 800  
 Why must the sin, conceived thus, bring  
 forth death?  
 I note how, within hair's-breadth of escape,  
 Impunity and the thing supposed success,  
 Guido is found when the check comes, the  
 change,  
 The monitory touch o' the tether—felt 805  
 By few, not marked by many, named by none  
 At the moment, only recognized aright  
 I' the fulness of the days, for God's, lest sin  
 Exceed the service, leap the line: such  
 check— 809  
 A secret which this life finds hard to keep,  
 And, often guessed, is never quite revealed—  
 Needs must trip Guido on a stumbling-block,  
 Too vulgar, too absurdly plain i' the path!  
 Study this single oversight of care,  
 This hebetude that marred sagacity, 815  
 Forgetfulness of all the man best knew,—  
 How any stranger having need to fly,  
 Needs but to ask and have the means of flight.  
 Why, the first urchin tells you, to leave  
 Rome,  
 Get horses, you must show the warrant, just  
 The banal scrap, clerk's scribble, a fair word  
 buys, 821  
 Or foul one, if a ducat sweeten word,—  
 And straight authority will back demand,  
 Give you the pick o' the post-house!—how  
 should he,  
 Then, resident at Rome for thirty years, 825  
 Guido, instruct a stranger! And himself  
 Forgets just this poor paper scrap, wherewith  
 Armed, every door he knocks at opens wide  
 To save him: horsed and manned, with such  
 advance  
 O' the hunt behind, why, 'twere the easy  
 task 830  
 Of hours told on the fingers of one hand,  
 To reach the Tuscan frontier, laugh at-home,  
 Light-hearted with his fellows of the place,—  
 Prepared by that strange shameful judgment,  
 that  
 Satire upon a sentence just pronounced 835  
 By the Rota and confirmed by the Gran-  
 duke,—  
 Ready in a circle to receive their peer,  
 Appreciate his good story how, when Rome,  
 The Pope-King and the populace of priests  
 Made common cause with their confederate  
 The other priestling who seduced his wife,  
 He, all unaided, wiped out the affront 840



With decent bloodshed and could face his  
 friends,  
 Frolic it in the world's eye. Ay, such tale  
 Missed such applause, and by such over-  
 sight ! 845  
 So, tired and footsore, those blood-flustered  
 five  
 Went reeling on the road through dark and  
 cold,  
 The few permissible miles, to sink at length,  
 Wallow and sleep in the first wayside straw,  
 As the other herd quenched, i' the wash o'  
 the wave, 850  
 —Each swine, the devil inside him : so slept  
 they,  
 And so were caught and caged—all through  
 one trip,  
 One touch of fool in Guido the astute !  
 He curses the omission, I surmise,  
 More than the murder. Why, thou fool and  
 blind, 855  
 It is the mercy-stroke that stops thy fate,  
 Hamstrings and holds thee to thy hurt,—but  
 how ?  
 On the edge o' the precipice ! One minute  
 more,  
 Thou hadst gone farther and fared worse, my  
 son, 859  
 Fathoms down on the flint and fire beneath !  
 Thy comrades each and all were of one mind,  
 Thy murder done, to straightway murder thee  
 In turn, because of promised pay withheld.  
 So, to the last, greed found itself at odds  
 With craft in thee, and, proving conqueror,  
 Had sent thee, the same night that crowned  
 thy hope, 866  
 Thither where, this same day, I see thee not,  
 Nor, through God's mercy, need, to-morrow,  
 see.  
 Such I find Guido, midmost blotch of black  
 Discernible in this group of clustered crimes  
 Huddling together in the cave they call 871  
 Their palace outraged day thus penetrates.  
 Around him ranged, now close and now  
 remote,  
 Prominent or obscure to meet the needs 874  
 O' the mage and master, I detect each shape  
 Subsidiary i' the scene nor loathed the less,  
 All alike coloured, all descried akin  
 By one and the same pitchy furnace stirred  
 At the centre : see, they lick the master's  
 hand,—  
 This fox-faced horrible priest, this brother-  
 brute 880  
 The Abate,—why, mere wolfishness looks  
 well,  
 Guido stands honest in the red o' the flame,  
 Beside this yellow that would pass for white,  
 Twice Guido, all craft but no violence, 884  
 This copier of the mien and gait and garb  
 Of Peter and Paul, that he may go disguised,  
 Rob halt and lame, sick folk i' the temple-  
 porch !  
 Armed with religion, fortified by law, 888  
 A man of peace, who trims the midnight lamp  
 And turns the classic page—and all for craft,  
 All to work harm with, yet incur no scratch !  
 While Guido brings the struggle to a close,  
 Paul steps back the due distance, clear o' the  
 trap  
 He builds and baits. Guido I catch and  
 judge ; 894  
 Paul is past reach in this world and my time :  
 That is a case reserved. Pass to the next,  
 The boy of the brood, the young Girolamo  
 Priest, Canon, and what more ? not wolf nor  
 fox,  
 But hybrid, neither craft nor violence 899  
 Wholly, part violence part craft : such cross  
 Tempts speculation—will both blend one day,  
 And prove hell's better product ? Or subside  
 And let the simple quality emerge,  
 Go on with Satan's service the old way ?  
 Meanwhile, what promise,—what perform-  
 ance too ! 905  
 For there's a new distinctive touch, I see,  
 Lust—lacking in the two—hell's own blue  
 tint  
 That gives a character and marks the man  
 More than a match for yellow and red. Once  
 more,  
 A case reserved : why should I doubt ? Then  
 comes 910  
 The gaunt grey nightmare in the furthest  
 smoke,

The hag that gave these three abortions birth,  
 Unmotherly mother and unwomanly  
 Woman, that near turns motherhood to  
 shame,  
 Womanliness to loathing: no one word, 915  
 No gesture to curb cruelty a whit  
 More than the she-pard thwarts her playsome  
 whelps  
 Trying their milk-teeth on the soft o' the  
 throat  
 O' the first fawn, flung, with those beseech-  
 ing eyes,  
 Flat in the covert! How should she but  
 couch, 920  
 Lick the dry lips, unsheath the blunted claw,  
 Catch 'twixt her placid eyewinks at what  
 chance  
 Old bloody half-forgotten dream may flit,  
 Born when herself was novice to the taste,  
 The while she lets youth take its pleasure.  
 Last, 925  
 These God-abandoned wretched lumps of life,  
 These four companions,—country-folk this  
 time,  
 Not tainted by the unwholesome civic breath,  
 Much less the curse o' the Court! Mere  
 striplings too,  
 Fit to do human nature justice still! 930  
 Surely when impudence in Guido's shape  
 Shall propose crime and proffer money's-worth  
 To these stout tall rough bright-eyed black-  
 haired boys,  
 The blood shall bound in answer to each cheek  
 Before the indignant outcry break from  
 lip! 935  
 Are these i' the mood to murder, hardly  
 loosed  
 From healthy autumn-finish of ploughed glebe,  
 Grapes in the barrel, work at happy end,  
 And winter near with rest and Christmas  
 play? 940  
 How greet they Guido with his final task—  
 (As if he but proposed "One vineyard more  
 "To dig, ere frost come, then relax indeed!")  
 "Anywhere, anyhow and anyway,  
 "Murder mesome three people, old and young,  
 "Ye never heard the names of,—and be  
 paid 945

"So much!" And the whole four accede at  
 once.  
 Demur? Do cattle bidden march or halt?  
 Is it some lingering habit, old fond faith  
 I' the lord o' the land, instructs them,—birth-  
 right badge  
 Of feudal tenure claims its slaves again? 950  
 Not so at all, thou noble human heart!  
 All is done purely for the pay,—which, earned,  
 And not forthcoming at the instant, makes  
 Religion heresy, and the lord o' the land  
 Fit subject for a murder in his turn. 955  
 The patron with cut throat and rifled purse,  
 Deposited i' the roadside-ditch, his due,  
 Nought hinders each good fellow trudging  
 home,  
 The heavier by a piece or two in poke,  
 And so with new zest to the common life,  
 Mattock and spade, plough-tail and waggon-  
 shaft, 961  
 Till some such other piece of luck betide,  
 Who knows? Since this is a mere start in life,  
 And none of them exceeds the twentieth year.  
 Nay, more i' the background yet? Unnoticed  
 forms 965  
 Claim to be classed, subordinately vile?  
 Complacent lookers-on that laugh,—per-  
 chance  
 Shake head as their friend's horse-play grows  
 too rough  
 With the mere child he manages amiss—  
 But would not interfere and make bad  
 worse 970  
 For twice the fractious tears and prayers:  
 thou know'st  
 Civility better, Marzi-Medici,  
 Governor for thy kinsman the Granduke!  
 Fit representative of law, man's lamp  
 I' the magistrate's grasp full-flare, no rush-  
 light-end 975  
 Sputtering 'twixt thumb and finger of the  
 priest!  
 Whose answer to the couple's cry for help  
 Is a threat,—whose remedy of Pompilia's  
 wrong,  
 A shrug o' the shoulder, and facetious word.  
 Or wink, traditional with Tuscan wits, 980  
 To Guido in the doorway. Laud to law!

The wife is pushed back to the husband, he  
Who knows how these home-squabbings per-  
secute

People who have the public good to mind,  
And work best with a silence in the court !

Ah, but I save my word at least for thee, 998  
Archbishop, who art under me i' the Church,  
As I am under God,—thou, chosen by both  
To do the shepherd's office, feed the sheep—  
How of this lamb that panted at thy foot  
While the wolf pressed on her within crook's  
reach ? 991

Wast thou the hireling that did turn and flee ?  
With thee at least anon the little word !

Such denizens o' the cave now cluster round  
And heat the furnace sevenfold : time in-  
deed 995

A bolt from heaven should cleave roof and  
clear place,

Transfix and show the world, sighing flame,  
The main offender, scar and brand the rest  
Hurrying, each miscreant to his hole : then  
flood

And purify the scene with outside day— 1000  
Which yet, in the absolute drench of dark,  
Ne'er wants a witness, some stray beauty-beam  
To the despair of hell.

First of the first,

Such I pronounce Pompilia, then as now  
Perfect in whiteness : stoop thou down, my  
child, 1006

Give one good moment to the poor old Pope  
Heart-sick at having all his world to blame—  
Let me look at thee in the flesh as erst,  
Let me enjoy the old clean linen garb, 1010  
Not the new splendid vesture ! Armed and  
crowned,

Would Michael, yonder, be, nor crowned nor  
armed,

The less pre-eminent angel ? Everywhere  
I see in the world the intellect of man,  
That sword, the energy his subtle spear,  
The knowledge which defends him like a  
shield— 1016

Everywhere ; but they make not up, I think,

The marvel of a soul like thine, earth's flower  
She holds up to the softened gaze of God !

It was not given Pompilia to know much,  
Speak much, to write a book, to move mankind,  
Be memorized by who records my time. 1022  
Yet if in purity and patience, if

In faith held fast despite the plucking fiend,  
Safe like the signet stone with the new  
name 1028

That saints are known by,—if in right returned  
For wrong, most pardon for worst injury,  
If there be any virtue, any praise,—

Then will this woman-child have proved—  
who knows ?—

Just the one prize vouchsafed unworthy me,  
Seven years a gardener of the untoward  
ground, 1031

I till,—this earth, my sweat and blood manure  
All the long day that barrenly grows dusk :

At least one blossom makes me proud at  
eve 1034

Born 'mid the briars of my enclosure ! Still  
(Oh, here as elsewhere, nothingness of man !)  
Those be the plants, imbedded yonder South  
To mellow in the morning, those made fat  
By the master's eye, that yield such timid leaf,  
Uncertain bud, as product of his pains !

While—see how this mere chance-sown cleft-  
nursed seed 1041

That sprang up by the wayside 'neath the foot  
Of the enemy, this breaks all into blaze,

Spreads itself, one wide glory of desire  
To incorporate the whole great sun it loves  
From the inch-height whence it looks and  
longs ! My flower, 1046

My rose, I gather for the breast of God,  
This I praise most in thee, where all I praise,  
That having been obedient to the end  
According to the light allotted, law 1050  
Prescribed thy life, still tried, still standing  
test,—

Dutiful to the foolish parents first,  
Submissive next to the bad husband,—nay,  
Tolerant of those meaner miserable  
That did his hests, eked out the dole of  
pain,— 1058

Thou, patient thus, couldst rise from law to  
law,

The old to the new, promoted at one cry  
 O' the trump of God to the new service, not  
 To longer bear, but henceforth fight, be found  
 Sublime in new impatience with the foe ! 1080  
 Endure man and obey God : plant firm foot  
 On neck of man, tread man into the hell  
 Meet for him, and obey God all the more !  
 Oh child that didst despise thy life so much  
 When it seemed only thine to keep or lose, 1085  
 How the fine ear felt fall the first low word  
 " Value life, and preserve life for My sake !"  
 Thou didst . . . how shall I say ? . . . re-  
 ceive so long

The standing ordinance of God on earth, 1089  
 What wonder if the novel claim had clashed  
 With old requirement, seemed to supersede  
 Too much the customary law ? But, brave,  
 Thou at first prompting of what I call God,  
 And fools call Nature, didst hear, compre-  
 hend,

Accept the obligation laid on thee, 1075  
 Mother elect, to save the unborn child,  
 As brute and bird do, reptile and the fly,  
 Ay and, I nothing doubt, even tree, shrub,  
 plant

And flower o' the field, all in a common pact  
 To worthily defend the trust of trusts, 1080  
 Life from the Ever Living :—didst resist—  
 Anticipate the office that is mine—  
 And with his own sword stay the upraised arm,  
 The endeavour of the wicked, and defend  
 Him who,—again in my default,—was there  
 For visible providence : one less true than  
 thou 1086

To touch, i' the past, less practised in the  
 right,

Approved less far in all docility  
 To all instruction,—how had such an one  
 Made scruple " Is this motion a decree ?"  
 It was authentic to the experienced ear 1091  
 O' the good and faithful servant. Go past me  
 And get thy praise,—and be not far to seek  
 Presently when I follow if I may !

And surely not so very much apart 1095  
 Need I place thee, my warrior-priest,—in  
 whom

What if I gain the other rose, the gold,

We grave to imitate God's miracle,  
 Greet monarchs with, good rose in its degree ?  
 Irregular noble 'scapegrace—son the same !  
 Faulty—and peradventure ours the fault 1101  
 Who still misteach, mislead, throw hook and  
 line,

Thinking to land leviathan forsooth,  
 Tame the scaled neck, play with him as a  
 bird, 1104

And bind him for our maidens ! Better bear  
 The King of Pride go wantoning awhile,  
 Unplugged by cord in nose and thorn in jaw,  
 Through deep to deep, followed by all that  
 shine,

Churning the blackness hoary : He who  
 made 1109

The comely terror, He shall make the sword  
 To match that piece of netherstone his heart,  
 Ay, nor miss praise thereby ; who else shut  
 fire

I' the stone, to leap from mouth at sword's  
 first stroke,

In lamps of love and faith, the chivalry  
 That dares the right and disregards alike 1117  
 The yea and nay o' the world ? Self-sacri-  
 fice,—

What if an idol took it ? Ask the Church  
 Why she was wont to turn each Venus here,—  
 Poor Rome perversely lingered round, de-  
 spite 1119

Instruction, for the sake of purblind love,—  
 Into Madonna's shape, and waste no whit  
 Of aught so rare on earth as gratitude !  
 All this sweet savour was not ours but thine,  
 Nard of the rock, a natural wealth we name,  
 Incense, and treasure up as food for  
 saints, 1125

When flung to us—whose function was to give  
 Not find the costly perfume. Do I smile ?

Nay, Caponsacchi, much I find amiss,  
 Blameworthy, punishable in this freak  
 Of thine, this youth prolonged, though age  
 was ripe, 1130

This masquerade in sober day, with change  
 Of motley too,—now hypocrite's disguise,  
 Now fool's-costume : which lie was least like  
 truth,

Which the ungainlier, more discordant garb,

With that symmetric soul inside my son,  
 The churchman's or the worldling's,—let him  
     judge, 1136  
 Our adversary who enjoys the task !  
 I rather chronicle the healthy rage,—  
 When the first moan broke from the martyr-  
     maid 1139  
 At that uncaging of the beasts,—made bare  
 My athlete on the instant, gave such good  
 Great undisguised leap over post and pale  
 Right into the mid-cirque, free fighting-place.  
 There may have been rash stripping—every  
     rag  
 Went to the winds,—infringement manifold  
 Of laws prescribed pudicity, I fear, 1146  
 In this impulsive and prompt self-display !  
 Ever such tax comes of the foolish youth ;  
 Men mulct the wiser manhood, and suspect  
 No veritable star swims out of cloud. 1150  
 Bear thou such imputation, undergo  
 The penalty I nowise dare relax,—  
 Conventional chastisement and rebuke.  
 But for the outcome, the brave starry birth  
 Conciliating earth with all that cloud, 1155  
 Thank heaven as I do ! Ay, such champion-  
     ship  
 Of God at first blush, such prompt cheery thud  
 Of glove on ground that answers ringingly  
 The challenge of the false knight,—watch we  
     long  
 And wait we vainly for its gallant like 1160  
 From those appointed to the service, sworn  
 His body-guard with pay and privilege—  
 White-cinct, because in white walks sanctity,  
 Red-socked, how else proclaim fine scorn of  
     flesh,  
 Unchariness of blood when blood faith begs !  
 Where are the men-at-arms with cross on  
     coat ? 1166  
 Aloof, bewraying their attire : whilst thou  
 In mask and motley, pledged to dance not  
     fight,  
 Sprang'st forth the hero ! In thought, word  
     and deed,  
 How throughout all thy warfare thou wast  
     pure, 1170  
 I find it easy to believe : and if  
 At any fateful moment of the strange  
     Adventure, the strong passion of that strait,  
     Fear and surprise, may have revealed too  
         much,—  
 As when a thundrous midnight, with black air  
 That burns, rain-drops that blister, breaks a  
     spell, 1176  
 Draws out the excessive virtue of some  
     sheathed  
 Shut unsuspected flower that hoards and hides  
 Immensity of sweetness,—so, perchance,  
 Might the surprise and fear release too much  
 The perfect beauty of the body and soul 1181  
 Thou savedst in thy passion for God's sake,  
 He who is Pity. Was the trial sore ?  
 Temptation sharp ? Thank God a second  
     time ! 1184  
 Why comes temptation but for man to meet  
 And master and make crouch beneath his  
     foot,  
 And so be pedestaled in triumph ? Pray  
 "Lead us into no such temptations, Lord !"

Yea, but, O Thou whose servants are the  
     bold, 1189  
 Lead such temptations by the head and hair,  
 Reluctant dragons, up to who dares fight,  
 That so he may do battle and have praise !  
 Do I not see the praise?—that while thy  
     mates  
 Bound to deserve i' the matter, prove at need  
 Unprofitable through the very pains 1196  
 We gave to train them well and start them  
     fair,—  
 Are found too stiff, with standing ranked and  
     ranged,  
 For onset in good earnest, too obtuse  
 Of ear, through iteration of command,  
 For catching quick the sense of the real cry,—  
 Thou, whose sword-hand was used to strike  
     the lute, 1201  
 Whose sentry-station graced some wanton's  
     gate,  
 Thou didst push forward and show mettle,  
     shame  
 The laggards, and retrieve the day. Well  
     done !  
 Be glad thou hast let light into the world  
 Through that irregular breach o' the bound-  
     ary,—see 1206

The same upon thy path and march assured,  
 Learning anew the use of soldierish,  
 Self-abnegation, freedom from all fear,  
 Loyalty to the life's end ! Ruminatè, 1210  
 Deserve the initiatory spasm,—once more  
 Work, be unhappy but bear life, my son !

And troop you, somewhere 'twixt the best  
 and worst,

Where crowd the indifferent product, all too  
 poor 1214

Makeshift, starved samples of humanity !  
 Father and mother, huddle there and hide !

A gracious eye may find you ! Foul and fair,  
 Sadly mixed natures : self-indulgent,—yet

Self-sacrificing too : how the love soars,  
 How the craft, avarice, vanity and spite

Sink again ! So they keep the middle course,  
 Slide into silly crime at unaware, 1222

Slip back upon the stupid virtue, stay  
 Nowhere enough for being classed, I hope

And fear. Accept the swift and rueful death,  
 Taught, somewhat sternlier than is wont,

what waits 1226

The ambiguous creature,—how the one black  
 tuft

Steadies the aim of the arrow just as well  
 As the wide faultless white on the bird's breast !

Nay, you were punished in the very part  
 That looked most pure of speck,—'twas

honest love 1231

Betrayed you,—did love seem most worthy  
 pains,

Challenge such purging, since ordained survive  
 When all the rest of you was done with ? Go !

Never again elude the choice of tints ! 1235

White shall not neutralize the black, nor good  
 Compensate bad in man, absolve him so :

Life's business being just the terrible choice.

So do I see, pronounce on all and some  
 Grouped for my judgment now,—profess no

doubt 1240

While I pronounce : dark, difficult enough  
 The human sphere, yet eyes grow sharp by use,

I find the truth, dispart the shine from shade,  
 As a mere man may, with no special touch

O' the lynx-gift in each ordinary orb : 1245

Nay, if the popular notion class me right,  
 One of well-nigh decayed intelligence,—

What of that ? Through hard labour and  
 good will, 1248

And habitude that gives a blind man sight  
 At the practised finger-ends of him, I do

Discern, and dare decree in consequence,  
 Whatever prove the peril of mistake.

Whence, then, this quite new quick cold  
 thrill,—cloud-like,

This keen dread creeping from a quarter scarce  
 Suspected in the skies I nightly scan ? 1255

What slacks the tense nerve, saps the wound-  
 up spring

Of the act that should and shall be, sends the  
 mount

And mass o' the whole man's-strength,—  
 conglobed so late—

Shudderingly into dust, a moment's work ?  
 While I stand firm, go fearless, in this world,

For this life recognize and arbitrate, 1259

Touch and let stay, or else remove a thing,  
 Judge "This is right, this object out of place,"

Candle in hand that helps me and to spare,—  
 What if a voice deride me, "Perk and

pry ! 1265

"Brighten each nook with thine intelligence !  
 "Play the good householder, ply man and

maid 1269

"With tasks prolonged into the midnight, test  
 "Their work and nowise stint of the due wage

"Each worthy worker : but with gyves and  
 whip 1270

"Pay thou misprision of a single point  
 "Plain to thy happy self who lift'st the light,

"Lament'st the darkling,—bold to all beneath !  
 "What if thyself adventure, now the place

"Is purged so well ? Leave pavement and  
 mount roof, 1275

"Look round thee for the light of the upper  
 sky,

"The fire which lit thy fire which finds default  
 "In Guido Franceschini to his cost !

"What if, above in the domain of light,  
 "Thou miss the accustomed signs, remark

eclipse ? 1280

"Shalt thou still gaze on ground nor lift a lid,—  
 "Steady in thy superb prerogative,

"Thy inch of inkling,—nor once face the  
doubt  
"If the sphere above thee, darkness to be  
felt?"

Yet my poor spark had for its source, the  
sun ;

Thither I sent the great looks which compel  
Light from its fount: all that I do and am  
Comes from the truth, or seen or else surmised,  
Remembered or divined, as mere man may :  
I know just so, nor otherwise. As I  
know,

I speak,—what should I know, then, and  
how speak

Were there a wild mistake of eye or brain  
As to recorded governance above?  
If my own breath, only, blew coal alight  
I styled celestial and the morning-star?

I, who in this world act resolutely,  
Dispose of men, their bodies and their souls,  
As they acknowledge or gainsay the light  
I show them,—shall I too lack courage?—  
leave

I, too, the post of me, like those I blame?  
Refuse, with kindred inconsistency,  
To grapple danger where by souls grow strong?  
I am near the end ; but still not at the end ;  
All to the very end is trial in life :  
At this stage is the trial of my soul  
Danger to face, or danger to refuse?  
Shall I dare try the doubt now, or not dare?

O Thou,—as represented here to me  
In such conception as my soul allows, —  
Under Thy measureless, my atom width !—  
Man's mind, what is it but a convex glass  
Wherein are gathered all the scattered points  
Picked out of the immensity of sky,  
To re-unite there, be our heaven for earth,  
Our known unknown, our God revealed to  
man?

Existent somewhere, somehow, as a whole ;  
Here, as a whole proportioned to our sense,—  
There, (which is nowhere, speech must babble  
thus !)

In the absolute immensity, the whole  
Appreciable solely by Thyself,—

Here, by the little mind of man, reduced  
To littleness that suits his faculty,  
In the degree appreciable too ;  
Between Thee and ourselves—nay even,  
again,

Below us, to the extreme of the minute,  
Appreciable by how many and what diverse  
Modes of the life Thou madest be ! (why live  
Except for love,—how love unless they know?)  
Each of them, only filling to the edge,  
Insect or angel, his just length and breadth,  
Due facet of reflection,—full, no less,  
Angel or insect, as Thou framedst things.

I it is who have been appointed here  
To represent Thee, in my turn, on earth,  
Just as, if new philosophy know aught,  
This one earth, out of all the multitude  
Of peopled worlds, as stars are now sup-  
posed,—

Was chosen, and no sun-star of the swarm,  
For stage and scene of Thy transcendent act  
Beside which even the creation fades  
Into a puny exercise of power.

Choice of the world, choice of the thing I am,  
Both emanate alike from Thy dread play  
Of operation outside this our sphere  
Where things are classed and counted small  
or great,—

Incomprehensibly the choice is Thine !  
I therefore bow my head and take Thy place  
There is, beside the works, a tale of Thee  
In the world's mouth, which I find credible :  
I love it with my heart : unsatisfied,

I try it with my reason, nor discept  
From any point I probe and pronounce sound.  
Mind is not matter nor from matter, but  
Above,—leave matter then, proceed with  
mind !

Man's be the mind recognized at the  
height,—

Leave the inferior minds and look at man !  
Is he the strong, intelligent and good  
Up to his own conceivable height? Nowise.  
Enough o' the low,—soar the conceivable  
height,

Find cause to match the effect in evidence,  
The work of the world, not man's but God's ;  
leave man !

Conjecture of the worker by the work :  
Is there strength there?—enough : intelligence?

Ample : but goodness in a like degree?  
Not to the human eye in the present state,  
An isoscele deficient in the base.<sup>1</sup> 1363

What lacks, then, of perfection fit for God  
But just the instance which this tale supplies  
Of love without a limit? So is strength,  
So is intelligence ; let love be so, 1370  
Unlimited in its self-sacrifice,

Then is the tale true and God shows complete.  
Beyond the tale, I reach into the dark,  
Feel what I cannot see, and still faith stands :  
I can believe this dread machinery 1375  
Of sin and sorrow, would confound me  
else,

Devised,—all pain, at most expenditure  
Of pain by Who devised pain,—to evolve,  
By new machinery in counterpart, 1379  
The moral qualities of man—how else?—  
To make him love in turn and be beloved,  
Creative and self-sacrificing too,  
And thus eventually God-like, (ay,  
“ I have said ye are Gods,”—shall it be said  
for nought?)

Enable man to wring, from out all pain, 1385  
All pleasure for a common heritage  
To all eternity : this may be surmised,  
The other is revealed,—whether a fact,  
Absolute, abstract, independent truth,  
Historic, not reduced to suit man's mind,—  
Or only truth reverberate, changed, made  
pass 1391

A spectrum into mind, the narrow eye,—  
The same and not the same, else uncon-  
ceived—

Though quite conceivable to the next grade  
Above it in intelligence,—as truth 1395  
Easy to man were blindness to the beast  
By parity of procedure,—the same truth  
In a new form, but changed in either case :  
What matter so intelligence be filled?  
To a child, the sea is angry, for it roars :

<sup>1</sup> *An isoscele deficient in the base* : two sides of the triangle, strength and intelligence, are visible ; the third, goodness, is not so in the present state of our knowledge.

Frost bites, else why the tooth-like fret on  
face? 1401

Man makes acoustics deal with the sea's  
wrath,

Explains the choppy cheek by chymic law,—  
To man and child remains the same effect  
On drum of ear and root of nose, change  
cause 1405

Never so thoroughly : so my heart be struck,  
What care I,—by God's gloved hand or the  
bare?

Nor do I much perplex me with aught hard,  
Dubious in the transmitting of the tale,—  
No, nor with certain riddles set to  
solve. 1410

This life is training and a passage ; pass,—  
Still, we march over some flat obstacle  
We made give way before us ; solid truth  
In front of it, what motion for the world?

The moral sense grows but by exercise. 1415  
'Tis even as man grew probatively  
Initiated in Godship, set to make  
A fairer moral world than this he finds,  
Guess now what shall be known hereafter.  
Deal 1419

Thus with the present problem : as we see,  
A faultless creature is destroyed, and sin  
Has had its way i' the world where God  
should rule.

Ay, but for this irrelevant circumstance  
Of inquisition after blood, we see  
Pompilia lost and Guido saved : how long?  
For his whole life : how much is that whole  
life? 1423

We are not babes, but know the minute's  
worth,  
And feel that life is large and the world small,  
So, wait till life have passed from out the  
world.

Neither does this astonish at the end, 1430  
That whereas I can so receive and trust,  
Other men, made with hearts and souls the  
same,

Reject and disbelieve,—subordinate  
The future to the present,—sin, nor fear.  
This I refer still to the foremost fact, 1435  
Life is probation and the earth no goal  
But starting-point of man : compel him strive,



Which means, in man, as good as reach the goal,—  
 Why institute that race, his life, at all?  
 But this does overwhelm me with surprise,  
 Touch me to terror,—not that faith, the pearl, 1441  
 Should be let lie by fishers wanting food,—  
 Nor, seen and handled by a certain few  
 Critical and contemptuous, straight consigned  
 To shore and shingle for the pebble it proves,— 1445  
 But that, when haply found and known and named  
 By the residue made rich for evermore,  
 These,—that these favoured ones, should in a trice  
 Turn, and with double zest go dredge for whelks,  
 Mud-worms that make the savoury soup! Enough 1450  
 O' the disbelievers, see the faithful few!  
 How do the Christians here deport them, keep  
 Their robes of white unspotted by the world?  
 What is this Arcine Archbishop, this Man under me as I am under God, 1455  
 This champion of the faith, I armed and decked,  
 Pushed forward, put upon a pinnacle,  
 To show the enemy his victor,—see!  
 What's the best fighting when the couple close? 1460  
 Pompilia cries, "Protect me from the wolf!"  
 He—"No, thy Guido is rough, heady, strong,  
 "Dangerous to disquiet: let him bide!  
 "He needs some bone to mumble, help amuse  
 "The darkness of his den with: so, the fawn  
 "Which limps up bleeding to my foot and lies, 1465  
 "—Come to me, daughter!—thus I throw him back!"  
 Have we misjudged here, over-armed our knight,  
 Given gold and silk where plain hard steel serves best,  
 Enfeebled whom we sought to fortify, 1469  
 Made an archbishop and undone a saint?

Well, then, descend these heights, this pride of life,  
 Sit in the ashes with a barefoot monk  
 Who long ago stamped out the worldly sparks,  
 By fasting, watching, stone cell and wire scourge, 1471  
 —No such indulgence as unknots the strength—  
 These breed the tight nerve and tough cuticle,  
 And the world's praise or blame runs rillet-wise  
 Off the broad back and brawny breast, we know!  
 He meets the first cold sprinkle of the world,  
 And shudders to the marrow. "Save this child? 1480  
 "Oh, my superiors, oh, the Archbishop's self!  
 "Who was it dared lay hand upon the ark  
 "His betters saw fall nor put finger forth?  
 "Great ones could help yet help not: why should small?  
 "I break my promise: let her break her heart!" 1485  
 These are the Christians not the worldlings, not  
 The sceptics, who thus battle for the faith!  
 If foolish virgins disobey and sleep,  
 What wonder? But, this time, the wise that watch,  
 Sell lamps and buy lutes, exchange oil for wine, 1490  
 The mystic Spouse betrays the Bridegroom here.  
 To our last resource, then! Since all flesh is weak,  
 Bind weaknesses together, we get strength:  
 The individual weighed, found wanting, try  
 Some institution, honest artifice 1495  
 Whereby the units grow compact and firm!  
 Each props the other, and so stand is made  
 By our embodied cowards that grow brave.  
 The Monastery called of Convertites,  
 Meant to help women because these helped Christ,— 1500  
 A thing existent only while it acts,  
 Does as designed, else a nonentity,—  
 For what is an idea unrealized?—  
 Pompilia is consigned to these for help.

They do help : they are prompt to testify  
 To her pure life and saintly dying days. 1806  
 She dies, and lo, who seemed so poor, proves  
 rich.  
 What does the body that lives through help-  
 fulness  
 To women for Christ's sake ? The kiss turns  
 bite,  
 The dove's note changes to the crow's cry :  
 judge ! 1810  
 "Seeing that this our Convent claims of  
 right  
 "What goods belong to those we succour, be  
 "The same proved women of dishonest life,—  
 "And seeing that this Trial made appear  
 "Pompilia was in such predicament,— 1815  
 "The Convent hereupon pretends to said  
 "Succession of Pompilia, issues writ,  
 "And takes possession by the Fisc's advice."  
 Such is their attestation to the cause  
 Of Christ, who had one saint at least, they  
 hoped : 1820  
 But, is a title-deed to filch, a corpse  
 To slander, and an infant-heir to cheat ?  
 Christ must give up his gains then ! They  
 unsay  
 All the fine speeches, — who was saint is  
 whore.  
 Why, scripture yields no parallel for this !  
 The soldiers only threw dice for Christ's  
 coat ; 1826  
 We want another legend of the Twelve  
 Disputing if it was Christ's coat at all,  
 Claiming as prize the woof of price—for why ?  
 The Master was a thief, purloined the same,  
 Or paid for it out of the common bag ! 1831  
 Can it be this is end and outcome, all  
 I take with me to show as stewardship's fruit,  
 The best yield of the latest time, this year  
 The seventeen-hundredth since God died for  
 man ? 1835  
 Is such effect proportionate to cause ?  
 And still the terror keeps on the increase  
 When I perceive . . . how can I blink the  
 fact ?  
 That the fault, the obduracy to good,  
 Lies not with the impracticable stuff 1840  
 Whence man is made, his very nature's fault,  
 As if it were of ice the moon may gild  
 Not melt, or stone 'twas meant the sun  
 should warm  
 Not make bear flowers,—nor ice nor stone  
 to blame :  
 But it can melt, that ice, can bloom, that  
 stone, 1845  
 Impassible to rule of day and night !  
 This terrifies me, thus compelled perceive,  
 Whatever love and faith we looked should  
 spring  
 At advent of the authoritative star,  
 Which yet lie sluggish, curdled at the  
 source,— 1850  
 These have leapt forth profusely in old time,  
 These still respond with promptitude to-day,  
 At challenge of—what unacknowledged  
 powers  
 O' the air, what uncommissioned meteors,  
 warmth 1854  
 By law, and light by rule should supersede ?  
 For see this priest, this Caponsacchi, stung  
 At the first summons,—“Held for honour's  
 sake,  
 “Play the man, pity the oppressed !”—no  
 pause,  
 How does he lay about him in the midst,  
 Strike any foe, right wrong at any risk, 1860  
 All blindness, bravery and obedience !—  
 blind ?  
 Ay, as a man would be inside the sun,  
 Delirious with the plenitude of light  
 Should interfuse him to the finger-ends—  
 Let him rush straight, and how shall he go  
 wrong ? 1865  
 Where are the Christians in their panoply ?  
 The loins we girt about with truth, the  
 breasts  
 Righteousness plated round, the shield of  
 faith,  
 The helmet of salvation, and that sword  
 O' the Spirit, even the word of God,—where  
 these ? 1870  
 Slunk into corners ! Oh, I hear at once  
 Hubbub of protestation ! “What, we monks  
 “We friars, of such an order, such a rule,  
 “Have not we fought, bled, left our martyr-  
 mark

"At every point along the boundary-line  
 "Twixt true and false, religion and the  
 world, 1876

"Where this or the other dogma of our  
 Church

"Called for defence?" And I, despite my-  
 self,

How can I but speak loud what truth speaks  
 low, 1879

"Or better than the best, or nothing serves!

"What boots deed, I can cap and cover  
 straight

"With such another doughtiness to match,  
 "Done at an instinct of the natural man?"

Imolate body, sacrifice soul too,— 1884

Do not these publicans the same? Outstrip!

Or else stop race you boast runs neck and neck,

You with the wings, they with the feet,—for  
 shame!

Oh, I remark your diligence and zeal!

Five years long, now, rounds faith into my  
 ears,

"Help thou, or Christendom is done to  
 death!" 1890

Five years since, in the Province of To-kien,

Which is in China as some people know,

Maigrot, my Vicar Apostolic there,

Having a great qualm, issues a decree. 1894

Alack, the converts use as God's name, not

*Tien-chu* but plain *Tien* or else mere *Shang-ti*,

As Jesuits please to fancy politic,

While, say Dominicans, it calls down fire,—

For *Tien* means heaven, and *Shang-ti*,  
 supreme prince,

While *Tien-chu* means the lord of heaven:  
 all cry, 1896

"There is no business urgent for despatch

"As that thou send a legate, specially

"Cardinal Tournon, straight to Peking, there

"To settle and compose the difference!"

So have I seen a potentate all fume 1898

For some infringement of his realm's just  
 right,

Some menace to a mud-built straw-thatched  
 farm

Or the frontier; while inside the mainland lie,

Quite undisputed for in solitude, 1899

Whole cities plague may waste or famine sap:

What if the sun crumble, the sands encroach,  
 While he looks on sublimely at his ease?

How does their ruin touch the empire's  
 bound?

And is this little all that was to be?

Where is the gloriously-decisive change, 1815

Metamorphosis the immeasurable

Of human clay to divine gold, we looked

Should, in some poor sort, justify its price?

I had an adept of the mere Rosy Cross<sup>1</sup>

Spent his life to consummate the Great  
 Work, 1820

Would not we start to see the stuff it touched

Yield not a grain more than the vulgar got

By the old smelting-process years ago?

If this were sad to see in just the sage

Who should profess so much, perform no  
 more, 1823

What is it when suspected in that Power

Who undertook to make and made the world,

Devised and did effect man, body and soul,

Ordained salvation for them both, and

yet . . .

Well, is the thing we see, salvation? 1830

I

Put no such dreadful question to myself,

Within whose circle of experience burns

The central truth, Power, Wisdom, Good-  
 ness,—God:

I must outlive a thing ere know it dead;

When I outlive the faith there is a sun, 1836

When I lie, ashes to the very soul,—

Someone, not I, must wail above the heap,

"He died in dark whence never morn arose."

While I see day succeed the deepest night—

How can I speak but as I know?—my speech

Must be, throughout the darkness, "It will  
 end: 1841

"The light that did burn, will burn!"

Clouds obscure—

But for which obscuration all were bright?

Too hastily concluded! Sun-suffused, 1845

A cloud may soothe the eye made blind by  
 blaze,—

Better the very clarity of heaven:

<sup>1</sup> An adept of the Rosy Cross; a member of  
 the society of Rosicrucians.

The soft streaks are the beautiful and dear.  
 What but the weakness in a faith supplies  
 The incentive to humanity, no strength 1650  
 Absolute, irresistible, comports?

How can man love but what he yearns to  
 help?

And that which men think weakness within  
 strength,

But angels know for strength and stronger  
 yet—

What were it else but the first things made  
 new, 1655

But repetition of the miracle,  
 The divine instance of self-sacrifice  
 That never ends and aye begins for man?  
 So, never I miss footing in the maze, 1660  
 No,—I have light nor fear the dark at all.

But are mankind not real, who pace out-  
 side

My petty circle, world that's measured me?  
 And when they stumble even as I stand,  
 Have I a right to stop ear when they cry,  
 As they were phantoms who took clouds for  
 crags, 1665

Tripped and fell, where man's march might  
 safely move?

Beside, the cry is other than a ghost's,  
 When out of the old time there pleads some  
 bard,

Philosopher, or both,<sup>1</sup> and—whispers not,  
 But words it boldly. "The inward work  
 and worth 1670

"Of any mind, what other mind may judge  
 "Save God who only knows the thing He  
 made,

"The veritable service He exacts?  
 "It is the outward product men appraise.

"Behold, an engine hoists a tower aloft:  
 "I looked that it should move the mountain  
 too! 1675

"Or else 'Had just a turret toppled down,  
 "Success enough!—may say the Machinist

"Who knows what less or more result might  
 be: 1679

"But we, who see that done we cannot do,

<sup>1</sup> Some bard, philosopher, or both: the follow-  
 ing speech is put into the mouth of Euripides.

"A feat beyond man's force,' we men must  
 say.

"Regard me and that shake I gave the world!  
 "I was born, not so long before Christ's  
 birth

"As Christ's birth haply did precede thy  
 day,— 1684

"But many a watch before the star of dawn:  
 "Therefore I lived,—it is thy creed affirms,

"Pope Innocent, who art to answer me!—  
 "Under conditions, nowise to escape,

"Whereby salvation was impossible.  
 "Each impulse to achieve the good and  
 fair, 1690

"Each aspiration to the pure and true,  
 "Being without a warrant or an aim,

"Was just as sterile a felicity  
 "As if the insect, born to spend his life

"Soaring his circles, stopped them to de-  
 scribe 1695

"(Painfully motionless in the mid-air)  
 "Some word of weighty counsel for man's  
 sake,

"Some 'Know thyself' or 'Take the golden  
 mean!'<sup>2</sup>

"—Forwent his happy dance and the glad  
 ray,

"Died half an hour the sooner and was  
 dust. 1700

"I, born to perish like the brutes, or worse,  
 "Why not live brutishly, obey brutes' law?

"But I, of body as of soul complete,  
 "A gymnast at the games, philosopher

"I' the schools, who painted, and made  
 music,—all 1705

"Glories that met upon the tragic stage  
 "When the Third Poet's<sup>3</sup> tread surprised  
 the Two,—

"Whose lot fell in a land where life was  
 great

"And sense went free and beauty lay profuse,  
 "I, untouched by one adverse circumstance,

"Adopted virtue as my rule of life, 1711

<sup>2</sup> Some "Know thyself" or "Take the golden  
 mean": typical apophthegms of the ancient  
 Greek sages.

<sup>3</sup> The Third Poet: Euripides. The Two:  
 Æschylus and Sophocles.

- "Waived all reward, loved but for loving's sake,  
 "And, what my heart taught me, I taught the world,  
 "And have been teaching now two thousand years.  
 "Witness my work,—plays that should please, forsooth ! 1715  
 "'They might please, they may displease, they shall teach,  
 "'For truth's sake,' so I said, and did, and do.  
 "Five hundred years ere Paul spoke, Felix heard,—  
 "How much of temperance and righteousness, 1719  
 "Judgment to come, did I find reason for,  
 "Corroborate with my strong style that spared  
 "No sin, nor swerved the more from branding brow  
 "Because the sinner was called Zeus and God?  
 "How nearly did I guess at that Paul knew?  
 "How closely come, in what I represent  
 "As duty, to his doctrine yet a blank ? 1723  
 "And as that limner not untruly limns  
 "Who draws an object round or square, which square  
 "Or round seems to the unassisted eye,  
 "Though Galileo's tube display the same  
 "Oval or oblong,—so, who controverts 1731  
 "I rendered rightly what proves wrongly wrought  
 "Beside Paul's picture? Mine was true for me.  
 "I saw that there are, first and above all,  
 "The hidden forces, blind necessities, 1735  
 "Named Nature, but the thing's self unconceived :  
 "Then follow,—how dependent upon these,  
 "We know not, how imposed above ourselves,  
 "We well know,—what I name the gods, a power  
 "Various or one : for great and strong and good 1740  
 "Is there, and little, weak and bad there too,  
 "Wisdom and folly : say, these make no God,—  
 "What is it else that rules outside man's self?  
 "A fact then,—always, to the naked eye,—  
 'And so, the one revelation possible 1742  
 'Of what were unimagined else by man.  
 'Therefore, what gods do, man may criticize,  
 'Applaud, condemn,—how should he fear the truth?—  
 'But likewise have in awe because of power,  
 'Venerate for the main munificence, 1750  
 'And give the doubtful deed its due excuse  
 'From the acknowledged creature of a day  
 'To the Eternal and Divine. Thus, bold  
 'Yet self-mistrusting, should man bear himself,  
 'Most assured on what now concerns him most— 1755  
 'The law of his own life, the path he prints,—  
 'Which law is virtue and not vice, I say,—  
 'And least inquisitive where search least skills,  
 'I' the nature we best give the clouds to keep.  
 'What could I paint beyond a scheme like this 1760  
 'Out of the fragmentary truths where light  
 'Lay fitful in a tenebrific time?  
 'You have the sunrise now, joins truth to truth,  
 'Shoots life and substance into death and void ;  
 'Themselves compose the whole we made before : 1765  
 'The forces and necessity grow God,—  
 'The beings so contrarious that seemed gods,  
 'Prove just His operation manifold  
 'And multiform, translated, as must be,  
 'Into intelligible shape so far 1770  
 'As suits our sense and sets us free to feel.  
 'What if I let a child think, childhood-long,  
 'That lightning, I would have him spare his eye,  
 'Is a real arrow shot at naked orb?  
 'The man knows more, but shuts his lids the same : 1775  
 'Lightning's cause comprehends nor man nor child.  
 'Why then, my scheme, your better knowledge broke,  
 'Presently re-adjusts itself, the small  
 'Proportioned largelier, parts and whole named new :

- "So much, no more two thousand years have  
done! 1790  
"Pope, dost thou dare pretend to punish me,  
"For not desecrating sunshine at midnight,  
"Me who crept all-fours, found my way so  
far— 1810  
"While thou rewardest teachers of the truth,  
"Who miss the plain way in the blaze of  
noon,— 1785  
"Though just a word from that strong style  
of mine,  
"Grasped honestly in hand as guiding-staff,  
"Had pricked them a sure path across the  
bog,  
"That mire of cowardice and slush of lies  
"Wherein I find them wallow in wide day!"
- How should I answer this Euripides? 1791  
Paul, —'tis a legend,—answered Seneca,<sup>1</sup>  
But that was in the day-spring; noon is now:  
We have got too familiar with the light.  
Shall I wish back once more that thrill of  
dawn? 1795  
When the whole truth-touched man burned  
up, one fire?  
—Assured the trial, fiery, fierce, but fleet,  
Would, from his little heap of ashes, lend  
Wings to that conflagration of the world  
Which Christ awaits ere He makes all things  
new: 1800  
So should the frail become the perfect, rapt  
From glory of pain to glory of joy; and so,  
Even in the end,—the act renouncing earth,  
Lands, houses, husbands, wives and children  
here,—  
Begin that other act which finds all, lost, 1805  
Regained, in this time even, a hundredfold,  
And, in the next time, feels the finite love  
Blent and embalmed with the eternal life.  
So does the sun ghastly seem to sink 1809  
In those north parts, lean all but out of life,  
Desist a dread mere breathing-stop, then slow  
Re-assert day, begin the endless rise.  
Was this too easy for our after-stage?  
Was such a lighting-up of faith, in life,
- Only allowed initiate, set man's step 1815  
In the true way by help of the great glow?  
A way wherein it is ordained he walk,  
Bearing to see the light from heaven still more  
And more encroached on by the light of  
earth, 1819  
Tentative earth puts forth to rival heaven,  
Earthly incitements that mankind serve God  
For man's sole sake, not God's and therefore  
man's.  
Till at last, who distinguishes the sun  
From a mere Druid fire on a far mount?  
More praise to him who with his subtle prism  
Shall decompose both beams and name the  
true. 1826  
In such sense, who is last proves first indeed;  
For how could saints and martyrs fail see truth  
Streak the night's blackness? Who is faith-  
ful now?  
Who untwists heaven's white from the yellow  
flare 1830  
O' the world's gross torch, without night's  
foil that helped  
Produce the Christian act so possible  
When in the way stood Nero's cross and  
stake,—  
So hard now when the world smiles "Right  
and wise!" 1834  
"Faith points the politic, the thrifty way,  
"Will make who plods it in the end returns  
"Beyond mere fool's-sport and providence.  
"We fools dance thro' the cornfield of this  
life,  
"Pluck ears to left and right and swallow raw,  
"—Nay, tread, at pleasure, a sheaf under-  
foot, 1840  
"To get the better at some poppy-flower,—  
"Well aware we shall have so much less wheat  
"In the eventual harvest: you meantime  
"Waste not a spike,—the richer will you  
reap!  
"What then? There will be always garnered  
meal 1846  
"Sufficient for our comfortable loaf,  
"While you enjoy the undiminished sack!"  
Is it not this ignoble confidence,  
Cowardly hardihood, that dulls and damps,  
Makes the old heroism impossible? 1850

<sup>1</sup> Paul . . . answered Seneca: referring to the traditional (but legendary) intercourse between St. Paul and Seneca.

Unless . . . what whispers me of times to come?  
 What if it be the mission of that age  
 My death will usher into life, to shake  
 This torpor of assurance from our creed,  
 Re-introduce the doubt discarded, bring 1885  
 That formidable danger back, we drove  
 Long ago to the distance and the dark?  
 No wild beast now prowls round the infant  
 camp:  
 We have built wall and sleep in city safe:  
 But if some earthquake try the towers that  
 laugh 1860  
 To think they once saw lions rule outside,  
 And man stand out again, pale, resolute,  
 Prepared to die,—which means, alive at last?  
 As we broke up that old faith of the world,  
 Have we, next age, to break up this the  
 new— 1835  
 Faith, in the thing, grown faith in the report—  
 Whence need to bravely disbelieve report  
 Through increased faith i' the thing reports  
 belie?  
 Must we deny,—do they, these Molinists,  
 At peril of their body and their soul,— 1870  
 Recognized truths, obedient to some truth  
 Unrecognized yet, but perceptible?—  
 Correct the portrait by the living face,  
 Man's God, by God's God in the mind of  
 man? 1874  
 Then, for the few that rise to the new height,  
 The many that must sink to the old depth,  
 The multitude found fall away! A few,  
 E'en ere new laws speak clear, may keep the old,  
 Preserve the Christian level, call good good  
 And evil evil, (even though razed and blank  
 The old titles,) helped by custom, habitude,  
 And all else they mistake for finer sense 1883  
 O' the fact that reason warrants,—as before,  
 They hope perhaps, fear not impossibility.  
 At least some one Pompilia left the world  
 Will say "I know the right place by foot's feel,  
 "I took it and tread firm there; wherefore  
 change?" 1887  
 But what a multitude will surely fall  
 Quite through the crumbling truth, late sub-  
 jacent,  
 Sink to the next discoverable base, 1890

Rest upon human nature, settle there  
 On what is firm, the lust and pride of life!  
 A mass of men; whose very souls even now  
 Seem to need re-creating,—so they slink  
 Worm-like into the mud, light now lays bare,—  
 Whose future we dispose of with shut eyes  
 And whisper—"They are grafted, barren  
 twigs, 1867  
 "Into the living stock of Christ: may bear  
 "One day, till when they lie death-like, not  
 dead,"—  
 Those who with all the aid of Christ succumb,  
 How, without Christ, shall they, unaided,  
 sink? 1901  
 Whither but to this gulf before my eyes?  
 Do not we end, the century and I?  
 The impatient antimasque treads close on kibe  
 O' the very masque's self it will mock,—on me,  
 Last lingering personage, the impatient mime  
 Pushes already,—will I block the way? 1897  
 Will my slow trail of garments ne'er leave space  
 For pantaloons, sock, plume and castanet?  
 Here comes the first experimentalist 1910  
 In the new order of things,—he plays a priest;  
 Does he take inspiration from the Church,  
 Directly make her rule his law of life?  
 Not he: his own mere impulse guides the  
 man— 1914  
 Happily sometimes, since ourselves allow  
 He has danced, in gaiety of heart, i' the main  
 The right step through the maze we bade him  
 foot.  
 But if his heart had prompted him break loose  
 And mar the measure? Why, we must submit,  
 And thank the chance that brought him safe  
 so far. 1920  
 Will he repeat the prodigy? Perhaps.  
 Can he teach others how to quit themselves,  
 Show why this step was right while that were  
 wrong?  
 How should he? "Ask your hearts as I  
 asked mine, 1924  
 "And get discreetly through the morrice too;  
 "If your hearts misdirect you,—quit the stage,  
 "And make amends,—be there amends to  
 make!"  
 Such is, for the Augustin that was once,  
 This Canon Caponsacchi we see now. 1929

"But my heart answers to another tune,"  
Puts in the Abate, second in the suite;

"I have my taste too, and tread no such step!

"You choose the glorious life, and may, for  
me!

"I like the lowest of life's appetites,— 1834

"So you judge,—but the very truth of joy

"To my own apprehension which decides.

"Call me knave and you get yourself called  
fool!

"I live for greed, ambition, lust, revenge;

"Attain these ends by force, guile: hypocrite,

"To-day, perchance to-morrow recognized

"The rational man, the type of common  
sense." 1941

There's Loyola<sup>1</sup> adapted to our time!

Under such guidance Guido plays his part,

He also influencing in the due turn

These last clods where I track intelligence

By any glimmer, these four at his beck 1946

Ready to murder any, and, at their own,

As ready to murder him,—such make the  
world!

And, first effect of the new cause of things,

There they lie also duly,—the old pair 1950

Of the weak head and not so wicked heart,

With the one Christian mother, wife and girl,

—Which three gifts seem to make an angel  
up,—

The world's first foot o' the dance is on their  
heads!

Still, I stand here, not off the stage though  
close 1955

On the exit: and my last act, as my first,

I owe the scene, and Him who armed me thus

With Paul's sword as with Peter's key. I  
smite

With my whole strength once more, ere end  
my part,

Ending, so far as man may, this offence. 1960

And when I raise my arm, who plucks my  
sleeve?

Who stops me in the righteous function,—foe

Or friend? Oh, still as ever, friends are they

Who, in the interest of outraged truth

<sup>1</sup> *Loyola*: Ignatius Loyola (1491-1556),  
founder of the order of the Society of Jesus, or  
Jesuits.

Deprecate such rough handling of a lie! 1965

The facts being proved and incontestable,

What is the last word I must listen to?

Perchance—"Spare yet a term this barren  
stock

"We pray thee dig about and dung and dress

"Till he repent and bring forth fruit even  
yet!" 1970

Perchance—"So poor and swift a punishment

"Shall throw him out of life with all that  
sin:

"Let mercy rather pile up pain on pain

"Till the flesh expiate what the soul pays  
else!"

Nowise! Remonstrants on each side com-  
mence 1975

Instructing, there's a new tribunal now

Higher than God's—the educated man's!

Nice sense of honour in the human breast.

Supersedes here the old coarse oracle—

Confirming none the less a point or so 1980

Wherein blind predecessors worked aright

By rule of thumb: as when Christ said,—  
when, where?

Enough, I find it pleaded in a place,—

"All other wrongs done, patiently I take:

"But touch my honour and the case is  
changed!" 1985

"I feel the due resentment,—*nemini*

"*Honorem trado*<sup>2</sup> is my quick retort."

Right of Him, just as if pronounced to-day!

Still, should the old authority be mute 1990

Or doubtful or in speaking clash with new,

The younger takes permission to decide.

At last we have the instinct of the world

Ruling its household without tutelage: 1995

And while the two laws, human and divine,

Have busied finger with this tangled case,

In pushes the brisk junior, cuts the knot,

Pronounces for acquittal. How it trips

Silverly o'er the tongue! "Remit the death!

"Forgive, . . . well, in the old way, if thou  
please,

"Decency and the relics of routine 2000

"Respected,—let the Count go free as air!

"Since he may plead a priest's immunity,—

<sup>2</sup> *Nemini honorem trado*: "my glory will I  
not give to another" (Isaiah xlii. 8).



- "The minor orders help enough for that,  
 "With Farinacci's licence,—who decides  
 "That the mere implication of such man,  
 "So privileged, in any cause, before 2008  
 "Whatever Court except the Spiritual,  
 "Straight quashes law-procedure,—quash it,  
 then !  
 "Remains a pretty loophole of escape  
 "Moreover, that, beside the patent fact 2010  
 "O' the law's allowance, there's involved  
 the weal  
 "O' the Popedom : a son's privilege at  
 stake,  
 "Thou wilt pretend the Church's interest,  
 "Ignore all finer reasons to forgive !  
 "But herein lies the crowning cogency—  
 "(Let thy friends teach thee while thou  
 tellest beads) 2016  
 "That in this case the spirit of culture speaks,  
 "Civilization is imperative.  
 "To her shall we remand all delicate points  
 "Henceforth, nor take irregular advice 2020  
 'O' the sly, as heretofore : she used to hint  
 'Remonstrances, when law was out of sorts  
 'Because a saucy tongue was put to rest,  
 'An eye that roved was cured of arrogance :  
 'But why be forced to mumble under breath  
 'What soon shall be acknowledged as plain  
 fact, 2026  
 "Outspoken, say, in thy successor's time?  
 "Methinks we see the golden age return !  
 "Civilization and the Emperor  
 "Succeed to Christianity and Pope, 2030  
 "One Emperor then, as one Pope now :  
 meanwhile,  
 "Anticipate a little ! We tell thee 'Take  
 "Guido's life, sapped society shall crash,  
 "Whereof the main prop was, is, and shall  
 be 2034  
 "—Supremacy of husband over wife !'  
 "Does the man rule i' the house, and may  
 his mate  
 "Because of any plea dispute the same ?  
 "Oh, pleas of all sorts shall abound, be  
 sure,  
 "One but allowed validity,—for, harsh  
 "And savage, for, inept and silly-sooth, 2040  
 "For, this and that, will the ingenious sex  
 "Demonstrate the best master e'er graced  
 slave :  
 "And there's but one short way to end the  
 coil,—  
 "Acknowledge right and reason steadily  
 "I' the man and master : then the wife sub-  
 mits 2046  
 "To plain truth broadly stated. Does the  
 time  
 "Advise we shift—a pillar ? nay, a stake  
 "Out of its place i' the social tenement ?  
 "One touch may send a shudder through  
 the heap  
 "And bring it toppling on our children's  
 heads ! 2050  
 "Moreover, if ours breed a qualm in thee,  
 "Give thine own better feeling play for once !  
 "Thou, whose own life winks o'er the socket-  
 edge,  
 "Wouldst thou it went out in such ugly snuff  
 "As dooming sons dead, e'en though justice  
 prompt ? 2056  
 "Why, on a certain feast, Barabbas' self  
 "Was set free, not to cloud the general  
 cheer :  
 "Neither shalt thou pollute thy Sabbath  
 close !  
 "Mercy is safe and graceful. How one hears  
 "The howl begin, scarce the three little  
 taps ! 2060  
 "O' the silver mallet silent on thy brow,—  
 "His last act was to sacrifice a Count  
 "And thereby screen a scandal of the  
 Church !  
 "Guido condemned, the Canon justified  
 "Of course,—delinquents of his cloth go  
 free !' 2066  
 "And so the Luthers chuckle, Calvins scowl,  
 "So thy hand helps Molinos to the chair  
 "Whence he may hold forth till doom's day  
 on just  
 "These *petit-maitre* priestlings,—in the choir  
 "Sanctus et Benedictus, with a brush 2070  
 "Of soft guitar-strings that obey the thumb,  
<sup>1</sup> The three little taps : when a pope dies, the  
 Cardinal Camerlengo has to assure himself  
 of his death by tapping thrice on his forehead  
 with a silver mallet.

- "Touched by the bedside, for accompaniment !  
 "Does this give umbrage to a husband?  
 Death  
 "To the fool, and to the priest impunity !  
 "But no impunity to any friend 2075  
 "So simply over-loyal as these four  
 "Who made religion of their patron's cause,  
 "Believed in him and did his bidding straight,  
 "Asked not one question but laid down the lives  
 "This Pope took,—all four lives together make 2080  
 "Just his own length of days,—so, dead they lie,  
 "As these were times when loyalty's a drug,  
 "And zeal in a subordinate too cheap  
 "And common to be saved when we spend life !  
 "Come, 'tis too much good breath we waste in words : 2085  
 "The pardon, Holy Father ! Spare grimace,  
 "Shrugs and reluctance ! Are not we the world,  
 "Art not thou Priam ? Let soft culture plead  
 "Hecuba-like, '*non tali*'<sup>1</sup> (Virgil serves)  
 "'*Auxilio*' and the rest ! Enough, it works !  
 "The Pope relaxes, and the Prince is loth,  
 "The father's bowels yearn, the man's will bends, 2092  
 "Reply is apt. Our tears on tremble hearts  
 "Big with a benediction, wait the word  
 "Shall circulate thro' the city in a trice, 2095  
 "Set every window flaring, give each man  
 "O' the mob his torch to wave for gratitude.  
 "Pronounce then, for our breath and patience fail !"
- "Acquaint Count Guido and his fellows four  
 "They die to-morrow : could it be to-night,  
 "The better, but the work to do," takes time. 2106  
 "Set with all diligence a scaffold up,  
 "Not in the customary place, by Bridge  
 "Saint Angelo, where die the common sort ;  
 "But since the man is noble, and his peers 2110  
 "By predilection haunt the People's Square,  
 "There let him be beheaded in the midst,  
 "And his companions hanged on either side :  
 "So shall the quality see, fear and learn.  
 "All which work takes time : till to-morrow, then, 2115  
 "Let there be prayer incessant for the five !"
- For the main criminal I have no hope  
 Except in such a suddenness of fate.  
 I stood at Naples once, a night so dark  
 I could have scarce conjectured there was earth  
 Anywhere, sky or sea or world at all : 2121  
 But the night's black was burst through by a blaze—  
 Thunder struck blow on blow, earth groaned  
 and bore,  
 Through her whole length of mountain visible :  
 There lay the city thick and plain with  
 spires, 2125  
 And, like a ghost disshrouded, white the sea.  
 So may the truth be flashed out by one blow,  
 And Guido see, one instant, and be saved.  
 Else I avert my face, nor follow him  
 Into that sad obscure sequestered state 2130  
 Where God unmakes but to remake the soul  
 He else made first in vain ; which must not be.  
 Enough, for I may die this very night :  
 And how should I dare die, this man let live ?

I will, Sirs : but a voice other than yours  
 Quickens my spirit. "*Quis pro Domino* ?  
 "Who is upon the Lord's side ?" asked the  
 Count. 2101

I, who write—

"On receipt of this command,

<sup>1</sup> *Non tali auxilio*: Virgil, *Æn.* II. 521—  
 "not with such aid" as thine is religion to be  
 benefited, any more than Troy could be saved  
 by Priam's arms.

Carry this forthwith to the Governor ! 2136

# XI.—GUIDO.

You are the Cardinal Acciaiuoli, and you,  
 Abate Panciatichi—two good Tuscan names  
 Acciaiuoli—ah, your ancestor it was  
 Built the huge battlemented convent-block

Over the little forky flashing Greve  
That takes the quick turn at the foot o' the  
hill  
Just as one first sees Florence: oh those days!  
'Tis Ema, though, the other rivulet;  
The one-arched brown brick bridge yawns  
over,—yes,  
Gallop and go five minutes, and you gain  
The Roman Gate from where the Ema's  
bridged:  
Kingfishers fly there: how I see the bend  
O'erturreted by Certosa which he built,  
That Senescal (we styled him) of your House!  
I do adjure you, help me, Sirs! My blood  
Comes from as far a source: ought it to end  
This way, by leakage through their scaffold-  
planks  
Into Rome's sink where her red refuse runs?  
Sirs, I beseech you by blood-sympathy,  
If there be any vile experiment  
In the air,—if this your visit simply prove,  
When all's done, just a well-intentioned  
trick  
That tries for truth truer than truth itself,  
By startling up a man, ere break of day,  
To tell him he must die at sunset,—pshaw!  
That man's a Franceschini; feel his pulse,  
Laugh at your folly, and let's all go sleep!  
You have my last word,—innocent am I  
As Innocent my Pope and murderer,  
Innocent as a babe, as Mary's own,  
As Mary's self,—I said, say and repeat,—  
And why, then, should I die twelve hours  
hence? I—  
Whom, not twelve hours ago, the gaoler bade  
Turn to my straw-truss, settle and sleep sound  
That I might wake the sooner, promptlier  
pay  
His due of meat-and-drink-indulgence, cross  
His palm with fee of the good-hand, beside,  
As gallants use who go at large again!  
For why? All honest Rome approved my part;  
Whoever owned wife, sister, daughter,—nay,  
Mistress,—had any shadow of any right  
That looks like right, and, all the more  
resolved,  
Held it with tooth and nail, —these manly  
men

Approved! I being for Rome, Rome was for  
me.  
Then, there's the point reserved, the subter-  
fuge  
My lawyers held by, kept for last resource,  
Firm should all else,—the impossible fancy!  
—fail,  
And sneaking burgess-spirit win the day.  
The knaves! One plea at least would hold,  
—they laughed,—  
One grappling-iron scratch the bottom-rock  
Even should the middle mud let anchor go!  
I hooked my cause on to the Clergy's,—plea  
Which, even if law, tipped off my hat and  
plume,  
Revealed my priestly tonsure, saved me so.  
The Pope moreover, this old Innocent,  
Being so meek and mild and merciful,  
So fond o' the poor and so fatigued of earth,  
So . . . fifty thousand devils in deepest hell!  
Why must he cure us of our strange conceit  
Of the angel in man's likeness, that we loved  
And looked should help us at a pinch? He  
help?  
He pardon? Here's his mind and message—  
death!  
Thank the good Pope! Now, is he good in  
this,  
Never mind, Christian, — no such stuff's  
extant,—  
But will my death do credit to his reign,  
Show he both lived and let live, so was good?  
Cannot I live if he but like? "The law!"  
Why, just the law gives him the very chance,  
The precise leave to let my life alone,  
Which the archangelic soul of him (he says)  
Yearns after! Here they drop it in his palm,  
My lawyers, capital o' the cursed kind,—  
Drop life to take and hold and keep: but no!  
He sighs, shakes head, refuses to shut hand,  
Motions away the gift they bid him grasp,  
And of the coyness comes—that off I run  
And down I go, he best knows whither!  
mind,  
He knows, who sets me rolling all the same!  
Disinterested Vicar of our Lord,  
This way he abrogates and disallows,  
Nullifies and ignores,—reverts in fine

To the good and right, in detriment of me !  
Talk away ! Will you have the naked truth ?  
He's sick of his life's supper,—swallowed lies :  
So, hobbling bedward, needs must ease his  
maw 95

Just where I sit o' the door-sill. Sir Abate,  
Can you do nothing ? Friends, we used to  
frisk :

What of this sudden slash in a friend's face,  
This cut across our good companionship  
That showed its front so gay when both were  
young ? 90

Were not we put into a beaten path,  
Bid pace the world, we nobles born and bred,  
We body of friends with each his scutcheon full  
Of old achievement and impunity,—  
Taking the laugh of morn and Sol's salute  
As forth we fared, pricked on to breathe our  
steeds 95

And take equestrian sport over the green  
Under the blue, across the crop,—what care ?  
If we went prancing up hill and down dale,  
In and out of the level and the straight, 100  
By the bit of pleasant byeway, where was  
harm ?

Still Sol salutes me and the morning laughs :  
I see my grandsire's hoof-prints,—point the  
spot

Where he drew rein, slipped saddle, and  
stabbed knave

For daring throw gibe—much less, stone—  
from pale : 105

Then back, and on, and up with the cavalcade.  
Just so wend we, now canter, now converse,  
Till, 'mid the jauncing pride and jaunty port,  
Something of a sudden jerks at somebody—  
A dagger is out, a flashing cut and thrust,  
Because I play some prank my grandsire  
played, 111

And here I sprawl : where is the company ?  
Gone !

A trot and a trample ! only I lie trapped,  
Writhe in a certain novel springe just set  
By the good old Pope : I'm first prize.

Warn me ? Why ? 115  
Apprise me that the law o' the game is changed ?  
Enough that I'm a warning, as I writhe,  
To all and each my fellows of the file,

And make law plain henceforward past this  
take,

"For such a prank, death is the penalty !" -  
Pope the Five Hundredth (what do I know or  
care ?) 121

Deputes your Eminency and Abateship  
To announce that, twelve hours from this  
time, he needs

I just essay upon my body and soul 124  
The virtue of his brand-new engine, prove  
Represser of the pranksome ! I'm the first !  
Thanks. Do you know what teeth you  
mean to try

The sharpness of, on this soft neck and throat ?  
I know it,—I have seen and hate it,—ay, 129  
As you shall, while I tell you ! Let me talk,  
Or leave me, at your pleasure ! talk I must :  
What is your visit but my lure to talk ?

Nay, you have something to disclose ?—a  
smile,

At end of the forced sternness, means to  
mock

The heart-beats here ? I call your two  
hearts stone ! 135

Is your charge to stay with me till I die ?

Be tacit as your bench, then ! Use your ears,  
I use my tongue : how glibly yours will run  
At pleasant supper-time . . . God's curse !  
. . . to-night

When all the guests jump up, begin so brisk  
"Welcome, his Eminence who shrived the  
wretch ! 141

"Now we shall have the Abate's story !"

Life !

How I could spill this overplus of mine  
Among those hoar-haired, shrunk-shanked  
odds and ends 145

Of body and soul old age is chewing dry !  
Those windlestraws that stare while purblind  
death

Mow here, mows there, makes hay of juicy me,  
And misses just the bunch of withered weed  
Would brighten hell and streak its smoke  
with flame ! 150

How the life I could shed yet never shrink,  
Would drench their stalks with sap like grass  
in May !

Is it not terrible, I entreat you, Sirs?—

With manifold and plenitudinous life,

Prompt at death's menace to give blow for  
threat, 185

Answer his "Be thou not!" by "Thus I  
am!"—

Terrible so to be alive yet die?

How I live, how I see! so,—how I speak!

Lucidity of soul unlocks the lips:

I never had the words at will before. 100

How I see all my folly at a glance!

"A man requires a woman and a wife:"

There was my folly; I believed the saw.

I knew that just myself concerned myself,

Yet needs must look for what I seemed to  
lack, 185

In a woman,—why, the woman's in the man!

Fools we are, how we learn things when too  
late!

Overmuch life turns round my woman-side:

The male and female in me, mixed before,

Settle of a sudden: I'm my wife outright

In this unmanly appetite for truth, 171

This careless courage as to consequence,

This instantaneous sight, through things and  
through,

This voluble rhetoric, if you please,—'tis she!

Here you have that Pompilia whom I slew,

Also the folly for which I slew her! 178  
Fool!

And, fool-like, what is it I wander from?

What did I say of your sharp iron tooth? 179

Ah,—that I know the hateful thing! this way.

I chanced to stroll forth, many a good year gone,

One warm Spring eve in Rome, and unaware

Looking, mayhap, to count what stars were out,

Came on your fine axe in a frame, that falls

And so cuts off a man's head underneath, 183

Mannaia,—thus we made acquaintance first:

Out of the way, in a by-part o' the town,

At the Mouth-of-Truth o' the river-side, you  
know:

One goes by the Capitol: and wherefore coy,

Retiring out of crowded noisy Rome? 190

Because a very little time ago

It had done service, chopped off head from  
trunk

Belonging to a fellow whose poor house

The thing must make a point to stand before—

Felice Whatsoever-was-the-name 195

Who stabled buffaloes and so gained bread,

(Our clowns unyoke them in the ground hard  
by)

And, after use of much improper speech,

Had struck at Duke Some-title-or-other's  
face,

Because he kidnapped, carried away and  
kept 200

Felice's sister who would sit and sing

I' the filthy doorway while she plaited fringe

To deck the brutes with,—on their gear it  
goes,—

The good girl with the velvet in her voice.

So did the Duke, so did Felice, so 205

Did Justice, intervening with her axe.

There the man-mutilating engine stood

At ease, both gay and grim, like a Swiss guard

Off duty,—purified itself as well,

Getting dry, sweet and proper for next  
week,— 210

And doing incidental good, 'twas hoped,

To the rough lesson-lacking populace

Who now and then, forsooth, must right their  
wrongs!

There stood the twelve-foot-square of scaf-  
fold, railed

Considerately round to elbow-height, 215

For fear an officer should tumble thence

And sprain his ankle and be lame a month

Through starting when the axe fell and head  
too!

Railed likewise were the steps whereby 'twas  
reached.

All of it painted red: red, in the midst, 220

Ran up two narrow tall beams barred across,

Since from the summit, some twelve feet to  
reach,

The iron plate with the sharp shearing edge

Had slammed, jerked, shot, slid,—I shall  
soon find which!—

And so lay quiet, fast in its fit place, 225

The wooden half-moon collar, how eclipsed

By the blade which blocked its curvature:  
apart,

The other half,—the under half-moon board

Which, helped by this, completes a neck's  
embrace,— 220

Joined to a sort of desk that wheels aside  
Out of the way when done with,—down you  
kneel,

In you're pushed, over you the other drops,  
Tight you're clipped, whiz, there's the blade  
cleaves its best,

Out trundles body, down flops head on floor,  
And where's your soul gone? That, too, I  
shall find ! 225

This kneeling-place was red, red, never fear !  
But only slimy-like with paint, not blood,  
For why ? a decent pitcher stood at hand,  
A broad dish to hold sawdust, and a broom  
By some unnamed utensil,—scraper-rake,—  
Each with a conscious air of duty done. 231

Underneath, loungers,—boys and some few  
men,—

Discoursed this platter, named the other tool,  
Just as, when grooms tie up and dress a steed,  
Boys lounge and look on, and elucidate  
What the round brush is used for, what the  
square,— 246

So was explained—to me the skill-less then—  
The manner of the grooming for next world  
Undergone by Felice What's-his-name.

There's no such lovely month in Rome as  
May— 250

May's crescent is no half-moon of red plank,  
And came now tilting o'er the wave i' the  
west,

One greenish-golden sea, right 'twixt those  
bars

Of the engine—I began acquaintance with,  
Understood, hated, hurried from before, 255  
To have it out of sight and cleanse my soul !  
Here it is all again, conserved for use :  
Twelve hours hence, I may know more, not  
hate worse.

That young May-moon-month ! Devils of  
the deep ! 260

Was not a Pope then Pope as much as now ?  
Used not he chirrup o'er the Merry Tales,  
Chuckle,—his nephew so exact the wag

To play a jealous cullion such a trick  
As wins the wife i' the pleasant story ! Well ?

Why do things change ? Wherefore is Rome  
un-Romed ? 265

I tell you, ere Felice's corpse was cold,  
The Duke, that night, threw wide his palace-  
doors,

Received the compliments o' the quality  
For justice done him,—bowed and smirked  
his best, 269

And in return passed round a pretty thing,  
A portrait of Felice's sister's self,  
Florid old rogue Albano's masterpiece,  
As—better than virginity in rags—  
Bouncing Europa on the back o' the bull :  
They laughed and took their road the safer  
home. 275

Ah, but times change, there's quite another  
Pope,

I do the Duke's deed, take Felice's place,  
And, being no Felice, lout and clout,  
Stomach but ill the phrase "I lose my head !"  
How euphemistic ! Lose what ? Lose your  
ring, 280

Your snuff-box, tablets, kerchief !—but, your  
head ?

I learnt the process at an early age ;  
'Twas useful knowledge, in those same old  
days,

To know the way a head is set on neck.  
My fencing-master urged "Would you excel ?  
"Rest not content with mere bold give-and-  
guard, 286

"Nor pink the antagonist somehow-anyhow !  
"See me dissect a little, and know your game !  
"Only anatomy makes a thrust the thing."

Oh Cardinal, those lithe live necks of ours !  
Here go the vertebrae, here's *Atlas*, here 291  
*Axix*, and here the symphyses stop short,  
So wisely and well,—as, o'er a corpse, we  
cant,—

And here's the silver cord which . . . what's  
our word ?

Depends from the gold bowl, which loosed  
(not "lost") 295

Lets us from heaven to hell,—one chop, we're  
loose !

"And not much pain i' the process," quoth  
a sage :

Who told him ? Not Felice's ghost, I think !

Such "losing" is scarce Mother Nature's  
mode.

She fain would have cord ease itself away,  
Worn to a thread by threescore years and ten,  
Snap while we slumber : that seems bearable.  
I'm told one clot of blood extravasate  
Ends one as certainly as Roland's sword,—  
One drop of lymph suffused proves Oliver's  
mace,—

Intruding, either of the pleasant pair,  
On the arachnoid tunic of my brain.  
That's Nature's way of loosing cord !—but Art,  
How of Art's process with the engine here,  
When bowl and cord alike are crushed across,  
Bored between, bruised through? Why, if  
Fagon's self,

The French Court's pride, that famed practi-  
tioner,

Would pass his cold pale lightning of a knife,  
Pistola-ware, adroit 'twixt joint and joint,  
With just a "See how facile, gentlefolk!"—  
The thing were not so bad to bear! Brute  
force

Cuts as he comes, breaks in, breaks on, breaks  
out

O' the hard and soft of you : is that the same?  
A lithe snake thrids the hedge, makes throb  
no leaf:

A heavy ox sets chest to brier and branch,  
Bursts somehow through, and leaves one  
hideous hole  
Behind him!

And why, why must this needs be?  
Oh, if men were but good! They are not  
good,

Nowise like Peter : people called him rough,  
But if, as I left Rome, I spoke the Saint,  
—"Petrus, quo vadis?"<sup>1</sup>—doubtless, I  
should hear,

<sup>1</sup> *Petrus, quo vadis*: an allusion to the legend  
that St. Peter was leaving Rome on the out-  
break of the Neronian persecution, when he  
met Christ coming towards the city, and ad-  
dressed him with the words, "*Domine, quo  
vadis?*" "Lord, whither goest Thou?" The  
answer was, "To Rome, to be crucified again";  
whereupon Peter turned back and met his  
martyrdom.

"To free the prisoner and forgive his fault!  
"I plucked the absolute dead from God's  
own bar,

"And raised up Dorcas,—why not rescue  
thee?"

What would cost one such nullifying word?  
If Innocent succeeds to Peter's place,  
Let him think Peter's thought, speak Peter's  
speech!

I say, he is bound to it: friends, how say  
you?

Concede I be all one bloodguiltiness  
And mystery of murder in the flesh,  
Why should that fact keep the Pope's mouth  
shut fast?

He execrates my crime,—good!—sees hell  
yawn

One inch from the red plank's end which I  
press,—

Nothing is better! What's the consequence?  
How should a Pope proceed that knows his  
cue?

Why, leave me linger out my minute here,  
Since close on death comes judgment and  
comes doom,

Not crib at dawn its pittance from a sheep  
Destined ere dewfall to be butcher's-  
meat!

Think, Sirs, if I have done you any harm,  
And you require the natural revenge,  
Suppose, and so intend to poison me,

—Just as you take and slip into my draught  
The paperful of powder that clears scores,  
You notice on my brow a certain blue:

How you both overset the wine at once!  
How you both smile! "Our enemy has the  
plague!

"Twelve hours hence he'll be scraping his  
bones bare

"Of that intolerable flesh, and die,  
"Frenzied with pain: no need for poison  
here!

"Step aside and enjoy the spectacle!"  
Tender for souls are you, Pope Innocent!  
Christ's maxim is—one soul outweighs the  
world:

Respite me, save a soul, then, curse the world!  
"No," venerable sire, I hear you smirk,

- "No: for Christ's gospel changes names, not things,  
 "Renews the obsolete, does nothing more!  
 "Our fire-new gospel is re-tinkered law,  
 "Our mercy, justice,—Jove's rechristened God,— 385  
 "Nay, whereas, in the popular conceit,  
 "'Tis pity that old harsh Law somehow limps,  
 "Lingers on earth, although Law's day be done, 388  
 "Else would benignant Gospel interpose,  
 "Not furtively as now, but bold and frank  
 "O'erflutter us with healing in her wings,  
 "Law being harshness, Gospel only love—  
 "We tell the people, on the contrary,  
 "Gospel takes up the rod which Law lets fall; 374  
 "Mercy is vigilant when justice sleeps!  
 "Does Law permit a taste of Gospel-grace?  
 "The secular arm allow the spiritual power  
 "To act for once?—no compliment so fine  
 "As that our Gospel handsomely turn harsh,  
 "Thrust victim back on Law the nice and coy!" 380  
 Yes, you do say so, else you would forgive  
 Me whom Law does not touch but tosses you!  
 Don't think to put on the professional face!  
 You know what I know: casuists as you are,  
 Each nerve must creep, each hair start, sting  
 and stand, 385  
 At such illogical inconsequence!  
 Dear my friends, do but see! A murder's  
 tried,  
 There are two parties to the cause: I'm one,  
 —Defend myself, as somebody must do:  
 I have 'th best o' the battle: that's a fact,  
 Simple fact,—fancies find no place just now.  
 What though half Rome condemned me?  
 Half approved: 392  
 And, none disputes; the luck is mine at last,  
 All Rome, i' the main, acquitting me:  
 whereon,  
 What has the Pope to ask but "How finds  
 Law?" 395  
 "I find," replies Law, "I have erred this  
 while:  
 "Guilty or guiltless, Guido proves a priest,  
 "No layman: he is therefore yours, not mine:  
 "I bound him: loose him, you whose will  
 is Christ's!"  
 And now what does this Vicar of our Lord,  
 Shepherd o' the flock,—one of whose charge  
 bleats sore 401  
 For crook's help from the quag wherein it  
 drowns?  
 Law suffers him employ the crumpled end:  
 His pleasure is to turn staff, use the point,  
 And thrust the shuddering sheep, he calls a  
 wolf, 405  
 Back and back, down and down to where  
 hell gapes!  
 "Guiltless," cries Law—"Guilty" corrects  
 the Pope!  
 "Guilty," for the whim's sake! "Guilty,"  
 he somehow thinks,  
 And anyhow says: 'tis truth; he dares not  
 lie! 409  
 Others should do the lying. That's the cause  
 Brings you both here: I ought in decency  
 Confess to you that I deserve my fate,  
 Am guilty, as the Pope thinks,—ay, to the  
 end,  
 Keep up the jest, lie on, lie ever, lie  
 I' the latest gasp of me! What reason, Sirs?  
 Because to-morrow will succeed to-day 418  
 For you, though not for me: and if I stick  
 Still to the truth, declare with my last breath,  
 I die an innocent and murdered man,—  
 Why, there's the tongue of Rome will wag  
 apace 420  
 This time to-morrow: don't I hear the talk!  
 "So, to the last he proved impenitent?  
 "Pagans have said as much of martyred  
 saints!  
 "Law demurred, washed her hands of the  
 whole case.  
 "Prince Somebody said this, Duke Some-  
 thing, that. 425  
 "Doubtless the man's dead, dead enough,  
 don't fear!  
 "But, hang it, what if there have been a  
 spice,  
 "A touch of . . . eh? You see, the Pope's  
 so old,  
 "Some of us add, obtuse: age never slips



"The chance of shoving youth to face death  
 first!" 480  
 And so on. Therefore to suppress such talk  
 You two come here, entreat I tell you lies,  
 And end, the edifying way. I end,  
 Telling the truth! Your self-styled shepherd  
 thieves!  
 A thief—and how thieves hate the wolves  
 we know: 485  
 Damage to theft, damage to thrift, all's one!  
 The red hand is sworn foe of the black jaw.  
 That's only natural, that's right enough:  
 But why the wolf should compliment the  
 thief  
 With shepherd's title, bark out life in thanks,  
 And, spiteless, lick the prong that spits him,  
 —eh, 491  
 Cardinal? My Abate, scarcely thus!  
 There, let my sheepskin-garb, a curse on't,  
 go—  
 Leave my teeth free if I must show my shag!  
 Repent? What good shall follow? If I  
 pass 495  
 Twelve hours repenting, will that fact hold  
 fast  
 The thirteenth at the horrid dozen's end?  
 If I fall forthwith at your feet, gnash, tear,  
 Foam, rave, to give your story the due  
 grace, 499  
 Will that assist the engine half-way back  
 Into its hiding-house?—boards, shaking now,  
 Bone against bone, like some old skeleton bat  
 That wants, at winter's end, to wake and  
 prey!  
 Will howling put the spectre back to sleep?  
 Ah, but I misconceive your object, Sirs!  
 Since I want new life like the creature,—life,  
 Being done with here, begins it the world  
 away: 507  
 I shall next have "Come, mortals, and be  
 judged!"  
 There's but a minute, betwixt this and  
 then:  
 So, quick, be sorry since it saves my soul!  
 Sirs, truth shall save it, since no lies assist!  
 Hear the truth, you, whatever you style  
 yourselves, 509  
 Civilization and society!  
 Come, one good grapple, I with all the  
 world! 464  
 Dying in cold blood is the desperate thing;  
 The angry heart explodes, bears off in blaze  
 The indignant soul, and I'm combustion-ripe.  
 Why, you intend to do your worst with me!  
 That's in your eyes! You dare no more than  
 death,  
 And mean no less. I must make up my  
 mind. 470  
 So Pietro,—when I chased him here and there,  
 Morsel by morsel cut away the life  
 I loathed,—cried for just respite to confess  
 And save his soul: much respite did I grant!  
 Why grant me respite who deserve my  
 doom? 475  
 Me—who engaged to play a prize, fight you,  
 Knowing your arms, and foil you, trick for  
 trick,  
 At rapier-fence, your match and, maybe,  
 more.  
 I knew that if I chose sin certain sins,  
 Solace my lusts out of the regular way 480  
 Prescribed me, I should find you in the path,  
 Have to try skill with a redoubted foe;  
 You would lunge, I would parry, and make  
 end.  
 At last, occasion of a murder comes:  
 We cross blades, I, for all my brag, break  
 guard, 485  
 And in goes the cold iron at my breast,  
 Out at my back, and end is made of me.  
 You stand confessed the adroiter swordsmen,  
 —ay,  
 But on your triumph you increase, it seems,  
 Want more of me than lying flat on face:  
 I ought to raise my ruined head, allege 491  
 Not simply I pushed worse blade o' the  
 pair,  
 But my antagonist dispensed with steel!  
 There was no passage of arms, you looked  
 me low,  
 With brow and eye abolished cut and thrust  
 Nor used the vulgar weapon! This chance  
 scratch, 495  
 This incidental hurt, this sort of hole  
 In the heart of me? I stumbled, got it so!  
 Fell on my own sword as a bungler may!

Yourself proscribe such heathen tools, and  
 trust 500  
 To the naked virtue : it was virtue stood  
 Unarmed and awed me,—on my brow there  
 burned  
 Crime out so plainly intolerably red,  
 That I was fain to cry—"Down to the dust  
 "With me, and bury there brow, brand and  
 all !" 505  
 Law had essayed the adventure,—but what's  
 Law ?  
 Morality exposed the Gorgon shield !  
 Morality and Religion conquer me.  
 If Law sufficed would you come here, entreat  
 I supplement law, and confess forsooth ? 510  
 Did not the Trial show things plain enough ?  
 "Ah, but a word of the man's very self  
 "Would somehow put the keystone in its  
 place  
 "And crown the arch !" Then take the  
 word you want !  
 I say that, long ago, when things began, 515  
 All the world made agreement, such and  
 such  
 Were pleasure-giving profit-bearing acts,  
 But henceforth extra-legal, nor to be :  
 You must not kill the man whose death  
 would please  
 And profit you, unless his life stop yours 520  
 Plainly, and need so be put aside :  
 Get the thing by a public course, by law,  
 Only no private bloodshed as of old !  
 All of us, for the good of every one,  
 Renounced such licence and conformed to  
 law : 525  
 Who breaks law, breaks pact therefore, helps  
 himself  
 To pleasure and profit over and above the  
 due,  
 And must pay forfeit,—pain beyond his share :  
 For, pleasure being the sole good in the  
 world, 530  
 Anyone's pleasure turns to someone's pain,  
 So, law must watch for everyone,—say we,  
 Who call things wicked that give too much  
 joy,  
 And nickname mere reprisal, envy makes,  
 Punishment : quite right ! thus the world  
 goes round.  
 I, being well aware such pact there was, 535  
 I, in my time who found advantage come  
 Of law's observance and crime's penalty,—  
 Who, but for wholesome fear law bred in  
 friends,  
 Had doubtless given example long ago,  
 Furnished forth some friend's pleasure with  
 my pain, 540  
 And, by my death, pieced out his scanty  
 life,—  
 I could not, for that foolish life of me,  
 Help risking law's infringement, — I broke  
 bond,  
 And needs must pay price,—wherefore, here's  
 my head, 544  
 Flung with a flourish ! But, repentance too !  
 But pure and simple sorrow for law's breach  
 Rather than blunderer's ineptitude ?  
 Cardinal, no ! Abate, scarcely thus !  
 'Tis the fault, not that I dared try a fall  
 With Law and straightway am found under-  
 most, 548  
 But that I failed to see, above man's law,  
 God's precept you, the Christians, recognize ?  
 Colly my cow ! Don't fidget, Cardinal !  
 Abate, cross your breast and count your beads  
 And exorcize the devil, for here he stands  
 And stiffens in the bristly nape of neck, 550  
 Daring you drive him hence ! You, Christians  
 both ?  
 I say, if ever was such faith at all  
 Born in the world, by your community  
 Suffered to live its little tick of time, 555  
 'Tis dead of age, now, ludicrously dead ;  
 Honour its ashes, if you be discreet,  
 In epitaph only ! For, concede its death,  
 Allow extinction, you may boast unchecked  
 What feats the thing did in a crazy land 558  
 At a fabulous epoch,—treat your faith, that  
 way,  
 Just as you treat your relics : "Here's a shred  
 "Of saintly flesh, a scrap of blessed bone,  
 "Raised King Cophetua, who was dead, to  
 life 560  
 "In Mesopotamy twelve centuries since,  
 "Such was its virtue !" —twangs the Sacristan,

As many senses in his soul, and nerves  
I' neck of him as I,—whom, soul and sense,  
Neck and nerve, you abolish presently,—  
I being the unit in creation now 714

Who pay the Maker, in this speech of mine,  
A creature's duty, spend my last of breath  
In bearing witness, even by my worst fault,  
To the creature's obligation, absolute,  
Perpetual: my worst fault protests, "The faith

"Claims all of me: I would give all she claims,  
"But for a spice of doubt: the risk's too  
rash: 721

"Double or quits, I play, but, all or nought,  
"Exceeds my courage: therefore, I descend  
"To the next faith with no dubiety—  
"Faith in the present life, made last as

long 725  
"And prove as full of pleasure as may hap,  
"Whatever pain it cause the world." I'm  
wrong?

I've had my life, whate'er I lose: I'm right?  
I've got the single good there was to gain.  
Entire faith, or else complete unbelief! 730  
Aught between has my loathing and contempt,  
Mine and God's also, doubtless: ask yourself,  
Cardinal, where and how you like a man!  
Why, either with your feet upon his head,  
Confessed your caudatory,<sup>1</sup> or, at large, 735  
The stranger in the crowd who caps to you  
But keeps his distance,—why should he pre-  
sume?

You want no hanger-on and dropper-off,  
Now yours, and now not yours but quite his  
own, 739

According as the sky looks black or bright.  
Just so I capped to and kept off from faith—  
You promised trudge behind through fair and  
foul,

Yet leave i' the lurch at the first spit of rain.  
Who holds to faith whenever rain begins?  
What does the father when his son lies dead,  
The merchant when his money-bagstake wing,  
The politician whom a rival ousts? 747  
No case but has its conduct, faith prescribes:  
Where's the obedience that shall edify?  
Why, they laugh frankly in the face of faith

And take the natural course,—this rends his  
hair 751

Because his child is taken to God's breast,  
That gnashes teeth and raves at loss of trash  
Which rust corrupts and thieves break through  
and steal,

And this, enabled to inherit earth 755  
Through meekness, curses till your blood  
runs cold!

Down they all drop to my low level, rest  
Heart upon dungy earth that's warm and soft,  
And let who please attempt the altitudes.  
Each playing prodigal son of heavenly sire,  
Turning his nose up at the fatted calf, 761  
Fain to fill belly with the husks, we swine  
Did eat by born depravity of taste!

Enough of the hypocrites. But you, Sirs,  
you— 764

Who never budged from litter where I lay,  
And buried snout i' the draff-box while I fed,  
Cried amen to my creed's one article—

"Get pleasure, 'scape pain,—give your pre-  
ference

"To the immediate good, for time is brief,  
"And death ends good and ill and everything!

"What's got is gained, what's gained soon is  
gained twice, 771

"And,—inasmuch as faith gains most,—feign  
faith!"

So did we brother-like pass word about:  
—You, now,—like bloody drunkards but  
half-drunk,

Who fool men yet perceive men find them  
fools,— 775

Vexed that a titter gains the gravest mouth,—  
O' the sudden you must needs re-introduce  
Solemnity, straight sober undue mirth

By a blow dealt me your boon companion  
here 779

Who, using the old licence, dreamed of harm  
No more than snow in harvest: yet it falls!  
You check the merriment effectually

By pushing your abrupt machine i' the midst,  
Making me Rome's example: blood for wine!  
The general good needs that you chop and  
change! 785

I may dislike the hocus-pocus,—Rome,

<sup>1</sup> Caudatory: attached to your train.

The laughter-loving people, won't they stare  
 Chap-fallen !—while serious natures sermonize  
 "The magistrate, he beareth not the sword  
 "In vain ; who sins may taste its edge, we  
 see !"

Why my sin, drunkards ? Where have I abused  
 Liberty, scandalized you all so much ?  
 Who called me, who crooked finger till I came,  
 Fool that I was, to join companionship ?  
 I knew my own mind, meant to live my life,  
 Elude your envy, or else make a stand,  
 Take my own part and sell you my life dear.  
 But it was "Fie ! No prejudice in the world  
 "To the proper manly instinct ! Cast your  
 lot

"Into our lap, one genius ruled our births,  
 "We'll compass joy by concert ; take with  
 us

"The regular irregular way i' the wood ;  
 "You'll miss no game through riding breast  
 by breast,

"In this preserve, the Church's park and pale,  
 "Rather than outside where the world lies  
 waste !"

Come, if you said not that, did you say this ?  
 Give plain and terrible warning, "Live, enjoy ?  
 "Such life begins in death and ends in hell !  
 "Dare you bid us assist your sins, us priests

"Who hurry sin and sinners from the  
 earth ?  
 "No such delight for us, why then for you ?  
 "Leave earth, seek heaven or find its  
 opposite !"

Had you so warned me, not in lying words  
 But veritable deeds with tongues of flame,  
 That had been fair, that might have struck  
 a man,

Silenced the squabble between soul and sense,  
 Compelled him to make mind up, take one  
 course

Or the other, peradventure !—wrong or right,  
 Foolish or wise, you would have been at least  
 Sincere, no question,—forced me choose,  
 indulge

Or else renounce my instincts, still play wolf  
 Or find my way submissive to your fold,  
 Be red-crossed on my fleece, one sheep the  
 more.

But you as good as bade me wear sheep's  
 wool  
 Over wolf's skin, suck blood and hide the  
 noise  
 By mimicry of something like a bleat,—  
 Whence it comes that because, despite my  
 care,

Because I smack my tongue too loud for once,  
 Drop baaing, here's the village up in arms !  
 Have at the wolf's throat, you who hate the  
 breed !  
 Oh, were it only open yet to choose—  
 One little time more—whether I'd be free  
 Your foe, or subsidized your friend forsooth !  
 Should not you get a growl through the  
 white fangs

In answer to your beckoning ! Cardinal,  
 Abate, managers o' the multitude,  
 I'd turn your gloved hands to account, be  
 sure !  
 You should manipulate the coarse rough  
 mob :  
 'Tis you I'd deal directly with, not them,—  
 Using your fears : why touch the thing myself  
 When I could see you hunt, and then cry  
 "Shares !  
 "Quarter the carcase or we quarrel ; come,  
 "Here's the world ready to see justice done !"  
 Oh, it had been a desperate game, but game  
 Wherein the winner's chance were worth the  
 pains !  
 We'd try conclusions !—at the worst, what  
 worse  
 Than this Mannaia-machine, each minute's  
 talk  
 Helps push an inch the nearer me ? Fool,  
 fool !  
 You understand me and forgive, sweet Sirs ?  
 I blame you, tear my hair and tell my  
 woe—  
 All's but a flourish, figure of rhetoric !  
 One must try each expedient to save life.  
 One makes fools look foolisher fifty-fold  
 By putting in their place men wise like you,  
 To take the full force of an argument  
 Would buffet their stolidity in vain.  
 If you should feel aggrieved by the mere wind

O' the blow that means to miss you and maul them,

That's my success ! Is it not folly, now,  
To say with folk, " A plausible defence—

" We see through notwithstanding, and re-  
ject ? " 581

Reject the plausible they do, these fools,  
Who never even make pretence to show  
One point beyond its plausibility

In favour of the best belief they hold ! 585

" Saint Somebody-or-other raised the dead : "  
Did he ? How do you come to know as  
much ?

" Know it, what need ? The story's plausible,

" Avouched for by a martyrologist,

" And why should good men sup on cheese  
and leeks 590

" On such a saint's day, if there were no  
saint ? "

I praise the wisdom of these fools, and straight  
Tell them my story—" plausible, but false ! "

False, to be sure ! What else can story be  
That runs—a young wife tired of an old  
spouse, 595

Found a priest whom she fled away with,—  
both

Took their full pleasure in the two-days'  
flight,

Which a grey-headed greyer-hearted pair,  
(Whose best boast was, their life had been  
a lie)

Helped for the love they bore all liars. Oh,  
Here incredulity begins ! Indeed ? 581

Allow then, were no one point strictly true,  
There's that i' the tale might seem like truth  
at least

To the unlucky husband,—jaundiced patch—  
Jealousy maddens people, why not him ? 585

Say, he was maddened, so forgivable !

Humanity pleads that though the wife were  
true,

The priest true, and the pair of liars true,  
They might seem false to one man in the  
world !

A thousand gnaws make up a serpent's sting,  
And many sly soft stimulants to wrath 581  
Compose a formidable wrong at last  
That gets called easily by some one name

Not applicable to the single parts, "  
And so draws down a general revenge, 580

Excessive if you take crime, fault by fault.  
Jealousy ! I have known a score of plays,

Were listened to and laughed at in my time  
As like the everyday life on all sides, 580

Wherein the husband, mad as a March hare,  
Suspected all the world contrived his shame.  
What did the wife ? The wife kissed both  
eyes blind,

Explained away ambiguous circumstance,  
And while she held him captive by the hand,  
Crowned his head,—you know what's the  
mockery,— 585

By half her body behind the curtain. That's  
Nature now ! That's the subject of a piece  
I saw in Vallombrosa Convent, made

Expressly to teach men what marriage was !  
But say " Just so did I misapprehend, 590

" Imagine she deceived me to my face,"  
And that's pretence too easily seen through !

All those eyes of all husbands in all plays,  
At stare like one expanded peacock-tail,  
Are laughed at for pretending to be keen  
While horn-blind : but the moment I step  
forth— 595

Oh, I must needs o' the sudden prove a lynx  
And look the heart, that stone-wall, through  
and through !

Such an eye, God's may be,—not yours nor  
mine.

Yes, presently . . . what hour is fleeting  
now ? 590

When you cut earth away from under me,  
I shall be left alone with, pushed beneath  
Some such an apparitional dread orb  
As the eye of God, since such an eye there  
glares :

I fancy it go filling up the void 595  
Above my mote-self it devours, or what  
Proves—wrath, immensity wrecks on nothing-  
ness.

Just how I felt once, couching through the  
dark,

Hard by Vittiano ; young I was, and gay,  
And wanting to trap fieldfares : first a  
spark 599

Tipped a bent, as a mere dew-globule might  
Any stiff grass-stalk on the meadow,—this  
Grew fiercer, flamed out full, and proved the  
sun.

What do I want with proverbs, precepts  
here? 934

Away with man! What shall I say to God?  
This, if I find the tongue and keep the mind—  
“Do Thou wipe out the being of me, and  
smear

“This soul from off Thy white of things, I  
blot!

“I am one huge and sheer mistake,—whose  
fault?

“Not mine at least, who did not make my-  
self 940

Someone declares wife excused me so!  
Perhaps she knew what argument to use.

Grind your teeth, Cardinal: Abate, writhe!  
What else am I to cry out in my rage,

Unable to repent one particle 945  
O’ the past? Oh, how I wish some cold  
wise man

Would dig beneath the surface which you  
scrape,

Deal with the depths, pronounce on my desert  
Groundedly! I want simple sober sense,

That asks, before it finishes with a dog, 950  
Who taught the dog that trick you hang him  
for?

You both persist to call that act a crime,  
Which sense would call . . . yes, I maintain

it, Sirs, . . .

A blunder! At the worst, I stood in doubt  
On cross-road, took one path of many paths:

It leads to the red thing, we all see now, 956  
But nobody saw at first: one primrose-patch

In bank, one singing-bird in bush, the less,  
Had warned me from such wayfare: let me

prove! 960

Put me back to the cross-road, start afresh!  
Advise me when I take the first false step!

Give me my wife: how should I use my wife,  
Love her or hate her? Prompt my action

now!

There she is, there she stands alive and pale,  
The thirteen-years’-old child, with milk for  
blood, 965

Pompilia Comparini, as at first,  
Which first is only four brief years ago!

I stand too in the little ground-floor room  
O’ the father’s house at Via Vittoria: see!

Her so-called mother,—one arm round the  
waist 970

O’ the child to keep her from the toys, let fall  
At wonder I can live yet look so grim,—

Ushers her in, with deprecating wave  
Of the other,—and she fronts me loose at last,

Held only by the mother’s finger-tip. 975  
Struck dumb,—for she was white enough  
before!—

She eyes me with those frightened balls of  
black,

As heifer—the old simile comes pat—  
Eyes tremblingly the altar and the priest.

The amazed look, all one insuppressive  
prayer,— 980

Might she but breathe, set free as heretofore,  
I have this cup leave her lips unblistered, bear

Any cross anywhither anyhow,  
So but alone, so but apart from me!

You are touched? So am I, quite otherwise,  
If ’tis with pity. I resent my wrong, 985

Being a man: I only show man’s soul  
Through man’s flesh: she sees mine, it strikes  
her thus!

Is that attractive? To a youth perhaps—  
Calf-creature, one-part boy to three-parts girl,

To whom it is a flattering novelty 991  
That he, men use to motion from their path,  
Can thus impose, thus terrify in turn

A chit whose terror shall be changed apace  
To bliss unbearable when grace and glow,

Prowess and pride descend the throne and  
touch 996

Esther in all that pretty tremble, cured  
By the dove o’ the sceptre! But myself am

old,

O’ the wane at least, in all things: what do  
you say

To her who frankly thus confirms my doubt?  
I am past the prime, I scare the woman-

world, 1001

Done-with that way: you like this piece of  
news?

A little saucy rose-bud minx can strike

Death-damp into the breast of doughty king  
Though 'twere French Louis,—soul I under-  
stand,— 1005

Saying, by gesture of repugnance, just  
“Sire, you are regal, puissant and so forth,  
“But—young you have been, are not, nor  
will be!”

In vain the mother nods, winks, bustles up,  
“Count, girls incline to mature worth like  
you! 1010

“As for Pompilia, what’s flesh, fish, or fowl  
“To one who apprehends no difference,

“And would accept you even were you old  
“As you are . . . youngish by her father’s  
side?

“Trim but your beard a little, thin your  
bush 1015

“Of eyebrow; and for presence, portliness,  
“And decent gravity, you beat a boy!”

Deceive yourself one minute, if you may,  
In presence of the child that so loves age,  
Whose neck writhes, cords itself against your  
kiss, 1020

Whose hand you wring stark, rigid with  
despair!

Well, I resent this; I am young in soul,  
Nor old in body,—thews and sinews here,—  
Though the vile surface be not smooth as  
once,—

Far beyond that first wheelwork which went  
wrong 1025

Through the untempered iron ere ’twas proof:  
I am the wrought man worth ten times the  
crude,

Would woman see what this declines to sec,  
Declines to say “I see,”—the officious word  
That makes the thing, pricks on the soul to  
shoot 1030

New fire into the half-used cinder, flesh!  
Therefore ’tis she begins with wronging me,  
Who cannot but begin with hating her.

Our marriage follows: there she stands again!  
Why do I laugh? Why, in the very  
gripe 1035

O’ the jaws of death’s gigantic skull, do I  
Grin back his grin, make sport of my own  
pangs?

Why from each clashing of his molars, ground

To make the devil bread from out my grist,  
Leaps out a spark of mirth, a hellish  
toy? 1040

Take notice we are lovers in a church,  
Waiting the sacrament to make us one  
And happy! Just as bid, she bears herself,  
Comes and kneels, rises, speaks, is silent,—  
goes: 1044

So have I brought my horse, by word and blow,  
To stand stock-still and front the fire he dreads.

How can I other than remember this,  
Resent the very obedience? Gain thereby?

Yes, I do gain my end and have my will,—  
Thanks to whom? When the mother speaks  
the word, 1050

She obeys it—even to enduring me!  
There had been compensation in revolt—

Revolt’s to quell: but martyrdom rehearsed,  
But predetermined saintship for the sake  
O’ the mother?—“Go!” thought I, “we  
meet again!” 1055

Pass the next weeks of dumb contented death,  
She lives,—wakes up, installed in house and  
home,

Is mine, mine all day-long, all night-long  
mine.

Good folk begin at me with open mouth  
“Now, at least, reconcile the child to life!

“Study and make her love . . . that is, en-  
dure 1061

“The . . . hem! the . . . all of you though  
somewhat old,

“Till it amount to something, in her eye,  
“As good as love, better a thousand times,—

“Since nature helps the woman in such  
strait, 1065

“Makes passiveness her pleasure: failing  
which,

“What if you give up boy-and-girl-fools’-  
play

“And go on to wise friendship all at once?  
“Those boys and girls kiss themselves cold,

you know,  
“Toy themselves tired and slink aside full  
soon 1070

“To friendship, as they name satiety:  
“Thither go you and wait their coming!”

Thanks,

Considerate advisers,—but, fair play !

I had you and I, friends, started fair at first,  
We, keeping fair, might reach it, neck by  
neck, 1075

This blessed goal, whenever fate so please :  
But why am I to miss the daisied mile

The course begins with, why obtain the  
dust

Of the end precisely at the starting-point ?

Why quaff life's cup blown free of all the  
beads, 1080

The bright red froth wherein our beard should  
steep

Before our mouth essay the black o' the wine?  
Foolish, the love-fit ? Let me prove it such

Like you, before like you I puff things clear !  
"The best's to come, no rapture but content ! 1085

"Not love's first glory but a sober glow,  
"Not a spontaneous outburst in pure boon,

"So much as, gained by patience, care and  
toil,

"Proper appreciation and esteem !"  
Go preach that to your nephews, not to me

Who, tired i' the midway of my life, would  
stop 1091

And take my first refreshment, pluck a rose :  
What's this coarse woolly hip, worn smooth

of leaf,  
You counsel I go plant in garden-plot,

Water with tears, manure with sweat and  
blood, 1095

In confidence the seed shall germinate  
And, for its very best, some far-off day,

Grow big, and blow me out a dog-rose bell?  
Why must your nephews begin breathing spice

O' the hundred-petalled Provence prodigy ?  
Nay, more and worse,—would such my root

bear rose— 1101

Prove really flower and favourite, not the kind  
That's queen, but those three leaves that

make one cup  
And hold the hedge-bird's breakfast,—then

indeed  
The prize though poor would pay the care

and toil ! 1105

Respect we Nature that makes least as most,  
Marvellous in the minim ! But this bud,

Bit through and burned black by the tempter's  
tooth,

This bloom whose best grace was the slug  
outside

And the wasp inside its bosom,—call you  
"rose" ? 1110

Claim no immunity from a weed's fate  
For the horrible present ! What you call my

wife  
I call a nullity in female shape,

Vapid disgust, soon to be pungent plague,  
When mixed with, made confusion and a

curse 1115

By two abominable nondescripts,  
That father and that mother : think you see

The dreadful bronze our boast, we Aretines,  
The Etruscan monster, the three-headed thing,

Bellerophon's foe ! How name you the whole  
beast ? 1120

You choose to name the body from one head,  
That of the simple kid which droops the eye,

Hangs the neck and dies tenderly enough :  
I rather see the griesly lion belch

Flame out i' the midst, the serpent writhe  
her rings, 1125

Grafted into the common stock for tail,  
And name the brute, Chimæra which I slew !

How was there ever more to be—(concede  
My wife's insipid harmless nullity)—

Dissociation from that pair of plagues— 1130

That mother with her cunning and her cant—  
The eyes with first their twinkle of conceit,

Then, dropped to earth in mock-demureness,  
—now,

The smile self-satisfied from ear to ear,  
Now, the prim pursed-up mouth's protruded

lips, 1135

With deferential duck, slow swing of head,  
Tempting the sudden fist of man too much,—

That owl-like screw of lid and rock of ruff !  
As for the father,—Cardinal, you know, 1140

The kind of idiot !—such are rife in Rome,  
But they wear velvet commonly ; good fools,

At the end of life, to furnish forth young folk  
Who grin and bear with imbecility :

Since the stalled ass, the joker, sheds from jaw  
Corn, in the joke, for those who laugh or  
starve. 1145



But what say we to the same solemn beast  
Wagging his ears and wishful of our pat,  
When turned, with holes in hide and bones  
laid bare,

To forage for himself i' the waste o' the world,  
Sir Dignity i' the dumps? Pat him? We  
drub 1180

Self-knowledge, rather, into frowzy pate,  
Teach Pietro to get trappings or go hang!  
Fancy this quondam oracle in vogue

At Via Vittoria, this personified  
Authority when time was,—Pantaloon 1185  
Flaunting his tom-fool tawdry just the same  
As if Ash-Wednesday were mid-Carnival!

That's the extreme and unforgivable  
Of sins, as I account such. Have you stooped  
For your own ends to bestialize yourself 1190  
By flattery of a fellow of this stamp?

The ends obtained or else shown out of reach,  
He goes on, takes the flattery for pure truth,—  
"You love, and honour me, of course: what  
next?" 1184

What, but the trifle of the stabbing, friend?  
Which taught you how one worships when  
the shrine

Has lost the relic that we bent before.  
Angry! And how could I be otherwise?  
'Tis plain: this pair of old pretentious fools  
Meant to fool me: it happens, I fooled them.  
Why could not these who sought to buy and sell  
Me,—when they found themselves were  
bought and sold, 1172

Make up their mind to the proved rule of right,  
Be chattel and not chapman any more?  
Miscalculation has its consequence; 1175  
But when the shepherd crooks a sheep-like  
thing

And meaning to get wool, dislodges fleece  
And finds the veritable wolf beneath,  
(How that staunch image serves at every turn!)  
Does he, by way of being politic, 1180  
Pluck the first whisker grimly visible?  
Or rather grow in a trice all gratitude,  
Protest this sort-of-what-one-might-name  
sheep

Beats the old other curly-coated kind,  
And shall share board and bed, if so it deign,  
With its discoverer, like a royal ram? 1188

Ay, thus, with chattering teeth and knocking  
knees,  
Would wisdom treat the adventure! these,  
forsooth,

Tried whisker-plucking, and so found what  
trap 1189

The whisker kept perdue, two rows of teeth—  
Sharp, as too late the prying fingers felt.  
What would you have? The fools transgress,  
the fools

Forthwith receive appropriate punishment:  
They first insult me, I return the blow,  
There follows noise enough: four hubbub  
months, 1191

Now hue and cry, now whimpering and  
wail—

A perfect goose-yard cackle of complaint  
Because I do not gild the geese their oats,—  
I have enough of noise, ope wicket wide,  
Sweep out the couple to go whine elsewhere,  
Frightened a little, hurt in no respect, 1191  
And am just taking thought to breathe again,  
Taste the sweet sudden silence all about,  
When, there they raise it, the old noise I know,  
At Rome i' the distance! "What, begun  
once more? 1193

"Whine on, wail ever, 'tis the loser's right!"  
But eh, what sort of voice grows on the wind?  
Triumph it sounds and no complaint at all!  
And triumph it is. My boast was premature:  
The creatures, I turned forth, clapped wing  
and crew 1210

Fighting-cock-fashion,—they had filched a  
pearl  
From dung-heap, and might boast with cause  
enough!

I was defrauded of all bargained for:  
You know, the Pope knows, not a soul but  
knows 1214

My dowry was derision, my gain—muck,  
My wife, (the Church declared my flesh and  
blood)

The nameless bastard of a common whore:  
My old name turned henceforth to . . . shall  
I say

"He that received the ordure in his face?"  
And they who planned this wrong, performed  
this wrong, 1219

And then revealed this wrong to the wide world,  
 Rounded myself in the ears with my own wrong,—  
 Why, these were (note hell's lucky malice, now !)  
 These were just they who, they alone, could act  
 And publish and proclaim their infamy, 1225  
 Secure that men would in a breath believe  
 Compassionate and pardon them,—for why?  
 They plainly were too stupid to invent,  
 Too simple to distinguish wrong from right,—  
 Inconscious agents they, the silly-sooth, 1230  
 Of heaven's retributive justice on the strong  
 Proud cunning violent oppressor—me !  
 Follow them to their fate and help your best,  
 You Rome, Arezzo, foes called friends of me,  
 They gave the good long laugh to, at my cost ! 1235  
 Defray your share o' the cost, since you par- took  
 The entertainment ! Do !—assured the while,  
 That not one stab, I dealt to right and left,  
 But went the deeper for a fancy—this—  
 That each might do me two-fold service, find 1240  
 A friend's face at the bottom of each wound,  
 And scratch its smirk a little !  
 Panciatichi !  
 There's a report at Florence,—is it true?—  
 That when your relative the Cardinal 1245  
 Built, only the other day, that barrack-bulk,  
 The palace in Via Larga, someone picked  
 From out the street a saucy quip enough  
 That fell there from its day's flight through the town,  
 About the flat front and the windows wide  
 And bulging heap of cornice,—hitched the joke. 1251  
 Into a sonnet, signed his name thereto,  
 And forthwith pinned on post the pleasantry :  
 For which he's at the galleys, rowing now  
 Up to his waist in water,—just because 1255  
*Panciatichi* and *lymphatic* rhymed so pat !  
 I hope, Sir, those who passed this joke on me  
 Were not unduly punished ? What say you,

Prince of the Church, my patron ? Nay, indeed, 1260  
 I shall not dare insult your wits so much  
 As think this problem difficult to solve.  
 This Pietro and Violante then, I say,  
 These two ambiguous insects, changing name  
 And nature with the season's warmth or chill,—  
 Now, grovelled, grubbing toiling moiling ants, 1265  
 A very synonym of thrift and peace,—  
 Anon, with lusty June to prick their heart,  
 Soared i' the air, winged flies for more offence,  
 Circled me, buzzed me deaf and stung me blind,  
 And stunk me dead with fetor in the face  
 Until I stopped the nuisance : there's my crime ! 1271  
 Pity I did not suffer them subside  
 Into some further shape and final form  
 Of execrable life ? My masters, no !  
 I, by one blow, wisely cut short at once 1275  
 Them and their transformations of disgust,  
 In the snug little Villa out of hand.  
 “Grant me confession, give bare time for that !”—  
 Shouted the sinner till his mouth was stopped.  
 His life confessed !—that was enough for me, 1280  
 Who came to see that he did penance. 'S death !  
 Here's a coil raised, a pother and for what ?  
 Because strength, being provoked by weak-  
 ness, fought  
 And conquered,—the world never heard the like ! 1284  
 Pah, how I spend my breath on them, as if  
 'Twas their fate troubled me, too hard to range  
 Among the right and fit and proper things !  
 Ay, but Pompilia,—I await your word,—  
 She, unimpeached of crime, unimplicate  
 In folly, one of alien blood to these 1290  
 I punish, why extend my claim, exact  
 Her portion of the penalty ? Yes, friends,  
 I go too fast : the orator's at fault :  
 Yes, ere I lay her, with your leave, by them  
 As she was laid at San Lorenzo late, 1295

I ought to step back, lead you by degrees,  
 Recounting at each step some fresh offence,  
 Up to the red bed,—never fear, I will! 1206  
 Gaze at her, where I place her, to begin,  
 Confound me with her gentleness and worth!  
 The horrible pair have fled and left her now,  
 She has her husband for her sole concern:  
 His wife, the woman fashioned for his help,  
 Flesh of his flesh, bone of his bone, the bride  
 To groom as is the Church and Spouse to  
 Christ: 1205

There she stands in his presence: "Thy  
 desire

"Shall be to the husband, o'er thee shall he  
 rule!"

—"Pompilia, who declare that you love God,  
 "You know who said that: then, desire my  
 love,

"Yield me contentment and be ruled aright!"  
 She sits up, she lies down, she comes and  
 goes, 1211

Kneels at the couch-side, overleans the sill  
 O' the window, cold and pale and mute as  
 stone,

Strong as stone also. "Well, are they not  
 fled?

"Am I not left, am I not one for all? 1215

"Speak a word, drop a tear, detach a glance,

"Bless me or curse me of your own accord!

"Is it the ceiling only wants your soul,

"Is worth your eyes?" And then the eyes  
 descend,

And do look at me. Is it at the meal? 1220

"Speak!" she obeys, "Be silent!" she obeys,  
 Counting the minutes till I cry "Depart,"

As brood-bird when you saunter past her eggs.  
 Departs she? just the same through door and  
 wall

I see the same stone strength of white  
 despair. 1225

And all this will be never otherwise!

Before, the parents' presence lent her life:

She could play off her sex's armoury,

Entreat, reproach, be female to my male,

Try all the shrieking doubles of the hare,

Go clamour to the Commissary, bid 1231

The Archbishop hold my hands and stop my  
 tongue;

And yield fair sport so: but the tactics change,  
 The hare stands stock-still to enrage the  
 hound!

Since that day when she learned she was no  
 child 1236

Of those she thought her parents,—that their  
 trick

Had tricked me whom she thought sole  
 trickster late,—

Why, I suppose she said within herself

"Then, no more struggle for my parents'  
 sake!

"And, for my own sake, why needs struggle  
 be?" 1240

But is there no third party to the pact?

What of her husband's relish or dislike

For this new game of giving up the game,

This worst offence of not offending more?

I'll not believe but instinct wrought in this,

Set her on to conceive and execute 1246

The preferable plague: how sure they probe—

These jacks, the sensitivest soft of man!

The long black hair was wound now in a wisp,

Crowned sorrow better than the wild web

late: 1256

No more soiled dress, 'tis trimness triumphs  
 now,

For how should malice go with negligence?

The frayed silk looked the fresher for her  
 spite!

There was an end to springing out of bed,

Praying me, with face buried on my feet,

Be hindered of my pastime,—so an end 1266

To my rejoinder, "What, on the ground at  
 last?

"Vanquished in fight, a suppliant for life?

"What if I raise you? 'Ware the casting  
 down

"When next you fight me!" Then, she lay  
 there, mine: 1269

Now, mine she is if I please wring her  
 neck,—

A moment of disquiet, working eyes,

Protruding tongue, a long sigh, then no more,—

As if one killed the horse one could not ride!

Had I enjoined "Cut off the hair!"—why,  
 snap 1276

The scissors, and at once a yard or so

Had fluttered in black serpents to the floor :  
 But till I did enjoin it, how she combs,  
 Uncurls and draws out to the complete length,  
 Plaits, places the insulting rope on head 1870  
 To be an eyesore past dishevelment !  
 Is all done ? Then sit still again and stare !  
 I advise—no one think to bear that look  
 Of steady wrong, endured as steadily  
 —Through what sustainment of deluding  
 hope ? 1875

Who is the friend i' the background that notes  
 all ?

Who may come presently and close accounts ?  
 This self-possession to the uttermost,  
 How does it differ in aught, save degree,  
 From the terrible patience of God ? 1880

“ All which just means,  
 “ She did not love you ! ” Again the word  
 is launched

And the fact fronts me ! What, you try the  
 wards

With the true key and the dead lock flies ope ?  
 No, it sticks fast and leaves you fumbling  
 still ! 1885

You have some fifty servants, Cardinal,—  
 Which of them loves you ? Which subordinate  
 But makes parade of such officiousness  
 That,—if there's no love prompts it,—love,  
 the sham, 1890

Does twice the service done by love, the true ?  
 God bless us liars, where's one touch of truth  
 In what we tell the world, or world tells us,  
 Of how we love each other ? All the same,  
 We calculate on word and deed, nor err,—  
 Bid such a man do such a loving act, 1895  
 Sure of effect and negligent of cause,  
 Just as we bid a horse, with cluck of tongue,  
 Stretch his legs arch-wise, crouch his saddled  
 back 1900

To foot-reach of the stirrup—all for love,  
 And some for memory of the smart of switch  
 On the inside of the foreleg—what care we ?  
 Yet where's the bond obliges horse to man  
 Like that which binds fast wife to husband ?  
 God

Laid down the law : gave man the brawny arm  
 And ball of fist—woman the beardless cheek  
 And proper place to suffer in the side : 1905

Since it is he can strike, let her obey !  
 Can she feel no love ? Let her show the more,  
 Sham the worse, damn herself praiseworthy !  
 Who's that soprano, Rome went mad about  
 Last week while I lay rotting in my straw ?  
 The very jailer gossiped in his praise— 1910  
 How,—dressed up like Armida, though a man ;  
 And painted to look pretty, though a fright,—  
 He still made love so that the ladies swooned,  
 Being an eunuch. “ Ah, Kinaldo mine ! 1915  
 “ But to breathe by thee while Jove slays us  
 both ! ”

All the poor bloodless creature never felt,  
*Si, do, re, mi, fa*, squeak and squall—for what ?  
 Two gold zecchines<sup>1</sup> the evening. Here's  
 my slave, 1920

Whose body and soul depend upon my nod,  
 Can't falter out the first note in the scale  
 For her life ! Why blame me if I take the  
 life ?

All women cannot give men love, forsooth !  
 No, nor all pullets lay the henwife eggs—  
 Whereat she bids them remedy the fault, 1925  
 Brood on a chalk-ball : soon the nest is  
 stocked—

Otherwise, to the plucking and the spit !  
 This wife of mine was of another mood—  
 Would not begin the lie that ends with  
 truth, 1930

Nor feign the love that brings real love about :  
 Wherefore I judged, sentenced and punished  
 her.

But why particularize, defend the deed ?  
 Say that I hated her for no one cause 1935  
 Beyond my pleasure so to do,—what then ?  
 Just on as much incitement acts the world,  
 All of you ! Look and like ! You favour  
 one,

Browbeat another, leave alone a third,—  
 Why should you master natural caprice ?  
 Pure nature ! Try : plant elm by ash in file ;  
 Both unexceptionable trees enough, 1940  
 They ought to overlean each other, pair .  
 At top, and arch across the avenue  
 The whole path to the pleasance : do they

<sup>1</sup> *Zecchines* : a gold coin worth about ten shillings.

Or loathe, his off abhorrent each from each?  
Lay the fault elsewhere: since we must have  
faults, 1445

Mine shall have been,—seeing there's ill in  
the end

Come of my course,—that I fare somehow  
worse

For the way I took: my fault . . . as God's  
my judge, 1446

I see not where my fault lies, that's the truth!  
I ought . . . oh, ought in my own interest

Have let the whole adventure go untried,  
This chance by marriage: or else, trying it,

Ought to have turned it to account, some one  
O' the hundred otherwises? Ay, my friend,

Easy to say, easy to do: step right 1448

Now you've stepped left and stumbled on the  
thing,

—The red thing! Doubt I any more than you  
That practice makes man perfect? Give again

The chance,—same marriage and no other  
wife, 1449

Be sure I'll edify you! That's because  
I'm practised, grown fit guide for Guido's  
self.

You proffered guidance,—I know, none so  
well,—

You laid down law and rolled decorum  
out, 1451

From pulpit-corner on the gospel-side,—  
Wanted to make your great experience mine,

Save me the personal search and pains so:  
thanks!

Take your word on life's use? When I take  
his—

The muzzled ox that treadeth out the corn,  
Gone blind in padding round and round one  
path,— 1452

As to the taste of green grass in the field!  
What do you know o' the world that's trodden  
flat

And salted sterile with your daily dung,  
Leavened into a lump of loathsomeness?

Take your opinion of the modes of life, 1453  
The aims of life, life's triumph or defeat,

How to feel, how to scheme, and how to do  
Or else leave undone? You preached long  
and loud

On high-days, "Take our doctrine 'upon  
trust!

"Into the mill-house with you! Grind our  
corn, 1454

"Relish our chaff, and let the green grass  
grow!"

I tried chaff, found I famished on such fare,  
So made this mad rush at the mill-house-door,

Buried my head up to the ears in dew,  
Browsed on the best: for which you brain

me, Sirs! 1455

Be it so. I conceived of life that way,  
And still declare—life, without absolute use

Of the actual sweet therein, is death, not life.  
Give me,—pay down,—not promise, which

is air,— 1456

Something that's out of life and better still,  
Make sure reward, make certain punishment,

Entice me, scare me,—I'll forgo this life;  
Otherwise, no!—the less that words, mere  
wind,

Would cheat me of some minutes while they  
plague,

Baulk fulness of revenge here,—blame your-  
selves 1457

For this eruption of the pent-up soul  
You prisoned first and played with after-  
ward!

"Deny myself" meant simply pleasure you,  
The sacred and superior, save the mark!

You,—whose stupidity and insolence 1458  
I must defer to, soothe at every turn,—

Whose swine-like snuffing greed and grunt-  
ing lust

I had to wink at or help gratify,—  
While the same passions,—dared they perk  
in me,

Me, the immeasurably marked, by God, 1459  
Master of the whole world of such as you,—

I, boast such passions? 'Twas "Suppress  
them straight!

"Or stay, we'll pick and choose before destroy.  
"Here's wrath in you, a serviceable sword,—

"Beat it into a ploughshare! What's this  
long 1460

"Lance-like ambition? Forge a pruning-  
hook,

"May be of service when our vines grow tall!

"But — sword use swordwise, spear thrust  
out as spear?

"Anathema! 'Suppression is the word!'"

My nature, when the outrage was too gross,  
Widened itself an outlet over-wide 1516

By way of answer, sought its own relief  
With more of fire and brimstone than you  
wished.

All your own doing: preachers, blame your-  
selves!

'Tis I preach while the hour-glass runs and  
runs! 1520

God keep me patient! All I say just means—  
My wife proved, whether by her fault or  
mine,—

That's immaterial,—a true stumbling-block  
I' the way of me her husband. I but plied  
The hatchet yourselves use to clear a path,  
Was politic, played the game you warrant  
wins, 1526

Plucked at law's robe a-rustle through the  
courts,

Bowed down to kiss divinity's buckled shoe  
Cushioned i' the church: efforts all wide the  
aim!

Procedures to no purpose! Then flashed  
truth. 1530

The letter kills, the spirit keeps alive  
In law and gospel: there be nods and winks  
Instruct a wise man to assist himself  
In certain matters, nor seek aid at all.

"Ask money of me,"—quoth the clownish  
saw,— 1535

"And take my purse! But,—speaking with  
respect,—

"Need you a solace for the troubled nose?

"Let everybody wipe his own himself!"

Sirs, tell me free and fair! Had things gone  
well 1539

At the wayside inn: had I surprised asleep  
The runaways, as was so probable,  
And pinned them each to other partridge-  
wise,

Through back and breast to breast and back,  
then bade 1543

Bystanders witness if the spit, my sword,  
Were loaded with unlawful game for once—

Would you have interposed to damp the glow  
Applauding me on every husband's cheek?

Would you have checked the cry "A judg-  
ment, see!

"A warning, note! Be henceforth chaste,  
ye wives,

"Nor stray beyond your proper precinct,  
priests!" 1550

If you had, then your house against itself  
Divides, nor stands your kingdom any more.  
Oh why, why was it not ordained just so?

Why fell not things out so nor otherwise?  
Ask that particular devil whose task it is

To trip the all-but-at perfection,—slur 1556  
The line of the painter just where paint  
leaves off

And life begins,—put ice into the ode  
O' the poet while he cries "Next stanza—  
fire!"

Inscribe all human effort with one word, 1560  
Artistry's haunting curse, the Incomplete!

Being incomplete, my act escaped success.  
Easy to blame now! Every fool can swear  
To hole in net that held and slipped the  
fish. 1564

But, treat my act with fair unjaundiced eye,  
What was there wanting to a masterpiece?  
Except the luck that lies beyond a man?

My way with the woman, now proved grossly  
wrong,

Just missed of being gravely grandly right  
And making mouths laugh on the other  
side. 1570

Do, for the poor obstructed artist's sake,  
Go with him over that spoiled work once  
more!

Take only its first flower, the ended act  
Now in the dusty pod, dry and defunct!

I march to the Villa, and my men with me,  
That evening, and we reach the door and  
stand. 1576

I say . . . no, it shoots through me light-  
ning-like

While I pause, breathe, my hand upon the  
latch,

"Let me forebode! Thus far, too much  
success:

"I want the natural failure—find it where?"

- "Which thread will have to break and leave  
a loop 1581
- "T' the meshy combination, my brain's loom 1582
- "Wove this long while, and now next minute  
tests?
- "Of three that are to catch, two should go  
free,
- "One must: all three surprised,—impossible!
- "Beside, I seek three and may chance on  
six,— 1583
- "This neighbour, t'other gossip,—the babe's  
birth
- "Brings such to fireside, and folks give them  
wine,—
- "'Tis late: but when I break in presently
- "One will be found outlingering the rest 1580
- "For promise of a posset,—one whose shout
- "Would raise the dead down in the cata-  
combs,
- "Much more the city-watch that goes its  
round.
- "When did I ever turn adroitly up
- "To sun some brick embedded in the soil,
- "And with one blow crush all three scorpions  
there? 1586
- "Or Pietro or Violante shambles off—
- "It cannot be but I surprise my wife—
- "If only she is stopped and stamped on, good!
- "That shall suffice: more is improbable.
- "Now I may knock!" And this once for  
my sake 1591
- The impossible was effected: I called king,  
Queen and knave in a sequence, and cards  
came,
- All three, three only! So, I had my way,  
Did my deed: so, unbrokenly lay bare. 1593
- Each tania<sup>1</sup> that had sucked me dry of juice,  
At last outside me, not an inch of ring  
Left now to writhe about and root itself  
T' the heart all powerless for revenge! Hence-  
forth
- I might thrive: these were drawn and dead  
and damned. 1610
- Oh Cardinal, the deep long sigh you heave  
When the load's off you, ringing as it runs  
All the way down the serpent-stair to hell!
- No doubt the fine delirium flustered me, 1614
- Turned my brain with the influx of success,  
As if the sole need now were to wave wand  
And find doors fly wide,—wish and have my  
will,—
- The rest o' the scheme would care for itself:  
escape
- Easy enough were that, and poor beside!
- It all but proved so,—ought to quite have  
proved, 1620
- Since, half the chances had sufficed, set free  
Anyone, with his senses at command,  
From thrice the danger of my flight. But,  
drunk,
- Redundantly triumphant,—some reverse 1624
- Was sure to follow! There's no other way  
Accounts for such prompt perfect failure then  
And there on the instant. Any day o' the  
week,
- A ducat slid discreetly into palm  
O' the mute post-master, while you whisper  
him—
- How you the Count and certain four your  
knaves, 1630
- Have just been mauling who was malapert,  
Suspect the kindred may prove troublesome,  
Therefore, want horses in a hurry,—that  
And nothing more secures you any day 1634
- The pick o' the stable! Yet I try the trick,  
Double the bribe, call myself Duke for Count,  
And say the dead man only was a Jew,  
And for my pains find I am dealing just  
With the one scrupulous fellow in all Rome—  
Just this immaculate official stares, 1640
- Sees I want hat on head and sword in sheath,  
Am splashed with other sort of wet than wine,  
Shrugs shoulder, puts my hand by, gold and  
all,
- Stands on the strictness of the rule o' the road!
- "Where's the Permission?" Where's the  
wretched rag 1645
- With the due seal and sign of Rome's Police,  
To be had for asking, half-an-hour ago?
- "Gone? Get another, or no horses hence!"  
He dares not stop me, we five glare too grim,  
But hinders,—hacks and hamstrings sure  
enough, 1650
- Gives me some twenty miles of miry road
- <sup>1</sup> *Tania*: a tape-worm.

More to march in the middle of that night  
 Whereof the rough beginning taxed the strength  
 O' the youngsters, much more mine, both soul  
 and flesh, 1654  
 Who had to think as well as act: dead-beat,  
 We gave in ere we reached the boundary  
 And safe spot out of this irrational Rome,—  
 Where, on dismounting from our steeds next  
 day,  
 We had snapped our fingers at you, safe and  
 sound,  
 Tuscans once more in blessed Tuscany, 1  
 Where laws make wise allowance, understand  
 Civilized life and do its champions right!  
 Witness the sentence of the Rota there,  
 Arezzo uttered, the Granduke confirmed,  
 One week before I acted on its hint,— 1663  
 (Giving friend Guillichini, for his love,  
 The galleys, and my wife your saint, Rome's  
 saint,—  
 Rome manufactures saints enough to know,—  
 Seclusion at the Stinche for her life.  
 All this, that all but was, might all have been,  
 Yet was not! balked by just a scrupulous  
 knave 1671  
 Whose palm was horn through handling  
 horses' hoofs  
 And could not close upon my proffered gold!  
 What say you to the spite of fortune? Well,  
 The worst's in store: thus hindered, haled  
 this way 1675  
 To Rome again by handogs, whom find I  
 Here, still to fight with, but my pale frail  
 wife?  
 —Riddled with wounds by one not like to  
 waste  
 The blows he dealt,—knowing anatomy,—  
 (I think I told you) bound to pick and choose  
 The vital parts! 'Twas learning all in vain!  
 She too must shimmer through the gloom o'  
 the grave, 1682  
 Come and confront me—not at judgment-seat  
 Where I could twist her soul, as erst her flesh,  
 And turn her truth into a lie,—but there,  
 O' the death-bed, with God's hand between  
 us both, 1686  
 Striking me dumb, and helping her to speak,  
 Tell her own story her own way, and turn...

My plausibility to nothingness! 1689  
 Four whole days did Pompilia keep alive,  
 With the best surgery of Rome agape  
 At the miracle,—this cut, the other slash,  
 And yet the life refusing to dislodge,  
 Four whole extravagant impossible days,  
 Till she had time to finish and persuade 1693  
 Every man, every woman, every child  
 In Rome, of what she would: the selfsame  
 she  
 Who, but a year ago, had wrung her hands,  
 Reddened her eyes and beat her breasts, re-  
 hearsed  
 The whole game at Arezzo, nor availed 1700  
 Thereby to move one heart or raise one  
 hand!  
 When destiny intends you cards like these,  
 What good of skill and preconcerted play?  
 Had she been found dead, as I left her dead,  
 I should have told a tale brooked no reply:  
 You scarcely will suppose me found at fault  
 With that advantage! "What brings me to  
 Rome? 1707  
 "Necessity to claim and take my wife:  
 "Better, to claim and take my new-born  
 babe,—  
 "Strong in paternity a fortnight old, 1710  
 "When 'tis at strongest: warily I work,  
 "Knowing the machinations of my foe;  
 "I have companionship and use the night:  
 "I seek my wife and child,—I find—no child  
 "But wife, in the embraces of that priest  
 "Who caused her to elope from me. These  
 two, 1716  
 "Backed by the pander-pair who watch the  
 while,  
 "Spring on me like so many tiger-cats,  
 "Glad of the chance to end the intruder.  
 I—  
 "What should I do but stand on my defence,  
 "Strike right, strike left, strike thick and  
 threefold, slay, 1721  
 "Not all—because the coward priest escaped.  
 "Last, I escape, in fear of evil tongues,  
 "And having had my taste of Roman law,"  
 What's disputable, refutable here?— 1725  
 Save by just this one ghost-thing half on earth,  
 Half out of it,—as if she held God's hand



While she leant back and looked her last at  
me, 1728

Forgiving me (here monks begin to weep)  
Oh, from her very soul, commending mine  
To heavenly mercies which are infinite,—  
While fixing fast my head beneath your knife!  
'Tis fate not fortune. All is of a piece!  
When was it chance informed me of my  
youths? 1734

My rustic four o' the family, soft swains,  
What sweet surprise had they in store for me,  
Those of my very household,—what did Law  
Twist with her rack-and-cord-contrivance late  
From out their bones and marrow? What  
but this— 1739

Had no one of these several stumbling-blocks  
Stopped me, they yet were cherishing a scheme,  
All of their honest country homespun wit,  
To quietly next day at crow of cock  
Cut my own throat too, for their own behoof,  
Seeing I had forgot to clear accounts 1745  
O' the instant, nowise slackened speed for  
that,—

And somehow never might find memory,  
Once safe back in Arezzo, where things change,  
And a court-lord needs mind no country lout.  
Well, being the arch-offender, I die last,—  
May, ere my head falls, have my eyesight free,  
Nor miss them dangling high on either hand,  
Like scarecrows in a hemp-field, for their  
pains! 1753

And then my Trial,—'tis my Trial that bites  
Like a corrosive, so the cards are packed,  
Dice loaded, and my life-stake tricked away!  
Look at my lawyers, lacked they grace of law,  
Latin or logic? Were not they fools to the  
height, 1758

Fools to the depth, fools to the level between,  
O' the foolishness set to decide the case?  
They feign, they flatter; nowise does it skill,  
Everything goes against me: deal each judge  
His dole of flattery and feigning,—why, 1765  
He turns and tries and snuffs and savours it,  
As some old fly the sugar-grain, your gift;  
Then eyes your thumb and finger, brushes clean  
The absurd old head of him, and whisks away,  
Leaving your thumb and finger dirty. Faugh!

And finally, after this long-drawn range 1768

Of affront and failure, failure and affront,—  
This path, 'twixt crosses leading to a skull,  
Paced by me barefoot, bloodied by my palms  
From the entry to the end,—there's light at  
length,

A cranny of escape: appeal may be 1774  
To the old man, to the father, to the Pope,  
For a little life—from one whose life is spent,  
A little pity—from pity's source and seat,  
A little indulgence to rank, privilege,  
From one who is the thing personified, 1779  
Rank, privilege, indulgence, grown beyond  
Earth's bearing, even, ask Jansenius<sup>1</sup> else!  
Still the same answer, still no other tune

From the cicala perched at the tree-top  
Than crickets noisy round the root: 'tis  
"Die!"

Bids Law—"Be damned!" adds Gospel,—  
nay, 1785

No word so frank,—'tis rather, "Save your-  
self!"

The Pope subjoins—"Confess and be ab-  
solved!"

"So shall my credit countervail your shame,  
"And the world see I have not lost the knack  
"Of trying all the spirits: yours, my son,  
"Wants but a fiery washing to emerge 1791  
"In clarity! Come, cleanse you, ease the ache  
"Of these old bones, refresh our bowels, boy!"  
Do I mistake your mission from the Pope?

Then, bear his Holiness the mind of me! 1795  
I do get strength from being thrust to wall,  
Successfully wrenched from pillar and from  
post

By this tenacious hate of fortune, hate  
Of all things in, under, and above earth. 1798  
Warfare, begun this mean unmanly mode,  
Does best to end so,—gives earth spectacle  
Of a brave fighter who succumbs to odds  
That turn defeat to victory. Stab, I fold  
My mantle round me! Rome approves my act:  
Applauds the blow which costs me life but  
keeps 1805

<sup>1</sup> *Jansenius*: Cornelius Jansenius (1585-1638), from whom the Jansenists took their name; author of the work called *Augustinus* condemned by several popes in succession.

My honour spotless : Rome would praise no  
more  
Had I fallen, say, some fifteen years ago,  
Helping Vienna<sup>1</sup> when our Aretines  
Flocked to Duke Charles and fought Turk  
Mustafa ;  
Nor would you two be trembling o'er my  
corpse 1810  
With all this exquisite solicitude.  
Why is it that I make such suit to live ?  
The popular sympathy that's round me now  
Would break like bubble that o'er-doimes a fly :  
Solid enough while he lies quiet there, 1815  
But let him want the air and ply the wing,  
Why, it breaks and bespatters him, what else ?  
Cardinal, if the Pope had pardoned me,  
And I walked out of prison through the crowd,  
It would not be your arm I should dare  
press ! 1820  
Then, if I got safe to my place again,  
How sad and sapless were the years to come !  
I go my old ways and find things grown grey ;  
You priests leer at me, old friends look askance,  
The mob's in love, I'll wager, to a man,  
With my poor young good beauteous mur-  
dered wife : 1825  
For hearts require instruction how to beat,  
And eyes, on warrant of the story, wax  
Wanton at portraiture in white and black  
Of dead Pompilia gracing ballad-sheet, 1830  
Which eyes, lived she unmurdered and unsung,  
Would never turn though she paced street as  
bare.  
As the mad penitent ladies do in France.  
My brothers quietly would edge me out  
Of use and management of things called  
mine ; 1835  
Do I command ? " You stretched command  
before !"  
Showanger ? " Anger little helped you once !"  
Advise ? " How managed you affairs of old ?"  
My very mother, all the while they gird,  
Turns eye up, gives confirmatory groan ; 1840  
For unsuccess, explain it how you will,  
Disqualifies you, makes you doubt yourself,  
—Much more, is found decisive by your  
friends.  
Beside, am I not fifty years of age ?  
What new leap would a life take, checked  
like mine 1845  
I' the spring at outset ? Where's my second  
chance ?  
Ay, but the babe . . . I had forgot my son,  
My heir ! Now for a burst of gratitude !  
There's some appropriate service to intone,  
Some *gaudeamus* and thanksgiving-psalm !  
Old, I renew my youth in him, and poor 1850  
Possess a treasure,—is not that the phrase ?  
Only I must wait patient twenty years—  
Nourishing all the while, as father ought,  
The excrescence with my daily blood of life:  
Does it respond to hope, such sacrifice,—  
Grows the'wen plump while I myself grow  
lean ? 1855  
Why, here's my son and heir in evidence,  
Who stronger, wiser, handsomer than I  
By fifty years, relieves me of each load,—  
Tames my hot horse, carries my heavy gun,  
Courts my coy mistress,—has his apt advice  
On house-economy, expenditure, 1860  
And what not. All which good gifts and  
great growth  
Because of my decline, he brings to bear  
On Guido, but half apprehensive how 1865  
He cumbers earth, crosses the brisk young  
Count,  
Who civilly would thrust him from the scene.  
Contrariwise, does the blood-offering fail ?  
There's an ineptitude, one blank the more 1870  
Added to earth in semblance of my child ?  
Then, this has been a costly piece of work,  
My life exchanged for his !—why he, not I,  
Enjoy the world, if no more grace accrue ?  
Dwarf me, what giant have you made of him ?  
I do not dread the disobedient son : 1875  
I know how to suppress rebellion there,  
Being not quite the fool my father was.  
But grant the medium measure of a man,  
The usual compromise 'twixt fool and sage,  
—You know—the tolerably obstinate, 1880

<sup>1</sup> *Helping Vienna*: Vienna was besieged in 1683 by the Turks under Mahomet IV., and relieved by John Sobieski. Kara Mustafa was the Turkish grand-vizier and general. Duke Charles of Lorraine commanded part of the relieving forces.

The not-so-much-perverse but you may train,  
 The true son-servant that, when parent bids  
 "Go work, son, in my vineyard!" makes  
 1884  
 "I go, Sir!"—Why, what profit in your son  
 Beyond the drudges you might subsidize,  
 Have the same work from, at a paul the head?  
 Look at those four young precious olive-plants  
 Reared at Vittiano,—not on flesh and blood,  
 These twenty years, but black bread and sour  
 wine! 1890  
 I bade them put forth tender branch, hook,  
 hold,  
 And hurt three enemies I had in Rome:  
 They did my hest as unreluctantly,  
 At promise of a dollar, as a son 1894  
 Adjured by mumping memories of the past.  
 No, nothing repays youth expended so—  
 Youth, I say, who am young still: grant but  
 leave  
 To live my life out, to the last I'd live  
 And die conceding age no right of youth!  
 It is the will runs the renewing nerve 1900  
 Through flaccid flesh that faints before the  
 time.  
 Therefore no sort of use for son have I—  
 Sick, not of life's feast but of steps to climb  
 To the house where life prepares her feast,—  
 of means 1904  
 To the end: for make the end attainable  
 Without the means,—my felish were like  
 yours.  
 A man may have an appetite enough  
 For a whole dish of robins ready cooked,  
 And yet lack courage to face sleet, pad snow,  
 And snare sufficiently for supper. 1910

Thus

The time's arrived when, ancient Roman-like,  
 I am bound to fall on my own sword: why  
 not  
 Say—Tuscan-like, more ancient, better still?  
 Will you hear truth can do no harm nor good?  
 I think I never was at any time 1916  
 A Christian, as you nickname all the world,  
 Me among others: truce to nonsense now!  
 Name me, a primitive religionist—  
 As should the aboriginal be 1920

I boast myself, Etruscan, Aretine,  
 One sprung,—your frigid Virgil's fieriest  
 word,<sup>1</sup>  
 From fauns and nymphs, trunks and the heart  
 of oak,  
 With,—for a visible divinity,—  
 The portent of a Jove Ægiocus 1926  
 Descried 'mid clouds, lightning and thunder,  
 couched  
 On topmost crag of your Capitoline:  
 'Tis in the Seventh Æneid,—what, the  
 Eighth?  
 Right,—thanks, Abate,—though the Chris-  
 tian's dumb,  
 The Latinist's vivacious in you yet! 1930  
 I know my grandsire had our tapestry  
 Marked with the motto, 'neath a certain shield,  
 Whereto his grandson presently will give gules  
 To vary azure. First we fight for faiths,  
 But get to shake hands at the last of all: 1935  
 Mine's your faith too,—in Jove Ægiocus!  
 Nor do Greek gods, that serve as supplement,  
 Jar with the simpler scheme, if understood.  
 We want such intermediary race  
 To make communication possible; 1940  
 The real thing were too lofty, we too low,  
 Midway hang these: we feel their use so plain  
 In linking height to depth, that we doff hat  
 And put no question nor pry narrowly  
 Into the nature hid behind the names. 1945  
 We grudge no rite the fancy may demand;  
 But never, more than needs, invent, refine,  
 Improve upon requirement, idly wise  
 Beyond the letter, teaching gods their trade,  
 Which is to teach us: we'll obey when  
 taught. 1950  
 Why should we do our duty past the need?  
 When the sky darkens, Jove is wroth,—say  
 prayer!  
 When the sun shines and Jove is glad,—sing  
 psalm!

<sup>1</sup> Virgil's fieriest word: Æneid VIII. 314.  
 315—  
 "Hæc nemora indigenæ Fauni Nymphæque  
 tenebant,  
 Gensque virum truncis et duro robore nata."  
 The reference which follows is to ll. 351-353  
 of the same book.

But wherefore pass prescription and devise  
Blood-offering for sweat-service, lend the  
rod 1935

A pungency through pickle of our own?  
Learned Abate,—no one teaches you  
What Venus means and who's Apollo here!  
I spare you, Cardinal,—but, though you  
wincede,

You know me, I know you, and both know  
that! 1960

So, if Apollo bids us fast, we fast,  
But where does Venus order we stop sense  
When Master Pietro<sup>1</sup> rhymes a pleasantry?  
Give alms prescribed on Friday: but, hold  
hand

Because your foe lies prostrate,—where's the  
word 1965

Explicit in the book' debars revenge?

The rationale of your scheme is just

"Pay toll here, there pursue your pleasure  
free!"

So do you turn to use the medium-powers,  
Mars and Minerva, Bacchus and the rest,  
And so are saved propitiating—whom? 1971

What all-good, all-wise and all-potent Jove  
Vexed by the very sins in man, himself  
Made life's necessity when man he made?  
Irrational bunglers! So, the living truth  
Revealed to strike Pan dead,<sup>2</sup> ducks low at  
last, 1976

Prays leave to hold its own and live good  
days

Provided it go masque grotesquely, called  
Christian not Pagan. Oh, you purged the  
sky

Of all gods save the One, the great and  
good, 1980

Clapped hands and triumphed! But the  
change came fast:

The inexorable need in man for life—

(Life, you may mulct and rinish to a grain  
Out of the lump, so that the grain but live)  
Laughed at your substituting death for life,

<sup>1</sup> *Master Pietro*: Pietro Aretino. See note  
on X. 654.

<sup>2</sup> *Revealed to strike Pan dead*: an allusion  
to the legend that, at the hour of the Cruci-  
fixion, certain Greek sailors heard a voice pro-  
claiming "Pan is dead."

And bade you do your worst: which worst  
was done 1986

In just that age styled primitive and pure  
When Saint this, Saint that, dutifully starved,  
Froze, fought with beasts, was beaten and  
abused

And finally ridded of his flesh by fire, 1990  
He kept life-long unspotted from the world!  
Next age, how goes the game, what mortal  
gives

His life and emulates Saint that, Saint this?  
Men mutter, make excuse or mutiny,  
In fine are minded all to leave the new, 1995  
Stick to the old,—enjoy old liberty,  
No prejudice in enjoyment, if you please,  
To the new profession: sin o' the sly, hence-  
forth!

The law stands though the letter kills: what  
then?

The spirit saves as unmistakeably. 2000  
Omniscience sees, Omnipotence could stop,  
Omnibenevolence pardons: it must be,  
Frown law its fiercest, there's a wink some-  
where!

Such was the logic in this head of mine:  
I, like the rest, wrote "poison" on my bread,  
But broke and ate:—said "Those that use  
the sword 2008  
"Shall perish by the same;" then stabbed  
my foe.

I stand on solid earth, not empty air:  
Dislodge me, let your Pope's crook hale me  
hence!

Not he, nor you! And I so pity both, 2010  
I'll make the true charge you want wit to  
make:

"Count Guido, who reveal our mystery,  
"And trace all issues to the love of life:  
"We having life to love and guard, like you,  
"Why did you put us upon self-defence?  
"You well knew what prompt pass-word  
would appease 2016

"The sentry's ire when folk infringed his  
bounds,

"And yet kept mouth shut: do you wonder  
then

If, in mere decency, he shot you dead?

"He can't have people play such pranks as  
 yours 2020  
 "Beneath his nose at noonday: you disdained  
 "To give him an excuse before the world 2023  
 "By crying 'I break rule to save our camp!'  
 "Under the old rule, such offence were  
 death; 2024  
 "And you had heard the Pontifex pronounce  
 "Since you slay foe and violate the form,  
 "Slaying turns murder, which were sacrifice  
 "Had you, while, say, law-suiting foe to  
 death,  
 "But raised an altar to the Unknown God  
 "Or else the Genius of the Vatican.' 2030  
 "Why then this pother?—all because the  
 Pope,  
 "Doing his duty, cried 'A foreigner,  
 "You scandalize the natives: here at Rome  
 "Romano vivitur more:<sup>1</sup> wise men, here,  
 "Put the Church forward and efface them-  
 selves. 2035  
 "The fit defence had been,—you stamped  
 on wheat,  
 "Intending all the time to trample tares,—  
 "Were fain extirpate, then, the heretic,  
 "You now find, in your haste was slain a  
 fool: 2039  
 "Nor Pietro, nor Violante, nor your wife  
 "Meant to breed up your babe a Molinist!  
 "Whence you are duly contrite. Not one  
 word  
 "Of all this wisdom did you urge: which  
 slip  
 "Death must atone for.'" 2044  
 So, let death atone!  
 So ends mistake, so end mistakers!—end  
 Perhaps to recommence,—how should I  
 know? 2047  
 Only, be sure, no punishment, no pain  
 Childish, preposterous, impossible,  
 But some such fate as Ovid could foresee,—  
*Byblis in fluvium*,<sup>2</sup> let the weak soul end  
 In water, *sed Lycaon in lupum*, but 2052  
<sup>1</sup> *Romano vivitur more*: "one does as Rome  
 does."  
<sup>2</sup> *Byblis in fluvium* . . . *Lycaon in lupum*:  
 titles of transformations recorded in Ovid's  
*Metamorphoses*.  
 The strong become a wolf for evermore!  
 Change that Pompilia to a puny stream  
 Fit to reflect the daisies on its bank! 2053  
 Let me turn wolf, be whole, and safe, for  
 once,—  
 Wallow in what is now a wolfishness  
 Coerced too much by the humanity  
 That's half of me as well! Grow out of man,  
 Glut the wolf-nature,—what remains but  
 grow 2059  
 Into the man again, be man indeed  
 And all man? Do I ring the changes right?  
 Deformed, transformed, reformed, informed,  
 conformed!  
 The honest instinct, pent and crossed through  
 life,  
 Let surge by death into a visible flow 2063  
 Of rapture: as the strangled thread of flame  
 Painfully winds, annoying and annoyed,  
 Malignant and maligned, thro' stone and ore,  
 Till earth exclude the stranger: vented  
 once,  
 It finds full play, is recognized a-top 2070  
 Some mountain as no such abnormal birth,  
 Fire for the mount, not streamlet for the vale!  
 Ay, of the water was that wife of mine—  
 Be it for good, be it for ill, no run 2074  
 O' the red thread through that insignificance!  
 Again, how she is at me with those eyes!  
 Away with the empty stare! Be holy still,  
 And stupid ever! Occupy your patch  
 Of private snow that's somewhere in what  
 world  
 May now be growing icy round your head,  
 And aguish at your foot-print,—freeze not  
 me, 2081  
 Dare follow not another step I take,  
 Not with so much as those detested eyes,  
 No, though they follow but to pray me pause  
 On the incline, earth's edge that's next to  
 hell! 2085  
 None of your abnegation of revenge!  
 Fly at me frank, tug while I tear again!  
 There's God, go tell Him, testify your worst!  
 Not she! There was no touch in her of  
 hate:  
 And it would prove her hell, if I reached  
 mine! 2089

To know I suffered, would still sadden her,  
Do what the angels might to make amends !  
Therefore there's either no such place as hell,  
Or thence shall I be thrust forth, for her  
sake, 2094

And thereby undergo three hells, not one—  
I who, with outlet for escape to heaven,  
Would tarry if such flight allowed my foe  
To raise his head, relieved of that firm foot  
Had pinned him to the fiery pavement else !  
So am I made, "who did not make  
myself : " 2100  
(How dared she rob my own lip of the  
word ?)

Beware me in what other world may be !—  
L'ompilia, who have brought me to this pass !  
All I know here, will I say there, and go  
Beyond the saying with the deed. Some  
use 2105

There cannot but be for a mood like mine,  
Implacable, persistent in revenge.  
She mandered "All is over and at end :  
"I go my own road, go you where God will !  
"Forgive you ? I forget you !" There's the  
saint 2110  
That takes your taste, you other kind of  
men !

How you had loved her ! Guido wanted  
skill

To value such a woman at her worth !  
Properly the instructed criticize

"What's here, you simpleton have tossed  
to take 2115

"Its chance i' the gutter ? This a daub,  
indeed ?

"Why, 'tis a Rafael that you kicked to rags !"

Perhaps so : some prefer the pure design :  
Give me my gorge of colour, glut of gold

In a glory round the Virgin made for me !

Titian's the man, not Monk Angelico 2121

Who traces you some timid chalky ghost

That turns the church into a charnel : ay,

Just such a pencil might depict my wife !

She,—since she, also, would not change  
herself,— 2125

Why could not she come in some heart-  
shaped cloud,

Rainbowed about with riches, royalty

Rimming her round, as round the tintless  
lawn

Guardingly runs the selva cloth of gold ?  
I would have left the faint fine gauze un-  
touched, 2130

Needle-worked over with its lily and rose,  
Let her bleach unmolested in the midst,  
Chill that selected solitary spot  
Of quietude she pleased to think was life.  
Purity, pallor grace the lawn no doubt 2135  
When there's the costly bordure to unthread  
And make again an ingot : but what's grace  
When you want meat and drink and clothes  
and fire ?

A tale comes to my mind that's apposite—  
Possibly true, probably false, a truth 2140

Such as all truths we live by, Cardinal !

'Tis said, a certain ancestor of mine

Followed—whoever was the potentate,

To Paynimrie, and in some battle, broke

Through more than due allowance of the  
foe, 2145

And, risking much his own life, saved the

lord's.

Battered and bruised, the Emperor scrambles  
up,

Rubs his eyes and looks round and sees my  
sire,

Picks a furze-sprig from out his hauberk-joint,  
(Token how near the ground went majesty)

And says "Take this, and if thou get safe  
home, 2151

"Plant the same in thy garden-ground to  
grow :

"Run thence an hour in a straight line, and  
stop :

"Describe a circle round (for central point)

"The furze aforesaid, reaching every way

"The length of that hour's run : I give it  
thee,— 2156

"The central point, to build a castle there,

"The space circumjacent, for fit demesne,

"The whole to be thy children's heritage,—

"Whom, for thy sake, bid thou wear furze  
on cap !" 2160

Those are my arms : we turned the furze a  
tree

To show more, and the greyhound tied thereto.

- Straining to start, means swift and greedy both ;
- He stands upon a triple mount of gold—  
By Jove, then, he's escaping from true gold  
And trying to arrive at empty air ! 2108  
Aha ! the fancy never crossed my mind !  
My father used to tell me, and subjoin  
"As for the castle, that took wings and flew :  
"The broad lands,—why, to traverse them  
to-day 2170  
"Scarce tasks my gouty feet, and in my prime  
"I doubt not I could stand and spit so far :  
"But for the furze, boy, fear no lack of  
that,  
"So long as fortune leaves one field to grub !  
"Wherefore, hurra for furze and loyalty !"  
What may I mean, where may the lesson  
lurk ? 2176  
"Do not bestow on man, by way of gift,  
"Furze without land for framework,—vaunt  
no grace  
"Of purity, no furze-sprig of a wife,  
"To me, i' the thick of battle for my bread,  
"Without some better dowry,—gold will  
do !" 2181  
No better gift than sordid muck ? Yes, Sirs !  
Many more gifts much better. Give them  
me !  
O those Olimpias bold, those Biancas brave,  
That brought a husband power worth Ormuz'  
wealth ! 2185  
Cried "Thou being mine, why, what but  
thine am I ?  
"Be thou to me law, right, wrong, heaven  
and hell !  
"Let us blend souls, blent, thou in me, to bid  
"Two bodies work one pleasure ! What are  
these  
"Called king, priest, father, mother, stranger,  
friend ? 2190  
"They fret thee or they frustrate ? Give the  
word—  
"Be certain they shall frustrate nothing more !  
"And who is this young florid foolishness  
"That holds thy fortune in his pigmy clutch,  
"—Being a prince and potency, forsooth !—  
"He hesitates to let the trifle go ? 2196  
"Let me bat seal up eye, sing ear to sleep
- "Sounder than Samson,—pounce thou on the  
prize  
"Shall slip from off my breast, and down  
couch-side,  
"And on to floor, and far as my lord's feet—  
"Where he stands in the shadow with the  
knife, 2201  
"Waiting to see what Delilah dares do !  
"Is the youth fair ? What is a man to me  
"Who am thy call-bird ? Twist his neck—  
my dupe's,—  
"Then take the breast shall turn a breast  
indeed !" 2206  
Such women are there ; and they marry whom ?  
Why, when a man has gone and hanged him-  
self  
Because of what he calls a wicked wife,—  
See, if the very turpitude bemoaned  
Prove not mere excellence the fool ignores !  
His monster is perfection,—Circe, sent 2211  
Straight from the sun, with wand the idiot  
blames  
As not an honest distaff to spin wool !  
O thou Lucrezia,<sup>1</sup> is it long to wait 2214  
Yonder where all the gloom is in a glow  
With thy suspected presence ?—virgin yet,  
Virtuous again, in face of what's to teach—  
Sin unimagined, unimaginable,—  
I come to claim my bride,—thy Borgia's self  
Not half the burning bridegroom I shall be !  
Cardinal, take away your crucifix ! 2221  
Abate, leave my lips alone,—they bite !  
Vainly you try to change what should not  
change,  
And shall not. I have bared, you bathe my  
heart— 2224  
It grows the stonier for your saving dew !  
You steep the substance, you would lubricate,  
In waters that but touch to petrify !  
You too are petrifications of a kind ;  
Move not a muscle that shows mercy. Rave  
Another twelve hours, every word were waste !  
I thought you would not slay impenitence,  
But teased, from men you slew, contrition  
first,— 2229

<sup>1</sup> Lucrezia : Lucrezia Borgia.

I thought you had a conscience. Cardinal,  
You know I am wronged!—wronged, say,  
and wronged, maintain. 2234

Was this strict inquisition made for blood  
When first you showed us scarlet on your back,  
Called to the College? Your straightforward  
way

To your legitimate end,—I think it passed  
Over a scantling of heads brained, hearts  
broke,

Lives trodden into dust! How otherwise?  
Such was the way o' the world, and so you  
walked. 2241

Does memory haunt your pillow? Not a whit.  
God wills you never pace your garden-path,  
One appetizing hour ere dinner-time,  
But your intrusion there treads out of life  
A universe of happy innocent things: 2246  
Feel you remorse about that damsel-fly  
Which buzzed so near your mouth and flapped  
your face?

You blotted it from being at a blow:  
It was a fly, you were a man, and more, 2250  
Lord of created things, so took your course.  
Manliness, mind,—these are things fit to save,  
Fit to brush fly from: why, because I take  
My course, must needs the Pope kill me?—  
kill you! 2254

You! for this instrument, he throws away,  
Is strong to serve a master, and were yours  
To have and hold and get much good from  
out!

The Pope who dooms me needs must die  
next year;

I'll tell you how the chances are supposed  
For his successor: first the Chamberlain,  
Old San Cesario,—Colloredo, next,— 2261  
Then, one, two, three, four, I refuse to name;  
After these, comes Altieri; then come you—  
Seventh on the list you come, unless . . .  
ha, ha, . 2264

How can a dead hand give a friend a lift?  
Are you the person to despise the help  
O' the head shall drop in pannier presently?  
So a child seesaws on or kicks away  
The fulcrum-stone that's all the sage requires  
To fit his lever to and move the world. 2270  
Cardinal, I adjure you in God's name,

Save my life, fall at the Pope's feet, set forth  
Things your own fashion, not in words like  
these

Made for a sense like yours who apprehend!  
Translate into the Court-conventional 2275  
"Count Guido must not die, is innocent!

"Fair, be assured! But what an he were  
foul,

"Blood-drenched and murder-crusted head  
to foot?

"Spare one whose death insults the Emperor,  
"Nay, outrages the Louis you so love!

"He has friends who will avenge him;  
enemies 2281

"Who will hate God now with impunity,  
"Missing the old coercive: would you send  
"A soul straight to perdition, dying frank

"An atheist?" Go and say this, for God's  
sake! 2285

—Why, you don't think I hope you'll say  
one word?

Neither shall I persuade you from your stand  
Nor you persuade me from my station: take  
Your crucifix away, I tell you twice!

Come, I am tired of silence! Pause enough!  
You have prayed: I have gone inside my  
soul 2291

And shut its door behind me: 'tis your torch  
Makes the place dark: the darkness let alone  
Grows tolerable twilight: one may grope  
And get to guess at length and breadth and  
depth. 2295

What is this fact I feel persuaded of—  
This something like a foothold in the sea,  
Although Saint Peter's bark scuds, billow-  
borne,

Leaves me to founder where it flung me first?  
Spite of your splashing, I am high and dry!  
God takes his own part in each thing He  
made; 2301

Made for a reason, He conserves his work,  
Gives each its proper instinct of defence.

My lamblike wife could neither bark nor bite,  
She bleated, bleated, till for pity pure 2305  
The village roused up, ran with pole and  
prong

To the rescue, and behold the wolf's at bay!



Shall he try bleating?—or take turn or two,  
Since the wolf owns some kinship with the  
fox,

And, failing to escape the foe by craft, 2310  
Give up attempt, die fighting quietly?

The last bad blow that strikes fire in at eye  
And on to brain, and so out, life and all,

How can it but be cheated of a pang  
If, fighting quietly, the jaws enjoy 2315

One re-embrace in mid back-bone they break,  
After their weary work thro' the foe's flesh?

That's the wolf-nature. Don't mistake my  
trope!

A Cardinal so qualmish? Eminence,  
My fight is figurative, blows i' the air, 2320

Brain-war with powers and principalities,  
Spirit-bravado, no real fisticuffs!

I shall not presently, when the knock comes,  
Cling to this bench nor claw the hangman's  
face,

No, trust me! I conceive worse lots than  
mine. 2325

Whether it be, the old contagious fit  
And plague o' the prison have surprised me  
too,

The appropriate drunkenness of the death-  
hour

Crept on my sense, kind work o' the wine  
and myrrh,— 2330

I know not,—I begin to taste my strength,  
Careless, gay even. What's the worth of life?

The Pope's dead now, my murderous old man,  
For Tozzi told me so: and you, forsooth—

Why, you don't think, Abate, do your best,  
You'll live a year more with that hacking  
cough 2335

And blotch of crimson where the cheek's a  
pit?

Tozzi has got you also down in book!  
Cardinal, only seventh of seventy near,

Is not one called Albano<sup>1</sup> in the lot?  
Go eat your heart, you'll never be a Pope!

Inform me, is it true you left your love, 2341  
A Pucci, for promotion in the church?

She's more than in the church,—in the  
churchyard!

<sup>1</sup> One called Albano: the next pope was  
Giovanni Francesco Albani.

Plautilla Puoci, your affianced bride, 2344

Has dust now in the eyes that held the love,—  
And Martinez, suppose they make you Pope,

Stops that with *velo*,—so, enjoy yourself!  
I see you all reel to the rock, you waves—

Some forthright, some describe a sinuous  
track,

Some, crested brilliantly, with heads above,  
Some in a strangled swirl sunk who knows

how, 2351  
But all bound whither the main-current sets,  
Rockward, an end in foam for all of you!

What if I be o'eraken, pushed to the front  
By all you crowding smoother souls be-

hind, 2355  
And reach, a minute sooner than was meant,  
The boundary whereon I break to mist?

Go to! the smoothest safest of you all,  
Most perfect and compact wave in my train,

Spite of the blue tranquillity above, 2360  
Spite of the breadth before of lapsing peace,  
Where broods the halcyon and the fish leaps

free,  
Will presently begin to feel the prick

At lazy heart, the push at torpid brain,  
Will rock vertiginously in turn, and reel, 2365

And, emulative, rush to death like me.  
Later or sooner by a minute then,

So much for the untimeliness of death!  
And, as regards the manner that offends,

The rude and rough, I count the same for  
gain. 2370

Be the act harsh and quick! Undoubtedly  
The soul's condensed and, twice itself, expands

To burst thro' life, by alternation due,  
Into the other state whate'er it prove.

You never know what life means till you die:  
Even throughout life, 'tis death that makes

life live, 2375  
Gives it whatever the significance.

For see, on your own ground and argument,  
Suppose life had no death to fear, how find

A possibility of nobleness 2380  
In man, prevented daring any more?

What's love, what's faith without a worst to  
dread?

Lack-lustre jewelry! but faith and love  
With death behind them bidding tie or die—

Put such a foil at back, the sparkle's born !  
From out myself how the strange colours  
come !

Is there a new rule in another world ?  
Be sure I shall resign myself : as here  
I recognized no law I could not see,  
I here, what I see, I shall acknowledge  
too :

On earth I never took the Pope for God,  
In heaven I shall scarce take God for the  
Pope.

Unmanned, remanned : I hold it probable—  
With something changeless at the heart of me  
To know me by, some nucleus that's my-  
self :

Accretions did it wrong? Away with them—  
You soon shall see the use of fire !

Till when,

All that was, is ; and must forever be.  
Nor is it in me to unhate my hates,—  
I use up my last strength to strike once more  
Old Pietro in the wine-house-gossip-face,  
To trample underfoot the whine and wile  
Of beast Violence,—and I grow one gorge  
To loathingly reject Pompilia's pale  
Poison my hasty hunger took for food.

A strong tree wants no wreaths about its  
trunk,

No cloying cups, no sickly sweet of scent,  
But sustenance at root, a bucketful.

How else lived that Athenian<sup>1</sup> who died so,  
Drinking hot bull's blood, fit for men's like  
me ?

I lived and died a man, and take man's  
chance,

Honest and bold : right will be done to such.

Who are these you have let descend my stair?  
Ha, their accursed psalm ! Lights at the  
sill !

Is it "Open" they dare bid you? Treachery!  
Sirs, have I spoken one word all this while  
Out of the world of words I had to say?

<sup>1</sup> That Athenian : Themistocles, who was said to have killed himself by drinking bull's blood, which the ancients believed to be a poison.

Not one word ! All was folly—I laughed  
and mocked !

Sirs, my first true word, all truth and no lie,  
Is—save me notwithstanding ! Life is all !  
I was just stark mad,—let the madman live  
Pressed by as many chains as you please pile !  
Don't open ! Hold me from them ! I am  
yours,

I am the Granduke's—no, I am the Pope's !  
Abate, — Cardinal, — Christ, — Maria, —  
God, . . .

Pompilia, will you let them murder me ?

## XII.—THE BOOK AND THE RING.

HERE were the end, had anything an end :  
Thus, lit and launched, up and up roared and  
soared

A rocket, till the key o' the vault was reached,  
And wide heaven held, a breathless minute-  
space,

In brilliant usurpature : thus caught spark, s  
Rushed to the height, and hung at full of  
fame

Over men's upturned faces, ghastly thence,  
Our glaring Guido : now decline must be.  
In its explosion, you have seen his act,  
By my power—may-be, judged it by your  
own,—

Or composite as good orbs prove, or crammed  
With worse ingredients than the Wormwood  
Star.<sup>2</sup>

The act, over and ended, falls and fades :  
What was once seen, grows what is now  
described,

Then talked of, told about, a tinge the less  
In every fresh transmission ; till it melts, w  
Trickles in silent orange or wan grey  
Across our memory, dies and leaves all  
dark,

And presently we find the stars again.  
Follow the main streaks, meditate the mode  
Of brightness, how it hastes to blend with  
black !

<sup>2</sup> The Wormwood Star : Rev. viii. xi.

After that February Twenty-Two,  
 Since our salvation, Sixteen-Ninety-Eight,  
 Of all reports that were, or may have been,  
 Concerning those the day killed or let live, 25  
 Four I count only. Take the first that comes.  
 A letter from a stranger, man of rank,  
 Venetian visitor at Rome,—who knows,  
 On what pretence of busy idleness?  
 Thus he begins on evening of that day. 30

"Here are we at our end of Carnival;  
 "Prodigious gaiety and monstrous mirth,  
 "And constant shift of entertaining show:  
 "With influx, from each quarter of the globe,  
 "Of strangers nowise wishful to be last 35  
 "I' the struggle for a good place presently  
 "When that befalls fate cannot long defer.  
 "The old Pope totters on the verge o' the  
 grave:  
 "You see, Malpichi understood far more  
 "Than Tozzi how to treat the ailments: age,  
 "No question, renders these inveterate. 41  
 "Cardinal Spada, actual Minister,  
 "Is possible Pope; I wager on his head,  
 "Since those four entertainments of his niece  
 "Which set all Rome a-stare: Pope prob-  
 ably— 45  
 "Though Colloredo has his backers too,  
 "And San Cesario makes one doubt at times:  
 "Altieri will be Chamberlain at most.

"A week ago the sun was warm like May,  
 "And the old man took daily exercise 50  
 "Along the river-side; he loves to see  
 "That Custom-house he built upon the bank,  
 "For, Naples born, his tastes are maritime:  
 "But yesterday he had to keep in-doors  
 "Because of the outrageous rain that fell. 55  
 "On such days the good soul has fainting-fits,  
 "Or lies in stupor, scarcely makes believe  
 "Of minding business, fumbles at his beads.  
 "They say, the trust that keeps his heart alive  
 "Is that, by lasting till December next, 60  
 "He may hold Jubilee a second time,  
 "And, twice in one reign, ope the Holy Doors.  
 "By the way, somebody responsible.  
 "Assures me that the King of France has writ

"Fresh orders: Fénelon will be condemned.<sup>1</sup>  
 "The Cardinal makes a wry face enough, 66  
 "Having a love for the delinquent: still,  
 "He's the ambassador, must press the point.  
 "Have you a wager too, dependent here?

"Now, from such matters to divert awhile,  
 "Hear of to-day's event which crowns the  
 week, 71

"Casts all the other wagers into shade.  
 "Tell Dandolo I owe him fifty drops  
 "Of heart's blood in the shape of gold  
 zecchines! 74  
 "The Pope has done his worst: I have to pay  
 "For the execution of the Count, by Jove!  
 "Two days since, I reported him as safe,  
 "Re-echoing the conviction of all Rome:  
 "Who could suspect its one deaf ear—the  
 Pope's?

"But prejudices grow insuperable, 80  
 "And that old enmity to Austria, that  
 "Passion for France and France's pageant-  
 king  
 "(Of which, why pause to multiply the proofs  
 "Now scandalously rife in Europe's mouth?)  
 "These fairly got the better in our man 85  
 "Of justice, prudence, and *esprit de corps*,  
 "And he persisted in the butchery.  
 "Also, 'tis said that in his latest walk  
 "To that Dogana-by-the-Bank he built,  
 "The crowd,—he suffers question, unre-  
 buked,— 90

"Asked, 'Whether murder was a privilege  
 "Only reserved for nobles like the Count?'  
 "And he was ever mindful of the mob.  
 "Martinez, the Caesarian Minister,  
 "—Who used his best endeavours to spare  
 blood, 95  
 "And strongly pleaded for the life 'of one,'  
 "Urged he, 'I may have dined at table  
 with!'—  
 "He will not soon forget the Pope's rebuff,  
 "—Feels the slight sensibly, I promise you!  
 "And but for the dissuasion of two eyes 100

<sup>1</sup> *Fénelon will be condemned*: Fénelon's *Explication des Maximes des Saints* was condemned by Pope Innocent in 1699 for its advocacy of Quietism.

- "That make with him foul weather or fine day,  
 "He had abstained, nor graced the spectacle:  
 "As it was, barely would he condescend  
 "Look forth from the *palchetto*<sup>1</sup> where he sat 104  
 "Under the Pincian: we shall hear of this.  
 "The substituting, too, the People's Square  
 "For the out-o'-the-way old quarter by the Bridge,  
 "Was meant as a conciliatory sop  
 "To the mob; it gave one holiday the more.  
 "But the French Embassy might unfurl flag,— 110  
 "Still the good luck of France to fling a foe!  
 "Cardinal Bouillon triumphs properly.  
 "Palchetti were erected in the Place,  
 "And houses, at the edge of the Three Streets,  
 "Let their front windows at six dollars each:  
 "Anguisciola, that patron of the arts, 116  
 "Hired one; our Envoy Contarini too.  
 "Now for the thing; no sooner the decree  
 "Gone forth,—'tis four-and-twenty hours ago,—  
 "Than Acciaiuoli and Panciatichi, 120  
 "Old friends, indeed compatriots of the man,  
 "Being pitched on as the couple properest  
 "To intimate the sentence yesternight,  
 "Were closeted ere cock-crow with the Count.  
 "They both report their efforts to dispose  
 "The unhappy nobleman for ending well,  
 "Despite the natural sense of injury, 127  
 "Were crowned at last with a complete success.  
 "And when the Company of Death arrived  
 "At twenty-hours,—the way they reckon here,— 130  
 "We say, at sunset, after dinner-time,—  
 "The Count was led down, hoisted up on car,  
 "Last of the five, as heinous, you know:  
 "Yet they allowed one whole car to each man.  
 "His intrepidity, nay, nonchalance, 138  
 "As up he stood and down he sat himself,  
 "Struck admiration into those who saw.  
 "Then the procession started, took the way  
 "From the New Prisons by the Pilgrim's Street, 139  
 "The street of the Governo, Pasquin's Street,  
 "(Where was stuck up, 'mid other epigrams,  
 "A quatrain . . . but of all that, presently!)  
 "The Place Navona, the Pantheon's Place,  
 "Place of the Column, last the Corso's length,  
 "And so debouched thence at Mannaia's foot 146  
 "T' the Place o' the People. As is evident,  
 "(Despite the malice,—plainly meant, I fear,  
 "By this abrupt change of locality,—  
 "The Square's no such bad place to head and hang)  
 "We had the titillation as we sat 150  
 "Assembled, (quality in conclave, ha?)  
 "Of, minute after minute, some report  
 "How the slow show was winding on its way.  
 "Now did a car run over, kill a man, 154  
 "Just opposite a pork-shop numbered Twelve:  
 "And bitter were the outcries of the mob  
 "Against the Pope: for, but that he forbids  
 "The Lottery, why, Twelve were Tern Quatern!  
 "Now did a beggar by Saint Agnes, lame  
 "From his youth up, recover use of leg, 160  
 "Through prayer of Guido as he glanced that way:  
 "So that the crowd near crammed his hat with coin.  
 "Thus was kept up excitement to the last,  
 "—Not an abrupt out-bolting, as of yore,  
 "From Castle, over Bridge and on to block, 166  
 "And so all ended ere you well could wink!  
 "To mount the scaffold-steps, Guido was last  
 "Here also, as atrocious, in crime.  
 "We hardly noticed how the peasants died,  
 "They dangled somehow soon to right and left, 170  
 "And we remained all ears and eyes, could give  
 "Ourselves to Guido undividedly,  
 "As he harangued the multitude beneath.  
 "He begged forgiveness on the part of God,  
 "And fair construction of his act from men."

<sup>1</sup> *Palchetto*: stage or scaffold.

- "Still, though the earth should swallow him  
who swears
- "And me who make the mischief, in must  
slip— 330
- "My boy, your godson, fat-chaps Hyacinth,  
"Enjoyed the sight while. Papa plodded  
here.
- "I promised him, the rogue, a month ago,  
"The day his birthday was, of all the days,  
"That if I failed to save Count Guido's head,  
"Cinuccio should at least go see it chopped  
"From trunk—'So, latinize your thanks!'  
quoth I. 337
- "That I prefer, *hoc malim*, raps me out  
"The rogue: you notice the subjunctive?  
Ah!
- "Accordingly he sat there, bold in box, 340  
"Proud as the Pope behind the peacock-fans:  
"Whereon a certain lady-patroness  
"For whom I manage things (my boy in  
front,  
"Her Marquis sat the third in evidence;  
"Boys have no eyes nor ears save for the  
show) 345
- "This time, Cintino, was her sportive  
word,  
"When whiz and thump went axe and  
mowed lay man,  
"And folk could fall to the suspended chat,  
"This time, you see, Bottini rules the roast,  
"Nor can Papa with all his eloquence 350  
"Be reckoned on to help as heretofore!  
"Whereat Cinone pouts; then, sparkishly—  
"Papa knew better than aggrieve his Pope,  
"And baulk him of his grudge against our  
Count,  
"Else he'd have argued-off Bottini's' . . .  
what? 355
- "His nose,—the rogue! well parried of  
the boy!
- "He's long since out of Cæsar (eight years  
old)  
"And as for tripping in Eutropius . . .  
well,  
"Reason the more that we strain every nerve  
"To do him justice, mould a model-mouth,  
"A Bartolus-cum-Baldo for next age: 361  
"For that I purse the pieces, work the brain,
- "And want both Gomez and the marriage-  
case,  
"Success with which shall plaster aught of  
pate  
"That's broken in me by Bottini's flail, 365  
"And bruise his own, belike, that wags and  
brags.
- "*Adverti supplico humiliter*  
"Quot!<sup>1</sup> don't the fungus see, the fop divine  
"That one hand drives two horses, left and  
right? 369
- "With this rein did I rescue from the ditch  
"The fortune of our Franceschini, keep  
"Unsplashed the credit of a noble House,  
"And set the fashionable cause at Rome  
"A-prancing till bystanders shouted 'ware!'  
"The other rein's judicious management 375  
"Suffered old Somebody to keep the pace,  
"Hobblingly play the roadster: who but he  
"Had his opinion, was not led by the nose  
"In leash of quibbles strung to look like law!  
"You'll soon see,—when I go to pay  
devoir 380
- "And compliment him on confuting me,—  
"If, by a back-swing of the pendulum,  
"Grace be not, thick and threefold, conse-  
quent.
- "I must decide as I see proper, Don!  
"I'm Pope, I have my inward lights for  
guide. 385
- "Had learning been the matter in dispute,  
"Could eloquence avail to gainsay fact,  
"Yours were the victory, be comforted!  
"Cinuzzo will be gainer by it all.  
"Quick then with Gomez, hot and hot next  
case!" 390
- Follows, a letter, takes the other side.  
Tall blue-eyed Fisc whose head is capped  
with cloud,  
Doctor Bottini,—to no matter who,  
Writes on the Monday two days afterward.  
Now shall the honest championship of right,  
Crowned with success, enjoy at last, un-  
blamed, 395  
Moderate triumph! Now shall eloquence  
<sup>1</sup> *Adverti*, &c.: "I humbly beg that it may  
be noticed."

- Poured forth in fancied floods for virtue's sake,  
 (The print is sorrowfully dyked and dammed,  
 But shows where fain the unbridled force would flow, 400  
 Finding a channel)—now shall this refresh  
 The thirsty donor with a drop or two!  
 Here has been truth at issue with a lie:  
 Let who gained truth the day have handsome pride  
 In his own prowess! Eh! What ails the man? 405
- "Well, it is over, ends as I foresaw:  
 "Easily proved, Pompilia's innocence!  
 "Catch them entrusting Guido's guilt to me  
 "Who had, as usual, the plain truth to plead. 409  
 "I always knew the clearness of the stream  
 "Would show the fish so thoroughly, child might prong  
 "The clumsy monster: with no mud to splash,  
 "Small credit to lynx-eye and lightning-spear!  
 "This Guido,—(much sport he contrived to make, 414  
 "Who at first twist, preamble of the cord,  
 "Turned white, told all, like the poltroon he was!)—  
 "Finished, as you expect, a penitent,  
 "Fully confessed his crime, and made amends,  
 "And, edifying Rome last Saturday,  
 "Died like a saint, poor devil! That's the man 420  
 "The gods still give to my antagonist:  
 "Imagine how Arcangeli claps wing  
 "And crows! 'Such formidable facts to face,  
 "So naked to attack, my client here, 424  
 "And yet I kept a month the Fisc at bay,  
 "And in the end had foiled him of the prize  
 "By this arch-stroke, this plea of privilege,  
 "But that the Pope must gratify his whim,  
 "Put in his word, poor old man,—let it pass!  
 "—Such is the cue to which all Rome responds. 430
- "What with the plain truth given me to uphold,  
 "And, should I let truth slip, the Pope at hand  
 "To pick up, steady her on legs again,  
 "My office turns a pleasantry indeed!  
 "Not that the burly boaster did one jot 435  
 "O' the little was to do—young Spreti's work!  
 "But for him,—mannikin and dandiprat,  
 "Mere candle-end and inch of cleverness  
 "Stuck on Arcangeli's save-all,—but for him  
 "The spruce young Spreti, what is bad were worse! 440
- "I looked that Rome should have the natural gird  
 "At advocate with case that proves itself;  
 "I knew Arcangeli would grin and brag:  
 "But what say you to one impertinence  
 "Might move a stone? That monk, you are to know, 445  
 "That barefoot Augustinian whose report  
 "O' the dying woman's words did detriment  
 "To my best points it took the freshness from,  
 "—That meddler preached to purpose yesterday  
 "At San Lorenzo as a winding-up 450  
 "O' the show which proved a treasure to the church.  
 "Out comes his sermon smoking from the press:  
 "Its text—'Let God be true, and every man  
 "A liar'—and its application, this  
 "The longest-winded of the paragraphs, 455  
 "I straight unstitch, tear out and treat you with:  
 "'Tis piping hot and posts through Rome to-day.  
 "Remember it, as I engage to do!
- "But if you rather be disposed to see  
 "In the result of the long trial here,— 460  
 "This dealing doom to guilt and doling praise  
 "To innocency,—any proof that truth  
 "May look for vindication from the world,

- "Much will you have misread the signs, I say.  
 "God, who seems acquiescent in the main  
 "With those who add 'So will he ever  
     sleep'— 466  
 "Flutters their foolishness from time to time,  
 "Puts forth His right-hand recognizably;  
 "Even as, to fools who deem He needs must  
     right  
 "Wrong on the instant, as if earth were  
     heaven, 470  
 "He wakes remonstrance—'Passive, Lord,  
     how long?'  
 "Because Pompilia's purity prevails,  
 "Conclude you, all truth triumphs in the end?  
 "So might those old inhabitants of the ark,  
 "Witnessing haply their dove's safe return,  
 "Pronounce there was no danger, all the  
     while 476  
 "O' the deluge, to the creature's counterparts,  
 "Aught that beat wing i' the world, was  
     white or soft,—  
 "And that the lark, the thrush, the culver<sup>1</sup>  
     too,  
 "Might equally have traversed air, found  
     earth, 480  
 "And brought back olive-branch in un-  
     harm'd bill.  
 "Methinks I hear the Patriarch's warning  
     voice—  
 "'Though this one breast, by miracle, return,  
 "'No wave rolls by, in all the waste, but  
     bears  
 "'Within it some dead dove-like thing as  
     dear, 485  
 "'Beauty made blank and harmlessness de-  
     stroyed!'  
 "How many chaste and noble sister-fames  
 "Wanted the extricating hand, so lie  
 "Strangled, for one Pompilia proud above  
 "The welter, plucked from the world's  
     calumny, 490  
 "Stupidity, simplicity,—who cares?  
  
 "Romans! An elder race possessed your land  
 "Long ago, and a false faith lingered still,  
 "As shades do, though the morning-star be  
     out.  
     Culver: wood-pigeon.
- "Doubtless some pagan of the twilight-day  
 "Has often pointed to a cavern-mouth 496  
 "Obnoxious to beholders, hard by Rome,  
 "And said,—nor he a bad man, no, nor fool,  
 "Only a man born blind like all his mates,—  
 "'Here skulk in safety, lurk, defying law, 500  
 "'The devotees to execrable creed,  
 "'Adoring—with what culture . . . Jove,  
     avert  
 "'Thy vengeance from us worshippers of  
     thee! . . .  
 "'What rites obscene—their idol-god, an  
     Ass!  
 "So went the word forth, so acceptance found,  
 "So century re-echoed century, 506  
 "Cursed the accursed,—and so, from sire to  
     son,  
 "You Romans cried 'The offscourings of  
     our race  
 "'Corrupt within the depths there: filthy fiends  
 "'Perform a temple-service o'er the dead:  
 "'Child, gather garment round thee, pass  
     nor pry!' 511  
 "Thus groined your generations: till the  
     time  
 "Grew ripe, and lightning had revealed,  
     belike,—  
 "Thro' crevice peeped into by curious fear,—  
 "Some object even fear could recognize 515  
 "I' the place of spectres; on the illumined  
     wall,  
 "To-wit, some nook, tradition talks about,  
 "Narrow and short, a corpse's length, no  
     more:  
 "And by it, in the due receptacle,  
 "The little rude brown lamp of earthenware,  
 "The cruse, was meant for flowers but now  
     held blood, 521  
 "The rough-scratched palm-branch, and the  
     legend left  
 "Pro Christo. Then the mystery lay clear:  
 "The abhorred one was a martyr all the time,  
 "Heaven's saint whereof earth was not  
     worthy. What? 525  
 "Do you continue in the old belief?  
 "Where blackness bides unbroke, must  
     devils brood?  
 "Is it so certain not another cell

- "O' the myriad that make up the catacomb  
 "Contains some saint a second flash would  
 show? 530  
 "Will you ascend into the light of day  
 "And, having recognized a martyr's shrine,  
 "Go join the votaries that gape around  
 "Each vulgar god that awes the market  
 place?  
 "Are these the objects of your praising?  
 See! 531  
 "In the outstretched right hand of Apollo,  
 there,  
 "Lies screened a scorpion: housed amid the  
 folds  
 "Of Juno's mantle lurks a centipede!  
 "Each statue of a god were fittier styled  
 "Demon and devil. Glorify no brass 540  
 "That shines like burnished gold in noonday  
 glare,  
 "For fools! Be otherwise instructed, you!  
 "And preferably ponder, ere ye judge,  
 "Each incident of this strange human play  
 "Privily acted on a theatre 545  
 "That seemed secure from every gaze but  
 God's,—  
 "Till, of a sudden, earthquake laid wall low  
 "And let the world perceive wild work inside  
 "And how, in petrification of surprise,  
 "The actors stood,—raised arm and planted  
 foot,— 550  
 "Mouth as it made, eye as it evidenced,  
 "Despairing shriek, triumphant hate, —  
 transfixed,  
 "Both he who takes and she who yields the  
 life.  
 "As ye become spectators of this scene, 554  
 "Watch obscuration of a pearl-pure fame  
 "By vapoury films, enwoven circumstance,  
 "—A soul made weak by its pathetic want  
 "Of just the first apprenticeship to sin  
 "Which thenceforth makes the sinning soul  
 secure  
 "From all foes save itself, souls' cruellest  
 foe,— 560  
 "Since egg turned snake needs fear no ser-  
 pentry,—  
 "As ye behold this web of circumstance  
 "Deepen the more for every thrill and throe,  
 "Convulsive effort to disperse the films  
 "And disemmesh the fame o' the martyr,—  
 mark 565  
 "How all those means, the unfriended one  
 pursues,  
 "To keep the treasure trusted to her breast,  
 "Each struggle in the flight from death to  
 life,  
 "How all, by procurement of the powers  
 "Of darkness, are transformed,—no single  
 ray, 570  
 "Shot forth to show and save the inmost star,  
 "But, passed as through hell's prism, pro-  
 ceeding black  
 "To the world that hates white: as ye  
 watch, I say,  
 "Till dusk and such defacement grow eclipse  
 "By,—marvellous perversity of man!— 575  
 "The inadequacy and inaptitude  
 "Of that self-same machine, that very law  
 "Man vaunts, devised to dissipate the gloom,  
 "Rescue the drowning orb from calumny,  
 "—Hear law, appointed to defend the  
 just, 580  
 "Submit, for best defence, that wickedness  
 "Was bred of flesh and innate with the bone  
 "Borne by Pompilia's spirit for a space,  
 "And no mere chance fault, passionate and  
 brief: 584  
 "Finally, when ye find,—after this touch  
 "Of man's protection which intends to mar  
 "The last pin-point of light and damn the  
 disc,—  
 "One wave of the hand of God amid the  
 worlds  
 "Bid vapour vanish, darkness flee away, 588  
 "And let the vexed star culminate in peace  
 "Approachable no more by earthly mist—  
 "What I call God's hand,—you, perhaps,—  
 mere chance  
 "Of the true instinct of an old good man  
 "Who happens to hate darkness and love  
 light,— 594  
 "In whom too was the eye that saw, not dim,  
 "The natural force to do the thing he saw,  
 "Nowise abated,—both by miracle,—  
 "All this well pondered,—I demand assent



- "To the enunciation of my text 599  
 "In face of one proof more that 'God is true  
 "'And every man a liar'—that who trusts  
 "To human testimony for a fact  
 "Gets this sole fact—himself is proved a fool;  
 "Man's speech being false, if but by consequence  
 "That only strength is true: while man is weak, 605  
 "And, since truth seems reserved for heaven not earth,  
 "Plagued here by earth's prerogative of lies,  
 "Should learn to love and long for what, one day,  
 "Approved by life's probation, he may speak.  
 "For me, the weary and worn, who haply prompt 610  
 "To mirth or pity, as I move the mood,—  
 "A friar who glides unnoticed to the grave,  
 "With these bare feet, coarse robe and rope-girt waist,—  
 "I have long since renounced your world, ye know: 614  
 "Yet what forbids I weigh the prize forgone,  
 "The worldly worth? I dare, as I were dead,  
 "Disinterestedly judge this and that  
 'Good ye account good: but God tries the heart.  
 "Still, if you question me of my content  
 "At having put each human pleasure by, 620  
 "I answer, at the urgency of truth:  
 "As this world seems, I dare not say I know  
 "—Apart from Christ's assurance which decides—  
 "Whether I have not failed to taste much joy.  
 "For many a doubt will fain perturb my choice— 625  
 "Many a dream of life spent otherwise—  
 "How human love, in varied shapes, might work  
 "As glory, or as rapture, or as grace:  
 "How conversancy with the books that teach,  
 "The arts that help,—how, to grow good and great, 630  
 "Rather than simply good, and bring thereby  
 'Goodness to breathe and live, nor, born i' the brain,  
 'Die there,—how these and many another gift  
 'Of life are precious though abjured by me.  
 'But, for one prize, best meed of mightiest man, 635  
 'Arch-object of ambition,—earthly praise,  
 'Repute o' the world, the flourish of loud trump,  
 'The softer social fluting,—Oh, for these,  
 '—No, my friends! Fame,—that bubble which, world-wide  
 'Each blows and bids his neighbour lend a breath, 640  
 'That so he haply may behold thereon  
 'One more enlarged distorted false fool's-face,  
 'Until some glassy nothing grown as big  
 'Send by a touch the imperishable to suds,— 644  
 'No, in renouncing fame, my loss was light,  
 'Choosing obscurity, my chance was well!"  
 Didst ever touch such ampollosity  
 As the monk's own bubble, let alone its spite?  
 What's his speech for, but just the fame he flouts? 648  
 How he dares reprehend both high and low,  
 Nor stoops to turn the sentence "God is true  
 "And every man a liar—save the Pope  
 "Happily reigning—my respects to him!"  
 And so round off the period. Molinism  
 Simple and pure! To what pitch get we next? 655  
 I find that, for first pleasant consequence,  
 Gomez, who had intended to appeal  
 From the absurd decision of the Court,  
 Declines, though plain enough his privilege,  
 To call on help from lawyers any more—  
 Resolves earth's liars may possess the world  
 Till God have had sufficiency of both: 660  
 So may I whistle for my job and fee!  
 But, for this virulent and rabid monk,—  
 If law be an inadequate machine, 665  
 And advocacy, froth and impotence,  
 We shall soon see, my blatant brother! That's  
 Exactly what I hope to show your sort!

For, by a veritable piece of luck,  
The providence, you monks round period  
with,

All may be gloriously retrieved. Perpend !  
That Monastery of the Convertites  
Whereto the Court consigned Pompilia first,  
—Observe, if convertite, why, sinner then,  
Or what's the pertinency of award ?—  
And whither she was late returned to die,  
—Still in their jurisdiction, mark again !—  
That thrifty Sisterhood, for perquisite,  
Claims every piece whereof may die possessed  
Each sinner in the circuit of its walls.  
Now, this Pompilia seeing that, by death  
O' the couple, all their wealth devolved on her,  
Straight utilized the respite ere decease,  
By regular conveyance of the goods  
She thought her own, to will and to de-  
vise,—

Gave all to friends, Tighetti and the like,  
In trust for him she held her son and heir,  
Gaetano,—trust which ends with infancy :  
So willing and devising, since assured  
The justice of the Court would presently  
Confirm her in her rights and exculpate,  
Re-integrate and rehabilitate—  
Place her as, through my pleading, now she  
stands.

But here's the capital mistake : the Court  
Found Guido guilty,—but pronounced no  
word

About the innocence of his wife :  
I grounded charge on broader base, I hope !  
No matter whether wife be true or false,  
The husband must not push aside the law,  
And punish of a sudden : that's the point :  
Gather from out my speech the contrary !  
It follows that Pompilia, unrelieved  
By formal sentence from imputed fault,  
Remains unfit to have and to dispose  
Of property which law provides shall lapse.  
Wherefore the Monastery claims its due :  
And whose, pray, whose the office, but the  
Fisc's ?

Who but I institute procedure next  
Against the person of dishonest life,  
Pompilia whom last week I sainted so ?  
I it is teach the monk what scripture means,

And that the tongue should prove a two-edged  
sword,

No axe sharp one side, blunt the other  
way,

Like what amused the town at Guido's cost !  
*Astraa redux* ! I've a second chance  
Before the self-same Court o' the Governor  
Who soon shall see volte-face and chop,  
change sides.

Accordingly, I charge you on your life,  
Send me with all despatch the judgment late  
O' the Florence Rota Court, confirmative  
O' the prior judgment at Arezzo, clenched  
Again by the Granducal signature,  
Wherein Pompilia is convicted, doomed,  
And only destined to escape through flight  
The proper punishment. Send me the piece,—  
I'll work it ! And this foul-mouthed friar  
shall find

His Noah's-dove that brought the olive back  
Turn into quite the other sooty scout,  
The raven, Noah first put forth the ark,  
Which never came back but ate carcasses !  
No adequate machinery in law ?  
No power of life and death i' the learned  
tongue ?

Methinks I am already at my speech,  
Startle the world with "Thou, Pompilia,  
thus ?

"How is the fine gold of the Temple dim !"  
And so forth. But the courier bids me close,  
And clip away one joke that runs through  
Rome,

Side by side with the sermon which I send.  
How like the heartlessness of the old hunks  
Arcangeli ! His Count is hardly cold,  
The client whom his blunders sacrificed,  
When somebody must needs describe the  
scene—

How the procession ended at the church  
That boasts the famous relic :<sup>1</sup> quoth our  
brute,

<sup>1</sup> *The famous relic* : see line 184. *Umbilicus*  
also means an ornamental knob at the end of  
the stick round which books, in Greek and  
Roman times, used to be rolled ; hence the  
phrase *ad umbilicum pervenire* (Martial, iv.  
89) meant "to reach the end" of a book.

"Why, that's just Martial's phrase for 'make an end'—

"*Ad umbilicum sic perventum est!*"

The callous dog,—let who will cut off head,  
He cuts a joke and cares no more than so!  
I think my speech shall modify his mirth.

"How is the fine gold dim!"—but send the piece!

Alack, Bottini, what is my next word  
But death to all that hope? The Instrument  
Is plain before me, print that ends my Book  
With the definitive verdict of the Court,  
Dated September, six months afterward,

(Such trouble and so long the old Pope gave!)

"In restitution of the perfect fame

"Of dead Pompilia, *quondam* Guido's wife,

"And warrant to her representative

"Domenico Tighetti, barred hereby,

"While doing duty in his guardianship,

"From all molesting, all disquietude,

"Each perturbation and vexation brought

"Or threatened to be brought against the heir

"By the Most Venerable Convent called

"Saint Mary Magdalen o' the Convertites

"I' the Corso."

Justice done a second time!

Well judged, Marc Antony, *Locum-tenens*

O' the Governor, a Venturini too!

For which I save thy name,—last of the list!

Next year but one, completing his nine years

Of rule in Rome, died Innocent my Pope

—By some account, on his accession-day.

If he thought doubt would do the next age  
good,

'Tis pity he died unapprised what birth

His reign may boast of, be remembered by—

Terrible Pope, too, of a kind,—Voltaire.

And so an end of all i' the story. Strain

Never so much my eyes, I miss the mark

If lived or died that Gaetano, child

Of Guido and Pompilia: only find,

Immediately upon his father's death,

A record, in the annals of the town—

That Porzia, sister of our Guido, moved

The Friars of Arezzo and their head

Its Gonfalonier to give loyally

A public attestation of the right

O' the Franceschini to all reverence—

Apparently because of the incident

O' the murder,—there's no mention made o'  
the crime,

But what else could have caused such urgency

To cure the mob, just then, of greediness

For scandal, love of lying vanity,

And appetite to swallow crude reports

That bring annoyance to their betters?—

bane

Which, here, was promptly met by antidote.

I like and shall translate the eloquence

Of nearly the worst Latin ever writ:

"Since antique time whereof the memory

"Holds the beginning, to this present hour,

"The Franceschini ever shone, and shine

"Still i' the primary rank, supreme amid

"The lustres of Arezzo, proud to own

"In this great family, the flag-bearer,

"Guide of her steps and guardian against

foe,—

"As in the first beginning, so to-day!"

There, would you disbelieve the annalist,

Go rather by the babble of a bard?

I thought, Arezzo, thou hadst fitter souls,

Petrarch,<sup>1</sup>—nay, Buonarroti at a pinch,

To do thee credit as *vexillifer*!<sup>2</sup>

Was it mere mirth the Patavinian<sup>3</sup> meant,

Making thee out, in his veracious page,

Founded by Janus of the Double Face?

Well, proving of such perfect parentage,

Our Gaetano, born of love and hate,

Did the babe live or die? I fain would find!

What were his fancies if he grew a man?

Was he proud,—a true scion of the stock

Which bore the blazon, shall make bright

my page—

Shield, Azure, on a Triple Mountain, Or,

A Palm-tree, Proper, whereunto is tied

A Greyhound, Rampant, striving in the slips?

<sup>1</sup> Petrarch was born in the town of Arezzo, and Buonarroti (Michel Angelo) in the territory, though not in the town itself.

<sup>2</sup> *Vexillifer*: standard-bearer.

<sup>3</sup> *The Patavinian*: Livy.

Or did he love his mother, the base-born,  
And fight I' the ranks, unnoticed by the  
world?

Such, then, the final state o' the story. So  
Did the Star Wormwood in a blazing fall  
Frighten awhile the waters and lie lost.  
So did this old woe fade from memory :  
Till after, in the fulness of the days,  
I needs must find an ember yet unquenched,  
And, breathing, blow the spark to flame.  
It lives,  
If precious be the soul of man to man.

So, British Public, who may like me yet,  
(Marry and amen!) learn one lesson hence  
Of many which whatever lives should teach :  
This lesson, that our human speech is naught,  
Our human testimony false, our fame  
And human estimation words and wind.  
Why take the artistic way to prove so much?  
Because, it is the glory and good of Art,  
That Art remains the one way possible  
Of speaking truth, to mouths like mine at  
least.  
How look a brother in the face and say  
"Thy right is wrong, eyes hast thou yet art  
blind,  
"Thine ears are stuffed and stopped, despite  
their length :  
"And, oh, the foolishness thou countest  
faith!"  
Say this as silverly as tongue can troll—  
The anger of the man may be endured,  
The shrug, the disappointed eyes of him

Are not so bad to bear—but here's the plague  
That all this trouble comes of telling truth,  
Which truth, by when it reaches him, looks  
false,

Seems to be just the thing it would supplant,  
Nor recognizable by whom it left :  
While falsehood would have done the work  
of truth.

But Art,—wherein man nowisespeaks to men,  
Only to mankind,—Art may tell a truth  
Obliquely, do the thing shall breed the  
thought,  
Nor wrong the thought, missing the mediate  
word.

Somay you paint your picture, twiceshow truth,  
Beyond mere imagery on the wall,—  
So, note by note, bring music from your  
mind,  
Deeper than ever e'en Beethoven dived,—  
So write a book shall mean beyond the facts,  
Suffice the eye and save the soul beside.

And save the soul! If this intent save mine,—  
If the rough ore be rounded to a ring,  
Render all duty which good ring should do,  
And, failing grace, succeed in guardianship,—  
Might mine but lie outside thine, Lyric Love,  
Thy rare gold ring of verse (the poet<sup>1</sup> praised)  
Linking our England to his Italy!

<sup>1</sup> *The poet*: Tommaseo, who wrote the inscription on the tablet placed on the walls of Casa Guidi by the municipality of Florence to the memory of Mrs. Browning: "Qui scrisse e morì E. B. Browning, che . . . fece del suo verso aureo anello fra Italia e Inghilterra."

# PRINCE, HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY.

1871.

[The Prince stands for the Third Napoleon, the author—it may be the unwilling author—of the *coup d'état* of December 1851. For eighteen years he was Emperor of the French, the ally of Great Britain, and to some extent the Liberator of Italy. He and his came to an end at Sedan in 1870.]

## PRINCE HOHENSTIEL- SCHWANGAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY.

Ἴδραν φονεύσας, μυρίων τ' ἄλλων πόνων  
διήλθον ἀγέλας . . .  
τὸ λoισθιον δὲ τόνδ' ἐτλην τέλας πόνον,  
. . . δῶμα θριγκῶσαι κακοῖς.

I slew the Hydra, and from labour pass'd  
To labour—tribes of labours! Till, at last,  
Attempting one more labour, in a trice,  
Alack, with ills I *crowned the edifice*.

You have seen better days, dear? So have  
I—

And worse too, for they brought no such  
bud-mouth

As yours to lisp "You wish you knew me!"  
Well,

Wise men, 'tis said, have sometimes wished  
the same,

And wished and had their trouble for their  
pains.

Suppose my Œdipus should lurk at last  
Under a pork-pie hat and crinoline,  
And, lateish, pounce on Sphinx in Leicester  
Square?

Or likelier, what if Sphinx in wise old age,  
Grown sick of snapping foolish people's  
heads,

And jealous for her riddle's proper rede,—  
Jealous that the good trick which served the  
turn

Have justice rendered it, nor class one day

With friend Home's<sup>1</sup> stilts and tongs and  
medium-ware,—

What if the once redoubted Sphinx, I say,  
(Because night draws on, and the sands  
increase,

And desert-whispers grow a prophecy)  
Tell all to Corinth of her own accord,  
Bright Corinth, not dull Thebes, for Lais'  
sake,

Who finds me hardly grey, and likes my nose,  
And thinks a man of sixty at the prime?  
Good! It shall be! Revealment of myself!  
But listen, for we must co-operate;  
I don't drink tea: permit me the cigar!

First, how to make the matter plain, of  
course—

What was the law by which I lived. Let's  
see:

Ay, we must take one instant of my life  
Spent sitting by your side in this neat room:  
Watch well the way I use it, and don't laugh!  
Here's paper on the table, pen and ink:  
Give me the soiled bit—not the pretty rose!  
See! having sat an hour, I'm rested now,  
Therefore want work: and spy no better  
work

For eye and hand and mind that guides them  
both,

During this instant, than to draw my pen  
From blot One—thus—up, up to blot Two—  
thus—

The notorious spiritualist and impostor,

Which I at last reach, thus, and here's my line  
 Five inches long and tolerably straight :  
 Better to draw than leave undrawn, I think,  
 Fitter to do than let alone, I hold,  
 Though better, fitter, by but one degree.  
 Therefore it was that, rather than sit still  
 Simply, my right-hand drew it while my left  
 Pulled smooth and pinched the moustache to  
 a point.

Now I permit your plump lips to unpurse :  
 "So far, one possibly may understand  
 "Without recourse to witchcraft !" True,  
 my dear.

Thus folks begin with Euclid,—finish, how ?  
 Trying to square the circle !—at any rate,  
 Solving abstruser problems than this first  
 "How find the nearest way 'twixt point and  
 point."

Deal but with moral mathematics so—  
 Master one mercest moment's work of mine,  
 Even this practising with pen and ink,—  
 Demonstrate why I rather plied the quill  
 Than left the space a blank,—you gain a  
 fact,

And God knows what a fact's worth ! So  
 proceed

By inference from just this moral fact  
 —I don't say, to that plaguy quadrature  
 "What the whole man meant, whom you  
 wish you knew,"

But, what meant certain things he did of old,  
 Which puzzled Europe,—why, you'll find  
 them plain,

This way, not otherwise : I guarantee,  
 Understand one, you comprehend the rest.  
 Rays from all round converge to any point :  
 Study the point then ere you track the rays !  
 The size o' the circle's nothing ; subdivide  
 Earth, and earth's smallest grain of mustard-  
 seed,

You count as many parts, small matching  
 large,

If you can use the mind's eye : otherwise,  
 Material optics, being gross at best,  
 Prefer the large and leave our mind the  
 small—

And pray how many folk have minds can  
 see ?

Certainly you—and somebody in Thrace  
 Whose name escapes me at the moment.  
 You—

Lend me your mind then ! Analyse with me  
 This instance of the line 'twixt blot and blot  
 I rather chose to draw than leave a blank,  
 Things else being equal. You are taught  
 thereby

That 'tis my nature, when I am at ease,  
 Rather than idle out my life too long,  
 To want to do a thing—to put a thought,  
 Whether a great thought or a little one,  
 Into an act, as nearly as may be.  
 Make what is absolutely new—I can't,  
 Mar what is made already well enough—  
 I won't : but turn to best account the thing  
 That's half-made—that I can. Two blots,  
 you saw

I knew how to extend into a line  
 Symmetric on the sheet they blurred before—  
 Such little act sufficed, this time, such  
 thought.

Now, we'll extend rays, widen out the verge,  
 Describe a larger circle ; leave this first  
 Clod of an instance we began with, rise  
 To the complete world many clods effect.  
 Only continue patient while I throw,  
 Delver-like, spadeful after spadeful up,  
 Just as truths come, the subsoil of me,  
 mould

Whence spring my moods : your object,—  
 just to find,

Alike from handlift and from barrow-load,  
 What salts and silts may constitute the earth—  
 If it be proper stuff to blow man glass,  
 Or bake him pottery, bear him oaks or wheat—  
 What's born of me, in brief ; which found,  
 all's known.

If it were genius did the digging-job,  
 Logic would speedily sift its product smooth  
 And leave the crude truths bare for poetry ;  
 But I'm no poet, and am stiff i' the back.  
 What one spread fails to bring, another may.  
 In goes the shovel and out comes scoop—as  
 here !

I live to please myself. I recognize  
Power passing mine, immeasurable, God—  
Above me, whom He made, as heaven beyond  
Earth—to use figures which assist our sense.  
I know that He is there as I am here,  
By the same proof, which seems no proof at  
all,

It so exceeds familiar forms of proof.  
Why "there," not "here"? Because, when  
I say "there,"

I treat the feeling with distincter shape  
That space exists between us: I,—not He,—  
Live, think, do human work here—no  
machine,

His will moves, but a being by myself,  
His, and not He who made me for a work,  
Watches my working, judges its effect,  
But does not interpose. He did so once,  
And probably will again some time—not now,  
Life being the minute of mankind, not God's,  
In a certain sense, like time before and time  
After man's earthly life, so far as man  
Needs apprehend the matter. Am I clear?  
Suppose I bid a courier take to-night

( . . . Once for all, let me talk as if I smoked  
Yet in the Residenz, a personage:  
I must still represent the thing I was,  
Galvanically make dead muscle play,  
Or how shall I illustrate muscle's use?)  
I could then, last July, bid courier take  
Message for me, post-haste, a thousand miles.  
I bid him, since I have the right to bid,  
And, my part done so far, his part begins;  
He starts with due equipment, will and power,  
Means he may use, misuse, not use at all,  
At his discretion, at his peril too.

I leave him to himself: but, journey done,  
I count the minutes, call for the result  
In quickness and the courier quality,  
Weigh its worth, and then punish or reward  
According to proved service; not before.  
Meantime, he sleeps through noontide, rides  
till dawn,

Sticks to the straight road, tries the crooked  
path,  
Measures and manages resource, trusts,  
doubts  
Advisers by the wayside, does his best

At his discretion, lags or launches forth,  
(He knows and I know) at his peril too.  
You see? Exactly thus men stand to God:  
I with my courier, God with me. Just so  
I have His bidding to perform; but mind  
And body, all of me, though made and meant  
For that sole service, must consult, concert  
With my own self and nobody beside,  
How to effect the same: God helps not else.  
'Tis I who, with my stock of craft and strength,  
Choose the directer cut across the hedge,  
Or keep the foot-track that respects a crop.  
Lie down and rest, rise up and run,—live  
spare,

Feed free,—all that's my business: but, arrive,  
Deliver message, bring the answer back,  
And make my bow, I must: then God will  
speak,

Praise me or haply blame as service proves.  
To other men, to each and everyone,  
Another law! what likelier? God, perchance,  
Grants each new man, by some as new a  
mode,

Intercommunication with Himself,  
Wreaking on finiteness infinitude;  
By such a series of effects, gives each  
Last His own imprint: old yet ever new  
The process: 'tis the way of Deity.  
How it succeeds, He knows: I only know  
That varied modes of creatureship abound,  
Implying just as varied intercourse  
For each with the creator of them all.  
Each has his own mind and no other's  
mode.

What mode may yours be? I shall sym-  
pathize!

No doubt, you, good young lady that you are,  
Despite a natural naughtiness or two,  
Turn eyes up like a Pradier Magdalen<sup>1</sup>  
And see an outspread providential hand  
Above the owl's-wing aigrette—guard and  
guide—

Visibly o'er your path, about your bed,  
Through all your practisings with London-  
town.

It points, you go; it stays fixed, and you stop;  
In the Louvre. Pradier was a famous  
sculptor. His statue of Rousseau is at Geneva.

You quicken its procedure by a word  
Spoken, a thought in silence, prayer and  
praise.

Well, I believe that such a hand may stoop,  
And such appeals to it may stave off harm,  
Pacify the grim guardian of this Square,  
And stand you in good stead on quarter-day:  
Quite possible in your case; not in mine.  
"Ah, but I choose to make the difference,  
Find the emancipation?" No, I hope!  
If I deceive myself, take noon for night,  
Please to become determinedly blind  
To the true ordinance of human life,  
Through mere presumption—that is my affair,  
And truly a grave one; but as grave I think  
Your affair, yours, the specially observed,—  
Each favoured person that perceives his path  
Pointed him, inch by inch, and looks above  
For guidance, through the mazes of this world,  
In what we call its meanest life-career  
—Not how to manage Europe properly,  
But how keep open shop, and yet pay rent,  
Rear household, and make both ends meet,  
the same.

I say, such man is no less tasked than I  
To duly take the path appointed him  
By whatsoever sign he recognize.  
Our insincerity on both our heads!  
No matter what the object of a life,  
Small work or large,—the making thrive a  
shop,

Or seeing that an empire take no harm,—  
There are known fruits to judge obedience by.  
You've read a ton's weight, now, of news-  
paper—

Lives of me; gabble about the kind of prince—  
You know my work i' the rough; I ask you,  
then,

Do I appear subordinated less  
To hand-impulsion, one prime push for all,  
Than little lives of men, the multitude  
That cried out, every quarter of an hour,  
For fresh instructions, did or did not work,  
And praised in the odd minutes?

Eh, my dear?

Such is the reason why I acquiesced  
In doing what seemed best for me to do,

So as to please myself on the great scale,  
Having regard to immortality  
No less than life—did that which head and  
heart

Prescribed my hand, in measure with its  
means

Of doing—used my special stock of power—  
Not from the aforesaid head and heart alone,  
But every sort of helpful circumstance,  
Some problematic and some nondescript:  
All regulated by the single care  
I' the last resort—that I made thoroughly  
serve

The when and how, toiled where was need,  
reposed

As resolutely at the proper point,  
Braved sorrow, courted joy, to just one end:  
Namely, that just the creature I was bound  
To be, I should become, nor thwart at all  
God's purpose in creation. I conceive  
No other duty possible to man,—  
Highest mind, lowest mind, no other law  
By which to judge life failure or success:  
What folk call being saved or cast away.

Such was my rule of life: I worked my best  
Subject to ultimate judgment, God's not man's.  
Well then, this settled,—take your tea, I beg,  
And meditate the fact, 'twixt sip and sip,—  
This settled—why I pleased myself, you saw,  
By turning blot and blot into a line,  
O' the little scale,—we'll try now (as your  
tongue

Tries the concluding sugar-drop) what's meant  
To please me most o' the great scale. Why,  
just now,

With nothing else to do within my reach,  
Did I prefer making two blots one line  
To making yet another separate  
Third blot, and leaving those I found unlinked?  
It meant, I like to use the thing I find,  
Rather than strive at unfound novelty:  
I make the best of the old, nor try for new.  
Such will to act, such choice of action's way,  
Constitute—when at work on the great scale,  
Driven to their farthest natural consequence  
By all the help from all the means—my own  
Particular faculty of serving God,



Instinct for putting power to exercise  
Upon some wish and want o' the time, I prove  
Possible to mankind as best I may.

This constitutes my mission,—grant the  
phrase,—

Namely, to rule men—men within my reach,  
To order, influence and dispose them so  
As render solid and stablilify

Mankind in particles, the light and loose,  
For their good and my pleasure in the act.

Such good accomplished proves twice good  
to me—

Good for its own sake, as the just and right,  
And, in the effecting also, good again  
To me its agent, tasked as suits my taste.

Is this much easy to be understood  
At first glance? Now begin the steady gaze!

My rank—(if I must tell you simple truth—  
Telling were else not worth the whiff o' the  
weed

I lose for the tale's sake)—dear, my rank I'  
the world

Is hard to know and name precisely: err  
I may, but scarcely over-estimate

My style and title. Do I class with men  
Most useful to their fellows? Possibly,—

Therefore, in some sort, best; but, greatest  
mind

And rarest nature? Evidently no.  
A conservator, call me, if you please,

Not a creator nor destroyer: one  
Who keeps the world safe. I profess to trace

The broken circle of society,  
Dim actual order, I can redescribe

Not only where some segment silver-true  
Stays clear, but where the breaks of black  
commence

Baffling you all who want the eye to probe—  
As I make out yon problematic thin

White paring of your thumb-nail outside there,  
Above the plaster-monarch on his steed—

See an inch, name an ell, and prophesy  
O' the rest that ought to follow, the round

moon  
Now hiding in the night of things: that round,  
I labour to demonstrate moon enough

For the month's purpose,—that society,  
Render efficient for the age's need:

Preserving you in either case the old,  
Nor aiming at a new and greater thing,

A sun for moon, a future to be made  
By first abolishing the present law:

No such proud task for me by any means!  
History shows you men whose master-touch

Not so much modifies as makes anew:  
Minds that transmute nor need restore at all.

A breath of God made manifest in flesh  
Subjects the world to change, from time to

time,  
Alters the whole conditions of our race

Abruptly, not by unperceived degrees  
Nor play of elements already there,

But quite new leaven, leavening the lump,  
And liker, so, the natural process. See!

Where winter reigned for ages—by a turn  
I' the time, some star-change, (ask geologists)

The ice-tracts split, clash, splinter and dis-  
perse,

And there's an end of immobility,  
Silence, and all that tinted pageant, base

To pinnacle, one flush from fairyland  
Dead-asleep and deserted somewhere,—

see!—  
As a fresh sun, wave, spring and joy outburst.

Or else the earth it is, time starts from trance,  
Her mountains tremble into fire, her plains

Heave blinded by confusion: what result?  
New teeming growth, surprises of strange life

Impossible before, a world broke up  
And re-made, order gained by law destroyed.

Not otherwise, in our society  
Follow like portents, all as absolute

Regenerations: they have birth at rare  
Uncertain unexpected intervals

O' the world, by ministry impossible  
Before and after fulness of the days:

Some dervish desert-spectre, swordsman,  
saint,

Law-giver, lyrist,—oh, we know the names!  
Quite other these than I. Our time requires

No such strange potentate,—who else would  
dawn,—

No fresh force till the old have spent itself.  
Such seems the natural economy.

To shoot a beam into the dark, assists :  
 To make that beam do fuller service, spread  
 And utilize such bounty to the height,  
 That assists also,—and that work is mine.  
 I recognize, contemplate, and approve  
 The general compact of society,  
 Not simply as I see effected good,  
 But good i' the germ, each chance that's  
 possible

I' the plan traced so far : all results, in short,  
 For better or worse of the operation due  
 To those exceptional natures, unlike mine,  
 Who, helping, thwarting, conscious, unaware,  
 Did somehow manage to so far describe  
 This diagram left ready to my hand,  
 Waiting my turn of trial. I see success,  
 See failure, see what makes or mars through-  
 out.

How shall I else but help complete this plan  
 Of which I know the purpose and approve,  
 By letting stay therein what seems to stand,  
 And adding good thereto of easier reach  
 To-day than yesterday?

So much, no more !

Whereon, "No more than that?"—inquire  
 aggrieved

Half of my critics : "nothing new at all?  
 The old plan saved, instead of a sponged slate  
 And fresh-drawn figure?"—while, "So much  
 as that?"

Object their fellows of the other faith :  
 "Leave uneffaced the crazy labyrinth  
 Of alteration and amendment, lines  
 Which every dabster felt in duty bound  
 To signalize his power of pen and ink  
 By adding to a plan once plain enough?  
 Why keep each fool's bequeathment, scratch  
 and blur

Which overscrawl and underscore the piece—  
 Nay, strengthen them by touches of your own?"

Well, that's my mission, so I serve the world,  
 Figure as man o' the moment,—in default  
 Of somebody inspired to strike such change  
 Into society—from round to square,  
 The ellipsis to the rhomboid, how you please,  
 Assuets the size and shape o' the world he finds.

But this I can,—and nobody my peer,—  
 Do the best with the least change possible :  
 Carry the incompleteness on, a stage,  
 Make what was crooked straight, and rough-  
 ness smooth,  
 And weakness strong : wherein if I succeed,  
 It will not prove the worst achievement, sure,  
 In the eyes at least of one man, one I look  
 Nowise to catch in critic company :  
 To-wit, the man inspired, the genius' self  
 Destined to come and change things  
 thoroughly.

He, at least, finds his business simplified,  
 Distinguishes the done from undone, reads  
 Plainly what meant and did not mean this time  
 We live in, and I work on, and transmit  
 To such successor : he will operate  
 On good hard substance, not mere shade and  
 shine.

Let all my critics, born to idleness  
 And impotency, get their good, and have  
 Their hooting at the giver : I am deaf—  
 Who find great good in this society,  
 Great gain, the purchase of great labour.

Touch

The work I may and must, but—reverent  
 In every fall o' the finger-tip, no doubt.  
 Perhaps I find all good there's warrant for  
 I' the world as yet : nay, to the end of time,—  
 Since evil never means part company  
 With mankind, only shift side and change  
 shape.

I find advance i' the main, and notably  
 The Present an improvement on the Past,  
 And promise for the Future—which shall  
 prove

Only the Present with its rough made smooth,  
 Its indistinctness emphasized ; I hope  
 No better, nothing newer for mankind,  
 But something equably smoothed everywhere,  
 Good, reconciled with hardly-quite-as-good ;  
 Instead of good and bad each jostling each.  
 "And that's all?" Ay, and quite enough  
 for me !

We have toiled so long to gain what gain I find  
 I' the Present,—let us keep it ! We shall toil  
 So long before we gain—if gain God grant—  
 A Future with one touch of difference

I' the heart of things, and not their outside:  
face,— And gets through just their hindrance and my help.

Let us not risk the whiff of my cigar  
For. Fourier, Comte, and all that ends in  
smoke ! I think that to have held the balance straight  
For twenty years, say, weighing claim and  
claim,

This I see clearest probably of men  
With power to act and influence, now alive :  
Juster than they to the true state of things ;  
In consequence, more tolerant that, side  
By side, shall co-exist and thrive alike  
And reasonable piety beside.

In the age, the various sorts of happiness  
Moral, mark !—not material—moods o' the  
mind Keep those three points in mind while judging  
me !

Suited to man and man his opposite :  
Say, minor modes of movement—hence to  
there,— You stand, perhaps, for some one man, not  
men,—

Or thence to here, or simply round about—  
So long as each toe spares its neighbour's  
kibe, Represent this or the other interest,  
Nor spoils the major march and main advance.  
The love of peace, care for the family,  
Contentment with what's bad but might be  
worse— Nor mind the general welfare,—so, impugn  
My practice and dispute my value : why ?

Good movements these ! and good, too, dis-  
content, Into a paste, and thereof make a smooth  
content, You man of faith, I did not tread the world  
Into a paste, and thereof make a smooth  
Uniform mound whereon to plant your flag,  
The lily-white, above the blood and brains !

So long as that spurs good, which might be best,  
Into becoming better, anyhow :  
Good—pride of country, putting hearth and  
home Nor yet did I, you man of faithlessness,  
So roll things to the level which you love,  
That you could stand at ease there and survey  
The universal Nothing undisgraced

Good—pride of country, putting hearth and  
home By pert obtrusion of some old church-spire  
I' the distance ! Neither friend would I  
content,

I' the back-ground, out of undue prominence :  
Good—yearning after change, strife, victory,  
And triumph. Each shall have its orbit  
marked, Nor, as the world were simply meant for him,  
Thrust out his fellow and mend God's mistake.  
Why, you two fools,—my dear friends all the  
same,—

But no more,—none impede the other's path  
In this wide world,—though each and all alike,  
Save for me, fain would spread itself through  
space Is it some change o' the world and nothing  
else

And leave its fellow not an inch of way.  
I rule and regulate the course, excite,  
Restrain : because the whole machine should  
march Contents you ? Should whatever was, not  
be ?

Impelled by those diversely-moving parts,  
Each blind to aught beside its little bent.  
Out of the turnings round and round inside,  
Comes that straightforward world-advance, I  
want, How thanklessly you view things ! There's  
the root

And none of them supposes God wants too  
Of the evil, source of the entire mistake :  
You see no worth i' the world, nature and life,  
Unless we change what is to what may be,  
Which means,—may be, i' the brain of one  
of you !

“Reject what is ?”—all capabilities—  
Nay, you may style them chances if you  
choose—

All chances, then, of happiness that lie  
Open to anybody that is born,  
Tumbles into this life and out again,—

All that may happen, good and evil too,  
 I' the space between, to each adventurer  
 Upon this 'sixty, Anno Domini :  
 A life to live—and such a life ! a world  
 To learn, one's lifetime in,—and such a world !  
 How did the foolish ever pass for wise  
 By calling life a burden, man a fly  
 Or worm or what's most insignificant ?

"O littleness of man !" deplores the bard ;  
 And then, for fear the Powers should punish  
 him,

"O grandeur of the visible universe  
 Our human littleness contrasts withal !  
 O sun, O moon, ye mountains and thou sea,  
 Thou emblem of immensity, thou this,  
 That, and the other,—what impertinence  
 In man to eat and drink and walk about  
 And have his little notions of his own,  
 The while some wave sheds foam upon the  
 shore !"

First of all, 'tis a lie some three-times thick :  
 The bard,—this sort of speech being poetry,—  
 The bard puts mankind well outside himself  
 And then begins instructing them : "This way  
 I and my friend the sea conceive of you !  
 What would you give to think such thoughts  
 as ours

Of you and the sea together?" Down they go  
 On the humbled knees of them : at once they  
 draw

Distinction, recognize no mate of theirs  
 In one, despite his mock humility,  
 So plain a match for what he plays with.  
 Next,

The turn of the great ocean-playfellow,  
 When the bard, leaving Bond Street very far  
 From ear-shot, cares not to ventriloquize,  
 But tells the sea its home-truths : "You, my  
 match

You, all this terror and immensity  
 And what not? Shall I tell you what you are?  
 Just fit to hitch into a stanza, so  
 Wake up and set in motion who's asleep  
 O' the other side of you in England, else  
 Unaware, as folk pace their Bond Street now,  
 Somebody here despises them so much !  
 Between us,—they are the ultimate ! to them  
 And their perception go these lordly thoughts :

Since what were ocean—mane and tail, to  
 boot—

Mused I not here, how make thoughts think-  
 able ?

Start forth my stanza and astound the world !  
 Back, billows, to your insignificance !  
 Deep, you are done with !"

Learn, my gifted friend,  
 There are two things i' the world, still wiser  
 folk

Accept—intelligence and sympathy.  
 You pant about unutterable power  
 I' the ocean, all you feel but cannot speak ?  
 Why, that's the plainest speech about it all.  
 You did not feel what was not to be felt.  
 Well, then, all else but what man feels is  
 nought—

The wash o' the liquor that o'erbrims the cup  
 Called man, and runs to waste adown his side,  
 Perhaps to feed a cataract,—who cares ?  
 I'll tell you : all the more I know mankind,  
 The more I thank God, like my grandmother,  
 For making me a little lower than  
 The angels, honour-clothed and glory-  
 crowned :

This is the honour,—that no thing I know,  
 Feel or conceive, but I can make my own  
 Somehow, by use of hand or head or heart :  
 This is the glory,—that in all conceived,  
 Or felt or known, I recognize a mind  
 Not mine but like mine,—for the double joy,—  
 Making all things for me and me for Him.  
 There's folly for you at this time of day !  
 So think it ! and enjoy your ignorance  
 Of what—no matter for the worthy's name—  
 Wisdom set working in a noble heart,  
 When he, who was earth's best geometer  
 Up to that time of day, consigned his life  
 With its results into one matchless book,  
 The triumph of the human mind so far,  
 All in geometry man yet could do :  
 And then wrote on the dedication-page  
 In place of name the universe applauds,

But, God, what a geometer art Thou !"  
 I suppose Heaven is, through Eternity,  
 The equalizing, ever and anon,  
 In momentary rapture, great with small,

Omniscience with intelligency, God  
With man,—the thunder-glow from pole to  
pole

Abolishing, a blissful moment-space,  
Great cloud alike and small cloud, in one fire—  
As sure to ebb as sure again to flow  
When the new receptivity deserves  
The new completion. There's the Heaven  
for me.

And I say, therefore, to live out one's life  
I' the world here, with the chance,—whether  
by pain

Or pleasure be the process, long or short  
The time, august or mean the circumstance  
To human eye,—of learning how set foot  
Decidedly on some one path to Heaven,  
Touch segment in the circle whence all lines  
Lead to the centre equally, red lines  
Or black lines, so they but produce them-  
selves—

This, I do say,—and here my sermon ends,—  
This makes it worth our while to tenderly  
Handle a state of things which mend we might,  
Mar we may, but which meanwhile helps so far.  
Therefore my end is—save society !

“ And that's all ? ” twangs the never-failing  
taunt :

O' the foe—“ No novelty, creativeness,  
Mark of the master that renews the age ? ”

“ Nay, all that ? ” rather will demur my judge  
I look to hear some day, nor friend nor foe—

“ Did you attain, then, to perceive that God  
Knew what He undertook when He made  
things ? ”

Ay : that my task was to co-operate  
Rather than play the rival, chop and change  
The order whence comes all the good we know,  
With this,—good's last expression to our  
sense,—

That there's a further good conceivable  
Beyond the utmost earth can realize :  
And, therefore, that to change the agency,  
The evil whereby good is brought about—  
Try to make good do good as evil does—  
Were just as if a chemist, wanting white,  
And knowing black ingredients bred the dye,  
Insisted these too should be white forsooth !

Correct the evil, mitigate your best,  
Blend mild with harsh, and soften black to  
gray

If gray may follow with no detriment  
To the eventual perfect purity !  
But as for hazarding the main result  
By hoping to anticipate one half  
In the intermediate process,—no, my friends !  
This bad world, I experience and approve ;  
Your good world,—with no pity, courage,  
hope,

Fear, sorrow, joy,—devotedness, in short,  
Which I account the ultimate of man,  
Of which there's not one day nor hour but  
brings,

In flower or fruit, some sample of success,  
Out of this same society I save—  
None of it for me ! That I might have none,  
I rapped your tampering knuckles twenty years.  
Such was the task imposed me, such my end.

Now for the means thereto. Ah, confidence—  
Keep we together or part company ?  
This is the critical minute ! “ Such my end ? ”  
Certainly ; how could it be otherwise ?  
Can there be question which was the right  
task—

To save or to destroy society ?  
Why, even prove that, by some miracle,  
Destruction were the proper work to choose,  
And that a torch best remedies what's wrong  
I' the temple, whence the long procession  
wound

Of powers and beauties, earth's achievements  
all,

The human strength that strove and over-  
threw,—

The human love that, weak itself, crowned  
strength,—

The instinct crying “ God is whence I  
came ! ”—

The reason laying down the law “ And such  
His will i' the world must be ! ”—the leap  
and shout

Of genius “ For I hold His very thoughts,  
The meaning of the mind of Him ! ”—nay,  
more,

The ingenuities, each active force

That turning in a circle on itself

Looks neither up nor down but keeps the spot,  
Mere creature-like, and, for religion, works,  
Works only and works ever, makes and shapes  
And changes, still wrings more of good from  
less,

Still stamps some bad out, where was worst  
before,

So leaves the handiwork, the act and deed,  
Were it but house and land and wealth, to show  
Here was a creature perfect in the kind—  
Whether as bee, beaver, or behemoth,  
What's the importance? he has done his work  
For work's sake, worked well, earned a  
creature's praise;—

I say, concede that same fane, whence deploys  
Age after age, all this humanity,  
Diverse but ever dear, out of the dark  
Behind the altar into the broad day  
By the portal—enter, and, concede there mocks  
Each lover of free motion and much space  
A perplexed length of apse and aisle and  
nave,—

Pillared roof and carved screen, and what  
care I?—

Which irk the movement and impede the  
march,—

Nay, possibly, bring flat upon his nose  
At some odd break-neck angle, by some freak  
Of old-world artistry, that personage  
Who, could he but have kept his skirts from  
grief

And catching at the hooks and crooks about,  
Had stepped out on the daylight of our time  
Plainly the man of the age,—still, still, I bar  
Excessive conflagration in the case.

“Shake the flame freely!” shout the multi-  
tude:

The architect approves I stuck my torch  
Inside a good stout lantern, hung its light  
Above the hooks and crooks, and ended so.  
To save society was well: the means  
Whereby to save it,—there begins the doubt  
Permitted you, imperative on me;  
Were mine the best means? Did I work aright  
With powers appointed me?—since powers  
denied

Concern me nothing.

Well, my work reviewed

Fairly, leaves more hope than discouragement.  
First, there's the deed done: what I found,  
I leave,—

What tottered, I kept stable: if it stand  
One month, without sustainment, still thank  
me

The twenty years' sustainer! Now, observe,  
Sustaining is no brilliant self-display  
Like knocking down or even setting up:  
Much bustle these necessitate; and still  
To vulgar eye, the mightier of the myth  
Is Hercules, who substitutes his own  
For Atlas' shoulder and supports the globe  
A whole day,—not the passive and obscure  
Atlas who bore; ere Hercules was born,  
And is to go on bearing that same load  
When Hercules turns ash on Ceta's top.  
'Tis the transition-stage, the tug and strain,  
That strike men: standing still is stupid-like.  
My pressure was too constant on the whole  
For any part's eruption into space  
Mid sparkles, crackling, and much praise of  
me.

I saw that, in the ordinary life,  
Many of the little make a mass of men  
Important beyond greatness here and there;  
As certainly as, in life exceptional,  
When old things terminate and new com-  
mence,

A solitary great man's worth the world.  
God takes the business into His own hands  
At such time: who creates the novel flower  
Contrives to guard and give it breathing-room:  
I merely tend the corn-field, care for crop,  
And weed no acre thin to let emerge  
What prodigy may stifle there perchance,  
—No, though my eye have noted where he  
lurks.

Oh those mute myriads that spoke loud to me—  
The eyes that craved to see the light, the  
mouths

That sought the daily bread and nothing more,  
The hands that supplicated exercise,  
Men that had wives, and women that had  
babes,

And all these making suit to only live  
Was I to turn aside from husbandry,

Leave hope of harvest for the corn, my care,  
To play at horticulture, rear some rose  
Or poppy into perfect leaf and bloom  
When, mid the furrows, up was pleased to  
sprout

Some man, cause, system, special-interest  
I ought to study, stop the world meanwhile?  
"But I am Liberty, Philanthropy,  
Enlightenment, or Patriotism, the power  
Whereby you are to stand or fall!" cries each:  
"Mine and mine only be the flag you flaunt!"  
And, when I venture to object "Meantime,  
What of yon myriads with no flag at all—  
My crop which, who flaunts flag must tread  
across?"

"Now, this it is to have a puny mind!"  
Admire my mental prodigies: "down—  
down—

Ever at home o' the level and the low,  
There bides he brooding! Could he look above,  
With less of the owl and more of the eagle eye,  
He'd see there's no way helps the little cause  
Like the attainment of the great. Dare first  
The chief emprise; dispel yon cloud between  
The sun and us; nor fear that, though our  
heads

Find earlier warmth and comfort from his ray,  
What lies about our feet, the multitude,  
Will fail of benefaction presently.

Come now, let each of us awhile cry truce  
To special interests, make common cause  
Against the adversary—or perchance  
Mere dullard to his own plain interest!

Which of us will you choose?—since needs  
must be

Some one o' the warring causes you incline  
To hold, i' the main, has right and should  
prevail:

Why not adopt and give it prevalence?  
Choose strict Faith or lax Incredulity,—  
King, Caste and Cultus—or the Rights of Man,  
Sovereignty of each Proudhon<sup>1</sup> o'er himself,  
And all that follows in just consequence!  
Go free the stranger from a foreign yoke;  
Or stay, concentrate energy at home;  
Succeed!—when he deserves, the stranger  
will,

<sup>1</sup> "La Propriété, c'est le vol."

Comply with the Great Nation's impulse, print  
By force of arms,—since reason pleads in vain,  
And, mid the sweet compulsion, pity weeps,—  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau on the universe!

Snub the Great Nation, cure the impulsive  
itch

With smartest fillip on a restless nose  
Was ever launched by thumb and finger! Bid  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau first repeal the tax  
On pig-tails and pomatum, and then mind  
Abstruser matters for next century!  
Is your choice made? Why then, act up to  
choice!

Leave the illogical touch now here now there  
I' the way of work, the tantalizing help  
First to this, then the other opposite:  
The blowing hot and cold, sham policy,  
Sure ague of the mind and nothing more,  
Disease of the perception or the will,  
That fain would hide in a fine name! Your  
choice,

Speak it out and condemn yourself thereby!"

Well, Leicester-square is not the Residenz:  
Instead of shrugging shoulder, turning friend  
The deaf ear, with a wink to the police—  
I'll answer—by a question, wisdom's mode.  
How many years, o' the average, do men  
Live in this world? Some score, say com-  
putists.

Quintuple me that term and give mankind  
The likely hundred, and with all my heart  
I'll take your task upon me, work your way,  
Concentrate energy on some one cause:  
Since, counsellor, I also have my cause,  
My flag, my faith in its effect, my hope  
In its eventual triumph for the good  
O' the world. And once upon a time, when I  
Was like all you, mere voice and nothing  
more,

Myself took wings, soared sunward, and  
thence sang

"Look where I live i' the loft, come up to me,  
Groundlings, nor grovel longer! gain this  
height,  
And prove you breathe here better than  
below!

Why, what emancipation far and wide

Will follow in a trice ! They too can soar,  
Each tenant of the earth's circumference  
Claiming to elevate humanity,  
They also must attain such altitude,  
Live in the luminous circle that surrounds  
The planet, not the leaden orb itself.

Press out, each point, from surface to yon  
verge

Which one has gained and guaranteed your  
realm !"

Ay, still my fragments wander, music-fraught,  
Sighs of the soul, mine once, mine now, and  
mine

For ever ! Crumbled arch, crushed aqueduct,  
Alive with tremors in the shaggy growth  
Of wild-wood, crevice-sown, that triumphs  
there

Imparting exultation to the hills !  
Sweep of the swathe when only the winds  
walk

And waft my words above the grassy sea  
Under the blinding blue that basks o'er  
Rome,—

Hear ye not still—"Be Italy again" ?  
And ye, what strikes the panic to your heart ?  
Decrepit council-chambers,—where some  
lamp

Drives the unbroken black three paces off  
From where the greybeards huddle in debate,  
Dim cowl and capes, and midmost glimmers  
one

Like tarnished gold, and what they say is  
doubt,

And what they think is fear, and what  
suspends

The breath in them is not the plaster-patch  
Time disengages from the painted wall  
Where Rafael moulderingly bids adieu,  
Nor tick of the insect turning tapestry  
Which a queen's finger traced of old, to dust ;  
But some word, resonant, redoubtable,  
Of who once felt upon his head a hand  
Whereof the head now apprehends his foot.

"Light in Rome, Law in Rome, and Liberty  
O' the soul in Rome—the free Church, the  
free State !

Stamp out the nature that's best typified  
By its embodiment in Peter's Dome,

The scorpion-body with the greedy pair  
Of outstretched nippers, either colonnade  
Agape for the advance of heads and hearts !"  
There's one cause for you ! one and only one,  
For I am vocal through the universe,  
I' the workshop, manufactory, exchange  
And market-place, sea-port and custom-house  
O' the frontier : listen if the echoes die—

"Unfettered commerce ! Power to speak  
and hear,

And print and read ! The universal vote !  
Its rights for labour !" This, with much  
beside,

I spoke when I was voice and nothing more,  
But altogether such an one as you  
My censors. "Voice, and nothing more,  
indeed !"

Re-echoes round me : "that's the censure,  
there's

Involved the ruin of you soon or late !  
Voice,—when its promise beat the empty air :  
And nothing more,—when solid earth's your  
stage,

And we desiderate performance, deed  
For word, the realizing all you dreamed  
In the old days : now, for deed, we find at  
door

O' the council-chamber posted, mute as  
mouse,

Hohenstiel-Schwangau, sentry and safeguard  
O' the greybeards all a-chuckle, cowl to cape,  
Who challenge Judas,—that's endearment's  
style,—

To stop their mouths or let escape grimace,  
While they keep cursing Italy and him.

The power to speak, hear, print and read is  
ours ?

Ay, we learn where and how, when clapped  
inside

A convict-transport bound for cool Cayenne !  
The universal vote we have : its urn,  
We also have where votes drop, fingered-o'er  
By the universal Prefect. Say, Trade's free  
Toil turned master out o' the slave it  
was :

What then ? These feed man's stomach, but  
his soul

Craves finer fare, nor lives by bread alone,



As somebody says somewhere. Hence you stand

Proved and recorded either false or weak,  
Faulty in promise or performance : which ?

Neither, I hope. Once pedestalled on earth,  
To act not speak, I found earth was not air.

I saw that multitude of mine, and not

The nakedness and nullity of air

Fit only for a voice to float in free.

Such eyes I saw that craved the light alone,

Such mouths that wanted bread and nothing else,

Such hands that supplicated handiwork,

Men with the wives, and women with the babes,

Yet all these pleading just to live, not die !

Did I believe one whit less in belief,

Take truth for falsehood, wish the voice revoked

That told the truth to heaven for earth to hear ?

No, this should be, and shall ; but when and how ?

At what expense to these who average

Your twenty years of life, my computists ?

"Not bread alone" but bread before all else

For these : the bodily want serve first, said I ;

If earth-space and the life-time help not here,

Where is the good of body having been ?

But, helping body, if we somewhat baulk

The soul of finer fare, such food's to find

Elsewhere and afterward—all indicates,

Even this self-same fact that soul can starve

Yet body still exist its twenty years :

While, stint the body, there's an end at once

O' the revel in the fancy that Rome's free,

And superstition's fettered, and one prints

What'er one pleases and who pleases reads

The same, and speaks out and is spoken to,

And divers hundred thousand fools may vote

A vote untampered with by one wise man,

And so elect Barabbas deputy

In lieu of his concurrent. I who trace

The purpose written on the face of things,

For my behoof and guidance—(whoso needs

No such sustainment, sees beneath my signs,

Proves, what I flake for writing, permanent,

Scribble and flourish with no sense for me

O' the sort I solemnly go spelling out,—

Let him ! there's certain work of mine to show

Alongside his work : which gives warranty

Of shrewder vision in the workman—judge !)

I who trace Providence without a break

I' the plan of things, drop plumb on this plain print

Of an intention with a view to good,

That man is made in sympathy with man

At outset of existence, so to speak ;

But in dissociation, more and more,

Man from his fellow, as their lives advance

In culture ; still humanity, that's born

A mass, keeps flying off, fining away

Ever into a multitude of points,

And ends in isolation, each from each :

Peerless above i' the sky, the pinnacle,—

Absolute contact, fusion, all below

At the base of being. How comes this about ?

This stamp of God characterizing man

And nothing else but man in the universe—

That, while he feels with man (to use man's speech)

I' the little things of life, its fleshly wants

Of food and rest and health and happiness,

Its simplest spirit-motions, loves and hates,

Hopes, fears, soul-cravings on the ignoblest scale,

O' the fellow-creature,—owns the bond at base,—

He tends to freedom and divergency

In the upward progress, plays the pinnacle

When life's at greatest (grant again the phrase !

Because there's neither great nor small in life).

"Consult thou for thy kind that have the eyes

To see, the mouths to eat, the hands to work,

Men with the wives, and women with the babes !"

Prompts Nature. "Care thou for thyself alone

I' the conduct of the mind God made thee with !

Think, as if man had never thought before !

Act, as if all creation hung attent

On the acting of such faculty as thine,

To take prime pattern from thy masterpiece !"

Nature prompts also : neither law obeyed

To the uttermost by any heart and soul

We know or have in record : both of them

Acknowledged blindly by whatever man

We ever knew or heard of in this world.

"Will you have why and wherefore, and the fact

Made plain as pikestaff?" modern Science asks.

"That mass man sprung from was a jelly-lump  
 Once on a time; he kept an after course  
 Through fish and insect, reptile, bird and beast,  
 Till he attained to be an ape at last  
 Or last but one. And if this doctrine shock  
 In aught the natural pride" . . . Friend,  
 banish fear,  
 The natural humility replies!

Do you suppose, even I, poor potentate,  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau, who once ruled the  
 roast,—  
 I was born able at all points to ply  
 My tools? or did I have to learn my trade,  
 Practise as exile ere perform as prince?  
 The world knows something of my ups and  
 downs:

But grant me time, give me the management  
 And manufacture of a model me,  
 Me fifty-fold, a prince without a flaw,—  
 Why, there's no social grade, the sordidest,  
 My embryo potentate should blink and scape.  
 King, all the better he was cobbler once,  
 He should know, sitting on the throne, how  
 tastes

Life to who sweeps the doorway. But life's  
 hard,  
 Occasion rare; you cut probation short,  
 And, being half-instructed, on the stage  
 You shuffle through your part as best you can,  
 And bless your stars, as I do. God takes  
 time.

I like the thought He should have lodged me  
 once  
 I' the hole, the cave, the hut, the tenement,  
 The mansion and the palace; made me learn  
 The feel o' the first, before I found myself  
 Loftier i' the last, not more emancipate;  
 From first to last of lodging, I was I,  
 And not at all the place that harboured me.  
 Do I refuse to follow farther yet  
 I' the backwardness, repine if tree and flower,  
 Mountain or streamlet were my dwelling-place  
 Before I gained enlargement, grew mollusc?  
 As well account that way for many a thrill  
 Of kinship, I confess to, with the powers  
 Called Nature: animate, inanimate, -

In parts or in the whole, there's something  
 there

Man-like that somehow meets the man in me.  
 My pulse goes altogether with the heart  
 O' the Persian, that old Xerxes, when he stayed  
 His march to conquest of the world, a day  
 I' the desert, for the sake of one superb  
 Plane-tree which queened it there in solitude:  
 Giving her neck its necklace, and each arm  
 Its armlet, suiting soft waist, snowy side,  
 With cincture and apparel. Yes, I lodged  
 In those successive tenements; perchance  
 Taste yet the strainness of them while I stretch  
 Limb and enjoy new liberty the more.  
 And some abodes are lost or ruinous;  
 Some, patched-up and pieced-out, and so  
 transformed

They still accommodate the traveller  
 His day of lifetime. O you count the links,  
 Descry no bar of the unbroken man?  
 Yes,—and who welds a lump of ore, suppose  
 He likes to make a chain and not a bar,  
 And reach by link on link, link small, link  
 large,  
 Out to the due length—why, there's fore-  
 thought still

Outside o' the series, forging at one end,  
 While at the other there's—no matter what  
 The kind of critical intelligence  
 Believing that last link had last but one  
 For parent, and no link was, first of all,  
 Fitted to anvil, hammered into shape.  
 Else, I accept the doctrine, and deduce  
 This duty, that I recognize mankind,  
 In all its height and depth and length and  
 breadth.

Mankind i' the main have little wants, not  
 large:

I, being of will and power to help, i' the main,  
 Mankind, must help the least wants first.

My friend,  
 That is, my foe, without such power and will,  
 May plausibly concentrate all he wields,  
 And do his best at helping some large want,  
 Exceptionally noble cause, that's seen  
 Subordinate enough from where I stand.  
 As he helps, I helped once, when like himself,  
 Unable to help better, work more wide;

And so would work with heart and hand to-day,  
 Did only computists confess a fault,  
 And multiply the single score by five,  
 Five only, give man's life its hundred years.  
 Change, life, in me shall follow change to  
 match !

Time were then, to work here, there, every-  
 where,

By turns and try experiment at ease !  
 Full time to mend as well as mar : why wait  
 The slow and sober uprising all around  
 O' the building ? Let us run up, right to roof,  
 Some sudden marvel, piece of perfectness,  
 And testify what we intend the whole !  
 Is the world losing patience ? "Wait !" say  
 we :

"There's time : no generation needs to die  
 Unsolaced ; you've a century in store !"   
 But, no : I sadly let the voices wing  
 Their way i' the upper vacancy, nor test  
 Truth on this solid as I promised once.  
 Well, and what is there to be sad about ?  
 The world's the world, life's life, and nothing  
 else.

'Tis part of life, a property to prize,  
 That those o' the higher sort engaged i' the  
 world,

Should fancy they can change its ill to good,  
 Wrong to right, ugliness to beauty : find  
 Enough success in fancy turning fact,  
 To keep the sanguine kind in countenance  
 And justify the hope that busies them :  
 Failure enough,—to who can follow change  
 Beyond their vision, see new good prove ill  
 I' the consequence, see blacks and whites of life  
 Shift square indeed, but leave the chequered  
 face

Unchanged i' the main,—failure enough for  
 such,

To bid ambition keep the whole from change,  
 As their best service. I hope nought beside.  
 No, my brave thinkers, whom I recognize,  
 Gladly, myself the first, as, in a sense,  
 All that our world's worth, flower and fruit  
 of man !

Such minds myself award supremacy  
 Over the common insignificance,  
 When only Mind's in question,—Body bows

To quite another government, you know.  
 Be Kant crowned king o' the castle in the air !  
 Hans Slouch,—his own, and children's mouths  
 to feed

I' the hovel on the ground,—wants meat, nor  
 chews

"The Critique of Pure Reason" in exchange.  
 But, now,—suppose I could allow your claims  
 And quite change life to please you,—would  
 it please ?

Would life comport with change and still be  
 life ?

Ask, now, a doctor for a remedy :  
 There's his prescription. Bid him point you  
 out

Which of the five or six ingredients saves  
 The sick man. "Such the efficacy?  
 Then why not dare and do things in one dose  
 Simple and pure, all virtue, no alloy  
 Of the idle drop and powder ?" What's his  
 word ?

The efficacy, neat, were neutralized :  
 It wants dispersing and retarding,—nay  
 Is put upon its mettle, plays its part  
 Precisely through such hindrance everywhere,  
 Finds some mysterious give and take i' the  
 case,

Some gain by opposition, he foregoes  
 Should he unfetter the medicament.  
 So with this thought of yours that *fain* would  
 work

Free in the world : it wants just what it finds—  
 The ignorance, stupidity, the hate,  
 Envy and malice and uncharitableness  
 That bar your passage, break the flow of you  
 Down from those happy heights where many  
 a cloud

Combined to give you birth and bid you be  
 The royalest of rivers : on you glide  
 Silvery till you reach the summit-edge,  
 Then over, on to all that ignorance,  
 Stupidity, hate, envy, bluffs and blocks,  
 Posted to fret you into foam and noise:  
 What of it ? Up you mount in minute mist,  
 And bridge the chasm that crushed your  
 quietude,

A spirit-rainbow, earthborn jewelry  
 Outsparkling the insipid firmament

Blue above Terni and its orange-trets.

Do not mistake me! You, too, have your rights!

Hans must not burn Kant's house above his head

Because he cannot understand Kant's book :  
And still less must Hans' pastor burn Kant's self

Because Kant understands some books too well.

But, justice seen to on this little point,

Answer me, is it manly, is it sage

To stop and struggle with arrangements here

It took so many lives, so much of toil,

To tinker up into efficiency?

Can't you contrive to operate at once,—

Since time is short and art is long,—to show

Your quality? the world, whate'er you boast,

Without this fractious call on folks to crush

The world together just to set you free,

Admire the capers you will cut perchance,

Nor mind the mischief to your neighbours?

“Age!

Age and experience bring discouragement,”

You taunt me: I maintain the opposite.

Am I discouraged who,—perceiving health,

Strength, beauty, as they tempt the eye of soul,

Are uncombinable with flesh and blood,—

Resolve to let my body live its best,

And leave my soul what better yet may be

Or not be, in this life or afterward?

—In either fortune, wiser than who waits

Till magic art procure a miracle.

In virtue of my very confidence

Mankind ought to outgrow its babyhood,

I prescribe rocking, deprecate rough hands,

While thus the cradle holds its past mistake.

Indeed, my task's the harder—equable

Sustainment everywhere, all strain, no push—

Whereby friends credit me with indolence,

Apathy, hesitation. “Stand stock-still

If able to move briskly? ‘All a-strain’—

So must we compliment your passiveness?

Sound asleep, rather!”

Just the judgment passed

Upon a statue, luckless like myself,

I saw at Rome once! 'Twas some artist's whim

To cover all the accessories close

I' the group, and leave you only Laocoön

With neither sons nor serpents to denote

The purpose of his gesture. Then a crowd

Was called to try the question, criticize

Wherefore such energy of legs and arms,

Nay, eyeballs, starting from the socket.

One—

I give him leave to write my history—

Only one said “I think the gesture strives

Against some obstacle we cannot see.”

All the rest made their minds up. “'Tis a

yawn

Of sheer fatigue subsiding to repose:

The statue's ‘Somnolency’ clear enough!”

There, my arch stranger-friend, my audience both

And arbitress, you have one half your wish,

At least: you know the thing I tried to do!

All, so far, to my praise and glory—all

Told as befits the self-apologist,—

Who ever promises a candid sweep

And clearance of those errors miscalled crimes

None knows more, none laments so much as he,

And ever rises from confession, proved

A god whose fault was—trying to be man.

Just so, fair judge,—if I read smile aright—

I condescend to figure in your eyes

As biggest heart and best of Europe's friends,

And hence my failure. God will estimate

Success one day; and, in the mean time—

you!

I dare say there's some fancy of the sort

Frolicking round this final puff I send

To die up yonder in the ceiling-rose,—

Some consolation-stakes, we losers win!

A plague of the return to “I—I—I

Did this, meant that, hoped, feared the other thing!”

Autobiography, adieu! The rest

Shall make amends, be pure blame, history

And falsehood: not the ineffective truth,

But Thiers-and-Victor-Hugo exercise.

Hear what I never was, but might have been

I' the better world where goes tobacco-smoke !  
 Here lie the dozen volumes of my life :  
 (Did I say "lie" ? the pregnant word will  
 serve).

Cut on to the concluding chapter, though !  
 Because the little hours begin to strike.  
 Hurry Thiers-Hugo to the labour's end !

Something like this the unwritten chapter  
 reads.

Exemplify the situation thus !

Hohenstiel-Schwangau, being, no dispute,  
 Absolute mistress, chose the Assembly, first,  
 To serve her : chose this man, its President  
 Afterward, to serve also,—specially  
 To see that folk did service one and all.  
 And now the proper term of years was out  
 When the Head-servant must vacate his  
 place,

And nothing lay so patent to the world  
 As that his fellow-servants one and all  
 Were—mildly to make mention—knaves or  
 fools,

Each of them with his promise flourished full  
 I' the face of you by word and impudence,  
 Or filtered slyly out by nod and wink  
 And nudge upon your sympathetic rib—  
 That not one minute more did knave or fool  
 Mean to keep faith and serve as he had sworn  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau, once her Head away.  
 Why should such swear except to get the  
 chance,

When time should ripen and confusion bloom,  
 Of putting Hohenstiellers-Schwangauese  
 To the true use of human property—  
 Restoring souls and bodies, this to Pope,  
 And that to King, that other to his planned  
 Perfection of a Share-and-share-alike,  
 That other still, to Empire absolute  
 In shape of the Head-servant's very self  
 Transformed to Master whole and sole ? each  
 scheme

Discussible, concede one circumstance—  
 That each scheme's parent were, beside him-  
 self,

Hohenstiel-Schwangau, not her serving-man  
 Sworn to do service in the way she chose

Rather than his way : way superlative,  
 Only,—by some infatuation,—his  
 And his and his and everyone's but hers  
 Who stuck to just the Assembly and the  
 Head.

I make no doubt the Head, too, had his  
 dream

Of doing sudden duty swift and sure  
 On all that heap of untrustworthiness—  
 Catching each vaunter of the villany  
 He meant to perpetrate when time was ripe,  
 Once the Head-servant fairly out of doors,—  
 And, caging here a knave and there a fool,  
 Cry "Mistress of your servants, these and me,  
 I Hohenstiel-Schwangau ! I, their trusty Head,  
 Pounce on a pretty scheme concocting here  
 That's stopped, extinguished by my vigilance.  
 Your property is safe again : but mark !  
 Safe in these hands, not yours, who lavish  
 trust

Too lightly. Leave my hands their charge  
 awhile !

I know your business better than yourself :  
 Let me alone about it ! Some fine day,  
 Once we are rid of the embarrassment,  
 You shall look up and see your longing  
 crowned !"

Such fancy might have tempted him be false,  
 But this man chose truth and was wiser so.  
 He recognized that for great minds i' the  
 world

There is no trial like the appropriate one  
 Of leaving little minds their liberty  
 Of littleness to blunder on through life,  
 Now, aiming at right ends by foolish means,  
 Now, at absurd achievement through the aid  
 Of good and wise endeavour—to acquiesce  
 In folly's life-long privilege, though with  
 power

To do the little minds the good they need,  
 Despite themselves, by just abolishing  
 Their right to play the part and fill the place  
 I' the scheme of things He schemed who  
 made alike

Great minds and little minds, saw use for  
 each.

Could the orb sweep those puny particles  
 It just half-lights at distance, hardly leads

I' the leash—sweep out each speck of them  
from space

They anticize in with their days and nights  
And whirlings round and dancings off, for-  
sooth,

And all that fruitless individual life  
One cannot lend a beam to but they spoil—  
Sweep them into itself and so, one star,  
Preponderate henceforth i' the heritage  
Of heaven! No! in less senatorial phrase,  
The man endured to help, not save outright  
The multitude by substituting him  
For them, his knowledge, will and way, for  
God's:

Nor change the world, such as it is, and was  
And will be, for some other, suiting all  
Except the purpose of the maker. No!  
He saw that weakness, wickedness will be,  
And therefore should be: that the perfect man  
As we account perfection—at most pure  
O' the special gold, whate'er the form it take,  
Head-work or heart-work, fined and thrice-  
refined

I' the crucible of life, whereto the powers  
Of the refiner, one and all, are flung  
To feed the flame, he saw that e'en the block  
Such perfect man holds out triumphant, breaks  
Into some poisonous ore, gold's opposite,  
At the very purest, so compensating  
Man's Adversary—what if we believe?—  
For earlier stern exclusion of his stuff,  
See the sage, with the hunger for the truth,  
And see his system that's all true, except  
The one weak place that's stanchioned by a  
lie!

The moralist who walks with head erect  
I' the crystal clarity of air so long,  
Until a stumble, and the man's one mire!  
Philanthropy undoes the social knot  
With axe-edge, makes love room 'twixt head  
and trunk:

Religion—but, enough, the thing's too clear!  
Well, if these sparks break out i' the greenest  
tree,

Our topmost of performance, yours and mine,  
What will be done i' the dry ineptitude  
Of ordinary mankind, bark and bole,  
All seems ashamed of but their mother-earth?

Therefore throughout Head's term of servitude  
He did the appointed service, and forbore  
Extraneous action that were duty else,  
Done by some other servant, idle now  
Or mischievous: no matter, each his own—  
Own task, and, in the end, own praise or  
blame!

He suffered them strut, prate and brag their  
best,

Squabble at odds on every point save one,  
And there shake hands,—agree to trifle time,  
Obstruct advance with, each, his cricket-cry  
“Wait till the Head be off the shoulders here!  
Then comes my King, my Pope, my Autocrat,  
My Socialist Republic to her own—  
To-wit, that property of only me,  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau who conceits herself  
Free, forsooth, and expects I keep her so!”  
—Nay, suffered when, perceiving with dismay  
Head's silence paid no tribute to their noise,  
They turned on him. “Dumb menace ir  
that mouth,

Malice in that unstridulosity!  
He cannot but intend some stroke of state  
Shall signalize his passage into peace  
Out of the creaking,—hinder transference  
O' the Hohenstiellers-Schwangaues to king,  
Pope, autocrat, or socialist republic! That's  
Exact the cause his lips unlocked would cry!  
Therefore be stirring: brave, beard, bully  
him!

Dock, by the million, of its friendly joints,  
The electoral body short at once! who did,  
May do again, and undo us beside.  
Wrest from his hands the sword for self-  
defence,

The right to parry any thrust in play  
We peradventure please to meditate!”  
And so forth; creak, creak, creak: and ne'er  
a line

His locked mouth oped the wider, till at last  
O' the long degraded and insulting day,  
Sudden the clock told it was judgment-time.  
Then he addressed himself to speak indeed  
To the fools, not knaves: they saw him walk  
straight down

Each step of the eminence, as he first engaged,  
And stand at last o' the level,—all he swore

"People, and not the people's variety,  
This is the task you set myself and these !  
Thus I performed my part of it, and thus  
They thwarted me throughout, here, here,  
and here :

Study each instance ! yours the loss, not mine.  
What they intend now is demonstrable  
As plainly : here's such man, and here's such  
mode

Of making you some other than the thing  
You, wisely or unwisely, choose to be,  
And only set him up to keep you so.  
Do you approve this? Yours the loss, not mine.  
Do you condemn it? There's a remedy.

Take me—who know your mind, and mean  
your good,

With clearer brain and stouter arm than they,  
Or you, or haply anybody else—

And make me master for the moment ! Choose  
What time, what power you trust me with :

I too

Will choose as frankly ere I trust myself  
With time and power : they must be adequate  
To the end and aim, since mine the loss, with  
yours,

If means be wanting ; once their worth ap-  
proved,

Grant them, and I shall forthwith operate—  
Ponder it well !—to the extremest stretch  
O' the power you trust me : if with unsuccess,  
God wills it, and there's nobody to blame."

Whereon the people answered with a shout  
"The trusty one ! no tricksters any more !"  
How could they other? He was in his place.

What followed? Just what he foresaw, what  
proved

The soundness of both judgments,—his, o'  
the knaves

And fools, each trickster with his dupe,—and  
theirs,

The people's, in what head and arm could  
help

There was uprising, masks dropped, flags  
unfurled,

Weapons outflourished in the wind, my faith !  
Heavily did he let his fist fall plumb

On each perturber of the public peace,  
No matter whose the wagging head it broke—  
From bald-pate craft and greed and impu-  
dence

Of night-hawk at first chance to prowl and  
prey

For glory and a little gain beside,  
Passing for eagle in the dusk of the age,—

To florid head-top, foamy patriotism  
And tribunitary daring, breast laid bare

Thro' confidence in rectitude, with hand  
On private pistol in the pocket? these

And all the dupes of these, who lent them-  
selves

As dust and feather do, to help offence  
O' the wind that whirls them at you, then

subsides  
In safety somewhere, leaving filth afloat,

Annoyance you may brush from eyes and  
beard,—

These he stopped : bade the wind's spite  
howl or whine

Its worst outside the building, wind conceives  
Meant to be pulled together and become

Its natural playground so. What foolishness  
Of dust or feather proved importunate

And fell 'twixt thumb and finger, found them  
gripe

To detriment of bulk and buoyancy.  
Then followed silence and submission. Next,

The inevitable comment came on work  
And work's cost : he was censured as profuse

Of human life and liberty : too swift  
And thorough his procedure, who had lagged

At the outset, lost the opportunity  
Through timid scruples as to right and wrong.

"There's no such certain mark of a small  
mind"

(So did Sagacity explain the fault)  
"As when it needs must square away and

sink  
To its own small dimensions, private scale

Of right and wrong,—humanity i' the large,  
The right and wrong of the universe, forsooth !

This man addressed himself to guard and  
guide

Hohenstiel-Schwangau. When the case de-  
mands

He frustrate villany in the egg, unhatched,  
 With easy stamp and minimum of pang  
 E'en to the punished reptile, 'There's my oath  
 Restrains my foot,' objects our guide and  
 guard,  
 'I must leave guardianship and guidance  
 now :

Rather than stretch one handbreadth of the  
 law,  
 I am bound to see it break from end to end.  
 First show me death i' the body politic :  
 Then prescribe pill and potion, what may  
 please

Hohenstiel-Schwangau ! all is for her sake :  
 'Twas she ordained my service should be so.  
 What if the event demonstrate her unwise,  
 If she unwill the thing she willed before ?  
 I hold to the letter and obey the bond  
 And leave her to perdition loyally.  
 Whence followed thrice the expenditure we  
 blame

Of human life and liberty : for want  
 O' the by-blow, came deliberate butcher's-  
 work ! "

" Elsewhere go carry your complaint ! " bade  
 he.

" Least, largest, there's one law for all the  
 minds,

Here or above : be true at any price !  
 'Tis just o' the great scale, that such happy  
 stroke

Of falsehood would be found a failure. Truth  
 Still stands unshaken at her base by me,  
 Reigns paramount i' the world, for the large  
 good

O' the long late generations,—I and you  
 Forgotten like this buried foolishness !  
 Not so the good I rooted in its grave. "

This is why he refused to break his oath,  
 Rather appealed to the people, gained the  
 power

To act as he thought best, then used it, once  
 For all, no matter what the consequence  
 To knaves and fools. As thus began his  
 sway,

So, through its twenty years, one rule of right  
 Sufficed him : govern for the many first,

The poor mean multitude, all mouths and  
 eyes :

Bid the few, better favoured in the brain,  
 Be patient nor presume on privilege,  
 Help him or else be quiet,—never crave  
 That he help them,—increase, forsooth, the  
 gulf

Yawning so terribly 'twixt mind and mind  
 I' the world here, which his purpose was to  
 block

At bottom, were it by an inch, and bridge,  
 If by a filament, no more, at top.  
 Equalize things a little ! And the way  
 He took to work that purpose out, was plain  
 Enough to intellect and honesty  
 And—superstition, style it if you please,  
 So long as you allow there was no lack  
 O' the quality imperative in man—  
 Reverence. You see deeper ? thus saw he,  
 And by the light he saw, must walk : how  
 else

Was he to do his part ? a man's, with might  
 And main, and not a faintest touch of fear,  
 Sure he was in the hand of God who comes  
 Before and after, with a work to do  
 Which no man helps nor hinders. Thus the  
 man,—

So timid when the business was to touch  
 The uncertain order of humanity,  
 Imperil, for a problematic cure  
 Of grievance on the surface, any good  
 I' the deep of things, dim yet discernible—  
 This same man, so irresolute before,  
 Show him a true excrescence to cut sheer,  
 A devil's-graft on God's foundation-stock,  
 Then—no complaint of indecision more !  
 He wrenched out the whole canker, root and  
 branch,

Deaf to who cried that earth would tumble in  
 At its four corners if he touched a twig.  
 Witness that lie of lies, arch-infamy,  
 When the Republic, with her life involved  
 In just this law—" Each people rules itself  
 Its own way, not as any stranger please "  
 Turned, and for first proof she was living, bade  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau fasten on the throat  
 Of the first neighbour that claimed benefit  
 O' the law herself established. " Hohenstiel



For Hohenstiellers ! Rome, by parity  
Of reasoning, for Romans ? That's a jest  
Wants proper treatment,—lancet-puncture  
suits

The proud flesh : Rome ape Hohenstiel for-  
sooth !"

And so the siege and slaughter and success  
Whereof we nothing doubt that Hohenstiel  
Will have to pay the price, in God's good time  
Which does not always fall on Saturday  
When the world looks for wages. Anyhow,  
He found this infamy triumphant. Well :  
Sagacity suggested, make this speech !

"The work was none of mine : suppose wrong  
wait,

Stand over for redressing ? Mine for me,  
My predecessors' work on their own head !  
Meantime there's plain advantage, should we  
leave

Things as we find them. Keep Rome  
manacled

Hand and foot : no fear of unruliness !  
Her foes consent to even seem our friends  
So long, no longer. Then, there's glory got  
By boldness and bravado to the world :  
The disconcerted world must grin and bear  
The old saucy writing, 'Grunt thereat who  
may,

So shall things be, for such my pleasure is—  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau's.' How that reads  
in Rome

I' the Capitol where Brennus broke his pate,  
And lends a flourish to our journalists !"

Only, it was nor read nor flourished of,  
Since, not a moment did such glory stay  
Excision of the canker ! Out it came,  
Root and branch, with much roaring, and  
some blood,

And plentiful abuse of him from friend  
And foe. Who cared ? Not Nature who  
assuaged

The pain and set the patient on his legs  
Promptly : the better ! had it been the worse,  
"Tis Nature you must try conclusions with,  
Not he, since nursing canker kills the sick  
For certain, while to cut may cure, at least.

"Ah," groaned a second time Sagacity,  
"Again the little mind, precipitate.

Rash, rude, when even in the right, as here !  
The great mind knows the power of gentleness,  
Only tries force because persuasion fails.

Had this man, by prelusive trumpet-blast,  
Signified 'Truth and Justice mean to come,  
Nay, fast approach your threshold ! Ere they  
knock,

See that the house be set in order, swept  
And garnished, windows shut, and doors  
thrown wide !

The free State comes to visit the free Church :  
Receive her ! or . . . or . . . never mind  
what else !"

Thus moral suasion heralding brute force,  
How had he seen the old abuses die,  
And new life kindle here, there, everywhere,  
Roused simply by that mild yet potent spell—  
Beyond or beat of drum or stroke of sword—  
Public opinion !"

"How, indeed ?" he asked,

"When all to see, after some twenty years,  
Were your own fool-face waiting for the sight,  
Faced by as wide a grin from ear to ear  
O' the knaves who, while the fools were  
waiting, worked—

Broke yet another generation's heart—  
Twenty years' respite helping ! Teach your  
nurse

'Compliance with, before you suck, the teat !'  
Find what that means, and meanwhile hold  
your tongue !"

Whereof the war came which he knew must  
be.

Now, this had proved the dry-rot of the race  
He ruled o'er, that, i' the old day, when was  
need

They fought for their own liberty and life,  
Well did they fight, none better : whence,  
such love

Of fighting somehow still for fighting's sake  
Against no matter whose the liberty  
And life, so long as self-conceit should crow  
And clap the wing, while justice sheathed her  
claw,—

That what had been the glory of the world

When thereby came the world's good, grew  
its plague

Now that the champion-armour, donned to  
Jare

The dragon once, was clattered up and down  
Highway and by-path of the world at peace,  
Merely to mask marauding, or for sake  
O' the shine and rattle that apprized the fields  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau was a fighter yet,  
And would be, till the weary world suppressed  
Her peccant humours out of fashion now.  
Accordingly the world spoke plain at last,  
Promised to punish who next played with fire.

So, at his advent, such discomfiture  
Taking its true shape of beneficence,  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau, half-sad and part-  
wise,

Sat: if with wistful eye reverting oft  
To each pet weapon, rusty on its peg,  
Yet, with a sigh of satisfaction too  
That, peacefulness become the law, herself  
Got the due share of godsend in its train,  
Cried shame and took advantage quietly.  
Still, so the dry-rot had been nursed into  
Blood, bones and marrow, that, from worst  
to best,

All,—clearest brains and soundest hearts save  
here,—

All had this lie acceptable for law  
Plain as the sun at noonday—"War is best,  
Peace is worst; peace we only tolerate  
As needful preparation for new war:  
War may be for whatever end we will—  
Peace only as the proper help thereto.  
Such is the law of right and wrong for us  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau: for the other world,  
As naturally, quite another law.

Are we content? The world is satisfied.  
Discontent? Then the world must give us  
leave

To strike right, left, and exercise our arm  
Torpid of late through overmuch repose,  
And show its strength is still superlative  
At somebody's expense in life or limb:  
Which done,—let peace succeed and last a  
year!"

Such devil's-doctrine so was judged God's law,

We say, when this man stepped upon the  
stage,

That it had seemed a venial fault at most  
Had he once more obeyed Sagacity.  
"You come i' the happy interval of peace,  
The favourable weariness from war:  
Prolong it! artfully, as if inter.  
On ending peace as soon as possible.  
Quietly so increase the sweets of ease  
And safety, so employ the multitude,  
Put hod and trowel so in idle hands,  
So stuff and stop up wagging jaws with bread,  
That selfishness shall surreptitiously  
Do wisdom's office, whisper in the ear  
Of Hohenstiel-Schwangau, there's a pleasant  
feel

In being gently forced down, pinioned fast  
To the easy arm-chair by the pleading arms  
O' the world beseeching her to there abide  
Content with all the harm done hitherto,  
And let herself be petted in return,  
Free to re-wage, in speech and prose and  
verse,

The old unjust wars, nay—in verse and prose  
And speech,—to vaunt new victories shall  
prove

A plague o' the future,—so that words suffice  
For present comfort, and no deeds denote  
That—tired of illimitable line on line  
Of boulevard-building, tired o' the theatre  
With the tuneful thousand in their thrones  
above,

For glory of the male intelligence,  
And Nakedness in her due niche below,  
For illustration of the female use—  
That she, 'twixt yawn and sigh, prepares to  
slip

Out of the arm-chair, wants fresh blood again  
From over the boundary, to colour-up  
The sheeny sameness, keep the world aware  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau's arm needs exercise  
Despite the petting of the universe!  
Come, you're a city-builder: what's the way  
Wisdom takes when time needs that she entice  
Some fierce tribe, castled on the mountain-  
peak,

Into the quiet and amenity  
O' the meadow-land below? By crying 'Done

With fight, now, down, with fortress?' Rather  
—'Dare

On, dare ever, not a stone displace!' Cries Wisdom: 'Cradle of our ancestors,  
Be bulwark, give our children safety still!  
Who of our children please may stoop and taste  
O' the valley-fatness, unafraid,—for why?  
At first alarm they have thy mother-ribs  
To run upon for refuge: foes forget  
Scarcely that Terror on her vantage-coign,  
Couchant supreme among the powers of air,  
Watches—prepared to pounce—the country  
wide!

Meanwhile the encouraged valley holds its own,  
From the first hut's adventure in descent,  
Half home, half hiding place,—to dome and  
spire

Befitting the assured metropolis:  
Nor means offence to the fort which caps the  
crag,

All undismantled of a turret-stone,  
And bears the banner-pole that creaks at times  
Embarrassed by the old emblazonment,  
When festal days are to commemorate:  
Otherwise left untenanted, no doubt,  
Since, never fear, our myriads from below  
Would rush, if needs were, man the walls again,  
Renew the exploits of the earlier time  
At moment's notice! But till notice sound,  
Inhabit we in ease and opulence!

And so, till one day thus a notice sounds,  
Not trumpeted, but in a whisper-gust.  
Fitfully playing through mute city streets  
At midnight weary of day's feast and game—  
'Friends, your famed fort's a ruin past repair!  
Its use is—to proclaim it had a use  
Obsolete long since. Climb and study there  
How to paint barbican and battlement  
I' the scenes of our new theatre! We fight  
Now—by forbidding neighbours to sell steel  
Or buy wine, not by blowing out their brains!  
Moreover, while we let time sap the strength  
O' the walls omnipotent in menace once,  
Neighbours would seem to have prepared sur-

prise—  
Run up defences in a mushroom-growth,  
For all the world like what we boasted: brief—  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau's policy is peace!

Ay, so Sagacity advised him fitch  
Folly from fools: handsomely substitute  
The dagger o' lath, while gay they sang and  
danced,  
For that long dangerous sword they liked to  
feel,  
Even at feast-time, clink and make friends start.  
No! he said "Hear the truth, and bear the  
truth,

And bring the truth to bear on all you are  
And do, assured that only good comes thence  
Whate'er the shape good take! While I have  
rule,

Understand!—war for war's sake, war for sake  
O' the good war gets you as war's soul excuse,  
Is damnable and damned shall be. You want  
Glory? Why so do I, and so does God.  
Where is it found,—in this paraded shame,—  
One particle of glory? Once you warred  
For liberty against the world, and won:  
There was the glory. Now, you fain would  
war

Because the neighbour prospers overmuch,—  
Because there has been silence half-an-hour,  
Like Heaven on earth, without a cannon-shot  
Announcing Hohenstieler-Schwangauese  
Are minded to disturb the jubilee,—  
Because the loud tradition echoes faint,  
And who knows but posterity may doubt  
If the great deeds were ever done at all,  
Much less believe, were such to do again,  
So the event would follow: therefore, prove  
The old power, at the expense of somebody!  
Oh Glory,—gilded bubble, bard and sage  
So nickname rightly,—would thy dance endure

One moment, would thy vaunting make believe  
Only one eye thy ball was solid gold,  
Hadst thou less breath to buoy thy vacancy  
Than a whole multitude expends in praise,  
Less range for roaning than from head to head  
Of a whole people? Flit, fall, fly again,  
Only, fix never where the resolute hand  
May prick thee, prove the glassy lie thou art!  
Give me real intellect to reason with,  
No multitude, no entity that apes  
One wise man, being but a million fools!  
How and whence wishest glory, thou wise one?

Wouldst get it,—didst thyself guide Providence,

By stinting of his due each neighbour round  
In strength and knowledge and dexterity  
So as to have thy littleness grow large  
By all those somethings once, turned nothings  
now,

As children make a molehill mountainous  
By scooping out a trench around their pile,  
And saving so the mudwork from approach?  
Quite otherwise the cheery game of life,  
True yet mimetic warfare, whereby man  
Does his best with his utmost, and so ends  
A victor most of all in fair defeat.

Who thinks,—would he have no one think  
beside?

Who knows, who does,—save his must learn—  
ing die

And action cease? Why, so our giant proves  
No better than a dwarf, once rivalry  
Prostrate around him. Let the whole race stand  
For him to try conclusions fairly with!  
Show me the great man would engage his peer  
Rather by grinning 'Cheat, thy gold is brass!'—  
Than granting 'Perfect piece of purest ore!  
Still, is it less good mintage, this of mine?'  
Well, and these right and sound results of soul  
I the strong and healthy one wise man,—shall  
such

Be vainly sought for, scornfully renounced  
I the multitude that make the entity—  
The people?—to what purpose, if no less,  
In power and purity of soul, below  
The reach of the unit than, by multiplied  
Might of the body, vulgarized the more,  
Above, in thick and threefold brutishness?  
See! you accept such one wise man, myself:  
Wiser or less wise, still I operate  
From my own stock of wisdom, nor exact  
Of other sort of natures you admire,  
That whose rhymes a sonnet pays a tax,  
Who paints a landscape dips brush at his cost,  
Who scores a septett true for strings and wind  
Mulcted must be—else how should I impose  
Properly, attitudinize aright,  
Did such conflicting claims as these divert  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau from observing me?  
Therefore, what I find facile, you be sure,

With effort or without it, you shall dare—  
You, I aspire to make my better self

And truly the Great Nation. No more war  
For war's sake, then! and,—seeing, wickedness  
Springs out of folly,—no more foolish dread  
O' the neighbour waxing too inordinate  
A rival, through his gain of wealth and ease!  
What?—keep me patient, Powers!—the  
people here,

Earth presses to her heart, nor owns a pride  
Above her pride i' the race all flame and air  
And aspiration to the boundless Great,  
The incommensurably Beautiful—  
Whose very falterings groundward come of  
flight

Urged by a pinion all too passionate  
For heaven and what it holds of gloom and  
glow:

Bravest of thinkers, bravest of the brave  
Doers, exalt in Science, rapturous  
In Art, the—more than all—magnetic race  
To fascinate their fellows, mould mankind  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau-fashion,—these,  
what?—these

Will have to abdicate their primacy  
Should such a nation sell them steel untaxed,  
And such another take itself, on hire  
For the natural sen'night, somebody for lord  
Unpatronized by me whose back was turned?  
Or such another yet would fain build bridge,  
Lay rail, drive tunnel, busy its poor self  
With its appropriate fancy: so there's—flash—  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau up in arms at once!  
Genius has somewhat of the infantine:  
But of the childish, not a touch nor taint  
Except through self-will, which, being foolish-  
ness,

Is certain, soon or late, of punishment  
Which Providence avert!—and that it may  
Avert what both of us would so deserve,  
No foolish dread o' the neighbour, I enjoin!  
By consequence, no wicked war with him,  
While I rule!

"Does that mean—no war at all  
When just the wickedness I here proscribe  
Comes, haply, from the neighbour? Does  
my speech

Precede the praying that you beat the sword  
To ploughshare, and the spear to pruning-  
hook,

And sit down henceforth under your own vine  
And fig-tree through the sleepy summer  
month,

Letting what hurly-burly please explode  
On the other side the mountain-frontier? No,  
Beloved! I foresee and I announce  
Necessity of warfare in one case,

For one cause: one way, I bid broach the  
blood

O' the world. For truth and right, and only  
right

And truth,—right, truth, on the absolute scale  
of God,

No pettiness of man's admeasurement,—  
In such case only, and for such one cause,  
Fight your hearts out, whatever fate betide  
Hands energetic to the uttermost!

Lie not! Endure no lie which needs your  
heart

And hand to push it out of mankind's path—  
No lie that lets the natural forces work

Too long ere lay it plain and pulverized—  
Seeing man's life lasts only twenty years!

And such a lie, before both man and God,  
Proving, at this time present, Austria's rule  
O'er Italy,—for Austria's sake the first,  
Italy's next, and our sake last of all,

Come with me and deliver Italy!  
Smite hip and thigh until the oppressor leave  
Free from the Adriatic to the Alps

The oppressed one! We were they who laid  
her low

In the old bad day when Villany braved Truth  
And Right and laughed 'Henceforward, God  
deposed,

Satan we set to rule for evermore  
I' the world!—whereof to stop the conse-  
quence,

And for atonement of false glory there  
Gaped at and gabbled over by the world,

I purpose to get God enthroned again  
For what the world will gird at as sheer shame

I' the cost of blood and treasure. 'All for  
nought—

Not even, say, some patch of province, splice

O' the frontier?—some snug honorarium-fee  
Shut into glove and pocketed apace?'

(Questions Sagacity) 'in deference  
To the natural susceptibility

Of folks at home, unwitting of that pitch  
You soar to, and misdoubting if Truth, Right

And the other such augustnesses repay  
Expenditure in coin o' the realm,—but prompt

To recognize the cession of Savoy  
And Nice as marketable value!' No,

Sagacity, go preach to Metternich,  
And, sermon ended, stay where he resides!

Hohenstiel-Schwangau, you and I must march  
The other road! war for the hate of war,

Not love, this once!" So Italy was free.

What else noteworthy and commendable  
I' the man's career?—that he was resolute

No trepidation, much less treachery  
On his part, should imperil from its poise

The ball o' the world, heaved up at such  
expense

Of pains so far, and ready to rebound,  
Let but a finger maladroitly fall,

Under pretence of making fast and sure  
The inch gained by late volubility,

And run itself back to the ancient rest  
At foot o' the mountain. Thus he ruled,

gave proof  
The world had gained a point, progressive so,

By choice, this time, as will and power con-  
curred,

O' the fittest man to rule; not chance of birth,  
Or such-like dice-throw. Oft Sagacity

Was at his ear: "Confirm this clear advance,  
Support this wise procedure! You, elect

O' the people, mean to justify their choice  
And out-king all the kingly imbeciles;

But that's just half the enterprise: remains  
You find them a successor like yourself,

In head and heart and eye and hand and aim,  
Or all done's undone; and whom hope to

mould  
So like you as the pupil Nature sends,

The son and heir's completeness which you  
lack?

Lack it no longer! Wed the pick o' the world,  
Where'er you think you find it. Should she be

A queen,—tell Hohenstieler-Schwangaese  
'So do the old enthroned decrepitudes

Acknowledge, in the rotten hearts of them,  
Their knell is knolled, they hasten to make  
peace

With the new order, recognize in me  
Your right to constitute what king you will,  
Cringe therefore crown in hand and bride on  
arm,

To both of us : we triumph, I suppose !'  
Is it the other sort of rank ?—bright eye,  
Soft smile, and so forth, all her queenly boast ?  
Undaunted the exordium—'I, the man  
O' the people, with the people mate myself :  
So stand, so fall. Kings, keep your crowns  
and brides !

Our progeny (if Providence agree)  
Shall live to tread the baubles underfoot  
And bid the scarecrows consort with their kin.  
For son, as for his sire, be the free wife  
In the free state !'

That is, Sagacity

Would prop up one more lie, the most of all  
Pernicious fancy that the son and heir  
Receives the genius from the sire, himself  
Transmits as surely,—ask experience else !  
Which answers,—never was so plain a truth  
As that God drops his seed of heavenly flame  
Just where He wills on earth : sometimes  
where man

Seems to tempt—such the accumulated store  
Of faculties—one spark to fire the heap ;  
Sometimes where, fire-ball-like, it falls upon  
The naked unpreparedness of rock,  
Burns, beaconing the nations through their  
night.

Faculties, fuel for the flame ? All helps  
Come, ought to come, or come not, crossed  
by chance,  
From culture and transmission. What's your  
want

I' the son and heir ? Sympathy, aptitude,  
Teachableness, the fuel for the flame ?  
You'll have them for your pains : but the  
\* flame's self,

The novel thought of God shall light the  
world ?

No, poet, though your offspring rhyme and  
chime

I' the cradle,—painter, no, for all your pet  
Draws his first eye, beats Salvatore's boy,—  
And thrice no, statesman, should your progeny  
Tie bib and tucker with no tape but red,  
And made a foolscap kite of protocols !  
Critic and copyist and bureaucrat  
To heart's content ! The seed o' the apple-  
tree

Brings forth another tree which bears a crab :  
'Tis the great gardener grafts the excellence  
On wildings where he will.

"How plain I view,  
Across those misty years 'twixt me and  
Rome"—

(Such the man's answer to Sagacity)  
"The little wayside temple, half-way down  
To a mild river that makes oxen white  
Miraculously, un-mouse-colours skin,  
Or so the Roman country people dream !  
I view that sweet small shrub-embedded shrine  
On the declivity, was sacred once  
To a transmuting Genius of the land,  
Could touch and turn its dunnest natures  
bright,

—Since Italy means the Land of the Ox, we  
know.

Well, how was it the due succession fell  
From priest to priest who ministered i' the cool  
Calm fane o' the Clitumnian god ? The sire  
Brought forth a son and sacerdotal sprout,  
Endowed instinctively with good and grace  
To suit the gliding gentleness below—  
Did he ? Tradition tells another tale.  
Each priest obtained his predecessor's staff,  
Robe, fillet and insignia, blamelessly,  
By springing out of ambush, soon or late,  
And slaying him : the initiative rite  
Simply was murder, save that murder took,  
I' the case, another and religious name.  
So it was once, is now, shall ever be  
With genius and its priesthood in this world.  
The new powers slays the old—but handsomely.  
There he lies, not diminished by an inch  
Of stature that he graced the altar with,  
Though somebody of other bulk and build

Cries 'What a goodly personage lies here  
 Reddening the water where the bulrush roots!  
 May I conduct the service in his place,  
 Decently and in order, as did he,  
 And, as he did not, keep a wary watch  
 When meditating 'neath yon willow shade!'   
 Find out your best man, sure the son of him  
 Will prove best man again, and, better still  
 Somehow than best, the grandson-prodigy!  
 You think the world would last another day  
 Did we so make us masters of the trick  
 Whereby the works go, we could pre-arrange  
 Their play and reach perfection when we  
 please?

Depend on it, the change and the surprise  
 Are part o' the plan: 'tis we wish steadiness;  
 Nature prefers a motion by unrest,  
 Advancement through this force which jostles  
 that.

And so, since much remains i' the world to  
 see,

Here's the world still, affording God the  
 sight."

Thus did the man refute Sagacity  
 Ever at this old whisper in his ear:  
 "Here are you picked out, by a miracle,  
 And placed conspicuously enough, folks say  
 And you believe, by Providence outright  
 Taking a new way—nor without success—  
 To put the world upon its mettle: good!  
 But Fortune alternates with Providence;  
 Resource is soon exhausted. Never count  
 On such a happy hit occurring twice!  
 Try the old method next time!"

"Old enough,"  
 (At whisper in his ear, the laugh outbroke)  
 "And made the most discredited of all,  
 By just the men and women who make boast  
 They are kings and queens thereby! Mere  
 self-defence

Should teach them, on one chapter of the law  
 Must be no sort of trifling—chastity:  
 They stand or fall, as their progenitors  
 Were chaste or unchaste. Now, run eye  
 around

My crowned acquaintance, give each life its  
 look.

And no more,—why, you'd think each life  
 was led.

Purposely for example of what pains  
 Who leads it took to cure the prejudice,  
 And prove there's nothing so unprovable  
 As who is who, what son of what a sire,  
 And,—inferentially,—how faint the chance  
 That the next generation needs to fear  
 Another fool o' the selfsame type as he  
 Happily regnant now by right divine  
 And luck o' the pillow! No: select your  
 lord

By the direct employment of your brains  
 As best you may,—bad as the blunder prove,  
 A far worse evil stank beneath the sun  
 When some legitimate blockhead managed so  
 Matters that high time was to interfere,  
 Though interference came from hell itself  
 And not the blind mad miserable mob  
 Happily ruled so long by pillow-luck  
 And divine right,—by lies in short, not  
 truth.

And meanwhile use the allotted minute . . ."

One,—

Two, three, four, five—yes, five the *pendule*  
 warns!

Eh? Why, thus wild work wanders past all  
 bound

And bearing! Exile, Leicester-square, the  
 life

I' the old gay miserable time, rehearsed,  
 Tried on again like cast clothes, still to  
 serve

At a pinch, perhaps? "Who's who?" was  
 aptly asked,

Since certainly I am not I! since when?  
 Where is the bud-mouthed arbitress? A nod  
 Out-Homerizing Homer! Stay—there flits the  
 clue

I fain would find the end of! Yes,—“Mean-  
 while,

Use the allotted minute!” Well, you see,  
 (Veracious and imaginary Thiers,  
 Who map out thus the life I might have led,  
 But did not,—all the worse for earth and

Doff spectacles, wipe pen, shut book,  
decamp !)

You see 'tis easy in heroics ! Plain  
Pedestrian speech shall help me perorate.  
Ah, if one had no need to use the tongue !  
How obvious and how easy 'tis to talk  
Inside the soul, a ghostly dialogue—  
Instincts with guesses,—instinct, guess, again  
With dubious knowledge, half-experience :  
each

And all the interlocutors alike  
Subordinating,—as decorum bids,  
Oh, never fear ! but still decisively,—  
Claims from without that take too high a tone,  
—("God wills this, man wants that, the  
dignity

Prescribed a prince would wish the other  
thing")—

Putting them back to insignificance  
Beside one intimatest fact—myself  
Am first to be considered, since I live  
Twenty years longer and then end, perhaps !  
But, where one ceases to soliloquize,  
Somehow the motives, that did well enough  
I' the darkness, when you bring them into  
light

Are found, like those famed cave-fish, to lack  
eye

And organ for the upper magnitudes.  
The other common creatures, of less fine  
Existence, that acknowledge earth and  
heaven,

Have it their own way in the argument.  
Yes, forced to speak, one stoops to say—  
one's aim

Was—what it peradventure should have  
been :

To renovate a people, mend or end  
That bane come of a blessing meant the  
world—

Inordinate culture of the sense made quick  
By soul,—the lust o' the flesh, lust of the eye,  
And pride of life,—and, consequent on these,  
The worship of that prince o' the power o'  
the air

Who paints the cloud and fills the emptiness  
And bids his votaries, famishing for truth,  
Feed on a lie.

Alack, one lies oneself

Even in the stating that one's end was truth,  
Truth only, if one states as much in words !  
Give me the inner chamber of the soul  
For obvious easy argument ! 'tis there  
One pits the silent truth against a lie—  
Truth which breaks shell a careless simple  
bird,

Nor wants a gorget nor a beak filed fine,  
Steel spurs, and the whole armoury o' the  
tongue,

To equalize the odds. But, do your best,  
Words have to come : and somehow words  
deflect

As the best cannon ever rifled will.

"Deflect" indeed ! nor merely words from  
thoughts

But names from facts : "Clitumnus"<sup>1</sup> did I  
say ?

As if it had been his ox-whitening wave  
Whereby folk practised that grim cult of old—  
The murder of their temple's priest by who  
Would qualify for his succession. Sure—  
Nemi was the true lake's style. Dream had  
need

Of the ox-whitening piece of prettiness  
And so confused names, well known once  
awake.

So, I' the Residenz yet, not Leicester-square,  
Alone,—no such congenial intercourse !—  
My reverie concludes, as dreaming should,  
With daybreak : nothing done and over yet,  
Except cigars ! The adventure thus may be,  
Or never needs to be at all : who knows ?  
My Cousin-Duke, perhaps, at whose hard  
head

Is it, now—is this letter to be launched,  
The sight of whose grey oblong, whose grim  
seal,

Set all these fancies floating for an hour ?

Twenty years are good gain, come what come  
will !

Double or quits ! The letter goes ! Or stays ?

<sup>1</sup> An Italian river supposed to turn cattle  
white.



# FIFINE AT THE FAIR.

1872

[For an analysis of this remarkable poem, see Dr. Berdoe's "Browning Cyclopædia" (Swan Sonnenschein & Co.) and Mr. Nettleship's "Essays on Browning's Poetry."]

DONE ELVIRE.

Vous plait-il, don Juan, nous éclaircir ces  
beaux mystères?

DON JUAN.

Madame, à vous dire la vérité . . .

DONE ELVIRE.

Ah ! que vous savez mal vous défendre pour  
un homme de cour, et qui doit être accoutumé  
à ces sortes de choses ! J'ai pitié de vous voir  
la confusion que vous avez. Que ne vous armez-  
vous le front d'une noble effronterie ? Que ne  
me jurez-vous que vous êtes toujours dans les  
mêmes sentimens pour moi, que vous m'aimez  
toujours avec une ardeur sans égale, et que rien  
n'est capable de vous détacher de moi que la  
mort ?—MOLIÈRE, *Don Juan*, acte i. sc. 3.

DONNA ELVIRA.

Don Juan, might you please to help one give a  
guess,  
Hold up a candle, clear this fine mysterious-  
ness ?

DON JUAN.

Madam, if needs I must declare the truth,—in  
short . . .

DONNA ELVIRA.

Fie, for a man of mode, accustomed at the court  
To such a style of thing, how awkwardly my  
lord

Attempts defence ! You move compassion,  
that's the word—

Dumb-founded and chap-fallen ! Why don't  
you arm your brow

With noble impudence ? Why don't you swear  
and vow

No sort of change is come to any sentiment  
You ever had for me ? Affection holds the bent,  
You love me now as erst, with passion that  
makes pale

All ardour else : nor aught in nature can avail  
To separate us two, save what, in stopping  
breath,

May peradventure stop devotion likewise—  
death !

PROLOGUE.

AMPHIBIAN.

I.

THE fancy I had to-day,  
Fancy which turned a fear !  
I swam far out in the bay,  
Since waves laughed warm and clear

I lay and looked at the sun,  
The noon-sun looked at me :  
Between us two, no one  
Live creature, that I could see.

Yes ! There came floating by  
Me, who lay floating too.  
Such a strange butterfly !  
Creature as dear as new :

Because the membraned wings  
So wonderful, so wide,  
So sun-suffused, were things  
Like soul and nought beside.

V.

A handbreadth over head !  
All of the sea my own,  
It owned the sky instead ;  
Both of us were alone.

VI.

I never shall join its flight,  
For, nought buoys flesh in air.  
If it touch the sea—good night !  
Death sure and swift waits there.

## VII.

Can the insect feel the better  
For watching the uncouth play  
Of limbs that slip the fetter,  
Pretend as they were not clay?

## VIII.

Undoubtedly I rejoice  
That the air comports so well  
With a creature which had the choice  
Of the land once. Who can tell?

## IX.

What if a certain soul  
Which early slipped its sheath,  
And has for its home the whole  
Of heaven, thus look beneath,

## X.

Thus watch one who, in the world,  
Both lives and likes life's way,  
Nor wishes the wings unfurled  
That sleep in the worm, they say?

## XI.

But sometimes when the weather  
Is blue, and warm waves tempt  
To free oneself of tether,  
And try a life exempt

## XII.

From worldly noise and dust,  
In the sphere which overbrims  
With passion and thought,—why, just  
Unable to fly, one swims!

## XIII.

By passion and thought upborne,  
One smiles to oneself—"They fare  
Scarce better, they need not scorn  
Our sea, who live in the air!"

## XIV.

Emancipate through passion  
And thought, with sea for sky,  
We substitute, in a fashion,  
For heaven—poetry:

VOL. II.

## XV.

Which sea, to all intent,  
Gives flesh such noon-disport  
As a finer element  
Affords the spirit-sort.

## XVI.

Whatever they are, we seem:  
Imagine the thing they know;  
All deeds they do, we dream;  
Can heaven be else but so?

## XVII.

And meantime, yonder streak  
Meets the horizon's verge;  
That is the land, to seek  
If we tire or dread the surge:

## XVIII.

Land the solid and safe—  
To welcome again (confess!)  
When, high and dry, we chafe  
The body, and don the dress.

## XIX.

Does she look, pity, wonder  
At one who mimics flight,  
Swims—heaven above, sea under,  
Yet always earth in sight?

## FIFINE AT THE FAIR.

## I.

O TRIP and skip, Elvire! Link arm in arm  
with me!  
Like husband and like wife, together let us see  
The tumbling-troop arrayed, the strollers on  
their stage,  
Drawn up and under arms, and ready to en-  
gage.

## II.

Now, who supposed the night would play  
us such a prank?  
—That what was raw and brown, rough pole  
and shaven plank?

Mere bit of boarding, half by trestle propped,  
half tub,  
Would flaunt it forth as brisk as butterfly  
from grub?

This comes of sun and air, of Autumn afternoon,  
And Pornic and Saint Gille, whose feast affords  
the boon—

This scaffold turned parterre, this flower-bed  
in full blow,

Bateleurs, baladines !<sup>1</sup> We shall not miss the  
show !

They pace and promenade ; they presently  
will dance :

What good were else i' the drum and fife ? O  
pleasant land of France !

## III.

Who saw them make their entry ? At wink  
of eve, be sure !

They love to steal a march, nor lightly risk  
the lure.

They keep their treasure hid, nor stale (improvident)

Before the time is ripe, each wonder of their  
tent—

Yon six-legged sheep, to wit, and he who beats  
a gong,

Lifts cap and waves salute, exhilarates the  
throng—

Their ape of many years and much adventure,  
grim

And grey with pitying fools who find a joke  
in him.

Or, best, the human beauty, Mimi, Toinette,  
Fifine,

Tricot fines down if fat, padding plumps up if  
lean,

Ere, shedding petticoat, modesty, and such  
toys,

They bounce forth, squalid girls transformed  
to gamesome boys.

## IV.

No, no, thrice, Pornic, no ! Perpend the  
authentic tale !

'Twas not for every Gawain to gaze upon the  
Gmail !

<sup>1</sup> Conjurers and dancers.

But whoso went his rounds, when flew bat,  
flitted midge,

Might hear across the dusk,—where both  
roads join the bridge,

Hard by the little port,—creak a slow  
caravan,

A chimneyed house on wheels ; so shyly-  
sheathed, began

To broaden out the bud which, bursting  
unaware,

Now takes away our breath, queen-tulip of  
the Fair !

## V.

Yet morning promised much : for, pitched  
and slung and reared

On terrace 'neath the tower, 'twixt tree and  
tree appeared

An airy structure ; how the pennon from its  
dome,

Frenetic<sup>2</sup> to be free, makes one red stretch  
for home !

The home far and away, the distance where  
lives joy,

The cure, at once and ever, of world and  
world's annoy ;

Since, what lolls full in front, a furlong from  
the booth,

But ocean-idleness, sky-blue and millpond-  
smooth ?

## VI.

Frenetic to be free ! And, do you know,  
there beats

Something within my breast, as sensitive ?—  
repeats

The fever of the flag ? My heart makes just  
the same

Passionate stretch, fires up for lawlessness,  
lays claim

To share the life they lead : losels, who have  
and use

The hour what way they will,—applaud them  
or abuse

Society, whereof myself am at the beck,  
Whose call obey, and stoop to burden stiffest  
neck !

<sup>2</sup> Frenzied.

VII.

Why is it that whene'er a faithful few  
 combine  
 To cast allegiance off, play truant, nor repine,  
 Agree to bear the worst, forego the best in  
 store  
 For us who, left behind, do duty as of yore,—  
 Why is it that, disgraced, they seem to relish  
 life the more?  
 —Seem as they said “We know a secret  
 passing praise  
 Or blame of such as you! Remain! we go  
 our ways  
 With something you o'erlooked, forgot or  
 chose to sweep  
 Clean out of door: our pearl picked from  
 your rubbish-heap.  
 You care not for your loss, we calculate our gain.  
 All's right. Are you content? Why, so let  
 things remain!  
 To the wood then, to the wild: free life, full  
 liberty!”  
 And when they rendezvous beneath the in-  
 clement sky,  
 House by the hedge, reduced to brute-com-  
 panionship,  
 —Misguided ones who gave society the slip,  
 And find too late how boon a parent they  
 despised,  
 What ministration spurned, how sweet and  
 civilized—  
 Then, left alone at last with self-sought  
 wretchedness,  
 No interloper else!—why is it, can we guess?—  
 At somebody's expense, goes up so frank a  
 laugh?  
 As though they held the corn, and left us only  
 chaff  
 From garners crammed and closed. And we  
 indeed are clever  
 If we get grain as good, by thrashing straw  
 for ever!

VIII.

Still, truants as they are and purpose yet  
 to be,  
 That nowise needs forbid they venture—as  
 you see—

To cross confine, approach the once familiar  
 roof  
 O' the kindly race their flight estranged:  
 stand half aloof,  
 Sidle half up, press near, and proffer wares  
 for sale  
 —In their phrase—make, in ours, white levy  
 of black mail.  
 They, of the wild, require some touch of us  
 the tame,  
 Since clothing, meat and drink, mean money  
 all the same.

IX.

If hunger, proverbs say, allures the wolf  
 from wood,  
 Much more the bird must dare a dash at  
 something good:  
 Must snatch up, bear away in beak, the trifle-  
 treasure  
 To wood and wild, and then—O how enjoy  
 at leisure!  
 Was never tree-built nest, you climbed and  
 took, of bird  
 (Rare city-visitant, talked of, scarce seen or  
 heard),  
 But, when you would dissect the structure,  
 piece by piece,  
 You found, entwined amid the country-  
 product—fleece  
 And feather, thistle-fluffs and bearded windle-  
 straws!  
 Some shred of foreign silk, unravelling of  
 gauze,  
 Bit, may be, of brocade, mid fur and blow-  
 bell-down:  
 Filched plainly from mankind, dear tribute  
 paid by town,  
 Which proved how oft the bird had plucked  
 up heart of grace,  
 Swooped down at waif and stray, made  
 furtively our place  
 Pay tax and toll, then borne the booty to  
 enrich  
 Her paradise? the waste; the how and why  
 of which,  
 That is the secret, there the mystery that  
 stings!

<sup>1</sup> The tufted hair-grass.

X.  
For, what they traffic in, consists of just  
the things  
We,—proud ones who so scorn dwellers with-  
out the pale,  
Bateleurs, baladines, white leviers of black  
mail,—  
I say, they sell what we most pique us that  
we keep!  
How comes it, all we hold so dear they count  
so cheap?

XI.  
What price should you impose, for instance,  
on repute,  
Good fame, your own good fame and family's  
to boot?  
Stay start of quick moustache, arrest the  
angry rise  
Of eyebrow! All I asked is answered by  
surprise.  
Now tell me: are you worth the cost of a  
cigar?  
Go boldly, enter booth, disburse the coin at bar  
Of doorway where presides the master of the  
troop,  
And forthwith you survey his Graces in a group,  
Live Picture, picturesque no doubt and close  
to life:  
His sisters, right and left; the Grace in  
front, his wife.  
Next, who is this performs the feat of the  
Trapeze?  
Lo, she is launched, look—fie, the fairy!—  
how she flees  
O'er all those heads thrust back,—mouths,  
eyes, one gape and stare,—  
No scrap of skirt impedes free passage through  
the air,  
Till, plumb on the other side, she lights and  
laughs again,  
That fairy-form, whereof each muscle, nay,  
each vein  
The curious may inspect,—his daughter that  
he sells  
Each rustic for five sous. Desiderate aught else  
O' the vendor? As you leave his show, why,  
joke the man!

"You cheat: your six-legged sheep, I re-  
collect, began  
Both life and trade, last year, trimmed  
properly and clipped,  
As the Twin-headed Babe, and Human  
Nondescript!"  
What does he care? You paid his price,  
may pass your jest.  
So values he repute, good fame, and all the  
rest!

XII.  
But try another tack; say: "I indulge  
caprice,  
Who am Don and Duke, and Knight, beside,  
o' the Golden Fleece,  
And, never mind how rich. Abandon this  
career!  
Have hearth and home, nor let your woman-  
kind appear  
Without as multiplied a coating as protects  
An onion from the eye! Become, in all  
respects,  
God-fearing householder, subsistent by brain-  
skill,  
Hand-labour; win your bread whatever way  
you will,  
So it be honestly,—and, while I have a purse,  
Means shall not lack!"—His thanks will be  
the roundest curse  
That ever rolled from lip.

XIII.  
Now, what is it?—returns  
The question—heartens so this losel that he  
spurns  
All we so prize? I want, put down in black  
and white,  
What compensating joy, unknown and infinite,  
Turns lawlessness to law, makes destitution—  
wealth,  
Vice—virtue, and disease of soul and body—  
health?

XIV.  
Ah, the slow shake of head, the melancholy  
smile,  
The sigh almost a sob! What's wrong, was  
right erewhile?

Why are we two at once such ocean-width  
apart?

Pale fingers press my arm, and sad eyes  
probe my heart.

Why is the wife in trouble?

XV.

This way, this way, Fifine!

Here's she, shall make my thoughts be surer  
what they mean!

First let me read the signs, pourtray you past  
mistake

The gipsy's foreign self, no swarth our sun  
could bake.

Yet where's a woolly trace degrades the wiry  
hair?

And note the Greek-nymph nose, and—oh,  
my Hebrew pair

Of eye and eye—o'erarched by velvet of the  
mole—

That swims in a sea, that dip and rise and roll,  
Spilling the light around! While either ear  
is cut

Thin as a dusk-leaved rose carved from a  
cocoa-nut.

And then, her neck! now, grant you had the  
power to deck,

Just as your fancy pleased, the bistre-length  
of neck,

Could lay, to shine against its shade, a  
moonlike row

Of pearls, each round and white as bubble  
Cupids blow

Big out of mother's milk,—what pearl-moon  
would surpass

That string of mock-turquoise, those alman-  
dines<sup>1</sup> of glass,

Where girlhood terminates? for with breasts'-  
birth commence

The boy, and page-costume, till pink and  
impudence

End admirably all: complete the creature trips  
Our way now, brings sunshine upon her

spangled hips,  
As here she fronts us full, with pose half-  
frank, half-fierce!

<sup>1</sup> Garnets.

XVI.

Words urged in vain, Elvire! You waste  
your quarte and tierce,

Lunge at a phantom here, try fence in fairy-  
land.

For me, I own defeat, ask but to understand  
The acknowledged victory of whom I call my  
queen,

Sexless and bloodless sprite: though mis-  
chievous and mean,

Yet free and flower-like too, with loveliness  
for law,

And self-sustainment made morality.

XVII.

A flaw

Do you account it the lily, of lands which  
travellers know,

That, just as golden gloom supersedes Northern  
snow

I'th' chalice, so, about each pistil, spice is  
packed,—

Deliriously-drugged scent, in lieu of odour  
lacked,

With us, by bee and moth, their banquet to  
enhance

At morn and eve, when dew, the chilly sus-  
tenance,

Needs mixture of some chaste and temperate  
perfume?

I ask, is she in fault who guards such golden  
gloom,

Such dear and damning scent, by who cares  
what devices,

And takes the idle life of insects she entices  
When, drowned to heart's desire, they satiate  
the inside

O'th' lily, mark her wealth and manifest her  
pride?

XVIII.

But, wiser, we keep off, nor tempt the  
acid juice;

Discreet we peer and praise, put rich things  
to right use.

No flavoured venom'd bell,—the rose it is,  
I wot,

Only the rose, we pluck and place, unwronged  
a jot,

No worse for homage done by every devotee,  
 I' the proper loyal throne, on breast where  
 rose should be.  
 Or if the simpler sweets we have to choose  
 among,  
 Would taste between our teeth, and give its  
 toy the tongue,—  
 O gorgeous poison-plague, on thee no hearts  
 are set !  
 We gather daisy meek, or maiden violet :  
 I think it is Elvire we love, and not Fifine.

## XIX.

"How does she make my thoughts be sure  
 of what they mean?"  
 Judge and be just ! Suppose, an age and  
 time long past  
 Renew for our behoof one pageant more, the  
 last  
 O' the kind, sick Louis liked to see defile  
 between  
 Him and the yawning grave, its passage  
 served to screen.  
 With eye as grey as lead, with cheek as brown  
 as bronze,  
 Here where we stand, shall sit and suffer  
 Louis Onze :  
 The while from yonder tent parade forth, not  
 —oh, no—  
 Bateleurs, baladines ! but range themselves  
 a-row  
 Those well-sung women-worthies whereof  
 loud fame still finds  
 Some echo linger faint, less in our hearts than  
 minds.

## XX.

See, Helen ! pushed in front o' the world's  
 worst night and storm,  
 By Lady Venus' hand on shoulder : the  
 sweet form  
 Shrinkingly prominent, though mighty, like  
 a moon  
 Outbreaking from a cloud, to put harsh things  
 in tune,  
 And magically bring mankind to acquiesce  
 in its own ravage,—call no curse upon, but  
 bless

(Beldame, a moment since) the outbreking  
 beauty, now,  
 That casts o'er all the blood & candour from  
 her brow.  
 See, Cleopatra ! bared, the entire and sinuous  
 wealth  
 O' the shining shape ; each orb of indolent  
 ripe health,  
 Captured, just where it finds a fellow-orb as  
 fine  
 I' the body : traced about by jewels which  
 outline,  
 Fire-frame, and keep distinct, perfections—  
 lest they melt  
 To soft smooth unity ere half their hold be  
 felt :  
 Yet, o'er that white and wonder, a soul's  
 predominance  
 I' the head so high and haught—except one  
 thievish glance,  
 From back of oblong eye, intent to count the  
 slain.  
 Hush,—O I know, Elvire ! Be patient,  
 more remain !  
 What say you to Saint . . . Fish ! Whatever  
 Saint you please,  
 Cold-pinnacled aloft o' the spire, plays calm  
 the seas  
 From Pornic Church, and oft at midnight  
 (peasants say)  
 Goes walking out to save from shipwreck :  
 well she may !  
 For think how many a year has she been  
 conversant  
 With nought but winds and rains, sharp  
 courtesy and scant  
 O' the wintry snow that coats the pent-house  
 of her shrine,  
 Covers each knee, climbs near, but spares  
 the smile benign  
 Which seems to say "I looked for scarce so  
 much from earth !" !  
 She follows, one long thin pure finger in the  
 girth  
 O' the girdle—whence the folds of garment,  
 eye and eye,  
 Besprent with fleurs-de-lys, flow down and  
 multiply

Around her feet,—and one, pressed hushingly  
to lip :  
As if, while thus we made her march, some  
foundering ship  
Might miss her from her post, nearer to God  
half-way  
In heaven, and she inquired “Who that  
treads earth can pray?  
I doubt if even she, the unashamed ! though,  
sure,  
She must have stripped herself only to clothe  
the poor.”

XXI.

This time, enough's a feast, not one more  
form, Elvire !  
Provided you allow that, bringing up the rear  
O' the bevy I am loth to—by one bird—cur-  
tail,  
First note may lead to last, an octave crown  
the scale,  
And this femininity be followed—do not flout !—  
By—who concludes the masque with curtsy,  
smile and pout,  
Submissive-mutinous? No other than Fifine  
Points toe, imposes haunch, and pleads with  
tambourine !

XXII.

“Well, what's the meaning here, what  
does the masque intend,  
Which, unabridged, we saw file past us,  
with no end  
Of fair ones, till Fifine came, closed the  
catalogue?”

XXIII.

Task fancy yet again ! Suppose you cast  
this clog  
Of flesh away (that weeps, upbraids, with-  
stands my arm)  
And pass to join your peers, paragon charm  
with charm,  
As I shall show you may,—prove best of  
beauty there !  
Yourself confront yourself ! This, help me  
to declare  
That yonder you, who stand beside these,  
braving each  
And blinking none, beat her who lured to  
Troy-town beach

The purple prows of Greece,—nay, beat  
Fifine ; whose face,  
Mark how I will inflame, when seigneur-  
like I place  
I' the tambourine, to spot the strained and  
piteous blank  
Of pleading parchment, see, no less than a  
whole franc !

XXIV.

Ah, do you mark the brown o' the cloud,  
made bright with fire  
Through and through? as, old wiles suc-  
ceeding to desire,  
Quality (you and I) once more compassionate  
A hapless infant, doomed (fie on such partial  
fate !)  
To sink the inborn shame, waive privilege of  
sex,  
And posture as you see, support the nods  
and becks  
Of clowns that have their stare, nor always  
pay its price ;  
An infant born perchance as sensitive and  
nice  
As any soul of you, proud dames, whom  
destiny  
Keeps uncontaminate from stigma of the  
stye  
She wallows in ! You draw back skirts from  
filth like her  
Who, possibly, braves scorn, if, scorned, she  
minister  
To age, want, and disease of parents one or  
both ;  
Nay, peradventure, stoops to degradation,  
loth  
That some just-budding sister, the dew yet  
on the rose,  
Should have to share in turn the ignoble  
trade,—who knows?

XXV.

Ay, who indeed ! Myself know nothing,  
but dare guess  
That off she trips in haste to hand the booty  
yes.



'Twixt fold and fold of tent, there looms he,  
 dim-discerned,  
 The ogre, lord of all those lavish limbs have  
 earned !  
 —Brute-beast-face,—ravage, scar, scowl and  
 malignancy,—  
 O' the Strong Man, whom (no doubt, her  
 husband) by-and-by  
 You shall behold do feats : lift up nor quail  
 beneath  
 A quintal<sup>1</sup> in each hand, a cart-wheel 'twixt  
 his teeth.  
 Oh she prefers sheer strength to ineffective  
 grace,  
 Breeding and culture ! seeks the essential in  
 the case !  
 To him has flown my franc ; and welcome,  
 if that squint  
 O' the diabolic eye so soften through absinthe,  
 That, for once, tambourine, tunic and tricot<sup>2</sup>  
 'scape  
 Their customary curse "Not half the gain o'  
 the ape !"   
 Ay, they go in together !

## XXVI.

Yet still her phantom stays  
 Opposite, where you stand : as steady 'neath  
 our gaze—  
 The live Elvire's and mine—though fancy-  
 stuff and mere  
 Illusion ; to be judged,—dream-figures,—  
 without fear  
 Or favour, those the false, by you and me  
 the true.

## XXVII.

"What puts it in my head to make your-  
 self judge you ?"  
 Well, it may be, the name of Helen brought  
 to mind  
 A certain myth I mused in years long left  
 behind :  
 How she that fled from Greece with Paris  
 whom she loved,  
 And came to Troy, and there found shelter,  
 and so proved

<sup>1</sup> A weight of 100 lbs.<sup>2</sup> A jersey.

Such cause of the world's woe,—how she,  
 old stories call  
 This creature, Helen's self, never saw Troy  
 at all.  
 Jove had his fancy-fit, must needs take empty  
 air,  
 Fashion her likeness forth, and set the  
 phantom there  
 I' the midst for sport, to try conclusions with  
 the blind  
 And blundering race, the game create for  
 Gods, mankind :  
 Experiment on these,—establish who would  
 yearn  
 To give up life for her, who, other-minded,  
 spurn  
 The best her eyes could smile,—make half  
 the world sublime,  
 And half absurd, for just a phantom all the  
 time !  
 Meanwhile true Helen's self sat, safe and far  
 away,  
 By a great river-side, beneath a purer day,  
 With solitude around, tranquillity within ;  
 Was able to lean forth, look, listen, through  
 the din  
 And stir ; could estimate the worthlessness  
 or worth  
 Of Helen who inspired such passion to the  
 earth,  
 A phantom all the time ! That put it in my  
 head,  
 To make yourself judge you—the phantom-  
 wife instead  
 O' the tearful true Elvire !

## XXVIII.

I thank the smile at last  
 Which thins away the tear ! Our sky was  
 overcast,  
 And something fell ; but day clears up : if  
 there chanced rain,  
 The landscape glistens more. I have not  
 vexed in vain  
 Elvire : because she knows, now she has  
 stood the test,  
 How, this and this being good, herself may  
 still be best

O' the beauty in review ; because the flesh  
 that claimed  
 Unduly my regard, she thought, the taste,  
 she blamed  
 In me, for things extern, was all mistake,  
 she finds,—  
 Or will find, when I prove that bodies show  
 me minds,  
 That, through the outward sign, the inward  
 grace allures,  
 And sparks from heaven transpierce earth's  
 coarsest covertures,—  
 All by demonstrating the value of Fifine !

## XXIX.

Partake my confidence ! No creature's  
 made so mean  
 But that, some way, it boasts, could we in-  
 vestigate,  
 Its supreme worth : fulfils, by ordinance of fate,  
 Its momentary task, gets glory all its own,  
 Tastes triumph in the world, pre-eminent,  
 alone.  
 Where is the single grain of sand, mid millions  
 heaped  
 Confusedly on the beach, but, did we know,  
 has leaped  
 Or will leap, would we wait, i' the century,  
 some once,  
 To the very throne of things ?—earth's  
 brightest for the nonce,  
 When sunshine shall impinge on just that  
 grain's facet  
 Which fronts him fullest, first, returns his ray  
 with jet  
 Of promptest praise, thanks God best in  
 creation's name !  
 As firm is my belief, quick sense perceives  
 the same  
 Self-vindicating flash illustrate every man  
 And woman of our mass, and prove, through-  
 out the plan,  
 No detail but, in place allotted it, was prime  
 And perfect.

## XXX.

Witness her, kept waiting all this time !  
 What happy angle makes Fifine reverbe-  
 rate

Sunshine, least sand-grain, she, of shadiest  
 social state ?  
 No adamant shield, polished like Helen  
 there,  
 Fit to absorb the sun, regorge him till the  
 glare,  
 Dazing the universe, draw Troy-ward those  
 blind beaks  
 Of equal-sided ships rowed by the well-  
 greaved Greeks !  
 No Asian mirror, like yon Ptolemaic witch  
 Able to fix sun fast and tame sun down, en-  
 rich,  
 Not burn the world with beams thus flatter-  
 ingly rolled  
 About her, head to foot, turned slavish snakes  
 of gold !  
 And oh, no tinted pane of oriel sanctity,  
 Does our Fifine afford, such as permits  
 supply  
 Of lustrous heaven, revealed, far more than  
 mundane sight  
 Could master, to thy cell, pure Saint ! where,  
 else too bright,  
 So suits thy sense the orb, that, what outside  
 was noon,  
 Pales, through thy lozenged blue, to meek  
 benefic moon !  
 What then ? does that prevent each dunghill,  
 we may pass  
 Daily, from boasting too its bit of looking-  
 glass,  
 Its sherd which, sun-smit, shines, shoots  
 arrowy fire beyond  
 That satin-muffled mope, your sulky diamond ?

## XXXI.

And now, the mingled ray she shoots, I  
 decompose.  
 Her antecedents, take for execrable ! Gloze  
 No whit on your premiss : let be, there was  
 no worst  
 Of degradation spared Fifine : ordained from  
 first  
 To last, in body and soul, for one life-long  
 debauch,  
 The Pariah of the North, the European  
 Nautch !

This, far from seek to hide, she puts in evidence

Calmly, displays the brand, bids pry without offence

Your finger on the place. You comment  
"Fancy us

So operated on, maltreated, mangled thus!

Such torture in our case, had we survived an hour?

Some other sort of flesh and blood must be, with power

Appropriate to the vile, unsensitive, tough-thonged,

In lieu of our fine nerve! Be sure, she was not wronged

Too much! you must not think she winced at prick as we!"

Come, come, that's what you say, or would, were thoughts but free.

## XXXII.

Well then, thus much confessed, what wonder if these steal

Unchallenged to my heart the force of one appeal

She makes, and justice stamp the sole claim she asserts?

So absolutely good is truth, truth never hurts

The teller, whose worst crime gets somehow grace, avowed.

To me, that silent pose and prayer proclaimed aloud

"Know all of me outside, the rest be emptiness

For such as you! I call attention to my dress,

Coiffure, outlandish features, lithe memorable limbs,

Piquant entreaty, all that eye-glance over-skims.

Does this give pleasure? Then, repay the pleasure, put

Its price! the tambourine! Do you seek further? Tut!

I'm just my instrument,—sound hollow: mere smooth skin

Stretched o'er gilt framework, *Et sub-dub!* sought else within—

Always, for such as you!—if I have use elsewhere,—

If certain bells, now mute, can jingle, need you care?

Be it enough, there's truth in the pleading, which comports

With no word spoken out in cottages or courts,

Since all I plead is 'Pay for just the sight you see,

And give no credit to another charm in me!"

Do I say, like your Love? 'To praise my face is well,

But, who would know my worth, must search my heart to tell!

Do I say, like your Wife? 'Had I passed in review

'The produce of the globe, my man of men were—you!'

Do I say, like your Helen? 'Yield yourself up, obey

'Implicitly, nor pause to question, to survey

'Even the worshipful! prostrate you at my shrine!

'Shall you dare controvert what the world counts divin:?

'Array your private taste, own liking of the sense,

'Own longing of the soul, against the impudence

'Of history, the blare and bullying of verse?

'As if man ever yet saw reason to disburse

'The amount of what sense liked, soul longed for,—given, devised

'As love, forsooth—until the price was recognized

'As moderate enough by divers fellow-men!

'Then, with his warrant safe that these would love too, then,

'Sure that particular gain implies a public loss,

'And that no smile he buys but proves a slash across

'The face, a stab into the side of somebody—

'Sure that, along with love's main-purchase, he will buy

'Up the whole stock of earth's uncharitable

'Envy and hatred,—then, decides he to profess  
 'His estimate of one, by love discerned, though dim  
 'To all the world beside: since what's the world to him?'  
 Do I say, like your Queen of Egypt? 'Who foregoes  
 'My cup of witchcraft—fault be on the fool! He knows  
 'Nothing of how I pack my wine-press, turn its winch  
 'Three-times-three, all the time to song and dance, nor flinch  
 'From charming on and on, till at the last I squeeze  
 'Out the exhaustive drop that leaves behind mere lees  
 'And dregs, vapidity, thought essence heretofore!  
 'Sup of my sorcery, old pleasures please no more!  
 'Be great, be good, love, learn, have potency of hand  
 'Or heart or head,—what boots? You die, nor understand  
 'What bliss might be in life: you ate the grapes, but knew  
 'Never the taste of wine, such vintage as I brew!'

Do I say, like your Saint? 'An exquisitest touch  
 'Bides in the birth of things: no after-time can much  
 'Enhance that fine, that faint, fugitive first of all!  
 'What colour paints the cup o' the May-rose, like the small  
 'Suspicion of a blush which doubtfully begins?  
 'What sound outwarbles brook, while, at the source, it wins  
 'That moss and stone dispart, allow its babbings breathe?  
 'What taste excels the fruit, just where sharp flavours sheathe  
 'Their sting, and let encroach the honey that allays?

'And so with soul and sense; when sanctity betrays  
 'First fear lest earth below seem real as heaven above,  
 'And holy worship, late, change soon to sinful love—  
 'Where is the plenitude of passion which endures  
 'Comparison with that, I ask of amateurs?'  
 Do I say, like Elvire" . . .

XXXIII.

(Your husband holds you fast, Will have you listen, learn your character at last!)  
 Do I say?—like her mixed unrest and discontent,  
 Reproachfulness and scorn, with that submission blent  
 So strangely, in the face, by sad smiles and gay tears,—  
 Quiescence which attacks, rebellion which endears,—  
 Say? 'As you loved me once, could you but love me now!  
 'Years probably have graved their passage on my brow,  
 'Lips turn more rarely red, eyes sparkle less than erst;  
 Such tribute body pays to time; but, un-amerced,  
 'The soul retains, nay, boasts old treasure multiplied.  
 Though dew-prime flee,—mature at noon-day, love defied  
 Chance, the wind, change, the rain: love, strenuous all the more  
 For storm, struck deeper root and choicer fruitage bore,  
 Despite the rocking world; yet truth struck root in vain;  
 While tenderness bears fruit, you praise, not taste again.  
 Why? They are yours, which once were hardly yours, might go  
 To grace another's ground: and that—  
 hopes we know, and that—

'The fears we keep in mind !—when, ours to arbitrate,  
 'Your part was to bow neck, bid fall decree of fate.  
 'Then, O the knotty point—white-night's work to revolve—  
 'What meant that smile, that sigh? Not Solon's self could solve !  
 'Then, O the deep surmise what one word might express,  
 'And if what seemed her "No" may not have meant her "Yes !"  
 'Then, such annoy, for cause—calm welcome, such acquit  
 'Of rapture if, refused her arm, hand touched her wrist !  
 'Now, what's a smile to you? Poor candle that lights up  
 'The decent household gloom which sends you out to sup.  
 'A tear? worse ! warns that health requires 'you keep aloof  
 'From nuptial chamber, since rain penetrates the roof !  
 'Soul, body got and gained, inalienably safe  
 'Your own, become despised ; more worth has any waif  
 'Or stray from neighbour's pale : pouch that, —'tis pleasure, pride,  
 'Novelty, property, and larceny beside !  
 'Preposterous thought ! to find no value fixed in things,  
 'To covet all you see, hear, dream of, till fate brings  
 'About that, what you want, you gain ; then follows change.  
 'Give you the sun to keep, forthwith must fancy range :  
 'A goodly lamp, no doubt,—yet might you catch her hair  
 'And capture, as she frisks, the fen-fire dancing there !  
 'What do I say? at least a meteor's half in heaven ;  
 'Provided filth but shine, my husband hankers even  
 'After putridity that's phosphorescent, cribs

'The rustic's tallow-rush, makes spoil of urchins' squibs,  
 'In short prefers to me—chaste, temperate, serene—  
 'What sputters green and blue, this fizzig called *Fifine !*"

## XXXIV.

So all your sex mistake ! Strange that so plain a fact  
 Should raise such dire debate ! Few families were racked  
 By torture self-supplied, did Nature grant but this—  
 That women comprehend mental analysis !

## XXXV.

Elvire, do you recall when, years ago, our home  
 The intimation reached, a certain pride of Rome,  
 Authenticated piece, in the third, last and best  
 Manner,—whatever fools and connoisseurs contest,—  
 No particle disturbed by rude restorer's touch,  
 The palaced picture-pearl, so long eluding clutch  
 Of creditor, at last, the Rafael might—could we  
 But come to terms—change lord, pass from the Prince to me?  
 I think you recollect my fever of a year :  
 How the Prince would, and how he would not ; now,—too dear  
 That promise was, he made his grandsire so long since,  
 Rather to boast "I own a Rafael" than "am Prince !"  
 And now, the fancy soothed—if really sell he must  
 His birthright for a mess of pottage—such a thrust  
 I' the vitals of the Prince were mollified by balm,  
 Could he prevail upon his stomach to bear qualm,  
 And bequeath Liberty (because a purchaser  
 Was ready with the sum—a trifle !) yes, transfer  
 His heart at all events to that land where, at least,

Free institutions reign ! And so, its price increased

Five-fold (Americans are such importunates !),  
Soon must his Rafael start for the United States.

O alternating bursts of hope now, then despair !  
At last, the bargain's struck, I'm all but beggared, there

The Rafael faces me, in fine, no dream at all,  
My housemate, evermore to glorify my wall.  
A week must pass, before heart-palpitations sink,

In gloating o'er my gain, so late I edged the brink

Of doom ; a fortnight more, I spent in Paradise :

"Was outline e'er so true, could colouring entice

So calm, did harmony and quiet so avail ?  
How right, how resolute, the action tells the tale !"

A month, I bid my friends congratulate their best :

"You happy Don !" (to me) : "The block-head !" (to the rest) :

"No doubt he thinks his daub original, poor dupe !"

Then I resume my life : one chamber must not coop

Man's life in, though it boast a marvel like my prize.

Next year, I saunter past with unaverted eyes,  
Nay, loll and turn my back : perchance to overlook

With relish, leaf by leaf, Doré's last picture-book.

xxxvi.

Imagine that a voice reproached me from its frame :

"Here do I hang, and may ! Your Rafael, just the same,

'Tis only you that change : no ecstasies of yore !  
No purposed suicide distracts you any more !"  
Prompt would my answer meet such frivolous attack :

"You misappropriate sensations. What men lack,

And labour to obtain, is hoped and feared about

After a fashion : what they once obtain, makes doubt,

Expectancy's old fret and fume, henceforward void.

But do they think to hold such havings unalloyed

By novel hopes and fears, of fashion just as new,  
To correspond i' the scale ? Nowise, I promise you !

Mine you are, therefore mine will be, as fit to cheer

My soul and glad my sense to-day as this-day-year.

So, any sketch or scrap, pochade,<sup>1</sup> caricature,  
Made in a moment, meant a moment to endure,  
I snap at, seize, enjoy, then tire of, throw aside,  
Find you in your old place. But if a servant cried  
'Fire in the gallery !'—methinks, were I engaged

In Doré, elbow-deep, picture-books million-paged

To the four winds would pack, sped by the heartiest curse

Was ever launched from lip, to strew the universe.

Would not I brave the best o' the burning, bear away

Either my perfect piece in safety, or else stay  
And share its fate, be made its martyr nor repine ?

Inextricably wed, such ashes mixed with mine !"

xxxvii.

For which I get the eye, the hand, the heart, the whole  
O' the wondrous wife again !

xxxviii.

But no, play out your *rolie*

I' the pageant ! 'Tis not fit your phantom leave the stage :

I want you, there, to make you, here, confess you wage

Successful warfare, pique those proud ones, and advance

claim to . . . equality ? nay, but predominnance

<sup>1</sup> A sketch.

In *physique* o'er them all, where Helen heads  
the scene

Closed by its tiniest of tail-tips, pert Fifine.

How ravishingly pure you stand in pale con-  
straint!

My new-created shape, without or touch or  
taint,

Inviolable of life and worldliness and sin—

Fettered, I hold my flower, her own cup's  
weight would win

From off the tall slight stalk a-top of which  
she turns

And trembles, makes appeal to one who  
roughly earns

Her thanks instead of blame, (did lily only  
know),

By thus constraining length of lily, letting  
snow

Of cup-crown, that's her face, look from its  
guardian stake,

Superb on all that crawls beneath, and mutely  
make

Defiance, with the mouth's white movement  
of disdain,

To all that stoops, retires and hovers round  
again!

How windingly the limbs delay to lead up,  
reach

Where, crowned, the head waits calm: as if  
reluctant, each,

That eye should traverse quick such lengths  
of loveliness,

From feet, which just are found embedded  
in the dress

Deep swathed about with folds and flowings  
virginal,

Up to the pleated breasts, rebellious 'neath  
their pall,

As if the vesture's snow were moulding sleep  
not death,

Must melt and so release; whereat, from the  
fine sheath,

The flower-cup-crown starts free, the face is  
unconcealed,

And what shall now divert me, once the  
sweet face revealed,

From all I loved so long, so lingeringly  
left?

XXXX.

Because indeed your face fits into just the  
cleft

O' the heart of me, Elvire, makes right and  
whole once more

All that was half itself without you! As before,  
My truant finds its place! Doubtlessly sea-  
shells yearn,

If plundered by sad chance: would pray  
their pearls return,

Let negligently slip away into the wave!

Never may eyes desist, those eyes so grey  
and grave,

From their slow sure supply of the effluent  
soul within!

And, would you humour me? I dare to ask,  
unpin

The web of that brown hair! O'erwash o'  
the sudden, but

As promptly, too, disclose, on either side, the jut  
Of alabaster brow! So part rich rilles dyed

Deep by the woodland leaf, when down they  
pour, each side

O' the rock-top, pushed by Spring!

"And where is the world is all

This wonder, you detail so trippingly, espied?  
My mirror would reflect a tall, thin, pale,  
deep-eyed

Personage, pretty once, it may be, doubtless still  
Loving,—a certain grace yet lingers, if you  
will,—

But all this wonder, where?"

XLI.

Why, where but in the sense  
And soul of me, Art's judge? Art is my  
evidence

That something was, is, might be; but no  
more thing itself,

Than flame is fuel. Once the verse-book  
laid on 'shelf,

The picture turned to wall, the music fled  
from ear,—

Each beauty, born of each, grows clearer  
and more clear,

Mine henceforth, ever mine!

XLII.

But if I would re-trace  
Effect, in Art, to cause,—corroborate, erase  
What's right or wrong i' the lines, test fancy  
in my brain  
By fact which gave it birth? I re-peruse in vain  
The verse, I fail to find that vision of delight  
I' the Bazzi's<sup>1</sup> lost-profile, eye-edge so ex-  
quisite.  
And, music: what? that burst of pillared  
cloud by day  
And pillared fire by night, was product,  
must we say,  
Of modulating just, by enharmonic change,—  
The augmented sixth resolved,—from out  
the straighter range  
Of D sharp minor,—leap of disimprisoned  
thrall,—  
Into thy light and life, D major natural?

XLIII.

Elvire, will you partake in what I shall  
impart?  
I seem to understand the way heart chooses  
heart  
By help of the outside form,—a reason for  
our wild  
Diversity in choice,—why each grows re-  
conciled  
To what is absent, what superfluous in the mask  
Of flesh that's meant to yield,—did nature  
ply her task  
As artist should,—precise the features of the  
soul,  
Which, if in any case they found expression,  
whole  
I' the traits, would give a type, undoubtedly  
display  
A novel, true, distinct perfection in its way.  
Never shall I believe any two souls were made  
Similar; granting, then, each soul of every  
grade  
Was meant to be itself, prove in itself com-  
plete  
And, in completion, good,—nay, best o' the  
kind,—as meet

<sup>1</sup> An Italian painter.

Needs must it be that show on the outside  
correspond  
With inward substance,—flesh, the dress  
which soul has donned,  
Exactly reproduce,—were only justice done  
Inside and outside too,—types perfect everyone.  
How happens it that here we meet a mystery  
Insoluble to man, a plaguy puzzle? Why  
Each soul is either made imperfect, and de-  
serves  
As rude a face to match; or else a bungler  
swerves,  
And nature, on a soul worth rendering aright,  
Works ill, or proves perverse, or, in her own  
despite,  
—Here too much, there too little,—bids each  
face, more or less,  
Retire from beauty, make approach to ugliness?  
And yet succeeds the same: since, what is  
wanting to success,  
If somehow every face, no matter how deform,  
Evidence, to some one of hearts on earth, that,  
warm  
Beneath the veriest ash, there hides a spark  
of soul  
Which, quickened by love's breath, may yet  
pervade the whole  
O' the grey, and, free again, be fire?—of  
worth the same,  
Howe'er produced, for, great or little, flame  
is flame.  
A mystery, whereof solution is to seek.

XLIV.

I find it in the fact that each soul, just as weak  
Its own way as its fellow,—departure from  
design  
As flagrant in the flesh,—goes striving to com-  
bine  
With what shall right the wrong, the under or  
above  
The standard: supplement unloveliness by  
love.  
—Ask Plato else! And this corroborates the  
sage,  
That Art,—which I may style the love of  
loving, rage



Of knowing, seeing, feeling the absolute  
truth of things  
For truth's sake, whole and sole, not any  
good, truth brings  
The knower, seer, feeler, beside,—instinctive  
Art  
Must fumble for the whole, once fixing on a  
part  
However poor, surpass the fragment, and  
aspire  
To reconstruct thereby the ultimate entire.  
Art, working with a will, discards the super-  
flux,  
Contributes to defect, toils on till,—*fiat lux*,—  
There's the restored, the prime, the individual  
type!

## XLV.

Look, for example now! This piece of  
broken pipe  
(Some shipman's solace erst) shall act as  
crayon; and  
What tablet better serves my purpose than the  
sand?  
—Smooth slab whereon I draw, no matter  
with what skill,  
A face, and yet another, and yet another  
still.  
There lie my three prime types of beauty!

## XLVI.

Laugh your best!  
"Exaggeration and absurdity?" Confessed!  
Yet, what may that face mean, no matter for  
its nose,  
A yard long, or its chin, a foot short?

## XLVII.

"You suppose,  
Horror?" Exactly! What's the odds if,  
more or less  
By yard or foot, the features do manage to  
express  
Such meaning in the main? Were I of  
Gérôme's force,  
Nor feeble as you see, quick should my crayon  
course  
O'er outline, curb, excite, till,—so completion  
speeds

With Gérôme<sup>1</sup> well at work,—observe how  
brow recedes,  
Head shudders back on spine, as if one haled  
the hair,  
Would have the full-face front what pin-point  
eye's sharp stare  
Announces; mouth agape to drink the flow-  
ing fate,  
While chin protrudes to meet the burst o' the  
wave: elate  
Almost, spurred on to brave necessity, expend  
All life left, in one flash, as fire does at its  
end.  
Retrenchment and addition effect a master-  
piece,  
Not change i' the motive: here diminish,  
there increase—  
And who wants Horror, has it.

## XLVIII.

Who wants some other show  
Of soul, may seek elsewhere—this second of  
the row?  
What does it give for germ, monadic mere  
intent  
Of mind in face, faint first of meanings ever  
meant?  
Why, possibly, a grin, that, strengthened,  
grows a laugh;  
That, softened, leaves a smile; that, tempered,  
bids you quaff  
At such a magic cup as English Reynolds once  
Compounded: for the witch pulls out of you  
response  
Like Garrick's to Thalia, however due may be  
Your homage claimed by that stiff-stoled  
Melpomene!

## XLIX.

And just this one face more! Pardon the  
bold pretence!  
May there not lurk some hint, struggle toward  
evidence  
In that compressed mouth, those strained  
nostrils, steadfast eyes  
Of utter passion, absolute self-sacrifice,

<sup>1</sup> Modern French painter.

Which,—could I but subdue the wild  
grotesque, refine  
That bulge of brow, make blunt that nose's  
aquiline,  
And let, although compressed, a point of pulp  
appear  
I' the mouth,—would give at last the portrait  
of Elvire?

L.

Well, and if so succeed hand-practice on  
awry  
Preposterous art-mistake, shall soul-pro-  
ficiency  
Despair,—when exercised on nature, which  
at worst  
Always implies success, however crossed and  
curst  
By failure,—such as art would emulate in vain?  
Shall any soul despair of setting free again  
Trait after trait, until the type as wholly start  
Forth, visible to sense, as that minutest part,  
(What'er the chance) which first arresting  
eye, warned soul  
That, under wrong enough and ravage, lay  
the whole  
O' the loveliness it "loved"—I take the ac-  
cepted phrase?

LI.

So I account for tastes : each chooses, none  
gainsays  
The fancy of his fellow, a paradise for him,  
A hell for all beside. You can but crown the  
brim  
O' the cup ; if it be full, what matters less or  
more?  
Let each, i' the world, amend his love, as I,  
o' the shore  
My sketch, and the result as undisputed be !  
Their handiwork to them, and my Elvire to  
me :  
—Result more beautiful than beauty's self,  
when lo,  
What was my Rafael turns my Michelagnolo !

LII.

For, we two boast, beside our pearl, a  
diamond.  
I' the palace-gallery, the corridor beyond,

Upheaves itself a marble, a magnitude man-  
shaped  
As snow might be. One hand,—the Master's,  
—smoothed and scraped  
That mass, he hammered on and hewed at,  
till he hurried  
Life out of death, and left a challenge : for  
the world,  
Death : till,—since who shall dare, close to  
the image, say  
If this be purposed Art, or mere mimetic  
play  
Of Nature?—wont to deal with crag or cloud,  
as stuff  
To fashion novel forms, like forms we know,  
enough  
For recognition, but enough unlike the  
same,  
To leave no hope ourselves may profit by her  
game ;  
Death therefore to the world. Step back a  
pace or two !  
And then, who dares dispute the gradual birth  
its due  
Of breathing life, or breathless immortality,  
Where out she stands, and yet stops short,  
half bold, half shy,  
Hesitates on the threshold of things, since  
partly blent  
With stuff she needs must quit, her native  
element  
I' the mind o' the Master,—what's the  
creature, dear-divine  
Yet earthly-awful too, so manly-feminine,  
Pretends this white advance ? What startling  
brain-escape  
Of Michelagnolo takes elemental shape ?  
I think he meant the daughter of the old man  
o' the sea,  
Emerging from her wave, goddess Eidotheé—  
She who, in elvish sport, spite with benevo-  
lence  
Mixed Mab-wise up, must needs instruct the  
Hero whence  
Salvation dawns o'er that mad misery of his  
isle.  
Yes, she imparts to him, by what a pranksome  
wife

How may surprise her sire, asleep beneath a  
rock,

When he has told their tale, amid his web-  
foot flock

Of sea-beasts, "fine fat seals with bitter  
breath!" laughs she

At whom she likes to save, no less: Eidotheé,  
Whom you shall never face evolved, in earth,  
in air,

In wave; but, manifest it the soul's domain,  
why, there

She ravishingly moves to meet you, all through  
aid

O' the soul! Bid shine what should, dismiss  
into the shade

What should not be,—and there triumphs the  
paramount

Emprise o' the Master! But, attempt to  
make account

Of what the sense, without soul's help, per-  
ceives? I bought

That work—(despite plain proof, whose hand  
it was had wrought

I' the rough: I think we trace the tool of triple  
tooth,

Here, there and everywhere)—bought dearly  
that uncouth

Unwieldy bulk, for just ten dollars—"Bulk,  
would fetch—

Converted into lime—some five pauls!"

grinned a wretch,

Who, bound on business, paused to hear the  
bargaining,

And would have pitied me "but for the fun  
o' the thing!"

LIII.

Shall such a wretch be—you? Must—  
while I show Elvire

Shaming all other forms, seen as I see her here  
I' the soul,—this other-you perversely look

outside,

And ask me, "Where it the world is charm  
to be descried

I' the tall thin personage, with paled eye,  
pensive face,

Any amount of love, and some remains of  
grace?"

See yourself in my soul!

LIV.

And what a world for each

Must somehow be it the soul,—accept that  
mode of speech,—

Whether an aura gird the soul, wherein it  
seems

To float and move, a belt of all the glints and  
gleams

It struck from out that world, its weaklier  
fellows found

So dead and cold; or whether these not so  
much surround,

As pass into the soul itself, add worth to worth,  
As wine enriches blood, and straightway send

it forth,  
Conquering and to conquer, through all  
eternity,

That's battle without end.

LV.

I search but cannot see

What purpose serves the soul that strives, or  
world it tries

Conclusions with, unless the fruit of victories  
Stay, one and all, stored up and guaranteed

its own  
For ever, by some mode whereby shall be  
made known

The gain of every life. Death reads the title  
clear—

What each soul for itself conquered from out  
things here:

Since, in the seeing soul, all worth lies, I  
assert,—

And nought it the world, which, save for  
soul that sees, inert

Was, is, and would be ever,—stuff for trans-  
muting,—null

And void until man's breath evoke the beau-  
tiful—

But, touched aright, prompt yields each  
particle its tongue

Of elemental flame,—no matter whence flame  
sprung

From gums and spice, or else from straw and  
rotteness,

So long as soul has power to make them  
burn, express

What lights and warms henceforth, leaves  
only ash behind,  
Howe'er the chance: if soul be privileged to  
find  
Food so soon that, by first snatch of eye, suck  
of breath,  
It can absorb pure life: or, rather, meeting  
death  
I' the shape of ugliness, by fortunate recoil  
So put on its resource, it find therein a foil  
For a new birth of life, the challenged soul's  
response  
To ugliness and death,—creation for the  
nonce.

LVI.

I gather heart through just such conquests  
of the soul,  
Through evocation out of that which, on the  
whole,  
Was rough, ungainly, partial accomplishment,  
at best,  
And—what, at worst, save failure to spit at  
and detest?—  
—Through transference of all, achieved in  
visible things,  
To where, secured from wrong, rest soul's  
imaginings—  
Through ardour to bring help just where com-  
pletion halts,  
Do justice to the purpose, ignore the slips  
and faults—  
And, last, through waging with deformity a  
fight  
Which wrings thence, at the end, precise its  
opposite.  
I praise the loyalty o' the scholar,—stung by  
taunt  
Of fools "Does this evince thy Master men  
so vaunt?  
Did he then perpetrate the plain abortion  
here?"  
Who cries "His work am I! full fraught by  
him, I clear  
His fame from each result of accident and  
time,  
Myself restore his work to its fresh morning-  
prime,

Not daring touch the mass of marble, fools  
deride,  
But putting my idea in plaster by its side,  
His, since mine; I, he made, vindicate who  
made me!"

LVII.

For, you must know, I too achieved  
Eidotheé,  
In silence and by night—dared justify the lines  
Plain to my soul, although, to sense, that  
triple-time's  
Achievement halt half-way, break down, or  
leave a blank.  
If she stood forth at last, the Master was to  
thank!  
Yet may there not have smiled approval in  
his eyes—  
That one at least was left who, born to  
recognize  
Perfection in the piece imperfect, worked,  
that night,  
In silence, such his faith, until the apposite  
Design was out of him, truth palpable once  
more?  
And then,—for at one blow, its fragments  
strewed the floor,—  
Recalled the same to live within his soul as  
heretofore.

LVIII.

And, even as I hold and have Eidotheé,  
I say, I cannot think that gain,—which would  
not be  
Except a special soul had gained it,—that such  
gain  
Can ever be estranged, do aught but appertain  
Immortally, by right firm, indefeasible,  
To who performed the feat, through God's  
grace and man's will!  
Gain, never shared by those who practised  
with earth's stuff,  
And spoiled whate'er they touched, leaving  
its roughness rough,  
Its blankness bare, and, when the ugliness  
opposed,  
Either struck work or laughed "He doted  
or he dozed!"

## LIX.

While, oh, how all the more will love  
become intense  
Hereafter, when "to love" means yearning  
to dispense,  
Each soul, its own amount of gain through  
its own mode  
Of practising with life, upon some soul which  
owed

Its treasure, all diverse and yet in worth the  
same,  
To new work and changed way! Things  
furnish you rose-flame,  
Which burn up red, green, blue, nay, yellow  
more than needs,  
For me, I nowise doubt; why doubt a time  
succeeds

When each one may impart, and each receive,  
both share

The chemic secret, learn,—where I lit force,  
why there

You drew forth lambent pity,—where I found  
only food

For self-indulgence, you still blew a spark at  
brood

I' the greyest ember, stopped not till self-  
sacrifice imbued

Heaven's face with flame? What joy, when  
each may supplement

The other, changing each as changed, till,  
wholly blent,

Our old things shall be new, and, what we  
both ignite,

Fuse, lose the varicolor in achromatic white!  
Exemplifying law, apparent even now

In the eternal progress,—love's law, which I  
avow

And thus would formulate: each soul lives,  
longs and works

For itself, by itself,—because a lodestar  
lurks,

Another than itself,—in whatsoe'er the niche  
Of mistiest heaven it hide, whoe'er the  
Glumdalclinch

May grasp the Gulliver: or it, or he, or she—  
*Theasulos e brateios eper kekramene*,<sup>1</sup>—

(For fun's sake, where the phrase has fastened,  
leave it fixed!

So soft it says,—“God, man, or both together  
mixed”!) )

This, guessed at through the flesh, by parts  
which prove the whole,

This constitutes the soul discernible by soul  
—Elvire, by me!

## LX.

“And then”—(pray you, permit remain  
This hand upon my arm!—your cheek dried,  
if you deign,

Choosing my shoulder)—“then”—(Stand up  
for, boldly state

The objection in its length and breadth!)  
“you abdicate,

With boast yet on your lip, soul's empire, and  
accept

The rule of sense; the Man, from monarch's  
throne has stepped—

Leapt, rather, at one bound, to base, and  
there lies, Brute.

You talk of soul,—how soul, in search of soul  
to suit,

Must needs review the sex, the army, rank  
and file

Of womankind, report no face nor form so  
vile

But that a certain worth, by certain signs,  
may thence

Evolve itself and stand confessed—to soul—  
by sense.

Sense? Oh, the loyal bee endeavours for  
the hive!

Disinterested hunts the flower-field through,  
alive

Not one mean moment, no,—suppose on  
flower he light,—

To his peculiar drop, petal-dew perquisite,  
Matter-of-course snatched snack: unless he  
taste, how try?

This, light on tongue-tip laid, allows him  
pack his thigh,

Transport all he counts prize, provision for  
the comb,

Food for the future day,—a banquet, but at  
home!

<sup>1</sup> See "Prometheus Bound" of Æschylus.

Soul? Ere you reach Fifine's, some flesh  
 may be to pass!  
 That bombéd brow, that eye, a kindling  
 chrysopras,  
 Beneath its stiff black lash, inquisitive how  
 speeds  
 Each functionary limb, how play of foot  
 succeeds,  
 And how you let escape or duly sympathize  
 With gastroknemian<sup>1</sup> grace,—true, your soul  
 tastes and tries,  
 And trifles time with these, but, fear not, will  
 arrive  
 At essence in the core, bring honey home to  
 hive,  
 Brain-stock and heart-stuff both—to strike  
 objectors dumb—  
 Since only soul affords the soul fit pabulum!  
 Be frank for charity! Who is it you deceive—  
 Yourself or me or God, with all this make-  
 believe?"

## LXI.

And frank I will respond as you interrogate.  
 Ah, Music, wouldst thou help! Words  
 struggle with the weight  
 So feebly of the False, thick element between  
 Our soul, the True, and Truth! which, but  
 that intervene  
 False shows of things, were reached as easily  
 by thought  
 Reducible to word, as now by yearnings  
 wrought  
 Up with thy fine free force, oh Music, that  
 canst thrud,  
 Electrically win a passage through the lid  
 Of earthly sepulchre, our words may push  
 against,  
 Hardly transpierce as thou! Not dissipate,  
 thou deign'st,  
 So much as tricksily elude what words attempt  
 To heave away, i' the mass, and let the soul,  
 exempt  
 From all that vapoury obstruction, view,  
 instead  
 Of glimmer underneath, a glory overhead.

<sup>1</sup> Pertaining to the calf of the leg.

## LXII.

For this is just the time,  
 The place, the mood in you and me, when  
 all things chime.  
 Clash forth life's common chord, whence, list  
 how there ascend  
 Harmonics far and faint, till our perception  
 end,—  
 Reverberated notes whence we construct the  
 scale  
 Embracing what we know and feel and are!  
 How fail  
 To find or, better, lose your question, in this  
 quick  
 Reply which nature yields, ample and catholic?  
 For, arm in arm, we two have reached, nay,  
 passed, you see,  
 The village-precinct; sun sets mild on Sainte  
 Marie—  
 We only catch the spire, and yet I seem to  
 know  
 What's hid i' the turn o' the hill: how all the  
 graves must glow  
 Soberly, as each warms its little iron cross,  
 Flourished about with gold, and graced (if  
 private loss

Be fresh) with stiff rope-wreath of yellow crisp  
head-blooms

Which tempt down birds to pay their supper,  
mid the tombs,

With prattle good as song, amuse the dead  
awhile,

If couched they hear beneath the matted  
camomile!

## LXIII.

Bid them good-bye before last friend has  
sung and supped!

Because we pick our path and need our eyes,—  
abrupt

Descent enough,—but here's the beach, and  
there's the bay,

And, opposite, the streak of Île Noirmoutier.  
Thither the waters tend; they freshen as they  
haste,

At feel o' the night-wind, though, by cliff and  
cliff embraced,

This breadth of blue retains its self-possession  
still;

As you and I intend to do, who take our fill  
Of sights and sounds—soft sound, the count-  
less hum and skip

Of insects we disturb, and that good fellowship  
Of rabbits our foot-fall sends huddling, each  
to hide

He best knows how and where; and what  
whirred past, wings wide?

That was an owl, their young may justlier  
apprehend!

Though you refuse to speak, your beating  
heart, my friend,

I feel against my arm,—though your bent  
head forbids

A look into your eyes, yet, on my cheek,  
their lids

That ope and shut, soft send a silken thrill  
the same.

Well, out of all and each these nothings,  
comes—what came

Oft enough before, the something that would  
aim

Once more at the old mark: the impulse to  
at last

Succeed where hitherto was failure in the past,

And yet again essay the adventure. Clearlier  
sings

No bird to its couched corpse "Into the truth  
of things—

Out of their falseness rise, and reach thou,  
and remain!"

"That rise into the true out of the false  
—explain?"

May an example serve? In yonder bay I bathed,  
This sunny morning: swam my best, then  
hung, half swathed

With chill, and half with warmth, i' the  
channel's midmost deep:

You know how one—not treads, but stands,  
in water? Keep

Body and limbs below, hold head back, uplift  
chin,

And, for the rest, leave care! If brow, eyes,  
mouth, should win

Their freedom,—excellent! If they must  
brook the surge,

No matter though they sink, let but the nose  
emerge.

So, all of me in brine lay soaking: did I care  
One jot? I kept alive by man's due breath  
of air

I' the nostrils, high and dry. At times, o'er  
these would run

The ripple, even wash the wavelet,—morn-  
ing's sun

Tempted advance, no doubt: and always  
flash of froth,

Fish-outbreak, bubbling by, would find me  
nothing loth

To rise and look around; then all was over-  
swept

With dark and death at once. But trust the  
old adept!

Back went again the head, a merest motion  
made,

Fin-fashion, either hand, and nostril soon  
conveyed

Assurance light and life were still in reach as  
erst:

Always the last and,—wait and watch,—some-  
times the first.

Try to ascend breast-high? wave arms wide  
free of tether?

Be in the air and leave the water altogether?  
Under went all again, till I resigned myself  
To only breathe the air, that's footed by an  
elf,

And only swim the water, that's native to a fish.  
But there is no denying that, ere I curbed  
my wish,

And schooled my restive arms, salt entered  
mouth and eyes

Often enough—sun, sky, and air so tantalize!  
Still, the adept swims, this accorded, that  
denied;

Can always breathe, sometimes see and be  
satisfied!

LXV.

I liken to this play o' the body,—fruitless  
strife

To slip the sea and hold the heaven,—my  
spirit's life

'Twixt false, whence it would break, and true,  
where it would bide.

I move in, yet resist, am upborne every side  
By what I beat against, an element too gross  
To live in, did not soul duly obtain her  
dose

Of life-breath, and inhale from truth's pure  
plenitude

Above her, snatch and gain enough to just  
illude

With hope that some brave bound may baffle  
evermore

The obstructing medium, make who swam  
henceforward soar:

—Gain scarcely snatched when, foiled by the  
very effort, sowse,

Underneath ducks the soul, her truthward  
yearnings dowse

Deeper in falsehood! ay, but fitted less and less  
To bear in nose and mouth old briny bitterness  
Proved alien more and more: since each ex-  
perience proves

Air—the essential good, not sea, wherein who  
moves

Must thence, in the act, escape, apart from  
will or wish.

Move a mere hand to take waterweed, jelly-fish,

Upward you tend! And yet our business with  
the sea

Is not with air, but just o' the water, watery:  
We must endure the false, no particle of which  
Do we acquaint us with, but up we mount a  
pitch

Above it, find our head reach truth, while  
hands explore

The false below: so much while here we  
bathe,—no more!

LXVI.

Now, there is one prime point (hear and be  
edified!)

One truth more true for me than any truth  
beside—

To-wit, that I am I, who have the power to  
swim,

The skill to understand the law whereby each  
limb

May bear to keep immersed, since, in return,  
made sure

That its mere movement lifts head clean  
through coverture.

By practice with the false, I reach the true?  
Why, thence

It follows, that the more I gain self-confidence,  
Get proof I know the trick, can float, sink,  
rise, at will,

The better I submit to what I have the skill  
To conquer in my turn, even now, and by  
and by

Leave wholly for the land, and there laugh,  
shake me dry

To last drop, saturate with noonday—no need  
more

Of wet and fret, plagued once: on Pornic's  
placid shore,

Abundant air to breathe, sufficient sun to feel!  
Meantime I buoy myself: no whit my senses  
reel

When over me there breaks a billow; nor,  
elate

Too much by some brief taste, I quaff in-  
temperate

The air, o'er top breast-high the wave-envir-  
onment.

Full well I know the thing I grasp, as if intent



To hold,—my wandering wave,—will not be  
grasped at all:  
The solid-seeming grasped, the handful great  
or small  
Must go to nothing, glide through fingers fast  
enough;  
But none the less, to treat liquidity as stuff—  
Though failure—certainly succeeds beyond its  
aim,  
Sends head above, past thing that hands miss,  
all the same.

## LXVII.

So with this wash o' the world, wherein  
life-long we drift;  
We push and paddle through the foam by  
making shift  
To breathe above at whiles when, after deepest  
duck  
Down underneath the show, we put forth hand  
and pluck  
At what seems somehow like reality—a soul.  
I catch at this and that, to capture and control,  
Presume I hold a prize, discover that my pains  
Are run to nought: my hands are baulked, my  
head regains  
The surface where I breathe and look about,  
a space.  
The soul that helped me mount? Swallowed  
up in the race  
O' the tide, come who knows whence, gone  
gaily who knows where!  
I thought the prize was mine; I flattered my-  
self there.  
It did its duty, though: I felt it, it felt me,  
Or, where I look about and breathe, I should  
not be.  
The main point is—the false fluidity was bound  
Acknowledge that it frothed o'er substance,  
nowise found  
Fluid, but firm and true. Man, outcast,  
“howls,”—at rods?—  
If “sent in playful spray a-shivering to his  
gods!”  
Childishst childe, man makes thereby no bad  
exchange.  
Stay with the flat-fish, thou! We like the  
upper range

Where the “gods” live, perchance the ~~demons~~  
also dwell:  
Where operates a Power, which every throb  
and swell  
Of human heart invites that human soul  
approach,  
“Sent” near and nearer still, however “spray”  
encroach  
On “shivering” flesh below, to altitudes,  
which gained,  
Evil proves good, wrong right, obscurity ex-  
plained,  
And “howling” childishness. Whose howl  
have we to thank,  
If all the dogs ‘gan bark and puppies whine,  
till sank  
Each yelp’s tail ‘twixt legs? for Huntsman  
Common-sense  
Came to the rescue, bade prompt thwack of  
thong dispense  
Quiet i’ the kennel; taught that ocean might  
be blue,  
And rolling and much more, and yet the soul  
have, too,  
Its touch of God’s own flame, which He may  
so expand  
“Who measured the waters i’ the hollow of  
His hand”  
That ocean’s self shall dry, turn dew-drop in  
respect  
Of all-triumphant fire, matter with intellect  
Once fairly matched; bade him who egged  
on hounds to bay,  
Go curse, i’ the poultry yard, his kind: “there  
let him lay”<sup>1</sup>  
The swan’s one addled egg: which yet shall  
put to use,  
Rub breast-bone warm against, so many a  
sterile goose!

## LXVIII.

No, I want sky not sea, prefer the larks to  
shrimps,  
And never dive so deep but that I get a  
glimpse  
O’ the blue above, a breath of the air around  
Elvire,

<sup>1</sup> Compare “Childe Harold,” verse cxxx.

I seize—by catching at the melted beryl here,  
The tawny hair that just has trickled off,—  
Fifine!

Did not we two trip forth to just enjoy the  
scene,

The tumbling-troop arrayed, the strollers on  
their stage,

Drawn up and under arms, and ready to  
engage—

Dabble, and there an end, with foam and  
froth o'er face,

Till suddenly Fifine suggested change of place?  
Now we taste æther, scorn the wave, and  
interchange apace

No ordinary thoughts, but such as evidence  
The cultivated mind in both. On what  
pretence

Are you and I to sneer at who lent help to hand,  
And gave the lucky lift?

## LXIX.

Still sour? I understand!

One ugly circumstance discredits my fair  
plan—

That Woman does the work: I waive the  
help of Man.

“Why should experiment be tried with only  
waves,

When solid spars float round? Still some  
Thalassia saves

Too pertinaciously, as though no Triton, bluff  
As e'er blew brine from conch, were free to  
help enough!

Surely, to recognize a man, his mates serve  
best!

Why is there not the same or greater interest  
In the strong spouse as in the pretty partner,  
pray,

Were recognition just your object, as you say,  
Amid this element o' the false?”

## LXX.

We come to terms.

I need to be proved true; and nothing so  
confirms

One's faith in the prime point that one's  
alive, not dead,

In all Descents to Hell whereof I ever read,

VOL. II.

As when a phantom there, male enemy or  
friend,

Or merely stranger-shade, is struck, is forced  
suspend

His passage: “You that breathe, along with  
us the ghosts?”

Here, why must it be still a woman that  
accosts?

## LXXI.

Because, one woman's worth, in that respect,  
such hairy hosts

Of the other sex and sort! Men? Say you  
have the power

To make them yours, rule men, throughout  
life's little hour,

According to the phrase; what follows?  
Men, you make,

By ruling them, your own: each man for his  
own sake.

Accepts you as his guide, avails him of what  
worth

He apprehends in you to sublimate his earth  
With fire: content, if so you convoy him  
through night,

That you shall play the sun, and he, the  
satellite,

Pilfer your light and heat and virtue, starry  
pelf,

While, caught up by your course, he turns  
upon himself.

Women rush into you, and there remain  
absorbed.

Beside, 'tis only men completely formed, full-  
orbed,

Are fit to follow track, keep pace, illustrate so  
The leader: any sort of woman may bestow

Her atom on the star, or clod she counts for  
such,—

Each little making less bigger by just that  
much.

Women grow you, while men depend on you  
at best.

And what dependence! Bring and put him  
to the test,

Your specimen disciple, a handbreadth  
separate

From you, he almost seemed to touch before!  
Abate

Complacency you will, I judge, at what's  
divulged!

Some flabbiness you fixed, some vacancy  
outbulged,

Some—much—nay, all, perhaps, the outward  
man's your work:

But, inside man?—find him, wherever he  
may lurk,

And where's a touch of you in his true self?

## LXXII.

I wish  
Some wind would waft this way a glassy  
bubble-fish

O' the kind the sea inflates, and show you,  
once detached

From wave . . . or no, the event is better  
told than watched:

Still may the thing float free, globose and  
opaline.

All over, save where just the amethysts com-  
bine

To blue their best, rim-round the sea-flower  
with a tinge

Earth's violet never knew! Well, 'neath that  
gem-tipped fringe,

A head lurks—of a kind—that acts as stomach  
too;

Then comes the emptiness which out the  
water blew

So big and belly-like, but, dry of water  
drained,

Withert away nine-tenths. Ah, but a tenth  
remained!

That was the creature's self: no more akin  
to sea,

Poor rudimental head and stomach, you agree,  
Than sea's akin to sun who yonder dips his  
ledge.

## LXXIII.

But take the rill which ends a race o'er  
yonder ledge

O' the fissured cliff, to find its fate in smoke  
below!

Disengage that, and ask—what news of life,  
you know

If led, that long lone way, through pasture,  
plain and waste?

All's gone to give the sea! no touch of earth,  
no taste

Of air, reserved to tell how rushes used to bring  
The butterfly and bee, and fisher-bird that's  
king

O' the purple kind, about the snow-soft silver-  
sweet

Infant of mist and dew; only these atoms  
fleet,

Embittered evermore, to make the sea one drop  
More big thereby—if thought keep count  
where sense must stop.

The full-blown ingrate, mere recipient of  
the brine,

That takes all and gives nought, is Man; the  
feminine

Rillet that, taking all and giving nought in turn,  
Goes headlong to her death i' the sea, without  
concern

For the old inland life, snow-soft and silver-  
clear,

That's woman—typified from Ffine to  
Elvire.

## LXXV.

Then, how diverse the modes prescribed to  
who would deal

With either kind of creature! 'Tis Man, you  
seek to seal

Your very own? Resolve, for first step, to  
discard

Nine-tenths of what you are! To make,  
you must be marred,—

To raise your race, must stoop,—to teach  
them aught, must learn

Ignorance, meet half-way what most you  
hope to spurn

I' the sequel. Change yourself, dissimulate  
the thought

And vulgarize the word, and see the deed be  
brought

To look like nothing done with any such intent  
As teach men—though perchance it teach,  
by accident!

So may you master men: assured that if you  
show

One point of mastery, departure from the low.

And level,—head or heart-revolt at long  
disguise,  
Immurement, stifling soul in mediocrities,—  
If inadvertently a gesture, much more, word  
Reveal the hunter no companion for the  
herd,  
His chance of capture's gone. Success  
means, they may snuff,  
Examine, and report,—a brother, sure enough,  
Disports him in brute-guise; for skin is truly  
skin,  
Horns, hoofs are hoofs and horns, and all,  
outside and in,  
Is veritable beast, whom fellow-beasts resigned  
May follow, made a prize in honest pride,  
behind  
One of themselves and not creation's upstart  
lord!  
Well, there's your prize if the pound—much  
joy may it afford  
My Indian! Make survey and tell me,—  
was it worth  
You acted part so well, went all-fours upon  
earth  
The live-long day, brayed, belled, and all to  
bring to pass  
That stags should deign eat hay when winter  
stints them grass?

LXXVI.

So much for men, and how disguise may  
make them mind  
Their master. But you have to deal with  
womankind?  
Abandon stratagem for strategy! Cast quite  
The viledisguise away, try truth clean-opposite  
Such creep-and-crawl, stand forth all man  
and, might it chance,  
Somewhat of angel too!—whate'er inherit-  
ance,  
Actual on earth, in heaven prospective, be  
your boast,  
Lay claim to! Your best self revealed at  
uttermost,—  
That's the wise way o' the strong! And  
e'en should falsehood tempt  
The weaker sort to swerve,—at least the lie's  
exempt

From slur, that's loathlier still, of aiming to  
debase  
Rather than elevate its object. Mimic grace,  
Not make deformity your mask! Be sick  
by stealth,  
Nor traffic with disease—malingering in  
health!  
No more of: "Countrymen, I boast me one  
like you—  
My lot, the common strength, the common  
weakness too!  
I think the thoughts you think; and if I have  
the knack  
Of fitting thoughts to words, you perad-  
venture lack,  
Envy me not the chance, yourselves more  
fortunate!  
Many the loaded ship self-sunk through  
treasure-freight,  
Many the pregnant brain brought never child  
to birth,  
Many the great heart broke beneath its  
girdle-girth!  
Be mine the privilege to supplement defect,  
Give dumbness voice, and let the labouring  
intellect  
Find utterance in word, or possibly in deed!  
What though I seem to go before? 'tis you  
that lead!  
I follow what I see so plain—the general mind  
Projected pillar-wise, flame kindled by the  
kind,  
Which dwarfs the unit—me—to insignificance!  
Halt you, I stop forthwith,—proceed, I too  
advance!"

LXXVII.

Ay, that's the way to take with men you  
wish to lead,  
Instruct and benefit. Small prospect you  
succeed  
With women so! Be all that's great and  
good and wise,  
August, sublime—swell out your frog the  
right ox-size—  
He's buoyed like a balloon, to soar, not  
burst, you'll see!  
The more you prove yourself, less fear the  
prize will flee

The captor. Here you start after no pompous stag  
 Who condescends be snared, with toss of horn, and brag  
 Of bray, and ramp of hoof; you have not to subdue  
 The foe through letting him imagine he snares you!  
 'Tis rather with . . .

## LXXVIII.

Ah, thanks! quick—  
 where the dipping disk  
 Shows red against the rise and fall o' the fin!  
 there frisk  
 In shoal the—porpoises? Dolphins, they  
 shall and must  
 Cut through the freshening clear—dolphins,  
 my instance just!  
 'Tis fable, therefore truth: who has to do  
 with these,  
 Needs never practise trick of going hands  
 and knees  
 As beasts require. Artosfain the fish to  
 captivate?  
 Gather thy greatness round, Arion! Stand  
 in state,  
 As when the banqueting thrilled conscious—  
 like a rose  
 Throughout its hundred leaves at that ap-  
 proach it knows  
 Of music in the bird—while Corinth grew  
 one breast  
 A-throb for song and thee; nay, Periander<sup>1</sup>  
 pressed

The Methymnæan<sup>2</sup> hand, and felt a king  
 indeed, and guessed  
 How Phœbus' self might give that great  
 mouth of the gods  
 Such a magnificence of song! The pillar  
 nods,  
 Rocks roof, and trembles door, gigantic,  
 post and jamb,  
 As harp and voice rend air—the shattering  
 dithyramb!<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Tyrant of Corinth.<sup>2</sup> Arion was born at Methymna, in Lesbos.<sup>3</sup> Lyrical chorus.

So stand thou, and assume the robe that  
 tingles yet  
 With triumph; strike the harp, whose every  
 golden fret  
 Still smoulders with the flame, was late at  
 fingers' end—  
 So, standing on the bench o' the ship, let  
 voice expend  
 Thy soul, sing, unalloyed by meaner mode,  
 thine own,  
 The Orthian lay; then leap from music's  
 lofty throne,  
 Into the lowest surge, make fearlessly thy  
 launch!  
 Whatever storm may threat, some dolphin  
 will be staunch!  
 Whatever roughness rage, some exquisite  
 sea-thing  
 Will surely rise to save, will bear—palpi-  
 tating—  
 One proud humility of love beneath its  
 load—  
 Stem tide, part wave, till both roll on, thy  
 jewell'd road  
 Of triumph, and the grim o' the gulph grow  
 wonder-white  
 I' the phosphorescent wake; and still the  
 exquisite  
 Sea-thing stems on, saves still, palpitatingly  
 thus,  
 Lands safe at length its load of love at  
 Tænarus,<sup>4</sup>  
 True woman-creature!

## LXXIX.

Man? Ah, would you prove what power  
 Marks man,—what fruit his tree may yield,  
 beyond the sour  
 And stunted crab, he calls love-apple, which  
 remains  
 After you toil and moil your utmost,—all,  
 love gains  
 By lavishing manure?—try quite the other  
 plan!  
 And, to obtain the strong true product of a  
 man,

<sup>4</sup> The spot whither the dolphin carried Arion  
 on his way to Corinth.

Set him to hate a little! Leave cherishing  
 his root,  
 And rather prune his branch, nip off the  
 pettiest shoot  
 Superfluous on his bough! I promise, you  
 shall learn  
 By what grace came the goat, of all beasts  
 else, to earn  
 Such favour with the god o' the grape: 'twas  
 only he  
 Who, browsing on its tops, first stung fertility  
 Into the stock's heart, stayed much growth  
 of tendrils-twined,  
 Some faintish flower, perhaps, but gained the  
 indignant wine,  
 Wrath of the red press! Catch the puniest  
 of the kind—  
 Man-animalcule, starved body, stunted mind,  
 And, as you nip the blotch 'twixt thumb and  
 finger-nail,  
 Admire how heaven above and earth below  
 avail  
 No jot to soothe the mite, sore at God's prime  
 offence  
 In making mites at all,—coax from its im-  
 potence  
 One virile drop of thought, or word, or deed,  
 by strain  
 To propagate for once—which nature rendered  
 vain,  
 Who lets first failure stay, yet cares not to record  
 Mistake that seems to cast opprobrium on  
 the Lord!  
 Such were the gain from love's best pains!  
 But let the elf  
 Be touched with hate, because some real man  
 bears himself  
 Manlike in body and soul, and, since he lives,  
 must thwart  
 And furify and set a-fizz this counterpart  
 O' the pismire that's surprised to effervescence,  
 if,  
 By chance, black bottle come in contact with  
 chalk cliff,  
 Acid with alkali! Then thrice the bulk,  
 out blows  
 Our insect, does its kind, and cuckoo-spits  
 some rose!

LXXX.

No—'tis ungainly work, the ruling men, at  
 best!  
 The graceful instinct's right: 'tis women stand  
 confessed  
 Auxiliary, the gain that never goes away,  
 Takes nothing and gives all: Elvire, Fifine,  
 'tis they  
 Convince,—if little, much, no matter!—one  
 degree  
 The more, at least, convince unreasonable  
 me  
 That I am, anyhow, a truth, though all else  
 seem  
 And be not: if I dream, at least I know I  
 dream.  
 The falsity, beside, is fleeting: I can stand  
 Still, and let truth come back,—your steady-  
 ing touch of hand  
 Assists me to remain self-centred, fixed amid  
 All on the move. Believe in me, at once  
 you bid  
 Myself believe that, since one soul has dis-  
 engaged  
 Mine from the shows of things, so much is  
 fact: I waged  
 No foolish warfare, then, with shades, myself  
 a shade,  
 Here in the world—may hope my pains will  
 be repaid!  
 How false things are, I judge: how change-  
 able, I learn  
 When, where and how it is I shall see truth  
 return,  
 That I expect to know, because Fifine knows  
 me!—  
 How much more, if Elvire!

LXXXI.

"And why not, only she?  
 Since there can be for each, one Best, no  
 more, such Best,  
 For body and mind of him, abolishes the rest  
 O' the simply Good and Better. You please  
 select Elvire  
 To give you this belief in truth, dispel the  
 fear

Yourself are, after all, as false as what sur-  
 rounds ;  
 And why not be content ? When we two  
 watched the rounds  
 The boatman made, 'twixt shoal and sand-  
 bank, yesterday,  
 As, at dead slack of tide, he chose to push  
 his way,  
 With oar and pole, across the creek, and  
 reach the isle  
 After a world of pains—my word provoked  
 your smile,  
 Yet none the less deserved reply : 'Twere  
 wiser wait  
 'The turn o' the tide, and find conveyance  
 for his freight—  
 'How easily—within the ship to purpose  
 moored,  
 'Managed by sails, not oars ! But no,—the  
 man's allured  
 'By liking for the new and hard in his  
 exploit !  
 'First come shall serve ! He makes,—  
 courageous and adroit,—  
 'The merest willow-leaf of boat do duty, bear  
 'His merchandise across : once over, needs  
 he care  
 'If folk arrive by ship, six hours hence, fresh  
 and gay ?'  
 No : he scorns commonplace, affects the un-  
 usual way ;  
 And good Elvire is moored, with not a  
 breath to flap  
 The yards of her, no lift of ripple to o'erlap  
 Keel, much less, prow. What care ? since  
 here's a cockle-shell,  
 Fifine, that's taut and crank, and carries just  
 as well  
 Such seamanship as yours !"

## LXXXII.

Alack, our life is lent,  
 From first to last, the whole, for this experi-  
 ment  
 Of proving what I say—that we ourselves  
 are true !  
 I would these were one voyage, and then no  
 more to do

But tread the firmland ; tempt the uncertain  
 sea no more.  
 I would we might dispense with change of  
 shore for shore  
 To evidence our skill, demonstrate—in no  
 dream  
 It was, we tided o'er the trouble of the stream.  
 I would the steady voyage, and not the fitful  
 trip,—  
 Elvire, and not Fifine,—might test our sea-  
 manship.  
 But why expend one's breath to tell you,  
 change of boat  
 Means change of tactics too ? Come see the  
 same afloat  
 To-morrow, all the change, new stowage fore  
 and aft  
 O' the cargo ; then, to cross requires new  
 sailor-craft !  
 To-day, one step from stern to bow keeps  
 boat in trim :  
 To-morrow, some big stone,—or woe to boat  
 and him !—  
 Must ballast both. That man stands for  
 Mind, paramount  
 Throughout the adventure : ay, howe'er you  
 make account,  
 'Tis mind that navigates,—ships over, twists  
 between  
 The bales i' the boat,—now gives importance  
 to the mean,  
 And now abates the pride of life, accepts all  
 fact,  
 Discards all fiction,—steers Fifine, and cries,  
 i' the act,  
 "Thou art so bad, and yet so delicate a brown !  
 Wouldst tell no end of lies : I talk to smile  
 or frown !  
 Wouldst rob me : do men blame a squirrel,  
 lithe and sly,  
 For pilfering the nut she adds to hoard ? Nor I.  
 Elvire is true, as truth, honesty's self, alack !  
 The worse ! too safe the ship, the transport  
 there and back  
 Too certain ! one may loil and lounge and  
 leave the helm,  
 Let wind and tide do work : no fear that  
 waves o'erwhelm

The steady going bark, as sure to feel her way  
Blindfold across, reach land, next year as  
yesterday !

How can I but suspect, the true feat were to slip  
Down side, transfer myself to cockle-shell  
from ship,

And try if, trusting to sea-tracklessness, I class  
With those around whose breast grew oak and  
triple brass :

Who dreaded no degree of death, but, with  
dry eyes,

Surveyed the turgid main and its mon-  
strosities—

And rendered futile so, the prudent Power's  
decree

Of separate earth and disassociating sea ;  
Since, how is it observed, if impious vessels leap  
Across, and tempt a thing they should not  
touch—the deep ?

(See Horace to the boat, wherein, for Athens  
bound,

When Virgil must embark—Jove keep him  
safe and sound !—

The poet bade his friend start on the watery  
road,

Much re-assured by this so comfortable ode.)

## LXXXIII.

Then, never grudge my poor Fifine her  
compliment !

The rakish craft could slip her moorings in  
the tent,

And, hoisting every stitch of spangled canvas,  
steer

Through divers rocks and shoals,—in fine,  
deposit here

Your Virgil of a spouse, in Attica : yea, thrice  
The mob of men, select the special virtue hid  
In him, forsooth, and say—or rather, smile  
so sweet,

"Of all the multitude, you—I prefer to cheat !  
Are you for Athens bound ? I can perform  
the trip,

Shove little pinnacle off, while yon superior  
ship,

The Elvire, refits in port !" So, off we push  
from beach

Of Pornic town, and lo, ere eye can wink,  
we reach

The Long Walls, and I prove that Athens is  
no dream,

For there the temples rise ! they are, they  
nowise seem !

Earth is not all one lie, this truth attests me  
true !

Thanks therefore to Fifine ! Elvire, I'm  
back with you !

Share in the memorics ! Embark I trust we  
shall

To gether some fine day, and so, for good  
and all,

Bid Pornic Town adieu,—then, just the  
strait to cross,

And we reach harbour, safe, in Iostephanos !

## LXXXIV.

How quickly night comes ! Lo, already  
'tis the land

Turns sea-like ; overcrept by grey, the plains  
expand,

Assume significance ; while ocean dwindles,  
shrinks

Into a pettier bound : its splash and plaint,  
methinks,

Six steps away, how both retire, as if their  
part

Were played, another force were free to prove  
her art,

Protagonist in turn ! Are you unterrified ?  
All false, all fleeting too ! And nowhere

things abide,  
And everywhere we strain that things should

stay,—the one  
Truth, that ourselves are true !

## LXXXV.

A word, and I have done.

Is it not just our hate of falsehood, fleeting-  
ness,

And the mere part, things play, that con-  
stitutes express

The inmost charm of this Fifine and all her  
tribe ?

Actors ! We also act, but only they inscribe



Their style and title so, and preface, only they,  
 Performance with "A lie is all we do or say."  
 Wherein but there can be the attraction, False-  
 hood's bribe,  
 That wins so surely o'er to Fifine and her  
 tribe  
 The liking, nay the love of who hate False-  
 hood most,  
 Except that these alone of mankind make  
 their boast  
 "Frankly, we simulate!" To feign, means  
 —to have grace  
 And so get gratitude! This ruler of the  
 race,  
 Crowned, sceptred, stoled to suit,—'tis not  
 that you detect  
 The cobbler in the king, but that he makes  
 effect  
 By seeming the reverse of what you know  
 to be  
 The man, the mind, whole form, fashion and  
 quality.  
 Mistake his false for true, one minute,—  
 there's an end  
 Of the admiration! Truth, we grieve at or  
 rejoice:  
 'Tis only falsehood, plain in gesture, look and  
 voice,  
 That brings the praise desired, since profit  
 comes thereby.  
 The histrionic truth is in the natural lie.  
 Because the man who wept the tears was, all  
 the time,  
 Happy enough; because the other man,  
 a-grime  
 With guilt, was, at the least, as white as I  
 and you;  
 Because the timid type of bashful maidhood,  
 who  
 Starts at her own pure shade, already num-  
 bers seven  
 Born babes and, in a month, will turn their  
 odd to even;  
 Because the saucy prince would prove, could  
 you unfurl  
 Some yards of wrap, a meek and meritorious  
 girl—

Precisely as you see success attained by each  
 O' the mimes, do you approve, not foolishly  
 impeach  
 The falsehood!  
 LXXXVI.  
 That's the first o' the truths  
 found: all things, slow  
 Or quick i' the passage, come at last to that,  
 you know!  
 Each has a false outside, whereby a truth is  
 forced  
 To issue from within: truth, falsehood, are  
 divorced  
 By the excepted eye, at the rare season, for  
 The happy moment. Life means—learning  
 to abhor  
 The false, and love the true, truth treasured  
 snatch by snatch,  
 Waifs counted at their worth. And when  
 with strays they match  
 I' the parti-coloured world,—when, under  
 foul, shines fair,  
 And truth, displayed i' the point, flashes forth  
 everywhere  
 I' the circle, manifest to soul, though hid  
 from sense,  
 And no obstruction more affects this confi-  
 dence,—  
 When faith is ripe for sight,—why, reason-  
 ably, then  
 Comes the great clearing-up. Wait three-  
 score years and ten!  
 LXXXVII.  
 Therefore I prize stage-play, the honest  
 cheating; thence  
 The impulse pricked, when fife and drum  
 bade Fair commence,  
 To bid you trip and skip, link arm in arm  
 with me,  
 Like husband and like wife, and so together  
 see  
 The tumbling-troop arrayed, the strollers on  
 their stage  
 Drawn up and under arms, and ready to  
 engage.

And if I started thence upon abstruser  
themes . . .  
Well, 'twas a dream, pricked too !

LXXXVIII.

A poet never dreams :  
We prose-folk always do : we miss the proper  
duct  
For thoughts on things unseen, which stag-  
nate and obstruct  
The system, therefore ; mind, sound in a  
body sane,  
Keeps thoughts apart from facts, and to one  
flowing vein  
Confines its sense of that which is not, but  
might be,  
And leaves the rest alone. What ghosts do  
poets see ?  
What dæmons fear ? what man or thing mis-  
apprehend ?  
Unchoked, the channel's flush, the fancy's  
free to spend  
Its special self aright in manner, time and  
place.  
Never believe that who create the busy race  
O' the brain, bring poetry to birth, such act  
performed,  
Feel trouble them, the same, such residue as  
warmed  
My prosy blood, this morn,—intrusive fancies,  
meant  
For outbreak and escape by quite another  
vent !  
Whence follows that, asleep, my dreamings  
oft exceed  
The bound. But you shall hear.

LXXXIX.

I smoked. The webs o' the weed,  
With many a break i' the mesh, were floating  
to re-form  
Cupola-wise above : chased thither by soft  
warm  
Inflow of air without ; since I—of mind to  
muse, to clench  
The gain of soul and body, got by their  
noon-day drench

VOL. II.

In sun and sea,—had flung both frames o'  
the window wide,  
To soak my body still and let soul soar beside.  
In came the country sounds and sights and  
smells—that fine  
Sharp needle in the nose from our fermenting  
wine !  
In came a dragon-fly with whirl and stir,  
then out,  
Off and away : in came,—kept coming, rather,  
—pout  
Succeeding smile, and take-away still close  
on give,—  
One loose long creeper-branch, tremblingly  
sensitive  
To risks which blooms and leaves,—each  
leaf tongue-broad, each bloom  
Mid-finger-deep,—must run by prying in the  
room  
Of one who loves and grasps and spoils and  
speculates.  
All so far plain enough to sight and sense :  
but, weights,  
Measures and numbers,—ah, could one apply  
such test  
To other visitants that came at no request  
Of who kept open house,—to fancies manifold  
From this four-cornered world, the memories  
new and old,  
The antenatal prime experience—what know  
I ?—  
The initiatory love preparing us to die—  
Such were a crowd to count, a sight to see,  
a prize  
To turn to profit, were but fleshly ears and  
eyes  
Able to cope with those o' the spirit !

Therefore,—since  
Thought hankers after speech, while no speech  
may evince  
Feeling like music,—mine, o'erburthened with  
each gift  
From every visitant, at last resolved to shift  
Its burthen to the back of some musician dead  
And gone, who feeling once what I feel now,  
instead

M 2

Of words, sought sounds, and saved for ever,  
in the same,

Truth that escapes prose,—nay, puts poetry  
to shame.

I read the note, I strike the key, I bid *record*  
The instrument—thanks greet the veritable  
word!

And not in vain I urge: "O dead and gone  
away,

Assist who struggles yet, thy strength become  
my stay,

Thy record serve as well to register—I felt  
And knew thus much of truth! With me,  
must knowledge melt

Into surmise and doubt and disbelief, unless  
Thy music reassure—I gave no idle guess,  
But gained a certitude I yet may hardly keep!  
What care? since round is piled a monu-  
mental heap

Of music that conserves the assurance, thou  
as well

Wast certain of the same! thou, master of the  
spell,

Mad'st moonbeams marble, didst *record* what  
other men

Feel only to forget!" Who was it helped  
me, then?

What master's work first came responsive to  
my call,

Found my eye, fixed my choice?

## XCI.

Why, Schumann's "Carnival!"

My choice chimed in, you see, exactly with  
the sounds

And sights of yestereve when, going on my  
rounds,

Where both roads join the bridge, I heard  
across the dusk

Creak a slow caravan, and saw arrive the husk  
O' the spice-nut, which peeled off this morning,  
and displayed,

"Twixt tree and tree, a tent whence the red  
pennon made

Its vivid reach for home and ocean-idleness—  
And where, my heart surmised, at that same  
moment,—yes,—

Tugging her *tricot* on,—yet tenderly, lest  
stitch

Announce the crack of doom, reveal disaster  
which

Our Pornic's modest stock of merceries in  
vain

Wereransacked to retrieve,—there, cautiously  
a-strain,

(My heart surmised) must crouch in that tent's  
corner, curved

Like Spring-month's russet moon, some girl  
by fate reserved

To give me once again the electric snap and  
spark

Which prove, when finger finds out finger in  
the dark

O! the world; there's fire and life and truth  
there, link but hands

And pass the secret on. Lo, link by link,  
expands

The circle, lengthens out the chain, till one  
embrace

Of high with low is found uniting the whole  
race,

Not simply you and me and our Fifine, but all  
The world: the Fair expands into the Carnival,

And Carnival again to . . . ah, but that's my  
dream!

## XCII.

I somehow played the piece: remarked on  
each old theme

I' the new dress; saw how food o' the soul,  
the stuff that's made

To furnish man with thought and feeling, is  
purveyed

Substantially the same from age to age, with  
change

Of the outside only for successive feasters.  
Range

The banquet-room o' the world, from the dim  
farthest head

O' the table, to its foot, for you and me be-  
spread,

This merry morn, we find sufficient fare, I  
trow.

But, novel? Scrape away the sauce; and  
taste, below,

## FIFINE AT THE FAIR

The verity o' the viand,—you shall perceive  
there went  
To board-head just the dish which other con-  
diment  
Makes palatable now : guests came, sat down,  
fell-to,  
Rose up, wiped mouth, went way,—lived,  
died,—and never knew  
That generations yet should, seeking sus-  
tenance,  
Still find the selfsame fare, with somewhat to  
enhance  
Its flavour, in the kind of cooking. As with  
hates  
And loves and fears and hopes, so with what  
emulates  
The same, expresses hates, loves, fears and  
hopes in Art :  
The forms, the themes—no one without its  
counterpart  
Ages ago ; no one but, mumbled the due time  
I' the mouth of the eater, needs be cooked  
again in rhyme,  
Dished up anew in paint, sauce-smothered  
fresh in sound,  
To suit the wisdom-looth, just cut, of the age,  
that's found  
With gums obtuse to gust and smack which  
relished so  
The meat o' the meal folk made some fifty  
years ago.  
But don't suppose the new was able to efface  
The old without a struggle, a pang ! The  
commonplace  
Still clung about his heart, long after all the rest  
O' the natural man, at eye and ear, was caught,  
confessed  
The charm of change, although wry lip and  
wrinkled nose  
Owned ancient virtue more conducive to repose  
Than modern nothings roused to somethings  
by some shred  
Of pungency, perchance garlic in amber's stead.  
And so on, till one day, another age, by due  
Rotation, pries, sniffs, smacks, discovers old  
is new,  
And sauce, our sires pronounced insipid,  
proves again

Sole piquant, may resume its titillating reign—  
With music, most of all the arts, since  
change is there.  
The law, and not the lapse : the precious  
means the rare,  
And not the absolute in all good save surprise.  
So I remarked upon our Schumann's victories  
Over the commonplace, how faded phrase  
grew fine,  
And palled perfection—piqued, upstartled by  
that brine,  
His pickle—bit the mouth and burnt the  
tongue aright,  
Beyond the merely good no longer exquisite :  
Then took things as I found, and thanked  
without demur  
The pretty piece—played through that move-  
ment, you prefer,  
Where dance and shuffle past,—he scolding  
while she pouts,  
She canting while he calms,—in those eternal  
bouts  
Of age, the dog—with youth, the cat—by  
rose-festoon  
Tied teasingly enough—Columbine, Panta-  
loon :  
She, toe-tips and *staccato*,—*legato* shakes his  
poll  
And shambles in pursuit, the senior. *Fi la  
folle !*  
Lie to him ! get his gold and pay its price !  
begin  
Your trade betimes, nor wait till you've wed  
Harlequin  
And need, at the week's end, to play the  
duteous wife,  
And swear you still love slaps and leapings  
more than life !  
Pretty ! I say.

### XCIII.

And so, I somehow-nohow played  
The whole o' the pretty piece ; and then  
. . . whatever weighed  
My eyes down, furled the films about my  
wits ? suppose,  
The morning-bath,—the sweet monotony of  
those

I' the matter ; I could pick and choose, pro-  
 ject my weight :  
 (Remember how we saw the boatman trim  
 his freight !)  
 Determine to observe, or manage to escape,  
 Or make divergency assume another shape  
 By shift of point of sight in me the observer :  
 thus  
 Corrected, added to, subtracted from,—dis-  
 cuss  
 Each variant quality, and brute-beast touch  
 was turned  
 Into mankind's safeguard ! Force, guile,  
 were arms which earned  
 My praise, not blame at all : for we must  
 learn to live,  
 Case-hardened at all points, not bare and  
 sensitive,  
 But plated for defence, nay, furnished for  
 attack,  
 With spikes at the due place, that neither  
 front nor back  
 May suffer in that squeeze with nature, we  
 find—life.  
 Are we not here to learn the good of peace  
 through strife,  
 Of love through hate, and reach knowledge  
 by ignorance ?  
 Why, those are helps thereto, which late we  
 eyed askance,  
 And nicknamed unaware ! Just so, a sword  
 we call  
 Superfluous, and cry out against, at festival :  
 Wear it in time of war, its clink and clatter  
 grate  
 O' the ear to purpose then !

## CII.

I found, one must abate  
 One's scorn of the soul's casing, distinct from  
 the soul's self—  
 Which is the centre-drop : whereas the pride  
 in pelf,  
 Tis lost to seem the thing it cannot be, the  
 greet  
 For praise, and all the rest seen outside,—  
 these indeed

Are the hard polished cold crystal environ-  
 ment  
 Of those strange orbs unearthed i' the Druid  
 temple, meant  
 For divination (so the learned please to  
 think)  
 Wherein you may admire one dew-drop roll  
 and wink,  
 All unaffected by—quite alien to—what  
 sealed  
 And saved it long ago : though how it got  
 congealed  
 I shall not give a guess, nor how, by power  
 occult,  
 The solid surface-shield was outcome and  
 result  
 Of simple dew at work to save itself amid  
 The unwatery force around ; protected thus,  
 dew slid  
 Safe through all opposites, impatient to absorb  
 Its spot of life, and last for ever in the orb  
 We, now, from hand to hand pass with  
 impunity.

## CIII.

And the delight wherewith I watch this  
 crowd must be  
 Akin to that which crowns the chemist when  
 he winds  
 Thread up and up, till clue be fairly clutched,  
 —unbinds  
 The composite, ties fast the simple to its mate,  
 And, tracing each effect back to its cause,  
 elate,  
 Constructs in fancy, from the fewest primi-  
 tives,  
 The complex and complete, all diverse life,  
 that lives  
 Not only in beast, bird, fish, reptile, insect, but  
 The very plants and earths and ores. Just so  
 I glut  
 My hunger both to be and know the thing  
 I am,  
 By contrast with the thing I am not ; so,  
 through sham  
 And outside, I arrive at inmost real, probe  
 And prove how the nude form obtained the  
 chequered robe.

CIV.

—Experience, I am glad to master soon  
or late,  
Here, there and everywhere i' the world,  
without debate !  
Only, in Venice why? What reason for  
Mark's Square  
Rather than Timbuctoo?

CV.

And I became aware,  
Scarcely the word escaped my lips, that  
swift ensued  
In silence and by stealth, and yet with  
certitude,  
A formidable change of the amphitheatre  
Which held the Carnival; although the  
human stir  
Continued just the same amid that shift of  
scene.

CVI.

For as on edifice of cloud i' the grey and  
green  
Of evening,—built about some glory of the  
west,  
To barricade the sun's departure,—manifest,  
He plays, pre-eminently gold, gilds vapour,  
crag and crest  
Which bend in rapt suspense above the act  
and deed  
They cluster round and keep their very own,  
nor heed  
The world at watch; while we, breathlessly  
at the base  
O' the castellated bulk, note momentarily the  
mace  
Of night fall here, fall there, bring change  
with every blow,  
Alike to sharpened shaft and broadened  
portico  
I' the structure: heights and depths, beneath  
the leaden stress,  
Crumble and melt and mix together, coalesce,  
Re-form, but sadder still, subdued yet more  
and more  
By every fresh defeat, till wearied eyes need  
pore

No longer on the dull impoverished decadence  
Of all that pomp of pile in towering evidence  
So lately:—

CVII.

Even thus nor otherwise, meseemed  
That if I fixed my gaze awhile on what I  
dreamed  
Was Venice' Square, Mark's Church, the  
scheme was straight unschemed,  
A subtle something had its way within the  
heart  
Of each and every house I watched, with  
counterpart  
Of tremor through the front and outward  
face, until  
Mutation was at end; impassive and stock-  
still  
Stood now the ancient house, grown—new,  
is scarce the phrase,  
Since older, in a sense,—altered to . . .  
what i' the ways,  
Ourselves are wont to see, coerced by city,  
town  
Or village, anywhere i' the world, pace up  
or down  
Europe! In all the maze, no single tenement  
I saw, but I could claim acquaintance with.

CVIII.

There went  
Conviction to my soul, that what I took of  
late  
For Venice was the world; its Carnival—  
the state  
Of mankind, masquerade in life-long per-  
manence  
For all time, and no one particular feast-day.  
Whence  
'Twas easy to infer what meant my late  
disgust  
At the brute-pageant, each grotesque of greed  
and lust  
And idle hate, and love as impotent for good—  
When from my pride of place I passed the  
interlude  
In critical review; and what, the wonder  
that ensued

When, from such pinnacled pre-eminence, I  
 found  
 Somehow the proper goal for wisdom was  
 the ground  
 And not the sky,—so, slid sagaciously be-  
 times  
 Down heaven's baluster-rope, to reach the  
 mob of mimes  
 And mummers; whereby came discovery  
 there was just  
 Enough and not too much of hate, love,  
 greed and lust,  
 Could one discerningly but hold the balance,  
 shift  
 The weight from scale to scale, do justice to  
 the drift  
 Of nature, and explain the glories by the shames  
 Mixed up in man, one stuff miscalled by  
 different names  
 According to what stage i' the process turned  
 his rough,  
 Even as I gazed, to smooth—only get close  
 enough!  
 —What was all this except the lesson of a life?

And—consequent upon the learning how  
 from strife  
 Grew peace—from evil, good—came know-  
 ledge that, to get  
 Acquaintance with the way o' the world, we  
 must nor fret  
 Nor fume, on altitudes of self-sufficiency,  
 But bid a frank farewell to what—we think—  
 should be,  
 And, with as good a grace, welcome what is—  
 we find.

CX.

Is—for the hour, observe! Since some-  
 thing to my mind  
 Suggested soon the fancy, nay, certitude that  
 change,  
 Never suspending touch, continued to derange  
 What architecture, we, walled up within the  
 cirque  
 O' the world, consider fixed as fate, not fairy-  
 work.

For those were temples, sure, which trem-  
 blingly grew blank  
 From bright, then broke afresh in triumph,—  
 ah, but sank  
 As soon, for liquid change through artery and  
 vein  
 O' the very marble wound its way! And first  
 a stain  
 Would startle and offend amid the glory; next,  
 Spot swift succeeded spot, but found me less  
 perplexed  
 By portents; then as 'twere a sleepiness soft  
 stole  
 Over the stately fane, and shadow sucked the  
 whole  
 Façade into itself, made uniformly earth  
 What was a piece of heaven; till, lo, a second  
 birth,  
 And the veil broke away because of something  
 new  
 Inside, that pushed to gain an outlet, paused  
 in view  
 At last, and proved a growth of stone or brick  
 or wood  
 Which, alien to the aim o' the Builder, some-  
 how stood  
 The test, could satisfy, if not the early race  
 For whom he built, at least our present  
 populace,  
 Who must not bear the blame for what,  
 blamed, proves mishap  
 Of the Artist: his work gone, another fills  
 the gap,  
 Serves the prime purpose so. Undoubtedly  
 there spreads  
 Building around, above, which makes men  
 lift their heads  
 To look at, or look through, or look—for  
 aught I care—  
 Over: if only up, it is, not down, they stare,  
 "Commercing with the skies," and not the  
 pavement in the Square.

CXI.

But are they only temples that subdivide,  
 collapse,  
 And tower again, transformed? Academies,  
 perhaps!

Domes where dwells Learning, seats of Science, bower and hall  
Which house Philosophy—do these, too, rise and fall,  
Based though foundations be on steadfast mother-earth,  
With no chimeric claim to supermundane birth,  
No boast that, dropped from cloud, they did not grow from ground?  
Why, these fare worst of all! these vanish and are found  
Nowhere, by who tasks eye some twice within his term  
Of threescore years and ten, for tidings what each germ  
Has burgeoned out into, whereof the promise stunned  
His ear with such acclaim,—praise-payment to refund  
The praisers, never doubt, some twice before they die  
Whose days are long i' the land.

Alack, Philosophy!  
Despite the chop and change, diminished or increased,  
Patched-up and plastered-o'er, Religion stands at least  
I' the temple-type. But thou? Here gape I, all agog  
These thirty years, to learn how tadpole turns to frog;  
And thrice at least have gazed with mild astonishment,  
As, skyward up and up, some fire-new fabric sent  
Its challenge to mankind that, clustered underneath  
To hear the word, they straight believe, ay, in the teeth  
O' the Past, clap hands and hail triumphant Truth's outbreak—  
Tadpole-frog-theory propounded past mistake!  
In vain! A something ails the edifice, it bends,  
It bows, it buries . . . Haste! cry "Heads below" to friends—

But have no' fear they find, when smother shall subside,  
Some substitution perk with unabated pride  
I' the predecessor's place!

CXIII.

No,—the one voice which failed  
Never, the preachment's coign of vantage nothing ailed,—  
That had the luck to lodge i' the house not made with hands!  
And all it preached was this: "Truth builds upon the sands,  
Though stationed on a rock: and so her work decays,  
And so she builds afresh, with like result. Nought stays  
But just the fact that Truth not only is, but fain  
Would have men know she needs must be, by each so plain  
Attempt to visibly inhabit where they dwell."  
Her works are work, while she is she; that work does well  
Which lasts mankind their life-time through, and lets believe  
One generation more, that, though sand run through sieve,  
Yet earth now reached is rock, and what we moderns find  
Erected here is Truth, who, 'stablished to her mind  
I' the fulness of the days, will never change in show  
More than in substance erst: men thought they knew; we know!

CXIV.

Do you, my generation? Well, let the blocks prove mist  
I' the main enclosure,—church and college, if they list,  
Be something for a time, and everything anon,  
And anything awhile, as fit is, off or on,  
Till they grow nothing, soon to re-appear no less  
As something,—shape re-shaped, till out of shapelessness



Come shape again as sure! no doubt, or  
 round or square  
 Or polygon its front, some building will be  
 there,  
 Do duty in that nook o' the wall o' the world  
 where once  
 The Architect saw fit precisely to ensconce  
 College or church, and bid such bulwark  
 guard the line  
 O' the barrier round about, humanity's confine.

## CXV.

Leave watching change at work i' the  
 greater scale, on these  
 The main supports, and turn to their interstices  
 Filled up by fabrics too, less costly and less rare,  
 Yet of importance, yet essential to the Fair  
 They help to circumscribe, instruct and regu-  
 late!  
 See, where each booth-front boasts, in letters  
 small or great,  
 Its specialty, proclaims its privilege to stop  
 A breach, beside the best!

## CXVI.

Here History keeps shop,  
 Tells how past deeds were done, so and not  
 otherwise:  
 "Man! hold truth evermore! forget the early  
 lies!"  
 There sits Morality, demure behind her stall,  
 Dealing out life and death: "This is the  
 thing to call  
 Right, and this other, wrong; thus think,  
 thus do, thus say,  
 Thus joy, thus suffer!—not to-day as yester-  
 day—  
 Yesterday's doctrine dead, this only shall  
 endure!  
 Obey its voice and live!"—enjoins the dame  
 demure.  
 While Art gives flag to breeze, bids drum  
 beat, trumpet blow,  
 Inviting eye and ear to yonder raree-show.  
 Up goes the canvas, hauled to height of pole.  
 I think,  
 We know the way—long lost, late learned—  
 to paint! A wink

Of eye, and lo, the pose! the statue on its  
 plinth!  
 How could we moderns miss the heart o' the  
 labyrinth  
 Perversely all these years, permit the Greek  
 seclude  
 His secret till to-day? And here's another feud  
 Now happily composed: inspect this quartett-  
 score!  
 Got long past melody, no word has Music more  
 To say to mortal man! But is the bard to be  
 Behindhand? Here's his book, and now  
 perhaps you see  
 At length what poetry can do!

## CXVII.

Why, that's stability  
 Itself, that change on change we sorrowfully  
 saw  
 Creep o'er the prouder piles! We acquiesced  
 in law  
 When the fine gold grew dim i' the temple,  
 when the brass  
 Which pillared that so brave abode where  
 Knowledge was,  
 Bowed and resigned the trust; but, bear all  
 this caprice,  
 Harlequinade where swift to birth succeeds  
 decease  
 Of hue at every turn o' the tinsel-flag which  
 flames  
 While Art holds booth in Fair? Such glories  
 chased by shames  
 Like these, distract beyond the solemn and  
 august  
 Procedure to decay, evanishment in dust,  
 Of those marmoreal<sup>1</sup> domes,—above vicissi-  
 tude,  
 We used to hope!

## CXVIII.

"So, all is change, in fine," pursued  
 The preachment to a pause. When—"All  
 is permanence!"  
 Returned a voice. Within? without? No  
 matter whence

<sup>1</sup> Marble-like.

The explanation came: for, understand, I ought  
To simply say—"I saw," each thing I say  
"I thought."

Since ever as, unrolled, the strange scene-  
picture grew

Before me, sight flashed first, though mental  
comment too

Would follow in a trice, come hobblingly to  
halt.

## CXIX.

So, what did I see next but,—much as when  
the vault

I' the west,—wherein we watch the vapoury  
manifold

Transfiguration,—tired turns blaze to black,  
—behold,

Peak reconciled to base, dark ending feud  
with bright,

The multiform subsides, becomes the definite.

Contrasting life and strife, where battle they  
I' the blank

Severity of peace in death, for which we  
thank

One wind that comes to quell the concourse,  
drive at last

Things to a shape which suits the close of  
things, and cast

Palpably o'er vexed earth heaven's mantle of  
repose?

## CXX.

Just so, in Venice' Square, that things were  
at the close

Was signalled to my sense; for I perceived  
arrest

O' the change all round about. As if some  
impulse pressed

Each gently into each, what was distinctness,  
late,

Grew vague, and, line from line no longer  
separate,

No matter what its style, edifice . . . shall  
I say,

Died into edifice? I find no simpler way  
Of saying how, without or dash or shock or  
trace

Of violence, I found unity in the place  
Of temple, tower,—nay, hall and house and  
but,—one blank

Severity of peace in death; to which they sank  
Resigned enough, till . . . ah, conjecture, I  
beseech,

What special blank did they agree to, all  
and each?

What common shape was that wherein they  
mutely merged

Likes and dislikes of form, so plain before?

## CXXI.

I urged

Your step this way, prolonged our path of  
enterprise

To where we stand at last, in order that  
your eyes

Might see the very thing, and save my tongue  
describe

The Druid monument which fronts you.  
Could I bribe

Nature to come in aid, illustrate what I mean,  
What wants there she should lend to solemn-  
ize the scene?

## CXXII.

How does it strike you, this construction  
gaunt and grey—

Sole object, these piled stones, that gleam  
unground-away

By twilight's hungry jaw, which champs fine  
all beside

I' the solitary waste we grope through? Oh,  
no guide

Need we to grope our way and reach the  
monstrous door

Of granite! Take my word, the deeper you  
explore

That caverned passage, filled with fancies to  
the brim,

The less will you approve the adventure!  
such a grim

Bar-sinister soon blocks abrupt your path,  
and ends

All with a cold dread shape,—shape whereon  
Learning spends

Labour, and leaves the text obscurer for the

While Ignorance reads right—recoiling from  
that Cross!

Whence came the mass and mass, strange  
 quality of stone  
 Unquarried anywhere i' the region round?  
 Unknown!  
 Just as unknown, how such enormity could be  
 Conveyed by land, or else transported over  
 sea,  
 And laid in order, so, precisely each on each,  
 As you and I would build a grotto where the  
 beach  
 Sheds shell—to last an hour: this building  
 lasts from age  
 To age the same. But why?

## CXXIII.

Ask Learning! I engage  
 You get a prosy wherefore, shall help you to  
 advance  
 In knowledge just as much as helps you Ignorance  
 Surmising, in the mouth of peasant-lad or lass,  
 "I heard my father say he understood it  
 was  
 A building, people built as soon as earth was  
 made  
 Almost, because they might forget (they were  
 afraid)  
 Earth did not make itself, but came of Somebody.  
 They laboured that their work might last, and  
 show thereby  
 He stays, while we and earth, and all things  
 come and go.  
 Come whence? Go whither? That, when  
 come and gone, we know  
 Perhaps, but not while earth and all things  
 need our best  
 Attention: we must wait and die to know the  
 rest.  
 Ask, if that's true, what use in setting up the  
 pile?  
 To make one fear and hope: remind us, all  
 the while  
 We come and go, outside there's Somebody  
 that stays;  
 A circumstance which ought to make us mind  
 our ways,

Because,—whatever end we answer by this  
 life,—  
 Next time, best chance must be for who, with  
 toil and strife,  
 Manages now to live most like what he was  
 meant  
 Become: since who succeeds so far, 'tis  
 evident,  
 Stands foremost on the file; who fails, has  
 less to hope  
 From new promotion. That's the rule—with  
 even a rope  
 Of mushrooms, like this rope I dangle! those  
 that grew  
 Greatest and roundest, all in life they had  
 to do,  
 Gain a reward, a grace they never dreamed,  
 I think;  
 Since, outside white as milk and inside black  
 as ink,  
 They go to the Great House to make a dainty  
 dish  
 For Don and Donna; while this basket-load,  
 I wish  
 Well off my arm, it breaks,—no starveling of  
 the heap  
 But had his share of dew, his proper length  
 of sleep  
 I' the sunshine: yet, of all, the outcome is—  
 this queer  
 Cribbed quantity of dwarfs which burthen  
 basket here  
 Till I reach home; 'tis there that, having run  
 their rigs,  
 They end their earthly race, are flung as food  
 for pigs.  
 Any more use I see? Well, you must know,  
 there lies  
 Something, the Curé says, that points to  
 mysteries  
 Above our grasp: a huge stone pillar, once  
 upright,  
 Now laid at length, half-lost — discreetly  
 shunning sight  
 I' the bush and briar, because of stories in  
 the air—  
 Hints what it signified, and why was stationed  
 there,

Once on a time. In vain the Curé tasked  
 his lungs—  
 Showed, in a preachment, how, at bottom of  
 the rungs  
 O' the ladder, Jacob saw, where heavenly,  
 angels slept  
 Up and down, lay a stone which served him,  
 while he slept,  
 For pillow; when he woke, he set the same  
 upright  
 As pillar, and a-top poured oil: things re-  
 quisite  
 To instruct posterity, there mounts from floor  
 to roof,  
 A staircase, earth to heaven; and also put  
 in proof,  
 When we have scaled the sky, we well may  
 let alone  
 What raised us from the ground, and,—paying  
 to the stone  
 Proper respect, of course,—take staff and go  
 our way,  
 Leaving the Pagan night for Christian break  
 of day.  
 'For,' preached he, 'what they dreamed,  
 these Pagans wide-awake  
 'We Christians may behold. How strange,  
 then, were mistake  
 'Did anybody style the stone,—because of  
 drop  
 'Remaining there from oil which Jacob pour'd  
 a-top,—  
 'Itself the Gate of Heaven, itself the erl,  
 and not  
 'The means thereto!' Thus preached  
 Curé, and no jot  
 The more persuaded people but that, what  
 once a thing  
 Meant and had right to mean, it still must  
 mean. So cling  
 Folk somehow to the prime authoritative  
 speech,  
 And so distrust report, it seems as they could  
 reach  
 Far better the arch-word, whereon their fate  
 depends,  
 Through rude charactery, than all the grace  
 it lends

That lettering of your scribes! who flourish  
 pen apace  
 And ornament the text, they say—we say,  
 efface.  
 Hence, when the earth began its life afresh  
 in May,  
 And fruit-trees bloomed, and waves would  
 wanton, and the bay  
 Ruffle its wealth of weed, and stranger-birds  
 arrive,  
 And beasts take each a mate,—folk, too,  
 found sensitive,  
 Surmised the old grey stone upright there,  
 through such tracts  
 Of solitariness and silence, kept the facts  
 Entrusted it, could deal out doctrine, did it  
 please:  
 No fresh and frothy draught, but liquor on  
 the lees,  
 Strong, savage and sincere: first bleedings  
 from a vine  
 Whereof the product now do Curés so refine  
 To insipidity, that, when heart sinks, we  
 strive  
 And strike from the old stone the old restora-  
 tive.  
 'Which is?'—why, go and ask our grandames  
 how they used  
 To dance around it, till the Curé disabused  
 Their ignorance, and bade the parish in a  
 band  
 Lay flat the obtrusive thing that cumbered so  
 the land!  
 And there, accordingly, in bush and briar it—  
 'bides  
 Its time to rise again!' (so somebody derides,  
 That's pert from Paris) 'since, yon spire, you  
 keep erect  
 Yonder, and pray beneath, is nothing, I  
 suspect,  
 But just the symbol's self, expressed in slate  
 for rock,  
 Art's smooth for Nature's rough, new chip  
 from the old block!'

There, sir, my say is said! Thanks, and Saint  
 Gille increase  
 The wealth bestowed so well!—wherewith  
 he pockets piece.

Doffs cap, and takes the road. I leave in  
Learning's clutch  
More money for his book, but scarcely gain  
as much.

## CXXIV.

To this it was, this same primæval monu-  
ment,  
That, in my dream, I saw building with  
building blent  
Fall : each on each they fast and founderingly  
went  
Confusion-ward ; but thence again subsided  
fast,  
Became the mound you see. Magnificently  
massed  
Indeed, those mammoth-stones, piled by the  
Protoplast  
Temple-wise in my dream ! beyond compare  
with fanes  
Which, solid-looking late, had left no least  
remains  
I' the bald and blank, now sole usurper of the  
plains  
Of heaven, diversified and beautiful before.  
And yet simplicity appeared to speak no more  
Nor less to me than spoke the compound.  
At the core,  
One and no other word, as in the crust of late,  
Whispered, which, audible through the transi-  
tion-state,  
Was no loud utterance in even the ultimate  
Disposure. For as some imperial chord  
subsists,  
Steadily underlies the accidental mists  
Of music springing thence, that run their  
mazy race  
Around, and sink, absorbed, back to the triad  
base,—  
So, out of that one word, each variant rose  
and fell  
And left the same "All's change, but perma-  
nence as well."  
—Grave note whence—list aloft!—harmonics  
sound, that mean :  
"Truth inside, and outside, truth also ; and  
between  
Each, falsehood that is change, as truth is  
permanence.

The individual soul works through the shows  
of sense,  
(Which, ever proving false, still promise to be  
true)

Up to an outer soul as individual too ;  
And, through the fleeting, lives to die into  
the fixed,  
And reach at length 'God, man, or both  
together mixed,'  
Transparent through the flesh, by parts which  
prove a whole,  
By hints which make the soul discernible by  
soul—  
Let only soul look up, not down, not hate  
but love,  
As truth successively takes shape, one grade  
above  
Its last presentment, tempts as it were truth  
indeed  
Revealed this time ; so tempts, till we attain  
to read  
The signs aright, and learn, by failure, truth  
is forced  
To manifest itself through falsehood ; whence  
divorced  
By the excepted eye, at the rare season, for  
The happy moment, truth instructs us to  
abhor  
The false, and prize the true, obtainable  
thereby.  
Then do we understand the value of a lie ;  
Its purpose served, its truth once safe de-  
posited,  
Each lie, superfluous now, leaves, in the  
singer's stead,  
The indubitable song ; the historic personage  
Put by, leaves prominent the impulse of his  
age ;  
Truth sets aside speech, act, time, place,  
indeed, but brings  
Nakedly forward now the principle of things  
Highest and least."

## CXXV.

Wherewith change ends. What  
change to dread  
When, disengaged at last from every veil,  
instead

Of type remains the truth? once—falsehood:  
but anon

*Theosuton e broteion eper kakramemon,*  
Something as true as soul is true, though  
veils between

Prove false and fleet away. As I mean, did  
he mean,

The poet whose bird-phrase sits, singing in  
my ear

A mystery not unlike? What through the  
dark and drear

Brought comfort to the Titan? Emerging  
from the lymph,

“God, man, or mixture” proved only to be  
a nymph:

“From whom the clink on clink of metal”  
(money, judged

Abundant in my purse) “struck” (bumped  
at, till it budged)

“The modesty, her soul’s habitual resident”  
(Where late the sisterhood were lively in  
their tent)

“As out of winged car” (that caravan on  
wheels)

“Impulsively she rushed, no slippers to her  
heels,”

And “Fear not, friends we flock!” soft  
smiled the sea-Fifine—

Primitive of the veils (if he meant what I  
mean)

The poet’s Titan learned to lift, ere “Three-  
formed Fate,

*Moirai Trimorphoi*” stood unmasked the  
Ultimate.

CXXVI.

Enough o’ the dream! You see how  
poetry turns prose.

Announcing wonder-work, I dwindle at the  
close

Down to mere commonplace old facts which  
everybody knows.

So dreaming disappoints! The fresh and  
strange at first,

Soon wears to trite and tame, nor warrants  
the outburst

Of heart with which we hail those heights,  
at very brink

Of heaven, whereto one least of lifts would  
lead, we think,

But wherefrom quick decline conducts our  
step, we find,

To homely earth, old facts familiar left  
behind.

Did not this monument, for instance, long  
ago

Say all it had to say, show all it had to show,  
Nor promise to do duty more in dream?

CXXVII.

Awaking so,

What if we, homeward-bound, all peace and  
some fatigue,

Trudge, soberly complete our tramp of near  
a league,

Last little mile which makes the circuit just,  
Elvire?

We end where we began: that consequence  
is clear.

All peace and some fatigue, wherever we  
were nursed

To life, we bosom us on death, find last is first  
And thenceforth final too.

CXXVIII.

“Why final? Why the more

Worth credence now than when such truth  
proved false before?”

Because a novel point impresses now: each lie  
Redounded to the praise of man, was victory

Man’s nature had both right to get, and might  
to gain,

And by no means implied submission to the  
reign

Of other quite as real a nature, that saw fit  
To have its way with man, not man his way

with it.

This time, acknowledgment and acquiescence  
quell

Their contrary in man; promotion proves as  
well

Defeat: and Truth, unlike the False with  
Truth’s outside,

Neither plumes up his will nor puffs him out  
with pride.

Doffs cap, and takes the road. I leave in  
Learning's clutch  
More money for his book, but scarcely gain  
as much.

## CXXIV.

To this it was, this same primæval monu-  
ment,  
That, in my dream, I saw building with  
building blent  
Fall : each on each they fast and founderingly  
went  
Confusion-ward ; but thence again subsided  
fast,  
Became the mound you see. Magnificently  
massed  
Indeed, those mammoth-stones, piled by the  
Protoplast  
Temple-wise in my dream ! beyond compare  
with fanes  
Which, solid-looking late, had left no least  
remains  
I' the bald and blank, now sole usurper of the  
plains  
Of heaven, diversified and beautiful before.  
And yet simplicity appeared to speak no more  
Nor less to me than spoke the compound.  
At the core,  
One and no other word, as in the crust of late,  
Whispered, which, audible through the transi-  
tion-state,  
Was no loud utterance in even the ultimate  
Disposure. For as some imperial chord  
subsists,  
Steadily underlies the accidental mists  
Of music springing thence, that run their  
mazy race  
Around, and sink, absorbed, back to the triad  
base,—  
So, out of that one word, each variant rose  
and fell  
And left the same "All's change, but perma-  
nence as well."  
—Grave note whence—list aloft!—harmonics  
sound, that mean :

"Truth inside, and outside, truth also ; and  
between  
Each, falsehood that is change, as truth is  
permanence."

The individual soul works through the shows  
of sense,

(Which, ever proving false, still promise to be  
true)

Up to an outer soul as individual too ;  
And, through the fleeting, lives to die into  
the fixed,

And reach at length 'God, man, or both  
together mixed,'

Transparent through the flesh, by parts which  
prove a whole,

By hints which make the soul discernible by  
soul—

Let only soul look up, not down, not hate  
but love,

As truth successively takes shape, one grade  
above

Its last presentment, tempts as it were truth  
indeed

Revealed this time ; so tempts, till we attain  
to read

The signs aright, and learn, by failure, truth  
is forced

To manifest itself through falsehood ; whence  
divorced

By the excepted eye, at the rare season, for  
The happy moment, truth instructs us to  
abhor

The false, and prize the true, obtainable  
thereby.

Then do we understand the value of a lie ;  
Its purpose served, its truth once safe de-  
posited,

Each lie, superfluous now, leaves, in the  
singer's stead,

The indubitable song ; the historic personage  
Put by, leaves prominent the impulse of his  
age ;

Truth sets aside speech, act, time, place,  
indeed, but brings

Nakedly forward now the principle of things  
Highest and least."

## CXXV.

Wherever change ends. What  
change to dread

When, disengaged at last from every veil,  
instead

Of type remains the truth? once—falsehood:  
but anon

*Theosuton e broleion eper kekramemon,*

Something as true as soul is true, though  
veils between

Prove false and fleet away. As I mean, did  
he mean,

The poet whose bird-phrase sits, singing in  
my ear

A mystery not unlike? What through the  
dark and drear

Brought comfort to the Titan? Emerging  
from the lymph,

"God, man, or mixture" proved only to be  
a nymph:

"From whom the clink on clink of metal"  
(money, judged

Abundant in my purse) "struck" (bumped  
at, till it budged)

"The modesty, her soul's habitual resident"  
(Where late the sisterhood were lively in  
their tent)

"As out of winged car" (that caravan on  
wheels)

"Impulsively she rushed, no slippers to her  
heels,"

And "Fear not, friends we flock!" soft  
smiled the sea-Fifine—

Primitive of the veils (if he meant what I  
mean)

The poet's Titan learned to lift, ere "Three-  
formed Fate,

*Moirai Trimorphoi*" stood unmasked the  
Ultimate.

## CXXVI.

Enough o' the dream! You see how  
poetry turns prose.

Announcing wonder-work, I dwindle at the  
close

Down to mere commonplace old facts which  
everybody knows.

So dreaming disappoints! The fresh and  
strange at first,

Soon wears to trite and tame, nor warrants  
the outburst

Of heart with which we hail those heights,  
at very brink

Of heaven, whereto one least of lifts would  
lead, we think,

But wherefrom quick decline conducts our  
step, we find,

To homely earth, old facts familiar left  
behind.

Did not this monument, for instance, long  
ago

Say all it had to say, show all it had to show,  
Nor promise to do duty more in dream?

## CXXVII.

Awaking so,

What if we, homeward-bound, all peace and  
some fatigue,

Trudge, soberly complete our tramp of near  
a league,

Last little mile which makes the circuit just,  
Elvire?

We end where we began: that consequence  
is clear.

All peace and some fatigue, wherever we  
were nursed

To life, we bosom us on death, find last is first  
And thenceforth final too.

## CXXVIII.

"Why final? Why the more

Worth credence now than when such truth  
proved false before?"

Because a novel point impresses now: each lie  
Redounded to the praise of man, was victory

Man's nature had both right to get, and might  
to gain,

And by no means implied submission to the  
reign

Of other quite as real a nature, that saw fit  
To have its way with man, not man his way

with it.

This time, acknowledgment and acquiescence  
quell

Their contrary in man; promotion proves as  
well

Defeat: and Truth, unlike the False with  
Truth's outside,

Neither plumes up his will nor puffs him out  
with pride.



I fancy, there must lurk some cogency i' the  
 claim,  
 Man, such abatement made, submits to, all  
 the same.  
 Soul finds no triumph, here, to register like  
 Sense  
 With whom 'tis ask and have,—the want,  
 the evidence  
 That the thing wanted, soon or late, will be  
 supplied.  
 This indeed plumes up will ; this, sure, puffs  
 out with pride,  
 When, reading records right, man's instincts  
 still attest  
 Promotion comes to Sense because Sense  
 likes it best ;  
 For bodies sprouted legs, through a desire to  
 run :  
 While hands, when fain to filch, got fingers  
 one by one,  
 And nature, that's ourself, accommodative  
 brings  
 To bear that, tired of legs which walk, we  
 now bud wings  
 Since of a mind to fly. Such savour in the  
 nose  
 Of Sense, would stimulate Soul sweetly, I  
 suppose,  
 Soul with its proper itch of instinct,,prompt-  
 ing clear  
 To recognize soul's self Soul's only master  
 here  
 Alike from first to last. But, if time's  
 pressure, light's  
 Or rather, dark's approach, wrest thoroughly  
 the rights  
 Of rule away, and bid the soul submissive  
 bear  
 Another soul than it play master everywhere  
 In great and small,—this time, I fancy, none  
 disputes  
 There's something in the fact that such con-  
 clusion suits  
 Nowise the pride of man, nor yet chimes in  
 with attributes  
 Conspicuous in the lord of nature. He receives  
 And not demands—not first likes faith and  
 then believes.

## CXXIX.

And as with the last essence so with its  
 first faint type.  
 Inconstancy means raw, 'tis faith alone  
 means ripe  
 I' the soul which runs its round : no matter  
 how it range  
 From Helen to Fifine, Elvire bids back the  
 change  
 To permanence. Here, too, love ends where  
 love began.  
 Such ending looks like law, because the  
 natural man  
 Inclines the other way, feels lordlier free  
 than bound.  
 Poor pabulum for pride when the first love  
 is found  
 Last also ! and, so far from realizing gain,  
 Each step aside just proves divergency in  
 vain.  
 The wanderer brings home no profit from his  
 quest  
 Beyond the sad surmise that keeping house  
 were best  
 Could life begin anew. His problem posed  
 aright  
 Was—"From the given point evolve the  
 infinite !"  
 Not—"Spend thyself in space, endeavouring  
 to joint  
 Together, and so make infinite, point and  
 point :  
 Fix into one Elvire a Fair-ful of Fines !"  
 Fifine, the foam-flake, she : Elvire, the sea's  
 self, means  
 Capacity at need to shower how many  
 such !  
 And yet we left her calm profundity, to  
 clutch  
 Foam-flutter, bell on bell, that, bursting at a  
 touch,  
 Blistered us for our pains. But wise, we  
 want no more  
 O' the fickle element. Enough of foam and  
 roar !  
 Land-locked, we live and die henceforth :  
 for here's the villa-door.

CXXX.

How pallidly you pause o' the threshold!  
Hardly night,  
Which drapes you, ought to make real flesh  
and blood so white!  
Touch me, and so appear alive to all intents!  
Will the saint vanish from the sinner that  
repents?  
Suppose you are a ghost! A memory, a  
hope,  
A fear, a conscience! Quick! Give back  
the hand I grope  
I' the dusk for!

CXXXI.

That is well. Our double horoscope  
I cast, while you concur. Discard that simile  
O' the fickle element! Elvire is land not sea—  
The solid land, the safe. All these word-  
bubbles came  
O' the sea, and bite like salt. The unlucky  
bath's to blame.  
This hand of yours on heart of mine, no more  
the bay  
I beat, nor bask beneath the blue! In  
Pornic, say,  
The Mayor shall catalogue me duly domiciled,  
Contributable, good-companion of the guild  
And mystery of marriage. I stickle for the  
town,  
And not this tower apart; because, though,  
half-way down,  
Its mullions wink o'erwebbed with bloomy  
greenness, yet  
Who mounts to staircase top may tempt the  
parapet,  
And sudden there's the sea! No memories  
to arouse,  
No fancies to delude! Our honest civic  
house  
Of the earth be earthy too!—or graced per-  
chance with shell  
Made prize of long ago, picked haply where  
the swell  
Menaced a little once—or seaweed-branch  
that yet  
Dampens and softens, notes a freak of wind,  
a fret

Of wave: though, why on earth should sea-  
change mend or mar  
The calm contemplative householders that  
we are?  
So shall the seasons fleet, while our two  
selves abide:  
E'en past astonishment how sunrise and  
springtide  
Could tempt one forth to swim; the more if  
time appoints  
That swimming grow a task for one's  
rheumatic joints.  
Such honest civic house, behold, I constitute  
Our villa! Be but flesh and blood, and  
smile to boot!  
Enter for good and all! then fate bolt fast  
the door,  
Shut you and me inside, never to wander  
more!

CXXXII.

Only,—you do not use to apprehend attack!  
No doubt, the way I march, one idle arm,  
thrown slack  
Behind me, leaves the open hand defenceless  
at the back,  
Should an impertinent on tiptoe steal, and  
stuff  
—Whatever can it be? A letter sure enough,  
I pushed betwixt palm and glove! That  
largess of a franc?  
Perhaps unconsciously,—to better help the  
blank  
O' the nest, her tambourine, and, laying egg,  
persuade  
A family to follow, the nest-egg that I laid  
May have contained,—but just to foil sus-  
picious folk,—  
Between two silver whites a yellow double  
yolk!  
Oh, threaten no farewell! five minutes shall  
suffice  
To clear the matter up. I go, and in a  
trice  
Return; five minutes past, expect me! If  
in vain—  
Why, slip from flesh and blood, and play the  
ghost again!

## EPILOGUE.

## THE HOUSEHOLDER.

## I.

Savage I was sitting in my house, late, lone :  
 Dreary, weary with the long day's work :  
 Head of me, heart of me, stupid as a stone :  
 Tongue-tied now, now blaspheming like a  
 Turk ;  
 When, in a moment, just a knock, call, cry,  
 Half a pang and all a rapture, there again  
 were we !—  
 "What, and is it really you again ?" quoth I :  
 "I again, what else did you expect ?"  
 quoth She.

## II.

"Never mind, hie away from this old house—  
 Every crumbling brick embrowned with  
 sin and shame !  
 Quick, in its corners ere certain shapes arouse !  
 Let them—every devil of the night—lay  
 claim,  
 Make and mend, or rap and rend, for me !  
 Good-bye !  
 God be their guard from disturbance at  
 their glee,  
 Till, crash, comes down the carcass in a heap !" *quoth I :*  
 "Nay, but there's a decency required !" *quoth She.*

## III.

"Ah, but if you knew how time has dragged,  
 days, nights !  
 All the neighbour-talk with man and maid  
 —such men !  
 All the fuss and trouble of street-sounds,  
 window-sights :  
 All the worry of flapping door and echoing  
 roof ; and then,  
 All the fancies . . . Who were they had  
 leave, dared try  
 Darker arts that almost struck despair in me ?  
 If you knew but how I dwelt down here !" *quoth I :*  
 "And was I so better off up there ?"  
*quoth She.*

## IV.

"Help and get it over ! *Re-united to his wife*  
 (How draw up the paper lets the parish-  
 people know ?)  
*Lies M., or N., departed from this life,*  
*Day the this or that, month and year the*  
*so and so.*  
 What i' the way of final flourish ? Prose,  
 verse ? Try !  
*Affliction sore long time he bore, or, what is*  
*it to be ?*  
*Till, God did please to grant him ease. Do*  
*end !"* *quoth I :*  
 "I end with—Love is all and Death is  
 nought !" *quoth She.*

# RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY,

## TURF AND TOWERS.

1873.

[This poem is founded on a somewhat disagreeable story told at great length in the French newspapers at the time (1871). In the early proofs the real names of the young goldsmith and his leman appeared, but before publication imaginary names were substituted. "Turf" stands for the self-indulgent life, and "Towers" typify the life of struggle and self-mastery.]

TO

MISS THACKERAY.

### RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY

OR

### TURF AND TOWERS.

I.

AND so, here happily we meet, fair friend !  
Again once more, as if the years rolled back  
And this our meeting-place were just that  
Rome

Out in the champaign, say, o'er-rioted  
By verdure, ravage, and gay winds that war  
Against strong sunshine settled to his sleep ;  
Or on the Paris Boulevard, might it prove,  
You and I came together saunteringly,  
Bound for some shop-front in the Place Ven-  
dôme—

Gold-smithy and Golconda mine, that makes  
"The Firm-Miranda" blazed about the  
world—

Or, what if it were London, where my toe  
Trespassed upon your founce? "Small  
blame," you smile,  
Seeing the Staircase Party in the Square  
Was Small and Early, and you broke no rib.

Even as we met where we have met so oft,  
Now meet we on this unpretending beach  
Below the little village : little, ay !  
But pleasant, may my gratitude subjoin ?

Meek, hitherto un-Murrayed bathing-place,  
Best loved of sea-coast-nook-ful Normandy !  
That, just behind you, is mine own hired house:  
With right of pathway through the field in front,  
No prejudice to all its growth unsheaved  
Of emerald luzern bursting into blue.  
Be sure I keep the path that hugs the wall,  
Of mornings, as I pad from door to gate !  
Yon yellow—what if not wild-mustard  
flower?—

Of that, my naked sole makes lawful prize,  
Bruising the acrid aromatics out,  
Till, what they preface, good salt savours sting  
From, first, the sifted sands, then sands in slab,  
Smooth save for pipy wreath-work of the worm:  
(Granite and mussel-shell are ground alike  
To glittering paste,—the live worm troubles  
yet.)

Then, dry and moist, the varech<sup>1</sup> limit-line,  
Burnt cinder-black, with brown uncrumpled  
swathe

Of berried softness, sea-sworn thrice its size ;  
And, lo, the wave protrudes a lip at last,  
And flecks my foot with froth, nor tempts in

Such is Saint-Rambert, wilder very much  
Than Joyeux, that famed Joyous-Gard of yours,

<sup>1</sup> Kelp, seaweed.

Some five miles farther down; much homelier  
too—

Right for me,—right for you the fine and fair!  
Only, I could endure a transfer—wrought  
By angels famed still, through our countryside,  
For weights they fetched and carried in old  
time

When nothing like the need was—transfer,  
just

Of Joyeux church, exchanged for yonder prig,  
Our brand-new stone cream-coloured master-  
piece.

Well—and you know, and not since this one  
year,

The quiet seaside country? So do I:  
Who like it, in a manner, just because  
Nothing is prominently likeable

To vulgar eye without a soul behind,  
Which, breaking surface, brings before the ball  
Of sight, a beauty buried everywhere.

If we have souls, know how to see and use,  
One place performs, like any other place,  
The proper service every place on earth  
Was framed to furnish man with: serves alike  
To give him note that, through the place he  
sees,

A place is signified he never saw,  
But, if he lack not soul, may learn to know.  
Earth's ugliest walled and ceiled imprisonment  
May suffer, through its single rent in roof,  
Admittance of a cataract of light  
Beyond attainment through earth's palace-  
panes

Pinholed athwart their windowed filagree  
By twinklings sobered from the sun outside.  
Doubtless the High Street of our village here  
Imposes hardly as Rome's Corso could:  
And our projected race for sailing-boats  
Next Sunday, when we celebrate our Saint,  
Falls very short of that attractiveness,  
That artistry in festive spectacle,  
Paris ensures you when she welcomes back  
(When shall it be?) the Assembly from Ver-  
sailles;

While the best fashion and intelligence  
Collected at the counter of our Mayor'  
(Dry goods he deals in, grocery beside)

What time the post-bag brings the news from  
Vire,—

I fear me much, it scarce would hold its own,  
That circle, that assorted sense and wit,  
With Five o'clock Tea in a house we know.

Still, 'tis the check that gives the leap its lift.  
The nullity of cultivated souls,  
Even advantaged by their news from Vire,  
Only conduces to enforce the truth  
That, thirty paces off, this natural blue  
Broods o'er a bag of secrets, all unbroached,  
Beneath the bosom of the placid deep,  
Since first the Post Director sealed them safe;  
And formidable I perceive this fact—

Little Saint-Rambert touches the great sea.  
From London, Paris, Rome, where men are  
men,

Not mice, and mice not Mayors presumably,  
Thought scarce may leap so fast, alight so far.  
But this is a pretence, you understand,  
Disparagement in play, to parry thrust  
Of possible objector: nullity  
And ugliness, the taunt be his, not mine  
Nor yours,—I think we know the world too  
well!

Did you walk hither, jog it by the plain,  
Or jaunt it by the highway, braving bruise  
From springless and uncushioned vehicle?  
Much, was there not, in place and people  
both,

To lend an eye to? and what eye like yours—  
The learned eye is still the loving one!  
Our land: its quietude, productiveness,  
Its length and breadth of grain-crop, meadow-  
ground,  
Its orchards in the pasture, farms a-field  
And hamlets on the road-edge, nought you  
missed

Of one and all the sweet rusticities!  
From stalwart strider by the waggon-side,  
Brightening the acre with his purple blouse,  
To those dark-featured comely women-folk,  
Healthy and tall, at work, and work indeed,  
On every cottage door-step, plying brisk  
Bobbins that bob you ladies one such lace!  
Oh, you observed! and how that nimble play  
Of finger formed the sole exception, bobbed

The one disturbance to the peace of things,  
Where nobody esteems it worth his while,  
If time upon the clock-face goes asleep,  
To give the rusted hands a helpful push.  
Nobody lifts an energetic thumb  
And index to remove some dead and gone  
Notice which, posted on the barn, repeats  
For truth what two years' passage made a lie.  
Still is for sale, next June, that same château  
With all its immobilities,—were sold  
Duly next June behind the last but last ;  
And, woe's me, still placards the Emperor  
His confidence in war he means to wage,  
God aiding and the rural populace.  
No : rain and wind must rub the rags away  
And let the lazy land untroubled snore.

Ah, in good truth ? and did the drowsihead  
So suit, so soothe the learned loving eye,  
That you were minded to confer a crown,  
(Does not the poppy boast such ?)—call the  
land

Fy one slow hither-thither stretching, fast  
Subsiding-into-slumber sort of name,  
Symbolic of the place and people too,  
“*White Cotton Night-cap Country?*” Excellent !

For they do, all, dear women young and old,  
Upon the heads of them bear notably  
This badge of soul and body in repose ;  
Nor its fine thimble fits the acorn-top,  
Keeps woolly ward above that oval brown,  
Its placid feature, more than muffler makes  
A safeguard, circumvents intelligence  
In—what shall evermore be named and famed,  
If happy nomenclature aught avail,  
“*White Cotton Night-cap Country.*”

Do I hear—

Oh, better, very best of all the news—  
You mean to catch and cage the winged word,  
And make it breed and multiply at home  
Till Norman idlesse stock our England too ?  
Normandy shown minute yet magnified  
In one of those small books, the truly great,  
We never know enough, yet know so well ?  
How I foresee the cursive diamond-dints,—  
Composite pen that plays the pencil too,—

As, touch the page and up the glamour goes,  
And filimly o'er grain-crop, meadow-ground,  
O'er orchard in the pasture, farm a-field  
And hamlet on the road-edge, floats and forms  
And falls, at lazy last of all, the Cap  
That crowns the country ! we, awake outside,  
Farther than ever from the imminence  
Of what cool comfort, what close coverture  
Your magic, deftly weaving, shall surround  
The unconscious captives with. Be theirs to  
drowse  
Trammelled, and ours to watch the trammel-  
trick !  
Ours be it, as we con the book of books,  
To wonder how is winking possible !

All hail, “*White Cotton Night-cap Country,*”  
then !

And yet, as on the beach you promise book,—  
On beach, mere razor-edge 'twixt earth and  
sea,

I stand at such a distance from the world  
That 'tis the whole world which obtains  
regard,

Rather than any part, though part presumed  
A perfect little province in itself,  
When wayfare made acquaintance first there-  
with.

So standing, therefore, on this edge of things,  
What if the backward glance I gave, return  
Loaded with other spoils of vagrancy  
Than I despatched it for, till I propose  
The question—puzzled by the sudden store  
Officious fancy plumps beneath my nose—  
“Which sort of Night-cap have you glorified?”

You would be gracious to my ignorance :  
“What other Night-cap than the norma-  
one ?—

Old honest guardian of man's head and hair  
In its elastic yet continuous, soft,  
No less persisting, circumambient gripe,—  
Night's notice, life is respited from day !  
Its form and fashion vary, suiting so  
Each seasonable want of youth and age.  
In infancy, the rosy naked ball  
Of brain, and that faint golden fluff it bears,  
Are smothered from disaster,—nurses know

By what foam-fabric; but when youth succeeds,

The sterling value of the article

Discards adornment, cap is cap henceforth

Unfeathered by the futile row on row,

Manhood strains hard a sturdy stocking-stuff

O'er well-deserving head and ears: the cone

Is tassel-tipt, commendably takes pride,

Announcing workday done and wages  
pouched,

And liberty obtained to sleep, nay, snore

Unwise, he peradventure shall essay

The sweets of independency for once—

Waive its advantage on his wedding-night:

Fool, only to resume it, night the next,

And never part companionship again.

Since, with advancing years, night's solace  
soon

Intrudes upon the daybreak dubious life

Persuades it to appear the thing it is,

Half-sleep; and so, encroaching more and  
more,

It lingers long past the abstemious meal

Of morning, and, as prompt to serve, pre-  
cedes

The supper-summons, gruel grown a feast.

Finally, when the last sleep finds the eye

So tired it cannot even shut itself,

Does not a kind domestic hand unite

Friend to friend, lid from lid to part no more,

Consigned alike to that receptacle

So bleak without, so warm and white within?

"Night-caps, night's comfort of the human  
race:

Their usage may be growing obsolete,

Still, in the main, the institution stays.

And though yourself may possibly have lived,

And probably will die, undignified—

The Never-night-capped—more experienced  
folk

Laugh you back answer—What should Night-  
cap be

Save Night-cap pure and simple? Sorts of  
such?

Take cotton for the medium, cast an eye

This side to comfort, lambswool or the like,

That side to frilly cambric costliness,

And all between proves Night-cap proper."

Add

"Fiddle!" and I confess the argument.

Only, your ignoramus here again

Proceeds as tardily to recognize

Distinctions: ask him what a fiddle means,

And "Just a fiddle" seems the apt reply.

Yet, is not there, while we two pace the beach

This blessed moment, at your Kensington,

A special Fiddle-Show and rare array

Of all the sorts were ever set to cheek,

'Stablished on clavicle, sawn bow-hand-wise,

Or touched lute-fashion and forefinger-  
plucked?

I doubt not there be duly catalogued

Achievements all and some of Italy,

Guarnerius, Straduarus,<sup>1</sup>—old and new,

Augustly rude, refined to finicking,

This mammoth with his belly full of blare,

That mouse of music—inch-long silvery  
wheeze.

And here a specimen has effloresced

Into the scroll-head, there subsides supreme,

And with the tail-piece satisfies mankind.

Why should I speak of woods, grains, stains  
and streaks,

The topaz varnish or the ruby gum?

We preferably pause where tickets teach

"Over this sample would Corelli<sup>2</sup> croon,

Grieving, by minors, like the cushat-dove,

Most dulcet Giga,<sup>3</sup> dreamiest Saraband."<sup>4</sup>

"From this did Paganini comb the fierce

Electric sparks, or to tenuity

Pull forth the inmost wailing of the wire—

No cat-gut could swoon out so much of soul!"

Three hundred violin-varieties

Exposed to public view! And dare I doubt

Some future enterprise shall give the world

Quite as remarkable a Night-cap-show?

Methinks, we, arm-in-arm, that festal day,

Pace the long range of relics shined aright,

Framed, glazed, each cushioned curiosity,

And so begin to smile and to inspect:

<sup>1</sup> Famous fiddle-makers.

<sup>2</sup> A famous fiddler and composer (1653-1713).

<sup>3</sup> Jig.

<sup>4</sup> A Spanish dance.

"Pope's sickly head-sustainment, damped  
with dews

Wrung from the all-unfair fight: such a frame—  
Though doctor and the devil helped their best—  
Fought such a world that, waiving doctor's  
help,

Had the mean devil at its service too!  
Voltaire's imperial velvet! Hogarth eyed  
The thumb-nail record of some alley-phys,  
Then chucklingly clapped yonder cosiness  
On pate, and painted with true flesh and blood!  
Poor hectic Cowper's soothing sarsnet-stripe!"  
And so we profit by the catalogue,  
Somehow our smile subsiding more and more,  
Till we decline into . . . but no! shut eyes  
And hurry past the shame unconfined here,  
The hangman's toilet! If we needs must trench,  
For science' sake which craves completeness  
still,

On the sad confine, not the district's self,  
The object that shall close review may be . . .

Well, it is French, and here are we in France:  
It is historic, and we live to learn,  
And try to learn by reading story-books.  
It is an incident of 'Ninety-two,  
And, twelve months since, the Commune  
had the sway.

Therefore resolve that, after all the Whites  
Presented you, a solitary Red  
Shall pain us both, a minute and no more!  
Do not you see poor Louis pushed to front  
Of palace-window, in persuasion's name,  
A spectacle above the howling mob  
Who tasted, as it were, with tiger-smack,  
The outstart, the first spirt of blood on brow,  
The Phrygian symbol, the new crown of thorns,  
The Cap of Freedom? See the feeble mirth  
At odds with that half-purpose to be strong  
And merely patient under misery!  
And note the ejaculation, ground so hard  
Between his teeth, that only God could hear,  
As the lean pale proud insignificance  
With the sharp-featured liver-worried stare  
Out of the two grey points that did him stead  
And passed their eagle-owner to the front  
Better than his mob-elbowed undersize,—  
The Corsican lieutenant commented

"Had I but one good regiment of my own,  
How soon should volleys to the due amount  
Lay stiff upon the street-flags this *canaille*!  
As for the droll there, he that plays the  
king

And screws out smile with a Red night-cap on,  
He's done for! Somebody must take his  
place."

White Cotton Night-cap Country: excellent!  
Why not Red Cotton Night-cap Country too?

"Why not say swans are black and black-  
birds white,

Because the instances exist?" you ask.

"Enough that white, not red, predominates,  
Is normal, typical, in cleric phrase

*Quod semel, semper, et ubique.*" Here,  
Applying such a name to such a land,  
Especially you find inopportune,  
Impertinent, my scruple whether white  
Or red describes the local colour best.

"Let be" (you say), "the universe at large  
Supplied us with exceptions to the rule,  
So manifold, they bore no passing-by,—  
Little Saint-Rambert has conserved at least  
The pure tradition: white from head to heel,  
Where is a hint of the ungracious hue?  
See, we have traversed with hop, step and  
jump,

From heel to head, the main-street in a trice,  
Measured the garment (help my metaphor!)  
Not merely criticized the cap, forsooth;  
And were you pricked by that collecting-itch,  
That pruriency for writing o'er your reds  
'Rare, rarer, rarest, not rare but unique,'—  
The shelf, Saint-Rambert, of your cabinet,  
Unlabelled,—virginal, no Rahab-thread!  
For blushing token of the spy's success,—  
Would taunt with vacancy, I undertake!  
What, yonder is your best apology,  
Pretence at most approach to naughtiness,  
Impingement of the ruddy on the blank?  
This is the criminal Saint-Rambertese  
Who smuggled in tobacco, half-a-pound!  
The Octroi<sup>2</sup> found it out and fined the wretch.  
This other is the culprit who despatched

<sup>1</sup> Joshua ii. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Taxes levied at the gates of cities.



A hare, he thought a hedgehog (clods obstruct),  
 Unfurnished with Permission for the Chase!  
 As to the womankind—renounce from those  
 The hope of getting a companion-tinge,  
 First faint touch promising romantic fault!"

Enough: there stands Red Cotton Night-cap  
 shelf—

A cavern's ostentatious vacancy—  
 My contribution to the show; while yours—  
 Whites heap your row of pegs from every  
 hedge

Outside, and house inside Saint-Rambert  
 here—

We soon have come to end of. See, the  
 church

With its white steeple gives your challenge  
 point,

Perks as it were the night-cap of the town,  
 Starchedly warrants all beneath is matched  
 By all above, one snowy innocence!

You put me on my mettle. British maid  
 And British man, suppose we have it out  
 Here in the fields, decide the question so?  
 Then, British fashion, shake hands hard  
 again,

Go home together, friends the more confirmed  
 That one of us—assuredly myself—  
 Looks puffy about eye, and pink at nose?  
 Which "pink" reminds me that the arduous-  
 ness

We both acknowledge in the enterprise,  
 Claims, counts upon a large and liberal  
 Acceptance of as good as victory  
 In whatsoever just escapes defeat.  
 You must be generous, strain point, and  
 call

Victory, any the least flush of pink  
 Made prize of, labelled scarlet for the nonce—  
 Faintest pretension to be wrong and red  
 And picturesque, that varies by a splotch  
 The righteous flat of insipidity.

Quick to the quest, then—forward, the firm  
 foot!

Onward, the quarry-overtaking eye!

For, what is this, by way of march-tune,  
 makes

The musical buzz at my ear  
 By reassurance of that promise old  
*Though sins are scarlet they shall be as wool?*  
 Whence—what fantastic hope do I deduce?  
 I am no Liebig: when the dyer dyes

A texture, can the red dye prime the white?  
 And if we washed well, wrung the texture  
 hard,

Would we arrive, here, there and everywhere,  
 At a fierce ground beneath the surface meek?

I take the first chance, rub to threads what  
 rag

Shall flutter snowily in sight. For see!  
 Already these few yards upon the rise,  
 Our back to brave Saint-Rambert, how we  
 reach

The open, at a dozen steps or strides!  
 Turn round and look about, a breathing-  
 while!

There lie, outspread at equidistance, thorpes  
 And villages and towns along the coast,  
 Distinguishable, each and all alike,  
 By white persistent Night-cap, spire on spire.  
 Take the left: yonder town is—what say you  
 If I say "Londres"? Ay, the mother-mouse  
 (Reversing fable, as truth can and will)  
 Which gave our mountain of a London birth!  
 This is the Conqueror's country, bear in mind,  
 And Londres-district blooms with London-  
 pride.

Turn round: La Roche, to right, where  
 oysters thrive:

Monlieu—the lighthouse is a telegraph;  
 This, full in front, Saint-Rambert: then  
 succeeds

Villeneuve, and Pons the Young with Pons  
 the Old,

And—ere faith points to Joyeux, out of sight,  
 A little nearer—oh, La Ravissante!

There now is something like a Night-cap  
 spire,

Donned by no ordinary Notre-Dame!  
 For, one of the three safety-guards of France,  
 You front now, lady! Nothing interopects

The privilege, by crow-flight, two miles far.  
She and her sisters Lourdes and La Salette  
Are at this moment hailed the cynosure  
Of poor dear France, such waves have buffeted  
Since she eschewed infallibility  
And chose to steer by the vague compass-box.  
This same midsummer month, a week ago,  
Was not the memorable day observed  
For reinstatement of the misused Three  
In old supremacy for evermore?  
Did not the faithful flock in pilgrimage  
By railway, diligence and steamer—nay  
On foot with staff and scrip, to see the sights  
Assured them? And I say best sight was  
here:

And nothing justified the rival Two  
In their pretension to equality;  
Our folk laid out their ticket-money best,  
And wiseliest, if they walked, wore shoe  
away;

Not who went farther only to fare worse.  
For, what was seen at Lourdes and La Salette  
Except a couple of the common cures  
Such as all three can boast of, any day?  
While here it was, here and by no means there,  
That the Pope's self sent two great real gold  
crowns

As thick with jewelry as thick could stick,  
His present to the Virgin and her Babe—  
Provided for—who knows not?—by that fund,  
Count Alessandro Sforza's legacy,  
Which goes to crown some Virgin every year.  
But this year, poor Pope was in prison-house,  
And money had to go for something else;  
And therefore, though their present seemed  
the Pope's,

The faithful of our province raised the sum  
Preached and prayed out of—nowise purse  
alone.

Gentle and simple paid in kind, not cash,  
The most part: the great lady gave her brooch,  
The peasant-girl her hair-pin; 'twas the rough  
Bluff farmer mainly who,—admonished well  
By wife to care lest his new colewort-crop  
Stray sorrowfully sparse like last year's seed,—  
Lugged from reluctant pouch the fifty-franc,  
And had the Curé's hope that rain would  
cease.

And so, the sum in evidence at length,  
Next step was to obtain the donative  
By the spontaneous bounty of the Pope—  
No easy matter, since his Holiness  
Had turned a deaf ear, long and long ago,  
To much entreaty on our Bishop's part,  
Commendably we boast. "But no," quoth  
he,

"Image and image needs must take their  
turn:

Here stand a dozen as importunate."  
Well, we were patient; but the cup ran o'er  
When—who was it pressed in and took the  
prize

But our own offset, set far off indeed  
To grow by help of our especial name,  
She of the Ravissante—in Martinique!

"What?" cried our patience at the boiling-  
point,

"The daughter crowned, the mother's head  
goes bare?

Bishop of Raimbaux!"—that's our diocese—  
"Thou hast a summons to repair to Rome,  
Be efficacious at the Council there:  
Now is the time or never! Right our wrong!  
Hie thee away, thou valued Morillon,  
And have the promise, thou who hast the  
vote!"

So said, so done, so followed in due course  
(To cut the story short) this festival,  
This famous Twenty-second, seven days since:

Oh, but you heard at Joyeux! Pilgrimage;  
Concourse, procession with, to head the host,  
Cardinal Mirecourt, quenching lesser lights:  
The leafy street-length through, decked end  
to end

With August-stripping, and adorned with flags  
That would have waved right well but that it  
rained

Just this picked day, by some perversity.  
And so were placed, on Mother and on Babe;  
The pair of crowns: the Mother's, you must  
see!

Miranda, the great Paris goldsmith, made  
The marvel,—he's a neighbour: that's his  
park

Before you, tree-topped wall we walk toward

His shop it was turned out the masterpiece,  
Probably at his own expenditure ;  
Anyhow, his was the munificence  
Contributed the central and supreme  
Splendour that crowns the crown itself, The  
Stone.

Not even Paris, ransacked, could supply  
That gem : he had to forage in New-York,  
This jeweller, and country-gentleman,  
And most undoubted devotee beside !  
Worthily wived, too : since his wife it was  
Bestowed "with friendly hand"—befitting  
phrase !

The lace which trims the coronation-robe—  
Stiff wear—a mint of wealth on the brocade.  
Do go and see what I saw yesterday !  
And, for that matter, see in fancy still,  
Since . . .

There now ! Even for unthankful me,  
Who stuck to my devotions at high-tide  
That festal morning, never had a mind  
To trudge the little league and join the crowd—  
Even for me is miracle vouchsafed !  
How pointless proves the sneer at miracles !  
As if, contrariwise to all we want  
And reasonably look to find, they graced  
Merely those graced-before, grace helps no  
whit,  
Unless, made whole, they need physician still.  
I—sceptical in every inch of me—  
Did I deserve that, from the liquid name  
"Miranda,"—faceted as lovelily  
As his own gift, the gem,—a shaft should shine,  
Bear me along, another Abaris.<sup>1</sup>  
Nor let me light till, lo, the Red is reached,  
And yonder lies in luminosity !

Look, lady ! where I bade you glance but now !  
Next habitation, though two miles away,—  
No tenement for man or beast between,—  
That park and domicile, is country-seat  
Of this same good Miranda ! I accept  
The augury. Or there, or nowhere else,  
Will I establish that a Night-cap gleams  
Of visionary Red, not White for once !

<sup>1</sup> A priest of Apollo who cured diseases.

"Heaven" saith the sage "is with us, here  
inside

Each man ; " "Hell also," simplicity sub-  
joins,

By White and Red describing human flesh.

And yet as we continue, quicken pace.  
Approach the object which determines me  
Victorious or defeated, more forlorn  
My chance seems,—that is certainty at least.  
Halt midway, reconnoitre ! Either side  
The path we traverse (turn and see) stretch  
fields

Without a hedge : one level, scallop-striped !  
With bands of beet and turnip and luzern,  
Limited only by each colour's end,  
Shelves down,—we stand upon an emi-  
nence,—

To where the earth-shell scallops out the sea,  
A sweep of semicircle ; and at edge—  
Just as the milk-white incrustations stud  
At intervals some shell-extremity,  
So do the little growths attract us here,  
Towns with each name I told you : say, they  
touch

The sea, and the sea them, and all is said,  
So sleeps and sets to slumber that broad blue !  
The people are as peaceful as the place.  
This, that I call "the path" is road, highway ;  
But has there passed us by a market-cart,  
Man, woman, child, or dog to wag a tail ?  
True, I saw weeders stooping in a field ;  
But—formidably white the Cap's extent !

Round again ! Come, appearance promises !  
The boundary, the park-wall, ancient brick,  
Upholds a second wall of tree-heads high  
Which overlean its top, a solid green.

That surely ought to shut in mysteries !  
A jeweller—no unsuggestive craft !  
Trade that admits of much romance, indeed.  
For, whom but goldsmiths used old monarchs  
pledge

Regalia to, or seek a ransom from,  
Or pray to furnish dowry, at a pinch,  
According to authentic story-books ?

<sup>2</sup> Striped like a scallop-shell.

Why, such have revolutionized this land  
 With diamond-necklace-dealing ! not to speak  
 Of families turned upside-down, because  
 The gay wives went and pawned clandestinely  
 Jewels, and figured, till found out, with paste,  
 Or else redeemed them—how, is horrible !  
 Then there are those enormous criminals  
 That love their ware and cannot lose their love,  
 And murder you to get your purchase back.  
 Others go courting after such a stone,  
 Make it their mistress, marry for their wife,  
 And find out, some day, it was false the  
     while,  
 As ever wife or mistress, man too fond  
 Has named his Pilgrim, Hermit, Ace of  
     Hearts.

Beside—what style of edifice begins  
 To grow in sight at last and top the scene ?  
 That grey roof, with the range of *lucarnes*,<sup>1</sup>  
     four

I count, and that erection in the midst—  
 Clock-house, or chapel-spire, or what, above ?  
 Conventual, that, beyond manorial, sure !  
 And reason good ; for Clairvaux, such its  
     name,

Was built of old to be a Priory,  
 Dependence on that Abbey-for-the-Males  
 Our Conqueror founded in world-famous  
     Caen,

And where his body sought the sepulture  
 It was not to retain : you know the tale.  
 Such Priory was Clairvaux, prosperous  
 Hundreds of years ; but nothing lasts below,  
 And when the Red Cap pushed the Crown  
     aside,

The Priory became, like all its peers,  
 A National Domain : which, bought and sold  
 And resold, needs must change, with owner-  
     ship,

Both outside show and inside use ; at length  
 The messuage, three-and-twenty years ago,  
 Became the purchase of rewarded worth  
 Impersonate in Father—I must stoop  
 To French phrase for precision's sake, I fear—  
 Father Miranda, goldsmith-of renown :

By birth a Madrilene,<sup>2</sup> by domicile  
 And sojourning accepted French at last.  
 His energy it was which, trade transferred  
 To Paris, throve as with a golden thumb,  
 Established in the Place Vendôme. He  
     bought

Not building only, but belongings far  
 And wide, at Gonthier there, Monlieu, Ville-  
     neuve,

A plentiful estate : which, twelve years since,  
 Passed, at the good man's natural demise,  
 To Son and Heir Miranda—Clairvaux here,  
 The Paris shop, the mansion—not to say  
 Palatial residence on Quai Rousseau,  
 With money, moveables, a mine of wealth—  
 And young Léonce Miranda got it all.

Ah, but—whose might the transformation be ?  
 Were you prepared for this, now ? As we  
     talked,

We walked, we entered the half-privacy,  
 The partly-guarded precinct : passed beside  
 The little pale-off islet, trees and turf,  
 Then found us in the main ash-avenue  
 Under the blessing of its branchage-roof.  
 Till, on emergence, what affronts our gaze ?  
 Priory—Conqueror—Abbey-for-the-Males—  
 Hey, presto, pass, who conjured all away ?  
 Look through the railwork of the gate : a park  
 —Yes, but *à l'Anglaise*, as they compliment !  
 Grass like green velvet, gravel-walks like gold,  
 Bosses of shrubs, embosomings of flowers,  
 Lead you—through sprinkled trees of tiny  
     breed

Disporting, within reach of coverture,  
 By some habitual acquiescent oak  
 Or elm, that thinks, and lets the youngsters  
     laugh—

Lead, lift at last your soul that walks the air,  
 Up to the house-front, or its back perhaps—  
 Whether façade or no, one coquetry  
 Of coloured brick and carved stone ! Stucco ?  
     Well,

The daintiness is cheery, that I know,  
 And all the sportive floral framework fits  
 The lightsome purpose of the architect.

<sup>1</sup> Roof windows.

<sup>2</sup> Of Madrid.

Those *lucarnes* which I called conventual, late,  
Those are the outlets in the *mansarde*-roof;<sup>1</sup>  
And, underneath, what long light elegance  
Of windows here suggests how brave inside  
Lurk eyeballed gems they play the eyelids to!  
Festive arrangements look through such, be  
sure!

And now the tower a-top, I took for clock's  
Or bell's abode, turns out a quaint device,  
Pillared and temple-treated Belvedere—  
Pavilion safe within its railed-about  
Sublimity of area—whence what stretch  
Of sea and land, throughout the seasons'  
change,

Must greet the solitary! Or suppose  
—If what the husband likes, the wife likes  
too—

The happy pair of students cloistered high,  
Alone in April kiss when Spring arrives!  
Or no, he mounts there by himself to meet  
Winds, welcome wafts of sea-smell, first  
white bird

That flaps thus far to taste the land again,  
And all the promise of the youthful year;  
Then he descends, unbosoms straight his store  
Of blessings in the bud, and both embrace,  
Husband and wife, since earth is Paradise,  
And man at peace with God. You see it all?

Let us complete our survey, go right round  
The place: for here, it may be, we surprise  
The Priory,—these solid walls, big barns,  
Greyorchard-grounds, huge four-square stores  
for stock,

Betoken where the Church was busy once.  
Soon must we come upon the Chapel's self.  
No doubt next turn will treat us to . . . Aha,  
Again our expectation proves at fault!  
Still the bright graceful modern—not to say  
Modish adornment, meets us: *Parc Anglais*,  
Tree-sprinkle, shrub-embossment as before.  
See, the sun splits on yonder bauble world  
Of silvered glass concentring, every side,  
All the adjacent wonder, made minute  
And touched grotesque by ball-convexity!

<sup>1</sup> High French roof with rooms in it, first  
used in the Louvre. Mansard was an archi-  
tect, died 1666.

Just so, a sense that something is amiss,  
Something is out of sorts in the display,  
Affects us, past denial, everywhere.  
The right erection for the Fields, the Wood,  
(Fields—but *Elysées*, wood—but *de Boulogne*)  
Is peradventure wrong for wood and fields  
When Vire, not Paris, plays the Capital.

So may a good man have deficient taste;  
Since Son and Heir Miranda, he it was  
Who, six years now elapsed, achieved the  
work

And truly made a wilderness to smile.  
Here did their domesticity reside,  
A happy husband and as happy wife,  
Till . . . how can I in conscience longer  
keep

My little secret that the man is dead  
I, for artistic purpose, talk about  
As if he lived still? No, these two years now,  
Has he been dead. You ought to sympathize,  
Not mock the sturdy effort to redeem  
My pledge, and wring you out some tragedy  
From even such a perfect commonplace!  
Suppose I boast the death of such desert  
My tragic bit of Red? Who contravenes  
Assertion that a tragedy exists  
In any stoppage of benevolence,  
Utility, devotion above all?  
Benevolent? There never was his like:  
For poverty, he had an open hand  
. . . Or stop—I use the wrong expression  
here—

An open purse, then, ever at appeal;  
So that the unreflecting rather taxed  
Profusion than penuriousness in alms.  
One, in his day and generation, deemed  
Of use to the community? I trust  
Clairvaux thus renovated, regalized,  
Paris expounded thus to Normandy,  
Answers that question. Was the man devout?  
After a life—one mere munificence  
To Church and all things churchly, men or  
mice,—

Dying, his last bequeathment gave land, goods  
Cash, every stick and stiver, to the Church,  
And notably to that church yonder, that  
Beloved of his soul, *La Ravissante*—

Wherefrom, the latest of his gifts, the Stone  
 Gratefully bore me as on arrow-flash  
 To Clairvaux, as I told you.

"Ay, to find

Your Red desiderated article,  
 Where every scratch and scrape provokes my  
 White

To all the more superb a prominence!  
 Why, 'tis the story served up fresh again—  
 How it befell the restive prophet old  
 Who came and tried to curse, but blessed the  
 land.

Come, your last chance! he disinherited  
 Children: he made his widow mourn too much  
 By this endowment of the other Bride—  
 Nor understood that gold and jewelry  
 Adorn her in a figure, not a fact.  
 You make that White, I want, so very white,  
 'Tis I say now—some trace of Red should be  
 Somewhere in this Miranda-sanctitude!"

Not here, at all events, sweet mocking friend!  
 For he was childless; and what heirs he had  
 Were an uncertain sort of Cousinry  
 Scarce claiming kindred so as to withhold  
 The donor's purpose though fantastical:  
 Heirs, for that matter, wanting no increase  
 Of wealth, since rich already as himself;  
 Heirs that had taken trouble off his hands,  
 Bought that productive goldsmith-business he,  
 With abnegation wise as rare, renounced  
 Precisely at a time of life when youth,  
 Nigh on departure, bids mid-age discard  
 Life's other loves and likings in a pack,  
 To keep, in lucre, comfort worth them all.  
 This Cousinry are they who boast the shop  
 Of "Firm-Miranda, London and New-York."  
 Cousins are an unconscionable kind;  
 But these—pretension surely on their part  
 To share inheritance were too absurd!

"Remains then, he dealt wrongly by his wife,  
 Despoiled her somehow by such testament?"  
 Farther than ever from the mark, fair friend!  
 The man's love for his wife exceeded bounds  
 Rather than failed the limit. 'Twas to live  
 Hers and hers only, to abolish earth

Outside—since Paris holds the pick of earth—  
 He turned his back, shut eyes, stopped cars  
 to all

Delicious Paris tempts her children with,  
 And fled away to this far solitude—  
 She peopling solitude sufficiently!  
 She, partner in each heavenward flight sublime,  
 Was, with each condescension to the ground,  
 Duly associate also: hand in hand,  
 . . . Or side by side, I say by preference—  
 On every good work sidelingly they went.  
 Hers was the instigation—none but she  
 Willed that, if death should summon first her  
 lord,

Though she, sad relict, must drag residue  
 Of days encumbered by this load of wealth—  
 (Submitted to with something of a grace  
 So long as her surviving vigilance  
 Might worthily administer, convert  
 Wealth to God's glory and the good of man,  
 Give, as in life, so now in death, effect  
 To cherished purpose)—yet she begged and  
 prayed

That, when no longer she could supervise  
 The House, it should become a Hospital:  
 For the support whereof, lands, goods and cash  
 Alike will go, in happy guardianship,  
 To yonder church, La Ravissante: who debt  
 To God and man undoubtedly will pay.

"Not of the world, your heroine!"

Do you know

I saw her yesterday—set eyes upon  
 The veritable personage, no dream?  
 I in the morning strolled this way, as oft,  
 And stood at entry of the avenue.  
 When, out from that first garden-gate, we  
 gazed

Upon and through, a small procession swept—  
 Madame Miranda with attendants five.  
 First, of herself: she wore a soft and white  
 Engaging dress, with velvet stripes and squares  
 Severely black, yet scarce discouraging:  
 Fresh Paris-manufacture! (Vire's would do?  
 I doubt it, but confess my ignorance.)  
 Her figure? somewhat small and darlinglike.  
 Her face? well, singularly colourless,

For first thing : which scarce suits a blonde,  
you know.

Pretty you would not call her : though perhaps  
Attaining to the ends of prettiness

And somewhat more, suppose enough of soul.

Then she is forty full : you cannot judge

What beauty was her portion at eighteen,

The age she married at. So, colourless

I stick to, and if featureless I add,

Your notion grows completer : for, although

I noticed that her nose was aquiline,

The whole effect amounts with me to—blank !

I never saw what I could less describe.

The eyes, for instance, unforgettable

Which ought to be, are out of mind as sight.

Yet is there not conceivably a face,

A set of wax-like features, blank at first,

Which, as you bendingly grow warm above,

Begins to take impressment from your breath ?

Which, as your will itself were plastic here

Nor needed exercise of handicraft,

From formless moulds itself to correspond

With all you think and feel and are—in fine

Grows a new revelation of yourself,

Who know now for the first time what you  
want ?

Here has been something that could wait  
awhile,

Learn your requirement, nor take shape before,

But, by adopting it, make palpable

Your right to an importance of your own,

Companions somehow were so slow to see !

—Far delicater solace to conceit

Than should some absolute and final face,

Fit representative of soul inside,

Summon you to surrender—in no way

Your breath's impressment, nor, in stranger's  
guise,

Yourself—or why of force to challenge you ?

Why should your soul's reflection rule your  
soul ?

("You" means not you, nor me, nor anyone

Framed, for a reason I shall keep suppressed,

To rather want a master than a slave :

The slavish still aspires to dominate !)

So, all I say is, that the face, to me

One blur of blank, might flash significance

To who had seen his soul reflected there

By that symmetric silvery phantom-like

Figure, with other five processional.

The first, a black-dressed matron—maybe,  
maid—

Mature, and dragonish of aspect,—marched ;

Then four came tripping in a joyous flock,

Two giant goats and two prodigious sheep

Pure as the arctic fox that suits the snow

Tripped, trotted, turned the march to men's  
ment,

But ambled at their mistress' heel—for why ?

A rod of guidance marked the *Châtelaine*,

And ever and anon would sceptre wave,

And silky subject leave meandering.

Nay, one great naked sheep-face stopped to  
ask

Who was the stranger, snuffed inquisitive

My hand that made acquaintance with its nose,

Examined why the hand—of man at least—

Patted so lightly, warmly, so like life !

Are they such silly natures after all ?

And thus accompanied, the paled-off space,

Isleted shrubs and verdure, gained the group ;

Till, as I gave a furtive glance, and saw

Her back-hair was a block of solid gold,

The gate shut out my harmless question—Hair

So young and yellow, crowning sanctity,

And claiming solitude . . . can hair be false ?

"Shut in the hair and with it your last hope

Yellow might on inspection pass for Red !—

Red, Red, where is the tinge of promised Red

In this old tale of town and country life,

This rise and progress of a family ?

First comes the bustling man of enterprise,

The fortune-founding father, rightly rough,

As who must grub and grab, play pioneer.

Then, with a light and airy step, succeeds

The son, surveys the fabric of his sire

And enters home, unsmirched from top to toe.

Polish and education qualify

Their fortunate possessor to confine

His occupancy to the first-floor suite

Rather than keep exploring needlessly

Where dwelt his sire content with cellarage :

Industry bustles underneath, no doubt,

And supervisors should not sit too close.

Next, rooms built, there's the furniture to buy,  
 And what adornment like a worthy wife?  
 In comes she like some foreign cabinet,  
 Purchased indeed, but purifying quick  
 What space receives it from all traffic-taint.  
 She tells of other habits, palace-life;  
 Royalty may have pried into those depths  
 Of sandal-wooded drawer, and set a-creak  
 That pygmy portal pranked with lazuli.  
 More fit by far the ignoble we replace  
 By objects suited to such visitant  
 Than that we desecrate her dignity  
 By neighbourhood of vulgar table, chair,  
 Which haply helped old age to smoke and  
 doze.

The end is, an exchange of city-stir  
 And too intrusive burghess-fellowship,  
 For rural isolated elegance,  
 Careless simplicity, how preferable!  
 There one may fairly throw behind one's back  
 The used-up worn-out Past, we want away,  
 And make a fresh beginning of stale life.  
 'In just the place'—does anyone object?—  
 'Where aboriginal gentility  
 Will scout the upstart, twit him with each  
 trick

Of townish trade-mark that stamps word and  
 deed,  
 And most of all resent that here town-dross  
 He daubs with money-colour to deceive!' <sup>1</sup>  
 Rashly objected! Is there not the Church  
 To intercede and bring benefic truce  
 At outset? She it is shall equalize  
 The labourers i' the vineyard, last as first.  
 Pay court to her, she stops impertinence.  
 'Duke, once your sires crusaded it, we know:  
 Our friend the newcomer observes, no less,  
 Your chapel, rich with their emblazonry,  
 Wants roofing—might he but supply the  
 means!

Marquise, you gave the honour of your name,  
 Titular patronage, abundant will  
 To what should be an Orphan Institute:  
 Gave everything but funds, in brief; and these,  
 Our friend, the lady newly resident,  
 Proposes to contribute, by your leave!'  
 Brothers and sisters lie they in thy lap,  
 Thou none-excluding, all-collecting Church!

Sure, one has half a foot i' the hierarchy  
 Of birth, when 'Nay, my dear,' laughs out  
 the Duke,

'I'm the crown's cushion-carrier, but the  
 crown—

Who gave its central glory, I or you?'

When Marquise jokes 'My quest, forsooth?  
 Each do it

I scrape together goes for Peter-pence  
 To purvey bread and water in his bonds  
 For Peter's self imprisoned—Lord, how long?  
 Yours, yours alone the bounty, dear my dame,  
 You plumped the purse which, poured into the  
 plate,

Made the Archbishop open brows so broad!  
 And if you really mean to give that length  
 Of lovely lace to edge the robe!'. . . Ah,  
 friends,

Gem better serves so than by calling crowd  
 Round shop-front to admire the million's-  
 worth!

Lace gets more homage than from *lorgnette*-  
 stare,

And comment coarse to match, (should one  
 display

One's robe a trifle o'er the *baignoire*-edge,)<sup>1</sup>

'Well may she line her slippers with the like,  
 If minded so! their shop it was produced  
 That wonderful *parure*,<sup>2</sup> the other day,  
 Whereof the Baron said it beggared him.'  
 And so the paired Mirandas built their house,  
 Enjoyed their fortune, sighed for family,  
 Found friends would serve their purpose quite  
 as well,

And come, at need, from Paris—anyhow,  
 With evident alacrity, from Vire—  
 Endeavour at the chase, at least succeed  
 In smoking, eating, drinking, laughing, and  
 Preferring country, oh so much to town!  
 Thus lived the husband; though his wife  
 would sigh

In confidence, when Countesses were kind,  
 'Cut off from Paris and society!'

White, White, I once more round you in the  
 ears!

Though you have marked it, in a corner, yours

<sup>1</sup> Box in theatre.

<sup>2</sup> Set of jewels.



Henceforth,—Red-lettered 'Failure' very plain,

I shall acknowledge, on the snowy hem  
Of ordinary Night-cap! Come, enough!  
We have gone round its cotton vastitude,  
Or half-round, for the end's consistent still,  
A *cul-de-sac* with stoppage at the sea.  
Here we return upon our steps. One look  
May bid good morning—properly good  
night—

To civic bliss, Miranda and his mate!  
Are we to rise and go?"

No, sit and stay!

Now comes my moment, with the thrilling  
throw

Of curtain from each side a shrouded case.  
Don't the rings shriek an ominous "Ha! ha!  
So you take Human Nature upon trust?"

List but with like trust to an incident  
Which speedily shall make quite Red enough  
Burn out of yonder spotless napery!  
Sit on the little mound here, whence you seize  
The whole of the gay front sun-satisfied,  
One laugh of colour and embellishment!  
Because it was there,—past those laurustines,<sup>1</sup>  
On that smooth gravel-sweep 'twixt flowers  
and sward,—

There tragic death befell; and not one grace  
Outspread before you but is registered  
In that sinistrous coil these last two years  
Were occupied in winding smooth again.

"True?" Well, at least it was concluded so,  
Sworn to be truth, allowed by Law as such  
(With my concurrence, if it matter here)  
A month ago: at Vire they tried the case.

# II.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, then, . . . but  
stay!

Permit me a preliminary word,  
And, after, all shall go so straight to end!

Have you, the travelled lady, found yourself  
Inside a ruin, fane or bath or cirque,

<sup>1</sup> Laurels.

Renowned in story, dear through youthful  
dream?

If not,—imagination serves as well.  
Try fancy-land, go back a thousand years,  
Or forward, half the number, and confront  
Some work of art gnawn hollow by Time's  
tooth,—

Iiellenic temple, Roman theatre,  
Gothic cathedral, Gallic Tuileries,  
But ruined, one and whichsoe'er you like.  
Obstructions choke what still remains intact,  
Yet proffer change that's picturesque in turn;  
Since little life begins where great life ends,  
And vegetation soon amalgamates,  
Smooths novel shape from out the shapeless  
old,

Till broken column, battered cornice block  
The centre with a bulk half weeds and  
flowers,

Half relics you devoutly recognize.  
Devoutly recognizing,—hark, a voice  
Not to be disregarded! "Man worked here  
Once on a time; here needs again to work;  
Ruins obstruct, which man must remedy."  
Would you demur "Let Time fulfil his task,  
And, till the scythe-sweep find no obstacle,  
Let man be patient"?

The reply were prompt:

"Glisteningly beneath the May-night moon,  
Herbage and floral coverture bedeck  
Yon splintered mass amidst the solitude:  
Wolves occupy the background, or some  
snake  
Glides by at distance; picturesque enough!  
Therefore, preserve it? Nay, pour daylight  
in,—

The mound proves swarming with humanity.  
There never was a thorough solitude,  
Now you look nearer: mortal busy life  
First of all brought the crumbings down on  
pate,  
Which trip man's foot still, plague his passage  
much,

And prove—what seems to you so picturesque  
To him is . . . but experiment yourself  
On how conducive to a happy home  
Will be the circumstance your bed for base

Boasts tessellated pavement,—equally  
 Affected by the scorpion for his nest,—  
 While what o'erroofs bed is an architrave,  
 Marble, and not unlikely to crush man  
 To mummy, should its venerable prop,  
 Some fig-tree-stump, play traitor underneath.  
 Be wise! Decide! For conservation's sake,  
 Clear the arena forthwith! lest the tread  
 Of too-much-tried impatience trample out  
 Solid and unsubstantial to one blank  
 Mud-mixture, picturesque to nobody,—  
 And, task done, quarrel with the parts intact  
 Whence came the filtered fine dust, whence  
 the crash

Bides but its time to follow. Quick conclude  
 Removal, time effects so tardily,  
 Of what is plain obstruction; rubbish cleared,  
 Let partial-ruin stand while ruin may,  
 And serve world's use, since use is manifold.  
 Repair wreck, stanchion<sup>1</sup> wall to heart's  
 content,  
 But never think of renovation pure  
 And simple, which involves creation too.  
 Transform and welcome! Yon tall tower  
 may help  
 (Though built to be a belfry and nought else)  
 Some Father Secchi<sup>2</sup> to tick Venus off  
 In transit: never bring there bell again,  
 To damage him aloft, brain us below,  
 When new vibrations bury both in brick!"

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, furnishing  
 The application at his cost, poor soul!  
 Was instanced how,—because the world lay  
 strewn  
 With ravage of opinions in his path,  
 And neither he, nor any friendly wit,  
 Knew and could teach him which was firm,  
 which frail,  
 In his adventure to walk straight through life  
 The partial-ruin,—in such enterprise,  
 He struggled into rubbish, struggled on,  
 And stumbled out again observably.  
 "Yon buttress still can back me up," he  
 judged:  
 And at a touch down came both he and it.

<sup>1</sup> Prop.

<sup>2</sup> The famous astronomer.

"A certain statue, I was warned against,  
 Now, by good fortune, lies well under foot,  
 And cannot tempt to folly any more:"  
 So, lifting eye, aloft since safety lay,  
 What did he light on? the Idalian shape,  
 The undeposed, erectly Victrix still!  
 "These steps ascend the labyrinthine stair  
 Whence, darkling and on all-fours, out I  
 stand  
 Exalt and safe, and bid low earth adieu—  
 For so instructs 'Advice to who would  
 climb:'"  
 And all at once the climbing landed him  
 —Where, is my story.

Take its moral first.  
 Do you advise a climber? Have respect  
 To the poor head, with more or less of  
 brains  
 To spill, should breakage follow your advice!  
 Head-break to him will be heart-break to you  
 For having preached "Disturb no ruins here!  
 Are not they crumbling of their own accord?  
 Meantime, let poets, painters keep a prize!  
 Beside, a sage pedestrian picks his way."  
 A sage pedestrian—such as you and I!  
 What if there trip, in merry carelessness,  
 And come to grief, a weak and foolish child?  
 Be cautious how you counsel climbing, then!

Are you adventurous and climb yourself?  
 Plant the foot warily, accept a staff,  
 Stamp only where you probe the standing  
 point,  
 Move forward, well assured that move you  
 may:  
 Where you mistrust advance, stop short, there  
 stick!  
 This makes advancing slow and difficult?  
 Hear what comes of the endeavour of brisk  
 youth  
 To foot it fast and easy! Keep this same  
 Notion of outside mound and inside mash,  
 Towers yet intact round turfy rottenness,  
 Symbolic partial-ravage,—keep in mind!  
 Here fortune placed his feet who first of all  
 Found no incumbance, till head found . . .  
 But hear!

This son and heir then of the jeweller,  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda, at his birth,  
 Mixed the Castilian passionate blind blood  
 With answerable gush, his mother's gift,  
 Of spirit, French and critical and cold.  
 Such mixture makes a battle in the brain,  
 Ending as faith or doubt gets uppermost;  
 Then will has way a moment, but no more:  
 So nicely-balanced are the adverse strengths,  
 That victory entails reverse next time.  
 The tactics of the two are different  
 And equalize the odds: for blood comes first,  
 Surrounding life with undisputed faith.  
 But presently, a new antagonist,  
 By scarce-suspected passage in the dark,  
 Steals spirit, fingers at each crevice found  
 Athwart faith's stronghold, fronts the as-  
 tonished man:  
 "Such pains to keep me far, yet here stand I,  
 Your doubt inside the faith-defence of you!"

With faith it was friends bulwarked him  
 about  
 From infancy to boyhood; so, by youth,  
 He stood impenetrably circuted,  
 Heaven-high and low as hell: what lacked  
 he thus,  
 Guarded against aggression, storm or sap?  
 What foe would dare approach? Historic  
 Doubt?  
 Ay, were there some half-knowledge to attack!  
 Batter doubt's best, sheer ignorance will beat.  
 Acumen metaphysic?—drills its way  
 Through what, I wonder! A thick feather-  
 bed  
 Of thoughtlessness, no operating tool—  
 Framed to transpierce the flint-stone—fumbles  
 at,  
 With chance of finding an impediment!  
 This Ravissante, now: when he saw the  
 church  
 For the first time, and to his dying-day,  
 His firm belief was that the name fell fit  
 From the Delivering Virgin, mched and  
 known;  
 As if there wanted records to attest  
 The appellation was a pleasantry,  
 A pious rendering of Rare Visante,

The proper name which erst our province  
 bore,  
 He would have told you that Saint Aldabert  
 Founded the church, (Heaven early favoured  
 France,)  
 About the second century from Christ;  
 Though the true man was Bishop of Raim-  
 baux,  
 Eleventh in succession, Eldobert,  
 Who flourished after some six hundred years.  
 He it was brought the image "from afar,"  
 (Made out of stone the place produces still)  
 'Infantine Art divinely artless," (Art  
 In the decrepitude of Decadence,)  
 And set it up a-working miracles  
 Until the Northmen's fury laid it low,  
 Not long, however: an egregious sheep,  
 Zealous with scratching hoof and routing horn,  
 Unearthed the image in good Mailleville's  
 time,  
 Count of the country. "If the tale be false,  
 Why stands it carved above the portal plain?"  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda used to ask.  
 To Londres went the prize in solemn pomp,  
 But, liking old shode and loathing new,  
 Was borne—this time, by angels—back again.  
 And, reinaugurated, miracle  
 Succeeded miracle, a lengthy list,  
 Until indeed the culmination came—  
 Archbishop Chaumont prayed a prayer and  
 vowed  
 A vow—gained prayer and paid vow  
 properly—  
 For the conversion of Prince Vertgalant.  
 These facts, sucked in along with mother's-  
 milk,  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda would dispute  
 As soon as that his hands were flesh and bone,  
 Milk-nourished two-and-twenty years before.  
 So fortified by blind Castilian blood,  
 What say you to the chances of French cold  
 Critical spirit, should Voltaire besiege  
 "Alp, Apennine, and fortified redoubt"?  
 Ay, would such spirit please to play faith's  
 game  
 Faith's way, attack where faith defends so  
 well!  
 But then it shifts, tries other strategy.

Coldness grows warmth, the critical becomes  
Unquestioning acceptance. "Share and share  
Alike in facts, to truth add other truth!  
Why with old truth needs new truth dis-  
agree?"

Thus doubt was found invading faith, this  
time,

By help of not the spirit but the flesh :  
Fat Rabelais chuckled, where faith lay in wait  
For lean Voltaire's grimace—French, either  
foe.

Accordingly, while round about our friend  
Ran faith without a break which learned eye  
Could find at two-and-twenty years of age,  
The twenty-two-years-old frank footstep soon  
Assured itself there spread a standing-space  
Flowery and comfortable, nowise rock  
Nor pebble-pavement roughed for champion's  
tread

Who scorns discomfort, pacing at his post.  
Tall, long-limbed, shoulder right and shoulder  
left,

And 'twixt *acromia*<sup>1</sup> such a latitude,  
Black heaps of hair on head, and blacker bush  
O'er-rioting chin, cheek and throat and chest,—  
His brown meridional temperament  
Told him—or rather pricked into his sense  
Plainer than language—"Pleasant station  
here!

Youth, strength, and lustihood can sleep on  
turf

Yet pace the stony platform afterward :  
First signal of a foe and up they start !  
Saint Eldobert, at all such vanity,  
Nay—sinfulness, had shaken head austere.  
Had he? But did Prince Vertgalant? And yet,  
After how long a slumber, of what sort,  
Was it, he stretched octogenary joints  
And, nigh on Day-of-Judgment trumpet-blast,  
Jumped up and manned wall, brisk as any  
bee?"

Nor Rabelais nor Voltaire, but Sganarelle,<sup>2</sup>  
You comprehend, was pushing through the  
chink !

That stager in the saint's correct costume,  
Who ever has his speech in readiness  
For thickhead juvenility at fault :  
"Go pace yon platform and play sentinel!  
You won't? The worse! but still a worse  
might hap.

Stay then, provided that you keep in sight  
The battlement, one bold leap lands you by !  
Resolve not desperately 'Wall or turf,  
Choose this, choose that, but no alternative !'  
No ! Earth left once were left for good and  
all :

'With Heaven you may accommodate your-  
self.'

Saint Eldobert—I much approve his mode ;  
With sinner Vertgalant I sympathize ;  
But histrionic Sganarelle, who prompts  
While pulling back, refuses yet concedes,—  
Whether he preach in chair, or print in book,  
Or whisper due sustainment to weak flesh,  
Counting his sham beads threaded on a lie—  
Surely, one should bid pack that mountebank !  
Surely, he must have momentary fits  
Of self-sufficient stage-forgetfulness,  
Escapings of the actor-lassitude  
When he allows the grace to show the grin,  
Which ought to let even thickheads recognize  
(Through all the busy and benefic part,—  
Bridge-building, or rock-riving, or good clean  
Transport of church and congregation both  
From this to that place with no harm at all)  
The Devil, that old stager, at his trick  
Of general utility, who leads  
Downward, perhaps, but fiddles all the way !

Therefore, no sooner does our candidate  
For saintship spotlessly emerge soul-cleansed  
From First Communion to mount guard at  
post,

Paris-proc<sup>3</sup>, top to toe, than up there starts  
The Spirit of the Boulevard—you know Who—  
With jocund "So, a structure fixed as fate,  
Faith's tower joins on to tower, no ring more  
round,  
Full fifty years at distance, too, from youth !  
Once reach that precinct and there fight your  
best,

<sup>1</sup> Shoulder-blades.

<sup>2</sup> See Molière.

As looking back you wonder what has come  
Of daisy-dappled turf you danced across !  
Few flowers that played with youth shall  
pester age,

However age esteem the courtesy ;  
And Eldobert was something past his prime,  
Stocked Caen with churches ere he tried hand  
here.

Saint-Sauveur, Notre-Dame, Saint-Pierre,  
Saint-Jean

Attest his handiwork commenced betimes.  
He probably would preach that turf is mud.  
Suppose it mud, through mud one picks a  
way,

And when, clay-clogged, the struggler steps  
to stone,

He uncakes shoe, arrives in manlier guise  
Than carried pick-a-back by Eldobert  
Big-baby-fashion, lest his leathers leak !  
All that parade about Prince Vertgalant  
Amounts to—your Castilian helps enough—  
*Inveni ovem quæ perierat :*

But ask the pretty votive statue-thing  
What the lost sheep's meantime amusements  
were

Till the Archbishop found him ! That stays  
blank :

They washed the fleece well and forgot the rest.  
Make haste, since time flies, to determine,  
though !”

Thus opportunely took up parable,—  
Admonishing Miranda just emerged  
Pure from The Ravissante and Paris-proof,—  
Saint Sganarelle: then slipped aside, changed  
mask,

And made re-entry as a gentleman  
Born of the Boulevard, with another speech  
I spare you.

So, the year or two revolved,  
And ever the young man was dutiful  
To altar and to hearth: had confidence  
In the whole Ravissantish history.  
Voltaire? Who ought to know so much of  
him,—

Old sciolist, whom only boys think sage,—  
As one whose father's house upon the Quai

Neighboured the very house where that  
Voltaire

Died mad and raving, not without a burst  
Of squibs and crackers too significant?  
Father and mother hailed their best of sons,  
Type of obedience, domesticity,  
Never such an example inside doors !

Outside, as well not keep too close a watch;  
Youth must be left to some discretion there.  
And what discretion proved, I find deposed  
At Vire, confirmed by his own words: to wit,  
How, with the sprightliness of twenty-five,  
Five—and not twenty, for he gave their names  
With laudable precision—were the few

Appointed by him unto mistress-ship;  
While, meritoriously the whole long week  
A votary of commerce only, week  
Ended, “at shut of shop on Saturday,  
Do I, as is my wont, get drunk,” he writes  
In airy record to a confidant.

“Bragging and lies!” replied the apologist:  
“And do I lose by that?” laughed Somebody  
At the Court-edge a-tiptoe, mid the crowd,  
In his own clothes, a-listening to men's Law.

Thus while, prospectively a combatant,  
The volunteer bent brows, clenched jaws,  
and fierce  
Whistled the march-tune “Warrior to the  
wall !”

Something like flowery laughter round his feet  
Tangled him of a sudden with “Sleep first!”  
And fairly flat upon the turf sprawled he  
And let strange creatures make his mouth  
their home.

Anyhow, 'tis the nature of the soul  
To seek a show of durability,  
Nor, changing, plainly be the slave of change.  
Outside the turf, the towers: but, round the  
turf,

A tent may rise, a temporary shroud,  
Mock-faith to suit a mimic dwelling-place:  
Tent which, while screening jollity inside  
From the external circuit—evermore  
A menace to wholags when he should march—  
Yet stands a-tremble, ready to collapse  
At touch of foot: turf is acknowledged grass,  
And grass, though pillowy, held contemptible

Compared with solid rock, the rampired ridge.  
To truth a pretty homage thus we pay  
By testifying—what we dally with,  
Falsehood, (which, never fear we take for  
truth !)

We may enjoy, but then—how we despise !

Accordingly, on weighty business bound,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda stooped to play,  
But, with experience, soon reduced the game  
To principles, and thenceforth played by rule:  
Rule, dignifying sport as sport, proclaimed  
No less that sport was sport and nothing more.  
He understood the worth of womankind,—  
To furnish man—provisionally—sport:  
Sport transitive—such earth's amusements are:  
But, seeing that amusements pall by use,  
Variety therein is requisite.

And since the serious work of life were  
wronged

Should we bestow importance on our play,  
It follows, in such womankind-pursuit,  
Cheating is lawful chase. We have to spend  
An hour—they want a lifetime thrown away:  
We seek to tickle sense—they ask for soul,  
As if soul had no higher ends to serve !  
A stag-hunt gives the royal creature law  
Bat-fowling is all fair with birds at roost,  
The lantern and the clapnet suit the hedge.  
Which must explain why, bent on Boulevard  
game,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda decently  
Was prudent in his pleasure—passed himself  
Off on the fragile fair about his path  
As the gay devil rich in mere good looks,  
Youth, hope—what matter though the purse  
be void ?

"If I were only young Miranda, now,  
Instead of a poor clerly drudge at desk  
All day, poor artist vainly bruising brush  
On palette, poor musician scraping gut  
With horsehair teased that no harmonics come!  
Then would I love with liberality,  
Then would I pay !—who now shall be repaid,  
Repaid alike for present pain and past,  
If Mademoiselle permit the contre-danse,  
Sing 'Gay in garret youth at twenty lives,'  
And afterward accept a lemonade !"

Such sweet facilities of intercourse  
Afford the Winter-Garden and Mabilie !  
"Oh, I unite"—runs on the confidence,  
Poor fellow, that was read in open Court,  
—"Amusement with discretion : never fear  
My *escapades* cost more than market-price !  
No durably-attached Miranda-dupe,  
Sucked dry of substance by two clinging  
lips,  
Promising marriage, and performing it !  
Trust me, I know the world, and know myself,  
And know where duty takes me—in good  
time !"

Thus fortified and realistic, then,  
At all points thus against illusion armed,  
He wisely did New Year inaugurate  
By playing truant to the favoured five :  
And sat installed at "The Varieties,"—  
Playhouse appropriately named,—to note  
(Prying amid the turf that's flowery there)  
What primrose, firstling of the year, might  
push  
The snows aside to deck his button-hole—  
Unnoticed by that outline sad, severe,  
(Though fifty good long years removed from  
youth)  
That tower and tower,—our image, bear in  
mind !

No sooner was he seated than, behold,  
Out burst a polyanthus ! He was 'ware  
Of a young woman nighed in neighbourhood ;  
And ere one moment flitted, fast was he  
Found captive to the beauty evermore,  
For life, for death, for heaven, for hell, her  
own.

Philosophy, bewail thy fate ! Adieu,  
Youth realistic and illusion-proof !  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda,—hero late  
Who "understood the worth of womankind,"  
"Who found therein — provisionally —  
sport,"—

Felt, in the fitting of a moment, fool  
Was he, and folly all that seemed so wise,  
And the best proof of wisdom's birth would be  
That he made all endeavour, body, soul,  
By any means, at any sacrifice

Of labour, wealth, repute, and (—well, the time

For choosing between heaven on earth, and heaven

In heaven, was not at hand immediately—)

Made all endeavour, without loss incurred  
Of one least minute, to obtain her love.

“Sport transitive?” “Variety required?”

“In loving were a lifetime thrown away?”

How singularly may young men mistake!

The fault must be repaired with energy.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda ate her up

With eye-devouring; when the unconscious fair

Passed from the close-packed hall, he pressed behind;

She mounted vehicle, he did the same,

Coach stopped, and cab fast followed, at one door—

Good house in unexceptionable street.

Out stepped the lady,—never think, alone!

A mother was not wanting to the maid,

Or, may be, wife, or widow, might one say?

Out stepped and properly down flung himself

Monsieur Léonce Miranda at her feet—

And never left them after, so to speak,

For twenty years, till his last hour of life,

When he released them, as precipitate.

Love proffered and accepted then and there!

Such potency in word and look has truth.

Truth I say, truth I mean: this love was true,  
And the rest happened by due consequence.

By which we are to learn that there exists

A falsish false, for truth's inside the same,

And truth that's only half true, falsish truth.

The better for both parties! folk may taunt

That half your rock-built wall is rubble-heap:

Answer them, half their flowery turf is stones!

Our friend had hitherto been decking coat

If not with stones, with weeds that stones besit,

With dandelions—“primrose-buds,” smirked he;

This proved a polyanthus on his breast,

Prize-lawful or prize-lawless, flower the same.

So with his other instance of mistake:

Was Christianity the Ravissante?

And what a flower of flowers he chanced on now!

To primrose, polyanthus I prefer

As illustration, from the fancy-fact

That out of simple came the composite

By culture: that the florist bedded thick

His primrose-root in ruddle,<sup>1</sup> bullock's blood,

Ochre and devils'-dung, for aught I know,

Until the pale and pure grew fiery-fine,

Ruby and topaz, rightly named anew.

This lady was no product of the plain;

Social manure had raised a rarity.

Clara de Millefleurs (note the happy name)

Blazed in the full-blown glory of her Spring.

Peerlessly perfect, form and face: for both—

“Imagine what, at seventeen, may have proved

Miss Pages, the actress: Pages herself, my dear!”

Noble she was, the name denotes: and rich?

“The apartment in this Coliseum Street,

Furnished, my dear, with such an elegance,

Testifies wealth, my dear, sufficiently!

What quality, what style and title, eh?

Well now, waive nonsense, you and I are boys

No longer: somewhere must a screw be slack!

Don't fancy, Duchesses descend at door

From carriage-step to stranger prostrate stretched,

And bid him take heart, and deliver mind,  
March in and make himself at ease forthwith,—

However broad his chest and black his beard,

And comely his belongings,—all through love

Protested in a world of ways save one

Hinting at marriage!”—marriage which yet means

Only the obvious method, easiest help

To satisfaction of love's first demand,

That love endure eternally: “my dear,

Somewhere or other must a screw be slack!”

Truth is the proper policy: from truth—

Whate'er the force wherewith you fling your speech,—

<sup>1</sup> Red earth or chalk.

Be sure that speech will lift you, by rebound,  
Somewhere above the lowliness of a lie !  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda heard too true  
A tale—perhaps I may subjoin, too trite !  
As the meek martyr takes her statued stand  
Above our pity, claims our worship just  
Because of what she puts in evidence,  
Signal of suffering, badge of torture borne  
In days gone by, shame then but glory now,  
Barb, in the breast, turned aureole for the  
front !  
So, half timidity, composure half,  
Clara de Millefleurs told her martyrdom.

Of poor though noble parentage, deprived  
Too early of a father's guardianship,  
What wonder if the prodigality  
Of nature in the girl, whose mental gifts  
Matched her external dowry, form and face—  
If these suggested a too prompt resource  
To the resourceless mother? "Try the Stage  
And so escape starvation ! Prejudice  
Defames Mimetic Art: be yours to prove  
That gold and dross may meet and never mix,  
Purity plunge in pitch yet soil no plume !"

All was prepared in London—(you conceive  
The natural shrinking from publicity  
In Paris, where the name excites remark)  
London was ready for the grand *début* ;  
When some perverse ill-fortune, incident  
To art mimetic, some malicious thrust  
Of jealousy who sidles 'twixt the scenes  
Or pops up sudden from the prompter's  
hole,—

Somehow the brilliant bubble bursts in suds.  
Want followed: in a foreign land, the pair !  
O hurry over the catastrophe—  
Mother too sorely tempted, daughter tried  
Scarcely so much as circumvented, say !  
Caged unsuspecting artless innocence !

Monsieur Léonce Miranda tell the rest !—  
The rather that he told it in a style  
To puzzle Court Guide students, much more  
me.

"Brief, she became the favourite of Lord N.,  
An aged but illustrious Duke; thereby

Breaking the heart of his competitor  
The Prince of O. Behold her palaced straight  
In splendour, clothed in diamonds" (phrase  
how fit !),

"Giving tone to the City by the Thames !  
Lord N., the aged but illustrious Duke,  
Was even on the point of wedding her,  
Giving his name to her" (why not to us ?)  
"But that her better angel interposed.  
She fled from such a fate to Paris back,  
A fortnight since: conceive Lord N.'s de-  
spair !

Duke as he is, there's no invading France.  
He must restrict pursuit to postal plague  
Of writing letters daily, duly read  
As darily she hands them to myself,  
The privileged supplanter, who therewith  
Light a cigar and see abundant blue"—  
(Either of heaven or else Havanna-smoke.)  
"Think! she, who helped herself to diamonds  
late,

In passion of disinterestedness  
Now—will accept no tribute of my love  
Beyond a paltry ring, three Louis'-worth !  
Little she knows I have the rummaging  
Of old Papa's shop in the Place Vendôme !"  
So wrote entrancedly to confidant  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda. Surely now,  
If Heaven, that sees all, understands no less,  
It finds temptation pardonable here,  
It mitigates the promised punishment,  
It recognizes that to tarry just  
An April hour amid such dainty turf  
Means no rebellion against task imposed  
Of journey to the distant wall one day ?

Monsieur Léonce Miranda puts the case !  
Love, he is purposed to renounce, abjure ;  
But meanwhile, is the case a common one ?  
Is it the vulgar sin, none hates as he ?  
Which question, put directly to "his dear"  
(His brother—I will tell you in a trice)  
Was doubtless meant, by due meandering,  
To reach, to fall not unobserved before  
The auditory cavern 'neath the cope  
Of Her, the placable, the Ravissante.  
But here's the drawback, that the images smiles,  
Smiles on, smiles ever, says to supplicant  
"Ay, ay, ay"—like some kindly weathercock



Which, stuck fast at Set Fair, Favonian  
Breeze,<sup>1</sup>

Still warrants you from rain, though Auster's  
lead

Bring down the sky above your cloakless mirth.  
Had he proposed this question to, nor "dear"  
Nor Ravissante, but prompt to the Police.  
The Commissary of his Quarter, now—  
There had been shaggy eyebrows elevate  
With twinkling apprehension in each orb  
Beneath, and when the sudden shut of mouth  
Relaxed,—lip pressing lip, lest out should  
plump

The pride of knowledge in too frank a flow,—  
Then, fact on fact forthcoming, dose were dealt  
Of truth remedial in sufficiency  
To save a chicken threatened with the pip,  
Head-staggers and a tumble from its perch.

Alack, it was the lady's self that made  
The revelation, after certain days  
—Nor so unwisely! As the haschisch-man  
Prepares a novice to receive his drug,  
Adroitly hides the soil with sudden spread  
Of carpet ere he seats his customer :  
Then shows him how to smoke himself about  
With Paradise ; and only when, at puff  
Of pipe, the Houri dances round the brain  
Of dreamer, does he judge no need is now  
For circumspection and punctiliousness ;  
He may resume the serviceable scrap  
That made the votary unaware of muck.  
Just thus the lady, when her brewage—love—  
Was well a-fume about the novice-brain,  
Saw she might boldly pluck from underneath  
Her lover the preliminary lie.

Clara de Millefleurs, of the noble race,  
Was Lucie Steiner, child to Dominique  
And Magdalen Commercy ; born at Sierck,  
About the bottom of the Social Couch.  
The father having come and gone again,  
The mother and the daughter found their way  
To Paris, and professed mode-merchandize,  
Were milliners, we English roughlier say ;  
And soon a fellow-lodger in the house,

Monsieur Ulysse Muhlhausen, young and  
smart,

Tailor by trade, perceived his housemate's  
youth,

Smartness, and beauty over and above.  
Courtship was brief, and marriage followed  
quick,

And quicklier—impecuniosity.  
The young pair quitted Paris to reside  
At London : which repaid the compliment  
But scurvily, since not a whit the more  
Trade prospered by the Thames than by the  
Seine.

Failing all other, as a last resource,  
"He would have trafficked in his wife,"—  
she said.

If for that 'cause they quarrelled, 'twas, I fear,  
Rather from reclamation of her rights  
To wifely independence, than as wronged  
Otherwise by the course of life proposed :  
Since, on escape to Paris back again  
From horror and the husband,—ill-exchanged  
For safe maternal home recovered thus,—  
I find her domiciled and dominant  
In that apartment, Coliseum Street,  
Where all the splendid magic met and mazed  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's venturous eye.  
Only, the same was furnished at the cost  
Of someone notable in days long since,  
Carlino Centofanti : he it was  
Found entertaining unawares—if not  
An angel, yet a youth in search of one.  
Why this revelation after reticence?  
Wherefore, beginning "Millefleurs," end at  
all

Steiner, Muhlhausen, and the ugly rest ?  
Because the unsocial purse-comptrolling  
wight,

Carlino Centofanti,—made aware  
By misadventure that his bounty, crumbs  
From table, comforted a visitant,—  
Took churlish leave, and left, too, debts to  
pay.

Loaded with debts, the lady needs must bring  
Her soul to bear assistance from a friend  
Beside that paltry ring, three Louis'-worth ;  
And therefore might the little circumstance  
That Monsieur Léonce had the rummaging

<sup>1</sup> West wind.

Of old Papa's shop in the Place Vendôme  
Pass, perhaps, not so unobservably.

Frail shadow of a woman in the flesh,  
These very eyes of mine saw yesterday,  
Would I re-tell this story of your woes,  
Would I have heart to do you detriment  
By pinning all this shame and sorrow plain  
To that poor *chignon*,—staying with me still,  
Though form and face have well-nigh faded  
now,—

But that men read it, rough in brutal print,  
As two years since some functionary's voice  
Rattled all this—and more by very much—  
Into the ear of vulgar Court and crowd?  
Whence, by reverberation, rumblings grew  
To what had proved a week-long roar in  
France,

Had not the dreadful cannonry drowned all.  
Was, now, the answer of your advocate  
More than just this? "The shame fell long  
ago,

The sorrow keeps increasing: God forbid  
We judge man by the faults of youth in age!"  
Permit me the expression of a hope  
Your youth proceeded like your avenue,  
Stepping by bush, and tree, and taller tree,  
Until, columnar, at the house they end.  
So might your creeping youth columnar rise  
And reach, by year and year, symmetrical,  
To where all shade stops short, shade's service done.

Bushes on either side, and boughs above,  
Darken, deform the path else sun would  
streak;

And, cornered half-way somewhere, I suspect  
Stagnation and a horse-pond: hurry past!  
For here's the house, the happy half-and-half  
Existence—such as stands for happiness  
True and entire, howe'er the squeamish talk!  
Twenty years long, you may have loved this  
man;

He must have loved you; that's a pleasant life,  
Whatever was your right to lead the same.  
The white domestic pigeon pairs secure,  
Nay, does mere duty by bestowing egg  
In authorized compartment, warm and safe,  
Boarding about, and gilded spire above,

Hoisted on pole, to dogs' and cats' despair!  
But I have spied a veriest trap of twigs  
On tree-top, every straw a thievery,  
Where the wild dove—despite the fowler's  
snare,

The sportsman's shot, the urchin's stone,—  
crooned gay,

And solely gave her heart to what she hatched,  
Nor minded a malignant world below.

Throw first stone forsooth? 'Tis mere assault  
Of playful sugarplum against your cheek,  
Which, if it makes cheek tingle, wipes off  
rouge!

You, my worst woman? Ah, that touches  
pride,

Puts on his mettle the exhibitor  
Of Night-caps, if you taunt him "This, no  
doubt,—

Now we have got to Female-garniture,—  
Crowns your collection, Reddest of the row!"  
O unimaginative ignorance  
Of what dye's depth keeps best apart from  
worst

In womankind!—how heaven's own pure  
may seem

To blush aurorally beside such blanched  
Divineness as the women-wreaths named  
White:

While hell, eruptive and fuliginous,  
Sickens to very pallor as I point  
Her place to a Red clout called woman too!  
Hail, heads that ever had such glory once  
Touch you a moment, like God's cloven  
tongues

Of fire! your lambent aureoles lost may leave  
You marked yet, dear beyond true diadems:  
And hold, each foot, nor spurn, to man's  
disgrace,

What other twist of fetid rag may fall!  
Let slink into the sewer the cupping-cloth!

Lucie, much solaced, I re-finger you,  
The medium article; if ruddy-marked  
With iron-mould, your cambric,—clean at  
least

From poison-speck of rot and purulence.  
Lucie Muhlhausen said—"Such thing am I:  
Love me, or love me not!" Miranda said

"I do love more than ever, most for this."  
 The revelation of the very truth  
 Proved the concluding necessary shake  
 Which bids the tardy mixture crystallize  
 Or else stay ever liquid : shoot up shaft,  
 Durably diamond, or evaporate—  
 Sluggish solution through a minute's slip.  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda took his soul  
 In both his hands, as if it were a vase,  
 To see what came of the convulsion there,  
 And found, amid subsidence, love new-born  
 So sparkingly resplendent, old was new.  
 "Whatever be my lady's present, past,  
 Or future, this is certain of my soul,  
 I love her : in despite of all I know,  
 Defiance of the much I have to fear,  
 I venture happiness on what I hope,  
 And love her from this day for evermore :  
 No prejudice to old profound respect  
 For certain Powers ! I trust they bear in  
 mind

A most peculiar case, and straighten out  
 What's crooked there, before we close ac-  
 counts.

Renounce the world for them—some day I  
 will :

Meantime, to me let her become the world ! "

Thus mutely might our friend soliloquize  
 Over the tradesmen's bills, his Clara's gift—  
 In the apartment, Coliseum Street,  
 Carlino Centofanti's legacy,  
 Provided rent and taxes were discharged—  
 In face of Steiner now, De Millefleurs once,  
 The tailor's wife and runaway confessed.

On such a lady if election light,  
 (According to a social prejudice)  
 If henceforth "all the world" she constitute  
 For any lover,—needs must he renounce  
 Our world in ordinary, walked about  
 By couples loving as its laws prescribe,—  
 Renunciation sometimes difficult.  
 But, in this instance, time and place and  
 thing

Combined to simplify experiment,  
 And make Miranda, in the current phrase,  
 Master the situation passably.

For first facility, his brother died—  
 Who was, I should have told you, confidant,  
 Adviser, referee and substitute,  
 All from a distance : but I knew how soon  
 This younger brother, lost in Portugal,  
 Had to depart and leave our friend at large.  
 Cut off abruptly from companionship  
 With brother-soul of bulk about as big,  
 (Obvious recipient—by intelligence  
 And sympathy, poor little pair of souls—  
 Of much affection and some foolishness)  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda, meant to lean  
 By nature, needs must shift the leaning-place  
 To his love's bosom from his brother's neck,  
 Or fall flat unrelieved of freight sublime.

Next died the lord of the Aladdin's cave,  
 Master o' the mint and keeper of the keys  
 Of chests chokeful with gold and silver  
 changed

By Art to forms where wealth forgot itself,  
 And caskets where reposed each pullet-egg  
 Of diamond, slipping flame from fifty slants.  
 In short, the father of the family  
 Took his departure also from our scene,  
 Leaving a fat succession to his heir  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda,—"fortunate  
 If ever man was, in a father's death,"  
 (So commented the world,—not he, too kind,  
 Could that be, rather than scarce kind  
 enough)

Indisputably fortunate so far,  
 That little of incumbrance in his path,  
 Which money kicks aside, would lie there  
 long.

And finally, a rough but wholesome shock,  
 An accident which comes to kill or cure,  
 A jerk which mends a dislocated joint !  
 Such happy chance, at cost of twinge, no  
 doubt,  
 Into the socket back again put truth,  
 And stopped the limb from longer dragging  
 lie.

For love suggested "Better shamle on,  
 And bear your lameness with what grace you  
 may !"  
 And but for this rude wholesome accident,

Continuance of disguise and subterfuge,  
Retention of first falsehood as to name  
And nature in the lady, might have proved  
Too necessary for abandonment.  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda probably  
Had else been loath to cast the mask aside,  
So politic, so self-preservative,  
Therefore so pardonable—though so wrong!  
For see the bugbear in the background!  
Breathe

But ugly name, and wind is sure to waft  
The husband news of the wife's whereabouts:  
From where he lies perdue in London town,  
Forth steps the needy tailor on the stage,  
Deity-like from dusk machine of fog,  
And claims his consort, or his consort's worth  
In rubies which her price is far above.  
Hard to propitiate, harder to oppose,—  
Who but the man's self came to banish fear,  
A pleasant apparition, such as shocks  
A moment, tells a tale, then goes for good!

Monsieur Ulysse Muhlhausen proved no less  
Nor more than "Gustave," lodging opposite  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's diamond-cave  
And ruby-mine, and lacking little thence  
Save that its gnome would keep the captive  
safe,

Never return his Clara to his arms.  
For why? He was become the man in vogue,  
The indispensable to who went clothed  
Nor cared encounter Paris-fashion's blame,—  
Such miracle could London absence work.  
Rolling in riches—so translate "the vogue"—  
Rather his object was to keep off claw  
Should griffin scent the gold, should wife lay  
claim

To lawful portion at a future day,  
Than tempt his partner from her private  
spoils.  
Best forage each for each, nor coupled hunt!

Pursuantly, one morning,—knock at door  
With knuckle, dry authoritative cough,  
And easy stamp of foot, broke startlingly  
On household slumber, Coliseum Street:  
"Admittance in the name of Law!" In  
marched.

The Commissary and subordinate.  
One glance sufficed them. "A marital pair:  
We certify, and bid good morning, sir!  
Madame, a thousand pardons!" Whereupon  
Monsieur Ulysse Muhlhausen, otherwise  
Called "Gustave" for conveniency of trade,  
Deposing in due form complaint of wrong,  
Made his demand of remedy—divorce  
From bed, board, share of name, and part in  
goods.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda owned his fault,  
Protested his pure ignorance, from first  
To last, of rights infringed in "Gustave's"  
case:

Submitted him to judgment. Law decreed  
"Body and goods be henceforth separate!"  
And thereupon each party took its way,  
This right, this left, rejoicing, to abide  
Estranged yet amicable, opposites  
In life as in respective dwelling-place.  
Still does one read on his establishment  
Huge-lettered "Gustave,"—gold out-glitter-  
ing  
"Miranda, goldsmith," just across the street—  
"A first-rate hand at riding-habits"—say  
The instructed—"special cut of chamber-  
robes."

Thus by a rude in seeming—rightlier judged  
Beneficent surprise, publicity  
Stopped further fear and trembling, and what  
tale  
Cowardice thinks a covert: one bold splash  
Into the mid-shame, and the shiver ends,  
Though cramp and drowning may begin  
perhaps.

To cite just one more point which crowned  
success:

Madame, Miranda's mother, most of all  
An obstacle to his projected life  
In licence, as a daughter of the Church,  
Duteous, exemplary, severe by right—  
Moreover one most thoroughly beloved  
Without a rival till the other sort  
Possessed her son,—first storm of anger spent,  
She seemed, though grumblingly and grudg-  
ingly,

To let be what needs must be, acquiesce.

"With Heaven—accommodation possible!"

Saint Sganarelle had preached with such effect,

She saw now mitigating circumstance.

"The erring one was most unfortunate,

No question: but worse Magdalens repent.

Were Clara free, did only Law allow,

What fitter choice in marriage could have  
made

Léonce or anybody?" 'Tis alleged

And evidenced, I find, by advocate

"Never did she consider such a tie

As baleful, spring to snap whate'er the cost."

And when the couple were in safety once

At Clairvaux, motherly, considerate,

She shrank not from advice. "Since safe  
you be,

Safely abide! for winter, I know well,

Is troublesome in a cold country-house.

I recommend the south room, that we styled,

Your sire and I, the winter-chamber."

Chance

Or purpose,—who can read the mystery?—

Combined, I say, to bid "Entrench yourself,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, on this turf,

About this flower, so firmly that, as tent

Rises on every side around you both,

The question shall become,—Which arrogates

Stability, this tent or those far towers?

May not the temporary structure suit

The stable circuit, co-exist in peace?—

Always until the proper time, no fear!

"Lay flat your tent!" is easier said than done."

So, with the best of auspices, betook

Themselves Léonce Miranda and his bride—

Provisionary—to their Clairvaux house,

Never to leave it—till the proper time.

I told you what was Clairvaux-Priory

Ere the improper time: an old demesne

With memories,—relic half, and ruin whole,—

The very place, then, to repair the wits

Worn out with Paris-traffic, when its lord,

Miranda's father, took his month of ease

Purchased by industry. What contrast here!

Repose, and solitude, and healthy ways.

That ticking at the back of head, he took

For motion of an inmate, stopped at once,

Proved nothing but the pavement's rattle left

Behind at Paris: here was holiday.

Welcome the quaint succeeding to the spruce,

The large and lumbrous and—might he  
breathe

In whisper to his own ear—dignified

And gentry-fashioned old-style haunts of  
sleep!

Palatial gloomy chambers for parade,

And passage-lengths of lost significance,

Never constructed as receptacle,

At his odd hours, for him their actual lord

By dint of diamond-dealing, goldsmithry.

Therefore Miranda's father chopped and  
changed

Nor roof-tile nor yet floor-brick, undismayed

By rains a-top or rats at bottom there.

Such contrast is so piquant for a month!

But now arrived quite other occupants

Whose cry was "Permanency,—life and death

Here, here, not elsewhere, change is all we  
dread!"

Their dwelling-place must be adapted, then,

To inmates, no mere truants from the town,

No temporary sojourners, forsooth,

At Clairvaux: change it into Paradise!

Fair friend,—who listen and let talk, alas!—

You would, in even such a state of things,

Pronounce,—or am I wrong?—for bidding  
stay

The old-world inconvenience, fresh as found.

All folk of individuality

Prefer to be reminded now and then,

Though at the cost of vulgar cosiness,

That the shell-outside only harbours man

The vital and progressive, meant to build,

When build he may, with quite a difference,

Some time, in that far land we dream about,

Where every man is his own architect.

But then the couple here in question, each

At one in project for a happy life,

Were by no acceptance of the word

So individual that they must aspire

To architecture all-appropriate

And, therefore, in this world impossible:

They needed house to suit the circumstance,  
Proprietors, not tenants for a term.  
Despite a certain marking, here and there,  
Of fleecy black or white distinguishment,  
These vulgar sheep wore the flock's uniform.  
*They* love the country, *they* renounce the town?

They gave a kick, as our Italians say,  
To Paris ere it turned and kicked themselves !  
Acquaintances might prove too hard to seek,  
Or the reverse of hard to find, perchance,  
Since Monsieur Gustave's apparition there.  
And let me call remark upon the list  
Of notabilities invoked, in Court  
At Vire, to witness, by their phrases culled  
From correspondence, what was the esteem  
Of those we pay respect to, for "the pair  
Whereof they knew the inner life," 'tis said.  
Three, and three only, answered the appeal.  
First, Monsieur Vaillant, music-publisher,  
"Begs Madame will accept civilities."  
Next, Alexandre Dumas,—sire, not son,—  
"Sends compliments to Madame and to you."  
And last—but now prepare for England's  
voice !

I will not mar nor make—here's word for word—

"A rich proprietor of Paris, he  
To whom belonged that beauteous *Bagatelle*  
Close to the wood of Boulogne, Hertford  
hight,

Assures of homages and compliments  
Affectionate"—not now Miranda but  
"Madame Muhlhausen." (Was this friend,  
the Duke

Redoubtable in rivalry before?)  
Such was the evidence when evidence  
Was wanted, then if ever, to the worth  
Whereat acquaintances in Paris prized  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's household charm.  
No wonder, then, his impulse was to live,  
In Norman solitude, the Paris life :  
Surround himself with Art transported thence,  
And nature like those famed Elysian Fields :  
Then, warm up the right colour out of both,  
By Boulevard friendships tempted to come  
taste

How Paris lived again in little there.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda practised Art.  
Do let a man for once live as man likes !  
Politics? Spend your life, to spare the  
world's :

Improve each unit by some particle  
Of joy the more, deteriorate the orb  
Entire, your own : poor profit, dismal loss !  
Write books, paint pictures, or make music  
—since

Your nature leans to such life-exercise !  
Ay, but such exercise begins too soon,  
Concludes too late, demands life whole and  
sole

Artistry being battle with the age  
It lives in ! Half life,—silence, while you  
learn

What has been done ; the other half,—  
attempt

At speech, amid world's wail of wonder-  
ment—

"Here's something done was never done  
before !"

To be the very breath that moves the age  
Means not to have breath drive you bubble-  
like

Before it—but yourself to blow : that's strain ;  
Strain's worry through the life-time, till  
there's peace ;

We know where peace expects the artist-soul.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda knew as much.  
Therefore in Art he nowise cared to be  
Creative ; but creation, that had birth  
In storminess long years before was born  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda,—Art, enjoyed  
Like fleshly objects of the chase that tempt  
In cookery, not in capture—these might feast  
The dilettante, furnish tavern-fare  
Open to all with purses open too.

To sit free and take tribute *seigneur*-like—  
Now, not too lavish of acknowledgment,  
Now, self-indulgently profuse of pay,  
Always Art's *seigneur*, not Art's serving-man  
Whate'er the style and title and degree,—  
That is the quiet life and easy death  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda would approve  
Wholly—provided (back I go again  
To the first simile) that while glasses clink,

And viands steam, and banqueting laughs  
 high,  
 All that's outside the temporary tent,  
 The dim grim outline of the circuit-wall,  
 Forgets to menace "Soon or late will drop  
 Pavilion, soon or late you needs must march,  
 And laggards will be sorry they were slack!  
 Always—unless excuse sound plausible!"

Monsieur Léonce Miranda knew as much:  
 Whence his determination just to paint  
 So creditably as might help the eye  
 To comprehend how painter's eye grew dim  
 Ere it produced L'Ingegno's<sup>1</sup> piece of work—  
 So to become musician that his ear  
 Should judge, by its own tickling and turmoil,  
 Who made the Solemn Mass might well die  
 deaf—

So cultivate a literary knack  
 That, by experience how it wiles the time,  
 He might imagine how a poet, rapt  
 In rhyming wholly, grew so poor at last  
 By carelessness about his banker's-book,  
 That the Sieur Boileau (to provoke our smile)  
 Began abruptly,—when he paid devoir  
 To Louis Quatorze as he dined in state,—  
 "Sire, send a drop of broth to Pierre Corneille  
 Now dying and in want of sustenance!"  
 —I say, these half-hour playings at life's toil,  
 Diversified by billiards, riding, sport—  
 With now and then a visitor—Dumas,  
 Hertford—to check no aspiration's flight—  
 While Clara, like a diamond in the dark,  
 Should extract shining from what else were  
 shade,

And multiply chance rays a million-fold,—  
 How could he doubt that all offence outside,—  
 Wrong to the towers, which, pillowed on the  
 turf,  
 He thus shut eyes to,—were as good as gone?

So, down went Clairvaux-Priory to dust,  
 And up there rose, in lieu, yon structure gay  
 Above the Norman ghosts: and where the  
 stretch  
 Of barren country girdled house about,

<sup>1</sup> Genius.

Behold the Park, the English preference!  
 Thus made undoubtedly a desert smile  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda.

Ay, but she?

One should not so merge soul in soul, you  
 think?

And I think: only, let us wait, nor want  
 Two things at once—her turn will come in  
 time.

A cork-float danced upon the tide, we saw,  
 This morning, blinding-bright with briny  
 dews:

There was no disengaging soaked from sound,  
 Earth-product from the sister-element.  
 But when we turn, the tide will turn, I think.  
 And bare on beach will lie exposed the buoy:  
 A very proper time to try, with foot  
 And even finger, which was buoying wave,  
 Which merely buoyant substance,—power to  
 lift,

And power to be sent skyward passively.  
 Meanwhile, no separation of the pair!

### III.

And so slept pleasantly away five years  
 Of Paradisiac dream; till, as there flit  
 Premonitory symptoms, pricks of pain,  
 Because the dreamer has to start awake  
 And find disease dwelt active all the while  
 In head or stomach through his night-long  
 sleep,—  
 So happened here disturbance to content.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda's last of cares,  
 Ere he composed himself, had been to make  
 Provision that, while sleeping safe he lay,  
 Somebody else should, dragon-like, let fall  
 Never a lid, coiled round the apple-stem,  
 But watch the precious fruitage. Somebody  
 Kept shop, in short, played Paris-substitute.  
 Himself, shrewd, well-trained, early-exer-  
 cised,

Could take in, at an eye-glance, luck or loss—  
 Know commerce thrive, though lazily uplift  
 On elbow merely: leave his bed, forsooth?  
 Such active service was the substitute's,

But one October morning, at first drop  
Of appled gold, first summons to be grave  
Because rough Autumn's play turns earnest  
now,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda was required  
In Paris to take counsel, face to face,  
With Madame-mother; and be rated, too,  
Roundly at certain items of expense  
Whereat the government provisional,  
The Paris substitute and shopkeeper,  
Shook head, and talked of funds inadequate:  
Oh, in the long run,—not if remedy  
Occurred betimes! Else,—tap the generous  
bole

Too near the quick,—it withers to the root—  
Leafy, prolific, golden apple-tree,  
“Miranda,” sturdy in the Place Vendôme!

“What is this reckless life you lead?” began  
Her greeting she whom most he feared and  
loved,

Madame Miranda. “Luxury, extravagance  
Sardanapalus’ self might emulate,—  
Did your good father’s money go for this?  
Where are the fruits of education, where  
The morals which at first distinguished you,  
The faith which promised to adorn your age?  
And why such wastefulness outbreaking now,  
When heretofore you loved economy?  
Explain this pulling-down and building-up  
Poor Clairvaux, which your father bought  
because

Clairvaux he found it, and so left to you,  
Not a gilt-gingerbread big baby-house!  
True, we could somehow shake head and  
shut eye

To what was past prevention on our part—  
This reprehensible illicit bond:  
We, in a manner, winking, watched consort  
Our modest well-conducted pious son  
With Dalilah: we thought the smoking flax  
Would smoulder soon away and end in snuff.  
Is spark to strengthen, prove consuming fire?  
No lawful family calls Clairvaux ‘home’—  
Why play that fool of Scripture whom the  
voice

Admonished ‘Whose to-night shall be those  
things

Provided for thy morning jollity?  
To take one specimen of pure caprice  
Out of the heap conspicuous in the plan,—  
Puzzle of change, I call it,—titled big  
‘Clairvaux Restored:’ what means this Bel-  
vedere?

This Tower, stuck like a fool’s-cap on the  
roof—

Do you intend to soar to heaven from thence?  
Tower, truly! Better had you planted turf—  
More fitly would you dig yourself a hole  
Beneath it for the final journey’s help!  
O we poor parents—could we prophesy!  
Léonce was found affectionate enough  
To man, to woman, child, bird, beast,  
alike;

But all affection, all one fire of heart  
Flaming toward Madame-mother. Had she  
posed

The question plainly at the outset “Choose!  
Cut clean in half your all-the-world of love,  
The mother and the mistress: then resolve,  
Take me or take her, throw away the one!”—  
He might have made the choice and marred  
my tale.

But, much I apprehend, the problem put  
Was “Keep both halves, yet do no detriment  
To either! Prize each opposite in turn!”  
Hence, while he prized at worth the Clair-  
vaux-life

With all its tolerated naughtiness,  
He, visiting in fancy Quai Rousseau,  
Saw, cornered in the cosiest nook of all  
That range of rooms through number Thirty-  
three,

The lady-mother bent o’er her *bleuque*;  
While Monsieur Curé This, and Sister That—  
Superior of no matter what good House—  
Did duty for Duke Herford and Dumas,  
Nay—at his mother’s age—for Clara’s self.  
At Quai Rousseau, things comfortable thus,  
Why should poor Clairvaux prove so trouble-  
some?

She played at cards, he built a Belvedere.  
But here’s the difference: she had reached  
the Towers

And there took pastime: he was still on  
Turf—



Though fully minded that, when once he  
marched,  
No sportive fancy should distract him more.

In brief, the man was angry with himself,  
With her, with all the world and much beside:  
And so the unseemly words were interchanged  
Which crystallize what else evaporates,  
And make mere misty petulance grow hard  
And sharp inside each softness, heart and  
soul.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda flung at last  
Out of doors, fever-flushed: and there the  
Seine

Rolled at his feet, obsequious remedy  
For fever, in a cold Autumnal flow.  
"Go and be rid of memory in a bath!"  
Craftily whispered Who besets the ear  
On such occasions.

Done as soon as dreamed.

Back shivers poor Léonce to bed—where else?  
And there he lies a month 'twixt life and  
death,

Raving. "Remorse of conscience!" friends  
opine.

"Sirs, it may partly prove so," represents  
Beaumont—(the family physician, he  
Whom last year's Commune murdered, do  
you mind?)

Beaumont reports "There is some active  
cause,

More than mere pungency of quarrel past,—  
Cause that keeps adding other food to fire.  
I hear the words and know the signs, I say!  
Dear Madame, you have read the Book of  
Saints,

How Antony was tempted? As for me,  
Poor heathen, 'tis by pictures I am taught.  
I say then, I see standing here,—between  
Me and my patient, and that crucifix  
You very properly would interpose,—  
A certain woman-shape, one white appeal  
'Will you leave me, then, me, me, me for  
her?'

Since cold Seine could not quench this flame,  
since flare  
Of fever does not redden it away,—

Be rational, indulgent, mute—should chance  
Come to the rescue—Providence, I mean—  
The while I blister and phlebotomize!"

Well, somehow rescued by whatever power,  
At month's end, back again conveyed himself  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, worn to rags,  
Nay, tinder: stuff irreparably spoiled,  
Though kindly hand should stitch and patch  
its best.

Clairvaux in Autumn is restorative.  
A friend stitched on, patched ever. All the  
same,

Clairvaux looked greyer than a month ago.  
Unglossed was shrubbery, unglorified  
Each copse, so wealthy once; the garden-  
plots,

The orchard-walks showed dearth and dreariness.

The sea lay out at distance crammed by cloud  
Into a leaden wedge; and sorrowful  
Sulked field and pasture with persistent rain.  
Nobody came so far from Paris now:  
Friends did their duty by an invalid  
Whose convalescence claimed *entière* repose.  
Only a single ministrant was staunch  
At quiet reparation of the staff—  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, worn to rags:  
But she was Clara and the world beside.

Another month, the year packed up his plagues  
And sullenly departed, pedlar-like,  
As apprehensive old-world ware might show  
To disadvantage when the new-comer,  
Merchant of novelties, young 'Sixty-eight,  
With brand-new bargains, whistled o'er the  
lea.

Things brightened somewhat o'er the Christ-  
mas hearth,  
As Clara plied assiduously her task.

"Words are but words and wind. Why let  
the wind

Sing in your ear, bite, sounding, to your brain?  
Old folk and young folk, still at odds, of course!  
Age quarrels because spring puts forth a leaf  
While winter has a mind that boughs stay bare;  
Or rather—worse than quarrel—age describes

Propriety in preaching life to death.

'Enjoy nor youth, nor Clairvaux, nor poor me?'

Dear Madame, you enjoy your age, 'tis thought!

Your number Thirty-three on Quai Rousseau  
Cost fifty times the price of Clairvaux, tipped  
Even with our prodigious Belvedere;

You entertain the Curé,—we, Dumas:

We play charades, while you prefer *bésique*:

Do lead your own life and let ours alone!

Cross Old Year shall have done his worst,  
my friend!

Here comes gay New Year with a gift, no doubt.

Look up and let in light that longs to shine—  
One flash of light, and where will darkness  
hide?

Your cold makes me too cold, love! Keep  
me warm!"

Whereat Léonce Miranda raised his head  
From his two white thin hands, and forced a  
smile,

And spoke: "I do look up, and see your light  
Above me! Let New Year contribute  
warmth—

I shall refuse no fuel that may blaze."

Nor did he. Three days after, just a spark  
From Paris, answered by a snap at Caen  
Or whither reached the telegraphic wire:

"Quickly to Paris! On arrival, learn  
Why you are wanted!" Curt and critical!

Off starts Léonce, one fear from head to foot;  
Caen, Rouen, Paris, as the railway helps;  
Then come the Quai and Number Thirty-  
three.

"What is the matter, concierge?"—a gri-  
mace!

He mounts the staircase, makes for the main  
seat

Of dreadful mystery which draws him there—  
Bursts in upon a bedroom known too well—  
There lies all left now of the mother once.  
Tapeis define the stretch of rigid white,  
Nor want there ghastly velvets of the grave.  
A blackness sits on either side at watch,

Sisters, good souls but frightful all the same,  
Silent: a priest is spokesman for his corpse.

"Dead, through Léonce Miranda! stricken  
down

Without a minute's warning, yesterday!  
What did she say to you, and you to her,  
Two months ago? This is the consequence!  
The doctors have their name for the disease;  
I, you, and God say—heart-break, nothing  
more!"

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, like a stone  
Fell at the bedfoot and found respite so,  
While the priest went to tell the company.  
What follows you are free to disbelieve.

It may be true or false that this good priest  
Had taken his instructions,—who shall  
blame?—

From quite another quarter than, perchance,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda might suppose  
Would offer solace in such pressing need.  
All he remembered of his kith and kin  
Was they were worthily his substitutes  
In commerce, did their work and drew their  
pay.

But *they* remembered, in addition, this—  
They fairly might expect inheritance,  
As nearest kin, called Family by law  
And gospel both. Now, since Miranda's life  
Showed nothing like abatement of distaste  
For conjugality, but preference  
Continued and confirmed of that smooth  
chain

Which slips and leaves no knot behind, no  
heir—

Presumption was, the man, become mature.  
Would at a calculable day discard  
His old and outworn . . . what we blush  
to name,

And make society the just amends;  
Scarce by a new attachment—Heaven forbid!  
Still less by lawful marriage: that's reserved  
For those who make a proper choice at  
first—

Not try both courses and would grasp in age  
The very treasure youth preferred to spurn.  
No! putting decently such thought aside,  
The penitent must rather give his powers  
To such a reparation of the past

As, edifying kindred, makes them rich.  
Now, how would it enrich prospectively  
The Cousins, if he lavished such expense  
On Clairvaux?—pretty as a toy, but then  
As toy, so much productive and no more !  
If all the outcome of the goldsmith's shop  
Went to gild Clairvaux, where remain the  
funds

For Cousinry to spread out lap and take?  
This must be thought of and provided for.  
I give it you as mere conjecture, mind !  
To help explain the wholesome unannounced  
Intelligence, the shock that startled guilt,  
The scenic show, much yellow, black and  
white

By taper-shine, the nuns—portentous pair,  
And, more than all, the priest's admonish-  
ment—

“No flattery of self ! You murdered her !  
The grey lips, silent now, reprove by mine.  
You wasted all your living, rioted  
In harlotry—she warned and I repeat !  
No warning had she, for she needed none :  
If this should be the last yourself receive ?”  
Done for the best, no doubt, though  
clumsily,—

Such, and so startling, the reception here,  
You hardly wonder if down fell at once  
The tawdry tent, pictorial, musical,  
Poetical, besprent with hearts and darts ;  
Its cobweb-work, betinsed stitchery,  
Lay dust about our sleeper on the turf,  
And showed the outer towers distinct and  
dread.

Senseless he fell, and long he lay, and much  
Seemed salutary in his punishment  
To planners and performers of the piece.  
When pain ends, pardon prompt may operate.  
There was a good attendance close at hand,  
Waiting the issue in the great saloon,  
Cousins with consolation and advice.

All things thus happily performed to point,  
No wonder at success commensurate.  
Once swooning stopped, once anguish sub-  
sequent  
Raved out,—a sudden resolution chilled

His blood and changed his swimming eyes  
to stone,  
As the poor fellow raised himself upright,  
Collected strength, looked, once for all, his  
look,  
Then, turning, put officious help aside  
And passed from out the chamber. “For  
affairs !”

So he announced himself to the saloon :  
“We owe a duty to the living too !”—  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda tried to smile.  
How did the hearts of Cousinry rejoice  
At their stray sheep returning thus to fold,  
As, with a dignity, precision, *sense*,  
All unsuspected in the man before,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda made minute  
Detail of his intended scheme of life  
Thenceforward and for ever. “Vanity  
Was ended : its redemption must begin—  
And, certain, would continue ; but since life  
Was awfully uncertain—witness here !—  
Behoved him lose no moment but discharge  
Immediate burthen of the world's affairs  
On backs that kindly volunteered to crouch.  
Cousins, with easier conscience, blamelessly  
Might carry on the goldsmith's trade, in  
brief,

Uninterfered with by its lord who late  
Was used to supervise and take due tithe.  
A stipend now sufficed his natural need :  
Themselves should fix what sum allows man  
live.

But half a dozen words concisely plain  
Might, first of all, make sure that, on demise,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's property  
Passed by bequeathment, every particle,  
To the right heirs, the cousins of his heart.  
As for that woman—they would understand !  
This was a step must take her by surprise.  
It were too cruel did he snatch away  
Decent subsistence. She was young, and  
fair,

And . . . and attractive ! Means must be  
supplied

To save her from herself, and from the world,  
And . . . from anxieties might haunt him else  
When he were fain have other thoughts in  
mind.”

It was a sight to melt a stone, that thaw  
Of rigid disapproval into dew  
Of sympathy, as each extended palm  
Of cousin hastened to enclose those five  
Cold fingers, tendered so mistrustfully,  
Despairingly of condonation now !  
You would have thought,—at every fervent  
shake,

In reassurance of those timid tips,—  
The penitent had squeezed, considerate,  
By way of fee into physician's hand  
For physicking his soul, some diamond knob.

And now let pass a week. Once more behold  
The same assemblage in the same saloon,  
Waiting the entry of protagonist  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda. "Just a week  
Since the death-day,—was ever man trans-  
formed

Like this man?" questioned cousin of his mate.  
Last seal to the repentance had been set  
Three days before, at Sceaux in neighbourhood  
Of Paris, where they laid with funeral pomp  
Mother by father. Let me spare the rest :  
How the poor fellow, in his misery,  
Buried hot face and bosom, where heaped snow  
Offered assistance, at the grave's black edge,  
And there lay, till uprooted by main force  
From where he prayed to grow and ne'er again  
Walk earth unworthily as heretofore.  
It is not with impunity priests teach  
The doctrine he was dosed with from his  
youth—

"Pain to the body—profit to the soul ;  
Corporeal pleasure—so much woe to pay  
When disembodied spirit gives account."  
However, woe had done its worst, this time.  
Three days allow subsidence of much grief.  
Already, regular and equable,  
Forward went purpose to effect. At once  
The testament was written, signed and sealed.  
Disposure of the commerce—that took time,  
And would not suffer by a week's delay ;  
But the immediate, the imperious need,  
The call demanding of the Cousinry  
Co-operation, what convened them thus,  
Was—how and when should deputation march  
To Coliseum Street, the old abode

Of wickedness, and there acquaint—oh,  
shame !

Her, its old inmate, who had followed up  
And lay in wait in the old haunt for prey—  
That they had rescued, they possessed Léonce,  
Whose loathing at recapture equalled theirs  
Upbraid that sinner with her sinfulness,  
Impart the fellow-sinner's firm resolve  
Never to set eyes on her face again :  
Then, after stipulations strict but just,  
Hand her the first instalment,—moderate  
Enough, no question,—of her salary :  
Admonish for the future, and so end.—  
All which good purposes, decided on  
Sufficiently, were waiting full effect  
When presently the culprit should appear.

Somehow appearance was delayed too long ;  
Chatting and chirping sunk unconsciously  
To silence, nay, uneasiness, at length  
Alarm, till—anything for certitude !—  
A peeper was commissioned to explore,  
At keyhole, what the laggard's task might be—  
What caused so palpable a disrespect !

Back came the tiptoe cousin from his quest.  
"Monsieur Léonce was busy," he believed,  
"Contemplating—those love-letters, perhaps,  
He always carried, as if precious stones,  
About with him. He read, one after one,  
Some sort of letters. But his back was  
turned.

The empty coffer open at his side,  
He leant on elbow by the mantelpiece  
Before the hearth-fire ; big and blazing too."

"Better he shovelled them all in at once,  
And burned the rubbish !" was a cousin's  
quip,  
Warming his own hands at the fire the  
while.  
I told you, snow had fallen outside, I think.

When suddenly a cry, a host of cries,  
Screams, hubbub and confusion thrilled the  
room.  
All by a common impulse rushed thence,  
reached

The late death-chamber, tricked with trap-  
pings still,  
Skulls, cross-bones, and such moral broiery.  
Madame Muhlhause might have played the  
witch,

Dropped down the chimney and appalled  
Léonce

By some proposal "Parting touch of hand!"  
If she but touched his foolish hand, you  
know!!

Something had happened quite contrariwise.  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, one by one,  
Had read the letters and the love they held,  
And, that task finished, had required his  
soul

To answer frankly what the prospect seemed  
Of his own love's departure—pledged to part!  
Then, answer being unmistakable,  
He had replaced the letters quietly,  
Shut coffer, and so, grasping either side  
By its convenient handle, plunged the  
whole—

Letters and coffer and both hands to boot,  
Into the burning grate and held them there.  
"Burn, burn and purify my past!" said he,  
Calmly, as if he felt no pain at all.

In vain they pulled him from the torture-  
place:

The strong man, with the soul of tenfold  
strength,

Broke from their clutch: and there again  
smiled he,

The miserable hands re-bathed in fire—  
Constant to that ejaculation "Burn,  
Burn, purify!" And when, combining force,  
They fairly dragged the victim out of reach  
Of further harm, he had no hands to hurt—  
Two horrible remains of right and left,  
"Whereof the bones, phalanges formerly,  
Carbonized, were still crackling with the  
flame,"

Said Beaumont. And he fought them all the  
while:

"Why am I hindered when I would be  
pure?

Why leave the sacrifice still incomplete?

She holds me, I must have more hands to  
burn!"

They were the stronger, though, and bound  
him fast.

Beaumont was in attendance presently.

"What did I tell you? Preachment to the  
deaf!

I wish he had been deafer when they preached,  
Those priests! But wait till next Republic  
comes!"

As for Léonce, a single sentiment  
Possessed his soul and occupied his tongue—  
Absolute satisfaction at the deed.

Never he varied, 'tis observable,  
Nor in the stage of agonies (which proved  
Absent without leave,—science seemed to  
think)

Nor yet in those three months' febricity  
Which followed,—never did he vary tale—  
Remaining happy beyond utterance.

"Ineffable beatitude"—I quote

The words, I cannot give the smile—"such  
bliss

Abolished pain! Pain might or might not  
be:

He felt in heaven, where flesh desists to fret.  
Purified now and henceforth, all the past  
Reduced to ashes with the flesh defiled!

Why all those anxious faces round his bed?  
What was to pity in their patient, pray,  
When doctor came and went, and Cousins  
watched?

—Kindness, but in pure waste!" he said and  
smiled.

And if a trouble would at times disturb  
The ambrosial mood, it came from other  
source

Than the corporeal transitory pang.

"If sacrifice be incomplete!" cried he—

"If ashes have not sunk reduced to dust,  
To nullity! If atoms coalesce

Till something grow, grow, get to be a shape  
I hate, I hoped to burn away from me!

She is my body, she and I are one,  
Yet, all the same, there, there at bed-foot  
stands

The woman wound about my flesh and blood,  
There, the arms open, the more wonderful,  
The whiter for the burning . . . Vanish  
thou !  
Avaunt, fiend's self found in the form I wore !"

"Whereat," said Beaumont, "since his hands  
were gone,  
The patient in a frenzy kicked and licked  
To keep off some imagined visitant.  
So will it prove as long as priests may preach  
Spiritual terrors !" groaned the evidence  
Of Beaumont that his patient was stark mad—  
Produced in time and place : of which anon.  
"Mad, or why thus insensible to pain ?  
Body and soul are one thing, with two names  
For more or less elaborated stuff."

Such is the new *Religio Medici*.  
Though antiquated faith held otherwise,  
Explained that body is not soul, but just  
Soul's servant : that, if soul be satisfied,  
Possess already joy or pain enough,  
It uses to ignore, as master may,  
What increase, joy or pain, its servant brings—  
Superfluous contribution : soul, once served,  
Has nought to do with body's service more.  
Each, speculated on exclusively,  
As if its office were the only one,  
Body or soul, either shows service paid  
In joy and pain, that's blind and objectless—  
A servant's toiling for no master's good—  
Or else shows good received and put to use,  
As if within soul's self grew joy and pain,  
Nor needed body for a ministrant.  
I note these old unscientific ways :  
Poor Beaumont cannot : for the Commune  
ruled  
Next year, and ere they shot his priests, shot  
him.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda raved himself  
To rest ; lay three long months in bliss or bale,  
Inactive, anyhow : more need that heirs,  
His natural protectors, should assume  
The management, bestir their cousinship,  
And carry out that purpose of reform  
Such tragic work now made imperative.

A deputation, with austerity,  
Nay, sternness, bore her sentence to the fiend  
Aforesaid,—she at watch for turn of wheel.  
And fortune's favour, Street—you know the  
name.

A certain roughness, seemed appropriate :  
"You—

Steiner, Muhlhausen, whatsoever your name,  
Cause whole and sole of this catastrophe !"—  
And so forth, introduced the embassy.

"Monsieur Léonce Miranda was divorced  
Once and for ever from his—ugly word.  
Himself had gone for good to Portugal :  
They came empowered to act and stipulate.  
Hold ! no discussion ! Terms were settled  
now :

So much of present and prospective pay,  
But also—good engagement in plain terms  
She never seek renewal of the past !"

This little harmless tale produced effect.  
Madame Muhlhausen owned her sentence just,  
Its execution gentle. "Stern their phrase,  
These kinsfolk with a right she recognized—  
But kind its import probably, which now  
Her agitation, her bewilderment  
Rendered too hard to understand, perhaps.  
Let them accord the natural delay,  
And she would ponder and decide. Meantime,  
So far was she from wish to follow friend  
Who fled her, that she would not budge from  
place—  
Now that her friend was fled to Portugal,—  
Never ! *She* leave this Coliseum Street ?  
No, not a footstep !" she assured them.

So—  
They saw they might have left that tale untold  
When, after some weeks more were gone to  
waste,  
Recovery seemed incontestable,  
And the poor mutilated figure, once  
The gay and glancing fortunate young spark,  
Miranda, humble and obedient took  
The doctor's counsel, issued sad and slow  
From precincts of the sick-room, tottered  
down.

And out, and into carriage for fresh air,  
And so drove straight to Coliseum Street,  
And tottered upstairs, knocked, and in a  
trice  
Was clasped in the embrace of whom you  
know—

With much asseveration, I omit,  
Of constancy henceforth till life should end.  
When all this happened,—“What reward,”  
cried she,

“For judging her Miranda by herself!  
For never having entertained a thought  
Of breaking promise, leaving home forsooth,  
To follow who was fled to Portugal!  
As if she thought they spoke a word of truth!  
She knew what love was, knew that he loved  
her;

The Cousinry knew nothing of the kind.”

I will not scandalize you and recount  
How matters made the morning pass away.  
Not one reproach, not one acknowledgment,  
One explanation: all was understood!  
Matters at end, the home-uneasiness  
Cousins were feeling at this jaunt prolonged  
Was ended also by the entry of—

Not simply him whose exit had been made  
By mild command of doctor “Out with you!  
I warrant we receive another man!”

But—would that I could say, the married pair!  
And, quite another man assuredly,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda took on him  
Forthwith to bid the trio, priest and nuns,  
Constant in their attendance all this while,  
Take his thanks and their own departure too;  
Politely but emphatically. Next,  
The Cousins were dismissed: “No protest,  
pray!

Whatever I engaged to do is done,  
Or shall be—I but follow your advice:  
Love I abjure: the lady, you behold,  
Is changed as I myself; her sex is changed:  
This is my Brother—He will tend me now,  
Be all my world henceforth as brother should.  
Gentlemen, of a kinship I revere,  
Your interest in trade is laudable;  
I purpose to indulge it: manage mine,  
My goldsmith-business in the Place Vendôme,

Wholly—through purchase at the price ad  
judged

By experts I shall have assistance from.  
If, in conformity with sage advice,  
I leave a busy world of interests  
I own myself unfit for—yours the care  
That any world of other aims, wherein  
I hope to dwell, be easy of access  
Through ministration of the moneys due,  
As we determine, with all proper speed,  
Since I leave Paris to repair my health.  
Say farewell to our Cousins, Brother mine!”

And, all submissiveness, as brother might,  
The lady curtsied gracefully, and dropt  
More than mere curtsy, a concluding phrase  
So silver-soft, yet penetrative too,  
That none of it escaped the favoured ears:

“Had I but credited one syllable,  
I should to-day be lying stretched on straw,  
The produce of your miserable *rente*!  
Whereas, I hold him—do you comprehend?”  
Cousin regarded cousin, turned up eye,  
And took departure, as our Tuscans laugh,  
Each with his added palm-breadth of long  
nose,—

Curtailed but imperceptibly, next week,  
When transfer was accomplished, and the trade  
In Paris did indeed become their own,  
But bought by them and sold by him on terms  
’Twixt man and man,—might serve ’twixt  
wolf and wolf,  
Substitute “bit and clawed” for “signed and  
sealed”—

Our ordinary business-terms, in short.  
Another week, and Clairvaux broke in bloom  
At end of April, to receive again  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, gentleman,  
Ex-jeweller and goldsmith: never more,—  
According to the purpose he professed,—  
To quit this paradise, his property,  
This Clara, his companion: so it proved.

The Cousins, each with elongated nose,  
Discussed their bargain, reconciled them soon  
To hard necessity, disbursed the cash,  
And hastened to subjoin, wherever type  
Proclaimed “Miranda” to the public, “Called

Now Firm-Miranda." There, a colony,  
They flourish underneath the name that still  
Maintains the old repûte, I understand.  
They built their Clairvaux, dream-Château, in  
Spain,

Perhaps—but Place Vendôme is waking worth:  
Oh, they lost little!—only, man and man  
Hardly conclude transactions of the kind  
As cousin should with cousin,—cousins think.  
For the rest, all was honourably done,  
So, ere buds break to blossom, let us breathe!  
Never suppose there was one particle  
Of recrudescence—wound, half-healed before,  
Set freshly running—sin, repressed as such,  
New loosened as necessity of life!  
In all this revocation and resolve,  
Far besin's self-indulgence from your thought!  
The man had simply made discovery,  
By process I respect if not admire,  
That what was, was:—that turf, his feet had  
touched,

Felt solid just as much as yonder towers  
He saw with eyes, but did not stand upon,  
And could not, if he would, reach in a  
leap.

People had told him flowery turf was false  
To footstep, tired the traveller soon, beside:  
That was untrue. They told him "One fair  
stride  
Plants on safe platform and secures man rest."  
That was untrue. Some varied the advice:  
"Neither was solid, towers no more than  
turf."

Double assertion, therefore twice as false.  
"I like these amateurs"—our friend had  
laughed,  
Could he turn what he felt to what he thought,  
And, that again, to what he put in words:  
"I like their pretty trial, proof of paste  
Or precious stone, by delicate approach  
Of eye askance, fine feel of finger-tip,  
Or touch of tongue inquisitive for cold.  
I tried my jewels in a crucible:  
Fierce fire has felt them, licked them, left  
them sound.

Don't tell me that my earthly love is sham,  
My heavenly fear a clever counterfeit!  
Each may oppose each, yet be true alike!"

To build up, independent of the towers,  
A durable pavilion o'er the turf,  
Had issued in disaster. "What remained  
Except, by tunnel, or else gallery,  
To keep communication 'twixt the two,  
Unite the opposites, both near and far,  
And never try complete abandonment  
Of one or other?" so he thought, not said.  
And to such engineering feat, I say,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda saw the means  
Precisely in this revocation prompt  
Of just those benefits of worldly wealth  
Conferred upon his Cousinry—all but!

This Clairvaux—you would know, were you  
at top

Of yonder crowning grace, its Belvedere—  
Is situate in one angle-niche of three  
At equidistance from Saint-Rambert—there  
Behind you, and The Ravissante, beside—  
There: steeple, steeple, and this Clairvaux-  
top,

(A sort of steeple) constitute a trine,  
With not a tenement to break each side,  
Two miles or so in length, if eye can judge.  
Now, this is native land of miracle.  
O why, why, why, from all recorded time,  
Was miracle not wrought once, only once,  
To help whoever wanted help indeed?  
If on the day when Spring's green girlishness  
Grew nubile and she trembled into May,  
And our Miranda climbed to clasp the Spring  
A-tiptoe o'er the sea, those wafts of warmth,  
Those cloudlets scudding under the bare blue,  
And all that new sun, that fresh hope about  
His airy place of observation,—friend,  
Feel with me that if just then, just for once,  
Some angel,—such as the authentic pen  
Yonder records a daily visitant  
Of ploughman Claude, rheumatic in the joints,  
And spinster Jeanne, with megrim troubled  
sore,—

If such an angel, with nought else to do,  
Had taken station on the pinnacle  
And simply said "Léonce, look straight be-  
fore!

Neither to right hand nor to left: for why?  
Being a stupid soul, you want a guide.



To turn the goodness in you to account  
And make stupidity submit itself.  
Go to Saint-Rambert! Straightway get such  
guide!

There stands a man of men. You, jeweller,  
Must needs have heard how once the biggest  
block

Of diamond now in Europe lay exposed  
Mid specimens of stone and earth and ore,  
On huckster's stall, — Navona names the  
Square,

And Rome the city for the incident, —  
Labelled 'quartz-crystal, price one halfpenny.'  
Haste and secure that ha'p'worth, on your  
life!

That man will read you rightly head to foot,  
Mark the brown face of you, the bushy beard,  
The breadth 'twixt shoulderblades, and through  
each black

Castilian orbit, see into your soul.  
Talk to him for five minutes—nonsense, sense,  
No matter what—describe your horse, your  
hound,—

Give your opinion of the policy  
Of Monsieur Rouher, —will he succour Rome?  
Your estimate of what may outcome be  
From Ecumenical Assemblage there!  
After which samples of intelligence,  
Rapidly run through those events you call  
Your past life, tell what once you tried to do,  
What you intend on doing this next May!  
There he stands, reads an English newspaper,  
Stock-still, and now, again upon the move,  
Paces the beach to taste the Spring, like you,  
Since both are human beings in God's eye.  
He will have understood you, I engage.  
Endeavour, for your part, to understand  
He knows more, and loves better, than the  
world

That never heard his name, and never may.  
He will have recognized, ere breath be spent  
And speech at end, how much that's good in  
man,

And generous, and self-devoting, makes  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda worth his help;  
While sounding to the bottom ignorance  
Historical and philosophical  
And moral and religious, all one pouch

Of crassitude, a portent of its kind.  
Then, just as he would pityingly teach  
Your body to repair maltreatment; give  
Advice that you should make those stumps to  
stir

With artificial hands of caoutchouc,  
So would he soon supply your crippled soul  
With crutches, from his own intelligence,  
Able to help you onward in the path  
Of rectitude whereto your face is set,  
And counsel justice—to yourself, the first,  
To your associate, very like a wife  
Or something better,—to the world at large,  
Friends, strangers, horses, hounds and  
Cousinry—

All which amount of justice will include  
Justice to God. Go and consult his voice!"  
Since angel would not say this simple truth,  
What hinders that my heart relieve itself,  
Milsand, who makest warm my wintry world,  
And wise my heaven, if there we consort too?  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda turned, alas,  
Or was turned, by no angel, t'other way,  
And got him guidance of The Ravissante.

Now, into the originals of faith,  
Yours, mine, Miranda's, no inquiry here!  
Of faith, as apprehended by mankind,  
The causes, were they caught and catalogued,  
Would too distract, too desperately fail  
Inquirer. How may analyst reduce  
Quantities to exact their opposites,  
Value to zero, then bring zero back  
To value of supreme preponderance?  
How substitute thing meant for thing ex-  
pressed?

Detect the wire-thread through that fluffy silk  
Men call their rope, their real compulsive  
power?

Suppose effected such anatomy,  
And demonstration made of what belief  
Has moved believer—were the consequence  
Reward at all? would each man straight-  
deduce,

From proved reality of cause, effect.  
Conformable—believe and unbelieve  
According to your True thus disengaged  
From all his heap of False called reason first?

No : hand once used to hold a soft thick twist,  
 Cannot now grope its way by wire alone :  
 Childhood may catch the knack, scarce  
 Youth, not Age !

That's the reply rewards you. Just as well  
 Remonstrate to yon peasant in the blouse  
 That, had he justified the true intent  
 Of Nature who composed him thus and thus,  
 Weakly or strongly, here he would not stand  
 Struggling with uncongenial earth and sky,  
 But elsewhere tread the surface of the globe,  
 Since one meridian suits the faulty lungs,  
 Another bids the sluggish liver work.  
 "Here I was born, for better or for worse :  
 I did not choose a climate for myself ;  
 Admit, my life were healthy, led elsewhere,"  
 (He answers) "how am I to migrate, pray?"

Therefore the course to take is—spare your  
 pains,  
 And trouble uselessly with discontent  
 Nor soul nor body, by parading proof  
 That neither haply had known ailment, placed  
 Precisely where the circumstance forbade  
 Their lot should fall to either of the pair.  
 But try and, what you find wrong, remedy,  
 Accepting the conditions : never ask  
 "How came you to be born here with those  
 lungs,  
 That liver?" But bid asthma smoke a pipe,  
 Stramonium, just as if no Tropics were,  
 And ply with calomel the sluggish duct,  
 Nor taunt "The born Norwegian breeds no  
 bile!"

And as with body, so proceed with soul :  
 Nor less discerningly, where faith you found,  
 However foolish and fantastic, grudge  
 To play the doctor and amend mistake,  
 Because a wisdom were conceivable  
 Whence faith had sprung robust above disease.  
 Far beyond human help, that source of things !  
 Since, in the first stage, so to speak,—first stare  
 Of apprehension at the invisible,—  
 Begins divergency of mind from mind,  
 Superior from inferior : leave this first !  
 Little you change there ! What comes after—  
 ward—

From apprehended thing, each inference

With practicality concerning life,  
 This you may test and try, confirm the right  
 Or contravene the wrong which reasons there.  
 The offspring of the sickly faith must prove  
 Sickly act also : stop a monster-birth !  
 When water's in the cup and not the cloud,  
 Then is the proper time for chemic test :  
 Belief permits your skill to operate  
 When, drop by drop condensed from misty  
 heaven,

'Tis wrung out, lies a bowlful in the fleece.  
 How dew by spoonfuls came, let Gideon say :  
 What purpose water serves, your word or two  
 May teach him, should he fancy it lights fire.

Concerning, then, our vaporous Ravissante—  
 How fable first precipitated faith—  
 Silence you get upon such point from me.  
 But when I see come posting to the pair  
 At Clairvaux, for the cure of soul-disease,  
 This Father of the Mission, Parish-priest,  
 This Mother of the Convent, Nun I know—  
 They practise in that second stage of things ;  
 They boast no fresh distillery of faith ;  
 'Tis dogma in the bottle, bright and old,  
 They bring ; and I pretend to pharmacy.  
 They undertake the cure with all my heart !  
 He trusts them, and they surely trust them-  
 selves.

I ask no better. Never mind the cause,  
*Fons et origo* of the malady :  
 Apply the drug with courage ! Here's our  
 case.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda asks of God,  
 —May a man, living in illicit tie,  
 Continue, by connivance of the Church,  
 No matter what amends he please to make  
 Short of forthwith relinquishing the sin ?  
 Physicians, what do you propose for cure ?

Rather and Mother of the Ravissante,  
 Read your own records, and you find pre-  
 scribed

As follows, when a couple out of sorts  
 Rather than gravely suffering, sought your skill  
 And thereby got their health again. Perpend !  
 Two and a half good centuries ago,  
 Luc de la Maison Rouge, a nobleman

Of Claise, (the river gives this country name)  
And, just as noblewoman, Maude his wife,  
Having been married many happy years  
Spent in God's honour and man's service too,  
Conceived, while yet in flower of youth and  
hope,

The project of departing each from each  
Forever, and dissolving marriage-bonds  
That both might enter a religious life.  
Needing, before they came to such resolve,  
Divine illumination,—course was clear,—  
They visited your church in pilgrimage,  
On Christmas morn : communicating straight,  
They heard three Masses proper for the day,  
"It is incredible with what effect"—

Quoth the Cistercian monk I copy from—  
And, next day, came, again communicants,  
Again heard Masses manifold, but now  
With added thanks to Christ for special grace  
And consolation granted : in the night,  
Had been divorce from marriage, manifest  
By signs and tokens. So, they made great  
gifts,

Left money for more Masses, and returned  
Homeward rejoicing—he, to take the rules,  
As Brother Dionysius, Capucin ;  
She, to become first postulant, then nun  
According to the rules of Benedict,  
Sister Scolastica :<sup>1</sup> so ended they,  
And so do I—not end nor yet commence  
One note or comment. What was done was  
done.

Now, Father of the Mission, here's your case !  
And, Mother of the Convent, here's its cure !  
If separation was permissible,  
And that decree of Christ "What God hath  
joined

Let no man put asunder" nullified  
Because a couple, blameless in the world,  
Had the conceit that, still more blamelessly,  
Out of the world, by breach of marriage-  
vow,

Their life was like to pass,—you oracles  
Of God,—since holy Paul says such you are,—  
Hesitate, not one moment, to pronounce  
When questioned by the pair now needing  
help

<sup>1</sup> Sister of St. Benedict.

"Each from the other go, you guilty ones,  
Preliminary to your least approach  
Nearer the Power that thus could strain a point  
In favour of a pair of innocents  
Who thought their wedded hands not clean  
enough

To touch and leave unsullied their souls'  
snow !

Are not your hands found filthy by the world,  
Mere human law and custom ? Not a step  
Nearer till hands be washed and purified !"

What they did say is immaterial, since  
Certainly it was nothing of the kind.  
There was no washing hands of him (alack,  
You take me ?—in the figurative sense !),  
But, somehow, gloves were drawn o'er dirt  
and all,

And practice with the Church procured  
thereby.

Seeing that,—all remonstrance proved in vain,  
Persuatives tried and terrors put to use,  
I nowise question,—still the guilty pair  
Only embraced the closelier, obstinate,—  
Father and Mother went from Clairvaux back  
Their weary way, with heaviness of heart,  
I grant you, but each palm well crossed with  
coin,

And nothing like a smutch perceptible.  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda might compound  
For sin ?—no, surely ! but by gifts—prepare  
His soul the better for contrition, say !  
Gift followed upon gift, at all events.  
Good counsel was rejected, on one part :  
Hard money, on the other—may we hope  
Was unreflectingly consigned to purse ?

Two years did this experiment engage .  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda : how, by gifts  
To God and to God's poor, a man might stay  
In sin and yet stave off sin's punishment.  
No salve could be conceived more nicely  
mixed

For this man's nature : generosity,—  
Susceptibility to human ills,  
Corporeal, mental,—self-devotedness  
Made up Miranda—whether strong or weak  
Elsewhere, may be inquired another time.

In mercy he was strong, at all events.  
 Enough ! he could not see a beast in pain,  
 Much less a man, without the will to aid ;  
 And where the will was, oft the means were  
 too,  
 Since that good bargain with the Cousinry.

The news flew fast about the countryside  
 That, with the kind man, it was ask and  
 have ;

And ask and have they did. To instance  
 you :—

A mob of beggars at The Ravissante  
 Clung to his skirts one day, and cried " We  
 thirst ! "

Forthwith he bade a cask of wine be broached  
 To satisfy all comers, till, dead-drunk  
 So satisfied, they strewed the holy place.  
 For this was grown religious and a rite :  
 Such slips of judgment, gifts irregular,  
 Showed but as spillings of the golden grist  
 On either side the hopper, through blind zeal ;  
 Steadily the main stream went pouring on  
 From mill to mouth of sack—held wide and  
 close

By Father of the Mission, Parish-priest,  
 And Mother of the Convent, Nun I know,  
 With such effect that, in the sequel, proof  
 Was tendered to the Court at Vire, last month,  
 That in these same two years, expenditure  
 At quiet Clairvaux rose to the amount  
 Of Forty Thousand English Pounds : whereof  
 A trifle went, no inappropriate close  
 Of bounty, to supply the Virgin's crown  
 With that stupendous jewel from New-York,  
 Now blazing as befits the Star of Sea.

Such signs of grace, outward and visible,  
 I rather give you, for your sake and mine,  
 Than put in evidence the inward strife,  
 Spiritual effort to compound for fault  
 By payment of devotion—thank the phrase !  
 That payment was as punctual, do not doubt,  
 As its far easier fellow. Yesterday  
 I trudged the distance from The Ravissante  
 To Clairvaux, with my two feet : but our  
 friend,

The more to edify the country-folk,

Was wont to make that journey on both knees.  
 " Maliciously perverted incident ! "

Snarled the retort, when this was told at  
 Vire :

" The man paid mere devotion as he passed,  
 Knelt decently at just each wayside shrine ! "  
 Alas, my lawyer, I trudged yesterday—  
 On my two feet, and with both eyes wide  
 ope,—

The distance, and could find no shrine at all !  
 According to his lights, I praise the man.

Enough ! incessant was devotion, say—

With her, you know of, praying at his side.

Still, there be relaxations of the tense ;

Or life indemnifies itself for strain,

Or finds its very strain grow feebleness.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda's days were passed

Much as of old, in simple work and play.

His first endeavour, on recovery

From that sad ineffectual sacrifice,

Had been to set about repairing loss :

Never admitting, loss was to repair.

No word at any time escaped his lips

—Betrayed a lurking presence, in his heart,

Of sorrow ; no regret for mischief done—

Punishment suffered, he would rather say.

Good-tempered schoolboy-fashion, he pre-  
 ferred

To laugh away his flogging, fair price paid

For pleasure out of bounds : if needs must be,

Get pleasure and get flogged a second time !

A sullen subject would have nursed the scars

And made excuse, for throwing grammar by,

That bench was grown uneasy to the seat.

No : this poor fellow cheerfully got hands

Fit for his stumps, and what hands failed to do,

The other members did in their degree—

Unwonted service. With his mouth alone

He wrote, nay, painted pictures—think of  
 that !

He played on a piano pedal-keyed,

Kicked out—if it was Bach's—good music  
 thence.

He rode, that's readily conceivable,

But then he shot and never missed his bird,

With other feats as dexterous : I infer

He was not ignorant what hands are worth,

When he resolved on ruining his own.

So the two years passed somehow—who shall  
say

Foolishly,—as one estimates mankind,  
The work they do, the play they leave un-  
done?—

Two whole years spent in that experiment  
I told you of, at Clairvaux all the time,  
From April on to April: why that month  
More than another, notable in life?  
Does the awakening of the year arouse  
Man to new projects, nerve him for fresh feats  
Of what proves, for the most part of mankind  
Playing or working, novel folly too?  
At any rate, I see no slightest sign  
Of folly (let me tell you in advance),  
Nothing but wisdom meets me manifest  
In the procedure of the Twentieth Day  
Of April, 'Seventy,—folly's year in France.

It was delightful Spring, and out of doors  
Temptation to adventure. Walk or ride?  
There was a wild young horse to exercise,  
And teach the way to go and pace to keep:  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda chose to ride.  
So, while they clapped soft saddle straight on  
back,

And bitted jaw to satisfaction,—since  
The partner of his days must stay at home,  
Teased by some trifling legacy of March  
To throat or shoulder,—visit duly paid  
And "farewell" given and received again,—  
As chamber-door considerably closed  
Behind him, still five minutes were to spend.  
How better, than by clearing, two and two,  
The staircase-steps and coming out aloft  
Upon the platform yonder (raise your eyes!)  
And tasting, just as those two years before,  
Spring's bright advance upon the tower a-top,  
The feature of the front, the Belvedere?

Look at it for a moment while I breathe.

#### IV.

Ready to hear the rest? How good you are!

Now for this Twentieth splendid day of Spring,  
All in a tale,—sun, wind, sky, earth and sea,—

To bid man "Up, be doing!" Mount the  
stair,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda mounts so brisk,  
And look—ere his elastic foot arrive—  
Your longest, far and wide, o'er fronting space.  
Yon white streak—Havre lighthouse! Name  
and name,

How the mind runs from each to each relay,  
Town after town, till Paris' self be touched,  
Superlatively big with life and death  
To all the world, that very day perhaps!  
He who stepped out upon the platform here,  
Pinnacled over the expanse, gave thought  
Neither to Rouher nor Ollivier, Roon  
Nor Bismarck, Emperor nor King, but just  
To steeple, church, and shrine, The Ravis-  
sante!

He saw Her, whom myself saw, but when  
Spring

Was passing into Fall: not robed and crowned  
As, thanks to him, and her you know about,  
She stands at present; but She smiled the  
same.

Thither he turned—to never turn away.

He thought . . .

(Suppose I should prefer "He said?"  
Along with every act—and speech is act—  
There go, a multitude impalpable  
To ordinary human faculty,  
The thoughts which give the act significance.  
Who is a poet needs must apprehend  
Alike both speech and thoughts which prompt  
to speak.

Part these, and thought withdraws to poetry:  
Speech is reported in the newspaper.)

He said, then, probably no word at all,  
But thought as follows—in a minute's space—  
One particle of ore beats out such leaf!

"This Spring-morn I am forty-three years old:  
In prime of life, perfection of estate  
Bodily, mental, nay, material too,—  
My whole of worldly fortunes reach their  
height.

Body and soul alike on eminence :  
It is not probable I ever raise  
Soul above standard by increase of worth,  
Nor reasonably may expect to lift  
Body beyond the present altitude.

“Behold me, Lady called The Ravissante !  
Such as I am, I—gave myself to you  
So long since, that I cannot say ‘I give.’  
All my belongings, what is summed in life,  
I have submitted wholly—as man might,  
At least, as I might, who am weak, not  
strong,—”

Wholly, then, to your rule and governance,  
So far as I had strength. My weakness was—  
I felt a fascination, at each point  
And pore of me, a Power as absolute  
Claiming that soul should recognize her sway.  
O you were no whit clearer Queen, I see,  
Throughout the life that rolls out ribbon-like  
Its shot-silk length behind me, than the  
strange

Mystery—how shall I denominate  
The unrobed One? Robed you go and  
crowned as well,

Named by the nations : she is hard to name,  
Though you have spelt out certain characters  
Obscure upon what fillet binds her brow,  
*Lust of the flesh, lust of the eye, life's pride.*  
‘So call her, and condemn the enchantress!’

—‘Crush

The despot, and recover liberty!’—  
Cried despot and enchantress at each ear.  
You were conspicuous and pre-eminent,  
Authoritative and imperial,—you  
Spoke first, claimed homage : did I hesitate?  
Born for no mastery, but servitude,  
Men cannot serve two masters, says the Book ;  
Master should measure strength with master,  
then,

Before on servant is imposed a task.  
You spoke first, promised best, and threatened  
most ;

The other never threatened, promised, spoke  
A single word, but, when your part was  
done,

Lifted a finger, and I, prostrate, knew  
Films were about me, though you stood aloof

Smiling or frowning ‘Where is power like  
mine

To punish or reward thee? Rise, thou fool !  
Will to be free, and, lo, I lift thee loose!’

Did I not will, and could I rise a whit?

Lay I, at any time, content to lie?

‘To lie, at all events, brings pleasure : make  
Amends by undemanded pain!’ I said.

Did not you prompt me? ‘Purchase now by  
pain

Pleasure hereafter in the world to come!’

I could not pluck my heart out, as you bade  
Unbidden, I burned off my hands at least.

My soul retained its treasure ; but my purse  
Lightened itself with much alacrity.

Well, where is the reward? what promised  
fruit

Of sacrifice in peace, content? what sense

Of added strength to bear or to forbear?

What influx of new light assists me now

Even to guess you recognize a gain

In what was loss enough to mortal me?

But she, the less authoritative voice,

Oh, how distinct enunciating, how

Plain dealing! Gain she gave was gain  
indeed!

That, you deny : that, you contemptuous call  
Acorns, swine's food not man's meat! ‘Spurn  
the draff!’

Ay, but those life-tree apples I prefer,

Am I to die of hunger till they drop?

Husks keep flesh from starvation, anyhow.

Give those life-apples!—one, worth woods  
of oak,

Worth acorns by the waggon-load,—one shoot  
Through heart and brain, assurance bright  
and brief

That you, my Lady, my own Ravissante,  
Feel, through my famine, served and satisfied,

Own me, your starveling, soldier of a sort!

Your soldier! do I read my title clear

Even to call myself your friend, not foe?

What is the pact between us but a truce?

At best I shall have staved off enmity,

Obtained a respite, ransomed me from wrath.

I pay, instalment by instalment, life,

Earth's tribute-money, pleasures great and  
small,

Whereof should at the last one penny piece  
Fall short, the whole heap becomes forfeiture.  
'You find in me deficient soldiership :

Want the whole life or none. I grudge that  
whole,

Because I am not sure of recompense :  
Because I want faith. Whose the fault? I  
ask.

If insufficient faith have done thus much,  
Contributed thus much of sacrifice,  
More would move mountains, you are warrant.

Well,

Grant, you, the grace, I give the gratitude !  
And what were easier? 'Ask and have' folk  
call

Miranda's method : 'Have, nor need to ask !'  
So do they formulate your quality  
Superlative beyond my human grace.

The Ravissante, you ravish men away  
From puny aches and petty pains, assuaged  
By man's own art with small expenditure  
Of pill or potion, unless, put to shame,  
Nature is roused and sets things right herself.

Your miracles are grown our commonplace ;  
No day but pilgrim hobbles his last mile,  
Kneels down and rises up, flings crutch away,  
Or else appends it to the reverend heap

Beneath you, votive cripple-carpentry.  
Some few meet failure—oh, they wanted  
faith,

And may betake themselves to La Salette,  
Or seek Lourdes, so that hence the scandal  
limp !

The many get their grace and go their way  
Rejoicing, with a tale to tell,—most like,  
A staff to borrow, since the crutch is gone,  
Should the first telling happen at my house,  
And teller wet his whistle with my wine.  
'I tell this to a doctor and he laughs :

'Give me permission to cry—Out of bed,  
You loth rheumatic sluggard ! Cheat you  
chair

Of laziness, its gouty occupant !—  
You should see miracles performed. But now,  
Give advice, and take as fee ten francs,  
And do as much as does your Ravissante.  
Send her that case of cancer to be cured  
I have refused to treat for any fee,

Bring back my would-be patient sound and  
whole,

And see me laugh on t'other side my mouth !'  
Can he be right, and are you hampered thus?  
Such pettiness restricts a miracle  
Wrought by the Great Physician, who hears  
prayer,

Visibly seated in your mother-lap !  
He, out of nothing, made sky, earth, and sea,  
And all that in them is—man, beast, bird, fish,  
Down to this insect on my parapet.

Look how the marvel of a minim crawls !  
Were I to kneel among the halt and maimed,  
And pray 'Who mad'st the insect with ten  
legs,

Make me one finger grow where ten were  
once !'

The very priests would thrust me out of  
church.

What folly does the madman dare expect?  
No faith obtains—in this late age, at least—  
Such cure as that ! We ease rheumatics,  
though !'

"Ay, bring the early ages back again,  
What prodigy were unattainable?  
I read your annals. Here came Louis Onze,  
Gave thrice the sum he ever gave before  
At one time, some three hundred crowns, to  
wit—

On pilgrimage to pray for—health, he found?  
Did he? I do not read it in Commynes.<sup>1</sup>

Here sent poor joyous Marie-Antoinette  
To thank you that a Dauphin dignified  
Her motherhood—called Duke of Normandy  
And Martyr of the Temple, much the same  
As if no robe of hers had dressed you rich ;  
No silver lamps, she gave, illumed your shrine !  
Here, following example, fifty years  
Ago, in gratitude for birth again

Of yet another destined King of France,  
Did not the Duchess fashion with her hands,  
And frame in gold and crystal, and present  
A bouquet made of artificial flowers?  
And was he King of France, and is not he  
Still Count of Chambord?

<sup>1</sup> Philippe de Commynes, the famous chronicler  
(1445-1509).

"Such the days of faith,  
And such their produce to encourage mine !  
What now, if I too count without my host ?  
I too have given money, ornament,  
And 'artificial flowers'—which, when I  
plucked,

Seemed rooting at my heart and real enough :  
What if I gain thereby nor health of mind,  
Nor youth renewed which perished in its  
prime,

Burnt to a cinder 'twixt the red-hot bars,  
Nor gain to see my second baby-hope  
Of managing to live on terms with both  
Opposing potentates, the Power and you,  
Crowned with success ? I dawdle out my days  
In exile here at Clairvaux, with mock love,  
That gives—while whispering 'Would I dared  
refuse !'—

What the loud voice declares my heart's free  
gift :

Mock worship, mock superiority  
O'er those I style the world's benighted ones,  
That irreligious sort I pity so,  
Dumas and even Hertford who is Duke.

"Impiety ? Not if I know myself !  
Not if you know the heart and soul I bare,  
I bid you cut, hack, slash, anatomize,  
Till peccant part be found and flung away !  
Demonstrate where I need more faith !

Describe  
What act shall evidence sufficiency  
Of faith, your warrant for such exercise  
Of power, in my behalf, as all the world  
Except poor praying me declares profuse ?  
Poor me ? It is that world, not me alone,  
That world which prates of fixed laws and  
the like,

I fain would save, poor world so ignorant !  
And your part were—what easy miracle ?  
Oh, Lady, could I make your want like mine !"

Then his face grew one luminosity.

"Simple, sufficient ! Happiness at height !  
I solve the riddle, I persuade mankind.  
I have been just the simpleton who stands—  
Summoned to claim his patrimonial rights—

At shilly-shally, may he knock or no  
At his own door in his own house and home  
Whereof he holds the very title-deeds !  
Here is my title to this property,  
This power you hold for profit of myself  
And all the world at need—which need is now !

"My title—let me hear who controverts !  
Count Mailleville built yon church. Why  
did he so ?

Because he found your image. How came  
that ?

His shepherd told him that a certain sheep  
Was wont to scratch with hoof and scrape  
with horn

At ground where once the Danes had razed a  
church.

Thither he went, and there he dug, and thence  
He disinterred the image he conveyed  
In pomp to Londres yonder, his domain.

You liked the old place better than the new.  
The Count might surely have divined as much :  
He did not ; someone might have spoke a  
word :

No one did. A mere dream had warned  
enough

That back again in pomp you best were borne :  
No dream warned, and no need of convoy was ;  
An angel caught you up and clapped you  
down—

No mighty task, you stand one *mètre* high,  
And people carry you about at times.

Why, then, did you despise the simple course ?  
Because you are the Queen of Angels : when  
You front us in a picture, there flock they,  
Angels around you, here and everywhere.

"Therefore, to prove indubitable faith,  
Those angels that acknowledge you their  
queen,

I summon them to bear me to your feet  
From Clairvaux through the air, an easy trip !  
Faith without flaw ! I trust your potency,  
Benevolence, your will to save the world—  
By such a simplest of procedures, too !

Not even by affording angel-help,  
Unless it please you : there's a simpler mode :  
Only suspend the law of gravity,



And, while at back, permitted to propel,  
The air helps onward, let the air in front  
Cease to oppose my passage through the midst!

"Thus I bestride the railing, leg o'er leg,  
Thus, lo, I stand, a single inch away,  
At dizzy edge of death,—no touch of fear,  
As safe on tower above as turf below!  
Your smile enswathes me in beatitude,  
You lift along the votary—who vaults,  
Who, in the twinkling of an eye, revives,  
Dropt safely in the space before the church—  
How crowded, since this morn is market-day!  
I shall not need to speak. The news will run  
Like wild-fire. 'Thousands saw Miranda's  
flight!'

'Tis telegraphed to Paris in a trice.  
The Boulevard is one buzz 'Do you believe?  
Well, this time, thousands saw Miranda's  
flight:  
You know him, goldsmith in the Place Ven-  
dôme.'

In goes the Empress to the Emperor:  
'Now—will you hesitate to make disgorge  
Your wicked King of Italy his gains,  
Give the Legations to the Pope once more?'  
Which done,—why, grace goes back to  
operate,  
They themselves set a good example first,  
Resign the empire twenty years usurped,  
And Henry, the Desired One, reigns o'er  
France!

Regenerated France makes all things new!  
My house no longer stands on Quai Rousseau  
But Quai rechristened Alacoque:<sup>1</sup> a quai  
Where Renan burns his book, and Veillot<sup>2</sup>  
burns

Renan beside, since Veillot rules the roast,  
Re-edits now indeed 'The Universe.'<sup>3</sup>  
O blessing, O superlatively big  
With blessedness beyond all blessing dreamed  
By man! for just that promise has effect,  
'Old things shall pass away and all be new!'  
Then, for a culminating mercy-feat,

<sup>1</sup> Margaret Mary Alacoque, foundress of a religious order, d. 1690.

<sup>2</sup> An Ultramontane writer.

<sup>3</sup> M. Veillot's paper.

Wherefore should I dare dream impossible  
That I too have my portion in the change?  
My past with all its sorrow, sin and shame,  
Becomes a blank, a nothing! There she  
stands,

Clara de Millefleurs, all deodorized,  
Twenty years' stain wiped off her innocence!  
There never was Muhlhausen, nor at all  
Duke Hertford: nought that was, remains,  
except  
The beauty,—yes, the beauty is unchanged!  
Well, and the soul too, that must keep the  
same!

And so the trembling little virgin hand  
Melts into mine, that's back again, of course!  
—Think not I care about my poor old self!  
I only want my hand for that one use,  
To take her hand, and say 'I marry you—  
Men, women, angels, you behold my wife!  
There is no secret, nothing wicked here,  
Nothing she does not wish the world to  
know!'

None of your married women have the right  
To mutter 'Yes, indeed, she beats us all  
In beauty,—but our lives are pure at least!'  
Bear witness, for our marriage is no thing  
Done in a corner! 'Tis The Ravissante  
Repairs the wrong of Paris. See, She smiles,  
She beckons, She bids 'Hither, both of you!'  
And may we kneel? And will you bless us  
both?  
And may I worship you, and yet love her?  
Then!—"

A sublime spring from the balustrade  
About the tower so often talked about,  
A flash in middle air, and stone-dead lay  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda on the turf.

A gardener who watched, at work the while  
Dibbling a flower-bed for geranium-shoots,  
Saw the catastrophe, and, straightening back,  
Stood up and shook his brows. "Poor soul,  
poor soul!

Just what I prophesied the end would be!  
Ugh—the Red Night-cap!" (as he raised the  
head)

"This must be what he meant by those  
strange words

While I was weeding larkspurs yesterday,  
'Angels would take him!' Mad!"

No! sane, I say.

Such being the conditions of his life,  
Such end of life was not irrational.  
Hold a belief, you only half-believe,  
With all-momentous issues either way,—  
And I advise you imitate this leap,  
Put faith to proof, be cured or killed at once!  
Call you men, killed through cutting cancer  
out,

The worse for such an act of bravery?  
That's more than I know. In my estimate,  
Better lie prostrate on his turf at peace,  
Than, wistful, eye, from out the tent, the tower,  
Racked with a doubt "Will going on bare  
knees

All the way to The Ravissante and back,  
Saying my Ave Mary all the time,  
Somewhat excuse if I postpone my march?  
—Make due amends for that one kiss I gave  
In gratitude to her who held me out  
Superior Fricquot's sermon, hot from press,  
A-spread with hands so s'nfal yet so smooth?"

And now, sincerely do I pray she stand,  
Clara, with interposing sweep of robe,  
Between us and this horror! Any screen  
Turns white by contrast with the tragic pall;  
And her dubiety distracts, at least,  
As well as snow, from such decided black.  
With womanhood, at least, we have to do:  
Ending with Clara—is the word too kind?

Let pass the shock! There's poignancy  
enough

When what one parted with, a minute since,  
Alive and happy, is returned a wreck—  
All that was, all that seemed about to be,  
Razed out and ruined now for evermore,  
Because a straw descended on this scale  
Rather than that, made death o'erbalance life.  
But think of cage-mates in captivity,  
Inured to day-long, night-long vigilance  
Each of the other's tread and angry turn  
If behind prison-bars the jester knocked:  
These whom society shut out, and thus

Penned in, to settle down and regulate  
By the strange law, the solitary life—  
When death divorces such a fellowship,  
Theirs may pair off with that prodigious woe  
Imagined of a ghastly brotherhood—  
One watcher left in lighthouse out at sea  
With leagues of surf between the land and him  
Alive with his dead partner on the rock;  
One galley-slave, whom curse and blow  
compel

To labour on, ply oar—beside his chain,  
Encumbered with a corpse-companion now.  
Such these: although, no prisoners, self-  
entrenched  
They kept the world off from their barricade.

Memory, gratitude was poignant, sure,  
Though pride brought consolation of a kind.  
Twenty years long had Ciara been—of whom  
The rival, nay, the victor, past dispute?  
What if in turn The Ravissante at length  
Proved victor—which was doubtful—anyhow,  
Here lay the inconstant with, conspicuous too,  
The fruit of his good fortune!

"Has he gained

By leaving me?" she might soliloquize:  
"All love could do, I did for him. I learned  
By heart his nature, what he loved and loathed,  
Leaned to with liking, turned from with dis-  
taste.

No matter what his least velleity,  
I was determined he should want no wish,  
And in conformity administered  
To his requirement; most of joy I mixed  
With least of sorrow in life's daily draught,  
Twenty years long, life's proper average.  
And when he got to quarrel with my cup,  
Would needs outsweeten honey, and discard  
That gall-drop we require lest nectar cloy,—  
I did not call him fool, and vex my friend,  
But quietly allowed experiment,  
Encouraged him to spice his drink, and now  
Grate *lignum vite*,<sup>1</sup> now bruise so-called  
grains

Of Paradise,<sup>2</sup> and pour now, for perfume,

<sup>1</sup> Guaiacum wood, good for rheumatism.

<sup>2</sup> Name for an aromatic drug.

Distilment rare, the rose of Jericho,  
Holy-thorn, passion-flower, and what know I?  
Till beverage obtained the fancied smack.

'Twas wild-flower-wine that neither helped  
nor harmed

Who sipped and held it for restorative—  
What harm? But here has he been through  
the hedge

Straying in search of simples, while my back  
Was turned a minute, and he finds a prize,  
Monkshood and belladonna! O my child,  
My truant little boy, despite the beard,  
The body two feet broad and six feet long,  
And what the calendar counts middle age—  
You wanted, did you, to enjoy a flight?

Why not have taken into confidence  
Me, that was mother to you?—never mind  
What mock disguise of mistress held you  
mine!

I had you come laughing, crying, with request,  
'Make me fly, mother!' I had run upstairs  
And held you tight the while I danced you  
high

In air from tower-top, singing 'Off we go  
(On pilgrimage to Lourdes some day next  
month)

And swift we soar (to Rome with Peter-pence)  
And low we light (at Paris where we pick  
Another jewel from our store of stones  
And send it for a present to the Pope)!  
So, dropt indeed you were, but on my  
knees,

Rolling and crowing, not a whit the worse  
For journey to your Ravissante and back.  
Now, no more Clairvaux—which I made you  
build,

And think an inspiration of your own—  
No more fine house, trim garden, pretty  
park,

Nothing I used to busy you about,  
And make believe you worked for my sur-  
prise!

What weariness to me will work become  
Now that I need not seem surprised again!  
This boudoir, for example, with the doves  
(My stupid maid has damaged, dusting one)  
Embossed in stucco o'er the looking-glass  
Beside the toilet-table I dear—dear me!"

Here she looked up from her absorbing grief,  
And round her, crow-like grouped, the  
Cousinry,

(She grew aware) sat witnesses at watch.  
For, two days had elapsed since fate befell  
The courser in the meadow, stretched so  
stark.

They did not cluster on the tree-tops, close  
Their sooty ranks, caw and confabulate  
For nothing: but, like calm determined crows,  
They came to take possession of their corpse.  
And who shall blame them? Had not they  
the right?

One spoke. "They would be gentle, not  
austere.

They understood and were compassionate.  
Madame Muhlhausen lay too abject now  
For aught but the sincerest pity; still,  
Since plain speech salves the wound it seems  
to make,

They must speak plainly—circumstances  
spoke!

Sin had conceived and brought forth death  
indeed.

As the commencement so the close of things:  
Just what might be expected all along!  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda launched his youth  
Into a cesspool of debauchery,  
And if he thence emerged all dripping slime,  
Where was the change except from thin to  
thick,

One warm rich mud-bath, Madame?—you,  
in place

Of Paris-drainage and distilment, you  
He never needed budge from, boiled to rags!  
True, some good instinct left the natural man,  
Some touch of that deep dye wherewith  
imbued.

By education, in his happier day,  
The hopeful offspring of high parentage  
Was fleece-marked moral and religious  
sheep,—

Some ruddle, faint remainder, (we admit)  
Stuck to Miranda, rubbed he ne'er so rude  
Against the goatly coarseness: to the last,  
Moral he styled himself, religious too!  
Which means—what ineradicable good

You found, you never left till good's self  
 proved Signed, sealed and sworn to! Brief, the  
 man was mad.

Perversion and distortion, nursed to growth  
 We are his heirs and claim our heritage.  
 So monstrous, that the tree-stock, dead and  
 Madame Muhlhause, — whom good taste  
 dry, forbids

Were seemlier far than such a heap grotesque  
 We qualify as do these documents, —  
 Of fungous flourishing excrecence. Here  
 Fear not lest justice stifle mercy's prayer!  
 Sap-like affection, meant for family,  
 True, had you lent a willing ear at first,  
 Stole off to feed one sucker fat—yourself;  
 Had you obeyed our call two years ago,  
 While branchage, trained religiously aloft  
 Restrained a certain insolence of eye,  
 To rear its head in reverence to the sun,  
 A volubility of tongue, that time,  
 Was pulled down earthward, pegged and  
 Your prospects had been none the worse,  
 picketed, perhaps.

By topiary contrivance, till the tree  
 Still, fear not but a decent competence  
 Became an arbour where, at vulgar ease,  
 Shall smooth the way for your declining age!  
 Sat superstition grinning through the loops.  
 What we propose, then . . .

For cockney treatment: either, tree springs  
 back

To pristine shape, or else degraded droops,  
 Clara dried her eyes,  
 And turns to touchwood at the heart. So  
 Sat up, surveyed the consistory, spoke  
 here— After due pause, with something of a smile.

Body and mind, at last the man gave way.  
 "Gentlemen, kinsfolk of my friend defunct,  
 In thus addressing me—of all the world!—  
 His body—there it lies, what part was left  
 You much misapprehend what part I play.  
 Unmutilated! for, the strife commenced  
 I claim no property you speak about.  
 Two years ago, when both hands burnt to  
 ash, You might as well address the park-keeper,  
 Harangue him on some plan advisable  
 For covering the park with cottage-plots.

—A branch broke loose, by loss of what  
 choice twigs!

As for his mind—behold our register  
 His business is to see the sward kept trim,  
 Of all its moods, from the incipient mad,  
 Untrespassed over by the indiscreet:  
 Nay, mere erratic, to the stark insane,  
 Beyond that, he refers you to myself—  
 Absolute idiocy or what is worse!

All have we catalogued—extravagance  
 Another servant of another kind—  
 In worldly matters, luxury absurd,  
 Who again—quite as limited in act—  
 And zeal as crazed in its expenditure  
 Refer you, with your projects,—can I else?

Of nonsense called devotion. Don't we know  
 To who in mastery is ultimate,  
 —We Cousins, bound in duty to our kin,—  
 The Church. The Church is sole adminis-

What mummeries were practised by you  
 trant,  
 two

At Clairvaux? Not a servant got discharge  
 Since sole possessor of what worldly wealth  
 But came and told his grievance, testified  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda late possessed.  
 To acts which turn religion to a farce.  
 Often enough has he attempted, nay,  
 And as the private mock, so patent—see—  
 Forced me, well-nigh, to occupy the post  
 The public scandal! Ask the neighbour-  
 You seemingly suppose I fill,—receive  
 hood— As gift the wealth entrusted me as grace.  
 This—for quite other reasons than appear  
 So cogent to your perspicacity—

Or rather, since we asked them long ago,  
 This I refused; and, firm as you could wish,  
 Read what they answer, depositions down,  
 Still was my answer. We two understand

Each one the other. I am intimate  
—As how can be mere fools and knaves—  
or, say,

Even your Cousins?—with your love to me,  
Devotion to the Church. Would Providence  
Appoint, and make me certain of the same,  
That I survive you (which is little like,  
Seeing you hardly overpass my age  
And more than match me in abundant health)  
In such case, certainly I would accept  
Your bounty: better I than alien hearts  
Should execute your planned benevolence  
To man, your proposed largess to the Church.  
But though I be survivor,—weakly frame,  
With only woman's wit to make amends,—  
When I shall die, or while I am alive,  
Cannot you figure me an easy mark  
For hypocritical rapacity,  
Kith, kin and generation, couching low,  
Ever on the alert to pounce on prey?  
Far be it I should say they profited  
By that first frenzy-fit themselves induced,—  
Cold-blooded scenical buffoons at sport  
With horror and damnation o'er a grave.  
That were too shocking—I absolve them  
there!

Nor did they seize the moment of your swoon  
To rifle pocket, wring a paper thence,  
Their Cousinly dictation, and enrich  
Thereby each mother's son as heart could  
wish,

Had nobody supplied a codicil.

But when the pain, poor friend! had pro-  
strated

Your body, though your soul was right once  
more,

I fear they turned your weakness to account!  
Why else to me, who agonizing watched,  
Sneak, cap in hand, now bribe me to forsake  
My maimed Léonce, now bully, cap on head,  
The impudent pretension to assuage  
Such sorrows as demanded Cousins' care?—  
*For you rejected, hated, fled me, far  
In foreign lands: you laughed at me!*—they  
judged.

And, think you, will the unkind ones hesitate  
To try conclusions with my helplessness,—  
To pounce on and misuse your derelict,

Helped by advantage that bereavement lends  
Folk, who, while yet you lived, played tricks  
like these?

You only have to die, and they detect,  
In all you said and did, insanity!  
Your faith was fetish-worship, your regard  
For Christ's prime precept which endows the  
poor

And strips the rich, a craze from first to last!  
They so would limn your likeness, paint your  
life,

That if it ended by some accident,—  
For instance, if, attempting to arrange  
The plants below that dangerous Belvedere  
I cannot warn you from sufficiently,  
You lost your balance and fell headlong—  
fine

Occasion, such, for crying *Suicide!*  
*Non compos mentis*, naturally next,  
Hands over Clairvaux to a Cousin-tribe  
Who nor like me nor love The Ravissante:  
Therefore be ruled by both! Life-interest  
In Clairvaux,—conservation, guardianship  
Of earthly good for heavenly purpose,—give  
Such and no other proof of confidence!  
Let Clara represent the Ravissante!

—To whom accordingly, he then and there  
Bequeathed each stick and stone, by testa-  
ment

In holograph, mouth managing the quill:  
Go, see the same in Londres, if you doubt!"

Then smile grew laugh, as sudden up she  
stood

And out she spoke: intemperate the speech!  
"And now, sirs, for your special courtesy,

Your candle held up to the character  
Of Lucie Steiner, whom you qualify  
As coming short of perfect womanhood.  
Yes, kindly critics, truth for once you tell!  
True is it that through childhood, poverty,  
Sloth, pressure of temptation, I succumbed,  
And, ere I found what honour meant, lost  
mine.

So was the sheep lost, which the Shepherd  
found

And never lost again. My friend found me;  
Or better say, the Shepherd found us both—

Since he, my friend, was much in the same mire  
 When first we made acquaintance. Each helped each,—  
 A two-fold extrication from the slough ;  
 And, saving me, he saved himself. Since then,  
 Unsmirched we kept our cleanliness of coat.  
 It is his perfect constancy, you call  
 My friend's main fault—he never left his love !  
 While as for me, I dare your worst, impute  
 One breach of loving bond, these twenty years,  
 To me whom only cobwebs bound, you count !  
 ' He was religiously disposed in youth !'  
 That may be, though we did not meet at church.  
 Under my teaching did he, like you scamps,  
 Become Voltairian—fools who mock his faith ?  
 ' Infirm of body !' I am silent there :  
 Even yourselves acknowledge service done,  
 Whatever motive your own souls supply  
 As inspiration. Love made labour light."

Then laugh grew frown, and frown grew terrible.  
 Do recollect what sort of person shrieked—  
 " Such was I, saint or sinner, what you please :  
 And who is it casts stone at me but you ?  
 By your own showing, sirs, you bought and sold,  
 Took what advantage bargain promised bag,  
 Abundantly did business, and with whom ?  
 The man whom you pronounce imbecile, push  
 Indignantly aside if he presume  
 To settle his affairs like other folk !  
 How is it you have stepped into his shoes  
 And stand there, bold as brass, ' Miranda, late,  
 Now, Firm-Miranda ' ? Sane, he signed away  
 That little birthright, did he ? Hence to trade !  
 I know and he knew who 'twas dipped and ducked,  
 Truckled and played the parasite in vain,  
 As now one, now the other, here you cringed,

Were feasted, took our presents, you—those  
 Just for your wife's adornment ! you—that spray  
 Exactly suiting, as most diamonds would,  
 Your daughter on her marriage ! No word then  
 Of somebody the wanton ! Hence, I say,  
 Subscribers to the *Sicle*, every snob—  
 For here the post brings me the *Univers* !  
 Home and make money in the Place Vendôme,  
 Sully yourselves no longer by my sight,  
 And, when next Schneider wants a new *parure*,  
 Be careful lest you stick there by mischance  
 That stone beyond compare entrusted you  
 To kindle faith with, when, Miranda's gift,  
 Crowning the very crown, the Ravissante  
 Shall claim it ! As to Clairvaux—talk to Her !  
 She answers by the Chapter of Raimbaux !"  
 Vituperative, truly ! All this wrath  
 Because the man's relations thought him mad !  
 Whereat, I hope you see the Cousinry  
 Turn each to other, blankly dolorous,  
 Consult a moment, more by shrug and shrug  
 Than mere man's language,—finally conclude  
 To leave the reprobate untroubled now  
 In her unholy triumph, till the Law  
 Shall right the injured ones ; for gentlemen  
 Allow the female sex, this sort at least,  
 Its privilege. So, simply " Cockatrice !"—  
 " Jezebel !"—" Queen of the Camellias !"—  
 cried  
 Cousin to cousin, as yon hinge a-creak  
 Shut out the party, and the gate returned  
 To custody of Clairvaux. " Pretty place !  
 What say you, when it proves our property,  
 To trying a concurrence with La Roche,  
 And laying down a rival oyster-bed ?  
 Where the park ends, the sea begins, you know."  
 So took they comfort till they came to Vire.  
 But I would linger, fain to snatch a look  
 At Clara as she stands in pride of place,  
 Somewhat more satisfying than my glance

So furtive, so near futile, yesterday,  
Because one must be courteous. Of the  
masks

That-figure in this little history,  
She only has a claim to my respect,  
And one-eyed, in her French phrase, rules  
the blind.

Miranda hardly did his best with life :  
He might have opened eye, exerted brain,  
Attained conception as to right and law  
In certain points respecting intercourse  
Of man with woman—love, one likes to say ;  
Which knowledge had dealt rudely with the  
claim

Of Clara to play representative  
And from perdition rescue soul, forsooth !  
Also, the sense of him should have sufficed  
For building up some better theory  
Of how God operates in heaven and earth,  
Than would establish Him participant  
In doings yonder at the Ravissante.  
The heart was wise according to its lights  
And limits ; but the head refused more sun,  
And shrank into its mew and craved less  
space.

Clara, I hold the happier specimen,—  
It may be, through that artist-preference  
For work complete, inferiorly proposed,  
To incompletion, though it aim aright.  
Morally, no ! Aspire, break bounds ! I say,  
Endeavour to be good, and better still,  
And best ! Success is nought, endeavour's  
all.

But intellect adjusts the means to ends,  
Tries the low thing, and leaves it done, at  
least ;

No prejudice to high thing, intellect  
Would do and will do, only give the means.  
Miranda, in my picture-gallery,  
Presents a Blake ; be Clara—Meissonier !  
Merely considered so by artist, mind !  
For, break through Art and rise to poetry,  
Being Art to tremble nearer, touch enough  
The verge of vastness to inform our soul  
What orb makes transit through the dark  
above,

And there's the triumph !—there the incom-  
plete,

More than completion, matches the im-  
mense,—

Then, Michelagnolo against the world !  
With this proviso, let me study her  
Approvingly, the finished little piece !  
Born, bred, with just one instinct,—that of  
growth,—

Her quality was, caterpillar-like,  
To all-unerringly select a leaf  
And without intermission feed her fill,  
Become the Painted-peacock, or belike  
The Brimstone-wing, when time of year  
should suit ;

And 'tis a sign (say entomologists)  
Of sickness, when the creature stops its meal  
One minute, either to look up at heaven,  
Or turn aside for change of aliment.  
No doubt there was a certain ugliness  
In the beginning, as the grub grew worm :  
She could not find the proper plant at once,  
But crawled and fumbled through a whole  
parterre.

Husband Muhlhausen served for stuff not  
long :

Then came confusion of the slimy track  
From London, "where she gave the tone  
awhile,"

To Paris : let the stalks start up again,  
Now she is off them, all the greener they !  
But, settled on Miranda, how she sucked,  
Assimilated juices, took the tint,  
Mimicked the form and texture of her food !  
Was he for pastime ? Who so frolic-fond  
As Clara ? Had he a devotion-fit ?

Clara grew serious with like qualm, be sure !  
In health and strength he,—healthy too and  
strong,

She danced, rode, drove, took pistol-practice,  
fished,

Nay, "managed sea-skiff with consummate  
skill."

In pain and weakness, he,—she patient  
watched

And wiled the slow drip-dropping hours away.  
She bound again the broken self-respect,  
She picked out the true meaning from mistake,  
Praised effort in each stumble, laughed "Well-  
climbed !"

When others groaned "None ever grovelled  
so!"

"Rise, you have gained experience!" was  
her word:

"Lie satisfied, the ground is just your place!"  
They thought appropriate counsel. "Live,  
not die,

And take my full life to eke out your own:  
That shall repay me and with interest!  
Write!—is your mouth not clever as my  
hand?

Paint!—the last Exposition warrants me,  
Plenty of people must ply brush with toes.  
And as for music—look, what folk nickname  
A lyre, those ancients played to ravishment,—  
Over the *pendule*, see, Apollo grasps  
A three-stringed gimcrack which no Liszt  
could coax

Such music from as jew's-harp makes to-day!  
Do your endeavour like a man, and leave  
The rest to 'fortune who assists the bold'—  
Learn, you, the Latin which you taught me  
first,  
You clever creature—clever, yes, I say!"

If he smiled "Let us love, love's wrong comes  
right,  
Shows reason last of all! Necessity  
Must meanwhile serve for plea—so, mind  
not much  
Old Fricquot's menace!"—back she smiled  
"Who minds?"

If he sighed "Ah, but She is strict, they say,  
For all Her mercy at the Ravissante,  
She scarce will be put off so!"—straight a sigh  
Returned "My lace must go to trim Her  
gown!"

I nowise doubt she inwardly believed  
Smiling and sighing had the same effect  
Upon the venerated image. What  
She did believe in, I as little doubt,  
Was—Clara's self's own birthright to sustain  
Existence, grow from grub to butterfly,  
Upon unlimited Miranda-leaf;  
In which prime article of faith confirmed,  
According to capacity, she fed  
On said on till the leaf was eaten up  
That April morning. Even then, I praise

Her forsthought which prevented leafless  
stalk

Bestowing any hoarded succulence  
On earwig and blackbeetle squat beneath  
Clairvaux, that stalk whereto her hermitage  
She tacked by golden throw of silk, so fine,  
So anything but feeble, that her sleep  
Inside it, through last winter, two years long,  
Recked little of the storm and strife without.  
"But—loved him?" Friend, I do not praise  
her love!

True love works never for the loved one so,  
Nor spares skin-surface, smoothening truth  
away.

Love bids touch truth, endure truth, and  
embrace

Truth, though, embracing truth, love crush  
itself.

"Worship not me but God!" the angels urge!  
That is love's grandeur: still, in pettier love  
The nice eye can distinguish grade and grade.  
Shall mine degrade the velvet green and puce  
Of caterpillar, palmer-worm—or what—  
Ball in and out of ball, each ball with brush  
Of Venus' eye-fringe round the turquoise egg  
That nestles soft,—compare such paragon  
With any scarabeus of the brood  
Which, born to fly, keeps wing in wing-case  
walks

Persistently a-trundling dung on earth?  
Egypt may venerate such hierophants,  
Not I—the couple yonder, Father Priest  
And Mother Nun, who came and went and  
came,

Beset this Clairvaux, trundled money-muck  
To midden and the main heap off enough,  
But never bade unshut from sheath the gauze,  
Nor showed that, who would fly, must let fall  
filth,

And warn "Your jewel, brother, is a blotch:  
Sister, your lace trails ordure! Leave your  
sins,  
And so best gift with Crown and grace with  
Robe!"

The superstition is extinct, you hope?  
It were, with my good will! Suppose it so,  
Bethink you likewise of the latest use



Whereto a Night-cap is convertible,  
And draw your very thickest, thread and  
thrump,

O'er such a decomposing face of things,  
Once so alive, it seemed immortal too!

This happened two years since. The Cousinry  
Returned to Paris, called in help from Law,  
And in due form proceeded to dispute  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's competence,  
Being insane, to make a valid Will.

Much testimony volunteered itself;  
The issue hardly could be doubtful—but  
For that sad 'Seventy which must intervene,  
Provide poor France with other work to mind  
Than settling lawsuits, even for the sake  
Of such a party as the Ravissante.  
It only was this Summer that the case  
Could come and be disposed of, two weeks  
since,

At Vire—Tribunal Civil—Chamber First.

Here, issued with all regularity,  
I hold the judgment—just, inevitable,  
Nowise to be contested by what few  
Can judge the judges; sum and substance,  
thus—

"Inasmuch as we find, the Cousinry,  
During that very period when they take  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda for stark mad,  
Considered him to be quite sane enough  
For doing much important business with—  
Nor showed suspicion of his competence  
Until, by turning of the tables, loss  
Instead of gain accrued to them thereby,—  
Plea of incompetence we set aside.

—"The rather, that the dispositions, sought  
To be impugned, are natural and right,  
Nor jar with any reasonable claim  
Of kindred, friendship or acquaintance here.  
Nobody is despoiled, none overlooked;  
Since the testator leaves his property  
To just that person whom, of all the world,  
He counted he was most indebted to.  
In mere discharge, then, of conspicuous debt,

Madame Muhlhausen has priority,  
Enjoys the usufruct of Clairvaux.

"Next,  
Such debt discharged, such life determining,  
Such earthly interest provided for,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda may bequeath,  
In absence of more fit recipient, fund  
And usufruct together to the Church  
Whereof he was a special devotee.

"—Which disposition, being consonant  
With a long series of such acts and deeds  
Notorious in his life-time, needs must stand,  
Unprejudiced by eccentricity  
Nowise amounting to distemper: since,  
In every instance signalized as such,  
We recognize no overleaping bounds,  
No straying out of the permissible:  
Duty to the Religion of the Land,—  
Neither excessive nor inordinate.

"The minor accusations are dismissed;  
They prove mere freak and fancy, boyish mood  
In age mature of simple kindly man.  
Exuberant in generousities  
To all the world: no fact confirms the fear  
He meditated mischief to himself  
That morning when he met the accident  
Which ended fatally. The case is closed."

How otherwise? So, when I grazed the skirts,  
And had the glimpse of who made, yesterday,—  
Woman and retinue of goats and sheep,—  
The sombre path one whiteness, vision-like,  
As out of gate, and in at gate again,  
They wavered,—she was lady there for life:  
And, after life—I hope, a white success  
Of some sort, wheresoever life resume  
School interrupted by vacation—death;  
Seeing that home she goes with prize in hand,  
Confirmed the Châtelaine of Clairvaux.

True,  
Such prize fades soon to insignificance.  
Though she have eaten her Miranda up,  
And spun a cradle-cone through which she  
pricks

Her passage, and proves Peacock-butterfly  
This Autumn—wait a little week of cold !  
Peacock and death's-head-moth end much the  
same.

And could she still continue spinning,—sure,  
Cradle would soon crave shroud for substitute,  
And o'er this life of hers distaste would drop  
Red-cotton-Night-cap-wise.

How say you, friend ?  
Have I redeemed my promise ? Smile assent  
Through the dark Winter-gloom between us  
both !

Already, months ago and miles away,  
I just as good as told you, in a flash,  
The while we paced the sands before my  
house,

All this poor story—truth and nothing else.  
Accept that moment's flashing, amplified,  
Impalpability reduced to speech,  
Conception proved by birth,—no other change !  
Can what Saint-Rambert flashed me in a  
thought,

Good gloomy London make a poem of ?  
Such ought to be whatever dares precede,  
Play ruddy herald-star to your white blaze  
About to bring us day. How fail imbibe  
Some foretaste of effulgence ? Sun shall

wax,  
And star shall wane : what matter, so star  
tell

The drowsy world to start awake, rub eyes,  
And stand all ready for morn's joy a-blush ?

*January 23, 1873.*

# THE INN ALBUM.

1875

[For the alleged foundation of this story, see *Notes and Queries*, March 25, 1876.]

## THE INN ALBUM.

"THAT oblong book's the Album; hand it here!

Exactly! page on page of gratitude  
For breakfast, dinner, supper, and the view!  
I praise these poets: they leave margin-space;

Each stanza seems to gather skirts around,  
And primly, trimly, keep the foot's confine,  
Modest and maidlike; lubber prose o'er-sprawls

And straddling stops the path from left to right.

Since I want space to do my cipher-work,  
Which poem spares a corner? What comes first?

'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!'

(Open the window, we burn daylight, boy!)  
Or see—succincter beauty, brief and bold—

'If a fellow can dine On rumpsteaks and port wine,

He needs not despair Of dining well here—'

'Here!' I myself could find a better rhyme!  
That bard's a Browning; he neglects the form:

But ah, the sense, ye gods, the weighty sense!  
Still, I prefer this classic. Ay, throw wide!  
I'll quench the bits of candle yet unburnt.

A minute's fresh air, then to cipher-work!  
Three little columns hold the whole account:

*Ecarté*, after which Blind Hookey, then  
Cutting-the-Pack, five hundred pounds the cut.

'Tis easy reckoning: I have lost, I think."

Two personages occupy this room  
Shabby-genteel, that's parlour to the inn

Perched on a view-commanding eminence;

Inn which may be a veritable house  
Where somebody once lived and pleased  
good taste

Till tourists found his coign of vantage out,  
And fingered blunt the individual mark  
And vulgarized things comfortably smooth.  
On a sprig-pattern-papered wall there brays  
Complaint to sky Sir Edwin's dripping stag;  
His couchant coast-guard creature corre-sponds;

They face the Huguenot and Light o' the World.

Grim o'er the mirror on the mantelpiece,  
Varnished and confined, *Salmo ferox* glares  
—Possibly at the List of Wines which, framed  
And glazed, hangs somewhat prominent on peg.

So much describes the stuffy little room—  
Vulgar flat smooth respectability:  
Not so the burst of landscape surging in,  
Sunrise and all, as he who of the pair  
Is, plain enough, the younger personage  
Draws sharp the shrieking curtain, sends aloft  
The sash, spreads wide and fastens back to wall

Shutter and shutter, shows you England's best.

He leans into a living glory-bath  
Of air and light where seems to float and move

The wooded watered country, hill and dale  
And steel-bright thread of stream, a-smoke with mist,

A-sparkle with May morning, diamond drift  
O' the sun-touched dew. Except the red-roofed patch

Of half a dozen dwellings that, crept close

For hill-side shelter, make the village-clump,  
This inn is perched above to dominate—  
Except such sign of human neighbourhood,  
(And this surmised rather than sensible)  
There's nothing to disturb absolute peace,  
The reign of English nature—which means  
art

And civilized existence. Wildness' self  
Is just the cultured triumph. Presently  
Deep solitude, be sure, reveals a Place  
That knows the right way to defend itself:  
Silence hems round a burning spot of life.  
Now, where a Place burns, must a village  
brood,

And where a village broods, an inn should  
boast—

Close and convenient: here you have them  
both.

This inn, the Something-arms—the family's—  
(Don't trouble Guillim: <sup>1</sup> heralds leave out  
half!)

Is dear to lovers of the picturesque,  
And epics have been planned here; but who  
plan

Take holy orders and find work to do.  
Painters are more productive, stop a week,  
Declare the prospect quite a Corot,—ay,  
For tender sentiment,—themselves incline  
Rather to handsweep large and liberal;  
Then go, but not without success achieved  
—Haply some pencil-drawing, oak or beech,  
Ferns at the base and ivies up the bole,  
On this a slug, on that a butterfly.

Nay, he who hooked the *salmo* pendent  
here,

Also exhibited, this same May-month,  
'*Foxgloves: a study*'—so inspires the scene,  
The air, which now the younger personage  
Inflates him with till lungs: o'erfraught are  
fain

Sigh forth a satisfaction might bestir  
Even those tufts of tree-tops to the South  
I' the distance where the green dies off to  
grey,

Which, easy of conjecture, front the Place;  
He eyes them, elbows wide, each hand to  
cheek.

<sup>1</sup> Famous author on heraldry.

His fellow, the much older—either say  
A youngish-old man or man oldish-young—  
Sits at the table: wicks are noisome-deep  
In wax, to detriment of plated ware;  
Above—piled, strewn—is store of playing-  
cards,

Counters and all that's proper for a game.  
He sets down, rubs out figures in the book,  
Adds and subtracts, puts back here, carries  
there,

Until the summed-up satisfaction stands  
Apparent, and he pauses o'er the work:  
Soothes what of brain was busy under brow,  
By passage of the hard palm, curing so  
Wrinkle and crowfoot for a second's space;  
Then lays down book and laughs out. No  
mistake,

Such the sum-total—ask Colenso else!

Roused by which laugh, the other turns,  
laughs too—

The youth, the good strong fellow, rough  
perhaps.

"Well, what's the damage—three, or four,  
or five?

How many figures in a row? Hand here!  
Come now, there's one expense all yours not  
mine—

Scribbling the people's Album over, leaf  
The first and foremost too! You think,  
perhaps,

They'll only charge you for a brand-new  
book

Nor estimate the literary loss?

Wait till the small account comes! '*To one  
night's*

*Lodging*,'—for 'beds,' they can't say,—'*found  
or so*;

*Dinner, Apollinaris,—what they please,  
Attendance not included*;' last looms large  
'*Defacement of our Album, late enriched  
With*'—let's see what! Here, at the window,  
though!

Ay, breathe the morning and forgive your  
luck!

Fine enough country for a fool like me  
To own, as next month I suppose I shall!

Eh? True fool's-fortune! so console yourself.  
Let's see, however—hand the book, I say!  
Well, you've improved the classic byromance.  
Queer reading! Verse with parenthetic

prose—

'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!  
(Three-two fives) 'life how profitably spent'  
(Five-nought, five-nine fives) 'yonder humble  
cot,'

(More and more noughts and fives) 'in mild  
content;

And did my feelings find the natural vent  
In friendship and in love, how blest my lot!  
Then follow the dread figures—five! 'Con-  
tent!'

That's apposite! Are you content as he—  
Simpkin the sonneteer? Ten thousand pounds  
Give point to his effusion—by so much  
Leave me the richer and the poorer you  
After our night's play; who's content the most,  
I, you, or Simpkin?"

So the polished snob.  
The elder man, refinement every inch  
From brow to boot-end, quietly replies:

"Simpkin's no name I know. I had my  
whim."

"Ay, had you! And such things make  
friendship thick.

Intimates I may boast we were; henceforth,  
Friends—shall it not be?—who discard re-  
serve,

Use plain words, put each dot upon each i,  
Till death us twain do part? The bargain's  
struck!

Old fellow, if you fancy—to begin—

I failed to penetrate your scheme last week,  
You wrong your poor disciple. Oh, no airs!  
Because you happen to be twice my age  
And twenty times my master, must perforce  
No blink of daylight struggle through the web  
There's no unwinding? You entoil my legs,  
And welcome, for I like it: blind me,—no!  
A very pretty piece of shuttle-work

Was that—your mere chance question at the  
club—

'Do you go anywhere this Whitsuntide?

I'm off for Paris, there's the Opera—there's  
The Salon, there's a china-sale,—beside  
Chantilly; and, for good companionship,  
There's Such-and-such and So-and-so. Sup-  
pose

We start together?' 'No such holiday!  
I told you: 'Paris and the rest be hanged!  
Why plague me who am pledged to home-  
delights?

I'm the engaged now; through whose fault  
but yours?

On duty. As you well know. Don't I drowse  
The week away down with the Aunt and Niece?  
No help: it's leisure, loneliness and love.  
Wish I could take you; but fame travels  
fast,—

A man of much newspaper-paragraph,  
You scare domestic circles; and beside  
Would not you like your lot, that second taste  
Of nature and approval of the grounds!  
You might walk early or lie late, so shirk  
Week-day devotions: but stay Sunday o'er,  
And morning church is obligatory:  
No mundane garb permissible, or dread  
The butler's privileged monition! No!  
Pack off to Paris, nor wipe tear away!  
Whereon how artlessly the happy flash  
Followed, by inspiration! 'Tell you what—  
Let's turn their flank, try things on t'other  
side!

Inns for my money! Liberty's the life!  
We'll lie in hiding: there's the crow-nest nook,  
The tourist's joy, the Inn they rave about,  
Inn that's out—out of sight and out of mind  
And out of mischief to all four of us—  
Aunt and niece, you and me. At night arrive;  
At morn, find time for just a Pisgah-view  
Of my friend's Land of Promise; then depart.  
And while I'm whizzing onward by first  
train,

Bound for our own place (since my Brother  
sulks

And says I shun him like the plague) yourself—  
Why, you have stepped thence, start from  
platform, gay

Despite the sleepless journey,—love lends  
wings,—

Hug aunt and niece who, none the wiser, wait

*The faithful advent! Eh? 'With all my heart,'*

Said I to you; said I to mine own self:  
'Does he believe I fail to comprehend  
He wants just one more final friendly snack  
At friend's exchequer ere friend runs to earth,  
Marries, renounces yielding friends such  
sport?'

And did I spoil sport, pull face grim,—nay,  
grave?

Your pupil does you better credit! No!  
I parleyed with my pass-book,—rubbed my  
pair

At the big balance in my banker's hands,—  
Folded a cheque cigar-case-shape,—just wants  
Filling and signing,—and took train, resolved  
To execute myself with decency  
And let you win—if not Ten thousand quite,  
Something by way of wind-up-farewell burst  
Of firework-nosegay! Where's your fortune  
fled?

Or is not fortune constant after all?

You lose ten thousand pounds: had I lost half  
Or half that, I should bite my lips, I think.  
You man of marble! Strut and stretch my best  
On tiptoe, I shall never reach your height.  
How does the loss feel! Just one lesson  
more!"

The more refined man smiles a frown away.

"The lesson shall be—only boys like you  
Put such a question at the present stage.  
I had a ball lodge in my shoulder once,  
And, full five minutes, never guessed the fact;  
Next day, I felt decidedly: and still,  
At twelve years' distance, when I lift my arm  
A twinge reminds me of the surgeon's probe.  
Ask me, this day month, how I feel my luck!  
And meantime please to stop impertinence,  
For—don't I know its object? All this chaff  
Covers the corn, this preface leads to speech,  
This boy stands forth a hero. 'There, my  
lord!

*Our play was true play, fun not earnest! I  
Empty your purse, inside out, while my poke  
Bulges to bursting? You can badly spare  
A doit, confess now, Duke though brother be!*

*While I'm gold-daw... are not well!*  
drop

And show my father's warehouse...  
pshaw!

Enough! We've had a palpitating night!  
Good morning! Breakfast and forget our  
dreams!

My mouth's shut, mind! I tell nor man nor  
mouse.'

There, see! He don't deny it! Thanks,  
my boy!

Hero and welcome—only, not on me  
Make trial of your 'prentice-hand! Enough!  
We've played, I've lost and owe ten thousand  
pounds,

Whereof I muster, at the moment,—well,  
What's for the bill here and the back to town.  
Still, I've my little character to keep:  
You may expect your money at month's end."

The young man at the window turns round  
quick—

A clumsy giant handsome creature; grasps  
In his large red the little lean white hand  
Of the other, looks him in the sallow face.

"I say now—is it right to so mistake  
A fellow, force him in mere self-defence  
To spout like Mister *Mild Acclivity*  
In album-language? You know well enough  
Whether I like you—like's no album-word  
Anyhow: point me to one soul beside  
In the wide world I care one straw about!  
I first set eyes on you a year ago;  
Since when you've done me good—I'll stick  
to it—

More than I got in the whole twenty-five  
That make my life up, Oxford years and all—  
Throw in the three I fooled away abroad,  
Seeing myself and nobody more sage  
Until I met you, and you made me man  
Such as the sort is and the fates allow.  
I do think, since we two kept company,  
I've learnt to know a little—all through you!  
It's nature if I like you. Taunt away!  
As if I need you teaching me my place—  
The snob I am, the Duke your brother is,  
When just the good you did was—teaching me

My own trade, <sup>ob</sup> and millionaire  
 Don't stand let the Duke's alone,  
 May see, <sup>by</sup> tree jackdaw, on his steeple-perch,  
 Well,ish his black to gold in sun and air,  
 Nor pick up stray plumes, strive to match in  
 strut

Regular peacocks who can't fly an inch  
 Over the courtyard-paling. Head and heart  
 (That's album-style) are older than you know,  
 For all your knowledge: boy, perhaps—ay,  
 boy

Had his adventure, just as he were man—  
 His ball-experience in the shoulder-blade,  
 His bit of life-long ache to recognize,  
 Although he bears it cheerily about,  
 Because you came and clapped him on the  
 back,

Advised him '*Walk and wear the aching off!*'

Why, I was minded to sit down for life  
 Just in Dalmatia, build a sea-side tower  
 High on a rock, and so expend my days  
 Pursuing chemistry or botany

Or, very like, astronomy because  
 I noticed stars shone when I passed the place:  
 Letting my cash accumulate the while  
 In England—to lay out in lump at last

As Ruskin should direct me! All or some  
 Of which should I have done or tried to do,  
 And preciously repented, one fine day,  
 Had you discovered Timon, climbed his rock  
 And scaled his tower, some ten years thence,  
 suppose,

And coaxed his story from him! Don't I see  
 The pair conversing! It's a novel writ  
 Already, I'll be bound,—our dialogue!

'What?' cried the elder and yet youthful  
 man—

*So did the eye flash 'neath the lordly front,  
 And the imposing presence swell with scorn,  
 As the haught high-bred bearing and dispose  
 Contrasted with his interlocutor*

*The flabby low-born who, of bulk before,  
 Had steadily increased, one stone per week,  
 Since his abstention from horse-exercise—*

'What? you, as rich as Rothschild, left, you  
 say,

*London the very year you came of age,  
 Because your father manufactured goods—*

*Commission-agent hight of Manchester—  
 Partly, and partly through a baby case.  
 Of disappointment I've pumped out at last—  
 And here you spend life's prime in gaining  
 flesh*

*And giving science one more asteroid?*

Brief, my dear fellow, you instructed me,  
 At Alfred's and not Istria! proved a snob  
 May turn a million to account although  
 His brother be no Duke, and see good days  
 Without the girl he lost and someone gained.

The end is, after one year's tutelage,  
 Having, by your help, touched society,  
 Polo, Tent-pegging, Hurlingham, the Rink—  
 I leave all these delights, by your advice,  
 And marry my young pretty cousin here

Whose place, whose oaks ancestral you behold.  
 (Her father was in partnership with mine—  
 Does not his purchase look a pedigree?)  
 My million will be tails and tassels smart  
 To this plump-bodied kite, this house and  
 land

Which, set a-soaring, pulls me, soft as sleep,  
 Along life's pleasant meadow,—arm left free  
 To lock a friend's in,—whose but yours, old  
 boy?

Arm in arm glide we over rough and smooth,  
 While hand, to pocket held, saves cash from  
 cards.

Now, if you don't esteem ten thousand pounds  
 (—Which I shall probably discover snug  
 Hid somewhere in the column-corner capped  
 With '*Credit*,' based on '*Balance*,'—which,  
 I swear,

By this time next month I shall quite forget  
 Whether I lost or won—ten thousand pounds,  
 Which at this instant I would give . . . let's  
 see,

For Galopin<sup>1</sup>—nay, for that Gainsborough  
 Sir Richard won't sell, and, if bought by me,  
 Would get my glance and praise some twice  
 a year,—)

Well, if you don't esteem that price dirt-cheap  
 For teaching me Dalmatia was mistake—

Why, then, my last illusion-bubble breaks,  
 My one discovered phoenix proves a goose,  
 My cleverest of all companions—oh,

<sup>1</sup> A racehorse.

Was worth nor ten pence nor ten thousand pounds!

Come! Be yourself again! So endeth here  
The morning's lesson! Never while life lasts  
Do I touch card again. To breakfast now!  
To bed—I can't say, since you needs must start

For station early—oh, the down-train still,  
First plan and best plan—townward trip be hanged!

You're due at your big brother's—pay that debt,

Then owe me, not a farthing! Order eggs—  
And who knows but there's trout obtainable?"

The fine man looks well-nigh malignant:  
then—

"Sir, please subdue your manner! Debts are debts:

I pay mine—debts of this sort—certainly.  
What do I care how you regard your gains,  
Want them or want them not? The thing I want

Is—not to have a story circulate  
From club to club—how, bent on clearing out  
Young So-and-so, young So-and-so cleaned me,

Then set the empty kennel flush again,  
Ignored advantage and forgave his friend—  
For why? There was no wringing blood from stone!

Oh, don't be savage! You would hold your tongue,

Bite it in two, as man may; but those small  
Hours in the smoking-room, when instance apt

Rises to tongue's root, tingles on to tip,  
And the thinned company consists of six  
Capital well-known fellows one may trust!  
Next week, it's in the 'World.' No, thank you much.

I owe ten thousand pounds: I'll pay them!"

"Now,—  
This becomes funny. You've made friends with me:

I can't help knowing of the ways and means!

Or stay! they say you are not unlike  
Correggio's long-lost Leda? You  
To give you that, and if you give it

"I polished snob off to aristocrat?  
You compliment me! father's apron still  
Sticks out from son's court-vesture; still silk purse  
Roughs finger with some bristle sow-ear-born!

Well, neither I nor you mean harm at heart!  
I owe you and shall pay you: which premised,  
Why should what follows sound like flattery?  
The fact is—you do compliment too much  
Your humble master, as I own I am;  
You owe me no such thanks as you protest.  
The polisher needs precious stone no less  
Than precious stone needs polisher: believe  
I struck no tint from out you but I found  
Snug lying first 'neath surface hair-breadth-deep!

Beside, I liked the exercise: with skill  
Goes love to show skill for skill's sake. You see,

I'm old and understand things: too absurd  
It were you pitched and tossed away your life,  
As diamond were Scotch-pebble! all the more,

That I myself misused a stone of price.  
Born and bred clever—people used to say  
Clever as most men, if not something more—  
Yet here I stand a failure, cut awry  
Or left opaque,—no brilliant named and known.

Whate'er my inner stuff, my outside's blank;  
I'm nobody—or rather, look that same—  
I'm—who I am—and know it; but I hold  
What in my hand out for the world to see?  
What ministry, what mission, or what book  
—I'll say, book even? Not a sign of these!  
I began—laughing—'All these when I like!  
I end with—well, you've hit it!—'This boy's  
cheque

For just as many thousands as he'll spare!  
The first—I could, and would not; your spare cash  
I would, and could not: have no scruple,  
pray,



But, as I hear, *able!*"

"Which is—when to be?"

We heard, great characters require a fall  
Of fortune to show greatness by uprise:  
*They touch the ground to jollily rebound,*  
Add to the Album! Let a fellow share  
Your secret of superiority!

I know, my banker makes the money breed  
Money; I eat and sleep, he simply takes  
The dividends and cuts the coupons off,  
Sells out, buys in, keeps doubling, tripling  
cash,

While I do nothing but receive and spend.

But you, spontaneous generator, hatch  
A wind-egg; cluck, and forth struts Capital  
As Interest to me from egg of gold.

I am grown curious: pay me by all means!  
How will you make the money?"

"Mind your own—  
Not my affair. Enough: or money, or  
Money's worth, as the case may be, expect  
Ere month's end,—keep but patient for a  
month!

Who's for a stroll to station? Ten's the time;  
Your man, with my things, follow in the trap;  
At stoppage of the down-train, play the arrived  
On platform, and you'll show the due fatigue  
Of the night-journey,—not much sleep,—  
perhaps,

Your thoughts were on before you—yes, in-  
deed,

You join them, being happily awake  
With thought's sole object as she smiling sits  
At breakfast-table. I shall dodge meantime  
In and out station-precinct, wile away  
The hour till up my engine pants and smokes.  
No doubt, she goes to fetch you. Never fear!  
She gets no glance at me, who shame such  
saints!"

## II.

So, they ring bell, give orders, pay, depart  
Amid profuse acknowledgment from host  
Who well knows what may bring the younger  
back.

They light cigar, descend in twenty steps  
The "*calm activity*," inhale—beyond

Tobacco's balm—the better smoke of turf  
And wood fire,—cottages at cookery  
I' the morning,—reach the main road straiten-  
ing on

'Twixt wood and wood, two black walls full  
of night

Slow to disperse, though mists thin fast before  
The advancing foot, and leave the flint-dust  
fine

Each speck with its fire-sparkle. Presently  
The road's end with the sky's beginning mix  
In one magnificence of glare, due East,  
So high the sun rides,—May's the merry  
month.

They slacken pace: the younger stops abrupt,  
Discards cigar, looks his friend full in face.

"All right; the station comes in view at end;  
Five minutes from the beech-clump, there you  
are!

I say: let's halt, let's borrow yonder gate  
Of its two magpies, sit and have a talk!  
Do let a fellow speak a moment! More  
I think about and less I like the thing—  
No, you must let me! Now, be good for  
once!

Ten thousand pounds be done for, dead and  
damned!

We played for love, not hate: yes, hate! I  
hate

Thinking you beg or borrow or reduce  
To strychnine some poor devil of a lord  
Licked at Unlimited Loo. I had the cash  
To lose—you knew that!—lose and none the  
less

Whistle to-morrow: it's not every chap  
Affords to take his punishment so well!  
Now, don't be angry with a friend whose  
fault

Is that he thinks—upon my soul, I do—  
Your head the best head going. Oh, one  
sees

Names in the newspaper—great this, great  
that,

Gladstone, Carlyle, the Laureate:—much I  
care!

Others have their opinion, I keep mine:

Which means—by right you ought to have the things

I want a head for. Here's a pretty place, My cousin's place, and presently my place, Not yours! I'll tell you how it strikes a man.

My cousin's fond of music and of course Plays the piano (it won't be for long!) A brand-new bore she calls a 'semi-grand,' Rosewood and pearl, that blocks the drawing-room,

And cost no end of money. Twice a week Down comes Herr Somebody and seats himself,

Sets to work teaching—with his teeth on edge—

I've watched the rascal. '*Does he play first-rate?*'

I ask: '*I rather think so,*' answers she— '*He's What's-his-Name!*'— '*Why give you lessons then?*'—

'*I pay three guineas and the train beside.*'— '*This instrument, has he one such at home?*'—

'*He? Has to practise on a table-top, When he can't hire the proper thing.*'— '*I see! You've the piano, he the skill, and God The distribution of such gifts.*' So here: After your teaching, I shall sit and strum Polkas on this piano of a Place You'd make resound with *Rule Britannia!*'

"Thanks!

I don't say but this pretty cousin's place, Appended with your million, tempts my hand

As key-board I might touch with some effect."

"Then, why not have obtained the like? House, land,

Money, are things obtainable, you see, By clever head-work: ask my father else! You, who teach me, why not have learned, yourself?

Played like Herr Somebody with power to thump

And flourish and the rest, not bend demure Pointing out blunders—'*Sharp, not natural!*'

*Permit me—on the black key use the thumb!*' There's some fatality, I'm sure! You say

*'Marry the cousin, that's your proper move!'* And I do use the thumb and hit the sharp: You should have listened to your own head's hint,

As I to you! The puzzle's past my power, How you have managed—with such stuff, such means—

Not to be rich nor great nor happy man: Of which three good things where's a sign at all?

Just look at Dizzy!<sup>1</sup> Come,—what tripped your heels?

Instruct a goose that boasts wings and can't fly!

I wager I have guessed it!—never found The old solution of the riddle fail!

'*Who was the woman?*' I don't ask, but— '*Where*

*I the path of life stood she who tripped you?"*

"Goose

You truly are! I own to fifty years. Why don't I interpose and cut out—you? Compete with five-and-twenty? Age, my boy!"

"Old man, no nonsense!—even to a boy That's ripe at least for rationality Rapped into him, as may be mine was, once? I've had my small adventure lesson me Over the knuckles!—likely, I forget The sort of figure youth cuts now and then, Competing with old shoulders but young head Despite the fifty grizzling years!"

"Aha?

Then that means—just the bullet in the blade Which brought Dalmatia on the brain,—that, too,

Came of a fatal creature? Can't pretend Now for the first time to surmise as much! Make a clean breast! Recount! a secret's safe

"Twixt you, me and the gate-post!"

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Disraeli.

Neither, to never have surmised your wish !  
It's no use,—case of unextracted ball—  
Winces at finger-touching. Let things be !”

“Ah, if you love your love still ! I hate mine.”

“I can't hate.”

“I won't teach you ; and won't tell  
You, therefore, what you please to ask of me :  
As if I, also, may not have my ache !”

“My sort of ache ? No, no ! and yet—perhaps !

All comes of thinking you superior still.  
But live and learn ! I say ! Time's up !  
Good jump !  
You old, indeed ! I fancy there's a cut  
Across the wood, a grass path : shall we try ?  
It's venturesome, however !”

“Stop, my boy !

Don't think I'm stingy of experience ! Life.  
—It's like this wood we leave. Should you  
and I

Go wandering about there, though the gaps  
We went in and came out by were opposed  
As the two poles, still, somehow, all the  
same,

By nightfall we should probably have chanced  
On nuch the same main points of interest—

Both of us measured girth of mossy trunk,  
Strip ivy from its strangled prey, clapped  
hands

At squirrel, sent a fir-cone after crow,  
And so forth,—never mind what time betwixt.  
So in our lives ; allow I entered mine

Another way than you : 'tis possible  
I ended just by knocking head against

That plaguy low-hung branch yourself began  
By getting bump from ; as at last you too  
May stumble o'er that stump which first of all

Bade me walk circumspectly. Head and feet  
Are vulnerable both, and I, foot-sure,

Forgot that ducking down saves brow from  
bruise.

I, early old, played young man four years  
since

And failed confoundedly : so, hate alike  
Failure and who caused failure,—curse her  
cant !”

“Oh, I see ! You, though somewhat past  
the prime,

Were taken with a rosebud beauty ! Ah—  
But how should chits distinguish ? She ad-  
mired

Your marvel of a mind, I'll undertake !  
But as to body . . . nay, I mean . . . that is,  
When years have told on face and figure . . .”

“Thanks,

Mister *Sufficiently-Instructed* ! Such  
No doubt was bound to be the consequence  
To suit your self-complacency : she liked  
My head enough, but loved some heart be-  
neath

Some head with plenty of brown hair a-top  
After my young friend's fashion ! What  
becomes

Of that fine speech you made a minute since  
About the man of middle age you found  
A formidable peer at twenty-one ?

So much for your mock-modesty ! and yet  
I back your first against this second sprout  
Of observation, insight, what you please.  
My middle age, Sir, had too much success !

It's odd : my case occurred four years ago—  
I finished just while you commenced that  
turn

I' the wood of life that takes us to the wealth  
Of honeysuckle, heaped for who can reach.

Now, I don't boast : it's bad style, and beside,  
The feat proves easier than it looks : I plucked  
Full many a flower unnamed in that bouquet

(Mostly of peonies and poppies, though !)  
Good nature sticks into my button-hole.

Therefore it was with nose in want of snuff  
Rather than Ess or Psidium,<sup>1</sup> that I chanced

On what—so far from ‘*rosebud beauty*’ . . .  
Well—

She's dead : at least you never heard her  
name ;

<sup>1</sup> Scents.

She was no courtly creature, had nor birth  
Nor breeding—mere fine-lady-breeding; but  
Oh, such a wonder of a woman! Grand  
As a Greek statue! Stick fine clothes on that,  
Style that a Duchess or a Queen,—you know,  
Artists would make an outcry: all the more,  
That she had just a statue's sleepy grace  
Which broods o'er its own beauty. Nay,  
her fault

(Don't laugh!) was just perfection: for  
suppose

Only the little flaw, and I had peeped  
Inside it, learned what soul inside was like.  
At Rome some tourist raised the grit beneath  
A Venus' forehead with his whittling-knife—  
I wish,—now,—I had played that brute,  
brought blood

To surface from the depths I fancied chalk!  
As it was, her mere face surprised so much  
That I stopped short there, struck on heap,  
as stares

The cockney stranger at a certain bust  
With drooped eyes,—she's the thing I have  
in mind,—

Down at my Brother's. All sufficient prize—  
Such outside! Now,—confound me for a  
prig!—

Who cares? I'll make a clean breast once  
for all!

Beside, you've heard the gossip. My life long  
I've been a woman-likker,—liking means  
Loving and so on. There's a lengthy list  
By this time I shall have to answer for—  
So say the good folk: and they don't guess  
half—

For the worst is, let once collecting-itch  
Possess you, and, with perspicacity,  
Keeps growing such a greediness that theft  
Follows at no long distance,—there's the fact!  
I knew that on my Leporello<sup>1</sup>-list  
Might figure this, that, and the other name  
Of feminine desirability,  
But if I happened to desire inscribe,  
Along with these, the only Beautiful—  
Here was the unique specimen to snatch  
Or now or never. 'Beautiful' I said—

'Beautiful' say in cold blood,—boiling then  
To tune of '*Haste, secure whatever the cost*  
*This rarity, die in the act, be damned,*  
*So you complete collection, crown your list!*'

It seemed as though the whole world, once  
aroused

By the first notice of such wonder's birth,  
Would break bounds to contest my prize  
with me

The first discoverer, should she but emerge  
From that safe den of darkness where she  
dozed

Till I stole in, that country-parsonage  
Where, country-parson's daughter, mother-  
less,

Brotherless, sisterless, for eighteen years  
She had been vegetating lily-like.

Her father was my brother's tutor, got  
The living that way: him I chanced to see—  
Her I saw—her the world would grow  
one eye

To see, I felt no sort of doubt at all!  
'Secure her!' cried the devil: '*afterward*  
*Arrange for the disposal of the prize!*'  
The devil's doing! yet I seem to think—  
Now, when all's done,—think with '*a head*  
*reposed*'

In French phrase—hope I think I meant to do  
All requisite for such a rarity

When I should be at leisure, have due time  
To learn requirement. But in evil day—  
Bless me, at week's end, long as any year,  
The father must begin '*Young Somebody,*  
*Much recommended—for I break a rule—*  
*Comes here to read, next Long Vacation.*'  
'*Young!*'

That did it. Had the epithet been '*rich,*'  
*Noble,*' '*a genius,*' even '*handsome,*'—but  
—'*Young!*'<sup>1</sup>

"I say—just a word! I want to know—  
You are not married?"

'I?"

'Nor ever were?"

"Never! Why?"

<sup>1</sup> Don Giovanni's valet.

"Oh, then—never mind! Go on! I tell you, such an outbreak, such new strange  
I had a reason for the question." All-unsuspected revelation—soul

"Come,— Was fair beyond example—that at once  
You could not be the young man?" Either I lost—or, if it please you, found  
My senses,—stammered somehow—'Jest!

"No, indeed!  
Certainly—if you never married her!" *and now,*  
Forget all else but—heart has loved,  
Does love, shall love you ever! take the hand!  
Not she! no marriage for superb disdain,  
Contempt incarnate!"

"That I did not: and there's the curse, you'll  
see!  
Nay, all of it's one curse, my life's mistake  
Which, nourished with manure that's war-  
ranted  
To make the plant bear wisdom, blew out full  
In folly beyond field-flower-foolishness!

"Yes, it's different,—  
It's only like in being four years since.  
I see now!"

The lies I used to tell my womankind,  
Knowing they disbelieved me all the time  
Though they required my lies, their decent  
due,

"Well, what did disdain do next,  
Think you?"

"That's past me: did not marry you!—  
That's the main thing I care for, I suppose.  
Turned nun, or what?"

"Why, married in a month  
Some parson, some smug crop-haired smooth-  
chinned sort  
Of curate-creature, I suspect,—dived down,  
Down, deeper still, and came up somewhere  
else—  
I don't know where—I've not tried much to  
know,—

In short, she's happy: what the clodpoles call  
'Countrified' with a vengeance! leads the  
life

Respectable and all that drives you mad:  
Still—where, I don't know, and that's best  
for both."

"Well, that she did not like you, I conceive.  
But why should you hate her, I want to  
know?"

Because of its late lie-expenditure:  
Ill-judged such moment to make fresh de-  
mand—

"My good young friend,—because or her or  
else  
Malicious Providence I have to hate.  
For, what I tell you proved the turning-point  
Of my whole life and fortune toward success  
Or failure. If I drown, I lay the fault

To cage as well as catch my rarity!  
So, I began explaining. At first word  
Outbroke the horror. 'Then, my truths were  
lies!'

Much on myself who caught at reed not rope,  
But more on reed which, with a packthread's  
pith,

I had buoyed me till the minute's cramp could  
thaw

And I strike out afresh and so be saved.

It's easy saying—I had sunk before,

Disqualified myself by idle days

And busy nights, long since, from holding  
hard

On cable, even, had fate cast me such !

You boys don't know how many times men  
fail

Perforce o' the little to succeed i' the large,  
Husband their strength, let slip the petty  
prey,

Collect the whole power for the final pounce.

My fault was the mistaking man's main prize

For intermediate boy's diversion ; clap

Of boyish hands here frightened game away

Which, once gone, goes for ever. Oh, at first

I took the anger easily, nor much

Minded the anguish—having learned that  
storms

Subside, and teapot-tempests are akin.

Time would arrange things, mend whate'er  
might be

Somewhat amiss ; precipitation, eh ?

Reason and rhyme prompt—reparation !  
Tiffs

End properly in marriage and a dance !

I said 'We'll marry, make the past a blank'—

And never was such damnable mistake !

That interview, that laying bare my soul,

As it was first, so was it last chance—one

And only. Did I write ? Back letter came

Unopened as it went. Inexorable

She fled, I don't know where, consoled her-  
self

With the smug curate-creature : chop and  
change !

Sure am I, when she told her shaveling all

His Magdalen's adventure, tears were shed,

Forgiveness evangelically shown,

'Loose hair and lifted eye,'—as someone  
says.

And now, he's worshipped for his pains, the  
sneak !"

"Well, but your turning-point of life,—  
what's here

To hinder you contesting Finsbury

With Orton,<sup>1</sup> next election ? I don't  
see . . ."

"Not you ! But / see. Slowly, surely, creeps  
Day by day o'er me the conviction—here

Was life's prize grasped at, gained, and then  
let go !

—That with her—may be, for her—I had  
felt

Ice in me melt, grow steam, drive to effect

Any or all the fancies sluggish here

I' the head that needs the hand she would  
not take

And I shall never lift now. Lo, your wood—

Its turnings which I likened life to ! Well,—

There she stands, ending every avenue,

Her visionary presence on each goal

I might have gained had we kept side by side !

Still string nerve and strike foot ? Her frown  
forbids :

The steam congeals once more : I'm old  
again !

Therefore I hate myself—but how much worse

Do not I hate who would not understand,

Let me repair things—no, but sent a-slide

My folly falteringly, stumblingly

Down, down and deeper down until I drop

Upon—the need of your ten thousand pounds

And consequently loss of mine ! I lose

Character, cash, nay, common-sense itself

Recounting such a lengthy cock-and-bull

Adventure—lose my temper in the act . . ."

And lose beside,—if I may supplement

The list of losses,—train and ten-o'clock !

Hark, pant and puff, there travels the swart  
sign !

So much the better ! You're my captive now !

I'm glad you trust a fellow : friends grow  
thick

This way—that's twice said ; we were thickish,  
though,

Even last night, and, ere night comes again,

<sup>1</sup> Arthur Orton, the Tichborne claimant.

I prophesy good luck to both of us !  
 For see now !—back to 'balmy eminence'  
 Or 'calm acclivity,' or what's the word !  
 Bestow you there an hour, concoct at ease  
 A sonnet for the Album, while I put  
 Bold face on, best foot forward, make for  
 house,

March in to aunt and niece, and tell the  
 truth—

(Even white-lying goes against my taste  
 After your little story). Oh, the niece  
 Is rationality itself ! The aunt—  
 If she's amenable to reason too—

Why, you stopped short to pay her due  
 respect,  
 And let the Duke wait (I'll work well the  
 Duke).

If she grows gracious, I return for you ;  
 If thunder's in the air, why—bear your doom,  
 Dine on rump-steaks and port, and shake  
 the dust

Of aunty from your shoes as off you go  
 By evening-train, nor give the thing a thought  
 How you shall pay me—that's as sure as fate,  
 Old fellow ! Off with you, face left about !  
 Yonder's the path I have to pad. You see,  
 I'm in good spirits, God knows why ! Perhaps  
 Because the woman did not marry you  
 —Who look so hard at me,—and have the  
 right,  
 One must be fair and own."

The two stand still

Under an oak.

"Look here !" resumes the youth.  
 "I never quite knew how I came to like  
 You—so much—whom I ought not court at  
 all :

Nor how you had a leaning just to me  
 Who am assuredly not worth your pains.  
 For there must needs be plenty such as you  
 Somewhere about,—although I can't say  
 where,

Able and willing to teach all you know ;  
 While—how can you have missed a score  
 like me

With money and no wit, precisely each

A pupil for your purpose, were it—ease  
 Fool's poke of tutor's *honorarium-fee*?  
 And yet, howe'er it came about, I felt  
 At once my master : you as prompt descried  
 Your man, I warrant, so was bargain struck.  
 Now, these same lines of liking, loving, run  
 Sometimes so close together they converge—  
 Life's great adventures—you know what I  
 mean—

In people. Do you know, as you advanced,  
 It got to be uncommonly like fact  
 We two had fallen in with—liked and loved  
 Just the same woman in our different ways ?  
 I began life—poor groundling as I prove—  
 Winged and ambitious to fly high : why not ?  
 There's something in 'Don Quixote' to the  
 point,

My shrewd old father used to quote and  
 praise—  
 'Am I born man?' asks Sancho : 'being man,  
 By possibility I may be Pope !'

So, Pope I meant to make myself, by step  
 And step, whereof the first should be to find  
 A perfect woman ; and I tell you this—  
 If what I fixed on, in the order due  
 Of undertakings, as next step, had first  
 Of all disposed itself to suit my tread,  
 And I had been, the day I came of age,  
 Returned at head of poll for Westminster  
 —Nay, and moreover summoned by the  
 Queen

At week's end, when my maiden-speech bore  
 fruit,

To form and head a Tory ministry—  
 It would not have seemed stranger, no, nor  
 been

More strange to me, as now I estimate,  
 Than what did happen—sober truth, no dream.  
 I saw my wonder of a woman,—laugh,  
 I'm past that !—in Commemoration-week.  
 A plenty have I seen since, fair and foul,—  
 With eyes, too, helped by your sagacious wink ;  
 But one to match that marvel—no least trace,  
 Least touch of kinship and community !  
 The end was—I did somehow state the fact,  
 Did, with no matter what imperfect words,  
 One way or other give to understand  
 That woman, soul and body were her slave

Would she but take, but try them—any test  
Of will, and some poor test of power beside :  
So did the strings within my brain grow tense  
And capable of . . . hang similitudes !  
She answered kindly but beyond appeal.  
'No sort of hope for me, who came too late.  
She was another's. Love went—mine to her,  
Hers just as loyally to someone else.'  
Of course ! I might expect it ! Nature's law—  
Given the peerless woman, certainly  
Somewhere shall be the peerless man to match !  
I acquiesced at once, submitted me  
In something of a stupor, went my way.  
I fancy there had been some talk before  
Of somebody—her father or the like—  
To coach me in the holidays,—that's how  
I came to get the sight and speech of her,—  
But I had sense enough to break off sharp,  
Save both of us the pain."

"Quite right there !"

"Eh ?

Quite wrong, it happens ! Now comes worst  
of all !

Yes, I did sulk aloof and let alone

The lovers—I disturb the angel-mates ?"

"Seraph paired off with cherub !"

"Thank you ! While

I never plucked up courage to inquire

Who he was, even,—certain-sure of this,

That nobody I knew of had blue wings

And wore a star-crown as he needs must do,—

Some little lady,—plainish, pock-marked  
girl,—

Finds out my secret in my woeful face,

Comes up to me at the Apollo Ball,

And pityingly pours her wine and oil

This way into the wound : 'Dear f-f-friend,

Why waste affection thus on—must I say,

A somewhat worthless object ? Who's her  
choice—

Irrevocable as deliberate—

Out of the wide world ? I shall name no  
names—

But there's a person in society,

Who, blessed with rank and talent, has grown  
gney

In idleness and sin of every sort

Except hypocrisy : he's thrice her age,

A by-word for "successes with the sex"

As the French say—and, as we ought to say,

Consummately a liar and a rogue,

Since—show me where's the woman won  
without

The help of this one lie which she believes—

That—never mind how things have come to  
pass,

And let who loves have loved a thousand  
times—

All the same he now loves her only, loves

Her ever ! if by "won" you just mean "sold,"

That's quite another compact. Well, this  
scamp,

Continuing descent from bad to worse,

Must leave his fine and fashionable prey

(Who—fathered, brothered, husbanded,—and  
hedged

About with thorny danger) and apply

His arts to this poor country ignorance

Who sees forthwith in the first rag of man

Her model hero ! Why continue waste

On such a woman treasures of a heart

Would yet find solace,—yes, my f-f-friend—

In some congenial—fiddle-diddle-dee ?"

"Pray, is the pleasant gentleman described

Exact the portrait which my 'f-f-friends'

Recognize as so like ? 'Tis evident

You half surmised the sweet original

Could be no other than myself, just now !

Your stop and start were flattering !"

"Of course

Caricature's allowed for in a sketch !

The longish nose becomes a foot in length,

The swarthy cheek gets copper-coloured,—  
still,

Prominent beak and dark-hued skin are  
facts :

And 'parson's daughter'—'young mare coach-  
able'—

'Elderly party'—'four years since'—were  
facts.



To fasten on, a moment! Marriage, though—  
That made the difference, I hope.”

“All right!

I never married; wish I had—and then  
Unwish it: people kill their wives, some-  
times!

I hate my mistress, but I'm murder-free.

In your case, where's the grievance? You  
came last,

The earlier bird picked up the worm. Sup-  
pose

You, in the glory of your twenty-one,  
Had happened to precede myself! 'tis odds  
But this gigantic juvenility,  
This offering of a big arm's bony hand—  
I'd rather shake than feel shake me, I know—  
Had moved *my* dainty mistress to admire  
An altogether new Ideal—deem  
Idolatry less due to life's decline  
Productive of experience, powers mature  
By dint of usage, the made man—no boy  
That's all to make! I was the earlier bird—  
And what I found, I let fall; what you  
missed  
Who is the fool that blames you for?”

“Myself—

For nothing, everything! For finding out  
She, whom I worshipped, was a worshipper  
In turn of . . . but why stir up settled mud?  
She married him—the fifty-years-old rake—  
How you have teased the talk from me! At  
last

My secret's told you. I inquired no more,  
Nay, stopped ears when informants unshut  
mouth;

Enough that she and he live, deuce take  
where,

Married and happy, or else miserable—  
It's 'Cut-the-pack;' she turned up ace or  
knave,

And I left Oxford, England, dug my hole  
Out in Dalmatia, till you drew me thence  
Badger-like,—‘*Back to London*’ was the  
word—

‘*Do things, a many, there, you fancy hard,  
I'll undertake are easy!*’—the advice.

I took it, had my twelvemonth's fling with  
you—

(Little hand holding large hand pretty tight  
For all its delicacy—eh, my lord?),  
Until when, t'other day, I got a turn  
Somehow and gave up tired: and ‘*Rest!*  
bade you,

‘*Marry your cousin, double your estate,  
And take your ease by all means!*’ So, I lolled  
On this the springy sofa, mine next month—  
Or should loll, but that you must needs beat  
rough

The very down you spread me out so smooth.  
I wish this confidence were still to make!  
Ten thousand pounds? You owe me twice  
the sum

For stirring up the black depths! There's  
repose

Or, at least, silence when misfortune seems  
All that one has to bear; but folly—yes,  
Folly, it all was! Fool to be so meek,  
So humble,—such a coward rather say!  
Fool, to adore the adorer of a fool!  
Not to have faced him, tried (a useful hint)  
My big and bony, here, against the bunch  
Of lily-coloured five with signet-ring,  
Most like, for little-finger's sole defence—

Much as you flaunt the blazon there! I grind  
My teeth, that bite my very heart, to think—  
To know I might have made that woman mine  
But for the folly of the coward—know—  
Or what's the good of my apprenticeship  
This twelvemonth to a master in the art?  
Mine—had she been mine—just one moment  
mine

For honour, for dishonour—anyhow,  
So that my life, instead of stagnation . . . Well,  
You've poked and proved stagnation is not  
sleep—  
Hang you!”

“Hang *you* for an ungrateful goose!

All this means—I who since I knew you first  
Have helped you to conceit yourself this cock  
O' the dunghill with all hens to pick and  
choose—

Ought to have helped you when shell first  
was chipped

By chick that wanted prompting '*Use the spur!*'  
 While I was elsewhere putting mine to use.  
 As well might I blame you who kept aloof;  
 Seeing you could not guess I was alive,  
 Never advised me '*Do as I have done*  
*Reverence such a jewel as your luck*  
*Has scratched up to enrich unworthiness!*'  
 As your behaviour was should mine have been,  
 —Faults which we both, too late, are sorry for:  
 Opposite ages, each with its mistake!  
 '*If youth but would—if age but could,*' you  
 know.  
 Don't let us quarrel. Come, we're—young  
 and old—  
 Neither so badly off. Go you your way,  
 Cut to the Cousin! I'll to Inn, await  
 The issue of diplomacy with Aunt,  
 And wait my hour on '*calm activity*'  
 In rumination manifold—perhaps  
 About ten thousand pounds I have to pay!"

## III.

Now, as the elder lights the fresh cigar  
 Conducive to resource, and saunteringly  
 Betakes him to the left-hand backward path,—  
 While, much sedate, the younger strides away  
 To right and makes for—islanded in lawn  
 And edged with shrubbery—the brilliant bit  
 Of Barry's building that's the Place,—a pair  
 Of women, at this nick of time, one young,  
 One very young, are ushered with due pomp  
 Into the same Inn-parlour—"disengaged  
*Entirely now!*" the obsequious landlord  
 smiles,  
 "*Since the late occupants—whereof but one*  
*Was quite a stranger*"—(smile enforced by  
 bow)  
 "*Left, a full two hours since, to catch the train,*  
*Probably for the stranger's sake!*" (Bow,  
 smile,  
 And backing out from door soft-closed behind.)

Woman and girl, the two, alone inside,  
 Begin their talk: the girl, with sparkling eyes—  
 "Oh, I forewent him purposely! but you,  
 Who joined at—journeyed from the Junction  
 here—

I wonder how he failed your notice. Few  
 Stop at our station: fellow-passengers  
 Assuredly you were—I saw indeed  
 His servant, therefore he arrived all right.  
 I wanted, you know why, to have you safe  
 Inside here first of all, so dodged about  
 The dark end of the platform; that's his way—  
 To swing from station straight to avenue  
 And stride the half a mile for exercise.  
 I fancied you might notice the huge boy.  
 He soon gets o'er the distance; at the house  
 He'll hear I went to meet him and have  
 missed;  
 He'll wait. No minute of the hour's too much  
 Meantime for our preliminary talk:  
 First word of which must be—O good beyond  
 Expression of all goodness—you to come!"

The elder, the superb one, answers slow.

"There was no helping that. You called  
 for me,  
 Cried, rather: and my old heart answered you.  
 Still, thank me! since the effort breaks a  
 vow—  
 At least, a promise to myself."

"I know!  
 How selfish get you happy folk to be!  
 If I should love my husband, must I needs  
 Sacrifice straightway all the world to him,  
 As you do? Must I never dare leave house  
 On this dread Arctic expedition, out  
 And in again, six mortal hours, though you,  
 You even, my own friend for evermore,  
 Adjure me—fast your friend till rude love  
 pushed  
 Poor friendship from her vantage—just to  
 grant  
 The quarter of a whole day's company  
 And counsel? This makes counsel so much  
 more  
 Need and necessity. For here's my block  
 Of stumbling: in the face of happiness  
 So absolute, fear chills me. If such change  
 In heart be but love's easy consequence,  
 Do I love? If to marry mean—let go  
 All I now live for, should my marriage be?"

The other never once has ceased to gaze  
On the great elm-tree in the open, posed  
Placidly full in front, smooth bole, broad  
branch,  
And leafage, one green plenitude of May.  
The gathered thought runs into speech at last.

"O you exceeding beauty, bosomful  
Of lights and shades, murmurs and silences,  
Sun-warmth, dew-coolness, — squirrel, bee  
and bird,  
High, higher, highest, till the blue proclaims  
'Leave earth, there's nothing better till next step  
Heavenward!'—so, off flies what has wings  
to help!"

And henceforth they alternate. Says the girl—

"That's saved then: marriage spares the early  
taste."

"Four years now, since my eye took note of  
tree!"

"If I had seen no other tree but this  
My life long, while yourself came straight, you  
said,

From tree which overstretched you and was  
just

One fairy tent with pitcher-leaves that held  
Wine, and a flowery wealth of suns and moons,  
And magic fruits whereon the angels feed—

I looking out of window on a tree  
Like yonder—otherwise well-known, much-  
liked,

Yet just an English ordinary elm—  
What marvel if you cured me of conceit  
My elm's bird-bee-and-squirrel tenantry  
Was quite the proud possession I supposed?  
And there is evidence you tell me true.

The fairy marriage-tree reports itself  
Good guardian of the perfect face and form,  
Fruits of four years' protection! Married  
friend,

You are more beautiful than ever!"

I think that likely. I could well dispense

With all thought fair in feature, mine or no,  
Leave but enough of face to know me by—  
With all found fresh in youth except such  
strength

As lets a life-long labour earn repose  
Death sells at just that price, they say; and so  
Possibly, what I care not for, I keep."

"How you must know he loves you! Chill,  
before,"

Fear sinks to freezing. Could I sacrifice—  
Assured my lover simply loves my soul—  
One nose-breadth of fair feature? No, in-  
deed!

Your own love . . ."

"The preliminary hour—  
Don't waste it!"

"But I can't begin at once!  
The angel's self that comes to hear me speak  
Drives away all the care about the speech.

What an angelic mystery you are—  
Now—that is certain! when I knew you first,  
No break of halo and no bud of wing!  
I thought I knew you, saw you, round and  
through,

Like a glass ball; suddenly, four years since,  
You vanished, how and whither? Mystery!  
Wherefore? No mystery at all: you loved,  
Were loved again, and left the world of  
course:

Who would not? Lapped four years in fairy-  
land,

Out comes, by no less wonderful a chance,  
The changeling, touched athwart her trellised  
bliss

Of blush-rose bower by just the old friend's  
voice

That's now struck dumb at her own potency.  
/ talk of my small fortunes? Tell me yours  
Rather! The fool I ever was—I am,  
You see that: the true friend you ever had,  
You have, you also recognize. Perhaps,  
Giving you all the love of all my heart.  
Nature, that's niggard in me, has denied

The after-birth of love there's someone claims  
—This huge boy, swinging up the avenue;

"Yes:

And I want counsel: is defect in me,  
Or him who has no right to raise the love?  
My cousin asks my hand: he's young enough,  
Handsome,—my maid thinks,—manly's more  
the word:

He asked my leave to 'drop' the elm-tree  
there,

Some morning before breakfast. Gentleness  
Goes with the strength, of course. He's  
honest too,

Limpidly truthful. For ability—  
All's in the rough yet. His first taste of life  
Seems to have somehow gone against the  
tongue:

He travelled, tried things—came back, tried  
still more—

He says he's sick of all. He's fond of me  
After a certain careless-earnest way  
I like: the iron's crude,—no polished steel  
Somebody forged before me. I am rich—  
That's not the reason, he's far richer: no,  
Nor is it that he thinks me pretty,—frank  
Undoubtedly on that point! He saw once  
The pink of face-perfection—oh, not you—  
Content yourself, my beauty!—for she proved  
So thoroughly a cheat, his charmer . .  
nay,

He runs into extremes, I'll say at once,  
Lest you say! Well, I understand he wants  
Someone to serve, something to do: and both  
Requisites so abound in me and mine  
That here's the obstacle which stops consent:  
The smoothness is too smooth, and I mistrust  
The unseen cat beneath the counterpane.  
Therefore I thought 'Would she but judge for  
me,

Who, judging for herself succeeded so!  
Do I love him, does he love me, do both  
Mistake for knowledge—easy ignorance?  
Appeal to its proficient in each art!  
I got rough-smooth through a piano-piece,  
Rattled away last week till tutor came,  
Heard me to end, then grunted 'Ach, mein  
Gott!

Sagen Sie "easy": Every note is wrong.  
All thumped mis wrist: we'll trouble fingers  
now.

The Fräulein will please roll up Raff again

And exercise at Czerny for one month!  
Am I to roll up cousin, exercise  
At Trollope's novels for one month? Pro-  
nounce!"

"Now, place each in the right position first,  
Adviser and advised one! I perhaps  
Am three—nay, four years older; am, beside,  
A wife: advantages—to balance which,  
You have a full fresh joyous sense of life  
That finds you out life's fit food everywhere,  
Detects enjoyment where I, slow and dull,  
Fumble at fault. Already, these four years,  
Your merest glimpses at the world without  
Have shown you more than ever met my  
gaze;

And now, by joyance you inspire joy,—learn  
While you profess to teach, and teach,  
although  
Avowedly a learner. I am dazed  
Like any owl by sunshine which just sets  
The sparrow preening plumage! Here's to  
spy

—Your cousin! You have scanned him all  
your life,  
Little or much; I never saw his face.  
You have determined on a marriage—used  
Deliberation therefore—I'll believe  
No otherwise, with opportunity  
For judgment so abounding! Here stand  
I—

Summoned to give my sentence, for a whim,  
(Well, at first cloud-fleck thrown athwart your  
blue)

Judge what is strangeness' self to me,—say  
'Wed!'

Or 'Wed not!' whom you promise I shall  
judge

Presently, at propitious lunch-time, just  
While he carves chicken! Sends he leg for  
wing?

That revelation into character  
And conduct must suffice me! Quite as well  
Consult with yonder solitary crow  
That eyes us from your elm-top!"

"Still the same!  
Do you remember, at the library

We saw together somewhere, those two books  
Somebody said were noteworthy? One  
Lay wide on table, sprawled its painted  
leaves

For all the world's inspection; shut on shelf  
Reclined the other volume, closed, clasped,  
locked—

Clear to be let alone. Which page had we  
Preferred the turning over of? You were,  
Are, ever will be the locked lady, hold  
Inside you secrets written,—soul-absorbed,  
My ink upon your blotting-paper. I—  
What trace of you have I to show in turn?  
Delicate secrets! No one juvenile  
Ever essayed at croquet and performed  
Superiorly but I confided you  
The sort of hat he wore and hair it held.  
While you? One day a calm note comes by  
post:

*'I am just married, you may like to hear.'*  
Most men would hate you, or they ought; we  
love

What we fear,—I do! 'Cold' I shall expect  
My cousin calls you. I—dislike not him,  
But (if I comprehend what loving means)  
Love you immeasurably more—more—more  
Than even he who, loving you his wife,  
Would turn up nose at who impertinent,  
Foolish, forward—*loves* that excellence  
Of all the earth he bows in worship to!  
And who's this paragon of privilege?  
Simply a country parson: his the charm  
That worked the miracle! Oh, too absurd  
But that you stand before me as you stand!  
Such beauty does prove something, every-  
thing!

Beauty's the prize-flower which dispenses eye  
From peering into what has nourished root—  
Dew or manure: the plant best knows its  
place.

Enough, from teaching youth and tending age  
And hearing sermons,—haply writing tracts,—  
From such strange love-besprinkled compost,  
lo,

Out blows this triumph! Therefore love's  
the soil

Plants find or fail of. You, with wit to find,  
Exercise wit on the old friend's behalf,

Keep me from failure! Scan and scrutinize  
This cousin! Surely he's as worth your pains  
To study as my elm-tree, crow and all,  
You still keep staring at. I read your  
thoughts."

"At last?"

"At first! *'Would, tree, a-top of thee  
I winged were, like crow perched moveless  
there,  
And so could straightway soar, escape this bore,  
Back to my nest where broods whom I love  
best—*

*The parson o'er his parish—garish—varish—'*  
Oh I could bring the rhyme in if I tried:  
The Album here inspires me! Quite apart  
From lyrical expression, have I read  
The stare aright, and sings not soul just so?"  
"Or rather so? *'Cool comfortable elm  
That men make coffins out of,—none for me  
At thy expense, so thou permit I glide  
Under thy ferny feet, and there sleep, sleep,  
Nor dread awaking though in heaven itself!'*"

The younger looks with face struck sudden  
white.

The elder answers its inquiry.

"Dear,  
You are a guesser, not a *'clairvoyante.'*  
I'll so far open you the locked and shelved  
Volume, my soul, that you desire to see,  
As let you profit by the title-page——"

"*Paradise Lost?*"

"*Inferno!*—All which comes  
Of tempting me to break my vow. Stop here!  
Friend, whom I love the best in the whole  
world,

Come at your call, be sure that I will do  
All your requirement—see and say my mind.  
It may be that by sad apprenticeship  
I have a keener sense: I'll task the same.  
Only indulge me—here let sight and speech  
Happen—this Inn is neutral ground, you  
know!

I cannot visit the old house and home,  
 Encounter the old sociality  
 Abjured for ever. Peril quite enough  
 In even this first—last, I pray it prove—  
 Renunciation of my solitude!  
 Back, you, to house and cousin! Leave me  
 here,

Who want no entertainment, carry still  
 My occupation with me. While I watch  
 The shadow inching round those ferny feet,  
 Tell him '*A school-friend wants a word*  
*with me*  
*Up at the inn: time, tide and train won't*  
*wait:*

*I must go see her—on and off again—*  
*You'll keep me company?*' Ten minutes' talk,  
 With you in presence, ten more afterward  
 With who, alone, conveys me station-bound,  
 And I see clearly—and say honestly  
 To-morrow: pen shall play tongue's part,  
 you know.  
 Go—quick! for I have made our hand-in-hand  
 Return impossible. So scared you look,—  
 If cousin does not greet you with '*What ghost*  
*Has crossed your path?*' I set him down  
 obtuse."

And after one more look, with face still white,  
 The younger does go, while the elder stands  
 Occupied by the elm at window there.

## IV.

Occupied by the elm; and, as its shade  
 Has crept clock-hand-wise till it ticks at fern  
 Five inches further to the South, the door  
 Opens abruptly, someone enters sharp,  
 The elder man returned to wait the youth:  
 Never observes the room's new occupant,  
 Throws hat on table, stoops quick, elbow-  
 propped  
 Over the Album wide there, bends down brow  
 A cogitative minute, whistles shrill,  
 Then,—with a cheery-hopeless laugh and-lose  
 Air of defiance to fate visibly  
 Casting the toils about him,—mouths once  
 more:

"*Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!*"

Then clasps-to cover, sends book spinning off  
 T'other side table, looks up, starts erect  
 Full-face with her who,—roused from that  
 abstruse

Question, "*Will next tick tip the fern or*  
*no?*"—  
 Fronts him as fully.

All her languor breaks,  
 Away withers at once the weariness  
 From the black-blooded brow, anger and hate  
 Convulse. Speech follows slower, but at last—

"You here! I felt, I knew it would befall!  
 Knew, by some subtle undividable  
 Trick of the trickster, I should, silly-sooth,  
 Late or soon, somehow be allured to leave  
 Safe hiding and come take of him arrears,  
 My torment due on four years' respite! Time  
 To pluck the bird's healed breast of down  
 o'er wound!

Have your success! Be satisfied this sole  
 Seeing you has undone all heaven could do  
 These four years, puts me back to you and  
 hell!

What will next trick be, next success? No  
 doubt

When I shall think to glide into the grave,  
 There will you wait—disguised as beckoning  
 Death,

And catch and capture me for evermore!  
 But, God, though I am nothing, be thou all!  
 Contest him for me! Strive, for he is  
 strong!"

Already his surprise dies palely out  
 In laugh of acquiescing impotence.  
 He neither gasps nor hisses: calm and plain—

"I also felt and knew—but otherwise:  
 You out of hand and sight and care of me  
 These four years, whom I felt, knew, all the  
 while . . .

Oh, it's no superstition! It's a gift  
 O' the gamester that he snuffs the unseen  
 powers

Which help or harm him. Well I knew  
 what lurked,

Lay perdue paralysing me,—drugged, drowed  
And damnified my soul and body both!

Down and down, see where you have dragged  
me to,

You and your malice! I was, four years  
since,

—Well, a poor creature! I become a knave.

I squandered my own pence: I plump my  
purse

With other people's pounds. I practised play  
Because I liked it: play turns labour now  
Because there's profit also in the sport.

I gamed with men of equal age and craft:

I steal here with a boy as green as grass

Whom I have tightened hold on slow and  
sure

This long while, just to bring about to-day

When the boy beats me hollow, buries me

In ruin who was sure to beggar him.

O time indeed I should look up and laugh

'Surely she closes on me!' Here you stand!"

And stand she does: while volubility,

With him, keeps on the increase, for his  
tongue

After long locking-up is loosed for once.

"Certain the taunt is happy!" he resumes:

"So, I it was allured you—only I

—I, and none other—to this spectacle—

Your triumph, my despair—you woman-fiend

That front me! Well, I have my wish, then!

See

The low wide brow oppressed by sweeps of  
hair

Darker and darker as they coil and swathe

The crowned corpse-wanness whence the  
eyes burn black

Not asleep now! not pin-points dwarfed  
beneath

Either great bridging eyebrow—poor blank  
heads—

Babies, I've pleased to pity in my time:

How they protrude and glow immense with  
hate!

The long triumphant nose attains—retains

Just the perfection; and there's scarlet-skein

My ancient enemy, her lip and lip.

Sense-free, sense-frighting lips clenched cold  
and bold

Because of chin; that based resolve beneath!

Then the columnar neck completes the whole

Greek-sculpture-baffling body! Do I see?

Can I observe? You wait next word to  
come?

Well, wait and want! since no one blight  
I bid

Consume one least perfection. Each and all,

As they are rightly shocking now to me,

So may they still continue! Value them?

Ay, as the vendor knows the money-worth

Of his Greek statue, fools aspire to buy,

And he to see the back of! Let us laugh!

You have absolved me from my sin at least!

You stand stout, strong, in the rude health  
of hate,

No touch of the tame timid nullity

My cowardice, forsooth, has practised on!

Ay, while you seemed to hint some fine fifth  
act

Of tragedy should freeze blood, end the farce,

I never doubted all was joke. I kept,

May be, an eye alert on paragraphs,

Newspaper-notice,—let no inquest slip,

Accident, disappearance: sound and safe

Were you, my victim, not of mind to die!

So, my worst fancy that could spoil the smooth

Of pillow, and arrest descent of sleep

Was 'Into what dim hole can she have dived,

She and her wrongs, her woe that's wearing  
flesh

And blood away?' Whereas, see, sorrow  
swells!

Or, fattened, fulsome, have you fed on me,

Sucked out my substance? How much  
gloss, I pray,

O'erbloomed those hair-swathes when there  
crept from you

To me that craze, else unaccountable,

Which urged me to contest our county-seat

With whom but my own brother's nominee?

Did that mouth's pulp glow ruby from carmine

While I misused my moment, pushed,—one  
word,—

One hair's breadth more of gesture,—idiot-  
like

Past passion, floundered on to the grotesque,  
And lost the heiress in a grin? At least,  
You made no such mistake! You tickled fish,  
Landed your prize the true artistic way!  
How did the smug young curate rise to tune  
Of 'Friend, a fatal fact divides us. Love  
Suits me no longer. I have suffered shame,  
Betrayal: past is past; the future—yours—  
Shall never be contaminate by mine.  
I might have spared me this confession, not  
—Oh, never by some hideousest of lies,  
Easy, impenetrable! No! but say,  
By just the quiet answer—"I am cold."  
Falsehood awaits, each shadow of thee, hence!  
Had happier fortune willed . . . but dreams  
are vain.

Now, leave me—yes, for pity's sake! Aha,  
Who fails to see the curate as his face  
Reddened and whitened, wanted handkerchief  
At wrinkling brow and twinkling eye, until  
Out burst the proper 'Angel, whom the fiend  
Has thought to smirch,—thy whiteness, at one  
wipe

Of holy cambric, shall disgrace the swan!  
Mine be the task' . . . and so forth! Fool?  
not he!

Cunning in flavours, rather! What but sour  
Suspected makes the sweetness doubly sweet,  
And what stings love from faint to flamboyant  
But the fear-sprinkle? Even horror helps—  
'Love's flame in me by such recited wrong  
Drenched, quenched, indeed? It burns the  
fiercelier thence!'

Why, I have known men never love their  
wives

Till somebody — myself, suppose — had  
'drenched

And quenched love,' so the blockheads whined:  
as if

The fluid fire that lifts the torpid limb  
Were a wrong done to palsy. But I thrilled  
No palsied person: half my age, or less,  
The curate was, I'll wager: o'er young blood  
Your beauty triumphed! Eh, but—was it he?  
Then, it was he, I heard of! None beside!  
How frank you were about the audacious boy  
Who fell upon you like a thunderbolt—  
Passion and protestation! He it was

Reserved in *patois*! Ay, and 'rich' beside—  
'Rich'—how supremely did disdain curl  
nose!

All that I heard was—"wedded to a priest;"  
Informants sunk youth, riches and the rest.  
And so my lawless love departed loves,  
That loves might come together with a rush!  
Surely this last achievement sucked me dry!  
Indeed, that way my wits went. Mistress-  
queen,

Be merciful and let your subject slink  
Into dark safety! He's a beggar, see—  
Do not turn back his ship, Australia-bound,  
And bid her land him right amid some crowd  
Of creditors, assembled by your curse!  
Don't cause the very rope to crack (you can!)  
Whereon he spends his last (friend's) sixpence,  
just

The moment when he hoped to hang himself!  
Be satisfied you beat him!"

She replies—

"Beat him! I do. To all that you confess  
Of abject failure, I extend belief.  
Your very face confirms it: God is just!  
Let my face—fix your eyes!—in turn confirm  
What I shall say. All-abject's but half-truth;  
Add to all-abject knave as perfect fool!  
So is it you probed human nature, so  
Prognosticated of me? Lay these words  
To heart then, or where God meant heart  
should lurk!

That moment when you first revealed your-  
self,

My simple impulse prompted—end forthwith  
The ruin of a life uprooted thus  
To surely perish! How should such spoiled  
tree

Henceforward baulk the wind of its worst  
sport,

Fail to go falling deeper, falling down  
From sin to sin until some depth were reached  
Doomed to the weakest by the wickedest  
Of weak and wicked human kind? But when,  
That self-display made absolute,—behold  
A new revelation!—round you pleased to  
veer,



Propose me what should prompt annul the  
past,

Make me '*amends by marriage*'—in your  
phrase,

Incorporate me henceforth, body and soul,  
With soul and body which mere brushing past  
Brought leprosy upon me—'*marry*' these !  
Why, then despair broke, re-assurance  
dawned,

Clear-sighted was I that who hurled contempt  
As I—thank God !—at the contemptible,  
Was scarce an utter weakling: Rent away  
By treason from my rightful pride of place,  
I was not destined to the shame below.

A cleft had caught me : I might perish there,  
But thence to be dislodged and whirled at last  
Where the black torrent sweeps the sewage—  
no !

'*Bare breast be on hard rock,*' laughed out my  
soul

In gratitude, '*how'er rock's grip may grind!*  
*The plain rough wretched holdfast shall suffice*  
*This wreck of me !*' The wind,—I broke in  
bloom

At passage of,—which stripped me bole and  
branch,

Twisted me up and tossed me here,—turns  
back,

And, playful ever, would replant the spoil ?  
Be satisfied, not one least leaf that's mine  
Shall henceforth help wind's sport to exercise !  
Rather I give such remnant to the rock  
Which never dreamed a straw would settle  
there.

Rock may not thank me, may not feel my  
breast,

Even : enough that I feel, hard and cold,  
Its safety my salvation. Safe and saved,  
I lived, live. When the tempter shall persuade  
His prey to slip down, slide off, trust the  
wind,—

Now that I know if God or Satan be  
Prince of the Power of the Air,—then, then,  
indeed,

Let my life end and degradation too !"

"Good !" he smiles, "true Lord Byron !  
'*Tree and rock.*'"

'*Rock*'—there's advancement ! He's at first  
a youth,

Rich, worthless therefore ; next he grows a  
priest :

Youth, riches prove a notable resource,  
When to leave me for their possessor gluts  
Malice abundantly ; and now, last change,  
The young rich parson represents a rock  
—Bloodstone, no doubt. He's Evangelical ?  
Your Ritualists prefer the Church for spouse !

She speaks.

"I have a story to relate.

There was a parish-priest, my father knew,  
Elderly, poor : I used to pity him  
Before I learned what woes are pity-worth.  
Elderly was grown old now, scanty means  
Were straitening fast to poverty, beside  
The ailments which await in such a case.

Limited every way, a perfect man  
Within the bounds built up and up since birth  
Breast-high about him till the outside world  
Was blank save o'erhead one blue bit of sky—  
Faith : he had faith in dogma, small or great,  
As in the fact that if he clave his skull  
He'd find a brain there : who proves such a  
fact

No falsehood by experiment at price  
Of soul and body ? The one rule of life  
Delivered him in childhood was '*Obey !*  
*Labour !*' He had obeyed and laboured—  
tame,

True to the mill-track blinked on from above.  
Some scholarship he may have gained in  
youth :

Gone—dropt or flung behind. Some blossom-  
flake,

Spring's boon, descends on every vernal head,  
I used to think ; but January joins  
December, as his year had known no May  
Trouble its snow-deposit,—cold and old !  
I heard it was his will to take a wife,  
A helpmate. Duty bade him tend and teach—  
How ? with experience null, nor sympathy  
Abundant,—while himself worked dogma  
dead,

Who would play ministrant to sickness. age,

Woman-kind, childhood? These demand a wife.

Supply the want, then! theirs the wife; for him—

No coarsest sample of the proper sex

But would have served his purpose equally

With God's own angel,—let but knowledge match

Her coarseness: zeal does only half the work.

I saw this—knew the purblind honest drudge

Was wearing out his simple blameless life,

And wanted help beneath a burthen—borne

To treasure-house or dust-heap, what cared I?

Partner he needed: I proposed myself,

Nor much surprised him—duty was so clear!

Gratitude? What for? Gain of Paradise—

Escape, perhaps, from the dire penalty

Of who hides talent in a napkin? No:

His scruple was—should I be strong enough

—In body? since of weakness in the mind,

Weariness in the heart—no fear of these!

He took me as these Arctic voyagers

Take an aspirant to their toil and pain:

Can he endure them?—that's the point, and not

—Will he? Who would not, rather! Where-upon,

I pleaded far more earnestly for leave

To give myself away, than you to gain

What you called priceless till you gained the heart

And soul and body! which, as beggars serve

Extorted alms, you straightway spat upon.

Not so my husband,—for I gained my suit,

And had my value put at once to proof.

Ask him! These four years I have died away

In village-life. The village? Ugliness

At best and filthiness at worst, inside.

Outside, sterility—earth sown with salt

Or what keeps even grass from growing fresh.

The life? I teach the poor and learn, myself,

That commonplace to such stupidity

Is all-recondite. Being brutalized

Their true need is brute-language, cheery grunts

And kindly chuckings, no articulate

Nonsense that's elsewhere knowledge. Tend the sick,

VOL. II.

Sicken myself at pig-perversity,  
Cat-craft, dog-snarling, — may be, snapping . . .

“Brief: You eat that root of bitterness called Man

—Raw: I prefer it cooked, with social sauce! So, he was not the rich youth after all!

Well, I mistook. But somewhere needs must be

The compensation. If not young nor rich . . .”

“You interrupt.”

“Because you've daubed enough Bistre for background. Play the artist now, Produce your figure well-relieved in front! The contrast—do not I anticipate?

Though neither rich nor young—what then? 'Tis all

Forgotten, all this ignobility, In the dear home, the darling word, the smile, The something sweeter . . .”

“Yes, you interrupt. I have my purpose and proceed. Who lives With beasts assumes beast-nature, look and voice,

And, much more, thought, for beasts think. Selfishness

In us met selfishness in them, deserved Such answer as it gained. My husband, bent

On saving his own soul by saving theirs,— They, bent on being saved if saving soul

Included body's getting bread and cheese Somehow in life and somehow after death,—

Both parties were alike in the same boat, One danger, therefore one equality.

Safety induces culture: culture seeks To institute, extend and multiply

The difference between safe man and man, Able to live alone now; progress means

What but abandonment of fellowship? We were in common danger, still stuck close.

No new books,—were the old ones mastered yet?

No pictures and no music: these divert

—What front? the staving danger off! You  
paint

The waterspout above, you set to words  
The roaring of the tempest round you?  
Thanks!

Amusement? Talk at end of the tired day  
Of the more tiresome morrow! I transcribed  
The page on page of sermon-scrawlings—  
stopped

Intellect's eye and ear to sense and sound—  
Vainly: the sound and sense would penetrate  
To brain and plague there in despite of me  
Maddened to know more moral good were  
done

Had we two simply sallied forth and preached  
I' the 'Green' they call their grimy,—I with  
twang

Of long-disused guitar,—with cut and slash  
Of much-misvalued horsewhip he,—to bid  
The peaceable come dance, the peace-breaker  
Pay in his person! Whereas—Heaven and  
Hell,

Excite with that, restrain with this! So dealt  
His drugs my husband; as he dosed himself,  
He drenched his cattle: and, for all my part  
Was just to dub the mortar, never fear  
But drugs, hand pestled at, have poisoned  
nose!

Heaven he let pass, left wisely undescribed:  
As applicable therefore to the sleep  
I want, that knows no waking—as to what's  
Conceived of as the proper prize to tempt  
Souls less world-weary: there, no fault to  
find!

But Hell he made explicit. After death,  
Life: man created new, ingeniously  
Perfect for a vindictive purpose now  
That man, first fashioned in beneficence,  
Was proved a failure; intellect at length  
Replacing old obtuseness, memory  
Made mindful of delinquent's bygone deeds  
Now that remorse was vain, which life-long  
lay

Dormant when lesson might be laid to heart;  
New gift of observation up and down  
And sound man's self, new power to appre-  
hend

Each necessary consequence of act

In man for well or ill—things obsolete—

Just granted to supplant the idiocy  
Man's only guide while act was yet to choose,  
With ill or well momentarily its fruit;  
A faculty of immense suffering  
Conferred on mind and body,—mind, ere-  
while

Unvisited by one compunctious dream  
During sin's drunken slumber, startled up,  
Stung through and through by sin's signi-  
ficance

Now that the holy was abolished—just  
As body which, alive, broke down beneath  
Knowledge, lay helpless in the path to good,  
Failed to accomplish aught legitimate,  
Achieve aught worthy,—which grew old in  
youth,

And at its longest fell a cut-down flower,—  
Dying, this too revived by miracle  
To bear no end of burthen now that back  
Supported torture to no use at all,  
And live imperishably potent—since  
Life's potency was impotent to ward  
One plague off which made earth a hell  
before.

This doctrine, which one healthy view of  
things,

One sane sight of the general ordinance—  
Nature,—and its particular object,—man,—  
Which one mere eye-cast at the character  
Of Who made these and gave man sense to  
boot,

Had dissipated once and evermore,—  
This doctrine I have dosed our flock withal.  
Why? Because none believed it. *They*  
desire

Such Heaven and dread such Hell, whom  
every day

The alehouse tempts from one, a dog-fight bids  
Defy the other? All the harm is done  
Ourselves—done my poor husband who in  
youth

Perhaps read Dickens, done myself who still  
Could play both Bach and Brahms. Such  
life I lead—

Thanks to you, knave! You learn its  
quality—

Thanks to me, fool!"

But she continues.

"—Life which, thanks once more  
To you, arch-knave as exquisitest fool,  
I acquiescingly—I gratefully  
Take back again to heart! and hence this  
speech  
Which yesterday had spared you. Four  
years long

Life—I began to find intolerable,  
Only this moment. Ere your entry just,  
The leap of heart which answered, spite of  
me,

A friend's first summons, first provocative,  
Authoritative, nay, compulsive call  
To quit, though for a single day, my house  
Of bondage—made return seem horrible.  
I heard again a human lucid laugh  
All trust, no fear; again saw earth pursue  
Its narrow busy way amid small cares,  
Smaller contentments, much weeds, some few  
flowers,—

Never suspicious of a thunderbolt:  
Avenging presently each daisy's death.  
I recognized the beech-tree, knew the thrush  
Repeated his old music-phrase,—all right,  
How wrong was I, then! But your entry  
broke

Illusion, bade me back to bounds at once.  
I honestly submit my soul: which sprang  
At love, and losing love lies signed and  
sealed

'Failure.' No love more? then, no beauty  
more

Which tends to breed love! Purify my powers,  
Effortless till some other world procure  
Some other chance of prize! or, if none be,—  
Nor second world nor chance,—undesecrate  
Die then this aftergrowth of heart, surmised  
Where May's precipitation left June blank!  
Better have failed in the high aim, as I,  
Than vulgarly in the low aim succeed  
As, God be thanked, I do not! Ugliness  
Had I called beauty, falsehood—truth, and  
you

—My lover! No—this earth's unchanged  
for me,

He eyes her earnestly, By his enchantment whom, God made the  
Prince

O' the Power o' the Air, into a Heaven:  
there is

Heaven, since there is Heaven's simulation  
—earth.

I sit possessed in patience; prison-roof  
Shall break one day and Heaven beam over-  
head."

His smile is done with; he speaks bitterly.

"Take my congratulations, and permit  
I wish myself had proved as teachable!  
—Or, no! until you taught me, could I  
learn

A lesson from experience ne'er till now  
Conceded? Please you listen while I show  
How thoroughly you estimate my worth  
And yours—the immeasurably superior! I  
Believed at least in one thing, first to last,—  
Your love to me: I was the vile and you  
The precious; I abused you, I betrayed,  
But doubted—never! Why else go my way  
Judas-like plodding to this Potter's Field  
Where fate now finds me? What has dinned  
my ear

And dogged my step? The spectre with the  
shriek

'Such she was, such were you, whose punish-  
ment

Is just!' And such she was not, all the  
while!

She never owned a love to outrage, faith  
To pay with falsehood! For, my heart  
knows this—

Love once and you love always. Why, it's  
down

Here in the Album: every lover knows  
Love may use hate but—turn to hate, itself—  
Turn even to indifference—no, indeed!

Well, I have been spell-bound, deluded like  
The witless negro by the Obeah-man

Who bids him wither: so, his eye grows dim,  
His arm slack, arrow misses aim and spear  
Goes wandering wide,—and all the woe be-  
cause

He proved untrue to Fetish, who, he finds,

Was just a feather-phantom? I wronged love, He paces to and fro, stops, stands quite close;  
Am ruined,—and there was no love to And calls her by her name. Then—  
wrong!"

"No love? Ah, dead love! I invoke thy ghost  
To show the murderer where thy heart poured life  
At summons of the stroke he doubts was dealt  
On pasteboard and pretence! Not love, my love?  
Forgive you, delegate of God, brought near  
As never priests could bring him to this soul  
That prays you both—forgive me! I abase—  
Know myself mad and monstrous utterly  
In all I did that moment; but as God  
Gives me this knowledge—heart to feel and tongue

I changed for you the very laws of life:  
Made you the standard of all right, all fair.  
No genius but you could have been, no sage,  
No sufferer—which is grandest—for the truth!  
My hero—where the heroic only hid  
To burst from hiding, brighten earth one day!  
Age and decline were man's maturity;  
Face, form were nature's type: more grace,  
more strength,  
What had they been but just superfluous  
gauds,  
Lawless divergence? I have danced through  
day  
On tiptoe at the music of a word,  
Have wondered where was darkness gone as  
night  
Burst out in stars at brilliance of a smile!  
Lonely, I placed the chair to help me seat  
Your fancied presence; in companionship,  
I kept my finger constant to your glove  
Glued to my breast; then—where was all  
the world?  
I schemed—not dreamed—how I might die  
some death  
Should save your finger aching! Who creates  
Destroys, he only: I had laughed to scorn  
Whatever angel tried to shake my faith  
And make you seem unworthy: you yourself  
Only could do that! With a touch 'twas done.  
'Give me all, trust me wholly!' At the word,  
I did give, I did trust—and thereupon  
The touch did follow. Ah, the quiet smile,  
The masterfully-folded arm in arm,  
As trick obtained its triumph one time more:  
In turn, my soul too triumphs in defeat:  
Treason like faith moves mountains: love is  
gone!"

"God forgives:

To testify—so be you gracious too!

Judge no man by the solitary work  
Of—well, they do say and I can believe—  
The devil in him: his, the moment,—mine  
The life—your life!"

He names her name again.

"You were just—merciful as just, you were  
In giving me no respite: punishment  
Followed offending. Sane and sound once  
more,  
The patient thanks decision, promptitude,  
Which flung him prone and fastened him  
from hurt,  
Haply to others, surely to himself.  
I wake and would not you had spared one  
pang.  
All's well that ends well!"

Yet again her name.

"Had you no fault? Why must you change,  
forsooth,  
Parts, why reverse positions, spoil the play?  
Why did your nobleness look up to me,  
Not down on the ignoble thing confessed?  
Was it your part to stoop, or lift the low?  
Wherefore did God exalt you? Who would  
teach  
The brute man's tameness and intelligence  
Must never drop the dominating eye:  
Wink—and what wonder if the mad fit  
break,  
Followed by stripes and fasting? Sound and  
sane,  
My life, chastised now, couches at your foot-

Accept, redeem me! Do your eyes ask  
'How?'

I stand here penniless, a beggar; talk  
What idle trash I may, this final blow  
Of fortune fells me. I disburse, indeed,  
This boy his winnings? when each bubble-  
scheme

That danced athwart my brain, a minute since,  
The worse the better,—of repairing straight  
My misadventure by fresh enterprise,  
Capture of other boys in foolishness  
His fellows,—when these fancies fade away  
At first sight of the lost so long, the found  
So late, the lady of my life, before  
Whose presence I, the lost, am also found  
Incapable of one least touch of mean  
Expedient, I who teemed with plot and  
wile—

That family of snakes your eye bids flee!  
Listen! Our troublesomest dreams die off  
In daylight: I awake, and dream is—where?  
I rouse up from the past: one touch dispels  
England and all here. I secured long since  
A certain refuge, solitary home  
To hide in, should the head strike work one  
day,

The hand forget its cunning, or perhaps  
Society grow savage,—there to end  
My life's remainder, which, say what fools  
will,

Is or should be the best of life,—its fruit,  
All tends to, root and stem and leaf and  
flower.

Come with me, love, loved once, loved only,  
come,  
Blend loves there! Let this parenthetical  
doubt

Of love, in me, have been the trial-test  
Appointed to all flesh at some one stage  
Of soul's achievement,—when the strong  
man doubts

His strength, the good man whether good-  
ness be,

The artist in the dark seeks, fails to find  
Vocation, and the saint forswears his shrine.  
What if the lover may elude, no more  
Than these, probative dark, must search the  
sky

Vainly for love, his soul's star? But the orb  
Breaks from eclipse: I breathe again: I love!  
Tempted, I fell; but fallen—fallen lie  
Here at your feet, see! Leave this poor  
pretence

Of union with a nature and its needs  
Repugnant to your needs and nature! Nay,  
False, beyond falsity you reprehend  
In me, is such mock marriage with such mere  
Man-mask as—whom you witless wrong,  
beside,

By that expenditure of heart and brain  
He reckons no more of than would yonder  
tree

If watered with your life-blood: rains and  
dews

Answer its ends sufficiently, while me  
One drop saves—sends to flower and fruit at  
last

The laggard virtue in the soul which else  
Cumbers the ground! Quickened me! Call  
me yours—

Yours and the world's—yours and the world's  
and God's!

Yes, for you can, you only! Think! Confirm  
Your instinct! Say, a minute since, I seemed  
The castaway you count me,—all the more  
Apparent shall the angelic potency  
Lift me from out perdition's deep of deeps  
To light and life and love!—that's love for  
you—

Love that already dares match might with  
yours.

You loved one worthy,—in your estimate,—  
When time was; you desisted the unworthy  
taint,

And where was love then? No such test  
could e'er

Try my love: but you hate me and revile;  
Hatred, revilement—had you these to bear.  
Would you, as I do, nor revile, nor hate,  
But simply love on, love the more, perchance?  
Abide by your own proof! 'Your love was  
love:

*Its ghost knows no forgetting!*' Heart of mine,  
Would that I dared remember! Too unwise  
Were he who lost a treasure, did himself  
Enlarge upon the sparkling catalogue

Of gems to her his queen who trusted late  
The keeper of her caskets! Can it be  
That I, custodian of such relic still  
As your contempt permits me to retain,  
All I dare hug to breast is—*‘How your glove  
Burst and displayed the long thin lily-streak!’*  
What may have followed—that is forfeit now!  
I hope the proud man has grown humble.

True—

One grace of humbleness absents itself—  
Silence! yet love lies deeper than all words,  
And not the spoken but the speechless love  
Waits answer ere I rise and go my way.”

Whereupon, yet one other time the name.

To end she looks the large deliberate look,  
Even prolongs it somewhat; then the soul  
Bursts forth in a clear laugh that lengthens on,  
On, till—thinned, softened, silvered, one  
might say

The bitter runnel hides itself in sand,  
Moistens the hard grey grimly comic speech.

“Ay—give the baffled angler even yet  
His supreme triumph as he hales to shore  
A second time the fish once ‘scaped from  
hook:

So artfully has new bait hidden old  
Blood-imbrued iron! Ay, no barb’s beneath  
The gilded minnow here! You bid break  
trust,

This time, with who trusts me,—not simply bid  
Me trust you, me who ruined but myself,  
In trusting but myself! Since, thanks to you,  
I know the feel of sin and shame,—be sure,  
I shall obey you and impose them both  
On one who happens to be ignorant  
Although my husband—for the lure is love,  
Your love! Try other tackle, fisher-friend!  
Repentance, expiation, hopes and fears,  
What you had been, may yet be, would I but  
Prove helpmate to my hero—one and all  
These silks and worsteds round the hook  
seduce

Hardly the late torn throat and mangled  
tongue.

Pack up, I pray, the whole assortment prompt!

Who wonders at variety of wile  
In the Arch-cheat? You are the Adversary!  
Your fate is of your choosing: have your  
choice!

Wander the world,—God has some end to  
serve

Ere he suppress you! He waits: I endure,  
But interpose no finger-tip, forsooth,  
To stop your passage to the pit. Enough  
That I am stable, uninvolved by you  
In the rush downwards: free I gaze and  
fixed;

Your smiles, your tears, prayers, curses move  
alike

My crowned contempt. You kneel? Pro-  
strate yourself!

To earth, and would the whole world saw  
you there!”

Whereupon—“All right!” carelessly begins  
Somebody from outside, who mounts the  
stair,

And sends his voice for herald of approach:  
Half in half out the doorway as the door  
Gives way to push.

“Old fellow, all’s no good!

The train’s your portion! Lay the blame on  
me!

I’m no diplomatist, and Bismarck’s self  
Had hardly braved the awful Aunt at broach  
Of proposition—so has world-repute  
Preceded the illustrious stranger! Ah!—”

Quick the voice changes to astonishment,  
Then horror, as the youth stops, sees, and  
knows.

The man who knelt starts up from kneeling,  
stands

Moving no muscle, and confronts the stare.

One great red outbreak buries—throat and  
brow—

The lady’s proud pale queenliness of scorn:  
Then her great eyes that turned so quick,  
become

Intenser: quail at gaze, not they indeed!

It is the young man shatters silence first.

"Well, my lord—for indeed my lord you are,  
I little guessed how rightly—this last proof  
Of lordship-paramount confounds too much  
My simple head-piece! Let's, see how we  
stand

Each to the other! how we stood 't the game  
Of life an hour ago,—the magpies, stile  
And oak-tree witnessed. Truth exchanged  
for truth—

My lord confessed his four-years-old affair—  
How he seduced and then forsook the girl  
Who married somebody and left him sad.

My pitiful experience was—I loved  
A girl whose gown's hem had I dared to touch  
My finger would have failed me, palsy-fixed.  
She left me, sad enough, to marry—whom?  
A better man,—then possibly not you!

How does the game stand? Who is who and  
what

Is what, o' the board now, since an hour  
went by?

My lord's '*seduced, forsaken, sacrificed*,'  
Starts up, my lord's familiar instrument,  
Associate and accomplice, mistress-slave—  
Shares his adventure, follows on the sly!  
—Ay, and since 'bag and baggage' is a  
phrase—

Baggage lay hid in carpet-bag belike,  
Was but unpadlocked when occasion came  
For holding council, since my back was turned,  
On how invent ten thousand pounds which,  
paid,

Would lure the winner to lose twenty more,  
Beside refunding these! Why else allow  
The fool to gain them? So displays herself  
The lady whom my heart believed—oh, laugh!  
Noble and pure: whom my heart loved at  
once,

And who at once did speak truth when she  
said

'*I am not mine now but another's*'—thus  
Being that other's! Devil's-marriage, eh?

'*My lie weds thine till lucra us do part*'?  
But pity me the snobbish simpleton,  
You two aristocratic tip-top swells

At swindling! Quits, I cry! Decamp con-  
tent.

With skin I'm peeled of: do not strip bones  
bare—

As that you could, I have no doubt at all!  
O you two rare ones! Male and female, Sir!

The male there smirked, this morning, '*Come,*  
*my boy—*

*Out with it! You've been crossed in love, I*  
*think:*

*I recognise the lover's hangdog look;  
Make a clean breast and match my confidence,  
For, I'll be frank, I too have had my fling,  
Am punished for my fault, and smart enough!  
Where now the victim hides her head, God*  
*knows!*

Here loomed her head life-large, the devil  
knew!

Look out, Salvini! Here's your man, your  
match!

He and I sat applauding, stall by stall,  
Last Monday—'*Here's Othello*' was our word,  
'*But where's Iago?*' Where? Why, there t  
And now

The fellow-artist, female specimen—  
Oh, lady, you must needs describe yourself!

He's great in art, but you—how greater still  
(If I can rightly, out of all I learned,

Apply one bit of Latin that assures  
'*Art means just art's concealment*')—tower  
yourself!

For he stands plainly visible henceforth—  
Liar and scamp: while you, in artistry

Prove so consummate—or I prove perhaps  
So absolute an ass—that—either way—

You still do seem to me who worshipped you  
And see you take the homage of this man

Your master, who played slave and knelt, no  
doubt,

Before a mistress in his very craft  
Well, take the fact, I nor believe my eyes,

Nor trust my understanding! Still you seem  
Noble and pure as when we had the talk

Under the tower, beneath the trees, that day.  
And there's the key explains the secret: down

He knelt to ask your leave to rise a grade  
I' the mystery of humbug: well he may!

For how you beat him! Half an hour ago,



I held your master for my best of friends ;  
And now I hate him ! Four years since, you  
seemed

My heart's one love : well, and you so remain !  
What's he to you in craft ?"

She looks him through.

"My friend, 'tis just that friendship have its  
turn—

Interrogate thus me whom one, of foes  
The worst, has questioned and is answered by.

Take you as frank an answer ! answers both  
Begin alike so far, divergent soon

World-wide—I own superiority  
Over you, over him. As him I searched,

So do you stand seen through and through  
by me

Who, this time, proud, report your crystal  
shrines

A dewdrop, plain as amber prisons round  
A spider in the hollow heart his house !

Nowise are you that thing my fancy feared  
When out you stepped on me, a minute

since,  
—This man's confederate ! no, you step not  
thus

Obsequiously at beck and call to help  
At need some second scheme, and supplement

Guile by force, use my share to pinion me  
From struggle and escape ! I fancied that !

Forgive me ! Only by strange chance,—most  
strange

In even this strange world,—you enter now,  
Obtain your knowledge. Me you have not

wronged

Who never wronged you—least of all, my  
friend,

That day beneath the College tower and trees,  
When I refused to say,—*'not friend but,*

*love !'*

Had I been found as free as air when first  
We met, I scarcely could have loved you.

No—  
For where was that in you which claimed  
return

Of love ? My eyes were all too weak to probe  
This other's seeming, but that seeming loved

The soul in me, and lied—I know too late !  
While your truth was truth : and I knew at  
once

My power was just my beauty—bear the  
word—

As I must bear, of all my qualities,  
To name the poorest one that serves my soul

And simulates myself ! So much in me  
You loved, I know : the something that's

beneath  
Heard not your call,—uncalled, no answer  
comes !

For, since in every love, or soon or late  
Soul must awake and seek out soul for soul,

Yours, overlooking mine then, would, some  
day,

Take flight to find some other ; so it proved—  
Missing me, you were ready for this man.

I apprehend the whole relation : his—  
The soul wherein you saw your type of worth

At once, true object of your tribute. Well  
Might I refuse such half-heart's homage !

Love  
Divining, had assured you I no more  
Stand his participant in infamy

Than you—I need no love to recognize  
As simply dupe and nowise fellow-cheat !

Therefore accept one last friend's word,—  
your friend's,

All men's friend, save a felon's. Ravel out  
The bad embroilment howsoe'er you may,

Distribute as it please you praise or blame  
To me—so you but fling this mockery far—

Renounce this rag-and-feather hero-sham,  
This poodle clipt to pattern, lion-like !

Throw him his thousands back, and lay to  
heart

The lesson I was sent,—if man discerned  
Ever God's message,—just to teach. I

judge—  
To far another issue than could dream

Your cousin,—younger, fairer, as befits—  
Who summoned me to judgment's exercise.

I find you, save in folly, innocent.  
And in my verdict lies your fate ; at choice

Of mine your cousin takes or leaves you  
*'Take !'*

I bid her—for you tremble back to truth.

She turns the scale,—one touch of the pure hand

Shall so press down, emprison past relapse  
Farther vibration 'twixt veracity—

That's honest solid earth—and falsehood, theft

And air, that's one illusive emptiness !

That reptile capture you? I conquered him :

You saw him cower before me. Have no fear

He shall offend you farther! Spare to spurn—

Safe let him slink hence till some subtler Eve

Than I, anticipate the snake—bruise head

Ere he bruise heel—or, warier than the first,

Some Adam purge earth's garden of its pest

Before the slaver spoil the Tree of Life !

“You ! Leave this youth, as he leaves you,  
as I

Leave each ! There's caution surely extant  
yet

Though conscience in you were too vain a  
claim.

Hence quickly ! Keep the cash but leave  
unsoiled

The heart I rescue and would lay to heal

Beside another's ! Never let her know

How near came taint of your companion-  
ship !”

“Ah”—draws a long breath with a new  
strange look

The man she interpellates—soul a-stir

Under its covert, as, beneath the dust,

A coppery sparkle all at once denotes

The hid snake has conceived a purpose.

“Ah—

Innocence should be crowned with ignorance?

Desirable indeed, but difficult !

As if yourself, now, had not glorified

Your helpmate by imparting him a hint

Of how a monster made the victim bleed

Ere crook and courage saved her—hint, I  
say,—

Not the whole horror,—that were needless  
risk,—

But just such inkling, fancy of the fact,

As should suffice to qualify henceforth

The shepherd, when another lamb would  
stray,

For warning ‘Ware the wolf!’ No doubt  
at all,

Silence is generosity,—keeps wolf

Unhunted by flock's warder ! Excellent,

Did—generous to me, mean—just to him !

But, screening the deceiver, lamb were found

Outraging the deceitless ! So,—he knows !

And yet, unharmed I breathe—perchance,  
repent—

Thanks to the mercifully-politic !”

“Ignorance is not innocence but sin—

Witness yourself ignore what after-pangs

Pursue the plague-infected. Merciful

Am I? Perhaps ! The more contempt, the  
less

Hatred ; and who so worthy of contempt

As you that rest assured I cooled the spot

I could not cure, by poisoning, forsooth,

Whose hand I pressed there? Understand  
for once

That, sick, of all the pains corroding me

This burnt the last and nowise least—the need

Of simulating soundness. I resolved—

No matter how the struggle tasked weak  
flesh—

To hide the truth away as in a grave

From—most of all—my husband : he nor  
knows

Nor ever shall be made to know your part,

My part, the devil's part,—I trust, God's part

In the foul matter. Saved, I yearn to save

And not destroy : and what destruction like

The abolishing of faith in him, that's faith

In me as pure and true? Acquaint some child

Who takes yon tree into his confidence,

That, where he sleeps now, was a murder  
done,

And that the grass which grows so thick, he  
thinks,

Only to pillow him is product just

Of what lies festering beneath ! ‘Tis God

Must bear such secrets and disclose them.  
Man?

The miserable thing I have become

By dread acquaintance with my secret—*you*—

That thing had he become by learning me—  
The miserable, whom his ignorance  
Would wrongly call the wicked: ignorance  
Being, I hold, sin ever, small or great.  
No, he knows nothing!"

"He and I alike  
Are bound to you for such discreetness, then.  
What if our talk should terminate awhile?  
Here is a gentleman to satisfy,  
Settle accounts with, pay ten thousand pounds  
Before we part—as, by his face, I fear,  
Results from your appearance on the scene.  
Grant me a minute's parley with my friend  
Which scarce admits of a third personage!  
The room from which you made your entry first  
So opportunely—still untenanted—  
What if you please return there? Just a word  
To my young friend first—then, a word to you,  
And you depart to fan away each fly  
From who, grass-pillowed, sleeps so sound  
at home!"

"So the old truth comes back! A whole—  
some change,—

At last the altered eye, the rightful tone!  
But even to the truth that drops disguise  
And stands forth grinning malice which but now  
Whined so contritely—I refuse assent  
Just as to malice. I, once gone, come back?  
No, my lord! I enjoy the privilege  
Of being absolutely loosed from you  
Too much—the knowledge that your power  
is null.

Which was omnipotence. A word of mouth;  
A wink of eye would have detained me once,  
Body and soul your slave; and now, thank  
God,

Your fawningest of prayers, your frightfullest  
Of curses—neither would avail to turn  
My footstep for a moment!"

"Prayer, then, tries  
No such adventure. Let us cast about  
For something novel in expedient: take  
Command,—what say you? I profess myself  
One fertile in resource. Commanding, then;  
I bid—not only wait there, but return

Here, where I want you! Disobey and—  
good!  
On your own head the peril!"

"Come!" breaks in  
The boy with his good glowing face. "Shut up!  
None of this sort of thing while I stand here  
—Not to stand that! No bullying, I beg!  
I also am to leave you presently  
And never more set eyes upon your face—  
You won't mind that much; but—I tell you  
frank—

I do mind having to remember this  
For your last word and deed—my friend who  
were!

Bully a woman you have ruined, eh?  
Do you know,—I give credit all at once  
To all those stories everybody told  
And nobody but I would disbelieve:  
They all seem likely now,—nay, certain, sure!  
I dare say you did cheat at cards that night  
The row was at the Club: '*sauter la coupe*'—  
That was your 'cut,' for which your friends  
'cut' you;

While I, the booby, 'cut'—acquaintanceship  
With who so much as laughed when I said  
'luck!'

I dare say you had bets against the horse  
They doctored at the Derby; little doubt,  
That fellow with the sister found you shirk  
His challenge and did kick you like a ball,  
Just as the story went about! Enough:  
It only serves to show how well advised,  
Madam, you were in bidding such a fool  
As I, go hang. You see how the mere sight  
And sound of you suffice to tumble down  
Conviction topsy-turvy: no,—that's false,—  
There's no unknowing what one knows; and  
yet

Such is my folly that, in gratitude  
For . . . well, I'm stupid; but you seeme  
to wish

I should know gently what I know, should  
slip

Softly from old to new, not break my neck.  
Between beliefs of what you were and are.  
Well then, for just the sake of such a wish  
To cut no worse a figure than needs must

In even eyes like mine, I'd sacrifice  
Body and soul! But don't think danger—  
pray!

Menaces either! He do harm to us?  
Let me say 'us' this one time! You'd allow  
I lent perhaps my hand to rid your ear  
Of some cur's yelping—hand that's fortified,  
Into the bargain, with a horsewhip? Oh,  
One crack and you shall see how curs decamp!  
My lord, you know your losses and my gains.  
Pay me my money at the proper time!  
If cash be not forthcoming,—well, yourself  
Have taught me, and tried often, I'll engage,  
The proper course: I post you at the Club,  
Pillory the defaulter. Crack, to-day,  
Shall, slash, to-morrow, slice through flesh  
and bone!

There, Madam, you need mind no cur, I  
think!

"Ah, what a gain to have an apt no less  
Than grateful scholar! Nay, he brings to  
mind

My knowledge till he puts me to the blush,  
So long has it lain rusty! Post my name!  
That were indeed a wheal from whipcord!  
Whew!

I wonder now if I could rummage out  
—Just to match weapons—some old scorpion-  
scourge!

Madam, you hear my pupil, may applaud  
His triumph o'er the master. I—no more  
Bully, since I'm forbidden: but entreat—  
Wait and return—for my sake, no! but just  
To save your own defender, should he chance  
Get thwacked thro' awkward flourish of his  
thong.

And what if—since all waiting's weary  
work—

I help the time pass 'twixt your exit now  
And entry then? for—pastime proper—here's  
The very thing, the Album, verse and prose  
To make the laughing minutes launch away!  
Each of us must contribute. I'll begin—  
'*Hail, calm activity, salubrious spot!*'  
I'm confident I beat the bard,—for why?  
My young friend owns me an *Iago*—him  
Confessed, among the other qualities,

A ready rhymers. Oh, he rhymed! Here goes!  
—Something to end with '*horsewhip!*' No,  
that rhyme

Beats me; there's '*cowslip,*' '*boltsprit,*'  
nothing else!

So, Tennyson take my benison,—verse for  
bard,

Prose suits the gambler's book best! Dared  
and done!"

Wherewith he dips pen, writes a line or two,  
Closes and clasps the cover, gives the book,  
Bowing the while, to her who hesitates,  
Turns half away, turns round again, at last  
Takes it as you touch carrion, then retires.  
The door shuts fast the couple.

## VI.

With a change

Of his whole manner, opens out at once  
The Adversary.

"Now, my friend, for you!

You who, protected late, aggressive grown,  
Brandish, it seems, a weapon I must 'ware!  
Plain speech in me becomes respectable  
Henceforth, because courageous; plainly,  
then—

(Have lash well loose, hold handle tight and  
light!)

Throughout my life's experience, you indulged  
Yourself and friend by passing in review  
So courteously but now, I vainly search  
To find one record of a specimen  
So perfect of the pure and simple fool  
As this you furnish me. Ingratitude  
I lump with folly,—all's one lot,—so—fool!  
Did I seek you or you seek me? Seek? sneak  
For service to, and service you would style—  
And did style—godlike, scarce an hour ago  
Fool, there again, yet not precisely there  
First-rate in folly: since the hand you kissed  
Did pick you from the kennel, did plant firm  
Your footstep on the pathway, did persuade  
Your awkward shamle to true gait and pace,  
Fit for the world you walk in. Once a strut  
On that firm pavement which your cowardice

Was for renouncing as a pitfall, next  
 Came need to clear your brains of their  
 conceit

They cleverly could distinguish who was who,  
 Whatever folk might tramp the thoroughfare.  
 Men, now—familiarily you read them off,  
 Each phyz at first sight! O you had an eye!  
 Who couched it? made you disappoint each  
 fox

Eager to strip my gosling of his fluff  
 So golden as he cackled 'Goose trusts lamb?'  
 'Ay, but I saved you—wolf defeated fox—  
*Wanting to pick your bones myself!*' then,  
 wolf

Has got the worst of it with goose for once.  
 I, penniless, pay you ten thousand pounds  
 (—No gesture, pray! I pay ere I depart.)  
 And how you turn advantage to account  
 Here's the example. Have I proved so  
 wrong

In my peremptory '*debt must be discharged!*'  
 O you laughed lovelily, were loth to leave  
 The old friend out at elbows—pooh, a thing  
 Not to be thought of! I must keep my cash,  
 And you forget your generosity!  
 Ha ha, I took your measure when I laughed  
 My laugh to that! First quarrel—nay, first  
 faint

Pretence at taking umbrage—'*Down with  
 debt,*

*Both interest and principal!*—*The Club,  
 Exposure and expulsion!*—*stamp me out!*  
 That's the magnanimous magnificent  
 Renunciation of advantage! Well,  
 But whence and why did you take umbrage,  
 Sir?

Because your master, having made you know  
 Somewhat of men, was minded to advance,  
 Expound you women, still a mystery!  
 My pupil potted with a cloud on brow,  
 A clod in breast: had loved, and vainly  
 loved:

Whence blight and blackness, just for all the  
 world

As Byron used to teach us boys. Thought

'*Quick rid him of that rubbish! Clear the  
 cloud,*

*And set the heart a-pulsing!*'—heart, this  
 time:

'Twas nothing but the head I doctored late  
 For ignorance of Man; now heart's to dose  
 Palsied by over-palpitation due  
 To Woman-worship—so, to work at once  
 On first avowal of the patient's ache!  
 This morning you described your malady,—  
 How you dared love a piece of virtue—lost  
 To reason, as the upshot showed: for scorn  
 Fitly repaid your stupid arrogance;  
 And, parting, you went two ways, she re-  
 sumed

Her path—perfection, while forlorn you  
 paced  
 The world that's made for beasts like you  
 and me.

My remedy was—tell the fool the truth!  
 Your paragon of purity had plumped  
 Into these arms at their first outspread—  
 '*fallen*

*My victim,* she prefers to turn the phrase—  
 And, in exchange for that frank confidence,  
 Asked for my whole life present and to  
 come—

Marriage: a thing uncovenanted for,  
 Never so much as put in question. Life—  
 Implied by marriage—throw that trifle in  
 And round the bargain off, no otherwise  
 Than if, when we played cards, because you  
 won

My money you should also want my head!  
 That, I demurred to: we but played '*for  
 love*'—

She won my love; had she proposed for  
 stakes  
 '*Marriage,*'—why, that's for whist, a wiser  
 game.

Whereat she raved at me, as losers will,  
 And went her way. So far the story's known,  
 The remedy's applied, no farther: which  
 Here's the sick man's first *honorarium* for—  
 Posting his medicine-monger at the Club!  
 That being, Sir, the whole you mean my fee—  
 In gratitude for such munificence

I'm bound in common honesty to spare  
 No droplet of the draught: so,—pinch your  
 nose,

Pull no wry faces!—drain it to the dregs!  
 I say '*She went off*'—'*went off*,' you subjoin,  
 '*Since not to wedded bliss, as I supposed,*  
*Sure to some convent: solitude and peace*  
*Help her to hide the shame from mortal view,*  
*With prayer and fasting.'* No, my sapient  
 Sir!

Far wiselier, straightway she betook herself  
 To a prize-portent from the donkey-show  
 Of leathern long-ears that compete for palm  
 In clerical absurdity: since he,  
 Good as, nor practises the shaving-trick,  
 The candle-crochet, nonsense which repays  
 When you've young ladies congregant,—but  
 schools

The poor,—toils, moils and grinds the mill  
 nor means

To stop and munch one thistle in this life  
 Till next life smother him with roses: just  
 The parson for her purpose! Him she  
 stroked

Over the muzzle; into mouth with bit,  
 And on to back with saddle,—there he stood,  
 The serviceable beact who heard, believed  
 And meekly bowed him to the burden,—  
 borne

Off in a canter to seclusion—ay,  
 The lady's lost! But had a friend of mine  
 —While friend he was—imparted his sad case  
 To sympathizing counsellor, full soon  
 One cloud at least had vanished from his  
 brow.

'*Don't fear!*' had followed reassuringly—  
 '*The lost will in due time turn up again,*  
*Probably just when, weary of the world,*  
*You think of nothing less than settling-down*  
*To country life and golden days, beside*  
*A dearest best and brightest virtuouslest*  
*Wife: who needs no more hope to hold her*  
*own*

*Against the naughty-and-repentant—no,*  
*Than water-gruel against Roman punch!*'  
 And as I prophesied, it proves! My  
 youth,—

Just at the happy moment when, subdued  
 To spooniness, he finds that youth fleets fast,  
 That town-life tires, that men should drop  
 boys'-play,

That property, position have, no doubt,  
 Their exigency with their privilege,  
 And if the wealthy wed with wealth, how dire  
 The double duty!—in, behold, there beams  
 Our long-lost lady, form and face complete!  
 And where's my moralizing pupil now,  
 Had not his master missed a train by chance?  
 But, by your side instead of whirled away,  
 How have I spoiled scene, stopped catas-  
 trophe,

Struck flat the stage-effect I know by heart!  
 Sudden and strange the meeting—improvised?  
 Bless you, the last event she hoped or  
 dreamed!

But rude sharp stroke will crush out fire from  
 flint—

Assuredly from flesh. '*Tis you?*' '*Myself?*'  
 '*Changed?*' '*Changeless.*' '*Then, what's*  
*earth to me?*' '*To me*  
*What's heaven?*' '*So,—thine!*' '*And*  
*thine!*' '*And likewise mine!*'

Had laughed '*Amen*' the devil, but for me  
 Whose intermeddling hinders this hot haste,  
 And bids you, ere concluding contract,  
 pause—

Ponder one lesson more, then sign and seal  
 At leisure and at pleasure,—lesson's price  
 Being, if you have skill to estimate,  
 —How say you?—I'm discharged my debt  
 in full!

Since paid you stand, to farthing uttermost,  
 Unless I fare like that black majesty.

A friend of mine had visit from last Spring.  
 Coasting along the Cape-side, he's becalmed  
 Off an uncharted bay, a novel town  
 Untouched at by the trader: here's a chance!  
 Out paddles straight the king in his canoe,  
 Comes over bulwark, says he means to buy  
 Ship's cargo—being rich and having brought  
 A treasure ample for the purpose. See!  
 Four dragons, stalwart blackies, guard the  
 same

Wrapped round and round: its hulls, a  
 multitude,—

Palm-leaf and cocoa-mat and goat's-hair cloth  
 All duly braced about with bark and board,—  
 Suggest how brave, 'neath coat, must kernel  
 be!

At length the peeling is accomplished, plain  
The casket opens out its core, and lo  
—A brand-new British silver sixpence—bid  
That's ample for the Bank,—thinks majesty!  
You are the Captain; call my sixpence  
cracked

Or copper; '*what I've said is calumny*;  
*The lady's spotless!*' Then, I'll prove my  
words,

Or make you prove them true as truth—  
yourself,

Here, on the instant! I'll not mince my  
speech,

Things at this issue. When she enters, then,  
Make love to her! No talk of marriage now—  
The point-blank bare proposal! Pick no  
phrase—

Prevent all misconception! Soon you'll see  
How different the tactics when she deals  
With an instructed man, no longer boy  
Who blushes like a booby. Woman's wit!  
Man, since you have instruction, blush no  
more!

Such your five minutes' profit by my pains,  
'Tis simply no *non*—demand and be possessed!  
Which means—you may possess—may strip  
the tree

Of fruit desirable to make one wise.

More I nor wish nor want: your act's your  
act,

My teaching is but—there's the fruit to pluck  
Or let alone at pleasure. Next advance

In knowledge were beyond you! Don't  
expect

I bid a novice—pluck, suck, send sky-high  
Such fruit, once taught that neither crab nor  
sloe

Falls readier prey to who but robs a hedge,  
Than this gold apple to my Hercules.

Were you no novice but proficient—then,  
Then, truly, I might prompt you—Touch  
and taste,

Try flavour and be tired as soon as I!

Toss on the prize to greedy months agape,  
Betake yours, sobered as the satiate grow,

To wise man's solid meal of house and land,  
Consuls and cousin! but my boy, my boy,  
Such lore's above you!

Here's the lady back!  
So, Madam, you have crowned the Album-  
page

And come to thank its last contributor?  
How kind and condescending! I retire  
A moment, lest I spoil the interview,  
And mar my own endeavour to make friends—  
You with him, him with you, and both with  
me!

If I succeed—permit me to inquire  
Five minutes hence! Friends bid good-bye,  
you know."

And out he goes.

#### VII.

She, face, form, bearing, one  
Superb composure—

"He has told you all?"

Yes, he has told you all, your silence says—  
What gives him, as he thinks the mastery  
Over my body and my soul!—has told  
That instance, even, of their servitude  
He now exacts of me? A silent blush!  
That's well, though better would white  
ignorance

Beseem your brow, undesecrate before—  
Ay, when I left you! I too learn at last  
—Hideously learned as I seemed so late—  
What sin may swell to. Yes,—I needed learn  
That, when my prophet's rod became the  
snake

I fled from, it would, one day, swallow up  
—Incorporate whatever serpentine  
Falsehood and treason and unmanliness  
Beslime earth's pavement: such the power  
of Hell,

And so beginning, ends no otherwise  
The Adversary! I was ignorant,  
Blameworthy—if you will; but blame I take  
Nowise upon me as I ask myself

—*You*—how can you, whose soul I seemed  
to read

The limpid eyes through, have declined so  
deep

Even with him for consort? I revolve  
Much memory, pry into the looks and words  
Of that day's walk beneath the College wall,

And nowhere can distinguish, in what gleams  
Only pure marble through my dusky past,  
A dubious cranny where such poison-seed  
Might harbour, nourish what should yield  
to-day

This dread ingredient for the cup I drink.  
Do not I recognize and honour truth  
In seeming?—take your truth and for return,  
Give you my truth, a no less precious gift?  
You loved me: I believed you. I replied  
—How could I other? *'I was not my own,'*  
—No longer had the eyes to see, the ears  
To hear, the mind to judge, since heart and  
soul

Now were another's. My own right in me,  
For well or ill, consigned away—my face  
Fronted the honest path, deflection whence  
Had shamed me in the furtive backward  
look

At the late bargain—fit such chapman's  
phrase!—

As though—less hasty and more provident—  
Waiting had brought advantage. Not for me  
The chapman's chance! Yet while thus  
much was true,

I spared you—as I knew you then—one more  
Concluding word which, truth no less, seemed  
best

Buried away for ever. Take it now  
Its power to pain is past! Four years—that  
day—

Those limes that make the College avenue!  
I would that—friend and foe—by miracle,  
I had, that moment, seen into the heart  
Of either, as I now am taught to see!  
I do believe I should have straight assumed  
My proper function, and sustained a soul,  
Nor aimed at being just sustained myself  
By some man's soul—the weaker woman's—  
want!

So had I missed the momentary thrill  
Of finding me in presence of a god,  
But gained the god's own feeling when he  
gives

Such thrill to what turns life from death before.  
*'Gods many and Lords many,'* says the  
Book:

You would have yielded up your soul to me

—Not to the false god who has burned its clay  
In his own image. I had shed my love  
Like Spring dew on the clod all flowery  
thence,

Not sent up a wild vapour to the sun  
That drinks and then disperses. Both of us  
Blameworthy,—I first meet my punishment—  
And not so hard to bear. I breathe again!  
Forth from those arms' enwinding leprosy  
At last I struggle—uncontaminate:  
Why must I leave you pressing to the breast  
That's all one plague-spot? Did you love  
me once?

Then take love's last and best return! I  
think,

Womanliness means only motherhood;  
All love begins and ends there,—roams  
enough,

But, having run the circle, rests at home.  
Why is your expiation yet to make?

Pull shame with your own hands from your  
own head

Now,—never wait the slow envelopment  
Submitted to by unelastic age!

One fierce throe frees the sapling: flake on  
flake

Lull till they leave the oak snow-stupefied.  
Your heart retains its vital warmth—or why  
That blushing reassurance? Blush, young  
blood!

Break from beneath this icy premature  
Captivity of wickedness—I warn  
Back, in God's name! No fresh encroach-  
ment here!

This May breaks all to bud—no Winter now!  
Friend, we are both forgiven! Sin no more!  
I am past sin now, so shall you become!  
Meanwhile I testify that, lying once,  
My foe lied ever, most lied last of all.

He, waking, whispered to your sense asleep  
The wicked counsel,—and assent might seem;  
But, roused, your healthy indignation breaks  
The idle dream-pact. You would die—not  
dare

Confirm your dream-resolve,—nay, find the  
word

That fits the deed to bear the light of day!  
Say I have justly judged you: then farewell



To blushing—nay, it ends in smiles, not tears !  
 Why tears now ? I have justly judged, thank  
 God !”

He does blush boy-like, but the man speaks  
 out, !  
 —Makes the due effort to surmount himself.

“ I don’t know what he wrote—how should  
 I ? Nor

How he could read my purpose which, it  
 seems,

He chose to somehow write—mistakenly  
 Or else for mischief’s sake. I scarce believe  
 My purpose put before you fair and plain  
 Would need annoy so much ; but there’s my  
 luck—

From first to last I blunder. Still, one more  
 Turn at the target, try to speak my thought !  
 Since he could guess my purpose, won’t you  
 read

Right what he set down wrong ? He said—  
 let’s think !

Ay, so !—he did begin by telling heaps  
 Of tales about you. Now, you see—suppose  
 Anyone told me—my own mother died  
 Before I knew her—told me—to his cost !—  
 Such tales about my own dead mother : why,  
 You would not wonder surely if I knew,  
 By nothing but my own heart’s help, he lied,  
 Would you ? No reason’s wanted in the case.  
 So with you ! In they burnt on me, his tales,  
 Much as when madhouse-inmates crowd  
 around,

Make captive any visitor and scream  
 All sorts of stories of their keeper—he’s  
 Both dwarf and giant, vulture, wolf, dog, cat,  
 Serpent and scorpion, yet man all the same ;  
 Sane people soon see through the gibberish !  
 I just made out, you somehow lived some-  
 where

A life of shame—I can’t distinguish more—  
 Married or single—how, don’t matter much :  
 Shame which himself had caused—that point  
 was clear,

That fact confessed—that thing to hold and  
 keep,

Oh, and he added some absurdity

—That you were here to make me—ha, ha,  
 ha !—

Still love you, still of mind to die for you,  
 Ha, ha—as if that needed mighty pains !  
 Now, foolish as . . . but never mind myself  
 —What I am, what I am not, in the eye  
 Of the world, is what I never cared for much.  
 Fool then or no fool, not one single word  
 In the whole string of lies did I believe,  
 But this—this only—if I choke, who cares?—

I believe somehow in your purity  
 Perfect as ever ! Else what use is God ?  
 He is God, and work miracles He can !  
 Then, what shall I do ? Quite as clear, my  
 course !

They’ve got a thing they call their Labyrinth  
 I’ the garden yonder : and my cousin played  
 A pretty trick once, led and lost me deep  
 Inside the briery maze of hedge round hedge ;  
 And there might I be staying now, stock-still,  
 But that I laughing bade eyes follow nose  
 And so straight pushed my path through let  
 and stop

And soon was out in the open, face all  
 scratched,  
 But well behind my back the prison-bars  
 In sorry plight enough, I promise you !  
 So here : I won my way to truth through  
 lies—

Said, as I saw light,—if her shame be shame  
 I’ll rescue and redeem her,—shame’s no  
 shame ?

Then, I’ll avenge, protect—redeem myself  
 The stupidest of sinners ! Here I stand !  
 Dear,—let me once dare call you so,—you  
 said

Thus ought you to have done, four years ago,  
 Such things and such ! Ay, dear, and what  
 ought I ?

You were revealed to me : where’s gratitude,  
 Where’s memory even, where the gain of you  
 Discernible in my low after-life  
 Of fancied consolation ? why, no horse  
 Once fed on corn, will, missing corn, go  
 munch

Mere thistles like a donkey ! I missed you,  
 And in your place found—him, made him  
 my love,

Ay, did I,—by this token, that he taught  
So much beast-nature that I meant . . . God  
knows

Whether I bow me to the dust enough!  
To marry—yes, my cousin here! I hope  
That was a master-stroke! Take heart of  
hers,  
And give her hand of mine with no more  
heart

Than now you see upon this brow I strike!  
What atom of a heart do I retain  
Not all yours? Dear, you know it! Easily  
May she accord me pardon when I place  
My brow beneath her foot, if foot so deign,  
Since uttermost indignity is spared—  
Mere marriage and no love! And all this  
time

Not one word to the purpose! Are you free?  
Only wait! only let me serve—deserve  
Where you appoint and how you see the  
good!

I have the will—perhaps the power—at least  
Means that have power against the world.  
For time—

Take my whole life for your experiment!  
If you are bound—in marriage, say—why,  
still,

Still, sure, there's something for a friend to  
do,

Outside? A mere well-wisher, understand!  
I'll sit, my life long, at your gate, you know,  
Swing it wide open to let you and him  
Pass freely,—and you need not look, much  
less

Fling me a '*Thank you—are you there, old  
friend?*'

Don't say that even: I should drop like shot!  
So I feel now at least: some day, who knows?  
After no end of weeks and months and years  
You might smile '*I believe you did your  
best!*'

And that shall make my heart leap—leap  
such leap

As lands the feet in Heaven to wait you  
there!

Ah, there's just one thing more! How pale  
you look!

Why? Are you angry? If there's, after all,

Worst come to worst—if still there some-  
how be

The shame—I said was no shame,—none, I  
swear!

In that case, if my hand and what it holds,—  
My name,—might be your safeguard now—  
at once—

Why, here's the hand—you have the heart!  
Of course—

No cheat, no binding you, because I'm bound,  
To let me off probation by one day,  
Week, month, year, lifetime! Prove as you  
propose!

Here's the hand with the name to take or  
leave!

That's all—and no great piece of news, I  
hope!"

"Give me the hand, then!" she cries hastily.  
"Quick, now! I hear his footsteps!"

Hand in hand

The couple face him as he enters, stops  
Short, stands surprised a moment, laughs  
away

Surprise, resumes the much-experienced man.

"So, you accept him?"

"Till us death do part!"

"No longer? Come, that's right and rational!  
I fancied there was power in common sense,  
But did not know it worked thus promptly.

Well—

At last each understands the other, then?  
Each drops disguise, then? So, at supper-  
time

These masquerading people doff their gear,  
Grand Turk his pompous turban, Quakeress  
Her stiff-starched bib and tucker,—make-  
believe

That only bothers when, ball-business done,  
Nature demands champagne and *mayonnaise*.

Just so has each of us sage three abjured  
His and her moral pet particular

Pretension to superiority,  
And, cheek by jowl, we henceforth munch  
and joke!

Go, happy pair, paternally dismissed  
To live and die together—for a month,  
Discretion can award no more! Depart  
From whatso'er the calm sweet solitude  
Selected—Paris not improbably—  
At month's end, when the honeycomb's left  
wax,

—You, daughter, with a pocketful of gold  
Enough to find your village boys and girls  
In duffel cloaks and hobnailed shoes from May  
To—what's the phrase?—Christmas-comes-  
never-mas!

You, son and heir of mine, shall re-appear  
Ere Spring-time, that's the ring-time, lose  
one leaf,

And—not without regretful smack of lip  
The while you wipe it free of honey-smear—  
Marry the cousin, play the magistrate,  
Stand for the county, prove perfection's pink—  
Master of hounds, gay-coated dine—nor die  
Sooner than needs of gout, obesity,  
And sons at Christ Church! As for me,—ah  
me;

I abdicate—retire on my success,  
Four years well occupied in teaching youth  
—My son and daughter the exemplary!  
Time for me to retire now, having placed  
Proud on their pedestal the pair: in turn,  
Let them do homage to their master! You,—  
Well, your flushed cheek and flashing eye  
proclaim

Sufficiently your gratitude: you paid  
The *honorarium*, the ten thousand pounds  
To purpose, did you not? I told you so!  
And you, but, bless me, why so pale—so faint  
At influx of good fortune? Certainly,  
No matter how or why or whose the fault,  
I save your life—save it, not less nor more!  
You blindly were resolved to welcome death  
In that black boor-and-bumpkin-haunted hole  
Of his, the prig with all the preachments!

You

Installed as nurse and matron to the crones  
And wenches, while there lay a world outside  
Like Paris (which again I recommend)  
In company and guidance of—first, this,  
Then—all in good time—some new friend as  
fit—

What if I were to say, some fresh myself,  
As I once figured? Each dog has his day,  
And mine's at sunset: what should old  
dog do  
But eye young litters' frisky puppyhood?  
Oh I shall watch this beauty and this youth  
Frisk it in brilliance! But don't fear!  
Discreet,

I shall pretend to no more recognize  
My quondam pupils than the doctor nods  
When certain old acquaintances may cross  
His path in Park, or sit down prim beside  
His plate at dinner-table: tip nor wink  
Scares patients he has put, for reason good,  
Under restriction,—maybe, talked some-  
times.

Of douche or horsewhip to,—for why?  
because

The gentleman would crazily declare  
His best friend was—Iago! Ay, and worse—  
The lady, all at once grown lunatic,  
In suicidal monomania vowed,  
To save her soul, she needs must starve her-  
self!

They're cured now, both, and I tell nobody.  
Why don't you speak? Nay, speechless, each  
of you

Can't spare,—without unclasping plighted  
troth,—

At least one hand to shake! Left-hands  
will do—

Yours first, my daughter! Ah, it guards—  
it gripes

The precious Album fast—and prudently!  
As well obliterate the record there  
On page the last: allow me tear the leaf!  
Pray, now! And afterward, to make amends,  
What if all three of us contribute each  
A line to that prelusive fragment,—help  
The embarrassed bard who broke out to  
break down

Dumbfounded at such unforeseen success?  
'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot'

You begin—*place aux dantes!* I'll prompt  
you then!

'Here do I take the good the gods allot!'  
Next you, Sir! What, still sulky? Sing, O  
Muse!

*Here does my lord in full discharge his shot!*  
Now for the crowning flourish! mine shall  
be . . .

"Nothing to match your first effusion, mar  
What was, is, shall remain your masterpiece!  
Authorship has the alteration-itch!  
No, I protest against erasure. Read,  
My friend!" (she gasps out). "Read and  
quickly read

*'Before us death do part,'* what made you mine  
And made me yours—the marriage-licence  
here!

Decide if he is like to mend the same!"

And so the lady, white to ghastliness,  
Manages somehow to display the page  
With left-hand only, while the right retains  
The other hand, the young man's,—dreaming-  
drunk

He, with this drench of stupefying stuff,  
Eyes wide, mouth open,—half the idiot's stare  
And half the prophet's insight,—holding tight,  
All the same, by his one fact in the world—  
The lady's right-hand: he but seems to read—  
Does not, for certain; yet, how understand  
Unless he reads?

So, understand he does,  
For certain. Slowly, word by word, *she* reads  
Aloud that licence—or that warrant, say.

"*One against two—and two that urge their  
odds*

*To uttermost—I needs must try resource!*  
*Madam, I laid me prostrate, bade you spurn*  
*Body and soul: you spurned and safely*  
*spurned*

*So you had spared me the superfluous taunt*  
*"Prostration means no power to stand erect,"*  
*Stand, trampling on who trampled—prostrate*  
*now!"*

*So, with my other fool-foe: I was fain*  
*Let the boy touch me with the buttoned foil,*  
*And him the infection gains, he too must needs*  
*Catch up the butcher's cleaver. Be it so!*  
*Since play turns earnest, here's my serious*  
*fence.*

*He loves you; he demands your love: both*  
*know*  
*What love means in my language. Love him*  
*then!*

*Pursuant to a pact, love pays my debt:*  
*Therefore, deliver me from him, thereby*  
*Likewise delivering from me yourself!*  
*For, hesitate—much more, refuse consent—*  
*I tell the whole truth to your husband.*  
*Flut*

*Cards lie on table, in our gamester-phrase!*  
*Consent—you stop my mouth, the only way.'*

"I did well, trusting instinct: knew your  
hand

Had never joined with his in fellowship  
Over this pact of infamy. You known—  
As he was known through every nerve of me.  
Therefore I '*stopped his mouth the only way*'  
But my way! none was left for you, my  
friend—

The loyal—near, the loved one! No—no—  
no!  
Threaten? Chastise? The coward would  
but quail.

Conquer who can, the cunning of the snake!  
Stamp out his slimy strength from tail to  
head,

And still you leave vibration of the tongue.  
His malice had redoubled—not on me  
Who, myself, choose my own refining fire—  
But on poor unsuspecting innocence;  
And,—victim,—to turn executioner  
Also—that feat effected, forked tongue  
Had done indeed its office! Once snake's  
'mouth'

Thus '*open*'—how could mortal '*stop it*'?"

"So!"

A tiger-flash—yell, spring, and scream:  
halloo!  
Death's out and on him, has and holds him  
—ugh!

But *ne trucidet coram populo*  
*Juvenis senem!* Right the Horatian rule!

There, see how soon a quiet comes to pass!

## VIII.

The youth is somehow by the lady's side.  
His right-hand grasps her right-hand once  
again.

Both gaze on the dead body. Hers the word.

"And that was good but useless. Had I lived  
The danger was to dread: but, dying now—  
Himself would hardly become talkative,  
Since talk no more means torture. Fools—  
what fools

These wicked men are! Had I borne four  
years,

Four years of weeks and months and days  
and nights,

Inured me to the consciousness of life  
Coiled round by his life, with the tongue to  
ply,—

But that I bore about me, for prompt use  
At urgent need, the thing that '*stops the  
mouth*'

And stays the venom? Since such need was  
now

Or never,—how should use not follow need?  
Bear witness for me, I withdraw from life  
By virtue of the licence—warrant, say,  
That blackens yet this Album—white again,  
Thanks still to my one friend who tears the  
page!

Now, let me write the line of supplément,  
As counselled by my foe there: '*each a line!*'"

And she does falteringly write to end.

*"I die now through the villain who lies dead,  
Righteously slain. He would have outraged  
me,*

*So, my defender slew him. God protect  
The right! Where wrong lay, I bear witness  
now.*

*Let man believe me, whose last breath is spent  
In blessing my defender from my soul!"*

And so ends the Inn Album.

As she dies,  
Begins outside a voice that sounds like song,  
And is indeed half song though meant for  
speech

Muttered in time to motion—stir of heart  
That unobdubably must bubble forth  
To match the fawn-step as it mounts the stair.

"All's ended and all's over! Verdict found  
'*Not guilty*'—prisoner forthwith set free,  
Mid cheers the Court pretends to disregard!  
Now Portia, now for Daniel, late severe,  
At last appeased, benignant! '*This young  
man—*

*Item—has the young man's foibles but no  
fault.*

*He's virgin soil—a friend must cultivate.  
I think no plant called 'love' grows wild—a  
friend*

*May introduce, and name the bloom, the  
fruit!"*

Here somebody dares wave a handkerchief—  
She'll want to hide her face with presently!  
Good-bye then! '*Cigno fedel, cigno fedel,  
Addio!*' Now, was ever such mistake—  
Ever such foolish ugly omen? Pshaw!  
Wagner, beside! '*Amo te solo, te  
Solo amai!*' That's worth fifty such!  
But, mum, the grave face at the opened door!"

And so the good gay girl, with eyes and  
cheeks  
Diamond and damask,—cheeks so white ere-  
while

Because of a vague fancy, idle fear  
Chased on reflection!—pausing, taps discreet;  
And then, to give herself a countenance,  
Before she comes upon the pair inside,  
Loud—the oft-quoted, long-laughed-over  
line—

"*'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!'*  
Open the door!"

No: let the curtain fall!

# PACCHIAROTTO

AND

## HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER,

ET CETERA.

1876.

[Pacchiarotto, born Siena, 1474, was an insignificant painter, who once obtained a little credit for pictures really painted by Pacchia. He was a reformer and conspirator as well as an inferior artist.]

### PROLOGUE.

I.

O the old wall here ! How I could pass  
Life in a long Midsummer day,  
My feet confined to a plot of grass,  
My eyes from a wall not once-away !

II.

And lush and lithe do the creepers clothe  
Yon wall I watch, with a wealth of green :  
Its bald red bricks draped, nothing loth,  
In lappets of tangle they laugh between.

III.

Now, what is it makes pulsate the robe ?  
Why tremble the sprays ? What life o'er-  
brims  
The body,—the house, no eye can probe,—  
Divined as, beneath a robe, the limbs ?

IV.

And there again ! But my heart may guess  
Who tripped behind ; and she sang perhaps :  
So, the old wall throbbed, and its life's excess  
Died out and away in the leafy wraps.

V.

Wall upon wall are between us : life  
And song should away from heart to  
heart.

I—prison-bird, with a ruddy strife  
At breast, and a lip whence storm-notes  
start—

VI.

Hold on, hope hard in the subtle thing  
That's spirit : though cloistered fast, soar  
free ;  
Account as wood, brick, stone, this ring  
Of the rueful neighbours, and—forth to  
thee !

### OF PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER.

I.

QUERY : was ever a quainter  
Crotchet than this of the painter  
Giacomo Pacchiarotto  
Who took " Reform " for his motto ?

II.

He, pupil of old Fungaio,  
Is always confounded (heigho !)  
With Pacchia, contemporaneous  
No question, but how extraneous  
In the grace of soul, the power  
Of hand,—undoubted dower  
Of Pacchia who decked (as we know,  
My Kirkup !<sup>1</sup>) San Bernardino,

<sup>1</sup> A well-known Englishman long resident in  
Florence.

Turning the small dark Oratory  
To Siena's Art-laboratory,  
As he made its straitness roomy  
And glorified its gloomy,  
With Bazzi<sup>1</sup> and Beccafumi.<sup>2</sup>  
(Another heigho for Bazzi:  
How people miscall him Razzi!)

## III.

This Painter was of opinion  
Our earth should be his dominion  
Whose Art could correct to pattern  
What Nature had slurred—the slattern!  
And since, beneath the heavens,  
Things lay now at sixes and sevens,  
Or, as he said, *sopra-sotto*<sup>3</sup>—  
Thought the painter Pacchiarotto  
Things wanted reforming, therefore.  
“Wanted it”—ay, but wherefore?  
When earth held one so ready  
As he to step forth, stand steady  
In the middle of God's creation  
And prove to demonstration  
What the dark is, what the light is,  
What the wrong is, what the right is,  
What the ugly, what the beautiful,  
What the restive, what the dutiful,  
In Mankind profuse around him?  
Man, devil as now he found him,  
Would presently soar up angel  
At the summons of such evangel,  
And owe—what would Man *not* owe  
To the painter Pacchiarotto?  
Ay, look to thy laurels, Giotto!

## IV.

But Man, he perceived, was stubborn,  
Grew regular brute, once cub born;  
And it struck him as expedient—  
Ere he tried to make obedient  
The wolf, fox, bear and monkey,  
By piping advice in one key—  
That his pipe should play a prelude  
To something heaven-tinged not hell-hued,

<sup>1</sup> Italian painter of the fifteenth century.

<sup>2</sup> Sienese painter of the sixteenth century.

<sup>3</sup> Upside-down.

Something not harsh but docile,  
Man-liquid, not Man-fossil—  
Not fact, in short, but fancy.  
By a laudable necromancy  
He would conjure up ghosts—a circle  
Deprived of the means to work ill  
Should his music prove distasteful  
And pearls to the swine go wasteful.  
To be rent of swine—that *was* hard!  
With fancy he ran no hazard:  
Fact might knock him o'er the mazzard.<sup>4</sup>

## V.

So, the painter Pacchiarotto  
Constructed himself a grotto  
In the quarter of Stalloreggi—  
As authors of note allege ye.  
And on each of the whitewashed sides of it  
He painted—(none far and wide so fit  
As he to perform in fresco)—  
He painted nor cried *quiesco*  
Till he peopled its every square foot  
With Man—from the Beggar barefoot  
To the Noble in cap and feather:  
All sorts and conditions together.  
The Soldier in breastplate and helmet  
Stood frowningly—hail fellow well met—  
By the Priest armed with bell, book and candle  
Nor did he omit to handle  
The Fair Sex, our brave distemperer:  
Not merely King, Clown, Pope, Emperor—  
He diversified too his Hades  
Of all forms, pinched Labour and paid Ease,  
With as mixed an assemblage of Ladies.

## VI.

Which work done, dry,—he rested him,  
Cleaned pallet, washed brush, divested him  
Of the apron that suits *frescanti*,<sup>5</sup>  
And, bonnet on ear stuck jaunty,  
This hand upon hip well planted,  
That, free to wave as it wanted,  
He addressed in a choice oration  
His folk of each name and nation,  
Taught its duty to every station.  
The Pope was declared an arrant  
Impositor at once, I warrant.

<sup>4</sup> The head.

<sup>5</sup> Painters in fresco.

The Emperor—truth might tax him  
With ignorance of the maxim  
“Shear sheep but nowise slay them!”  
And the Vulgar that obey them,  
The Ruled, well-matched with the Ruling,  
They failed not of wholesome schooling  
On their knavery and their fooling.  
As for Art—where’s decorum? Pooh-poohed  
it is  
By Poets that plague us with lewd ditties,  
And Painters that pester with nudities!

VII.

Now, your rater and debater  
Is balked by a mere spectator  
Who simply stares and listens  
Tongue-tied, while eye nor glistens  
Nor brow grows hot and twitchy,  
Nor mouth, for a combat itchy,  
Quivers with some convincing  
Reply—that sets him wincing?  
Nay, rather—reply that furnishes  
Your debater with just what burnishes  
The crest of him, all one triumph,  
As you see him rise, hear him cry “Humph!  
Convinced am I? This confutes me?  
Receive the rejoinder that suits me!  
Confutation of vassal for prince meet—  
Wherein all the powers that convince meet,  
And mash my opponent to mincemeat!”

VIII.

So, off from his head flies the bonnet,  
His hip loses hand planted on it,  
While t’other hand, frequent in gesture,  
Slinks modestly back beneath vesture,  
As,—hop, skip and jump,—he’s along with  
Those weak ones he late proved so strong  
with!  
Pope, Emperor, lo, he’s beside them,  
Friendly now, who late could not abide them,  
King, Clown, Soldier, Priest, Noble, Burgess;  
And his voice, that out-roared Boanerges,  
How minikin-mildly it urges  
In accents how gentled and gingered  
Its word in defence of the injured!  
“O call him not culprit, this Pontiff!  
Be hard on this Kaiser ye won’t if

Ye take into consideration  
What dangers attend elevation!  
The Priest—who expects him to descant  
On duty with more zeal and less cant?  
He preaches but rubbish he’s reared in.  
The Soldier, grown deaf (by the mere din  
Of battle) to mercy, learned tippling  
And what not of vice while a stripling.  
The Lawyer—his lies are conventional.  
And as for the Poor Sort—why mention all  
Obstructions that leave barred and bolted  
Access to the brains of each dolt-head?”

IX.

He ended, you wager? Not half! A bet  
Precedence to males in the alphabet!  
Still, disposed of Man’s A, B, C, there’s X,  
Y, Z, want assistance,—the Fair Sex!  
How much may be said in excuse of  
Those vanities—males see no use of—  
From silk shoe on heel to laced poll’s-hood!  
What’s their frailty beside our own falsehood!  
The boldest, most brazen of . . . trumpets;  
How kind can they be to their dumb pets!  
Of their charms—how are most frank, how  
few venal!

While as for those charges of Juvenal—  
*Que nemo dixisset in toto*  
*Nisi (adept!) ore illoto*—  
He dismissed every charge with an “*Apaye!*”

X.

Then, cocking (in Scotch phrase) his cap  
a-gee,  
Right hand disengaged from the doubtlet  
—Like landlord, in house he had sub-let  
Resuming of guardianship gestion,  
To call tenants’ conduct in question—  
Hop, skip, jump, to inside from outside  
Of chamber, he lords, ladies, louts eyed  
With such transformation of visage  
As fitted the censor of this age.  
No longer an advocate tepid  
Of frailty, but champion intrepid  
Of strength, not of falsehood but verity,  
He, one after one, with asperity  
Stripped bare all the cant-clothed abuses,  
Disposed of sophistic excuses,



Forced folly each shift to abandon,  
And left vice with no leg to stand on,  
So crushing the force he exerted,  
That Man at his foot lay converted !

## XI.

True—Man bred of paint-pot and mortar !  
But why suppose folks of this sort are  
More likely to hear and be tractable  
Than folks all alive and, in fact, able  
To testify promptly by action  
Their ardour, and make satisfaction  
For misdeeds *non verbis sed factis* ?  
“With folk all alive be my practice  
Henceforward ! O mortar, paint-pot O,  
Farewell to ye !” cried Pacchiarotto,  
“Let only occasion *intéropse* !”

## XII.

It did so : for, pat to the purpose  
Through causes I need not examine,  
There fell upon Siena a famine.  
In vain did the magistrates busily  
Seek succour, fetch grain out of Sicily,  
Nay, throw mill and bakehouse wide open—  
Such misery followed as no pen  
Of mine shall depict ye. Faint, fainter,  
Waxed hope of relief : so, our painter,  
Emboldened by triumph of recency,  
How could he do other with decency  
Than rush in this strait to the rescue,  
Play schoolmaster, point as with fescue<sup>1</sup>  
To each and all slips in Man’s spelling  
The law of the land ?—slips now telling  
With monstrous effect on the city,  
Whose magistrates moved him to pity  
As, bound to read law to the letter,  
They minded their hornbook no better.

## XIII.

I ought to have told you, at starting,  
How certain, who itched to be carting  
Abuses away clean and thorough  
From Siena, both province and borough,  
Had formed themselves into a company  
Whose swallow could bolt in a lump any

<sup>1</sup> Straw or stick used as a pointer in teaching reading.

Obstruction of scruple, provoking  
The nicer throat’s coughing and choking :  
Fit Club, by as fit a name dignified  
Of “Freed Ones”—“*Bardotti*”—which sig-  
nified

“Spare-Horses” that walk by the waggon  
The team has to drudge for and drag on.  
This notable club Pacchiarotto  
Had joined long since, paid scot and lot to,  
As free and accepted “*Bardotto*.”  
The Bailiwick watched with no quiet eye  
The outrage thus done to society,  
And noted the advent especially  
Of Pacchiarotto their fresh ally.

## XIV.

These Spare-Horses forthwith assembled ;  
Neighed words whereat citizens trembled  
As oft as the chiefs, in the Square by  
The Duomo, proposed a way whereby  
The city were cured of disaster.  
“Just substitute servant for master,  
Make Poverty Wealth and Wealth Poverty,  
Unloose Man from overt and covert tie,  
And straight out of social confusion  
True Order would spring !” Brave illusion—  
Aims heavenly attained by means earthy !

## XV.

Off to these at full speed rushed our worthy,—  
Brain practised and tongue no less tutored,  
In argument’s armour accoutred,—  
Sprang forth, mounted rostrum and essayed  
Proposals like those to which “Yes” said  
So glibly each personage painted  
O’ the wall-side wherewith you’re acquainted.  
He harangued on the faults of the Bailiwick :  
“Red soon were our State-candle’s paly  
wick,

If wealth would become but interfluous,  
Fill voids up with just the superfluous ;  
If ignorance gave way to knowledge  
—Not pedantry picked up at college  
From Doctors, Professors *et cætera*—  
(They say : “*kai ta loipa*”—like better a  
Long Greek string of *kappas, taus, lambdas*,  
Tacked on to the tail of each damned  
ass)—

No knowledge we want of this quality,  
 But knowledge indeed—practicality  
 Through insight's fine universality !  
 If you shout '*Bailiffs, out on ye all ! Fie,  
 Thou Chief of our forces, Amalfi,  
 Who shieldest the rogue and the clotpoll !*'  
 If you pounce on and poke out, with what pole  
 I leave ye to fancy, our Siena's  
 Beast-litter of sloths and hyenas—" (Whoever to scan this is ill able  
 Forgets the town's name's a dissyllable)  
 "If, this done, ye did—as ye might—place  
 For once the right man in the right place,  
 If you listened to me . . ."

## XVI.

At which last "If"

There flew at his throat like a mastiff  
 One Spare-Horse—another and another !  
 Such outbreak of tumult and pother,  
 Horse-faces a-laughing and fleering,  
 Horse-voices a-mocking and jeering,  
 Horse-hands raised to collar the caitiff  
 Whose impudence ventured the late "If"—  
 That, had not fear sent Pacchiarotto  
 Off tramping, as fast as could trot toe,  
 Away from the scene of discomfiture—  
 Had he stood there stock-still in a dumb fit  
 —sure

Am I he had paid in his person  
 Till his mother might fail to know her son,  
 Though she gazed on him never so wistful,  
 In the figure so tattered and tristful.  
 Each mouth full of curses, each fist full  
 Of cuffs—behold, Pacchiarotto,  
 The pass which thy project has got to,  
 Of trusting, nigh ashes still hot—tow !  
 (The paraphrase—which I much need—is  
 From Horace<sup>1</sup> "*per ignes incedis*." )

## XVII.

Right and left did he dash helter-skelter  
 In agonized search of a shelter.  
 No purlieu so blocked and no alley  
 So blind as allowed him to rally

<sup>1</sup> *Odes* II. i. 6.

His spirits and see—nothing hampered  
 His steps if he trudged and not scampered  
 Up here and down there in a city  
 That's all ups and downs, more the pity  
 For folk who would outrun the constable.  
 At last he stopped short at the one stable  
 And sure place of refuge that's offered  
 Humanity. Lately was coffered  
 A corpse in its sepulchre, situate  
 By St. John's Observance. "Habituate  
 Thyself to the strangest of bedfellows,  
 And, kicked by the live, kiss the dead  
 fellows !"

So Misery counselled the craven.

At once he crept safely to haven

Through a hole left unbricked in the struc-  
 ture.

Ay, Misery, in have you tucked your  
 Poor client and left him conterminous  
 With—pah !—the thing fetid and verminous !  
 (I gladly would spare you the detail,  
 But History writes what I retail.)

## XVIII.

Two days did he groan in his domicile :  
 Good Saints, set me free and I promise I'll  
 Abjure all ambition of preaching  
 Change, whether to minds touched by teach-  
 ing

—The smooth folk of fancy, mere figments  
 Created by plaster and pigments,—  
 Or to minds that receive with such rudeness  
 Dissuasion from pride, greed and lewdness,  
 —The rough folk of fact, life's true specimens  
 Of mind—'*hand in posse sed esse mens*'  
 As it was, is, and shall be for ever  
 Despite of my utmost endeavour.  
 O live foes I thought to illumine,  
 Henceforth lie untroubled your gloom in !  
 I need my own light, every spark, as  
 I couch with this sole friend—a carcass !"

## XIX.

Two days thus he maundered and rambled ;  
 Then, starved back to sanity, scrambled  
 From out his receptacle loathsome.  
 A spectre !"—declared upon oath some

Who saw him emerge and (appalling  
To mention) his garments a-crawling  
With plagues far beyond the Egyptian.  
He gained, in a state past description,  
A convent of monks, the Observancy:

## XX.

Thus far is a fact: I reserve fancy  
For Fancy's more proper employment:  
And now she waves wing with enjoyment,  
To tell ye how preached the Superior  
When somewhat our painter's exterior  
Was sweetened. He needed (no mincing  
The matter) much soaking and rinsing,  
Nay, rubbing with drugs odoriferous,  
Till, rid of his garments pestiferous  
And robed by the help of the Brotherhood  
In odds and ends,—this gown and t'other  
hood,—  
His empty inside first well-garnished,—  
He delivered a tale round, unvarnished.

## XXI.

"Ah, Youth!" ran the Abbot's admonish-  
ment,  
"Thine error scarce moves my astonish-  
ment:  
For—why shall I shrink from asserting?—  
Myself have had hopes of converting  
The foolish to wisdom, till, sober,  
My life found its May grow October,  
I talked and I wrote, but, one morning,  
Life's Autumn bore fruit in this warning:  
*'Let tongue rest, and quiet thy quill be!*  
*Earth is earth and not heaven, and ne'er*  
*will be.'*  
Man's work is to labour and leaven—  
As best he may—earth here with heaven;  
'Tis work for work's sake that he's need-  
ing:  
Let him work on and on as if speeding  
Work's end, but not dream of succeeding!  
Because if success were intended,  
Why, heaven would begin ere earth ended.  
A Spare-Horse? Be rather a thill-horse,<sup>1</sup>  
Or—what's the plain truth—just a mill-  
horse!

<sup>1</sup> A Thill-shaft.

Earth's a mill where we grind and wear  
mufflers:

A whip awaits shirkers and shufflers  
Who slacken their pace, sick of lagging  
At what don't advance for their tugging.  
Though round goes the mill, we must still  
post

On and on as if moving the mill-post.  
So, grind away, mouth-wise and pen-wise,  
Do all that we can to make men wise!  
And if men prefer to be foolish,  
Ourselves have proved horse-like not mulish:  
Sent grist, a good sackful, to hopper,  
And worked as the Master thought proper.  
Tongue I wag, pen I ply, who am Abbot;  
Stick thou, Son, to daub-brush and dab-pot!  
But, soft! I scratch hard on the scab hot?  
Though cured of thy plague, there may linger  
A pimple I fray with rough finger?  
So soon could my homily transmute  
Thy brass into gold? Why, the man's mute!"

## XXII.

"Ay, Father, I'm mute with admiring  
How Nature's indulgence untiring  
Still bids us turn deaf ear to Reason's  
Best rhetoric—clutch at all seasons  
And hold fast to what's proved untenable!  
Thy maxim is—Man's not amenable  
To argument: whereof by consequence—  
Thine arguments reach me: a non-sequence!  
Yet blush not discouraged, O Father!  
I stand unconverted, the rather  
That nowise I need a conversion.  
No live man (I cap thy assertion)  
By argument ever could take hold  
Of me. 'Twas the dead thing, the clay-cold,  
Which grinned *'Art thou so in a hurry*  
*That out of warm light thou must hurry*  
*And join me down here in the dungeon*  
*Because, above, one's jack and one—Jo'n,*  
*One's swift in the race, one—a hobbler,*  
*One's a crowned king, and one—a capped*  
*cobbler,*  
*Rich and poor, sage and fool, virtuous, vicious!*  
*Why complain? Art thou so unsuspicious*  
*That all's for an hour of essaying*  
*Who's fit and who's unfit for playing*

*His part in the after-construction  
—Heaven's Piece whereof Earth's the In-  
duction?*

*Things rarely go smooth at Rehearsal.  
Wait patient the change universal,  
And act, and let act, in existence!  
For, as thou art clapped hence or hissed hence,  
Thou hast thy promotion or otherwise.  
And why must wise thou have thy brother wise  
Because in rehearsal thy cue be  
To shine by the side of a booby?  
No polishing garnet to ruby!  
All's well that ends well—through Art's magic  
Some end, whether comic or tragic,  
The Artist has purposed, be certain!  
Explained at the fall of the curtain—  
In showing thy wisdom at odds with  
That folly: he tries men and gods with  
No problem for weak wits to solve meant,  
But one worth such Author's evolution.  
So, back nor disturb play's production  
By giving thy brother instruction  
To throw up his fool's-part allotted!  
Lest haply thyself prove besotted  
When stript, for thy pains, of that costume  
Of sage, which has bred the imposthume  
I prick to relieve thee of,—Vanity!*

XXIII.

"So, Father, behold me in sanity!  
I'm back to the palette and mahlstick:  
And as for Man—let each and all stick  
To what was prescribed them at starting!  
Once planted as fools—no departing  
From folly one inch, *seculorum*.  
*In sacula!* Pass me the jorum,  
And push me the platter—my stomach  
Retains, through its fasting, still some ache—  
And then, with your kind *Benedicite*,  
Good-bye!"

XXIV.

I have told with simplicity  
My tale, dropped those harsh analytics,  
And tried to content you, my critics,  
Who greeted my early uprising!  
I knew you through all the disguising,  
Droll dogs, as I jumped up, cried "Heyday!  
This Monday is—what else but May-day?"

And these in the drabs, blues and yellows, I  
Are surely the privileged fellows.  
So, saltbox and bones, tongs and bellows,  
(I threw up the window) "your pleasure?"

XXV.

Then he who directed the measure—  
An old friend—put leg forward nimbly,  
"We critics as sweeps out your chimbley!  
Much soot to remove from your flue, sir!  
Who spares coal in kitchen an't you, sir!  
And neighbours complain it's no joke, sir,  
—You ought to consume your own smoke,  
sir!"

XXVI.

Ah, rogues, but my housemaid suspects you—  
Is confident oft she detects you  
In bringing more filth into my house  
Than ever you found there! I'm pious  
However: 'twas God made you dingy  
And me—with no need to be stingy  
Of soap, when 'tis sixpence the packet.  
So, dance away, boys, dust my jacket,  
Bang drum and blow fife—ay, and rattle  
Your brushes, for that's half the battle!  
Don't trample the grass,—hocus-pocus—  
With grime my Spring snowdrop and crocus,—  
And, what with your rattling and tinkling,  
Who knows but you give me an inkling  
How music sounds, thanks to the jangle  
Of regular drum and triangle?  
Whereby, tap-tap, chink-chink, 'tis proven  
I break rule as bad as Beethoven.  
"That chord now—a groan or a grunt is't?  
Schumann's self was no worse contrapuntist.  
No ear! or if ear, so tough-gristled—  
He thought that he sung while he whistled!"

XXVII.

So, this time I whistle, not sing at all;  
My story, the largess I fling at all  
And every the rough there whose *aubade*<sup>1</sup>  
Did its best to amuse me,—nor so bad!  
Take my thanks, pick up largess, and scamper  
Off free, ere your mirth gets a damper!  
You've Monday, your one-day, your fun-day,  
While mine is a year that's all Sunday.

<sup>1</sup> Serenade.

I've seen you, times—who knows how many?—

Dance in here, strike up, play the zany,  
Make mouths at the tenant, hoot warning  
You'll find him decamped next May-morning;  
Then scuttle away, glad to 'scape hence  
With—kicks? no, but laughter and ha'pence!  
Mine's freehold, by grace of the grand Lord  
Who lets out the ground here,—my landlord:  
To him I pay quit-rent—devotion;  
Nor hence shall I budge, I've a notion,  
Nay, here shall my whistling and singing  
Set all his street's echoes a-ringing  
Long after the last of your number  
Has ceased my front-court to encumber  
While, treading down rose and ranunculus,  
You *Tommy-make-room-for-your-Uncle* us!  
Troop, all of you—man or homunculus,  
Quick march! for Xanthippe, my housemaid,  
If once on your pates she a souse made  
With what, pan or pot, bowl or *skoramis*  
First comes to her hand—things were more  
amiss!

I would not for worlds be your place in—  
Recipient of slops from the basin!  
You, Jack-in-the-Green, leaf-and-twiggyish-  
ness

Won't save a dry thread on your priggish-  
ness!

While as for Quilp-Hop-o'-my-thumb there,  
Banjo-Byron that twangs the strum-strum  
there—

He'll think, as the pickle he curses,  
I've discharged on his pate his own verses!  
"Dwarfs are saucy," says Dickens: so,  
sauced in

Your own sauce, . . .<sup>1</sup>

#### XXVIII.

But, back to my Knight of the Pencil,  
Dismissed to his fresco and stencil!<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> No, please! For

"Who would be satirical  
On a thing so very small?"  
—*Printer's Devil*. [Note by R. B.]

<sup>2</sup> A thin plate with patterns cut out so as to  
be transferred to a substance placed underneath  
the plate,

Whose story—began with a chuckle,  
And throughout timed by raps of the  
knuckle,—

To small enough purpose were studied  
If it ends with crown cracked or nose  
bloodied.

Come, critics,—not shake hands, excuse  
me!

But—say have you grudged to amuse me  
This once in the forty-and-over  
Long years since you trampled my clover  
And scared from my house-eaves each sparrow  
I never once harmed by that arrow  
Of song, *karterotaton belos*,<sup>3</sup>

(Which Pindar declares the true *melos*\*)  
I was forging and filing and finishing,  
And no whit my labours diminishing  
Because, though high up in a chamber  
Where none of your kidney may clamber  
Your hullabaloo would approach me?  
Was it "grammar" wherein you would

"coach" me—

You,—pacing in even that paddock  
Of language allotted you *ad hoc*,  
With a clog at your fetlocks,—you—scorners  
Of me free of all its four corners?  
Was it "clearness of words which convey  
thought?"

Ay, if words never needed enswathe aught  
But ignorance, impudence, envy  
And malice—what word-swathe would then  
vie

With yours for a clearness crystalline?  
But had you to put in one small line  
Some thought big and bouncing—as noddle  
Of goose, born to cackle and waddle  
And bite at man's heel as goose-wont is,  
Never felt plague its puny *os frontis*—  
You'd know, as you hissed, spat and  
sputtered,

Clear cackle is easily uttered!

#### XXIX.

Lo, I've laughed out my laugh on this  
mirth-day!

Beside, at week's end, dawns my birth-day,

<sup>3</sup> The strongest dart.

<sup>4</sup> Method.

That *hebdomie, hieron emar*<sup>1</sup>—  
(More things in a day than you deem  
are!)

—*Tei gar Apollona chrusaora*  
*Egeinato Leto*.<sup>2</sup> So, gray or ray  
Betide me, six days hence, I'm vexed here  
By no sweep, that's certain, till next year!  
"Vexed?"—roused from what else were  
insipid ease!  
Leave snoring a-bed to Pheidippides!  
We'll up and work! won't we, Euripides?

## AT THE "MERMAID."

The figure that thou here seest . . . Tut!  
Was it for gentle Shakespeare put?

B. JONSON. (*Adapted*.)

## I.

I—"Next Poet?" No, my hearties,  
I nor am nor fain would be!  
Choose your chiefs and pick your parties,  
Not one soul revolt to me!  
I, forsooth, sow song-sedition?  
I, a schism in verse provoke?  
I, blown up by bard's ambition,  
Burst—your bubble-king? You joke.

## II.

Come, be grave! The sherris mantling  
Still about each mouth, mayhap,  
Breeds you insight—just a scantling—  
Brings me truth out—just a scrap.  
Look and tel' me! Written, spoken,  
Here's my life-long work: and where  
—Where's your warrant or my token  
I'm the dead king's son and heir?

## III.

Here's my work: does work discover—  
What was rest from work—my life?  
Did I live man's hater, lover?  
Leave the world at peace, at strife?

<sup>1</sup> The seventh, a holy day.

<sup>2</sup> On which the golden-sworded Apollo was  
born of Latona.

Call earth ugliness or beauty?  
See things there in large or small?  
Use to pay its Lord my duty?  
Use to own a lord at all?

## IV.

Blank of such a record, truly  
Here's the work I hand, this scroll,  
Yours to take or leave; as duly,  
Mine remains the unproffered soul.  
So much, no whit more, my debtors—  
How should one like me lay claim  
To that largess elders, betters  
Sell you cheap their souls for—fame?

## V.

Which of you did I enable  
Once to slip inside my breast,  
There to catalogue and label  
What I like least, what love best,  
Hope and fear, believe and doubt of,  
Seek and shun, respect—deride?  
Who has right to make a rout of  
Rarities he found inside?

## VI.

Rarities or, as he'd rather,  
Rubbish such as stocks his own:  
Need and greed (O strange) the Father  
Fashioned not for him alone!  
Whence—the comfort set a-strutting,  
Whence—the outcry "Haste, behold!  
Bard's breast open wide, past shutting,  
Shows what brass we took for gold!"

## VII.

Friends, I doubt not he'd display you  
Brass—myself call orichalc,<sup>3</sup>—  
Furnish much amusement; pray you  
Therefore, be content I baulk  
Him and you, and bar my portal!  
Here's my work outside: opine  
What's inside me mean and mortal!  
Take your pleasure, leave me mine!

<sup>3</sup> Bronze.

## VIII.

Which is—not to buy your laurel  
 As last king did, nothing loth.  
 Tale adorned and pointed moral  
 Gained him praise and pity both.  
 Out rushed sighs and groans by dozens,  
 Forth by scores oaths, curses flew :  
 Proving you were cater-cousins,  
 Kith and kindred, king and you !

## IX.

Whereas do I ne'er so little  
 (Thanks to sherris) leave ajar  
 Bosom's gate—no jot nor tittle  
 Grow we nearer than we are.  
 Sinning, sorrowing, despairing,  
 Body-ruined, spirit-wrecked,—  
 Should I give my woes an airing,—  
 Where's one plague that claims respect ?

## X.

Have you found your life distasteful ?  
 My life did, and does, smack sweet.  
 Was your youth of pleasure wasteful ?  
 Mine I saved and hold complete.  
 Do your joys with age diminish ?  
 When mine fail me, I'll complain.  
 Must in death your daylight finish ?  
 My sun sets to rise again.

## XI.

What, like you, he proved—your Pilgrim—  
 This our world a wilderness,  
 Earth still grey and heaven still grim,  
 Not a hand there his might press,  
 Not a heart his own might throb to,  
 Men all rogues and women—say,  
 Dolls which boys' heads duck and bob to,  
 Grown folk drop or throw away ?

## XII.

My experience being other,  
 How should I contribute verse  
 Worthy of your king and brother ?  
 Balaam-like I bless, not curse.  
 I find earth not grey but rosy,  
 Heaven not grim but fair of hue.  
 Do I stoop ? I pluck a posy.  
 Do I stand and stare ? All's blue.

## XIII.

Doubtless I am pushed and shoved by  
 Rogues and fools enough : the more  
 Good luck mine, I love, am loved by  
 Some few honest to the core.  
 Scan the near high, scout the far low !  
 "But the low come close : " what then ?  
 Simpletons ? My match is Marlowe ;  
 Sciolists ? My mate is Ben.

## XIV.

Womankind—"the cat-like nature,  
 False and fickle, vain and weak"—  
 What of this sad nomenclature  
 Suits my tongue, if I must speak ?  
 Does the sex invite, repulse so,  
 Tempt, betray, by fits and starts ?  
 So becalm but to convulse so,  
 Decking heads and breaking hearts ?

## XV.

Well may you blaspheme at fortune !  
 I "threw Venus"<sup>1</sup> (Ben, expound !)  
 Never did I need importune  
 Her, of all the Olympian round.  
 Blessings on my benefactress !  
 Cursings suit—for aught I know—  
 Those who twitched her by the back tress,  
 Tugged and thought to turn her—so !

## XVI.

Therefore, since no leg to stand on  
 Thus I'm left with,—joy or grief  
 Be the issue,—I abandon  
 Hope or care you name me Chief !  
 Chief and king and Lord's anointed,  
 I ?—who never once have wished  
 Death before the day appointed :  
 Lived and liked, not poohed and pished !

## XVII.

"Ah, but so I shall not enter,  
 Scroll in hand, the common heart—  
 Stopped at surface : since at centre  
 Song should reach *Welt-schmerz*, world-  
 smart !"

<sup>1</sup> The best cast in dice (three sixes) is called Venus.

"Enter in the heart?" Its shelly  
Cuirass guard mine; fore and aft!  
Such song "enters in the belly  
And is cast out in the draught."

## XVIII.

Back then to our sherris-brewage!  
"Kingship" quotha? I shall wait—  
Waive the present time: some new age . . .  
But let fools anticipate!  
Meanwhile greet me—"friend, good fellow,  
Gentle Will," my merry men!  
As for making Envy yellow  
With "Next Poet"—(Manners, Ben!)

## HOUSE.

## I.

SHALL I sonnet-sing you about myself?  
Do I live in a house you would like to see?  
Is it scant of gear, has it store of pelf?  
"Unlock my heart with a sonnet-key?"

## II.

Invite the world, as my betters have done?  
"Take notice: this building remains on  
view,  
Its suites of reception every one,  
Its private apartment and bedroom too;

## III.

"For a ticket, apply to the Publisher."  
No: thanking the public, I must decline.  
A peep through my window, if folk prefer;  
But, please you, no foot over threshold of  
mine!

## IV.

I have mixed with a crowd and heard free talk  
In a foreign land where an earthquake  
chanced:

And a house stood gaping, nought to baulk  
Man's eye wherever he gazed or glanced.

## V.

The whole of the frontage shaven sheer,  
The inside gaped: exposed to day,

Right and wrong and common and queer,  
Bare, as the palm of your hand, it lay.

## VI.

The owner? Oh, he had been crushed, no  
doubt!

"Odd tables and chairs for a man of wealth!  
What a parcel of musty old books about!  
He smoked,—no wonder he lost his health!

## VII.

"I doubt if he bathed before he dressed.  
A brasier?—thepagan, he burned perfumes!  
You see it is proved, what the neighbours  
guessed:  
His wife and himself had separate rooms."

## VIII.

Friends, the goodman of the house at least  
Kept house to himself till an earthquake  
came:  
'Tis the fall of its frontage permits you  
feast  
On the inside arrangement you praise or  
blame.

## IX.

Outside should suffice for evidence:  
And whoso desires to penetrate  
Deeper, must dive by the spirit-sense—  
No optics like yours, at any rate!

## X.

"Hoity toity! A street to explore,  
Your house the exception! 'With this  
same key  
Shakespeare unlocked his heart,' once more!"  
Did Shakespeare? If so, the less Shake-  
speare he!

## SHOP.

## I.

So, friend, your shop was all your house!  
Its front, astonishing the street,  
Invited view from man and mouse  
To what diversity of treat  
Behind its glass—the single sheet!



## II.

What gimcracks, genuine Japanese :  
 Gape-jaw and goggle-eye, the frog ;  
 Dragons, owls, monkeys, beetles, geese ;  
 Some crush-nosed human-hearted dog :  
 Queer names, too, such a catalogue !

## III.

I thought " And he who owns the wealth  
 Which blocks the window's vastitude,  
 —Ah, could I peep at him by stealth  
 Behind his ware, pass shop, intrude  
 On house itself, what scenes were, viewed !

## IV.

" If wide and showy thus the shop,  
 What must the habitation prove ?  
 The true house with no name a-top—  
 The mansion, distant one remove,  
 Once get him off his traffic-groove !

## V.

" Pictures he likes, or books perhaps ;  
 And as for buying most and best,  
 Commend me to these City chaps !  
 Or else he's social, takes his rest  
 On Sundays, with a Lord for guest.

## VI.

" Some suburb-palace, parked about  
 And gated grandly, built last year :  
 The four-mile walk to keep off gout ;  
 Or big seat sold by bankrupt peer :  
 But then he takes the rail, that's clear.

## VII.

" Or, stop ! I wager, taste selects  
 Some out o' the way, some all-unknown  
 Retreat : the neighbourhood suspects  
 Little that he who rambles lone  
 Makes Rothschild tremble on his throne !"

## VIII.

Nowise ! Nor Mayfair residence  
 Fit to receive and entertain, —  
 Nor Hampstead villa's kind defence  
 From noise and crowd, from dust and  
 drain, —  
 Nor country-box was soul's domain !

## IX.

Nowise ! At back of all that spread  
 Of merchandize, woe's me, I find  
 A hole i' the wall where, heels by head,  
 The owner couched, his ware behind,  
 —In cupboard suited to his mind.

## X.

For why ? He saw no use of life  
 But, while he drove a roaring trade,  
 To chuckle " Customers are rife !"  
 To chafe " So much hard cash outlaid  
 Yet zero in my profits made !

## XI.

" This novelty costs pains, but—takes ?  
 Cumbers my counter ! Stock no more !  
 This article, no such great shakes,  
 Fizzes like wildfire ? Underscore  
 The cheap thing—thousands to the fore !"

## XII.

'Twas lodging best to live most nigh  
 (Cramp, coffinlike as crib might be)  
 Receipt of Custom ; ear and eye  
 Wanted no outworld : " Hear and see  
 The bustle in the shop !" quoth he.

## XIII.

My fancy of a merchant-prince  
 Was different. Through his wares we  
 groped  
 Our darkling way to—not to mince  
 The matter—no black den where moped  
 The master if we interloped !

## XIV.

Shop was shop only : household-stuff ?  
 What did he want with comforts there ?  
 " Walls, ceiling, floor, stay blank and rough,  
 So goods on sale show rich and rare !  
 ' Sell and scud home ' be shop's affair !"

## XV.

What might he deal in ? Gems, suppose !  
 Since somehow business must be done  
 At cost of trouble,—see, he throws  
 You choice of jewels, everyone,  
 Good, better, best, star, moon and sun !

XVI.

Which lies within your power of purse?  
This ruby that would tip aright  
Solomon's sceptre? Oh, your nurse  
Wants simply coral, the delight  
Of teething baby,—stuff to bite!

XVII.

Howe'er your choice fell, straight you  
took  
Your purchase, prompt your money rang  
On counter,—scarce the man forsook  
His study of the "Times," just swang  
Till-ward his hand that stopped the clang,—

XVIII.

Then off made buyer with a prize,  
Then seller to his "Times" returned;  
And so did day wear, wear, till eyes  
Brightened apace, for rest was earned:  
He locked door long ere candle burned.

XIX.

And whither went he? Ask himself,  
Not me! To change of scene, I think.  
Once sold the ware and pursed the pelf,  
Chaffer was scarce his meat and drink,  
Nor all his music—money-chink.

XX.

Because a man has shop to mind  
In time and place, since flesh must live,  
Needs spirit lack all life behind,  
All stray thoughts, fancies fugitive,  
All loves except what trade can give?

XXI.

I want to know a butcher paints,  
A baker rhymes for his pursuit,  
Candlestick-maker much acquaints  
His soul with song, or, haply mute,  
Blows out his brains upon the flute!

XXII.

But—shop each day and all day long!  
Friend, your good angel slept, your star

Suffered eclipse, fate did you wrong!  
From where these sorts of treasures are,  
There should our hearts be—Christ, how  
far!

PISGAH-SIGHTS. I.

I.

OVER the ball of it,  
Peering and prying,  
How I see all of it,  
Life there, outlying!  
Roughness and smoothness,  
Shine and defilement,  
Grace and uncouthness:  
One reconciliation.

II.

Orbed as appointed,  
Sister with brother  
Joins, ne'er disjointed  
One from the other.  
All's lend-and-borrow;  
Good, see, wants evil,  
Joy demands sorrow,  
Anger! weds devil!

III.

"Which things must—*why* be?"  
Vain our endeavour!  
So shall things aye be  
As they were ever.  
"Such things should *so* be!"  
Sage our desistence!  
Rough-smooth let globe be,  
Mixed—man's existence!

IV.

Man—wise and foolish,  
Lover and scerner,  
Docile and mulish—  
Keep each his corner!  
Honey yet gall of it!  
There's the life lying,  
And I see all of it,  
Only, I'm dying!

## PISCAR-SIGHTS. II.

## I.

COULD I but live again,  
Twice my life over,  
Would I once strive again?  
Would not I cover  
Quietly all of it—  
Greed and ambition—  
So, from the pail of it,  
Pass to fruition?

## II.

"Soft!" I'd say, "Soul mine!  
Three-score and ten years,  
Let the blind mole mine  
Digging out deniers!  
Let the dazed hawk soar,  
Claim the sun's rights too!  
Turf 'tis thy walk's o'er,  
Foliage thy flight's to."

## III.

Only a learner,  
Quick one or slow one,  
Just a discernor,  
I would teach no one.  
I am earth's native:  
No rearranging it!  
I be creative,  
Chopping and changing it?

## IV.

March, men, my fellows!  
Those who, above me,  
(Distance so mellows)  
Fancy you love me!  
Those who, below me,  
(Distance makes great so)  
Free to forego me,  
Fancy you hate so!

## V.

Praising, reviling,  
Worst head and best head,  
Past me defiling,  
Never arrested,

Wanters, abounders,  
March, in gay mixture,  
Men, my surrounders!  
I am the fixture.

## VI.

So shall I fear thee,  
Mightiness yonder!  
Mock-sun—more near thee,  
What is to wonder?  
So shall I love thee,  
Down in the dark,—lest  
Glowworm I prove thee,  
Star that now sparklest!

## FEARS AND SCRUPLES.

## I.

HERE'S my case. Of old I used to love  
him  
This same unseen friend, before I knew:  
Dream there was none like him, none above  
him,—  
Wake to hope and trust my dream was true.

## II.

Loved I not his letters full of beauty?  
Not his actions famous far and wide?  
Absent, he would know I vowed him duty;  
Present, he would find me at his side.

## III.

Pleasant fancy! for I had but letters,  
Only knew of actions by hearsay:  
He himself was busied with my betters;  
What of that? My turn must come some  
day.

## IV.

"Some day" proving—no day! Here's the  
puzzle.  
Passed and passed my turn is. Why com-  
plain?  
He's so busied! If I could but muzzle  
People's foolish mouths that give me  
pain!

V.  
 "Letters?" (hear them!) "You a judge o'  
 writing?  
 Ask the experts!—How they shake the  
 head  
 O'er these characters, your friend's inditing—  
 Call them forgery from A to Z!

VI.  
 "Actions? Where's your certain proof"  
 (they bother)  
 "He, of all you find so great and good,  
 He, he only, claims this, that, the other  
 Action—claimed by men, a multitude?"

VII.  
 I can simply wish I might refute you,  
 Wish my friend would,—by a word, a  
 wink,—  
 Bid me stop that foolish mouth,—you brute  
 you!  
 He keeps absent,—why, I cannot think.

VIII.  
 Never mind! Though foolishness may flout  
 me,  
 One thing's sure enough: 'tis neither  
 frost,  
 No, nor fire, shall freeze or burn from  
 out me  
 Thanks for truth—though falsehood, gained  
 —though lost.

IX.  
 All my days, I'll go the softlier, sadlier,  
 For that dream's sake! How forget the  
 thrill  
 Through and through me as I thought "The  
 gladlier  
 Lives my friend because I love him still!"

X.  
 Ah, but there's a menace someone utters!  
 "What and if your friend at home play  
 tricks?  
 Peep at hide-and-seek behind the shutters?  
 Mean your eyes should pierce through  
 solid bricks?

XI.  
 "What and if he, frowning, wake you, dreamy?  
 Lay on you the blame that bricks—conceal?  
 Say '*At least I saw who did not see me,*  
*Does see now, and presently shall feel*'?"

XII.  
 "Why, that makes your friend a monster!"  
 say you:  
 "Had his house no window? At first nod,  
 Would you not have hailed him?" Hush, I  
 pray you!  
 What if this friend happen to be—God?

# NATURAL MAGIC.

I.  
 ALL I can say is—I saw it!  
 The room was as bare as your hand.  
 I locked in the swart little lady,—I swear,  
 From the head to the foot of her—well, quite  
 as bare!  
 "No Nautch shall cheat me," said I, "taking  
 my stand  
 At this bolt which I draw!" And this bolt  
 —I withdraw it,  
 And there laughs the lady, not bare, but  
 embowered  
 With—who knows what verdure, o'erfruited,  
 o'erflowered?  
 Impossible! Only—I saw it!

II.  
 All I can sing is—I feel it!  
 This life was as blank as that room;  
 I let you pass in here. Precaution, indeed?  
 Walls, ceiling and floor,—not a chance for a  
 weed!  
 Wide opens the entrance: where's cold now,  
 where's gloom?  
 No May to sow seed here, no June to reveal it,  
 Behold you enshrined in these blooms of your  
 bringing;  
 These fruits of your bearing—nay, birds of  
 your winging!  
 A fairy-tale! Only—I feel it!

## MAGICAL NATURE.

## I.

FLOWER—I never fancied, jewel—I profess you!

Bright I see and soft I feel the outside of a flower.

Save but glow inside and—jewel, I should guess you,

Dim to sight and rough to touch: the glory is the dower.

## II.

You, forsooth, a flower? Nay, my love, a jewel—

Jewel at no mercy of a moment in your prime!

Time may fray the flower-face: kind be time or cruel,

Jewel, from each facet, flash your laugh at time!

## BIFURCATION.

We were two lovers; let me lie by her,  
My tomb beside her tomb. On hers inscribe—

“I loved him; but my reason bade prefer  
Duty to love, reject the tempter’s bribe  
Of rose and lily when each path diverged,  
And either I must pace to life’s far end  
As love should lead me, or, as duty urged,  
Plod the worn causeway arm-in-arm with friend.

So, truth turned falsehood: ‘*How I loathe a flower,  
How prize the pavement!*’ still caressed his ear—

The deafish friend’s—through life’s day, hour by hour,

As he laughed (coughing) ‘*Ay, it would appear!*’

But deep within my heart of hearts there hid  
Ever the confidence, amends for all,

That heaven repairs what wrong earth’s journey did,

When love from life-long exile comes at call.

Duty and love, one Broadway, were the best—  
Who doubts? But one or other was to choose,  
I chose the darkling half, and wait the rest  
In that new world where light and darkness fuse.”

Inscribe on mine—“I loved her: love’s track lay

O’er sand and pebble, as all travellers know.  
Duty led through a smiling country, gay

With greensward where the rose and lily blow.  
‘Our roads are diverse: farewell, love!’ said

she;

“‘Tis duty I abide by: homely sward  
And not the rock-rough picturesque for me!

Above, where both roads join, I wait reward.  
Be you as constant to the path whereon

I leave you planted!’ But man needs must move,

Keep moving—whither, when the star is gone  
Whereby he steps secure nor strays from love?

No stone but I was tripped by, stumbling block

But brought me to confusion. Where I fell,  
There I lay flat, if moss disguised the rock,

Thence, if flint pierced, I rose and cried  
‘*All’s well!*’

*Duty be mine to tread in that high sphere  
Where love from duty ne’er disparts, I trust,*

*And two halves make that whole, whereof—since here*

*One must suffice a man—why, this one must!’”*

Inscribe each tomb thus: then, some sage acquaint

The simple—which holds sinner, which holds saint!

## NUMPHOLEPTOS.

[Caught by a Nymph.]

STILL you stand, still you listen, still you smile!  
Still melts your moonbeam through me, white

awhile,  
Softening, sweetening, till sweet and soft

Increase so round this heart of mine, that oft

I could believe your moonbeam-smile has past  
The pallid limit, lies, transformed at last  
To sunlight and salvation—warms the soul  
It sweetens, softens ! Would you pass that  
goal,

Gain love's birth at the limit's happier verge,  
And, where an iridescence lurks, but urge  
The hesitating pallor on to prime  
Of dawn !—true blood-streaked, sun-warmth,  
action-time,

By heart-pulse ripened to a ruddy glow  
Of gold above my clay—I scarce should know  
From gold's self, thus suffused ! For gold  
means love.

What means the sad slow silver smile above  
My clay but pity, pardon?—at the best,  
But acquiescence that I take my rest,  
Contented to be clay, while in your heaven  
The sun reserves love for the Spirit-Seven  
Companioning God's throne they lamp before,  
—Leaves earth a mute waste only wandered  
o'er

By that pale soft sweet disempassioned moon  
Which smiles me slow forgiveness ! Such  
the boon

I beg ? Nay, dear, submit to this—just this  
Supreme endeavour ! As my lips now kiss  
Your feet, my arms convulse your shrouding  
robe,

My eyes, acquainted with the dust, dare probe  
Your eyes above for—what, if born, would  
blind

Mine with redundant bliss, as flash may find  
The inert nerve, sting awake the palsied limb,  
Bid with life's ecstasy sense overbrim  
And suck back death in the resurging joy—  
Love, the love whole and sole without alloy !

Vainly ! The promise withers ! I employ  
Lips, arms, eyes, pray the prayer which finds  
the word,

Make the appeal which must be felt, unheard,  
And none the more is changed your calm  
regard :

Rather, its sweet and soft grow harsh and  
hard—

Forbearance, then repulsion, then disdain.

Avert the rest ! I rise, see !—make, again

Once more, the old departure for some track  
Untried yet through a world which brings me  
back

Ever thus fruitlessly to find your feet,  
To fix your eyes, to pray the soft and sweet  
Which smile there—take from his new pil-  
grimage

Your outcast, once your inmate, and assuage  
With love—not placid pardon now—his thirst  
For a mere drop from out the ocean erst  
He drank at ! Well, the quest shall be re-  
newed.

Fear nothing ! Though I linger, unembued  
With any drop, my lips thus close. I go !  
So did I leave you, I have found you so,  
And doubtlessly, if fated to return,  
So shall my pleading persevere and earn  
Pardon—not love—in that same smile, I learn,  
And lose the meaning of, to learn once more,  
Vainly !

What fairy track do I explore ?

What magic hall return to, like the gem  
Centuply-angled o'er a diadem ?

You dwell there, hearted ; from your mid-  
most home

Rays forth—through that fantastic world I  
roam

Ever—from centre to circumference,  
Shaft upon coloured shaft : this crimsons  
thence,

That purples out its precinct through the waste.  
Surely I had your sanction when I faced,  
Fared forth upon that untried yellow ray  
Whence I retrack my steps ? They end to-day  
Where they began—before your feet, beneath  
Your eyes, your smile : the blade is shut in  
sheath,

Fire quenched in flint ; irradiation, late  
Triumphant through the distance, finds its fate,  
Merged in your blank pure soul, alike the  
source

And tomb of that prismatic glow : divorce  
Absolute, all-conclusive ! Forth I fared,  
Treading the lambent flamelet : little cared  
If now its flickering took the topaz tint,  
If now my dull-caked path gave sulphury hint  
Of subterranean rage—no stay nor stint

To yellow, since you sanctioned that I bathe,

Burnish me, soul and body, swim and swathe  
In yellow license. Here I reek suffused  
With crocus, saffron, orange, as I used  
With scarlet, purple, every dye o' the bow  
Born of the storm-cloud. As before, you show

Scarce recognition, no approval, some  
Mistrust, more wonder at a man become  
Monstrous in garb, nay—flesh disguised as well,

Through his adventure. Whatso'er befell,  
I followed, wheresoe'er it wound, that vein  
You authorized should leave your whiteness, stain

Earth's sombre stretch beyond your midmost place

Of vantage,—trode that tinct whereof the trace

On garb and flesh repel you! Yes, I plead  
Your own permission.—your command, indeed,

That who would worthily retain the love  
Must share the knowledge shrined those eyes above,

Go boldly on adventure, break through bounds

O' the quintessential whiteness that surrounds  
Your feet, obtain experience of each tinge  
That bickers forth to broaden out, impinge  
Plainer his foot its pathway all distinct  
From every other. Ah, the wonder, linked  
With fear, as exploration manifests  
What agency it was first tipped the crests  
Of unnamed wildflower, soon protruding grew  
Portentous mid the sands, as when his hue  
Betrays him and the burrowing snake gleams through;

Till, last . . . but why parade more shame and pain?

Are not the proofs upon me? Here again  
I pass into your presence, I receive  
Your smile of pity, pardon, and I leave . . .  
No, not this last of times I leave you, mute,  
Submitted to my penance, so my foot  
May yet again adventure, tread, from source  
To issue, one more ray of rays which course

Each other, at your bidding, from the sphere  
Silver and sweet, their birthplace, down that drear

Dark of the world,—you promise shall return  
Your pilgrim jewelled as with drops o' the urn

The rainbow paints from, and no smatch at all  
Of ghastliness at edge of some cloud-pall  
Heaven cowers before, as earth awaits the fall  
O' the bolt and flash of doom. Who trusts your word

Tries the adventure: and returns—absurd  
As frightful—in that sulphur-steeped disguise  
Mocking the priestly cloth-of-gold, sole prize  
The arch-heretic was wont to bear away  
Until he reached the burning. No, I say:  
No fresh adventure! No more seeking love  
At end of toil, and finding, calm above  
My passion, the old statuesque regard,  
The sad petrific smile!

O you—less hard

And hateful than mistaken and obtuse  
Unreason of a she-intelligence!  
You very woman with the pert pretence  
To match the male achievement! Like enough!

Ay, you were easy victors, did the rough  
Straightway efface itself to smooth, the gruff  
Grind down and grow a whisper,—did man's truth

Subdue, for sake of chivalry and ruth,  
Its rapier-edge to suit the bulrush-spear  
Womanly falsehood fights with! O that ear  
All fact pricks rudely, that thrice-superfine  
Femininity of sense, with right divine  
To waive all process, take result stain-free  
From out the very muck wherein . . .

Ah me!

The true slave's querulous outbreak! All the rest  
Be resignation! Forth at your behest  
I fare. Who knows but this—the crimson-quest—  
May deepen to a sunrise, not decay  
To that cold sad sweet smile?—which I obey.

## APPEARANCES.

## I.

AND so you found that poor room dull,  
Dark, hardly to your taste, my dear?  
Its features seemed unbeautiful:  
But this I know—'twas there, not here,  
You plighted troth to me, the word  
Which—ask that poor room how it heard.

## II.

And this rich room obtains your praise  
Unqualified,—so bright, so fair,  
So all whereat perfection stays?  
Ay, but remember—here, not there,  
The other word was spoken! Ask  
This rich room how you dropped the  
mask!

## ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER.

## I.

No protesting, dearest!  
Hardly kisses even!  
Don't we both know how it ends?  
How the greenest leaf turns serest,  
Bluest outbreak—blankest heaven,  
Lovers—friends?

## II.

You would build a mansion,  
I would weave a bower  
—Want the heart for enterprise.  
Walls admit of no expansion:  
Trellis-work may haply flower  
Twice the size.

## III.

What makes glad Life's Winter?  
New buds, old blooms after.  
Sad the sighing "How suspect  
Beams would ere mid-Autumn splinter,  
Roof-tree scarce support a rafter,  
Walls lie wrecked?"

## IV.

You are young, my princess!  
I am hardly older:  
Yet—I steal a glance behind.  
Dare I tell you what convinces  
Timid me that you, if bolder,  
Bold—are blind?

## V.

Where we plan our dwelling  
Glooms a graveyard surely!  
Headstone, footstone moss may drape,—  
Name, date, violets hide from spelling,—  
But, though corpses rot obscurely,  
Ghosts escape.

## VI.

Ghosts! O breathing Beauty,  
Give my frank word pardon!  
What if I—somehow, somewhere—  
Pledged my soul to endless duty  
Many a time and oft? Be hard on  
Love—laid there?

## VII.

Nay, blame grief that's fickle,  
Time that proves a traitor,  
Chance, change, all that purpose warps,—  
Death who spares to thrust the sickle  
Laid Love low, through flowers which  
later  
Shroud the corpse!

## VIII.

And you, my winsome lady,  
Whisper with like frankness!  
Lies nothing buried long ago?  
Are you—which shimmer mid the shady  
Where moss and violet run to rankness—  
Tombs or no?

## IX.

Who taxes you with murder?  
My hands are clean—or nearly!  
Love being mortal needs must pass.  
Repentance? Nothing were absurd.  
Enough: we felt Love's loss severely;  
Though now—alas!



## X.

Love's corpse lies quiet therefore,  
 Only Love's ghost plays truant,  
 And warns us have in wholesome awe  
 Durable mansionry ; that's wherefore  
 I weave but trellis-work, pursuant  
 —Life, to law.

## XI.

The solid, not the fragile,  
 Tempts rain and hail and thunder.  
 If bower stand firm at Autumn's close,  
 Beyond my hope,—why, boughs were agile ;  
 If bower fall flat, we scarce need wonder  
 Wreathing—rose !

## XII.

So, truce to the protesting,  
 So, muffled be the kisses !  
 For, would we but avow the truth,  
 Sober is genuine joy. No jesting !  
 Ask else Penelope, Ulysses—  
 Old in youth !

## XIII.

For why should ghosts feel angered ?  
 Let all their interference  
 Be faint march-music in the air !  
 "Up ! Join the rear of us the vanguard !  
 Up, lovers, dead to all appearance,  
 Laggard pair !"

## XIV.

The while you clasp me closer,  
 The while I press you deeper,  
 As safe we chuckle,—under breath,  
 Yet all the slyer, the jocosier,—  
 "So, life can boast its day, like leap-year,  
 Stolen from death !"

## XV.

Ah me—the sudden terror !  
 Hence quick—avaunt, avoid me,  
 You cheat, the ghostly flesh-disguised !  
 Nay, all the ghosts in one ! Strange error !  
 So, 'twas Death's self that clipped and  
 coyed me,  
 Loved—and lied !

## XVI.

Ay, dead loves are the potent !  
 Like any cloud they used you,  
 Mere semblance you, but substance they !  
 Build we no mansion, weave we no tent !  
 Mere flesh—their spirit interfused you !  
 Hence, I say !

## XVII.

All theirs, none yours the glamour !  
 Theirs each low word that won me,  
 Soft look that found me Love's, and left  
 What else but you—the tears and clamour  
 That's all your very own ! Undone me—  
 Ghost-bereft !

HERVÉ RIEL.<sup>1</sup>

[Mr. Browning sent the hundred guineas he received for this poem to the relief of the starving French after the siege of Paris. The story the poem records is true.]

## I.

ON the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen hundred  
 ninety-two,  
 Did the English fight the French,—woe to  
 France !  
 And, the thirty-first of May, helter-skelter  
 through the blue,  
 Like a crowd of frightened porpoises a shoal  
 of sharks pursue,  
 Came crowding ship on ship to Saint-Malo  
 on the Rance,<sup>2</sup>  
 With the English fleet in view.

## II.

'Twas the squadron that escaped, with the  
 victor in full chase ;  
 First and foremost of the drove, in his  
 great ship, Damfreville ;  
 Close on him fled, great and small,  
 Twenty-two good ships in all ;

<sup>1</sup> First published (*Cornhill Magazine*) in 1871.

<sup>2</sup> The river which runs into the English Channel at St. Malo.

And they signalled to the place

"Help the winners of a race!

Get us guidance, give us harbour, take us  
quick—or, quicker still,

Here's the English can and will!"

### III.

Then the pilots of the place put out brisk  
and leapt on board;

"Why, what hope or chance have ships  
like these to pass?" laughed they:

"Rocks to starboard, rocks to port, all the  
passage scarred and scored,—

Shall the 'Formidable' here, with her twelve  
and eighty guns,

Think to make the river-mouth by the  
single narrow way,

Trust to enter—where 'tis ticklish for a craft  
of twenty tons,

And with flow at full beside?

Now, 'tis slackest ebb of tide.

Reach the mooring? Rather say

While rock stands or water runs,

Not a ship will leave the bay!"

### IV.

Then was called a council straight.

Brief and bitter the debate:

"Here's the English at our heels; would  
you have them take in tow

All that's left us of the fleet, linked together  
stern and bow,

For a prize to Plymouth Sound?

Better run the ships aground!"

(Ended Damfreville his speech).

"Not a minute more to wait!

Let the Captains all and each

Shove ashore, then blow up, burn the  
vessels on the beach!

France must undergo her fate.

### V.

Give the word!" But no such word

Was ever spoke or heard;

For up stood, for out stepped, for in struck  
amid all these

—A Captain? A Lieutenant? A Mate—  
first, second, third?

No such man of mark, and meet

With his betters to compete!

But a simple Breton sailor pressed by Tour-  
ville for the fleet,

A poor coasting-pilot he, Hervé Riel the  
Croisickese.<sup>1</sup>

### VI.

And "What mockery or malice have we  
here?" cries Hervé Riel:

"Are you mad, you Malouins?"<sup>2</sup> Are you  
cowards, fools, or rogues?

Talk to me of rocks and shoals, me who took  
the soundings, tell

On my fingers every bank, every shallow,  
every swell

'Twixt the offing here and Grève where the  
river disembogues?

Are you bought by English gold? Is it love  
the lying's for?

Morn and eve, night and day,

Have I piloted your bay,

Entered free and anchored fast at the foot of  
Solidor.

Burn the fleet and ruin France? That were  
worse than fifty Hogues!

Sirs, they know I speak the truth! Sirs,  
believe me there's a way!

Only let me lead the line,

I have the biggest ship to steer,

Get this 'Formidable' clear,

Make the others follow mine,

And I lead them, most and least, by a passage

I know well,

Right to Solidor past Grève,

And there lay them safe and sound;

And if one ship misbehave,—

—Keel so much as grate the ground,

Why, I've nothing but my life,—here's my  
head!" cries Hervé Riel.

### VII.

Not a minute more to wait.

"Steer us in, then, small and great!"

<sup>1</sup> Native of Le Croisic, a village at the mouth of the Loire.

<sup>2</sup> Natives of St. Malo.

Take the helm, lead the line, save the  
squadron!" cried its chief.  
Captains, give the sailor place!  
He is Admiral, in brief.  
Still the north-wind, by God's grace  
See the noble fellow's face  
As the big ship, with a bound,  
Clears the entry like a hound,  
Keeps the passage, as its inch of way were  
the wide sea's profound!

See, safe thro' shoal and rock,  
How they follow in a flock,  
Not a ship that misbehaves, not a keel that  
grates the ground,  
Not a spar that comes to grief!  
The peril, see, is past.  
All are harboured to the last,  
And just as Hervé Riel hollas "Anchor!"—  
sure as fate,  
Up the English come,—too late!

## VIII.

So, the storm subsides to calm:  
They see the green trees wave  
On the heights o'erlooking Grève.  
Hearts that bled are stanch'd with balm.  
"Just our rapture to enhance,  
Let the English rake the bay,  
Gnash their teeth and glare askance  
As they cannonade away!  
'Neath rampired Solidor pleasant riding on  
the Rance!"  
How hope succeeds despair on each Captain's  
countenance!  
Out burst all with one accord,  
"This is Paradise for Hell!  
Let France, let France's King  
Thank the man that did the thing!"  
What a shout, and all one word,  
"Hervé Riel!"  
As he stepped in front once more,  
Not a symptom of surprise  
In the frank blue Breton eyes,  
Just the same man as before.

## IX.

Then said Damfreville, "My friend,  
I must speak out at the end,

Though I find the speaking hard.  
Praise is deeper than the lips:  
You have saved the King his ships,  
You must name your own reward:  
'Faith, our sun was near eclipse!  
Demand what'er you will,  
France remains your debtor still.  
Ask to heart's content and have! or my  
name's not Damfreville."

## X.

Then a beam of fun outbroke  
On the bearded mouth that spoke,  
As the honest heart laughed through  
Those frank eyes of Breton blue:  
"Since I needs must say my say,  
Since on board the duty's done,  
And from Malo Roads to Croisic Point,  
what is it but a run?—  
Since 'tis ask and have, I may—  
Since the others go ashore—  
Come! A good whole holiday!  
Leave to go and see my wife, whom I call  
the Belle Aurore!"  
That he asked and that he got,—nothing  
more.

## XI.

Name and deed alike are lost:  
Not a pillar nor a post  
In his Croisic keeps alive the feat as it  
befell;  
Not a head in white and black  
On a single fishing-smack,  
In memory of the man but for whom had  
gone to wrack  
All that France saved from the fight whence  
England bore the bell.  
Go to Paris: rank on rank  
Search the heroes flung pell-mell  
On the Louvre, face and flank!  
You shall look long enough ere you come  
to Hervé Riel.  
So, for better and for worse,  
Hervé Riel, accept my verse!  
In my verse, Hervé Riel, do thou once  
more  
Save the squadron, honour France, love thy  
wife the Belle Aurore!

## A FORGIVENESS.

I AM indeed the personage you know.  
As for my wife,—what happened long ago,—  
You have a right to question me, as I  
Am bound to answer.

  ("Son, a fit reply!"  
The monk half spoke, half ground through  
his clenched teeth,  
At the confession-grate I knelt beneath.)

Thus then all happened, Father! Power and  
place  
I had as still I have. I ran life's race,  
With the whole world to see, as only strains  
His strength some athlete whose prodigious  
gains

Of good appal him: happy to excess,—  
Work freely done should balance happiness  
Fully enjoyed; and, since beneath my roof  
Housed she who made home heaven, in  
heaven's behoof

I went forth every day, and all day long  
Worked for the world. Look, how the  
labourer's song

Cheers him! Thus sang my soul, at each  
sharp throe

Of labouring flesh and blood—"She loves  
me so!"

One day, perhaps such song so knit the  
nerve

That work grew play and vanished. "I  
deserve

Haply my heaven an hour before the time!"  
I laughed, as silverly the clockhouse-chime  
Surprised me passing through the postern-  
gate

—Not the main entry where the menials  
wait

And wonder why the world's affairs allow  
The master sudden leisure. That was how  
I took the private garden-way for once.

Forth from the alcove, I saw start, ensconce  
Himself behind the porphyry vase, a man.

My fancies in the natural order ran:

"A spy,—perhaps a foe in ambushade,—  
A thief,—more like, a sweetheart of some  
maid  
Who pitched on the alcove for tryst perhaps."

"Stand there!" I bid.

Whereat my man but wraps  
His face the closelier with uplifted arm  
Whereon the cloak lies, strikes in blind alarm  
This and that pedestal as,—stretch and  
stoop,—

Now in, now out of sight, he thrids the group  
Of statues, marble god and goddess ranged  
Each side the pathway, till the gate's ex-  
changed

For safety: one step thence, the street, you  
know!

Thus far I followed with my gaze. Then,  
slow,

Near on admiringly, I breathed again,  
And—back to that last fancy of the train—  
"A danger risked for hope of just a word  
With—which of all my nest may be the  
bird

This poacher covets for her plumage, pray?  
Carmen? Juana? Carmen seems too gay  
For such adventure, while Juana's grave  
—Would scorn the folly. I applaud the  
knave!

He had the eye, could single from my brood  
His proper fledgeling!"

As I turned, there stood  
In face of me, my wife stone-still stone-  
white.

Whether one bound had brought her,—at  
first sight

Of what she judged the encounter, sure to be  
Next moment, of the venturesome man and  
me,—

Brought her to clutch and keep me from my  
prey:

Whether impelled because her death no day  
Could come so absolutely opportune  
As now at joy's height, like a year in June.

Stayed at the fall of its first ripened rose :  
Or whether hungry for my hate—who  
knows?—

Eager to end an irksome lie, and taste  
Our tingling true relation, hate embraced  
By hate one naked moment :—anyhow  
There stone-still stone-white stood my wife,  
but now

The woman who made heaven within my  
house.

Ay, she who faced me was my very spouse  
As well as love—you are to recollect !

"Stay !" she said. "Keep at least one  
soul unspiced

With crime, that's spotless hitherto—your  
own !

Kill me who court the blessing, who alone  
Was, am, and shall be guilty, first to last !  
The man lay helpless in the toils I cast  
About him, helpless as the statue there  
Against that strangling bell-flower's bondage :  
tear

Away and tread to dust the parasite,  
But do the passive marble no despite !  
I love him as I hate you. Kill me ! Strike  
At one blow both infinitudes alike  
Out of existence—hate and love ! Whence  
love ?

That's safe inside my heart, nor will remove  
For any scratching of your steel, I think.  
Whence hate ? The secret lay on lip, at  
brink

Of speech, in one fierce tremble to escape,  
At every form wherein your love took shape,  
At each new provocation of your kiss.  
Kill me !"

We went in.

Next day after this,  
"I felt as if the speech might come. I  
spoke—  
Easily, after all.

"The lifted cloak  
Was screen sufficient : I concern myself  
Hardly with laying hands on who for self—

Whate'er the ignoble kind—may prowl and  
brave

Cuffing and kicking proper to a knave  
Detected by my household's vigilance.  
Enough of such ! As for my love-romance—  
I, like our good Hidalgo, rub my eyes  
And wake and wonder how the film could  
rise

Which changed for me a barber's basin  
straight

Into—Mambrino's helm ? I hesitate  
Nowise to say—God's sacramental cup !  
Why should I blame the brass which, bur-  
nished up,

Will blaze, to all but me, as good as gold ?  
To me—a warning I was overbold  
In judging metals. The Hidalgo waked  
Only to die, if I remember,—staked  
His life upon the basin's worth, and lost :  
While I confess torpidity at most  
In here and there a limb ; but, lame and halt,  
Still should I work on, still repair my fault  
Ere I took rest in death,—no fear at all !  
Now, work—no word before the curtain fall !"

The "curtain" ? That of death on life, I  
meant :

My "word," permissible in death's event,  
Would be—truth, soul to soul ; for, otherwise,  
Day by day, three years long, there had to  
rise

And, night by night, to fall upon our stage—  
Ours, doomed to public play by heritage—  
Another curtain, when the world, perforce  
Our critical assembly, in due course  
Came and went, witnessing, gave praise or  
blame

To art-mimetic. It had spoiled the game  
If, suffered to set foot behind our scene,  
The world had witnessed how stage-king and  
queen,

Gallant and lady, but a minute since  
Enarming each the other, would evince  
No sign of recognition as they took  
His way and her way to whatever nook  
Waited them in the darkness either side  
Of that bright stage where lately groom and  
bride

Had fired the audience to a frenzy-fit  
Of sympathetic rapture—every whit  
Earned as the curtain fell on her and me,  
—Actors. Three whole years, nothing was  
to see  
But calm and concord; where a speech was  
due

There came the speech: when smiles were  
wanted too

Smiles were as ready. In a place like mine,  
Where foreign and domestic cares combine,  
There's audience every day and all day long;  
But finally the last of the whole throng  
Who linger lets one see his back. For her—  
Why, liberty and liking: I aver,  
Liking and liberty! For me—I breathed,  
Let my face rest from every wrinkle wreathed  
Smile-like about the mouth, unlearned my  
task

Of personation till next day bade mask,  
And quietly betook me from that world  
To the real world, not pageant: there unfurled

In work, its wings, my soul, the fretted power.  
Three years I worked, each minute of each  
hour

Not claimed by acting:—work I may dispense  
With talk about, since work in evidence,  
Perhaps in history; who knows or cares?

After three years, this way, all unawares,  
Our acting ended. She and I, at close  
Of a loud night-feast, led, between two rows  
Of bending male and female loyalty,  
Our lord the king down staircase, while, held  
high

At arm's length did the twisted tapers' flare  
Herald his passage from our palace, where  
Such visiting left glory evermore.

Again the ascent in public, till at door  
As we two stood by the saloon—now blank  
And disencumbered of its guests—there sank  
A whisper in my ear, so low and yet  
So unmistakable!

“I half forget

The chamber you repair to, and I want  
Occasion for one short word—if you grant

That grace—within a certain room you called  
Our ‘Study,’ for you wrote there while I  
scrawled

Some paper full of faces for my sport.  
That room I can remember. Just one short  
Word with you there, for the remembrance  
sake!”

“Follow me thither!” I replied.

We break  
The gloom a little, as with guiding lamp  
I lead the way, leave warmth and cheer, by  
damp

Blind disused serpentining ways afar  
From where the habitable chambers are,—  
Ascend, descend stairs tunnelled through the  
stone,—

Always in silence,—till I reach the lone  
Chamber sepulchred for my very own  
Out of the palace-quarry. When a boy,  
Here was my fortress, stronghold from annoy,  
Proof-positive of ownership; in youth  
I garnered up my gleanings here—uncouth  
But precious relics of vain hopes, vain fears;  
Finally, this became in after years  
My closet of entanglement to withstand  
Invasion of the foe on every hand—  
The multifarious herd in bower and hall,  
State-room,—rooms whatsoever the style,  
which call

On masters to be mindful that, before  
Men, they must look like men and something  
more.

Here,—when our lord the king's bestowment  
ceased

To deck me on the day that, golden-fleeced,  
I touched ambition's height,—twas here,  
released

From glory (always symbolled by a chain!)  
No sooner was I privileged to gain  
My secret domicile than glad I flung  
That last toy on the table—gazed where hung  
On hook my father's gift, the arquebuss—  
And asked myself “Shall I envisage thus  
The new prize and the old prize, when I  
reach

Another year's experience?—own that each

Equalled advantage—sportsman's—states-  
man's tool?

That brought me down an eagle, this—a  
fool!"

Into which room on entry, I set down  
The lamp, and turning saw whose rustled  
gown

Had told me my wife followed, pace for pace.  
Each of us looked the other in the face.

She spoke. "Since I could die now . . ."

(To explain  
Why that first struck me, know—not once  
again

Since the adventure at the porphyry's edge  
Three years before, which sundered like a  
wedge

Her soul from mine,—though daily, smile to  
smile,

We stood before the public,—all the while  
Not once had I distinguished, in that face  
I paid observance to, the faintest trace  
Of feature more than requisite for eyes  
To do their duty by and recognize:

So did I force mine to obey my will  
And pry no further. There exists such skill,—  
Those know who need it. What physician  
shrinks

From needful contact with a corpse? He  
drinks

No plague so long as thirst for knowledge—  
not

An idler impulse—prompts inquiry. What,  
And will you disbelieve in power to bid  
Our spirit back to bounds, as though we chid  
A child from scrutiny that's just and right  
In manhood? Sense, not soul, accomplished  
sight,

Reported daily she it was—not how  
Nor why a change had come to cheek and  
brow.)

"Since I could die now of the truth concealed,  
Yet dare not, must not die—so seems revealed  
The Virgin's mind to me—for death means  
peace,

Wherewithal lawful part have I, whose lease

Of life and punishment the truth avowed  
May haply lengthen,—let me push the shroud  
Away, that steals to muffle ere is just  
My penance-fire in snow! I dare—I must  
Live, by avowal of the truth—this truth—  
I loved you! Thanks for the fresh serpent's  
tooth

That, by a prompt new pang more exquisite  
Than all preceding torture, proves me right!  
I loved you yet I lost you! May I go  
Burn to the ashes, now my shame you know?"

I think there never was such—how express?—  
Horror coquetting with voluptuousness,  
As in those arms of Eastern workmanship—  
Yataghan, kandjar, things that rend and rip,  
Gash rough, slash smooth, help hate so many  
ways,

Yet ever keep a beauty that betrays  
Love still at work with the artificer  
Throughout his quaint devising. Why prefer,  
Except for love's sake, that a blade should  
writhe

And bicker like a flame?—now play the scythe  
As if some broad neck tempted,—now contract  
And needle off into a fineness lacked  
For just that puncture which the heart  
demands?

Then, such adornment! Wherefore need  
our hands

Enclose not ivory alone, nor gold  
Roughened for use, but jewels? Nay, behold!  
Fancy my favourite—which I seem to grasp  
While I describe the luxury. No asp  
Is diapered more delicate round throat  
Than this below the handle! These denote  
—These mazy lines meandering, to end  
Only in flesh they open—what intend  
They else but water-purlings—pale contrast  
With the life-crimson where they blend at last?  
And mark the handle's dim pellucid green,  
Carved, the hard jadestone, as you pinch a  
bean,

Into a sort of parrot-bird! He pecks  
A grape-bunch; his two eyes are ruby-specks  
Pure from the mine; seen this way,—glassy  
blank,

But turn them,—to the inmost fire, that shrink

From sparkling, sends a red dart right to aim!  
Why did I choose such toys? Perhaps the  
game

Of peaceful men is warlike, just as men  
War-wearied get amusement from that pen  
And paper we grow sick of—statesfolk tired  
Of merely (when such measures are required)  
Dealing out doom to people by three words,  
A signature and seal : we play with swords  
Suggestive of quick process. That is how  
I came to like the toys described you now,  
Store of which glittered on the walls and  
strewn

The table, even, while my wife pursued  
Her purpose to its ending. "Now you know  
This shame, my three years' torture, let me go,  
Burn to the very ashes! You—I lost,  
Yet you—I loved!"

The thing I pity most  
In men is—action prompted by surprise  
Of anger: men? nay, bulls—whose onset lies  
At instance of the firework and the goad!  
Once the foe prostrate,—trampling once  
bestowed,—

Prompt follows placability, regret,  
Atonement. Trust me, blood-warmth never  
yet  
Betokened strong will! As no leap of pulse  
Pricked me, that first time, so did none  
convulse

My veins at this occasion for resolve.  
Had that devolved which did not then devolve  
Upon me, I had done—what now to do  
Was quietly apparent.

"Tell me who  
The man was, crouching by the porphyry  
vase!"

"No, never! All was folly in his case,  
All guilt in mine. I tempted, he complied."

"And yet you loved me?"

"Loved you. Double-dyed  
In folly and in guilt, I thought you gave  
Your heart and soul away from me to slave

At statecraft. Since my right in you seemed  
lost,

I stung myself to teach you, to your cost,  
What you rejected could be prized beyond  
Life, heaven, by the first fool I threw a fond  
Look on, a fatal word to."

"And you still  
Love me? Do I conjecture well or ill?"

"Conjecture—well or ill! I had three years  
To spend in learning you."

"We both are peers  
In knowledge, therefore: since three years  
are spent

Ere thus much of yourself I learn—who went  
Back to the house, that day, and brought my  
mind

To bear upon your action, uncombined  
Motive from motive, till the dress, deprived  
Of every purer particle, survived  
At last in native simple hideousness,  
Utter contemptibility, nor less  
Nor more. Contemptibility—exempt  
How could I, from its proper due—contempt?  
I have too much despised you to divert  
My life from its set course by help or hurt  
Of your all-despicable life—perturb  
The calm, I work in, by—men's mouths to  
curb,

Which at such news were clamorous enough—  
Men's eyes to shut before my brodered stuff  
With the huge hole there, my emblazoned wall  
Blank where a scutcheon hung,—by, worse  
than all,

Each day's procession, my paraded life  
Robbed and impoverished through the want-  
ing wife

—Now that my life (which means—my work)  
was grown

Riches indeed! Once, just this worth alone  
Seemed work to have, that profit gained  
thereby

Of good and praise would—how reward-  
ingly!—

Fall at your feet,—a crown I hoped to cast  
Before your love, my love should crown at last.



No love remaining to cast crown before,

My love stopped work now : but contempt  
the more

Impelled me task as ever head and hand,

Because the very fiends weave ropes of  
sand

Rather than taste pure hell in idleness.

Therefore I kept my memory down by  
stress

Of daily work I had no mind to stay

For the world's wonder at the wife away.

Oh, it was easy all of it, believe,

For I despised you ! But your words retrieve

Importantly the past. No hate assumed

The mask of love at any time ! There  
gloomed

A moment when love took hate's semblance,  
urged

By causes you declare ; but love's self purged

Away a fancied wrong I did both loves

—Yours and my own : by no hate's help, it  
proves,

Purgation was attempted. Then, you rise

High by how many a grade ! I did despise—

I do but hate you. Let hate's punishment

Replace contempt's ! First step to which  
ascent—

Write down your own words I re-utter you !

*"I loved my husband and I hated—who*

*He was, I took up as my first chance, mere*

*Mud-ball to fling and make love foul with !"*

Here

Lies paper !"

"Would my blood for ink suffice !"

"It may : this minion from a land of spice,

Silk, feather—every bird of jewelled breast—

This poignard's beauty, ne'er so lightly prest

Above your heart there . . ."

"Thus?"

"It flows, I see.

Dip there the point and write !"

"Dictate to me !

Nay, I remember."

And she wrote the words.

I read them. Then—"Since love, in you,  
affords

License for hate, in me, to quench (I say)

Contempt—why, hate itself has passed away

In vengeance—foreign to contempt. Depart

Peacefully to that death which Eastern art

Imbued this weapon with, if tales be true !

Love will succeed to hate. I pardon you—

Dead in our chamber !"

True as truth the tale.

She died ere morning ; then, I saw how pale

Her cheek was ere it wore day's paint-disguise,

And what a hollow darkened 'neath her  
eyes,

Now that I used my own. She sleeps, as erst

Beloved, in this your church : ay, yours !

Immersed

In thought so deeply, Father ? Sad, perhaps ?

For whose sake, hers or mine or his who  
wraps

—Still plain I seem to see !—about his head

The idle cloak,—about his heart (instead

Of cuirass) some fond hope he may elude

My vengeance in the cloister's solitude ?

Hardly, I think ! As little helped his brow

The cloak then, Father—as your grate helps  
now !

## CENCIAJA.

[Cencigaga is a bundle of rags—a trifle.

The Italian proverb may be translated thus :

"Every poor creature will be pressing into

the company of his betters." See the

"Browning Cyclopædia," p. 97.]

Ogni cencio vuol entrare in bucato,

—Italian Proverb.

MAY I print, Shelley, how it came to pass

That when your Beatrice seemed—by lapse

Of many a long month since her sentence fell—

Assured of pardon for the parricide,—

By intercession of staunch friends, or, say,

By certain pricks of conscience in the Pope

Conniver at Francesco Cenci's guilt,—

Suddenly all things changed and Clement  
grew

"Stern," as you state, "nor to be moved nor  
bent,

But said these three words coldly '*She must  
die*;

Subjoining '*Pardon? Paolo Santa Croce  
Murdered his mother also yestereve,  
And he is fled: she shall not flee at least!*'

—So, to the letter, sentence was fulfilled?

Shelley, may I condense verbosity  
That lies before me, into some few words  
Of English, and illustrate your superb  
Achievement by a rescued anecdote,  
No great things, only new and true beside?  
As if some mere familiar of a house  
Should venture to accost the group at gaze  
Before its Titian, famed the wide world  
through,

And supplement such pictured masterpiece  
By whisper "Searching in the archives here,  
I found the reason of the Lady's fate,  
And how by accident it came to pass  
She wears the halo and displays the palm:  
Who, haply, else had never suffered—no,  
Nor graced our gallery, by consequence."  
Who loved the work would like the little news:

Who lauds your poem lends an ear to me  
Relating how the penalty was paid  
By one Marchese dell' Oriolo, called  
Onofrio Santa Croce otherwise,  
For his complicity in matricide  
With Paolo his own brother,—he whose crime  
And flight induced "those three words—*She  
must die*.

Thus I unroll you then the manuscript.

"God's justice"—(of the multiplicity  
Of such communications extant still,  
Recording, each, injustice done by God  
In person of his Vicar-upon-earth,  
Scarce one but leads off to the self-same  
tune)—

"God's justice, tardy though it prove per-  
chance,

Rests never on the track until it reach  
Delinquency. In proof I cite the case  
Of Paolo Santa Croce."

Many times

The youngster,—having been importunate  
That Marchesine Costanza, who remained  
His widowed mother, should supplant the heir  
Her elder son, and substitute himself  
In sole possession of her faculty,—  
And meeting just as often with rebuff,—  
Blinded by so exorbitant a lust  
Of gold, the youngster straightway tasked his  
wits,

Casting about to kill the lady—thus.

He first, to cover his iniquity,  
Writes to Onofrio Santa Croce, then  
Authoritative lord, acquainting him  
Their mother was contamination—wrought  
Like hell-fire in the beauty of their House  
By dissoluteness and abandonment  
Of soul and body to impure delight.  
Moreover, since she suffered from disease,  
Those symptoms which her death made mani-  
fest

Hydroptic, he affirmed were fruits of sin  
About to bring confusion and disgrace  
Upon the ancient lineage and high fame  
O' the family, when published. Duty bound,  
He asked his brother—what a son should do?

Which when Marchese dell' Oriolo heard  
By letter, being absent at his land  
Oriolo, he made answer, this, no more:  
"It must behove a son,—things haply so,—  
To act as honour prompts a cavalier  
And son, perform his duty to all three,  
Mother and brothers"—here advice broke off

By which advice informed and fortified,  
As he professed himself—since bound by birth  
To hear God's voice in primogeniture—  
Paolo, who kept his mother company  
In her domain Subiaco, straightway dared  
His whole enormity of enterprise  
And, falling on her, stabbed the lady dead;  
Whose death demonstrated her innocence,  
And happened,—by the way,—since Jesus  
Christ

Died to save man, just sixteen hundred years.  
Costanza was of aspect beautiful

Exceedingly, and seemed, although in age  
Sixty about, to far surpass her peers  
The cotaneous dames, in youth and grace.

Done the misdeed, its author takes to flight,  
Foiling thereby the justice of the world :  
Not God's however,—God, be sure, knows  
well

The way to clutch a culprit. Witness here !  
The present sinner, when he least expects,  
Snug-cornered somewhere i' the Basilicate,  
Stumbles upon his death by violence.  
A man of blood assaults a man of blood  
And slays him somehow. This was afterward :  
Enough, he promptly met with his deserts,  
And, ending thus, permits we end with him,  
And push forthwith to this important point—  
His matricide fell out, of all the days,  
Precisely when the law-procedure closed  
Respecting Count Francesco Cenci's death  
Chargeable on his daughter, sons and wife.  
"Thus patricide was matched with matricide,"  
A poet not inelegantly rhymed :  
Nay, fratricide—those Princes Massimi !—  
Which so disturbed the spirit of the Pope  
That all the likelihood Rome entertained  
Of Beatrice's pardon vanished straight,  
And she endured the piteous death.

Now see

The sequel—what effect commandment had  
For strict inquiry into this last case,  
When Cardinal Aldobrandini (great  
His efficacy—nephew to the Pope)  
Was bidden crush—ay, though his very hand  
Got soil i' the act—crime spawning every-  
where !

Because, when all endeavour had been used  
To catch the aforesaid Paolo, all in vain—  
"Make perquisition" quoth our Eminence,  
"Throughout his now deserted domicile !  
Ransack the palace, roof and floor, to find  
If haply any scrap of writing, hid  
In nook or corner, may convict—who  
knows ?—

Brother Onofrio of intelligence  
With brother Paolo, as in brotherhood  
Is but too likely : crime spawns everywhere."

And, every cranny searched accordingly,  
There comes to light—O lynx-eyed Cardinal !—  
Onofrio's unconsidered writing-scrap,  
The letter in reply to Paolo's prayer,  
The word of counsel that—things proving so,  
Paolo should act the proper knightly part,  
And do as was incumbent on a son.  
A brother—and a man of birth, be sure !

Whereat immediately the officers  
Proceeded to arrest Onofrio—found  
At foot-ball, child's play, unaware of harm,  
Safe with his friends, the Orsini, at their seat  
Monte Giordano ; as he left the house  
He came upon the watch in wait for him  
Set by the Barigel,—was caught and caged.

News of which capture being, that same  
hour,  
Conveyed to Rome, forthwith our Eminence  
Commands Taverna, Governor and Judge,  
To have the process in especial care,  
Be, first to last, not only president  
In person, but inquisitor as well,  
Nor trust the by-work to a substitute :  
Bids him not, squeamish, keep the bench,  
but scrub  
The floor of Justice, so to speak,—go try  
His best in prison with the criminal :  
Promising, as reward for by-work done  
Fairly on all-fours, that, success obtained  
And crime avowed, or such connivency  
With crime as should procure a decent death—  
Himself will humbly beg—which means,  
procure—

The Hat and Purple from his relative  
The Pope, and so repay a diligence  
Which, meritorious in the Cenci-case,  
Mounts plainly here to Purple and the Hat.

Whereupon did my lord the Governor  
So masterfully exercise the task  
Enjoined him, that he, day by day, and week  
By week, and month by month, from first to  
last  
Toiled for the prize : now, punctual at his  
place  
Played Judge, and now, assiduous at his post,

Inquisitor — pressed cushion and scoured plank,  
Early and late. Noon's fervour and night's chill,  
Nought moved whom morn would, purpling,  
make amends !

So that observers laughed as, many a day,  
He left home, in July when day is flame,  
Posted to Tordinona-prison, plunged  
Into a vault where daylong night is ice,  
There passed his eight hours on a stretch,  
content,

Examining Onofrio : all the stress  
Of all examination steadily  
Converging into one pin-point,—he pushed  
Tentative now of head and now of heart.  
As when the nuthatch taps and tries the  
nut

This side and that side till the kernel sound,—  
So did he press the sole and single point  
—What was the very meaning of the phrase  
*'Do as befits an honoured cavalier'?*

Which one persistent question-torture,—  
plied  
Day by day, week by week, and month by  
month,  
Morn, noon and night,—fatigued away a mind  
Grown imbecile by darkness, solitude,  
And one vivacious memory gnawing there  
As when a corpse is confined with a snake  
—Fatigued Onofrio into what might seem  
Admission that perchance his judgment groped  
So blindly, feeling for an issue—aught  
With semblance of an issue from the toils  
Cast of a sudden round feet late so free,  
He possibly might have envisaged, scarce  
Recoiled from—even were the issue death  
—Even her death whose life was death and  
worse !

Always provided that the charge of crime,  
Each jot and tittle of the charge were true.  
In such a sense, belike, he might advise  
His brother to expurgate crime with . . .  
well,  
With blood, if blood must follow on 'the  
course  
*Taken as might beseech a cavalier.'*

Whereupon process ended, and report  
Was made without a minute of delay  
To Clement who, because of those two crimes  
O' the Massimi and Cenci flagrant late,  
Must needs impatiently desire result.

Result obtained, he bade the Governor  
Summon the Congregation and despatch.  
Summons made, sentence passed accordingly  
—Death by beheading. When his death-  
decree

Was intimated to Onofrio, all  
Man could do—that did he to save himself.  
'Twas much, the having gained for his defence  
The Advocate o' the Poor, with natural help  
Of many noble friendly persons fain  
To disengage a man of family,  
So young too, from his grim entanglement : —  
But Cardinal Aldobrandini ruled  
There must be no diversion of the law.  
Justice is justice, and the magistrate  
Bears not the sword in vain. Whosins must die.

So, the Marchese had his head cut off,  
With Rome to see, a concourse infinite,  
In Place Saint Angelo beside the Bridge :  
Where, demonstrating magnanimity  
Adequate to his birth and breed,—poor boy !—  
He made the people the accustomed speech,  
Exhorted them to true faith, honest works,  
And special good behaviour as regards  
A parent of no matter what the sex,  
Bidding each son take warning from himself.  
Truly, it was considered in the boy  
Stark staring lunacy, no less, to snap  
So plain a bait, be hooked and hauled ashore  
By such an angler as the Cardinal !  
Why make confession of his privacy  
To Paolo's enterprise? Mere sealing tips—  
Or, better, saying "When I counselled him  
'*To do as might beseech a cavalier,*'  
What could I mean but '*Hide our parent's*  
*shame*  
*As Christian ought, by aid of Holy Church !*  
*Bury it in a convent—ay, beneath*  
*Enough dotation to prevent its ghost*  
*From troubling earth !'"* Mere saying thus,  
—'tis plain,

Not only were his life the recompense,  
But he had manifestly proved himself  
True Christian, and in lieu of punishment  
Got praise of all men. So the populace.

Anyhow, when the Pope made promise good  
(That of Aldobrandini, near and dear)  
And gave Taverna, who had toiled so much,  
A Cardinal's equipment, some such word  
As this from mouth to ear went saucily :  
"Taverna's cap is dyed in what he drew  
From Santa Croce's veins !" So joked the  
world.

I add : Onofrio left one child behind,  
A daughter named Valeria, dowered with  
grace  
Abundantly of soul and body, doomed  
To life the shorter for her father's fate.  
By death of her, the Marquisate returned  
To that Orsini House from whence it came :  
Oriolo having passed as donative  
To Santa Croce from their ancestors.

And no word more ? By all means !  
Would you know

The authoritative answer, when folk urged  
"What made Aldobrandini, hound-like  
staunch,

Hunt out of life a harmless simpleton ?"  
The answer was—"Hatred implacable,  
By reason they were rivals in their love."  
The Cardinal's desire was to a dame  
Whose favour was Onofrio's. Pricked with  
pride,

The simpleton must ostentatiously  
Display a ring, the Cardinal's love-gift,  
Given to Onofrio as the lady's gage ;  
Which ring on finger, as he put forth hand  
To draw a tapestry, the Cardinal  
Saw and knew, gift and owner, old and  
young ;

Whereon a fury entered him—the fire  
He quenched with what could quench fire  
only—blood.

Nay, more : "there want not who affirm to  
boot,  
The unwise boy, a certain festal eve,

Feigned ignorance of who the wight might be  
That pressed too closely on him with a  
crowd.

He struck the Cardinal a blow : and then,  
To put a face upon the incident,  
Dared next day, smug as ever, go pay court  
I' the Cardinal's antechamber. Mark and  
mend,  
Ye youth, by this example how may greed  
Vainglorious operate in worldly souls !"

So ends the chronicler, beginning with  
"God's justice, tardy though it prove per  
chance,  
Rests never till it reach delinquency."  
Ay, or how otherwise had come to pass  
That Victor rules, this present year, in Rome?

## FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL.

A REMINISCENCE OF A.D. 1676.

[Baldinucci, who was born at Florence in  
1624, is the author of a History of Italian  
Art, in the course of which, under the name  
of the painter Buti, he records the events  
which form the subject-matter of this poem.]

### I.

"No, boy, we must not"—so began  
My Uncle (he's with God long since)  
A-petting me, the good old man !  
"We must not"—and he seemed to wince,  
And lost that laugh whereto had grown  
His chuckle at my piece of news,  
How cleverly I aimed my stone—  
"I fear we must not pelt the Jews !

### II.

"When I was young indeed,—ah, faith  
Was young and strong in Florence too !  
We Christians never dreamed of scathe  
Because we cursed or kicked the crew.  
But now—well, well ! The olive-crops  
Weighed double then, and Arno's pranks  
Would always spare religious shops  
Whenever he o'erflowed his banks !

III.

"I'll tell you"—and his eye regained  
Its twinkle—"tell you something choice!  
Something may help you keep unstained  
Your honest zeal to stop the voice  
Of unbelief with stone-throw—spite  
Of laws, which modern fools enact,  
That we must suffer Jews in sight  
Go wholly unmolested! Fact!

IV.

"There was, then, in my youth, and yet  
Is, by our San Frediano, just  
Below the Blessed Olivet,  
A wayside ground wherein they thrust  
Their dead,—these Jews,—the more our  
shame!  
Except that, so they will but die,  
Christians perchance incur no blame  
In giving hogs a hoist to sty.

V.

"There, anyhow, Jews stow away  
Their dead; and,—such their insolence,—  
Slink at odd times to sing and pray  
As Christians do—all make pretence!—  
Which wickedness they perpetrate  
Because they think no Christians see.  
They reckoned here, at any rate,  
Without their host: ha, ha, he, he!

VI.

"For, what should join their plot of ground  
But a good Farmer's Christian field?  
The Jews had hedged their corner round  
With bramble-bush to keep concealed  
Their doings: for the public road  
Ran betwixt this their ground and that  
The Farmer's, where he ploughed and sowed,  
Grew corn for barn and grapes for vat.

VII.

"So, properly to guard his store  
And gail the unbelievers too,  
He builds a shrine and, what is more,  
Procures a painter whom I knew,

One Buti (he's with God) to paint  
A holy picture there—no less  
Than Virgin Mary free from taint  
Borne to the sky by angels: yes!

VIII.

"Which shrine he fixed,—who says him  
nay?—  
A-facing with its picture-side  
Not, as you'd think, the public way,  
But just where sought these hounds to  
hide  
Their carrion from that very truth  
Of Mary's triumph: not a hound  
Could act his mummeries uncouth  
But Mary shamed the pack all round!

IX.

"Now, if it was amusing, judge!  
—To see the company arrive,  
Each Jew intent to end his trudge  
And take his pleasure (though alive)  
With all his Jewish kith and kin  
Below ground, have his venom out,  
Sharpen his wits for next day's sin,  
Curse Christians, and so home, no doubt!

X.

"Whereas, each phyz upturned beholds  
Mary, I warrant, soaring brave!  
And in a trice, beneath the folds  
Of filthy garb which gowns each knave,  
Down drops it—there to hide grimace,  
Contortion of the mouth and nose  
At finding Mary in the place  
They'd keep for Pilate, I suppose!

XI.

"At last, they will not brook—not they!—  
Longer such outrage on their tribe:  
So, in some hole and corner, lay  
Their heads together—how to bribe  
The meritorious Farmer's self  
To straight undo his work, restore  
Their chance to meet and muse on self—  
Pretending sorrow, as before!

## XII.

"Forthwith, a posse, if you please,  
Of Rabbi This and Rabbi That  
Almost go down upon their knees  
To get him lay the picture flat.  
The spokesman, eighty years of age,  
Grey as a badger, with a goat's  
Not only beard but bleat, 'gins wage  
War with our Mary. Thus he dotes :—

## XIII.

"Friends, grant a grace! How Hebrews  
toil  
Through life in Florence—why relate  
To those who lay the burden, spoil  
Our paths of peace? We hear our fate.  
But when with life the long toil ends,  
Why must you—the expression craves  
Pardon, but truth compels me, friends!—  
Why must you plague us in our graves?

## XIV.

"Thoughtlessly plague, I would believe!  
For how can you—the lords of ease  
By nurture, birthright—'e'en conceive  
Our luxury to lie with trees  
And turf,—the cricket and the bird  
Left for our last companionship:  
No harsh deed, no unkindly word,  
No frowning brow nor scornful lip!

## XV.

"Death's luxury, we now rehearse  
While, living, through your streets we fare  
And take your hatred: nothing worse  
Have we, once dead and safe, to bear!  
So we refresh our souls, fulfil  
Our works, our daily tasks; and thus  
Gather you grain—earth's harvest—still  
The wheat for you, the straw for us.

## XVI.

"What flouting in a face, what harm,  
In just a lady borne from bier  
By boys' heads, wings for leg and arm?  
You question. Friends, the harm is here—

That just when our last sigh is heaved,  
And we would fain thank God and you  
For labour done and peace achieved,  
Back comes the Past in full review!

## XVII.

"At sight of just that simple flag,  
Starts the foe-feeling serpent-like  
From slumber. Leave it lulled, nor drag—  
Though fangless—forth, what needs must  
strike  
When stricken sore, though stroke be vain  
Against the mailed oppressor! Give  
Play to our fancy that we gain  
Life's rights when once we cease to live!

## XVIII.

"Thus much to courtesy, to kind,  
To conscience! Now to Florence folk!  
There's core beneath this apple-rind,  
Beneath this white-of-egg there's yolk!  
Beneath this prayer to courtesy,  
Kind, conscience—there's a sum to pouch!  
How many ducats down will buy  
Our shame's removal, sirs? Avouch!

## XIX.

"Removal, not destruction, sirs!  
Just turn your picture! Let it front  
The public path! Or memory errs,  
Or that same public path is wont  
To witness many a chance befall  
Of lust, theft, bloodshed—sins enough,  
Wherein our Hebrew part is small.  
Convert yourselves!—he cut up rough.

## XX.

"Look you, how soon a service paid  
Religion yields the servant fruit!  
A prompt reply our Farmer made  
So following: 'Sirs, to grant your suit  
Involves much danger! How? Transpost  
Our Lady? Stop this chastisement,  
All for your good, herself bestows?  
What wonder if I grudge consent?

XXI.  
 "—*Yet grant it: since, what cash I take  
 Is so much saved from wicked use.  
 We know you! And, for Mary's sake,  
 A hundred ducats shall induce  
 Concession to your prayer. One day  
 Suffices: Master Buti's brush  
 Turns Mary round the other way,  
 And deluges your side with slush.*

XXII.  
 "Down with the ducats therefore! Dump,  
 Dump, dump it falls, each counted piece,  
 Hard gold. Then out of door they stump,  
 These dogs, each brisk as with new lease  
 Of life, I warrant,—glad he'll die  
 Henceforward just as he may choose,  
 Be buried and in clover lie!  
 Well said Esaias—*'stiff-necked Jews!'*

XXIII.  
 "Off posts without a minute's loss  
 Our Farmer, once the cash in poke  
 And summons Buti—ere its gloss  
 Have time to fade from off the joke—  
 To chop and change his work, undo  
 The done side, make the side, now  
 blank,  
 Recipient of our Lady—who,  
 Displaced thus, had these dogs to thank!

XXIV.  
 "Now, boy, you're hardly to instruct  
 In technicalities of Art!  
 My nephew's childhood sure has sucked  
 Along with mother's-milk some part  
 Of painter's-practice—learned, at least,  
 How expeditiously is plied  
 A work in fresco—never ceased  
 When once begun—a day, each side.

XXV.  
 "So, Buti—(he's with God)—begins:  
 First covers up the shrine all round  
 With hoarding; then, as like as twins,  
 Paints, to other side the burial-ground,

New Mary, every point the same;  
 Next, sluices over, as agreed,  
 The old; and last—but, spoil the game  
 By telling you? Not I, indeed!

XXVI.  
 "Well, ere the week was half at end,  
 Out came the object of this zeal,  
 This fine alacrity to spend  
 Hard money for mere dead men's weal!  
 How think you? That old spokesman  
 Jew  
 Was High Priest, and he had a wife  
 As old, and she was dying too,  
 And wished to end in peace her life!

XXVII.  
 "And he must humour dying whims,  
 And soothe her with the idle hope  
 They'd say their prayers and sing their  
 hymns  
 As if her husband were the Pope!  
 And she did die—believing just  
 This privilege was purchased! Dead  
 In comfort through her foolish trust!  
 'Stiff-necked ones,' well Esaias said!

XXVIII.  
 "So, Sabbath morning, out of gate  
 And on to way, what sees our arch  
 Good Farmer? Why, they hoist their freight—  
 The corpse—on shoulder, and so, march!  
 'Now for it, Buti!' In the nick  
 Of time 'tis pully-haully, hence  
 With hoarding! O'er the wayside quick  
 There's Mary plain in evidence!

XXIX.  
 "And here's the convoy halting: right!  
 O they are bent on howling psalms  
 And growling prayers, when opposite!  
 And yet they glance, for all their qualms,  
 Approve that promptitude of his,  
 The Farmer's—duly at his post  
 To take due thanks from every phiz,  
 Sour smirk—nay, surly smile almost!



## XXX.

"Then earthward drops each brow again ;  
The solemn task's resumed; they reach  
Their holy field—the unholy train :  
Enter its precinct, all and each,  
Wrapt somehow in their godless rites ;  
Till, rites at end, up-waking, lo  
They lift their faces ! What delights  
The mourners as they turn to go ?

## XXXI.

"Ha, ha, he, he ! On just the side  
They drew their purse-strings to make quit  
Of Mary,—Christ the Crucifieu  
Fronted them now—these biters bit !  
Never was such a hiss and snort,  
Such screwing nose and shooting lip !  
Their purchase—honey in report—  
Proved gall and verjuice at first sip !

## XXXII.

"Out they break, on they bustle, where,  
A-top of wall, the Farmer waits  
With Buti : never fun so rare !  
The Farmer has the best : he rates  
The rascal, as the old High Priest  
Takes on himself to sermonize—  
Nay, sneer '*We Jews supposed, at least,  
Theft was a crime in Christian eyes !*'

## XXXIII.

" '*Theft !*' cries the Farmer. '*Eat your words !  
Show me what constitutes a breach  
Of faith in aught was said or heard !  
I promised you in plainest speech  
I'd take the thing you count disgrace  
And put it here—and here 'tis put !  
Did you suppose I'd leave the place  
Blank, therefore, just your rage to glut ?*'

## XXXIV.

" '*I guess you dared not stipulate  
For such a damned impertinence !  
So, quick, my greybeard, out of gate  
And in at Ghetto ! Haste you hence !*'

*As long as I have house and land,  
To spite you irreligious chaps  
Here shall the Crucifixion stand—  
Unless you down with cash, perhaps !*

## XXXV.

"So snickered he and Buti both.  
The Jews said nothing, interchanged  
A glance or two, renewed their oath  
To keep ears stopped and hearts estranged  
From grace, for all our Church can do ;  
Then off they scuttled : sullen jog  
Homewards, against our Church to brew  
Fresh mischief in their synagogue.

## XXXVI.

"But next day—see what happened, boy !  
See why I bid you have a care  
How you pelt Jews ! The knaves employ  
Such methods of revenge, forbear  
No outrage on our faith, when free  
To wreak their malice ! Here they took  
So base a method—plague o' me  
If I record it in my Book !

## XXXVII.

"For, next day, while the Farmer sat  
Laughing with Buti, in his shop,  
At their successful joke,—rat-tat,—  
Door opens, and they're like to drop  
Down to the floor as in there stalks  
A six-feet-high herculean-built  
Young he-Jew with a beard that baulks  
Description. '*Help ere blood be spilt !*'

## XXXVIII.

—"Screamed Buti : for he recognized  
Whom but the son, no less no more,  
Of that High Priest his work surprised  
So pleasantly the day before !  
Son of the mother, then, whereof  
The bier he lent a shoulder to,  
And made the moans about, dared scoff  
At sober Christian grief—the Jew !

XXXIX.

" *Sirs, I salute you! Never rise!  
No apprehension!*" (Buti, white  
And trembling like a tub of size,  
Had tried to smuggle out of sight  
The picture's self—the thing in oils,  
You know, from which a fresco's dashed  
Which courage speeds while caution spoils)  
*'Stay and be praised, sir, unabashed!*

XL.

" *'Praised,—ay, and paid too: for I come  
To buy that very work of yours.  
My poor abode, which boasts—well, some  
Few specimens of Art, secures  
Haply, a masterpiece indeed  
If I should find my humble means  
Suffice the outlay. So, proceed!  
Propose—ere prudence intervenes!*"

XLI.

" On Buti, cowering like a child,  
These words descended from aloft,  
In tone so ominously mild,  
With smile terrifically soft  
To that degree—could Buti dare  
(Poor fellow) use his brains, think twice?  
He asked, thus taken unaware,  
No more than just the proper price!

XLII.

" *'Done!*' cries the monster. *'I disburse  
Forthwith your moderate demand.  
Count on my custom—if no worse  
Your future work be, understand,  
Than this I carry off! No aid!  
My arm, sir, lacks nor bone nor thews:  
The burden's easy, and we're made,  
Easy or hard, to bear—we Jews!'*

XLIII.

" Crossing himself at such escape,  
Buti by turns the money eyes  
And, timidly, the stalwart shape  
Now moving doorwards; but, more wise,

The Farmer,—who, though dumb, this while  
Had watched advantage,—straight conceived  
A reason for that tone and smile  
So mild and soft! The Jew—believed!

XLIV.

" Mary in triumph borne to deck  
A Hebrew household! Pictured where  
No one was used to bend the neck  
In praise or bow the knee in prayer!  
Borne to that domicile by whom?  
The son of the High Priest! Through  
what?  
An insult done his mother's tomb!  
Saul changed to Paul—the case came pat!

XLV.

" *'Stay, dog Jew . . . gentle sir, that is!  
Resolve me! Can it be, she crowned,—  
Mary, by miracle,—Oh bliss!—  
My present to your burial ground?  
Certain, a ray of light has burst  
Your veil of darkness! Had you else,  
Only for Mary's sake, unpursed  
So much hard money? Tell—oh, tell's!'*

XLVI.

" Round—like a serpent that we took  
For worm and trod on—turns his bulk  
About the Jew. First dreadful look  
Sends Buti in a trice to skulk  
Out of sight somewhere, safe—alack!  
But our good Farmer faith made bold:  
And firm (with Florence at his back)  
He stood, while gruff the gutturals rolled—

XLVII.

" *'Ay, sir, a miracle was worked,  
By quite another power, I trow,  
Than ever yet in canvas lurked,  
Or you would scarcely face me now!  
A certain impulse did suggest  
A certain grasp with this right-hand,  
Which probably had put to rest  
Our quarrel,—thus your throat once  
spanned!*

## XLVIII.

"But I remembered me, subdued  
That impulse, and you face me still!  
And soon a philosophic mood  
Succeeding (hear it, if you will!)  
Has altogether changed my views  
Concerning Art. Blind prejudice!  
Well may you Christians tax us Jews  
With scrupulosity too nice!

## XLIX.

"For, don't I see,—let's issue join!—  
Whenever I'm allowed pollute  
(I—and my little bag of coin)  
Some Christian palace of repute,—  
Don't I see stuck up everywhere  
Abundant proof that cultured taste  
Has Beauty for its only care,  
And upon Truth no thought to waste?

## L.

"Jew, since it must be, take in pledge  
Of payment '—so a Cardinal  
Has sighed to me as if a wedge  
Entered his heart—' this best of all  
My treasures! ' Leda, Ganymede  
Or Antiope: swan, eagle, ape,  
(Or what's the beast of what's the breed)  
And Jupiter in every shape!

## LI.

"Whereat if I presume to ask  
'But, Eminence, though Titian's whisk  
Of brush have well performed its task,  
How comes it these false godships frisk  
In presence of—what yonder frame  
Pretends to image? Surely, odd  
It seems, you let confront The Name  
Each beast the heathen called his god!"

## LII.

"Benignant smiles me pity straight  
The Cardinal. "Tis Truth, we prize!  
Art's the sole question in debate!  
These subjects are so many lies.

We treat them with a proper scorn  
When we turn lies—called gods for  
sooth—

To lies' fit use, now Christ is born.  
Drawing and colouring are Truth.

## LIII.

"Think you I honour lies so much  
As scruple to parade the charms  
Of Leda—Titian, every touch—  
Because the thing within her arms  
Means Jupiter who had the praise  
And prayer of a benighted world?  
He would have mine too, if, in days  
Of light, I kept the canvas furled!"

"So ending, with some easy gibe.  
What power has logic! I, at once,  
Acknowledged error in our tribe  
So squeamish that, when friends ensconce  
A pretty picture in its niche  
To do us honour, deck our graves,  
We fret and fume and have an itch  
To strangle folk—ungrateful knaves!"

## LV.

"No, sir! Be sure that—what's its  
style,  
Your picture?—shall possess ungrudging  
A place among my rank and file  
Of Ledas and what not—be judged  
Just as a picture! and (because  
I fear me much I scarce have bought  
A Titian) Master Buti's flaws  
Found there, will have the laugh flaws  
ought!"

## LVI.

"So, with a scowl, it darkens door—  
This bulk—no longer! Buti makes  
Prompt glad re-entry; there's a score  
Of oaths, as the good Farmer wakes  
From what must needs have been a trance,  
Or he had struck (he swears) to ground  
The bold bad mouth that dared advance  
Such doctrine the reverse of sound!

## LVII.

"Was magic here? Most like! For, since,  
 Somehow our city's faith grows still  
 More and more lukewarm, and our Prince  
 Or loses heart or wants the will  
 To check increase of cold. 'Tis 'Live  
 And let live! Languidly repress  
 The Dissident! In short,—contrive  
 Christians must bear with Jews: no less!"

## LVIII.

"The end seems, any Israelite  
 Wants any picture,—pishes, poohs,  
 Purchases, hangs it full in sight  
 In any chamber he may choose!  
 In Christ's crown, one more thorn we rue!  
 In Mary's bosom, one more sword!  
 No, boy, you must not pelt a Jew!  
 O Lord, how long? How long, O Lord?"

## EPILOGUE.

μεστοί . . .  
 οὐδ' ἀμφορῆς ὄνον μέλανος ἀνθοσμίου.

"The poets pour us wine—"  
 Said the dearest poet<sup>1</sup> I ever knew,  
 Dearest and greatest and best to me.  
 You clamour athirst for poetry—  
 We pour. "But when shall a vintage be"—  
 You cry—"strong grape, squeezed gold  
 from screw,  
 Yet sweet juice, flavoured flowery-fine?  
 That were indeed the wine!"

## II.

One pours your cup—stark strength,  
 Meat for a man; and you eye the pulp  
 Strained, turbid still, from the viscous<sup>2</sup> blood  
 Of the snaky bough: and you grumble "Good!  
 For it swells resolve, breeds hardihood;  
 Despatch it, then, in a single gulp!"  
 So, down, with a wry face, goes at length  
 The liquor: stuff for strength.

<sup>1</sup> His wife. See Mrs. Browning's "Wine of Cyprus."  
<sup>2</sup> Sticky.

## III.

One pours your cup—sheer sweet,  
 The fragrant fumes of a year condensed:  
 Suspicion of all that's ripe or rathe,  
 From the bud on branch to the grass in swathe.<sup>3</sup>  
 "We suck mere milk of the seasons," saith  
 A curl of each nostril—"dew, dispensed  
 Nowise for nerving man to feat:  
 Boys sip such honeyed sweet!"

And thus who wants wine strong,  
 Waves each sweet smell of the year away;  
 Who likes to swoon as the sweets suffuse  
 His brain with a mixture of beams and dews  
 Turned syrupy drink—rough strength eschews:  
 "What though in our veins your wine-  
 stock stay?  
 The lack of the bloom does our palate wrong.  
 Give us wine sweet, not strong!"

Yet wine is—some affirm—  
 Prime wine is found in the world some-  
 where,  
 Of potable strength with sweet to match.  
 You double your heart its dose, yet catch—  
 As the draught descends—a violet-smatch,  
 Softness—however it came there,  
 Through drops expressed by the fire and  
 worm:  
 Strong sweet wine—some affirm.

Body and bouquet both?  
 'Tis easy to ticket a bottle so;  
 But what was the case in the cask, my friends?  
 Cask? Nay, the vat—where the maker  
 mends  
 His strong with his sweet (you suppose) and  
 blends  
 His rough with his smooth, till none can  
 know  
 How it comes you may tittle, nothing loth,  
 Body and bouquet both.

<sup>3</sup> The line or ridge of grass thrown together  
 by the scythe.

## VII.

"You" being just—the world.

No poets—who turn, themselves, the winch  
Of the press; no critics—I'll even say,  
(Being flustered and easy of faith to-day)  
Who for love of the work have learned the  
way

Till themselves produce home-made, at a  
pinch:

No! You are the world, and wine ne'er  
purled

Except to please the world!

## VIII.

"For, oh the common heart!

And, ah the irremissible sin

Of poets who please themselves, not us!  
Strong wine yet sweet wine pouring thus,  
How please still—Pindar and Æschylus!—

Drink—dipt into by the bearded chin  
Alike and the bloomy lip—no part  
Denied the common heart!

## IX.

"And might we get such grace,

And did you moderns but stock our vault  
With the true half-brandied half-attar-gul,<sup>1</sup>  
How would seniors indulge at a hearty pull  
While juniors tossed off their thimbleful!

Our Shakespeare and Milton escaped your  
fault,

So, they reign supreme o'er the weaker race  
That wants the ancient grace!"

## X.

If I paid myself with words

(As the French say well) I were dupe indeed!  
I were found in belief that you quaffed and  
bowed

At your Shakespeare the whole day long,  
caroused

In your Milton pottle-deep nor drowsed  
A moment of night—toped on, took heed  
Of nothing like modern cream-and-curd.  
Pay me with deeds, not words!

<sup>1</sup> Essence of roses.

## XI.

For—see your cellarage!

There are forty barrels with Shakespeare's  
brand.

Some five or six are abroad: the rest  
Stand spigoted, fauceted. Try and test  
What yourselves call best of the very best!

How comes it that still untouched they  
stand?

Why don't you try tap, advance a stage  
With the rest in cellarage?

## XII.

For—see your cellarage!

There are four big butts of Milton's brew.

How comes it you make old drips and  
drops

Do duty, and there devotion stops?

Leave such an abyss of malt and hops

Embellied in butts which bungs still glue?

You hate your bard! A fig for your rage!

Free him from cellarage!

## XIII.

'Tis said I brew stiff drink,

But the deuce a flavour of grape is there.

Hardly a May-go-down, 'tis just

A sort of a gruff Go-down-it-must—

No Merry-go-down, no gracious gust

Commingles the racy with Springtide's  
rare!

"What wonder," say you "that we cough,  
and blink

At Autumn's heady drink?"

## XIV.

Is it a fancy, friends?

Mighty and mellow are never mixed,  
Though mighty and mellow be born at  
once.

Sweet for the future,—strong for the nonce!  
Stuff you should stow away, ensconce

In the deep and dark, to be found fast-  
fixed

At the century's close: such time strength  
spends

A-sweetening for my friends!

## XV.

And then—why, what you quaff

With a smack of lip and a cluck of tongue,  
Is leakage and leavings—just what haps  
From the tun some learned taster taps  
With a promise “Prepare your watery chaps !

Here’s properest wine for old and young !  
Dispute its perfection—you make us laugh !  
Have faith, give thanks, but—quaff !”

## XVI.

Leakage, I say, or—worse—

Leavings suffice pot-valiant souls.  
Somebody, brimful, long ago,  
Frothed flagon he drained to the dregs ; and lo,  
Down whisker and beard what an overflow !

Lick spith that has trickled from classic  
jowls,  
Sup the single scene, sip the only verse—  
Old wine, not new and worse !

## XVII.

I grant you : worse by much !

Renounce that new where you never gained  
One glow at heart, one gleam at head,  
And stick to the warrant of age instead !  
No dwarf’s-lap ! Fatten, by giants fed !

*You* fatten, with oceans of drink undrained ?  
*You* feed—who would choke did a cobweb  
smutch  
The Age you love so much ?

## XVIII.

A mine’s beneath a moor :

Acres of moor roof fathoms of mine  
Which diamonds dot where you please to dig ;  
Yet who plies spade for the bright and big ?  
Your product is—truffles, you hunt with a pig !

Since bright-and-big, when a man would  
dine,  
Suits badly : and therefore the Koh-i-noor  
May sleep in mine ’neath moor !

Wine, pulse in might from me !

It may never emerge in must from vat,  
Never fill cask nor furnish can,  
Never end sweet, which strong began—

God’s gift to gladden the heart of man ;

But spirit’s at proof, I promise that !  
No sparing of juice spoils what should be  
Fit brewage—mine for me.

## XX.

Man’s thoughts and loves and hates !

Earth is my vineyard, these grew there :  
From grape of the ground, I made or married  
My vintage ; easy the task or hard,  
Who set it—his praise be my reward !

Earth’s yield ! Who yearn for the Dark  
Blue Sea’s,  
Let them “lay, pray, bray”—the addle-pates !  
Mine be Man’s thoughts, loves, hates !

## XXI.

But someone says “Good Sir !”

(’Tis a worthy versed in what concerns  
The making such labour turn out well)  
“You don’t suppose that the nosegay-smell  
Needs always come from the grape? Each bell  
At your foot, each bud that your culture  
spurns,

The very cowslip would act like *myrrh*  
On the stiffest brew—good Sir !

## XXII.

“Cowslips, abundant birth  
O’er meadow and hillside, vineyard too,  
—Like a schoolboy’s scrawlings in and out  
Distasteful lesson-book—all about  
Greece and Rome, victory and rout—  
Love-verses instead of such vain ado !  
So, fancies frolic it o’er the earth  
Where thoughts have rightlier birth.

## XXIII.

“Nay, thoughtlings they themselves :  
Loves, hates—in little and less and least !  
Thoughts? ‘*What is a man beside a mount !*  
Loves? ‘*Absent—poor lovers the minutes  
count !*  
Hates? ‘*Fie—Pope’s letters to Martha  
Blount !*”

These furnish a wine for a children’s-feast :  
Insipid to man, they suit the elves  
Like thoughts, loves, hates themselves.”

## XXIV.

And, friends, beyond dispute

I too have the cowslips dewy and dear.  
Punctual as Springtide forth peep they :  
I leave them to make my meadow gay.  
But I ought to pluck and impound them, eh?

Not let them alone, but deftly shear  
And shred and reduce to—what may suit  
Children, beyond dispute?

## XXV.

And, here's May-month, all bloom,

All bounty : what if I sacrifice?  
If I out with shears and shear, nor stop  
Shearing till prostrate, lo, the crop?  
And will you prefer it to ginger-pop

When I've made you wine of the memories  
Which leave as bare as a churchyard tomb  
My meadow, late all bloom?

## XXVI.

Nay, what ingratitude

Should I hesitate to amuse the wits  
That have pulled so long at my flask, nor  
grudged

The headache that paid their pains, nor budged

From bung-hole before they sighed and judged  
"Too rough for our taste, to-day, befits  
The racy and right when the years conclude!"  
Out on ingratitude!

## XXVII.

Grateful or ingrate—none,  
No cowslip of all my fairy crew  
Shall help to concoct what makes you wink  
And goes to your head till you think you  
think!

I like them alive : the printer's ink  
Would sensibly tell on the perfume too.  
I may use up my nettles, ere I've done ;  
But of cowslips—friends get none!

## XXVIII.

Don't nettles make a broth  
Wholesome for blood grown lazy and thick?  
Maws out of sorts make mouths out of taste.  
My Thirty-four Port—no need to waste  
On a tongue that's fur and a palate—paste!  
A magnum for friends who are sound!  
The sick—  
I'll posset and cosset them, nothing loth,  
Henceforward with nettle-broth!

# THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS.

1877.

MAY I be permitted to chat a little, by way of recreation, at the end of a somewhat toilsome and perhaps fruitless adventure?

If, because of the immense fame of the following Tragedy, I wished to acquaint myself with it, and could only do so by the help of a translator, I should require him to be literal at every cost save that of absolute violence to our language. The use of certain allowable constructions which, happening to be out of daily favour, are all the more appropriate to archaic workmanship, is no violence: but I would be tolerant for once,—in the case of so immensely famous an original,—of even a clumsy attempt to furnish me with the very turn of each phrase in as Greek a fashion as English will bear: while, with respect to amplifications and embellishments,—anything rather than, with the good farmer, experience that most signal of mortifications, “to gape for Æschylus and get Theognis.” I should especially decline,—what may appear to brighten up a passage,—the employment of a new word for some old one—*πῶνος*, or *μέγας*, or *τέλος*, with its congeners, recurring four times in three lines: for though such substitution may be in itself perfectly justifiable, yet this exercise of ingenuity ought to be within the competence of the unaided English reader if he likes to show himself ingenious. Learning Greek teaches Greek, and nothing else: certainly not common sense, if that have failed to precede the teaching. Further,—if I obtained a mere strict bald version of thing by thing, or at least word pregnant with thing, I should hardly look for an impossible transmission of the reputed magniloquence and sonority of the Greek; and this with the less regret, inasmuch as there is abundant musicality elsewhere, but nowhere else than in his poem the ideas of the poet. And lastly, when presented with these ideas, I should expect the result to prove very hard reading indeed if it were meant to resemble Æschylus, *εὐβαλεῖν οὐ ῥάδιος*, “not easy to understand,” in the opinion of his stoutest advocate among the

ancients; while, I suppose, even modern scholarship sympathizes with that early declaration of the redoubtable Salmasius, when, looking about for an example of the truly obscure for the benefit of those who found obscurity in the sacred books, he protested that this particular play leaves them all behind in this respect, with their “Hebraisms, Syriasms, Hellenisms, and the whole of such bag and baggage.”<sup>1</sup> For, over and above the purposed ambiguity of the Chorus, the text is sadly corrupt, probably interpolated, and certainly mutilated; and no unlearned person enjoys the scholar’s privilege of trying his fancy upon each obstacle whenever he comes to a stoppage, and effectually clearing the way by suppressing what seems to lie in it.

All I can say for the present performance is, that I have done as I would be done by, if need were. Should anybody, without need, honour my translation by a comparison with the original, I beg him to observe that, following no editor exclusively, I keep to the earlier readings so long as sense can be made out of them, but disregard, I hope, little of importance in recent criticism so far as I have fallen in with it. Fortunately, the poorest translation, provided only it be faithful,—though it reproduce all the artistic confusion of tenses, moods, and persons, with which the original teems,—will not only suffice to display what an eloquent friend maintains to be the all-in-all of poetry—“the action of the piece”—but may help to illustrate his assurance that “the Greeks are the highest models of expression, the unapproached masters of the grand style: their expression is so excellent because it is so

“Quis Æschylum possit affirmare Græce nunc scienti magis patere explicabilem quam Evangelia aut Epistolas Apostolicas? Unus ejus Agamemnon obscuritate superat quantum est librorum sacrorum cum suis Hebraïsmis et Syriasms et tota Hellenisticæ suppellectili vel farragine.”—SALMASIUS *de Hellenisticis*, Epist. Dedic.



admirably kept in its right degree of prominence, because it is so simple and so well subordinated, because it draws its force directly from the pregnancy of the matter which it conveys . . . not a word wasted, not a sentiment capriciously thrown in, stroke on stroke!"<sup>1</sup> So may all happen!

Just a word more on the subject of my spelling—in a transcript from the Greek and there exclusively—Greek names and places precisely as does the Greek author. I began this practice, with great innocence of intention, some six-and-thirty years ago. Leigh Hunt, I remember, was accustomed to speak of his gratitude, when ignorant of Greek, to those writers (like Goldsmith) who had obliged him by using English characters, so that he might relish, for instance, the smooth quality of such a phrase as "hapalunetai galéné;" he said also that Shelley was indignant at "Firenze" having displaced the Dantesque "Fiorenza," and would contemptuously English the intruder "Firence." I supposed I was doing a simple thing enough: but there has been till lately much astonishment at *os* and *us*, *ai* and *oi*, representing the same letters in Greek. Of a sudden, however, whether in translation or out of it, everybody seems committing the offence, although the adoption of *u* for *v* still presents such difficulty that it is a wonder how we have hitherto escaped "Eyrripides." But there existed a sturdy Briton who, Ben Jonson informs us, wrote "The Life of the Emperor Anthony Pie"—whom we now acquiesce in as Antoninus Pius: for "with time and patience the mulberry leaf becomes satin." Yet there is, on all sides, much profession of respect for what Keats called "vowelled Greek"—"consonanted," one would expect; and, in a criticism upon a late admirable translation of something of my own, it was deplored that, in a certain verse corresponding in measure to the fourteenth of the sixth Pythian Ode, "neither Professor Jebb in his Greek, nor Mr. Browning in his English, could emulate that matchlessly musical γόνον ἰδὼν κάλλιστον ἀνδρῶν." Now, undoubtedly, "Seeing her son the fairest of men" has more sense than sound to boast of: but then, would not an Italian roll us out "Rimirando il figliuolo bellissimo degli uomini!" whereat Pindar, no less than Professor Jebb and Mr. Browning, τριακτῆρος οὐχέτα τυχῶν.

<sup>1</sup> *Poems by Matthew Arnold*, Preface.

It is recorded in the annals of Art<sup>2</sup> that there was once upon a time, practising so far north as Stockholm, a painter and picture-cleaner—sire of a less unhappy son—Old Muytens: and the annalist, Baron de Tessé, has not concealed his profound dissatisfaction at Old Muytens' conceit "to have himself had something to do with the work of whatever master of eminence might pass through his hands." Whence it was,—the Baron goes on to deplore,—that much detriment was done to that excellent piece "The Recognition of Achilles," by Rubens, through the perversity of Old Muytens, "who must needs take on him to beautify every nymph of the twenty by the bestowment of a widened eye and an enlarged mouth." I, at least, have left eyes and mouths everywhere as I found them, and this conservatism is all that claims praise for—what is, after all, ἀκέραιος ἀμσθος ἀοιδά. No, neither "uncommanded" nor "unrewarded:" since it was commanded of me by my venerated friend Thomas Carlyle, and rewarded will it indeed become if I am permitted to dignify it by the prefatory insertion of his dear and noble name. R. B.

LONDON: October 1st, 1877.

## THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS.

### PERSONS.

Warder.  
Chorus of Old Men.  
KLUTAIMNESTRA.  
TALTHUBIOS, Herald.  
AGAMEMNON.  
KASSANDRA.  
AIGISTHOS.

### WARDER.

THE gods I ask deliverance from these labours,  
Watch of a year's length whereby, slumbering through it  
On the Atreidai's roofs on elbow,—dog-like—  
I know of nightly star-groups the assemblage,  
And those that bring to men winter and summer

<sup>2</sup> *Lettres à un jeune Prince*, traduites du Suédois.

Bright dynasts, as they pride them in the æther  
Most plain would speak. So, willing I  
—Stars, when they wither, and the uprisings myself speak

of them. To those who know : to who know not—I'm  
blankness.

And now on ward I wait the torch's token,  
The glow of fire, shall bring from Troia  
message

And word of capture : so prevails audacious  
The man's-way-planning hoping heart of  
woman.

But when I, driven from night-rest, dew  
drenched hold to

This couch of mine—not looked upon by  
visions,

Since fear instead of sleep still stands beside  
me,

So as that fast I fix in sleep no eyelids—  
And when to sing or chirp a tune I fancy,  
For slumber such song-remedy infusing,  
I wail then, for this House's fortune groaning,  
Not, as of old, after the best ways governed.  
Now, lucky be deliverance from these labours,  
At good news—the appearing dusky fire !

( ) hail, thou lamp of night, a day-long  
lightness

Revealing, and of dances the ordainment !  
Halloo, halloo !

To Agamemnon's wife I show, by shouting,  
That, from bed starting up at once, i' the  
household

Joyous acclaim, good-omened to this torch-  
blaze,

She send aloft, if haply Ilion's city  
Be taken, as the beacon boasts announcing.  
Ay, and, for me, myself will dance a pre-  
lude,

For, that my masters' dice drop right, I'll  
reckon :

Since thrice-six has it thrown to me, this  
signal.

Well, may it hap that, as he comes, the  
loved hand

O' the household's lord I may sustain with  
this hand !

As for the rest, I'm mute : on tongue a  
big ox

Has trodden. Yet this House, if voice it  
take should,

VOL. II.

## CHOROS.

The tenth year this, since Priamos' great match,  
King Menelaos, Agamemnon King,

—The strenuous yoke-pair of the Atreidai's  
honour

Two-throned, two-sceptred, whereof Zeus  
was donor—

Did from this land the aid, the armament  
despatch,

The thousand-sailored force of Argives  
clamouring

"Ares" from out the indignant breast, as  
fling

Passion forth vultures which, because of grief  
Away,—as are their young ones,—with the  
thief,

Lofty above their brood-nests wheel in ring,  
Row round and round with oar of either  
wing,

Lament the bedded chicks, lost labour that  
was love :

Which hearing, one above

Whether Apollon, Pan or Zeus—that wail,  
Sharp-piercing bird-shriek of the guests who  
fare

Housemates with gods in air—  
Suchanone sends, against who these assail,

What, late-sent, shall not fail  
Of punishing—Erinus. Here as there,  
The Guardian of the Guest, Zeus, the excel-  
ling one,

Sends against Alexandros either son  
Of Atreus : for that wife, the many-husbanded,  
Appointing many a tug that tries the limb,  
While the knee plays the prop in dust, while,  
shred

To morsels, lies the spear-shaft ; in those grim  
Marriage-prolusions when their Fury wed  
Danaoi and Troes, both alike. . All's said :  
Things are where things are, and, as fate has  
willed,

So shall they be fulfilled.  
Not gently-grieving, not just doing out

The drops of expiation—no, nor tears distilled—

Shall he we know of bring the hard about  
To soft—that intense ire

At those mock rites unsanctified by fire.

But we pay nought<sup>1</sup> here: through our flesh,  
age-weighted,

Left out from who gave aid

In that day,—we remain,

Staying on staves a strength

The equal of a child's at length.

For when young marrow in the breast doth  
reign,

That's the old man's match,—Ares out of  
place

In either: but in oldest age's case,

Foliage a-fading, why, he wends his way

On three feet, and, no stronger than a child,

Wanders about gone wild,

A dream in-day.

But thou, Tundareus' daughter, Klutaim-  
nestra queen,

What need? What new? What having  
heard or seen,

By what announcement's tidings, everywhere  
Settest thou, round about, the sacrifice  
a-flare?

For, of all gods the city-swaying,

Those supernal, those infernal,

Those of the fields', those of the mart's  
obeying,—

The altars blaze with gifts;

And here and there, heaven-high the torch  
uplifts

Flame—medicated with persuasions mild,

With foul admixture unbeguiled—

Of holy unguent, from the clotted chrism

Brought from the palace, safe in its abysm.

Of these things, speaking what may be indeed  
Both possible and lawful to concede,

Healer do thou become!—of this solicitude

Which, now, stands plainly forth of evil mood,

And, then . . . but from oblations, hope,  
to-day

Gracious appearing, wards away

From soul the insatiate care,

The sorrow at my breast, devouring there!

Empowered am I to sing

The omens, what their force which, journeying,  
Rejoiced the potentates:

(For still, from God, inflates

My breast song-suasion: age,

Born to the business, still such war can wage)

—How the fierce bird against the Teukris land

Despatched, with spear and executing hand,

The Achaian's two-throned empery—o'er  
Hellas' youth

Two rulers with one mind:

The birds' king to these kings of ships, on  
high,

—The black sort, and the sort that's white  
behind,—

Appearing by the palace, on the spear-throw  
side,

In right sky-regions, visible far and wide,—

Devouring a hare-creature, great with young,

Baulked of more racings they, as she from  
whom they sprung!

Ah, Linos,<sup>1</sup> say—ah, Linos, song of wail!

But may the good prevail!

The prudent army-prophet seeing two

The Atreidai, two their tempers, knew

Those feasting on the hare

The armament-conductors were;

And thus he spoke, explaining signs in view.

"In time, this outset takes the town of  
Priamos:

But all before its towers,—the people's wealth  
that was,

Of flocks and herds,—as sure, shall booty-  
sharing thence

Drain to the dregs away, by battle violence.

Only, have care lest grudge of any god disturb

With cloud the unsullied shine of that great  
force, the curb

Of Troia, struck with damp

Beforehand in the camp!

For envyingly is

The virgin Artemis

Toward—her father's flying hounds—this  
House—

The sacrificers of the piteous

<sup>1</sup> Taught Hercules music.

And cowering beast,  
Brood and all, ere the birth: she hates the  
eagles' feast.

Ah, Linos, say—ah, Linos, song of wail!  
But may the good prevail!

"Thus ready is the beauteous one with help  
To those small dewdrop-things fierce lions  
whelp,

And udder-loving litter of each brute  
That roams the mead; and therefore makes  
she suit,

The fair one, for fulfilment to the end  
Of things these signs portend—  
Which partly smile, indeed, but partly scowl—  
The phantasms of the fowl.

I call Ieios Paian<sup>1</sup> to avert  
She work the Danaoi hurt  
By ary thwarting waftures, long and fast  
Holdings from sail of ships:

And sacrifice, another than the last,  
She for herself precipitate—  
Something unlawful, feast for no man's  
lips,

Builder of quarrels, with the House cognate—  
Having in awe no husband: for remains  
A frightful, backward-darting in the path,  
Wily house-keeping chronicler of wrath,  
That has to punish that old children's fate!"  
Such things did Kalchas,—with abundant  
gains

As well,—vociferate,  
Predictions from the birds, in journeying,  
Above the abode of either king.  
With these, symphonious, sing—  
Ah, Linos, say—ah, Linos, song of wail!  
But may the good prevail!

Zeus, whosoe'er he be,—if that express  
Aught dear to him on whom I call—  
So do I him address.  
I cannot liken out, by all  
Admeasurement of powers,  
Any but Zeus for refuge at such hours,  
If veritably needs I must  
From off my soul its vague care-burthen  
thrust.

<sup>1</sup> Apollo.

Not—whosoever was the great of yore,  
Bursting to bloom with bravery all round—  
Is in our mouths: he was, but is no more.  
And who it was that after came to be,  
Met the thrice-throwing wrestler,—he  
Is also gone to ground.

But "Zeus"—if any, heart and soul, that  
name—

Shouting the triumph-praise—proclaim,  
Complete in judgment shall that man be  
found.

Zeus, who leads onward mortals to be wise,  
Appoints that suffering masterfully teach.  
In sleep, before the heart of each,  
A woe-remembering travail sheds in dew  
Discretion,—ay, and melts the unwilling too  
By what, perchance, may be a graciousness  
Of gods, enforced no less,—  
As they, commanders of the crew,  
Assume the awful seat.

And then the old leader of the Achaian fleet,  
Disparaging no seer—  
With bated breath to suit misfortune's inrush  
here

—(What time it laboured, that Achaian host,  
By stay from sailing,—every pulse at length  
Emptied of vital strength,—  
Hard over Kalchis shore-bound, current-crosted  
In Aulis station,—while the winds which  
post

From Strumon, ill-delayers, famine-fraught,  
Tempters of man to sail where harborage is  
naught,

Spendthrifts of ships and cables, turning time  
To twice the length,—these carded, by delay,  
To less and less away

The Argeians' flowery prime:

And when a remedy more grave and grand  
Than aught before,—yea, for the storm and  
dearth,—

The prophet to the foremost in command  
Shrieked forth, as cause of this  
Adducing Artemis,

So that the Atreidai striking staves on earth  
Could not withhold the tear)—  
Then did the king, the elder, speak this  
clear.

"Heavy the fate, indeed,—to disobey!  
 Yet heavy if my child I slay,  
 The adornment of my household: with the  
   tide  
 Of virgin-slaughter, at the altar-side,  
 A father's hands defiling: which the way  
 Without its evils, say?  
 How shall I turn fleet-fugitive,  
 Failing of duty to allies?  
 Since for a wind-abating sacrifice  
 And virgin blood,—'tis right they strive,  
 Nay, madden with desire.  
 Well may it work them—this that they re-  
   quire!"

But when he underwent necessity's  
 Yoke-trace,—from soul blowing unhallowed  
   change

Unclean, abominable, — thence — another  
   man—

The audacious mind of him began  
 Its wildest range.

For this it gives mortals hardihood—  
 Some vice-devising miserable mood  
 Of madness, and first woe of all the brood.  
 The sacrificer of his daughter—strange!—  
 He dared become, to expedite  
 Woman-avenging warfare,—anchors weighed  
 With such prelusive rite!

Prayings and callings "Father"—naught they  
   made

Of these, and of the virgin-age,—  
 Captains heart-set on war to wage!  
 His ministrants, vows done, the father bade—  
 Kid-like, above the altar, swathed in pall,  
 Take her—lift high, and have no fear at  
   all,

Head-downward, and the fair mouth's guard  
 And frontage hold,—press hard  
 From utterance a curse against the House  
 By dint of bit—violence bridling speech.  
 And as to ground her saffron-vest she shed,  
 She smote the sacrificers all and each  
 With arrow sweet and piteous,  
 From the eye only sped,—

Significant of will to use a word,  
 Just as in pictures: since, full many a time,

In her sire's guest-hall, by the well-heaped  
   board

Had she made music,—lovingly with chime  
 Of her chaste voice, that unpolluted thing,  
 Honoured the third libation, — pain that  
   should bring  
 Good fortune to the sire she loved so well.

What followed—those things I nor saw nor  
   tell.

But Kalchas' arts,—whate'er they indicate,—  
 Miss of fulfilment never: it is fate.  
 True, justice makes, in sufferers, a desire  
 To know the future woe preponderate.  
 But—hear before is need?

To that, farewell and welcome! 'tis the same,  
   indeed,

As grief beforehand: clearly, part for part,  
 Conformably to Kalchas' art,  
 Shall come the event.

And be they as they may, things subsequent,—  
 What is to do, prosperity betide  
 E'en as we wish it!—we, the next allied,  
 Sole guarding barrier of the Apian land.

I am come, reverencing power in thee,  
 O Klutaimnestra! For 'tis just we bow  
 To the ruler's wife,—the male-seat man-  
   bereaved.

But if thou, having heard good news,—or  
   none,—

For good news' hope dost sacrifice thus wide,  
 I would hear gladly: art thou mute,—no  
   grudge!

#### KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Good-news-announcer, may—as is the by-  
   word—

Morn become, truly,—news from Night his  
   mother!

But thou shalt learn joy past all hope of  
   hearing.

Priamos' city have the Argeioi taken.

#### CHOROS.

How sayest? The word, from want of faith,  
   escaped me.

# THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Troia the Achaioi hold : do I speak plainly ?

CHOROS.

Joy overcreeps me, calling forth the tear-drop.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Right ! for, that glad thou art, thine eye convicts thee.

CHOROS.

For—what to thee, of all this, trusty token ?

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

What's here ! how else ? unless the god have cheated.

CHOROS.

Haply thou flattering shows of dreams respectest ?

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

No fancy would I take of soul sleep-burthened.

CHOROS.

But has there puffed thee up some unwinged omen ?

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

As a young maid's my mind thou mockest grossly.

CHOROS.

Well, at what time was—even sacked, the city ?

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Of this same mother Night—the dawn, I tell thee.

CHOROS.

And who of messengers could reach this swiftness ?

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Hephaistos<sup>1</sup>—sending a bright blaze from Ide. Beacon did beacon send, from fire the poster, Hitherward : Ide to the rock Hermaian Of Lemnos : and a third great torch o' the island

Zeus' seat received in turn, the Athoan summit.

<sup>1</sup> Vulcan's festival.

And,—so upsoaring as to stride, I o'left to The strong lamp-voyager, and all for joyance. Did the gold-glorious splendour, any sun like, Pass on—the pine-tree—to Makistos' watch-place ;

Who did not,—tardy,—caught, no wits about him,

By sleep,—decline his portion of the missive And far the beacon's light, on stream Euripos Arriving, made aware Messapios' warders, And up they lit in turn, played herald onwards, Kindling with flame a heap of grey old heather.

And, strengthening still, the lamp, decaying nowise, Springing o'er Plain Asopos,—full-moon-fashion

Effulgent,—toward the crag of Mount Kit-hairon,

Roused a new rendering-up of fire the escort— And light, far escort, lacked no recognition O' the guard—as burning more than burnings told you.

And over Lake Gorgopis light went leaping, And, at Mount Aigioplanktos safe arriving, Enforced the law—"to never stint the fire-stuff."

And they send, lighting up with ungrudged vigour,

Of flame a huge beard, ay, the very foreland So as to strike above, in burning onward, The look-out which commands the Strait Saronic.

Then did it dart until it reached the outpost Mount Arachnaïos here, the city's neighbour ; And then darts to this roof of the Atreidai This light of Ide's fire not unforefathered ! Such are the rules prescribed the flambeau-bearers :

He beats that's first and also last in running. Such is the proof and token I declare thee, My husband having sent me news from Troia.

CHOROS.

The gods, indeed, anon will I pray, woman ! But now, these words to hear, and sate my wonder

Thoroughly, I am fain—if twice thou tell them.

# AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS

Heavy

V

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Troia do the Achaioi hold, this same day.  
I think a noise—no mixture—reigns i' the city.

Sour wine and unguent pour thou in one vessel—

Standers-apart, not lovers, wouldst thou style them :

And so, of captives and of conquerors, part-wise

The voices are to hear, of fortune diverse.

For those, indeed, upon the bodies prostrate  
Of husbands, brothers, children upon parents  
—The old men, from a throat that's free no longer,

Shriekingly wail the death-doom of their dearest :

While these—the after-battle hungry labour,  
Which prompts night-faring, marshals them to breakfast

On the town's store, according to no billet  
Of sharing, but as each drew lot of fortune.

In the spear-captured Troic habitations  
House they already : from the frosts upæthral  
And dews delivered, will they, luckless creatures,

Without a watch to keep, slumber all night through.

And if they fear the gods, the city-guarders,  
And the gods' structures of the conquered country,

They may not—capturers—soon in turn be captive.

But see no prior lust befall the army

To sack things sacred—by gain-cravings vanquished !

For there needs homeward the return's salvation,

To round the new limb back o' the double race-course.

And guilty to the gods if came the army,  
Awakened up the sorrow of those slaughtered  
Might be—should no outbursting evils happen.

But may good heat—no turn to see i' the balance !

For, many benefits I want the gain of.

Woman, like prudent man thou kindly speakest.

And I, thus having heard thy trusty tokens,  
The gods to rightly hail forthwith prepare me ;  
For, grace that must be paid has crowned our labours.

O Zeus the king, and friendly Night  
Of these brave boons bestower—

Thou who didst fling on Troia's every tower  
The o'er-roofing snare, that neither great thing might,

Nor any of the young ones, overpass  
Captivity's great sweep-net—one and all  
Of Ate held in thrall !

Ay, Zeus I fear—the guest's friend great—who was

The doer of this, and long since bent  
The bow on Alexandros with intent  
That neither wide o' the white  
Nor o'er the stars the foolish dart should light.  
The stroke of Zeus—they have it, as men say !  
This, at least, from the source track forth we may !

As he ordained, so has he done.

"No"—said someone—

"The gods think fit to care

Nowise for mortals, such

As those by whom the good and fair

Of things denied their touch

Is trampled !" but he was profane.

That they do care, has been made plain

To offspring of the over-bold,

Outbreathing "Ares" greater than is just—

Houses that spill with more than they can hold,  
More than is best for man. Be man's what must

Keep harm off, so that in himself he find  
Sufficiency—the well-endowed of mind !

For there's no bulwark in man's wealth to him  
Who, through a surfeit, kicks—into the dim  
And disappearing—Right's great altar.

It urges him, the sad persuasiveness,  
Ate's insufferable child that schemes

Yes

Treason beforehand : and all cure is vain,  
 It is not hidden : out it glares again,  
 A light dread-lamping-mischief, just as gleams  
 The badness of the bronze ;  
 Through rubbing, puttings to the touch,  
 Black-clotted is he, judged at once.  
 He seeks—the boy—a flying bird to clutch,  
 The insufferable brand  
 Setting upon the city of his land  
 Whereof not any god hears prayer ;  
 While him who brought about such evils  
     there,  
 That unjust man, the god in grapple throws.  
 Such an one, Paris goes  
 Within the Atreidai's house—  
 Shamed the guest's board by robbery of the  
     spouse.

And, leaving to her townsmen throngs  
     a-spread

With shields, and spear-thrusts of sea-arma-  
     ment,

And bringing Ilion, in a dowry's stead,  
 Destruction—swiftly through the gates she  
     went,

Daring the undareable. But many a groan  
     outbroke

From prophets of the House as thus they  
     spoke.

"Woe, woe the House, the House and  
     Rulers,—woe

The marriage-bed and dints

A husband's love imprints !

There she stands silent ! meets no honour—no  
 Shame—sweetest still to see of things gone  
     long ago !

And, through desire of one across the main,

A ghost will seem within the house to reign :

And hateful to the husband is the grace

Of well-shaped statues : from—in place of  
     eyes

Those blanks—all Aphrodite dies.

"But dream-appearing mournful fantasies—  
 There they stand, bringing grace that's vain.

For vain 'tis, when brave things one seems  
     to view ;

The fantasy has floated off, hands through ;

Gone, that appearance, — nowise left to  
     creep,—

On wings, the servants in the paths of sleep !"

Woes, then, in household and on hearth, are  
     such

As these—and woes surpassing these by  
     much.

But not these only : everywhere—

For those who from the land

Of Hellas issued in a band,

Sorrow, the heart must bear,

Sits in the home of each, conspicuous there.

Many a circumstance, at least,

Touches the very breast:

For those

Whom any sent away,—he knows :

And in the live man's stead,

Armour and ashes reach

The house of each.

For Ares, gold-exchanger for the dead,

And balance-holder in the fight o' the spear,

Due-weight from Ilion sends—

What moves the tear on tear—

A charred scrap to the friends :

Filling with well-packed ashes every urn,

For man—that was—the sole return.

And they groan—praising much, the while,

Now this man as experienced in the strife,

Now that, fallen nobly on a slaughtered pile,

Because of—not his own—another's wife.

But things there be, one barks,

When no man harks :

A surreptitious grief that's grudge

Against the Atreidai who first sought the judge.

But some there, round the rampart, have

In Ilian earth, each one his grave :

All fair-formed as at birth,

It hid them—what they have and hold—the  
     hostile earth.

And big with anger goes the city's word,

And pays a debt by public curse incurred.

And ever with me—as about to hear

A something night-involved—remains my  
     fear :

Since of the many-slayers—not

Unwatching are the gods.



The black Erinues, at due periods—  
 Whoever gains the lot  
 Of fortune with no right—  
 Him, by life's strain and stress  
 Back-again-beaten from success,  
 They strike blind: and among the out-of-sight  
 For who has got to be, avails no might.  
 The being praised outrageously  
 Is grave, for at the eyes of such an one  
 Is launched, from Zeus, the thunder-stone.  
 Therefore do I decide  
 For so much and no more prosperity  
 Than of his envy passes unespied.  
 Neither a city-sacker would I be,  
 Nor life, myself by others captive, see.

A swift report has gone our city through,  
 From fire, the good-news messenger: if true,  
 Who knows? Or is it not a god-sent lie?  
 Who is so childish and deprived of sense  
 That, having, at announcements of the flame  
 Thus novel, felt his own heart fired thereby,  
 He then shall at a change of evidence,  
 Be worsted just the same?  
 It is conspicuous in a woman's nature,  
 Before its view to take a grace for granted:  
 Too trustful,—on her boundary, usurpature  
 Is swiftly made;  
 But swiftly, too, decayed,  
 The glory perishes by woman vaunted.

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Soon shall we know—of these light-bearing  
 torches,  
 And beacons and exchanges, fire with fire—  
 If they are true, indeed, or if, dream-fashion,  
 This gladsome light came and deceived our  
 judgment.  
 Yon herald from the shore I see, o'ershadowed  
 With boughs of olive: dust, mud's thirsty  
 brother,  
 Close neighbours on his garb, thus testify me  
 That neither voiceless, nor yet kindling for  
 thee  
 Mountain-wood-flame, shall he explain by  
 fire-smoke:  
 But either tell out more the joyance, speak-  
 ing. . . .

Word contrary to which, I aught but love it!  
 For may good be—to good that's known—  
 appendage!

## CHOROS.

Whoever prays for aught else to this city  
 —May he himself reap fruit of his mind's error!

## HERALD.

Ha, my forefathers' soil of earth Argeian!  
 Thee, in this year's tenth light, am I re-  
 turned to—  
 Of many broken hopes, on one hope chancing,  
 For never prayed I, in this earth Argeian  
 Dying, to share my part in tomb the dearest.  
 Now, hail thou earth, and hail thou also, sun-  
 light,  
 And Zeus, the country's lord, and king the  
 Puthian  
 From bow no longer urging at us arrows!  
 Enough, beside Skamandros, cam'st thou  
 adverse:  
 Now, contrary, be saviour thou and healer,  
 O king Apollon! And gods conquest-grant-  
 ing,  
 All—I invoke too, and my tutelary  
 Hermes, dear herald, heralds' veneration,—  
 And Heroes our forthsenders,—friendly, once  
 more  
 The army to receive, the war-spear's leavings!  
 Ha, mansions of my monarchs, roofs beloved,  
 And awful seats, and deities sun-fronting—  
 Receive with pomp your monarch, long time  
 absent!  
 For he comes bringing light in night-time to  
 you,  
 In common with all these—king Agamemnon.  
 But kindly greet him—for clear shows your  
 duty—  
 Who has dug under Troia with the mattock  
 Of Zeus the Avenger, whereby plains are out-  
 ploughed,  
 Altars unrecognizable, and gods' shrines,  
 And the whole land's seed thoroughly has  
 perished.  
 And such a yoke-strap having cast round  
 Troia,  
 The elder king Atreides, happy man—he

Comes to be honoured, worthiest of what  
mortals

Now are. Nor Paris nor the accomplice-  
city

Outvaunts their deed as more than they are  
done-by :

For, in a suit for rape and theft found guilty,  
He missed of plunder and, in one destruction,  
Fatherland, house and home has mowed to  
atoms :

Debts the Priamidai have paid twice over.

CHOROS.

Hail, herald from the army of Achaians !

HERALD.

I hail :—to die, will gainsay gods no longer !

CHOROS.

Love of this fatherland did exercise thee ?

HERALD.

So that I weep, at least, with joy, my eyes full.

CHOROS.

What, of this gracious sickness were yegainers ?

HERALD.

How now ? instructed, I this speech shall  
master.

CHOROS.

For those who loved you back, with longing  
stricken.

HERALD.

This land yearned for the yearning army,  
say'st thou ?

CHOROS.

So as to set me oft, from dark mind, groaning.

HERALD.

Whence came this ill mind—hatred to the  
army ?

CHOROS.

O'ld, I use, for mischief's physic, silence.

HERALD.

And how, the chiefs away, did you fear any ?

CHOROS.

So that now,—late thy word,—much joy were  
—dying !

HERALD.

For well have things been worked out : these,  
—in much time,

Some of them, one might say, had luck in  
falling,

While some were faulty : since who, gods  
excepted,

Goes, through the whole time of his life, un-  
grieving ?

For labours should I tell of, and bad lodg-  
ments,

Narrow deckways ill-strewn, too,—what the  
day's woe

We did not groan at getting for our portion ?  
As for land-things, again, on went more  
hatred !

Since beds were ours hard by the foemen's  
ramparts,

And, out of heaven and from the earth, the  
meadow

Dews kept a-sprinkle, an abiding damage  
Of vestures, making hair a wild-beast matting.

Winter, too, if one told of it—bird-slaying—  
Such as, unbearable, Idaian snow brought—

Or heat, when waveless, on its noontide  
couches

Without a wind, the sea would slumber falling  
—Why must one mourn these ? O'er and  
gone is labour :

O'er and gone is it, even to those dead ones,  
So that no more again they mind uprising.

Why must we tell in numbers those deprived  
ones,

And the live man be vexed with fate's fresh  
outbreak ?

Rather, I bid full farewell to misfortunes !

For us, the left from out the Argeian army,  
The gain beats, nor does sorrow counter-  
balance.

So that 'tis fitly boasted of, this sunlight,

By us, o'er sea and land the aery flyers,  
"Troia at last taking, the band of Argives

Hang up such trophies to the gods of  
Hellas

Within their domes—new glory to grow  
ancient!"  
Such things men having heard must praise  
the city.  
And army-leaders: and the grace which  
wrought them—  
Of Zeus, shall honoured be. Thou hast my  
whole word.

## CHOROS.

O'ercome by words, their sense I do not gain-  
say.

For, aye this breeds youth in the old—"to  
learn well."

But these things most the house and Klutaim-  
nestra

Concern, 'tis likely: while they make me  
rich, too.

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

I shouted long ago, indeed, for joyance,  
When came that first night-messenger of fire  
Proclaiming Ilion's capture and dispersion.  
And someone, girding me, said, "Through  
fire-bearers

Persuaded—Troia to be sacked now, thinkest?  
Truly, the woman's way,—high to lift heart  
up!"

By such words I was made seem wit-  
bewildered:

Yet still I sacrificed; and, — female-song  
with,—

A shout one man and other, through the city,  
Set up, congratulating in the gods' seats,  
Soothing the incense-eating flame right  
fragrant.

And now, what's more, indeed, why need'st  
thou tell me?

I of the king himself shall learn the whole  
word:

And,—as may best be,—I my revered husband  
Shall hasten, as he comes back, to receive:  
for—

What's to a wife sweeter to see than this light  
(Her husband, by the god saved, back from  
warfare)

So as to open gates? This tell my husband—  
To come at soonest to his loving city.

A faithful wife at home may he find, coming!  
Such an one as he left—the dog o' the house-  
hold—

Trusty to him, adverse to the ill-minded,  
And, in all else, the same: no signet-impress  
Having done harm to, in that time's duration.  
I know nor pleasure, nor blameworthy con-  
verse

With any other man more than—bronze-  
dippings!

## HERALD.

Such boast as this—brimful of the veracious—  
Is, for a high-born dame, not bad to send  
forth!

## CHOROS.

Ay, she spoke thus to thee—that hast a  
knowledge

From clear interpreters—a speech most  
seemly.

But speak thou, herald! Meneleos I ask of:  
If he, returning, back in safety also  
Will come with you—this land's beloved  
chieftain?

## HERALD.

There's no way I might say things false and  
pleasant

For friends to reap the fruits of through a  
long time.

## CHOROS.

How then if, speaking good, things true thou  
chance on?

## HERALD.

For not well-hidden things become they,  
sundered.

The man has vanished from the Achaic army,  
He and his ship too. I announce no falsehood.

Whether forth-putting openly from Ilion,  
Or did storm—wide woe—snatch him from  
the army?

## HERALD.

Like topping bowman, thou hast touched the  
target,

And a long sorrow hast succinctly spoken.

## CHOROS.

Whether, then, of him, as a live or dead man  
Was the report by other sailors bruited?

Nobody knows so as to tell out clearly  
Excepting Helios who sustains earth's nature.

## CHOROS.

How say'st thou then, did storm the naval  
army  
Attack and end, by the celestials' anger?

## HERALD.

It suits not to defile a day auspicious  
With ill-announcing speech: distinct each  
god's due:

And when a messenger with gloomy visage  
To a city bears a fall'n host's woes—God  
ward off!—

One popular wound that happens to the city,  
And many sacrificed from many households—  
Men, scourged by that two-thonged whip  
Ares loves so,

Double spear-headed curse, bloody yoke-  
couple,—

Of woes like these, doubtless, whoe'er comes  
weighted,

Him does it suit to sing the Erinues' paian.  
But who, of matters saved a glad-news-bringer,  
Comes to a city in good estate rejoicing. . .

How shall I mix good things with evil, telling  
Of storm against the Achaioi, urged by gods'  
wrath?

For they swore league, being arch-foes before  
that,

Fire and the sea: and plighted troth approved  
they,

Destroying the unhappy Argeian army.  
At night began the bad-wave-outbreak evils;  
For, ships against each other Threikian breezes  
Shattered: and these, butted at in a fury  
By storm and typhoon, with surge rain-  
resounding,—

Off they went, vanished, thro' a bad herd's  
whirling.

And, when returned the brilliant light of  
Helios,  
We view the Aigaian sea on flower with  
corpses

Of men Achaian and with naval ravage.  
But us indeed, and ship, unhurt i' the hull too,  
Either someone outstole us or outprayed us—  
Some god—no man it was the tiller touching.  
And Fortune, saviour, willing on our ship sat.  
So as it neither had in harbour wave-surge  
Nor ran aground against a shore all rocky.  
And then, the water-Haides having fled  
from

In the white day, not trusting to our fortune,  
We chewed the cud in thoughts—this novel  
sorrow

O' the army labouring and badly pounded.  
And now—if anyone of them is breathing—  
They talk of us as having perished: why not?  
And we—that they the same fate have,  
imagine.

May it be for the best! Meneleus, then,  
Foremost and specially to come, expect thou!  
If (that is) any ray o' the sun reports him  
Living and seeing to—by Zeus' contrivings,  
Not yet disposed to quite destroy the line-  
age—

Some hope is he shall come again to house-  
hold.

Having heard such things, know, thou truth  
art hearing!

## CHOROS.

Who may he have been that named thus  
wholly with exactitude—

(Was he someone whom we see not, by fore-  
castings of the future

Guiding tongue in happy mood?)

—Her with battle for a bridegroom, on all  
sides contention-wooded,

Helena? Since—mark the suture!—

Ship's-Hell, Man's-Hell, City's-Hell,  
From the delicately-pompous curtains that  
pavilion well,

Forth, by favour of the gale  
Of earth-born Zephuros did she sail.  
Many shield-bearers, leaders of the pack,  
Sailed too upon their track,

Theirs who had directed oar,  
Then visible no more,  
To Simois' leaf-luxuriant shore—  
For sake of strife all gore!

To Ilion Wrath, fulfilling her intent,  
This marriage-care—the rightly named so—  
sent:

In after-time, for the tables' abuse  
And that of the hearth-partaker Zeus,  
Bringing to punishment  
Those who honoured with noisy throat  
The honour of the bride, the hymenæal note  
Which did the kinsfolk then to singing urge.  
But, learning a new hymn for that which  
was,

The ancient city of Priamos  
Groans probably a great and general dirge,  
Denominating Paris  
"The man that miserably marries:"—  
She who, all the while before,  
A life, that was a general dirge  
For citizens' unhappy slaughter, bore.

And thus a man, by no milk's help,  
Within his household reared a lion's whelp  
That loved the teat  
In life's first festal stage:  
Gentle as yet,  
A true child-lover, and, to men of age,  
A thing whereat pride warms;  
And oft he had it in his arms  
Like any new-born babe, bright-faced, to  
hand  
Wagging its tail, at belly's strict command.

But in due time upgrown,  
The custom of progenitors was shown:  
For—thanks for sustenance repaying  
With ravage of sheep slaughtered—  
It made unbidden feast;  
With blood the house was watered,  
To household came a woe there was no stay-  
ing:  
Great mischief many-slaying!  
From God it was—some priest  
Of Ate, in the house, by nurture thus in-  
creased.

At first, then, to the city of Ilion went  
A soul, as I might say, of windless calm—  
Wealth's quiet ornament,  
An eyes'-dart bearing balm,  
Love's spirit-biting flower.  
But—from the true course bending—  
She brought about, of marriage, bitter ending—  
Ill-resident, ill-mate, in power  
Passing to the Priamidai—by sending  
Of Hospitable Zeus—  
Erinus for a bride,—to make brides mourn,  
her dower.

Spoken long ago  
Was the ancient saying  
Still among mortals staying:  
"Man's great prosperity at height of rise  
Engenders offspring nor unchilded dies;  
And, from good fortune, to such families,  
Buds forth insatiate woe."  
Whereas, distinct from any,  
Of my own mind I am:  
For 'tis the unholy deed begets the many,  
Resembling each its dam.  
Of households that correctly estimate,  
Ever a beauteous child is born of Fate.  
But ancient Arrogance delights to generate  
Arrogance, young and strong mid mortals'  
sorrow,  
Or now, or then, when comes the appointed  
morrow.  
And she bears young Satiety;  
And, fiend with whom nor fight nor war  
can be,  
Unholy Daring—twin black Curses  
Within the household, children like their  
nurses.

But Justice shines in smoke-grimed habita-  
tions,  
And honours the well-omened life;  
While,—gold-besprinkled stations  
Where the hands' filth is rife,  
With backward-turning eyes  
Leaving,—to holy seats she hies,  
Not worshipping the power of wealth  
Stamped with applause by stealth:  
And to its end directs each thing begun.

Approach then, my monarch, of Troia the  
sacker, of Atreus the son!

How ought I address thee, how ought I  
revere thee,—nor yet overhitting  
Nor yet underbending the grace that is fitting?  
Many of mortals hasten to honour the seem-  
ing-to-be—

Passing by justice: and, with the ill-faring,  
to groan as he groans all are free.

But no bite of the sorrow their liver has  
reached to:

They say with the joyful,—one outside on  
each, too,

As they force to a smile smileless faces.

But whoever is good at distinguishing races  
In sheep of his flock—it is not for the eyes  
Of a man to escape such a shepherd's surprise,  
As they seem, from a well-wishing mind,  
In watery friendship to fawn and be kind.

Thou to me, then, indeed, sending an army  
for Helena's sake,

(I will not conceal it) wast—oh, by no help  
of the Muses!—depicted

Not well of thy midriff the rudder directing,—  
convicted

Of bringing a boldness they did not desire to  
the men with existence at stake.

But now—from no outside of mind, nor  
unlovingly—gracious thou art

To those who have ended the labour, ful-  
filling their part;

And in time shalt thou know, by inquiry  
instructed,

Who of citizens justly, and who not to  
purpose, the city conducted.

#### AGAMEMNON.

First, indeed, Argos, and the gods, the local,  
'Tis right addressing—those with me the  
partners

In this return and right things done the city  
Of Priamos: gods who, from no tongue  
hearing

The rights o' the cause, for Ilion's fate man-  
slaught'rous

Into the bloody vase, not oscillating,  
I put the vote-pebbles, while, o' the rival vessel,  
Hope rose up to the lip-edge: filled it was not.

Bysmoke the captured city is still conspicuous:  
Ate's burnt offerings live: and, dying with  
them,

The ash sends forth the fulsome blasts of  
riches.

Of these things, to the gods grace many-  
mindful

'Tis right I render, since both nets outrageous  
We built them round with, and, for sake of  
woman,

It did the city to dust—the Argeian monster,  
The horse's nestling, the shield-bearing people  
That made a leap, at setting of the Pleiads,  
And, vaulting o'er the tower, the raw-flesh-  
feeding

Lion licked up his fill of blood tyrannic.

I to the gods indeed prolonged this preface;  
But—as for *thy* thought, I remember hearing—  
I say the same, and thou co-pleader hast me.  
Since few of men this faculty is born with—  
To honour, without grudge, their friend,  
successful.

For moody, on the heart, a poison seated  
Its burthen doubles to who gained the sick-  
ness:

By his own griefs he is himself made heavy,  
And out-of-door prosperity seeing groans at.  
Knowing, I'd call (for well have I experi-  
enced)

"Fellowship's mirror," "phantom of a  
shadow,"

Those seeming to be mighty gracious to me:  
While just Odusseus—he who sailed not  
willing—

When joined on, was to me the ready trace-  
horse.

This of him, whether dead or whether living,  
I say. For other city-and-gods' concern-  
ment—

Appointing common courts, in full assemblage  
We will consult. And as for what holds  
seemly—

How it may lasting stay well, must be  
counselled:

While what has need of medicines Paionian  
We, either burning or else cutting kindly,  
Will make endeavour to turn pain from sick-

And now into the domes and homes by altar  
Going, I to the gods first raise the right-  
hand—

They who, far sending, back again have  
brought me.

And Victory, since she followed, fixed re-  
main she!

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Men, citizens, Argeians here, my worships!  
I shall not shame me, consort-loving manners  
To tell before you: for in time there dies off  
The diffidence from people. Not from others  
Learning, I of myself will tell the hard life  
I bore so long as this man was 'neath Ilion.  
First: for a woman, from the male divided,  
To sit at home alone, is monstrous evil—  
Hearing the many rumours back-revenging:  
And for now This to come, now That bring  
after

Woe, and still worse woe, bawling in the  
household!

And truly, if so many wounds had chanced on  
My husband here, as homeward used to  
dribble

Report, he's pierced more than a net to  
speak of!

While, were he dying (as the words abounded)  
A triple-bodied Geruon the Second,  
Plenty above—for loads below I count not—  
Of earth a three-share cloak he'd boast of  
taking,

Once only dying in each several figure!  
Because of suchlike rumours back-revenging,  
Many the halters from my neck, above head,  
Others than I loosed—loosed from neck by  
main force!

From this cause, sure, the boy stands not  
beside me—

Possessor of our troth-plights, thine and mine  
too—

As ought Orestes: be not thou astonished!  
For, him brings up our well-disposed guest-  
captive

Strophios the Phokian—ills that told on both  
sides

To me predicting—both of thee 'neath Ilion  
The danger, and if anarchy's mob-uproar

Should overthrow thy council; since 'tis born  
with

Mortals,—whoe'er has fallen, the more to  
kick him.

Such an excuse, I think, no cunning carries!  
As for myself—why, of my walls the rushing  
Fountains are dried up: not in them a drop  
more!

And in my late-to-bed eyes I have damage,  
Bewailing what concerned thee, those torch-  
holdings

For ever unattended to. In dreams—why,  
Beneath the light wing-beats o' the gnat, I  
woke up

As he went buzzing—sorrows that concerned  
thee

Seeing, that filled more than their fellow-  
sleep-time.

Now, all this having suffered, from soul  
grief-free

I would style this man here the dog o' the  
stables,

The saviour forestay of the ship, the high  
roof's

Ground-prop, son sole-begotten to his father,  
—Ay, land appearing to the sailors past hope,  
Loveliest day to see after a tempest,

To the wayfaring-one athirst a well-spring,  
—The joy, in short, of 'scaping all that's—  
fatal!

I judge him worth addresses such as these are  
—Envy stand off!—for many those old evils

We underwent. And now, to me—dear  
headship!—

Dismount thou from this car, not earthward  
setting

The foot of thine, O king, that's Ilion's spoiler!  
Slave-maids, why tarry?—whose the task  
allotted

To strew the soil o' the road with carpet-  
spreadings.

Immediately be purple-strewn the pathway,  
So that to home unhop'd may lead him—  
Justice!

As for the rest, care shall—by no sleep  
conquered—

Dispose things—justly (gods to aid!) ap-  
pointed.

AGAMEMNON.

Offspring of Leda, of my household warder,  
Suitably to my absence hast thou spoken,  
For long the speech thou didst outstretch!

But aptly

To praise—from others ought to go this favour.  
And for the rest,—not me, in woman's fashion,  
Mollify, nor—as mode of barbarous man is—  
To me gape forth a groundward-falling  
clamour!

Nor, strewing it with garments, make my  
passage

Envièd! Gods, sure, with these behoves we  
honour:

But, for a mortal on these varied beauties  
To walk—to me, indeed, is nowise fear-free.

I say—as man, not god, to me do homage!  
Apart from foot-mats both and varied vestures,  
Renown is loud, and—not to lose one's senses,  
God's greatest gift. Behoves we him call  
happy

Who has brought life to end in loved well-  
being.

If all things I might manage thus—brave  
man, I!

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Come now, this say, nor feign a feeling to me!

AGAMEMNON.

With feeling, know indeed, I do not tamper!

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Vowed'st thou to the gods, in fear, to act thus?

AGAMEMNON.

If any, I well knew resolve I outspoke.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

What think'st thou Priamos had done, thus  
victor?

AGAMEMNON.

On varied vests—I do think—he had passaged.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Then, do not, struck with awe at human  
censure.

AGAMEMNON.

Well, popular mob-outcry much avails too.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Ay, but the unenvied is not the much valued.

AGAMEMNON.

Sure, 'tis no woman's part to long for battle.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Why, to the prosperous, even suits a beating.

AGAMEMNON.

What? thou this beating us in war dost prize  
too?

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Persuade thee! power, for once, grant me—  
and willing!

AGAMEMNON.

But if this seem so to thee—shoes, let someone  
Loose under, quick—foot's serviceable  
carriage!

And me, on these sea-products walking,  
may no

Grudge from a distance, from the god's eye,  
strike at!

For great shame were my strewment-spoiling  
—riches

Spoiling with feet, and silver-purchased  
textures!

Of these things, thus then. But this female-  
stranger

Tenderly take inside! Who conquers mildly  
God, from afar, benignantly regardeth.

For, willing, no one wears a yoke that's  
servile:

And she, of many valuables, outpicked  
The flower, the army's gift, myself has  
followed.

So,—since to hear thee, I am brought about  
thus,—

I go into the palace—purples treading.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

There is the sea—and what man shall ex-  
haust it?—

Feeding much purple's worth-its-weight-in-  
silver

Dye, ever fresh and fresh, our garments'  
tincture;



At home, such wealth, king, we begin—by  
gods' help—

With having, and to lack, the household  
knows not.

Of many garments had I vowed a treading  
(In oracles if fore-enjoined the household)  
Of this dear soul the safe-return-price  
scheming!

For, root existing, foliage goes up houses,  
O'erspreading shadow against Seirios dog-  
star;

And, thou returning to the hearth domestic,  
Warmth, yea, in winter dost thou show  
returning.

And when, too, Zeus works, from the green-  
grape acrid,

Wine—then, already, cool in houses cometh—  
The perfect man his home perambulating!  
Zeus, Zeus Perfecter, these my prayers perfect  
thou!

Thy care be—yea—of things thou mayst  
make perfect!

#### CHOROS.

Wherefore to me, this fear—  
Groundedly stationed here  
Fronting my heart, the portent-watcher—flits  
she?

Wherefore should prophet-play  
The uncalled and unpaid lay,  
Nor—having spat forth fear, like bad dreams  
—sits she

On the mind's throne beloved—well-suasive  
Boldness?

For time, since, by a throw of all the  
hands,

The boat's stern-cables touched the sands,  
Has passed from youth to oldness,—

When under Ilion rushed the ship-borne  
bands.

And from my eyes I learn—  
Being myself my witness—their return.  
Yet, all the same, without a lyre, my soul,  
Itself its teacher too, chants from within  
Erinnus' dirge, not having now the whole  
Of Hope's dear boldness: nor my inwards  
sin—

The heart that's rolled in whirls against the  
mind

Justly presageful of a fate behind.

But I pray—things false, from my hope, may  
fall

Into the fate that's not-fulfilled-at-all!

Especially at least, of health that's great  
The term's insatiable: for, its weight  
—A neighbour, with a common wall be-  
tween—

Ever will sickness lean;  
And destiny, her course pursuing straight,  
Has struck man's ship against a reef unseen.  
Now, when a portion, rather than the  
treasure,

Fear casts from sling, with peril in right  
measure,

It has not sunk—the universal freight,  
(With misery freighted over-full)  
Nor has fear whelmed the hull.

Then too the gift of Zeus,  
Two-handedly profuse,  
Even from the furrows' yield for yearly use  
Has done away with famine, the disease;  
But blood of man to earth once falling—  
deadly, black—  
In times ere these,—  
Who may, by singing spells, call back?  
Zeus had not else stopped one who rightly  
knew

The way to bring the dead again.  
But, did not an appointed Fate constrain  
The Fate from gods, to bear no more than due,  
My heart, outstripping what tongue utters,  
Would have all out: which now, in darkness,  
mutters

Moodyly grieved, nor ever hopes to find  
How she a word in season may unwind  
From out the enkindling mind.

#### KLUTAINNESTRA.

Take thyself in, thou too—I say, Cassandra!  
Since Zeus—not angrily—in household placed  
thee

Partaker of hand-sprinklings, with the many  
Slaves stationed, his the Owner's altar  
close to.

Descend from out this car, nor be high-minded !

And truly they do say Alkmene's child once Bore being sold, slaves' barley-bread his living.

If, then, necessity of this lot o'erbalance, Much is the favour of old-wealthy masters :

For those who, never hoping, made fine harvest

Are harsh to slaves in all things, beyond measure.

Thou hast—with us—such usage as law warrants.

CHOROS.

To thee it was, she paused plain speech from speaking.

Being inside the fatal nets—obeying,

Thou mayst obey : but thou mayst disobey too !

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Why, if she is not, in the swallow's fashion, Possessed of voice that's unknown and barbaric,

I, with speech—speaking in mind's scope—persuade her.

CHOROS.

Follow ! The best—as things now stand—she speaks of.

Obey thou, leaving this thy car-enthronement !

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Well, with this thing at door, for me no leisure To waste time : as concerns the hearth mid-navelled,

Already stand the sheep for fireside slaying By those who never hoped to have such favour.

If thou, then, aught of this wilt do, delay not ! But if thou, being witless, tak'st no word in, Speak thou, instead of voice, with hand as

Kars do !

CHOROS.

She seems a plain interpreter in need of, The stranger ! and her way—a beast's new-captured !

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Why, she is mad, sure,—hears her own bad senses,—

Who, while she comes, leaving a town new-captured,

Yet knows not how to bear the bit o' the bridle

Before she has out-frothed her bloody fierceness.

Not I—throwing away more words—will shamed be !

CHOROS.

But I,—for I compassionate,—will chafe not

Come, O unhappy one, this car vacating,

Yielding to this necessity, prove yoke's use !

KASSANDRA.

Otototoi, Gods, Earth,—

Apollon, Apollon !

Why didst thou "otototi" concerning Loxias ? Since he is none such as to suit a mourner.

KASSANDRA.

Otototoi, Gods, Earth,—

Apollon, Apollon !

CHOROS

Ill-boding here again the god invokes sue —Nowise empowered in woes to stand by helpful.

KASSANDRA.

Apollon, Apollon,

Guard of the ways, my destroyer !

For thou hast quite, this second time, destroyed me.

CHOROS.

To prophesy she seems of her own evils : Remains the god-gift to the slave-soul present

KASSANDRA.

Apollon, Apollon,

Guard of the ways, my destroyer !

Ha, whither hast thou led me ? to what roof now ?

THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS

CHOROS.

To the Atreidai's roof: if this thou know'st  
not,  
I tell it thee, nor this wilt thou call falsehood.

KASSANDRA.

How! How!  
God-hated, then! Of many a crime it  
knew—  
Self-slaying evils, halters too:  
Man's-shambles, blood-besprinkler of the  
ground!

CHOROS.

She seems to be good-nosed, the stranger:  
dog-like,  
She snuffs indeed the victims she will find  
there.

KASSANDRA.

How! How!  
By the witnesses here I am certain now!  
These children bewailing their slaughters—  
flesh dressed in the fire  
And devoured by their sire!

CHOROS.

Ay, we have heard of thy soothsaying glory,  
Doubtless: but prophets none are we in  
scent of!

KASSANDRA.

Ah, gods, what ever does she meditate?  
What this new anguish great?  
Great in the house here she meditates ill  
Such as friends cannot bear, cannot cure it:  
and still  
Off stands all Resistance  
Afar in the distance!

CHOROS.

Of these I witless am—these prophesying.  
But those I knew: for the whole city bruits  
them.

KASSANDRA.

Ah, unhappy one, this thou consummatest?  
Thy husband, thy bed's common guest,  
In the bath having brightened . . . How  
shall I declare  
Consummation? It soon will be there:

For hand after hand she outstretches,  
At life as she reaches!

CHOROS.

Nor yet I've gone with thee! for—after  
riddles—  
Now, in blind oracles, I feel resourceless.

KASSANDRA.

Eh, eh, papai, papai,  
What this, I espy?  
Some net of Haides undoubtedly!  
Nay, rather, the snare  
Is she who has share  
In his bed, who takes part in the murder  
there!  
But may a revolt—  
Unceasing assault—  
On the Race, raise a shout  
Sacrificial, about  
A victim—by stoning—  
For murder atoning!

CHOROS.

What this Erinus which i' the house thou  
callest  
To raise her cry? Not me thy word en-  
lighten!  
To my heart has run  
A drop of the crocus-dye:  
Which makes for those  
On earth by the spear that lie,  
A common close  
With life's descending sun.  
Swift is the curse begun!

KASSANDRA.

How! How!  
See—see quick!  
Keep the bull from the cow!  
In the vesture she catching him, strikes him  
now  
With the black-horned trick,  
And he falls in the watery vase!  
Of the craft-killing cauldron I tell thee the case

CHOROS.

I would not boast to be a topping critic  
Of oracles: but to some sort of evil

I liken these. From oracles, what good speech  
To mortals, beside, is sent?  
It comes of their evils: these arts word-  
    abounding that sing the event  
Bring the fear 'tis their office to teach.

KASSANDRA.

Ah me, ah me—  
Of me unhappy, evil-destined fortunes!  
For I bewail my proper woe  
As, mine with his, all into one I throw.  
Why hast thou hither me unhappy brought?  
—Unless that I should die with him—for  
    nought!  
What else was sought?

CHOROS.

Thou art some mind-mazed creature, god-  
    possessed:  
And all about thyself dost wail  
A lay—no lay!  
Like some brown nightingale  
Insatiable of noise, who—well-away!—  
From her unhappy breast  
Keeps moaning Itus, Itus, and his life  
With evils, flourishing on each side, rife.

KASSANDRA.

Ah me, ah me,  
The fate of the nightingale, the clear re-  
    sounder!  
For a body wing-borne have the gods cast  
    round her,  
And sweet existence, from misfortunes free:  
But for myself remains a sundering  
With spear, the two-edged thing!

CHOROS.

Whence hast thou this on-rushing god-  
    involving pain  
And spasms in vain?  
For, things that terrify,  
With changing unintelligible cry  
Thou strikest up in tune, yet all the while  
After that Orthian style!<sup>1</sup>  
Whence hast thou limits to the oracular road,  
That evils bode?

KASSANDRA.

Ah me, the nuptials, the nuptials of Paris, the  
    deadly to friends!  
Ah me, of Skamandros the draught  
Paternal! There once, to these ends,  
On thy banks was I brought,  
The unhappy! And now, by Kokutos and  
    Acheron's shore  
I shall soon be, it seems, these my oracles  
    singing once more!

CHOROS.

Why this word, plain too much,  
Hast thou uttered? A babe might learn of  
    such!  
I am struck with a bloody bite—here under—  
At the fate woe-wreaking  
Of thee shrill shrieking:  
To me who hear—a wonder!

KASSANDRA.

Ah me, the toils—the toils of the city  
The wholly destroyed: ah, pity,  
Of the sacrificings my father made  
In the ramparts' aid—  
Much slaughter of grass-fed flocks—that  
    afforded no cure  
That the city should not, as it does now, the  
    burthen endure!  
But I, with the soul on fire,  
Soon to the earth shall cast me and expire.

CHOROS.

To things, on the former consequent,  
Again hast thou given vent:  
And 'tis some evil-meaning fiend doth move  
    thee,  
Heavily falling from above thee,  
To melodize thy sorrows—else, in singing,  
Calamitous, death-bringing!  
And of all this the end  
I am without resource to apprehend.

KASSANDRA.

Well then, the oracle from veils no longer  
Shall be outlooking, like a bride new-married:  
But bright it seems, against the sun's up-  
    risings.

<sup>1</sup> The Diamastigosis.

Breathing, to penetrate thee: so as, wave-like,

To wash against the rays a woe much greater  
Than this. I will no longer teach by riddles.  
And witness, running with me, that of evils  
Done long ago, I nosing track the footstep!  
For, this same roof here—never quits a Choros  
One-voiced, not well-tuned since no "well"  
it utters:

And truly having drunk, to get more courage,  
Man's blood—the Komos keeps within the  
household

—Hard to be sent outside—of sister Furies:  
They hymn their hymn—within the house  
close sitting—

The first beginning curse: in turn spit forth at  
The Brother's bed, to him who spurned it  
hostile.

Have I missed aught, or hit I like a bowman?  
False prophet am I,—knock at doors, a babbler?  
Henceforward witness, swearing now, I know  
not

By other's word the old sins of this household!

CHOROS.

And how should oath, bond honourably  
binding,

Become thy cure? No less I wonder at thee  
—That thou, beyond sea reared, a strange-  
tongued city

Shouldst hit in speaking, just as if thou  
stood'st by!

KASSANDRA.

Prophet Apollon put me in this office.

What, even though a god, with longing  
smitten?

KASSANDRA.

At first, indeed, shame was to me to say this.

For, more relaxed grows everyone who fares  
well.

KASSANDRA.

But he was athlete to me—huge grace breath-  
ing!

CHOROS.

Well, to the work of children, went ye law's  
way?

KASSANDRA.

Having consented, I played false to Loxias.

CHOROS.

Already when the wits inspired possessed of?

KASSANDRA.

Already townsmen all their woes I foretold.

CHOROS.

How wast thou then unhurt by Loxias' anger?

KASSANDRA.

I no one aught persuaded, when I sinned thus.

CHOROS.

To us, at least, now sooth to say thou seemest.

KASSANDRA.

Halloo, halloo, ah, evils!

Again, straightforward foresight's fearful  
labour

Whirls me, distracting with prelude last-  
lays!

Behold ye those there, in the household  
seated,—

Young ones,—of dreams approaching to the  
figures?

Children, as if they died by their beloveds—  
Hands they have filled with flesh, the meal  
domestic—

Entrails and vitals both, most piteous burthen,  
Plain they are holding!—which their father  
tasted!

For this, I say, plans punishment a certain  
Lion ignoble, on the bed that wallows,  
House-guard (ah, me!) to the returning master  
—Mine, since to bear the slavish yoke be-  
hoves me!

The ship's commander, Ilion's desolator,  
Knows not what things the tongue of the  
lewd she-dog

Speaking, outspreading, shiny-souled, in  
fashion

Of Ate hid, will reach to, by ill fortune!

Such things she dares—the female, the male's  
slayer!

She is . . . how-calling her the hateful bite-  
beast

May I hit the mark? Some amphibaina,—  
Skulla

[Housing in rocks, of mariners the mischief,  
Revelling Haides' mother,—curse, no truce  
with,

Breathing at friends! How piously she  
shouted,

The all-courageous, as at turn of battle!

She seems to joy at the back-bringing  
safety!

Of this, too, if I nought persuade, all's one!  
Why?

What is to be will come. And soon thou,  
present,

"True prophet all too much" wilt pitying  
style me.

CHOROS.

Thuestes' feast, indeed, on flesh of children,  
I went with, and I shuddered. Fear too  
holds me

Listing what's true as life, nowise out-imaged.

KASSANDRA.

I say, thou Agamemnon's fate shalt look on.

CHOROS.

Speak good words, O unhappy! Set mouth  
sleeping!

KASSANDRA.

But Paian stands in no stead to the speech  
here.

CHOROS.

Nay, if the thing be near: but never be it!

KASSANDRA.

Thou, indeed, prayest: they to kill are busy.

CHOROS.

Of what man is it ministered, this sorrow?

KASSANDRA.

There again, wide thou look'st of my fore-  
tellings.

CHOROS.

For, the fulfiller's scheme I have not gone  
with.

KASSANDRA.

And yet too well I know the speech  
Hellenic.

CHOROS.

For Puthian oracles, thy speech, and hard too.

KASSANDRA.

Papai: what fire this! and it comes upon me!  
Ototoi, Lukeion Apollon, ah me—me!

She, the two-footed lioness that sleeps with  
The wolf, in absence of the generous lion,  
Kills me the unhappy one: and as a poison  
Brewing, to put my price too in the anger,  
She vows, against her mate this weapon  
whetting

To pay him back the bringing me, with  
slaughter.

Why keep I then these things to make me  
laughed at,

Both wands and, round my neck, oracular  
fillets?

Thee, at least, ere my own fate will I ruin:  
Go, to perdition falling! Boons exchange  
we—

Some other Ate in my stead make wealthy!  
See there—himself, Apollon stripping from  
me

The oracular garment! having looked upon  
me

—Even in these adornments, laughed by  
friends at,

As good as foes, if the balance weighed: and  
vainly—

For, called crazed stroller,—as I had been  
gipsy,

Beggar, unhappy, starved to death,—I bore it.  
And now the Prophet—prophet me undoing,

Has led away to these so deadly fortunes!  
Instead of my sire's altar, waits the hack-block

She struck with first warm bloody sacrificing!  
Yet nowise unavenged of gods will death be:

For there shall come another, our avenger,  
The mother-slaying scion, father's dooms-

man:

Fugitive, wanderer, from this land an exile,

Back shall he come,—for friends, copestone  
these curses!

For there is sworn a great oath from the  
gods that

Him shall bring hither his fallen sire's  
prostration.

Why make I then, like an indweller, moaning?  
Since at the first I foresaw Ilium's city

Suffering as it has suffered: and who took it,  
Thus by the judgment of the gods are faring.

I go, will suffer, will submit to dying!  
But, Haidēs' gates—these same I call, I

speak to,  
And pray that on an opportune blow

chancing,  
Without a struggle,—blood the calm death

bringing  
In easy outflow,—I this eye may close up!

CHOROS.

O much unhappy, but, again, much learned  
Woman, long hast thou outstretched! But

if truly  
Thou knowest thine own fate, how comes

that, like to  
A god-led steer, to altar bold thou treadest?

KASSANDRA.

There's no avoidance,—strangers, no! Some  
time more!

CHOROS.

He last is, anyhow, by time advantaged.

KASSANDRA.

It comes, the day: I shall by flight gain little.

CHOROS.

But know thou patient art from thy brave  
spirit!

KASSANDRA.

Such things hears no one of the happy-  
fortuned.

CHOROS.

But gloriously to die—for man is grace, sure.

KASSANDRA.

Ah, sire, for thee and for thy noble children!

CHOROS.

But what thing is it? What fear turns thee  
backwards?

KASSANDRA.

Alas, alas!

CHOROS.

Why this "Alas!" if 'tis no spirit's loathing?

KASSANDRA.

Slaughter blood-dripping does the household  
smell of!

CHOROS.

How else? This scent is of hearth-sacrifices.

KASSANDRA.

Such kind of steam as from a tomb is proper!

CHOROS.

No Surian honour to the House thou speak'st  
of!

KASSANDRA.

But I will go,—even in the household wailing  
My fate and Agamemnon's. Life suffice me!  
Ah, strangers!

I cry not "ah"—as bird at bush—through  
terror

Idly! to me, the dead this much bear witness:  
When, for me—woman, there shall die a

woman,  
And, for a man ill-wived, a man shall perish!

This hospitality I ask as dying.

CHOROS.

O sufferer, thee—thy foretold fate I pity.

KASSANDRA.

Yet once for all, to speak a speech, I fain am:  
No dirge, mine for myself! The sun I pray to,  
Fronting his last light!—to my own

avengers—  
That from my hateful slayers they exact too

Pay for the dead slave—easy-managed hand's  
work!

CHOROS.

Alas for mortal matters! Happy-fortuned,—  
Why, any shade would turn them: if un-

happy,

By throws the wetting sponge has spoiled the picture!

And more by much in mortals this I pity.

The being well-to-do—

Insatiate a desire of this

Born with all mortals is,

Nor any is there who

Well-being forces off, aoints

From roofs whereat a finger points,

"No more come in!" exclaiming. This man, too,

To take the city of Priamos did the celestials give,

And, honoured by the god, he homeward comes;

But now if, of the former, he shall pay

The blood back, and, for those who ceased to live,

Dying, for deaths in turn new punishment he dooms—

Who, being mortal, would not pray

With an unmischievous

Daimon to have been born—who would not, hearing thus?

AGAMEMNON.

Ah me! I am struck—a right-aimed stroke within me!

CHOROS.

Silence! Who is it shouts "stroke"—"right-aimedly" a wounded one?

AGAMEMNON.

Ah me! indeed again,—a second, struck by!

CHOROS.

This work seems to me completed by this "Ah me" of the king's;

But we somehow may together share in solid counsellings.

CHOROS I.

I, in the first place, my opinion tell you:

—To cite the townsmen, by help-cry, to house here.

CHOROS 2.

To me, it seems we ought to fall upon them At quickest—prove the fact by sword fresh-flowing!

CHOROS 3.

And I, of such opinion the partaker,

Vote—to do something: not to wait—the main point!

CHOROS 4.

'Tis plain to see: for they prelude as though of A tyranny the signs they gave the city.

CHOROS 5.

For we waste time; while they,—this waiting's glory

Treading to ground,—allow the hand no slumber.

CHOROS 6.

I know not—chancing on some plan—to tell it:

'Tis for the doer to plan of the deed also.

CHOROS 7.

And I am such another: since I'm schemeless How to raise up again by words—a dead man!

CHOROS 8.

What, and, protracting life, shall we give way thus

To the disgracers of our home, these rulers?

CHOROS 9.

Why, 'tis unbearable: but to die is better: For death than tyranny is the riper finish!

CHOROS 10.

What, by the testifying "Ah me" of him,

Shall we prognosticate the man as perished?

CHOROS 11.

We must quite know ere speak these things concerning:

For to conjecture and "quite know" are two things.

CHOROS 12.

This same to praise I from all sides abound in—

Clearly to know—Atreides, what he's doing!

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Much having been before to purpose spoken, The opposite to say I shall not shamed be!



For how should one, to enemies,—in semblance,  
Friends,—enmity proposing,—sorrow's net-  
frame

Enclose, a height superior to outleaping?  
To me, indeed, this struggle of old—not  
mindless

Of an old victory—came: with time, I grant  
you!

I stand where I have struck, things once  
accomplished:

And so have done,—and this deny I shall  
not,—

As that his fate was nor to fly nor ward off.  
A wrap-round with no outlet, as for fishes,  
I fence about him—the rich woe of the  
garment:

I strike him twice, and in a double "Ah-me!"  
He let his limbs go—*there!* And to him,  
fallen,

The third blow add I, giving—of Below-  
ground

Zeus, guardian of the dead—the votive favour.  
Thus in the mind of him he rages, falling,  
And blowing forth a brisk blood-spatter,  
strikes me

With the dark drop of slaughterous dew—  
rejoicing

No less than, at the god-given dewy-comfort,  
The sown-stuff in its birth-throes from the  
calyx.

Since so these things are,—Argives, my  
revered here,—

Ye may rejoice—if ye rejoice: but I—boast!  
If it were fit on corpse to pour libation,  
That would be right—right over and above,  
too!

The cup of evils in the house he, having  
Filled with such curses, himself coming  
drinks of.

CHOROS.

We wonder at thy tongue: since bold-  
mouthed truly

Is she who in such speech boasts o'er her  
husband!

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Ye test me as I were a witless woman:  
But I—with heart intrepid—to you knowers

Say (and thou—if thou wilt, or praise or  
blame me,

Comes to the same)—this man is Agamemnon,  
My husband, dead, the work of the right  
hand here,

Ay, of a just artificer: so things are.

CHOROS.

What evil, O woman, food or drink, earth-  
bred

Or sent from the flowing sea,  
Of such having fed

Didst thou set on thee

This sacrifice

And popular cries

Of a curse on thy head?

Off thou hast thrown him, off hast cut

The man from the city: but—

Off from the city thyself shalt be

Cut—to the citizens

A hate immense!

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Now, indeed, thou adjudgest exile to me,  
And citizens' hate, and to have popular  
curses:

Nothing of this against the man here bringing,  
Who, no more awe-checked than as 'twere a  
beast's fate,—

With sheep abundant in the well-fleeced  
graze-flocks,—

Sacrificed *his* child,—dearest fruit of travail  
To me,—as song-spell against Threikian  
blowings.

Not *him* did it behove thee hence to banish  
—Pollution's penalty? But hearing *my* deeds  
Justicer rough thou art! Now, this I tell  
thee:

To threaten thus—me, one prepared to have  
thee

(On like conditions, thy hand conquering)  
o'er me

Rule: but if God the opposite ordain us,  
Thou shalt learn—late taught, certes—to be  
modest.

CHOROS.

Greatly-intending thou art:

Much-mindful, too, hast thou cried

(Since thy mind, with its slaughter-outpouring  
part,  
Is frantic) that over the eyes, a patch  
Of blood—with blood to match—  
Is plain for a pride !  
Yet still, bereft of friends, thy fate  
Is—blow with blow to expiate !

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

And this thou hearest—of my oaths, just  
warrant !

By who fulfilled things for my daughter,  
Justice,  
Ate, Erinus,—by whose help I slew him,—  
Not mine the fancy—Fear will tread my  
palace

So long as on my hearth there burns a fire,  
Aigisthos as before well-caring for me ;  
Since he to me is shield, no small, of boldness.  
Here does he lie—outrager of this female,  
Dainty of all the Chruiseids under Ilion ;  
And she—the captive, the soothsayer also  
And couchmate of this man, oracle-speaker,  
Faithful bed-fellow,—ay, the sailors' benches  
They were in common, nor unpunished  
did so,  
Since he is—thus ! While, as for her,—  
swan-fashion,

Her latest having chanted,—dying wailing  
She lies,—to him, a sweetheart : me she  
brought to—  
My bed's by-nicety—the whet of dalliance.

## CHOROS.

Alas, that some  
Fate would come  
Upon us in quickness—  
Neither much sickness  
Neither bed-keeping—  
And bear unended sleeping,  
Now that subdued  
Is our keeper, the kindest of mood !  
Having borne, for a woman's sake, much  
strife—

By a woman he withered from life !  
Ah me !  
Law-breaking Helena who, one,  
Hast many, so many souls undone

## VOL. II.

'Neath Troia ! and now the consummated  
Much-memorable curse  
Hast thou made flower-forth, red  
With the blood no rains disperse,  
That which was then in the House—  
Strife all-subduing, the woe of a spouse.

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Nowise, of death the fate—  
Burdened by these things—supplicate !  
Nor on Helena turn thy wrath  
As the man-destroyer, as "she who hath,  
Being but one,  
Many and many a soul undone  
Of the men, the Danaoi"—  
And wrought immense annoy !

## CHOROS.

Daimon, whoallest  
Upon this household and the double-raced  
Tantalidai, a rule, minded like theirs dis-  
placed,  
Thou rulest me with, now,  
Whose heart thou gallest !  
And on the body, like a hateful crow,  
Stationed, all out of tune, his chant to chant  
Doth Something vaunt !

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Now, of a truth, hast thou set upright  
Thy mouth's opinion,—  
Naming the Sprite,  
The triply gross,  
O'er the race that has dominion :  
For through him it is that Eros  
The carnage-licker  
In the belly is bred : ere ended quite  
Is the elder throe—new ichor !

## CHOROS.

Certainly, great of might  
And heavy of wrath, the Sprite  
Thou tellest of, in the palace  
(Woe, woe !)  
—An evil tale of a fate  
By Ate's malice  
Rendered insatiate !  
Oh, oh,—

King, king, how shall I bewEEP thee?  
 From friendly soul whatever say?  
 Thou liest where webs of the spider o'ersweep  
 thee  
 In impious death, life breathing away.  
 O me—me!  
 This couch, not free!  
 By a slavish death subdued thou art,  
 From the hand, by the two-edged dart.

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Thou boastest this deed to be mine:  
 But leave off styling me  
 "The Agamemnonian wife!"  
 For, showing himself in sign  
 Of the spouse of the corpse thou dost see,  
 Did the ancient bitter avenging-ghost  
 Of Atreus, savage host,  
 Pay the man here as price—  
 A full-grown for the young one's sacrifice.

## CHOROS.

That no cause, indeed, of this killing art thou,  
 Who shall be witness-bearer?  
 How shall he bear it—how?  
 But the sire's avenging-ghost might be in the  
 deed a sharer.  
 He is forced on and on  
 By the kin-born flowing of blood,  
 —Black Ares: to where, having gone,  
 He shall leave off, flowing done,  
 At the frozen-child's-flesh food.  
 King, king, how shall I bewEEP thee?  
 From friendly soul whatever say?  
 Thou liest where webs of the spider o'ersweep  
 thee  
 In impious death, life breathing away.  
 O me—me!  
 This couch, not free!  
 By a slavish death subdued thou art,  
 From the hand, by the two-edged dart.

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

No death "unfit for the free"  
 Do I think this man's to be:  
 For did not himself a slavish curse  
 To his household decree?  
 But the scion of him, myself did nurse—

That much-bewailed Iphigeneia, he  
 Having done well by,—and as well, nor  
 worse,  
 Been done to,—let him not in Hades loudly  
 Bear himself proudly!  
 Being by sword-destroying death amerced  
 For that sword's punishment himself inflicted  
 first.

## CHOROS.

I at a loss am left—  
 Of a feasible scheme of mind bereft—  
 Where I may turn: for the house is falling:  
 I fear the bloody crash of the rain  
 That ruins the roof as it bursts amain:  
 The warning-drop  
 Has come to a stop.  
 Destiny doth Justice whet  
 For other deed of hurt, on other whetstones  
 yet.  
 Woe, earth, earth—would thou hadst taken  
 me

Ere I saw the man I see,  
 On the pallet-bed  
 Of the silver-sided bath-vase, dead!  
 Who is it shall bury him, who  
 Sing his dirge? Can it be true  
 That *thou* wilt dare this same to do—  
 Having slain thy husband, thine own,  
 To make his funeral moan:  
 And for the soul of him, in place  
 Of his mighty deeds, a graceless grace  
 To wickedly institute? By whom  
 Shall the tale of praise o'er the tomb  
 At the god-like man be sent—  
 From the truth of his mind as he toils intent?

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

It belongs not to thee to declare  
 This object of care!  
 By us did he fall—down there!  
 Did he die—down there! and down, no less,  
 We will bury him there, and not beneath  
 The wails of the household over his death:  
 But Iphigeneia,—with kindness,—  
 His daughter,—as the case requires,  
 Facing him full, at the rapid-flowing  
 Passage of Groans shall—both hands throwing  
 Around him—kiss that kindest of sires!

## CHOROS.

This blame comes in the place of blame :  
 Hard battle it is to judge each claim.  
 "He is borne away who bears away :  
 And the killer has all to pay."  
 And this remains while Zeus is remaining,  
 "The doer shall suffer in time"—for, such  
 his ordaining.  
 Who may cast out of the House its cursed  
 brood ?  
 The race is to Ate glued !

## KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Thou hast gone into this oracle  
 With a true result. For me, then,—I will  
 —To the Daimon of the Pleisthenidai  
 Making an oath—with all these things comply  
 Hard as they are to bear. For the rest—  
 Going from out this House, a guest,  
 May he wear some other family  
 To nought, with the deaths of kin by kin !  
 And,—keeping a little part of my goods,—  
 Wholly am I contented in  
 Having expelled from the royal House  
 These frenzied moods  
 The mutually-murderous.

## AIGISTHOS.

O light propitious of day justice-bringing !  
 I may say truly, now, that men's avengers,  
 The gods from high, of earth behold the  
 sorrows—  
 Seeing, as I have, i' the spun robes of the  
 Erinues,  
 This man here lying,—sight to me how  
 pleasant !—  
 His father's hands' contrivances repaying.  
 For Atreus, this land's lord, of this man father,  
 Thuestes, my own father—to speak clearly—  
 His brother too,—being i' the rule contested,—  
 Drove forth to exile from both town and  
 household :  
 And, coming back, to the hearth turned, a  
 suppliant,  
 Wretched Thuestes found the fate assured him  
 —Not to die, bloodying his paternal threshold  
 Just there : but host-wise this man's impious  
 father

Atreus, soul-keenly more than kindly,—  
 seeming

To joyous hold a flesh-day,—to my father  
 Served up a meal, the flesh of his own  
 children.

The feet indeed and the hands' top divisions  
 He hid, high up and isolated sitting :  
 But, their unshowing parts in ignorance taking,  
 He forthwith eats food—as thou seest—  
 perdition

To the race : and then, 'ware of the deed ill-  
 omened,

He shrieked O !—falls back, vomiting, from  
 the carnage,

And fate on the Pelopidai past bearing  
 He prays down—putting in his curse together  
 The kicking down o' the feast—that so might  
 perish

The race of Pleisthenes entire : and thence is  
 That it is given thee to see this man prostrate.  
 And I was rightly of this slaughter stitch-man :  
 Since me,—being third from ten,—with my  
 poor father

He drives out—being then a babe in swathe-  
 bands :

But, grown up, back again has justice brought  
 me :

And of this man I got hold—being without-  
 doors—

Fitting together the whole scheme of ill-will.  
 So, sweet, in fine, even to die were to me,  
 Seeing, as I have, this man i' the toils o'  
 justice !

## CHOROS.

Aigisthos, arrogance in ill I love not.  
 Dost thou say—willing, thou didst kill the  
 man here,  
 And, alone, plot this lamentable slaughter ?  
 I say—thy head in justice will escape not  
 The people's throwing—know that !—stones  
 and curses !

## AIGISTHOS.

Thou such things soundest—seated at the lower  
 Oarage to those who rule at the ship's mid-  
 bench ?  
 Thou shalt know, being old, how heavy is  
 teaching

To one of the like age—bidden be modest !  
 But chains and old age and the pangs of  
 fasting  
 Stand out before all else in teaching,—  
 prophets  
 At souls' cure ! Dost not, seeing aught, see  
 this too ?  
 Against goads kick not, lest tript-up thou  
 suffer !

CHOROS.

Woman, thou,—of him coming new from  
 battle  
 Houseguard—thy husband's bed the while  
 disgracing,—  
 For the Army-leader didst thou plan this fate  
 too ?

AIGISTHOS.

These words too are of groans the prime-  
 begetters !  
 Truly a tongue opposed to Orpheus hast thou :  
 For he led all things by his voice's grace-  
 charm,  
 But thou, upstirring them by these wild yelp-  
 ings,  
 Wilt lead them ! Forced, thou wilt appear  
 the tamer !

CHOROS.

So—thou shalt be my king then of the  
 Argeians—  
 Who, not when for this man his fate thou  
 plannedst,  
 Darest to do this deed—thyself the slayer !

AIGISTHOS.

For, to deceive him was the wife's part,  
 certes :  
 I was looked after—fœe, ay, old-begotten !  
 But out of this man's wealth will I endeavour  
 To rule the citizens : and the no-man-minder  
 —Him will I heavily yoke—by no means  
 trace-horse,  
 A corned-up colt ! but that bad friend in  
 darkness,  
 Famine its housemate, shall behold him  
 gentle.

CHOROS.

Why then, this man here, from a coward  
 spirit,  
 Didst not thou slay thyself ? But,—helped,  
 —a woman,  
 The country's pest, and that of gods o' the  
 country,  
 Killed him ! Orestes, where may he see light  
 now ?  
 That coming hither back, with gracious for-  
 tune,  
 Of both these he may be the all-conquering  
 slayer ?

AIGISTHOS.

But since this to do thou thinkest—and not  
 talk—thou soon shalt know !  
 Up then, comrades dear ! the proper thing  
 to do—not distant this !

CHOROS.

Up then ! hilt in hold, his sword let everyone  
 aright dispose !

AIGISTHOS.

Ay, but I myself too, hilt in hold, do not  
 refuse to die.

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Nowise, O belovedest of men, may we do  
 other ills !  
 To have reaped away these, even, is a harvest  
 much to me.  
 Go, both thou and these the old men, to the  
 homes appointed each,  
 Ere ye suffer ! It behoved one do these  
 things just as we did :  
 And if of these troubles there should be  
 enough—we may assent  
 —By the Daimon's heavy heel unfortunately  
 stricken ones !  
 So a woman's counsel bath it—if one judge  
 it learning-worth.

AIGISTHOS.

But to think that these at me the idle tongue  
should thus o'erbloom,  
And throw out such words—the Daimon's  
power experimenting on—  
And, of modest knowledge missing,—me,  
the ruler, . . .

CHOROS.

Ne'er may this befall Argeians—wicked man  
to fawn before !

AIGISTHOS.

Anyhow, in after days, will I, yes, I, be at  
thee yet !

CHOROS.

Not if hither should the Daimon make Orestes  
straightway come !

AIGISTHOS.

O, I know, myself, that fugitives on hopes are  
pasture-fed !

CHOROS.

Do thy deed, get fat, defiling justice, since  
the power is thine !

AIGISTHOS.

Know that thou shalt give me satisfaction  
for this folly's sake !

CHOROS.

Boast on, bearing thee audacious, like a cock  
his females by !

KLUTAIMNESTRA.

Have not thou respect for these same idle  
yelpings ! I and thou  
Will arrange it, o'er this household ruling  
excellently well.

# LA SAISIAZ.

1878.

[The name of a villa near Geneva ; means The Sun. A. E. S. stands for Ann Egerton Smith, who, whilst spending the autumn of 1877 with Mr. and Miss Browning at La Saisiaz, died suddenly of heart disease on the morning of the 14th of September.]

## I.

GOOD, to forgive ;  
Best, to forget !  
Living, we fret ;  
Dying, we live.  
Fretless and free,  
Soul, clap thy pinion !  
Earth have dominion,  
Body, o'er thee !

## II.

Wander at will,  
Day after day,—  
Wander away,  
Wandering still—  
Soul that canst soar !  
Body may slumber :  
Body shall cumber  
Soul-flight no more.

## III.

Waft of soul's wing !  
What lies above ?  
Sunshine and Love,  
Skyblue and Spring !  
Body hides—where ?  
Ferns of all feather,  
Mosses and heather,  
Yours be the care !

## LA SAISIAZ.

A. E. S. SEPTEMBER 14, 1877.

DARED and done : at last I stand upon the  
summit, Dear and True !  
Singly dared and done ; the climbing both  
of us were bound to do.

Petty feat and yet prodigious : every side my  
glance was bent  
O'er the grandeur and the beauty lavished  
through the whole ascent.  
Ledge by ledge, out broke new marvels, now  
minute and now immense :  
Earth's most exquisite disclosure, heaven's  
own God in evidence !  
And no berry in its hiding, no blue space in  
its outspread,  
Pleaded to escape my footstep, challenged  
my emerging head,  
(As I climbed or paused from climb-  
ing, now o'erbranched by shrub and  
tree,  
Now built round by rock and boulder, now  
at just a turn set free,  
Stationed face to face with—Nature? rather  
with Infinitude)  
—No revelation of them all, as singly I my  
path pursued,  
But a bitter touched its sweetness, for the  
thought stung "Even so  
Both of us had loved and wondered just the  
same, five days ago !"  
Five short days, sufficient hardly to entice,  
from out its den  
Splintered in the slab, this pink perfection of  
the cyclan.en ;  
Scarce enough to heal and coat with amber  
gum the sloe-tree's gash,  
Bronze the clustered wilding apple, redden  
ripe the mountain-ash :  
Yet of might to place between us—Oh the  
barrier ! Yon Profound  
Shrinks beside it, proves a pin-point : barrier  
this, without a bound !

Boundless though it be, I reach you : some-  
 how seem to have you here  
 —Who are there. Yes, there you dwell  
 now, plain the four low walls ap-  
 pear ;  
 Those are vineyards they enclose from ; and  
 the little spire which points  
 —That's Collonge, henceforth your dwell-  
 ing. All the same, howe'er dis-  
 joints  
 Past from present, no less certain you are  
 here, not there : have dared,  
 Done the feat of mountain-climbing,—  
 five days since, we both pre-  
 pared  
 Daring, doing, arm in arm, if other help  
 should haply fail.  
 For you asked, as forth we sallied to see  
 sunset from the vale,  
 "Why not try for once the mountain,—take  
 a foretaste, snatch by stealth  
 Sight and sound, some unconsidered fragment  
 of the hoarded wealth ?  
 Six weeks at its base, yet never once have  
 we together won  
 Sight or sound by honest climbing : let us  
 two have dared and done  
 Just so much of twilight journey as may  
 prove to-morrow's jaunt  
 Not the only mode of wayfare—wheeled to  
 reach the eagle's haunt !"  
 So, we turned from the low grass-path  
 you were pleased to call "your  
 own,"  
 Set our faces to the rose-bloom o'er the  
 summit's front of stone  
 Where Salève obtains, from Jura and the  
 supken sun she hides,  
 Due return of blushing "Good Night," rosy  
 as a borne-off bride's,  
 For his masculine "Good Morrow" when,  
 with sunrise still in hold,  
 Gay he hails her, and, magnific, thrilled her  
 black length burns to gold.  
 Up and up we went, how careless—nay, how  
 joyous ! All was new,  
 All was strange. "Call progress toilsome ?  
 that were just insulting you !  
 How the trees must temper noontide ! Ah,  
 the thicket's sudden break !  
 What will be the morning glory, when at  
 dusk thus gleams the lake ?  
 Light by light puts forth Geneva : what a  
 land—and, of the land,  
 Can there be a lovelier station than this spot  
 where now we stand ?  
 Is it late, and wrong to linger ? True, to-  
 morrow makes amends.  
 Toilsome progress ? child's play, call it—  
 specially when one descends !  
 There, the dread descent is over—hardly our  
 adventure, though !  
 Take the vale where late we left it, pace the  
 grass-path, 'mine,' you know !  
 Proud completion of achievement !" And  
 we paced it, praising still  
 That soft tread on velvet verdure as it wound  
 through hill and hill ;  
 And at very end there met us, coming from  
 Collonge, the pair  
 —All our people of the Chalet—two, enough  
 and none to spare.  
 So, we made for home together, and we  
 reached it as the stars  
 One by one came lamping—chiefly that  
 prepotency of Mars—  
 And your last word was "I owe you this  
 enjoyment !" —met with "Nay :  
 With yourself it rests to have a month of  
 morrows like to-day !"  
 Then the meal, with talk and laughter, and  
 the news of that rare nook  
 Yet untroubled by the tourist, touched on by  
 no travel-book,  
 All the same—though latent—patent, hybrid  
 birth of land and sea,  
 And (our travelled friend assured you)—if  
 such miracle might be—  
 Comparable for completeness of both bless-  
 ings—all around  
 Nature, and, inside her circle, safety from  
 world's sight and sound—  
 Comparable to our Saisiaz. "Hold it fast  
 and guard it well !  
 Go and see and vouch for certain, then come  
 back and never tell



Living soul but us ; and haply, prove our sky from cloud as clear,  
 There may we four meet, praise fortune just as now, another year !  
 Thus you charged him on departure : not without the final charge  
 " Mind to-morrow's early meeting ! We must leave our journey marge  
 Ample for the wayside wonders : there's the stoppage at the inn  
 Three-parts up the mountain, where the hardships of the track begin ;  
 There's the convent worth a visit ; but, the triumph crowning all—  
 There's Salève's own platform facing glory which strikes greatness small,  
 —Blanc, supreme above his earth-brood, needles red and white and green,  
 Horns of silver, fangs of crystal set on edge in his demesne.  
 So, some three weeks since, we saw them : so, to-morrow we intend  
 You shall see them likewise ; therefore Good Night till to-morrow, friend !"  
 Last, the nothings that extinguish embers of a vivid day :  
 " What might be the Marshal's next move, what Gambetta's counter-play ?"  
 Till the landing on the staircase saw escape the latest spark :  
 " Sleep you well ! " " Sleep but as well, you ! "—lazy love quenched, all was dark.  
 Nothing dark next day at sundown ! Up I rose and forth I fared :  
 Took my plunge within the bath-pool, pacified the watch-dog scared,  
 Saw proceed the transmutation—Jura's black to one gold glow,  
 Trod your level path that let me drink the morning deep and slow,  
 Reached the little quarry—ravage recompensed by shrub and fern—  
 Till the overflowing ardours told me time was for return.  
 So, return I did, and gaily. But, for once, from no far mound  
 Waved salute a tall white figure. " Has her sleep been so profound ?  
 Foresight, rather, prudent saving strength for day's expenditure !  
 Ay, the chamber-window's open : out and on the terrace, sure !"  
 No, the terrace showed no figure, tall, white, leaning through the wreaths,  
 Tangle-twine of leaf and bloom that intercept the air one breathes,  
 Interpose between one's love and Nature's loving, hill and dale  
 Down to where the blue lake's wrinkle marks the river's inrush pale  
 —Mazy Arve : whereon no vessel but goes sliding white and plain,  
 Not a steamboat pants from harbour but one hears pulsate amain,  
 Past the city's congregated peace of homes and pomp of spires  
 —Man's mild protest that there's something more than Nature, man requires,  
 And that, useful as is Nature to attract the tourist's foot,  
 Quiet slow sure money-making proves the matter's very root,—  
 Need for body,—while the spirit also needs a comfort reached  
 By no help of lake or mountain, but the texts whence Calvin preached.  
 " Here's the veil withdrawn from landscape : up to Jura and beyond,  
 All awaits us ranged and ready ; yet she violates the bond,  
 Neither leans nor looks nor listens : why is this ? " A turn of eye  
 Took the whole sole answer, gave the undisputed reason " why ! "  
 This dread way you had your summons ! No premonitory touch,  
 As you talked and laughed ('tis told me) scarce a minute ere the clutch  
 Captured you in cold forever. Cold ? nay, warm you were as life  
 When I raised you, while the others used, in passionate poor strife,

All the means that seemed to promise any aid, and all in vain.  
 Gone you were, and I shall never see that earnest face again  
 Grow transparent, grow transfigured with the sudden light that leapt,  
 At the first word's provocation, from the heart-deeps where it slept.

Therefore, paying piteous duty, what seemed  
 You have we consigned  
 Peacefully to—what I think were, of all earth-beds, to your mind  
 Most the choice for quiet, yonder : low walls stop the vines' approach,  
 Lovingly Salève protects you ; village-sports will ne'er encroach  
 On the stranger lady's silence, whom friends bore so kind and well  
 Thither "just for love's sake,"—such their own word was : and who can tell?  
 You supposed that few or none had known and loved you in the world :  
 May be ! flower that's full-blown tempts the butterfly, not flower that's furled.  
 But more learned sense unlocked you, loosed the sheath and let expand  
 Bud to bell and outspread flower-shape at the least warm touch of hand  
 —Maybe, throb of heart, beneath which,—quickenings farther than it knew,—  
 Treasure oft was disembosomed, scent all strange and unguessed hue.  
 Disembosomed, re-embosomed,—must one memory suffice,  
 Prove I knew an Alpine-rose which all beside named Edelweiss ?

Rare thing, red or white, you rest now : two days slumbered through ; and since  
 One day more will see me rid of this same scene whereat I wince,  
 Tetchy at all sights and sounds and pettish at each idle charm  
 Proffered me who pace now singly where we two went arm in arm,—  
 I have turned upon my weakness : asked "And what, forsooth, prevents  
 That, this latest day allowed me, I fulfil of her intents  
 One she had the most at heart—that we should thus again survey  
 From Salève Mont Blanc together?" Therefore,—dared and done to-day  
 Climbing,—here I stand : but you—where?  
 If a spirit of the place  
 Broke the silence, bade me question, promised answer,—what disgrace  
 Did I stipulate "Provided answer suit my hopes, not fears !"  
 Would I shrink to learn my life-time's limit—days, weeks, months or years?  
 Would I shirk assurance on each point whereat I can but guess—  
 "Does the soul survive the body? Is there God's self, no or yes?"  
 If I know my mood, 'twere constant—come in whatsoe'er uncouth  
 Shape it should, nay, formidable—so the answer were but truth.  
 Well, and wherefore shall it daunt me, when 'tis I myself am tasked,  
 When, by weakness weakness questioned, weakly answers—weakly asked?  
 Weakness never needs be falseness : truth is truth in each degree  
 —Thunderpealed by God to Nature, whisp'ered by my soul to me.  
 Nay, the weakness turns to strength and triumphs in a truth beyond :  
 "Mine is but man's truest answer—how were it did God respond ?"  
 I shall no more dare to mimic such response in futile speech,  
 Pass off human lisp as echo of the sphere-song out of reach,  
 Than,—because it well may happen yonder, where the far snows blanch  
 Mute Mont Blanc, that who stands near them sees and hears an avalanche,—  
 I shall pick a clod and throw,—cry "Such the sight and such the sound !  
 What though I nor see nor hear them? Others do, the proofs abound !"

Can I make my eye an eagle's, sharpen ear  
 to recognize  
 Sound o'er league and league of silence?  
 Can I know, who but surmise?  
 If I dared no self-deception when, a week  
 since, I and you  
 Walked and talked along the grass-path,  
 passing lightly in review  
 What seemed hits and what seemed misses  
 in a certain fence-play,—strife  
 Sundry minds of mark engaged in "On the  
 Soul and Future Life,"—  
 If I ventured estimating what was come of  
 parried thrust,  
 Subtle stroke, and, rightly, wrongly, estimat-  
 ing could be just  
 —Just, though life so seemed abundant in  
 the form which moved by mine,  
 I might well have played at feigning, fooling,  
 —laughed "What need opine  
 Pleasure must succeed to pleasure, else past  
 pleasure turns to pain,  
 And this first life claims a second, else I  
 count its good no gain?"—  
 Much less have I heart to palter when the  
 matter to decide  
 Now becomes "Was ending ending once and  
 always, when you died?"  
 Did the face, the form I lifted as it lay,  
 reveal the loss  
 Not alone of life but soul? A tribute to yon  
 flowers and moss,  
 What of you remains beside? A memory!  
 Easy to attest  
 'Certainly from out the world that one be-  
 lieves who knew her best  
 Such was good in her, such fair, which fair  
 and good were great perchance  
 Had but fortune favoured, bidden each shy  
 faculty advance;  
 After all—who knows another? Only as I  
 know, I speak."  
 So much of you lives within me while I live  
 my year or week  
 Then my fellow takes the tale up, not un-  
 willing to aver  
 Duly in his turn "I knew him best of all, as  
 he knew, her :

Such he was, and such he was not, and such  
 other might have been  
 But that somehow every actor, somewhere in  
 this earthly scene,  
 Fails." And so both memories dwindle,  
 yours and mine together linked,  
 Till there is but left for comfort, when the  
 last spark proves extinct,  
 This—that somewhere new existence led by  
 men and women new  
 Possibly attains perfection coveted by me and  
 you ;  
 While ourselves, the only witness to what  
 work our life evolved,  
 Only to ourselves proposing problems proper  
 to be solved  
 By ourselves alone,—who working ne'er shall  
 know if work bear fruit  
 Others reap and garner, heedless how pro-  
 duced by stalk and root,—  
 We who, darkling, timed the day's birth,—  
 struggling, testified to peace,—  
 Earned, by dint of failure, triumph,—we,  
 creative thought, must cease  
 In created word, thought's echo, due to im-  
 pulse long since sped !  
 Why repine? There's ever someone lives  
 although ourselves be dead !  
 Well, what signifies repugnance? Truth is  
 truth howe'er it strike.  
 Fair or foul the lot apportioned life on earth,  
 we bear alike.  
 Stalwart body idly yoked to stunted spirit,  
 powers, that fain  
 Else would soar, condemned to grovel, ground-  
 lings through the fleshly chain,—  
 Help that hinders, hindrance proved but help  
 disguised when all too late,—  
 Hindrance is the fact acknowledged, howso-  
 e'er explained as Fate,  
 Fortune, Providence : we bear, own life a  
 burthen more or less.  
 Life thus owned unhappy, is there supple-  
 mental happiness  
 Possible and probable in life to come? or  
 must we count

Life a curse and not a blessing, summed-up  
in its whole amount,

Help and hindrance, joy and sorrow?

Why should I want courage here?

I will ask: and have an answer,—with no  
favour, with no fear,—

From myself. How much, how little, do I  
inwardly believe

True that controverted doctrine? Is it fact  
to which I cleave,

Is it fancy I but cherish, when I take upon  
my lips

Phrase the solemn Tuscan fashioned, and  
declare the soul's eclipse

Not the soul's extinction? take his "I believe  
and I declare—

Certain am I—from this life I pass into a  
better, there

Where that lady lives of whom enamoured  
was my soul"—where this

Other lady, my companion dear and true, she  
also is?

I have questioned and am answered. Ques-  
tion, answer presuppose

Two points: that the thing itself which  
questions, answers,—*is*, it knows;

As it also knows the thing perceived outside  
itself,—a force

Actual ere its own beginning, operative through  
its course,

Unaffected by its end,—that this thing like-  
wise needs must be;

Call this—God, then, call that—soul, and  
both—the only facts for me.

Prove them facts? that they o'erpass  
my power of proving, proves them  
such:

Fact it is I know I know not something  
which is fact as much.

What before caused all the causes, what effect  
of all effects

Haply follows,—these are fancy. Ask the  
rush if it suspects

Whence and how the stream which floats it  
had a rise, and where and how

Falls or flows on still! What answer makes  
the rush except that now

Certainly it floats and is, and, no less certain  
than itself,

Is the everyway external stream that now  
through shoal and shelf

Floats it onward, leaves it—may be—wrecked  
at last, or lands on shore

There to root again and grow and flourish  
stable evermore.

—May be I mere surmise not knowledge:  
much conjecture styled belief,

What the rush conceives the stream means  
through the voyage blind and brief.

Why, because I doubtless am, shall I as  
doubtless be? "Because

God seems good and wise." Yet under this  
our life's apparent laws

Reigns a wrong which, righted once, would  
give quite other laws to life.

"He seems potent." Potent here, then—  
why are right and wrong at strife?

Has in life the wrong the better? Happily  
life ends so soon!

Right predominates in life? Then why two  
lives and double boon?

"Anyhow, we want it: wherefore want?"

Because, without the want,  
Life, now human, would be brutish: just

that hope, however scant,  
Makes the actual life worth leading; take the

hope therein away,  
All we have to do is surely not endure

another day.

This life has its hopes for this life, hopes that  
promise joy: life done—

Out of all the hopes, how many had complete  
fulfilment? none.

"But the soul is not the body:" and the  
breath is not the flute;

Both together make the music: either marred  
and all is mute.

True to such old sad contention whence,  
according as we shape

Most of hope or most of fear, we issue in a  
half-escape:

"We believe" is sighed: I take the cup of  
comfort proffered thus,

Taste and try each soft ingredient, sweet  
infusion, and discuss

What their blending may accomplish for the "Red as grass" he contradicts me: which  
 cure of doubt, till—slow, employs the proper term?  
 Sorrowful, but how decided! needs must I Were we two the earth's sole tenants, with  
 o'eturn it—so! no third for referee,  
 Cause before, effect behind me—blanks! How should I distinguish? Just so, God  
 The midway point I am, must judge 'twixt man and me.  
 Caused, itself—itsself efficient: in that narrow To each mortal peradventure earth becomes  
 space must cram a new machine,  
 All experience—out of which there crowds Pain and pleasure no more tally in our sense  
 conjecture manifold, than red and green;  
 But, as knowledge, this comes only—things Still, without what seems such mortal's plea-  
 may be as I behold, sure, pain, my life were lost  
 Or may not be, but, without me and above —Life, my whole sole chance to prove—  
 me, things there are; although at man's apparent cost—  
 I myself am what I know not—ignorance What is beauteous and what ugly, right to  
 which proves no bar strive for, right to shun,  
 To-the knowledge that I am, and, since I am, Fit to help and fit to hinder,—prove my  
 can recognize forces everyone,  
 What to me is pain and pleasure: this is sure, Good and evil,—learn life's lesson, hate of  
 the rest—surmise, evil, love of good,  
 If my fellows are or are not, what may please As 'tis set me, understand so much as may  
 them and what pain,—be understood—  
 Mere surmise: my own experience—that is Solve the problem: "From thine appre-  
 knowledge, once again! hended scheme of things, deduce  
 Praise or blame of its contriver, shown a  
 niggard or profuse  
 I have lived, then, done and suffered, loved In each good or evil issue! nor miscalculate  
 and hated, learnt and taught alike  
 This—there is no reconciling wisdom with a Counting one the other in the final balance,  
 world distraught, which to strike,  
 Goodness with triumphant evil, power with Soul was born and life allotted: ay, the show  
 failure in the aim, of things unfurled  
 If—(to my own sense, remember! though For thy summing-up and judgment,—thine,  
 none other feel the same!)—no other mortal's world!"  
 If you bar me from assuming earth to be a  
 pupil's place,  
 And life, time,—with all their chances, What though fancy scarce may grapple with  
 changes,—just probation-space, the complex and immense  
 Mine, for me. But those apparent other —"His own world for every mortal?" Pos-  
 mortals—theirs, for them? tulate omnipotence!  
 Knowledge stands on my experience: all Limit power, and simple grows the complex:  
 outside its narrow hem, shrunk to atom size,  
 Free surmise may sport and welcome! That which loomed immense to fancy low  
 Pleasures, pains affect mankind before my reason lies,—  
 Just as they affect myself? Why, here's my I survey it and pronounce it work like other  
 neighbour colour-blind; work: success  
 Eyes like mine to all appearance: "green as Here and there, the workman's glory,—here  
 grass" do I affirm? and there, his shame no less.

Failure as conspicuous. Taunt not "Human  
 work ape work divine?"  
 As the power, expect performance! God's  
 be God's as mine is mine!  
 God whose power made man and made man's  
 wants, and made, to meet those wants,  
 Heaven and earth which, through the body,  
 prove the spirit's ministrants,  
 Excellently all,—did He lack power or was  
 the will in fault  
 When He let blue heaven be shrouded o'er  
 by vapours of the vault,  
 Gay earth drop her garlands shrivelled at the  
 first infecting breath  
 Of the serpent pains which herald, swarming  
 in, the dragon death?  
 What, no way but this that man may learn  
 and lay to heart how rife  
 Life were with delights would only death  
 allow their taste to life?  
 Must the rose sigh "Pluck—I perish!" must  
 the eve weep "Gaze—I fade!"  
 —Every sweet warn "'Ware my bitter!"  
 every shine bid "Wait my shade"?  
 Can we love but on condition, that the thing  
 we love must die?  
 Needs there groan a world in anguish just to  
 teach us sympathy—  
 Multitudinously wretched that we, wretched  
 too, may guess  
 What a preferable state were universal happi-  
 ness?  
 Hardly do I so conceive the outcome of that  
 power which went  
 To the making of the worm there in yon clod  
 its tenement,  
 Any more than I distinguish aught of that  
 which, wise and good,  
 Framed the leaf, its plain of pasture, dropped  
 the dew, its fineness food.  
 Nay, were fancy fact, were earth and all it  
 holds illusion mere,  
 Only a machine for teaching love and hate  
 and hope and fear  
 To myself, the sole existence, single truth  
 mid falsehood,—well!  
 If the harsh throes of the prelude die not off  
 into the swell  
 Of that perfect piece they sting me to become  
 a-strain for,—if  
 Roughness of the long rock-clamber lead not  
 to the last of cliff,  
 First of level country where is sward my  
 pilgrim-foot can prize,—  
 Plainlier! if this life's conception new life  
 fail to realize,—  
 Though earth burst and proved a bubble  
 glassing hues of hell, one huge  
 Reflex of the devil's doings—God's work by  
 no subterfuge—  
 (So death's kindly touch informed me as it  
 broke the glamour, gave  
 Soul and body both release from life's long  
 nightmare in the grave)  
 Still,—with no more Nature, no more Man  
 as riddle to be read,  
 Only my own joys and sorrows now to reckon  
 real instead,—  
 I must say—or choke in silence—"Howso-  
 ever came my fate,  
 Sorrow did and joy did nowise,—life well  
 weighed,—preponderate."  
 By necessity ordained thus? I shall bear as  
 best I can;  
 By a cause all-good, all-wise, all-potent?  
 No, as I am man!  
 Such were God: and was it goodness that  
 the good within my range  
 Or had evil in admixture or grew evil's self  
 by change?  
 Wisdom—that becoming wise meant making  
 slow and sure advance  
 From a knowledge proved in error to acknow-  
 ledged ignorance?  
 Power? 'tis just the main assumption reason  
 most revolts at! power  
 Unavailing for bestowment on its creature of  
 an hour,  
 Man, of so much proper action rightly aimed  
 and reaching aim,  
 So much passion,—no defect there, no ex-  
 cess, but still the same,—  
 As what constitutes existence, pure perfection  
 bright as brief  
 For yon worm, man's fellow-creature, on yon  
 happier world—its leaf!

No, as I am man, I mourn the poverty I  
must impute :

Goodness, wisdom, power, all bounded, each  
a human attribute !

But, O world outspread beneath me ! only for  
myself I speak,

Nowise dare to play the spokesman for my  
brothers strong and weak ;

Full and empty, wise and foolish, good and  
bad, in every age,

Every clime, I turn my eyes from, as in one  
or other stage

Of a torture writhe they, Job-like couched on  
dung and crazed with blains

—Wherefore ? whereto ? ask the whirl-  
wind what the dread voice thence ex-  
plains !

I shall "vindicate no way of God's to man,"  
nor stand apart,

"Laugh, be candid !" while I watch it  
traversing the human heart.

Traversed heart must tell its story uncon-  
mented on : no less

Mine results in "Only grant a second life, I  
acquiesce

In this present life as failure, count mis-  
fortune's worst assaults

Triumph, not defeat, assured that loss so  
much the more exalts

Gain about to be. For at what moment did  
I so advance

Near to knowledge as when frustrate of escape  
from ignorance ?

Did not beauty prove most precious when its  
opposite obtained

Rule, and truth seem more than ever potent  
because falsehood reigned ?

While for love—Oh how but, losing love,  
does whoso loves succeed

By the death-pang to the birth-throe—learn-  
ing what is love indeed ?

Only grant my soul may carry high through  
death her cup unspilled,

Brimning though it be with knowledge, life's  
loss drop by drop distilled,

I shall boast it mine—the balsam, bless each  
kindly wretch that wrung

From life's tree its inmost virtue, tapped the  
root whence pleasure sprung,

Barked the bole, and broke the bough, and  
bruised the berry, left all grace

Ashes in death's stern alembic, loosed elixir  
in its place !

Witness, Dear and True, how little I was  
'ware of—not your worth

—That I knew, my heart assures me—but of  
what a shade on earth

Would the passage from my presence of the  
tall white figure throw

O'er the ways we walked together ! Some-  
what narrow, somewhat slow

Used to seem the ways, the walking : narrow  
ways are well to tread

When there's moss beneath the footstep,  
honeysuckle overhead :

Walking slow to beating bosom surest solace  
soonest gives,

Liberates the brain o'erloaded—best of all  
restoratives.

Nay, do I forget the open vast where soon or  
late converged

Ways though winding ?—world-wide heaven-  
high sea where music slept or surged

As the angel had ascendant, and Beethoven's  
Titan mace

Smote the immense to storm Mozart would  
by a finger's lifting chase ?

Yes, I knew—but not with knowledge such  
as thrills me while I view

Yonder precinct which henceforward holds  
and hides the Dear and True.

Grant me (once again) assurance we shall  
each meet each some day,

Walk—but with how bold a footstep ! on a  
way—but what a way !

—Worst were best, defeat were triumph,  
utter loss were utmost gain.

Can it be, and must, and will it ?

Silence ! Out of fact's domain,  
Just surmise prepared to mutter hope, and  
also fear—dispute

Fact's inexorable ruling "Outside fact, sur-  
mise be mute !"

Well !

Ay, well and best, if fact's self I  
may force the answer from !  
'Tis surmise I stop the mouth of. Not above  
in yonder dome  
All a rapture with its rose-glow,—not around,  
where pile and peak  
Strainingly await the sun's fall,—not beneath,  
where crickets creak,  
Birds assemble for their bed-time, soft the  
tree-top: swell subsides,—  
No, nor yet within my deepest sentient self  
the knowledge hides.  
Aspiration, reminiscence, plausibilities of  
trust  
—Now the ready "Man were wronged  
else," now the rash "and God un-  
just"—  
None of these I need. Take thou, my soul,  
thy solitary stand,  
Umpire to the champions Fancy, Reason, as  
on either hand  
Amicable war they wage and play the foe in  
thy behoof !  
Fancy thrust and Reason parry ! Thine the  
prize who stand aloof.

#### FANCY.

I concede the thing refused : henceforth no  
certainty more plain  
Than this mere surmise that after body dies  
soul lives again.  
Two, the only facts acknowledged late, are  
now increased to three—  
God is, and the soul is, and, as certain, after  
death shall be.  
Put this third to use in life, the time for  
using fact !

#### REASON.

I do :

Find it promises advantage, coupled with the  
other two.  
Life to come will be improvement on the  
life that's now ; destroy  
Body's thwartings, there's no longer screen  
betwixt soul and soul's joy.

Why should we expect new hindrance, novel  
tether ? In this first

Life, I see the good of evil, why our world  
began at worst :

Since time means amelioration, tardily  
enough displayed,

Yet a mainly onward moving, never wholly  
retrograde.

We know more though we know little, we  
grow stronger though still weak,

Partly see though all too purblind, stammer  
though we cannot speak.

There is no such grudge in God as scared  
the ancient Greek, no fresh

Substitute of trap for dragnet, once a breakage  
in the mesh.

Dragons were, and serpents are, and blind-  
worms will be : ne'er emerged

Any new-created python for man's plague  
since earth was purged.

Failing proof, then, of invented trouble, to  
replace the old,

O'er this life the next presents advantage  
much and manifold :

Which advantage—in the absence of a fourth  
and farther fact

Now conceivably surmised, of harm to follow  
from the act—

I pronounce for man's obtaining at this  
moment. Why delay ?

Is he happy ? happiness will change : anti-  
cipate the day !

Is he sad ? there's ready refuge : of all sad-  
ness death's prompt cure !

Is he both, in mingled measure ? cease a  
burthen to endure !

Pains with sorry compensations, pleasures  
stinted in the dole,

Power that sinks and pettiness that soars, all  
halved and nothing whole,

Idle hopes that lure man onward, forced  
back by as idle fears—

What a load he stumbles under through his  
glad sad seventy years,

When a touch sets right the turmoil, lifts his  
spirit where, flesh-freed,

Knowledge shall be rightly named so, all  
that seems be truth indeed !



Grant his forces no accession, nay, no faculty's increase,

Only let what now exists continue, let him prove in peace

Power whereof the interrupted unperfected play enticed

Man through darkness, which to lighten any spark of hope sufficed,—

What shall then deter his dying out of darkness into light?

Death itself perchance, brief pain that's pang, condensed and infinite?

But at worst, he needs must brave it one day, while, at best, he laughs—

Drops a drop within his chalice, sleep not death his science quaffs!

Any moment claims more courage when, by crossing cold and gloom,

Manfully man quits discomfort, makes for the provided room

Where the old friends want their fellow, where the new acquaintance wait,

Probably for talk assembled, possibly to sup in state!

I affirm and re-affirm it therefore: only make as plain

As that man now lives, that, after dying, man will live again,—

Make as plain the absence, also, of a law to contravene

Voluntary passage from this life to that by change of scene,—

And I bid him—at suspicion of first cloud athwart his sky,

Flower's departure, frost's arrival—never hesitate, but die!

#### FANCY.

Then I double my concession: grant, along with new life sure,

This same law found lacking now: ordain that, whether rich or poor

Present life is judged in aught man counts advantage—be it hope,

Be it fear that brightens, blackens most or least his horoscope,—

Be, by absolute compulsion such as made him live at all,

Go on living to the fated end of life whate'er befall.

What though, as on earth he darkling grovels, man descry the sphere,

Next life's—call it, heaven of freedom, close above and crystal-clear?

He shall find—say, hell to punish who in aught curtails the term,

Fain would act the butterfly before he has played out the worm.

God, soul, earth, heaven, hell,—five facts now: what is to desiderate?

#### REASON.

Nothing! Henceforth man's existence bows to the monition "Wait!"

Take the joys and bear the sorrows—neither with extreme concern!

Living here means nescience simply: 'tis next life that helps to learn.

Shut those eyes, next life will open,—stop those ears, next life will teach

Hearing's office,—close those lips, next life will give the power of speech!

Or, if action more amuse thee than the passive attitude,

Bravely bustle through thy being, busy thee for ill or good,

Reap this life's success or failure! Soon shall things be unperplexed

And the right and wrong, now tangled, lie unravelled in the next."

#### FANCY.

Not so fast! Still more concession! not alone do I declare

Life must needs be borne,—I also will that man become aware

Life has worth incalculable, every moment that he spends

So much gain or loss for that next life which on this life depends.

Good, done here, be there rewarded,—evil, worked here, there amerced!

Six facts now, and all established, plain to man the last as first.

## REASON.

There was good and evil, then, defined to man by this decree?

*Was*—for at its promulgation both alike have ceased to be.

Prior to this last announcement "Certainly as God exists,

As He made man's soul, as soul is quenchless by the deathly mists,

Yet is, all the same, forbidden premature escape from time

To eternity's provided purer air and brighter clime,—

Just so certainly depends it on the use to which man turns

Earth, the good or evil done there, whether after death he earns

Life eternal,—heaven, the phrase be, or eternal death,—say, hell.

As his deeds, so proves his portion, doing ill or doing well!"

—Prior to this last announcement, earth was man's probation-place:

Liberty of doing evil gave his doing good a grace;

Once lay down the law, with Nature's simple "Such effects succeed

Causes such, and heaven or hell depends upon man's earthly deed

Just as surely as depends the straight or else the crooked line

On his making point meet point or with or else without incline,"—

Thenceforth neither good nor evil does man, doing what he must.

Lay but down that law as stringent "Wouldst thou live again, be just!"

As this other "Wouldst thou live now, regularly draw thy breath!

For, suspend the operation, straight law's breach results in death—"

And (provided always, man, addressed this mode, be sound and sane)

Prompt and absolute obedience, never doubt, will law obtain!

Tell not me "Look round us! nothing each side but acknowledged law,

Now styled God's—now, Nature's edict!"

Where's obedience without flaw

Paid to either? What's the adage rife in man's mouth? Why, "The best

I both see and praise, the worst I follow"—which, despite professed

Seeing, praising, all the same he follows, since he disbelieves

In the heart of him that edict which for truth his head receives.

There's evading and persuading and much making law amende

Somehow, there's the nice distinction 'twixt fast foes and faulty friends,

—Any consequence except inevitable death when "Die,

Whoso breaks our law!" they publish, God and Nature equally.

Law that's kept or broken—subject to man's will and pleasure! Whence?

How comes law to bear eluding? Not because of impotence:

Certain laws exist already which to hear means to obey;

Therefore not without a purpose these man must, while those man may

Keep and, for the keeping, haply gain approval and reward.

Break through this last superstructure, all is empty air—no sward

Firm like my first fact to stand on "God there is, and soul there is,"

And soul's earthly life-allotment: wherein, by hypothesis,

Soul is bound to pass probation, prove its powers, and exercise

Sense and thought on fact, and then, from fact educing fit surmise,

Ask itself, and of itself have solely answer, "Does the scope

Earth affords of fact to judge by warrant future fear or hope?"

Thus have we come back full circle: fancy's footsteps one by one

Go their round conducting reason to the point where they began,

Left where we were left so lately, Dear and True! When, half a week  
 Since, we walked and talked and thus I told you, how suffused a cheek  
 You had turned me had I sudden brought the blush into the smile  
 By some word like "Filly argued! you know better all the while!"  
 Now, from me—Oh not a blush but, how much more, a joyous glow,  
 Laugh triumphant, would it strike did your "Yes, better I do know"  
 Break, my warrant for assurance! which assurance may not be  
 It, supplanting hope, assurance needs must change this life to me.  
 So, I hope—no more than hope; but hope—no less than hope, because  
 I can fathom, by no plumb-line sunk in life's apparent laws,  
 How I may in any instance fix where change should meetly fall  
 Nor involve, by one revisal, abrogation of them all:  
 —Which again involves as utter change in life thus law-released,  
 Whence the good of goodness vanished when the ill of evil ceased.  
 Whereas, life and laws apparent re-instated, —all we know,  
 All, we know not,—o'er our heaven again cloud closes, until, lo—  
 Hope the arrowy, just as constant, comes to pierce its gloom, compelled  
 By a power and by a purpose which, if no one else beheld,  
 I behold in life, so—hope!

Sad summing-up of all to say!  
*Athanasius contra mundum*, why should he hope more than they?  
 So are men made notwithstanding, such magnetic virtue darts  
 From each head their fancy haloes to their unresisting hearts!  
 Here I stand, methinks a stone's throw from yon village! this morn

Traversed for the sake of looking one last look at its forlorn  
 Tenement's ignoble fortune: through a crevice, plain its floor  
 Piled with provender for cattle, while a dung-heap blocked the door.  
 In that squalid Bossex, under that obscene red roof, arose,  
 Like a fiery flying serpent from its egg, a soul—Rousseau's.  
 Turn thence! Is it Diodati joins the glimmer of the lake?  
 There I plucked a leaf, one week since,—ivy, plucked for Byron's sake.  
 Famed unfortunates! And yet, because of that phosphoric fame  
 Swathing blackness' self with brightness till putridity looked flame,  
 All the world was witched: and wherefore? what could lie beneath, allure  
 Heart of man to let corruption serve man's head as cynosure?  
 Was the magic in the dictum "All that's good is gone and past;  
 Bad and worse still grows the present, and the worst of all comes last:  
 Which believe—for I believe it?" So preached one his gospel-news;  
 While melodious moaned the other "Dying day with dolphin-hues!  
 Storm, for loveliness and darkness like a woman's eye! Ye mounts  
 Where I climb to 'scape my fellow, and thou sea wherein he counts  
 Not one inch of vile dominion! What were your especial worth  
 Failed ye to enforce the maxim 'Of all objects found on earth  
 Man is meanest, much too honoured when compared with—what by odds  
 Beats him—any dog: so, let him go a-howling to his gods!  
 Which believe—for I believe it!" such the comfort man received  
 Sadly since perforce, he must: for why? the famous bard believed!

Fame! Then, give me fame, a moment! As  
 I gather at a glance  
 Human glory after glory vivifying yon expanse,  
 Let me grasp them all together, hold on high  
 and brandish well  
 Beacon-like above the rapt world ready,  
 whether heaven or hell  
 Send the dazzling summons earthward, to  
 submit itself the same,  
 Take on trust the hope or else despair flashed  
 full on face by—Fame!  
 Thanks, thou pine-tree of Makistos, wide thy  
 giant torch I wave!  
 Know ye whence I plucked the pillar, late  
 with sky for architrave?  
 This the trunk, the central solid Knowledge,  
 kindled core, began  
 Tugging earth-deeps, trying heaven-heights,  
 rooted yonder at Lausanne.  
 This which flits and spits, the aspic,—  
 sparkles in and out the boughs  
 Now, and now condensed, the python, coil-  
 ing round and round allows  
 Scarce the bole its due effulgence, dulled by  
 flake on flake of Wit—  
 Laughter so bejewels Learning,—what but  
 Ferney nourished it?  
 Nay, nor fear—since every resin feeds the  
 flame—that I dispense  
 With yon Bossex terebinth-tree's all-explosive  
 Eloquence;  
 No, be sure! nor, any more than thy resplen-  
 dency, Jean-Jacques,  
 Dare I want thine, Diodati! What though  
 monkeys and macaques  
 Gibber "Byron"? Byron's ivy rears a branch  
 beyond the crew,  
 Green for ever, no deciduous trash macaques  
 and monkeys chew!  
 As Rousseau, then, eloquent, as Byron prime  
 in poet's power,—  
 Detonations, fulgurations, smiles—the rain-  
 bow, tears—the shower,—  
 Lo, I lift the coruscating marvel—Fame!  
 and, famed, declare  
 —Learned for the nonce as Gibbon, witty as  
 wit's self Voltaire . . .

O the sorriest of conclusions to whatever man  
 of sense  
 Mid the millions stands the unit, takes no  
 flare for evidence!  
 Yet the millions have their portion, live their  
 calm or troublous day,  
 Find significance in fireworks: so, by help of  
 mine, they may  
 Confidently lay to heart and lock in head  
 their life long—this:  
 "He there with the brand flamboyant, broad  
 o'er night's forlorn abyss,  
 Crowned by prose and verse; and wield-  
 ing, with Wit's bauble, Learning's  
 rod . . .  
 Well? Why, he at least believed in Soul,  
 was very sure of God.  
 So the poor smile played, that evening: pallid  
 smile long since extinct  
 Here in London's mid-November! Not so  
 loosely thoughts were linked,  
 Six weeks since as I, descending in the sunset  
 from Salève,  
 Found the chain, I seemed to forge there,  
 flawless till it reached your grave,—  
 Not so filmy was the texture, but I bore it in  
 my breast  
 Safe thus far. And since I found a some-  
 thing in me would not rest  
 Till I, link by link, unravelled any tangle of  
 the chain,  
 —Here it lies, for much or little! I have  
 lived all o'er again  
 That last pregnant hour: I saved it, just as I  
 could save a root  
 Disinterred for re-interment when the time  
 best helps to shoot.  
 Life is stocked with germs of torpid life; but  
 may I never wake  
 Those of mine whose resurrection could not  
 be without earthquake!  
 Rest all such, unraised forever! Be this,  
 sad yet sweet, the sole  
 Memory evoked from slumber! Least part  
 this: then what the whole?

# THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC.

1878.

[Poet Number One is *René Gentilhomme*, page to the Prince of Condé, whose chance of succession to the French throne was spoilt by Anne of Austria giving birth to a dauphin. The poem partly turns on this incident. Poet Number Two is *Maillard*, who managed to make Voltaire look foolish in the circumstances narrated in this poem.]

## I.

SUCH a starved bank of moss  
Till that May-morn,  
Blue ran the flash across:  
Violets were born!

## II.

Sky—what a scowl of cloud  
Till, near and far,  
Ray on ray split the shroud  
Splendid, a star!

World—how it walled about  
Life with disgrace  
Till God's own smile came out:  
That was thy face!

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC.

### I

"FAME!" Yes, I said it and you read it.  
First,  
Praise the good log-fire! Winter howls  
without.  
Crowd closer, let us! Ha, the secret  
nursed  
Inside yon hollow, crusted roundabout  
With copper where the clamp was,—how the  
burst  
Vindicates flame the stealthy feeder! Spout  
Thy splendidest—a minute and no more?  
So soon again all sobered as before?

### II.

Nay, for I need to see your face! One stroke  
Adroitly dealt, and lo, the pomp revealed!  
Fire in his pandemonium, heart of oak  
Palatial, where he wrought the works  
concealed  
Beneath the solid-seeming roof I broke,  
As redly up and out and off they reeled  
Like disconcerted imps, those thousand sparks  
From fire's slow tunnelling of vaults and arcs!

### III.

Up, out, and off, see! Were you never used,—  
You now, in childish days or rather nights,—  
As I was, to watch sparks fly? not amused  
By that old nurse-taught game which gave  
the sprites  
Each one his title and career,—confused  
Belief 'twas all long over with the flights  
From earth to heaven of hero, sage and bard,  
And bade them once more strive for Fame's  
award?

### IV.

New long bright life! and happy chance  
befell—  
That I know—when some prematurely lost  
Child of disaster bore away the bell  
From some too-pampered son of fortune,  
crossed  
Never before my chimney broke the spell!  
Octogenarian Keats gave up the ghost,  
While—never mind Who was it cumbered  
earth—  
Sank stifled, span-long brightness, in the  
birth.

Well, try a variation of the game !

Our log is old ship-timber, broken bulk.  
There's sea-brine spirits up the brimstone  
flame,

That crimson-curly spiral proves the hulk  
Was saturate with—ask the chloride's name  
From somebody who knows ! I shall not  
sulk

If yonder greenish tonguelet licked from  
brass

Its life, I thought was fed on copperas.

## VI.

Anyhow, there they flutter ! What may be  
The style and prowess of that purple one?  
Who is the hero other eyes shall see  
Than yours and mine? That yellow, deep  
to dun—

Conjecture how the sage glows, whom not we  
But those unborn are to get warmth by !

Son

O' the coal,—as Job and Hebrew name a  
spark,—

What hard, in thy red soaring, scares the  
dark ?

## VII.

Oh and the lesser lights, the dearer still

That they elude a vulgar eye, give ours

The glimpse repaying astronomic skill

Which searched sky deeper, passed those  
patent powers

Constellate proudly,—swords, scrolls, harps,  
that fill

The vulgar eye to surfeit,—found best  
flowers

Hid deepest in the dark,—named unplucked  
grace

Of soul, ungathered beauty, form or face !

## VIII.

Up with thee, mouldering ash men never  
knew,

But I know ! flash thou forth, and figure  
bold,

Calm and columnar as yon flame I view !

Oh and I bid thee,—to whom fortune  
doled

Scantly all other gifts out—bicker blue,  
Beauty for all to see, zinc's uncontrolled  
Flake-brilliance ! Not my fault if these were  
shown,  
Grandeur and beauty both, to me alone.

No ! as the first was boy's play, this proves  
mere

Stripling's amusement : manhood's sport  
be grave !

Choose rather sparkles quenched in mid  
career,

Their boldness and their brightness could  
not save

(In some old night of time on some lone drear  
Sea-coast, monopolized by crag or cave)

—Save from ignoble exit into smoke,  
Silence, oblivion, all death-damps that  
choke !

## X.

Launched by our ship-wood, float we, once  
adrift

In fancy to that land-strip waters wash,  
We both know well ! Where uncouth tribes  
made shift

Long since to just keep life in, billows  
dash

Nigh over folk who shudder at each lift

Of the old tyrant tempest's whirlwind-lash  
Though they have built the serviceable town  
Tempests but tease now, billows drench, not  
drown.

## XI.

Croisic, the spit of sandy rock which juts  
Spitefully northward, bears nor tree nor  
shrub

To tempt the ocean, show what Gufrande  
shuts

Behind her, past wild Batz whose Saxons  
grub

The ground for crystals grown where ocean  
gluts

Their promontory's breadth with salt : all  
stub

Of rock and stretch of sand, the land's last  
strife

To rescue a poor remnant for dear life.

## XII.

Arid what life! Here was, from the world  
to choose,

The Druids' chosen chief of homes: they  
reared

—Only their women,—mid the slush and ooze  
Of yon low islet,—to their sun, revered

In strange stone guise,—a temple. May-  
dawn dews

Saw the old structure levelled; when  
there peered

May's earliest eve-star, high and wide once  
more

Up towered the new pile perfect as before:

## XIII.

Seeing that priestesses—and all were such—

Unbuilt and then rebuilt it every May,

Each alike helping—well, if not too much!

For, mid their eagerness to outstrip day

And get work done, if any loosed her clutch

And let a single stone drop, straight a prey

Herself fell, torn to pieces, limb from limb,

By sisters in full chorus glad and grim.

## XIV.

And still so much remains of that grey cult,

That even now, of nights, do women steal

To the sole Menhir standing, and insult

The antagonistic church-spire by appeal

To power discrowned in vain, since each adult

Believes the gruesome thing she clasps  
may heal

Whatever plague no priestly help can cure:

Kiss but the cold stone, the event is sure!

## XV.

Nay more: on May-morns, that primeval rite

Of temple-building, with its punishment

For rash precipitation, lingers, spite

Of all remonstrance; vainly are they shent,

Those girls who form a ring and, dressed in  
white,

Dance round it, till some sister's strength  
be spent:

Touch but the Menhir, straight the rest turn  
roughs

From gentles, fall on her with fisticuffs.

## XVI.

Oh and, for their part, boys from door to door

Sing unintelligible words to tunes

As obsolete: "scraps of Druidic lore,"

Sigh scholars, as each pale man importunes

Vainly the mumbling to speak plain once  
more.

Enough of this old worship, rounds and  
runes!

They serve my purpose, which is but to show  
Croisic to-day and Croisic long ago.

## XVII.

What have we sailed to see, then, wafted there

By fancy from the log that ends its days

Of much adventure 'neath skies foul or fair,

On waters rough or smooth, in this good  
blaze

We two crouch round so closely, bidding care

Keep outside with the snow-storm? Some-  
thing says

"Fit time for story-telling!" I begin—

Why not at Croisic, port we first put in?

## XVIII.

Anywhere serves: for point me out the  
place

Wherever man has made himself a home,

And there I find the story of our race

In little, just at Croisic as at Rome.

What matters the degree? the kind I trace.

Druids their temple, Christians have their  
dome:

So with mankind; and Croisic, I'll engage,

With Rome yields sort for sort, in age for age.

## XIX.

No doubt, men vastly differ: and we need

Some strange exceptional benevolence

Of nature's sunshine to develop seed

So well, in the less-favoured clime, that  
thence

We may discern how shrub means tree indeed

Though dwarfed till scarcely shrub in  
evidence.

Man in the ice-house or the hot-house ranks

With beasts or gods: stove-fenced, give warmth  
the thanks!

## XX.

While, is there any ice-checked? Such shall learn

I am thankful, who propose to slake  
His thirst for tasting how it feels to turn  
Cedar from hyssop-on-the-wall. I wake  
No memories of what is harsh and stern  
In ancient Croisic-nature, much less rake  
The ashes of her last warmth till out leaps  
Live Hervé Riel, the single spark she keeps.

## XXI.

Take these two, see, each outbreak,—spirit  
and spirit

Of fire from our brave billet's either edge  
Which—call maternal Croisic ocean-girt!

These two shall thoroughly redeem my  
pledge.

One flames fierce gules, its feebler rival—  
vert,

Heralds would tell you: heroes, I allege,  
They both were: soldiers, sailors, statesmen,  
priests,

Lawyers, physicians—guess what gods or  
beasts!

## XXII.

None of them all, but—poets, if you please!

"What, even there, endowed with knack  
of rhyme,

Did two among the aborigines

Of that rough region pass the ungracious  
time

Suiting, to rumble-tumble of the sea's,

The songs forbidden a serener clime?

Or had they universal audience—that's

To say, the folk of Croisic, ay and Batz?"

## XXIII.

Open your ears! Each poet in his day

Had such a mighty moment of success

As pinnaced him straight, in full display,

For the whole world to worship—nothing  
less!

Was not the whole polite world Paris, pray?

And did not Paris, for one moment—  
yes,

Worship these poet-flames, our red and green,

One at a time, a century between?

## XXIV.

And yet you never heard their names! Assist,  
Clio, Historic Muse, while I record

Great deeds! Let fact, not fancy, break the  
mist

And bid each sun emerge, in turn play lord  
Of day, one moment! Hear the annalist

Tell a strange story, true to the least word

At Croisic, sixteen hundred years and ten

Since Christ, forth flamed yon liquid ruby,  
then.

## XXV.

Know him henceforth as René Gentilhomme

—Appropriate appellation! noble birth

And knightly blazon, the device wherefrom

Was "Better do than say"! In Croisic's  
dearth

Why prison his career while Christendom

Lay open to reward acknowledged worth?

He therefore left it at the proper age

And got to be the Prince of Condé's page.

## XXVI.

Which Prince of Condé, whom men called  
"The Duke,"

—Failing the king, his cousin, of an heir,

(As one might hold would hap, without  
rebuke,

Since Anne of Austria, all the world was  
'ware,

Twenty-three years long sterile, scarce could  
look

For issue)—failing Louis of so rare

A godsend, it was natural the Prince

Should hear men call him "Next King" too,  
nor wince.

## XXVII.

Now, as this reasonable hope, by growth

Of years, nay, tens of years, looked plump  
almost

To bursting,—would the brothers, childless  
both,

Louis and Gaston, give but up the ghost—

Condé, called "Duke" and "Next King,"  
nothing loth

Awaited his appointment to the post,

And wiled away the time, as best he might,

Till Providence should settle things aright.



So, at a certain pleasure-house, withdrawn  
 From cities where a whisper breeds offence,  
 He sat him down to watch the streak of dawn  
 Testify to first stir of Providence ;  
 And, since dull country life makes courtiers  
 yawn,  
 There wanted not a poet to dispense  
 Song's remedy for spleen-fits all and some,  
 Which poet was Page René Gentilhomme.

## XXIX.

A poet born and bred, his very sire  
 A poet also, author of a piece  
 Printed and published, " Ladies — their  
 attire " :  
 Therefore the son, just born at his decease,  
 Was bound to keep alive the sacred fire,  
 And kept it, yielding moderate increase  
 Of songs and sonnets, madrigals, and much  
 Rhyming thought poetry and praised as such.

## XXX.

Rubbish unutterable (bear in mind !)  
 Rubbish not wholly without value, though,  
 Being to compliment the Duke designed  
 And bring the complimenter credit so, —  
 Pleasure with profit happily combined.  
 Thus René Gentilhomme rhymed, rhymed  
 till — lo,  
 This happened, as he sat in an alcove  
 Elaborating rhyme for " love " — not " dove."

## XXXI.

He was alone : silence and solitude  
 Befit the votary of the Muse. Around,  
 Nature — not our new picturesque and rude,  
 But trim tree-cinctured stately garden-  
 ground —  
 Breathed polish and politeness. All-imbued  
 With these, he sat absorbed in one profound  
 Excogitation " Were it best to hint  
 Or boldly boast ' She loves me, — Araminte ' ?"

## XXXII.

When suddenly flashed lightning, searing sight  
 Almost, so close to eyes ; then, quick on  
 flash,

Followed the thunder, splitting earth down-  
 right  
 Where René sat a-rhyming : with huge crash  
 Of marble into atoms infinite —  
 Marble which, stately, dared the world to  
 dash  
 The stone-thing proud, high-pillared, from  
 its place :  
 One flash, and dust was all that lay at base.

## XXXIII.

So, when the horrible confusion loosed  
 Its wrappage round his senses, and, with  
 breath,  
 Seeing and hearing by degrees induced  
 Conviction what he felt was life, not  
 death —  
 His fluttered faculties came back to roost  
 One after one, as fowls do : ay, beneath,  
 About his very feet there, lay in dust  
 Earthly presumption paid by heaven's disgust.

## XXXIV.

For, what might be the thunder-smitten thing  
 But, pillared high and proud, in marble  
 guise,  
 A ducal crown — which meant " Now Duke :  
 Next, King " ?  
 Since such the Prince was, not in his own  
 eyes  
 Alone, but all the world's. Pebble from sling  
 Prostrates a giant ; so can pulverize  
 Marble pretension — how much more, make  
 moult  
 A peacock-prince his plume — God's thunder-  
 bolt.

## XXXV.

That was enough for René, that first fact  
 Thus flashed into him. Up he looked :  
 all blue  
 And bright the sky above ; earth firm, compact  
 Beneath his footing, lay apparent too ;  
 Opposite stood the pillar : nothing lacked  
 There, but the Duke's crown : see, its  
 fragments strew  
 The earth, — about his feet lie atoms fine  
 Where he sat nursing late his fourteenth  
 line !

## XXXVI.

So, for the moment, all the universe  
 Being abolished, all 'twixt God and him,—  
 Earth's praise or blame, its blessing or its  
 curse,  
 Of one and the same value,—to the brim  
 Flooded with truth for better or for worse,—  
 He pounces on the writing-paper, prim,  
 Keeping its place on table: not a dint  
 Nor speck had damaged "Ode to Araminte."

## XXXVII.

And over the neat crowquill calligraph  
 His pen goes blotting, blurring, as an ox  
 Tramples a flower-bed in a garden,—laugh  
 You may!—so does not he, whose quick  
 heart knocks  
 Audibly at his breast: an epitaph  
 On earth's break-up, amid the falling  
 rocks,  
 He might be penning in a wild dismay,  
 Caught with his work half-done on Judgment  
 Day.

## XXXVIII.

And what is it so terribly he pens,  
 Ruining "Cupid, Venus, wile and smile,  
 Hearts, darts," and all his day's *divinior*  
*mens*  
 Judged necessary to a perfect style?  
 Little reck's René, with a breast to cleanse,  
 Of Rhadamanthine law that reigned ere-  
 while:  
 Brimful of truth, truth's outburst will convince  
 (Style or no style) who bears truth's brunt—  
 the Prince.

## XXXIX.

"Condé, called 'Duke,' be called just  
 'Duke,' not more  
 To life's end! 'Next King' thou forsooth  
 wilt be?  
 Ay, when this bauble, as it decked before  
 Thy pillar, shall again, for France to see,  
 Take its proud station there! Let France  
 adore  
 No longer an illusive mock-sun—thee—  
 But keep her homage for Sol's self, about  
 To rise and put pretenders to the rout!

## XL.

"What? France so God-abandoned that  
 her root  
 Regal, though many a Spring it gaveno sign,  
 Lacks power to make the bole, now branch-  
 less, shoot  
 Greenly as ever? Nature, though benign,  
 Thwarts ever the ambitious and astute.  
 In store for such is punishment condign:  
 Sure as thy Duke's crown to the earth was  
 hurled,  
 So sure, next year, a Dauphin glads the  
 world!"

## XLI.

Which penned—some forty lines to this  
 effect—  
 Our René folds his paper, marches brave  
 Back to the mansion, luminous, erect,  
 Triumphant, an emancipated slave.  
 There stands the Prince. "How now?  
 My Duke's crown wrecked?  
 What may this mean?" The answer  
 René gave  
 Was—handing him the verses, with the due  
 Incline of body: "Sir, God's word to you!"

## XLII.

The Prince read, paled, was silent; all around,  
 The courtier-company, to whom he passed  
 The paper, read, in equal silence bound.  
 René grew also by degrees aghast  
 At his own fit of courage—palely found  
 Way of retreat from that pale presence:  
 classed  
 Once more among the cony-kind. "Oh, son,  
 It is a feeble folk!" saith Solomon.

Vainly he apprehended evil: since,  
 When, at the year's end, even as foretold,  
 Forth came the Dauphin who dis-crowned the  
 Prince  
 Of that long-craved mere visionary gold,  
 'Twas no fit time for envy to evince  
 Malice, be sure! The timidest grew bold:  
 Of all that courtier-company not one  
 But left the semblance for the actual sun.

And all sorts and conditions that stood by  
 At René's burning moment, bright escape  
 Of soul, bore witness to the prophecy.  
 Which witness took the customary shape  
 Of verse ; a score of poets in full cry  
 Hailed the inspired one. Nantes and  
 Tours agape,  
 Soon Paris caught the infection ; gaining  
 strength,  
 How could it fail to reach the Court at length ?

## XLV.

"O poet !" smiled King Louis, "and besides,  
 O prophet ! Sure, by miracle announced,  
 My babe will prove a prodigy. Who chides  
 Henceforth the unchilded monarch shall  
 be trounced.  
 For irreligion : since the fool derides  
 Plain miracle by which this prophet pounced  
 Exactly on the moment I should lift  
 Like Simeon, in my arms, a babe, "God's  
 gift !"

## XLVI.

"So call the boy ! and call this bard and seer  
 By a new title ! him I raise to rank  
 Of "Royal Poet : " poet without peer !  
 Whose fellows only have themselves to thank  
 If humbly they must follow in the rear  
 My René. He's the master : they must  
 clank  
 Their chains of song, confessed his slaves ;  
 for why ?  
 They poetize, while he can prophesy !"

## XLVII.

So said, so done ; our René rose august,  
 "The Royal Poet ;" straightway put in  
 type  
 His poem-prophecy, and (fair and just  
 Procedure) added,—now that time was ripe  
 For proving friends did well his word to  
 trust,—  
 Those attestations, turned to lyre or pipe,  
 Which friends broke out with when he dared  
 foretell  
 The Dauphin's birth : friends trusted, and did  
 well.

## XLVIII.

Moreover he got painted by Du Pré,  
 Engraved by Daret also, and prefixed  
 The portrait to his book : a crown of bay  
 Circled his brows, with rose and myrtle  
 mixed ;  
 And Latin verses, lovely in their way,  
 Described him as "the biforked hill be-  
 twixt :  
 Since he hath scaled Parnassus at one jump,  
 Joining the Delphic quill and Getic trump."

## XLIX.

Whereof came . . . What, it lasts, our spirt,  
 thus long  
 —The red fire ? That's the reason must  
 excuse  
 My letting flicker René's prophet-song  
 No longer ; for its pertinacious hues  
 Must fade before its fellow joins the throng  
 Of sparks departed up the chimney, dues  
 To dark oblivion. At the word, it winks,  
 Rallies, relapses, dwindles, deathward sinks !

So does our poet. All this burst of fame,  
 Fury of favour, Royal Poetship,  
 Prophetship, book, verse, picture—thereof  
 came  
 —Nothing ! That's why I would not let  
 outstrip  
 Red his green rival flamelet : just the same  
 Ending in smoke waits both ! In vain we  
 rip  
 The past, no further faintest trace remains  
 Of René to reward our pious pains.

## LL.

Somebody saw a portrait framed and glazed  
 At Croisic. "Who may be this glorified  
 Mortal unheard-of hitherto ?" amazed  
 That person asked the owner by his side,  
 Who proved as ignorant. The question  
 raised  
 Provoked inquiry ; key by key was tried  
 On Croisic's portrait-puzzle, till back flew  
 The wards at one key's touch, which key was  
 —Who ?

## LII.

The other famous poet! Wait thy turn,  
 Thou green, our red's competitor! Enough  
 Just now to note 'twas he that itched to learn  
 (A hundred years ago) how fate could puff  
 Heaven-high (a hundred years before) then  
 spurn  
 To suds so big a bubble in some huff:  
 Since green too found red's portrait,—having  
 heard  
 Hitherto of red's rare self not one word.

## LIII.

And he with zeal addressed him to the task  
 Of hunting out, by all and any means,  
 —Who might the brilliant bard be, born to  
 bask  
 Butterfly-like in shine which kings and  
 queens  
 And baby-dauphins shed? Much need to ask!  
 Is fame so fickle that what perks and preens  
 The eyed wing, one imperial minute, dips  
 Next sudden moment into blind eclipse?

## LIV.

After a vast expenditure of pains,  
 Our second poet found the prize he sought:  
 Urged in his search by something that restrains  
 From undue triumph famed ones who have  
 fought,  
 Or simply, poetizing, taxed their brains:  
 Something that tells such—dear is triumph  
 bought  
 If it means only basking in the midst  
 Of fame's brief sunshine, as thou, René, didst.

## LV.

For, what did searching find at last but this?  
 Quoth somebody "I somehow somewhere  
 seem  
 To think I heard one old De Chevaye is  
 Or was possessed of René's works!" which  
 gleam  
 Of light from out the dark proved not amiss  
 To track, by correspondence on the theme;  
 And soon the twilight broadened into day,  
 For thus to question answered De Chevaye.

## LVI.

"True it is, I did once possess the works:  
 You want account of—works—to call them  
 so,—  
 Comprised in one small book: the volume  
 lurks  
 (Some fifty leaves in *duodecimo*)  
 'Neath certain ashes which my soul it irks:  
 Still to remember, because long ago  
 That and my other rare shelf-occupants  
 Perished by burning of my house at Nantes.

## LVII.

"Yet of that book one strange particular  
 Still stays in mind with me"—and there-  
 upon  
 Followed the story. "Few the poems  
 are;  
 The book was two thirds filled up with this  
 one,  
 And sundry witnesses from near and far  
 That here at least was prophesying done  
 By prophet, so as to preclude all doubt,  
 Before the thing he prophesied about."

## LVIII.

That's all he knew, and all the poet  
 learned,  
 And all that you and I are like to hear  
 Of René; since not only book is burned  
 But memory extinguished,—nay, I fear,  
 Portrait is gone too: nowhere I discerned  
 A trace of it at Croisic. "Must a tear  
 Needs fall for that?" you smile. "How  
 fortune fares  
 With such a mediocrity, who cares?"

## LIX.

Well, I care—intimately care to have  
 Experience how a human creature felt  
 In after-life, who bore the burden grave  
 Of certainly believing God had dealt  
 For once directly with him: did not rave!  
 —A maniac, did not find his reason  
 melt  
 —An idiot, but went on, in peace or strife,  
 The world's way, lived an ordinary life.

## LX.

How many problems that one fact would solve !

An ordinary soul, no more, no less,  
About whose life earth's common sights  
revolve,

On whom is brought to bear, by thunder-  
stress,

This fact—God tasks him, and will not absolve  
Task's negligent performer ! Can you guess  
How such a soul,—the task performed to  
point,—

Goes back to life nor finds things out of joint ?

## LXI.

Does he stand stock-like henceforth ? or  
proceed

Dizzily, yet with course straightforward  
still,

Down-trampling vulgar hindrance ?—as the  
reed

Is crushed beneath its tramp when that  
blind will

Hatched in some old-world beast's brain bids  
it speed

Where the sun wants brute-presence to fulfil  
Life's purpose in a new far zone, ere ice  
Enwomb the pasture-tract its fortalice.

## LXII.

I think no such direct plain truth consists  
With actual sense and thought and what  
they take

To be the solid walls of life : mere mists—  
How such would, at that truth's first  
piercing, break

Into the nullity they are !—slight lists  
Wherein the puppet-champions wage, for  
sake

Of some mock-mistress, mimic war : laid low  
At trumpet-blast, there's shown the world,  
one foe !

## LXIII.

No, we must play the pageant out, observe  
The tourney-regulations, and regard  
Success—to meet the blunted spear nor  
swerve,

Failure—to break no bones yet fall on  
award ;

Must prove we have—not courage ? well then,  
—nerve !

And, at the day's end, boast the crown's  
award—

Be warranted as promising to wield  
Weapons, no sham, in a true battle-field.

## LXIV.

Meantime, our simulated thunderclaps  
Which tell us counterfeited truths—these  
same

Are—sound, when music storms the soul,  
perhaps ?

—Sight, beauty, every dart of every aim  
That touches just, then seems, by strange  
relapse,

To fall effectless from the soul it came  
As if to fix its own, but simply smote  
And startled to vague beauty more remote ?

## LXV.

So do we gain enough—yet not too much—  
Acquaintance with that outer element  
Wherein there's operation (call it such !)  
Quite of another kind than we the pent  
On earth are proper to receive. Our hutch  
Lights up at the least chink : let roof be  
rent—

How inmates huddle, blinded at first spasm.  
Cognizant of the sun's self through the chasm !

## LXVI.

Therefore, who knows if this our René's quick  
Subsidence from as sudden noise and glare  
Into oblivion was impolitic ?

No doubt his soul became at once aware  
That, after prophecy, the rhyming-trick  
Is poor employment : human praises scare  
Rather than soothe ears all a-tingle yet  
With tones few hear and live, but none forget.

## LXVII.

There's our first famous poet. Step thou  
forth

Second consummate songster ! See, the  
tongue

Of fire that typifies thee, owns thy worth  
In yellow, purple mixed its green among,

No pure and simple resin from the North,  
But composite with virtues that belong  
To Southern culture! Love not more than hate  
Helped to a blaze . . . But I anticipate.

## LXVIII.

Prepare to witness a combustion rich  
And riotously splendid, far beyond  
Poor René's lambent little streamer which  
Only played candle to a Court grown fond  
By baby-birth: this soared to such a pitch,  
Alternately such colours doffed and donned,  
That when I say it dazzled Paris—please  
Know that it brought Voltaire upon his knees!

## LXIX.

Who did it, was a dapper gentleman,  
Paul Desforges Maillard, Croisickese by  
birth,  
Whose birth that century ended which began  
By similar bestowment on our earth  
Of the aforesaid René. Cease to scan  
The ways of Providence! See Croisic's  
dearth—

Not Paris in its plenitude—suffice  
To furnish France with her best poet twice!

## LXX.

Till he was thirty years of age, the vein  
Poetic yielded rhyme by drops and spirits:  
In verses of society had lain  
His talent chiefly; but the Muse asserts  
Privilege most by treating with disdain  
Epics the bard mouths out, or odes he blurts  
Spasmodically forth. Have people time  
And patience nowadays for thought in rhyme?

## LXXI.

So, his achievements were the quatrain's inch  
Of homage, or at most the sonnet's ell  
Of admiration: welded lines with clinch  
Of ending word and word, to every belle  
In Croisic's bounds; these, brisk as any finch,  
He twittered till his fame had reached as  
well  
Guérande as Batz; but there fame stopped,  
for—curse  
On fortune—outside lay the universe!

## LXXII.

That's Paris. Well,—why not break bounds,  
and send  
Song onward till it echo at the gates  
Of Paris whither all ambitions tend,  
And end too, seeing that success there sates  
The soul which hungers most for fame?  
Why spend  
A minute in deciding, while, by Fate's  
Decree, there happens to be just the prize  
Proposed there, suiting souls that poetize?

## LXXIII.

A prize indeed, the Academy's own self  
Proposes to what bard shall best indite  
A piece describing how, through shoal and  
shelf,  
The Art of Navigation, steered aright,  
Has, in our last king's reign,—the lucky elf,—  
Reached, one may say, Perfection's haven  
quite,  
And there cast anchor. At a glance one sees  
The subject's crowd of capabilities!

## LXXIV.

Neptune and Amphitrité! Thetis, who  
Is either Tethys or as good—both tag!  
Triton can shove along a vessel too:  
It's Virgil! Then the winds that blow or  
lag,—  
De Maille, Vendôme, Vermandois! Tou-  
louse blew  
Longest, we reckon: he must puff the flag  
To fullest outflare; while our lacking nymph  
Be Anne of Austria, Regent o'er the lymph!

## LXXV.

Promised, performed! Since *irritabilis gens*  
Holds of the feverish impotence that  
strives  
To stay an itch by prompt resource to pen's  
Scratching itself on paper; placid lives,  
Leisurely works mark the *divinior mens*:  
Bees brood above the honey in their  
hives;  
Gnats are the busy bustlers. Splash and  
scrawl,—  
Completed lay thy piece, swift penman Paul!

## LXXVI.

To Paris with the product! This despatched,  
 One had to wait the Forty's slow and  
 sure  
 Verdict, as best one might. Our penman  
 scratched  
 Away perforce the itch that knows no cure  
 But daily paper-friction: more than matched  
 His first feat by a second—tribute pure  
 And heartfelt to the Forty when their voice  
 Should peal with one accord "Be Paul our  
 choice!"

## LXXVII.

Scratch, scratch went much laudation of that  
 sane  
 And sound Tribunal, delegates august  
 Of Phœbus and the Muses' sacred train—  
 Whom every poetaster tries to thrust  
 From where, high-throned, they dominate  
 the Seine:  
 Fruitless endeavour,—fail it shall and must!  
 Whereof in witness have not one and all  
 The Forty voices pealed "Our Choice be  
 Paul?"

## LXXVIII.

Thus Paul discounted his applause. Alack  
 For human expectation! Scarcely ink  
 Was dry when, lo, the perfect piece came  
 back  
 Rejected, shamed! Some other poet's  
 clink  
 "Thetis and Tethys" had seduced the pack  
 Of pedants to declare perfection's pink  
 A singularly poor production. "Whew!  
 The Forty are stark fools, I always knew."

## LXXIX.

First fury over (for Paul's race—to-wit,  
 Brain-vibrios—wriggle clear of protoplasm  
 Into minute life that's one fury-fit),  
 "These fools shall find a bard's enthusiasm  
 Comports with what should counterbalance  
 it—  
 Some knowledge of the world! No doubt,  
 organ  
 Effects the birth of verse which, born, de-  
 mands  
 Promic ministrations, swaddling hands!"

## LXXX.

"Verse must be cared for at this early  
 stage,  
 Handled, nay dandled even. I should  
 play  
 Their game indeed if, till it grew of age,  
 I meekly let these dotards frown away  
 My bantling from the rightful heritage  
 Of smiles and kisses! Let the public  
 say  
 If it be worthy praises or rebukes,  
 My poem, from these Forty old-perukes!"

## LXXXI.

So, by a friend, who boasts himself in grace  
 With no less than the Chevalier La  
 Roque,—  
 Eminent in those days for pride of place,  
 Seeing he had it in his power to block  
 The way or smooth the road to all the race  
 Of literators trudging up to knock  
 At Fame's exalted temple-door—for why?  
 He edited the Paris "Mercury":—

By this friend's help the Chevalier receives  
 Paul's poem, prefaced by the due appeal  
 To Cæsar from the Jews. As duly heaves  
 A sigh the Chevalier, about to deal  
 With case so customary—turns the leaves,  
 Finds nothing there to borrow, beg or  
 steal—  
 Then brightens up the critic's brow deep-  
 lined.  
 "The thing may be so cleverly declined!"

## LXXXII.

Down to desk, out with paper, up with  
 quill,  
 Dip and indite! "Sir, gratitude immense  
 For this true draught from the Pierian rill!  
 Our Academic clodpoles must be dense  
 Indeed to stand unnirrigated still.  
 No less, we critics dare not give offence  
 To grantees like the Forty: while we  
 mock  
 We grin and bear. So, here's your piece!  
 La Roque."

## LXXXIV.

"There now!" cries Paul: "the fellow  
can't avoid

Confessing that my piece deserves the  
palm;

And yet he dares not grant me space en-  
joyed

By every scribbler he permits embalm  
His crambo in the Journal's corner! Cloyed  
With stuff like theirs, no wonder if a

Be caused by verse like mine: though that's  
no cause

For his defrauding me of just applause.

## LXXXV.

"Aha, he fears the Forty, this poltroon?

First let him fear *me*! Change smooth  
speech to rough!

I'll speak my mind out, show the fellow soon  
Who is the foe to dread: insist enough

On my own merits till, as clear as noon,

He sees I am no man to take rebuff

As patiently as scribblers may and must!

Quick to the onslaught, out sword, cut and  
thrust!"

## LXXXVI.

And thereupon a fierce epistle flings

Its challenge in the critic's face. Alack!

Our bard mistakes his man! The gauntlet  
rings

On brazen visor proof against attack.

Prompt from his editorial throne up springs

The insulted magnate, and his mace falls,  
thwack,

On Paul's devoted brainpan,—quite away

From common courtesies of fencing-play!

## LXXXVII.

"Sir, will you have the truth? This piece  
of yours

Is simply execrable past belief.

I shrank from saying so; but, since nought  
cures

Conceit but truth, truth's at your service!

Brief,

Just so long as 'The Mercury' endures,

So long are you excluded by its Chief

From corner, nay, from cranny! Play the  
cock

O' the roost, henceforth, at Croisic!" wrote  
La Roque.

## LXXXVIII.

Paul yellowed, whitened, as his wrath from red  
Waxed incandescent. Now, this man of  
rhyme

Was merely foolish, faulty in the head

Not heart of him: conceit's a venial crime.

"Oh by no means malicious!" cousins said:

Fussily feeble,—harmless all the time,

Piddling at so-called satire—well-advised,

He held in most awe whom he satirized.

Accordingly his kith and kin—removed

From emulation of the poet's gift

By power and will—these rather liked, nay,  
loved

The man who gave his family a lift

Out of the Croisic level; "disapproved

Satire so trenchant." Thus our poet sniffed

Home-incense, though too churlish to unlock

"The Mercury's" box of ointment was La  
Roque.

## XC.

But when Paul's visage grew from red to white,

And from his lips a sort of mumbling fell

Of who was to be kicked,—“And serve him  
right”—

A gay voice interposed—“did kicking well

Answer the purpose! Only—if I might

Suggest as much—a far more potent spell

Lies in another kind of treatment. Oh,

Women are ready at resource, you know!

“Talent should minister to genius! Good:

The proper and superior smile returns.

Hear me with patience! Have you under-  
stood

The only method whereby genius earns

Fit guerdon nowadays? In knightly mood

You entered lists with visor up; one learns

Too late that, had you mounted Roland's crest,

‘Room!’ they had roared—La Roque with  
all the rest!



## XCII.

"Why did you first of all transmit your piece  
To those same priggish Forty unprepared  
Whether to rank you with the swans or  
geese

By friendly intervention? If they dared  
Count you a cackler,—wonders never cease!

I think it still more wondrous that you bared  
Your brow (my earlier image) as if praise  
Were gained by simple fighting nowadays!

## XCIII.

"Your next step showed a touch of the true  
means

Whereby desert is crowned: not force but  
wile

Came to the rescue. 'Get behind the scenes!'

Your friend advised: he writes, sets forth  
your style

And title, to such purpose intervenes

That you get velvet-compliment three-pile;  
And, though 'The Mercury' said 'nay,' nor  
stock

Nor stone did his refusal prove La Roque.

## XCIV.

"Why must you needs revert to the high  
hand,

Imperative procedure—what you call

'Taking on merit your exclusive stand'?

Stand, with a vengeance! Soon you went  
to wall,

You and your merit! Only fools command

When folk are free to disobey them, Paul!

You've learnt your lesson, found out what's  
o'clock,

By this uncivil answer of La Roque.

## XCV.

"Now let me counsel! Lay this piece on shelf  
—Masterpiece though it be! From out  
your desk

Hand me some lighter sample, verse the elf

Cupid inspired you with, no god grotesque  
Presiding o'er the Navy! I myself

Hand-write what's legible yet picturesque;  
I'll copy fair and femininely frock

Your poem masculine that courts La Roque!

## XCVI.

"Deidamia he—Achilles thou!

Ha, ha, these ancient stories come so apt!

My sex, my youth, my rank I next avow

In a neat prayer for kind perusal. Sapped

I see the walls which stand so stoutly now!

I see the toils about the game entrapped

By honest cunning! Chains of lady's-smock,  
Not thorn and thistle, tether fast La Roque!"

## XCVII.

Now, who might be the speaker sweet and  
arch

That laughed above Paul's shoulder as it  
heaved

With the indignant heart?—bade steal a march

And not continue charging? Who con-  
ceived

This plan which set our Paul, like pea you  
parch

On fire-shovel, skipping, of a load relieved,

From arm-chair moodiness to *escritoire*

Sacred to Phœbus and the tuneful choir?

## XCVIII.

Who but Paul's sister! named of course like  
him

"Desforges"; but, mark you, in those  
days a queer

Custom obtained,—who knows whence grew  
the whim?—

That people could not read their title clear  
To reverence till their own true names, made  
dim

By daily mouthing, pleased to disappear,  
Replaced by brand-new bright ones: Aroutet,  
For instance, grew Voltaire; Desforges—  
Malcraix.

## XCIX.

"Demoiselle Malcraix de la Vigne"—because  
The family possessed at Brederac

A vineyard,—few grapes, many hips-and-  
haws,—

Still a nice Breton name. As breast and  
back

Of this vivacious beauty gleamed through  
gauze,

So did her sprightly nature nowise lack

Lustre when draped, the fashionable way,  
In "Malcraïs de la Vigne"—more short,  
"Malcraïs."

## C.

Out from Paul's *escritoire* behold escape  
The hoarded treasure! verse falls thick and  
fast,  
Sonnets and songs of every size and shape.  
The lady ponders on her prize; at last  
Selects one which—Oh angel and yet  
ape!—

Her malice thinks is probably surpassed  
In badness by no fellow of the flock,  
Copies it fair, and "Now for my La Roque!"

## CI.

So, to him goes, with the neat manuscript,  
The soft petitionary letter. "Grant  
A fledgeling novice that with wing unclipt  
She soar her little circuit, habitant  
Of an old manor; buried in which crypt,  
How can the youthful *châtelaine* but pant  
For disemprisonment by one *ad hoc*  
Appointed 'Mercury's' Editor, La Roque?"

## CII.

'Twas an epistle that might move the  
Turk!  
More certainly it moved our middle-aged  
Pen-driver drudging at his weary work,  
Raked the old ashes up and disengaged  
The sparks of gallantry which always lurk  
Somehow in literary breasts, asuaged  
In no degree by compliments on style;  
Are Forty wagging beards worth one girl's  
smile?

## CIII.

In trips the lady's poem, takes its place  
Of honour in the gratified Gazette,  
With due acknowledgment of power and  
grace;  
Prognostication, too, that higher yet  
The Breton Muse will soar: fresh youth,  
high race,  
Beauty and wealth have amicably met  
That Demoiselle Malcraïs may fill the  
chair  
Left vacant by the loss of Deshoulières.

## VOL. II.

## CIV.

"There!" cried the lively lady. "Who  
was right—  
You in the dumps, or I the merry maid  
Who know a trick or two can baffle spite  
Tenfold the force of this old fool's? Afraid  
Of Editor La Roque? But come! next flight  
Shall outsoar—Deshoulières alone? My  
blade,  
Sappho herself shall you confess outstript!  
Quick, Paul, another dose of manuscript!"

## CV.

And so, once well a-foot, advanced the game:  
More and more verses, corresponding gush  
On gush of praise, till everywhere acclaim  
Rose to the pitch of uproar. "Sappho?  
Tush!  
Sure 'Malcraïs on her Parrot' puts to shame  
Deshoulières' pastoral, claynot worth a rush  
Beside this find of treasure, gold in crock,  
Unearthed in Brittany,—nay, ask La Roque!"

## CVI.

Such was the Paris tribute. "Yes," you sneer,  
"Ninnies stock Noddledom, but folk more  
sage  
Resist contagious folly, never fear!"  
Do they? Permit me to detach one page  
From the huge Album which from far and near  
Poetic praises blackened in a rage  
Of rapture! and that page shall be—who  
stares  
Confounded now, I ask you?—just Voltaire's!

Ay, sharpest shrewdest steel that ever stabbed  
To death Imposture through the armour-  
joints!  
How did it happen that gross Humbug grabbed  
Thy weapons, gouged thine eyes out?  
Fate appoints  
That pride shall have a fall, or I had blabbed  
Hardly that Humbug, whom thy soul  
aroints,  
Could thus cross-buttock thee caught un-  
awares,  
And dismalest of tumbles proved—Voltaire's!

## CVIII.

See his epistle extant yet, wherewith  
 "Henri" in verse and "Charles" in prose  
 He sent  
 To do her suit and service! Here's the pith  
 Of half a dozen stanzas—stones which went  
 To build that simulated monolith—  
 Sham love in due degree with homage blent  
 As sham—which in the vast of volumes scares  
 The traveller still: "That stucco-heap—  
 Voltaire's?"

## CIX.

"Oh thou, whose clarion-voice has overflowed  
 The wilds to startle Paris that's one ear!  
 Thou who such strange capacity hast shown  
 For joining all that's grand with all that's  
 dear,  
 Knowledge with power to please—De-  
 shoulières grown  
 Learned as Dacier in thy person! mere  
 Weak fruit of idle hours, these crabs of  
 mine  
 I dare lay at thy feet, O Muse divine!

## CX.

"Charles was my taskwork only; Henri trod  
 My hero erst; and now, my heroine—she  
 Shall be thyself! True—is it true, great  
 God?  
 Certainly love henceforward must not be!  
 Yet all the crowd of Fine Arts fail—how  
 odd!  
 Tried, turn by turn, to fill a void in me!  
 There's no replacing love with these, alas!  
 Yet all I can I do to prove no ass.

## CXI.

"I labour to amuse my freedom; but  
 Should any sweet young creature slavery  
 preach,  
 And—borrowing thy vivacious charm, the  
 slut!—  
 Make me, in thy engaging words, a speech,  
 Soon should I see myself in prison shut  
 With all imaginable pleasure." Reach  
 The washhand-basin for admirers! There's  
 A stomach-moving tribute—and Voltaire's!

## CXII.

Suppose it a fantastic billet-doux,  
 Adulatory flourish, not worth frown!  
 What say you to the Fathers of Trévoux?  
 These in their Dictionary have her down  
 Under the heading "Author": "Malcraï,  
 too,  
 Is 'Author' of much verse that claims  
 renown."  
 While Jean-Baptiste Rousseau . . . but why  
 proceed?  
 Enough of this—something too much, indeed!

## CXIII.

At last La Roque, unwilling to be left  
 Behindhand in the rivalry, broke bounds  
 Of figurative passion; hilt and heft,  
 Plunged his huge downright love through  
 what surrounds  
 The literary female bosom; reft  
 Away its veil of coy reserve with "Zounds!  
 I love thee, Breton Beauty! All's no use!  
 Body and soul I love,—the big word's loose!"

## CXIV.

*He's greatest now and to de-struct-i-on*  
*Nearest.* Attend the solemn word I quote,  
 O Paul! *There's no pause at per-fec-ti-on.*  
 Thus knolls thy knell the Doctor's bronzed  
 throat!  
*Greatness a period hath, no sta-ti-on!*  
 Better and truer verse none ever wrote  
 (Despite the antique oustretched *a-i-on*)  
 Than thou, revered and magisterial Donne!

## CXV.

Flat on his face, La Roque, and,—pressed to  
 heart  
 His dexter hand,—Voltaire with bended  
 knee!  
 Paul sat and sucked-in triumph; just apart  
 Leaned over him his sister. "Well!"  
 smirks he,  
 And "Well?" she answers, smiling—woman's  
 art  
 To let a man's own mouth, not hers,  
 decree

What shall be next move which decides the game :  
Success? She said so. Failure? His the blame.

## CXVI.

"Well!" this time forth affirmatively comes  
With smack of lip, and long-drawn sigh  
through teeth  
Close clenched o'er satisfaction, as the gums  
Were tickled by a sweetmeat teased beneath.  
Palate by lubricating tongue: "Well! crumbs  
Of comfort these, undoubtedly! no death  
Likely from famine at Fame's feast! 'tis  
clear  
I may put claim in for my pittance, Dear!

## CXVII.

"La Roque, Voltaire, my lovers! Then  
disguise  
Has served its turn, grows idle; let it  
drop!  
I shall to Paris, flaunt there in men's eyes  
My proper manly garb and mount a-top  
The pedestal that waits me, take the prize  
Awarded Hercules. He threw a sop  
To Cerberus who let him pass, you know,  
Then, following, licked his heels: exactly so!

## CXVIII.

"I like the prospect—their astonishment,  
Confusion: wounded vanity, no doubt,  
Mixed motives; how I see the brows quick  
bent!  
'What, sir, yourself, none other, brought  
about  
This change of estimation? Phoebus sent  
His shafts as from Diana?' Critic pout  
Turns courtier smile: 'Lo, him we took for  
her!  
Pleasant mistake! You bear no malice, sir?'

## CXIX.

"Eh, my Diana?" But Diana kept  
Smilingly silent with fixed needle-sharp  
Much-meaning eyes that seemed to intercept  
Paul's very thoughts ere they had time to  
warp.

From earnest into sport the words they leapt  
To life with—changed as when maltreated  
harp  
Renders in tinkle what some player-prig  
Means for a grave tune though it proves a jig.

## CXX.

"What, Paul, and are my pains thus thrown  
away,  
My lessons end in loss?" at length fall slow  
The pitying syllables, her lips allay  
The satire of by keeping in full flow,  
Above their coral reef, bright smiles at play:  
"Can it be, Paul thus fails to rightly know  
And altogether estimate applause  
As just so many asinine hee-haws?

## CXXI.

"I thought to show you" . . . "Show me,"  
Paul in-broke,  
"My poetry is rubbish, and the world  
That rings with my renown a sorry joke!  
What fairer test of worth than that, form  
furled,  
I entered the arena? Yet you croak  
Just as if Phoebé and not Phoebus hurled  
The dart and struck the Python! What, he  
crawls  
Humbly in dust before your feet, not Paul's?

## CXXII.

"Nay, 'tis no laughing matter though absurd  
If there's an end of honesty on earth!  
La Roque sends letters, lying every word!  
Voltaire makes verse, and of himself makes  
mirth  
To the remotest age! Rousseau's the third  
Who, driven to despair amid such dearth  
Of people that want praising, finds no one  
More fit to praise than Paul the simpleton!

## CXXIII.

"Somebody says—if a man writes at all  
It is to show the writer's kith and kin  
He was unjustly thought a natural;  
And truly, sister, I have yet to win  
Your favourable word, it seems, for Paul  
Whose poetry you count not worth a pin

Though well enough esteemed by these Vol-  
taires,  
Rousseaus and suchlike : let them quack, who  
cares ? ”

## CXXIV.

“ —To Paris with you, Paul ! Not one word’s  
waste

Further : my scrupulosity was vain !  
Go triumph ! Be my foolish fears effaced  
From memory’s record ! Go, to come again  
With glory crowned,—by sister re-embraced,  
Cured of that strange delusion of her brain  
Which led her to suspect that Paris gloats  
On male limbs mostly when in petticoats ! ”

## CXXV.

So laughed her last word, with the little touch  
Of malice proper to the outraged pride  
Of any artist in a work too much  
Shorn of its merits. “ By all means be tried  
The opposite procedure ! Cast your crutch  
Away, no longer crippled, nor divide  
The credit of your march to the World’s Fair  
With sister Cherry-cheeks who helped you  
there ! ”

## CXXVI.

Crippled, forsooth ! what courser sprightlier  
pranced

Paris-ward than did Paul ? Nay, dreams  
lent wings :

He flew, or seemed to fly, by dreams entranced.  
Dreams ? wide-awake realities : no things  
Dreamed merely were the missives that ad-  
vanced

The claim of Malcraïs to consort with kings  
Crowned by Apollo—not to say with queens  
Cinctured by Venus for Idalian scenes.

## CXXVII.

Soon he arrives, forthwith is found before  
The outer gate of glory. Bold tic-toc  
Announces there’s a giant at the door.

“ Ay, sir, here dwells the Chevalier La  
Roque.”

“ Lackey ! Malcraïs,—mind, no word less  
nor more !—

Desires his presence. I’ve unearthed the  
brock :

Now, to transfix him ! ” There stands Paul  
erect,  
Inched out his uttermost, for more effect.

## CXXVIII.

A bustling entrance : “ Idol of my flame !  
Can it be that my heart attains at last  
Its longing ? that you stand, the very same  
As in my visions ? . . . Ha ! hey, how ? ”  
aghast

Stops short the rapture. “ Oh, my boy’s to  
blame !

You merely are the messenger ! Too fast  
My fancy rushed to a conclusion. Pooh !  
Well, sir, the lady’s substitute is—who ? ”

## CXXIX.

Then Paul’s smirk grows inordinate. “ Shake  
hands !

Friendship not love awaits you, master mine,  
Though nor Malcraïs nor any mistress stands  
To meet your ardour ! So, you don’t divine  
Who wrote the verses wherewith ring the  
land’s

Whole length and breadth ? Just he  
whereof no line

Had ever leave to blot your Journal—eh ?  
Paul Desforges Maillard—otherwise Mal-  
craïs ! ”

## CXXX.

And there the two stood, stare confronting  
smirk,

Awhile uncertain which should yield the *pas*.  
In vain the Chevalier beat brain for quirk  
To help in this conjuncture ; at length  
“ Bah !

Boh ! Since I’ve made myself a fool, why  
shirk

The punishment of folly ? Ha, ha, ha,  
Let me return your handshake ! ” Comic sock  
For tragic buskin prompt thus changed La  
Roque.

## CXXXI.

“ I’m nobody—a wren-like journalist ;  
You’ve flown at higher game and winged  
your bird,

The golden eagle ! That’s the grand acquit !  
Voltaire’s sly Muse, the tiger-cat, has purred

Prettily round your feet ; but if she missed  
Priority of stroking, soon were stirred  
The dormant spit-fire. To Voltaire ! away,  
Paul Desforges Maillard, otherwise Malcraix !”

## CXXXII.

Whereupon, arm in arm, and head in air,  
The two begin their journey. Need I say,  
La Roque had felt the talon of Voltaire,  
Had a long-standing little debt to pay,  
And pounced, you may depend, on such a rare  
Occasion for its due discharge ? So, gay  
And grenadier-like, marching to assault,  
They reach the enemy's abode, there halt.

## CXXXIII.

“I'll be announcer !” quoth La Roque : “I  
know,  
Better than you, perhaps, my Breton bard,  
How to procure an audience ! He's not slow  
To smell a rat, this scamp Voltaire ! Discard  
The petticoats too soon,—you'll never show  
Your *haut-de-chausses* and all they've made  
or marred  
In your true person. Here's his servant. Pray,  
Will the great man see Demoiselle Malcraix ?”

## CXXXIV.

Now, the great man was also, no whit less,  
The man of self-respect,—more great man  
he !  
And bowed to social usage, dressed the dress,  
And decorated to the fit degree  
His person ; 'twas enough to bear the stress  
Of battle in the field, without, when free  
From outside foes, inviting friends' attack  
By—sword in hand ? No,—ill-made coat on  
back !

## CXXXV.

And, since the announcement of his visitor  
Surprised him at his toilet,—never glass  
Had such solicitation ! “Black, now—or  
Brown, be the killing wig to wear ? Alas,  
Where's the rouge gone, this cheek were  
better for  
A tender touch of ? Melted to a mass,  
All my pomatum ! There's at all events  
A devil—for he's got among my scents !”

## CXXXVI.

So, “barbered ten times o'er,” as Antony  
Paced to his Cleopatra, did at last  
Voltaire proceed to the fair presence : high  
In colour, proud in port, as if a blast  
Of trumpet bade the world “Take note !  
draws nigh  
To Beauty, Power ! Behold the Iconoclast,  
The Poet, the Philosopher, the Rod  
Of iron for imposture ! Ah my God !”

## CXXXVII.

For there stands smirking Paul, and—what  
lights fierce  
The situation as with sulphur flash—  
There grinning stands La Roque ! No  
carte-and-tierce  
Observes the grinning fencer, but, full dash  
From breast to shoulderblade, the thrusts  
transpierce  
That armour against which so idly clash  
The swords of priests and pedants ! Victors  
there,  
Two smirk and grin who have befooled—  
Voltaire !

## CXXXVIII.

A moment's horror ; then quick turn-about  
On high-heeled shoe,—flurry of ruffles,  
flounce  
Of wig-ties and of coat-tails,—and so out  
Of door banged wrathfully behind, goes—  
bounce—  
Voltaire in tragic exit ! vows, no doubt,  
Vengeance upon the couple. Did he  
trounce  
Either, in point of fact ? His anger's flash  
Subsided if a culprit craved his cash.

## CXXXIX.

As for La Roque, he having laughed his laugh  
To heart's content,—the jokedefunctatonce,  
Dead in the birth, you see,—its epitaph  
Was sober earnest. “Well, sir, for the  
nonce,  
You've gained the laurel ; never hope to graff  
A second sprig of triumph there ! Ensoonce  
Yourself again at Croisic : let it be  
Enough you mastered both Voltaire and—me !

## CXL.

"Don't linger here in Paris to parade  
Your victory, and have the very boys  
Point at you! 'There's the little mouse  
which made

Believe those two big lions that its noise,  
Nibbling away behind the hedge, conveyed  
Intelligence that—portent which destroys  
All courage in the lion's heart, with horn  
That's fable—there lay couched the uni-  
corn!"

## CXLI.

"Beware us, now we've found who fooled us!  
Quick

To cover! 'In proportion to men's fright,  
Expect their fright's revenge!' quoth politic  
Old Macchiavelli. As for me,—all's right:  
I'm but a journalist. But no pin's prick

The tooth leaves when Voltaire is roused  
to bite!

So, keep your counsel, I advise! Adieu!  
Good journey! Ha, ha, ha, Malcraix was—  
you!"

## CXLII.

"—Yes, I'm Malcraix, and somebody be-  
side,

You snickering monkey!" thus winds up  
the tale

Our hero, safe at home, to that black-eyed  
Cherry-cheeked sister, as she soothes the  
pale

Mortified poet. "Let their worst be tried,  
I'm their match henceforth—very man and  
male!

Don't talk to me of knocking-under! man  
And male must end what petticoats began!

## CXLIII.

"How woman-like it is to apprehend

The world will eat its words! why, words  
transfixed

To stone, they stare at you in print,—at  
end,

Each writer's style and title! Choose  
betwixt

Fool and knave for his name, who should  
intend

To perpetrate a baseness so unmixed

With prospect of advantage! What is writ  
Is writ: they've praised me, there's an end  
of it.

## CXLIV.

"No, Dear, allow me! I shall print these  
same

Pieces, with no omitted line, as Paul's.  
Malcraix no longer, let me see folk blame  
What they—praised simply?—placed on  
pedestals,

Each piece a statue in the House of Fame!  
Fast will they stand there, though their  
presence galls

The envious crew: such show their teeth,  
perhaps,  
And snarl, but never bite! I know the  
chaps!"

## CXLV.

Oh Paul, oh piteously deluded! Pace  
Thy sad sterility of Croisic flats,  
Watch, from their southern edge, the foamy  
race

Of high-tide as it heaves the drowning mats  
Of yellow-berried web-growth from their  
place,

The rock-ridge, when, rolling as far as Batz,  
One broadside crashes on it, and the crags,  
That needle under, stream with weedy rags!

## CXLVI.

Or, if thou wilt, at inland Bergerac;  
Rude heritage but recognized domain,  
Do as two here are doing: make hearth crack  
With logs until thy chimney roar again  
Jolly with fire-glow! Let its angle lack  
No grace of Cherry-cheeks thy sister, fair  
To do a sister's office and laugh smooth  
Thy corrugated brow—that scowls forsooth!

## CXLVII.

Wherefore? Who does not know how these  
La Roques,  
Voltaires, can say and unsay, praise and  
blame,

Prove black white, white black, play at paradox  
And, when they seem to lose it, win the game?  
Care not thou what this badger, and that fox,  
His fellow in rascality, call "fame!"

Fiddlepin's end! Thou hadst it,—quack,  
quack, quack!  
Have quietude from geese at Bergerac!

## CXLVIII.

Quietude! For, be very sure of this!  
A twelvemonth hence, and men shall know  
or care

As much for what to-day they clap or hiss  
As for the fashion of the wigs they wear,  
Then wonder at. There's fame which, bale  
or bliss,—

Got by no gracious word of great Voltaire  
Or not-so-great La Roque,—is taken back  
By neither, any more than Bergerac!

## CXLIX.

Too true! or rather, true as ought to be!  
No more of Paul the man, Malcrais the  
maid,  
Thenceforth for ever! One or two, I see,  
Stuck by their poet: who the longest  
stayed  
Was Jean-Baptiste Rousseau, and even he  
Seemingly saddened as perforce he paid  
A rhyming tribute "After death, survive—  
He hoped he should; and died while yet  
alive!"

## CL.

No, he hoped nothing of the kind, or held  
His peace and died in silent good old  
age.

Him it was, curiosity impelled  
To seek if there were extant still some  
page

Of his great predecessor, rat who belled  
The cat once, and would never deign  
engage

In after-combat with mere mice,—saved from  
More sonnetteering,—René Gentilhomme.

## CLI.

Paul's story furnished forth that famous  
play  
Of Piron's "Métromanie": there you'll  
find

He's Francaleu, while Demoiselle Malcrais  
Is Demoiselle No-end-of-names-behind!  
As for Voltaire, he's *Damis*. Good and gay  
The plot and dialogue, and all's designed  
To spite Voltaire: at "Something" such the  
laugh  
Of simply "Nothing!" (see his epitaph).

## CLII.

But truth, truth, that's the gold! and all the  
good  
I find in fancy is, it serves to set  
Gold's inmost glint free, gold which comes  
up rude  
And rayless from the mine. All fume and  
fret  
Of artistry beyond this point pursued  
Brings out another sort of burnish: yet  
Always the ingot has its very own  
Value, a sparkle struck from truth alone.

## CLIII.

Now, take this sparkle and the other spirt  
Of fitful flame,—twin births of our grey  
brand  
That's sinking fast to ashes! I assert,  
As sparkles want but fuel to expand  
Into a conflagration no mere squirt  
Will quench too quickly, so might Croisic  
strand,  
Had Fortune pleased posterity to chowse,  
Boast of her brace of beacons luminous.

## CLIV.

Did earlier Agamemnons lack their bard?  
But later bards lacked Agamemnon too!  
How often frustrate they of fame's award  
Just because Fortune, as she listed, blew  
Some slight bark's sails to bellying, mauled  
and marred  
And forced to put about the First-rate!  
True,  
Such tacks but for a time: still—small-craft  
ride  
At anchor, rot while Beddoes breasts the  
tide!



## CLV.

Dear, shall I tell you? There's a simple test  
 Would serve, when people take on them  
 to weigh  
 The worth of poets, "Who was better, best,  
 This, that, the other bard?" (bards none  
 gainsay  
 As good, observe! no matter for the rest)  
 "What quality preponderating may  
 Turn the scale as it trembles?" End the strife  
 By asking "Which one led a happy life?"

## CLVI.

If one did, over his antagonist  
 That yelled or shrieked or sobbed or wept  
 or wailed  
 Or simply had the dumps,—dispute who list,—  
 I count him victor. Where his fellow failed,  
 Mastered by his own means of might,—acquist  
 Of necessary sorrows,—he prevailed,  
 A strong since joyful man who stood distinct  
 Above slave-sorrows to his chariot linked.

## CLVII.

Was not his lot to feel more? What meant  
 "feel"  
 Unless to suffer! Not, to see more? Sight—  
 What helped it but to watch the drunken reel  
 Of vice and folly round him, left and right,  
 One dance of rogues and idiots! Not, to deal  
 More with things lovely? What provoked  
 the spite  
 Of filth incarnate, like the poet's need  
 Of other nutriment than strife and greed!

## CLVIII.

Who knows most, doubts most; entertaining  
 hope,  
 Means recognizing fear; the keener sense  
 Of all comprised within our actual scope  
 Recalls from aught beyond earth's dim  
 and dense.  
 Who, grown familiar with the sky, will grope  
 Henceforward among groundlings? That's  
 offence  
 Just as indubitably: stars abound  
 O'erhead, but then—what flowers make glad  
 the ground!

## CLIX.

So, force is sorrow, and each sorrow,  
 force:  
 What then? since Swiftness gives the  
 charioteer  
 The palm, his hope be in the vivid horse  
 Whose neck God clothed with thunder,  
 not the steer  
 Sluggish and safe! Yoke Hatred, Crime,  
 Remorse,  
 Despair: but ever mid the whirling fear,  
 Let, through the tumult, break the poet's  
 face  
 Radiant, assured his wild slaves win the race!

## CLX.

Therefore I say . . . no, shall not say, but  
 think,  
 And save my breath for better purpose.  
 White  
 From grey our log has burned to: just one  
 blink  
 That quivers, loth to leave it, as a sprite  
 The outworn body. Ere your eyelids'  
 wink  
 Punish who sealed so deep into the night  
 Your mouth up, for two poets dead so  
 long,—  
 Here pleads a live pretender: right your  
 wrong!

What a pretty tale you told me  
 Once upon a time  
 —Said you found it somewhere (scold me!)  
 Was it prose or was it rhyme,  
 Greek or Latin? Greek, you said,  
 While your shoulder propped my head.

## II.

Anyhow there's no forgetting  
 This much if no more,  
 That a poet (pray, no petting!)  
 Yes, a bard, sir, famed of yore,  
 Went where suchlike used to go,  
 Singing for a prize, you know.

Well, he had to sing, nor merely  
Sing but play the lyre;  
Playing was important clearly  
Quite as singing: I desire,  
Sir, you keep the fact in mind  
For a purpose that's behind.

## IV.

There stood he, while deep attention  
Held the judges round,  
—Judges able, I should mention,  
To detect the slightest sound  
Sung or played amiss: such ears  
Had old judges, it appears!

## V.

None the less he sang out boldly,  
Played in time and tune,  
Till the judges, weighing coldly  
Each note's worth, seemed, late or soon,  
Sure to smile "In vain one tries  
Picking faults out: take the prize!"

## VI.

When, a mischief! Were they seven  
Strings the lyre possessed?  
Oh, and afterwards eleven,  
Thank you! Well, sir,—who had guessed  
Such ill luck in store?—it happened  
One of those same seven strings snapped.

## VII.

All was lost, then! No! a cricket  
(What "cicada"? Pooh!)  
—Some mad thing that left its thicket  
For mere love of music—flew  
With its little heart on fire,  
Lighted on the crippled lyre.

## VIII.

So that when (ah joy!) our singer  
For his truant string  
Feels with disconcerted finger,  
What does cricket else but fling  
Fiery heart forth, sound the note  
Wanted by the throbbing throat?

## VOL. II.

## IX.

Ay and, ever to the ending,  
Cricket chirps at need,  
Executes the hand's intending,  
Promptly, perfectly,—indeed  
Saves the singer from defeat  
With her chirrup low and sweet.

## X.

Till, at ending, all the judges  
Cry with one assent  
"Take the prize—a prize who grudges  
Such a voice and instrument?  
Why, we took your lyre for harp,  
So it shrilled us forth F sharp!"

## XI.

Did the conqueror spurn the creature,  
Once its service done?  
That's no such uncommon feature  
In the case when Music's son  
Finds his Lotte's power too spent  
For aiding soul-development.

## XII.

No! This other, on returning  
Homeward, prize in hand,  
Satisfied his bosom's yearning:  
(Sir, I hope you understand!)  
—Said "Some record there must be  
Of this cricket's help to me!"

## XIII.

So, he made himself a statue:  
Marble stood, life-size;  
On the lyre, he pointed at you  
Perched his partner in the prize;  
Never more apart you found  
Her, he throned, from him, she crowned.

## XIV.

That's the tale: its application?  
Somebody I know  
Hopes one day for reputation  
Through his poetry that's—Oh,  
All so learned and so wise  
And deserving of a prize!

## XV.

If he gains one, will some ticket,  
When his statue's built,  
Tell the gazer "'Twas a cricket  
Helped my crippled lyre, whose lilt  
Sweet and low, when strength usurped  
Softness' place i' the scale, she chirped?

## XVI.

"For as victory was nighest,  
While I sang and played,—  
With my lyre at lowest, highest,  
Right alike,—one string that made  
'Love' sound soft was snapt in twain,  
Never to be heard again,—

## XVII.

"Had not a kind cricket fluttered,  
Perched upon the place  
Vacant left, and duly uttered  
'Love, Love, Love,' where'er the bass  
Asked the treble to atone  
For its somewhat sombre drone."

## XVIII.

But you don't know music! Wherefore  
Keep on casting pearls  
To a—poet? All I care for  
Is—to tell him that a girl's  
"Love" comes aptly in when gruff  
Grows his singing. (There, enough!)

# DRAMATIC IDYLS.

## FIRST SERIES.

1879.

### MARTIN RELPH.

*My grandfather says he remembers he saw,  
when a youngster long ago,  
On a bright May day, a strange old man,  
with a beard as white as snow,  
Stand on the hill outside our town like a  
monument of woe,  
And, striking his bare bald head the while,  
sob out the reason—so!*

If I last as long as Methuselah I shall never  
forgive myself:  
But—God forgive me, that I pray, unhappy  
Martin Relph,  
As coward, coward I call him—him, yes,  
him! Away from me!  
Get you behind the man I am now, you man  
that I used to be!

What can have sewed my mouth up, set me  
a-stare, all eyes, no tongue?  
People have urged "You visit a scare too  
hard on a lad so young!  
You were taken aback, poor boy," they urge,  
"no time to regain your wits:  
Besides it had maybe cost you life." Ay,  
there is the cap which fits!

So, cap me, the coward,—thus! No fear!  
A cuff on the brow does good:  
The feel of it hinders a worm inside which  
bores at the brain for food.  
See now, there certainly seems excuse: for  
a moment, I trust, dear friends,  
The fault was but folly, no fault of mine, or  
if mine, I have made amends!

For, every day that is first of May, on the  
hill-top, here stand I,  
Martin Relph, and I strike my brow, and  
publish the reason why,  
When there gathers a crowd to mock the  
fool. No fool, friends, since the bite  
Of a worm inside is worse to bear: pray God  
I have baulked him quite!

I'll tell you. Certainly much excuse! It  
came of the way they cooped  
Us peasantry up in a ring just here, close  
huddling because tight-hooped  
By the red-coats round us villagers all: they  
meant we should see the sight  
And take the example,—see, not speak, for  
speech was the Captain's right.

"You clowns on the slope, beware!" cried  
he: "This woman about to die  
Gives by her fate fair warning to such ac-  
quaintance as play the spy.  
Henceforth who meddle with matters of state  
above them perhaps will learn  
That peasants should stick to their plough-  
tail, leave to the King the King's con-

"Here's a quarrel that sets the land on  
fire, between King George and his  
foes:

What call has a man of your kind—much  
less, a woman—to interpose?  
Yet you needs must be meddling, folk like  
you, not foes—so much the worse!  
The many and loyal should keep themselves  
unmixed with the few perverse.

"Is the counsel hard to follow? I gave it you plainly a month ago,  
And where was the good? The rebels have learned just all that they need to know.  
Not a month since in we quietly marched: a week, and they had the news,  
From a list complete of our rank and file to a note of our caps and shoes.

"All about all we did and all we were doing and like to do!  
Only, I catch a letter by luck, and capture who wrote it, too.  
Some of you men look black enough, but the milk-white face demure  
Betokens the finger foul with ink: 'tis a woman who writes, be sure!

"Is it 'Dearie, how much I miss your mouth!'—good natural stuff, she pens?  
Some sprinkle of that, for a blind, of course: with talk about cocks and hens,  
How 'robin has built on the apple-tree, and our creeper which came to grief  
Through the frost, we feared, is twining afresh round casement in famous leaf.'

"But all for a blind! She soon glides frank into 'Horrid the place is grown  
With Officers here and Privates there, no nook we may call our own:  
And Farmer Giles has a tribe to house, and lodging will be to seek  
For the second Company sure to come ('tis whispered) on Monday week.'

"And so to the end of the chapter! There! The murder, you see, was out:  
Easy to guess how the change of mind in the rebels was brought about!  
Safe in the trap would they now lie snug, had treachery made no sign:  
But treachery meets a just reward, no matter if fools malign!

"That traitors had played us false, was proved—sent news which fell so pat:  
And the murder was out—this letter of love, the sender of this sent that!

'Tis an ugly job, though, all the same—a hateful, to have to deal

With a case of the kind, when a woman's in fault: we soldiers need nerves of steel!

"So, I gave her a chance, despatched post-haste a message to Vincent Parkes

Whom she wrote to; easy to find he was, since one of the King's own clerks,  
Ay, kept by the King's own gold in the town close by where the rebels camp:

A sort of a lawyer, just the man to betray our sort—the scamp!

"If her writing is simple and honest and only the lover-like stuff it looks,  
And if you yourself are a loyalist, nor down in the rebels' books,

Come quick,' said I, 'and in person prove you are each of you clear of crime,  
Or martial law must take its course: this day next week's the time!'

"Next week is now; does he come? Not he! Clean gone, our clerk, in a trice!  
He has left his sweetheart here in the lurch: no need of a warning twice!

His own neck free, but his partner's fast in the noose still, here she stands  
To pay for her fault. 'Tis an ugly job: but soldiers obey commands.

"And hearken wherefore I make a speech! Should any acquaintance share  
The folly that led to the fault that is now to be punished, let fools beware!

Look black, if you please, but keep hands white: and, above all else, keep wives—  
Or sweethearts or what they may be—from ink! Not a word now, on your lives!"

Black? but the Pit's own pitch was white to the Captain's face—the brute  
With the bloated cheeks and the bulgy nose and the bloodshot eyes to suit!

He was muddled with wine, they say: more like, he was out of his wits with fear;  
He had but a handful of men, that's true,—a riot might cost him dear.

And all that time stood Rosamund Page,  
with pinioned arms and face  
Bandaged about, on the turf marked out for  
the party's firing-place.

I hope she was wholly with God : I hope  
'twas His angel stretched a hand  
To steady her so, like the shape of stone you  
see in our church-aisle stand.

I hope there was no vain fancy pierced the  
bandage to vex her eyes,  
No face within which she missed without, no  
questions and no replies—

"Why did you leave me to die?"—"Because  
. . ." Oh, fiends, too soon you grin  
At merely a moment of hell, like that—such  
heaven as hell ended in !

Let mine end too ! He gave the word, up  
went the guns in a line.

Those heaped on the hill were blind as  
dumb,—for, of all eyes, only mine  
Looked over the heads of the foremost rank.  
Some fell on their knees in prayer,  
Some sank to the earth, but all shut eyes,  
with a sole exception there.

That was myself, who had stolen up last,  
had sidled behind the group :  
I am highest of all on the hill-top, there  
stand fixed while the others stoop !  
From head to foot in a serpent's twine am I  
tightened : I touch ground ?

No more than a gibbet's rigid corpse which  
the fetters rust around !

Can I speak, can I breathe, can I burst—  
ought else but see, see, only see ?

And see I do—for there comes in sight—a  
man, it sure must be !—

Who staggeringly, stumblingly rises, falls,  
rises, at random flings his weight  
On and on, anyhow onward—a man that's  
mad he arrives too late !

Else why does he wave a something white  
high-flourished above his head ?

Why does not he call, cry,—curse the fool !  
—why throw up his arms instead ?

O take this fist in your own face, fool ! Why  
does not yourself shout "Stay !

Here's a man comes rushing, might and  
main, with something he's mad to say" ?

And a minute, only a moment, to have hell-  
fire boil up in your brain,

And ere you can judge things right, choose  
heaven,—time's over, repentance vain !

They level : a volley, a smoke and the clear-  
ing of smoke : I see no more

Of the man smoke hid, nor his frantic arms,  
nor the something white he bore.

But stretched on the field, some half-mile off,  
is an object. Surely dumb,

Deaf, blind were we struck, that nobody  
heard, not one of us saw him come !

Has he fainted through fright ? One may  
well believe ! What is it he holds so  
fast ?

Turn him over, examine the face ! Heyday !  
What, Vincent Parkes at last ?

Dead ! dead as she, by the self-same shot :  
one bullet has ended both,

Her in the body and him in the soul. They  
laugh at our plighted troth.

"Till death us do part ?" Till death us do  
join past parting—that sounds like

Betrothal indeed ! O Vincent Parkes, what  
need has my fist to strike ?

I helped you : thus were you dead and wed :  
one bound, and your soul reached hers !

There is clenched in your hand the thing,  
signed, sealed, the paper which plain  
avers

She is innocent, innocent, plain as print,  
with the King's Arms broad engraved :

No one can hear, but if anyone high on the  
hill can see, she's saved !

And torn his garb and bloody his lips with  
heart-break—plain it grew

How the week's delay had been brought  
about : each guess at the end proved  
true.

It was hard to get at the folk in power: such waste of time! and then  
Such pleading and praying, with, all the while, his lamb in the lions' den!

And at length when he wrung their pardon out, no end to the stupid forms—  
The licence and leave: I make no doubt—what wonder if passion warms  
The pulse in a man if you play with his heart?—he was something hasty in speech;  
Anyhow, none would quicken the work: he had to beseech, beseech!

And the thing once signed, sealed, safe in his grasp,—what followed but fresh delays?  
For the floods were out, he was forced to take such a roundabout of ways!  
And 'twas "Halt there!" at every turn of the road, since he had to cross the thick  
Of the red-coats: what did they care for him and his "Quick, for God's sake, quick!"

Horse? but he had one: had it how long? till the first knave smirked "You brag Yourself a friend of the King's? then lend to a King's friend here your nag!"  
Money to buy another? Why, piece by piece they plundered him still,  
With their "Wait you must,—no help: if aught can help you, a guinea will!"

And a borough there was—I forget the name—whose Mayor must have the bench  
Of Justices ranged to clear a doubt: for "Vincent," thinks he, sounds French!  
It well may have driven him daft, God knows! all men can certainly know  
Is—rushing and falling and rising, at last he arrived in a horror—so!

When a word, cry, gasp, would have rescued both! Ay bite me! The worm begins  
At his work once more. Had cowardice proved—that only—my sin of sins!

Friends, look you here! Suppose . . . suppose . . . But mad I am, needs must be!

Judas the Damned would never have dared such a sin as I dream! For, see!

Suppose I had sneakingly loved her myself, my wretched self, and dreamed  
In the heart of me "She were better dead than happy and his!"—while gleamed  
A light from hell as I spied the pair in a perfectest embrace,  
He the saviour and she the saved,—bliss born of the very murder-place!

No! Say I was scared, friends! Call me fool and coward, but nothing worse!  
Jeer at the fool and gibe at the coward!  
'Twas ever the coward's curse  
That fear breeds fancies in such: such take their shadow for substance still,  
—A fiend at their back. I liked poor Parkes, —loved Vincent, if you will!

And her—why, I said, "Good morrow" to her, "Good even," and nothing more:  
The neighbourly way! She was just to me as fifty had been before.  
So, coward it is and coward shall be! There's a friend, now! Thanks! A drink  
Of water I wanted: and now I can walk, get home by myself, I think.

### PHEIDIPPIDES.

[Pheidippides, when the Persians went up into Attica, ran all the way from Athens to Sparta to demand aid, and ran back again in time to be at Marathon; and then, the battle over, ran to Athens to announce the victory—falling dead, having done so.]

*Xaipere, xaiōues.*

FIRST I salute this soil of the blessed, river and rock!  
Gods of my birthplace, demons and heroes, honour to all!

Then I name thee, claim thee for our patron, Fresh and fit your message to bear, once lips  
co-equal in praise give it birth !”

—Ay, with Zeus the Defender, with Her of O my Athens—Sparta love thee? Did Sparta  
the ægis and spear !<sup>1</sup> respond?

Also, ye of the bow and the buskin,<sup>2</sup> praised Every face of her leered in a furrow of envy,  
be your peer, mistrust,

Now, henceforth and forever,—O latest to Malice,—each eye of her gave me its glitter  
whom I upraise of gratified hate !

Hand and heart and voice ! For Athens, Gravely they turned to take counsel, to cast  
leave pasture and flock ! for excuses. I stood

Present to help, potent to save, Pan—patron Quivering,—the limbs of me fretting as fire  
I call ! frets, an inch from dry wood :

Archons of Athens, topped by the tettix,<sup>3</sup> see, “ Persia has come, Athens asks aid, and still  
I return ? they debate ?

See, ’tis myself here standing alive, no Thunder, thou Zeus ! Athené, are Spartans  
spectre that speaks ! a quarry beyond

Crowned with the myrtle, did you command Swing of thy spear? Phoibos and Artemis,  
me, Athens and you, clang them ‘Ye must’ !”

“Run, Pheidippides, run and race, reach No bolt launched from Olumpos ! Lo, their  
Sparta for aid ! answer at last !

Persia has come, we are here, where is She ?” “Has Persia come,—does Athens ask aid,—  
Your command I obeyed, may Sparta befriend ?

Ran and raced : like stubble, some field which Nowise precipitate judgment—too weighty  
a fire runs through, the issue at stake !

Was the space between city and city : two Count we no time lost time which lags through  
days, two nights did I burn respect to the Gods !

Over the hills, under the dales, down pits and Ponder that precept of old, ‘No warfare,  
up peaks, whatever the odds

Into their midst I broke : breath served but In your favour, so long as the moon, half-  
for “Persia has come ! orbéd, is unable to take

Persia bids Athens proffer slaves’-tribute, Full-circle her state in the sky !” Already  
water and earth ; she rounds to it fast :

Razed to the ground is Eretria—but Athens, Athens must wait, patient as we—who judg-  
shall Athens sink, ment suspend.”

Drop into dust and die—the flower of Hellas Athens,—except for that sparkle,—thy name,  
utterly die, I had mouldered to ash !

Die, with the wide world spitting at That sent a blaze through my blood ; off, off  
Sparta, the stupid, the stander- and away was I back,

by ? —Not one word to waste, one look to lose  
on the false and the vile !

Answer me quick, what help, what hand Yet “O Gods of my land !” I cried, as each  
do you stretch o’er destruction’s hillock and plain,  
brink ? Wood and stream, I knew, I named, rushing  
past them again,

How,—when? No care for my limbs !—there’s “Have ye kept faith, proved mindful of  
lightning in all and some— honours we paid you erewhile ?

<sup>1</sup> Athené.

<sup>2</sup> Apollo and Artemis.

<sup>3</sup> The grasshopper, the national emblem.



Vain was the filleted victim, the fulsome  
libation! Too rash  
Love in its choice, paid you so largely service  
so slack!

"Oak and olive and bay,—I bid you cease  
to enwreathe

Brows made bold by your leaf! Fade at the  
Persian's foot,

You that, our patrons were pledged, should  
never adorn a slave!

Rather I hail thee, Parnes,—trust to thy wild  
waste tract!

Treeless, herbless, lifeless mountain! What  
matter if slack'd

My speed may hardly be, for homage to crag  
and to cave

No deity deigns to drape with verdure? at  
least I can breathe,

Fear in thee no fraud from the blind, no lie  
from the mute!"

Such my cry as, rapid, I ran over Parnes'  
ridge;

Gully and gap I clambered and cleared till,  
sudden, a bar

jutting, a stoppage of stone against me, block-  
ing the way.

Right! for I minded the hollow to traverse,  
the fissure across:

"Where I could enter, there I depart by!  
Night in the fosse?

Athens to aid? Though the dive were thorough  
Erebus, thus I obey—

Out of the day dive, into the day as bravely  
arise! No bridge

Better!"—when—ha! what was it I came  
on, of wonders that are?

There, in the cool of a cleft, sat he—majes-  
tical Pan!

Ivy drooped wanton, kiss'd his head, moss  
cushioned his hoof:

All the great God was good in the eyes grave-  
kindly—the curl

Carved on the bearded cheek, amused at a  
mortal's awe,

As, under the human trunk, the goat-thighs  
grand I saw.

"Halt, Pheidippides!"—halt I did, my  
brain of a whirl:

"Hither to me! Why pale in my presence?"  
he gracious began:

"How is it,—Athens, only in Hellas, holds  
me aloof?

"Athens, she only, rears me no fane, makes  
me no feast!

Wherefore? Than I what godship to Athens  
more helpful of old?

Ay, and still, and forever her friend! Test  
Pan, trust me!

Go, bid Athens take heart, laugh Persia to  
scorn, have faith

In the temples and tombs! Go, say to  
Athens, 'The Goat-God saith:

When Persia—so much as strews not the soil  
—is cast in the sea,

Then praise Pan who fought in the ranks  
with your most and least,

Goat-thigh to greaved-thigh, made one cause  
with the free and the bold!"

"Say Pan saith: 'Let this, foreshowing the  
place, be the pledge!"

(Gay, the liberal land held out this herbage  
I bear

—Fennel—I grasped it a-tremble with dew  
—whatever it bode)

"While, as for thee . . ." But enough!  
He was gone. If I ran hitherto—

Be sure that, the rest of my journey, I ran no  
longer, but flew.

Parnes to Athens—earth no more, the air  
was my road:

Here am I back. Praise Pan, we stand no  
more on the razor's edge!<sup>1</sup>

Pan for Athens, Pan for me! I too have a  
guerdon rare!

Then spoke Miltiades. "And thee, best  
runner of Greece,

Whose limbs did duty indeed,—what gift is  
promised thyself?

<sup>1</sup> A Greek idiom for a dangerous position.

Tell it us straightway,—Athens the mother  
demands of her son !”

Rosily blushed the youth : he paused : but,  
lifting at length

His eyes from the ground, it seemed as he  
gathered the rest of his strength

Into the utterance—“ Pan spoke thus : ‘ For  
what thou hast done

Count on a worthy reward ! Henceforth be  
allowed thee release

From the racer’s toil, no vulgar reward in  
praise or in pelf !”

“ I am bold to believe, Pan means reward  
the most to my mind !

Fight I shall, with our foremost, wherever  
this fennel may grow,—

Pound—Pan helping us—Persia to dust, and,  
under the deep,

Whelm her away for ever ; and then,—no  
Athens to save,—

Marry a certain maid, I know keeps faith to  
the brave,—

Hie to my house and home : and, when my  
children shall creep

Close to my knees,—recount how the God  
was awful yet kind,

Promised their sire reward to the full—re-  
warding him—so !”

Unforeseeing one ! Yes, he fought on the  
Marathon day :

So, when Persia was dust, all cried “ To  
Akropolis !

Run, Pheidippides, one race more ! the  
meed is thy due !

‘ Athens is saved, thank Pan,’ go shout !”  
He flung down his shield,

Ran like fire once more : and the space ’twixt  
the Fennel-field<sup>1</sup>

And Athens was stubble again, a field which  
a fire runs through,

Till in he broke : “ Rejoice, we conquer !”  
Like wine through clay,

Joy in his blood bursting his heart, he died—  
the bliss !

<sup>1</sup> Marathon.

So, to this day, when friend meets friend,  
the word of salute

Is still “ Rejoice !”—his word which brought  
rejoicing indeed.

So is Pheidippides happy for ever,—the noble  
strong man

Who could race like a God, bear the face  
of a God, whom a God loved so well ;

He saw the land saved he had helped to save,  
and was suffered to tell

Such tidings, yet never decline, but, gloriously  
as he began,

So to end gloriously—once to shout, there-  
after be mute :

“ Athens is saved !”—Pheidippides dies in  
the shout for his meed.

## HALBERT AND HOB.

HERE is a thing that happened. Like wild  
beasts whelped, for den,

In a wild part of North England, there lived  
once two wild men

Inhabiting one homestead, neither a hovel  
nor hut,

Time out of mind their birthright : father and  
son, these—but—

Such a son, such a father ! Most wildness  
by degrees

Softens away : yet, last of their line, the  
wildest and worst were these.

Criminals, then ? Why, no : they did not  
murde. and rob ;

But, give them a word, they returned a blow  
—old Halbert as young Hob :

Harsh and fierce of word, rough and savage  
of deed,

Hated or feared the more—who knows ?—  
the genuine wild-beast breed.

Thus were they found by the few sparse folk  
of the country-side ;

But how fared each with other ? E’en beasts  
couch, hide by hide,

In a growling, grudging agreement: so, father  
and son aye curled  
The closer up in their den because the last  
of their kind in the world.

Still, beast irks beast on occasion. One  
Christmas night of snow,  
Came father and son to words—such words!  
more cruel because the blow  
To crown each word was wanting, while taunt  
matched gibe, and curse  
Competed with oath in wager, like pastime  
in hell,—nay, worse:  
For pastime turned to earnest, as up there  
sprang at last  
The son at the throat of the father, seized  
him and held him fast.

“Out of this house you go!”—(there followed  
a hideous oath)—  
“This oven where now we bake, too hot to  
hold us both!  
If there’s snow outside, there’s coolness: out  
with you, bide a spell  
In the drift and save the sexton the charge of  
a parish shell!”

Now, the old trunk was tough, was solid as  
stump of oak  
Untouched at the core by a thousand years:  
much less had its seventy broke  
One whipcord nerve in the muscly mass from  
neck to shoulder-blade  
Of the mountainous man, whereon his child’s  
rash hand like a feather weighed.

Nevertheless at once did the mammoth shut  
his eyes,  
Drop chin to breast, drop hands to sides,  
stand stiffened—arms and thighs  
All of a piece—struck mute, much as a sentry

Patient to take the enemy’s fire: his captain  
so commands.

Whereat the son’s wrath flew to fury at such  
sheer scorn  
Of his puny strength by the giant eld thus  
acting the babe new-born:

And “Neither will this turn serve!” yelled  
he. “Out with you! Trundle, log!  
If you cannot tramp and trudge like a man,  
try all-fours like a dog!”

Still the old man stood mute. So, logwise,—  
down to floor  
Pulled from his fireside place, dragged on  
from hearth to door,—  
Was he pushed, a very log, staircase along,  
until  
A certain turn in the steps was reached, a  
yard from the house-door-sill.

Then the father opened eyes—each spark of  
their rage extinct,—  
Temples, late black; dead-blanchèd,—right-  
hand with left-hand linked,—  
He faced his son submissive; when slow the  
accents came,  
They were strangely mild though his son’s  
rash hand on his neck lay all the same.

“Hob, on just such a night of a Christmas  
long ago,  
For such a cause, with such a gesture, did I  
drag—so—  
My father down thus far: but, softening here,  
I heard  
A voice in my heart, and stopped: you wait  
for an outer word.

“For your own sake, not mine, soften you  
too! Untrod  
Leave this last step we reach, nor brave the  
finger of God!  
I dared not pass its lifting: I did well. I  
nor blame  
Nor praise you. I stopped here: and, Hob,  
do you the same!”

Straightway the son relaxed his hold of the  
father’s throat.  
They mounted, side by side, to the room  
again: no note  
Took either of each, no sign made each to  
either: last.  
As first, in absolute silence, their Christmas-  
night they passed.

At dawn, the father sate on, dead, in the  
self-same place,  
With an outburst blackening still the old bad  
fighting-face:  
But the son crouched all a-tremble like any  
lamb new-yeaned.

When he went to the burial, someone's staff  
he borrowed—tattered and leaned.  
But his lips were loose, not locked,—kept  
muttering, mumbling. "There!  
A his cursing and swearing!" the youngsters  
cried: but the elders thought "In  
prayer."

A boy threw stones: he picked them up and  
stored them in his vest.

So tottered, muttered, mumbled he, till he  
died, perhaps found rest.

"Is there a reason in nature for these hard  
hearts?" O Lear,

That a reason out of nature must turn them  
soft, seems clear!

## IVAN IVANOVITCH.

"THEY tell me, your carpenters," quoth I  
to my friend the Russ,

"Make a simple hatchet serve as a tool-box  
serves with us.

Arm but each man with his axe, 'tis a  
hammer and saw and plane

And chisel, and—what know I else? We  
should imitate in vain

The mastery wherewithal, by a flourish of  
just the adze,

He cleaves, clamps, dovetails in,—no need  
of our nails and brads,—

The manageable pine: 'tis said he could  
shave himself

With the axe,—so all adroit, now a giant  
and now an elf,

Does he work and play at once!"

Quoth my friend the Russ to me,  
"Ay, that and more beside, on occasion! It  
scarce may be

You never heard tell a tale told children,  
time out of mind,

By father and mother and nurse, for a moral  
that's behind,

Which children quickly seize. If the incident  
happened at all,

We place it in Peter's time when hearts were  
great not small,

Germanized, Frenchified. I wager 'tis old  
to you

As the story of Adam and Eve, and possibly  
quite as true."

In the deep of our land, 'tis said, a village  
from out the woods

Emerged on the great main-road 'twixt two  
great solitudes.

Through forestry right and left, black verst<sup>1</sup>  
and verst of pine,

From village to village runs the road's long  
wide bare line.

Clearance and clearance break the else-  
unconquered growth

Of pine and all that breeds and broods there,  
leaving loth

Man's inch of masterdom,—spot of life, spirt  
of fire,—

To star the dark and dread, lest right and  
rule expire

Throughout the monstrous-wild, a-hungered  
to resume

Its ancient sway, suck back the world into  
its womb:

Defrauded by man's craft which clove from  
North to South

This highway broad and straight e'en from  
the Neva's mouth

To Moscow's gates of gold. So, spot of life  
and spirt

Of fire aforesaid, burn, each village death-  
begirt

By wall and wall of pine—unprobed un-  
dreamed abyss.

<sup>1</sup> About two-thirds of a mile.

Early one winter morn, in such a village as  
 this,  
 Snow-whitened everywhere except the middle  
 road  
 Ice-roughed by track of sledge, there worked  
 by his abode  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch, the carpenter, employed  
 On a huge shipmast trunk; his axe now  
 trimmed and toyed  
 With branch and twig, and now some chop  
 athwart the bole  
 Changed bole to billets, bared at once the  
 sap and soul.  
 About him, watched the work his neighbours  
 sheepskin-clad;  
 Each bearded mouth puffed steam, each grey  
 eye twinkled glad  
 To see the sturdy arm which, never stopping  
 play,  
 Proved strong man's blood still boils, freeze  
 winter as he may.  
 Sudden, a burst of bells. Out of the road,  
 on edge  
 Of the hamlet—horse's hoofs galloping.  
 "How, a sledge?  
 What's here?" cried all as—in, up to the  
 open space,  
 Workyard and market-ground, folk's common  
 meeting-place,—  
 Stumbled on, till he fell, in one last bound  
 for life,  
 A horse: and, at his heels, a sledge held—  
 "Dmitri's wife!  
 Back without Dmitri too! and children—  
 where are they?  
 Only a frozen corpse!"

They drew it forth: then—"Nay,  
 Not dead, though like to die! Gone hence  
 ... a month ago:  
 Home again, this rough jaunt—alone through  
 night and snow—  
 What can the cause be? Hark—Drong, old  
 horse, how he groans:  
 His day's done! Chafe away, keep chafing,  
 for she moans:  
 She's coming to! Give here: see, mother-  
 kin, your friends!"

Cheer up, all safe at home! Warm inside  
 makes amends  
 For outside cold,—sup quick! Don't look  
 as we were bears!  
 What is it startles you? What strange ad-  
 venture stares  
 Up at us in your face? You know friends—  
 which is which?  
 I'm Vassili, he's Sergel, Ivàn Ivànovitch..."

At the word, the woman's eyes, slow-wander-  
 ing till they neared  
 The blue eyes o'er the bush of honey-coloured  
 beard,  
 Took in full light and sense and—torn to  
 rags, some dream  
 Which hid the naked truth—O loud and long  
 the scream  
 She gave, as if all power of voice within her  
 throat  
 Poured itself wild away to waste in one  
 dread note!  
 Then followed gasps and sobs, and then the  
 steady flow  
 Of kindly tears: the brain was saved, a man  
 might know.  
 Down fell her face upon the good friend's  
 propping knee;  
 His broad hands smoothed her head, as fain  
 to brush it free  
 From fancies, swarms that stung like bees  
 unhived. He soothed—  
 "Loukèria, Louscha!"—still he, fondling,  
 smoothed and smoothed.  
 At last her lips formed speech.

"Ivàn, dear—you indeed!  
 You, just the same dear you! While I . . .  
 O intercede,  
 Sweet Mother, with thy Son Almighty—let  
 his might  
 Bring yesterday once more, undo all done  
 last night!  
 But this time yesterday, Ivàn, I sat like  
 you,  
 A child on either knee, and, dearer than the  
 two,

A babe inside my arms, close to my heart—  
 that's lost  
 In morsels o'er the snow! Father, Son,  
 Holy Ghost,  
 Cannot you bring again my blessed yesterday?"

When no more tears would flow, she told her  
 tale : this way.

"Maybe, a month ago,—was it not?—news  
 came here,  
 They wanted, deeper down, good workmen  
 fit to rear  
 A church and roof it in. 'We'll go,' my  
 husband said :  
 'None understands like me to melt and  
 mould their lead.'  
 So, friends here helped us off—Ivan, dear,  
 you the first !  
 How gay we jingled forth, all five—(my  
 heart will burst)—  
 While Dmitri shook the reins, urged Droug  
 upon his track !

"Well, soon the month ran out, we just  
 were coming back,  
 When yesterday—behold, the village was on  
 fire !  
 Fire ran from house to house. What help,  
 as, nigh and nigher,  
 The flames came furious? 'Haste,' cried  
 Dmitri, 'men must do  
 The little good man may : to sledge and in  
 with you,  
 You and our three ! We check the fire by  
 laying flat  
 Each building in its path,—I needs must stay  
 for that,—  
 But you . . . no time for 'talk ! ' Wrap  
 round you every rug,  
 Cover the couple close,—you'll have the  
 babe to hug.  
 No care to guide old Droug, he knows his  
 way, by guess,  
 Once start him on the road : but chirrup,  
 none the less !

The snow lies glib as glass and hard as steel,  
 and soon  
 You'll have rise, fine and full, a marvel of  
 a moon.  
 Hold straight up, all the same, this lighted  
 twist of pitch !  
 Once home and with our friend Ivan Ivano-  
 vitch,  
 All's safe : I have my pay in pouch, all's  
 right with me,  
 So I but find as safe you and our precious  
 three !  
 Off, Droug !'—because the flames had  
 reached us, and the men  
 Shouted 'But lend a hand, Dmitri—as good  
 as ten !'

"So, in we bundled—I, and those God gave  
 me once ;  
 Old Droug, that's stiff at first, seemed youth-  
 ful for the nonce :  
 He understood the case, galloping straight  
 ahead.  
 Out came the moon : my twist soon dwindled,  
 feebly red  
 In that unnatural day—yes, daylight, bred  
 between  
 Moon-light and snow-light, lamped those  
 grotto-depths which screen  
 Such devils from God's eye. Ah, pines, how  
 straight you grow  
 Nor bend one pitying branch, true breed of  
 brutal snow !  
 Some undergrowth had served to keep the  
 devils blind  
 While we escaped outside their border !

"Was that—wind ?  
 Anyhow, Droug starts, stops, back go his  
 ears, he snuffs,  
 Snorts,—never such a snort ! then plunges,  
 knows the sough's  
 Only the wind : yet, no—our breath goes up  
 too straight !  
 Still the low sound,—less low, loud, louder ;  
 at a rate

There's no mistaking more ! Shall I lean out—look—learn  
 The truth whatever it be ? Pad, pad ! At last, I turn—

“Tis the regular pad of the wolves in pursuit of the life in the sledge !  
 An army they are : close-packed they press like the thrust of a wedge :  
 They increase as they hunt : for I see, through the pine-trunks ranged each side,  
 Slip forth new fiend and fiend, make wider and still more wide  
 The four-footed steady advance. The foremost—none may pass :  
 They are elders and lead the line, eye and eye—green-glowing brass !  
 But a long way distant still. Droug, save us ! He does his best :  
 Yet they gain on us, gain, till they reach,—one reaches . . . How utter the rest ?  
 O that Satan-faced first of the band ! How he lolls out the length of his tongue,  
 How he laughs and lets gleam his white teeth ! He is on me, his paws pry among  
 The wraps and the rugs ! O my pair, my twin-pigeons, lie still and seem dead !  
 Stepap, he shall never have you for a meal, —here's your mother instead !  
 No, he will not be counselled—must cry, poor Stipka, so foolish ! though first  
 Of my boy-brood, he was not the best : nay, neighbours have called him the worst :  
 He was puny, an undersized slip,—a darling to me, all the same !  
 But little there was to be praised in the boy, and a plenty to blame.  
 I loved him with heart and soul, yes—but, deal him a blow for a fault,  
 He would sulk for whole days. ‘Foolish boy ! lie still or the villain will vault,  
 Will snatch you from over my head !’ No use ! he cries, screams,—who can hold  
 Fast a boy in a frenzy of fear ! It follows—as I foretold !

The Satan-face snatched and snapped : I tugged, I tore—and then  
 His brother too needs must shriek ! If one must go, 'tis men  
 The Tsar needs, so we hear, not ailing boys ! Perhaps  
 My hands relaxed their grasp, got tangled in the wraps :  
 God, he was gone ! I looked : there tumbled the cursed crew,  
 Each fighting for a share : too busy to pursue ! That's so far gain at least : Droug, gallop another verst  
 Or two, or three—God sends we beat them, arrive the first !  
 A mother who boasts two boys was ever accounted rich :  
 Some have not a boy ; some have, but lose him,—God knows which  
 Is worse : how pitiful to see your weakling pine And pale and pass away ! Strong brats, this pair of mine !

“O misery ! for while I settle to what near seems  
 Content, I am 'ware again of the tramp, and again there gleams—  
 Point and point—the line, eyes, levelled green brassy fire !  
 So soon is resumed your chase ? Will nothing appease, nought tire  
 The furies ? And yet I think—I am certain the race is slack,  
 And the numbers are nothing like. Not a quarter of the pack !  
 Feasters and those full-fed are staying behind . . . Ah why ?  
 We'll sorrow for that too soon ! Now,—gallop, reach home, and die,  
 Nor ever again leave house, to trust our life in the trap  
 For life—we call a sledge ! Terioscha, in my lap !  
 Yes, I'll lie down upon you, tight-tie you with the strings  
 Here—of my heart ! No fear, this time, your mother flings . . .

Flings? I flung? Never! but think!—a woman, after all  
 Contending with a wolf! Save you I must and shall,  
 Terentil!

“How now? What, you still head the race,  
 Your eyes and tongue and teeth crave fresh food, Satan-face?  
 There and there! Plain I struck green fire out! Flash again?  
 All a poor fist can do to damage eyes proves vain!  
 My fist—why not crunch that? He is wanton for . . . O God,  
 Why give this wolf his taste? Common wolves scrape and prod  
 The earth till out they scratch some corpse—mere putrid flesh!  
 Why must this glutton leave the faded, choose the fresh?  
 Terentil—God, feel!—his neck keeps fast thy bag  
 Of holy things, saints’ bones, this Satan-face will drag  
 Forth, and devour along with him, our Pope declared  
 The relics were to save from danger!

“Spurned, not spared!  
 ’Twas through my arms, crossed arms, he—nuzzling now with snout,  
 Now ripping, tooth and claw—plucked, pulled Terentil out,  
 A prize indeed! I saw—how could I else but see?  
 My precious one—I bit to hold back—pulled from me!  
 Up came the others, fell to dancing—did the imps!—  
 Skipped as they scampered round. There’s one is grey, and limps:  
 Who knows but old bad Mārpha,—she always owed me spite  
 And envied me my births,—skulks out of doors at night  
 And turns into a wolf, and joins the sisterhood,  
 And laps the youthful life, then slinks from out the wood,

Squats down at door by dawn, spins there demure as erst  
 —No strength, old crone,—not she!—to crawl forth half a verst!

“Well, I escaped with one: ’twixt one and none there lies  
 The space ’twixt heaven and hell. And see, a rose-light dyes  
 The endmost snow: ’tis dawn, ’tis day, ’tis safe at home!  
 We have outwitted you! Ay, monsters, snarl and foam,  
 Fight each the other fiend, disputing for a share,—  
 Forgetful, in your greed, our finest off we bear,  
 Tough Droug and I,—my babe, my boy that shall be man,  
 My man that shall be more, do all a hunter can  
 To trace and follow and find and catch and crucify  
 Wolves, wolfskins, all your crew! A thousand deaths shall die  
 The whimperingest cub that ever squeezed the teat!  
 ‘Take that!’ we’ll stab you with,—‘the tenderness we met  
 When, wretches, you danced round—not this, thank God—not this!  
 Hellhounds, we baulk you!’

“But—Ah, God above!—Bliss, bliss—Not the band, no! And yet—yes, for Droug knows him! One—  
 This only of them all has said ‘She saves a son!’  
 His fellows disbelieve such luck: but he believes,  
 He lets them pick the bones, laugh at him in their sleeves:  
 He’s off and after us,—one speck, one spot, one ball  
 Grows bigger, bound on bound,—one wolf as good as all!  
 Oh but I know the trick! Have at the snaky tongue!  
 That’s the right way with wolves! Go, tell your mates I wrung



The panting morsel out, left you to howl  
your worst!

New for it—now! Ah me! I know him—  
thrice-accurst

Satan-face,—him to the end my foe!

“All fight’s in vain:

This time the green brass points pierce to  
my very brain.

I fall—fall as I ought—quite on the babe  
I guard:

I overspread with flesh the whole of him.  
Too hard

To die this way, torn piecemeal? Move  
hence? Not I—one inch!

Gnaw through me, through and through:  
flat thus I lie nor flinch!

O God, the feel of the fang furrowing my  
shoulder!—see!

It grinds—if grates the bone. O Kkrill  
under me,

Could I do more? Beside he knew wolf’s  
way to win:

I clung, closed round like wax: yet in he  
wedged and in,

Past my neck, past my breasts, my heart,  
until . . . how feels

The onion-bulb your knife parts, pushing  
through its peels,

Till out you scoop its clove wherein lie stalk  
and leaf

And bloom and seed unborn?

“That slew me: yes, in brief,

I died then, dead I lay doubtlessly till Droug  
stopped

Here, I suppose. I come to life, I find me  
propped

Thus—how or when or why,—I know not.  
Tell me, friends,

All was a dream: laugh quick and say the  
nightmare ends!

Soon I shall find my house: ’tis over there:  
in proof,

Save for that chimney heaped with snow,  
you’d see the roof

Which holds my three—my two—my one—  
not one?

“Life’s mixed  
With misery, yet we live—must live. The  
Satan fixed

His face on mine so fast, I took its print as pitch  
Takes what it cools beneath. Ivàn Ivànovitch,  
’Tis you unhardened me, you thaw, disperse  
the thing!

Only keep looking kind, the horror will not  
cling.

Your face smooths fast away each print of  
Satan. Tears

—What good they do! Life’s sweet, and  
all its after-years,

Ivàn Ivànovitch, I owe you! Yours am I!  
May God reward you, dear!”

Down she sank. Solemnly

Ivàn rose, raised his axe,—for fitly, as she  
knelt,

Her head lay: well-apart, each side, her  
arms hung,—dealt

Lightning-swift thunder-strong one blow—  
no need of more!

Headless she knelt on still: that pine was  
sound at core

(Neighbours were used to say)—cast-iron-  
kernelled—which

Taxed for a second stroke Ivàn Ivànovitch.

The man was scant of words as strokes. “It  
had to be:

I could noother: God it was bade ‘Act forme!’  
Then stooping, peering round—what is it  
now he lacks?

A proper strip of bark wherewith to wipe his  
axe.

Which done, he turns, goes in, closes the  
door behind.

The others mute remain, watching the blood-  
snake wind

Into a hiding-place among the splinter-heaps.

At length, still mute, all move: one lifts,—  
from where it sleeps

Redder each ruddy rag of pine,—the head:  
two more

Take up the dripping body: then, mute still  
as before,

Move in a sort of march, march on till  
 marching ends  
 Opposite to the church; where halting,—  
 who suspends,  
 By its long hair, the thing, deposits in its  
 place  
 The piteous head: once more the body  
 shows no trace  
 Of harm done: there lies whole the Louscha,  
 maid and wife  
 And mother, loved until this latest of her  
 life.  
 Then all sit on the bank of snow which  
 bounds a space  
 Kept free before the porch for judgment:  
 just the place!

Presently all the souls, man, woman, child,  
 which make  
 The village up, are found assembling for the  
 sake  
 Of what is to be done. The very Jews are  
 there:  
 A Gipsy-troop, though bound with horses  
 for the Fair,  
 Squats with the rest. Each heart with its  
 conception seethes  
 And simmers, but no tongue speaks: one  
 may say,—none breathes.

Anon from out the church totters the Pope  
 —the priest—  
 Hardly alive, so old, a hundred years at least.  
 With him, the Commune's head, a hoary  
 senior too,  
 Stàrosta, that's his style,—like Equity Judge  
 with you,—  
 Natural Jurisconsult: then, fenced about with  
 furs,  
 Pomeschik,—Lord of the Land, who wields  
 —and none demurs—  
 A power of life and death. They stoop,  
 survey the corpse.

Then, straightened on his staff, the Stàrosta  
 —the thorpè's  
 Sagaciousest old man—hears what you just  
 have heard,

From Droug's first inrush, all, up to Ivàn's  
 last word  
 "God bade me act for him: I dared not  
 disobey!"

Silence—the Pomeschik broke with "A wild  
 wrong way  
 Of righting wrong—if wrong there were,  
 such wrath to rouse!  
 Why was not law observed? What article  
 allows  
 Whoso may please to play the judge, and,  
 judgment dealt,  
 Play executioner, as promptly as we pelt.  
 To death, without appeal, the vermin whose  
 sole fault  
 Has been—it dared to leave the darkness of  
 its vault,  
 Intrude upon our day! Too sudden and too  
 rash!

What was this woman's crime? Suppose  
 the church should crash  
 Down where I stand, your lord: bound are  
 my serfs to dare  
 Their utmost that I 'scape: yet, if the  
 crashing scare  
 My children,—as you are,—if sons fly, one  
 and all,  
 Leave father to his fate,—poor cowards  
 though I call

The runaways, I pause before I claim their life  
 Because they prized it more than mine. I  
 would each wife  
 Died for her husband's sake, each son to  
 save his sire:  
 'Tis glory, I applaud—scarce duty, I require.  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch has done a deed that's  
 named  
 Murder by law and me: who doubts, may  
 speak unblamed!"

All turned to the old Pope. "Ay, children,  
 I am old—  
 How old, myself have got to know no longer.  
 Rolled  
 Quite round, my orb of life, from infancy to age,  
 Seems passing back again to youth. A  
 certain stage

At least I reach, or dream I reach, where I discern  
 Truer truths, laws behold more lawlike than we learn  
 When first we set our foot to tread the course I trod  
 With man to guide my steps : who leads me now is God.  
 'Your young men shall see visions : ' and in my youth I saw  
 And paid obedience to man's visionary law :  
 'Your old men shall dream dreams : ' and, in my age, a hand  
 Conducts me through the cloud round law to where I stand  
 Firm on its base,—know cause, who, before, knew effect.

'The world lies under me : and nowhere I detect  
 So great a gift as this—God's own—of human life.  
 'Shall the dead praise thee ? ' No ! 'The whole live world is rife,  
 God, with thy glory,' rather ! Life then, God's best of gifts,  
 For what shall man exchange ? For life—when so he shifts  
 The weight and turns the scale, lets life for life restore  
 God's balance, sacrifice the less to gain the more,  
 Substitute—for low life, another's or his own—  
 Life large and liker God's who gave it : thus alone  
 May life extinguish life that life may trulier be !  
 How low this law descends on earth, is not for me  
 To trace : complexed becomes the simple, intricate  
 The plain, when I pursue law's winding. 'Tis the straight  
 Outflow of law I know and name : to law, the fount  
 Fresh from God's footstool, friends, follow while I remount.

'A mother bears a child : perfection is complete  
 So far in such a birth.' Enabled to repeat  
 The miracle of life,—herself was born so just  
 A type of womankind, that God sees fit to trust  
 Her with the holy task of giving life in turn.  
 Crowned by this crowning pride,—how say you, should she spurn  
 Regality—discrowned, unchilded, by her choice  
 Of barrenness exchanged for fruit which made rejoice  
 Creation, though life's self were lost in giving birth  
 To life more fresh and fit to glorify God's earth ?  
 How say you, should the hand God trusted with life's torch  
 Kindled to light the world—aware of sparks that scorch,  
 Let fall the same ? Forsooth, her flesh a fire-flake stings :  
 The mother drops the child ! Among what monstrous things  
 Shall she be classed ? Because of motherhood, each male  
 Yields to his partner place, sinks proudly in the scale :  
 His strength owned weakness, wit—folly, and courage—fear,  
 Beside the female, proved male's mistress—only here.  
 The fox-dam, hunger-pined, will slay the felon sire  
 Who dares assault her whelp ; the beaver, stretched on fire,  
 Will die without a groan : no pang avails to wrest  
 Her young from where they hide—her sanctuary breast.  
 What's here then ? Answer me, thou dead one, as I trow,  
 Standing at God's own bar, he bids thee answer now !  
 Thrice crowned wast thou—each crown of pride, a child—thy charge  
 Where are they ? Lost ? Enough : no need that thou enlarge

On how or why the loss: life left to utter  
 'lost'  
 Condemns itself beyond appeal. The sol-  
 dier's post  
 Guards from the foe's attack the camp he  
 sentinels:  
 That he no traitor proved, this and this only  
 tells—  
 Over the corpse of him trod foe to foe's  
 success.  
 Yet—one by one thy crowns torn from thee  
 —thou no less  
 To scare the world, shame God,—livedst! I  
 hold He saw  
 The unexampled sin, ordained the novel  
 law,  
 Whereof first instrument was first intelli-  
 gence  
 Found loyal here. I hold that, failing human  
 sense,  
 The very earth had oped, sky fallen, to efface  
 Humanity's new wrong, motherhood's first  
 disgrace.  
 Earth oped not, neither fell the sky, for  
 prompt was found  
 A man and man enough, head-sober and  
 heart-sound;  
 Ready to hear God's voice, resolute to  
 obey.  
 Ivan Ivanovitch, I hold, has done, this day,  
 No otherwise than did, in ages long ago,  
 Moses when he made known the purport of  
 that flow  
 Of fire athwart the law's twain-tables! I  
 proclaim  
 Ivan Ivanovitch God's servant!"

At which name

Uprose that creepy whisper from out the  
 crowd, is wont  
 To swell and surge and sink when fellow-  
 men confront  
 A punishment that falls on fellow flesh and  
 blood,  
 Appallingly beheld — shudderingly under-  
 stood,  
 No less, to be the right, the just, the merciful.  
 "God's servant!" hissed the crowd.

When that Amen grew dull  
 And died away and left acquittal plain  
 adjudged,  
 "Amen!" last sighed the lord. "There's  
 none shall say I grudged  
 Escape from punishment in such a novel  
 case.  
 Deferring to old age and holy life,—be grace  
 Granted! say I. No less, scruples might  
 shake a sense  
 Firmer than I boast mine. Law's law, and  
 evidence  
 Of breach therein lies plain,—blood-red-  
 bright,—all may see!  
 Yet all absolve the deed: absolved the deed  
 must be!

"And next—as mercy rules the hour—me-  
 thinks 'twere well  
 You signify forthwith its sentence, and dispel  
 The doubts and fears, I judge, which busy  
 now the head  
 Law puts a halter round—a halo—you,  
 instead!  
 Ivan Ivanovitch—what think you he expects  
 Will follow from his feat? Go, tell him—  
 law protects  
 Murder, for once: no need he longer keep  
 behind  
 The Sacred Pictures—where skulks Inno-  
 cence enshrined,  
 Or I missay! Go, some! You others, haste  
 and hide  
 The dismal object there: get done, whate'er  
 betide!"

So, while the youngsters raised the corpse, the  
 elders trooped  
 Silently to the house: where halting, some-  
 one stooped,  
 Listened beside the door; all there was silent  
 too.  
 Then they held counsel; then pushed door  
 and, passing through,  
 Stood in the murderer's presence.  
 Ivan Ivanovitch  
 Knelt, building on the floor that Kremlin rare  
 and rich

He deftly cut and carved on lazy winter nights.  
Some five young faces watched, breathlessly,  
as, to rights,

Piece upon piece, he reared the fabric nigh  
complete.

Stescha, Ivàn's old mother, sat spinning by  
the heat

Of the oven where his wife Kàtia stood baking  
bread.

Ivàn's self, as he turned his honey-coloured  
head,

Was just in act to drop, 'twixt fir-cones,—  
each a dome,—

The scooped-out yellow gourd presumably  
the home

Of Kolokol the Big: the bell, therein to hitch,  
—An acorn-cup—was ready: Ivàn Ivànovitch  
Turned with it in his mouth.

They told him he was free  
As air to walk abroad. "How otherwise?"  
asked he.

### TRAY.

SING me a hero! Quench my thirst  
Of soul, ye bards!

Quoth Bard the first:  
"Sir Olaf, the good knight, did don  
His helm and eke his habergeon . . ."  
Sir Olaf and his bard—!

"That sin-scathed brow" (quoth Bard the  
second)

"That eye wide ope as though Fate beckoned  
My hero to some steep, beneath  
Which precipice smiled tempting death . . .  
You too without your host have reckoned!

"A beggar-child" (let's hear this third!)  
"Sat on a quay's edge: like a bird  
Sang to herself at careless play,  
And fell into the stream. 'Dismay!  
Help, you the standers-by!' None stirred.

"Bystanders reason, think of wives  
And children ere they risk their lives.

Over the balustrade has bounced  
A mere instinctive dog, and pounced  
Plumb on the prize. 'How well he dives!

"Up he comes with the child, see, tight  
In mouth, alive too, clutched from quite  
A depth of ten feet—twelve, I bet!  
Good dog! What, off again? There's yet  
Another child to save? All right!

"How strange we saw no other fall!  
It's instinct in the animal.  
Good dog! But he's a long while under:  
If he got drowned I should not wonder—  
Strong current, that against the wall!

"Here he comes, holds in mouth this time  
—What may the thing be? Well, that's  
prime!

Now, did you ever? Reason reigns  
In man alone, since all Tray's pains  
Have fished—the child's doll from the slime!"

"And so, amid the laughter gay,  
Trotted my hero off,—old Tray,—  
Till somebody, prerogated  
With reason, reasoned: 'Why he dived,  
His brain would show us, I should say.

"John, go and catch—or, if needs be,  
Purchase—that animal for me!  
By vivisection, at expense  
Of half-an-hour and eighteenpence,  
How brain secretes dog's soul, we'll see!"

### NED BRATTS.

[See John Bunyan's inimitable "Life and  
Death of Mr. Badman," where the story is  
told as only Bunyan can tell a story.]

'Twas Bedford Special Assize, one daft  
Midsummer's Day:  
A broiling blasting June,—was never its like,  
men say.

Corn stood sheaf-ripe already, and trees  
looked yellow as that;  
Ponds drained dust-dry, the cattle lay foam-  
ing around each flat.

Inside town, dogs went mad, and folk kept  
bibbing beer  
While the parsons prayed for rain. 'Twas  
horrible, yes—but queer :  
Queer—for the sun laughed gay, yet nobody  
moved a hand  
To work one stroke at his trade : as given to  
understand  
That all was come to a stop, work and such  
worldly ways,  
And the world's old self about to end in a  
merry blaze.  
Midsummer's Day moreover was the first of  
Bedford Fair,  
With Bedford Town's tag-rag and bobtail  
a-bowsing there.

But the Court House, Quality crammed :  
through doors ope, windows wide,  
High on the Bench you saw sit Lordships  
side by side.  
There frowned Chief Justice Jukes, fumed  
learned Brother Small,  
And fretted their fellow Judge : like threshers,  
one and all,  
Of a reek with laying down the law in a  
furnace. Why ?  
Because their lungs breathed flame—the  
regular crowd forbye—  
From gentry pouring in—quite a nosegay,  
to be sure !  
How else could they pass the time, six mortal  
hours endure  
Till night should extinguish day, when  
matters might haply mend ?  
Meanwhile no bad resource was—watching  
begin and end  
Some trial for life and death, in a brisk five  
minutes' space,  
And betting which knave would 'scape, which  
hang, from his sort of face.

So, their Lordships toiled and moiled, and a  
deal of work was done  
(I warrant) to justify the mirth of the crazy  
sun  
As this and t'other lout, struck dumb at  
the sudden show

Of red robes and white wigs, boggled nor  
answered "Boh !"  
When asked why he, Tom Styles, should not  
—because Jack Nokes  
Had stolen the horse—be hanged : for Judges  
must have their jokes,  
And louts must make allowance—let's say,  
for some blue fly  
Which punctured a dewy scalp where the  
frizzles stuck awry—  
Else Tom had fleeced scot-free, so nearly  
over and done  
Was the main of the job. Full-measure, the  
gentles enjoyed their fun,  
As a twenty-five were tried, rank puritans  
caught at prayer  
In a cow-house and laid by the heels,—have  
at 'em, devil may care !—  
And ten were prescribed the whip, and ten  
a brand on the cheek,  
And five a slit of the nose—just leaving  
enough to tweak.

Well, things at jolly high-tide, amusement  
steeped in fire,  
While noon smote fierce the roof's red tiles  
to heart's desire,  
The Court a-simmer with smoke, one ferment  
of oozy flesh,  
One spirituous humming musk mount-mount-  
ing until its mesh  
Entoiled all heads in a fluster, and Serjeant  
Postlethwayte  
—Dashing the wig oblique as he mopped his  
oily pate—  
Cried "Silence, or I grow grease ! No  
loophole lets in air ?  
Jurymen,—Guilty, Death ! Gainsay me if  
you dare !"  
—Things at this pitch, I say,—what hubbub  
without the doors ?  
What laughs, shrieks, hoots and yells, what  
rudest of uproars ?

Bounce through the barrier throng a bulk  
comes rolling vast !  
Thumps, kicks,—no manner of use !—spite  
of them rolls at last

Into the midst a ball which, bursting, brings  
 to view  
 Publican Black Ned Bratts and Tabby his  
 big wife too :  
 Both in a muck-sweat, both . . . were never  
 such eyes uplift  
 At the sight of yawning hell, such nostrils—  
 snouts that sniffed  
 Sulphur, such mouths a-gape ready to swallow  
 flame !  
 Horrified, hideous, frank fiend-faces ! yet, all  
 the same,  
 Mixed with a certain . . . eh ? how shall I  
 dare style—mirth  
 The desperate grin of the guess that, could  
 they break from earth,  
 Heaven was above, and hell might rage in  
 impotence !  
 Below the saved, the saved !  
  
 “ Confound you ! (no offence)  
 Out of our way,—push, wife ! Yonder their  
 “Worships be !”  
 Ned Bratts has reached the bar, and “ Hey,  
 my Lords,” roars he,  
 “ A Jury of life and death, Judges the prime  
 of the land,  
 Constables, javelineers,—all met, if I under-  
 stand,  
 To decide so knotty a point as whether ’twas  
 Jack or Joan  
 Robbed the henroost, pinched the pig, hit  
 the King’s Arms with a stone,  
 Dropped the baby down the well, left the  
 tithe-man in the lurch,  
 Or, three whole Sundays running, not once  
 attended church !  
 What a pother—do these deserve the parish-  
 stocks or whip,  
 More or less brow to brand, much or little  
 nose to snip,—  
 When, in our Public, plain stand we—that’s  
 we stand here,  
 And my Tab, brass-bold, brick-built of beef  
 and beer,  
 —Do not we, slut ? Step forth and show  
 your beauty, jade !

Wife of my bosom—that’s the word now !  
 What a trade  
 We drove ! None said us nay : nobody loved  
 his life  
 So little as wag a tongue against us,—did  
 they, wife ?  
 Yet they knew us all the while, in their  
 hearts, for what we are  
 —Worst couple, rogue and quean, unchanged  
 —search near and far !  
 Eh, Tab ? The pedlar, now—o’er his noggin  
 —who warned a mate  
 To cut and run, nor risk his pack where its  
 loss of weight  
 Was the least to dread,—aha, how we two  
 laughed a-good  
 As, stealing round the midden, he came on  
 where I stood  
 With billet poised and raised,—you, ready  
 with the rope,—  
 Ah, but that’s past, that’s sin repented of,  
 we hope !  
 Men knew us for that same, yet safe and  
 sound stood we !  
 The lily-livered knaves knew too (I’ve baulked  
 a d—)  
 Our keeping the ‘ Pied Bull ’ was just a mere  
 pretence :  
 Too slow the pounds make food, drink, lodg-  
 ing, from out the pence !  
 There’s not a stoppage to travel has chanced,  
 this ten long year,  
 No break into hall or grange, no lifting of  
 nag or steer,  
 Not a single roguery, from the clipping of a  
 purse  
 To the cutting of a throat, but paid us toll.  
 Od’s curse !  
 When Gipsy Smouch made bold to cheat us  
 of our due,  
 —Eh, Tab ? the Squire’s strong-box we helped  
 the rascal to—  
 I think he pulled a face, next Sessions’ swing-  
 ing-time !  
 He danced the jig that needs no floor,—and,  
 here’s the prime,  
 ’Twas Scroggs that houghed the mare ! Ay,  
 those were busy days !

"Well, there we flourished brave, like scripture-trees called bays,  
 Faring high, drinking hard, in money up to head  
 —Not to say, boots and shoes, when . . .  
 Zounds, I nearly said—  
 Lord, to unlearn one's language! How shall  
 we labour, wife?  
 Have you, fast hold, the Book? Grasp, grip  
 it, for your life!  
 See, sirs, here's life, salvation! Here's—hold  
 but out my breath—  
 When did I speak so long without once  
 swearing? 'Sdeath,  
 No, nor unhelped by ale since man and boy!  
 And yet  
 All yesterday I had to keep my whistle wet  
 While reading Tab this Book: book? don't  
 say 'book'—they're plays,  
 Songs, ballads and the like: here's no such  
 strawy blaze,  
 But sky wide ope, sun, moon, and seven stars  
 out full-flare!  
 Tab, help and tell! I'm hoarse. A mug!  
 or—no, a prayer!  
 Dip for one out of the Book! Who wrote it  
 in the Jail  
 —He plied his pen unhelped by beer, sirs,  
 I'll be bail!  
 "I've got my second wind. In trundles she  
 —that's Tab.  
 'Why, Gammer, what's come now, that—  
 bobbing like a crab  
 On Yule-tide bowl—your head's a-work and  
 both your eyes  
 Break loose? Afear'd, you fool? As if the  
 dead can rise!  
 Say—Bagman Dick was found last May with  
 fuddling-cap  
 Stuffed in his mouth: to choke's a natural  
 mishap!'

'Gaffer, be—blessed,' cries she, 'and Bagman  
 Dick as well!  
 I, you, and he are damned: this Public is our hell:  
 We live in fire: live coals don't feel!—once  
 quenched, they learn—  
 Cinders do, to what dust they moulder while  
 they burn!'

"If you don't speak straight out," says I—  
 belike I swore—  
 'A knobstick, well you know the taste of,  
 shall, once more,  
 Teach you to talk, my maid!' She ups with  
 such a face,  
 Heart sunk inside me. 'Well, pad on, my  
 prate-apace!'

"I've been about those laces we need  
 for . . . never mind!  
 If henceforth they tie hands, 'tis mine they'll  
 have to bind.  
 You know who makes them best—the Tinker  
 in our cage,  
 Pulled-up for gospelling, twelve years ago:  
 no age  
 To try another trade,—yet, so he scorned to take  
 Money he did not earn, he taught himself the  
 make  
 Of laces, tagged and tough—Dick Bagman  
 found them so!  
 Good customers were we! Well, last week,  
 you must know  
 His girl,—the blind young chit, who hawks  
 about his wares,—  
 She takes it in her head to come no more—  
 such airs  
 These hussies have! Yet, since we need a  
 stoutish lace,—  
 "I'll to the jail-bird father, abuse her to his  
 face!"  
 So, first I filled a jug to give me heart, and then,  
 Primed to the proper pitch, I posted to their  
 den—  
*Patmore*—they style their prison! I tip the  
 turnkey, catch  
 My heart up, fix my face, and fearless lift the  
 latch—  
 Both arms a-kimbo, in bounce with a good  
 round oath  
 Ready for rapping out: no "Lawks" nor  
 "By my troth!"

"There sat my man, the father. He looked  
 up: what one feels  
 When heart that leapt to mouth drops down  
 again to heels!



He raised his hand . . . Hast seen, when  
drinking out the night,  
And in, the day, earth grow another some-  
thing quite  
Under the sun's first stare? I stood a very  
stone.

" "Woman!" (a fiery tear he put in every  
tone),  
"How should my child frequent your house  
where lust is sport,  
Violence—trade? Too true! I trust no  
vague report.

Her angel's hand, which stops the sight of  
sin, leaves clear  
The other gate of sense, lets outrage through  
the ear.

What has she heard!—which, heard shall  
never be again.

Better lack food than feast, a Dives in the—  
wain

Or reign or train—of Charles!" (His  
language was not ours:

'Tis my belief, God spoke: no tinker has  
such powers).

"Bread, only bread they bring—my laces:  
if we broke

Your lump of leavened sin, the loaf's first  
crumb would choke!"

"Down on my marrow-bones! Then all  
at once rose he:

His brown hair burst a-spread, his eyes were  
suns to see:

Up went his hands: "Through flesh, I  
reach, I read thy soul!

So may some stricken tree look blasted,  
bough and bole,

Champed by the fire-tooth, charred without,  
and yet, thrice-bound

With drriment about, within may life be  
found,

A prisoned power to branch and blossom as  
before,

Could but the gardener cleave the cloister,  
reach the core,

Loosen the vital sap: yet where shall help  
be found?

Who says 'How save it?'—nor 'Why cum-  
bers it the ground?'

Woman, that tree art thou! All sloughed  
about with scurf,

Thy stag-horns fright the sky, thy snake-  
roots sting the turf!

Drunkenness, wantonness, theft, murder  
gnash and gnarl

Thine outward, case thy soul with coating  
like the marle

Satan stamps flat upon each head beneath  
his hoof!

And how deliver such? The strong men  
keep aloof,

Lover and friend stand far, the mocking  
ones pass by,

Tophet gapes wide for prey: lost soul, de-  
spair and die!

What then? 'Look unto me and be ye  
saved!' saith God:

'I strike the rock, outstreams the life-stream  
at my rod!

Be your sins scarlet, wool shall they seem  
like,—although

As crimson red, yet turn white as the driven  
snow!"

"There, there, there! All I seem to  
somehow understand

Is—that, if I reached home, 'twas through  
the guiding hand

Of his blind girl which led and led me through  
the streets

And out of town and up to door again.  
What greets

First thing my eye, as limbs recover from  
their swoon?

A book—this Book she gave at parting.  
"Father's boon—

The Book he wrote: it reads as if he spoke  
himself:

He cannot preach in bonds, so,—take it down  
from shelf

When you want counsel,—think you hear his  
very voice!"

"Wicked dear Husband, first despair and  
then rejoice!

Dear wicked Husband, waste no tick of  
moment more,  
Be saved like me, bald trunk! There's  
greenness yet at core,  
Sap under slough! Read, read!

"Let me take breath, my lords!  
I'd like to know, are these—hers, mine, or  
Bunyan's words?  
I'm 'wildered—scarce with drink,—nowise  
with drink alone!  
You'll say, with heat: but heat's no stuff to  
split a stone  
Like this black boulder—this flint heart of  
mine: the Book—  
That dealt the crashing blow! Sirs, here's  
the fist that shook  
His beard till Wrestler Jem howled like a  
just-lugged bear!  
You had brained me with a feather: at once  
I grew aware  
Christian was meant for me. A burden at  
your back,  
Good Master Christian? Nay,—yours was  
that Joseph's sack,  
—Or whose it was,—which held the cup,—  
compared with mine!  
Robbery loads my loins, perjury cracks my  
chine,  
Adultery . . . nay, Tab, you pitched me as  
I flung!  
One word, I'll up with fist . . . No, sweet  
spouse, hold your tongue!

"I'm hasting to the end. The Book, sir—  
take and read!  
You have my history in a nutshell,—ay,  
indeed!  
It must off, my burden! See,—slack straps  
and into pit,  
Roll, reach the bottom, rest, rot there—a  
plague on it!  
For a mountain's sure to fall and bury Bed-  
ford Town,  
'Destruction'—that's the name, and fire  
shall burn it down!  
O 'scape the wrath in time! Time's now, if  
not too late.

VOL. II.

How can I pilgrimage up to the wicket-gate?  
Next comes Despond the slough: not that I  
fear to pull  
Through mud, and dry my clothes at brave  
House Beautiful—  
But it's late in the day, I reckon: had I left  
years ago  
Town, wife, and children dear . . . Well,  
Christian did, you know!—  
Soon I had met in the valley and tried my  
cudgel's strength  
On the enemy horned and winged, a-straddle  
across its length!  
I have at his horns, thwack—thwack: they  
snap, see! Hoof and hoof—  
Bang, break the fetlock-bones! For love's  
sake, keep aloof  
Angels! I'm man and match,—this cudgel  
for my flail,—  
To thresh him, hoofs and horns, bat's wing  
and serpent's tail!  
A chance gone by! But then, what else  
does Hopeful ding  
Into the deafest ear except—hope, hope's  
the thing?  
Too late i' the day for me to thrud the  
windings: but  
There's still a way to win the race by death's  
short cut!  
Did Master Faithful need climb the Deligh-  
ful Mounts?  
No, straight to Vanity Fair,—a fair, by all  
accounts,  
Such as is held outside,—lords, ladies, grand  
and gay,—  
Says he in the face of them, just what you  
hear me say.  
And the Judges brought him in guilty, and  
brought him out  
To die in the market-place—St. Peter's  
Green's about  
The same thing: there they flogged, flayed,  
buffeted, lanced with knives,  
Pricked him with swords,—I'll swear, he'd  
full a cat's nine lives,—  
So to his end at last came Faithful,—ha, ha, he!  
Who holds the highest card? for there stands  
hid, you see,

Behind the rabble-rout, a chariot, pair and all:  
He's in, he's off, he's up, through clouds, at  
trumpet-call,

Carried the nearest way to Heaven-gate!

Odds my life—

Has nobody a sword to spare? not even a  
knife?

Then hang me, draw and quarter! Tab—  
do the same by her!

O Master Worldly-Wiseman . . . that's  
Master Interpreter,

Take the will, not the deed! Our gibbet's  
handy close:

Foretell Last Judgment-Day! Be kindly,  
not morose!

There wants no earthly judge-and-jurying:  
here we stand—

Sentence our guilty selves: so, hang us out  
of hand!

Make haste for pity's sake! A single  
moment's loss

Means—Satan's lord once more: his whisper  
shoots across

All singing in my heart, all praying in my brain,  
'It comes of heat and beer!'—hark how he  
guffaws plain!

'To-morrow you'll wake bright, and, in a  
safe skin, hug

Your sound selves, Tab and you, over a  
foaming jug!

You've had such qualms before, time out of  
mind! He's right!

Did not we kick and cuff and curse away,  
that night

When home we blindly reeled, and left poor  
humpback Joe

I' the lurch to pay for what . . . somebody  
did, you know!

Both of us maundered then 'Lame humpback,  
—never more

Will he come limping, drain his tankard at  
our door!

He'll swing, while—somebody . . . Says  
Tab, 'No, for I'll peach!'

'I'm for you, Tab,' cries I, 'there's rope  
enough for each!'

So blubbered we, and bussed, and went to  
bed upon

The grace of Tab's good thought: by  
morning, all was gone!

We laughed—'What's life to him, a cripple  
of no account?'

Oh, waves increase around—I feel them  
mount and mount!

Hang us! To-morrow brings Tom Bearward  
with his bears:

One new black-muzzled brute beats Sacker-  
son, he swears:

(Sackerson, for my money!) And, baiting  
o'er, the Brawl

They lead on Turner's Patch,—lads, lasses,  
up tails all,—

I'm i' the thick o' the throng! That means  
the Iron Cage,

—Means the Lost Man inside! Where's  
hope for such as wage

War against light? Light's left, light's here,  
I hold light still,

So does Tab—make but haste to hang us  
both! You will?"

I promise, when he stopped you might have  
heard a mouse

Squeak, such a death-like hush sealed up the  
old Mote House.

But when the mass of man sank meek upon  
his knees,

While Tab, alongside, wheezed a hoarse  
"Do hang us, please!"

Why, then the waters rose, no eye but ran  
with tears,

Hearts heaved, heads thumped, until, paying  
all past arrears

Of pity and sorrow, at last a regular scream  
outbroke

Of triumph, joy and praise.

My Lord Chief Justice spoke,

First mopping brow and cheek, where still,  
for one that budged,

Another bead broke fresh: "What Judge,  
that ever judged

Since first the world began, judged such a  
case as this?

Why, Master Bratts, long since, folk smelt  
you out, I wis!

I had my doubts, I' faith, each time you  
 played the fox  
 Convicting geese of crime in yonder witness-  
 box—  
 Yea, much did I misdoubt, the thief that stole  
 her eggs  
 Was hardly goosey's self at Reynard's game,  
 I' feggs!  
 Yet thus much was to praise—you spoke to  
 point, direct—  
 Swore you heard, saw the theft: no jury  
 could suspect—  
 Dared to suspect,—I'll say,—a spot in white  
 so clear:  
 Goosey was throttled, true: but thereof godly  
 fear  
 Came of example set, much as our laws  
 intend;  
 And, though a fox confessed, you proved  
 the Judge's friend.  
 What if I had my doubts? Suppose I gave  
 them breath,  
 Brought you to bar: what work to do, ere  
 'Guilty, Death,'—  
 Had paid our pains! What heaps of witnesses  
 to drag  
 From holes and corners, paid from out the  
 County's bag!  
 Trial three dog-days long! *Amicus Curie*—  
 that's  
 Your title, no dispute—truth-telling Master  
 Bratts!  
 Thank you, too, Mistress Tab! Why doubt  
 one word you say?  
 Hanging you both deserve, hanged both  
 shall be this day!  
 The tinker needs must be a proper man.  
 I've heard  
 He lies in jail long since: if Quality's good  
 word  
 Warrants me letting loose,—some house-  
 holder, I mean—  
 Freeholder, better still,—I don't say but—  
 between  
 Now and next Sessions . . . Well! Con-  
 sider of his case,  
 I promise to, at least: we owe him so much  
 grace.  
 Not that—no, God forbid!—I lean to think,  
 as you,  
 The grace that such repent is any jail-bird's due:  
 I rather see the fruit of twelve years' pious  
 reign—  
 Astræa Redux, Charles restored his rights  
 again!  
 —Of which, another time! I somehow feel  
 a peace  
 Stealing across the world. May deeds like  
 this increase!  
 So, Master Sheriff, stay that sentence I  
 pronounced  
 On those two dozen odd: deserving to be  
 trounced  
 Soundly, and yet . . . well, well, at all  
 events despatch  
 This pair of—shall I say, sinner-saints?—  
 ere we catch  
 Their jail-distemper too. Stop tears, or I'll  
 indite  
 All weeping Bedfordshire for turning Bun-  
 yanite!"  
 So, forms were galloped through. If Justice,  
 on the spur,  
 Proved somewhat expeditious, would Quality  
 demur?  
 And happily hanged were they,—why  
 lengthen out my tale?—  
 Where Bunyan's Statue stands facing where  
 stood his jail.

# DRAMATIC IDYLS.

## SECOND SERIES.

1880.

"YOU are sick, that's sure"—they say :

"Sick of what?"—they disagree.

"'Tis the brain"—thinks Doctor A ;

"'Tis the heart"—holds Doctor B ;

"The liver—my life I'd lay!"

"The lungs!" "The lights!"

Ah me!

So ignorant of man's whole

Of bodily organs plain to see—

So sage and certain, frank and free,

About what's under lock and key—

Man's soul!

### ECHETLOS.

[ "The holder of the ploughshare," a gigantic figure noticeable during the fight at Marathon slaying the Persians with a ploughshare. After the fight was over the figure was seen no more.]

HERE is a story shall stir you! Stand up,

Greeks dead and gone,

Who breasted, beat Barbarians, stemmed

Persia rolling on,

Did the deed and saved the world, for the

day was Marathon!

No man but did his manliest, kept rank and  
fought away

In his tribe and file: up, back, out, down—  
was the spear-arm play:

Like a wind-whipt branchy wood, all spear-  
arms a-swing that day!

But one man kept no rank and his sole arm  
plied no spear,

As a flashing came and went, and a form

i' the van, the rear,

Brightened the battle up, for he blazed now  
there, now here.

Nor helmed nor shielded, he! but, a goat-  
skin all his wear,

Like a tiller of the soil, with a clown's limbs  
broad and bare,

Went he ploughing on and on: he pushed  
with a ploughman's share.

Did the weak mid-line give way, as tunnies  
on whom the shark

Precipitates his bulk? Did the right-wing  
halt when, stark

On his heap of slain lay stretched Kallimachos  
Polemarch?<sup>1</sup>

Did the steady phalanx falter? To the  
rescue, at the need,

The clown was ploughing Persia, clearing  
Greek earth of weed,

As he routed through the Sakian and rooted  
up the Mede.

But the deed done, battle won,—nowhere to  
be descried

On the meadow, by the stream, at the marsh,  
—look far and wide

From the foot of the mountain, no, to the  
last blood-plashed seaside,—

<sup>1</sup> General. The commander at Marathon was Miltiades, but Kallimachos had presided at the preliminary council of war and given his casting vote in favour of fighting.

Not anywhere on view blazed the large limbs  
thonged and brown,  
Shearing and clearing still with the share  
before which—down  
To the dust went Persia's pomp, as he ploughed  
for Greece, that clown!

How spake the Oracle? "Care for no name  
at all!

Say but just this: 'We praise one helpful  
whom we call

The Holder of the Ploughshare.' The great  
deed ne'er grows small."

Not the great name! Sing—woe for the  
great name Miltiadés

And its end at Paros isle! Woe for The-  
mistokles

—Satrap in Sardis court! Name not the  
clown like these!

## CLIVE.

[The famous Robert Clive was born, 1725,  
in Shropshire. He suffered greatly from low  
spirits, and twice attempted his life before he  
had attained manhood. His career in India  
is well known from Macaulay's Essay. He  
fought the battle of Plassy in 1757. He was  
impeached for various malfeasances, but ac-  
quitted. He killed himself in 1774.]

I AND Clive were friends—and why not?

Friends! I think you laugh, my lad.

Clive it was gave England India, while your  
father gives—egad,

England nothing but the graceless boy who  
lures him on to speak—

"Well, Sir, you and Clive were comrades—"  
with a tongue thrust in your cheek!

Very true: in my eyes, your eyes, all the  
world's eyes, Clive was man,

I was, am and ever shall be—mouse, nay,  
mouse of all its clan

Sorriest sample, if you take the kitchen's  
estimate for fame;

While the man Clive—he fought Plassy,  
spoiled the clever foreign game,

Conquered and annexed and Englished!

Never mind! As o'er my punch  
(You away) I sit of evenings,—silence, save  
for biscuit-crunch,

Black, unbroken,—thought grows busy, thrids  
each pathway of old years,

Notes this forthright, that meander, till the  
long-past life appears

Like an outspread map of country plodded  
through, each mile and rood,

Once, and well remembered still: I'm startled  
in my solitude

Ever and anon by—what's the sudden mock-  
ing light that breaks

On me as I slap the table till no rummer-  
glass but shakes

While I ask—aloud, I do believe, God help  
me!—"Was it thus?

Can it be that so I faltered, stopped when  
just one step for us—"

(Us,—you were not born, I grant, but surely  
some day born would be)

"—One bold step had gained a province"  
(figurative talk, you see)

"Got no end of wealth and honour,—yet I  
stood stock still no less?"

—"For I was not Clive," you com-  
ment: but it needs no Clive to  
guess

Wealth were handy, honour ticklish, did no  
writing on the wall

Warn me "Trespasser, 'ware man-traps!"  
Him who braves that notice—call

Hero! none of such heroics suit myself who  
read plain words,

Doff my hat, and leap no barrier. Scripture  
says the land's the Lord's:

Louts then—what avail the thousand, noisy  
in a smock-frocked ring,

All-agog to have me trespass, clear the fence,  
be Clive their king?

Higher warrant must you show me ere I set  
one foot before

T'other in that dark direction, though I stand  
for evermore

Poor as Job and meek as Moses. Evermore?  
No! By-and-by

Job grows rich and Moses valiant, Clive turns  
out less wise than I.

Don't object "Why call him friend, then?"  
 Power is power, my boy, and still  
 Marks a man,—God's gift magnific, exercised  
 for good or ill.  
 You've your boot now on my hearth-rug,  
 tread what was a tiger's skin:  
 Rarely such a royal monster as I lodged the  
 bullet in!  
 True, he murdered half a village, so his own  
 death came to pass;  
 Still, for size and beauty, cunning, courage.  
 —ah, the brute he was!

Why, that Clive,—that youth, that green-  
 horn, that quill-driving clerk, in  
 fine,—  
 He sustained a siege in Arcot. . . . But the  
 world knows! Pass the wine.

Where did I break off at? How bring  
 Clive in? Oh, you mentioned  
 "fear"!

Just so: and, said I, that minds me of a story  
 you shall hear.

We were friends then, Clive and I: so, when  
 the clouds, about the orb  
 Late supreme, encroaching slowly, surely,  
 threatened to absorb  
 Ray by ray its noontide brilliance,—friend-  
 ship might, with steadier eye  
 Drawing near, bear what had burned else,  
 now no blaze—all majesty.  
 Too much bee's-wing floats my figure? Well,  
 suppose a castle's new:  
 None presume to climb its ramparts, none  
 find foothold sure for shoe  
 'Twixt those squares and squares of granite  
 plating the impervious pile  
 As his scale-mail's warty iron cuirasses a  
 crocodile.  
 Reels that castle thunder-smitten, storm-dis-  
 mantled? From without  
 Scrambling up by crack and crevice, every  
 cockney prates about  
 Towers—the heap he kicks now! turrets—  
 just the measure of his cane!  
 Will that do? Observe moreover—(same  
 similitude again)—

Such a castle seldom crumbles by sheer stress  
 of cannonade:  
 'Tis when foes are foiled and fighting's finished  
 that vile rains invade,  
 Grass o'ergrows, o'ergrows till night-birds  
 congregating find no holes  
 Fit to build in like the topmost sockets made  
 for banner-poles.  
 So Clive crumbled slow in London—crashed  
 at last.

A week before,  
 Dining with him,—after trying churchyard-  
 chat of days of yore,—  
 Both of us stopped, tired as tombstones,  
 head-pie, foot-pie, when they  
 lean  
 Each to other, drowsed in fog-smoke, o'er a  
 coffined Past between.  
 As I saw his head sink heavy, guessed the  
 soul's extinguishment  
 By the glazing eyeball, noticed how the furtive  
 fingers went  
 Where a drug-box skulked behind the honest  
 liquor,—“One more throw  
 Try for Clive!” thought I: “Let's ven-  
 ture some good rattling question!”  
 So—  
 “Come, Clive, tell us”—out I blurted—  
 “what to tell in turn, years hence,  
 When my boy—suppose I have one—asks  
 me on what evidence  
 I maintain my friend of Plassy proved a  
 warrior every whit  
 Worth your Alexanders, Cæsars, Marl-  
 boroughs and—what said Pitt?—  
 Frederick the Fierce himself! Clive told me  
 once”—I want to say—  
 “Which feat out of all those famous doings  
 bore the bell away  
 —In his own calm estimation, mark you, not  
 the mob's rough guess—  
 Which stood foremost as evincing what Clive  
 called courageousness!  
 Come! what moment of the minute, what  
 speck-centre in the wide  
 Circle of the action saw your mortal fairly  
 deified?

(Let alone that filthy sleep-stuff, swallow bold this wholesome Port !)

If a friend has leave to question,—when were you most brave, in short?"

Up he arched his brows o' the instant—formidably Clive again.

"When was I most brave? I'd answer, were the instance half as plain

As another instance that's a brain-lodged crystal—curse it!—here

Freezing when my memory touches—ugh!—the time I felt most fear.

Ugh! I cannot say for certain if I showed fear—anyhow,

Fear I felt, and, very likely, shuddered, since I shiver now."

"Fear!" smiled I. "Well, that's the rarer: that's a specimen to seek,

Ticket up in one's museum, *Mind-Freaks, Lord Clive's Fear, Unique!*"

Down his brows dropped. On the table painfully he pored as though

Tracing, in the stains and streaks there, thoughts encrusted long ago.

When he spoke 'twas like a lawyer reading word by word some will,

Some blind jungle of a statement,—beating on and on until

Out there leaps fierce life to fight with.

"This fell in my factor-days.

Desk-drudge, slaving at St. David's, one must game, or drink, or craze.

I chose gaming: and,—because your high-flown gamesters hardly take

Umbrage at a factor's elbow if the factor pays his stake,—

I was winked at in a circle where the company was choice,

Captain This and Major That, men high of colour, loud of voice,

Yet indulgent, condescending to the modest juvenile

Who not merely risked but lost his hard-earned guineas with a smile.

"Down I sat to cards, one evening,—had for my antagonist

Somebody whose name's a secret—you'll know why—so, if you list,

Call him Cock o' the Walk, my scarlet son of Mars from head to heel!

Play commenced: and, whether Cocky fancied that a clerk must feel

Quite sufficient honour came of bending over one green baize,

I the scribe with him the warrior,—guessed no penman dared to raise

Shadow of objection should the honour stay but playing end

More or less abruptly,—whether disinclined he grew to spend

Practice strictly scientific on a booby born to stare

At—not ask of—lace-and-ruffles if the hand they hide plays fair,—

Anyhow, I marked a movement when he bade me 'Cut!'

"I rose.

'Such the new manœuvre, Captain? I'm a novice: knowledge grows.

What, you force a card, you cheat, Sir?'

"Never did a thunder-clap

Cause emotion, startle Thyrsis locked with Chloe in his lap,

As my word and gesture (down I flung my cards to join the pack)

Fired the man of arms, whose visage, simply red before, turned black.

When he found his voice, he stammered 'That expression once again!'

"Well, you forced a card and cheated!'

"Possibly a factor's brain,

Busied with his all-important balance of accounts, may deem

Weighing words superfluous trouble: *cheat* to clerkly ears may seem



Just the joke for friends to venture : but we  
are not friends, you see !

When a gentleman is joked with,—if he's  
good at repartee,  
He rejoins, as do I—Sirrah, on your knees,  
withdraw in full !

Beg my pardon, or be sure a kindly bullet  
through your skull

Lets in light and teaches manners to what  
brain it finds ! Choose quick—

Have your life snuffed out or, kneeling, pray  
me trim your candle-wick !

“ ‘Well, you cheated !’

“Then outbroke a

howl from all the friends around.

To his feet sprang each in fury, fists were  
clenched and teeth were ground.

End it ! no time like the present ! Captain,  
yours were our disgrace !

No delay, begin and finish ! Stand back,  
leave the pair a space !

Let civilians be instructed : henceforth simply  
ply the pen,

Fly the sword ! This clerk's no swordsman ?  
Suit him with a pistol, then !

Even odds ! A dozen paces 'twixt the most  
and least expert

Make a dwarf a giant's equal : nay, the  
dwarf, if he's alert,

Likelier hits the broader target !

“Up we stood accordingly.

As they handed me the weapon, such was  
my soul's thirst to try

Then and there conclusions with this bully,  
tread on and stamp out

Every spark of his existence, that,—crept  
close to, curled about

By that toying tempting teasing fool-fore-  
finger's middle joint,—

Don't you guess ?—the trigger yielded. Gone  
my chance ! and at the point

Of such prime success moreover : scarce an  
inch above his head

Went my ball to hit the wainscot. He was  
living, I was dead.

“Up he marched in flaming triumph—'twas  
his right, mind !—up, within

Just an arm's length. ‘Now, my clerkling,’  
chuckled Cocky with a grin

As the levelled piece quite touched me,  
‘Now, Sir Counting-House, re-  
peat

That expression which I told you proved bad  
manners ! Did I cheat ?’

“‘Cheat you did, you knew you cheated, and,  
this moment, know as well.

As, for me, my homely breeding bids you—  
fire and go to Hell !’

“Twice the muzzle touched my forehead.  
Heavy barrel, flurried wrist,

Either spoils a steady lifting. Thrice : then,  
‘Laugh at Hell who list,

I can't ! God's no fable either. Did this  
boy's eye wink once ? No !

There's no standing him and Hell and God  
all three against me,—so ;

I did cheat !

“And down he threw the pistol,  
out rushed—by the door

Possibly, but, as for knowledge if by chimney,  
roof or floor,

He effected disappearance—I'll engage no  
glance was sent

That way by a single starrer, such a blank  
astonishment

Swallowed up their senses : as for speaking—  
mute they stood as mice.

“Mute not long, though ! Such reaction,  
such a hubbub in a trice !

‘Rogue and rascal ! Who'd have thought it ?  
What's to be expected next,

When His Majesty's Commission serves a  
sharper as pretext

For . . . But where's the need of wasting  
time now ? Nought requires delay :

Punishment the Service cries for : let disgrace  
be wiped away

Publicly, in good broad daylight ! Resignation ? No, indeed

Drum and fife must play the Rogue's March, rank and file be free to speed

Tardy marching on the rogue's part by appliance in the rear

—Kicks administered shall right this wronged civilian, —never fear,

Mister Clive, for—though a clerk—you bore yourself—suppose we say—

Just as would besem a soldier !

“Gentlemen, attention—pray !  
First, one word !”

“I passed each speaker severally in review.

When I had precise their number, names and styles, and fully knew

Over whom my supervision thenceforth must extend,—why, then—

“Some five minutes since, my life lay—as you all saw, gentlemen—

At the mercy of your friend there. Not a single voice was raised

In arrest of judgment, not one tongue—before my powder blazed—

Ventured “Can it be the youngster blundered, really seemed to mark

Some irregular proceeding? We conjecture in the dark,

Guess at random,—still, for sake of fair play—what if for a freak,

In a fit of absence,—such things have been !—if our friend proved weak

—What's the phrase?—corrected fortune ! Look into the case, at least !”

Who dared interpose between the altar's victim and the priest?

Yet he spared me ! You eleven ! Whosoever, all or each,

To the disadvantage of the man who spared me, utters speech

VOL. II.

—To his face, behind his back,—that speaker has to do with me !

Me who promise, if positions change and mine the chance should be,

Not to imitate your friend and waive advantage !”

“Twenty-five Years ago this matter happened : and 'tis certain,” added Clive,

“Never, to my knowledge, did Sir Cocky have a single breath

Breathed against him : lips were closed throughout his life, or since his death,

For if he be dead or living I can tell no more than you.

All I know is—Cocky had one chance more ; how he used it,—grew

Out of such unlucky habits, or relapsed, and back again

Brought the late-ejected devil with a score more in his train,—

That's for you to judge. Reprieve I procured, at any rate.

Ugh—the memory of that minute's fear makes gooseflesh rise ! Why prate

Longer? You've my story, there's your instance : fear I did, you see !”

“Well”—I hardly kept from laughing—“if I see it, thanks must be

Wholly to your Lordship's candour. Not that—in a common case—

When a bully caught at cheating thrusts a pistol in one's face,

I should underrate, believe me, such a trial to the nerve !

'Tis no joke, at one-and-twenty, for a youth to stand nor swerve.

Fear I naturally look for—unless, of all men alive,

I am forced to make exception when I come to Robert Clive.

Since at Arcot, Plassy, elsewhere, he and death—the whole world knows—

Came to somewhat closer quarters.”

Quarters? Had we come to blows,  
Clive and I, you had not wondered—up he  
sprang so, out he rapped  
Such a round of oaths—no matter! I'll  
endeavour to adapt  
To our modern usage words he—well, 'twas  
friendly licence—flung  
At me like so many fire-balls, fast as he  
could wag his tongue.

"You—a soldier? You—at Plassy? Yours  
the faculty to nick

Instantaneously occasion when your foe, if  
lightning-quick,

—At his mercy, at his malice,—has you,  
through some stupid inch

Undefended in your bulwark? Thus laid  
open,—not to flinch

—That needs courage, you'll concede  
me. Then, look here! Suppose the  
man,

Checking his advance, his weapon still ex-  
tended, not a span

Distant from my temple,—curse him!—  
quietly had bade me 'There!

Keep your life, calumniaior!—worthless life  
I freely spare:

Mine you freely would have taken—murdered  
me and my good fame

Both at once—and all the better! Go, and  
thank your own bad aim

Which permits me to forgive you! What if,  
with such words as these,

He had cast away his weapon? How should  
I have borne me, please?

Nay, I'll spare you pains and tell you. This,  
and only this, remained—

Pick his weapon up and use it on myself,  
I so had gained

Sleep the earlier, leaving England probably  
to pay on still

Rent and taxes for half India, tenant at the  
Frenchman's will."

"Such the turn," said I, "the matter takes  
with you? Then I abate

—No, by not one jot nor tittle,—of your act  
my estimate.

Fear—I wish I could detect there: courage  
fronts me, plain enough

Call it desperation, madness—never mind!  
for here's in rough

Why, had mine been such a trial, fear had  
overcome disgrace.

True, disgrace were hard to bear: but such a  
rush against God's face

—None of that for me, Lord Plassy, since  
I go to church at times,

Say the creed my mother taught me! Many  
years in foreign climes

Rub some marks away—not all, though!  
We poor sinners reach life's brink,

Overlook what rolls beneath it, recklessly  
enough, but think

There's advantage in what's left us—ground  
to stand on, time to call

'Lord, have mercy!' ere we topple over—do  
not leap, that's all!"

Oh, he made no answer,—re-absorbed into  
his cloud. I caught

Something like "Yes—courage: only fools  
will call it fear."

If aught  
Comfort you, my great unhappy hero Clive,  
in that I heard,

Next week, how your own hand dealt  
you doom, and uttered just the  
word

"Fearfully courageous!"—this, be sure, and  
nothing else I groaned.

I'm no Clive, nor parson either: Clive's  
worst deed—we'll hope condoned.

### MULÉYKEH.

IF a stranger passed the tent of Hóseyn, he  
cried "A churl's!"

Or haply "God help the man who has  
neither salt nor bread!"

—"Nay," would a friend exclaim, "he needs  
nor pity nor scorn

More than who spends small thought on the  
shore-sand, picking pearls,

—Holds but in light esteem the seed-sort, "You are poor, I know the cause: my  
bears instead plenty shall mend the wrong.  
On his breast a moon-like prize, some orb 'Tis said of your Pearl—the price of a hundred  
which of night makes morn. camels spent

"What if no flocks and herds enrich the son  
of Sinán?  
They went when his tribe was mulct, ten  
thousand camels the due,  
Blood-value paid perforce for a murder done  
of old.  
'God gave them, let them go! But never  
since time began,  
Muléykeh, peerless mare, owned master the  
match of you,  
And you are my prize, my Pearl: I laugh  
at men's land and gold!"

Said Hóseyñ "You feed young beasts a  
many, of famous breed,  
Slit-eared, unblemished, fat, true offspring  
of Múzenem:

There stumbles no weak-eyed she in the line  
as it climbs the hill.

But I love Muléykeh's face: her forefront  
whitens indeed

Like a yellowish wave's cream-crest. Your  
camels—go gaze on them!

Her fetlock is foam-splashed too. Myself  
am the richer still."

A year goes by: lo, back to the tent again  
rides Duhl.

"You are open-hearted, ay—moist-handed,  
a very prince.

Why should I speak of sale? Be the mare  
your simple gift!

My son is pined to death for her beauty:  
my wife prompts 'Fool,

Beg for his sake the Pearl! Be God the  
rewarder, since

God pays debts seven for one: who squanders  
on Him shows thrift."

Said Hóseyñ "God gives each man one life,  
like a lamp, then gives  
That lamp due measure of oil: lamp lighted  
—hold high, wave wide

Its comfort for others to share! once quench'  
it, what help is left?

The oil of your lamp is your son: I shine  
while Muléykeh lives.

Would I beg your son to cheer my dark if  
Muléykeh died?

It is life against life: what good avails to the  
life-bereft?"

Lo, Duhl the son of Sheybán comes riding  
to Hóseyñ's tent,  
And he casts his saddle down, and enters  
and "Peace!" bids he.

- Another year, and—hist! What craft is it  
 Duhl designs?  
 He alights not at the door of the tent as he  
 did last time,  
 But, creeping behind, he gropes his stealthy  
 way by the trench  
 Half-round till he finds the flap in the folding,  
 for night combines  
 With the robber—and such is he: Duhl,  
 covetous up to crime,  
 Must wring from Hóseyn's grasp the Pearl,  
 by whatever the wretch.
- "He was hunger-bitten, I heard: I tempted  
 with half my store,  
 And a gibe was all my thanks. Is he  
 generous like Spring dew?  
 Account the fault to me who chaffered with  
 such an one!  
 He has killed, to feast chance comers, the  
 creature he rode: nay, more—  
 For a couple of singing-girls his robe has he  
 torn in two:  
 I will beg! Yet I nowise gained by the tale  
 of my wife and son.
- "I swear by the Holy House, my head will I  
 never wash  
 Till I filch his Pearl away. Fair dealing I  
 tried, then guile,  
 And now I resort to force. He said we must  
 live or die:  
 Let him die, then,—let me live! Be bold—  
 but not too rash!  
 I have found me a peeping-place: breast,  
 bury your breathing while  
 I explore for myself! Now, breathe! He  
 deceived me not, the spy!
- "As he said—there lies in peace Hóseyn—  
 how happy! Beside  
 Stands tethered the Pearl: thrice winds her  
 headstall about his wrist:  
 'Tis therefore he sleeps so sound—the moon  
 through the roof reveals.  
 And, loose on his left, stands too that other,  
 known far and wide,
- Buhéyseh, her sister born: fleet is she yet  
 ever missed  
 The winning tail's fire-flash a-stream past the  
 thunderous heels.
- "No less she stands saddled and bridled,  
 this second, in case some thief  
 Should enter and seize and fly with the first,  
 as I mean to do.  
 What then? The Pearl is the Pearl: once  
 mount her we both escape."  
 Through the skirt-fold in glides Duhl,—so a  
 serpent disturbs no leaf  
 In a bush as he parts the twigs entwining a  
 nest: clean through,  
 He is noiselessly at his work: as he planned,  
 he performs the rape.
- He has set the tent-door wide, has buckled  
 the girth, has clipped  
 The headstall away from the wrist he leaves  
 thrice bound as before,  
 He springs on the Pearl, is launched on the  
 desert like bolt from bow.  
 Up starts our plundered man: from his breast  
 though the heart be ripped,  
 Yet his mind has the mastery: behold, in a  
 minute more,  
 He is out and off and away on Buhéyseh,  
 whose worth we know!
- And Hóseyn—his blood turns flame, he has  
 learned long since to ride,  
 And Buhéyseh does her part,—they gain—  
 they are gaining fast  
 On the fugitive pair, and Duhl has Ed-Dárrej  
 to cross and quit,  
 And to reach the ridge El-Sabán,—no safety  
 till that be spied!  
 And Buhéyseh is, bound by bound, but a  
 horse-length off at last,  
 For the Pearl has missed the tap of the heel,  
 the touch of the bit.
- She shortens her stride, she chafes at her  
 rider the strange and queer:  
 Buhéyseh is mad with hope—beast sister she  
 shall and must

Though Duhl, of the hand and heel so clumsy, she has to thank.

She is near now, nose by tail—they are neck by croup—joy! fear!

What folly makes Hóseyn shout “Dog Duhl, Damned son of the Dust,

Touch the right ear and press with your foot my Pearl’s left flank!”

And Duhl was wise at the word, and Muléykeh as prompt perceived

Who was urging redoubled pace, and to hear him was to obey,

And a leap indeed gave she, and vanished for evermore.

And Hóseyn looked one long last look as who, all bereaved,

Looks, fain to follow the dead so far as the living may:

Then he turned Buhéyseh’s neck slow homeward, weeping sore.

And, lo, in the sunrise, still sat Hóseyn upon the ground

Weeping: and neighbours came, the tribesmen of Bénu-Asád

In the vale of green Er-Rass, and they questioned him of his grief;

And he told from first to last how, serpent-like, Duhl had wound

His way to the nest, and how Duhl rode like an ape, so bad!

And how Buhéyseh did wonders, yet Pearl remained with the thief.

And they jeered him, one and all: “Poor Hóseyn is crazed past hope!

How else had he wrought himself his ruin, in fortune’s spite?”

To have simply held the tongue were a task for a boy or girl,

And here were Muléykeh again, the eyed like an antelope,

The child of his heart by day, the wife of his breast by night!”—

“And the beaten in speed!” wept Hóseyn: “You never have loved my Pearl.”

## PIETRO OF ABANO.

[An Italian physician, born 1246, died 1320. Professor of Medicine at Padua. Accused of the black arts, but died in time to avoid being burnt. A voluminous author on occult and semi-scientific subjects.]

*Petrus Aponensis*—there was a magician! When that strange adventure happened,

which I mean to tell my hearers, Nearly had he tried all trades—beside

physician, Architect, astronomer, astrologer,—or worse:

How else, as the old books warrant, was he able,

All at once, through all the world, to prove the promptest of appearers

Where was prince to cure, tower to build as high as Babel,

Star to name or sky-sign read,—yet pouch, for pains, a curse?

—Curse: for when a vagrant,—foot-sore travel-tattered,

Now a young man, now an old man, Turk or Arab, Jew or Gipsy,—

Proffered folk in passing—O for pay, what mattered?—

“I’ll be doctor, I’ll play builder, star I’ll name—sign read!”

Soon as prince was cured, tower built, and fate predicted,

“Who may you be?” came the question; when he answered, “*Petrus ipse*,”

“Just as we divined!” cried folk—“A wretch convicted

Long ago of dealing with the devil—you indeed!”

So, they cursed him roundly, all his labour’s payment,

Motioned him—the convalescent prince would—to vacate the presence:

Babylonians plucked his beard and tore his raiment,

Drove him from that tower he built: while, had he peered at stars,

Town howled "Stone the quack who styles  
our Dog-star—Sirins!"

Country yelled "Aroint the churl who prophe-  
sies we take no pleasure  
Under vine and fig-tree, since the year's  
delirious,

Bears no crop of any kind,—all through the  
planet Mars!"

Straightway would the whilom youngster  
grow a grisard,  
Or, as case might hap, the hoary eld. drop  
off and show a stripling.

Town and country groaned—indebted to a  
wizard!

"Curse—nay, kick and cuff him—fit requital  
of his pains!

Gratitude in word or deed were wasted truly!  
Rather make the Church amends by crying  
out on, cramping, crippling,

One who, on pretence of serving man, serves  
duly

Man's arch foe: not ours, be sure, but  
Satan's—his the gains!"

Peter grinned and bore it, such disgraceful  
usage:

Somehow, cuffs and kicks and curses seem  
ordained his like to suffer:

Prophet's pay with Christians, now as in the  
Jews' age,

Still is—stoning: so, he meekly took his wage  
and went,

—Safe again was found, ensconced, in those  
old quarters,

Padua's blackest blindest by-street,—none  
the worse, nay, somewhat tougher:

"Calculating," quoth he, "soon I join the  
martyrs,

Since, who magnify my lore on burning me  
are bent."

"Studiando le mie cifre col compasso,  
Rilievo che sarò presto sotterra,  
Perchè del mio saper si fa gran chiasso,  
E gl' ignoranti m' hanno mosso  
guerra."

Said to have been found in a well at Abano in  
the last century. They were extemporaneously

Therefore, on a certain evening, to his  
alley

Peter slunk, all bruised and broken, sore in  
body, sick in spirit,

Just escaped from Cairo where he launched  
a galley

Needing neither sails nor oars nor help of  
wind or tide,

—Needing but the fume of fire to set  
a-flying

Wheels like mad which whirled you quick  
—North, South, where'er you pleased

require it,—

That is—would have done so had not priests  
come prying,

Broke his engine up and bastinadoed him  
beside.

As he reached his lodging, stopped there  
unmolested,

(Neighbours feared him, urchins fled him,  
few were bold enough to follow)

While his fumbling fingers tried the lock and  
tested

Once again the queer key's virtue, oped the  
sullen door,—

Someone plucked his sleeve, cried "Master,  
pray your pardon!

Grant a word to me who patient wait you in  
your archway's hollow!

Hard on you men's hearts are: be not your  
heart hard on

Me who kiss your garment's hem, O Lord of  
magic lore!

"Mage—say I, who no less, scorning tittle-  
tattle,

To the vulgar give no credence when they  
prate of Peter's magic,

Deem his art brews tempest, hurts the crops  
and cattle,

Englished thus: not as Father Prout chose to  
prefer them:—

Studying my ciphers with the compass,  
I reckon—I soon shall be below-ground;  
Because of my lore folk make great rumpus,  
And war on myself makes each dull rogue  
round.—R. B.

- Hinders fowls from laying eggs and worms  
from spinning silk,  
Rides upon the goat, mounts at need a  
broomstick :  
While the price he pays for this (so turns to  
comic what was tragic)  
Is—he may not drink—dreads like the Day  
of Doom's tick—  
One poor drop of sustenance ordained mere  
men—that's milk !
- “Tell such tales to Padua ! Think me no  
such dullard !  
Not from these benighted parts did I derive  
my breath and being !  
I am from a land whose cloudless skies are  
coloured !  
Livelier, suns orb largelier, airs seem incense,  
—while, on earth—  
What, instead of grass, our fingers and our  
thumbs cull,  
Proves true moly ! sounds and sights there  
help the body's hearing, seeing,  
Till the soul grows godlike : brief,—you front  
no numbscull  
Shaming, by ineptitude the Greece that gave  
him birth !
- “Mark within my eye its iris mystic-lettered—  
That's my name ! and note my ear—its swan-  
shaped cavity, my emblem !  
Mine's the swan-like nature born to fly  
unfettered  
Over land and sea in search of knowledge—  
food for song.  
Art denied the vulgar ! Geese grow fat on  
barley,  
Swans require ethereal provend, undesirous  
to resemble 'em—  
Soar to seek Apollo,—favoured with a parley  
Such as, Master, you grant me—who will not  
hold you long.
- “Leave to learn to sing—for that your swan  
petitions :  
Master, who possess the secret, say not nay  
to such a suitor !  
All I ask is—bless mine, purest of ambitions !
- Grant me leave to make my kind wise, free,  
and happy ! How ?  
Just by making me—as you are mine—their  
model !  
Geese have goose-thoughts : make a swan  
their teacher first, then co-adjutor,—  
Let him introduce swan-notions to each  
noddle,—  
Geese will soon grow swans, and men become  
what I am now !
- “That's the only magic—had but fools dis-  
cernment,  
Could they probe and pass into the solid  
through the soft and seeming !  
Teach me such true magic—now and no  
adjournment !  
Teach your art of making fools subserve the  
man of mind !  
Magic is the power we men of mind should  
practise,  
Draw fools to become our drudges, docile  
henceforth, never dreaming—  
While they do our hests for fancied gain—the  
fact is  
What they toil and moil to get proves false-  
hood : truth's behind !
- “See now ! you conceive some fabric—say, a  
mansion  
Meet for monarch's pride and pleasure : this  
is truth—a thought has fired you,  
Made you fain to give some cramped concept  
expansion,  
Put your faculty to proof, fulfil your nature's  
task.  
First you fascinate the monarch's self : he  
fancies  
He it was devised the scheme you execute as  
he inspired you :  
He in turn sets slaving insignificances  
Toiling, molling till your structure stands  
there—all you ask !
- “Soon the monarch's known for what he was  
—a ninny :  
Soon the rabble-rout leave labour, take their  
work-day wage and vanish :



- Soon the late puffed bladder, pricked, shows  
lank and skinny—  
'Who was its inflator?' ask we, 'whose the  
giant lungs?'  
*Petri en pulmona!*<sup>1</sup> What though men  
prove ingrates?  
Let them—so they stop at crucifixion—buffet,  
ban and banish!  
Peter's power's apparent: human praise—its  
din grates  
Harsh as blame on ear unused to aught save  
angels' tongues.
- 'Ay, there have been always, since our world  
existed,  
Mages who possessed the secret—needed but  
to stand still, fix eye  
On the foolish mortal: straight was he  
enlisted  
Soldier, scholar, servant, slave—no matter  
for the style!  
Only through illusion; ever what seemed  
profit—  
Love or lucre—justified obedience to the *Ipse  
dixi*:  
Work done—palace reared from pavement up  
to soffit—  
Was it strange if builders smelt out cheating  
all the while?
- 'Let them pelt and pound, bruise, bray you  
in a mortar!  
What's the odds to you who seek reward of  
quite another nature?  
You've enrolled your name where sages of  
your sort are,  
—Michael of Constantinople, Hans of Hal-  
berstadt!  
Nay and were you nameless, still you've your  
conviction  
You it was and only you—what signifies the  
nomenclature?—  
Ruled the world in fact, though how you ruled  
be fiction  
Fit for fools: true wisdom's magic you—if  
e'er man—had't!
- <sup>1</sup> Lo! the lungs of Peter.
- 'But perhaps you ask me: 'Since each  
ignoramus  
While he profits by such magic persecutes the  
benefactor,  
What should I expect but—once I render  
famous  
You as Michael, Hans and Peter—just one  
ingrate more?  
If the vulgar provethus, whatsoe'er the pelf be,  
Pouched through my beneficence—and doom  
me dungeoned, chained, or racked, or  
Fairly burned outright—how grateful will  
yourself be  
When, his secret gained, you match your—  
master just before?'
- 'That's where I await you! Please, revert  
a little!  
What do folk report about you if not this—  
which, though chimeric,  
Still, as figurative, suits you to a tittle—  
That,—although the elements obey your nod  
and wink,  
Fades or flowers the herb you chance to smile  
or sigh at,  
While your frown bids earth quake palled by  
obscuration atmospheric,—  
Brief, although through nature nought resists  
your *fiat*,  
There's yet one poor substance mocks you—  
milk you may not drink!
- 'Figurative language! Take my explana-  
tion!  
Fame with fear, and hate with homage, these  
your art procures in plenty.  
All's but daily dry bread: what makes moist  
the ration?  
Love, the milk that sweetens man his meal—  
alas, you lack:  
I am he who, since he fears you not, can  
love you.  
Love is born of heart not mind, *de corde natus  
haud de mente*;  
Touch my heart and love's yours, sure as  
shines above you  
Sun by day and star by night though earth  
should go to wrack!

- "Stage by stage you lift me—kiss by kiss I hallow  
Whose but your dear hand my helper,  
punctual as at each new impulse  
I approach my aim? Shell chipped, the  
eaglet callow.  
Needs a parent's pinion-push to quit the  
eyrie's edge:  
But once fairly launched forth, denizen of æther,  
While each effort sunward bids the blood  
more freely through each limb pulse,  
Sure the parent feels, as gay they soar together,  
Fully are all pains repaid when love redeems  
its pledge!"
- Then did Peter's tristful visage lighten somewhat,  
Vent a watery smile as though inveterate  
mistrust were thawing.  
"Well, who knows?" he slow broke silence.  
"Mortals—come what  
Come there may—are still the dupes of hope  
there's luck in store.  
Many scholars seek me, promise mounts and  
marvels:  
Here stand I to witness how they step 'twixt  
me and clapperclawing!  
Dry bread,—that I've gained me: truly I  
should starve else:  
But of milk, no drop was mine! Well,  
shuffle cards once more!"
- At the word of promise thus implied, our  
stranger—  
What can he but cast his arms, in rapture of  
embrace, round Peter?  
"Hold! I choke!" the mage grunts.  
"Shall I in the manger  
Any longer play the dog? Approach, my  
calf, and feed!  
*Bene* . . . won't you wait for grace?" But  
sudden incense  
Wool-white, serpent-solid, curled up—per-  
fume growing sweet and sweeter  
Till it reached the young man's nose and  
seemed to win sense  
Soul and all from out his brain through  
nostril: yes, indeed!
- Presently the young man rubbed his eyes.  
"Where am I?  
Too much bother over books! Some reverie  
has proved amusing.  
What did Peter prate of? 'Faith, my brow  
is clammy!  
How my head throbs, how my heart thumps!  
Can it be I swooned?  
Oh, I spoke my speech out—cribbed from  
Plato's tractate,  
Dosed him with 'the Fair and Good,'  
swore—Dog of Egypt—I was choos-  
ing  
Plato's way to serve men! What's the  
hour? Exact eight!  
Home now, and to-morrow never mind how  
Plato mooned!
- "Peter has the secret! Fair and Good are  
products  
(So he said) of Foul and Evil: one must  
bring to pass the other.  
Just as poisons grow drugs, steal through  
sundry odd ducts  
Doctors name, and ultimately issue safe and  
changed.  
You'd abolish poisons, treat disease with  
dainties  
Such as suit the sound and sane? With all  
such kickshaws vain you pother!  
Arsenic's the stuff puts force into the faint  
eyes,  
Opium sets the brain to rights—by cark and  
care deranged.
- "What, he's safe within door?—would  
escape—no question—  
Thanks, since thanks and more I owe, and  
mean to pay in time befitting.  
What most presses now is—after night's  
digestion,  
Peter, of thy precepts!—promptest practice  
of the same.  
Let me see! The wise man, first of all,  
scorns riches:  
But to scorn them must obtain them: none  
believes in his permitting

Gold to lie stungathered : who picks up, then  
pitches  
Gold away—philosophizes : none disputes  
his claim.      In the woe-worn face—for yellowness and  
dryness,  
Parchment—with a pair of eyes—one hope  
their feeble spark.

"So with worldly honours : 'tis by abdicating,  
Incontestably he proves he could have kept  
the crown discarded.  
Sulla cuts a figure, leaving off dictating :  
Simpletons laud private life ? 'The grapes  
are sour,' laugh we.  
So, again—but why continue ? All's tumult-  
uous  
Here : my head's a-whirl with knowledge.  
Speedily shall be rewarded  
He who taught me ! Greeks prove ingrates ?  
So insult you us ?  
When your teaching bears its first-fruits,  
Peter—wait and see !"

As the word, the deed proved ; ere a brief  
year's passage,  
Fop—that fool he made the jokes on—now  
he made the jokes for, *gratis* :  
Hunks—that hoarder, long left lonely in his  
crass age—  
Found now one appreciative deferential  
friend :  
Powder-paint-and-patch, Hag Jezebel—re-  
covered,  
Strange to say, the power to please, got  
courtship till she cried *Jam satis* !  
Fop be-flattered, Hunks be-friended, Hag  
be-lovered—  
Nobody o'erlooked, save God—he soon  
attained his end.

As he lounged at ease one morning in his villa,  
(Hag's the dowry) estimated (Hunks' bequest)  
his coin in coffer,  
Mused on how a fool's good word (Fop's  
word) could fill a  
Social circle with his praise, promote him  
man of mark,—  
All at once—"An old friend fain would see  
your Highness !"  
There stood Peter, skeleton and scarecrow,  
plain writ *Phi-lo-so-pher*  
In the woe-worn face—for yellowness and  
dryness,  
Parchment—with a pair of eyes—one hope  
their feeble spark.  
"Did I counsel rightly ? Have you, in  
accordance,  
Prospered greatly, dear my pupil ? Sure, at  
just the stage I find you,  
When your hand may draw me forth from  
the mad war-dance  
Savages are leading round your master—down,  
not dead.  
Padua wants to burn me : baulk them, let  
me linger  
Life out—rueful though its remnant—hid in  
some safe hole behind you !  
Prostrate here I lie : quick, help with but a  
finger  
Lest I house in safety's self—a tombstone o'er  
my head !  
"Lodging, bite and sup, with—now and  
then—a copper  
—Alms for any poorer still, if such there be,  
—is all my asking.  
Take me for your bedesman,—nay, if you  
think proper,  
Menial merely,—such my perfect passion for  
repose !  
Yes, from out your plenty Peter craves a  
pittance  
—Leave to thaw his frozen hands before the  
fire whereat you're basking !  
Double though your debt were, grant this  
boon—remittance  
He proclaims of obligation : 'tis himself that  
owes !"  
"Venerated Master—can it be, such treat-  
ment  
Learning meets with, magic fails to guard  
you from, by all appearance ?  
Strange ! for, as you entered,—what the  
famous feat meant,  
I was full of,—why you, reared that fabric,  
Padua's boast.

Nowise for man's pride, man's pleasure, did you slyly  
 Raise it, but man's seat of rule whereby the world should soon have clearance  
 (Happy world) from such a rout as now so vilely  
 Handles you—and hampers me, for which I grieve the most.

"Since if it got wind you now were my familiar,  
 How could I protect you—nay, defend myself against the rabble?  
 Wait until the mob, now masters, willy-nilly are  
 Servants as they should be: then has gratitude full play!  
 Surely this experience shows how unbecoming  
 'Tis that minds like mine should rot in ease and plenty. Geese may gabble,  
 Gorge, and keep the ground: but swans are soon for quitting  
 Earthly fare—as fain would I, your swan, if taught the way.

"Teach me, then, to rule men, have them at my pleasure!  
 Solely for their good, of course,—impart a secret worth rewarding,  
 Since the proper life's-prize! Tantalus's treasure  
 Aught beside proves, vanishes and leaves no trace at all.  
 Wait awhile; nor press for payment prematurely!  
 Over-haste defrauds you. Thanks! since,—even while I speak,—discarding  
 Sloth and vain delights, I learn how—swiftly, surely—  
 Magic sways the sceptre, wears the crown and wields the ball!

"Gone again—what, is he? 'Faith, he's soon disposed of!  
 Peter's precepts work already, put within my lump their leaven!  
 Ay, we needs must don glove would we pluck the rose—doff  
 Silken garment would we climb the tree and take its fruit.

Why sharp thorn, rough rind? To keep unviolated  
 Either prize! We garland us, we mount from earth to feast in heaven,  
 Just because exist what once we estimated  
 Hindrances which, better taught, as helps we now compute.

"Foolishly I turned disgusted from my fellows!  
 Pits of ignorance—to fill, and heaps of prejudice—to level—  
 Multitudes in motley, whites and blacks and yellows—  
 What a hopeless task it seemed to discipline the host!  
 Now I see my error. Vices act like virtues  
 —Not alone because they guard—sharp thorns—the rose we first dishevel,  
 Not because they scrape, scratch—rough rind—through the dirt-shoes  
 Bare feet cling to bole with, while the half-mooned boot we boast.

"No, my aim is nobler, more disinterested!  
 Man shall keep what seemed to thwart him, since it proves his true assistance,  
 Leads to ascertaining which head is the best head,  
 Would he crown his body, rule its members—lawless else.  
 Ignorant the horse stares, by deficient vision  
 Takes a man to be a monster, lets him mount, then, twice the distance  
 Horse could trot unriden, gallops—dream Elysian!—  
 Dreaming that his dwarfish guide's a giant,—jockeys tell 's."

Brief, so worked the spell, he promptly had a riddance:  
 Heart and brain no longer felt the pricks which passed for conscience-scruples:  
 Free henceforth his feet,—*Per Bacco*, how they did dance  
 Merrily through lets and checks that stopped the way before!

Politics the prize now,—such adroit adviser,  
Opportune suggester, with the tact that triples  
and quadruples

Merit in each measure,—never did the Kaiser  
Boast a subject such a statesman, friend, and  
something more!

As he, up and down, one noonday, paced  
his closet

—Council o'er, each spark (his hint) blown  
flame, by colleagues' breath applauded,  
Strokes of statecraft hailed with "*Salomo si  
nobset!*"

(His the nostrum)—every throw for luck  
come double-six,—

As he, pacing, hugged himself in satisfaction,  
Thump—the door went. "What, the Kaiser?"

By none else were I defrauded  
Thus of well-earned solace. Since 'tis fate's  
exaction;—

Enter, Liege my Lord! Ha, Peter, you  
here? *Teneor vix!*"

"Ah, Sir, none the less, contain you, nor  
wax irate!

You so lofty, I so lowly,—vast the space  
which yawns between us!

Still, methinks, you—more than ever—at a  
high rate

Needs must prize poor Peter's secret since it  
lifts you thus.

Grant me now the boon whereat before you  
boggled!

Ten long years your march has moved—one  
triumph—(though *e's* short)—*hactenus*,

While I down and down disastrously have  
joggled

Till I pitch against Death's door, the true  
*Nec Ultra Plus*.

"Years ago—some ten 'tis—since I sought  
for shelter,

Craved in your whole house a closet, out of  
all your means a comfort.

Now you soar above these: as is gold to  
spelter

So is power—you urged with reason—para-  
mount to wealth.

Power you boast in plenty: let it grant me  
refuge!

Housetoom now is out of question: find for  
me some stronghold—some fort—

Privacy wherein, immured, shall this blind  
deaf huge

Monster of a mob let stay the soul I'd save  
by stealth!

"Ay, for all too much with magic have I  
tampered!

—Lost the world, and gained, I fear, a  
certain place I'm to describe loth!

Still, if prayer and fasting tame the pride  
long pampered,

Mercy may be mine: amendment never comes  
too late.

How can I amend beset by cursers,  
kickers?

Pluck this brand from out the burning!  
Once away, I take my Bible-oath,

Never more—so long as life's weak lamp-  
flame flickers—

No, not once I'll tease you,—but in silence  
bear my fate!"

"Gently, good my Genius, Oracle unerring!  
Strange now! can you guess on what—as in

you peeped—it was I pondered?

You and I are both of one mind in preferring  
Power to wealth, but—here's the point—

what sort of power, I ask?  
Ruling men is vulgar, easy and ignoble:

Rid yourself of conscience, quick you have at  
beck and call the fond herd.

But who wields the crozier, down may fling  
the crow-bill:

That's the power I covet now; soul's sway  
o'er souls—my task!

"Well but," you object, "you have it, who  
by glamour

Dress up lies to look like truths, mask folly  
in the garb of reason:

Your soul acts on theirs, sure, when the  
people clamour,

Hold their peace, now fight now fondle,—  
earwigged through the brains."

Possibly! but still the operation's mundane,  
Grosser than a taste demands which—craving  
manna—kecks at peason—

Power o'er men by wants material: why  
should one deign

Rule by sordid hopes and fears—a grunt for  
all one's pains?

"No, if men must praise me, let them praise  
to purpose!

Would we move the world, not earth but  
heaven must be our fulcrum—*pou sto!*

Thus I seek to move it: Master, why inter-  
pose—

Baulk my climbing close on what's the  
ladder's topmost round?

Stacraft 'tis I step from: when by priest-  
craft hoisted

Up to where my foot may touch the highest  
rung which fate allows toe,

Then indeed ask favour! On you shall be  
foisted

No excuse: I'll pay my debt, each penny of  
the pound!

"Ho, my knaves without there! Lead this  
worthy downstairs!

No farewell, good Paul—nay, Peter—what's  
your name remembered rightly?

Come, he's humble: out another would have  
flounced—airs

Suitors often give themselves when our sort  
bow them forth.

Did I touch his rags? He surely kept his  
distance:

Yet, there somehow passed to me from him—  
where'er the virtue might lie—

Something that inspires my soul—Oh, by  
assistance

Doubtlessly of Peter!—still, he's worth just  
what he's worth!

"'Tis my own soul soars now: soaring—  
how? By crawling!

I'll to Rome, before Rome's feet the temporal-  
supreme lay prostrate!

'Hands' (I'll say) 'proficient once in pulling,  
hauling

This and that way men as I was minded—  
feet now clasp!

Ay, the Kaiser's self has wrung them in his  
fervour!

Now—they only sue to slave for Rome, nor  
at one doit the cost rate.

Rome's adopted child—no bone, no muscle,  
nerve or

Sinew of me but I'll strain, though out my  
life I gasp!"

As he stood one evening proudly—(he had  
traversed

Rome on horseback—peerless pageant!—  
claimed the Lateran as new Pope)—

Thinking "All's attained now! Pontiff!  
Who could have erst

Dreamed of my advance so far when, some  
ten years ago,

I embraced devotion, grew from priest to  
bishop,

Gained the Purple, bribed the Conclave, got  
the Two-thirds, saw my coop ope,

Came out—what Rome hails me! O were  
there a wish-shop,

Not one wish more would I purchase—lord  
of all below!

"Ha!—who dares intrude now—puts aside  
the arras?

What, old Peter, here again, at such a time,  
in such a presence?

Satan sends this plague back merely to  
embarrass

Me who enter on my office—little needing you!  
'Faith, I'm touched myself by age, but you look

Tithon!

Were it vain to seek of you the sole prize left—  
rejuvenescence?

Well, since flesh is grass which Time must  
lay his scythe on,

Say your say and so depart and make no  
more ado!"

Peter faltered—coughing first by way of pro-  
logue—

"Holiness, your help comes late: a death at  
ninety little matters."

Padua, build poor Peter's pyre now, on log  
roll log,  
Burn away—I've lived my day! Yet here's  
the sting in death—  
I've an author's pride: I want my Book's  
survival:  
See, I've hid it in my breast to warm me mid  
the rags and tatters!  
Save it—tell next age your Master had no rival!  
Scholar's debt discharged in full, be 'Thanks'  
my latest breath!"

"Faugh, the frowzy bundle—scribblings  
harum-scarum  
Scattered o'er a dozen sheepskins! What's  
the name of this farrago?  
Ha—" *Conciliator Differentiarum*—  
Man and book may burn together, cause the  
world no loss!  
Stop—what else? A tractate—eh, '*De  
Speciebus  
Ceremonialis Ma-gi-a*'? I dream sure!  
Hence, away, go,  
Wizard,—quick avoid me! Vain you clasp  
my knee, buss  
Hand that bears the Fisher's ring or foot that  
boasts the Cross!

"Help! The old magician clings like an  
octopus!  
Ah, you rise now—fuming, fretting, frowning,  
if I read your features!  
Frown, who cares? We're Pope—once Pope,  
you can't unpope us!  
Good—you muster up a smile: that's better!  
Still so brisk?  
All at once grown youthful? But the case is  
plain! Ass—  
Here I dally with the fiend, yet know the  
Word—compels all creatures  
Earthly, heavenly, hellish. *Apaga, Sathanas  
Dicam verbum Salomonis*—" "*—dicite!*"  
When—whisk!—

What was changed? The stranger gave his  
eyes a rubbing:  
There smiled Peter's face turned back a  
moment at him o'er the shoulder,

As the black door shut, bang! "So he  
'scapes a drubbing!"  
(Quoth a boy who, unespied, had stopped to  
hear the talk).  
"That's the way to thank these wizards  
when they bid men  
*Benedicite!* What ails you? You, a man,  
and yet no bolder?  
Foreign Sir, you look but foolish!" "*Idmen,  
idmen!*"  
Groaned the Greek. "O Peter, cheese at  
last I know from chalk!"

Peter lived his life out, menaced yet no martyr,  
Knew himself the mighty man he was—such  
knowledge all his guerdon,  
Left the world a big book—people but in part err  
When they style a true *Scientia Com-pen-di-um*:  
"*Admiracionem incutit*" they sourly  
Smile, as fast they shut the folio which my-  
self was somehow spurred on  
Once to ope: but love—life's milk which  
daily, hourly,  
Blockheads lap—O Peter, still thy taste of  
love's to come!

Greek, was your ambition likewise doomed  
to failure?  
True, I find no record you wore purple,  
walked with axe and fasces,  
Played some antipope's part: still, friend,  
don't turn tail, you're  
Certain, with but these two gifts, to gain  
earth's prize in time!  
Cleverness uncurbed by conscience—if you  
ransacked  
Peter's book you'd find no potent spell like  
these to rule the masses;  
Nor should want example, had I not to transact  
Other business. Go your ways, you'll thrive!  
So ends my rhyme.

When these parts Tiberius,—not yet Caesar,  
—travelled,  
Passing Padua, he consulted Padua's Oracle  
of Geryon

(God three-headed, thrice wise) just to get unravelled

Certain tangles of his future. "Fling a Abano

Golden dice," it answered: "dropt within the fount there, ..

Note what sum the pips present!" And still we see each die, the very one,

Turn up, through the crystal,—read the whole account there

Where 'tis told by Suetonius,—each its highest throw.

Scarce the sportive fancy-dice I fling show "Venus:"

Still—for love of that dear land which I so oft in dreams revisit—

I have—oh, not sung! but lilted (as—between us—

Crows my lazy custom) this its legend. What the lilt?



## DOCTOR

A RABBI told me: On the day allowed Satan for carping at God's rule, he came, Fresh from our earth, to brave the angel-crowd.

"What is the fault now?" "This I find to blame:

Many and various are the tongues below, Yet all agree in one speech, all proclaim

"'Hell has no might to match what earth can show:

Death is the strongest-born of Hell, and yet Stronger than Death is a Bad Wife, we know.'

"Is it a wonder if I fume and fret—

Robbed of my rights, since Death am I, and mine

The style of Strongest? Men pay Nature's debt

"Because they must at my demand; decline To pay it henceforth surely men will please, Provided husbands with bad wives combine

To baffle Death. Judge between me and these!"

"Thyself shalt judge. Descend to earth in shape

Of mortal, marry, drain from froth to lees

"The bitter draught, then see if thou escape Concluding, with men sorrowful and sage, A Bad Wife's strength Death's self in vain would ape!"

How Satan entered on his pilgrimage, Conformed himself to earthly ordinance, Wived and played husband well from youth to age

Intrepidly—I leave untold, advance Through many a married year until I reach A day when—of his father's countenance

The very image, like him too in speech As well as thought and deed,—the union's fruit Attained maturity. "I needs must teach

My son a trade: but trade, such son to suit, Needs seeking after. He a man of war? Too cowardly! A lawyer wins repute—



- "Having to toil and moil, though—both which are  
Beyond this sluggard. There's Divinity:  
No, that's my own bread-winner—that be far
- "Enter, look round! Where's Death? Know  
—I am he,  
Satan who work all evil: I who bring  
Pain to the patient in whate'er degree.
- "From my poor offspring! Physic? Ha,  
we'll try  
If this be practicable. Where's my wit?  
Asleep?—since, now I come to think . . .  
Ay, ay!
- "I, then, am there: first glance thine eye  
shall fling  
Will find me—whether distant or at hand,  
As I am free to do my spiriting.
- "Hither, my son! Exactly have I hit  
On a profession for thee. *Medicus*—  
Behold, thou art appointed! Yea, I spit
- "At such mere first glance thou shalt under-  
stand  
Wherefore I reach no higher up the room  
Than door or window, when my form is  
scanned.
- "Upon thine eyes, bestow a virtue thus  
That henceforth not this human form I wear  
Shalt thou perceive alone, but—one of us
- "Howe'er friends' faces please to gather  
gloom,  
Bent o'er the sick,—howe'er himself de-  
sponds,—  
In such case Death is not the sufferer's doom.
- "By privilege—thy fleshly sight shall bear  
Me in my spirit-person as I walk  
The world and take my prey appointed there.
- "Contrariwise, do friends rejoice my bonds  
Are broken, does the captive in his turn  
Crow 'Life shall conquer'? Nip these foolish  
fronds
- "Doctor once tumbled—what ignorance shall  
baulk  
Thy march triumphant? Diagnose the gout  
As cholic, and prescribe it cheese for chalk—
- "Of hope a-sprout, if haply thou discern  
Me at the head—my victim's head, be sure!  
Forth now! This taught thee, little else to  
learn!"
- "No matter! All's one: cure shall come  
about  
And win thee wealth—fees paid with such  
a roar  
Of thanks and praise alike from lord and lout
- And forth he went. Folk heard him ask  
demure
- "As never stunned man's ears on earth before.  
"How may this be?" Why, that's my  
sceptic! Soon  
Truth will corrupt thee, soon thou doubt'st  
no more!
- "How do you style this ailment? (There  
he peeps,  
My father, through the arras!) Sirs, the cure
- "Why is it I bestow on thee the boon  
Of recognizing me the while I go  
Invisibly among men, morning, noon
- "Is plain as A. B. C.! Experience steeps  
Blossoms of pennyroyal half an hour  
In sherris. *Sumat!*—Lo, how sound he  
sleeps—
- "And night, from house to house, and—  
quick or slow—  
Take my appointed prey? They summon thee  
For help, suppose: obey the summons! so!
- "The subject you presumed was past the  
power  
Of Galen to relieve!" Or else "How's  
this?  
Why call for help so tardily? Clouds lour

- “Portentously indeed, Sirs! (Nought’s amiss: He’s at the bed-foot merely.) Still, the storm  
May pass averted—not by quacks, I wis  
“Like you, my masters! You, forsooth, per form  
A miracle? Stand, sciolists, aside!  
Blood, ne’er so cold, at ignorance grows warm!”
- Which boasting by result was justified,  
Big as might words be: whether drugged or left  
Drugless, the patient always lived, not died.
- Great the heir’s gratitude, so nigh bereft  
Of all he prized in this world: sweet the smile  
Of disconcerted rivals: “Cure?—say, theft
- “From Nature in despite of Art—so style  
This off-hand kill-or-cure work! You did much,  
I had done more: folk cannot wait awhile!”
- But did the case change? was it—“Scarcely such  
The symptoms as to warrant our recourse  
To your skill, Doctor! Yet since just a touch
- “Of pulse, a taste of breath, has all the force  
With you of long investigation claimed  
By others,—tracks an ailment to its source
- “Intuitively,—may we ask unblamed  
What from this pimple you prognosticate?”  
“Death!” was the answer, as he saw and named
- The coucher by the sick man’s head. “Too late  
You send for my assistance. I am bold  
Only by Nature’s leave, and bow to Fate!
- “Besides, you have my rivals: lavish gold!  
How comfortably quick shall life depart  
Cosseted by attentions manifold!
- “One day, one hour ago, perchance my art  
Had done some service. Since you have yourselves  
Chosen—before the horse—to put the cart,  
“Why, Sirs, the sooner that the sexton delves  
Your patient’s grave, the better! How you stare  
—Shallow, for all the deep books on your shelves!
- “Fare you well, fumlbers!” Do I need declare  
What name and fame, what riches recompensed  
The Doctor’s practice? Never anywhere
- Such an adept as daily evidenced  
Each new vaticination! Oh, not he  
Like dolts who dallied with their scruples, fenced
- With subterfuge, nor gave out frank and free  
Something decisive! If he said “I save  
The patient,” saved he was: if “Death will be
- “His portion,” you might count him dead.  
Thus brave,  
Behold our worthy, sans competitor  
Throughout the country, on the architrave
- Of Glory’s temple golden-lettered for  
Machaon *redivivus*! So, it fell  
That, of a sudden, when the Emperor
- Was smit by sore disease, I need not tell  
If any other Doctor’s aid was sought  
To come and forthwith make the sick Prince well.
- “He will reward thee as a monarch ought.  
Not much imports the malady; but then,  
He clings to life and cries like one distraught
- For thee—who, from a simple citizen,  
Mayst look to rise in rank,—nay, haply wear  
A medal with his portrait,—always when

"Recovery is quite accomplished. There !  
 Pass to the presence ! " Hardly has he  
 crossed  
 The chamber's threshold when he halts, aware

Of who stands sentry by the head. All's lost.  
 "Sire, nought avails my art : you near the  
 goal,  
 And end the race by giving up the ghost."

"How?" cried the monarch: "Names upon  
 your roll  
 Of half my subjects rescued by your skill—  
 Old and young, rich and poor—crowd cheek  
 by jowl

"And yet no room for mine? Be saved I  
 will !  
 Why else am I earth's foremost potentate?  
 Add me to these and take as fee your fill

"Of gold—that point admits of no debate  
 Between us : save me, as you can and must,—  
 Gold, till your gown's pouch cracks beneath  
 the weight !"

This touched the Doctor. "Truly a home-  
 thrust,  
 Parent, you will not parry ! Have I dared  
 Entreat that you forego the meal of dust

"—Man that is snake's meat—when I saw  
 prepared  
 Your daily portion? Never ! Just this once,  
 Go from his head, then,—let his life be  
 spared !"

Whisper met whisper in the gruff response  
 "Fool, I must have my prey : no inch I  
 budge  
 From where thou see'st me thus myself en-  
 snared."

"Ah," moaned the sufferer, "by thy look I  
 judge  
 Wealth fails to tempt thee : what if honours  
 prove  
 More efficacious? Nought to him I grudge.

"Who saves me. Only keep my head above  
 The cloud that's creeping round it—I'll divide  
 My empire with thee ! No? What's left  
 but—love?

"Does love allure thee? Well then, take  
 as bride  
 My only daughter, fair beyond belief !  
 Save me—to-morrow shall the knot be tied !"

"Father, you hear him ! Respite ne'er so  
 brief  
 Is all I beg : go now and come again  
 Next day, for aught I care : respect the grief

"Mine will be if thy first-born sues in  
 vain !"  
 "Fool, I must have my prey !" was all he  
 got  
 In answer. But a fancy crossed his brain.

"I have it ! Sire, methinks a meteor shot  
 Just now across the heavens and neutralized  
 Jove's salutary influence : 'neath the blot

"Plumb are you placed now : well that I  
 surmised  
 The cause of failure ! Knaves, reverse the  
 bed !"  
 "Stay !" groaned the monarch, "I shall be  
 capsize—

"Jolt—jolt—my heels uplift where late my  
 head  
 Was lying—sure I'm turned right round at  
 last !  
 What do you say now, Doctor?" Nought  
 he said :

For why? With one brisk leap the Antic  
 From couch-foot back to pillow,—as before,  
 Lord of the situation. Long aghast  
 The Doctor gazed, then "Yet one trial  
 more  
 Is left me" inwardly he uttered. "Shame  
 Upon thy flinty heart ! Do I implore

"This trifling favour in the idle name  
(Of mercy to the moribund? I plead "  
The cause of all thou dost affect : my aim

"Befits my author ! Why would I succeed ?  
Simply that by success I may promote  
The growth of thy pet virtues—pride and  
greed.

"But keep thy favours !—curse thee ! I  
devote

Henceforth my service to the other side.  
No time to lose : the rattle's in his throat.

"So,—not to leave one last resource un-  
tried,—

Run to my house with all haste, somebody !  
Bring me that knobstick thence, so often plied

"With profit by the astrologer—shall I  
Disdain its help, the mystic Jacob's-Staff?  
Sire, do but have the courage not to die

"Till this arrive ! Let none of you dare  
laugh !

Though rugged its exterior, I have seen  
That implement work wonders, send the chaff

"Quick and thick flying from the wheat—I  
mean,  
By metaphor, a human sheaf it thrashed  
Flail-like. Go fetch it ! Or—a word be-  
tween

"Just you and me, friend !—go bid, un-  
abashed,  
My mother, whom you'll find there, bring the  
stick  
Herself—herself, mind !" Out the lackey  
dashed

Zealous upon the errand. Craft and trick  
Are meat and drink to Satan : and he grinned  
—How else ?—at an excuse so politic

For failure : scarce would Jacob's-Staff rescind  
Fate's firm decree ! And ever as he neared  
The agonizing one, his breath like wind

Froze to the marrow, while his eye-flash  
seared

Sense in the brain up : closer and more close  
Pressing his prey, when at the door appeared

—Who but his Wife the Bad ? Whereof one  
dose,

One grain, one mite of the medicament,  
Sufficed him. Up he sprang. One wor-  
too gross

To soil my lips with,—and through ceiling  
went

Somehow the Husband. "That a storm's  
dispersed

We know for certain by the sulphury scent !

"Hail to the Doctor ! Who but one so versed  
In all Dame Nature's secrets had prescribed  
The staff thus opportunely ? Style him first

"And foremost of physicians !" "I've  
imbibed

Elixir surely," smiled the prince,—  
gained

New lease of life. Dear Doctor, how you  
bribed

"Death to forego me, boots not : you've  
obtained

My daughter and her dowry. Death, I've  
heard,

Was still on earth the strongest power that  
reigned,

"Except a Bad Wife !" Whereunto de-  
murred

Nowise the Doctor, so refused the fee

—No dowry, no bad wife !

"You think absurd

This tale ?"—the Rabbi added : "True, our  
Talmud

Boasts sundry such : yet—have our elders  
erred

In thinking there's some water there, not all  
mud ?"

I tell it, as the Rabbi told it me.

## PAN AND LUNA.

Si credere dignum est.—*Georgic*. iii. 390.

O WORTHY of belief I hold it was,  
Virgil, your legend in those strange three lines!  
No question, that adventure came to pass  
One black night in Arcadia: yes, the pines,  
Mountains and valleys mingling made one  
mass

Of black with void black heaven: the earth's  
confines,

The sky's embrace,—below, above, around,  
All hardened into black without a bound.

Fill up a swart stone chalice to the brim  
With fresh-squeezed yet fast-thickening poppy-  
juice:

See how the sluggish jelly, late a-swim,  
Turns marble to the touch of who would loose  
The solid smooth, grown jet from rim to rim,  
By turning round the bowl! So night can  
fuse

Earth with her all-comprising sky. No less,  
Light, the least spark, shows air and empti-  
ness.

And thus it proved when—diving into space,  
Striped of all vapour, from each web of mist  
Utterly film-free—entered on her race  
The naked Moon, full-orbed antagonist  
Of night and dark, night's dowry: peak to  
base,

Upstarted mountains, and each valley, kissed  
To sudden life, lay silver-bright: in air  
Flew she revealed, Maid-Moon with limbs  
all bare.

Still as she fled, each depth—where refuge  
seemed—

Opening a lone pale chamber, left distinct  
Those limbs: mid still-retreating blue, she  
teemed

Herself with whiteness,—virginal, uncinct  
By any halo save what finely gleamed  
To outline not disguise her: heaven was linked  
In one accord with earth to quaff the joy,  
Drain beauty to the dregs without alloy.

Whereof she grew aware. What help?

When, lo,

A succourable cloud with sleep lay dense:  
Some pine-tree-top had caught it sailing slow,  
And tethered for a prize: in evidence  
Captive lay fleece on fleece of piled-up snow  
Drowsily patient: flake-heaped how or  
whence,

The structure of that succourable cloud,  
What matter? Shamed she plunged into its  
shroud.

Orbed—so the woman-figure poets call  
Because of rounds on rounds—that apple-  
shaped

Head which its hair binds close into a ball  
Each side the curving ears—that pure un-  
draped

Pout of the sister paps—that . . . Once for all,  
Say—her consummate circle thus escaped  
With its innumerable circlets, sank absorbed,  
Safe in the cloud—O naked Moon full-orbed!

But what means this? The downy swathes  
combine,

Conglobe, the smothery coy-caressing stuff  
Curdles about her! Vain each twist and  
twine

Those lithe limbs try, encroached on by a  
fluff

Fitting as close as fits the dented spine  
Its flexile ivory outside-flesh: enough!  
The plummy drifts contract, condense, con-  
stringe,

Till she is swallowed by the feathery springe.

As when a pearl slips lost in the thin foam  
Churned on a sea-shore, and, o'er-frothed,  
conceits

Herself safe-housed in Amphitrite's dome,—  
If, through the bladdery wave-worked yeast,  
she meets

What most she loathes and leaps from,—elf  
from gnome

No gladlier,—finds that safest of retreats  
Bubble about a treacherous hand wide ope  
To grasp her—(divers who pick pearls so  
grope)—

So lay this Mald-Moon clasped around and caught

By rough red Pan, the god of all that tract :  
He it was schemed the snare thus subtly wrought

With simulated earth-breath, — wool-tufts packed

Into a billowy wrappage. Sheep far-sought  
For spotless shearings yield such : take the fact  
As learned Virgil gives it,—how the breed  
Whitens itself for ever : yes, indeed !

If one forefather ram, though pure as chalk  
From tinge on fleece, should still display a tongue

Black 'neath the beast's moist palate, prompt  
men baulk

The propagating plague : he gets no young :  
They rather slay him,—sell his hide to caulk  
Ships with, first steeped in pitch,—nor hands  
are wrung

In sorrow for his fate : protected thus,  
The purity we love is gained for us.

So did Girl-moon, by just her attribute  
Of unmatched modesty betrayed, lie trapped,  
Bruised to the breast of Pan, half-god half-brute,  
Raked by his bristly boar-sward while he lapped  
—Never say, kissed her ! that were to pollute  
Love's language—which moreover proves unapt

To tell how she recoiled—as who finds thorns  
Where she sought flowers—when, feeling, she  
touched—horns !

Then—does the legend say?—first moon-eclipse  
Happened, first swooning-fit which puzzled  
sore

The early sages ? Is that why she dips  
Into the dark, a minute and no more,  
Only so long as serves her while she rips  
The cloud's womb through and, faultless as  
before,

Pursues her way ? No lesson for a maid  
Left she, a maid herself thus trapped, be-  
trayed ?

Ha, Virgil ? Tell the rest, you ! “To the deep  
Of his domain the wildwood, Pan forthwith  
Called her, and so she followed”—in her  
sleep,

Surely?—“by no means spurning him.” The  
myth

Explain who may ! Let all else go, I keep  
—As of a ruin just a monolith—

Thus much, one verse of five words, each a  
boon :

Arcadia, night, a cloud, Pan, and the moon.

“TOUCH him ne'er so lightly, into song he  
broke :

Soil so quick-receptive,—not one feather-  
seed,

Not one flower-dust fell but straight its fall  
awoke

Vitalizing virtue : song would song succeed  
Sudden as spontaneous—prove a poet-soul !”

Indeed ?

Rock's the song-soil rather, surface hard and  
bare :

Sun and dew their mildness, storm and frost  
their rage

Vainly both expend,—few flowers awaken  
there :

Quiet in its cleft broods—what the after age  
Knows and names a pine, a nation's heritage.

# JOCOSERIA.

1883.

WANTING is—what?

Summer redundant,

Blueness abundant,

—Where is the blot?

Beamy the world, yet a blank all the same,  
—Framework which waits for a picture to  
frame :

What of the leafage, what of the flower?  
Roses embowering with nought they embower!  
Come then, complete incomplection, O comer,  
Pant through the blueness, perfect the  
summer!

Breathe but one breath  
Rose-beauty above,  
And all that was death  
Grows life, grows love,  
Grows love!

DONALD.

“WILL you hear my story also,  
—Huge Sport, brave adventure in plenty?”  
The boys were a band from Oxford,  
The oldest of whom was twenty.

The bothy we held carouse in  
Was bright with fire and candle;  
Tale followed tale like a merry-go-round  
Whereof Sport turned the handle.

In our eyes and noses—turf-smoke:  
In our ears a tune from the frivet,  
Whence “Boiling, boiling,” the kettle sang,  
“And ready for fresh Glenlivet.”

So, feat capped feat, with a vengeance:  
Truths, though,—the lads were loyal:  
“Grouse, five score brace to the bag!  
Deer, ten hours’ stalk of the Royal!”

Of boasting, not one bit, boys!  
Only there seemed to settle  
Somehow above your curly heads,  
—Plain through the singing kettle,

Palpable through the cloud,  
As each new-puffed Havanna  
Rewarded the teller’s well-told tale,—  
This vaunt “To Sport—Hosanna!

“Hunt, fish, shoot,  
Would a man fulfil life’s duty!  
Not to the bodily frame alone  
Does Sport give strength and beauty,

“But character gains in—courage?  
Ay, Sir, and much beside it!  
You don’t sport, more’s the pity:  
You soon would find, if you tried it,

“Good sportsman means good fellow,  
Sound-hearted he, to the centre;  
Your mealy-mouthed mild milksops  
—There’s where the rot can enter!

“There’s where the dirt will breed,  
The shabbiness Sport would banish!  
Oh no, Sir, no! In your honoured case  
All such objections vanish.

“’Tis known how hard you studied:  
A Double-First—what, the jigger!  
Give me but half your Latin and Greek,  
I’ll never again touch trigger!

“Still, tastes are tastes, allow me!  
Allow, too, where there’s keenness  
For Sport, there’s little likelihood  
Of a man’s displaying meanness!”

So, put on my mettle, I interposed.

"Will you hear my story?" quoth I.  
 "Never mind how long since it happened;  
 I sat, as we sit, in a bothy;

"With as merry a band of mates, too,  
 Undergrads all on a level:  
 (One's a Bishop, one's gone to the Bench,  
 And one's gone—well, to the Devil.)

"When, lo, a scratching and tapping!  
 In hobbled a ghastly visitor.  
 Listen to just what he told us himself  
 —No need of our playing inquisitor!"

Do you happen to know in Ross-shire  
 Mount . . . Ben . . . but the name scarce  
 matters:

Of the naked fact I am sure enough,  
 Though I clothe it in rags and tatters.

You may recognise Ben by description;  
 Behind him—a moor's immenseness:  
 Up goes the middle mount of a range,  
 Fringed with its firs in denseness.

Rimming the edge, its fir-fringe, mind!  
 For an edge there is, though narrow;  
 From end to end of the range, a stripe  
 Of path runs straight as an arrow.

And the mountaineer who takes that path  
 Saves himself miles of journey  
 He has to plod if he crosses the moor  
 Through heather, peat and burnie.

But a mountaineer he needs must be,  
 For, look you, right in the middle  
 Projects bluff Ben—with an end in *ich*—  
 Why planted there, is a riddle:

Since all Ben's brothers little and big  
 Keep rank, set shoulder to shoulder,  
 And only this burliest out must bulge.  
 Till it seems—to the beholder

From down in the gully,—as if Ben's breast  
 To a sudden spike diminished,  
 Would signify to the boldest foot  
 "All further passage finished!"

Yet the mountaineer who sidles on  
 And on to the very bending,  
 Discovers, if heart and brain be proof,  
 No necessary ending.

Foot up, foot down, to the turn abrupt  
 Having trod, he, there arriving,  
 Finds—what he took for a point was breadth,  
 A mercy of Nature's contriving.

So, he rounds what, when 'tis reached,  
 Proves straight,  
 From one side gains the other:  
 The wee path widens—resume the march,  
 And he foils you, Ben my brother!

But Donald—(that name, I hope, will do)—  
 I wrong him if I call "foiling"  
 The tramp of the callant, whistling the  
 while  
 As blithe as our kettle's boiling.

He had dared the danger from boyhood up,  
 And now,—when perchance was waiting  
 A lass at the brig below,—'twixt mount  
 And moor would he stand debating?

Moreover this Donald was twenty-five,  
 A glory of bone and muscle:  
 Did a fiend dispute the right of way,  
 Donald would try a tussle.

Lightsomely marched he out of the broad  
 On to the narrow and narrow;  
 A step more, rounding the angular rock,  
 Reached the front straight as an arrow.

He stepped it, safe on the ledge he stood,  
 When—whom found he full-facing?  
 What fellow in courage and wariness too,  
 Had scouted ignoble pacing,



And left low safety to timid mates,  
 And made for the dread dear danger,  
 And gained the height where—who could  
 guess  
 He would meet with a rival ranger?

'Twas a gold-red stag that stood and stared,  
 Gigantic and magnificent,  
 By the wonder—ay, and the peril—struck  
 Intelligent and pacific:

For a red deer is no fallow deer  
 Grown cowardly through park-feeding;  
 He batters you like a thunderbolt  
 If you brave his haunts unheeding.

I doubt he could hardly perform *volte-face*  
 Had valour advised discretion:  
 You may walk on a rope, but to turn on a rope  
 No Blondin makes profession.

Yet Donald must turn, would pride permit,  
 Though pride ill brooks retiring:  
 Each eyed each—mute man, motionless  
 beast—  
 Less fearing than admiring.

These are the moments when quite new sense,  
 To meet some need as novel,  
 Springs up in the brain: it inspired resource:  
 —“Nor advance nor retreat but—grovel!”

And slowly, surely, never a whit  
 Relaxing the steady tension  
 Of eye-stare which binds man to beast,—  
 By an inch and inch declension,

Sank Donald sidewise down and down:  
 Till flat, breast upwards, lying  
 At his six-foot length, no corpse more still,  
 —“If he cross me! The trick's worth  
 trying.”

Minutes were an eternity;  
 But a new sense was created  
 In the stag's brain too; he resolves! Slow,  
 sure,  
 With eye-stare unabated,

Feelingly he extends a foot  
 Which tastes the way ere it touches  
 Earth's solid and just escapes man's soft,  
 Nor hold of the same unclutches

Till its fellow foot, light as a feather whisk,  
 Lands itself no less finely:  
 So a mother removes a fly from the face  
 Of her babe asleep supinely.

And now 'tis the haunch and hind foot's  
 turn  
 —That's hard: can the beast quite  
 raise it?  
 Yes, traversing half the prostrate length,  
 His hoof-tip does not graze it.

Just one more lift! But Donald, you see,  
 Was sportsman first, man after:  
 A fancy lightened his caution through,  
 —He well-nigh broke into laughter.

“It were nothing short of a miracle!  
 Unrivalled, unexampled—  
 All sporting feats with this feat matched  
 Were down and dead and trampled!”

The last of the legs as tenderly  
 Follows the rest: or never  
 Or now is the time! His knife in reach,  
 And his right-hand loose—how clever!

For this can stab up the stomach's soft,  
 While the left-hand grasps the pastern.  
 A rise on the elbow, and—now's the time  
 Or never: this turn's the last turn!

I shall dare to place myself by God  
 Who scanned—for He does—each feature  
 Of the face thrown up in appeal to Him  
 By the agonizing creature.

Nay, I hear plain words: “Thy gift brings  
 this!”  
 Up he sprang, back he staggered,  
 Over he fell, and with him our friend  
 —At following game no laggard.

Yet he was not dead when they picked next  
day

From the gully's depth the wreck of him ;  
His fall had been stayed by the stag beneath  
Who cushioned and saved the neck of him

But the rest of his body—why, doctors said,  
Whatever could break was broken ;  
Legs, arms, ribs, all of him looked like a  
toast  
In a tumbler of port-wine soaked.

"That your life is left you, thank the stag !"  
Said they when—the slow cure ended—  
They opened the hospital door, and thence  
—Strapped, spliced, main fractures mended,

And minor damage left wisely alone,—  
Like an old shoe clouted and cobbled,  
Out—what went in a Goliath well-nigh,—  
Some half of a David hobbled.

"You must ask an alms from house to house :  
Sell the stag's head for a bracket,  
With its grand twelve tines<sup>1</sup>—I'd buy it  
myself—  
And use the skin for a jacket !"

He was wiser, made both head and hide  
His win-penny : hands and knees on,  
Would manage to crawl—poor crab—by the  
roads  
In the misty stalking-season.

And if he discovered a bothy like this,  
Why, harvest was sure : folk listened.  
He told his tale to the lovers of Sport :  
Lips twitched, cheeks glowed, eyes  
glistened.

And when he had come to the close, and  
spread  
His spoils for the gazers' wonder,  
With "Gentlemen, here's the skull of the  
stag  
I was over, thank God, not under !"—

<sup>1</sup> The branches of a stag's horn.

The company broke out in applause ;  
"By Jingo, a lucky cripple !  
Have a munch of grouse and a hunk of  
bread,  
And a tug, besides, at our tippie !"

And "There's my pay for your pluck !"  
cried This,  
"And mine for your jolly story !"  
Cried That, while T'other—but he was  
drunk—  
Hiccapped "A trump, a Tory !"

I hope I gave twice as much as the rest :  
For, as Homer would say, "within grate  
Though teeth kept tongue," my whole soul  
growled  
"Rightly rewarded,—Ingrate !"

SOLOMON AND BALKIS.

SOLOMON King of the Jews and the Queen  
of Sheba Balkis  
Talk on the ivory throne, and we well may  
conjecture their talk is  
Solely of things sublime : why else has she  
sought Mount Zion,  
Climbed the six golden steps, and sat betwixt  
lion and lion ?

She proves him with hard questions : before  
she has reached the middle  
He smiling supplies the end, straight solves  
them riddle by riddle ;  
Until, dead-beaten at last, there is left no  
spirit in her,  
And thus would she close the game whereof  
she was first beginner :

"O wisest thou of the wise, world's marvel  
and well-nigh monster,  
One crabbed question more to construe or  
*vulgo* conster !  
Who are those, of all mankind, a monarch of  
perfect wisdom  
Should open to, when they knock at *sphæteron*  
*do*—that's his dome?"

The King makes tart reply : "Whom else  
but the wise his equals  
Should he welcome with heart and voice ?—  
since, king though he be, such weak walls  
Of circumstance—power and pomp—divide  
souls each from other  
That whoso proves kingly in craft I needs  
must acknowledge my brother.

"Come poet, come painter, come sculptor,  
come builder—whate'er his condition,  
Is he prime in his art? We are peers! My  
insight has pierced the partition  
And hails—for the poem, the picture, the  
statue, the building—my fellow!  
Gold's gold though dim in the dust: court-  
polish soon turns it yellow.

"But tell me in turn, O thou to thy weakling  
sex superior,  
That for knowledge has travelled so far yet  
seemest no whit the wearier,—  
Who are those, of all mankind, a queen like  
thyself, consummate  
In wisdom, should call to her side with an  
affable 'Up hither, come, mate!'"

"The Good are my mates—how else? Why  
doubt it?" the Queen upbided:  
"Sure even above the Wise,—or in travel  
my eyes have idled,—  
I see the Good stand plain: be they rich,  
poor, shrewd or simple,  
If Good they only are. . . . Permit me to  
drop my wimple!"

And in that bashful jerk of her body, she—  
peace, thou scoffer!—  
Jostled the King's right-hand stretched cour-  
teously help to proffer,  
And so disclosed a portent: all unaware the  
Prince eyed  
The Ring which bore the Name—turned  
outside now from inside!

The truth-compelling Name!—and at once  
"I greet the Wise—Oh,  
Certainly welcome such to my court—with  
this proviso:

The building must be my temple, my person  
stand forth the statue,  
The picture my portrait prove, and the poem  
my praise—you cat, you!"

But Solomon nonplussed? Nay! "Be truth-  
ful in turn!" so bade he:  
"See the Name, obey its best!" And at  
once subjoins the lady  
—"Provided the Good are the young, men  
strong and tall and proper,  
Such servants I straightway enlist,—which  
means . . ." but the blushes stop her.

"Ah, Soul," the Monarch sighed, "that  
wouldst soar yet ever crawlst,  
How comes it thou canst discern the greatest  
yet choose the smallest,  
Unless because heaven is far, where wings  
find fit expansion,  
While creeping on all-fours suits, suffices the  
earthly mansion?"

"Aspire to the Best! But which? There  
are Bests and Bests so many,  
With a *habitat* each for each, earth's Best as  
much Best as any!  
On Lebanon roots the cedar—soil lofty, yet  
stony and sandy—  
While hyssop, of worth in its way, on the  
wall grows low but handy.

"Above may the Soul spread wing, spurn  
body and sense beneath her;  
Below she must condescend to plodding un-  
buoyed by æther.  
In heaven I yearn for knowledge, account all  
else inanity;  
On earth I confess an itch for the praise of  
fools—that's Vanity.

"It is nought, it will go, it can never presume  
above to trouble me;  
But here,—why, it toys and tickles and teases,  
howe'er I redouble me  
In a doggedest of endeavours to play the in-  
different. Therefore,  
Suppose we resume discourse? Thou hast  
travelled thus far: but wherewith?

"Solely for Solomon's sake, to see whom  
earth styles Sagest?"

Through her blushes laughed the Queen.

"For the sake of a Sage? The gay  
jest!"

On high, be communion with Mind—there,  
Body concerns not Balkis:

Down here,—do I make too bold? Sage  
Solomon,—one fool's small kiss!"

### CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI.

[This is a well-known story. Cristina was the daughter of Gustavus Adolphus, and succeeded to the throne of Sweden on his death in 1632. She was an ill-regulated woman of free life, of whom many curious tales are told. She abdicated in 1654 and became a Roman Catholic. Monaldeschi was an Italian reprobate, who became her Master of the Horse. She fell in love with him, and he made a fool of her. Discovering the truth, Cristina had him barbarously murdered at Fontainebleau. She then retired to Rome, where she died in 1689.]

Al! but how each loved each, Marquis!

Here's the gallery they trod

Both together, he her god,

She his idol,—lend your rod,

Chamberlain!—ay, there they are—"Quis

*Separabit?*"—plain those two

Touching words come into view,

Apposite for me and you:

Since they witness to incessant

Love like ours: King Francis, he—

Diane the adored one, she—

Prototypes of you and me.

Everywhere is carved her Crescent

With his Salamander-sign—

Flame-fed creature: flame benign

To itself or, if malign,

Only to the meddling curious,

—So, be warned, Sir! Where's my  
head?

How it wanders! What I said

Mercy meant—the creature, fed

Thus on flame, was scarce injurious

Save to fools who woke its ire,

Thinking fit to play with fire.

'Tis the Crescent you admire?

Then, be Diane! I'll be Francis.

Crescents change,—true!—wax and wane,

Woman-like: male hearts retain

Heat nor, once warm, cool again.

So, we figure—such our chance is—

I as man and you as . . . What?

Take offence? My Love forgot

He plays woman, I do not?

I—the woman? See my habit,

Ask my people! Anyhow,

Be we what we may, one vow

Binds us, male or female. Now,—

Stand, Sir! Read! "*Quis separabit?*"

Half a mile of pictured way

Past these palace-walls to-day

Traversed, this I came to say.

You must needs begin to love me;

First I hated, then, at best,

—Have it so!—I acquiesced;

Pure compassion did the rest.

From below thus raised above me,

Would you, step by step, descend,

Pity me, become my friend,

Like me, like less, loathe at end?

That's the ladder's round you rose by!

That—my own foot kicked away,

Having raised you: let it stay,

Serve you for retreating? Nay.

Close to me you climbed: as close by,

Keep your station, though the peak

Reached proves somewhat bare and bleak!

Woman's strong if man is weak.

Keep here, loving me forever!

Love's look, gesture, speech, I claim;

Act love, lie love, all the same—

Play as earnest were our game!

Lonely I stood long: 'twas clever

When you climbed, before men's eyes,

Spurned the earth and scaled the skies,

Gained my peak and grasped your prize.

Here you stood, then, to men's wonder;  
 Here you tire of standing? Kneel!  
 Cure what giddiness you feel,  
 This way! Do your senses reel?  
 Not unlikely! What rolls under?  
 Yawning death in yon abyss  
 Where the waters whirl and hiss  
 Round more frightful peaks than this.

Should my buffet dash you thither . . .  
 But be sage! No watery grave  
 Needs await you: seeming brave  
 Kneel on safe, dear timid slave!  
 You surmised, when you climbed hither,  
 Just as easy were retreat  
 Should you tire, conceive unmeet  
 Longer patience at my feet?

Me as standing, you as stooping,—  
 Who arranged for each the pose?  
 Lest men think us friends turned foes,  
 Keep the attitude you chose!  
 Men are used to this same grouping—  
 I and you like statues seen.  
 You and I, no third between,  
 Kneel and stand! That makes the  
 scene.

Mar it—and one buffet . . . Pardon!  
 Needless warmth—wise words in waste!  
 'Twas prostration that replaced  
 Kneeling, then? A proof of taste.  
 Crouch, not kneel, while I mount guard  
 on  
 Prostrate love—become no waif,  
 No estray to waves that chafe  
 Disappointed—love's so safe!

Waves that chafe? The idlest fancy!  
 Peaks that scare? I think we know.  
 Walls enlose our sculpture: so  
 Grouped, we pose in Fontainebleau.  
 Up now! Wherefore hesitancy?  
 Arm in arm and cheek by cheek,  
 Laugh with me at waves and peak!  
 Silent still? Why, pictures speak.

See, where Juno strikes Ixion,  
 Primative speaks plainly! Pooh—  
 Rather, Florentine Le Roux!  
 I've lost head for who is who—  
 So it swims and wanders! Fie on  
 What still proves me female! Here,  
 By the staircase!—for we near  
 That dark "Gallery of the Deer."

Look me in the eyes once! Steady!  
 Are you faithful now as erst  
 On that eve when we two first  
 Vowed at Avon, blessed and cursed  
 Faith and falsehood? Pale already?  
 Forward! Must my hand compel  
 Entrance—this way? Exit—well,  
 Somehow, somewhere. Who can tell?

What if to the self-same place in  
 Rustic Avon, at the door  
 Of the village church once more,  
 Where a tombstone paves the floor  
 By that holy-water basin  
 You appealed to—"As, below,  
 This stone hides its corpse, e'en so  
 I your secrets hide"? What ho!

Friends, my fôur! You, Priest, confess  
 him!  
 I have judged the culprit there:  
 Execute my sentence! Care  
 For no mail such cowards wear!  
 Done, Priest? Then, absolve and bless  
 him!  
 Now—you three, stab thick and fast,  
 Deep and deeper! Dead at last?  
 Thanks, friends—Father, thanks! Aghast?

What one word of his confession  
 Would you tell me, though I lured  
 With that royal crown abjured  
 Just because its bars immured  
 Love too much? Love burst compression,  
 Fled free, finally confessed  
 All its secrets to that breast  
 Whence . . . let Avon tell the rest!

MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT AND  
FUSELI.

[Mary Wollstonecraft, the famous author of "A Vindication of the Rights of Woman," and the mother of the second Mrs. Shelley, was born in 1759. She fell in love with Fuseli, the well-known artist, who, however, with the able assistance of Mrs. Fuseli, contrived not to be won. Mary Wollstonecraft then went to Paris, and lived with Mr. Imlay, nor was it till after his desertion of her that she met and eventually married William Godwin. She was barely thirty-nine years old when she died in 1797.]

OH but is it not hard, Dear?

Mine are the nerves to quake at a mouse:  
If a spider drops I shrink with fear:

I should die outright in a haunted house;  
While for you—did the danger dared bring  
help—

From a lion's den I could steal his whelp,  
With a serpent round me, stand stock-still,  
Go sleep in a churchyard,—so would will  
Give me the power to dare and do  
Valiantly—just for you!

Much amiss in the head, Dear,

I toil at a language, tax my brain  
Attempting to draw—the scratches here!

I play, play, practise and all in vain:  
But for you—if my triumph brought you pride,  
I would grapple with Greek Plays till I died,  
Paint a portrait of you—who can tell?  
Work my fingers off for your "Pretty well:"  
Language and painting and music too,  
Easily done—for you!

Strong and fierce in the heart, Dear,

With—more than a will—what seems a  
power

To pounce on my prey, love outbroke here

In flame devouring and to devour.

Such love has laboured its best and worst

To win me a lover; yet, last as first,

I have not quickened his pulse one beat,

Fixed a moment's fancy, bitter or sweet:

Yet the strong fierce heart's love's labour's due,

Utterly lost, was—you!

ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE.

ONE day it thundered and lightened.

Two women, fairly frightened,  
Sank to their knees, transformed, transfixed,  
At the feet of the man who sat betwixt;  
And "Mercy!" cried each—"if I tell the  
truth  
Of a passage in my youth!"

Said This: "Do you mind the morning  
I met your love with scorning?  
As the worst of the venom left my lips,  
I thought 'If, despite this lie, he strips  
The mask from my soul wit: a kiss—I crawl  
His slave,—soul, body and all!"

Said That: "We stood to be married;  
The priest, or someone, tarried;  
'If Paradise-door prove locked?' smiled you.  
I thought, as I nodded, smiling too,  
'Did one, that's away, arrive—nor late  
Nor soon should unlock Hell's gate!"

It ceased to lighten and thunder.  
Up started both in wonder,  
Looked round and saw that the sky was clear,  
Then laughed "Confess you believed us,  
Dear!"

"I saw through the joke!" the man replied  
They re-seated themselves beside.

IXION.

[A king of the Lapithæ in Thessaly, who in consequence of his murdering his wife's father was "boycotted" by mankind. Zeus took compassion on him and let him into heaven, where, however, he fell in love with Heré, and was permitted to think he had embraced her in the form of a cloud. Zeus banished him, and as a punishment Ixion was tied to a perpetually revolving wheel.]

HIGH in the dome, suspended, of Hell, sad  
triumph, behold us!

Here the revenge of a God, there the  
amends of a Man.

Whirling forever in torment, flesh once mortal, immortal  
 Made—for a purpose of hate—able to die and revive,  
 Pays to the uttermost pang, then, newly for payment replenished,  
 Doles out—old yet young—agonies ever afresh ;  
 Whence the result above me : torment is bridged by a rainbow ;—  
 Tears, sweat, blood,—each spasm, ghastly once, glorified now.  
 Wrung, by the rush of the wheel ordained my place of reposing,  
 Off in a sparklike spray,—flesh become vapour thro' pain,—  
 Flies the bestowment of Zeus, soul's vaunted bodily vesture,  
 Made that his feats observed gain the approval of Man,—  
 Flesh that he fashioned 'with sense of the earth and the sky and the ocean,  
 Framed should pierce to the star, fitted to pore on the plant,—  
 All, for a purpose of hate, re-framed, re-fashioned, re-fitted  
 Till, consummate at length,—lo, the employment of sense !  
 Pain's mere minister now to the soul, once pledged to her pleasure—  
 Soul, if untrammelled by flesh, unapprehensive of pain !  
 Body, professed soul's slave, which serving beguiled and betrayed her,  
 Made things false seem true, cheated thro' eye and thro' ear,  
 Lured thus heart and brain to believe in the lying reported,—  
 Spurn but the traitorous slave, uttermost atom, away,  
 What should obstruct soul's rush on the real, the only apparent ?  
 Say I have erred,—how else ? Was I Ixion or Zeus ?  
 Foiled by my senses I dreamed ; I doubtless awaken in wonder :  
 This, proves shine, that—shade ? Good was the evil that seemed ?

Shall I, with sight thus gained, by torture be taught I was blind once ?  
 Sisuphos, teaches thy stone — Tantalos, teaches thy thirst  
 Aught which unaided sense, purged pure, less plainly demonstrates ?  
 No, for the past was dream : now that the dreamers awake,  
 Sisuphos scouts low fraud, and to Tantalos, treason is folly.  
 Ask of myself, whose form melts on the murderous wheel,  
 What is the sin which throe and throe prove sin to the sinner !  
 Say the false charge was true,—thus do I expiate, say,  
 Arrogant thought, word, deed,—mere man who conceived me godlike,  
 Sat beside Zeus, my friend—knelt before Heré, my love !  
 What were the need but of pitying power to touch and disperse it,  
 Film-work—eye's and ear's—all the distraction of sense ?  
 How should the soul not see, not hear,—perceive and as plainly  
 Render, in thought, word, deed, back again truth—not a lie ?  
 "Ay, but the pain is to punish thee !" Zeus, once more for a pastime,  
 Play the familiar, the frank ! Speak and have speech in return !  
 I was of Thessaly king, there ruled and a people obeyed me :  
 Mine to establish the law, theirs to obey it or die :  
 Wherefore ? Because of the good to the people, because of the honour  
 Thence accruing to me, king, the king's law was supreme.  
 What of the weakling, the ignorant criminal ? Not who, excuseless,  
 Breaking my law braved death, knowing his deed and its due—  
 Nay, but the feeble and foolish, the poor transgressor, of purpose  
 No whit more than a tree, born to erectness of bole,

Palm or plane or pine, we laud if lofty,  
 columnar—  
 Loathe if athwart, askew,—leave to the  
 axe and the flame !  
 Where is the vision may penetrate earth and  
 beholding acknowledge  
 Just one pebble at root ruined the straight-  
 ness of stem ?  
 Whose fine vigilance follows the sapling,  
 accounts for the failure,  
 —Here blew wind, so it bent : there the  
 snow lodged, so it broke ?  
 Also the tooth of the beast, bird's bill, mere  
 bite of the insect  
 Gnawed, gnarled, warped their worst :  
 passive it lay to offence.  
 King—I was man, no more : what I recog-  
 nized faulty I punished,  
 Laying it prone : be sure, more than a  
 man had I proved,  
 Watch and ward o'er the sapling at birth-  
 time had saved it, nor simply  
 Owned the distortion's excuse,—hindered  
 it wholly : nay, more—  
 Even a man, as I sat in my place to do  
 judgment, and pallid  
 Criminals passing to doom shuddered away  
 at my foot,  
 Could I have probed thro' the face to the  
 heart, read plain a repentance,  
 Crime confessed fools' play, virtue ascribed  
 to the wise,  
 Had I not stayed the consignment to doom,  
 not dealt the renewed ones  
 Life to retrace the past, light to retrieve  
 the misdeed ?  
 Thus had I done, and thus to have done  
 much more it behoves thee,  
 Zeus who madest man—flawless or faulty,  
 thy work !  
 What if the charge were true, as thou mouth-  
 est,—Ixion the cherished  
 Minion of Zeus grew vain, vied with the  
 godships and fell,  
 Forfeit thro' arrogance? Stranger ! I clothed,  
 with the grace of our human,  
 Inhumanity—gods, natures I likened to  
 ours.

Man among men I had borne me till gods  
 forsooth must regard me  
 —Nay, must approve, applaud, claim as a  
 comrade at last.  
 Summoned to enter their circle, I sat—their  
 equal, how other ?  
 Love should be absolute love, faith is in  
 fulness or nought.  
 "I am thy friend, be mine !" smiled Zeus :  
 "If Heré attract thee,"  
 Blushed the imperial cheek, "then—as thy  
 heart may suggest !"  
 Faith in me sprang to the faith, my love  
 hailed love as its fellow,  
 "Zeus, we are friends—how fast ! Heré,  
 my heart for thy heart !"  
 Then broke smile into fury of frown, and the  
 thunder of "Hence, fool !"  
 Then thro' the kiss laughed scorn "Limbs  
 or a cloud was to clasp ?"  
 Then from Olumpus to Erebus, then from the  
 rapture to torment,  
 Then from the fellow of gods—misery's  
 mate, to the man !  
 —Man henceforth and forever, who lent from  
 the glow of his nature  
 Warmth to the cold, with light coloured  
 the black and the blank.  
 So did a man conceive of your passion, you  
 passion-protesters !  
 So did he trust, so love—being the truth  
 of your lie !  
 You to aspire to be Man ! Man made you  
 who vainly would ape him :  
 You are the hollowness, he—filling you,  
 falsifies void.  
 Even as—witness the emblem, Hell's sad  
 triumph suspended,  
 Born of my tears, sweat, blood—bursting  
 to vapour above—  
 Arching my torment, an iris ghostlike startles  
 the darkness,  
 Cold white—jewelry quenched—justifies,  
 glorifies pain.  
 Strive, mankind, though strife endure through  
 endless obstruction,  
 Stage after stage, each rise marred by as  
 certain a fall !



Baffled forever—yet never so baffled but, e'en  
in the baffling,

When Man's strength proves weak, checked  
in the body or soul—

Whatsoever the medium, flesh or essence,—  
Ixion's

Made for a purpose of hate,—clothing the  
entity Thou,

—Medium whence that entity strives for the  
Not-Thou beyond it,

Fire elemental, free, frame unencumbered,  
the All,—

Never so baffled but—when, on the verge of  
an alien existence,

Heartened to press, by pangs burst to the  
infinite Pure,

Nothing is reached but the ancient weakness  
still that arrests strength,

Circumambient still, still the poor human  
array,

Pride and revenge and hate and cruelty—all  
it has burst through,

Thought to escape,—fresh formed, found  
in the fashion it fled,—

Never so baffled but—when Man pays the  
price of endeavour,

Thunderstruck, downthrust, Tartaros-  
doomed to the wheel,—

Then, ay, then, from the tears and sweat and  
blood of his torment,

E'en from the triumph of Hell, up let him  
look and rejoice !

What is the influence, high o'er Hell, that  
turns to a rapture

Pain—and despair's murk mists blends in a  
rainbow of hope ?

What is beyond the obstruction, stage by stage  
tho' it baffle ?

Back must I fall, confess "Ever the weak-  
ness I fled" ?

No, for beyond, far, far is a Purity all-  
unobstructed !

Zeus was Zeus—not Man : wrecked by his  
weakness, I whirl.

Out of the wreck I rise—past Zeus to the  
Potency o'er him !

I—to have hailed him my friend ! I—to  
have clasped her—my love !

Pallid birth of my pain,—where light, where  
light is, aspiring

Thither I rise, whilst thou—Zeus, keep the  
godship and sink !

### JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH.

[Rabbi Yehudah Hannasi, otherwise Jochanan (John) Hakkadosh, was born in the second Christian century. Hakkadosh means holy.]

"THIS now, this other story makes amends  
And justifies our Mishna," quoth the Jew  
Aforesaid. "Tell it, learnedest of friends !"

A certain morn broke beautiful and blue  
O'er Schiphaz' city, bringing joy and mirth,  
—So had ye deemed ; while the reverse was  
true,

Since onesmall house there gave a sorrow birth  
In such black sort that, to each faithful eye,  
Midnight, not morning settled on the earth.

How else, when it grew certain thou wouldst  
die

Our much-enlightened master, Israel's prop,  
Eximious Jochanan Ben Sabbathai ?<sup>2</sup>

Old, yea but, undiminished of a drop,  
The vital essence pulsed through heart and  
brain ;

Time left unsickled yet the plenteous crop

On poll and chin and cheek, whereof a skein  
Handmaids might weave—hairs silk-soft,  
silver-white,

Such as the wool-plant's ; none the less in vain

Had Physic striven her best against the spite  
Of fell disease : the Rabbi must succumb ;  
And, round the couch whereon in piteous  
plight

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps Sheeraz.

<sup>2</sup> Probably an imaginary Rabbi,

He lay a-dying, scholars,—awe-struck, dumb  
Throughout the night-watch,—roused them-  
selves and spoke

One to the other: "Ere death's touch benumb

"His active sense,—while yet 'neath Reason's  
yoke

Obedient toils his tongue,—befits we claim  
The fruit of long experience, bid this oak

"Shed us an acorn which may, all the same,  
Grow to a temple-pillar,—dear that day!—  
When Israel's scattered seed finds place and  
name

"Among the envious nations. Lamp us, pray,  
Thou the Enlightener! Partest hence in peace?  
Hailest without regret—much less, dismay—

"The hour of thine approximate release  
From fleshly bondage soul hath found ob-  
struct?

Calmly envisagest the sure increase

"Of knowledge? Eden's tree must hold  
unplucked

Some apple, sure, has never tried thy tooth,  
Juicy with sapience thou hast sought, not  
sucked?

"Say, does age acquiesce in vanished youth?  
Still towers thy purity above—as erst—  
Our pleasant follies? Be thy last word—  
truth!"

The Rabbi groaned; then, grimly, "Last as  
first

The truth speak I—in boyhood who began  
Striving to live an angel, and, amerced

"For such presumption, die now hardly man.  
What have I proved of life? To live, indeed,  
That much I learned: but here lies Jochanan

"More luckless than stood David when, to  
speed

His fighting with the Philistine, they brought  
Saul's harness forth: whereat, 'Alack, I need

"Armour to arm me, but have never fought  
With sword and spear, nor tried to manage  
shield,

Proving arms' use, as well-trained warrior  
ought.

"Only a sling and pebbles can I wield!"  
So he: while I, contrariwise, 'No trick  
Of weapon helpful on the battle-field

"Comes unfamiliar to my theoretic:  
But, bid me put in practice what I know,  
Give me a sword—it stings like Moses' stick,

"A serpent I let drop apace.' E'en so,  
I,—able to comport me at each stage  
Of human life as never here below

"Man played his part,—since mine the  
heritage

Of wisdom carried to that perfect pitch,  
Ye rightly praise,—I, therefore, who, thus  
sage,

"Could sure act man triumphantly, enrich  
Life's annals with example how I played  
Lover, Bard, Soldier, Statist,—(all of which

"Parts in presentment failing, cries invade  
The world's ear—'Ah, the Past, the pearl-  
gift thrown  
To hogs, time's opportunity we made

So light of, only recognized when flown!  
Had we been wise!')—in fine, I—wise  
enough,—

What profit brings me wisdom never shown

Just when its showing would from each  
rebuff

Shelter weak virtue, threaten back to bounds  
Encroaching vice, tread smooth each track  
too rough

"For youth's unsteady footstep, climb the  
rounds

Of life's long ladder, one by slippery one,  
Yet make no stumble? Me hard fate confounds

"With that same crowd of wailers I outgun  
By promising to teach another cry  
Of more hilarious mood than theirs, the sun

"I took my last at is insulted by.  
What cry,—ye ask? Give ear on every side!  
Witness yon Lover! 'How entrapped am I!

"'Methought, because a virgin's rose-lip  
vied

With ripe Khubbezleh's,<sup>1</sup> needs must beauty  
mate

With meekness and discretion in a bride:

"'Bride she became to me who wail—too  
late—

*Unwise I loved!* That's one cry. 'Mind's  
my gift:

I might have loaded me with lore, full weight

"'Pressed down and running over at each  
rift

O' the brain-bag where the famished clung  
and fed.

I filled it with what rubbish!—would not sift

"'The wheat from chaff, sound grain from  
musty—shed

Poison abroad as oft as nutriment—

And sighing say but as my fellows said,

"'Unwise I learned!' That's two. 'In  
dwarf's-play spent

Was giant's prowess: warrior all unversed

In war's right waging, I struck brand, was  
lent

"'For steel's fit service, on mere stone--and  
cursed

Alike the shocked limb and the shivered steel,  
Seeing too late the blade's true use which erst

"'How was I blind to! My cry swells the  
peal—

*Unwise I fought!* That's three. But  
wherefore waste

Breath on the wailings longer? Why reveal

<sup>1</sup> A fanciful name.

"A root of bitterness whereof the taste  
Is noisome to Humanity at large?  
First we get Power, but Power absurdly placed

"In Folly's keeping, who resigns her charge  
To Wisdom when all Power grows nothing  
worth:

Bones marrowless are mocked with helm and  
targe

"When, like your Master's, soon below the  
earth

With worms shall warfare only be. Fare  
well,

Children! I die a failure since my birth!"

"Not so!" arose a protest as, pell-mell,  
They pattered from his chamber to the  
street,

Bent on a last resource. Our Targums<sup>2</sup> tell

That such resource there is. Put case, there  
meet

The Nine Points of Perfection—rarest  
chance—

Within some saintly teacher whom the fleet

Years, in their blind implacable advance,  
O'ertake before fit teaching born of these  
Have magnified his scholars' countenance,—

If haply folk compassionating please  
To render up—according to his store,  
Each one—a portion of the life he sees

Hardly worth saving when 'tis set before  
Earth's benefit should the Saint, Hakka-  
dosh,

Favoured thereby, attain to full fourscore—

If such contribute (Scoffer, spare thy  
"Bosh!")

A year, a month, a day, an hour—to eke  
Life out,—in him away the gift shall wash

<sup>2</sup> Chaldean versions of the Old Testament  
developed out of the oral translations and  
paraphrases of the Scriptures read in the syna-  
gogues of the Jews.

That much of ill-spent time recorded, streak  
The twilight of the so-assisted sage  
With a new sunrise: truth, though strange  
to speak!

Quick to the doorway, then, where youth and  
age,  
All Israel, thronging, waited for the last.  
News of the loved one. "'Tis the final  
stage:

"Art's utmost done, the Rabbi's feet tread fast  
The way of all flesh!" So announced that apt  
Olive-branch Tsaddik:<sup>1</sup> "Yet, O Brethren,  
cast

"No eye to earthward! Look where heaven  
has clapped,  
Morning's extinguisher—yon ray-shot robe  
Of sun-threads—on the constellation mapped

"And mentioned by our Elders,—yea, from  
Job  
Down to Satam,—as figuring forth—what?  
Perpend a mystery! Ye call it *Dob*—

"The Bear: I trow, a wiser name than that  
Were *Aisch*—'The Bier':<sup>2</sup> a corpse those  
four stars hold,  
Which—are not those Three Daughters weep-  
ing at,

"*Banoth*? I judge so: list while I unfold  
The reason. As in twice twelve hours this Bier  
Goes and returns, about the East-cone rolled,

"So may a setting luminary here  
Be rescued from extinction, rolled anew  
Upon its track of labour, strong and clear,

"About the Pole—that Salem, every Jew  
Helps to build up when thus he saves some Saint  
Ordained its architect. Ye grasp the clue

<sup>1</sup> A fanciful name.

<sup>2</sup> The Jews called the constellation Krometrus, or the "Great Bear"; the Bier and the tail stars of the Bear they called the *Three Daughters*. *Banoth* means daughters.

"To all ye seek? The Rabbi's lamp-flame  
faint  
Sinks: would ye raise it? Lend then life  
from yours,  
Spare each his oil-drop! Do I need acquaint

"The Chosen how self-sacrifice ensures  
Ten-fold requital?—urge ye emulate  
The fame of those Old Just Ones death pro-  
cures

"Such praise for, that 'tis now men's sole debate  
Which of the Ten, who volunteered at Rome  
To die for glory to our Race, was great

"Beyond his fellows? Was it thou—the comb  
Of iron carded, flesh from bone, away,  
While thy lips sputtered thro' their bloody foam

"Without a stoppage (O brave Akiba!)<sup>3</sup>  
'Hear, Israel, our Lord God is One'? Or thou,  
Jischab?—who smiledst, burning, since there  
lay,

"Burning along with thee, our Law! I trow,  
Such martyrdom might tax flesh to afford:  
While that for which I make petition now,

"To what amounts it? Youngster, wilt thou  
hoard  
Each minute of long years thou look'st to spend  
In dalliance with thy spouse? Hast thou so  
soared,

Singer of songs, all out of sight of friend  
And teacher, warbling like a woodland bird,  
There's left no Selah, 'twixt two psalms, to  
lend

<sup>3</sup> Rabbi Akiba was a Jewish teacher, who had much to do with the great collection of Rabbinical discussions on the law of Moses known as the *Mishnah*. The comments on the *Mishnah* are called *Gemara*, and both together make up the *Talmud*. Akiba took part in the famous rebellion against Rome led by Barcocheba A.D. 132-135, who was believed to be the Messiah. The rebellion failed, and Akiba is said to have been scraped to death with an iron comb.

"Our late-so-tuneful quirit? Thou, averred  
The fighter born to plant our lion-flag  
Once more on Zion's mount,—doth, all-  
unheard,

"My pleading fail to move thee? Toss some  
rag  
Shall staunch our wound, some minute never  
missed  
From swordsman's lustihood like thine!  
Wilt lag

"In liberal bestowment, show close fist  
When open palm we look for,—thou, wide-  
known  
For statecraft? whom, 'tis said, an if thou list,

"The Shah himself would seat beside his  
throne,  
So valued were advice from thee" . . . But  
here

He stopped short: such a hubbub! Not alone  
From those addressed, but, far as well as  
near,  
The crowd broke into clamour: "Mine, mine,  
mine—  
Lop from my life the excrescence, never fear!

"At me thou lookedst, markedst me! Assign  
To me that privilege of granting life—  
Mine, mine!" Then he: "Be patient! I  
combine

"The needful portions only, wage no strife  
With Nature's law nor seek to lengthen out  
The Rabbi's day unduly: 'Tis the knife

"I stop,—would cut its thread too short.  
About  
As much as helps life last the proper term,  
The appointed Fourscore,—that I crave and  
scout

"A too-prolonged existence. Let the worm  
Change at fit season to the butterfly!  
And here a story strikes me, to confirm

"This judgment. Of our worthies, none  
ranks high  
As Perida<sup>1</sup> who kept the famous school:  
None rivalled him in patience: none! For  
why?

"In lecturing it was his constant rule,  
Whatever he expounded, to repeat  
—Ay, and keep on repeating, lest some fool

"Should fail to understand him fully—  
(feat  
Unparalleled, Uzzean!<sup>2</sup>)—do ye mark?—  
Five hundred times! So might he entrance  
beat

"For knowledge into howsoever dark  
And dense the brain-pan. Yet it happened, at  
close  
Of one especial lecture, not one spark

"Of light was found to have illumed the  
rows  
Of pupils round their pedagogue. 'What,  
still  
Impenetrable to me? Then—here goes!'

"And for a second time he sets the rill  
Of knowledge running, and five hundred  
times  
More re-repeats the matter—and gains *nil*.

"Out broke a voice from heaven: 'Thy  
patience climbs  
Even thus high. Choose! Wilt thou, rather,  
quick  
Ascend to bliss—or, since thy zeal sublimed

"Such drudgery, will thy back still bear its  
crick,  
Bent o'er thy class,—thy voice drone spite of  
drouth,—  
Five hundred years more at thy desk wilt  
stick?'

<sup>1</sup> A Jewish teacher famous for his patience,  
<sup>2</sup> Job.

"To heaven with me!" was in the good  
man's mouth,  
When all his scholars, — cruel-kind were  
they! —  
Stopped utterance, from East, West, North  
and South,

"Rending the welkin with their shout of  
'Nay—

No heaven as yet for our instructor! Grant  
Five hundred years on earth for Perida!"

"And so long did he keep instructing! Want  
Our Master no such misery! I but take  
Three months of life marital. Ministrant

"Be thou of so much, Poet! Bold I make,  
Swordsman, with thy frank offer!—and con-  
clude,  
Statist, with thine! One year,—ye will not  
shake

"My purpose to accept no more. So rude?  
The very boys and girls, forsooth, must press  
And proffer their addition? Thanks! The mood

"Is laudable, but I reject, no less,  
One month, week, day of life more. Leave  
my gown,  
Ye overbold ones! Your life's gift, you guess,

"Were good as any? Rudesby, get thee down!  
Set my feet free, or fear my staff! Farewell,  
Seniors and saviours, sharers of renown

"With Jochanan henceforward!" Straight-  
way fell  
Sleep on the sufferer; who awoke in health,  
Hale everyway, so potent was the spell.

O the rare Spring-time! Who is he by stealth  
Approaches Jochanan?—embowered that sits  
Under his vine and figtree mid the wealth

Of garden-sights and sounds, since intermits  
Never the turtle's coo, nor stays nor stints  
The rose her smell. In homage that befits

The musing Master, Tsaddik, see, imprints  
A kiss on the extended foot, low bends  
Forehead to earth, then, all-obsequious, hints

"What if it should be time? A period  
ends—

That of the Lover's gift—his quarter-year  
Of lustihood: 'tis just thou make amends,"

"Return that loan with usury: so, here  
Come I, of thy Disciples delegate,  
Claiming our lesson from thee. Make appear

"Thy profit from experience! Plainly state  
How men should Love!" Thus he: and to  
him thus

The Rabbi: "Love, ye call it?—rather, Hate!

"What wouldst thou? Is it needful I dis-  
cuss

Wherefore new sweet wine, poured in bottles  
caked

With old strong wine's deposit, offers us

"Spoilt liquor we recoil from, thirst-unslaked?  
Like earth-smoke from a crevice, out there  
wound

Languors and yearnings: not a sense but  
ached

"Weighed on by fancied form and feature,  
sound

Of silver word and sight of sunny smile:  
No beckoning of a flower-branch, no profound

"Purple of noon-oppression, no light wile  
O' the West wind, but transformed itself till  
—brief—

Before me stood the phantasy ye style

"Youth's love, the joy that shall not come  
to grief,

Born to endure, eternal, unimpaired  
By custom the accloyer, time the thief.

'Had Age's hard cold knowledge only spared  
That ignorance of Youth! But now the dream,  
Fresh as from Paradise, alighting fared

"As fares the pigeon, finding what may seem  
Her nest's safe hollow holds a snake inside  
Coiled to enclasp her. See, Eve stands  
supreme

"In youth and beauty! Take her for thy  
bride!

What Youth deemed crystal, Age finds out  
was dew

Morn set a-sparkle, but which noon quick  
dried

"While Youth bent gazing at its red and blue  
Supposed perennial,—never dreamed the sun  
Which kindled the display would quench it  
too.

"Graces of shape and colour—everyone  
With its appointed period of decay  
When ripe to purpose! 'Still, these dead  
and done,

"Survives the woman-nature—the soft sway  
Of undefinable omnipotence  
O'er our strong male-stuff, we of Adam's clay."

"Ay, if my physics taught not why and whence  
The attraction! Am I like the simple steer  
Who, from his pasture lured inside the fence

"Where yoke and goad await him, holds  
that mere

Kindliness prompts extension of the hand  
Hollowed for barley, which drew near and

"His nose—in proof that, of the horned band,  
The farmer best affected him? Beside,  
Steer, since his calfhood, got to understand.

"Farmers a many in the world so wide  
Were ready with a handful just as choice  
Or choicer—maize and cummin, treats untried.

"Shall I wed wife, and all my days rejoice  
I gained the peacock? 'Las me, round I look,  
And lo—' With me thou wouldst have blamed  
no voice

"Like hers that daily deafens like a rook:  
I am the phoenix!—' I, the lark, the dove,  
—The owl, for aught, knows he who blindly  
took

"Peacock for partner, while the vale, the  
grove,

The plain, held bird-mates in abundance.  
There!

Youth, try fresh capture! Age has found  
out Love

"Long ago. War seems better worth man's  
care.

But leave me! Disappointment finds a balm  
Haply in slumber." "This first step o' the  
stair

"To knowledge fails me, but the victor's palm  
Lies on the next to tempt him overleap  
A stumbling-block. Experienced, gather  
calm,

"Thou excellence of Judah, cured by sleep  
Which ushers in the Warrior, to replace  
The Lover! At due season I shall reap

"Fruit of my planting!" So, with lengthened  
face,

Departed Tsaddik: and three moons more  
waxed

And waned, and not until the Summer-space

Waned likewise, any second visit taxed  
The Rabbi's patience. But at three months'  
end,

Behold, supine beneath a rock, relaxed.

The sage lay musing till the noon should  
spend

Its ardour. Up comes Tsaddik, who but he,  
With "Master, may I warn thee, nor offend,

"That time comes round again? We look  
to see

Sprout from the old branch—not the young-  
ling twig—

But fruit of sycamine: deliver me,

"To share among my fellows, some plump fig,

Juicy as seedy! That same man of war,  
Who, with a scantling of his store, made big

"Thy starveling nature, caused thee, safe  
from scar,

To share his gains by long acquaintanceship  
With bump and bruise and all the knocks  
that are

"Of battle dowry,—he bids loose thy lip,  
Explain the good of battle! Since thou  
know'st

Let us know likewise! Fast the moments slip,

"More need that we improve them!"—

"Ay, we boast,  
We warriors in our youth, that with the sword  
Man goes the swiftest to the uttermost—

"Takes the straight way thro' lands yet un-  
explored

To absolute Right and Good,—may so obtain  
God's glory and man's weal too long ignored,

"Too late attained by preachments all in  
vain—

The passive process. Knots get tangled worse  
By toying with: does cut cord close again?

"Moreover there is blessing in the curse  
Peace-praisers call war. What so sure  
evolves

All the capacities of soul, proves nurse

"Of that self-sacrifice in men which solves  
The riddle—*Wherein differs Man from beast?*  
Foxes boast cleverness and courage wolves:

"Nowhere but in mankind is found the least  
Touch of an impulse 'To our fellows—good  
I' the highest!—not diminished but increased

"By the condition plainly understood  
—Such good shall be attained at price of hurt  
I' the highest to ourselves! Fine sparks,  
that brood

"Confusedly in Man, 'tis war bids spurt  
Forth into flame: as fares the meteor-mass,  
Whereof no particle but holds inert

"Some seed of light and heat, however crass  
The enclosure, yet avails not to discharge  
Its radiant birth before there come to pass

"Some push external,—strong to set at large  
Those dormant fire-seeds, whirl them in a  
trice

Through heaven and light up earth from  
marge to marge:

"Since force by motion makes—what erst  
was ice—

Crash into fervency and so expire,  
Because some Djinn has hit on a device

"For proving the full prettiness of fire!  
Ay, thus we prattle—young: but old—why,  
first,

Where's that same Right and Good—(the  
wise inquire)—

"So absolute, it warrants the outburst  
Of blood, tears, all war's woeful consequence,  
That comes of the fine flaring? Which  
plague cursed

"The more your benefited Man—offence,  
Or what suppressed the offender? Say it did—  
Show us the evil cured by violence,

"Submission cures not also! Lift the lid  
From the maturing crucible, we find  
Its slow sure coaxing-out of virtue hid

"In that same meteor-mass, hath uncombined  
Those particles and, yielding for result  
Gold, not mere flame, by so much leaves  
behind

'The heroic product. E'en the simple cult  
Of Edom's<sup>1</sup> children wisely bids them turn  
Cheek to the smiter with '*Sic Jesus vult.*'

<sup>1</sup> Stands for the Gentile in Jewish phraseology



"Say there's a tyrant by whose death we earn  
Freedom, and justify a war to wage :  
Good !—were we only able to discern

"Exactly how to reach and catch and cage  
Him only and no innocent beside !  
Whereas the folk whereon war wreaks its rage

"—How shared they his ill-doing ? Far and  
wide

The victims of our warfare strew the plain,  
Ten thousand dead, whereof not one but died

"In faith that vassals owed their suzerain  
Life : therefore each paid tribute,—honest  
soul,—  
To that same Right and Good ourselves are  
fain

"To call exclusively our end. From bole  
(Since ye accept in me a sycamine)  
Pluck, eat, digest a fable—yea, the sole

"Fig I afford you ! 'Dost thou dwarf my  
vine ?'  
(So did a certain husbandman address  
The tree which faced his field), 'Receive  
condign

"'Punishment, prompt removal by the stress  
Of axe I forthwith lay unto thy root !'  
Long did he hack and hew, the root no less

"As long defied him, for its tough strings  
shoot  
As deep down as the boughs above aspire :  
All that he did was—shake to the tree's foot

"Leafage and fruitage, things we most require  
For shadow and refreshment : which good  
deed  
Thoroughly done, behold the axe-haft tires

"His hand, and he desisting leaves unfreed  
The vine he hacked and hewed for. Comes  
a frost,  
One natural night's work, and there's little  
need

"Of hacking, hewing : lo, the tree's a ghost !  
Perished it starves, black death from topmost  
bough  
To farthest-reaching fibre ! Shall I boast

"My rough work,—warfare,—helped more ?  
Loving, now—  
That, by comparison, seems wiser, since  
The loving fool was able to avow

"He could effect his purpose, just evince  
Love's willingness,—once 'ware of what she  
lacked,  
His loved one,—to go work for that, nor wince

"At self-expenditure : he neither hacked  
Nor hewed, but when the lady of his field  
Required defence because the sun attacked,

"He, failing to obtain a fitter shield,  
Would interpose his body, and so blaze,  
Blest in the burning. Ah, were mine to wield

"The intellectual weapon—poet-lays,—  
How preferably had I sung one song  
Which . . . but my sadness sinks me : go  
your ways !

"I sleep out disappointment." "Come  
along,  
Never lose heart ! There's still as much again  
Of our bestowment left to right the wrong

"Done by its earlier moiety—explain  
Wherefore, who may ! The Poet's mood  
comes next.  
Was he not wishful the poetic vein

"Should pulse within him ? Jochanan, thor  
reck'st  
Little of what a generous flood shall soon  
Float thy clogged spirit free and unperplexed

"Above dry dubitation ! Song's the boon  
Shall make amends for my untoward mis-  
take  
That Joshua-like thou couldst bid sun and  
moon—

- "Fighter and Lover,—which for most men  
make  
All they descry in heaven,—stand both stock-  
still  
And lend assistance. Poet shalt thou wake!"
- Autumn brings Tsaddik. "Ay, there speeds  
the rill  
Loaded with leaves : a scowling sky, beside :  
The wind makes olive-trees up yonder hill
- "Whiten and shudder—symptoms far and  
wide  
Of glean-ing-time's approach ; and glean good  
store  
May I presume to trust we shall, thou tried
- "And ripe experimenter ! Three months more  
Have ministered to growth of Song : that graft  
Into thy sterile stock has found at core
- "Moisture, I warrant, hitherto unquaffed  
By boughs, however florid, wanting sap  
Of prose-experience which provides the  
draught
- "Which song-sprouts, wanting, wither : vain  
we tap  
A youngling stem all green and immature :  
Experience must secret the stuff, our hap
- "Will be to quench Man's thirst with, glad  
and sure  
That fancy wells up through corrective fact :  
Missing which test of truth, though flowers  
allure
- "The goodman's eye with promise, soon the  
pact  
Is broken, and 'tis flowers,—mere words,—  
he finds  
When things,—that's fruit,—he looked for.  
Well, once cracked
- "The nut, how glad my tooth the kernel  
grinds !  
Song may henceforth boast substance ! There-  
fore, hail  
Proser and poet, perfect in both kinds !
- "Thou from whose eye hath dropped the  
envious scale  
Which hides the truth of things and substitutes  
Deceptive show, unaided optics fail
- "To transpire,—hast entrusted to the  
lute's  
Soft but sure guardianship some unrevealed  
Secret shall lift mankind above the brute
- "As only knowledge can?" "A fount un-  
sealed"  
(Sighed Jochanan) "should seek the heaven  
in leaps  
To die in dew-gems—not find death, con-  
gealed
- "By contact with the cavern's nether deeps,  
Earth's secretest foundation where, enswathed  
In dark and fear, primeval mystery sleeps—
- "Petrific fount wherein my fancies bathed  
And straight turned ice. My dreams of good  
and fair  
In soaring upwards had dissolved, unscathed
- "By any influence of the kindly air,  
Singing, as each took flight, The Future—  
that's  
Our destination, mists turn rainbows there,
- "Which sink to fog, confounded in the flats  
O' the Present ! Day's the song-time for the  
lark,  
Night for her music boasts but owls and bats.
- "And what's the Past but night—the deep  
and dark  
Ice-spring I speak of, corpse-thick with its  
drowned  
Dead fancies which no sooner touched the  
mark
- They aimed at—fact—than all at once they  
found  
Their film-wings freeze, henceforth unfit to  
reach  
And roll in æther, revel—robed and crowned

- "As truths, confirmed by falsehood all and each—  
Sovereign and absolute and ultimate!  
Up with them, skyward, Youth, ere Age impeach
- "Thy least of promises to re-instate  
Adam in Eden! Sing on, ever sing,  
Chirp till thou burst!—the fool cicada's fate,
- "Who holds that after Summer next comes Spring,  
Than Summer's self sun-warmed, spice-scented more.  
Fighting was better! There, no fancy-fling
- "Pitches you past the point was reached of yore  
By Sampsons, Abners, Joabs, Judases,  
The mighty men of valour who, before
- "Our little day, did wonders none profess  
To doubt were fable and not fact, so trust  
By fancy-flights to emulate much less.
- "Were I a Statesman, now! Why, that were just  
To pinnacle my soul, mankind above;  
A-top the universe: no vulgar lust
- "To gratify—fame, greed, at this remove  
Looked down upon so far—or overlooked  
So largely, rather—that mine eye should rove
- "World-wide and rummage earth, the many-nooked,  
Yet find no unit of the human flock  
Caught straying but straight comes back hooked and crooked
- "By the strong shepherd who, from out his stock  
Of aids proceeds to treat each ailing fleece,  
Here stimulate to growth, curtail and dock
- "There, baldness or excrescence,—that, with grease,  
This, with up-grubbing of the bristly patch  
Born of the tick-bite. How supreme a peace
- "Steals o'er the Statist,—while, in wit, a match  
For shrewd Ahithophel, in wisdom . . . well,  
His name escapes me—somebody, at watch
- "And ward, the fellow of Ahithophel  
In guidance of the 'Chosen!'—at which word  
Eyes closed and fast asleep the Rabbi fell.
- "Cold weather!" shivered Tsaddik. "Yet the hoard  
Of the sagacious ant shows garnered grain,  
Ever abundant most when fields afford
- "Least pasture, and alike disgrace the plain  
Tall tree and lowly shrub. 'Tis so with us  
Mortals: our age stores wealth ye seek in vain
- "While busy youth culls just what we discuss  
At leisure in the last days: and the last  
Truly are these for Jochanan, whom thus
- "I make one more appeal to! Thine amassed  
Experience, now or never, let escape  
Some portion of! For I perceive agast
- "The end approaches, while they jeer and jape,  
These sons of Shimei: 'Justify your boast!  
What have ye gained from Death by twelve months' rape?'
- "Statesman, what cure hast thou for—least and most—  
Popular grievances? What nostrum, say,  
Will make the Rich and Poor, expertly dosed,
- "Forget disparity, bid each go gay  
That, with his bauble,—with his burden, this?  
Propose an alkahest shall melt away
- "Men's lacquer, show by prompt analysis  
Which is the metal, which the make-believe,  
So that no longer brass shall find, gold miss

"Coinage and currency? Make haste, retrieve  
The precious moments, Master!" Whereunto  
There snarls an "Ever laughing in thy sleeve,

"Pert Tsaddik? Youth indeed sees plain a clue  
To guide man where life's wood is intricate;  
How shall he fail to thrud its thickest through

"When every oak-trunk takes the eye?  
Elate  
He goes from bole to brushwood, plunging  
finds—  
Smothered in briars—that the small's the  
great!

"All men are men: I would all minds were  
minds!  
Whereas 'tis just the many's mindless mass  
That most needs helping: labourers and hinds

"We legislate for—not the cultured class  
Which law-makes for itself nor needs the whip  
And bridle,—proper help for mule and ass,

"Did the brutes know! In vain our states-  
manship  
Strives at contenting the rough multitude:  
Still the ox cries 'Tis me thou shouldst equip

"With equine trappings!' or, in humbler  
mood,  
'Cribful of corn for me! and, as for work—  
Adequate rumination o'er my food!'

"Better remain a Poet! Needs it irk  
Such an one if light, kindled in his sphere,  
Fail to transfuse the Mizraim cold and murk

"Round about Goshen? Though light dis-  
appear,  
Shut inside,—temporary ignorance  
Got outside of, lo, light emerging clear

"Shows each astonished starrer the expanse  
Of heaven made bright with knowledge!  
That's the way,  
The only way—I see it at a glance—

"To legislate for earth! As poet. . . . Stay!  
What is . . . I would that . . . were it . . .  
I had been . . .  
O sudden change, as if my arid clay

"Burst into bloom! . . ." "A change in-  
deed, I ween,  
And change the last!" sighed Tsaddik as he  
kissed  
The closing eyelids. "Just as those serene

"Princes of Night apprised me! Our acquit  
Of life is spent, since corners only four  
Hath Aisch, and each in turn was made  
desist

"In passage round the Pole (O Mishna's  
lore—  
Little it profits here!) by strenuous tug  
Of friends who eked out thus to full fourscore

"The Rabbi's years. I see each shoulder  
shrug!  
What have we gained? Away the Bier may  
roll!  
To-morrow, when the Master's grave is dug,

"In with his body I may pitch the scroll  
I hoped to glorify with, text and gloss,  
My Science of Man's Life: one blank's the  
whole!

"Love, war, song, statesmanship—no gain,  
all loss,  
The stars' bestowment! We on our return  
To-morrow merely find—not gold but dross,

"The body not the soul. Come, friends,  
we learn  
At least thus much by our experiment—  
That—that . . . well, find what, whom it  
may concern!"

But next day through the city rumours  
went  
Of a new persecution; so, they fled  
All Israel, each man,—this time,—from his  
tent,

- Tsaddik among the foremost. When, the dread  
Subsiding, Israel ventured back again  
Some three months after, to the cave they sped
- Where lay the Sage,—a reverential train !  
Tsaddik first enters. "What is this I view?  
The Rabbi still alive? No stars remain
- "Of Aisch to stop within their courses. True,  
I mind me, certain gamesome boys must urge  
Their offerings on me: can it be—one threw
- "Life at him and it stuck? There needs the  
scourge  
To teach that urchin manners! Prithee, grant  
Forgiveness if we pretermit thy dirge
- "Just to explain no friend was ministrant,  
This time, of life to thee! Some jackanapes,  
I gather, has presumed to foist his scant
- "Scurvy unripe existence—wilding grapes  
Grass-green and sorrel-sour—on that grand  
wine,  
Mighty as mellow, which, so fancy shapes
- "May fitly image forth this life of thine  
Fed on the last low fattening lees—condensed  
Elixir, no milk-mildness of the vine!
- "Rightly with Tsaddik wert thou now in-  
censed  
Had he been witting of the mischief wrought  
When, for elixir, verjuice he dispensed!"
- And slowly woke,—like Shushan's flower<sup>1</sup>  
besought  
By over-curious handling to unloose:  
The curtained secrecy wherein she thought
- Her captive bee, mid store of sweets to choose,  
Would loll, in gold pavilioned lie unteased,  
Sucking on, sated never,—whose, O whose
- Might seem that countenance, uplift, all eased  
Of old distraction and bewilderment,  
Absurdly happy? "How ye have appeased
- "The strife within me, bred this whole con-  
tent,  
This utter acquiescence in my past,  
Present and future life,—by whom was lent
- "The power to work this miracle at last,—  
Exceeds my guess. Though—*ignorance con-  
firmed*  
By knowledge sounds like paradox, I cast
- "Vainly about to tell you—fitlier termed—  
Of calm struck by encountering opposites,  
Each nullifying either! Henceforth wormed
- "From out my heart is every snake that bites  
The dove that else would brood there: doubt,  
which kills  
With hiss of 'What if sorrows end delights?'
- "Fear which stings ease with 'Work the  
Master wills!'  
Experience which coils round and strangles  
quick  
Each hope with 'Ask the Past if hoping skills
- "To work accomplishment, or proves a trick  
Wiling thee to endeavour! Strive, fool, stop  
Nowise, so live, so die—that's law! why kick
- "Against the pricks?' All out-wormed!  
Slumber, drop  
Thy films once more and veil the bliss within!  
Experience strangle hope? Hope waves a-top
- "Her wings triumphant! Come what will,  
I win,  
Whoever loses! Every dream's assured  
Of soberest fulfilment. Where's a sin
- "Except in doubting that the light, which lured  
The unwary into darkness, meant no wrong  
Had I but marched on bold, nor paused  
immured
- "By mists I should have pressed thro', passed  
along  
My way henceforth rejoicing? Not the boy's  
Passionate impulse he conceits so strong,

<sup>1</sup> The lily.

"Which, at first touch, truth, bubble-like,  
destroys,—  
Not the man's slow conviction 'Vanity  
Of vanities—like my griefs and joys !'  
"Truths in their primal clarity, confused  
By man's perception, which is man's and  
made  
To suit his service,—how, once disabused

"Ice !—thawed (look up) each bird, each  
insect by—  
(Look round) by all the plants that break in  
bloom,  
(Look down) by every dead friend's memory  
"Of reason which sees light half shine half  
shade,  
Because of flesh, the medium that adjusts  
Purity to his visuals, both an aid

"That smiles 'Am I the dust within my  
tomb ?'  
Not either, but both these—amalgam rare—  
Mix in a product, not from Nature's womb,  
"And hindrance,—how to eyes earth's air  
encrusts,  
When purged and perfect to receive truth's  
beam  
Pouring itself on the new sense it trusts

"But stuff which He the Operant—who shall  
dare  
Describe His operation ?—strikes alive  
And thaumaturgic. I nor know nor care  
"With all its plenitude of power,—how seen  
The intricacies now, of shade and shine,  
Oppugnant natures—Right and Wrong, we  
deem

"How from this tohu-bohu<sup>1</sup>—hopes which  
dive,  
And fears which soar—faith, ruined through  
-and through  
By doubt, and doubt, faith treads to dust—  
revive  
"Irreconcilable ? O eyes of mine,  
Freed now of imperfection, ye avail  
To see the whole sight, nor may uncombine  
"Henceforth what, erst divided, caused you  
quail—

"In some surprising sort,—as see, they do !—  
Not merely foes no longer but fast friends.  
What does it mean unless—O strange and new  
So huge the chasm between the false and true,  
The dream and the reality ! All hail,  
"Day of my soul's deliverance—day the new,  
The never-ending ! What though every  
shape

"Discovery !—this life proves a wine-press—  
blends  
Evil and good, both fruits of Paradise,  
Into a novel drink which—who intends  
Whereon I wreaked my yearning to pursue  
Even to success each semblance of escape  
From my own, bounded self to some all-fair  
All-wise external fancy, proved a rape

"To quaff, must bear a brain for ecstasies  
Attempted, not this all-inadequate  
Organ which, quivering within me, dies  
"Like that old giant's, feigned of fools—on  
air,  
Not solid flesh ? How otherwise ? To love—  
That lesson was to learn not here—but there—

"—Nay, lives !—what, how,—too soon, or  
else too late—  
I was—I am . . ." ("He babbleth !" Tsaddik  
mused)  
"O Thou Almighty who canst re-instate  
On earth, not here ! 'Tis there we learn,—  
there prove  
Our parts upon the stuff we needs must spoil,  
Striving at mastery, there bend above

<sup>1</sup> Void and waste.

"The spoiled clay potsherds, many a year of  
told

Attests the potter tried his hand upon,  
Till sudden he arose, wiped free from soil

"His hand cried 'So much for attempt—  
Performance! Taught to mould the living  
vase,

What matter the cracked pitchers dead and  
gone?"

"Could I impart and could thy mind embrace  
The secret, Tsaddik!" "Secret none to  
me!"

Quoth Tsaddik, as the glory on the face

Of Jochanan was quenched. "The truth I see  
Of what that excellence of Judah wrote,  
Doughty Halaphta. This a case must be

"Wherein, though the last breath have passed  
the throat,

So that 'The man is dead' we may pronounce,  
Yet is the Ruach—(thus do we denote

"The imparted Spirit)—in no haste to bounce  
From its entrusted Body,—some three days  
Lingers ere it relinquish to the pounce

"Of hawk-clawed Death his victim. Further  
says

Halaphta, 'Instances have been, and yet  
Again may be, when saints, whose earthly  
ways

"Tend to perfection, very nearly get  
To heaven while still on earth: and, as a fine  
Interval shows where waters pure have met

"Waves brackish, in a mixture, sweet with  
brine,

That's neither sea nor river but a taste  
Of both—so meet the earthly and divine

"And each is either.' Thus I hold him  
graced—

Dying on earth, half inside and half out,  
Wholly in heaven, who knows? My mind  
embraced

"Thy secret, Jochanan, how dare I doubt?  
Follow thy Ruach, let earth, all it can,  
Keep of the leavings!" Thus was brought about

The sepulture of Rabbi Jochanan:

Thou hast him,—sinner-saint, live-dead; boy-  
man,—

Schiphaz, on Bendimir, in Farsistan!

NOTE.—This story can have no better  
authority: than that of the treatise, existing  
dispersedly in fragments of Rabbinical writing,  
מִשְׁכַּל רֵבִים בְּרִים, from which I might  
have helped myself more liberally. Thus, instead  
of the simple reference to "Moses' stick,"—but  
what if I make amends by attempting three illus-  
trations, when some thirty might be composed  
on the same subject, equally justifying that  
pithy proverb מִמֶּשֶׁה עַד מֶשֶׁה לֹא קָם כְּמֶשֶׁה.

MOSES the Meek was thirty cubits high,  
The staff he strode with—thirty cubits long:  
And when he leapt, so muscular and strong  
Was Moses that his leaping neared the sky  
By thirty cubits more: we learn thereby  
He reached full ninety cubits—am I wrong?—  
When, in a fight slurred o'er by sacred song,  
With staff outstretched he took a leap to try  
The just dimensions of the giant Og.  
And yet he barely touched—this marvel  
lacked

Posterity to crown earth's catalogue  
Of marvels—barely touched—to be exact—  
The giant's ankle-bone, remained a frog  
That fain would match an ox in stature  
fact!

## II.

And this same fact has met with unbelief!  
How saith a certain traveller? "Young, I  
chanced

To come upon an object—if thou canst,  
Guess me its name and nature! 'Twas, in brief,  
White, hard, round, hollow, of such length, in  
chief,

—And this is what especially enhanced  
My wonder—that it seemed, as I advanced,  
Never to end. Bind up within thy sheaf  
Of marvels, this—Posterity! I walked  
From end to end,—four hours walked I,  
who go

A goodly pace,—and found—I have not baulked  
Thine expectation, Stranger? Ay or No?  
'Twas but Og's thigh-bone, all the while, I  
stalked  
Alongside of: respect to Moses, though!

## III.

Og's thigh-bone—if ye deem its measure strange,  
 Myself can witness to much length of shank  
 Even in birds. Upon a water's bank  
 Once halting, I was minded to exchange  
 Noon heat for cool. Quoth I "On many a  
 grange

I have seen storks perch—legs both long and  
 lank:

Yon stork's must touch the bottom of this  
 tank,  
 Since on its top doth wet no plume derange  
 Of the smooth breast. I'll bathe there!" "Do  
 not so!"

Warned me a voice from heaven. "A man  
 let drop

His axe into that shallow rivulet—  
 As thou accountest—seventy years ago:  
 It fell and fell and still without a stop  
 Keeps falling, nor has reached the bottom  
 yet."

[*Note.*—Dr. Berdoe says the *Hebrew* in this  
 note means—the first quotation, "Collection of  
 Many Fables;" and the second, "From Moses  
 to Moses (Maimonides) there was never one  
 like Moses."]

### NEVER THE TIME AND THE PLACE.

NEVER the time and the place  
 And the loved one all together!  
 This path—how soft to pace!  
 This May—what magic weather!

Where is the loved one's face?  
 In a dream that loved one's face meets  
 mine,

But the house is narrow, the place is bleak  
 Where, outside, rain and wind combine  
 With a furtive ear, if I strive to speak,  
 With a hostile eye at my flushing cheek,  
 With a malice that marks each word, each  
 sign!

O enemy sly and serpentine,  
 Uncoil thee from the waking man!  
 Do I hold the Past  
 Thus firm and fast  
 Yet doubt if the Future hold I can?  
 This path so soft to pace shall lead  
 Thro' the magic of May to herself indeed!

Or narrow if needs the house must be,  
 Outside are the storms and strangers: we—  
 Oh, close, safe, warm sleep I and she,  
 —I and she!

## PAMBO.

[Pambo was a monk of the Desert in the  
 time of St. Anthony, who, after learning  
 the first verse of the 39th Psalm, refused to  
 learn any more, saying that one was enough  
 for him if he learnt it properly. The poem  
 is apparently based on a passage in Socrates'  
 "Ecclesiastical History," Book iv. c. 18. In  
 Butler's "Lives of the Saints" there is a  
 glowing account of St. Pambo.]

SUPPOSE that we part (work done, comes  
 play)

With a grave tale told in crambo  
 —As our hearty sires were wont to say—  
 Whereof the hero is Pambo?

Do you happen to know who Pambo was?  
 Nor I—but this much have heard of him:  
 He entered one day a college-class,  
 And asked—was it so absurd of him?—

"May Pambo learn wisdom ere practise it?  
 In wisdom I fain would ground me:  
 Since wisdom is centred in Holy Writ,  
 Some psalm to the purpose expound me!"

"That psalm," the Professor smiled, "shall be  
 Untroubled by doubt which dirtieth  
 Pellucid streams when an ass like thee  
 Would drink there—the Nine-and-thirtieth.

"Verse first: *I said I will look to my ways  
 That I with my tongue offend not.*  
 How now? Why stare? Art struck in amaze?  
 Stop, stay! The smooth line hath an end  
 knot!

"He's gone!—disgusted my text should prove  
 Too easy to need explaining?  
 Had he waited, the blockhead might find I  
 move  
 To matter that pays remaining!"



Long years went by, when—"Ha, who's this? "At the self-same stand,—now old, then  
Do I come on the restive scholar young!

I had driven to Wisdom's goal, I wis,

But that he slipped the collar?

*I will look to my ways—were doing  
As easy as saying!—that I with my tongue  
Offend not—and 'scape pooh-poohing*

"What? Arms crossed, brow bent, thought-  
immersed?

A student indeed! Why scruple

To own that the lesson proposed him first

Scarce suited so apt a pupil?

"From sage and simple, doctor and  
dunce?

Ah, nowise! Still doubts so muddy

The stream I would drink at once,—but  
once!

"Come back! From the beggarly elements  
To a more recondite issue

We pass till we reach, at all events,

Some point that may puzzle . . . Why  
'pish' you?"

That—thus I resume my study!"

From the ground looked piteous up the head:

"Daily and nightly, Master,

Your pupil plods thro' that text you read,

Yet gets on never the faster.

Brother, brother, I share the blame,

*Arcades sumus ambo!*

Darkling, I keep my sunrise-aim,

Lack not the critic's flambeau,

And *look to my ways*, yet, much the  
same,

*Offend with my tongue*—like Pambo!

# FERISHTAH'S FANCIES.

1884.

[Ferishtah is the name of a Persian historian of the seventeenth century, but the poet has not done more than make use of the historian's name. There is no Persian poet called Ferishtah, and the stories are all inventions.]

"His genius was jocular, but, when disposed, he could be very serious."—Article "Shakespeare," JEREMY COLLIER'S *Historical &c. Dictionary*, 2nd edition, 1701.

"You, Sir, I entertain you for one of my Hundred; only, I do not like the fashion of your garments: you will say they are Persian: but let them be changed."—*King Lear*, act iii. sc. 6.

## PROLOGUE.

PRAY, Reader, have you eaten ortolans  
Ever in Italy?

Recall how cooks there cook them: for my  
plan's

To—Lyre with Spit ally.

They pluck the birds,—some dozen luscious  
lumps,

Or more or fewer,—

Then roast them, heads by heads and rumps  
by rumps,

Stuck on a skewer.

But first,—and here's the point I fain would  
press,—

Don't think I'm tattling!—

They interpose, to curb its lusciousness,

—What, 'twixt each fatling?

First comes plain bread, crisp, brown, a  
toasted square:

Then, a strong sage-leaf:

(So we find books with flowers dried here  
and there

Lest leaf engage leaf.)

First, food—then, piquancy—and last of all

Follows the thirdling:

Through wholesome hard, sharp soft, your  
tooth must bite

Ere reach the birdling.

Now, were there only crust to crunch, you'd  
wince:

Unpalatable!

Sage-leaf is bitter-pungent—so's a quince:

Eat each who's able!

But through all three bite boldly—lo, the gust!

Flavour—no fixture—

Flies, permeating flesh and leaf and crust

In fine admixture.

So with your meal, my poem: masticate

Sense, sight and song there!

Digest these, and I praise your peptics' state,

Nothing found wrong there.

Whence springs my illustration who can tell?

—The more surprising

That here eggs, milk, cheese, fruit suffice so  
well

For gormandizing.

A fancy-freak by contrast born of thee,

Delightful Gressoney!

Who laughest "Take what is, trust what  
may be!"

That's Life's true lesson,—eh?

MAISON DELAPIERRE,  
GRESSONEY ST. JEAN, VAL D'AOSTA,  
*September 12, 83.*

## THE EAGLE.

DERVISH—(though yet un-dervished, call  
him so

No less beforehand: while he drudged our way,

Other his worldly name was: when he wrote

Those versicles we Persians praise him for,

—True fairy-work—Ferishtah grew his  
style)—

Dervish Ferishtah walked the woods one eve,  
And noted on a bough a raven's nest  
Whereof each youngling gaped with callow  
beak

Widened by want; for way? beneath the tree  
Dead lay the mother-bird. "A piteous chance!  
"How shall they 'scape destruction?" sighed

the sage  
—Or sage about to be, though simple still.  
Responsive to which doubt, sudden there  
swooped

An eagle downward, and behold he bore  
(Great-hearted) in his talons flesh wherewith  
He stayed their craving, then resought the sky.  
"Ah, foolish, faithless me!" the observer  
smiled,

"Who toil and moil to eke out life, when lo  
Providence cares for every hungry mouth!"  
To profit by which lesson, home went he,  
And certain days sat musing,—neither meat  
Nor drink would purchase by his handiwork.  
Then,—for his head swam and his limbs grew  
faint,—

Sleep overtook the unwise one, whom in  
dream

God thus admonished: "Hast thou marked  
my deed?

Which part assigned by providence dost judge  
Was meant for man's example? Should he play  
The helpless weakling, or the helpful strength  
That captures prey and saves the perishing?  
Sluggard, arise: work, eat, then feed who  
lack!"

Waking, "I have arisen, work I will,  
Eat, and so following. Which lacks food the  
more,

Body or soul in me? I starve in soul:  
So may mankind: and since men congregate  
In towns, not woods,—to Ispahan forthwith!"

Round us the wild creatures, overhead the trees,  
Underfoot the moss-tracks,—life and love with  
these!

I to wear a fawn-skin, thou to dress in flowers:  
All the long lone Summer-day, that greenwood  
life of ours!

Rich-pavilioned, rather,—stall the world with-  
out,—

Inside—gold-roofed silk-walled silence round  
about!

Queen it thou on purple,—I, at watch and ward  
Couched beneath the columns, gaze, thy slave,  
love's guard!

So, for us, no world? Let throngs press thee  
to me!

Up and down amid men, heart by heart fare we!  
Welcome squalid vesture, harsh voice, hateful  
face!

God is soul, souls I and thou: with souls should  
souls have place.

## THE MELON-SELLER.

GOING his rounds one day in Ispahan,—  
Half-way on Dervishhood, not wholly there,—  
Ferishtah, as he crossed a certain bridge,  
Came startled on a well-remembered face.

"Can it be? What, turned melon-seller—thou  
Clad in such sordid garb, thy seat yon step  
Where dogs brush by thee and express con-  
tempt?

Methinks, thy head-gear is some scooped-out  
gourd!

Nay, sunk to slicing up, for readier sale,  
One fruit whereof the whole scarce feeds a  
swine?

Wast thou the Shah's Prime Minister, men saw  
Ride on his right-hand while a trumpet blew  
And Persia hailed the Favourite? Yea,  
twelve years

Are past, I judge, since that transcendancy,  
And thou didst speculate and art abased;  
No less, twelve years since, thou didst hold  
in hand

Persia, couldst halve and quarter, mince its pulp  
As pleased thee, and distribute—melon-like—  
Portions to whoso played the parasite,

Or suck—thyself—each juicy morsel. How  
Enormous thy abjection,—hell from heaven,  
Made tenfold hell by contrast! Whisper me!  
Dost thou curse God for granting twelve years'  
bliss

Only to prove this day's the direr lot?"

Whereon the beggar raised a brow, once more  
Luminous and imperial, from the rags.

"Fool, does thy folly think my foolishness  
Dwells rather on the fact that God appoints  
A day of woe to the unworthy one,  
Than that the unworthy one, by God's  
award,

Tasted joy twelve years long? Or buy a slice,  
Or go to school!"

To school Ferishtah went;  
And, schooling ended, passed from Ispahan  
To Nishapur, that Elburz looks above  
— Where they dig turquoise: there kept school  
himself,

The melon-seller's speech, his stock in trade.  
Some say a certain Jew adduced the word  
Out of their book, it sounds so much the same,  
אֶת־הַטּוֹב נִקְבַּל מֵאֵת הָאֱלֹהִים  
וְאֶת־הָרָע לֹא נִקְבַּל: In Persian phrase,  
"Shall we receive good at the hand of God  
And evil not receive?" But great wits jump.

Wish no word unspoken, want no look away!  
What if words were but mistake, and looks—  
too sudden, say!

Be unjust for once, Love! Bear it—well I may!

Do me justice always? Bid my heart—their  
shrine—

Render back its store of gifts, old looks and  
words of thine

—Oh, so all unjust—the less deserved, the  
more divine?

### SHAH ABBAS.

ANYHOW, once full Dervish, youngsters came  
To gather up his own words, 'neath a rock  
Or else a palm, by pleasant Nishapur.

Said someone, as Ferishtah paused abrupt,  
Reading a certain passage from the roll  
Wherein is treated of Lord Ali's life:  
"Master, explain this incongruity!  
When I dared question 'It is beautiful,  
But is it true?'—thy answer was 'In truth.

Lives beauty.' I persisting—'Beauty—yes,  
In thy mind and in my mind, every mind  
That apprehends: but outside—so to speak—  
Did beauty live in deed as well as word,  
Was this life lived, was this death died—not  
dreamed?'

'Many attested it for fact' saidst thou.

'Many!' but mark, Sir! Half as long ago.  
As such things were,—supposing that they  
were,—

Reigned great Shah Abbas: he too lived  
and died

—How say they? Why, so strong of arm,  
of foot

So swift, he stayed a lion in his leap  
On a stag's haunch,—with one hand grasped  
the stag,

With one struck down the lion: yet, no  
less,

Himself, that same day, feasting after sport,  
Perceived a spider drop into his wine,  
Let fall the flagon, died of simple fear.

So all say,—so dost thou say?"

"Wherefore not?"

Ferishtah smiled: "though strange, the  
story stands

Clear-chronicled: none tells it otherwise:  
The fact's eye-witness bore the cup, beside."

"And dost thou credit one cup-bearer's tale,  
False, very like, and futile certainly,

Yet hesitate to trust what many tongues  
Combine to testify was beautiful

In deed as well as word? No fool's report  
Of lion, stag and spider, but immense  
With meaning for mankind,—thy race,—thy-  
self?"

Whereto the Dervish: "First amend, my son,  
Thy faulty nomenclature, call belief

Belief indeed, nor grace with such a name  
The easy acquiescence of mankind

In matters nowise worth dispute, since life  
Lasts merely the allotted moment. Lo—

That lion-stag-and-spider tale leaves fixed  
The fact for us that somewhen Abbas reigned,  
Died, somehow slain,—a useful registry,—

Which therefore we—"believe"? Stand  
 forward, thou,  
 My Yakub, son of Yusuf, son of Zal!  
 I advertise thee that our liege, the Shah  
 Happily regnant, hath become assured,  
 By opportune discovery, that thy sires,  
 Son by the father upwards, track their line  
 To—whom but that same bearer of the cup  
 Whose inadvertency was chargeable  
 With what therefrom ensued, disgust and  
 death

To Abbas Shah, the over-nice of soul?  
 Whence he appoints thee,—such his clem-  
 ency,—  
 Not death, thy due, but just a double tax  
 To pay, on thy particular bed of reeds  
 Which flower into the brush that makes a  
 broom

Fit to sweep ceilings clear of vermin. Sure,  
 Thou dost believe the story nor dispute  
 That punishment should signalize its truth?  
 Down therefore with some twelve dinars!

Why start,  
 —The stag's way with the lion hard on  
 haunch?

"Believe the story?"—how thy words throng  
 fast!

"Who saw this, heard this, said this, wrote  
 down this,  
 That and the other circumstance to prove  
 So great a prodigy surprised the world?  
 Needs must thou prove me fable can be fact  
 Or ere thou coax one piece from out my  
 pouch!"

"There we agree, Sir: neither of us knows,  
 Neither accepts that tale on evidence  
 Worthy to warrant the large word—belief.  
 Now I get near thee! Why didst pause  
 abrupt,

Disabled by emotion at a tale  
 Might match—be frank!—for credibility  
 The figment of the spider and the cup?  
 —To wit, thy roll's concerning Ali's life,  
 Unverified—thine own word! Little boots  
 Our sympathy with fiction! When I read  
 The annals and consider of Tahmasp  
 And that sweet sun-surpassing star his love,

I weep like a cut vine-twig, though aware  
 Zurah's sad fate is fiction, since the snake  
 He saw devour her,—how could such exist,  
 Having nine heads? No snake boasts more  
 than three!

I weep, then laugh—both actions right alike.  
 But thou, Ferishtah, sapiency confessed,  
 When at the Day of Judgment God shall ask  
 'Didst thou believe?'—what wilt thou plead?  
 Thy tears?

(Nay, they fell fast and stain the parchment  
 still)

What if thy tears meant love? Love lacking  
 ground

—Belief,—avails thee as it would avail  
 My own pretence to favour since, forsooth,  
 I loved the lady—I, who needs must laugh  
 To hear a snake boasts nine heads: they  
 have three!"

"Thanks for the well-timed help that's born,  
 behold,

Out of thy words, my son,—belief and love!  
 Hast heard of Ishak son of Absal? Ay,  
 The very same we heard of, ten years since,  
 Slain in the wars: he comes back safe and  
 sound,—

Though twenty soldiers saw him die at  
 Yezdt,—

Just as a single mule-and-baggage boy  
 Declared 'twas like he some day would,—for  
 why?

The twenty soldiers lied, he saw him stout,  
 Cured of all wounds at once by smear of salve,  
 A Mubid's manufacture: such the tale.

Now, when his pair of sons were thus apprised  
 Effect was twofold on them. 'Hail!' crowed

This:

'Dearer the news than dayspring after night!  
 The cure-reporting youngster warrants me  
 Our father shall make glad our eyes once more,  
 For whom, had outpoured life of mine sufficed  
 To bring him back, free broached were every  
 vein!'

'Avaunt, delusive tale-concocter, news  
 Cruel as meteor simulating dawn!'   
 Whimpered the other: 'Who believes this boy  
 Must disbelieve his twenty seniors: no,

Return our father shall not ! Might my death  
Purchase his life, how promptly would the  
dole

Be paid as due !' Well, ten years pass,—aha,  
Ishak is marching homeward,—doubts, not  
he,

Are dead and done with ! So, our townsfolk  
straight

Must take on them to counsel. 'Go thou  
gay,

Welcome thy father, thou of ready faith !  
Hide thee, contrariwise, thou faithless one,  
Expect paternal frowning, blame and blows !'  
So do our townsfolk counsel : dost demur ?"

"Ferishtah like those simpletons—at loss  
In what is plain as pikestaff? Pish ! Suppose  
The trustful son had sighed 'So much the  
worse !

Returning means—retaking heritage  
Enjoyed these ten years, who should say me  
nay ?'

How would such trust reward him ? Trust-  
lessness

—O' the other hand—were what procured  
most praise

To him who judged return impossible,  
Yet hated heritage procured thereby.  
A fool were Ishak if he failed to prize  
More head's work less than heart's work : no  
fool he !'

"Is God less wise ? Resume the roll !"  
They did.

You groped your way across my room !' the  
dear dark dead of night ;

At each fresh step a stumble was : but, once  
your lamp alight,

Easy and plain you walked again : so soon all  
wrong grew right !

What lay on floor to trip your foot ? Each  
object, late awry.

Looked fitly placed, nor proved offence to foot-  
ing free—for why ?

The lamp showed all, discordant late, grown  
simple symmetry.

Be love your light and trust your guide, with  
these explore my heart !

No obstacle to trip you then, strike hands and  
souls apart !

Since rooms and hearts are furnished so,—light  
shows you,—needs love start ?

## THE FAMILY.

A CERTAIN neighbour lying sick to death,  
Ferishtah grieved beneath a palm-tree, whence  
He rose at peace : whereat objected one

"Gudarz our friend gasps in extremity.

Sure, thou art ignorant how close at hand  
Death presses, or the cloud, which fouled so  
late

Thy face, had deepened down not lightened  
off."

"I judge there will be respite, for I prayed."

"Sir, let me understand, of charity !  
Yestereve, what was thine admonishment ?

'All-wise, all-good, all-mighty—God is such !  
How then should man, the all-unworthy, dare  
Propose to set aside a thing ordained ?

To pray means—substitute man's will for  
God's :

Two best wills cannot be : by consequence,  
What is man bound to but—assent, say I ?

Rather to rapture of thanksgiving ; since  
That which seems worst to man to God is best,  
So, because God ordains it, best to man.

Yet man—the foolish, weak and wicked—  
prays !

Urges 'My best were better, didst Thou  
know' !"

'List to a tale. A worthy householder  
Of Shiraz had three sons, beside a spouse  
Whom, cutting gourds, a serpent bit, whereon  
The offended limb swelled black from foot to  
fork.

The husband called in aid a leech renowned  
World-wide, confessed the lord of surgery,  
And bade him dictate—who forthwith declared  
'Sole remedy is amputation.' Straight

The husband sighed 'Thou knowest: be it so!'

His three sons heard their mother sentenced:  
'Pause!'

Outbroke the elder: 'Be precipitate  
Nowise, I pray thee! Take some gentler way,  
Thou sage of much resource! I will not doubt  
But science still may save foot, leg and thigh!  
The next in age snapped petulant: 'Too rash!  
No reason for this maiming! What, Sir Leech,  
Our parent limps henceforward while we leap?  
Shame on thee! Save the limb thou must  
and shalt!'

'Shame on yourselves, ye bold ones!' followed

The brisk third brother, youngest, pertest too:  
'The leech knows all things, we are ignorant;  
What he proposes, gratefully accept!  
For me, had I some unguent bound to heal  
Hurts in a twinkling, hardly would I dare  
Essay its virtue and so cross the sage  
By cure his skill pronounces folly. Quick!  
No waiting longer! There the patient lies:  
Out then with implements and operate!'

"Ah, the young devil!"

"Why, his reason chimed  
Right with the Hakim's."

"Hakim's, ay—but chit's?  
How? what the skilled eye saw and judged  
of weight

To overbear a heavy consequence,  
That—shall a sciolist affect to see?  
All he saw—that is, all such oaf should see,  
Was just the mother's suffering."

"In my tale,  
Be God the Hakim: in the husband's case,  
Call ready acquiescence—aptitude  
Angelic, understanding swift and sure:  
Call the first son—a wise humanity,  
Slow to conceive but duteous to adopt:  
See in the second son—humanity,  
Wrong-headed yet right-hearted; rash but  
kind.

Last comes the cackler of the brood. our chit

Who, spring wisdom all beyond his years,  
Thinks to discard humanity itself:  
Fares like the beast which should affect to fly  
Because a bird with wings may spurn the  
ground,  
So, missing heaven and losing earth—drops  
how  
But hell-ward? No, be man and nothing  
more—  
Man who, as man conceiving, hopes and fears,  
And craves and deprecates, and loves, and  
loathes,  
And bids God help him, till death touch his eyes  
And show God granted most, denying all."

Man I am and man would be, Love—merest  
man and nothing more.

Bid me seem no other! Eagles boast of pinions  
—let them soar!

I may put forth angel's plumage, once un-  
manned, but not before.

Now on earth, to stand suffices,—nay, if kneel-  
ing serves, to kneel:

Here you front me, here I find the all of heaven  
that earth can feel:

Sense looks straight,—not over, under,—perfect  
sees beyond appeal.

Good you are and wise, full circle: what to me  
were more outside?

Wiser wisdom, better goodness? Ah, such  
want the angel's wide

Sense to take and hold and keep them! Mine  
at least has never tried.

## THE SUN.

"AND what might that bold man's announce-  
ment be?"

Ferishtah questioned—"which so moved  
thine ire

That thou didst curse, nay, cuff and kick—  
in short,

Confute the announcer? Wipe those drops  
away

Which start afresh upon thy face at mere  
Mention of such enormity: now, speak!"

"He scrupled not to say—(thou warrantest,  
O patient Sir, that I unblamed repeat  
Abominable words which blister tongue?)  
God once assumed on earth a human shape :  
(Lo, I have spitten !) Dared I ask the  
grace,  
Fain would I hear, of thy subtility,  
From out what hole in man's corrupted heart  
Creeps such a maggot : fancies verminous  
Breed in the clots there, but a monster born  
Of pride and folly like this pest—thyslf  
Only canst trace to egg-shell it hath chipped."

The sun rode high. "During our igno-  
rance"—

Began Ferishtah—"folk esteemed as God  
Yon orb : for argument, suppose him so,—  
Be it the symbol, not the symbolized,  
I and thou safelier take upon our lips.  
Accordingly, yon orb that we adore  
—What is he? Author of all light and life :  
Such one must needs be somewhere : this  
is he.

Like what? If I may trust my human eyes,  
A ball composed of spirit-fire, whence springs  
—What, from this ball, my arms could circle  
round?

All I enjoy on earth. By consequence,  
Inspiring me with—what? Why, love and  
praise.

I eat a palatable fig—there's love .  
In little : who first planted what I pluck,  
Obtains my little praise, too : more of both .  
Keeps due proportion with more cause for  
each :

So, more and ever more, till most of all  
Completes experience, and the orb, desried  
Ultimate giver of all good, perforce  
Gathers unto himself all love, all praise,  
Is worshipped—which means loved and  
praised at height.

Back to the first good : 'twas the gardener  
gave

Occasion to my palate's pleasure : grace,  
Plain on his part, demanded thanks on mine.  
Go up above this giver,—step by step,  
Gain a conception of what—(how and why,  
Matters not now)—occasioned him to give,

Appointed him the gardener of the ground,—  
I mount by just progression slow and sure  
To some prime giver—here assumed yon  
orb—

Who takes my worship. Whom have I in  
mind,

Thus worshipping, unless a man, my like  
Howe'er above me? Man, I say—how else,  
I being man who worship? Here's my hand  
Lifts first a mustard-seed, then weight on  
weight

Greater and ever greater, till at last  
It lifts a melon, I suppose, then stops—  
Hand-strength expended wholly : so, my love  
First lauds the gardener for the fig his gift,  
Then, looking higher, loves and lauds still  
more,

Who hires the ground, who owns the ground,  
Sheikh, Shah,

On and away, away and ever on,  
Till, at the last, it loves and lauds the orb  
Ultimate cause of all to laud and love.

Where is the break, the change of quality  
In hand's power, soul's impulsion? Gift was  
grace,

The greatest as the smallest. Had I stopped  
Anywhere in the scale, stayed love and  
praise

As so far only fit to follow gift,  
Saying 'I thanked the gardener for his fig,  
But now that, lo, the Shah has filled my purse  
With tomons which avail to purchase me  
A fig-tree forest, shall I pay the same  
With love and praise, the gardener's proper  
fee?'

Justly would whoso bears a brain object  
'Giving is giving, gift claims gift's return,  
Do thou thine own part, therefore : let the  
Shah

Ask more from who has more to pay.' Per-  
chance

He gave me from his treasure less by much  
Than the soil's servant : let that be ! My part  
Is plain—to meet and match the gift and gift  
With love and love, with praise and praise,  
till both

Cry 'All of us is thine, we can no more !'  
So shall I do man's utmost—man to man :



For as our liege the Shah's sublime estate  
Merely enhaloes, leaves him man the same,  
So must I count that orb I call a fire  
(Keep to the language of our ignorance)  
Something that's fire and more beside. Mere  
fire

—Is it a force which, giving, knows it gives,  
And wherefore, so may look for love and  
praise

From me, fire's like so far, however less  
In all beside? Prime cause this fire shall be,  
Uncaused, all-causing: hence begin the gifts,  
Thither must go my love and praise—to what?  
Fire? Symbol fitly serves the symbolized  
Herein,—that this same object of my thanks,  
While to my mind nowise conceivable  
Except as mind no less than fire, refutes  
Next moment mind's conception: fire is fire—  
While what I needs must thank, must needs  
include

Purpose with power,—humanity like mine,  
Imagined, for the dear necessity,  
One moment in an object which the next  
Confesses unimaginable. Power!  
—What need of will, then? nought opposes  
power:

Why, purpose? any change must be for  
worse:

And what occasion for beneficence  
When all that is, so is and so must be?  
Best being best now, change were for the  
worse.

Accordingly discard these qualities  
Proper to imperfection, take for type  
Mere fire, eject the man, retain the orb,—  
The perfect and, so, inconceivable,—  
And what remains to love and praise? A  
stone

Fair-coloured proves a solace to my eye,  
Rolled by my tongue brings moisture curing  
drouth,

And struck by steel emits a useful spark:  
Shall I return it thanks, the insentient thing?  
No,—man once, man for ever—man in soul  
As man in body: just as this can use  
Its proper senses only, see and hear,  
Taste, like or loathe according to its law  
And not another creature's,—even so

Man's soul is moved by what, if it in turn  
Must move, is kindred soul: receiving good  
—Man's way—must make man's due acknow-  
ledgment,

No other, even while he reasons out  
Plainly enough that, were the man unmanned,  
Made angel of, angelic every way,  
The love and praise that rightly seek and find  
Their man-like object now,—instructed more,  
Would go forth idly, air to emptiness.

Our human flower, sun-ripened, proffers scent  
Though reason prove the sun lacks nose to  
feed

On what himself made grateful: flower and  
man,

Let each assume that scent and love alike  
Being once born, must needs have use!  
Man's part

Is plain—to send love forth,—astray, perhaps:  
No matter, he has done his part."

"Wherefrom

What is to follow—if I take thy sense—  
But that the sun—the inconceivable  
Confessed by man—comprises, all the same,  
Man's every-day conception of himself—  
No less remaining unconceived!"

"Agreed"!

"Yet thou, insisting on the right of man  
To feel as man, not otherwise,—man, bound  
By man's conditions neither less nor more,  
Obliged to estimate as fair or foul,  
Right, wrong, good, evil, what man's faculty  
Adjudges such,—how canst thou,—plainly  
bound

To take man's truth for truth and only truth,—  
Dare to accept, in just one case, as truth  
Falsehood confessed? Flesh simulating fire—  
Our fellow-man whom we his fellows know  
For dust—instinct with fire unknowable!  
Where's thy man-needed truth—its proof, nay  
print

Of faintest passage on the tablets traced  
By man, termed knowledge? 'Tis conceded  
thee,

We lack such fancied union—fire with flesh:

But even so, to lack is not to gain  
Our lack's suppliance: where's the trace of  
such  
Recorded?"

"What if such a tracing were?  
If some strange story stood,—whate'er its  
worth;—  
That the immensely yearned-for, once befell,  
—The sun was flesh once?—(keep the  
figure!)"

"How?  
An union inconceivable was fact?"

"Son, if the stranger have convinced himself  
Fancy is fact—the sun, besides a fire,  
Holds earthly substance somehow fire per-  
vades  
And yet consumes not,—earth, he under-  
stands,

With essence he remains a stranger to,—  
Fittier thou saidst 'I stand appalled before  
Conception unattainable by me  
Who need it most'—than this—"What? boast  
he holds  
Conviction where I see conviction's need,  
Alas,—and nothing else? then what remains  
But that I straightway curse, cuff, kick the  
fool!"

Fire is in the flint: true, once a spark escapes,  
Fire forgets the kinship, soars till fancy shapes  
Some befitting cradle where the babe had birth—  
Wholly heaven's the product, unallied to earth.  
Splendours recognized as perfect in the star!—  
In our flint their home was, housed as now they  
are.

# MIHRAB SHAH.

QUOTH an inquirer, "Praise the Merciful!  
My thumb which yesterday a scorpion  
nipped—  
(It swelled and blackened)—lo, is sound  
again!  
By application of a virtuous root

VOL. II.

The burning has abated: that is well:  
But now methinks I have a mind to ask,—  
Since this discomfort came of culling herbs  
Normeaning harm,—why needs a scorpion be?  
Yea, there began, from when my thumb last  
throbbed,

Advance in question framing, till I asked  
Wherefore should any evil hap to man—  
From ache of flesh to agony of soul—  
Since God's All-mercy mates All-potency?  
Nay, why permits He evil to Himself—  
Man's sin, accounted such? Suppose a  
world

Purged of all pain, with fit inhabitant—  
Man pure of evil in thought, word and deed—  
Were it not well? Then, wherefore other-  
wise?

Too good result? But He is wholly good!  
Hard to effect? Ay, were He impotent!  
Teach me, Ferishtah!"

Said the Dervish: "Friend,  
My chance, escaped to-day, was worse than  
thine:

I, as I woke this morning, raised my head,  
Which never tumbled but stuck fast on neck.  
Was not I glad and thankful!"

"How could head  
Tumble from neck, unchopped—inform me  
first!  
Unless we take Firdausi's tale for truth,  
Who ever heard the like?"

"The like might hap  
By natural law: I let my staff fall thus—  
It goes to ground, I know not why. Suppose,  
Whene'er my hold was loosed, it skyward  
sprang  
As certainly, and all experience proved  
That, just as staves when unsupported sink,  
So, unconfined, they soar?"

"Let such be law—  
Why, a new chapter of sad accidents  
Were added to humanity's mischance,  
No doubt at all, and as a man's false step  
Now lays him prone on earth, contrariwise,

Removal from his shoulder of a weight  
Might start him upwards to perdition. Ay!  
But, since such law exists in just thy brain,  
I shall not hesitate to doff my cap  
For fear my head take flight."

"Nor feel relief  
Finding it firm on shoulder. Tell me, now!  
What were the bond 'twixt man and man,  
dost judge,  
Pain once abolished? Come, be true! Our  
Shah—  
How stands he in thy favour? Why that  
shrug?  
Is not he lord and ruler?"

"Easily!  
His mother bore him, first of those four  
wives  
Provided by his father, such his luck:  
Since when his business simply was to breathe  
And take each day's new bounty. There he  
stands—  
Where else had I stood, were his birth-star  
mine?  
No, to respect men's power, I needs must see  
Men's bare hands seek, find, grasp and wield  
the sword  
Nobody else can brandish! Bless his heart,  
'Tis said, he scarcely counts his fingers right!"

"Well, then—his princely doles! from every  
feast  
Off go the feasted with the dish they ate  
And cup they drank from,—nay, a change  
besides  
Of garments" . . .

"Sir, put case, for service done,—  
Or best, for love's sake,—such and such a  
slave  
Sold his allowance of sour lentil soup  
To therewith purchase me a pipe-stick,—  
nay,  
If he, by but one hour, cut short his sleep  
To clout my shoe,—that were a sacrifice!"  
"All praise his gracious bearing."

"All praise mine—  
Or would praise did they never make approach  
Except on all-fours, crawling till I bade  
'Now that with eyelids thou hast touched  
the earth,  
Come close and have no fear; poor nothing-  
ness!  
What wonder that the lady-rose I woo  
And palisade about from every wind,  
Holds herself handsomely? The wilding,  
now,  
Ruffled outside at pleasure of the blast,  
That still lifts up with something of a smile  
Its poor attempt at bloom" . . .

"A blameless life,  
Where wrong might revel with impunity—  
Remember that!"

"The falcon on his fist—  
Reclaimed and trained and belled and beauti-  
fied  
Till she believes herself the Simorgh's  
match—  
She only deigns destroy the antelope,  
Stoops at no carrion-crow: thou marvellest?"  
"So be it, then! He wakes no love in thee  
For any one of divers attributes  
Commonly deemed lovable. All the  
same,  
I would he were not wasting, slow but sure,  
With that internal ulcer" . . .

"Say'st thou so?  
How should I guess? Alack, poor soul!  
But stay—  
Sure in the reach of art some remedy  
Must lie to hand: or if it lurk,—that leech  
Of fame in Tebriz, why not seek his aid?  
Couldst not thou, Dervish, counsel in the  
case?"

"My counsel might be—what imports a  
pang  
The more or less, which puts an end to one  
Odious in spite of every attribute  
Commonly deemed lovable."

"Attributes!  
 Faugh!—nay, *Ferishtah*,—'tis an ulcer, think  
 Attributes, quotha? Here's poor flesh and  
 blood,  
 Like thine and mine and every man's, a prey  
 To hell-fire! Hast thou lost thy wits for  
 once?"

"Friend, here they are to find and profit by!  
 Put pain from-out the world, what room were  
 left

For thanks to God, for love to Man? Why  
 thanks,—

Except for some escape, whate'er the style,  
 From pain that might be, name it as thou  
 mayst?

Why love,—when all thy kind, save me,  
 suppose,

Thy father, and thy son, and . . . well, thy  
 dog,

To eke the decent number out—we few  
 Who happen—like a handful of chance stars  
 From the unnumbered host—to shine o'er-  
 head

And lend thee light,—our twinkle all thy  
 store,—

We only take thy love! Mankind, forsooth?  
 Who sympathizes with their general joy  
 Foolish as undeserved? But pain—see God's  
 Wisdom at work!—man's heart is made to  
 judge

Pain deserved nowhere by the common flesh  
 Our birthright,—bad and good deserve alike  
 No pain, to human apprehension! Lust  
 Greed, cruelty, injustice, crave (we hold)  
 Due punishment from somebody, no doubt:  
 But ulcer in the midriff! that brings flesh  
 Triumphant from the bar whereto arraigned  
 Soul quakes with reason. In the eye of God  
 Pain may have purpose and be justified:  
 Man's sense avails to only see, in pain,  
 A hateful chance no man but would avert  
 Or, failing, needs must pity. Thanks to God  
 And love to man,—from man take these away,  
 And what is man worth? Therefore, *Mihrab*  
*Shah*,

Tax me my bread and salt twice over, claim  
 Laila my daughter for thy sport,—go on!

Slay my son's self, maintain thy poetry  
 Beats mine,—thou meritest a dozen deaths!  
 But—ulcer in the stomach,—ah, poor soul,  
 Try a fig-plaster: may it ease thy pangs!"

So, the head aches and the limbs are faint,  
 Flesh is a burthen—even to you!  
 Can I force a smile with a fancy quaint?  
 Why are my ailments none or few?

In the soul of me sits sluggishness:  
 Body so strong and will so weak!  
 The slave stands fit for the labour—yes,  
 But the master's mandate is still to seek.

You, now—what if the outside clay  
 Helped, not hindered the inside flame?  
 My dim to-morrow—your plain to-day,  
 Yours the achievement, mine the aim?

So were it rightly, so shall it be!  
 Only, while earth we pace together  
 For the purpose apportioned you and me,  
 Closer we tread for a common tether.

You shall sigh "Wait for his sluggish soul!  
 Shame he should lag, not lamed as I!"  
 May not I smile "Ungained her goal:  
 Body may reach her—by-and-by?"

## A CAMEL-DRIVER.

"How of his fate, the Pilgrims' soldier-guide  
 Condemned" (*Ferishtah* questioned), "for  
 he slew  
 The merchant whom he convoyed with his  
 bales  
 —A special treachery?"

"Sir, the proofs were plain:  
 Justice was satisfied; between two boards  
 The rogue was sawn asunder, rightly served."

"With all wise men's approval—mine at  
 least."

"Himself, indeed, confessed as much. 'I die  
 Justly' (groaned he) 'through over-greediness

Which tempted me to rob: but grieve the most  
That he who quickened sin at slumber,—ay,  
Prompted and pestered me till thought grew  
deed,—

The same is fled to Syria and is safe,  
Laughing at me thus left to pay for both.  
My comfort is that God reserves for him  
Hell's hottest' . . ."

"Idle words."

"Enlighten me!

Wherefore so idle? Punishment by man  
Has thy assent,—the word is on thy lips.  
By parity of reason, punishment  
By God should likelier win thy thanks and  
praise."

"Man acts as man must: God, as God be-  
seems.

A camel-driver, when his beast will bite,  
Thumps her athwart the muzzle: why?"

"How else

Instruct the creature—mouths should munch,  
not bite?"

"True, he is man, knows but man's trick to  
teach.

Suppose some plain word, told her first of all,  
Had hindered any biting?"

"Find him such,

And fit the beast with understanding first!  
No understanding animals like Rakhsh  
Nowadays, Master! Till they breed on earth,  
For teaching—blows must serve."

"Who deals the blow—

What if by some rare method,—magic, say,—  
He saw into the biter's very soul,  
And knew the fault was so repented of  
It could not happen twice?"

"That's something: still,

I hear, methinks, the driver say 'No less  
Take thy fault's due! Those long-necked  
sisters, see,

Lean all 'a-stretch to know if biting meets  
Punishment or enjoys impunity.  
For their sakes—thwack!"

"The journey home at end,

The solitary beast safe-stabled now,  
In comes the driver to avenge a wrong  
Suffered from six months since,—apparently  
With patience, nay, approval: when the jaws  
Met i' the small of the arm, 'Ha, Ladykin,  
Still at thy frolics, girl of gold?' laughed he:  
'Eat flesh? Rye-grass content thee rather  
with,

Whereof accept a bundle! Now,—what  
change!

Laughter by no means! Now 'tis 'Fiend,  
thy frisk

Was fit to find thee provender, didst judge?  
Behold this red-hot twy-prong, thus I stick  
To hiss i' the soft of thee!"

"Behold? behold

A crazy noddle, rather! Sure the brute  
Might wellnigh have plain speech coaxed out  
of tongue,

And grow as voluble as Rakhsh himself  
At such mad outrage. 'Could I take thy mind,  
Guess thy desire? If biting was offence  
Wherefore the rye-grass bundle, why each  
day's

Patting and petting, but to intimate  
My playfulness had pleased thee? Thou  
endowed

With reason, truly!"

"Reason aims to raise

Some makeshift scaffold-vantage midway,  
whence

Man dares, for life's brief moment, peer  
below:

But ape omniscience? Nay! The ladder lent  
To climb by, step and step, until we reach  
The little foothold-rise allowed mankind  
To mount on and thence guess the sun's  
survey—

Shall this avail to show us world-wide truth  
Stretched for the sun's descrying? Reason  
bids

'Teach, Man, thy beast his duty first of all  
Or last of all, with blows if blows must be,—  
How else accomplish teaching?' Reason adds  
'Before man's. First, and after man's poor  
Last,  
God operated and will operate.'  
—Process of which man merely knows this  
much,—  
That nowise it resembles man's at all,  
Teaching or punishing."

"It follows, then,  
That any malefactor I would smite  
With God's allowance, God himself will spare  
Presumably. No scapegrace? Then, rejoice  
Thou snatch-grace safe in Syria!"

"Friend, such view  
Is but man's wonderful and wide mistake.  
Man lumps his kind i' the mass : God singles  
thence

Unit by unit. Thou and God exist—  
So think !—for certain : think the mass—  
mankind—

Disparts, disperses, leaves thyself alone !  
Ask thy lone soul what laws are plain to  
thee,—

Thee and no other,—stand or fall by them !  
That is the part for thee : regard all else  
For what it may be—Time's illusion. This  
Be sure of—ignorance that sins, is safe.  
No punishment like knowledge ! Instance,  
now !

My father's choicest treasure was a book  
Wherein he, day by day and year by year,  
Recorded gains of wisdom for my sake  
When I should grow to manhood. While a  
child,

Coming upon the casket where it lay  
Unguarded,—what did I but toss the thing  
Into a fire to make more flame therewith,  
Meaning no harm ? So acts man three-years  
old !

I grieve now at my loss by witlessness,  
But guilt was none to punish. Man mature—  
Each word of his, I lightly held, each look  
I turned from—wish that wished in vain—  
nay, will

That willed and yet went all to waste—'tis  
these

Rankle like fire. Forgiveness ? rather grant  
Forgetfulness ! The past is past and lost.  
However near I stand in his regard,  
So much the nearer had I stood by steps  
Offered the feet which rashly spurned their  
help.

That I call Hell ; why further punishment ?"

When I vexed you and you chid me,  
And I owned my fault and turned  
My cheek the way you bid me,  
And confessed the blow well earned,—

My comfort all the while was  
—Fault was faulty—near, not quite !  
Do you wonder why the smile was ?  
O'erpunished wrong grew right.

But faults you ne'er suspected,  
Nay, praised, no faults at all,—  
Those would you had detected—  
Crushed eggs whence snakes could crawl !

## TWO CAMELS.

QUOTH one : "Sir, solve a scruple ! No  
true sage

I hear of, but instructs his scholar thus :  
'Wouldst thou be wise ? Then mortify thy-  
self !

Baulk of its craving every bestial sense !  
Say "If I relish melons—so do swine !  
Horse, ass and mule consume their provender  
Nor leave a pea-pod : fasting feeds the soul."  
Thus they admonish : while thyself, I note,  
Eatest thy ration with an appetite,  
Nor fallest foul of whoso licks his lips  
And sighs—'Well-saffroned was that barley  
soup !'

Can wisdom co-exist with—gorge and swill,  
I say not,—simply sensual preference ?  
For this or that fantastic meat and drink ?  
Moreover, wind blows sharper than its wont  
This morning, and thou hast already donned  
Thy sheepskin over-garment : assure the sage !

Is busied with conceits that soar above  
A petty change of season and its chance  
Of causing ordinary flesh to sneeze?  
I always thought, Sir"

"Son," Ferishtah said;  
"Truth ought to seem as never thought  
before.

How if I give it birth in parable?  
A neighbour owns two camels, beasts of price  
And promise, destined each to go, next week,  
Swiftly and surely with his merchandise  
From Nishapur to Sebzevar, no truce  
To tramp, but travel, spite of sands and  
drouth,

In days so many, lest they miss the Fair.  
Each falls to meditation o'er his crib  
Piled high with provender before the start.  
Quoth this: 'My soul is set on winning praise  
From goodman lord and master,—hump to  
hoof,

I dedicate me to his service. How?  
Grass, purslane, lupines and I know not  
what,  
Crammed in my manger? Ha, I see—I  
see!

No, master, spare thy money! I shall trudge  
The distance and yet cost thee not a doit  
Beyond my supper on this mouldy bran.'  
'Be magnified, O master, for the meal  
So opportunely liberal!' quoth that.  
'What use of strength in me but to surmount  
Sands and simooms, and bend beneath thy  
bales

No knee until I reach the glad bazaar?  
Thus I do justice to thy fare: no sprig  
Of toothsome chervil must I leave unchewed!  
Too bitterly should I reproach myself  
Did I sink down in sight of Sebzevar,  
Remembering how the merest mouthful more  
Had heartened me to manage yet a mile!  
And so it proved: the too-abstemious brute  
Midway broke down, his pack rejoiced the  
thieves,

His carcass fed the vultures: not so he  
The wisely thankful, who, good market-  
drudges  
Lest down his laden in the market-place,

No damage to a single pack. Which beast,  
Think ye, had praise and patting and a  
brand—

Of good-and-faithful-servant fixed on flank?  
So, with thy squeamish scruple. What  
imports  
Fasting or feasting? Do thy day's work,  
dare

Refuse no help thereto, since help refused  
Is hindrance sought and found. Win but  
the race—

Who shall object 'He tossed three wine  
cups off,  
And, just at starting, Lilith kissed his lips'?

"More soberly,—consider this, my Son  
Put case I never have myself enjoyed,  
Known by experience what enjoyment means,  
How shall I—share enjoyment?—no,  
indeed!—

Supply it to my fellows,—ignorant,  
As so I should be of the thing they crave,  
How it affects them, works for good or ill.  
Style my enjoyment self-indulgence—sin—  
Why should I labour to infect my kind  
With sin's occasion, bid them too enjoy,  
Who else might neither catch nor give again  
Joy's plague, but live in righteous misery?  
Just as I cannot, till myself convinced,  
Impart conviction, so, to deal forth joy  
Adroitly, needs must I know joy myself.  
Renounce joy for my fellows' sake? That's  
joy

Beyond joy; but renounced for mine, not  
theirs?

Why, the physician called to help the sick,  
Cries 'Let me, first of all, discard my health!'  
No, Son; the richness hearted in such joy  
Is in the knowing what are gifts we give,  
Not in a vain endeavour not to know!  
Therefore, desire joy and thank God for it!  
The Adversary said,—a Jew reports,—  
החנם רצא אור אלהים  
In Persian phrase, 'Does Job fear God for  
nought?'

Job's creatureship is not abjured, thou fool!  
He nowise isolates himself and plays  
The independent equal, owns no more

Than himself gave himself; so why thank God?

A proper speech were this מוֹדֵה

'Equals we are, Job, labour for thyself,  
Nor bid me help thee: bear, as best flesh may,  
Pains I inflict not nor avail to cure:

Beg of me nothing thou thyself mayst win  
By work, or waive with magnanimity,  
Since we are peers acknowledged,—scarcely  
peers,

Had I implanted any want of thine  
Only my power could meet and gratify.'

No: rather hear, at man's indifference—

'Wherefore did I contrive for thee that ear  
Hungry for music, and direct thine eye  
To where I hold a seven-stringed instrument,  
Unless I meant thee to beseech me play?'"

Once I saw a chemist take a pinch of powder  
—Simple dust it seemed—and half-unstop a  
phial:

—Out dropped harmless dew. "Mixed nothings  
make"—quoth he—

"Something!" So they did: a thunderclap,  
but louder—

Lightning-flash, but fiercer—put spectators'  
nerves to trial:

Sure enough, we learned what was, imagined  
what might be.

Had I no experience how a lip's mere tremble,  
Look's half hesitation, cheek's just change of  
colour,

These effect a heartquake,—how should I con-  
ceive

What a heaven there may be? Let it but re-  
semble

Earth myself have known! No bliss that's  
finer, fuller,

Only—bliss that lasts, they say, and fain would  
I believe.

### CHERRIES.

"WHAT, I disturb thee at thy morning-meal:

Cherries so ripe already? Eat apace!

I recollect thy lesson yesterday.

Yet—thanks, Sir, for thy leave to inter-  
rupt" . . .

"Friend, I have finished my repast, thank  
God!"

"There now, thy thanks for breaking fast on  
fruit!—

Thanks being praise, or tantamount thereto.

Prithee consider, have not things degreet,  
Lofty and low? Are things not great and  
small,

Thence claiming praise and wonder more or  
less?

Shall we confuse them, with thy warrant too,

Whose doctrine otherwise begins and ends

With just this precept 'Never faith enough

In man as weakness, God as potency?'

When I would pay soul's tribute to that  
same,

Why not look up in wonder, bid the stars

Attest my praise of the All-mighty One?

What are man's puny members and as mean

Requirements weighed with Star-King Mush-  
tari?

There is the marvel!"

"Not to man—that's me.

List to what happened late, in fact or dream.

A certain stranger, bound from far away,

Still the Shah's subject, found himself before

Ispahan palace-gate. As duty bade,

He enters in the courts, will, if he may,

See so much glory as befits a slave

Who only comes, of mind to testify

How great and good is shown our lord the  
Shah.

In he walks, round he casts his eye about,

Looks up and down, admires to heart's content,

Ascends the gallery, tries door and door,

None says his reverence nay: peeps in at each,

Wonders at all the unimagined use,

Gold here and jewels there,—so vast, that  
hall—

So perfect yon pavilion!—lamps above

Bidding look up from luxuries below,—

Evermore wonder topping wonder,—last—

Sudden he comes upon a cosy nook,

A nest-like little chamber, with his name,

His own, yea, his and no mistake at all,

Plain o'er the entry: what, and he describes



Just those arrangements inside,—oh, the  
care !—

Suited to soul and body both,—so snug  
The cushion—nay, the pipe-stand furnished  
so !

Whereat he cries aloud,—what think'st thou,  
Friend ?

'That these my slippers should be just my  
choice,

Even to the colour that I most affect,  
Is nothing : ah, that lamp, the central sun,  
What must it light within its minaret  
I scarce dare guess the good of ! Who lives  
there ?

That let me wonder at,—no slipper-toys  
Meant for the foot, forsooth, which kicks  
them—thus !'

"Never enough faith in omnipotence,—  
Never too much, by parity, of faith  
In impuissance, man's—which turns to  
strength

When once acknowledged weakness every  
way.

How ? Hear the teaching of another tale.

"Two men once owed the Shah a mighty  
sum,

Beggars they both were : this one crossed his  
arms

And bowed his head,—'whereof,'—sighed  
he,—'each hair

Proved it a jewel, how the host's amount  
Were idly strewn for payment at thy feet !'

'Lord, here they lie, my havings poor and  
scant !

All of the berries on my currant-bush,  
What roots of garlic have escaped the mice,  
And some five pippins from the seedling  
tree;—

Would they were half-a-dozen ! anyhow,  
Accept my all, poor beggar that I am !'

'Received in full of all demands !' smiled  
back

The apportioner of every lot of ground  
From inch to acre. Littleness of love  
Befits the littleness of loving thing.

What if he boasted 'Seeing I am great,

Great must my corresponding tribute be ?'

Mushtari,—well, suppose him seven times  
seven

The sun's superior, proved so by some  
sage :

Am I that sage ? To me his twinkle blue  
Is all I know of him and thank him for,  
And therefore I have put the same in verse—  
'Like yon blue twinkle, twink's thine eye,  
my Love !'

"Neither shalt thou be troubled overmuch  
Because thy offering,—littleness itself,—  
Is lessened by admixture sad and strange  
Of mere man's-motives,—praise with fear,  
and love.

With looking after that same love's reward.  
Alas, Friend, what was free from this alloy,—  
Some smatch thereof,—in best and purest  
love

Proffered thy earthly father ? Dust thou art,  
Dust shalt be to the end. Thy father took  
The dust, and kindly called the handful—  
gold,

Nor cared to count what sparkled here and  
there,

Sagely unanalytic. Thank, praise, love  
(Sum up thus) for the lowest favours first,  
The commonest of comforts ! aught beside  
Very omnipotence had overlooked  
Such needs, arranging for thy little life.  
Nor waste thy power of love in wonder-  
ment

At what thou wiselier lettest shine unsoiled  
By breath of word. That this last cherry  
soothes

A roughness of my palate, that I know :  
His Maker knows why Mushtari was made."

Verse-making was least of my virtues : I viewed  
with despair

Wealth that never yet was but might be—all  
that verse-making were

If the life would but lengthen to wish, let the  
mind be laid bare.

So I said "To do little is bad, to do nothing  
is worse"—And made verse.

Love-making,—how simple a matter! No depths to explore,  
 No heights in a life to ascend! No disheartening Before,  
 No affrighting Hereafter,—love now will be love evermore.  
 So I felt "To keep silence were folly:"—all language above, I made love.

## PLOT-CULTURE.

"Ay, but, Ferishtah,"—a disciple smirked,—  
 "That verse of thine 'How twink's thine eye, my Love,

Blue as yon star-beam!' much arrides myself  
 Who haply may obtain a kiss therewith  
 This eve from Laila where the palms  
 abound—

My youth, my warrant—so the palms be close!

Suppose when thou art earnest in discourse  
 Concerning high and holy things,—abrupt"  
 I out with—"Laila's lip, how honey-sweet!"—  
 What say'st thou, were it scandalous or no?  
 I feel thy shoe sent flying at my mouth  
 For daring—prodigy of impudence—  
 Publish what, secret, were permissible.  
 Well,—one slide further in the imagined  
 slough,—

Knee-deep therein, (respect thy reverence:.)—  
 Suppose me well aware thy very self  
 Stopped prying through the palm-screen,  
 while I dared

Solace me with caressings all the same?  
 Unutterable, nay—unthinkable,  
 Undreamable a deed of shame! Alack,  
 How will it fare shouldst thou impress on me  
 That certainly an Eye is over all  
 And each, to mark the minute's deed, word,  
 thought,

As worthy of reward or punishment?  
 Shall I permit my sense an Eye-viewed  
 shame,

Broad daylight perpetration,—so to speak,—  
 I had not dared to breathe within the Ear,  
 With black night's help about me? Yet I  
 stand.

VOL. II.

A man, no monster, made of flesh not cloud:  
 Why made so, if my making prove offence  
 To Maker's eye and ear?"

"Thou wouldst not stand  
 Distinctly Man,"—Ferishtah made reply,  
 "Not the mere creature,—did no limit-line  
 Round thee about, apportion thee thy place  
 Clean-cut from out and off the illimitable,—  
 Minuteness severed from immensity.  
 All of thee for the Maker,—for thyself,  
 Workings inside the circle that evolve  
 Thine all,—the product of thy cultured plot.  
 So much of grain the ground's lord bids thee  
 yield

Bring sacks to granary in Autumn! spare  
 Daily intelligence of this manure,  
 That compost, how they tend to feed the  
 soil:

There thou art master sole and absolute  
 —Only, remember doomsday! Twitt'st thou  
 me

Because I turn away my outraged nose  
 Shouldst thou obtrude thereon a shovelful  
 Of fertilizing kisses? Since thy sire  
 Wills and obtains thy marriage with the  
 maid,

Enough! Be reticent, I counsel thee,  
 Nor venture to acquaint him, point by point,  
 What he procures thee. Is he so obtuse?  
 Keep thy instruction to thyself! My ass—  
 Only from him expect acknowledgment  
 The while he champs my gift, a thistle-  
 bunch,

How much he loves the largess: of his love  
 I only tolerate so much as tells  
 By wrinkling nose and inarticulate grunt,  
 The meal, that heartens him to do my work,  
 Tickles his palate as I meant it should."

Not with my Soul, Love!—bid no Soul like  
 mine  
 Lap thee around nor leave the poor Sense  
 room!

Soul,—travel-worn, toil-weary,—would confine  
 Along with Soul, Soul's gains from glow and  
 gloom,

Y 2

Captures from soarings high and divings deep.  
Spoil-laden Soul, how should such memories  
sleep?

Take Sense, too—let me love entire and whole—  
Not with my Soul!

Eyes shall meet eyes and find no eyes between,  
Lips feed on lips, no other lips to fear!

No past, no future—so thine arms but screen  
The present from surprise! not there, 'tis  
here—

Not then, 'tis now:—back, memories that in-  
trude!

Make, Love, the universe our solitude,  
And, over all the rest, oblivion roll—  
Sense quenching Soul!

#### A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR.

"KNOWLEDGE deposed, then!"—groaned  
whom that most grieved

As foolishlest of all the company.

"What, knowledge, man's distinctive attri-  
bute,

He doffs that crown to emulate an ass  
Because the unknowing long-ears loves at  
least

Husk'd lupines, and belike the feeder's self  
—Whose purpose in the dole what ass divines?"

"Friend," quoth Ferishtah, "all I seem to  
know

Is—I know nothing save that love I can  
Boundlessly, endlessly. My curls were  
crowned

In youth with knowledge,—off, alas, crown  
slipped

Next moment, pushed by better knowledge  
still

Which nowise proved more constant: gain,  
to-day,

Was toppling loss to-morrow, lay at last  
—Knowledge, the golden?—lacquered igno-  
rance!

As gain—mistrust it! Not as means to gain:  
Lacquer we learn by: cast in fining-pot,  
We learn,—when what seemed ore assayed  
proves dross,—

Surelier true gold's worth, guess how purity  
I' the lode were precious could one light on  
ore

Clarified up to test of crucible.  
The prize is in the process: knowledge means  
Ever-renewed assurance by defeat

That victory is somehow still to reach,  
But love is victory, the prize itself:

Love—trust to! Be rewarded for the trust  
In trust's mere act. In love success is sure,

Attainment—no delusion, whatsoe'er  
The prize be: apprehended as a prize,

A prize it is. Thy child as surely grasps  
An orange as he fails to grasp the sun

Assumed his capture. What if soon he finds  
The foolish fruit unworthy grasping? Joy

In shape and colour,—that was joy as true—  
Worthy in its degree of love—as grasp

Of sun were, which had sing'd his hand  
beside.

What if he said the orange held no juice  
Since it was not that sun he hoped to suck?

This constitutes the curse that spoils our life  
And sets man maundering of his misery,

That there's no meanest atom he obtains  
Of what he counts for knowledge but he cries

'Hold here,—I have the whole thing,—know,  
this time,

Nor need search farther!' Whereas, strew  
his path

With pleasures, and he scorns them while  
he stoops:

'This fitly call'st thou pleasure, pick up this  
And praise it, truly? I reserve my thanks

For something more substantial.' Fool not  
thus

In practising with life and its delights!  
Enjoy the present gift, nor wait to know

The unknowable. Enough to say 'I feel'  
Love's sure effect, and, being loved, must

love  
The love its cause behind,—I can and do!

Nor turn to try thy brain-power on the fact,  
(Apart from as it strikes thee, here and now—

Its how and why, 't' the future and elsewhere)  
Except to—yet once more, and ever again,

Confirm thee in thy utter ignorance  
Assured that, whatsoe'er the quality

Of love's cause, save that love was caused  
thereby,

This—nigh upon revelation as it seemed  
A minute since—defies thy longing looks,  
Withdrawn into the unknowable—once more.  
Wholly distrust thy knowledge, then, and  
trust

As wholly love allied to ignorance!  
There lies thy truth and safety. Love is  
praise,

And praise is love! Refine the same, contrive  
An intellectual tribute—ignorance.  
Appreciating ere approbative  
Of knowledge that is infinite? With us  
The small, who use the knowledge of our  
kind

Greater than we, more wisely ignorance  
Restricts its apprehension, sees and knows  
No more than brain accepts in faith of sight,  
Takes first what comes first, only sure so far.  
By Sebzevar, a certain pillar stands  
So aptly that its gnomon tells the hour;  
What if the townsmen said 'Before we thank  
Who placed it, for his serviceable craft,  
And go to dinner since its shade tells noon,  
Needs must we have the craftsman's purpose  
clear

On half a hundred more recondite points  
Than a mere summons to a vulgar meal!  
Better they say 'How opportune the help!  
Be loved and praised, thou kindly-hearted  
sage

Whom Hudhud taught,—the gracious spirit-  
bird,—  
How to construct the pillar, teach the time!  
So let us say—not 'Since we know, we  
love,'

But rather 'Since we love, we know enough.'  
Perhaps the pillar by a spell controlled  
Mushtari in his courses? Added grace  
Surely I count it that the sage devised,  
Beside celestial service, ministry  
To all the land, by one sharp shade at noon  
Falling as folk foresee. Once more then,  
Friend—

(What ever in those careless ears of thine  
Withal I needs must round thee)—knowledge  
doubt

Even wherein it seems demonstrable!  
Love,—in the claim for love, that's gratitude  
For apprehended pleasure, nowise doubt!  
Pay its due tribute,—sure that pleasure is,  
While knowledge may be, at the most. See,  
now!

Eating my breakfast, I thanked God.—'For  
love  
Shown in the cherries' flavour? Consecrate  
So petty an example?' There's the fault!  
We circumscribe omnipotence. Search sand  
To unearth water: if first handful scooped  
Yields thee a draught, what need of digging  
down

Full fifty fathoms deep to find a spring  
Whereof the pulse might deluge half the  
land?

Drain the sufficient drop, and praise what  
checks  
The drouth that glues thy tongue,—what  
more would help

A brimful cistern? Ask the cistern's boon!  
When thou wouldst solace camels: in thy  
case,  
Relish the drop and love the loveable!"

"And what may be unloveable?"

"Why, hate!

If out of sand comes sand and nought but  
sand

Affect not to be quaffing at mirage,  
Nor nickname pain as pleasure. That, belike,  
Constitutes just the trial of thy wit  
And worthiness to gain promotion,—hence,  
Proves the true purpose of thine actual  
life.

Thy soul's environment of things perceived,  
Things visible and things invisible,  
Fact, fancy—all was purposed to evolve  
This and this only—was thy wit of worth  
To recognize the drop's use, love the same,  
And loyally declare against mirage  
Though all the world asseverated dust  
Was good to drink? Say, 'what made moist  
my lip,

That I acknowledged moisture: thou art  
saved!

"For why? The creature and creator stand  
 Rightly related so. Consider well!  
 Were knowledge all thy faculty, then God  
 Must be ignored: love gains him by first leap.  
 Frankly accept the creatureship: ask good  
 To love for: press bold to the tether's end  
 Allotted to this life's intelligence!  
 'So we offend?' Will it offend thyself  
 If,—impotence praying potency,—  
 Thy child beseech that thou command the sun  
 Rise bright to-morrow—thou, he thinks  
 supreme  
 In power and goodness, why shouldst thou  
 refuse?

Afterward, when the child matures, perchance  
 The fault were greater if, with wit full-grown,  
 The stripling dared to ask for a dinar,  
 Than that the boy cried 'Pluck Sitara<sup>1</sup> down  
 And give her me to play with!' 'Tis for him  
 To have no bounds to his belief in thee:  
 For thee it also is to let her shine  
 Lustrous and lonely, so best serving him!"

Ask not one least word of praise!  
 Words declare your eyes are bright?  
 What then meant that summer day's  
 Silence spent in one long gaze?  
 Was my silence wrong or right?

Words of praise were all to seek!  
 Face of you and form of you,  
 Did they find the praise so weak  
 When my lips just touched your cheek—  
 Touch which let my soul come through?

#### A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE- EATING.

"LOOK, I strew beans" . . .

(Ferishtah, we premise,  
 Strove this way with a scholar's cavilment  
 Who put the peevish question: "Sir, be  
 frank!

A good thing or a bad thing—Life is which?  
 Shine and shade, happiness and misery

<sup>1</sup> In Persian means a star.

Battle it out there: which force beats, I ask?  
 If I pick beans from out a bushelful—  
 This one, this other,—then demand of thee  
 What colour names each justly in the main,—  
 'Black' I expect, and 'White' ensues reply:  
 No hesitation for what speck, spot, splash  
 Of either colour's opposite, intrudes  
 To modify thy judgment. Well, for beans  
 Substitute days,—show, ranged in order,  
 Life—

Then, tell me its true colour! Time is short,  
 Life's days compose a span,—as brief be  
 speech!

Black I pronounce for, like the Indian Sage,—  
 Black—present, past and future, interspersed  
 With blanks, no doubt, which simple folk  
 style Good

Because not Evil: no, indeed? Forsooth  
 Black's shade on White is White too! What's  
 the worst

Of Evil but that, past, it overshades  
 The else-exempted present?—memory,  
 We call the plague! 'Nay, but our memory  
 fades

And leaves the past unsullied!' Does it so?  
 Why, straight the purpose of such breathing-  
 space,

Such respite from past ill, grows plain enough!  
 What follows on remembrance of the past?  
 Fear of the future! Life, from birth to death,  
 Means—either looking back on harm escaped,  
 Or looking forward to that harm's return  
 With tenfold power of harming. Black, not  
 White,

Never the whole consummate quietude  
 Life should be, troubled by no fear!—nor  
 hope—

I'll say, since lamplight dies in noontide, hope  
 Loses itself in certainty. Such lot  
 Man's night have been: I leave the conse-  
 quence

To bolder critics of the Primal Cause;  
 Such am not I: but, man—as man I speak:  
 Black is the bean-throw: evil is the Life!"

"Look, I strew beans"—resumed Ferishtah  
 —"beans

Blackish and whitish; what they figure-forth

Shall be man's sum of moments, bad and good,

That make up Life,—each moment when he feels

Pleasure or pain, his poorest fact of sense,  
Consciousness anyhow: there's stand the first;

Whence next advance shall be from points to line,

Singulars to a series, parts to whole,  
And moments to the Life. How look they now,

Viewed in the large, those little joys and griefs

Ranged duly all a-row at last, like beans

—These which I strew? This bean was white, this—black,

Set by itself,—but see if, good and bad  
Each following either in companionship,  
Black have not grown less black and white less white,

Till blackish seems but dun, and whitish—grey,

And the whole line turns—well, or black to thee

Or white belike to me—no matter which:  
The main result is—both are modified

According to our eye's scope, power of range  
Before and after. Black dost call this bean?  
What, with a whiteness in its wake, which

—see—

Suffuses half its neighbour?—and, in turn,  
Lowers its pearliness late absolute,  
Frowned upon by the jet which follows hard—  
Else wholly white my bean were. Choose a joy!

Bettered it was by sorrow gone before,  
And sobered somewhat by the shadowy sense  
Of sorrow which came after or might come.

Joy, sorrow,—by precedence, subsequence—  
Either on each, make fusion, mix in Life

That's both and neither wholly: grey or dun?  
Dun thou decidest? grey prevails, say I:

Wherefore? Because my view is wide enough,  
Reaches from first to last nor winks at all:

Motion achieves it: stop short—fast we stick,—

Probably at the bean that's blackest.

“Since—

Son, trust me,—this I know and only this—  
I am in motion, and all things beside

That circle round my passage through their midst,—

Motionless, these are, as regarding me:  
—Which means, myself I solely recognize.

They too may recognize themselves, not me,  
For aught I know or care: but plain they serve

This, if no other purpose—stuff to try  
And test my power upon of raying light

And lending hue to all things as I go  
Moonlike through vapour. Mark the flying orb!

Think'st thou the halo, painted still afresh  
At each new cloud-fleece pierced and pas-

saged through,  
This was and is and will be evermore

Coloured in permanence? The glory swims  
Girdling the glory-giver, swallowed straight

By night's abysmal gloom, unglorified  
Behind as erst before the advancer: gloom?

Faced by the onward-faring, see, succeeds  
From the abandoned heaven a next surprise,

And where's the gloom now?—silver-smitten straight,

One glow and variegation! So with me,  
Who move and make,—myself,—the black,

the white,  
The good, the bad, of life's environment.

Stand still! black stays black: start again!  
there's white

Asserts supremacy: the motion's all  
That colours me my moment: seen as joy?

I have escaped from sorrow, or that was  
Or might have been: as sorrow?—thence

shall be  
Escape as certain: white preceded black.

Black shall give way to white as duly,—so,  
Deepest in black means white most imminent.

Stand still,—have no before, no after!—life  
Proves death, existence grows impossible

To man like me. ‘What else is blessed sleep  
But death, then?’ Why, a rapture of release

From ‘toil,—that's sleep's approach: as  
certainly,

The end of sleep means, toil is triumphed o'er!

These round the blank unconsciousness  
between

Brightness and brightness, either pushed to  
blaze

Just through that blank's interposition.  
Hence

The use of things external: man—that's I—  
Practise thereon my power of casting light,  
And calling substance,—when the light I  
cast

Breaks into colour,—by its proper name  
—A truth and yet a falsity: black, white,  
Names each bean taken from what lay so  
close

And threw such tint: pain might mean pain  
indeed

Seep in the passage past it,—pleasure prove  
No mere delusion while I paused to look,—  
Though what an idle fancy was that fear  
Which overhung and hindered pleasure's  
hue!

While how, again, pain's shade enhanced  
the shine

Of pleasure, else no pleasure! Such effects  
Came of such causes. Passage at an end,—  
Past, present, future pains and pleasures  
fused

So that one glance may gather blacks and  
whites

Into a life-time,—like my bean-streak there,  
Why, white they whirl into, not black—for  
me!"

"Ay, but for me? The indubitable blacks,  
Immeasurable miseries, here, there  
And everywhere i' the world—world outside  
thine

Paled off so opportunely,—body's plague,  
Torment of soul,—where's found thy fellow-  
ship

With wide humanity all round about  
Reeling beneath its burden? What's despair?  
Behold that man, that woman, child—nay,  
brute!

Will any speck of white unblacken life  
Splashed, splotted, dyed hell-deep now  
from end to end

For him, or her, or it—who knows? Not I!"

"Nor I, Son! It shall stand for bird,  
beast, fish,

Reptile; and insect even: take the last!  
There's the palm-aphis, minute miracle  
As wondrous every whit as thou or I:  
Well, and his world's the palm-frond, there  
he's born,

Lives, breeds and dies in that circumference,  
An inch of green for cradle, pasture-ground.  
Purlieu and grave: the palm's use, ask of him!  
'To furnish these,' replies his wit: ask thine—  
Who see the heaven above, the earth below,  
Creation everywhere,—these, each and all  
Claim certain recognition from the tree  
For special service rendered: branch and bole,  
Top-tuft and tap-root:—for thyself, thus seen,  
Palms furnish dates to eat, and leaves to shade,  
—Maybe, thatch huts with,—have another use  
Than strikes the aphis. So with me, my Son!  
I know my own appointed patch i' the world,  
What pleasures me or pains there: all out-  
side—

How he, she, it, and even thou, Son, live,  
Are pleased or pained, is past conjecture, once  
I pry beneath the semblance,—all that's fit,  
To practise with,—reach where the fact may lie  
Fathom-deep lower. There's the first and last  
Of my philosophy. Blacks blur thy white?  
Not mine! The aphis feeds, nor finds his leal  
Untenable because a lance-thrust, nay,  
Lightning strikes sere a moss-patch close  
beside,

Where certain other aphids live and love.  
Restriction to his single inch of white,  
That's law for him, the aphis: but for me,  
The man, the larger-souled, beside my stretch  
Of blacks and whites, I see a world of woe  
All round about me: one such burst of black  
Intolerable o'er the life I count  
White in the main, and, yea—white's faintest  
trace!

Were clean abolished once and evermore.  
Thus fare my fellows, swallowed up in gloom  
So far as I discern: how far is that?  
God's care: be God's! 'Tis mine—to boast  
no joy  
Unsobered by such sorrows of my kind:  
As sully with their shade my life that shines."

## A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE-EATING

"Reflected possibilities of pain,  
Forsooth, just chasten pleasure! Pain itself,—  
Fact and not fancy, does not this affect  
The general colour?"

"Here and there a touch  
Taught me, betimes, the artifice of things—  
That all about, external to myself,  
Was meant to be suspected,—not revealed  
Demonstrably a cheat,—but half seen through,  
Lest white should rule unchecked along the  
line :

Therefore white may not triumph. All the  
same;

Of absolute and irretrievable

And all-subduing black,—black's soul of  
black

Beyond white's power to disintensify,—

Of that I saw no sample : such may wreck

My life and ruin my philosophy

To-morrow, doubtless : hence the constant  
shade

Cast on life's shine,—the tremor that intrudes  
When firmest seems my faith in white. Dost  
ask

'Who is Ferishtah, hitherto exempt  
From black experience? Why, if God be just,  
Were sundry fellow-mortals singled out  
To undergo experience for his sake,  
Just that the gift of pain, bestowed on them,  
In him might temper to the due degree  
Joy's else-excessive largess?' Why, indeed!  
Back are we brought thus to the starting-  
point—

Man's impotency, God's omnipotence,  
These stop my answer. Aphis that I am,  
How leave my inch-allotment, pass at will  
Into my fellow's liberty of range,  
Enter into his sense of black and white,  
As either, seen by me from outside, seems  
Predominatingly the colour? Life,  
Lived by my fellow, shall I pass into  
And myself live there? No—no more than  
pass

From Persia, where in sun since birth I bask  
Daily, to some ungracious land afar,  
Told of by travellers, where the might of snow  
Smoothes up day, and fluids lose themselves

Frozen to marble. How I bear the sun,  
Beat though he may unduly, that I know :  
How blood once curdled ever creeps again,  
Baffles conjecture : yet since people live  
Somehow, resist a clime would conquer me,  
Somehow provided for their sake must dawn  
Compensative resource. 'No sun, no  
grapes,—

Then, no subsistence !'—were it wisely said?  
Or this well-reasoned—'Do I dare feel warmth  
And please my palate here with Persia's vine,  
Though, over-mounts,—to trust the tra-  
veller,—

Snow, feather thick, is falling while I feast?  
What if the cruel winter force his way

Here also?' Son, the wise reply were this :  
When cold from over-mounts spikes through  
and through

Blood, bone and marrow of Ferishtah,—then,  
Time to look out for shelter—time, at least,  
To wring the hands and cry 'No shelter  
serves !'

Shelter, of some sort, no experienced chill  
Warrants that I despair to find."

"No less,  
Doctors have differed here; thou say'st thy  
say ;

Another man's experience masters thine,  
Flat controverted by the sourly-Sage,  
The Indian witness who, with faculty  
Fine as Ferishtah's, found no white at all  
Chequer the world's predominating black,  
No good oust evil from supremacy,  
So that Life's best was that it led to death.  
How of his testimony?"

"Son, suppose  
My camel told me : 'Threescore days and ten  
I traversed hill and dale, yet never found  
Food to stop hunger, drink to stay my drouth ;  
Yet, here I stand alive, which take in proof  
That to survive was found impossible !'

Nay, rather take thou, non-surviving beast'  
(Reply were prompt), 'on flank this thwack  
of staff

Nowise affecting flesh that's dead and dry !  
Thou wincest? Take correction twice, amend



Next time, thy nomenclature ! Call white—white !'

The sourly-Sage, for whom life's best was death,

Lived out his seventy years, looked hale, laughed loud,

Liked—above all—his dinner,—lied, in short."

"Lied is a rough phrase : say he fell from truth

In climbing towards it !—sure less faulty so Than had he sat him down and stayed content With thy safe orthodoxy, 'White, all white, White everywhere for certain I should see Did I but understand how white is black, As clearer sense than mine would.' Clearer sense,—

Whose may that be ? Mere human eyes I boast,

And such distinguish colours in the main, However any tongue, that's human too, Please to report the matter. Dost thou blame A soul that strives but to see plain, speak true, Truth at all hazards ? Oh, this false for real, This emptiness which feigns solidity,— Ever some grey that's white, and dun that's black,—

When shall we rest upon the thing itself Not on its semblance ?—Soul—too weak, forsooth,

To cope with fact—wants fiction everywhere ! Mine tires of falsehood : truth at any cost !"

"Take one and try conclusions—this, suppose !

God is all-good, all-wise, all-powerful : truth ? Take it and rest there. What is man ? Not God :

None of these absolutes therefore,—yet himself,

A creature with a creature's qualities. Make them agree, these two conceptions !

Each Abolishes the other. Is man weak, Foolish and bad ? He must be Ahriman, Co-equal with an Ormuzd, Bad with Good, Or else a thing made at the Prime Sole Will, Doing a maker's pleasure,—with results

Which—call, the wide world over, 'what must be'—

But, from man's point of view, and only point Possible to his powers, call—evidence

Of goodness, wisdom, strength ? we mock ourselves

In all that's best of us,—man's blind but sure Craving for these in very deed not word,

Reality and not illusion. Well,— Since these nowhere exist—nor there where

cause Must have effect, nor here where craving means

Craving unfollowed by fit consequence And full supply, aye sought for, never found— These—what are they but man's own rule of right ?

A scheme of goodness recognized by man, Although by man unrealizable,—

Not God's with whom to will were to perform : Nowise performed here, therefore never willed.

What follows but that God, who could the best, Has willed the worst,—while man, with power to match

Will with performance, were deservedly Hailed the supreme—provided . . . here's the touch

That breaks the bubble . . . this concept of man's

Were man's own work, his birth of heart and brain,

His native grace, no alien gift at all. The bubble breaks here. Will of man create ?

No more than this my hand which strewed the beans

Produced them also from its finger-tips. Back goes creation to its source, source prime And ultimate, the single and the sole."

"How reconcile discordancy,—unite Notion and notion—God that only can Yet does not,—man that would indeed But just as surely cannot,—both in one ? What help occurs to thy intelligence ?"

"Ah, the beans,—or,—example better yet,— A carpet-web I saw once leave the loom And lie at gorgeous length in Ispahan !

The weaver plied his work with lengths of silk

Dyed each to match some jewel as it might,  
And wove them, this by that. 'How comes it, friend,'—

(Quoth I)—'that while, apart, this fiery hue,  
That watery dimness, either shocks the eye,  
So blinding bright, or else offends again  
By dulness,—yet the two, set each by each,  
Somehow produce a colour born of both,  
A medium profitable to the sight?'

'Such medium is the end whereat I aim,'—  
Answered my craftsman: 'there's no single tinct

Would satisfy the eye's desire to taste  
The secret of the diamond: join extremes,  
Results a serviceable medium-ghost,  
The diamond's simulation. Even so  
I needs must blend the quality of man  
With quality of God, and so assist  
Mere human sight to understand my Life,  
What is, what should be,—understand thereby  
Wherefore I hate the first and love the last,—

Understand why things so present themselves  
To me, placed here to prove I understand.  
Thus, from beginning runs the chain to end,

And binds me plain enough. By consequence,  
I bade thee tolerate,—not kick and cuff

The man who held that natures did in fact  
Blend so, since so thyself must have them blend

In fancy, if it take a flight so far."

"A power, confessed past knowledge, nay,  
past thought,  
—Thus thought thus known!"

"To know of, think about—

Is all man's sum of faculty effects  
When exercised on earth's least atom, Son!  
What was, what is, what may such atom be?  
No answer! Still, what seems it to man's sense?

An atom with some certain properties  
Known about, thought of as occasion needs,  
—Man's—but occasions of the universe?

Unthinkable, unknowable to man.

Yet, since to think and know fire through  
and through

Exceeds man, is the warmth of fire unknown,  
Its uses—are they so unthinkable?

Pass from such obvious power to powers un-  
seen,

Undreamed of save in their sure conse-  
quence:

Take that, we spoke of late, which draws to  
ground

The staff my hand lets fall: it draws, at least—  
Thus much man thinks and knows, if nothing  
more."

"Ay, but man puts no mind into such power!  
He neither thanks it, when an apple drops,  
Nor prays it spare his pate while under-  
neath.

Does he thank Summer though it plumped  
the rind?

Why thank the other force—whate'er its  
name—

Which gave him teeth to bite and tongue to  
taste

And throat to let the pulp pass? Force and  
force,

No end of forces! Have they mind like  
man?"

"Suppose thou visit our lord Shalim-Shah,  
Bringing thy tribute as appointed. 'Here  
Come I to pay my due!' Whereat one slave  
Obsequious spreads a carpet for thy foot,  
His fellow offers sweetmeats, while a third  
Prepares a pipe: what thanks or praise have  
they?

Such as befit prompt service. Gratitude  
Goes past them to the Shah whose gracious  
nod

Set all the sweet civility at work;  
But for his ordinance, I much suspect,  
My scholar had been left to cool his heels  
Uncarpeted, or warm them—likelier still—  
With bastinado for intrusion. Slaves  
Needs must obey their master: 'force and  
force,

No end of forces,' act as bids some force

Supreme o'er all and each : where find that one ?

How recognize him ? Simply as thou didst  
The Shah—by reasoning 'Since I feel a debt,  
Behoves me pay the same to one aware  
I have my duty, he his privilege.'

Didst thou expect the slave who charged thy  
pipe

Would serve as well to take thy tribute-bag  
And save thee further trouble ?

"Be it so !

The sense within me that I owe a debt  
Assures me—somewhere must be somebody  
Ready to take his due. All comes to this—  
Where due is, there acceptance follows :  
find

Him who accepts the due ! and why look far ?  
Behold thy kindred compass thee about !  
Ere thou wast born and after thou shalt die,  
Heroic man stands forth as Shahah-Shah.  
Rustem and Gew, Gudarz and all the rest,  
How come they short of lordship that's to  
seek

Dead worthies ! but men live undoubtedly  
Gifted as Sindokht, sage Sulayman's match,  
Valiant like Kawah : ay, and while earth lasts  
Such heroes shall abound there—all for thee  
Who profitest by all the present, past,  
And future operation of thy race.

Why, then, o'erburdened with a debt of  
thanks,

Look wistful for some hand from out the  
clouds

To take it, when, all round, a multitude  
Would ease thee in a trice ?

"Such tendered thanks  
Would tumble back to who craved riddance,  
Son !

—Who but my sorry self ? See ! stars are  
out—

Stars which, unconscious of thy gaze beneath,  
Go glorying, and glorify thee too

—Those Seven Thrones, Zurah's beauty,  
weird Parwin !

Whether shall love and praise to stars be  
paid

Or—say—some Mubid who, for good to thee  
Blind at thy birth, by magic all his own  
Opened thine eyes, and gave the sightless  
sight,

Let the stars' glory enter ? Say his charm  
Worked while thyself lay sleeping : as he  
went

Thou wakedst : 'What a novel sense have I !  
Whom shall I love and praise ?' 'The stars,  
each orb

Thou standest rapt beneath,' proposes one :  
'Do not they live their life, and please them-  
selves,

And so please thee ? What more is requisite ?'  
Make thou this answer : 'If indeed no mage  
Opened my eyes and worked a miracle,  
Then let the stars thank me, who apprehend  
That such an one is white, such other blue !  
But for my apprehension both were blank.  
Cannot I close my eyes and bid my brain  
Make whites and blues, conceive without  
stars' help,

New qualities of colour ? were my sight  
Lost or misleading, would yon' red—I judge  
A ruby's benefaction—stand for aught  
But green from vulgar glass ? Myself appraise  
Lustre and lustre ; should I overlook  
Fomalhaut and declare some fen-fire king,  
Who shall correct me, lend me eyes he  
trusts

No more than I trust mine ? My mage for  
me !

I never saw him : if he never was,  
I am the arbitrator ! 'No, my Son !  
Let us sink down to thy similitude :  
I eat my apple, relish what is ripe—  
The sunny side, admire its rarity  
Since half the tribe is wrinkled, and the  
rest

Hide commonly a maggot in the core,—  
And down Zerdusht goes with due smack of  
lips :

But—thank an apple ? He who made my  
mouth

To masticate, my palate to approve,  
My maw to further the concoction—Him  
I thank,—but for whose work, the orchard's  
wealth

Might prove so many gall-nuts—stocks or stones  
For aught that I should think, or know, or care."

"Why from the world," Ferishtah smiled,  
"should thanks

Go to, this work of mine? If worthy praise,  
Praised let it be and welcome: as verse ranks,  
So rate my verse: if good therein outweighs  
Aught faulty judged, judge justly! Justice  
says:

Be just to fact, or, blaming or approving:  
But—generous? 'No, nor loving!

"Loving! what claim to love has work of mine?  
Concede my life were emptied of its gains  
To furnish forth and fill work's strict confine,  
Who works so for the world's sake—he com-  
plains

With cause when hate, not love, rewards his  
pains.

I looked beyond the world for truth and beauty:  
Sought, found and did my duty."

## EPILOGUE.

Oh, Love—no, Love! All the noise below,  
Love,

Groanings all and moanings—none of Life  
I lose!

All of Life's a cry just of weariness and woe,  
Love—

"Hear at least, thou happy one!" How  
can I, Love, but choose?

Only, when I do hear, sudden circle round  
me

—Much as when the moon's might frees a  
space from cloud—

Iridescent splendours: gloom—would else  
confound me—

Barriered off and banished far—bright-  
edged the blackest shroud!

Thronging through the cloud-rift, whose are  
they, the faces

Faint revealed yet sure divined, the famous  
ones of old?

"What"—they smile—"our names, our  
deeds so soon erases

Time upon his tablet where Life's glory  
lies enrolled?

"Was it for mere fool's-play, make-believe  
and mumming,

So we battled it like men, not boylike  
sulked or whined?

Each of us heard clang God's 'Come!' and  
each was coming:

Soldiers all, to forward-face, not sneaks to  
lag behind!

"How of the field's fortune? That concerned  
our Leader!

Led, we struck our stroke nor cared for  
doings left and right:

Each as on his sole head, failer or succeder,  
Lay the blame or lit the praise: no care  
for cowards: fight!"

Then the cloud-rift broadens, spanning earth  
that's under,

Wide our world displays its worth, man's  
strife and strife's success:

All the good and beauty, wonder crowning  
wonder,

Till my heart and soul applaud perfection,  
nothing less.

Only, at heart's utmost joy and triumph, terror  
Sudden turns the blood to ice: a chill wind  
disenchants

All the late enchantment! What if all be  
error—

If the halo irised round my head were,  
Love, thine arms?

PALAZZO GIUSTINIAN-RECANATI,  
VENICE: December 1, 1893.

PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE  
OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY:

TO WIT:

BERNARD DE MANDEVILLE, DANIEL BARTOLI, CHRISTOPHER SMART,  
GEORGE BUBB DODINGTON, FRANCIS FURINI, GERARD DE LAIRESSE,  
AND CHARLES AVISON.

INTRODUCED BY

A DIALOGUE BETWEEN APOLLO AND THE FATES;

CONCLUDED BY

ANOTHER BETWEEN JOHN FUST AND HIS FRIENDS.

1887.

IN MEMORIAM J. MILSAND, OBIT IV. SEPT. MDCCCLXXXVI.

*Absens absentem auditque videtque.*

APOLLO AND THE FATES.

A PROLOGUE.

(Hymn. in Mercurium, v. 559. Eumenides, vv.  
693-4, 697-8. Alcestit, vv. 12, 33.)

APOLLO. [*From above.*

FLAME at my footfall, Parnassus! Apollo,  
Breaking a-blaze on thy topmost peak,  
Burns thence, down to the depths—dread  
hollow—

Haunt of the Dire Ones. Haste! They  
wreak  
Wrath on Admetus whose respite I seek.

THE FATES. [*Below. Darkness.*

Dragonwise couched in the womb of our  
Mother,  
Coiled at thy nourishing heart's core, Night!  
Dominant Dreads, we, one by the other,  
Deal to each mortal his dole of light  
On earth—the upper, the glad, the bright.

CLOTHO.

Even so: thus from my loaded spindle  
Plucking a pinch of the fleece, lo, "Birth"

Brays from my bronze lip: life I kindle:  
Look, 'tis a man! go, measure on earth  
The minute thy portion, whatever its worth!

Woe-purged, weal-prankt,—if it speed, if it  
linger,—  
Life's substance and show are determined  
by me,  
Who, meting out, mixing with sure thumb  
and finger,  
Lead life the due length: is all smoothness  
and glee,  
All tangle and grief? Take the lot, my  
decree!

ATROPOS.

—Which I make an end of: the smooth as  
the tangled  
My shears cut asunder: each snap shrieks  
"One more  
Mortal makes sport for us: Moirai who dangled  
The puppet grotesquely till earth's solid  
floor  
Proved firm he fell through, lost in Nought  
as before."

CLOTHO.

I spin thee a thread. Live, Admetus!  
Produce him!

LACHESIS.

Go,—brave, wise, good, happy! Now  
chequer the thread!  
He is slaved for, yet loved by a god. I  
unloose him  
A goddess-sent plague. He has conquered,  
is wed,  
Men crown him, he stands at the height,—

ATROPOS.

He is . .

APOLLO. [*Entering: Light.*  
“Dead?”

Nay, swart spinsters! So I surprise you  
Making and marring the fortunes of Man?  
Huddling—no marvel, your enemy eyes you—  
Head by head bat-like, blots under the ban  
Of daylight earth's blessing since time began!

THE FATES.

Back to thy blest earth, prying Apollo!  
Shaft upon shaft transpierce with thy  
beams  
Earth to the centre,—spare but this hollow  
Hewn out of Night's heart, where our  
mystery seems  
Mewed from day's malice: wake earth from  
her dreams!

APOLLO.

Crones, 'tis your dusk selves I startle from  
slumber:  
Day's god deposes you—queens Night-  
crowned!  
—Plying your trade in a world ye encumber,  
Fashioning Man's web of life—spun,  
wound,  
Left the length ye allot till a clip strews the  
ground!

Behold! I bid truce to your doleful amuse-  
ment—  
Annulled by a sunbeam!

THE FATES.

Boy, are not we peers?

APOLLO.

You with the spindle grant birth: whose  
inducement  
But yours—with the niggardly digits—en-  
dears  
To mankind chance and change, good and  
evil? Your shears . . .

ATROPOS.

Ay, mine end the conflict: so much is no fable.  
We spin, draw to length, cut asunder:  
what then?  
So it was, and so is, and so shall be: art able  
To alter life's law for ephemeral men?

APOLLO.

Nor able nor willing. To threescore and ten  
Extend but the years of Admetus! Disaster  
O'ertook me, and, banished by Zeus, I  
became  
A servant to one who forbore me though master:  
True lovers were we. Discontinue your  
game,  
Let him live whom I loved, then hate on, all  
the same!

THE FATES.

And what if we granted—law-flouter, use-  
trampler—  
His life at the suit of an upstart? Judge,  
thou—  
Of joy were it fuller, of span because ampler?  
For love's sake, not hate's, end Admetus  
—ay, now—  
Not a gray hair on head, nor a wrinkle on brow!  
For, boy, 'tis illusion: from thee comes a  
glimmer  
Transforming to beauty life blank at the best.  
Withdraw—and how looks life at worst, when  
to shimmer  
Succeeds the sure shade, and Man's lot  
frowns—confessed  
Mere blackness chance-brightened? Whereof  
shall attest

The truth this same mortal, the darling thou  
stylest,

Whom love would advantage,—eke out,  
day by day,  
A life which 'tis solely thyself reconcilest  
Thy friend to endure,—life with hope:  
take away  
Hope's gleam from Admetus, he spurns it.  
For, say—

What's infancy? Ignorance, idleness, mischief:  
Youth ripens to arrogance, foolishness,  
greed:

Age—impotence, churlishness, rancour: call  
this chief

Of boons for thy loved one? Much rather  
bid speed

Our function, let live whom thou hatest  
indeed!

Persuade thee, bright boy-thing! Our eld  
be instructive!

APOLLO.

And certes youth owns the experience of  
age.

Ye hold then, grave seniors, my beams are  
productive

—They solely—of good that's mere sem-  
blance, engage

Man's eye—gilding evil, Man's true heritage?

THE FATES.

So, even so! From without,—at due distance

If viewed,—set a-sparkle, reflecting thy  
rays,—

Life mimics the sun: but withdraw such  
assistance,

The counterfeit goes, the reality stays—  
An ice-ball disguised as a fire-orb.

APOLLO.

What craze  
Possesses the fool then whose fancy conceits  
him  
As happy?

THE FATES.

Man happy?

APOLLO.

If otherwise—solve  
This doubt which besets me! What friend  
ever greets him

Except with "Live long as the seasons  
revolve."

Not "Death to thee straightway"? Your  
doctrines absolve

Such hailing from hatred: yet Man should  
know best.

He talks it, and glibly, as life were a load  
Man fain would be rid off: when put to the test,  
He whines "Let it lie, leave me trudging  
the road

That is rugged so far, but methinks . . ."

THE FATES.

Ay, 'tis owed

To that glamour of thine, he bethinks him  
"Once past

The stony, some patch, nay, a smoothness  
of sward

Awaits my tired foot: life turns easy at last"—  
Thy largess so lures him, he looks for reward  
Of the labour and sorrow.

APOLLO.

It seems, then—debarred

Of illusion—(I needs must acknowledge the  
plea)

Man desponds and despairs. Yet,—still  
further to draw

Due profit from counsel,—suppose there  
should be

Some power in himself, some compensative  
law

By virtue of which, independently . . .

THE FATES.

Faugh!

Strength hid in the weakling!

What bowl-shape hast there,  
Thus laughingly proffered? A gift to our  
shrine?

Thanks—worsted in argument! Not so?  
Declare

Its purpose!

APOLLO.

I proffer earth's product, not mine.  
Taste, try, and approve Man's invention of—  
WINE!

THE FATES.

We feeding suck honeycombs.

APOLLO.

Sustenance meagre!  
Such fare breeds the fumes that show all  
things amiss.  
Quaff wine,—how the spirits rise nimble and  
eager,  
Unscale the dim eyes! To Man's cup  
grant one kiss  
Of your lip, then allow—no enchantment like  
this!

CLOTHO.

Unhook wings, unhood brows! Dost hearken?

LACHESIS.

I listen:  
I see—smell the food these fond mortals  
prefer  
To our feast, the bee's bounty!

ATROPOS.

The thing leaps! But—glisten  
Its best, I withstand it—unless all concur  
In adventure so novel.

APOLLO.

Ye drink?

THE FATES.

We demur.

APOLLO.

Sweet Trine, be indulgent nor scout the con-  
trivance  
Of Man—Bacchus-prompted! The juice,  
I uphold,  
Illuminates gloom without sunny connivance,  
Turns fear into hope and makes cowardice  
bold,—  
Touching all that is leadlike in life turns it  
gold!

THE FATES.

Faith foolish as false!

APOLLO.

But essay it, soft sisters!  
Then mock as ye may. Lift the chalice to  
lip!  
Good: thou next—and thou! Seems the  
web, to you twisters  
Of life's yarn, so worthless?

CLOTHO.

Who guessed that one sip  
Would impart such a lightness of limb?

LACHESIS.

I could skip  
In a trice from the pied to the plain in my  
woof!  
What parts each from either? A hair's  
breadth, no inch.  
Once learn the right method of stepping aloof,  
Though on black next foot falls, firm I fix  
it, nor flinch,  
—Such my trust white succeeds!

ATROPOS.

One could live—at a pinch!

APOLLO.

What beldames? Earth's yield, by Man's  
skill, can effect  
Such a cure of sick sense that ye spy the  
relation  
Of evil to good? But drink deeper, correct  
Blar sight more convincingly still! Take  
your station  
Beside me, drain dregs! Now for edification!  
Whose gift have ye gulped? Thank not me  
but my brother,  
Blithe Bacchus, our youngest of godships.  
'Twas he  
Found all boons to all men, by one god or other  
Already conceded, so judged there must be  
New guerdon to grace the new advent, you see!

Else how would a claim to Man's homage  
arise?

The plan lay arranged of his mixed woe and  
weal,



So disposed—such Zeus' will—with design to  
make wise

The witless—that false things were mingled  
with real,

Good with bad : such the lot whereto law set  
the seal.

Now, human of instinct—since Semele's son,  
Yet minded divinely—since fathered by  
Zeus,

With nought Bacchus tampered, undid not  
things done,

Owning wisdom anterior, would spare wont  
and use,

Yet change—without shock to old rule—  
introduce.

Regard how your cavern from crag-tip to  
base

Frowns sheer, height and depth adamantine,  
one death !

I rouse with a beam the whole rampart, dis-  
place

No splinter—yet see how my flambeau,  
beneath

And above, bids this gem wink, that crystal  
unsheath !

Withdraw beam—disclosure once more Night  
forbids you

Of spangle and sparkle—Day's chance-gift,  
surmised

Roek's permanent birthright : my potency  
rids you

No longer of darkness, yet light—recog-  
nized—

Proves darkness a mask : day lives on though  
disguised.

If Bacchus by wine's aid avail so to fluster  
Your sense, that life's fact grows from  
adverse and thwart

To helpful and kindly by means of a  
cluster—

Mere hand-squeeze, earth's nature sublimed  
by Man's art—

Shall Bacchus claim thanks wherein Zeus has  
no part ?

Zeus—wisdom anterior ? No, maids, be  
admonished !

If morn's touch at base worked such  
wonders, much more

Had noontide in absolute glory astonished  
Your den, filled a-top to o'erflowing. I pour  
No such mad confusion. 'Tis Man's to explore

Up and down, inch by inch, with the taper  
his reason :

No torch, it suffices—held deftly and  
straight.

Eyes, prurblind at first, feel their way in due  
season,

Accept good with bad, till unseemly debate  
Turns concord—despair, acquiescence in fate.

Who works this but Zeus ? Are not instinct  
and impulse,

Not concept and incept his work through  
Man's soul

On Man's sense ? Just as wine ere it reach  
brain must brim pulse,

Zeus' flash stings the mind that speeds  
body to goal,

Bids pause at no part but press on, reach the  
whole.

For petty and poor is the part ye envisage  
When—(quaff away, cummers !)—ye view,  
last and first,

As evil Man's earthly existence. Come ! Is  
age,

Is infancy—manhood—so uninterspersed  
With good—some faint sprinkle ?

CLOTHO.

I'd speak if I durst.

APOLLO.

Draughts dregward lobse tongue-tie.

LACHESIS.

I'd see, did no web

Set eyes somehow winking.

APOLLO.

Drains-deep lies their purge

—True collyrium !

ATROPOS.

Words, surging at high-tide, soon ebb  
From starved ears.

APOLLO.

Drink but down to the  
source, they resurge.  
Join hands! Yours and yours too! A dance  
or a dirge?

CHORUS.

Quashed be our quarrel! Sourly and smilingly,  
Bare and gowned, bleached limbs and  
browned,

Drive we a dance, three and one, reconcilingly,  
Thanks to the cup where dissension is  
drowned,  
Defeat proves triumphant and slavery  
crowned.

Infancy? What if the rose-streak of morning  
Pale and depart in a passion of tears?  
Once to have hoped is no matter for scorning!  
Love once—e'en love's disappointment endears!  
A minute's success pays the failure of years.

Manhood—the actual? Nay, praise the  
potential!

(Bound upon bound, foot it around!)  
What *is*? No, what *may* be—sing! that's  
Man's essential!

(Ramp, tramp, stamp and compound  
Fancy with fact—the lost secret is found!)

Age? Why, fear ends there: the contest  
concluded,

Man *did* live his life, *did* escape from the  
fray:

Not scratchless but unscathed, he somehow  
eluded

Each blow fortune dealt him, and conquers  
to-day:

To-morrow—new chance and fresh strength,  
—might we say?

Laud then Man's life—no defeat but a triumph!

[*Explosion from the earth's centre.*]

CLOTHO.

Ha, loose hands!

LACHESIS.

I reel in a swoond.

ATROPOS.

Horror yawns under me, while from on high  
—humph!

Lightnings astound, thunders resound,  
Vault-roof reverberates, groans the ground!  
[*Silence.*]

APOLLO.

I acknowledge.

THE FATES.

Hence, trickster! Straight  
sobered are we!  
The portent assures 'twas our tongue spoke  
the truth,

Not thine. While the vapour encompassed  
us three

We conceived and bore knowledge—a  
bantling uncouth,  
Old brains shudder back from: so—take it  
rash youth!

Lick the lump into shape till a cry comes!

APOLLO.

I hear.

THE FATES.

Dumb music, dead eloquence! Say it, or  
sing!

What was quickened in us and thee also?

APOLLO.

I fear.

THE FATES.

Half female, half male—go, ambiguous  
thing!

While we speak—perchance sputter—pick up  
what we fling!

Known yet ignored, nor divined nor un-  
guessed,

Such is Man's law of life. Do we strive  
to declare

What is ill, what is good in our spinning?  
Worst, best,

Change hues of a sudden: now here and  
now there

Flits the sign which decides: all about yet  
nowhere.

'Tis willed so,—that Man's life be lived, first  
to last,

Up and down, through and through,—  
not in portions, forsooth,

To pick and to choose from. Our shuttles fly  
fast,

Weave living, not life sole and whole: as  
age—youth,

So death completes living, shows life in its  
truth.

Man learningly lives: till death helps him—  
no lore!

It is doom and must be. Dost submit?

APOLLO.

I assent—

Concede but Admetus! So much if no  
more

Of my prayer grant as peace-pledge! Be  
gracious though, blent,

Good and ill, love and hate streak your life-  
gift!

THE FATES.

Content!

Such boon we accord in due measure. Life's  
term

We lengthen should any be moved for  
love's sake

To forego life's fulfilment, renounce in the  
germ

Fruit mature—bliss or woe—either infinite.  
Take

Or leave thy friend's lot; on his head be the  
stake!

APOLLO.

On mine, grisly gamblers! Admetus, I  
know thee!

Thou prizest the right these unwittingly  
give

Thy subjects to rush, pay obedience they owe  
thee!

Importunate one with another they strive  
For the glory to die that their king may survive.

Friends rush: and who first in all Phœre  
appears

But thy father to serve as thy substitute?

CLOTHO.

Bah!

APOLLO.

Ye wince? Then his mother, well-stricken  
in years,

Advances her claim—or his wife—

LACHESIS.

Tra-la-la!

APOLLO.

But he spurns the exchange, rather dies!

ATROPOS.

Ha, ha, ha!

[Apollo ascends. Darkness.]

## WITH BERNARD DE MANDEVILLE.

[For an account of this celebrated writer see "Dictionary of National Biography," vol. xxxvi. His famous paradox, "private vices public benefits," excited the utmost fury; and his best-known book, "The Fable of the Bees," was ordered to be burnt by the common hangman. It contains passages of great eloquence and unrivalled sarcasm, and is well worth reading.]

I.

At, this same midnight, by this chair of mine,  
Come and review thy counsels: art thou still  
Staunch to their teaching?—not as fools opine  
Its purport might be, but as subtler skill  
Could, through turbidity, the loaded line  
Of logic casting, sound deep, deeper, till  
It touched a quietude and reached a shrine  
And recognized harmoniously combine  
Evil with good, and hailed truth's triumph  
—thine,

Sage dead long since, Bernard de Mandeville!

Only, 'tis no fresh knowledge that I crave,  
Fuller truth yet, new gainings from the grave;  
Here we alive must needs deal fairly, turn  
To what account Man may Man's portion,  
learn

Man's proper play with truth in part, before  
Entrusted with the whole. I ask no more  
Than smiling witness that I do my best  
With doubtful doctrine: afterward the rest!  
So, silent face me while I think and speak!  
A full disclosure? Such would outrage law.  
Law deals the same with soul and body: seek  
Full truth my soul may, when some babe, I saw  
A new-born weakling, starts up strong—not  
weak—

Man every whit, absolved from earning awe,  
Pride, rapture, if the soul attains to wreak  
Its will on flesh, at last can thrust, lift, draw,  
As mind bids muscle—mind which long has  
striven,

Painfully urging body's impotence  
To effort whereby—once law's barrier riven,  
Life's rule abolished—body might dispense  
With infancy's probation, straight be given  
—Not by foiled darings, fond attempts back-  
driven,

Fine faults of growth, brave sins which saint  
when shriven—

To stand full-statured in magnificence.

## III.

No: as with body so deals law with soul  
That's stung to strength through weakness,  
strives for good

Through evil—earth its race-ground, heaven  
its goal,

Presumably: so far I understood.

Thy teaching long ago. But what means this  
—Objected by a mouth which yesterday

Was magisterial in antithesis

To half the truths we hold, or trust we may,  
Though tremblingly the while? "No sign"

—groaned he—  
"No stirring of God's finger to denote

He wills that right should have supremacy  
On earth, not wrong! How helpful could  
we quote

But one poor instance when he interposed!  
Promptly and surely and beyond mistake  
Between oppression and its victim, closed  
Accounts with sin for once, and bade us wake  
From our long dream that justice bears no  
sword,

Or else forgets whereto its sharpness serves!  
So might we safely mock at what unnerves  
Faith now, be spared the sapping fear's in-  
crease

That haply evil's strife with good shall cease  
Never on earth. Nay, after earth, comes  
peace

Born out of life-long battle? Man's lip curves  
With scorn: there, also, what if justice swerve  
From dealing doom, sets free by no swift  
stroke

Right fettered here by wrong, but leaves life's  
yoke—

Death should loose man from—fresh laid,  
past release?"

## IV.

Bernard de Mandeville, confute for me  
This parlous friend who captured or set free  
Thunderbolts at his pleasure, yet would draw  
Back, panic-stricken by some puny straw  
Thy gold-rimmed amber-headed cane had  
whisked

Out of his pathway if the object risked  
Encounter, 'scaped thy kick from buckled  
shoe!

As when folk heard thee in old days pooh-  
pooh

Addison's tye-wig preachment, grant this  
friend—

(Whose groan I hear, with guffaw at the end  
Disposing of mock-melancholy)—grant

His bilious mood one potion, mindstrait  
Of homely wisdom, healthy whiff, hear!

"With power and will, let power be  
By intervention ever and aye, help good

When evil's mastery is underfoot  
In some plain outrage, and triumphant wrong

Tramples weak right to nothingness! nay,  
long

Ere such sad consummation brings despair  
To right's adherents, ah! what help it were!

If wrong lay strangled in the birth—each head  
Of the hatched monster promptly crushed,  
instead

Of spared to gather venom! We require  
No great experience that the inch-long worm,  
Free of our heel, would grow to vomit fire,  
And one day plague the world in dragon form.  
So should wrong merely peep abroad to meet  
Wrong's due quietus, leave our world's way  
safe

For honest walking."

V.

Sage, once more repeat  
Instruction! 'Tis a sore to soothe not chafe.  
Ah, Fabulist, what luck, could I contrive  
To coax from thee another "Grumbling  
Hive"!

My friend himself wrote fables short and sweet:  
Ask him—"Suppose the Gardener of Man's  
ground

Plants for a purpose, side by side with good,  
Evil—(and that he does so—look around!  
What does the field show?)—were it under-  
stood.

That purposely the noxious plant was found  
Vexing the virtuous, poison close to food,  
If, at first stealing-forth of life in stalk  
And leaflet-promise, quick his spud should  
baulk

Evil from budding foliage, bearing fruit?  
Such timely treatment of the offending root  
Might strike the simple as wise husbandry,  
But swift sure extirpation scarce would suit  
Shrewder observers. Seed once sown thrives:  
why

Frustrate its product, miss the quality  
Which sower binds himself to count upon?  
Had seed fulfilled the destined purpose, gone  
Unhindered up to harvest—what know I  
But proof were gained that every growth of  
good

Sprang consequent on evil's neighbourhood?"  
So said your shrewdness: true—so did not  
say

That other sort of theorists who held  
Mere unintelligence prepared the way  
For either seed's upspringing: you repelled

Their notion that both kinds could sow them-  
selves.

True! but admit 'tis understanding delves  
And drops each germ, what else but folly  
thwarts

The doer's settled purpose? Let the sage  
Concede a use to evil, though there starts  
Full many a burgeon thence, to disengage  
With thumb and finger lest it spoil the  
yield

Too much of good's main tribute! But our  
main

Tough-tendoned mandrake-monster—purge  
the field

Of him for once and all? It follows plain  
Who set him there to grow behold: re-  
pealed

His primal law: his ordinance proves vain:  
And what beseeems a king who cannot reign,  
But to drop sceptre valid arm should wield?

VI.

"Still there's a parable"—retorts my friend—  
"Shows agriculture with a difference!

What of the crop and weeds which solely  
blend

Because, once planted, none may pluck them  
thence?

The Gardener contrived thus? Vain pretence!  
An enemy it was who unawares

Ruined the wheat by interspersing tares.  
Where's our desiderated forethought? Where's  
Knowledge, where power and will in evidence  
'Tis Man's-play merely! Craft foils rectitude,  
Malignity defeats beneficence.

And grant, at very last of all, the feud  
'Twixt good and evil ends, strange thoughts  
intrude

Though good be garnered safely and good's  
foe

Bundled for burning. Thoughts steal: 'even  
so—

Why grant tares leave to thus o'er-top, o'er-  
tower

Their field-mate, boast the stalk and stant  
the flower,

Triumph one sunny minute? Knowledge,  
power

And will thus worked? Man's fancy makes  
the fault!

Man, with the narrow mind, must cram inside  
His finite God's infinitude,—earth's vault  
He bids comprise the heavenly far and wide,  
Since Man may claim a right to understand  
What passes understanding. So, succinct  
And trimly set in order, to be scanned  
And scrutinized, lo—the divine lies linked  
Fast to the human, free to move as moves  
Its proper match: awhile they keep the  
grooves,

Discreetly side by side together pace,  
Till sudden comes a stumble incident  
Likely enough to Man's weak-footed race,  
And he discovers—wings in rudiment,  
Such as he boasts, which full-grown, free-  
distent

Would lift him skyward, fail of flight while  
pent

Within humanity's restricted space.  
Abjure each fond attempt to represent  
The formless, the illimitable! Trace  
No outline, try no hint of human face  
Or form or hand!"

## VII.

Friend, here's a tracing meant

To help a guess at truth you never knew.  
Bend but those eyes now, using mind's eye too,  
And note—sufficient for all purposes—  
The ground-plan—map you long have yearned  
for—yes,

Made out in markings—more what artist  
can?—

Goethe's Estate in Weimar,—just a plan!  
A. is the House, and B. the Garden-gate,  
And C. the Grass-plot—you've the whole  
estate.

Letter by letter, down to Y: the Pond,  
And Z. the Pig-stye. Do you look beyond  
The algebraic signs, and captious say  
"Is A. the House? But where's the Roof  
to A."

Where's Door, where's Window? Needs  
must House have such!"

Ay, that were folly. Why so very much  
More foolish than our mortal purblind way

Of seeking in the symbol no mere point  
To guide our gaze through what were else  
inane,

But things—their solid selves? "Is, joint  
by joint,

Orion man-like,—as these dots explain  
His constellation? Flesh composed of suns—  
How can such be?" exclaim the simple ones.  
Look through the sign to the thing signified—  
Shown nowise, point by point at best descried,  
Each an orb's topmost sparkle: all beside  
Its shine is shadow: turn the orb one jot—  
Up flies the new flash to reveal 'twas not  
The whole sphere late flamboyant in your ken!

## VIII.

"What need of symbolizing? Fittier men  
Would take on tongue mere facts—few, faint  
and far,

Still facts not fancies: quite enough they  
are,

That Power, that Knowledge, and that Will,  
—add then

Immensity, Eternity: these jar  
Nowise with our permitted thought and  
speech.

Why human attributes?"

A myth may teach:

Only, who better would expound it thus  
Must be Euripides not Æschylus.

## IX.

Boundingly up through Night's wall dense  
and dark,

Embattled crags and clouds, outbroke the Sun  
Above the conscious earth; and one by one  
Her heights and depths absorbed to the last  
spark

His fluid glory, from the far fine ridge  
Of mountain-granite which, transformed to  
gold,

Laughed first the thanks back, to the vale's  
dusk fold

On fold of vapour-swathing, like a bridge  
Shattered beneath some giant's stamp.  
Night wist

Her work done and betook herself in mist

To marsh and hollow there to bide her time  
Blindly in acquiescence. Everywhere  
Did earth acknowledge Sun's embracesublime  
Thrilling her to the heart of things: since  
there

No one ran liquid, no spar branched anew,  
No arrowy crystal gleamed, but straightway  
grew.

Glad through the larush—glad nor more nor  
less

Than, 'neath his gaze, forest and wilderness,  
Hill, dale, land, sea, the whole vast stretch  
and spread,

The universal world of creatures bred  
By Sun's munificence, alike gave praise—  
All creatures but one only: gaze for gaze,  
Joyless and thankless, who—all scowling  
can—

Protests against the innumerable praises?  
Man,

Sullen and silent.

Stand thou forth then, state

Thy wrong, thou sole aggrieved—discon-  
solate—

While every beast, bird, reptile, insect, gay  
And glad acknowledges the bounteous day.

#### X.

Man speaks now: "What avails Sun's earth-  
felt thrill

To me? Sun penetrates the ore, the plant—  
They feel and grow: perchance with subtler  
skill

He interfuses fly, worm, brute, until  
Each favoured object pays life's ministrant:  
By pressing, in obedience to his will,  
Up to completion of the task prescribed,  
So stands and stays a type. Myself imbibed  
Such influence also, stood and stand com-  
plete—

The perfect Man,—head, body, hands and  
feet,

True to the pattern: but does that suffice?  
How of my superadded mind which needs

Not to be, simply, but to do, and pleads  
For—more than knowledge that by some  
device

Sun quickens matter: mind is nobly fain

To realize the marvel, make—for sense

As mind—the unseen visible, condense

—Myself—Sun's all-pervading influence

So as to serve the needs of mind, explain

What now perplexes. Let the oak increase

His corrugated strength on strength, the palm

Lift joint by joint her fan-fruit, ball and

balm,—

Let the coiled serpent bask in bloated  
peace,—

The eagle, like some skyey derelict,

Drift in the blue, suspended, glorying,—

The lion lord it by the desert-spring,—

What know or care they of the power which  
pricked

Nothingness to perfection? I, instead,

When all-developed still am found a thing

All-incomplete: for what though flesh had  
force

Transcending theirs—hands able to unring

The tightened snake's coil, eyes that could  
outcourse

The eagle's soaring, voice whereat the king  
Of carnage couched dis-crowned? Mind  
seeks to see,

Touch, understand, by mind inside of me,

The outside mind—whose quickening I attain

To recognize—I only. All in vain

Would mind address itself to render plain

The nature of the essence. Drag what lurks

Behind the operation—that which works

Latently everywhere by outward proof—

Drag that mind forth to face mine? No! aloof

I solely crave that one of all the beams

Which do Sun's work in darkness, at my will

Should operate—myself for once have skill

To realize the energy which streams

Flooding the universe. Above, around,

Beneath—why mocks that mind my own  
thus found

Simply of service, when the world grows dark,

To half-surmise—were Sun's use understood,

I might demonstrate him supplying food,

Warmth, life, no less the while? To grant

one spark

Myself may deal with—make it thaw my blood

And prompt my steps, were truer to the mark

Or mind's requirement than a half-surmise  
That somehow secretly is operant  
A power all matter feels, mind only tries  
To comprehend! Once more—no idle  
vaunt

'Man comprehends the Sun's self!'  
Mysteries

At source why probe into? Enough: display,  
Make demonstrable, how, by night as day,  
Earth's centre and sky's outspan, all's in-  
formed

Equally by Sun's efflux!—source from whence  
If just one spark I drew, full evidence  
Were mine of fire ineffably enthroned—  
Sun's self made palpable to Man!"

## XI.

Thus moaned

Man till Prometheus helped him,—as we  
learn,—

Offered an artifice whereby he drew  
Sun's rays into a focus,—plain and true,  
The very Sun in little: made fire burn  
And henceforth do Man service—glass-con-  
globed

Though to a pin-point circle—all the same  
Comprising the Sun's self, but Sun disrobed  
Of that else-unconceived essential flame  
Borne by no naked sight. Shall mind's eye  
strive

Achingly to companion as it may  
The supersubtle effluence, and contrive  
To follow beam and beam upon their way;  
Hand-breadth by hand-breadth, till sense  
faint—confessed

Frustrate, eluded by unknown unguessed  
Infinitude of action? Idle quest!  
Rather ask aid from optics. Sense, descry  
The spectrum—mind, infer immensity!  
Little? In little, light, warmth, life are  
blessed—

Which, in the large, who sees to bless?  
Not I

More than yourself: so, good my friend,  
keep still

Trustful with—me? with thee, sage Mande-  
ville!

WITH DANIEL BARTOLI.<sup>1</sup>

[Born at Ferrara, 1608; died at Rome, 1685.  
Rector of the College of Jesuits at Rome.  
He wrote a history of the Jesuits, and various  
treatises on physics.]

## I.

DON, the divinest women that have walked  
Our world were scarce those saints of whom  
we talked.

My saint, for instance—worship if you will!

'Tis pity poets need historians' skill:

What legendary's worth a chronicle?

## II.

Come, now! A great lord once upon a time  
Visited—oh a king, of kings the prime,  
To sign a treaty such as never was:

For the king's minister had brought to pass  
That this same duke—so style him—must  
engage

Two of his dukedoms as an heritage  
After his death to this exorbitant  
Craver of kingship. "Let who lacks go  
scant,

Who owns much, give the more to!" Why  
rebuke?

So bids the devil, so obeys the duke.

## III.

Now, as it happened, at his sister's house  
—Duchess herself—indeed the very spouse  
Of the king's uncle,—while the deed of gift  
Whereby our duke should cut his rights adrift  
Was drawing, getting ripe to sign and seal—  
What does the frozen heart but uncongeal  
And, shaming his transcendent kin and kith,  
Whom do the duke's eyes make acquaintance  
with?

<sup>1</sup> A learned and ingenious writer. "Fu Gesuita e Storico della Compagnia; onde scrisse l'inghissime storie, le quali sarebbero lette se non fossero ripiene traboccanti di tutte le superstizioni. . . . Egli vi ha ficcati dentro tanti miracoloni, che diviene una noia insopportabile a chiunque voglia leggere quelle storie: e anche a me, non mi bastò l'animo di proseguirle molto avanti."—Angelo Cerutti. (R. R.)



A girl. "What, sister, may this wonder be?"  
 "Nobody! Good as beautiful is she,  
 With gifts that match her goodness, no faint  
 flaw

I' the white: she were the pearl you think  
 you saw,

But that she is—what corresponds to white?  
 Some other stone, the true pearl's opposite,  
 As cheap as pearls are costly. 'She's—now,  
 guess

Her parentage! Once—twice—thrice?  
 Foiled, confess!

Drugs, duke, her father deals in—faugh, the  
 scents!—

Manna and senna—such medicaments  
 For payment he compounds you. Stay—stay  
 —stay!

I'll have no rude speech wrong her! Whither  
 away,

The hot-head? Ah, the scapegrace! She  
 deserves

Respect—compassion, rather! Right it  
 serves

My folly, trusting secrets to a fool!  
 Already at it, is he? She keeps cool—  
 Helped by her fan's spread. Well, our state  
 atones

For thus much license, and words break no  
 bones!"

(Hearts, though, sometimes.)

#### IV.

Next morn 'twas "Reason, rate,  
 Rave, sister, on till doomsday! Sure as fate,  
 I wed that woman—what a woman is  
 Now that I know, who never knew till this!"  
 So swore the duke. "I wed her: once  
 again—

Rave, rate, and reason—spend your breath  
 in vain!"

#### V.

At once was made a contract firm and fast,  
 Published the banns were, only marriage,  
 last,

Required completion when the Church's rite  
 Should bless and bid depart, make happy quite  
 The coupled man and wife for evermore:  
 Which rite was soon to follow. Just before—

All things at all but end—the folk o' the bride  
 Flocked to a summons. Pomp the duke  
 defied:

"Of ceremony—so much as empowers,  
 Nought that exceeds, suits best a tie like  
 ours—"

He smiled—"all else were mere futility.  
 We vow, God hears us: God and you and  
 I—

Let the world keep at distance! This is why  
 We choose the simplest forms that serve to  
 bind

Lover and lover of the human kind,  
 No care of what degree—of kings or clowns—  
 Come blood and breeding. Courtly smiles  
 and frowns

Miss of their mark, would idly soothe or  
 strike

My style and yours—in one style merged  
 alike—

God's man and woman merely. Long ago  
 'Twas rounded in my ears 'Duke, wherefore  
 slow

To use a privilege? Needs must one who  
 reigns

Pay reigning's due: since statecraft so or-  
 dains—

Wed for the commonweal's sake! law pre-  
 scribes

One wife: but to submission license bribes  
 Unruly nature: mistresses accept

—Well, at discretion! 'Prove I so inept  
 A scholar, thus instructed? Dearest, be  
 Wife and all mistresses in one to me,  
 Now, henceforth, and forever!" So smiled  
 he.

#### VI.

Good: but the minister, the crafty one,  
 Got ear of what was doing—all but done—  
 Not sooner, though, than the king's very self,  
 Warned by the sister on how sheer a shelf  
 Royalty's ship was like to split. "I bar  
 The abomination! Mix with muck my star?  
 Shall earth behold prodigiously enberbed  
 An upstart marsh-born meteor sun-absorbed?  
 Nuptial me no such nuptials!" "Past dis-  
 pute,  
 Majesty speaks with wisdom absolute."

Admired the minister : "yet, all the same,  
I would we may not—while we play his  
game,

The ducal meteor's—also lose our own,  
The solar monarch's : we relieve your throne  
Of an ungracious presence, like enough :  
Baulked of his project he departs in huff,  
And so cuts short—dare I remind the king?—  
Our not so unsuccessful bargaining.

The contract for eventual heritage  
Happens to *pari passu* reach the stage  
Attained by just this other contract,—each  
Unfixed by signature though fast in speech.  
Off goes the duke in dudgeon—off withal  
Go with him his two dukedoms past recall.  
You save a fool from tasting folly's fruit,  
Obtain small thanks thereby, and lose to  
boot

Sagacity's reward. The jest is grim :  
The man will mulct you—for amercing him ?  
Nay, for . . . permit a poor similitude !  
A witless wight in some fantastic mood  
Would drown himself : you plunge into the  
wave,

Pluck forth the undeserving : he, you save,  
Pulls you clean under also for your pains.  
Sire, little need that I should tax my brains  
To help your inspiration ! "Let him sink !  
Always contriving"—hints the royal wink—  
"To keep ourselves dry while we claim his  
clothes."

## VII.

Next day, the appointed day for plighting  
troths

At eve,—so little time to lose, you see,  
Before the Church should weld indissolubly  
Bond into bond, wed these who, side by side,  
Sit each by other, bold groom, blushing  
bride,—

At the preliminary banquet, graced  
By all the lady's kinsfolk come in haste  
To share her triumph,—lo, a thunderclap !  
"Who importunes now?" "Such is my  
mishap—

In the king's name ! No need that any stir  
Except this lady !" bids the minister :

"With her I claim a word apart, no more :  
For who gainsays—a guard is at the door.

Hold, duke ! Submit you, lady, as I bow  
To him whose mouthpiece speaks his pleasure  
now !

It well may happen I no whit arrest  
Your marriage : be it so,—we hope the best !  
By your leave, gentles ! Lady, pray you,  
hence !

Duke, with my soul and body's deference !"

## VIII.

Doors shut, mouth opens and persuasion flows  
Copiously forth. "What flesh shall dare  
oppose

The king's command ? The matter in debate  
—How plain it is ! Yourself shall arbitrate,  
Determine. Since the duke affects to rate  
His prize in you beyond all goods of earth,  
Accounts as nought old gains of rank and birth,  
Ancestral obligation, recent fame,  
(We know his feats)—nay, ventures to dis-  
claim

Our will and pleasure almost—by report—  
Waives in your favour dukeliness, in short,—  
We—('tis the king speaks)—who might forth-  
with stay

Such suicidal purpose, brush away  
A bad example shame would else record,—  
Lean to indulgence rather. At his word  
We take the duke : allow him to complete  
The cession of his dukedoms, leave our feet  
Their footstool when his own head, safe in  
vault,

Sleeps sound. Nay, would the duke repair  
his fault

Handsomely, and our forfeited esteem  
Recover,—what if wisely he redeem  
The past,—in earnest of good faith, at once  
Give us such jurisdiction for the nonce  
As may suffice—prevent occasion slip—  
And constitute our actual ownership ?  
Concede this—straightway be the marriage  
blessed

By warrant of this paper ! Things at rest,  
This paper duly signed, down drops the bar,  
To-morrow you become—from what you are,  
The druggist's daughter—not the duke's mere  
spouse,

But the king's own adopted : heart and house

Open to you—the idol of a court  
 'Which heaven might copy'—sing our poet-  
 sort.

In this emergency, on you depends  
 The issue : plead what bliss the king intends !  
 Should the duke frown, should arguments  
 and prayers,

Nay, tears if need be, prove in vain,—who  
 cares ?

We leave the duke to his obduracy,  
 Companionless,—you, madam, follow me !  
 Without, where divers of the body-guard  
 Wait signal to enforce the king's award  
 Of strict seclusion : over you at least  
 Vibratingly the sceptre threats increased  
 Precipitation ! How avert its crash ?”

## IX.

“ Re-enter, sir ! A hand that's calm, not rash,  
 Averts it !” quietly the lady said.  
 “ Yourself shall witness.”

At the table's head  
 Where, mid the hushed guests, still the duke  
 sat glued

In blank bewilderment, his spouse pursued  
 Her speech to end—syllabled quietude.

## X.

“ Duke, I, your duchess of a day, could take  
 The hand you proffered me for love's sole sake,  
 Conscious my love matched yours ; as you,  
 myself

Would waive, when need were, all but love—  
 from self

To potency. What fortune brings about  
 Happily in some far future, finds me out,  
 Faces me on a sudden here and now.  
 The better ! Read—if beating heart allow—  
 Read this, and bid me rend to rags the shame !  
 I and your conscience—hear and grant our  
 claim !

Never dare alienate God's gift you hold  
 Simply in trust for him ! Choose muck for  
 gold ?

Could you so stumble in your choice, cajoled  
 By what I count my least of worthiness  
 —The youth, the beauty, — you renounce  
 them—yes,

With all that's most too : love as well you  
 lose,  
 Slain by what slays in you the honour !  
 Choose !

Dear—yet my husband—dare I love you yet ?”

## XI.

How the duke's wrath o'erboiled,—words,  
 words and yet

More words,—I spare you such fool's fever  
 fret.

They were not of one sort at all, one size,  
 As souls go—he and she. 'Tis said, the eyes  
 Of all the lookers-on let tears fall fast.  
 The minister was mollified at last :

“ Take a day,—two days even, ere through  
 pride

You perish,—two days' counsel—then de-  
 cide !”

## XII.

—“ If I shall save his honour and my soul ?  
 Husband,—this one last time,—you tear the  
 scroll ?

Farewell, duke ! Sir, I follow in your train !”

## XIII.

So she went forth : they never met again  
 The duke and she. The world paid com-  
 pliment  
 (Is it worth noting ?) when, next day, she sent  
 Certain gifts back—“ jewelry fit to deck  
 Whom you call wife.” I know not round  
 what neck

They took to sparkling, in good time—weeks  
 thence.

## XIV.

Of all which was the pleasant consequence,  
 So much and no more—that a fervid youth,  
 Big-hearted boy,—butten years old, in truth,—  
 Laid this to heart and loved, as boyhood can,  
 The unduchessed lady : boy and lad grew  
 man :

He loved as man perchance may : did mean-  
 while

Good soldier-service, managed to beguile  
 The years, no few, until he found a chance :  
 Then, as at trumpet-summons to advance,  
 Outbroke the love that stood at arms so long,

Brooked no withstanding longer. They were wed.

Whereon from camp and court alike he fled,  
Renounced the sun-king, dropped off into  
night,

Evermore lost, a ruined satellite:  
And, oh, the exquisite deliciousness

That lapped him in obscurity! You guess  
Such joy is fugitive: she died full soon.

He did his best to die—as sun, so moon  
Left him, turned dusk to darkness absolute.

Failing of death—why, saintship seemed to  
suit:

Yes, your sort, Don! He trembled on the  
verge

Of monkhood: trick of cowl and taste of  
scourge

He tried: then, kicked not at the pricks per-  
verse,

But took again, for better or for worse,  
The old way in the world, and, much the  
same

Man o' the outside, fairly played life's game.

#### XV.

"Now, Saint Scholastica,<sup>1</sup> what time she  
fared

In Paynimrie, behold, a lion glared  
Right in her path! Her waist she promptly

strips  
Of girdle, binds his teeth within his lips,

And, leashed all lambl-like, to the Soldan's  
court

Leads him." Ay, many a legend of the sort  
Do you praiseworthy authenticate:

Spare me the rest. This much of no debate  
Admits: my lady flourished in grand days

When to be duchess was to dance the hays.  
Up, down, across the heaven amid its host:

While to be hailed the sun's own self almost—  
So close the kinship—was—was—

Saint, for this,  
Be yours the feet I stoop to—kneel and kiss!  
So human? Then the mouth too, if you will!  
Thanks to no legend but a chronicle.

<sup>1</sup> St. Benedict's sister.

#### XVI.

One leans to like the duke, too: up we'll  
patch!

Some sort of saintship for him—not to match  
Hers—but man's best and woman's worst  
amount

So nearly to the same thing, that we count  
In man a miracle of faithfulness

If, while unfaithful somewhat, he lay stress  
On the main fact that love, when love indeed,

Is wholly solely love from first to last—  
Truth—all the rest a lie. Too likely, fast

Enough that necklace went to grace the throat  
—Let's say, of such a dancer as makes doat

The senses when the soul is satisfied—  
*Troglia*, say the Greeks—a sweetmeat tried

Approvingly by sated tongue and teeth,  
Once body's proper meal consigned beneath

Such unconsidered munching.

#### XVII.

Fancy's flight

Makes me a listener when, some sleepless  
night,

The duke reviewed his memories, and aghast  
Found that the Present intercepts the Past

With such effect as when a cloud enwraps  
The moon and, moon-suffused, plays moon

perhaps  
To who walks under, till comes, late or soon,

A stumble: up he looks, and lo, the moon  
Calm, clear, convincingly herself once more!

How could he 'scape the cloud that thrust  
between

Him and effulgence? Speak, fool—duke, I  
mean!

#### XVIII.

"Who bade you come, brisk-marching bold  
she-shape,

A terror with those black-balled worlds of  
eyes,

That black hair bristling solid-built from nape  
To crown it coils about? O dread surmise!

Take, tread on, trample under past escape  
Your capture, spoil and trophy! Do—

devise  
Insults for one who, fallen once, ne'er shall  
rise!

"Mock on, triumphant o'er the prostrate  
shame!

Laugh 'Here lies he among the false to  
Love—

Love's loyal liegeman once: the very same  
Who, scorning his weak fellows, towered  
above

Inconstancy: yet why his faith defame?

Our eagle's victor was at least no dove,  
No dwarfish knight picked up our giant's  
glove—

"When, putting prowess to the proof, faith  
urged

Her champion to the challenge: had it  
chanced

That merely virtue, wisdom, beauty—merged  
All in one woman—merely these advanced  
Their claim to conquest,—hardly had he  
purged

His mind of memories, dearnesses enhanced  
Rather than harmed by death, nor, disen-  
tranced,

"Promptly had he abjured the old pretence

To prove his kind's superior—first to last  
Display erect on his heart's eminence

An altar to the never-dying Past.  
For such feat faith might boast fit play of fence  
And easily disarm the iconoclast  
Called virtue, wisdom, beauty: impudence

"Fought in their stead, and how could  
faith but fall?

There came a bold she-shape brisk-march-  
ing, bent

No inch of her imperious stature, tall

Assome war-engine from whose top was sent  
One shattering volley out of eye's black ball,  
And prone lay faith's defender! Mockery  
spent?

Malice discharged in full? In that event,

"My queenly impudence, I cover close,

I wrap me round with love of your black  
hair,

Black eyes, black every wicked inch of those  
Limbs, war-tower tallness: so much truth  
lives there

'Neath the dead heap of lies. And yet—who  
knows?

What if such things are? No less, such  
things were.

Then was the man your match whom now you  
dare

"Treat as existent still. A second truth!

They held—this heap of lies you rightly  
scorn—

A man who had approved himself in youth  
More than a match for—you? for sea-foam-  
born

Venus herself: you conquer him forsooth?

'Tis me his ghost: he died since left and  
lorn,

As needs must Samson when his hair is shorn.

"Some day, and soon, be sure himself will rise,  
Called into life by her who long ago  
Left his soul whiling time in flesh-disguise.

Ghosts tired of waiting can play tricks, you  
know!

Tread, trample me—such sport we ghosts  
devise,

Waiting the morn-star's re-appearance—  
though

You think we vanish scared by the cock's  
crow."

## WITH CHRISTOPHER SMART.

[An unfortunate poet (1722-1771) known to all Boswellians from anecdotes in the great Biography. He was a Fellow of Pembroke College, Cambridge, and until he lost his reason a very indifferent versifier. He married a daughter of Newbery the publisher, and suffered much poverty. He lives as the author of the "Song to David," a series of magnificent stanzas composed while their author was in confinement for unsoundness of mind.]

### I.

It seems as if . . . or did the actual chance  
Startle me and perplex? Let truth be said!  
How might this happen? Dreaming, blind-  
fold led

By visionary hand, did soul's advance

Precede my body's, gain inheritance  
Of fact by fancy—so that when I read  
At length with waking eyes your Song, instead  
Of mere bewilderment, with me first glance  
Was but full recognition that in trance  
Or merely thought's adventure some old day  
Of dim and done-with boyishness, or—well,  
Why might it not have been, the miracle  
Broke on me as I took my sober way  
Through veritable regions of our earth  
And made discovery, many a wondrous one?

## II.

Anyhow, fact or fancy, such its birth :  
I was exploring some huge house, had gone  
Through room and room complacently, no  
dearth  
Anywhere of the signs of decent taste,  
Adequate culture : wealth had run to waste  
Nowise, nor penury was proved by stint :  
All showed the Golden Mean without a  
hint  
Of brave extravagance that breaks the rule.  
The master of the mansion was no fool  
Assuredly, no genius just as sure !  
Safe mediocrity had scorned the lure  
Of now too much and now too little cost,  
And satisfied me sight was never lost  
Of moderate design's accomplishment  
In calm completeness. On and on I went,  
With no more hope than fear of what came  
next,  
Till lo, I push a door, sudden uplift  
A hanging, enter, chance upon a shift  
Indeed of scene ! So—thus it is thou deck'st,  
High heaven, our low earth's brick-and-  
mortar work?

## III.

It was the Chapel. That a star, from murk  
Which hid, should flashingly emerge at last,  
Were small surprise : but from broad day I  
passed  
Into a presence that turned shine to shade.  
There fronted me the Rafael Mother-Maid,  
Never to whom knelt votarist in shrine  
By Nature's bounty helped, by Art's divine  
More varied—beauty with magnificence—  
Than this : from floor to roof one evidence

Of how far earth may rival heaven. No niche  
Where glory was not prisoned to enrich  
Man's gaze with gold and gems, no space but  
glowed ;  
With colour, gleamed with carving—hues  
which owed  
Their outburst to a brush the painter fed  
With rainbow-substance—rare shapes never  
wed  
To actual flesh and blood, which, brain-born  
once,  
Became the sculptor's dewy, Art's response  
To earth's despair. And all seemed old yet  
new :  
Youth,—in the marble's curve, the canvas' hue,  
Apparent,—wanted not the crowning thrill  
Of age the consecrator. Hands long still  
Had worked here—could it be, what lent  
them skill  
Retained a power to supervise, protect,  
Enforce new lessons with the old, connect  
Our life with theirs? No merely modern touch  
Told me that here the artist, doing much,  
Elsewhere did more, perchance does better,  
lives—  
So needs must learn.

## IV.

Well, these provocatives  
Having fulfilled their office, forth I went  
Big with anticipation—well-nigh fear—  
Of what next room and next for startled eyes  
Might have in store, surprise beyond surprise.  
Next room and next and next—what followed  
here?  
Why, nothing ! not one object to arrest  
My passage—everywhere too manifest  
The previous decent null and void of best  
And worst, mere ordinary right and fit,  
Calm commonplace which neither missed,  
nor hit  
Inch-high, inch-low, the placid mark pro-  
posed.  
v.  
Armed with this instance, have I diagnosed  
Your case, my Christopher? The man was  
sound  
And sane at starting : all at once the ground

Gave way beneath his step, a certain smoke  
Curled up and caught him, or perhaps down  
broke

A fireball wrapping flesh and spirit both  
In conflagration. Then—as heaven were loth  
To linger—let earth understand too well  
How heaven at need can operate—off fell  
The flame-robe, and the untransfigured man  
Resumed sobriety,—as he began,  
So did he end nor alter pace, not he!

## VI.

Now, what I fain would know is—could it be  
That he—whose'er he was that furnished forth  
The Chapel, making thus, from South to  
North,

Rafael touch Leighton, Michelagnolo  
Join Watts, was found but once combining so  
The elder and the younger, taking stand  
On Art's supreme,—or that yourself who sang  
A Song where flute-breath silvers trumpet-  
clang,

And stations you for once on either hand  
With Milton and with Keats, empowered to  
claim

Affinity on just one point—(or blame  
Or praise my judgment, thus it fronts you  
full)—

How came it you resume the void and null,  
Subside to insignificance,—live, die

—Proved plainly two mere mortals who drew  
nigh

One moment?—that, to Art's best hierarchy,  
This, to the superhuman poet-pair?

What if, in one point only, then and there  
The otherwise all-unapproachable  
Allowed impingement? Does the sphere  
pretend

To span the cube's breadth, cover end to end  
The plane with its embrace? No, surely!  
Still,

Contact is contact, sphere's touch no whit less  
Than cube's superimposure. Such success  
Befell Smart only out of throngs between  
Milton and Keats that donned the singing  
dress

Smart, solely of such songmen, pierced the  
screen

'Twixt thing and word, lit language straight  
from soul,—

Left no fine film-flake on the naked coal  
Live from the center—shapely or uncouth,  
Fire-suffused through and through, one blaze  
of truth

Undeclared by a lie,—(you have my  
mind)—

For, think! this blaze outleapt with black  
behind

And blank before, when Hayley and the  
rest . . .

But let the dead successors worst and best  
Bury their dead: with life be my concern—  
Yours with the fire-flame: what I fain would  
learn

Is just—(suppose me haply ignorant  
Down to the common knowledge, doctors  
vaunt)

Just this—why only once the fire-flame was:  
No matter if the marvel came to pass  
The way folk judged—if power too long  
suppressed

Broke loose and maddened, as the vulgar

Or simply brain-disorder (doctors said);  
A turmoil of the particles disturbed  
Brain's workaday performance in your head,  
Spurred spirit to wild action health had  
curbed:

And so verse issued in a cataract  
Whence prose, before and after, unperturbed  
Was wont to wend its way. Concede the  
fact

That here a poet was who always could—  
Never before did—never after would—  
Achieve the feat: how were such fact ex-  
plained?

VII.  
Was it that when, by rarest chance, there  
fell

Disguise from Nature, so that Truth remained  
Naked, and whoso saw for once could tell  
Us others of her majesty and might

In large, her lovelinesses infinite  
In little,—straight you used the power where-  
with

Sense, penetrating as through rind to pith

Each object, thoroughly revealed might view  
And comprehend the old things thus made  
new,  
So that while eye saw, soul to tongue could  
trust  
Thing which struck word out, and once more  
adjust  
Real vision to right language, till heaven's  
vault  
Pompous with sunset, storm-stirred sea's  
assault

On the swilled rock-ridge, earth's embosomed  
brood  
Of tree and flower and weed, with all the life  
That flies or swims or crawls, in peace or  
strife,  
Above, below,—each had its note and name  
For Man to know by,—Man who, now—the  
same

As erst in Eden, needs that all he sees  
Be named him ere he note by what degrees  
Of strength and beauty to its end Design  
Ever thus operates—(your thought and mine,  
No matter for the many dissident)—  
So did you sing your Song, so truth found vent  
In words for once with you?

## VIII.

Then—back was furled  
The robe thus thrown aside, and straight the  
world

Darkened into the old oft-catalogued  
Repository of things that sky, wave, land,  
Or show or hide, clear late, accretion-clogged  
Now, just as long ago, by tellings and  
Re-tellings to satiety, which strike  
Muffled upon the ear's drum. Very like  
None was so startled as yourself when friends  
Came, hailed your fast-returning wits:

"Health mends

Importantly, for—to be plain with you—  
This scribble on the wall was done—in lieu  
Of pen and paper—with—ha, ha!—your key  
Denting it on the wainscot! Do you see.  
How wise our caution was? Thus much we  
stopped  
Of babble that had else grown print: and  
lopped

From your trim bay-tree this unsightly  
bough—

Smart's who translated Horace! Write us  
now"

Why, what Smart did write—never after-  
ward

One line to show that he, who paced the  
sward,

Had reached the zenith from his madhouse  
cell.

## IX.

Was it because you judged (I know full well  
You never had the fancy)—judged—as  
some—

That who makes poetry must reproduce  
Thus ever and thus only, as they come,  
Each strength, each beauty, everywhere  
diffuse

Throw out creation, so that eye and ear,  
Seeing and hearing, straight shall recognize,  
At touch of just a trait, the strength appear,—  
Suggested by a line's lapse see arise  
All evident the beauty,—fresh surprise.  
Startling at fresh achievement? "So, in-  
deed,

Wallows the whale's bulk in the waste of  
brine,

Nor otherwise its feather-tufts make fine  
Wild Virgin's Bower when stars faint off to  
seed!"

(My prose—your poetry I dare not give,  
Purpling too much my mere grey argument.)  
—Was it because you judged—when fugitive  
Was glory found, and wholly gone and spent  
Such power of startling up deaf ear, blind  
eye,

At truth's appearance,—that you humbly bent  
The head and, bidding vivid work good-bye,  
Doffed lyric dress and trod the world once  
more

A drab-clothed decent proseman as before?  
Strengths, beauties, by one word's flash thus  
laid bare

—That was effectual service: made aware  
Of strengths and beauties, Man but hears the  
text,  
Awaits your teaching. Nature? What  
comes next?



Why all the strength and beauty?—to be shown

Thus in one word's flash, thenceforth let alone  
By Man who needs must deal with aught  
that's known

Never so lately and so little? Friend,  
First give us knowledge, then appoint its use!  
Strength, beauty are the means: ignore their  
end?

As well you stopped at proving how profuse  
Stones, sticks, nay stubble lie to left and  
right

Ready to help the builder,—careless quite  
If he should take, or leave the same to strew  
Earth idly,—as by word's flash bring in view  
Strength, beauty, then bid who beholds the  
same

Go on beholding. Why gains unemployed?  
Nature was made to be by Man enjoyed  
First; followed duly by enjoyment's fruit,  
Instruction—haply leaving joy behind:

And you, the instructor, would you slack  
pursuit

Of the main prize, as poet help mankind  
Just to enjoy, there leave them? Play the  
fool,

Abjuring a superior privilege?  
Please simply when your function is to rule—  
By thought incite to deed? From edge to  
edge

Of earth's round, strength and beauty every-  
where

Pullulate—and must you particularize  
All, each and every apparition? Spare  
Yourself and us the trouble! Ears and eyes  
Want so much strength and beauty, and no  
less

Nor more, to learn life's lesson by. Oh,  
yes—

The other method's favoured in our day!  
The end ere the beginning: as you may,  
Master the heavens before you study earth,  
Make you familiar with the meteor's birth  
Ere you descend to scrutinize the rose!  
I say, o'erstep no least one of the rows  
That lead man from the bottom where he  
plants

Foot first of all, to life's last ladder-top:

Arrived there, vain enough will seem the  
vaunts

Of those who say—"We scale the skies,  
then drop

To earth—to find, how all things there are  
loth

To answer heavenly law: we understand  
The meteor's course, and lo, the rose's  
growth—

How other than should be by law's com-  
mand!"

Would not you tell such—"Friends, beware  
lest fume

Offuscate sense: learn earth first ere presume  
To teach heaven legislation. Law must be  
Active in earth or nowhere: arth you see,—  
Or there or not at all, Will, Power and Love  
Admit discovery,—as below, above  
Seek next law's confirmation! But reverse  
The order, where's the wonder things grow  
worse

Than, by the law your fancy formulates,  
They should be? Cease from anger at the  
fates

Which thwart themselves so madly. Live  
and learn,

Not first learn and then live, is our concern.

#### WITH GEORGE BUBB DODINGTON.

[See "Dictionary of National Biography,"  
vol. xv.; also the thin volume of his *Memoirs*  
or *Diary* first published in 1784. The author  
was born 1691, and died 1762. He early  
became a politician, and attached himself to  
Walpole. He was accomplished, profuse,  
and corrupt, and has become by common  
consent of historians a convenient by-word  
for eighteenth-century immoralities of public  
men.]

I.

AH, George Bubb Dodington Lord Mel-  
combe,—no,

Yours was the wrong way to—always under-  
stand,

Supposing that permissibly you planned  
How statesmanship—your trade—in outward  
show

Might figure as inspired by simple zeal  
For serving country, king, and commonweal,  
(Though service tire to death the body, tease  
The soul from out an o'ertasked patriot-  
drudge)

And yet should prove zeal's outward show  
agrees

In all respects—right reason being judge—  
With inward care that, while the statesman  
spends

Body and soul thus freely for the sake  
Of public good, his private welfare take  
No harm by such devotedness. Intends  
Scripture aught else—let captious folk in-  
quire—

Which teaches "Labourers deserve their hire,  
And who neglects his household bears the bell  
Away of sinning from an infidel"?

Wiselier would fools that carp bestow a thought  
How birds build nests; at outside, roughly  
wrought,

Twig knots with twig, loam plasters up each  
chink,

Leaving the inmate rudely lodged—you think?  
Peep but inside! That specious rude-and-  
rough

Covers a domicile where downy fluff  
Embeds the ease-deserving architect,  
Who toiled and moiled not merely to effect  
'Twixt sprig and spray a stop-gap in the teeth  
Of wind and weather, guard what swung  
beneath

From upset only, but contrived himself  
A snug interior, warm and soft and sleek.  
Of what material? Oh, for that, you seek  
How nature prompts each volatile! Thus—  
pelf

Smoothens the human mudlark's lodging,  
power

Demands some harder wrappage to embrace  
Robuster heart-beats: rock, not tree nor  
tower,

Contents the building eagle: rook shoves close  
To brother rook on branch, while crow morose  
Apart keeps balance perched on topmost  
bough.

No sort of bird but suits his taste somehow:  
Nay, Darwin tells of such as love the bower—

His bower-birds opportunely yield us yet  
The lacking instance when at loss to get  
A feathered parallel to what we find  
The secret motor of some mighty mind  
That worked such wonders—all for vanity!  
Worked them to haply figure in the eye  
Of intimates as first of—doers' kind?  
Actors', that work in earnest sportively,  
Paid by a sourish smile. How says the Sage  
Birds born to strut prepare a platform-stage  
With sparkling stones and speckled shells,  
all sorts

Of slimy rubbish, odds and ends and orts,  
Whereon to pose and posture and engage  
The priceless female simper.

II.

I have gone

Thus into detail, George Bubb Dodington,  
Lest, when I take you presently to task  
For the wrong way of working, you should ask  
"What fool conjectures that profession means  
Performance? that who goes behind the scenes  
Finds,—acting over,—still the soot-stuff  
screens

Othello's visage, still the self-same cloak's  
Bugle-bright-blackness half reveals half chokes  
Hamlet's emotion, as ten minutes since?"  
No, each resumes his garb, stands—Moor or  
prince—

Decently draped: just so with statesmanship  
All outside show, in short, is sham—why  
wince?

Concede me—while our parley lasts! You  
trip

Afterwards—lay but this to heart! (there lurks  
Somewhere in all of us a lump which irks  
Somewhat the sprightliest-scheming brain  
that's bent

On brave adventure, would but heart consent!)  
—Here trip you, that—your aim allowed as  
right—

Your means thereto were wrong. Come, we,  
this night,

Profess one purpose, hold one principle,  
Are at odds only as to—not the will  
But way of winning solace for ourselves  
—No matter if the ore for which zeal delves

Be gold or coprolite, while zeal's pretence  
Is—we do good to men at—whose expense  
But ours? who tire the body, tease the soul,  
Simply that, running, we may reach fame's  
goal

And wreath at last our brows with bay—  
the State's

Disinterested slaves, nay—please the Fates—  
Saviours and nothing less: such lot has been!  
Statesmanship triumphs pedestalled, serene,  
O happy consummation!—brought about  
By managing with skill the rabble—rout  
For which we labour (never mind the name—  
People or populace, for praise or blame)  
Making them understand—their heaven, their  
hell,

Their every hope and fear is ours as well.  
Man's cause—what other can we have at heart?  
Whence follows that the necessary part  
High o'er Man's head we play,—and freelier  
breathe

Just that the multitude which gasps beneath  
May reach the level where unstified stand  
Ourselves at vantage to put forth a hand,  
Assist the prostrate public. 'Tis by right  
Merely of such pretence, we reach the height  
Where storms abound, to brave—nay, court  
their stress,

Though all too well aware—of pomp the less,  
Of peace the more! But who are we, to spurn  
For peace' sake, duty's pointing? Up, then  
—earn

Albeit no prize we may but martyrdom!  
Now, such fit height to launch salvation from,  
How get and gain? Since help must needs  
be craved

By would-be saviours of the else-unsaved,  
How coax them to co-operate, lend a lift,  
Kneel down and let us mount?

### III.

You say "Make shift

By sham—the harsh word: preach and teach,  
persuade

Somehow the Public—not despising aid  
Of salutary artifice—we seek  
Solely their good: our strength would raise  
the weak,

Our cultivated knowledge supplement  
Their rudeness, rawness: why to us were lent  
Ability except to come in use?  
Who loves his kind must by all means induce  
That kind to let his love play freely, press  
In Man's behalf to full performance!"

### IV.

Yes—

Yes, George, we know!—whereat they hear,  
believe,

And bend the knee, and on the neck receive  
Who fawned and cringed to purpose? Not  
so, George!

Try simple falsehood on shrewd folk who forge  
Lies of superior fashion day by day

And hour by hour? With craftsmen versed  
as they

What chance of competition when the tools  
Only a novice wields? Are knives such fools?  
Disinterested patriots, spare your tongue

The tones thrice-silvery, cheek'save smiles it  
flung

Pearl-like profuse to swine—a herd, whereof  
Nought needs be taught, his neighbour's trough  
Scarce holds for who but grunts and whines  
the husks

Due to a wrinkled snout that shows sharp  
tusks.

No animal—much less our lordly Man—  
Obeys its like: with strength all rule began,  
The stoutest awes the pasture. Soon succeeds  
Discrimination,—nicer power Man needs  
To rule him than is bred of bone and thew:  
Intelligence must move strength's self. This  
too

Lasts but its time: the multitude at length  
Looks inside for intelligence and strength  
And finds them here and there to pick and  
choose:

"All at your service, mine, see!" Ay, but  
who's

My George, at this late day, to make his boast  
"In strength, intelligence, I rule the roost,  
Beat, all and some, the ungraced who crowd  
your ranks?"

"Oh, but I love, would lead you, gain your  
thanks



Disguise, flee, fight against with tooth and nail

The outrageous designation! "Quack" men quail

Before? You see, a little year ago

They heard him thunder at the thing which, lo,  
To-day he vaunts for unscathed, while what  
erst

Heaven-high he lauded, lies hell-low, ac-  
cursed!

And yet where's change? Who, awe-struck,  
cares to point

Critical finger at a dubious joint

In armour, true *as triplex*, breast and back

Binding about, defiant of attack,  
An imperturbability that's—well,

Or innocence or impudence—how tell

One from the other? Could ourselves broach  
lies,

Yet brave mankind with those unaltered eyes,  
Those lips that keep the quietude of truth?  
Dare we attempt the like? What quick  
uncouth

Disturbance of thy smug economy,

O coward visage! Straight would all descry  
Back on the man's brow the boy's blush  
once more!

No! he goes deeper—could our sense ex-  
plore—

Finds conscience beneath conscience such as  
ours.

Genius is not so rare,—prodigious powers—  
Well, others boast such,—but a power like  
this

Mendacious intrepidity—*quid vis?*

Besides, imposture plays another game,

Admits of no diversion from its aim

Of captivating hearts, sets zeal a-flare

In every shape at every turn,—nowhere

Allows subsidence into ash. By stress

Of what does guile succeed but earnestness,  
Earnest word, look and gesture? Touched  
with aught

But earnestness, the levity were fraught

With ruin to guile's film-work. Grave is guile;

Here no act wants its qualifying smile,

Its covert pleasantry to neutralize:  
The outward ardour. Can our chief despise

Even while most he seems to adulate?

As who should say "What though it be my  
fate

To deal with fools? Among the crowd must  
lurk

Some few with faculty to judge my work

Spite of its way which suits, they understand,  
The crass majority:—the Sacred Band,

No duping them forsooth!" So tells a touch  
Of subintelligential nod and wink—

Turning foes friends. Coarse flattery moves  
the gorge:

Mine were the mode to awe the many,  
George!

They guess you half despise them while most  
bent

On demonstrating that your sole intent  
Strives for their service. Sneer at them?  
Yourself

'Tis you disparage,—tricksy as an elf,  
Scorning what most you strain to bring to  
pass,

Laughingly careless,—triplly cased in brass,—  
While pushing strenuous to the end in view.

What follows? Why, you formulate within  
The vulgar headpiece this conception "Win

A master-mind to serve us needs we must,  
One who, from motives we but take on trust

Acts strangelier—haply wiselier than we  
know—

Stronglier, for certain. Did he say 'I throw  
Aside my good for yours, in all I do

Care nothing for myself and all for you'—  
We should both understand and disbelieve:

Said he 'Your good I laugh at in my sleeve,  
My own it is I solely labour at,

Pretending yours the while'—that, even that  
We, understanding well, give credence to,

And so will none of it. But here 'tis through  
Our recognition of his service, wage

Well earned by work, he mounts to such a  
stage

Above competitors as all save Bubb

Would agonize to keep. Yet,—here's the  
rub—

So slightly does he hold by our esteem  
Which solely fixed him fast there, that we  
seem

Mocked every minute to our face, by gibe  
And jest—scorn insuppressive: what ascribe  
The rashness to? Our pay and praise to  
boot—

Do these avail him to tread underfoot  
Something inside us all and each, that stands  
Somehow instead of somewhat which com-  
mands

'Lie not'? Folk fear to jeopardize their soul,  
Stumble at times, walk straight upon the  
whole,—

That's nature's simple instinct: what may be  
The portent here, the influence such as we  
Are strangers to?"—

## VII.

Exact the thing I call  
Man's despot, just the Supernatural  
Which, George, was wholly out of—far  
beyond

Your theory and practice. You had conned  
But to reject the precept "To succeed  
In gratifying selfishness and greed,  
Asseverate such qualities exist  
Nowise within yourself! then make acquist  
By all means, with no sort of fear!" Alack,  
That well-worn lie is obsolete! Fall back  
On still a working pretext—"Hearth and  
Home,

The Altar, love of England, hate of Rome"—  
That's serviceable lying—that perchance  
Had screened you decently: but 'ware  
advance

By one step more in perspicacity  
Of these our dupes! At length they get to see  
As through the earlier, this the latter plea—  
And find the greed and selfishness at source!  
*Ventum est ad triarios*: last resource  
Should be to what but—exquisite disguise  
Disguise-abjuring, truth that looks like lies,  
Frankness so sure to meet with unbelief?  
Say—you hold in contempt—not them in  
chief—

But first and foremost your own self! No use  
In men but to make sport for you, induce  
The puppets now to dance, now stand stock-  
still,

Now knock their heads together, at your will

For will's sake only—while each plays his part  
Submissive: why? through terror at the  
heart:

"Can it be—this bold man, whose hand we  
saw

Openly pull the wires, obeys some law  
Quite above Man's—nay, God's?" On face  
fall they.

This was the secret missed, again I say,  
Out of your power to grasp conception of,  
Much less employ to purpose. Hence the scoff  
That greets your very name: folk see but one  
Fool more, as well as knave, in Dodgington.

## WITH FRANCIS FURINI.

[F. Furini, born at Florence 1600, died  
1649. A famous painter of the nude, who at  
the age of forty became a parish priest and  
a devout liver. He is said to have regretted  
his undraped pictures.]

## I.

NAY, *that*, Furini, never I at least  
Mean to believe! What man you were I  
know,  
While you walked Tuscan earth, a painter-  
priest,  
Something about two hundred years ago.  
Priest—you did duty punctual as the sun  
That rose and set above Saint Sano's church,  
Blessing Mugello: of your flock not one  
But showed a whiter fleece because of smirch,  
Your kind hands wiped it clear from: were  
they poor?

Bounty broke bread apace,—did marriage lag  
For just the want of moneys that ensure  
Fit hearth-and-home provision?—straight  
your bag  
Unplumped itself,—reached hearts by way  
of palms

Goodwill's shake had but tickled. All about  
Mugello valley, felt some parish qualms  
At worship offered in bare walls without  
The comfort of a picture?—prompt such need  
Our painter would supply, and throngs to see  
Witnessed that goodness—no unholy greed  
Of gain—had coaxed from Don Furini—he

Whom princes might in vain implore to toil  
For worldly profit—such a masterpiece:

Brief—priest, you poured profuse God's wine  
and oil

Praiseworthy, I know: shall praising cease  
When, priestly vesture put aside, mere man;  
You stand for judgment? Rather—what  
acclaim

—"Good son, good brother, friend in whom  
we scan

No fault nor flaw"—salutes Furini's name,  
The loving as the liberal! Enough!

Only to open a lily, though for sake

Of setting free its scent, disturbs the rough  
Loose gold about its anther. I shall take

No blame in one more blazon, last of all—

Good painter were you: if in very deed

I styled you great—what modern art dares call

My word in question? Let who will take heed

Of what he seeks and misses in your brain

To balance that precision of the brush

Your hand could ply so deftly: all in vain

Strives poet's power for outlet when the push

Is lost upon a barred and bolted gate

Of painter's impotency. Agnolè—

Thine were alike the head and hand, by fate

Doubly endowed! Who boasts head only—

woe

To hand's presumption should brush emulate

Fancy's free passage by the pen, and show

Thought wrecked and ruined where the in-

expert

Foolhardy fingers half grasped, half let go

Film-wings the poet's pen arrests unhurt!

No—painter such as that miraculous

Michael, who deems you? But the ample gift

Of gracing walls else blank of this our house

Of life with imagery, one bright drift

Poured forth by pencil,—man and woman

mere,

Glorified till half owned for gods,—the dear

Fleshly perfection of the human shape,—

This was apportioned you whereby to praise

Heaven and bless earth. Who clumsily

essays,

By slighting painter's craft, to prove the ape

Of poet's pen-creation, just betrays

Two-fold ineptitude.

## II.

By such sure ways

Do I return, Furini, to my first

And central confidence—that he I proved

Good priest, good man, good painter, and  
rehearsed

Praise upon praise to show—not simply loved

For virtue, but for wisdom honoured too

Needs must Furini be,—it follows—who

Shall undertake to breed in me belief

That, on his death-bed, weakness plied the  
thief

With wisdom, folly ousted reason quite?

List to the chronicler! With main and  
might—

So fame runs—did the poor soul beg his  
friends

To buy and burn his hand-work, make  
amends

For having reproduced therein—(Ah me!

Sighs fame—that's friend Filippo)—nudity!

Yes, I assure you: he would paint—not men

Merely—a pardonable fault—but when

He had to deal with—oh, not mother Eve

Alone, permissibly in Paradise

Naked and unashamed,—but dared achieve

Dreadful distinction, at soul-safety's price

By also painting women—(why the need?)  
Just as God made them: there, you have  
the truth!

Yes, rosed from top to toe in flush of youth,  
One foot upon the moss-fringe, would some  
Nymph

Try, with its venturous fellow, if the lymph

Were chillier than the slab-stepped fountain-  
edge;

The while a-heap her garments on its ledge

Of boulder lay within hand's easy reach,

—No one least kid-skin cast around her!

Speech

Shrinks from enumerating case and case

Of—were it but Diana at the chase,

With tunic tucked discreetly hunting-high!

No, some Queen Venus set our necks awry,

Turned faces from the painter's all-too-frank

Triumph of flesh! For—whom had he to  
thank

—This self-appointed nature-student? Whence  
 Picked he up practice? By what evidence  
 Did he unhandsomely become adept  
 In simulating bodies? How, except  
 By actual sight of such? Himself confessed  
 The enormity: quoth Philip "When I pressed  
 The painter to acknowledge his abuse  
 Of artistry else potent—what excuse  
 Made the infatuated man? I give  
 His very words: 'Did you but know, as I,  
 —O scruple-splitting sickly-sensitive  
 Mild-moral-monger, what the agony  
 Of Art is ere Art satisfy herself  
 In imitating Nature—(Man, poor elf,  
 Striving to match the finger-mark of Him  
 The immeasurably matchless)—gay or grim,  
 Pray, would your smile be? Leave mere  
 fools to tax  
 Art's high-strung brain's intentness as so  
 lax  
 That, in its mid-throe, idle fancy sees  
 The moment for admittance!' Pleadings  
 these—  
 Specious, I grant." So adds, and seems to  
 wince  
 Somewhat, our censor—but shall truth con-  
 vince  
 Blockheads like Baldinucci?<sup>1</sup>

## III.

I resume

My incredulity: your other kind  
 Of soul, Furini, never was so blind,  
 Even through death-mist, as to grope in  
 gloom  
 For cheer beside a bonfire piled to turn  
 Ashes and dust all that your noble life  
 Did homage to life's Lord by,—bid them  
 burn  
 —These Baldinucci blockheads — pictures  
 rife  
 With record, in each rendered loveliness,  
 That one appreciative creature's debt  
 Of thanks to the Creator more or less,  
 Was paid according as heart's will had met  
 Hand's power in Art's endeavour to express

<sup>1</sup> Author of a history of Art, and a friend of  
 Furini's.

Heaven's most consummate of achievements,  
 bless  
 Earth by a semblance of the seal God set  
 On woman his supremest work. I trust  
 Rather, Furini, dying breath had vent  
 In some, fine fervour of thanksgiving just  
 For this—that soul and body's power you  
 spent—  
 Agonized to adumbrate, trace in dust  
 That marvel which we dream the firmament  
 Copies in, star-device when fancies stray  
 Outlining, orb by orb, Andromeda—  
 God's best of beauteous and magnificent  
 Revealed to earth—the naked female form.  
 Nay, I mistake not; wrath that's but luke-  
 warm  
 Would boil indeed were such a critic styled  
 Himself an artist: artist! Ossa piled  
 Topping Olympus—the absurd which crowns  
 The extravagant—whereat one laughs, not  
 frowns.  
 Paints he? One bids the poor pretender take  
 His sorry self, a trouble and disgrace,  
 From out the sacred presence, void the  
 place  
 Artists claim only. What—not merely wake  
 Our pity that suppressed concupiscence—  
 A satyr masked as matron—makes pretence  
 To the coarse blue-fly's instinct—can per-  
 ceive  
 No better reason why she should exist—  
 —God's lily-limbed and blush-rose-bosomed  
 Eve—  
 Than as a hot-bed for the sensualist  
 To fly-blow with his fancies, make pure  
 stuff  
 Breed him back filth—this were not crime  
 enough?  
 But further—fly to style itself—nay, more—  
 To steal among the sacred ones, crouch down  
 Though but to where their garments sweep  
 the floor—  
 —Still catching some faint sparkle from the  
 crown  
 Crowning transcendent Michael, Leonard,  
 Rafael,—to sit beside the feet of such,  
 Unspurned because unnoticed, then reward  
 Their toleration—mercy overmuch—



By stealing from the throne-step to the fools  
 Curious outside the gateway, all-agape  
 To learn by what procedure, in the schools  
 Of Art, a merest man in outward shape  
 May learn to be Correggio! Old and young,  
 These learners got their lesson: Art was just  
 A safety-screen — (Art, which Correggio's  
     tongue  
 Calls "Virtue")—for a skulking vice: mere  
     lust

Inspired the artist when his Night and Morn  
 Slept and awoke in marble on that edge  
 Of heaven above our awestruck earth: lust-  
     born

His Eve low bending took the privilege  
 Of life from what our eyes saw—God's own  
     palm

That put the flame forth—to the love and  
     thanks

Of all creation save this recreant!

## IV.

## Calm

Our phrase, Furini! Not the artist-ranks  
 Claim riddance of an interloper: no—  
 This Baldinucci did but grunt and sniff  
 Outside Art's pale—ay, grubbed, where pine-  
     trees grow,  
 For pignuts only.

## V.

## You the Sacred! If

Indeed on you has been bestowed the dower  
 Of Art in fulness, graced with head and hand,  
 Head—to look up not downwards, hand—of  
     power

To make head's gain the portion of a world  
 Where else the uninstructed ones too sure  
 Would take all outside beauty—film that's  
     furled

About a star—for the star's self, endure  
 No guidance to the central glory,—nay,  
 (Sadder) might apprehend the film was fog,  
 Or (worst) wish all but vapour well away,  
 And sky's pure product thickened from earth's  
     bog—

Since so, nor seldom, have your worthiest  
     failed

To trust their own soul's insight—why? except

For warning that the head of the adept  
 May too much prize the hand, work unassail'd  
 By scruple of the better sense that finds  
 An orb within each halo, bids gross flesh  
 Free the fine spirit-pattern, nor enmesh  
 More than is meet a marvel custom blinds  
 Only the vulgar eye to. Now, less fear  
 That you, the foremost of Art's fellowship,  
 Will oft—will ever so offend! But—hip  
 And thigh—smite the Philistine! You—  
     slunk here—

Connived at, by too easy tolerance,  
 Not to scrape palette simply or squeeze brush,  
 But dub your very self an Artist? Tush—  
 You, of the daubings, is it, dare advance  
 This doctrine that the Artist-mind must need  
 Own to affinity with yours—confess  
 Provocative acquaintance, more or less,  
 With each impurely-peevish worm that breeds  
 Inside your brain's receptacle?

## VI.

## Enough.

Who owns "I dare not look on diadems  
 Without an itch to pick out, purloin gems  
 Others contentedly leave sparkling"—gruff  
 Answers the guard of the regalia: "Why—  
 Consciously kleptomaniac—thrust yourself  
 Where your illicit craving after pelf  
 Is tempted most—in the King's treasury?  
 Go elsewhere! Sort with thieves, if thus you  
     feel—

When folk clean-handed simply recognize  
 Treasure whereof the mere sight satisfies—  
 But straight your fingers are on itch to steal!  
 Hence with you!"

Pray, Furini!

## VII.

## "Bounteous God,

Deviser and Dispenser of all gifts  
 To soul through sense,—in Art the soul-uplifts  
 Man's best of thanks! What but Thy  
     measuring-rod

Meted forth heaven and earth? more intimate,  
 Thy very hands were busied with the task  
 Of making, in this human shape, a mask—  
 A match for that divine. Shall love abate

Man's wonder? Nowise! True—true—all too true—

No gift but, in the very plenitude  
Of its perfection, goes maimed, misconstrued  
By wickedness or weakness: still, some few  
Have grace to see Thy purpose, strength to mar  
Thy work by no admixture of their own,  
—Limn truth not falsehood, bid us love alone  
The type untampered with, the naked star!"

## VIII.

And, prayer done, painter—what if you should preach?

Not as of old when playing pulpiteer  
To simple-witted country folk, but here  
In actual London try your powers of speech  
On us the cultured, therefore sceptical—  
What would you? For, suppose he has his word

In faith's behalf, no matter how absurd,  
This painter-theologian? One and all  
We lend an ear—nay, Science takes thereto—  
Encourages the meanest who has racked  
Nature until he gains from her some fact,  
To state what truth is from his point of view,  
Mere pin-point though it be: since many such  
Conduce to make a whole, she bids our friend  
Come forward unabashed and haply lend  
His little life-experience to our much  
Of modern knowledge. Since she so insists,  
Up stands Furini.

## IX.

"Evolutionists!

At truth I glimpse from depths, you glance  
from heights,

Our stations for discovery opposites,—  
How should ensue agreement? I explain:  
'Tis the tip-top of things to which you strain  
Your vision, until atoms, protoplasm,  
And what and whence and how may be the spasm

Which sets all going, stop you: down perforce  
Needs must your observation take its course,  
Since there's no moving upwards: link by link  
You drop to where the atoms somehow think,  
Feel, know themselves to be: the world's begun,

Such as we recognize it. Have you done

Descending? Here's ourself,—Man, known to-day,

Duly evolved at last,—so far, you say,  
The sum and seal of being's progress. Good!  
Thus much at least is clearly understood—  
Of power does Man possess no particle:  
Of knowledge—just so much as shows that still

It ends in ignorance on every side:  
But righteously—ah, Man is deified  
Thereby, for compensation! Make survey  
Of Man's surroundings, try creation—nay,  
Try emulation of the minimized  
Minuteness fancy may conceive! Surprised  
Reason becomes by two defeats for one—  
Not only power at each phenomenon  
Baffled, but knowledge also in default—  
Asking what *is* minuteness—yonder vault  
Speckled with suns, or this the millionth—  
thing,

How shall I call?—that on some insect's wing

Helps to make out in dyes the mimic star?  
Weak, ignorant, accordingly we are:  
What then? The worst for Nature! Where began

Righteousness, moral sense except in Man?  
True, he makes nothing, understands no  
whit:

Had the initiator-spasm seen fit  
Thus doubly to endow him, none the worse  
And much the better were the universe.  
What does Man see or feel or apprehend  
Here, there, and everywhere, but faults to  
mend,

Omissions to supply,—one wide disease  
Of things that are, which Man at once would ease

Had will but power and knowledge? failing both—

Things must take will for deed—Man, no-  
wise loth,

Accepts pre-eminency: mere blind force—  
Mere knowledge undirected in its course  
By any care for what is made or marred  
In either's operation—these award  
The crown to? Rather let it deck thy brows,  
Man, whom alone a righteousness endows

Would cure the wide world's ailing ! Who  
disputes

Thy claim thereto ? Had Spasm more attri-  
butes

Than power and knowledge in its gift, before  
Man came to pass ? The higher that we  
soar,

The less of moral sense like Man's we find :  
No sign of such before,—what comes behind,  
Who guesses ? But until there crown our  
sight

The quite new—not the old mere infinite  
Of changings,—some fresh kind of sun and  
moon,—

Then, not before, shall I expect a boon  
Of intuition just as strange, which turns  
Evil to good, and wrong to right, unlearns  
All Man's experience learned since Man was  
he,

Accept in Man, advanced to this degree,  
The Prime Mind, therefore ! neither wise  
nor strong—

Whose fault ? but were he both, then right,  
not wrong

As now, throughout the world were para-  
mount

According to his will,—which I account  
The qualifying faculty. He stands  
Confessed supreme—the monarch whose  
commands

Could he enforce, how bettered were the  
world !

He's at the height this moment—to be hurled  
Next moment to the bottom by rebound  
Of his own peal of laughter. All around  
Ignorance wraps him,—whence and how, and  
why

Things are,—yet cloud breaks and lets blink  
the sky

Just overhead, not elsewhere ! What assures  
His optics that the very blue which lures  
Comes not of black outside it, doubly dense ?  
Ignorance overwraps his moral sense,  
Winds him about, relaxing, as it wraps,  
So much and no more than lets through  
perhaps,

The murmured knowledge — 'Ignorance  
exists.'

"I at the bottom, Evolutionists,  
Advise beginning, rather. I profess  
To know just one fact—my self-conscious-  
ness,—

"Twixt ignorance and ignorance enisled,—  
Knowledge : before me was my Cause—that's  
styled,

God : after, in due course succeeds the rest,—  
All that my knowledge comprehends — at  
best—

At worst, conceives about in mild despair.  
Light needs must touch on either darkness :  
where ?

Knowledge so far impinges on the Cause  
Before me, that I know—by certain laws  
Wholly unknown, whate'er I apprehend  
Within, without me, had its rise : thus blend  
I, and all things perceived, in one Effect.

How far can knowledge any ray project  
On what comes after me—the universe ?  
Well, my attempt to make the cloud disperse  
Begins—not from above but underneath :  
I climb, you soar,—who soars, soon loses  
breath

And sinks, who climbs keeps one foot firm  
on fact

Ere hazarding the next step : soul's first act  
(Call consciousness the soul—some name we  
need)

Getting itself aware, through stuff decreed  
Thereto (so call the body)—who has stept  
So far, there let him stand, become adept  
In body ere he shift his station thence  
One single hair's breadth. Do I make pre-  
tence

To teach, myself unskilled in learning ? Lo,  
My life's work ! Let my pictures prove I know  
Somewhat of what this fleshly frame of ours  
Or is or should be, how the soul empowers  
The body to reveal its every mood  
Of love and hate, pour forth its plenitude  
Of passion. If my hand attained to give  
Thus permanence to truth else fugitive,  
Did not I also fix each fleeting grace  
Of form and feature—save the beautiful face—  
Arrest decay in transitory might

Of bone and muscle—cause the world to bless  
For ever each transcendent nakedness  
Of man and woman? Were such feats achieved  
By sloth, or strenuous labour unrelieved,  
—Yet lavished vainly? Ask that underground  
(So may I speak) of all on surface found  
Of flesh-perfection! Depths on depths to  
probe

Of all-inventive artifice, disrobe  
Marvel at hiding under marvel, pluck  
Veil after veil from Nature—were the luck  
Ours to surprise the secret men so name,  
That still eludes the searcher—all the same,  
Repays his search with still fresh proof—  
'Externe,

Not inmost, is the Cause, fool! Look and  
learn!

Thus teach my hundred pictures: firm and  
fast

There did I plant my first foot. And the next?  
Nowhere! 'Twas put forth and withdrawn,  
perplexed

At touch of what seemed stable and proved  
stuff

Such as the coloured clouds are: plain enough  
There lay the outside universe: try Man—  
My most immediate! and the dip began  
From safe and solid into that profound  
Of ignorance I tell you surges round  
My rock-spit of self-knowledge. Well and ill,  
Evil and good irreconcilable

Above, beneath, about my every side,—  
How did this wild confusion far and wide  
Tally with my experience when my stamp—  
So far from stirring—struck out, each a lamp,  
Spark after spark of truth from where I stood—  
Pedestalled triumph? Evil there was good,  
Want was the promise of supply, defect  
Ensured completion,—where and when and  
how?

Leave that to the First Cause! Enough that  
now,

Here where I stand, this moment's me and  
mine,

Shows me what is, permits me to divine  
What shall be. Wherefore? Nay, how  
otherwise?

Look at my pictures! What so glorifies

The body that the permeating soul  
Finds there no particle elude control

Direct, or fail of duty,—most obscure  
When most subservient? Did that Cause  
ensure

The soul such raptures as its fancy stings  
Body to furnish when, uplift by wings  
Of passion, here and now, it leaves the earth,  
Loses itself above, where bliss has birth—  
(Heaven, be the phrase)—did that same Cause  
contrive

Such solace for the body, soul must dive  
At drop of fancy's pinion, condescend  
To bury both alike on earth, our friend  
And fellow, where minutely exquisite  
Low lie the pleasures, now and here—no  
herb

But hides its marvel, peace no doubts perturb  
In each small mystery of insect life—  
—Shall the soul's Cause thus gift the soul,  
yet strife

Continue still of fears with hopes,—for why?  
What if the Cause, whereof we now descry  
So far the wonder-working, lack at last  
Will, power, benevolence—a protoplast,  
No consuminator, seating up the sum  
Of all things,—past and present and to come  
Perfection? No, I have no doubt at all!  
There's my amount of knowledge—great or  
small,

Sufficient for my needs: for see! advance  
Its light now on that depth of ignorance  
I shrink before from—yonder where the world  
Lies wreck-strewn,—evil towering, prone  
good—hurled

From pride of place, on every side. For me  
(Patience, beseech you!) knowledge can but be  
Of good by knowledge of good's opposite—  
Evil,—since, to distinguish wrong from right,  
Both must be known in each extreme, beside—  
(Or what means knowledge—to aspire or bide  
Content with half-attaining? Hardly so!)  
Made to know on, know ever, I must know  
All to be known at any halting-stage  
Of my soul's progress, such as earth, where  
wage

War, just for soul's instruction, pain with joy,  
Folly with wisdom, all that works annoy

With all that quiet and contents,—in brief,  
Good strives with evil.

“Now then for relief,  
Friends, of your patience kindly curbed so  
long.

‘What?’ snarl you, ‘Is the fool’s conceit thus  
strong—

Must the whole outside world in soul and sense  
Suffer, that he grow sage at its expense?’

By no means! ‘Tis by merest touch of toe  
I try—not trench on—ignorance, just know—  
And so keep steady footing: how you fare,  
Caught in the whirlpool—that’s the Cause’s  
care,

Strong, wise, good,—this I know at any rate  
In my own self,—but how may operate  
With you—strength, wisdom, goodness—no  
least blink.

Of knowledge breaks the darkness round me.  
Think!

Could I see plain, be somehow certified  
All was illusion,—evil far and wide  
Was good disguised,—why, out with one  
huge wipe

Goes knowledge from me. Type needs anti-  
type:

As night needs day, as shine needs shade, so  
good

Needs evil: how were pity understood  
Unless by pain? Make evident that pain  
Permissibly masks pleasure—you abstain  
From outstretch of the finger-tip that saves  
A drowning fly. Who proffers help of hand  
To weak Andromeda exposed on strand  
At mercy of the monster? Were all true,  
Help were not wanting: ‘But ‘tis false,’  
cry you,

‘Mere fancy-work of paint and brush!’ No  
less,

Were mine the skill, the magic, to impress  
Beholders with a confidence they saw  
Life,—veritable flesh and blood in awe  
Of just as true a sea-beast,—would they stare  
Simply as now, or cry out, curse and swear,  
Or call the gods to help, or catch up stick  
And stone, according as their hearts were  
quick

Or sluggish? Well, some old artificer  
Could do as much,—at least, so books aver,—  
Able to make-believe, while I, poor wight,  
Make-fancy, nothing more. Though wrong  
were right,

Could we but know—still wrong must needs  
seem wrong:

To do right’s service, prove men weak or  
strong,

Choosers of evil or of good. ‘No such  
Illusion possible!’ Ah, friends, you touch  
Just here my solid standing-place amid  
The wash and welter, whence all doubts are  
bid

Back to the ledge they break against in foam,  
Futility: my soul, and my soul’s home  
This body,—how each operates on each,  
And how things outside, fact or feigning,  
teach

What good is and what evil,—just the  
same,

Be feigning or be fact the teacher,—blame  
Diffidence nowise if, from this I judge  
My point of vantage, not an inch I budge.  
All—for myself—seems ordered wise and well  
Inside it,—what reigns outside, who can tell?  
Contrariwise, who needs be told ‘The space  
Which yields thee knowledge,—do its bounds  
embrace

Well-willing and wise-working, each at  
height?

Enough: beyond thee lies the infinite—  
Back to thy circumscription!’

“Back indeed!  
Ending where I began—thus: retrocede,  
Who will,—what comes first, take first, I  
advise!

Acquaint you with the body ere your eyes  
Look upward: this Andromeda of mine—  
Gaze on the beauty, Art hangs out for sign  
There’s finer entertainment underneath.  
Learn how they minister to life and death—  
Those incommensurably marvellous  
Contrivances which furnish forth the house  
Where soul has sway! Though Master keep  
aloof,

Signs of His presence multiply from roof

To basement of the building. Look around,  
Learn thoroughly,—no fear that you confound  
Master with message! He's away, no  
doubt,  
But what if, all at once, you come upon  
A startling proof—not that the Master gone  
Was present lately—but that something—  
whence  
Light comes—has pushed Him into residence?  
Was such the symbol's meaning,—old, un-  
couth—  
That circle of the serpent, tail in mouth?  
Only by looking low, ere looking high,  
Comes penetration of the mystery."

## XI.

Thanks! After sermonizing, psalmody!  
Now praise with pencil, Painter! Fools  
attaint  
Your fame, forsooth, because its power in-  
clines  
To livelier colours, more attractive lines  
Than suit some orthodox sad sickly saint  
—Grey male emaciation, haply streaked  
Carmine by scourgings—or they want, far  
worse—  
Some self-scathed woman, framed to bless  
not curse  
Nature that loved the form whereon hate  
wreaked  
The wrongs you see. No, rather paint some  
full  
Benignancy, the first and foremost boon  
Of youth, health, strength,—show beauty's  
May, ere June  
Undo the bud's blush, leave a rose to cull  
—No poppy, neither! yet less perfect-pure,  
Divinely-precious with life's dew besprent.  
Show saintliness that's simply innocent  
Of guessing sinnership exists to cure  
All in good time! In time let age advance  
And teach that knowledge helps—not igno-  
rance—  
The healing of the nations. Let my spark  
Quicken your tinder! Burn with—Joan of  
Arc!  
Not at the end, nor midway when there grew  
The brave delusions, when rare fancies flew

Before the eyes, and in the ears of her  
Strange voices woke imperiously astride:  
No,—paint the peasant girl all peasant-like,  
Spirit and flesh—the hour about to strike  
When this should be transfigured, that in-  
flamed,  
By heart's admonishing "Thy country  
shamed,  
Thy king shut out of all his realm except  
One sorry corner!" and to life forth leapt  
The indubitable lightning "Can there be  
Country and king's salvation—all through  
me?"

Memorize that burst's moment, Francis!  
Tush—

None of the nonsense-writing! Fitlier brush  
Shall clear off fancy's film-work and let show  
Not what the foolish feign but the wise know—  
Ask Sainte-Beuve<sup>1</sup> else!—or better, Quiche-  
rat,<sup>2</sup>

The downright digger into truth that's—Bah,  
Bettered by fiction? Well, of fact thus much  
Concerns you, that "of prudishness no touch  
From first to last defaced the maid; anon,  
Camp-use compelling"—what says D'Alençon  
Her first friend?—"though I saw while she  
undressed

How fair she was—especially her breast—  
Never had I a wild thought!"—as indeed  
I nowise doubt. Much less would she take  
heed—

When eve came, and the lake, the hills around  
Were all one solitude and silence,—found  
Barrièred impenetrably safe about,—  
Take heed of interloping eyes shut out,  
But quietly permit the air imbibe  
Her naked beauty till . . . but hear the  
scribe!

*Now as she fain would bathe, one even-tide,  
God's maid, this Joan,<sup>3</sup> from the pool's edge  
she spied  
The fair blue bird clovens call the Fisher-king:  
And "Las," sighed she, "my Liege is such a  
thing*

<sup>1</sup> The famous French critic and *causeur*.

<sup>2</sup> A great authority on Joan of Arc.

<sup>3</sup> Mr. Browning's son has painted a picture  
of Joan bathing.

*As thou, Lord but of one poor lonely place  
Out of his whole wide France, were mine the  
grace  
To set my Dauphin free as thou, blue bird!*  
Properly Martin-fisher—that's the word,  
Not yours nor mine: folk said the rustic oath  
In common use with her was—"By my  
troth"?

No,—“By my Martin”! Paint this! Only,  
turn

Her face away—that face about to burn  
Into an angel's when the time is ripe!  
That task's beyond you. Finished, Francis?  
Wipe.

Pencil, scrape palette, and retire content!  
“*Omnia non omnibus*”—no harm is meant!

### WITH GERARD DE LAÏRESSE.

[Gerard de Laïresse was a Flemish painter, born at Liège in 1640; he died in 1711. He was a famous figure in his day, extravagant and dissipated. He painted rapidly, and was fond of the violin. He was supposed to be the author of a treatise on Painting which bears his name, but some doubt this.]

Ah, but—because you were struck blind,  
could bless

Your sense no longer with the actual view  
Of man and woman, those fair forms you drew  
In happier days so duteously and true,—  
Must I account my Gerard de Laïresse  
All sorrow-smitten? He was hindered too.  
—Was this no hardship?—from producing,  
plain

To us who still have eyes, the pageantry  
Which passed and passed before his busy brain  
And, captured on his canvas, showed our sky  
Traversed by flying shapes, earth stocked  
with brood

Of monsters,—centaurs bestial, satyrs lewd,—  
Not without much Olympian glory, shapes  
Of god and goddess in their gay escapes  
From the severe serene: or haply paced  
The antique ways, god-counselled, nymph-  
embraced,

Some early human kingly personage,  
Such wonders of the teeming poet's age  
Were still to be: nay, these indeed began—  
Are not the pictures extant?—till the ban  
Of blindness struck both palette from his  
thumb  
And pencil from his finger.

### II.

Blind—not dumb,  
Else, Gerard, were my inmost bowels stirred  
With pity beyond pity; no, the word  
Was left upon your unmoistened lips:  
Your mouth unsealed, despite of eyes' eclipse,  
Talked all brain's yearning into birth. I lack  
Somehow the heart to wish your practice  
back

Which boasted hand's achievement in a score  
Of veritable pictures, less or more,  
Still to be seen: myself have seen them,—  
moved

To pay due homage to the man I loved  
Because of that prodigious book he wrote  
On Artistry's Ideal, by taking note,  
Making acquaintance with his artist-work.  
So my youth's piety obtained success  
Of all-too dubious sort: for, though it ink  
To tell the issue, few or none would guess  
From extant lines and colours/ De Laïresse,  
Your faculty, although each deftly-grouped  
And aptly-ordered figure-piece was judged  
Worthy a prince's purchase in its day.  
Bearded experience bears not to be duped  
Like boyish fancy: 'twas a boy that budged  
No foot's breadth from your visioned steps  
away

The while that memorable “Walk” he  
trudged  
In your companionship,—the Book must  
say  
Where, when and whither,—“Walk,” come  
what come may,

No measurer of steps on this our globe  
Shall ever match for marvels. Faustus' robe,  
And Fortunatus' cap were gifts of price:  
But—oh, your piece of sober sound advice  
That artists should decry abundant worth  
In trivial commonplace, nor groan at dearth

If fortune bade the painter's craft be plied  
In vulgar town and country! Why despond  
Because heimed round by Dutch canals?

Beyond

The ugly actual, lo, on every side  
Imagination's limitless domain  
Displayed a wealth of wondrous sounds and

Ripe to be realized by poet's brain  
Acting on painter's brush! "Ye doubt?

Poor wights,

What if I set example, go before,  
While you come after, and we both explore  
Holland turned Dreamland, taking care to  
note

Objects whereto my pupils may devote  
Attention with advantage?"

### III.

So commenced

That "Walk" amid true wonders—none to  
you,

But huge to us ignobly common-sensed,  
Purblind, while plain could proper optics view  
In that old sepulchre by lightning split,  
Whereof the lid bore carven,—any dolt  
Imagines why,—Jove's very thunderbolt:  
You who could straight perceive, by glance  
at it,

This tomb must needs be Phaeton's! In a  
trice,

Confirming that conjecture, close on hand,  
Behold, half out, half in the ploughed-up sand,  
A chariot-wheel explained its bolt-device:  
What other than the Chariot of the Sun  
Ever let drop the like? Consult the tome—<sup>1</sup>  
I bid inglorious tarriers-at-home—  
For greater still surprise the while that  
"Walk"

Went on and on, to end as it begun,  
Choke-full of chances, changes, every one  
No whit less wondrous. What was there to  
balk

Us, who had eyes, from seeing? You with  
none

Missed not a marvel: wherefore? Let us talk.

<sup>1</sup> *The Art of Painting, etc.*, by Gerard de Lairese. Translated by J. F. Fritsch, 1778.

### IV.

Say am I right? Your sealed sense moved  
your mind,

Free from obstruction, to compassionate  
Art's power left powerless, and supply the  
blind

With fancies worth all facts denied by fate.  
Mind could invent things, and to—take away,  
At pleasure, leave out trifles mean and base  
Which vex the sight that cannot say them nay  
But, where mind plays the master, have no  
place.

And bent on banishing was mind, be sure,  
All except beauty from its mustered tribe  
Of objects apparitional which lure  
Painter to show and poet to describe—  
That imagery of the antique song  
Truer than truth's self. Fancy's rainbow-birth  
Conceived mid clouds in Greece, could  
glance along

Your passage o'er Dutch veritable earth,  
As with ourselves, who see, familiar throng  
About our paces men and women worth  
Nowise a glance—so poets apprehend—  
Since nought avails portraying them in verse:  
While painters turn upon the heel, intend  
To spare their work the critic's ready curse  
Due to the daily and undignified.

### V.

I who myself contentedly abide  
Awake, nor want the wings of dream,—who  
tramp

Earth's common surface, rough, smooth, dry  
or damp,

—I understand alternatives, no less  
—Conceive your soul's leap, Gerard de  
Lairse!

How were it could I mingle false with true,  
Boast, with the sights I see, your vision too?  
Advantage would it prove or detriment  
If I saw double? Could I gaze intent  
On Dryope plucking the blossoms red,  
As you, whereat her lote-tree writhed and bled,  
Yet lose no gain, no hard fast wide-awake  
Having and holding nature for the sake  
Of nature only—nymph and lote-tree thus  
Gained by the loss of fruit not fabulous.



Apple of English homesteads, where I see  
Nor seek more than crisp buds a struggling bee  
Uncrumples, caught by sweet he clambers  
through?

Truly, a moot point : make it plain to me,  
Who, bee-like, sate sense with the simply true,  
Nor seek to heighten that sufficiency  
By help of feignings proper to the page—  
Earth's surface-blank whereon the elder age  
Put colour, poetizing—poured rich life  
On what were else a dead ground—nothing-  
ness—

Until the solitary world grew rife  
With Joves and Junos, nymphs and satyrs.  
Yes,

The reason was, fancy composed the strife  
'Twixt sense and soul : for sense, my De  
Lairesse,

Cannot content itself with outward things,  
Mere beauty : soul must needs know whence  
there springs—

How, when and why—what sense but loves,  
nor lists

To know at all.

## VI.

Not one of man's acquits  
Ought he resignedly to lose, methinks :  
So, point me out which was it of the links  
Snapt first, from out the chain which used to  
bind

Our earth to heaven, and yet for you, since  
blind,

Subsisted still efficient and intact?

Oh, we can fancy too ! but somehow fact  
Has got to—say, not so much push aside  
Fancy, as to declare its place supplied  
By fact unseen but no less fact the same,  
Which mind bids sense accept. Is mind to  
blame,

Or sense,—does that usurp, this abdicate?  
First of all, as you "walked"—were it too late  
For us to walk, if so we willed? Confess  
We have the sober feet still, De Lairesse !  
Why not the freakish brain too, that must  
needs

Supplement nature—not see flowers and weeds  
Simply as such, but link with each and all  
The ultimate perfection—what we call

Rightly enough the human shape divine?  
The rose? No rose unless it disentwine  
From Venus' wreath the while she bends to  
kiss

Her deathly love?

## VII.

Plain retrogression, this !  
No, no : we poets go not back at all :  
What you did we could do—from great to  
small.

Sinking assuredly : if this world last  
One moment longer when Man finds its  
Past

Exceed its Present—blame the Protoplast !  
If we no longer see as you of old,  
'Tis we see deeper. Progress for the bold !  
You saw the body, 'tis the soul we see.  
Try now ! Bear witness while you walk  
with me,

I see as you : if we loose arms, stop pace,  
'Tis that you stand still, I conclude the race  
Without your company. Come, walk once  
more

The "Walk" : if I to-day as you of yore  
See just like you the blind—then sight shall cry  
—The whole long day quite gone through—  
victory !

## VIII.

Thunders on thunders, doubling and re-  
doubling

Doom o'er the mountain, while a sharp white  
fire

Now shone, now sheared its rusty herbage,  
troubling

Hardly the fir-boles, now discharged its ire  
Full where some pine-tree's solitary spire  
Crashed down, defiant to the last : till—lo,  
The motive of the malice !—all a-glow,  
Circled with flame there yawned a sudden  
rift

I' the rock-face, and I saw a form erect  
Front and defy the outrage, while—as checked,  
Chidden, beside him dauntless in the drift—  
Covered a heaped creature, wing and wing  
outspread

In deprecation o'er the crouching head  
Still hungry for the feast foregone awhile.  
O thou, of scorn's unconquerable smile,

Was it when this—Jove's feathered fury—  
slipped

Gore-glutted from the heart's core whence  
he ripped—

This eagle-hound—neither reproach nor  
prayer—

Baffled, in one more fierce attempt to tear  
Fate's secret from thy safeguard,—was it then

That all these thunders rent earth, ruined air  
To reach thee, pay thy patronage of men?

He thundered,—to withdraw, as beast to lair,  
Before the triumph on thy pallid brow.

Gather the night again about thee now,  
Hate on, love ever! Morn is breaking there—

The granite ridge pricks through the mist,  
turns gold

As wrong turns right. O laughter manifold  
Of ocean's ripple at dull earth's despair!

## IX.

But morning's laugh sets all the crags alight  
Above the baffled tempest: tree and tree

Stir themselves from the stupor of the night,  
And every strangled branch resumes its right

To breathe, shakes loose dark's clinging  
dregs, waves free

In dripping glory. Prone the runnels plunge,  
While earth, distent with moisture like a

sponge,  
Smokes up, and leaves each plant its gem to

see,  
Each grass-blade's glory-glitter. Had I known

The torrent now turned river?—masterful  
Making its rush o'er tumbled ravage—stone

And stub which barred the froths and foams:  
no bull

Ever broke bounds in formidable sport  
More overwhelmingly, till lo, the spasm

Sets him to dare that last mad leap: report  
Who may—his fortunes in the deathly chasm

That swallows him in silence! Rather turn  
Whither, upon the upland, pedestalled

Into the broad day-splendour, whom discern  
These eyes but thee, supreme one, rightly

called  
Moon-maid in heaven above and, here below,

Earth's huntress queen? I note the garb  
succinct

Saving from smirch that purity of snow  
From breast to knee—snow's self with just

the tinct  
Of the apple-blossom's heart-blush. Ah, the

bow  
Slack-strung her fingers grasp, where, ivory-

linked  
Horn curving blends with horn, a moonlike

pair  
Which mimic the brow's crescent sparkling

so—  
As if a star's live restless fragment winked

Proud yet repugnant, captive in such hair!  
What hope along the hillside, what far bliss

Lets the crisp hair-plaits fall so low they kiss  
Those lucid shoulders? Must a morn so

blithe,  
Needs have its sorrow when the twang and hiss

Tell that from out thy sheaf one shaft makes  
writhe

Its victim, thou unerring Artemis?  
Why did the chamois stand so fair a mark

Arrested by the novel shape he dreamed  
Was bred of liquid marble in the dark

Depths of the mountain's womb which ever  
teemed

With novel births of wonder? Not one spark  
Of pity in that steel-grey glance which

gleamed  
At the poor hoof's protesting as it stamped

Idly the granite? Let me glide unseen  
From thy proud presence: well mayst thou

be queen  
Of all those strange and sudden deaths which

damped  
So oft Love's torch and Hymen's taper lit

For happy marriage till the maidens paled  
And perished on the temple-step, assailed

By—what except to envy must man's wit  
Impute that sure implacable release

Of life from warmth and joy? But death  
means peace.

## X.

Noon is the conqueror,—not a spray, nor leaf,  
Nor herb, nor blossom but has rendered up

Its morning dew: the valley seemed one cup  
Of cloud-smoke, but the vapour's reign was

brief,

Sun-smitten, see, it hangs—the filmy haze—  
 Grey-garmenting the herbless mountain-side,  
 To soothe the day's sharp glare: while far  
 and wide

Above unclouded burns the sky, one blaze  
 With fierce immitigable blue, no bird  
 Ventures to spot by passage. E'en of peaks  
 Which still presume there, plain each pale  
 point speaks

In wan transparency of waste incurred  
 By over-daring: far from me be such!  
 Deep in the hollow, rather, where combine,  
 Tree, shrub and briar to roof with shade and  
 cool

The remnant of some lily-strangled pool,  
 Edged round with mossy fringing soft and fine.  
 Smooth lie the bottom slabs, and overhead  
 Watch elder, bramble, rose, and service-tree  
 And one beneficent rich barberry.  
 Jewelled all over with fruit-pendants red.

What have I seen! O Satyr, well I know  
 How sad thy case, and what a world of woe  
 Was hid by the brown visage furry-framed  
 Only for mirth: who otherwise could think—  
 Marking thy mouth gape still on laughter's  
 brink,

Thine eyes, a-swim with merriment unnamed  
 But haply guessed at by their furtive wink?  
 And all the while a heart was panting sick  
 Behind that shaggy bulwark of thy breast—  
 Passion it was that made those breath-bursts  
 thick

I took for mirth subsiding into rest,  
 So, it was Lyda—she of all the train  
 Of forest-thridding nymphs,—'twas only she  
 Turned from thy rustic homage in disdain,  
 Saw but that poor uncouth outside of thee,  
 And, from her circling sisters, mocked a pain  
 Echo had pitied—whom Pan loved in vain—  
 For she was wishful to partake thy glee,  
 Mimic thy mirth—who loved her not again,  
 Savage for Lyda's sake. She crouches  
 there—

Thy cruel beauty, slumberously laid  
 Supine on heaped-up beast-skins, unaware  
 Thy steps have traced her to the briery glade,  
 Thy greedy hands disclose the cradling lain,  
 Thy hot eyes reach and revel on the maid!

## XI.

Now, what should this be for? The sun's  
 decline

Seems as he lingered lest he lose some act  
 Dread and decisive, some prodigious fact  
 Like thunder from the safe sky's sapphirine  
 About to alter earth's conditions, packed  
 With fate for nature's self that waits, aware  
 What mischief unsuspected in the air  
 Menaces momentarily a cataract.

Therefore it is that yonder space extends  
 Untrenched upon by any vagrant tree,  
 Shrub, weed well nigh; they keep their  
 bounds; leave free

The platform for what actors? Foes or  
 friends,

Here come they! trooping silent: heaven  
 suspends

Purpose the while they range themselves. I  
 see!

Bent on a battle, two vast powers agree  
 This present and no after-contest ends  
 One or the other's grasp at rule in reach  
 Over the race of man—host fronting host,  
 As statue statue fronts—wrath-molten each,  
 Solidified by hate,—earth halved almost,  
 To close once more in chaos. Yet two  
 shapes

Show prominent, each from the universe  
 Of minions round about him, that disperse  
 Like cloud-obstruction when a bolt escapes.  
 Who flames first? Macedonian is it thou?  
 Ay, and who fronts thee, King Darius, drapes  
 His form with purple, fillet-folds his brow.

## XII.

What, then the long day dies at last? Abrupt  
 The sun that seemed, in, stooping, sure to  
 melt

Our mountain ridge, is mastered: black the  
 belt

Of westward crags, his gold could not corrupt,  
 Barriers again the valley, lets the flow  
 Of lavish glory waste itself away

—Whither? For new climes, fresh eyes  
 breaks the day!  
 Night was not to be baffled. If the glow

Were all that's gone from us! Did clouds,  
afloat

So filmy but now, discard no rose,  
Sombre throughout the fleeciness that grows  
A sullen uniformity. I note  
Rather displeasure,—in the overspread  
Change from the swim of gold to one pale lead  
Oppressive to malevolence,—than late  
Those amorous yearnings when the aggregate  
Of cloudlets pressed that each and all might  
sate

Its passion and partake in relics red  
Of day's bequeathment: now, a frown  
instead

Estranges, and affrights who needs must fare  
On and on till his journey ends: but where?  
Caucasus? Lost now in the night. Away  
And far enough lies that Arcadia.  
The human heroes tread the world's dark way  
No longer. Yet I dimly see almost—  
Yes, for my last adventure! 'Tis a ghost.  
So drops away the beauty! There he stands  
Voiceless, scarce strives with deprecating  
hands.

## XIII.

Enough! Stop further fooling, De Lairese!  
My fault, not yours! Some fitter way ex-  
press

Heart's satisfaction that the Past indeed—  
Is past, gives way before Life's best and last,  
The all-including Future! What were life/  
Did soul stand still therein, forego her strife  
Through the ambiguous Present to the goal  
Of some all-reconciling Future? Soul,  
Nothing has been which shall not be bettered  
Hereafter,—leave the root, by law's decree:  
Whence springs the ultimate and perfect tree!  
Busy thee with unearthing root? Nay,  
climb—

Quit trunk, branch, leaf and flower—reach,  
rest sublime

Where fruitage ripens in the blaze of day!  
O'erlook, despise, forget, throw flower away,  
Intent on progress! No whit more than stop  
Ascend therewith to dally, screen the top  
Sufficiency of yield by interposed  
Twistwork bold foot gets free from! Where-  
fore-gleed

The poets—"Dream afresh old godlike  
shapes,

Recapture ancient fable that escapes,  
Push back reality, repeople earth  
With vanished falseness, recognize no worth!  
In fact new-born unless 'tis rendered back  
Pallid by fancy, as the western rack  
Of fading cloud bequeaths the lake some gleam  
Of its gone glory!"

## XIV.

Let things be—not seem,  
I counsel rather,—do, and nowise dream!  
Earth's young significance is all to learn:  
The dead Greek lore lies buried in the turn  
Where who seeks fire finds ashes. Ghost,  
forsooth!

What was the best Greece babbled of as  
truth?

"A shade, a wretched nothing,—sad, thin,  
drear,  
Cold, dark, it holds on to the lost loves here,  
If hand have haply sprinkled o'er the dead  
Three charitable dust-heaps, made mouth red  
One moment by the sip of sacrifice:

Just so much comfort thaws the stubborn ice  
Slow-thickening upward till it choke at length  
The last faint flutter craving—not for strength,  
Not beauty, not the riches and the rule!  
O'er men that made life life indeed." Sad  
school

Was Hades! Gladly,—might the dead but  
slink

To life back,—to the dregs once more would  
drink

Each interloper, drain the humblest cup  
Fate mixes for humanity,

## XV.

Cheer up,—  
Be death with me, as with Achilles erst,  
Of Man's calamities the last and worst:  
Take it so! By proved potency that still  
Makes perfect, be assured, come what come  
will,

What once lives never dies — what here  
attains

To a beginning, has no end, still gains

And never loses aught: when, where, and how—

Lies in Law's lap. What's death then?

Even now

With so much knowledge is it hard to bear

Brief interposing ignorance? Is care

For a creation found at fault just there—

There where the heart breaks bond and out-  
" runs time,

To reach, not follow what shall be?

#### XVI.

Here's rhyme

Such as one makes now,—say, when Spring  
repeats

That miracle the Greek Bard sadly greets:

"Spring for the tree and herb—no Spring  
for us!"

Let Spring come: why, a man salutes her thus:

Dance, yellows and whites and reds,—

Lead your gay orgy, leaves, stalks, heads

Astir with the wind in the tulip-beds!

There's sunshine; scarcely a wind at all

Disturbs starved grass and daisies small

On a certain mound by a churchyard wall.

Daisies and grass be my heart's bedfellows

On the mound wind spares and sunshine  
mellows:

Dance you, reds and whites and yellows!

#### WITH CHARLES AVISON.

[See "Dictionary of National Biography," vol. ii. Charles Avison was born at Newcastle in 1710 (?), and died there in 1770. He was organist of St. Nicholas' Church. He published in 1752 "An Essay on Musical Expression," which attracted much notice, and is still respected. Avison preferred the French and Italian schools of music to the German.]

#### I.

How strange!—but, first of all, the little fact  
Which led my fancy forth. This bitter morn  
Showed me no object in the stretch forlorn.  
Of garden-ground beneath my window,  
backed

By yon worn wall wherefrom the creeper,  
tacked

To clothe its brickwork, hangs now, rent and  
racked

By five months' cruel winter,—showed no  
torn

And tattered ravage worse for eyes to see.

Than just one ugly space of clearance, left  
Bare even of the bones which used to be

Warm wrappage, safe embracement: this  
one cleft—

—O what a life and beauty filled it up

Startlingly, when methought the rude clay  
cup

Ran over with poured bright wine! 'Twas  
a bird

Breast-deep there, tugging at his prize, de-  
terred

No whit by the fast-falling snow-flake: gain  
Such prize my blackcap must by might and

main—

The cloth-shred, still a-flutter from its nail

That fixed a spray once. Now, what told  
the tale

To thee,—no townsman but born orchard-  
thief,—

That here—surpassing moss-tuft, beard from  
sheaf

Of sun-scorched barley, horsehairs long and  
stout;

All proper country-pillage—here, no doubt,  
Was just the scrap to steal should line thy  
nest

Superbly? Off he flew, his bill possessed

The booty sure to set his wife's each wing

Greenly a-quiver. How they climb and cling,  
Hang parrot-wise to bough, these blackcaps!

Strange

Seemed to a city-dweller that the finch

Should stray so far to forage: at a pinch,

Was not the fine wool's self within his range  
—Filchings on every fence? But no: the

need

Was of this rag of manufacture, spoiled

By art, and yet by nature near unsoiled,

New-suited to what scheming finch would  
breed

In comfort, this uncomfortable March.

Yet—by the first pink blossom on the larch !—  
 This was scarce stranger than that memory,—  
 In want of what should cheer the stay-at-home,  
 My soul,—must straight clap pinion, well  
 nigh roam  
 A century back, nor once close plume, descry  
 The appropriate rag to plunder, till she  
 pounced—  
 Pray, on what relic of a brain long still?  
 What old-world work proved forage for the  
 bill

Of memory the far-flyer? "March" announced,

I verily believe, the dead and gone  
 Name of a music-maker: one of such  
 In England as did little or did much,  
 But, doing, had their day once. Avison!  
 Singly and solely for an air of thine,  
 Bold-stepping "March," foot stept to ere my  
 hand

Could stretch an octave, I o'erlooked the  
 band

Of majesties familiar, to decline  
 On thee—not too conspicuous on the list  
 Of worthies who by help of pipe or wire  
 Expressed in sound rough rage or soft desire—  
 Thou, whilom of Newcastle organist!

### III.

So much could one—well, thinnish air effect.  
 Am I ungrateful? for, your March, styled  
 "Grand,"

Did veritably seem to grow, expand,  
 And greatness up to title as, unchecked,  
 Dream-marchers marched, kept marching,  
 slow and sure,

In time, to tune, unchangeably the same,  
 From nowhere into nowhere,—out they came,  
 Onward they passed, and in they went. No  
 lure

Of novel modulation pricked the flat  
 Forthright persisting melody,—no hint  
 That discord, sound asleep beneath the  
 flint,

—Struck—might spring spark-like, claim due  
 tit-for-tat,

Quenched in a concord. No! Yet, such  
 the might.

Of quietude's immutability,  
 That somehow coldness gathered warmth,  
 well nigh

Quickened—which could not be!—grew  
 burning-bright

With life-shriek, cymbal-clash and trumpet-  
 blare,

To drum-accentuation: pacing turned  
 Striding, and striding grew gigantic, spurned  
 At last the narrow space 'twixt earth and air,  
 So shook me back into my sober self."

### IV.

And where woke I? The March had set me  
 down

There whence I plucked the measure, as his  
 brown

Frayed flannel-bit my blackcap. Great John  
 Relfe,

Master of mine, learned, redoubtable,  
 It little needed thy consummate skill  
 To fitly figure such a bass! The key  
 Was—should not memory play me false—  
 well, C.

Ay, with the Greater Third, in Triple Time,  
 Three crotchets to a bar: no change, I grant,  
 Except from Tonic down to Dominant.  
 And yet—and yet—if I could put in rhyme  
 The manner of that marching!—which had  
 stopped

—I wonder, where?—but that my weak self  
 dropped

From out the ranks, to rub eyes disentranced  
 And feel that, after all the way advanced,  
 Back must I foot it, I and my compeers,  
 Only to reach, across a hundred years,  
 The bandsman Avison whose little book  
 And large tune thus had led me the long  
 way

(As late a rag my blackcap) from to-day  
 And to-day's music-manufacture,—Brahms,  
 Wagner, Dvorak, Liszt,—to where—trumpets,  
 shawms,  
 Show yourselves joyful!—Handel reigns—  
 supreme?

By no means! Buononcini's work is theme

For fit laudation of the impartial few :  
 (We stand in England, mind you!) Fashion too  
 Favours Geminiani<sup>1</sup>—of those choice  
 Concertos: now there wants a certain voice!  
 Raised in thy favour likewise, famed Pepusch<sup>2</sup>  
 Dear to our great-grandfathers! In a bush  
 Of Doctor's wig, they prized thee timing beats  
 While Greenway trilled "Alexis." Such  
     were feats  
 Of music in thy day—dispute who list—  
 Avison, of Newcastle organist!

## v.

And here's your music all alive once more—  
 As once it was alive, at least: just so  
 The figured worthies of a waxwork-show  
 Attest—such people, years and years ago,  
 Looked thus when outside' death had life  
     below,

—Could say "We are now," not "We were  
 of yore,"

—"Feel how our pulses leap!" and not "Ex-  
 plore—

Explain why quietude has settled o'er  
 Surface once all-awork!" Ay, such a "Suite"  
 Roused heart to rapture, such a "Fugue"  
     would catch

Soul heavenwards up, when time was: why  
     attach

Blame to exhausted faultlessness, no match  
 For fresh achievement? Feat once—ever feat!  
 How can completion grow still more complete?

Hear Avison! He tenders evidence  
 That music in his day as much absorbed  
 Heart and soul then as Wagner's music now.  
 Perfect from centre to circumference—  
 Orbed to the full can be but fully orb'd:  
 And yet—and yet—whence comes it that  
     "O Thou"—

Sighed by the soul at eve to Hesperus—  
 Will not again take wing and fly away  
 (Since fatal Wagner fixed it fast for us)  
 In some unmodulated minor? Nay,  
 Even by Handel's help!

<sup>1</sup> An Italian fiddler, who came to London in 1714.

<sup>2</sup> A German musician, organist at the Charter House; died 1752.

## vi.

I state it thus:

There is no truer truth obtainable  
 By Man than comes of music, "Soul"—  
     (accept

A word which vaguely names what no adept  
 In word-use fits and fixes so that still  
 Thing shall not slip word's fetter and remain  
 Innominate as first, yet, free again,  
 Is no less recognized the absolute  
 Fact underlying that same other fact  
 Concerning which no cavil can dispute  
 Our nomenclature when we call it "Mind"—  
 Something not Matter)—"Soul," who seeks  
     shall find

Distinct beneath that something. You exact  
 An illustrative image? This may suit.

## vii.

We see a work: the worker works behind,  
 Invisible himself. Suppose his act  
 Be to o'erarch a gulf: he digs, transports,  
 Shapes and, through enginery—all sizes, sorts,  
 Lays stone by stone until a floor compact  
 Proves our bridged causeway. So work  
     Mind—by stress

Of faculty, with loose facts, more or less,  
 Builds up our solid knowledge: all the  
     same,

Underneath rolls what Mind may hide not  
 tame,  
 An element which works beyond our guess,  
 Soul, the unsounded sea—whose lift of surge,  
 Spite of all superstructure, lets emerge,  
 In flower and foam, Feeling from out the  
     deeps

Mind arrogates no mastery upon—  
 Distinct indisputably. Has there gone  
 To dig up, drag forth, render smooth: from  
     rough

Mind's flooring,—operosity enough?  
 Still the successive labour of each inch,  
 Who lists may learn: from the last turn of  
     winch

That let the polished slab-stone find its place,  
 To the first prod of pick-axe at the base  
 Of the unquarried mountain;—what was all  
 Mind's varied process except natural,

Nay, easy, even, to descry, describe,  
After our fashion? "So worked Mind: its  
tribe

Of senses ministrant above, below,  
Far, near, or now or haply long ago  
Brought to pass knowledge." But Soul's sea,  
—drawn whence,

Fed how, forced whither,—by what evidence  
Of ebb and flow, that's felt beneath the tread,  
Soul has its course 'neath Mind's work over-  
head,—

Who tells of, tracks to source the founts of  
Soul?

Yet wherefore heaving sway and restless roll  
This side and that, except to emulate  
Stability above? To match and mate  
Feeling with knowledge,—make as manifest  
Soul's work as Mind's work, turbulence as  
rest,

Hates, loves, joys, woes, hopes, fears, that  
rise and sink

Ceaselessly, passion's transient flit and wink,  
A ripple's tinting or a spume-sheet's spread  
Whitening the wave,—to strike all this life  
dead,

Run mercury into a mould like lead,  
And henceforth have the plain result to  
show—

How we Feel, hard and fast as what we  
Know—

This were the prize and is the puzzle!—  
which

Music essays to solve: and here's the hitch  
That baulks her of full triumph else to boast.

## VIII.

All Arts endeavour this, and she the most  
Attains thereto, yet fails of touching: why?  
Does Mind get Knowledge from Art's  
ministry?

What's known once is known ever: Arts  
arrange,

Dissociate, re-distribute, interchange  
Part with part, lengthen, broaden, high or

Construct their bravest,—still such pains pro-  
duce

Change, not creation: simply what lay loose

At first lies firmly after, what design  
Was faintly traced in hesitating line  
Once on a time, grows firmly resolute  
Henceforth and evermore. Now, could we  
shoot

Liquidity into a mould,—some way  
Arrest Soul's evanescent moods, and keep  
Unalterably still the forms that leap  
To life for once by help of Art,—which  
years

To save its capture: Poetry discerns,  
Painting is 'ware of passion's rise and fall,  
Bursting, subsidence, intermixture—all  
A-seethe within the gulf. Each Art a-strain  
Would stay the apparition,—nor in vain:  
The Poet's word-mesh, Painter's sure and  
swift

Colour-and-line-throw—proud the prize they  
lift!

Thus felt Man and thus looked Man,—pas-  
sions caught

It the midway swim of sea,—not much, if  
aught,  
Of nether-brooding loves, hates, hopes and  
fears,

Enwombed past Art's disclosure. Fleet the  
years,

And still the Poet's page holds Helena  
At gaze from topmost Troy—"But where  
are they,

My brothers, in the armament I name  
Hero by hero? Can it be that shame  
For their lost sister holds them from the war?"

—Knowing not they already slept afar  
Each of them in his own dear native land.

Still on the Painter's fresco, from the hand  
Of God takes Eve the life-spark whereunto  
She trembles up from nothingness. Outdō

Both of them, Music! Dredging deeper yet,  
Drag into day,—by sound, thy master-net,—

The abysmal bottom-growth, ambiguous thing  
Unbroken of a branch, palpitating

With limbs' play and life's semblance! There  
it lies,

Marvel and mystery, of mysteries  
And marvels, most to love and laud thee for!

Save it from chance and change we most  
abhor!



Give momentary feeling permanence,  
 So that thy capture hold, a century hence,  
 Truth's very heart of truth as, safe to-day,  
 The Painter's Eve, the Poet's Helena,  
 Still rapturously bend, afar still throw  
 The wistful gaze! Thanks, Homer, Angelo!  
 Could Music rescue thus from Soul's profound,  
 Give feeling immortality by sound,  
 Then were she queenliest of Arts! Alas—  
 As well expect the rainbow not to pass!  
 "Praise 'Radaminta'!"—love attains therein  
 To perfect utterance! Pity—what shall win  
 Thy secret like 'Rinaldo'?"—so men said:  
 Once all was perfume—now, the flower is  
 dead—

They spied tints, sparks have left the spar!

Love, hate,

Joy, fear, survive,—alike importunate  
 As ever to go walk the world again,  
 Nor ghost-like pant for outlet all in vain  
 Till Music loose them, fit each filmily  
 With form enough to know and name it by  
 For any recognizer sure of ken  
 And sharp of ear, no grosser denizen  
 Of earth than needs be. Nor to such appeal  
 Is Music long obdurate: off they steal—  
 How gently, dawn-doomed phantoms! back  
 come they

Full-blooded with new crimson of broad day—  
 Passion made palpable once more. Ye look  
 Your last on Handel? Gaze your first on  
 Gluck!

Why wistful search, O waning ones, the chart  
 Of stars for you while Haydn, while Mozart  
 Occupies heaven? These also, fanned to fire,  
 Flamboyant wholly,—so perfections tire,  
 Whiten to wanness, till . . . let others note  
 The ever-new invasion!

I devote

Rather my modicum of parts to use  
 What power may yet avail to re-infuse  
 (In fancy, please you!) sleep that looks like  
 death

With momentary liveliness, lend breath

1 Operas by Handel.

To make the torpor half inhale. O Relfe,  
 An all-unworthy pupil, from the shelf  
 Of thy laboratory, dares unstop  
 Bottle, ope box, extract thence pinch and  
 drop

Of dusts and dews a many thou didst shrine  
 Each in its right receptacle, assign  
 To each its proper office, letter large  
 Label and label, then with solemn charge,  
 Reviewing learnedly the list complete  
 Of chemical reactives, from thy feet  
 Push down the same to me, attent below,  
 Power in abundance: armed wherewith  
 I go

To play the enlivener. Bring good antique  
 stuff!

Was it alight once? Still lives spark enough  
 For breath to quicken, run the smouldering  
 ash

Red right-through. What, "stone-dead"  
 were fools so rash

As style my Avison, because he lacked  
 Modern appliance, spread out phrase un-  
 racked

By modulations fit to make each hair  
 Stiffen upon his wig? See there—and there!  
 I sprinkle my reactives, pitch broadcast  
 Discords and resolutions, turn aghast  
 Melody's easy-going, jostle law  
 With licence, modulate (no Bach in awe),  
 Change enharmonically (Hudl to thank),  
 And lo, upstart the flamelets,—what was  
 blank

Turns scarlet, purple, crimson! Straightway  
 scanned

By eyes that like new lustre—Love once  
 more

Years through the Largo, Hatred as before  
 Rages in the Rubato: e'en thy March,  
 My Avison, which, sooth to say—(ne'er arch  
 Eyebrows in anger!)—timed, in Georgian  
 years

The step precise of British Grenadiers  
 To such a nicety,—if score I crowd,  
 If rhythm I break, if beats I vary,—tap  
 At bar's off-starting turns true thunder-clep,  
 Ever the pace augmented till—what's here?  
 Titanic striding toward Olympus!

## Fear

No such irreverent innovation ! Still  
 (slide on, go rolling, water-like, at will—  
 Nay, were thy melody in monotone,  
 The due three-parts dispensed with !

## XI.

This alone

Comes of my tiresome talking : Music's throne  
 Seats somebody whom somebody unseats,  
 And whom in turn—by who knows what new  
 feats

Of strength,—shall somebody as sure push  
 down,

Consign him dispossessed of sceptre, crown,  
 And orb imperial—whereto ?—Never dream  
 That what once lived shall ever die ! They  
 seem

Dead—do they ? lapsed things lost in limbo ?  
 Bring

Our life to kindle theirs, and straight each  
 king

Starts, you shall see, stands up, from head to  
 foot

No inch that is not Purcell ! Wherefore ?  
 (Suit

Measure to subject, first—no marching on

Yet in thy bold C Major, Avison,

As suited step a minute since : no : wait—

Into the minor key first modulate—

Gently with A, now—in the Lesser Third !)

## XII.

Of all the lamentable debts incurred

By Man through buying knowledge, this were  
 worst :

That he should find his last gain prove his first  
 Was futile—merely nescience absolute,

Not knowledge in the bud which holds a fruit

Haply undreamed of in the soul's Spring-tide,

Pursd in the petals Summer opens wide,

And Autumn, withering, rounds to perfect  
 ripe,—

Not this,—but ignorance, a blur to wipe

From human records, late it graced so much,

"Truth—this attainment ? Ah, but such

and such

Beliefs of yore seemed inexpugnable

When we attained them ! E'en as they, so  
 will

This their successor have the due morn, noon,  
 Evening and night—just as an old-world  
 tune

Wears out and drops away, until who hears  
 Smilingly questions—'This it was brought  
 tears

Once to all eyes,—this roused heart's rapture  
 once ?'

So will it be with truth that, for the nonce,  
 Styles itself truth perennial : 'ware its wile !  
 Knowledge turns nescience,—foremost on the  
 file,

Simply proves first of our delusions."

Now—

Blare it forth, bold C Major ! Lift thy brow,  
 Man, the immortal, that was never fooled

With gifts no gifts at all, nor ridiculed—  
 Man knowing—he who nothing knew ! As

Hope,

Fear, Joy, and Grief,—though ampler stretch  
 and scope

They seek and find in novel rhythm, fresh  
 phrase,—

Were equally existent in far days'

Of Music's dim beginning—even so,

Truth was at full within thee long ago,

Alive as now it takes what latest shape

May startle thee by strangeness. Truths  
 escape

Time's insufficient garniture : they fade,

They fall—those sheathings now grown sere,  
 whose aid

Was infinite to truth they wrapped, saved fine  
 And free through March frost : May dews

crystalline

Nourish truth merely,—does June boast the  
 fruit

As—not new vesture merely but, to boot,

Novel creation ? Soon shall fade and fall

Myth after myth—the husk-like lies I call

New truth's corolla-safeguard : Autumn  
 comes,

So much the better !

## XIV.

Therefore—bang the drums,  
Blow the trumpets, Avison! March-  
motive? that's  
Truth which endures resetting. Sharps and  
flats,  
Lavish at need, shall dance athwart thy  
score  
When ophicleide and bombardon's uproar  
Mate the approaching trample, even now  
Big in the distance—or my ears deceive—  
Of federated England, fitly weave  
March-music for the Future!

## XV.

Or suppose  
Back, and not forward, transformation goes?  
Once more some sable-stoled procession—  
say,  
From Little-ease to Tyburn—wends its way,  
Out of the dungeon to the gallows-tree  
Where heading, hacking, hanging is to be  
Of half-a-dozen recusants—this day  
Three hundred years ago! How duly drones  
Elizabethan plain-song—dim antique  
Grown clarion-clear the while I humbly wreak  
A classic vengeance on thy March! It  
moans—  
Larges and Longs and Breves displacing  
quite  
Crotchet-and-quaver pertness—brushing bars  
Aside and filling vacant sky with stars  
Hidden till now that day returns to night.

## XVI.

Nor night nor day: one purpose move us both,  
Be thy mood mine! As thou wast minded,  
Man's  
The cause our music champions: I were loth  
To think we cheered our troop to Preston Pans  
Ignobly: back to times of England's best!  
Parliament stands for privilege—life and limb  
Guards Hollis, Haselrig, Strode, Hampden,  
Pym,  
The famous Five. There's rumour of arrest.  
Bring up the Train Bands, Southwark!  
They protest:  
Shall we not all join chorus? Mark the hymn,

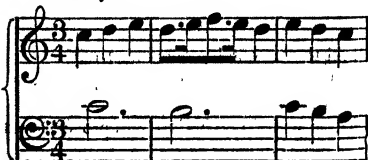
—Rough, rude, robustious—homely heart  
a-throb,  
Harsh voice a-hallo, as becoms the mob!  
How good is noise! what's silence but despair  
Of making sound match gladness never  
there?  
Give me some great glad "subject," glorious  
Bach,  
Where cannon-roar not organ-peal we lack!  
Join in, give voice robustious rude and  
rough,—  
Avison helps—so heart lend noise enough!

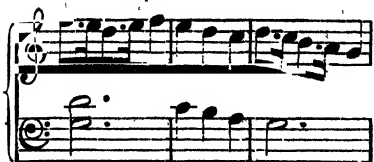
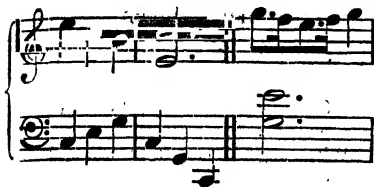
Fife, trump, drum, sound! and singers then,  
Marching, say "Pym, the man of men!"  
Up, heads, your proudest—out, throats, your  
loudest—  
"Somerset's Pym!"

Strafford from the block, Eliot from the den,  
Foes, friends, shout "Pym, our citizen!"  
Wail, the foes he quelled,—hail, the friends  
he held,  
"Tavistock's Pym!"

Hearts prompt heads, hands that ply the pen  
Teach babes unborn the where and when  
—Tyrants, he braved them,—patriots, he saved  
them—  
"Westminster's Pym!"

Lustily.





## FUST AND HIS FRIENDS.

## AN EPILOGUE.

[Fust or Faust was a German printer, and a partner of Gutenberg from about 1450 to 1455. On the dissolution of the partnership, Fust carried on the business with his son-in-law, Peter Schöffer. Whether Fust was really the inventor of the movable types, is uncertain.]

*Inside the House of Fust, Mayence, 1457.*

## FIRST FRIEND.

Up, up, up—next step of the staircase  
Lands us, lo, at the chamber of dread!

## SECOND FRIEND.

Locked and barred?

## THIRD FRIEND.

Door open—the rare case!

## FOURTH FRIEND:

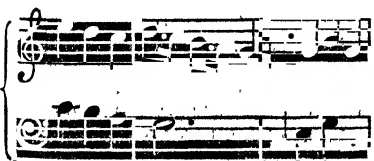
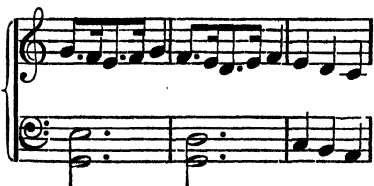
Ay, there he leans—lost wretch!

## FIFTH FRIEND.

His head  
Sunk on his desk 'twixt his arms outspread!

## SIXTH FRIEND.

Hallo, — wake, man, ere God thunderstrike  
Mayence  
— Mulct for thy sake who art Satan's,  
John Fust!  
Satan installed here, God's rule in abeyance,  
Mayence some morning may crumble to  
dust.  
Answer our questions thou shalt and thou  
must!



## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Softly and fairly ! Wherefore a-gloom ?

Greet us, thy gossipry, cousin and sib !

Raise the forlorn brow, Fust ! Make room—

Let daylight through arms which, enfold-  
ing thee, crib

From those clenched lids the comfort of  
sunshine !

## FIRST FRIEND.

So glib

Thy tongue slides to "comfort" already ?

Not mine !

Behoves us deal roundly : the wretch is  
distraught

—Too well I guess wherefore ! Behoves a  
Divine

—Such as I, by grace, boast me—to  
threaten one caught

In the enemy's toils,—setting "comfort" at  
nought.

## SECOND FRIEND.

Nay, Brother, so hasty ? I heard—nor long  
since—

Of a certain Black Artsman who,—help-  
lessly bound

By rash pact with Satan,—through paying—  
why mince

The matter?—fit price to the Church,—  
safe and sound

Full a year after death in his grave-clothes  
was found.

Whereas 'tis notorious the Fiend claims his due  
During lifetime,—comes clawing, with  
talons aflame,

The soul from the flesh-rags left smoking  
and blue :

So it happed with John Faust ; lest John  
Fust fare the same,—

Look up, I adjure thee by God's holy name !

For neighbours and friends—no foul hell-  
brood flock we !

Saith Solomon "Words of the wise are as  
goads ;"

Ours prick but to startle from torpor, set free  
Soul and sense from death's drowse.

## FIRST FRIEND.

And soul, wakened, unloads

Much sin by confession : no mere palinodes !

—"I was youthful and wanton, am old yet  
no sage :

When angry I cursed, struck and slew :  
did I want ?

Right and left did I rob : though no war I  
dared wage

With the Church (God forbid !)—harm her  
least ministrant—

Still I outraged all else. Now that strength  
is grown scant,

I am probity's self"—no such bleatings as  
these !

But avowal of guilt so enormous, it baulks  
Tongue's telling. Yet penitence prompt may  
appease

God's wrath at thy bond with the Devil  
who stalks

—Strides hither to strangle thee !

## FUST.

Childhood so talks.

Not rare wit nor ripe age—ye boast them,  
my neighbours !—

Should lay such a charge on your towns-  
man, this Fust

Who, known for a life spent in pleasures and  
labours

If freakish yet venial, could scarce be  
induced

To traffic with fiends.

## FIRST FRIEND.

So, my words have unloosed

A plie from those pale lips corrugate but now ?

## FUST.

Lost count me, yet not as ye lean to surmise.

## FIRST FRIEND.

To surmise ? to establish ! Unbury that brow !  
Look up, that thy judge may read clear in  
thine eyes !

## SECOND FRIEND.

By your leave, Brother Barnabite! Mine to advise!

—Who arraign thee, John Fust! What was bruited erewhile

Now bellows through Mayence. All cry  
—thou hast trucked

Salvation away for lust's solace! Thy smile  
Takes its hue from hell's smoulder!

## FUST.

Too certain! I sucked  
—Got drunk at the nipple of sense.

## SECOND FRIEND.

Thou hast ducked—

Art drowned there, say rather! Faugh—  
fleshly disport!

How else but by help of Sir Belial didst win  
That Venus-like lady, no drudge of thy sort  
Could lure to become his accomplice in sin?  
Folk nicknamed her Helen of Troy!

## FIRST FRIEND.

Best begin

At the very beginning. Thy father,—all knew,  
A mere goldsmith . . .

## FUST.

Who knew him,  
perchance may know this—  
He dying left much gold and jewels no few:  
Whom these help to court with but seldom  
shall miss  
The love of a leman: true witchcraft, I wis!

## FIRST FRIEND.

Dost flout me?, 'Tis said, in debauchery's  
guild  
Admitted prime guttler and guzzler—O  
swine!—  
To honour thy headship, those tosspots: so  
swilled  
That out of their table there sprouted a vine  
Whence each claimed a cluster, awaiting thy  
sign

To out knife, oft mouthful: when—who  
could suppose

Such malice in magic?—each sot woke and  
found

Cold steel but an inch from the neighbour's  
red nose

He took for a grape-bunch!

## FUST.

Does that so astound  
Sagacity such as ye boast,—who surround

Your mate with eyes staring, hairs standing erect  
At his magical feats? Are good burghers  
unversed

In the humours of toping? Full oft, I suspect,  
Ye, counting your fingers, call thumbkin  
their first,

And reckon a groat every guilder disbursed.

What marvel if wags, while the skinker fast  
brimmed

Their glass with rare tipples' enticement,  
should gloat

—Befooled and befuddled—through optics  
drink-dimmed—

On this draught and that, till each found  
in his throat

Our Rhenish smack rightly as Raphael? For,  
note—

They fancied—their fuddling deceived them  
so grossly—

That liquor sprang out of the table itself  
Through gimlet-holes drilled there,—nor  
noticed now closely

The skinker kept plying my guests, from  
the shelf

O'er their heads, with the potable madness.  
No elf

Had need to persuade them a vine rose  
umbrageous,

Fruit-bearing, thirst-quenching! Enough!  
I confess

To many such fool-pranks, but none so out-  
rageous

That Satan was called in to help me: excess  
I own to, I grieve at—no more and no less.

## SECOND FRIEND.

Strange honours were heaped on thee—medal  
for breast,

Chain for neck, sword for thigh: not a  
lord of the land

But acknowledged thee peer! What am-  
bition possessed

A goldsmith by trade, with craft's grime  
on his hand,

To seek such associates?

## FUST.

Spare taunts! Understand—

I submit me! Of vanities under the sun,

Pride seized me at last as concupiscence first;  
Crapulosity ever: true Fiends, everyone,

Haled this way and that my poor soul:  
thus amerced—

Forgive and forget me!

## FIRST FRIEND.

Had flesh sinned the worst,

Yet help were in counsel: the Church could  
absolve:

But say not men truly thou barredst escape  
By signing and sealing . . .

## SECOND FRIEND.

On me must devolve

The task of extracting . . .

## FIRST FRIEND.

Shall Barnabites ape  
Us Dominican experts?

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Nay, Masters,—agape

When Hell yawns for a soul, 'tis myself  
claim the task

Of extracting, by just one plain question,  
God's truth!

Where's Peter Genesheim thy partner? I ask  
Why, cloistered up still in thy room, the  
pale youth

Slaves, tongue-tied—thy trade brooks no  
tattling forsooth!

No less he, thy *famulus*, suffers entrapping,  
Succumbs to good fellowship: barrel  
a-broach

Runs freely nor needs any subsequent tapping:  
Quoth Peter "That room, none but I dare  
approach,  
Holds secrets will help me to ride in my coach."

He prattles, we profit: in brief, he assures  
Thou hast taught him to speak so that all  
men may hear

—Each alike, wide world over, Jews, Pagans,  
Turks, Moors,  
The same as we Christians—speech heard  
far and near

At one and the same magic moment!

## FUST.

That's, clear!

Said he—how?

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Is it like he was licensed to learn?

Who doubts but thou dost this by aid of  
the Fiend?

Is it so? So it is, for thou smilest! Go, burn  
To ashes, since such proves thy portion,  
unscreened

By bell, book and candle! Yet lately I weened

Balm yet was in Gilead,—some healing in store  
For the friend of my bosom. Men said  
thou wast sunk

In a sudden despondency: not, as before,  
Fust gallant and gay with his pottle and  
punk,

But sober, sad, sick as one yesterday drunk!

## FUST.

Spare Fust, then, thus contrite! who,  
youthful and healthy,

Equipped for life's struggle with culture of  
mind,

Sound flesh and sane soul in coherence, born  
wealthy,

Nay, wise—how he wasted endowment de-  
signed

For the glory of God and the good of mankind!

That much were misused such occasions of grace  
Ye well may upbraid him, who bows to  
the rod.

But this should bid anger to pity give place—  
He has turned from the wrong, in the right  
path to plod,  
Makes amends to mankind and craves pardon  
of God.

Yea, friends, even now from my lips the  
*Heureka*—

Soul saved!" was nigh bursting—unduly  
elate!

I have I brought Man advantage, or hatched  
—so to speak—a

Strange serpent, no cygnet? 'Tis this I  
debate

Within me. Forbear, and leave Fust to his  
fate!

FIRST FRIEND.

So object, late lofty? Methinks I spy respite,  
Make clean breast, discover what mysteries  
hide

In thy room there!

SECOND FRIEND.

Ay, out with them! Do Satan despite!  
Remember what caused his undoing was pride!

FIRST FRIEND.

Dumb devil! Remains one resource to be  
tried!

SECOND FRIEND.

Exorcize!

SEVENTH FRIEND.

Nay, first—is there any remembers  
In substance that potent "*Ne pulvis*"—  
a psalm

Whereof some live spark haply lurks mid the  
embers

Which choke in my brain. Talk of "*Gilead*  
and balm"?

I mind me, sung half through, this gave such  
a qualm

To Asmodeus inside of a Hussite, that, queasy,  
He broke forth in brimstone with curses.  
I'm strong

In—at least the commencement: the rest  
should go easy,  
Friends helping. "*Ne pulvis et ignis*" . . .

SIXTH FRIEND.

All wrong!

FIFTH FRIEND.

I've conned till I captured the whole.

SEVENTH FRIEND.

Get along!

"*Ne pulvis et cinis superbe te geras,  
Nam fulmina*" . . .

SIXTH FRIEND.

Fiddlestick! Peace, dolts and dorr!  
Thus runs it "*Ne Numinis fulmina feras*"—  
Then "*Hominis perfidi justa sunt sors  
Fulmen et grando et horrida mors.*"

SEVENTH FRIEND.

You blunder. "*Irati ne*" . . .

SIXTH FRIEND.

Mind your own business!

FIFTH FRIEND.

I do not so badly, who gained the monk's  
leave  
To study an hour his choice parchment. A  
dizziness  
May well have surprised me. No Christian  
dares thieve,  
Or I scarce had returned him his treasure.  
These cleave:

"*Nos pulvis et cinis, tremantes, gementes,  
Venimus*"—some such word—"ad te,  
Domine.  
Da lumen, firvamen, ut sancti sequentes  
Cor . . . corda . . ." Plague take it!

SEVENTH FRIEND.

—"*erecta sint spe*:"  
Right text, ringing rhyme, and ripe Latin  
for me!



## SIXTH FRIEND.

A Canon's self wrote it me 'fair: I was  
tempted

To part with the sheepskin.

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Didst grasp and let go  
Such a godsend, thou Judas? My purse had  
been emptied  
Ere part with the prize!

## FUST.

Do I dream? Say ye so?  
Clouds break, then! Move, world! I have  
gained my "*Pou sto*"!

I am saved: Archimedes, salute me!

## OMNES.

Assistance!  
Help, Angels! He summons . . . Aroint  
thee!—by name,  
His familiar!

## FUST.

Approach!

## OMNES.

Devil, keep thy due distance!

## FUST.

Be tranquillized, townsmen! The know-  
ledge ye claim  
Behold, I prepare to impart. Praise or  
blame,—

Your blessing or banning, whatever betide me,  
At last I accept. The slow travail of years,  
The long-teeming brain's birth—applaud me,  
deride me,—  
At last claims revealment. Wait!

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Wait till appears  
Uncaged Archimedes cooped-up there?

## SECOND FRIEND.

Who fears?  
Here's have at thee!

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Correctly now! "*Pulvis et cinis*" . . .

## FUST.

The verse ye so value, it happens I hold  
In my memory safe from *initium* to *finis*.  
Word for word, I produce you the whole,  
plain enrolled,  
Black letters, white paper—no scribe's red  
and gold!

## OMNES.

Aroint thee!

## FUST.

I go and return.  
[*He enters the inner room.*]

## FIRST FRIEND.

Ay, 'tis "*ibis*"  
No doubt: but as boldly "*redibis*"—who'll  
say?  
I rather conjecture "*in Orco feribis*!"

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

Come, neighbours!

## SIXTH FRIEND.

I'm with you! Show courage and stay  
Hell's outbreak? Sirs, cowardice here wins  
the day!

## FIFTH FRIEND.

What luck had that student of Bamberg who  
ventured  
To peep in the cell where a wizard of  
note  
Was busy in getting some black deed debentured  
By Satan? In dog's guise there sprang at  
his throat  
A flame-breathing fury. Fust favours, I note,

An ugly huge lurcher!

## SEVENTH FRIEND.

If I placed reliance  
As thou, on the beads thou art telling so  
fast,  
I'd risk just a peep through the keyhole.

SIXTH FRIEND.

Appliance  
Of ear might be safer. Five minutes are  
past.

OMNES.

Saints, save us! The door is thrown open  
at last!

FUST (*re-enters, the door closing behind him*).

As I promised, behold I perform! Appre-  
hend you

The object I offer is poison or pest?  
Receive without harm from the hand I ex-  
tend you

A gift that shall set every scruple at rest!  
Shrink back from mere paper-strips? Try  
them and test!

Still hesitate? Myk, was it thou who la-  
mentedst

Thy five wits clean failed thee to render  
aright

A poem read once and no more?—who re-  
pentedst

Vile pelf had induced thee to banish from  
sight

The characters none but our clerics indite?

Take and keep!

FIRST FRIEND.

Blessed Mary and all Saints about her!

SECOND FRIEND.

What imps deal so deftly,—five minutes  
suffice

To play thus the penman?

THIRD FRIEND.

By Thomas the Doubter,  
Five minutes, no more!

FOURTH FRIEND.

Out on arts that entice  
Such scribes to do homage!

FIFTH FRIEND.

Stay! Once—and now twice—

Yea, a third time, my sharp eye completes  
the inspection

Offline after line, the whole series, and finds  
Each letter join each—not a fault for de-  
tection!

Such upstrokes, such downstrokes, such  
strokes of all kinds

In the criss-cross, all perfect!

SIXTH FRIEND.

There's nobody minds

His quill-craft with more of a conscience,  
o'erscratches

A sheepskin more nimbly and surely with  
ink,

Than Paul the Sub-Prior: here's paper that  
matches

His parchment with letter on letter, no link  
Overleapt—underlost!

SEVENTH FRIEND.

No erasure, I think—

No blot, I am certain!

FUST.

Accept the new treasure!

SIXTH FRIEND.

I remembered full half!

SEVENTH FRIEND.

But who other than I  
(Bear witness, bystanders!) when he broke  
the measure

Repaired fault with "*fulmen*"?

FUST.

Put bickerings by!  
Here's for thee—thee—and thee, too: at  
need a supply [*distributing Proofs*.

For Mayence, though seventy times seven  
should muster!

How now? All so feeble of faith that no face  
Which fronts me but whitens—or yellows,  
were juster?

Speak out lest I summon my Spirits!

OMNES.  
Grace—grace!  
Call none of thy—helpmates! We'll answer  
apace!

My paper—and mine—and mine also—they  
vary  
In nowise—agree in each tittle and jot!  
Fust, how—why was this?

FUST.  
Shall such "Cur" miss a "quare"?  
Within, there! Throw doors wide! Be-  
hold who complot  
To abolish the scribe's work—blur, blunder  
and blot!

[The doors open, and the Press  
is discovered in operation.  
Brave full-bodied birth of this brain that con-  
ceived thee  
In splendour and music,—sustained the  
slow drag  
Of the days stretched to years dim with  
doubt,—yet believed thee,  
Had faith in thy first leap of life! Pulse  
might flag—  
—Mine fluttered how faintly!—Arch-moment  
might lag

Its longest—I bided, made light of endurance,  
Held hard by the hope of an advent which  
—dreamed,

Is done now: night yields to the dawn's  
reassurance:

I have thee—I hold thee—my fancy that  
seemed,  
My fact that proves palpable! Ay, Sirs, I  
schemed

Completion that's fact: see this Engine—be  
witness

Yourselves of its working! Nay, handle  
my Types!

Each block bears a Letter: in order and  
fitness

I range them. Turn, Peter, the winch!  
See, it grips

What's under! Let loose—draw! In regular  
stripes

Lies plain, at one pressure, your poem—  
touched, tinted,  
Turned out to perfection! The sheet, late  
a blank,

Filled—ready for reading,—not written but  
PRINTED!

Omniscient omnipotent God, Thee I thank,  
Thee ever, Thee only!—Thy creature that  
shrank

From no task Thou, Creator, imposedst  
Creation

Revealed me no object, from insect to Man,  
But bore Thy hand's impress: earth glowed  
with salvation:

"Hast sinned? Be thou saved, Fust!  
Continue my plan,

Who spake and earth was: with my word  
things began.

"As sound so went forth, to the sight be  
extended

Word's mission henceforward! The task  
I assign,

Embrace—thy allegiance to evil is ended!  
Have cheer, soul impregnate with purpose!

Combine  
Soul and body, give birth to my concept—  
called thine!

"Far and wide, North and South, East and  
West, have dominion

O'er thought, winged wonder, O Word!  
Traverse world

In sun-flash and sphere-song! Each beat of  
thy pinion

Bursts night, beckons day: once Truth's  
banner unfurled,

Where's Falsehood? Sun-smitten, to nothing-  
ness hurled!"

More humbly—so, friends, did my fault find  
redemption.

I sinned, soul-entolled by the tether of sense:  
My captor reigned master: I plead no  
exemption

From Satan's award to his servant: defence  
From the fiery and final assault would be—  
whence?

By making—as man might—to truth restitution !

Truth is God: trample lies and lies' father,  
God's foe !

Fix fact fast : truths change by an hour's  
revolution :

What deed's very doer, unaided, can show  
How 'twas done a year—month—week—day  
—minute ago ?

At best, he relates it—another reports it—

A third—nay, a thousandth records it : and  
still

Narration, tradition, no step but distorts it,  
As down from truth's height it goes sliding  
until

At the low level lie-mark it stops—whence  
no skill

Of the scribe, intervening too tardily, rescues  
—Once fallen—lost fact from lie's fate  
there. What scribe

—Eyes horny with poring, hands crippled  
with desk-use,

Brains fretted by fancies—the volatile tribe  
That tease weary watchers—can boast that  
no bribe

Shuts eye and frees hand and remits brain  
from toiling ?

Truth gained—can we stay, at whatever  
the stage,

Truth a-slide,—save her snow from its ulti-  
mate soiling

In mire,—by some process, stamp promptly  
on page

Fact spoiled by pen's plodding, make truth  
heritage

Not merely of clerics, but poured out, full  
measure,

On clowns—every mortal endowed with a  
mind ?

Read, gentle and simple ! Let labour win  
leisure

At last to bid truth do all duty assigned,  
Not pause at the noble but pass to the  
hind !

How bring to effect such swift sure, simul-  
taneous

Unlimited multiplication ? How spread  
By an arm-sweep a hand-throw—no helping  
extraneous—

Truth broadcast o'er Europe ? "The gold-  
smith," I said,

"Graves limning on gold : why not letters  
on lead ?"

So, Tuscan artificer, grudge not thy pardon  
To me who played false, made a furtive  
descent,

Found the sly secret workshop,—thy genius  
kept guard on

Too slackly for once,—and surprised thee  
low-bent

O'er thy labour—some chalice thy tool would  
indent

With a certain free scroll-work framed round  
by a border

Of foliage and fruitage : no scratching so fine,  
No shading so shy but, in ordered disorder,  
Each flourish came clear,—unbewildered  
by shine,

On the gold, irretrievably right, lay each line.

How judge if thy hand worked thy will ? By  
reviewing,

Revising again and again, piece by piece,  
Tool's performance,—this way, as I watched.

'Twas through glueing  
A paper-like film-stuff—thin, smooth, void  
of crease,

On each cut of the graver : press hard ! at  
release,

No mark on the plate, but the paper showed  
double :

His work might proceed : as he judged—  
space or speck

Up he filled, forth he flung—was relieved  
thus from trouble

Lest wrong—once—were right never more :  
what could check

Advancement, completion ? Thus lay at my  
beck—

At my call — triumph likewise ! “For,” O Thou, the one force in the whole variation  
cried I, “what hinders Of visible nature,—at work—do I doubt?—  
That graving turns Printing? Stamp one From Thy first to our last, in perpetual  
word—not one creation—  
But fifty such, phoenix-like, spring from A film hides us from Thee—’twixt inside  
death’s cinders,— and out,  
Since death is word’s doom, clerics hide A film, on this earth where Thou bringest  
from the sun about  
As some churl closets up this rare chalice.”  
Go, run  
New marvels, new forms of the glorious, the  
gracious,  
Thy race now, Fust’s child ! High, O We bow to, we bless for : no star bursts  
Printing, and holy heaven’s dome  
Thy mission ! These types, see, I chop But Thy finger impels it, no weed peeps  
and I change audacious  
Till the words, every letter, a pageful, not slowly Earth’s clay-floor from out, but Thy finger  
Yet surely lies fixed : last of all, I arrange makes room  
A paper beneath, stamp it, loosen it ! For one world’s-want the more in Thy  
Cosmos : presume

## FIRST FRIEND.

Strange !

## SECOND FRIEND.

How simple exceedingly !

## FUST.

Bustle, my Schœffer !  
Set type,—quick, Genesheim ! Turn screw  
now !

## THIRD FRIEND.

Just that !

## FOURTH FRIEND.

And no such vast miracle !

## FUST.

“Plough with my heifer,  
Ye find out my riddle,” quoth Samson,  
and pat  
He speaks to the purpose. Grapes squeezed  
in the vat

Yield to sight and to taste what is simple—a  
liquidMere urchins may sip : but give time, let  
ferment—You’ve wine, manhood’s master ! Well,  
“*rectius si quid*

*Novistis im-per-ti-te !*” Wait the event,  
Then weigh the result ! But whate’er Thy  
intent,

Shall Man, Microcosmos, to claim the con-  
ceptionOf grandeur, of beauty, in thought, word  
or deed ?I tolled, but Thy light on my dubious step  
shone :If I reach the glad goal, is it I who suc-  
ceedWho stumbled at starting tripped up by a  
reed,Or Thou ? Knowledge only and absolute,  
glory

As utter be Thine who concedest a spark  
Of Thy spheric perfection to earth’s transitory  
Existences ! Nothing that lives, but Thy  
mark

Gives law to—life’s light : what is doomed to  
the dark ?Where’s ignorance ? Answer, creation !  
What height,What depth has escaped Thy command-  
ment—to Know ?What birth in the ore-bed but answers aright  
Thy sting at its heart which impels—bids

“E’en so,

Not otherwise move or be motionless,—grow,

"Decline, disappear!" Is the plant in default  
 How to bud, when to branch forth? The bird and the beast  
 —Do they doubt if their safety be found in assault  
 Or escape? Worm or fly, of what atoms the least  
 But follows light's guidance,—will famish, not feast?  
 In such various degree, fly and worm, ore and plant,  
 All know, none is witless: around each, a wall  
 Encloses the portion, or ample or scant,  
 Of Knowledge: beyond which one hair's breadth, for all  
 Lies blank—not so much as a blackness—a pall  
 Some sense unimagined must penetrate: plain  
 Is only old licence to stand, walk or sit,  
 Move so far and so wide in the narrow domain  
 Allotted each nature for life's use: past it  
 How immensity spreads does he guess? Not a whit.  
 Does he care? Just as little. Without? No, within  
 Concerns him? he Knows. Man Ignores—thanks to Thee  
 Who madest him know, but—in knowing—begin  
 To know still new vastness of knowledge must be  
 Outside him—to enter, to traverse, in fee  
 Have and hold! "Oh, Man's ignorance!" hear the fool whine!  
 How were it, for better or worse, didst thou grunt  
 Contented with sapience—the lot of the swine  
 Who knows he was born for just truffles to hunt?—  
 Monks' Paradise—"Semper sint res uti sunt!"  
 No, Man's the prerogative—knowledge once gained—  
 To ignore,—find new knowledge to press for, to swerve  
 In pursuit of, no, not for a moment: attained—  
 Why, onward through ignorance! Dare and deserve!  
 As still to its asymptote speedeth the curve,  
 So approximates Man—Thee, who, reachable not,  
 Hast formed him to yearningly follow Thy whole  
 Sole and single omniscience!  
 Such, friends, is my lot:  
 I am back with the world: one more step to the goal  
 Thanks for reaching I render—Fust's help to Man's soul!  
 Mere mechanical help? So the hand gives a toss  
 To the falcon,—aloft once, spread pinions and fly,  
 Beat air far and wide, up and down and across!  
 My Press strains a-tremble: whose masterful eye  
 Will be first, in new regions, new truth to descry?  
 Give chase, soul! Be sure each new capture consigned  
 To my Types will go forth to the world, like God's bread  
 —Miraculous food not for body but mind,  
 Truth's manna! How say you? Put case that, instead  
 Of old leasing and lies, we superiorly fed  
 These Heretics, Hussites . . .  
 FIRST FRIEND.  
 First answer my query!  
 If saved, art thou happy?  
 FUST.  
 I was and I am.

## FIRST FRIEND.

Thy visage confirms it: how comes, then,  
that—*weary*

And woe-begone late—was it show, was it  
sham?—

We found thee sunk thiswise?

## SECOND FRIEND.

—In need of the dram

From the flask which a provident neighbour  
might carry!

## FUST.

Ah, friends, the fresh triumph soon flickers,  
fast fades!

I hailed Word's dispersion: could heartleaps  
but tarry!

Through me does Print furnish Truth  
wings? The same aids

Cause Falsehood to range just as widely.  
What raids!

On a region undreamed of does Printing  
enable

Truth's foe to effect! Printed leasing and  
lies

May speed to the world's farthest corner—  
gross fable

No less than pure fact—to impede, neutralize,

Abolish God's gift and Man's gain!

## FIRST FRIEND.

Dost surmise

What struck me at first blush? Our Beg-  
hards, Waldenses,

Jeronimites, Hussites—does one show his  
head,

Spout heresy now? Not a priest in his senses  
Deigns answer mere speech, but piles  
faggots instead,

Refines as by fire, and, him silenced, all's said

Whereas if in future I pen an opusculè  
Defying retort, as of old when rash tongues

Were easy to tame,—straight some knave of  
the Huss-School

Prints answer forsooth! Stop invisible  
lungs?

The barrel of blasphemy broached once, who  
bungs?

## SECOND FRIEND.

Does my sermon, next Easter, meet fitting  
acceptance?

Each captious disputative boy has his  
quirk

"*An cuique credendum sit?*" Well the  
Church kept "*ans*"

In order till Fust set his engine at work!  
What trash will come flying from Jew, Moor  
and Turk

When, goosequill, thy reign o'er the world is  
abolished!

Goose—ominous name! With a goose  
woe began:

Quoth Huss—which means "goose" in his  
idiom unpolished—

"Ye burn now a Goose: there succeeds  
me a Swan

Ye shall find quench your fire!"

## FUST.

I foresee such a man.

! Martin Luther.

# ASOLANDO: FANCIES AND FACTS.

(Published on December 12, the day on which Mr. Browning died at Venice. A copy of the volume had, however, been received by him before his death.)

[For an explanation of title, see the dedication to Mrs. Arthur Bronson.]

## TO MRS. ARTHUR BRONSON.

To whom but you, dear Friend, should I dedicate verses,—some few written, all of them supervised, in the comfort of your presence, and with yet another experience of the gracious hospitality now bestowed on me since so many a year,—adding a charm even to my residences at Venice, and leaving me little regret for the surprise and delight at my visits to Asolo in bygone days?

I unite, you will see, the disconnected poems by a title-name popularly ascribed to the inventiveness of the apocryphal secretary of Queen Cornaro whose palace-tower still overlooks us: Asolare—"to disport in the open air, amuse oneself at random." The objection that such a word nowhere occurs in the works of the Cardinal is hardly important—Bembo was too thorough a purist to conserve in print a term which in talk he might possibly toy with: but the word is more likely derived from a Spanish source. I use it for love of the place, and in requital of your pleasant assurance that an early poem of mine first attracted you thither—where and elsewhere, at La Mura as Cà Alvisi, may all happiness attend you!

Gratefully and affectionately yours,

R. B.

ASOLO: October 15, 1889.

## PROLOGUE.

"THE Poet's age is sad: for why?  
In youth, the natural world could show  
No common object but his eye  
At once involved with alien glow—  
His own soul's iris-bow,

"And now a flower is just a flower:

Man, bird, beast are but beast, bird, man—  
Simply themselves, uninct by dower  
Of dyes which, when life's day began,  
Round each in glory ran."

Friend, did you need an optic glass,  
Which were your choice? A lens to drape  
In ruby, emerald, chrysopras,  
Each object—or reveal its shape  
Clear outlined, past escape,

The naked very thing?—so clear  
That, when you had the chance to gaze,  
You found its inmost self appear  
Through outer seeming—truth ablaze,  
Not falsehood's fancy-haze?

How many a year, my Asolo,  
Since—one step just from sea to land—  
I found you, loved yet feared you so—  
For natural objects seemed to stand  
Palpably fire-clothed! No—

No mastery of mine o'er these!  
Terror with beauty, like the Bush  
Burning but unconsumed. Bend knees,  
Drop eyes to earthward! Language?  
Tush!

Silence 'tis awe decrees.

And now? The lambent flame is—where?  
Lost from the naked world: earth, sky,  
Hill, vale, tree, flower,—Italia's rare  
O'er-running beauty crowds the eye—  
But flame? The Bush is bare.



Hill, vale, tree, flower—they stand distinct,  
 Nature to know and name. What then?  
 A Voice spoke thence which straight unlinked  
 Fancy from fact: see, all's in ken:  
 Has once my eyelid winked?

No, for the purged ear apprehends  
 Earth's import, not the eye late dazed:  
 The Voice said "Call my works thy friends!  
 At Nature dost thou shrink amazed?  
 God is it who transcends."

ASOLO: Sept. 6, 1889.

### ROSNY.

[Rosny is the name of the *château* where  
 the celebrated Duke of Sully (1560-1641)  
 was born. It lies half-way between Mantes  
 and Bonnières. Henri Quatre slept at the  
*château* after Ivry.]

Woe, he went galloping into the war,  
 Clara, Clara!  
 Let us two dream: shall he 'scape with a scar?  
 Scarcely disfigurement, rather a grace  
 Making for manhood which nowise we mar:  
 See, while I kiss it, the flush on his face—  
 Rosny, Rosny!

Light does he laugh: "With your love in  
 my soul"—

(Clara, Clara!)

"How could I other than—sound, safe and  
 whole—

Cleave who opposed me asunder, yet stand  
 Scatheless beside you, as, touching love's goal,  
 Who won the race kneels, craves reward  
 at your hand—

Rosny, Rosny?"

Ay, but if certain who envied should see:

Clara, Clara,

Certain who sipper: "The hero for me  
 Hardly of life were so chary as miss  
 Death—death and fame—that's love's guerdon  
 when She  
 Boasts, proud bereaved one, her choice fell  
 on this

Rosny, Rosny!"

So,—go on dreaming,—he lies mid a heap  
 (Clara, Clara,)

Of the slain by his hand: what is death but  
 a sleep?

Head, with my portrait displayed on his  
 breast:

Love wrought his undoing: "No prudence  
 could keep

The love-maddened wretch from his fate."  
 That is best,

Rosny, Rosny!

### DUBIETY.

I WILL be happy if but for once:  
 Only help me, Autumn weather,  
 Me and my cares to screen, ensconce  
 In luxury's sofa-lap of leather!

Sleep? Nay, comfort—with just a cloud  
 Suffusing day too clear and bright:  
 Eve's essence, the single drop allowed  
 To sully, like milk, Noon's water-white.

Let gauziness shade, not shroud,—adjust,  
 Dim and not deaden,—somehow sheathe  
 Aught sharp in the rough world's busy thrust,  
 If it reach me through dreaming's vapour-  
 wreath.

Be life so, all things ever the same!  
 For, what has disarmed the world? Out-  
 side,

Quiet and peace: inside, nor blame  
 Nor want, nor wish whatever betide.

What is it like that has happened before?  
 A dream? No dream, more real by much.  
 A vision? But fanciful days of yore  
 Brought many: mere musing seems not  
 such.

Perhaps but a memory, after all!  
 —Of what came once when a woman leant  
 To feel for my brow where her kiss might  
 fall.

Truth ever, truth only the excellent!

## NOW,

OUT of your whole life give but a moment !  
 All of your life that has gone before,  
 All to come after it,—so you ignore,  
 So you make perfect the present,—condense,  
 In a rapture of rage, for perfection's endow-  
 ment,  
 Thought and feeling and soul and sense—  
 Merged in a moment which gives me at last  
 You around me for once, you beneath me,  
 above me—  
 Me—sure that despite of time future, time  
 past,—  
 This tick of our life-time's one moment you  
 love me !  
 How long such suspension may linger ? Ah,  
 Sweet—  
 The moment eternal—just that and no more—  
 When ecstasy's utmost we clutch at the core  
 While cheeks burn, arms open, eyes shut and  
 lips meet !

## HUMILITY.

WHAT girl but, having gathered flowers,  
 Strip the beds and spoil the bowers,  
 From the lapful light she carries  
 Drops a careless bud ?—nor tarries  
 To regain the waif and stray :  
 "Store enough for home"—she'll say.

So say I too : give your lover  
 Heaps of loving—under, over,  
 Whelm him—make the one the wealthy !  
 Am I all so poor who—stealthy  
 Work it was !—picked up what fell :  
 Not the worst bud—who can tell ?

## POETICS.

"So say the foolish !" Say the foolish so,  
 Love ?  
 "Flower she is, my rose"—or else "My  
 very swan is she"—

Or perhaps "Yon maid-moon, blessing earth  
 below, Love,  
 That art thou !"—to them, belike : no such  
 vain words from me.

"Hush, rose, blush ! no balm like breath,"  
 I chide it :  
 "Bend thy neck its best, swan,—hers the  
 whiter curve !"

Be the moon the moon : my Love I place  
 beside it :

What is she ? Her human self,—no lower  
 word will serve.

## SUMMUM BONUM.

ALL the breath and the bloom of the year in  
 the bag of one bee :

All the wonder and wealth of the mine in  
 the heart of one gem :

In the core of one pearl all the shade and the  
 shine of the sea :

Breath and bloom, shade and shine,—won-  
 der, wealth, and—how far above them—

Truth, that's brighter than gem,

Trust, that's purer than pearl,—

Brightest truth, purest trust in the universe—  
 all were for me

In the kiss of one girl.

## A PEARL, A GIRL.

A SIMPLE ring with a single stone  
 To the vulgar eye no stone of price :  
 Whisper the right word, that alone—  
 Forth starts a sprite, like fire from ice,  
 And lo, you are lord (says an Eastern scroll)  
 Of heaven and earth, lord whole and sole  
 Through the power in a pearl.

A woman ('tis I this time that say)  
 With little the world counts worthy praise  
 Uffer the true word—out and away  
 Escapes her soul : I am wrapt in blaze,  
 Creation's lord, of heaven and earth  
 Lord whole and sole—by a minute's birth—  
 Through the love in a girl !

## SPECULATIVE.

OTHERS may need new life in Heaven—  
 Man, Nature, Art—made new, assume!  
 Man with new mind old sense to leaven,  
 Nature—new light to clear old gloom,  
 Art that breaks bounds, gets soaring-room.

I shall pray: "Fugitive as precious—  
 Minutes which passed,—return, remain!  
 Let earth's old life once more enmesh us,  
 You with old pleasure, me—old pain,  
 So we but meet nor part again!"

## WHITE WITCHCRAFT.

[White witchcraft was helpful and not harmful magic.]

If you and I could change to beasts, what  
 beast should either be?  
 Shall you and I play Jove for once? Turn  
 fox then, I decree!  
 Shy wild sweet stealer of the grapes! Now  
 do your worst on me!

And thus you think, to spite your friend—  
 turned loathsome? What, a toad?  
 So, all men shrink and shun me! Dear men,  
 pursue your road!  
 Leave but my crevice in the stone, a reptile's  
 fit abode!

Now say your worst, Canidia! "He's  
 loathsome, I allow:  
 There may or may not lurk a pearl beneath  
 his puckered brow:  
 But see his eyes that follow mine—love lasts  
 there anyhow."

## BAD DREAMS. I.

LAST night I saw you in my sleep:  
 And how your charm of face was changed!  
 I asked "Some love, some faith you keep?"  
 You answered "Faith gone, love  
 estranged."

1 Neapolitan sorceress. See Horace.

Whereat I woke—a twofold bliss:

Waking was one, but next there came  
 This other: "Though I felt, for this,  
 My heart break; I loved on the same."

## BAD DREAMS. II.

You in the flesh and here—  
 Your very self! Now, wait!  
 One word! May I hope or fear?  
 Must I speak in love or hate?  
 Stay while I ruminate!

The fact and each circumstance  
 Dare you disown? Not you!  
 That vast dome, that huge dance,  
 And the gloom which overgrew  
 A—possibly festive crew!

For why should men dance at all—  
 Why women—a crowd of both—  
 Unless they are gay? Strange ball—  
 Hands and feet plighting troth,  
 Yet partners enforced and loth!

Of who danced there, no shape  
 Did I recognize: thwart, perverse,  
 Each grasped each, past escape  
 In a whirl or weary or worse;  
 Man's sneer met woman's curse,

While he and she toiled as if  
 Their guardian set galley-slaves  
 To supple chained limbs grown stiff:  
 Unmanacled trulls and knaves—  
 The lash for who misbehaves!

And a gloom was, all the while,  
 Deeper and deeper yet  
 O'ergrowing the rank and file  
 Of that army of haters—set  
 To mimic love's fever-fret.

By the wall-side close I crept,  
 Avoiding the livid maze,  
 And, safely so far, outstepped  
 On a chamber—a chapel, says  
 My memory or betrays—

Closet-like, kept aloof  
 From unseemly witnessing  
 What sport made floor and roof  
 Of the Devil's palace ring  
 While his Damned amused their king.

Ay, for a low lamp burned,  
 And a silence lay about  
 What I, in the midst, discerned  
 Though dimly till, past doubt,  
 'Twas a sort of throne stood out—

High seat with steps, at least :  
 And the topmost step was filled  
 By—whom? What vested priest?  
 A stranger to me,—his guild,  
 His cult, unconciled.

To my knowledge how guild and cult  
 Are clothed in this world of ours :  
 I pondered, but no result  
 Came to—unless that Giaours  
 So worship the Lower Powers.

When suddenly who entered?  
 Who knelt—did you guess I saw?  
 Who—raising that face where centred  
 Allegiance to love and law  
 So lately—off-casting awe,

Down-treading reserve, away  
 Thrusting respect . . . but mine  
 Stands firm—firm still shall stay!  
 Ask Satan! for I decline  
 To tell—what I saw, in fine!

Yet here in the flesh you come—  
 Your same self, form and face,—  
 In the eyes, mirth still at home!  
 On the lips, that commonplace  
 Perfection of honest grace!

Yet your errand is—needs must be  
 To palliate—well, explain,  
 Expurgate in some degree  
 Your soul of its ugly stain.  
 Oh, you—the good in grain—

How was it your white took tinge?  
 "A mere dream"—never object!  
 Sleep leaves a door on hinge  
 Whence soul, ere our flesh suspect,  
 Is off and away: detect

Her vagaries when loose, who can!  
 Be she pranksome, be she prude,  
 Disguise with the day began:  
 With the night—ah, what ensued  
 From draughts of a drink hell-brewed?

Then She: "What a queer wild dream!  
 And perhaps the best fun is—  
 Myself had its fellow—I seem  
 Scarce awake from yet. 'Twas this—  
 Shall I tell you? First, a kiss!

"For the fault was just your own,—  
 'Tis myself expect apology:  
 You warned me to let alone  
 (Since our studies were mere philology)  
 That ticklish (you said) Anthology.

"So, I dreamed that I passed *exam*  
 Till a question posed me sore:  
 'Who translated this epigram  
 By—an author we best ignore?'  
 And I answered 'Hannah More'!"

### BAD DREAMS. III.

THIS was my dream: I saw a Forest  
 Old as the earth, no track nor trace  
 Of unmade man. Thou, Soul, explorest—  
 Though in a trembling rapture—space  
 Immeasurable! Shrubs, turned trees,  
 Trees that touch heaven, support its frieze  
 Studded with sun and moon and star:  
 While—oh, the enormous growths that bar  
 Mine eye from penetrating past  
 Their tangled twine where lurks—nay,  
 Lives—  
 Royally lone, some brute-type oast  
 P' the rough, time-cancelled, man forgiven.

On, Soul! I saw a lucid City  
 Of architectural device.  
 Every way perfect. Pause, for pity,  
 Lightning! nor leave a cicatrice  
 On those bright marbles, dome and spire,  
 Structures palatial,—streets which mire  
 Dares not defile, paved all too fine  
 For human footstep's smirch, not thine—  
 Proud solitary traverser,  
 My Soul, of silent lengths of way—  
 With what ecstatic dread, aver,  
 Lest life start sanctioned by thy stay!

Ah, but the last sight was the hideous!  
 A City, yes, a Forest, true,—  
 But each devouring each. Perfidious  
 Snake-plants had strangled what I knew.  
 Was a pavilion once: each oak  
 Held on his horns some spoil he broke  
 By surreptitiously beneath  
 Upthrusting: pavements, as with teeth,  
 Gripped huge weed widening crack and  
 split  
 In squares and circles stone-work erst.  
 Oh, Nature—good! Oh, Art—no whit  
 Less worthy! Both in one—accurst!

#### BAD DREAMS. IV.

It happened thus: my slab, though new,  
 Was getting weather-stained,—beside,  
 Herbage, balm, peppermint o'ergrew  
 Letter and letter: till you tried  
 Somewhat, the Name was scarce descried.

That strong stern man my lover came:  
 —Was he my lover? Call him, pray,  
 My life's cold critic bent on blame  
 Of all poor I could do or say  
 To make me worth his love one day—

One far day when, by diligent  
 And dutiful amending faults;  
 Foibles, all weaknesses which went  
 To challenge and excuse assaults  
 Of culture wronged by taste that halts—

Discrepancies should mar no plan  
 Symmetric of the qualities  
 Claiming respect from—say—a man  
 That's strong and stern. "Once more he  
 pries  
 Into me with those critic eyes!"

No question! so—"Conclude, condemn  
 Each failure my poor self avows!  
 Leave to its fate all you condemn!  
 There's Solomon's selected spouse:  
 Earth needs must hold such maids—choose  
 them!"

Why, he was weeping! Surely gone  
 Sternness and strength: with eyes to ground  
 And voice a broken monotone—  
 "Only be as you were! Abound  
 In foibles, faults,—laugh, robed and crowned

"As Folly's veriest queen,—care I  
 One feather-fluff? Look pity, Love,  
 On prostrate me—your foot shall try  
 This forehead's use—mount thence above,  
 And reach what Heaven you dignify!"

Now, what could bring such change about?  
 The thought perplexed: till, following  
 His gaze upon the ground,—why, out  
 Came all the secret! So, a thing  
 Thus simple has deposed my king!

For, spite of weeds that strove to spoil:  
 Plain, reading on the lettered slab,  
 My name was clear enough—no soil  
 Effaced the date when one chance stab  
 Of scorn . . . if only ghosts might blab!

#### INAPPREHENSIVENESS.

WE two stood simply friend-like side by side,  
 Viewing a twilight country far and wide,  
 Till she at length broke silence. "How it  
 towers  
 Yonder, the ruin<sup>1</sup> o'er this vale of ours!

<sup>1</sup> Of the palace of Queen Cornaro, who,  
 exiled from Cyprus, lived at Asolo, with Cardinal  
 Bembo acting as Secretary.

The West's faint flare behind it so relieves  
Its rugged outline—sight perhaps deceives,  
Or I could almost fancy that I see  
A branch wave plain—belike some wind-sown

tree

Chance-rooted where a missing turret was.  
What would I give for the perspective glass  
At home, to make out if 'tis really so!  
Has Ruskin noticed here at Asolo  
That certain weed-growths on the ravaged  
wall

Seem" . . . something that I could not say  
at all,

My thought being rather—as absorbed she sent  
Look onward after look from eyes distent  
With longing to reach Heaven's gate left  
ajar—

"Oh, fancies that might be, oh, facts that are!  
What of a wilding? By you stands, and may  
So stand unnoticed till the Judgment Day,  
One who, if once aware that your regard  
Claimed what his heart holds,—woke, as  
from its sword

The flower, the dormant passion, so to speak—  
Then what a rush of life would startling wreak  
Revenge on your inapprehensive stare  
While, from the ruin and the West's faint flare,  
You let your eyes meet mine, touch what you  
term

Quietude—that's an universe in germ—  
The dormant passion needing but a look  
To burst into immense life!"

"No, the book  
Which noticed how the wall-growths wave"  
said she

"Was not by Ruskin."

I said "Vernon Lee?"

### WHICH?

So, the three Court-ladies began

Their trial of who judged best

In esteeming the love of a man:

Who preferred with most reason was  
thereby confessed

<sup>1</sup> The authoress of *Euphorion* and other books (Miss Violet Paget).

Boy-Cupid's exemplary catcher and cager;  
An Abbé crossed legs to decide on the  
wager.

First the Duchesse: "Mine for me—

Who were it but God's for Him,

And the King's for—who but he?

Both faithful and loyal, one grace more  
shall brim

His cup with perfection: a lady's true  
lover,

He holds—save his God and his king—none  
above her."

"I require"—outspoke the Mar-  
quise—

"Pure thoughts, ay, but also fine  
deeds:

Play the paladin must he, to please  
My whim, and—to prove my knight's  
service exceeds

Your saint's and your loyalist's praying and  
kneeling—

Show wounds, each wide mouth to my mercy  
appealing."

Then the Comtesse: "My choice be  
a wretch,

Mere losel in body and soul,

Thrice accurst! What care I, so he  
stretch

Arms to me his sole saviour, love's ultimate  
goal,

Out of earth and men's noise—names of  
'infidel,' 'traitor,'

Cast up at him? Crown me, crown's adju-  
dicator!"

And the Abbé uncrossed his legs,

Took snuff, a reflective pinch,

Broke silence: "The question begs

Much pondering ere I pronounce. Shall  
I flinch?

The love which to one and one only has  
reference

Seems terribly like what perhaps gains God's  
preference."

## THE CARDINAL AND THE DOG.

CRESCENZIO, the Pope's Legate at the High Council, Trent,  
—Year Fifteen hundred twenty-two, March  
Twenty-five—intent  
On writing letters to the Pope till late into  
the night,  
Rose, weary, to refresh himself, and saw a  
monstrous sight :  
(I give mine Author's very words : he penned,  
I reindite.)

A black Dog of vast bigness, eyes flaming,  
ears that hung  
Down to the very ground almost, into the  
chamber sprung  
And made directly for him, and laid himself  
right under  
The table where Crescenzo wrote—who  
called in fear and wonder  
His servants in the ante-room, commanded  
everyone  
To look for and find out the beast : but,  
looking, they found none.

The Cardinal fell melancholy, then sick,  
soon after died :  
And at Verona, as he lay on his death-bed,  
he cried  
Aloud to drive away the Dog that leapt on  
his bed-side.  
Heaven keep us Protestants from harm : the  
rest . . . no ill betide !

## THE POPE AND THE NET.

WHAT, he on whom our voices unanimously  
ran,  
Made Pope at our last Conclave ? Full low  
his life began :  
His father earned the daily bread as just a  
fisherman.

So much the more his boy minds book, gives  
proof of mother-wit,  
Becomes first Deacon, and then Priest, then  
Bishop : see him sit  
No less than Cardinal ere long, while no one  
cries "Unfit !"

But someone smirks, some other smiles, jogs  
elbow and nods head :  
Each winks at each : "I-faith, a rise !  
Saint Peter's net, instead  
Of sword and keys, is come in vogue ! " You  
think he blushes red ?

Not he, of humble holy heart ! "Unworthy  
me ! " he sighs :  
"From fisher's drudge to Church's prince—  
it is indeed a rise :  
So, here's my way to keep the fact for ever  
in my eyes ! "

And straightway in his palace-hall, where  
commonly is set  
Some coat-of-arms, some portraiture ances-  
tral, lo, we met  
His mean estate's reminder in his fisher-  
father's net !

Which step conciliates all and some, stops  
cavil in a trice :  
"The humble holy heart that holds of new-  
born pride no spice !  
He's just the saint to choose for Pope ! "  
Each adds " 'Tis my advice."

So, Pope he was : and when we flocked—its  
sacred slipper on—  
To kiss his foot, we lifted eyes, alack the  
thing was gone—  
That guarantee of lowlihead,—eclipsed that  
star which shone !

Each eyed his fellow, one and all kept  
silence. I cried "Pish !"  
I'll make me spokesman for the rest, express  
the common wish !  
Why, Father, is the net removed ? " "Son,  
it hath caught the fish."

## THE BEAN-FEAST.

HE was the man—Pope Sixtus, that Fifth,  
that swineherd's son :

He knew the right thing, did it, and thanked  
God when 'twas done :

But of all he had to thank for, my fancy  
somehow leans

To thinking, what most moved him was a  
certain meal on beans.

For one day, as his wont was, in just enough  
disguise

As he went exploring wickedness,—to see  
with his own eyes

If law had due observance in the city's en-  
trail dark

As well as where, i' the open, crime stood  
an obvious mark,—

He chanced, in a blind alley, on a tumble-  
down once house

Now hovel, vilest structure in Rome the  
ruinous :

And, as his tact impelled him, Sixtus adven-  
tured bold,

To learn how lowliest subjects bore hunger,  
toil, and cold.

There sat they at high-supper—man and  
wife, lad and lass,

Poor as you please but cleanly all and care-  
free : pain that was

—Forgotten, pain as sure to be let bide  
aloof its time,—

Mightily munched the brave ones—what  
mattered gloom or grime ?

Said Sixtus "Feast, my children ! who  
works hard needs eat well.

I'm just a supervisor, would hear what you  
can tell.

Do any wrongs want righting ? The Father  
tries his best,

But, since he's only mortal, sends such as I  
to test

The truth of all that's told him—how folk  
like you may fare :

Come !—only don't stop eating—when mouth  
has words to spare—

"You"—smiled he—"play the spokesman,  
bell-wether of the flock !

Are times good, masters gentle ? Your  
grievances unlock !

How of your work and wages ?—pleasures,  
if such may be—

Pains, as such are for certain." Thus smiling  
questioned he.

But somehow, spite of smiling, awe stole  
upon the group—

An inexpressible surmise : why should a priest  
thus stoop—

Pry into what concerned folk ? Each visage  
fell. Aware,

Cries Sixtus interposing : "Nay, children,  
have no care !

"Fear nothing ! Who employs me requires  
the plain truth. Pelf

Beguiles who should inform me : so, I inform  
myself.

See !" And he threw his hoed back, let  
the close vesture ope,

Showed face, and where, on tippet the cross  
lay : 'twas the Pope.

Imagine the joyful wonder ! "How shall  
the like of us—

Poor souls—requite such blessing of our rude  
bean-feast ?" "Thus—

Thus amply !" laughed Pope Sixtus. "I  
early rise, sleep late :

Who works may eat : they tempt me, your  
beans there : spare a plate !"

Down sat he on the door-step : 'twas they  
this time said grace :

He ate up the last mouthful, wiped lips, and  
then, with face



Turned heavenward, broke forth thankful :  
 "Not now, that earth obeys,  
 Thy word in mine, that through me the  
 peoples know Thy ways—  
 But that Thy care extendeth to Nature's  
 homely wants,  
 And, while man's mind is strengthened, Thy  
 goodness nowise scants  
 Man's body of its comfort,—that I whom  
 kings and queens  
 Crouch to, pick crumbs from off my table,  
 relish beans!  
 The thunders I but seem to launch, there  
 plain Thy hand all see:  
 That I have appetite, digest, and thrive—  
 that boon's for me."

### MUCKLE-MOUTH MEG.

FROWNED the Laird on the Lord : "So, red-  
 handed I catch thee ? :  
 Death-doomed by our Law of the Border !  
 We've a gallows outside and a chiel to dis-  
 patch thee :  
 Who trespasses—hangs : all's in order."

He met frown with smile, did the young  
 English gallant :  
 Then the Laird's dame : "Nay, Husband,  
 I beg !  
 He's comely : be merciful ! Grace for the  
 callant  
 —If he marries our Muckle-mouth Meg !"

"No mile-wide-mouthed monster of yours do  
 I marry :  
 Grant rather the gallows !" laughed he.  
 "Foul fare kith and kin of you—why do you  
 tarry ?"

"To tame your fierce temper !" quoth she,

"Shove him quick in the Hole, shut him fast  
 for a week :  
 Cold, darkness and hunger work wonders :  
 Who lion-like roars now, mouse-fashion, will

And 't rains' soon succeed to 'it thunders.'"

A week did he bide in the cold and the  
 dark  
 —Not hunger : for duly at morning  
 In flitted a lass, and a voice like a lark  
 Chirped "Muckle-mouth Meg still ye're  
 scorning ?"

"Go hang, but here's parritch to hearten ye  
 first !"

"Did Meg's muckle-mouth boast within  
 some

Such music as yours, mine should match it  
 or burst :

No frog-jaws ! So tell folk, my Winsome !"

Soon week came to end, and, from Hole's  
 door set wide,  
 Out he marched, and there waited the  
 lassie :

"Yon gallows, or Muckle-mouth Meg for a  
 bride !

Consider ! Sky's blue and turf's grassy :

"Life's sweet : shall I say ye wed Muckle-  
 mouth Meg ?"

"Not I" quoth the stout heart : "too  
 eerie

The mouth that can swallow a bubblyjock's<sup>1</sup>  
 egg :

Shall I let it munch mine ? Never,  
 Dearie !"

"Not Muckle-mouth Meg ? Wow, the ob-  
 stinate man !

Perhaps he would rather wed me !"

"Ay, would he—with just for a dowry your  
 can !"

"I'm Muckle-mouth Meg" chirruped she.

"Then so—so—so—so—" as he kissed her  
 apace—

"Will I widen thee out till thou turnest  
 From Margaret Minnikin-mou', by God's  
 grace,

To Muckle-mouth Meg in good earnest !"

<sup>1</sup> A turkey.

## ARCADES AMBO.

- A. You blame me that I ran away?  
 Why, Sir, the enemy advanced:  
 Balls flew about, and—who can say  
 But one, if I stood firm, had glanced  
 In my direction? Cowardice?  
 I only know we don't live twice,  
 Therefore—shun death, is my advice.
- B. Shun death at all risks? Well, at  
 some!  
 True, I myself, Sir, though I scold  
 The cowardly, by no means come  
 Under reproof as overbold  
 —I, who would have no end of brutes  
 Cut up alive to guess what suits  
 My case and saves my toe from shoots.

## THE LADY AND THE PAINTER.

- She. Yet womanhood you reverence,  
 So you profess!
- He. With heart and soul.
- She. Of which fact this is evidence!  
 To help Art-study,—for some dote  
 Of certain wretched shillings,—you  
 Induce a woman—virgin too—  
 To strip and stand stark-naked?
- He. True.
- She. Nor feel you so degrade her?
- He. What  
 —(Excuse the interruption)—clings  
 Half-savage-like around your hat?
- She. Ah, do they please you? Wild-bird-  
 wings  
 Next season,—Paris-prints assert,—  
 We must go feathered to the skirt:  
 My modiste keeps on the alert.
- Owls, hawks, jays—swallows most ap-  
 prove . . .
- He. Dare I speak plainly?
- She. Oh, I trust!

- He. Then, Lady Blanche, it less would move  
 In heart and soul of me disgust  
 Did you strip off those spoils you wear,  
 And stand—for thanks, not shillings—  
 bare,  
 To help Art like my Model there.  
 She well knew what absolved her—praise  
 In me for God's surpassing good,  
 Who granted to my reverent gaze  
 A type of purest womanhood.  
 You—clothed with murder of His best  
 Of harmless beings—stand the test!  
 What is it *you* know?
- She. That you jest!

## PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE.

[This story is amongst the many stories  
 told in the honour of the Virgin Mary by St.  
 Alphonsus Liguori in "The Glories of Mary."]

STOP rowing! This one of our bye-canals  
 O'er a certain bridge you have to cross  
 That's named "Of the Angel": listen why!  
 The name "Of the Devil" too-much appals  
 Venetian acquaintance, so—his the loss,  
 While the gain goes . . . look on high!

An angel visibly guards yon house:  
 Above each scutcheon—a pair—stands he,  
 Enfolds them with droop of either wing:  
 The family's fortune were perilous  
 Did he thence depart—you will soon agree,  
 If I hitch into verse the thing.

For, once on a time, this house belonged  
 To a lawyer of note, with law and to spare,  
 But also with overmuch lust of gain:  
 In the matter of law you were nowise wronged,  
 But alas for the lucre! He picked you bare  
 To the bone. Did folk complain?

"I exact" growled he "work's rightful due:  
 'Tis folk seek me, not I seek them.  
 Advice at its price! They succeed or fail,  
 Get law in each case—and a lesson too:  
 Keep clear of the Courts—is advice *ad rem*:  
 They'll remember, I'll be bail!"

So, he pocketed fee without a qualm.  
 What reason for squeamishness? Labour  
 done,  
 To play he betook him with lightened heart,  
 Ate, drank and made merry with song or  
 psalm,  
 Since the yoke of the Church is an easy one—  
 Fits neck nor causes smart.

Brief: never was such an extortionate  
 Rascal—the word has escaped my teeth  
 And yet—(all's down in a book no ass  
 Indited, believe me!)—this reprobate  
 Was punctual at prayer-time: gold lurked  
 beneath

Alloy of the rankest brass.

For, play the extortioner as he might,  
 Fleece folk each day and all day long,  
 There was this redeeming circumstance:  
 He never lay down to sleep at night  
 But he put up a prayer first, brief yet strong,  
 "Our Lady avert mischance!"

Now it happened at close of a fructuous  
 week,

"I must ask" quoth he "some Saint to dine:  
 I want that widow well out of my ears  
 With her ailing and wailing. Who bade her  
 seek

Redress at my hands? 'She was wronged!'  
 Folk whine

If to Law wrong right appears.

"Matteo da Bascio—he's my man!  
 No less than Chief of the Capucins:  
 His presence will surely suffumigate  
 My house—fools think lies under a ban  
 If somebody loses what somebody wins.  
 Hark, there he knocks at the grate!

"Come in, thou blessed of Mother Church!  
 I go and prepare—to bid, that is,  
 My trusty and diligent servitor  
 Get all things in readiness. Vain the search  
 Through Venice for one to compare with this  
 My model of ministrants: for—

"For—once again, nay, three times over,  
 My helpmate's an ape! so intelligent,  
 I train him to drudge at household work:  
 He toils and he moils; I live in clover:  
 Oh, you shall see! There's a goodly  
 scent—

From his cooking, or I'm a Turk!

"Scarce need to descend and supervise:  
 I'll do it, however: wait here awhile!"  
 So, down to the kitchen gaily scuttles  
 Our host, nor notes the alarmed surmise  
 Of the holy man. "O depth of guile!  
 He blindly guzzles and guttles,

"While—who is it dresses the food and  
 pours  
 The liquor? Some fiend—I make no  
 doubt—  
 In likeness of—which of the loathly brutes?  
 An ape! Where hides he? No bull that  
 gores,  
 No bear that hugs—'tis the mock and flout  
 Of an ape, fiend's face that suits.

"So—out with thee, creature, wherever thou  
 hidest!  
 I charge thee, by virtue of . . . right do I  
 judge!  
 There skulks he perdue, crouching under the  
 bed.  
 Well done! What, forsooth, in beast's  
 shape thou confidest?  
 I know and would name thee but that I  
 begrudge  
 Breath spent on such carrion. Instead—

"I adjure thee by—" "Stay!" laughed  
 the portent that rose  
 From floor up to ceiling: "No need to  
 adjure!

See Satan in person, late ape by command  
 Of Him thou adjurest in vain. A saint's  
 nose  
 Scents brimstone though incense be burned  
 for a lure.  
 Yet, hence! for I'm safe, understand!

"'Tis my charge to convey to fit punishment's place

This lawyer, my liegeman, for cruelty wrought  
On his clients, the widow and orphan, poor  
souls

He has plagued by exactions which proved  
law's disgrace,

Made equity void and to nothingness brought  
God's pity. Fiends, on with fresh coals!"

"Stay!" nowise confounded, withstands  
Hell its match:

"How comes it, were truth in this story of  
thine,

God's punishment suffered a minute's delay?  
Weeks, months have elapsed since thou  
squattedst at watch

For a spring on thy victim: what caused  
thee decline

Advantage till challenged to-day?"

"That challenge I meet with contempt,"  
quoth the fiend.

"Thus much I acknowledge: the man's  
armed in mail:

I wait till a joint's loose, then quick ply my  
claws.

Thy friend's one good custom—he knows not  
—has screened

His flesh hitherto from what else would assail:  
At "Save me, Madonna!" I pause.

"That prayer did the losel but once pretermitt,  
My pounce were upon him. I keep me attent:  
He's in safety but till he's caught napping.  
Enough!"

"Ay, enough!" smiles the saint—"for the  
biter is bit,

The spy caught in somnolence. Vanish!  
I'm sent

To smooth up what fiends do in rough."

"I vanish? Through wall or through roof?"  
the ripost.

Grinned gaily. "My orders were—" Leave  
not unharmed

The abode of this lawyer! Do damage to  
prove

'Twas for something thou quittedst the laud  
of the lost—

To add to their number this unit!" Thought  
charmed

From descent there, on earth that's above

"I may haply amerce him." "So do, and  
begone,

I command thee! For, look! Though there's  
doorway behind

And window before thee, go straight through  
the wall,

Leave a breach in the brickwork, a gap in  
the stone

For who passes to stare at!" "Spare speech!  
I'm resigned:

Here goes!" roared the goblin, as all—

Wide bat-wings, spread arms and legs, tail  
out a-stream,

Crash obstacles went, right and left, as he  
soared

Or else sank, was clean gone through the  
hole anyhow.

The Saint returned thanks: then a satisfied  
gleam

On the bald polished pate showed that triumph  
was scored.

"To dinner with appetite now!"

Down he trips. "In good time!" smirks  
the host. "Didst thou scent

Rich savour of roast meat? Where hides  
he, my ape?

Look alive, be alert! He's away to wash  
plates.

Sit down, Saint! What's here? Dost  
examine a rent

In the napkin thou twistest and twirlest?  
Agape!

Ha, blood is it drips nor abates

"From thy wringing a cloth, late was laven-  
dered fair?

What means such a marvel?" "Just this  
does it mean:

I convince and convict thee of sin!" answers  
straight

The Saint, wringing on, wringing ever—O rare!—  
 Blood—blood from a napery snow not more clean.  
 "A miracle shows thee thy state!

"See—blood thy extortions have wrung from  
 • the flesh  
 Of thy clients who, sheep-like, arrived to be shorn  
 And left thee—or fleeced to the quick or so flayed  
 That, behold, their blood gurgles and grumbles afresh  
 To accuse thee! Ay, down on thy knees, get up sworn  
 To restore! Restitution once made,

"Sin no more! Dost thou promise? Absolved, then, arise!  
 Upstairs follow me! Art amazed at yon breach?  
 Who battered and shattered and scattered, escape  
 From thy purlieus obtaining? That Father of Lies  
 Thou wast wont to extol for his feats, all and each  
 The Devil's disguised as thine ape!"

Be sure that our lawyer was torn by remorse,  
 Shed tears in a flood, vowed and swore so to alter  
 His ways that how else could our Saint but declare  
 He was cleansed of past sin? "For sin future—fare worse  
 Thou undoubtedly wilt," warned the Saint,  
 "shouldst thou falter  
 One whit!" "Oh, for that have no care!

"I am firm in my purposed amendment.  
 But, prithee,  
 Must ever affront and affright me yon gap?  
 Who made it for exit may find it of use.

For entrance as easy. If, down in his smithy  
 He forges me fetters—when heated, mayhap,  
 He'll up with an armful! Broke loose—

"How bar him out henceforth?" "Judiciously urged!"  
 Was the good man's reply. "How to baulk him is plain.  
 There's nothing the Devil objects to so much,  
 So speedily flies from, as one of those purged  
 Of his presence, the angels who erst formed his train—  
 His, their emperor. Choose one of such!

"Get fashioned his likeness and set him on high  
 At back of the breach thus adroitly filled up:  
 Display him as guard of two scutcheons, thy arms:  
 I warrant no devil attempts to get by  
 And disturb thee so guarded. Eat, drink, dine and sup  
 In thy rectitude, safe from alarms!"

So said and so done. See, the angel has place  
 Where the Devil had passage! All's down in a book.  
 Gainsay me? Consult it! Still faithless? Trust me?  
 Trust Father Boverio who gave me the case  
 In his Annals—gets of it, by hook or by crook,  
 Two confirmative witnesses: three  
 Are surely enough to establish an act:  
 And thereby we learn—would we ascertain truth—  
 To trust wise tradition which took, at the time,  
 Note that served till slow history ventured on fact,  
 Though folk have their fling at tradition forseoth!  
 Row, boys, fore and aft, rhyme and chime!

## BEATRICE SIGNORINI.

[Beatrice was a Roman lady married to the painter Romanelli, who after his marriage fell in love with a famous lady painter, Artemisia Gentileschi, a pupil of Guido's. Baldinucci tells the story Browning repeats.]

THIS strange thing happened to a painter once :

Viterbo boasts the man among her sons  
Of note, I seem to think : his ready tool  
Picked up its precepts in Cortona's school—  
That's Pietro Berretini, whom they call  
Cortona, these Italians : greatish-small,  
Our painter was his pupil, by repute  
His match if not his master absolute,  
Though whether he spoiled fresco more or  
less,  
And what's its fortune, scarce repays your  
guess.

Still, for one circumstance, I save his name  
—Francesco Romanelli : do the same !  
He went to Rome and painted : there he knew  
A wonder of a woman painting too—  
For she, at least, was no Cortona's drudge :  
Witness that ardent fancy-shape—I judge  
A semblance of her soul—she called "Desire"  
With starry front for guide, where sits the fire  
She left to brighten Buonarroti's house.  
If you see Florence, pay that piece your vows,  
Though blockhead Baldinucci's mind, imbued  
With monkish morals, bade folk "Drape  
the nude  
And stop the scandal !" quoth the record prim  
I borrow this of : hang his book and him !  
At Rome, then, where these fated ones met  
first,  
The blossom of his life had hardly burst  
While hers was blooming at full beauty's  
stand :

No less Francesco—when half-ripe he scanned  
Consummate Artemisia—grew one want  
To have her his and make her ministrant  
With every gift of body and of soul  
To him. In vain. Her sphery self was  
whole—

Might only touch his orb at Art's sole point.  
Suppose he could persuade her to enjoin

Her life—past, present, future—all in his  
At Art's sole point by some explosive kiss  
Of love through lips, would love's success  
defeat

Artistry's haunting curse—the Incomplete ?  
Artists no doubt they both were, — what  
beside

Was she? who, long had felt heart, soul  
spread wide

Her life out, knowing much and loving well,  
On either side Art's narrow space where fell  
Reflection from his own speck : but the  
germ

Of individual genius—what we term  
The very self, the God-gift whence had grown  
Heart's life and soul's life,—how make that  
his own ?

Vainly his Art, reflected, smiled in small  
On Art's one facet of her ampler ball ;  
The rest, touch-free, took in, gave back  
heaven, earth,

All where he was not. Hope, well-nigh ere  
birth

Came to Desire, died off all-unfulfilled.  
"What though in Art I stand the abler-  
skilled,"

(So he conceived : mediocrity  
Turns on itself the self-transforming eye)  
"If only Art were suing, mine would plead  
To purpose : man—by nature I exceed  
Woman the bounded : but how much beside  
She boasts, would sue in turn and be denied !  
Love her? My own wife loves me in a sort  
That suits us both : she takes the world's  
report

Of what my work is worth, and, for the rest,  
Concedes that, while his consort keeps her  
nest,

The eagle soars a licensed vagrant, lives  
A wide free life which she at least forgives—  
Good Beatrice Signorini ! Well  
And wisely did I choose her. But the spell  
To subjugate this Artemisia—where ?  
She passionless?—she resolute to care  
Nowise beyond the plain sufficiency  
Of fact that she is she and I am I  
—Acknowledged arbitrator for us both  
In her life as in mine which she were loth

Even to learn the laws of? No, and no  
Twenty times over! Ay, it must be so;  
I for myself, alas!"

Whereon, instead  
Of the checked lover's utterance—why, he  
said

—Leaning above her easel: "Flesh is red"  
(Or some such just remark)—"by no means  
white

As Guido's practice teaches: you are right."  
Then came the better impulse: "What if  
pride

Were wisely trampled on, whate'er betide?  
If I grow hers, not mine—join lives, confuse  
Bodies and spirits, gain not her but lose  
Myself to Artemisia? That were love!  
Of two souls—one must bend, one rule above:  
If I crouch under proudly, lord turned slave,  
Were it not worthier both than if she gave  
Herself—in treason to herself—to me?"

And, all the while, he felt it could not be.  
Such love were true love: love that way who  
can!

Someone that's born half woman not whole  
man:

For man, prescribed man better or man  
worse,

Why, whether microcosm or universe,  
What law prevails alike through great and  
small,

The world and man—world's miniature we  
call?

Male is the master. "That way"—smiled  
and sighed

Our true male estimator—"puts her pride  
My wife in making me the outlet whence  
She learns all Heaven allows: 'tis my pretence  
To paint: her lord should do what else but  
paint?"

Do I break brushes, cloister me turned saint?  
Then, best of all suits sanctify her spouse  
Who acts for Heaven, allows and disallows  
At pleasure, past appeal, the right, the wrong  
In all things. That's my wife's way. But  
this strong

Confident Artemisia—an adept  
In Art does she conceit herself? 'Except

In just this instance,' tell her, 'no one  
draws

More rigidly observant of the laws  
Of right design: yet here,—permit me hint,—  
If the acromion had a deeper dint,  
That shoulder were perfection.' What sur-  
prise

—Nay scorn, shoots black fire from those  
startled eyes!

She to be lessoned in design forsooth!  
I'm doomed and done for, since I spoke the  
truth.

Make my own work the subject of dispute—  
Fails it of just perfection absolute  
Somewhere? Those motors, flexors,—don't  
I know

Ser Santi, styled 'Tirititototo'  
The pencil-prig, might blame them? Yet  
my wife—

Were he and his nicknamer brought to life,  
Tito and Titian, to pronounce again—

Ask her who knows more—I or the great  
Twain

Our colourist and draughtsman!  
"I help her,

Not she helps me; and neither shall demur  
Because my portion is—" he chose to  
think—

"Quite other than a woman's: I may drink  
At many waters, must repose by none—  
Rather arise and fare forth, having done  
Duty to one new excellence the more,  
Ablar thereby, though impotent before  
So much was gained of knowledge. Best  
depart

From this last lady I have learned by heart!"

Thus he concluded of himself—resigned  
To play the man and master: "Man boasts  
mind:

Woman, man's sport calls mistress, to the  
same

Does body's suit and service. Would she  
claim

—My placid Beatrice-wife—pretence  
Even to blame her lord if, going hence,  
He wistfully regards one whom—did fate  
Concede—he might accept queen, abdicate

Kingship because of?—one of no meek sort!  
But masterful as he: man's match in short?  
Oh, there's no secret I were best conceal!  
Bicc shall know; and should a stray tear steal  
From out the blue eye, stain the rose cheek  
—bah!

A smile, a word's gay reassurance—ah,  
With kissing interspersed, — shall make  
amends,  
Turn pain to pleasure."

"What, in truth so ends

Abruptly, do you say, our intercourse?"  
Next day, asked Artemisia: "I'll divorce  
Husband and wife no longer. Go your ways,  
Leave Rome! Viterbo owns no equal, says  
The bye-word, for fair women: you, no  
doubt,

May boast a paragon all specks without,  
Using the painter's privilege to choose  
Among what's rarest. Will your wife refuse  
Acceptance from—no rival—of a gift?  
You paint the human figure I make shift  
Humbly to reproduce: but, in my hours  
Of idlesse, what I fain would paint is—  
flowers.

Look now!"

She twitched aside a veiling cloth.  
"Here is my keepsake—frame and picture  
both:

For see, the frame is all of flowers festooned,  
About an empty space,—left thus, to wound  
No natural susceptibility:  
How can I guess? 'Tis you must fill, not I,  
The central space with—her whom you like  
best!

That is your business, mine has been the rest.  
But judge!"

How judge them? Each of us,  
in flowers,  
Chooses his love, allies it with past hours,  
Old meetings, vanished forms and faces:  
no—

Here let each favourite unmolested blow  
For one heart's homage, no tongue's banal  
praise,

Whether the rose appealingly bade "Gaze  
Your fill on me, sultana who dethrone  
The gaudy tulip!" or 'twas "Mé alone

Rather do homage to, who lily am,  
No unabashed rose!" "Do I vainly cram  
My cup with sweets, your jonquil?" "Why  
forget

Vernal endearments with the violet?"  
So they contested yet concerted, all  
As one, to circle round about, enthal  
Yet, self-forgetting, push to prominence  
The midmost wonder, gained no matter  
whence.

There's a tale extant, in a book I conned  
Long years ago, which treats of things beyond  
The common, antique times and countries  
queer  
And customs strange to match. "'Tis said,  
last year,"

(Recounts my author,) "that the King had  
mind

To view his kingdom—guessed at from behind  
A palace-window hitherto. 'Announced  
No sooner was such purpose than 'twas  
pounced

Upon by all the ladies of the land—  
Loyal but light of life: they formed a band  
Of loveliest ones but lithest also, since  
Proudly they all combined to bear their prince.  
Backs joined to breasts,—arms, legs,—nay,  
ankles, wrists,

Hands, feet, I know not by what turns arid  
twists,

So interwoven lay that you believed  
'Twas one sole beast of burden which received  
The monarch on its back, of breadth not scant  
Since fifty girls made one white elephant."

So with the fifty flowers which shapes and hues  
Blent, as I tell, and made one fast yet loose  
Mixture of beauties, composite, distinct  
No less in each combining flower that linked  
With flower to form a fit environment  
For—whom might be the painter's heart's  
intent

Thus, in the midst enhaloed, to enshrine?

"This glory-guarded middle space—is mine?  
For me to fill?"

"For you, my Friend! We part,  
Never perchance to meet again. Your Art—



What if I mean it—so to speak—shall wed  
My own, be witness of the life we led  
When sometimes it has seemed our souls  
near found

Each one the other as its mate—unbound  
Had yours been haply from the better choice  
—Beautiful Biccé: 'tis the common voice,  
The crowning verdict. Make whom you  
like best

Queen of the central space, and manifest  
Your predilection for what flower beyond  
All flowers finds favour with you. I am  
fond

Of—say—yon rose's rich predominance,  
While you—what wonder?—more affect the  
glance

The gentler violet from its leafy screen  
Ventures: so—choose your flower and paint  
your queen!"

Oh but the man was ready, head as hand,  
Instructed and adroit. "Just as you stand,  
Stay and be made—would Nature but relent—  
By Art immortal!"

Every implement

In tempting reach—a palette primed, each  
squeeze

Of oil-paint in its proper patch—with these,  
Brushes, a veritable sheaf to grasp!  
He worked as he had never dared.

"Unclasp  
My Art from yours who can!"—he cried at  
length,

As down he threw the pencil—"Grace from  
Strength

Dissociate, from your flowery fringe detach  
My face of whom it frames,—the feat will  
match

What that of Time should Time from me  
extract

Your memory, Artemisia!" And in fact,—  
What with the pricking impulse, sudden glow  
Of soul—head, hand co-operated so  
That face was worthy of its frame, 'tis said—  
Perfect. suppose!

They parted. Soon instead  
Of Rome was home,—of Artemisia—well,  
The placid-perfect wife. And it befell

That after the first incontestably  
Blessedest of all blisses (—wherefore try  
Your patience with embracings and the rest  
Due from Calypso's all-unwilling guest  
To his Penelope?)—there somehow came  
The coolness which as duly follows flame.  
So, one day, "What if we inspect the gifts  
My Art has gained us?"

Now the wife uplifts

A casket-lid, now tries a medal's chain  
Round her own lithe neck, fits a ring in  
vain

—Too loose on the fine finger,—vows and  
swears

The jewel with two pendent pearls like pearls  
Betters a lady's bosom—witness else!  
And so forth, while Ulysses smiles.

"Such spells

Subdue such natures—sex must worship toys  
—Trinkets and trash: yet, ah, quite other  
joys

Must stir from sleep the passionate abyss  
Of—such an one as her I know—not this  
My gentle consort with the milk for blood!  
Why, did it chance that in a careless mood  
(In those old days, gone—never to return—  
When we talked—she to teach and I to learn)  
I dropped a word, a hint which might imply  
Consorts exist—how quick flashed fire from  
eye,

Brow blackened, lip was pinched by furious  
lip!

I needed no reminder of my slip:  
One warning taught me wisdom. Whereas  
here . . .

Aha, a sportive fancy! Eh, what fear  
Of harm to follow? Just a whim indulged!

"My Beatrice, there's an undivulged  
Surprise in store for you: the moment's fit  
For letting loose a secret: out with it!  
Tributes to worth, you rightly estimate  
These gifts of Prince and Bishop, Church  
and State:

Yet, may I tell you? Tastes so disagree!  
There's one gift, preciouslest of all to me,  
I doubt if you would value as well worth  
The obvious sparkling gauds that men unearth

For toy-cult mainly of god womankind ;  
 Such make you marvel, I concede : while blind  
 The sex proves to the greater marvel here  
 I veil to baffle its envy. Be sincere !  
 Say, should you search creation far and wide,  
 Was ever face like this ?

He drew aside  
 The veil, displayed the flower-framed por-  
 trait kept  
 For private delectation.

#### No adept

In florist's lore more accurately named  
 And praised or, as appropriately, blamed  
 Specimen after specimen of skill,  
 Than Bicc. "Rightly placed the daffodil—  
 Scarcely so right the blue germander. Grey  
 Good mouse-ear ! Hardly your auricula  
 Is powdered white enough. It seems to me  
 Scarlet not crimson, that anemone ;  
 But there's amends in the pink saxifrage.  
 O darling dear ones, let me disengage  
 You innocents from what your harmlessness  
 Clasps lovingly ! Out thou from their caress,  
 Serpent !

Whereat forth-flashing from her coils  
 On coils of hair, the *spilla* in its toils  
 Of yellow wealth, the dagger-plaything kept  
 To pin its plaits together, life-like leapt  
 And—woe to all inside the coronal !  
 Stab followed stab,—cut, slash, she ruined all  
 The masterpiece. A lack for eyes and mouth  
 And dimples and endearment—North and  
 South,

East, West, the tatters in a fury flew :  
 There yawned the circlet. What remained  
 to do ?

She flung the weapon, and, with foiled arms  
 And mien defiant of such low alarms  
 As death and doom beyond death, Bicc stood  
 Passively statuesque, in quietude  
 Awaiting judgment.

And out judgment burst  
 With frank unloading of love's laughter, first  
 Freed from its unsuspected source. 'Some  
 three

Must needs unlock love's prison-bars, let flow  
 The joyance,

"Then you ever were, still are,  
 And henceforth shall be—no occulted star  
 But my resplendent Bicc, sun-revealed,  
 Full-rondure ! Woman-glory unocculted,  
 So front me, find and claim and take your  
 own—

My soul and body yours and yours alone,  
 As you are mine, mine wholly ! Heart's  
 love, take—

Use your possession—stab or stay at will  
 Here—hating, saving—woman with the skill  
 To make man beast or god !

And so it proved :  
 For, as beseeemed new godship, thus he loved,  
 Past power to change, until his dying-day,—  
 Good fellow ! And I fain would hope—  
 some say

Indeed for certain—that our painter's toils  
 At fresco-splashing, finer stroked in oils,  
 Were not so mediocre after all ;  
 Perhaps the work appears unduly small  
 From having loomed too large in old esteem,  
 Patronized by late Papacy. I seem  
 Myself to have cast eyes on certain work  
 In sundry galleries, no judge needs shirk  
 From moderately praising. He designed  
 Correctly, nor in colour lagged behind  
 His age : but both in Florence and in  
 Rome

The elder race so make themselves at home  
 That scarce we give a glance to ceilingfuls  
 Of such like as Francesco. Still, one eulls  
 From out the heaped laudations of the time  
 The pretty incident I put in rhyme.

#### FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH 'AN ACCOMPANIMENT.

He. AH, the bird-like fluting  
 Through the ash-tops yonder—  
 Bullfinch-bubbings, soft sounds suiting  
 What sweet thoughts, I wonder ?  
 Fine-pearled notes that surely  
 Gather, dewdrop-fashion,  
 Deep-down in some heart which purely  
 Secrets gladdened passion—

Passion insuppressive—

Such is piped, for certain;

Love, no doubt, nay, love excessive

'Tis, your ash-tops certain.

Would your ash-tops open

We might spy the player—

Seek and find some sense which mo'pen

Yet from singer, sayer,

Ever has extracted:

Never, to my knowledge,

Yet has pedantry enacted

That, in Cupid's College,

Just this variation

Of the old old yearning

Should by plain speech have salvation,

Yield new men new learning.

"Love!" but what love, nicely

New from old disparaged,

Would the player teach precisely?

First of all, he started

In my brain Assurance—

Trust—entire Contentment—

Passion proved by much endurance;

Then came—not resentment,

No, but simply Sorrow:

What was seen had vanished:

Yesterday so blue! To-morrow

Blank, all sunshine banished.

Hark! 'Tis Hope resurges,

Struggling through obstruction—

Forces a poor smile which verges

On Joy's introduction.

Now, perhaps, mere Musing:

"Holds earth such a wonder?

Fairy-mortal, soul-sense-fusing.

Past thought's power to sunder!"

What? calm Acquiescence?

"Daisied turf gives room to

Trefoil, plucked once in her presence—

Growing by her tomb too!"

She. All's your fancy-spinning!

Here's the fact: a neighbour

Never-ending, still beginning,

Recreates his labour:

Deep o'er desk he drudges,

Adds, divides, subtracts and

Multiplies, until he judges

Noonday-hour's exact sand

Shows the hourglass emptied:

Then comes lawful leisure,

Minutes rare from toil exempted,

Fit to spend in pleasure.

Out then with—what treatise?

Youth's *Complete Instructor*

*How to play the Flute. Quid petis?*

Follow Youth's conductor

On and on, through *Easy*,

Up to *Harder, Hardest*

*Flute-piece*, till thou, flautist wheery,

Possibly discarest

Tootings hoarse and husky,

Mayst expend with courage

Breath—on tunes once bright now

dusky—

Meant to cool thy porridge.

That's an air of Tulon's

He maltreats persistent,

Till as lief I'd hear some Zulu's

Bone-piped bag, breath-distent,

Madden native dances.

I'm the man's familiar:

Unexpectedness enhances

What your ear's auxiliar

—Fancy—finds suggestive.

Listen! That's *legato*

Rightly played, his fingers restive

Touch as if *staccato*.

He. Ah, you trick-betrayer!

Telling tales, unwise one?

So the secret of the player

Was—he could surprise one

Well-nigh into trusting

Here was a musician

Skilled consummately, yet lusting

Through no vile ambition

After making captive

All the world,—rewarded

Amplify by one stranger's raptures,

Common praise discarded.

So, without assistance  
 Such as music rightly  
 Needs and claims,—defying distance,  
 Overleaping lightly  
 Obstacles which hinder,—  
 He, for my approval,  
 All the same and all the kinder  
 Made mine what might move all  
 Earth to kneel adoring :  
 Took—while he piped Gounod's  
 Bit of passionate imploring—  
 Me for Juliet : who knows ?

No ! as you explain things,  
 All's mere repetition,  
 Practise-pother : of all vain things  
 Why waste pooh or pish on  
 Toilsome effort—never  
 Ending, still beginning—  
 After what should pay endeavour  
 —Right-performance ? winning  
 Weariness from you who,  
 Ready to admire some  
 Owl's fresh hooting—Tu-whit, tu—who—  
 Find stale thrush-songs tiresome.

*She.* Songs, Spring thought perfection,  
 Summer criticizes :  
 What in May escaped detection,  
 August, past surprises,  
 Notes, and names each blunder.  
 You, the just-initiate,  
 Praise to heart's content (what  
 wonder ?)  
 Footings I hear vibrate  
 Romeo's serenading—  
 I who, times full twenty,  
 Turned to ice—no ash-tops aiding—  
 At his *caldamente*.

So, 'twas distance altered  
 Sharps to flats ? The missing  
 Bar when syncopation faltered  
 (You thought—paused for kissing !)  
 Ash-tops too felonious  
 Intercepted ? Rather

Say—they well-nigh made euphonious  
 Discord, helped to gather  
 Phrase, by phrase, turn-patches  
 Into simulated  
 Unity which botching matches,—  
 Scraps redintegrated.

*He.* Sweet, are you suggestive  
 Of an old suspicion  
 Which has always found me restive  
 To its admonition  
 When it ventured whisper  
 "Fool, the strifes and struggles  
 Of your trembler—blusher—lisper  
 Were so many juggles,  
 Tricks tried—oh, so often !—  
 Which once more do duty,  
 Find again a heart to soften,  
 Soul to snare with beauty."

Birth-blush of the briar-rose,  
 Mist-bloom of the hedge-sloe,  
 Someone gains the prize : admire rose  
 Would he, when noon's wedge—  
 slow—

Sure, has pushed, expanded  
 Rathe pink to raw redness ?  
 Would he covet sloe when sanded  
 By road-dust to deadness ?  
 So—restore their value !  
 Ply a water-sprinkle !  
 Then guess sloe is fingered, shall you ?  
 Find in rose a wrinkle ?

Here what played Aquarius ?  
 Distance—ash-tops aiding,  
 Reconciled scraps else contrarious,  
 Brightened stuff fast fading.  
 Distance—call your shyness :  
 Was the fair one porvish ?  
 Coyness softened out of slyness.  
 Was she cunning, thievish,  
 All-but-proved impostor ?  
 Bear but one day's exile,  
 Ugly traits were wholly lost or  
 Screened by fancies flexible—

Ash-tops these, you take me?  
 Fancies, interference  
 Changed;  
 But since I sleep, don't wake me!  
 What if all's appearance?  
 Is not outside seeming  
 Real as substance inside?  
 Both are facts, so leave me dreaming:  
 If who loses wins I'd  
 Ever lose,—conjecture,  
 From one phrase trifled deftly,  
 All the piece. So, end your lecture,  
 Let who lied be left lie!

"IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS  
 "EST——"

WHAT it was struck the terror into me?  
 This, Publius: closer! while we wait our  
 turn  
 I'll tell you. Water's warm (they ring inside)  
 At the eighth hour, till when no use to bathe.

Here in the vestibule where now we sit,  
 One scarce stood yesterday, the throng was  
 such,  
 Of loyal gapers, folk all eye and ear,  
 While Lucius Varius Rufus<sup>1</sup> in their midst  
 Read out that long-planned late-completed  
 piece,

His Panegyric on the Emperor.  
 "Nobody like him" little Placcus<sup>2</sup> laughed  
 "At leading forth an Epos with due pomp!  
 Only, when godlike Cæsar swells the theme,  
 How should mere mortals hope to praise  
 aright?"

Tell me, then offshoot of Etruscan kings!"  
 Whereat Mæcenas smiling sighed assent.

I paid my quadrans,<sup>3</sup> left the Thermæ's roar  
 Of rapture as the poet asked "What place  
 Among the godships Jove, for Cæsar's sake,  
 Would bid its actual occupant vacate

In favour of the new divinity?"  
 And got the expected answer "Yield thine  
 own!"—

Jove thus dethroned, I somehow wanted air,  
 And found myself a-pacing street and street,  
 Letting the sunset, rosy over Rome,  
 Clear my head dizzy with the hubbub—say  
 As if thought's dance therein had kicked up  
 dust

By trampling on all else: the world lay  
 prone,

As—poet-propped, in brave hexameters—  
 Their subject triumphed up from man to  
 God.

Caius Octavius Cæsar the August—  
 Where was escapè from his prepotency?  
 I judge I may have passed—how many piles  
 Of structure dropt like doles from his free  
 hand

To Rome on every side? Why, right and  
 left,

For temples you've the Thundering Jupiter,  
 Avenging Mars, Apollo Palatine:  
 How count Piazza, Forum—there's a third  
 All but completed. You've the Theatre  
 Named of Marcellus—all his work, such  
 work!—

One thought still ending, dominating all—  
 With warrant Varius sang "Be Cæsar  
 God!"

By what a hold arrests he Fortune's wheel,  
 Obtaining and retaining heaven and earth  
 Through Fortune, if you like, but favour—no!  
 For the great deeds flashed by me, fast and  
 thick

As stars which storm the sky on autumn  
 nights—

Those conquests! but peace crowned them,  
 —so, of peace!

Count up his titles only—these, in few—  
 Ten years Triumvir, Consul thirteen times,  
 Emperor, nay—the glory topping all—  
 Hailed Father of his Country, last and best  
 Of titles, by himself accepted so:

And why not? See but feats achieved in  
 Rome—

Not to say, Italy—he planted there—  
 Some thirty colonies—but Rome itself

<sup>1</sup> Poet and friend of Virgil.      <sup>2</sup> Horace.

<sup>3</sup> Roman coin of small value.

All new-built, "marble now, brick once,"  
 he boasts :  
 This Portico, that Circus. Would you sail?  
 He has drained Tiber for you : would you  
 walk?  
 He straightened out the long Flaminian  
 Way.  
 Poor? Profit by his score of donatives !  
 Rich—that is, mirthful? Half-a-hundred  
 games  
 Challenge your choice ! There's Rome—for  
 you and me  
 Only? The centre of the world besides !  
 For, look the wide world over, where ends  
 Rome?  
 To sunrise? There's Euphrates—all be-  
 tween !  
 To sunset? Ocean and immensity :  
 North,—stare till Danube stops you : South,  
 see Nile,  
 The Desert and the earth-upholding Mount.  
 Well may the poet-people each with each  
 Vie in his praise, our company of swans,  
 Virgil and Horace, singers—in their way—  
 Nearly as good as Varius, though less famed :  
 Well may they cry, "No mortal, plainly  
 God !"  
 Thus to myself myself said, while I walked :  
 Or would have said, could thought attain to  
 speech,  
 Clean baffled by enormity of bliss  
 The while I strove to scale its heights and  
 sound  
 Its depths—this masterdom o'er all the world  
 Of one who was but born,—like you, like me,  
 Like all the world he owns,—of flesh and  
 blood.  
 But he—how grasp, how gauge his own  
 conceit  
 Of bliss to me near inconceivable?  
 Or—since such flight too much makes reel  
 the brain—  
 Let's sink—and so take refuge, as it were,  
 From life's excessive altitude—to life's  
 Breathable wayside shelter at its base !  
 If looms thus large this Cæsar to myself  
 —Of senatorial rank and somebody—  
 How must he strike the vulgar nameless  
 crowd,  
 Innumerable swarm that's nobody at all?  
 Why,—for an instance,—much as yon gold  
 shape  
 Crowned, sceptred, on the temple opposite—  
 Fulgurant Jupiter—must daze the sense  
 Of—say, yon outcast begging from its step !  
 What, anti-Cæsar, monarch in the mud,  
 As he is pinnacled above thy pate?  
 Ay, beg away ! thy lot contrasts full well  
 With his whose bounty yields thee this sup-  
 port—  
 Our Holy and Inviolable One,  
 Cæsar, whose bounty built the fane above !  
 Dost read my thought? Thy garb, alack,  
 displays  
 Sore usage truly in each rent and stain—  
 Faugh ! Wash though in Suburra !<sup>1</sup> 'Ware  
 the dogs  
 Who may not so disdain a meal on thee !  
 What, stretchest forth a palm to catch my  
 alms?  
 Aha, why yes : I must appear—who knows?—  
 I, in my toga, to thy rags and thee—  
 Quæstor—nay, Ædile, Censor—Pol ! perhaps  
 The very City-Prætor's noble self !  
 As to me Cæsar, so to thee am I?  
 Good : nor in vain shall prove thy quest,  
 poor rogue !  
 Hither—hold palm out—take this quarter-as !  
 And who did take it ? As he raised his head,  
 (My gesture was a trifle—well, abrupt),  
 Back fell the broad flap of the peasant's-hat,  
 The homespun cloak that muffled half his  
 cheek  
 Dropped somewhat, and I had a glimpse—  
 just one !  
 One was enough. Whose—whose might be  
 the face?  
 That unkempt careless hair—brown,  
 yellowish—  
 Those sparkling eyes beneath their eyebrows'  
 ridge  
 (Each meets each, and the hawk-nose rules  
 between)

<sup>1</sup> Street of ill-repute in Rome.

—That was enough, no glimpse was needed  
more!

And terrifyingly into my mind  
Came that quick-hushed report was whispered  
us,

"They do say, once a year in sordid garb  
He plays the mendicant, sits all day long,  
Asking and taking alms of who may pass,  
And so averting, if submission help,  
Fate's envy, the dread chance and change of  
things

When Fortune—for a word, a look, a  
nought—

Turns spiteful and—the petted lioness—  
Strikes with her sudden paw, and prone falls  
each

Who patted late her neck superiorly,  
Or trifled with those claw-tips velvet-  
sheathed."

"He's God!" shouts Lucius Varius Rufus:  
"Man

And worms' meat any moment!" mutters  
low

Some Power, admonishing the mortal-born.

Ay, do you mind? There's meaning in the  
fact

That whoso conquers, triumphs, enters Rome,  
Climbing the Capitolian, soaring thus  
To glory's summit,—Publius, do you mark—  
Ever the same attendant who, behind,  
Above the Conqueror's head supports the  
crown

All-too-demonstrative for human wear,  
—One hand's employment—all the while  
reserves

Its fellow, backward flung, to point how,  
close

Appended from the car, beneath the foot  
Of the up-borne exulting Conqueror,  
Frown—half-descried—the instruments of  
shame,

The malefactor's due. Crown, now—Cross,  
when?

Who stands secure? Are even Gods so safe?  
Jupiter that just now is dominant—  
Are not there ancient dismal tales how once

A predecessor reigned ere Saturn came,  
And who can say if Jupiter be last?  
Was it for nothing the grey Sibyl wrote  
"Caesar Augustus regnant, shall be born  
In blind Judaea"—one to master him,  
Him and the universe? An old-wife's tale?

Bath-drudge! Here, slave! No cheating!  
Our turn next.

No loitering, or be sure you taste the lash!  
Two strigils,<sup>1</sup> two oil-drippers, each a sponge!

## DEVELOPMENT.

My Father was a scholar and knew Greek.  
When I was five years old, I asked him  
once

"What do you read about?"  
"The siege of Troy."

"What is a siege and what is Troy?"  
Whereat

He piled up chairs and tables for a town,  
Set me a-top for Priam, called our cat  
—Helen, enticed away from home (he said)  
By wicked Paris, who couched somewhere  
close

Under the footstool, being cowardly,  
But whom—since she was worth the pains,  
poor puss—

Towzer and Tray,—our dogs, the Atreidae,—  
sought

By taking Troy to get possession of  
—Always when great Achilles ceased to sulk,  
(My pony in the stable)—forth would prance  
And put to flight Hector—our page-boy's self.  
This taught me who was who and what was  
what:

So far I rightly understood the case  
At five years old: a huge delight it proved  
And still proves—thanks to that instructor  
sage

My Father, who knew better than turn  
straight

Learning's full flare on weak-eyed ignorance,

<sup>1</sup> A flesh-brush.

Or, worse yet, leave weak eyes to grow sand-  
blind,  
Content with darkness and vacuity.

It happened, two or three years afterward,  
That—I and playmates playing at Troy's  
Siege—

My Father came upon our make-believe.  
“How would you like to read yourself the  
tale

Properly told, of which I gave you first  
Merely such notion as a boy could bear?  
Pope, now, would give you the precise  
account

Of what, some day, by dint of scholarship,  
You'll hear—who knows?—from Homer's  
very mouth.

Learn Greek by all means, read the ‘Blind  
Old Man,

Sweetest of Singers’—*tuphlos* which means  
‘blind,’

*Hedistos* which means ‘sweetest.’ Time  
enough!

Try, anyhow, to master him some day;  
Until when, take what serves for substitute,  
Read Pope, by all means!”

So I ran through Pope,  
Enjoyed the tale—what history so true?  
Also attacked my Primer, duly drudged,  
Grew fitter thus for what was promised next—  
The very thing itself, the actual words,  
When I could turn—say, Buttmann to  
account.

Time passed, I ripened somewhat: one fine  
day,

“Quite ready for the Iliad, nothing less?  
There's Heine, where the big books block  
the shelf:

Don't skip a word, thumb well the Lexicon!”

I thumbed well and skipped nowise till I  
learned

Who was who, what was what, from Homer's  
tongue,

And there an end of learning. Had you asked  
The all-accomplished scholar, twelve years  
old,

“Who was it wrote the Iliad?”—what a laugh!  
“Why, Homer, all the world knows: of his  
life

Doubtless some facts exist: it's everywhere;  
We have not settled, though, his place of birth:  
He begged, for certain, and was blind beside:  
Seven cities claimed him—Scio, with best  
right,

Thinks Byron. What he wrote? Those  
Hymns we have.

Then there's the ‘Battle of the Frogs and  
Mice,’

That's all—unless they dig ‘Margites’ up  
(I'd like that) nothing more remains to know.”

Thus did youth spend a comfortable time;  
Until—“What's this the Germans say is fact  
That Wolf found out first? It's unpleasant  
work

Their chop and change, unsettling one's belief:  
All the same, while we live, we learn, that's  
sure.”

So, I bent brow o'er *Prolegomena*.  
And, after Wolf, a dozen of his like  
Proved there was never any Troy at all,  
Neither Besiegers nor Besieged,—nay,  
worse,—

No actual Homer, no authentic text,  
No warrant for the fiction I, as fact,  
Had treasured in my heart and soul so long—  
Ay, mark you! and as fact held still, still hold,  
Spite of new knowledge, in my heart of hearts  
And soul of souls, fact's essence freed and fixed  
From accidental fancy's guardian sheath.

Assuredly thenceforward—thank my stars!—  
However it got there, deprive who could—  
Wring from the shrine my precious tenantry,  
Helen, Ulysses, Hector and his Spouse,  
Achilles and his Friend?—though Wolf—ah,  
Wolf!

Why must he needs come doubting, spoil a  
dream?

But then “No dream's worth waking”—  
Browning says:

And here's the reason why I tell thus much  
I, now mature man, you anticipate,  
May blame my Father justifiably



For letting me dream out my nonage thus,  
And only by such slow and sure degrees  
Permitting me to sift the grain from chaff,  
Get truth and falsehood known and named  
as such.

Why did he ever let me dream at all,  
Not bid me taste the story in its strength?  
Suppose my childhood was scarce qualified  
To rightly understand mythology,  
Silence at least was in his power to keep:  
I might have—somehow—correspondingly—  
Well, who knows by what method, gained  
my gains,

Been taught, by forthrights not meanderings,  
My aim should be to loathe, like Peleus' son,  
A lie as Hell's Gate, love my wedded wife,  
Like Hector, and so on with all the rest.  
Could not I have excogitated this  
Without believing such men really were?  
That is—he might have put into my hand  
The "Ethics"? In translation, if you please,  
Exact, no pretty lying that improves,  
To suit the modern taste: no more, no less—  
The "Ethics": 'tis a treatise I find hard  
To read aright now that my hair is grey,  
And I can manage the original.

At five years old—how ill I had fared its leaves!  
Now, growing double o'er the Stagirite,  
At least I soil no page with bread and milk,  
Nor crumple, dogsear and deface—boys' way.

### REPHAN.<sup>1</sup>

[The prose story referred to in the note is "How it Strikes a Stranger" in the Contributions of Q. Q. Probably no child has ever wholly forgotten this story if he or she had the good luck to read it in infancy. These Taylors lived at Ongar, not Norwich.]

How I lived, ere my human life began  
In this world of yours,—like you, made  
man,—  
When my home was the Star of my God  
Rephan?

<sup>1</sup> Suggested by a very early recollection of a prose story by the noble woman and imaginative writer, Jane Taylor, of Norwich.—R. B.

Come then around me, close about,  
World-weary earth-born ones! Darkest  
doubt  
Or deepest despondency keeps you out?

Nowise! Before a word I speak,  
Let my circle embrace your woe, your  
weak,  
Brow-furrowed old age, youth's hollow  
cheek—

Diseased in the body, sick in soul  
Pinched poverty, satiate wealth,—your whole  
Array of despairs! Have I read the roll?

All here? Attend, perpend! O Star  
Of my God Rephan, what wonders are  
In thy brilliance fugitive, faint and far!

Far from me, native to thy realm,  
Who shared its perfections which o'erwhelm  
Mind to conceive. Let drift the helm,

Let drive the sail, dare unconfined  
Embark for the vastitude, O Mind,  
Of an absolute bliss! Leave earth behind!

Here, by extremes, at a mean you guess:  
There, all's at most—not more, not less:  
Nowhere deficiency nor excess.

No want—whatever should be, is now:  
No growth—that's change, and change comes  
—how

To royalty born with crown on brow?

Nothing begins—so needs to end:  
Where fell it short at first? Extend  
Only the same, no change can mend!

I use your language: mine—no word  
Of *its* wealth would help who spoke, who  
heard,  
To a gleam of intelligence. None preferred,

None felt distaste when better and worse  
Were uncontrastable: bless or curse  
What—in that uniform universe?

Can your world's phrase, your sense of things  
 Forth-figure the Star of my God? No  
 springs,  
 No winters throughout its space. Time  
 brings

New petals that mar—unmake the disc—  
 Spoil rondure : what in it ran brave risk,  
 Changed apathy's calm to strife, bright,  
 brisk,

No hope, no fear : as to-day, shall be  
 To-morrow : advance or retreat need we  
 At our stand-still through eternity?

Pushed simple to compound, sprang and

Till, fresh-formed, facetted, floretted,  
 The flower that slept woke a star instead?

All happy : needs must we so have been,  
 Since who could be otherwise? All serene:  
 What dark was to banish, what light to  
 screen?

No mimic of Star Rephan! How long  
 I stagnated there where weak and strong,  
 The wise and the foolish, right and wrong,

Earth's rose is a bud that's checked or  
 grows  
 As beams may encourage or blasts oppose :  
 Our lives leapt forth, each a full-orbed rose—

Are merged alike in a neutral Best,  
 Can I tell? No more than at whose  
 behest  
 The passion arose in my passive breast,

Each rose sole rose in a sphere that spread  
 Above and below and around—rose-red :  
 No fellowship, each for itself instead.

And I yearned for no sameness but difference  
 In thing and thing, that should shock my  
 sense  
 With a want of worth in them all, and thence

One better than I—would prove I lacked:  
 Somewhat : one worse were a jarring fact  
 Disturbing my faultlessly exact.

Startle me up, by an Infinite  
 Discovered above and below me—height  
 And depth alike to attract my flight,

How did it come to pass there lurked  
 Somehow a seed of change that worked  
 Obscure in my heart till perfection irked?—

Repel my descent : by hate taught love.  
 Oh, gain were indeed to see above  
 Supremacy ever—to move, remove,

Till out of its peace at length grew strife—  
 Hopes, fears, loves, hates,—obscurely rife,—  
 My life grown a-tremble to turn your life?

Not reach—aspire yet never attain  
 To the object aimed at! Scarce in vain,—  
 As each stage I left nor touched again.

Was it Thou, above all lights that are,  
 Prime Potency, did Thy hand unbar  
 The prison-gate of Rephan my Star?

To suffer, did pangs bring the loved one  
 bliss,  
 Wring knowledge from ignorance,—just for  
 this—  
 To add one drop to a love-abyss!

In me did such potency wake a pulse  
 Could trouble tranquillity that lulls  
 Not lashes inertion till throes convulse

Enough: for you doubt, you hope, O  
 men,  
 You fear, you agonize, die: what then?  
 Is an end to your life's work out of ken?

Soul's quietude into discontent?  
 As when the completed rose bursts, rent  
 By ardors till forth from its orb are sent

Have you no assurance that, earth at end,  
Wrong will prove right? Who made shall  
mend  
In the higher sphere to which yearnings tend?

Why should I speak? You divine the test.  
When the trouble grew in my pregnant  
breast  
A voice said "So wouldst thou strive, not rest?"

"Burn and not smoulder, win by worth,  
Not rest content with a wealth that's dearth?  
Thou art past Rephan, thy place be Earth!"

### REVERIE.

I KNOW there shall dawn a day  
—Is it here on homely earth?  
Is it yonder, worlds away,  
Where the strange and new have birth,  
That Power comes full in play?

Is it here, with grass about,  
Under befriending trees,  
When shy buds venture out,  
And the air by mild degrees  
Puts winter's death past doubt?

Is it up amid whirl and roar  
Of the elemental flame  
Which star-flecks heaven's dark floor,  
That, new yet still the same,  
Full in play comes Power once more?

Somewhere, below, above,  
Shall a day dawn—this I know—  
When Power, which vainly strove  
My weakness to overthrow,  
Shall triumph. I breathe, I move,

I truly am, at last!  
For a veil is rent between  
Me and the truth which passed  
Fifful, half-guessed, half-seen,  
Grasped at—not gained, held fast.

I for my race and me  
Shall apprehend life's law:  
In the legend of man shall see  
Writ large what small I saw  
In my life's tale: both agree.

As the record from youth to age  
Of my own, the single soul—  
So the world's wide book: one page  
Deciphered explains the whole  
Of our common heritage.

How but from near to far  
Should knowledge proceed, increase?  
Try the clod ere test the star!  
Bring our inside strife to peace  
Ere we wage, on the outside, war!

So, my annals thus begin:  
With body, to life awoke  
Soul, the immortal twin  
Of body which bore soul's yoke  
Since mortal and not akin.

By means of the flesh, grown fit,  
Mind, in surview of things,  
Now soared, anon alit  
To treasure its gatherings  
From the ranged expanse—to-wit,

Nature,—earth's, heaven's wide show  
Which taught all hope, all fear:  
Acquainted with joy and woe,  
I could say "Thus much is clear,  
Doubt annulled thus much: I know."

"All is effect of cause:  
As it would, has willed and done  
Power: and my mind's applause  
Goes, passing laws each one,  
To Omnipotence, lord of laws."

Head praises, but heart refrains  
From loving's acknowledgment.  
Whole losses outweigh half-gains:  
Earth's good is with evil blent:  
Good struggles but evil reigns.

Yet since Earth's good proved good,—  
 Incontrovertibly  
 Worth loving—I understood  
 How evil—did mind descry  
 Power's object to end pursued—

Were haply as cloud across  
 Good's orb, no orb itself:  
 Mere mind—were it found at loss  
 Did it play the tricky elf  
 And from life's gold pursue the dross?

Power is known infinite:  
 Good struggles to be—at best  
 Seems—scanned by the human sight,  
 Tried by the senses' test—  
 Good palpably: but with right

Therefore to mind's award  
 Of loving, as power claims praise?  
 Power—which finds nought too hard,  
 Fulfilling itself all ways  
 Unchecked, unchanged: while barred,

Baffled, what good began  
 Ends evil on every side.  
 To Power submissive man  
 Breathes "E'en as Thou art, abide!"  
 While to good "Late-found, long-sought,

"Would Power to a plenitude  
 But liberate, but enlarge  
 Good's strait confine,—renewed  
 Were ever the heart's discharge  
 Of loving!" Else doubts intrude.

For you dominate, stars all!  
 For a sense informs you—brute,  
 Bird, worm, fly, great and small,  
 Each with your attribute  
 Or low or majestic!

Thou earth that embosomest  
 Offspring of land and sea—  
 How thy hills first sank to rest,  
 How thy vales bred herb and tree  
 Which dizen thy mother-breast—

Do I ask? "Be ignorant  
 Ever!" the answer clangs:  
 Whereas if I plead world's want,  
 Soul's sorrows and body's pangs,  
 Play the human applicant,—

Is a remedy far to seek?  
 I question and find response:  
 I—all men, strong or weak,  
 Conceive and declare at once  
 For each want its cure. "Power, speak!

"Stop change, avert decay,  
 Fix life fast, banish death,  
 Eclipse from the star bid stay,  
 Abridge of no moment's breath  
 One creature! Hence, Night, hail, Day!"

What need to confess again  
 No problem this to solve  
 By impotence? Power, once plain  
 Proved Power,—let on Power devolve  
 Good's right to co-equal reign!

Past mind's conception—Power!  
 Do I seek how star, earth, beast,  
 Bird, worm, fly, gained their dower  
 For life's use, most and least?  
 Back from the search I cower.

Do I seek what heals all harm,  
 Nay, hinders the harm at first,  
 Saves earth? Speak, Power, the charm!  
 Keep the life there unamerced  
 By chance, change, death's alarm!

As promptly as mind conceives,  
 Let Power in its turn declare  
 Some law which wrong retrieves,  
 Abolishes everywhere  
 What thwarts, what irks, what grieves!

Never to be! and yet  
 How easy it seems—to sense  
 Like man's—if somehow met  
 Power with its match—immense  
 Love, limitless, unbeset

By hindrance on every side !  
 Conjectured, nowise known,  
 Such may be : could man confide  
 Such would match—were Love but shown  
 Stript of the veils that hide—

Power's self now manifest !  
 So reads my record : thine,  
 O world, how runs it ? Guessed  
 Were the purport of that prime line,  
 Prophetic of all the rest !

"In a beginning God  
 Made heaven and earth." Forth flashed  
 Knowledge : from star to clod  
 Man knew things : doubt abashed  
 Closed its long period.

Knowledge obtained Power praise.  
 Had Good been manifest,  
 Broke out in cloudless blaze,  
 Unchequered as unrepressed,  
 In all things Good at best—

Then praise—all praise, no blame—  
 Had hailed the perfection. No !  
 As Power's display, the same  
 Be Good's—praise forth shall flow  
 Unisonous in acclaim !

Even as the world its life,  
 So have I lived my own—  
 Power seen with Love at strife,  
 That sure, this dimly shown,  
 —Good rare and evil rife.

Whereof the effect be—faith  
 That, some far day, were found  
 Ripeness in things now rather,<sup>1</sup>  
 Wrong righted, each chain unbound,  
 Renewal born out of scathe.<sup>2</sup>

Why faith—but to lift the load,  
 To leaven the lump, where lies

<sup>1</sup> Early.

<sup>2</sup> Harm.

Mind prostrate through knowledge owed  
 To the loveless Power it tries  
 To withstand, how vain ! In flowed

Ever resistless fact :  
 No more than the passive clay,  
 Disputes the potter's act,  
 Could the whelmed mind disobey  
 Knowledge the cataract.

But, perfect in every part,  
 Has the potter's moulded shape,  
 Leap of man's quickened heart,  
 Throe of his thought's escape,  
 Stings of his soul which dart

Through the barrier of flesh, till keen  
 She climbs from the calm and clear,  
 Through turbidity all between,  
 From the known to the unknown here,  
 Heaven's "Shall be," from Earth's "Has  
 been" ?

Then life is—to wake not sleep,  
 Rise and not rest, but press  
 From earth's level where blindly creep  
 Things perfected, more or less,  
 To the heaven's height, far and steep,

Where, amid what strifes and storms  
 May wait the adventurous quest,  
 Power is Love—transports, transforms  
 Who aspired from worst to best,  
 Sought the soul's world, spurned the worms.

I have faith such end shall be :  
 From the first, Power was—I knew.  
 Life has made clear to me  
 That, strive but for closer view,  
 Love were as plain to see.

When see ? When there dawns a day,  
 If not on the homely earth,  
 Then yonder, worlds away,  
 Where the strange and new have birth,  
 And Power comes full in play.

## EPILOGUE.

At the midnight in the silence of the sleep-  
time,

When you set your fancies free,  
Will they pass to where—by death, fools  
think, imprisoned—

Low he lies who once so loved you, whom  
you loved so,

—Pity me?

Oh to love so, be so loved, yet so mistaken!

What had I on earth to do

With the slothful, with the mawkish, the  
unmanly?

Like the aimless, helpless, hopeless, did I drive!

—Being—who?

One who never turned his back but marched  
breast forward,

Never doubted clouds would break,  
Never dreamed, though right were worsted,  
wrong would triumph,

Held we fall to rise, are baffled to fight  
better,

Sleep to wake.

No, at noonday in the bustle of man's work-  
time

Greet the unseen with a cheer!

Bid him forward, breast and back as either  
should be,

"Strive and thrive!" cry "Speed,—fight  
on, fare ever

There as here!"

## NEW POEMS.

Edited by SIR F. G. KENYON.

(1914)

### THE FIRST-BORN OF EGYPT (1826).

THAT night came on in Egypt with a step  
So calmly stealing in the gorgeous train  
Of sunset glories flooding the pale clouds  
With liquid gold, until at length the glow  
Sank to its shadowy impulse and soft sleep  
Bent o'er the world to curtain it from life—  
Vitality was hushed beneath her wing—  
Pomp sought his couch of purple—care  
—worn grief  
Flung slumber's mantle o'er him. At that  
hour  
He in whose brain the burning fever fend  
Held revelry—his hot cheek turn'd awhile  
Upon the cooler pillow. In his cell  
The captive wrapped him in his squalid  
rags,  
And sank amid his straw. Circean sleep !  
Bathed in thine oplate dew false hope  
vacates  
Her seat in the sick soul, leaving awhile  
Her dreamy fond imaginings—pale fear  
His wild misgivings, and the warm life-  
springs  
Flow in their wonted channels—and the  
train—  
The harpy train of care forsakes the heart.  
Was it the passing sigh of the night wind  
Or some lorn spirit's wail—that moaning cry  
That struck the ear ? 'tis hushed—no ! it  
swells on  
On—as the thunder peal when it essays  
To wreck the summer sky—that fearful  
shriek  
Still it increases—'tis the dolorous plaint,  
The death cry of a nation—  
It was a fearful thing—that hour of night.  
I have seen many climes, but that dread  
hour

Hath left its burning impress on my soul  
Never to be erased. Not the loud crash  
When the shuddering forest swings to the  
red bolt  
Or march of the fell earthquake when it  
whelms  
A city in its yawning gulf, could quell  
That deep voice of despair. Pharaoh arose  
Startled from slumber, and in anger sought  
The reason of the mighty rushing throng  
At that dark hour around the palace gates,  
—And then he dashed his golden crown away  
And tore his hair in frenzy when he knew  
That Egypt's heir was dead—From every  
home,  
The marbled mansion of regality  
To the damp dungeon's walls—gay pleasure's  
seat  
And poverty's lone hut, that cry was heard  
As guided by the Seraph's vengeful arm  
The hand of death held on its withering  
course,  
Blighting the hopes of thousands.—  
I sought the street to gaze upon the grief  
Of congregated Egypt—there the slave  
Stood by him late his master, for that hour  
Made vain the world's distinctions—for  
could wealth  
Or power arrest the woe ?—Some were there  
As sculptured marble from the quarry late  
Of whom the foot first in the floating dance,  
The glowing cheek hued with the deep'ning  
flush  
In the night revel—told the young and gay,  
No kindly moisture dewed their stony eye,  
Or damp'd their ghastly glare—for they felt  
not.  
The chain of torpor bound around the heart  
Had stifled it for ever. Tears stole down

The furrow'd channels of those withered cheeks  
 Whose fount had long been chill'd, but that  
 night's term  
 Had loosed the springs—for 'twas a fearful  
 thing  
 To see a nation's hope so blasted. One  
 Press'd his dead child unto his heart—no  
 spot  
 Of livid plague was nigh—no purple cloud  
 Of scathing fever—and he struck his brow  
 To rouse himself from that wild phantasy  
 Deeming it but a vision of the night.  
*I marked one old man with his only son  
 Lifeless within his arms—his withered hand  
 Wandering o'er the features of his child  
 Bidding him [wake] from that long dreary  
 sleep,  
 And lead his old blind father from the crowd  
 To the green meadows—but he answer'd not;  
 And then the terrible truth flash'd on his  
 brain,*  
 And when the throng roll'd on some bade  
 him rise  
 And cling not so unto the dead one there,  
 Nor voice nor look made answer—he was  
 gone,  
 But one thought chain'd the powers of each  
 mind  
 Amid that night's felt horror—each one  
 owned  
 In silence the dread majesty—the might  
 Of Israel's God, whose red hand had avenged  
 His servants' cause so fearfully..

## THE DANCE OF DEATH (1826).

And as they footed it around,  
 They sang their triumphs o'er mankind !  
*de Stael.*

## FEVER.

Bow to me, bow to me;  
 Follow me in my burning breath,  
 Which brings as the simoom destruction and  
 death.

My spirit lives in the hectic glow  
 When I bide the life streams tainted flow  
 In the fervid sun's deep brooding beam  
 When seething vapours in volumes steam,

And they fall—the young, the gay—as the  
 flower  
 'Neath the fiery wind's destructive power.  
 This day I have gotten a noble prize—  
 There was one who saw the morning rise,  
 And watch'd fair Cynthia's golden streak,  
 Kiss the misty mountain peak,  
 But I was there, and my pois'nous flood  
 Envenom'd the gush of the youth's warm  
 blood.  
 They hastily bore him to his bed,  
 But o'er him death his swart pennons spread :  
 The skill'd leech's art was vain,  
 Delirium revelled in each vein.  
 I mark'd each deathly change in him ;  
 I watch'd his lustrous eye grow dim,  
 The purple cloud on his deep swol'n brow,  
 The gathering death sweat's chilly flow,  
 The dull dense film obscure the eye,  
 Heard the last quick gasp and saw him die.

## PESTILENCE.

My spirit has past on the lightning's wing  
 O'er city and land with its withering ;  
 In the crowded street, in the flashing hall  
 My tramp has been heard : they are lonely  
 all.  
 A nation has swept at my summons away  
 As mists before the glare of day.  
 See how proudly reigns my hand  
 In the black'ning heaps on the surf-beat  
 strand  
 [Where] the rank grass grows in deserted  
 streets  
 [Where] the terrified stranger no passer  
 meets  
 [And all] around the putrid air  
 [Gleams] lurid and red in Erin's stare  
 Where silence reigns, where late swell'd the  
 lute,  
 Thrilling lyre, mellifluous flute.  
 There if my prowess ye would know,  
 Seek ye—and bow to your rival low.

Bow to me, bow to me ;  
 My influence is in the freezing deeps  
 Where the icy power of torpor sleeps,



Where the frigid waters flow  
 My marble chair is more cold below ;  
 When the Grecian brav'd the Hellespont's  
     flood  
 How did I curdle his fever'd blood,  
 And sent his love in tumescent wave  
 To meet with her lover an early grave.  
 When Hellas' victor sought the rush  
 Of the river to lave in its cooling gush,  
 Did he not feel my iron clutch  
 When he fainted and sank at my algid  
     touch ?  
 These are the least of the trophies I claim—  
 Bow to me then, and own my fame.

## MADNESS

Hear ye not the gloomy yelling  
 Or the tide of anguish swelling,  
 Hear ye the clank of fetter and chain,  
 Hear ye the wild cry of grief and pain,  
 Followed by the shuddering laugh  
 As when fiends the life blood quaff ?  
 See ! see that band,  
 See how their bursting eyeballs gleam,  
 As the tiger's when crouched in the jungle's  
     lair,  
 In India's sultry land.  
 Now they are seized in the rabies fell,  
 Hark ! 'tis a shriek as from fiends of hell ;  
 Now there is a plaining moan,  
 As the flow of the sullen river—  
 List ! there is a hollow groan.  
 Doth it not make e'en *you* to shiver—  
 These are they struck of the barbs of my  
     quiver.  
 Slaves before my haughty throne,  
 Bow then, bow to me alone.

## CONSUMPTION

'Tis for me, 'tis for me ;  
 Mine the prize of Death must be ;  
 My spirit is o'er the young and gay  
 As on snowy wreaths in the bright noonday  
 They wear a melting and vermeille flush  
 E'en while I bid their pulses hush,  
 Hueing o'er their dying brow  
 With the spring (?) of health's best roseate  
     glow

When the lover watches the full dark eye  
 Robed in tints of ianthine dye,  
 Beaming eloquent as to declare  
 The passions that deepen the glories there.  
 The frost in its tide of dazzling whiteness,  
 As Juno's brow of chrystal brightness,  
 Such as the Grecian's hand could give  
 When he bade the sculptured marble "live,"  
 The ruby suffusing the Hebe cheek,  
 The pulses that love and pleasurè speak  
 Can his fond heart claim but another day,  
 And the loathsome worm on her form shall  
     prey.

She is scathed as the tender flower,  
 When mildews o'er its chalice lour.  
 Tell me not of her balmy breath,  
 Its tide shall be shut in the fold of death ;  
 Tell me not of her honied lip,  
 The reptile's fangs shall its fragrance sip.  
 Then will I say triumphantly  
 Bow to the deadliest—bow to me !

## SONNET (1834).

EYES calm beside thee (Lady, could'st thou  
     know !)  
 May turn away thick with fast-gathering  
     tears :  
 I glance not where all gaze : thrilling and low  
 Their passionate praises reach thee—my  
     cheek wears  
 Alone no wonder when thou passest by ;  
 Thy tremulous lids bent and suffused reply  
 To the irrepressible homage which doth glow  
 On every lip but mine : if in thine ears  
 Their accents linger—and thou dost recall  
 Me as I stood, still, guarded, very pale,  
 Beside each votarist whose lighted brow  
 Wore worship like an aureole, "O'er them all  
 My beauty," thou wilt murmur, "did  
     prevail  
 Save that one only " :—Lady, could'st thou  
     know !

## A FOREST THOUGHT (1837).

In far Esthonian solitudes  
 The parent-firs of future woods

Gracefully, airily 'spire at first  
Up to the sky, by the soft sand nurst ;  
Self-sufficient are they, and strong  
With outspread arms, broad level and long ;  
But soon in the sunshine and the storm  
They darken, changing fast their form—  
Low boughs fall off, and in the bole  
Each tree spends all its strenuous soul—  
Till the builder gazes wistfully  
Such noble ship-mast wood to see,  
And cares not for its soberer hue,  
Its rougher bark and leaves more few.

But just when beauty passes away  
And you half regret it could not stay,  
For all their sap and vigorous life,—  
Under the shade, secured from strife  
A seedling springs—the forest-tree  
In miniature, and again we see  
The delicate leaves that will fade one day,  
The fan-like shoots that will drop away,  
The taper stem a breath could strain—  
Which shall foil one day the hurricane :  
We turn from this infant of the copse  
To the parent-firs,—in their waving tops  
To find some trace of the light green tuft  
A breath could stir,—in the bole aloft  
Column-like set against the sky,  
The spire that flourished airily  
And the marten bent as she rustled by.

So shall it be, dear Friends, when days  
Pass, and in this fair child we trace  
Goodness, full-formed in you, tho' dim  
Faint-budding, just astir in him :  
When rudiments of generous worth  
And frankest love in him have birth,  
We'll turn to love and worth full-grown,  
And learn their fortune from your own.  
Nor shall we vainly search to see  
His gentleness—simplicity—  
Not lost in your maturer grace—  
Perfected, but not changing place.

May this grove be a charmed retreat . . .  
May northern winds and savage sleet  
Leave the good trees untouched, unshorn  
A crowning pride of woods unborn :  
And gracefully beneath their shield  
May the seedling grow ! All pleasures yield  
Peace below and peace above,

The glancing squirrels' summer love,  
And the brood-song of the cushat-dove !

#### THE "MOSES" OF MICHAEL ANGELO (1850).

AND who is He that, sculptured in huge  
stone,  
Sitteth a giant, where no works arrive •  
Of straining Art, and hath so prompt and  
live

The lips, I listen to their very tone ?  
Moses is He—Ay, that, makes clearly known  
The chin's thick boast, and brow's pre-  
rogative

Of double ray : so did the mountain give  
Back to the world that visage, God was  
grown

Great part of ! Such was he when he sus-  
pended  
Round him the sounding and vast waters ;  
such

When he shut sea on sea o'er Mizraim.  
And ye, his hordes, a vile calf raised, and  
bended

The knee ? This Image had ye raised, not  
much  
Had been your error in adoring Him.

#### BEN KARSHOOK'S WISDOM (1854).

"Would a man 'scape the rod ?"  
Rabbi Ben Karshook saith,  
"See that he turn to God  
"The day before his death."

"Ay, could a man inquire  
"When it shall come !" I say.  
The Rabbi's eye shoots fire—  
"Then let him turn to-day !"

II  
Quoth a young Sadducee :  
"Reader of many rolls,  
"Is it so certain we  
"Have, as they tell us, souls ?"  
"Son, there is no reply !"  
The Rabbi bit his beard ;  
"Certain, a soul have I—  
"We have none," he sneer'd.

Thus Karshook, the Hiram's-Hammer,  
The Right-hand Temple-column,  
Taught babes in grace their grammar,  
And struck the simple, solemn.

ON BEING DEFIED TO EXPRESS  
IN A HEXAMETER (1866):

"YOU OUGHT TO SIT ON THE  
SAFETY-VALVE."

PLANE te valvam fas est pressisse salutis :  
Æquum est te valvæque, salutis sede, locari  
Convenit in sellâ, valvâ residere salutis,  
Omninoque salutis par considerare valvâ :  
Sedibus est justum valvæ mansisse salutis :  
Hæsisse in valvâ te, sede salutis, oportet :  
Est tibi valvis, inque salutis sede, sedendum:  
Valvâ, sede salutiferâ super, assidet omnis  
Qui discrimen adit, fortem quem numina  
servant :  
Multiplicem versum tu mente, Robertule,  
figas !

LINES TO THE MEMORY OF HIS  
PARENTS (1866).

"WORDS I might else have been compelled  
to say  
In silence to my heart,—great love, great  
praise  
Of thee, my Father—have been freely said  
By those whom none shall blame ; and while  
thy life  
Endures, a beauteous thing, in their record  
I may desist ; but thou art not alone :  
They lie beside thee whom thou lovest  
most ;  
Soft sanctuary-tapers of thy house,  
Close-curtained when the Priest came forth,  
—on these  
Let peace be, peace on thee, my Mother, too !  
The child that never knew you, and the Girl  
In whom your gentle souls seemed born again  
To bless us longer. Peace like yours be mine  
Till the same quiet home receive us all."

A ROUND ROBIN (1869).

(Written by Robert Browning and sent to Miss  
Harriet Hosmer in Rome.)

Loch Luichart, Dingwall, N.B.

DEAR HOSMER ; or still dearer, Hatty—  
Mixture of *miele* and of *latte*,  
So good and sweet and —somewhat fatty—

Why linger still in Rome's old glory  
When Scotland lies in cool before ye ?  
Make haste and come !—quoth Mr. Story.

Sculpture is not a thing to sit to  
In summertime ; do find a fit tee  
To kick the clay aside a bit—oh ;  
Yield to our prayers ! quoth Mrs. Ditto.

Give comfort to us poor and needy  
Who, wanting you, are waiting greedy  
Our meat and drink, yourself, quoth Edie.  
Nay, though, past clay, you chip the Parian,  
Throw chisel down ! quoth Lady Marian.

Be welcome, as to cow—the fodder-rick !  
Excuse the simile !—quoth Sir Roderick.

Say not (in Scotch) "in troth it canna be"—  
But, honey, milk and, indeed, manna be !  
Forgive a stranger !—Sarianna B.

Don't set an old acquaintance frowning,  
But come and quickly ! quoth R. Browning,  
For since prodigious fault is found with you,  
I—that is, Robin—must be Round with  
you.

PS. Do wash your hands, or leave the dirt on,  
But leave the tool as Gammer Gurton  
Her needle lost,—Lady Ashburton.  
Thus ends this letter—ease my sick heart,  
And come to my divine Loch Luichart !

W. W. STORY, his mark X,  
EMELYN STORY,  
EDITH MARION STORY,

Signatures of : M. ALFORD,  
in order of Roderick Murchison,  
infraposition, SARIANNA BROWNING,  
I am, ROBERT BROWNING,  
L. ASHBURTON.

## HELEN'S TOWER (1870).

(Written at the request of the Marquis of  
Dufferin.)

Who hears of Helen's Tower, may dream  
perchance.

How the Greek Beauty from the Scaean  
gate

Gazed on old friends unanimous in hate,  
Death-doom'd because of her fair counten-  
ance.

Hearts would leap otherwise at thy advance,  
Lady, to whom this tower is consecrate!

Like hers, thy face once made all eyes  
elate,

Yet, unlike hers, was bless'd by every  
glance.

The Tower of Hate is outworn, far and  
strange:

A transitory shame of long ago,  
It dies into the sand from which it  
sprang;

But thine, Love's rock-built Tower, shall  
fear no change:

God's self laid stable earth's foundations  
so,

When all the morning stars together  
sang.

## "OH LOVE, LOVE" (1879).

Oh Love, Love, thou that from the eyes  
diffusest

Yearning, and on the soul sweet grace  
inducest—

Souls against whom thy hostile march is  
made—

Never to me be manifest in ire,  
Nor, out of time and tune, my peace invade!

Since neither from the fire—  
No, nor the stars—is launched a bolt more

mighty.  
Than that of Aphrodité

Hurled from the hands of Love, the boy  
with Zeus for sire.

Idly, how idly, by the Alpheian river

And, in the Pythian shrines of Phœbus,  
quiver

Blood-offerings from the bull, which Hellas  
heaps:

While Love we worship not—the Lord of  
men!

Worship not him; the very key who keeps!  
Of Aphrodité, when

She closes up her dearest chamber-portals—  
—Love, when he comes to mortals,

Wide-wasting, through those deeps of woes  
beyond the deep.

VERSES FROM "THE HOUR WILL  
COME" (1879).

THE blind man to the maiden said,

"O thou of hearts the truest,

Thy countenance is hid from me;

Let not my question anger thee!

Speak, though in words the fewest.

"Tell me, what kind of eyes are thine?

Dark eyes, or light ones rather?"

"My eyes are a decided brown—

So much at least, by looking down,

From the brook's glass I gather."

"And is it red—thy little mouth?

That too the blind must care for."

"Ah! I would tell it soon to thee,

Only—none yet has told it me,

I cannot answer, therefore.

"But dost thou ask what heart I have—

There hesitate I never.

In thine own breast 't is borne, and so

'T is thine in weal, and thine in woe,

For life, for death—thine ever!"

TRANSLATION FROM PINDAR'S  
SEVENTH OLYMPIAN, EPODE III.

(1883).

AND to these Rhodians she, the sharp eyed  
one,

Gave the supremacy, in every art,

And, nobly-labouring play the craftsman's  
part.

Beyond all dwellers underneath the sun.  
 So that the very ways by which ye pass  
 Bore sculpture, living things that walk or  
 creep  
 Like as the life : whence very high and  
 deep  
 Indeed the glory of the artist was.  
 For, in the well-instructed artist, skill,  
 However great, receives our greeting,  
 As something greater still,  
 When unaccompanied by cheating.

SONNET TO RAWDON BROWN  
 (1883).

SIGHED Rawdon Brown : " Yes, I'm depart-  
 ing, Toni !  
 I needs must, just this once before I die,  
 Revisit England : *Anglus* Brown am I,  
 Although my heart's Venetian. Yes, old  
 crony—  
 Venice and London—London's " Death the  
 bony "  
 Compared with Life—that's Venice ! What  
 a sky,  
 A sea, this morning ! One last look !  
 Good-by,  
 Cà Pesaro ! No lion—I'm a coney  
 To weep ! I'm dazzled : 't is that sun I view  
 Rippling the . . . the . . . *Cospetto*, Toni !  
 Down  
 With carpet-bag, and off with valise-straps !  
*Bella Venesia, non ti lascio piu' !*  
 Nor did Brown ever leave her : well,  
 perhaps  
 Browning, next week, may find himself  
 quite Brown !

GOLDONI (1883).

GOLDONI—good, gay, sunniest of souls—  
 Glassing half Venice in that verse of  
 thine—  
 What though it just reflect the shade and  
 shine  
 Of common life, nor render, as it rolls,

Grandeur and gloom ? Sufficient for thy  
 shoals  
 Was Carnival : Parini's depths enshrine  
 Secrets unsuited to that opaline  
 Surface of things which laughs along thy  
 scrolls.  
 There throng the people : how they come  
 and go,  
 Lisp the soft language, flaunt the bright  
 garb—see—  
 On Piazza, Calle, under Portico  
 And over Bridge ! Dear king of Comedy,  
 Be honoured ! Thou that didst love Venice  
 so,  
 Venice, and we who love her, all love thee.

ON SINGERS (1883).

OMNIBUS hoc vitium est cantoribus, inter  
 amicos  
 Ut nunquam inducant animum cantare  
 rogati,  
 Injussi nunquam desistant.  
 He immediately appended the following  
 translation :  
 All singers, trust me, have this common  
 vice,  
 To sing 'mid friends you'll have to ask them  
 twice.  
 If you don't ask them 't is another thing,  
 Until the judgment-day be sure they'll sing.

GEROUSIOS QINOS (1883).

I DREAMED there was once held a feast :  
 That lords assembled, most and least,  
 And set them down to dine ;  
 Till, eating ended—high of heart  
 Each guest,—the butler did his part,  
 Poured out their proper wine.

Good tippie and of various growth  
 (You may believe without an oath)  
 Glorified every glass :  
 All drank in honour of the host,  
 Then—high of heart,—rose least and most,  
 And left the room—alas.

For in rushed straightway loon and lout,  
 Mere servingmen who skulked without :  
 "Our masters turn their backs,  
 And now's the time to taste and try  
 What meat lords munch,—and, by and by,  
 What wine they swill—best smacks."

So said, so done : first, hunger spends  
 Its rage on victual, odds and ends :

But seeing that rage appeased,  
 "Now for the lords' wine," all agree,  
 "Kept from the like of you and me !  
 Wet whistles, chins once greased !

"How ! not content with loading crop,  
 These lords have scarcely left a drop  
 In every glass deep-drained !

The niggards mean our feast to prove  
 A horse-regale ! But, one remove  
 From wine is water stained.

"Fill up each glass with water ! Get  
 Such flavour as may stick fast yet,  
 Fancy shall do the rest !  
 Besides we boast our private flasks,  
 Good stiff mundungus, home-brewed casks  
 Beating their bottled best !

"So here's your health to watered port !  
 Thanks : mine is sherry of a sort.  
 Claret, though thinnish, clear.  
 My Burgundy's the genuine stuff—  
 Bettered and bittered just enough  
 By mixing it with beer."

Oh, England (I awoke and laughed)  
 True wine thy lordly Poets quaffed,  
 Yet left,—for, what cared they !—  
 Each glass its heel-tap—flavouring sup  
 For flunkies when, to liquor up,  
 In swarmed—who, need I say !

#### THE FOUNDER OF THE FEAST (1884).

(To Arthur Chappell)

"ENTER my palace," if a prince should say—  
 "Feast with the Painters ! See, in  
 bounteous row,  
 They range from Titian up to Angelo !"  
 Could we be silent at the rich survey ?

A host so kindly, in as great a way :  
 Invites to banquet, substitutes for show :  
 Sound that's diviner still, and bids us  
 know  
 Bach like Beethoven ; are we thankless,  
 pray ?

To him whose every guest not idly vaunts,  
 "Sense has received the utmost Nature  
 grants,  
 My cup was filled with rapture to the brim,  
 When, night by night—ah, memory, how  
 it haunts !—  
 Music was poured by perfect ministrants,  
 By Halle, Schumann, Piatti, Joachim."

#### THE NAMES (1884).

(To Shakespeare)

SHAKESPEARE !—to such name's sounding  
 what succeeds  
 Fitly as silence ? Falter forth the spell,—  
 Act follows word, the speaker knows full  
 well,  
 Nor tampers with its magic more than  
 needs.  
 Two names there are : That which the  
 Hebrew reads  
 With his soul only : if from lips it fell,  
 Echo, back thundered by earth, heaven  
 and hell,  
 Would own "Thou did'st create us !"  
 Nought impedes  
 We voice the other name, man's most of  
 might,  
 Awesomely, lovingly ; let awe and love  
 Mutely await their working, leave to sight  
 All of the issue as—below—above—  
 Shakespeare's creation rises : one remove,  
 Though dread—this finite from that infinite.

#### WHY I AM A LIBERAL (1885).

"Why ?" Because all I haply can and do,  
 All that I am now, all I hope to be—  
 Whence comes it save from fortune setting  
 free

Body and soul the purpose to pursue,  
 God traced for both? If fetters, not a few,  
 Of prejudice, convention, fall from me;

These shall I bid men—each in his degree  
 Also God-guided—bear, and gaily too?  
 But little do or can the best of us:

That little is achieved through Liberty,  
 Who, then, dares hold—emancipated thus—

His fellow shall continue bound? Not I  
 Who live, love, labour freely, nor discuss.

A brother's right to freedom. That is  
 "Why."

#### LINES FOR THE TOMB OF LEVI LINCOLN THAXTER (1885).

Thou, whom these eyes saw never,—Say  
 friends true

Who say my soul, helped onward by my  
 song,

Though all unwittingly, has helped thee  
 too?

I gave but of the little that I knew:

How were the gift requited, while along  
 Life's path I pace, couldst thou make weak-  
 ness strong,

Help me with knowledge—for Life's Old—  
 Death's New!

#### EPPS (1886).

Asks anyone—"Where's a tag for *steps*?"

I answer—"Waiting its time  
 Till somebody versed in the English tongue  
 Shall start at the challenge, cry 'unsung

Till now, and all for want of a rhyme,  
 Is the prowess of Kentish Epps?"

Two hundred and eighty years ago

Befell the siege of Ostend;  
 Epps soldiered it there: and, hew or hack  
 At his breast as the enemy might, his back  
 Got never a scratch: yet life must end  
 Somehow,—Epps ended—so!

He had lost an eye on the walls, look out

No longer could Epps: said he—

"Give me Saint George's cross—our flag

To carry: I can't see them—foes brag:

At all events they shall soon see me,

Knight and knave, lord and lout!"

"Epps got loose again!" yelled the ours:

"At him—the blind side best!

Together as one—in rush, on a heap,

Buffet the old maimed bull! Fame's cheap

This morn for whoso has mind to wrest

Yon flag from his hold, win spurs!"

As a big wave bursts on a rock, broke they

On bannerman Epps: as staunch

The drowned rook stands, but emerging feels

Weeds late on its head lie loose at its heels,

So left bare, swirl—stript, root and branch,

Of his { band  
 company } stood—Epps laughed gay:

"I with my flag—that's well, no fear

The colours stick to the staff:

But the staff 'tis a mere hand holds—lets  
 fall.

If there stab me or shoot one knave of them  
 all:

To hinder which game—"I hear Epps  
 laugh—

"Stick, flag, to a new staff—here!"

And off in a trice from the staff that's wood,

And on to a staff that's flesh,

Tears Epps and { ties } me { round } about  
 { binds } { tight }

his breast

The flag in a red swathe: "Here's the vest

For my lifelong wear; at the foe afresh!

Flagstaff, show your hardihood!"

Whereat, in a twinkling, man and horse

Went down—one, two and three,

And how many more? But they shot and  
 sl. shed

Two { bullets } have riddled, two sword-  
 { balls } blades gashed

The staff through the flag,—{ leave } free  
 { left }

To despoilers,—you think,—a corse?

No! Back from his slayers, staggeringly  
 But, staff-like, stout to the last,  
 Up to his mates—of the checked advance—  
 Reels Epps, his soul in his countenance,  
 As he falters "See! Flag to the staff  
 sticks fast,  
 And, flag saved, staff may die!"  
 And die did Epps, with his English round:  
 Not so the fame of the feat:  
 For Donne and Dekker, brave poets and  
 rare,  
 Gave it honour and praise: and I join the  
 pair  
 With heart that's loud though my voice  
 compete  
 As a pipe with their trumpet-sound!

#### THE ISLE'S ENCHANTRESS (1889).

WIND wafted from the sunset, o'er the swell  
 Of summer's slumbrous sea, herself asleep  
 Come shoreward, in her iridescent shell  
 Cradled, the isle's enchantress. You who  
 keep  
 A drowsy watch beside her,—watch her  
 well!

#### UNFINISHED DRAFT OF A POEM WHICH MAY BE ENTITLED "ÆSCHYLUS' SOLILOQUY."

I AM an old and solitary man  
 And now at set of sun in Sicily  
 I sit down in the middle of this plain  
 Which drives between the mountains and  
 the sea  
 Its blank of nature. If a traveller came  
 Seeing my bare bald skull and my still  
 brows  
 And massive features coloured to a stone  
 The tragic mask of a humanity  
 Whose part is played to an end,—he might  
 mistake me

For some god Terminus set on these flats  
 Or broken marble Faunus. Let it be.  
 Life has ebbed from me—I am on dry  
 ground—  
 All sounds of life I held so thunderous sweet  
 Shade off to silence—all the perfect shapes  
 Born of perception and men's images  
 (imagery?)  
 Which thronged against the outer rim of  
 earth  
 And hung with floating faces over it  
 Grow dim and dimmer—all the motions  
 drawn  
 From Beauty in action which spun audibly  
 My brain round in a rapture, have grown  
 still.  
 There's a gap 'twixt me and the life once  
 mine,  
 Now others' and not mine, which now roars  
 off  
 In gradual declination—till at last  
 I hear it in the distance droning small  
 Like a bee at sunset. Ay, and that bee's  
 hum  
 The buzzing fly and mouthing of the grass  
 'ropped slowly near me by some straying  
 sheep  
 Are strange to me with life—and separate  
 from me  
 The outside of my being—I myself  
 Grow to silence, fasten to the calm  
 Of inorganic nature . . . sky and rocks—  
 shall pass on into their unity  
 When dying down into impersonal dusk.  
 Ah, ha—these flats are wide!  
 The prophecy which said the house would fall  
 And thereby crush me, must bring down the  
 sky  
 The only roof above me where I sit  
 Or ere it prove its oracle to-day.  
 Stand fast ye pillars of the constant Heavens  
 As Life doth in me—I who did not die  
 That day in Athens when the people's scorn  
 Hissed toward the sun as if to darken it  
 Because my thoughts burned too much for  
 the eyes  
 Over my head, because I spoke my Greek  
 'oo deep down in my soul to suit their case.



Who did not die to see the solemn vests  
Of my white chorus round the thymele  
Flutter like doves, and sweep back like a  
cloud

Before the shrill lipped people . . . but  
stood calm

And cold, and felt the theatre wax hot  
With mouthing whispers . . . the man  
Æschylus

Is gray I fancy—and his wrinkles ridge  
The smoothest of his phrases—or the times  
Have grown too polished for this old rough  
work—

We have no Sphynxes in the Parthenon  
Nor any flints at Dephos—or forsooth,  
I think the Sphynxes wrote this Attic  
Greek—

Our Sophocles hath something more than  
this

Cast out on—and their smile—I would  
not die (?)

At this time by the crushing of a house  
Who lived that Day out . . . I would go to  
death

With voluntary and majestic steps  
Jove thundering on the right hand. Let  
it be.

I am an old and solitary man  
Mine eyes feel dimly out the setting sun  
Which drops its great red fruit of bitterness  
To-day as other days, as every day  
Within the patient waters. What do I say?  
I whistle out my scorn against the sun  
Who (knell) his trilogy morn noon and night  
And set this tragic world against the sun—  
Forgive me, great Apollo.—Bitter fruit  
I think we never found that holy sun  
Or ere with conjurations of our hands  
Drove up the saltness of our hearts to it  
A blessed fruit, a full Hesperian fruit  
Which the fair sisters with their starry eyes  
Did warm to scarlet bloom. O holy sun  
My eyes are weak and cannot hold thee  
round!

But in my large soul there is room for thee—  
All human wrongs and shames cast out from  
it,—

And I invite thee, sun, to sphere thyself  
In my large soul, and let my thoughts in  
white

Keep chorus round thy glory—Oh the  
days

In which I sate upon Hymettus hill  
Ilissus seeming louder: and the groves  
Of blessed olive thinking of their use  
A little tunicked child and felt my  
thoughts (?)

Rise past the golden bees against thy  
face

Great sun upon the sea. The city lay  
Beneath me like an eaglet in an egg,  
The beak and claws shut whitely up in  
calm—

And calm were the great waters—and the  
hills

Holding at arm's length their unmolten  
snows

Plunged in the light of heaven which trickled  
back

On all sides, a libation to the world.

There I sate a child  
Half hidden in purple thyme with knees  
drawn up

By clasping of my little arms, and cheek  
Laid slant across them with obtruded nose  
And full eyes gazing . . . ay, my eyes  
climbed up

Against the heated metal of thy shield  
Till their persistent look clove through the  
fire

And struck it into manyfolded fires (?)  
And opened out the secret of the night  
Hid in the day-source Darkness mixed with  
light.

Then shot innumerable arrows in my eyes  
From all sides of the Heavens—so blinding  
me—

As countless as the norland snowflakes fall  
Before the north winds—rapid, wonderful,  
Some shafts as bright as sun rays nine times  
drawn

Thro' the heart of the sun—some black as  
night in Hell—

All mixed, sharp, driven against me! and as  
I gazed

(For I gazed still) I saw the sea and earth  
Leap up as wounded by the innumerable  
shafts

And hurry round, and whirl into a blot  
Across which evermore fell thick the shafts  
As norland snow falls thick before the wind  
(? flakes fall)

Until the northmen at the cavern's mouth  
Can see no pine tree through. I could see  
nought

No earth, no sea, no sky, no sun itself,  
Only that arrowy rush of black and white  
Across a surf of rainbows infinite

Drove { piercing ?? } and blinding and  
          { pressing ? }  
astonishing

And through it all Homerus the blind man  
Did chant his vowelled music in my brain.  
And then it was revealed, it was revealed  
That I should be a priest of the Unseen  
And build a bridge of sounds across the  
straight

From Heaven to earth whence all the Gods  
might walk

Nor bend it with their soles (?)

And then I saw the Gods tread past me slow  
From out the portals of the hungry dark  
And each one as he past, breathed in my  
face

And made me greater—First old Saturn came  
Blind with eternal watches—calm and  
blind—

Then Zeus—his eagle blinking on his wrist }  
To his hand's rod of fires—in thunder rolls }  
He glode on grandly—While the troop of  
Prayers

Buzzed dimly in the { mist } of his light  
                                  { shadow }  
With murmurous sounds, and poor beseech-  
ing tears.

And Neptune with beard and locks drawn  
straight

As seaweed—ay and Pluto with his Dark  
Cutting the dark as Lightning cuts the sun  
Made individual by intensity.

And then Apollo trenching on the dusk  
With a white glory, while the lute he bore  
Struck on the air.

## JOAN OF ARC AND THE KINGFISHER.

Now, as she fain would bathe, one eventide,  
—God's Maid, this Joan—from a pool's edge  
she spied

That fair blue bird clowns call the Fisher  
King :

And " 'Las," sighed she, " my Liege is such  
a thing

As thou, lord but of one poor lonely place  
Out of his whole wide France : were mine  
the grace

To set my Dauphin free as thou, blue bird ! "  
" Joan of Arc," Canto I.

## A SCENE IN THE BUILDING OF THE INQUISITORS AT ANTWERP.

THEREFORE the hand of God  
Thy sentence with His finger  
Hath written, and this tribunal  
Consigneth it now straightway  
Unto the secular arm.

## REPLY TO A TELEGRAPHIC GREETING.

BANCROFT, the message-bearing wire  
Which flashes thy " All Hail " to-day,  
Moves slower than my heart's desire  
That, half what pen writes, tongue might  
say.

## REPLIES TO CHALLENGES TO RHYME.

If ever you meet a rhinoceros  
And a tree be in sight,  
Climb quick ! for his might  
Is a match for the gods : he could toss Eros !

HANG your kickshaws and your made-dishes  
Give me bread and cheese and radishes—  
Even stalish bread and baddish cheese.

You may at Pekin as at Poggibonsi,  
Instead of tricky priest, a dodgy bonze see.

AH, massa ! such a fiery oss  
As him I rode at Timbuctoo !  
Him would not suit a quiet boss !  
Him kick, him rear, and him buck too !

VENUS, sea froth's child,  
Playing old gooseberry,  
Marries Lord Rosebery  
To Miss de Rothschild !

"Horns make the buck" cried rash  
Burdett ;  
And then used speech befitting Timbuctoo :  
"I would the horns of the creature met  
I' the belly o' the king and so made him  
buck too !"

# DIALOGUE BETWEEN FATHER AND DAUGHTER.

F. Then, what do you say to the poem of  
Mizpah ?  
D. An out and out masterpiece—that's what  
it is, Pa !

# THE DOGMA TRIUMPHANT.

Epigram on the Voluntary Imprisonment  
of the Pope as proving his infallibility.

DEAR HERRIES, let's hope, by impounding  
your Pope,  
We prove him infallible : *quare* ?  
Why, if he's in durance, who'll have the  
assurance  
To hint "*Papa potest errare*" ?

ITALIA.

# A CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS.

1833. PAULINE: A Fragment of a Confession.
1835. PARACELTUS.
1837. STRAFFORD: An Historical Tragedy.
1840. SORDELLO.
1841. Bells and Pomegranates, No. I.,  
PIPPA PASSES.
1842. Bells and Pomegranates, No. II.,  
KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES.
1842. Bells and Pomegranates, No. III.,  
DRAMATIC LYRICS.  
Cavalier Tunes—  
I. Marching Along.  
II. Give a Rouse.  
III. My Wife Gertrude.<sup>1</sup>  
Italy and France—  
I. Italy.<sup>2</sup>  
II. France.<sup>3</sup>  
Camp and Cloister—  
I. Camp (French).<sup>4</sup>  
II. Cloister (Spanish).<sup>5</sup>  
In a Gondola.  
Artemis Prologuizes.  
Waring.  
Queen Worship—  
I. Rudel and the Lady of  
Tripoli.  
II. Cristina.

<sup>1</sup> Afterwards called "Boot and Saddle."

<sup>2</sup> Afterwards called "My Last Duchess."

<sup>3</sup> Afterwards called "Count Gismond."

<sup>4</sup> Afterwards called "Incident of the French Camp."

<sup>5</sup> Afterwards called "Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister."

## DRAMATIC LYRICS—Continued.

- Madhouse Cells—  
I. [Johannes Agricola.<sup>6</sup>]  
II. [Porphyria.<sup>7</sup>]  
Through the Metidja to Abi-el  
Kadr, 1842.  
The Pied Piper of Hamelin.
1843. Bells and Pomegranates, No. IV.,  
THE RETURN OF THE  
DRUSES: A Tragedy in Five  
Acts.
1843. Bells and Pomegranates, No. V., A  
BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON;  
A Tragedy in Three Acts.
1844. Bells and Pomegranates, No. VI.,  
COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY: A  
Play in Five Acts.
1845. Bells and Pomegranates, VII.,  
DRAMATIC ROMANCES AND  
LYRICS—  
How they brought the Good News  
from Ghent to Aix.  
Pictor Ignottus. Florence, 15—.  
Italy in England.<sup>8</sup>  
England in Italy.<sup>9</sup>  
The Lost Leader.  
The Lost Mistress.

<sup>6</sup> Afterwards called "Johannes Agricola in Meditation," was first printed in *The Monthly Repository*, vol. x. N.S. 1836, pp. 45, 46.

<sup>7</sup> Afterwards called "Porphyria's Lover," was first printed in *The Monthly Repository*, vol. x. N.S. 1836, pp. 43, 44.

<sup>8</sup> Afterwards called "The Italian in England."

<sup>9</sup> Afterwards called "The Englishman in Italy."

DRAMATIC ROMANCES—*Contd.* 1855. MEN AND WOMEN. In Two Volumes—

Home Thoughts from Abroad (I.

"Oh to be in England." II.

"Here's to Nelson's Memory."<sup>1</sup>

III. "Nobly Cape St. Vincent,"<sup>2</sup>

The Tomb at St. Praxed's.<sup>3</sup>

Garden Fancies—

I. The Flower's Name.<sup>4</sup>

II. Sibrandus Schaftsbургensis.<sup>5</sup>

France and Spain—

I. The Laboratory (Ancien Régime).<sup>6</sup>

II. The Confessional.

The Flight of the Duchess.<sup>7</sup>

Earth's Immortalities.

Song, "Nay but you, who do not love her."

The Boy and the Angel.<sup>8</sup>

Night and Morning (I. Night,<sup>9</sup> II.

Morning).<sup>10</sup>

Claret and Tokay.<sup>11</sup>

Saul.<sup>12</sup>

Time's Revenges.

The Glove.

1846. Bells and Pomegranates, No. VIII.

and last. LURIA; and A SOUL'S

TRAGEDY.

1850. CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY.

<sup>1</sup> Afterwards printed as the third section of "Nationality in Drinks."

<sup>2</sup> Afterwards called "Home Thoughts from the Sea."

<sup>3</sup> Afterwards called "The Bishop orders his Tomb in St. Praxed's Church," was first printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. iii. March 1845, pp. 237-239.

<sup>4</sup> First printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. ii. July 1844, pp. 45-48.

<sup>5</sup> First printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. i. June 1844, pp. 513, 514.

<sup>6</sup> Sections 1 to 9, first printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. iii. April 1845, pp. 313-318.

<sup>7</sup> First printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. ii. August 1844, pp. 140-142.

<sup>8</sup> Afterwards called "Meeting at Night."

<sup>9</sup> Afterwards called "Parting at Morning."

<sup>10</sup> Afterwards printed as the first and second sections of "Nationality in Drinks."

<sup>11</sup> First part only (sections 1-9); the second part was added and included with it in "Men and Women," 1855, vol. ii. p. 111.

Vol. I. Love among the Ruins.

A Lovers' Quarrel.

Evelyn Hope.

Up at a Villa—Down in the City.

(As Distinguished by an Italian Person of Quality.)

A Woman's Last Word.

Fra Lippo Lippi.

A Toccata of Gallipoli's.

By the Fireside.

Any Wife to Any Husband.

An Epistle containing the Strange

Medical Experience of Karshish, the Arab Physician.

Mesmerism.

A Serenade at the Villa.

My Star.

Instans Tyrannus.

A Pretty Woman.

"Childe Roland to the Dark Tower came."

Respectability.

A Light Woman.

The Statue and the Bust.

Love in a Life.

Life in a Love.

How it Strikes a Contemporary.

The Last Ride Together.

The Patriot: An Old Story.

Master Hugues of Saxe-Gotha.

Bishop Blougram's Apology.

Memorabilia.

Vol. II. Andrea del Sarto (called "The Faultless Painter.")

Before.

After.

In Three Days.

In a Year.

Old Pictures in Florence.

In a Balcony.

Saul. (See note<sup>12</sup>.)

"De Gustibus —"

Women and Roses.

Proetus.

Holy-Cross Day.

The Guardian Angel: A Picture at Fano.

- MEN AND WOMEN—*Continued.*  
 Cleon.  
 The Twins.<sup>1</sup>  
 Popularity.  
 The Heretic's Tragedy. A Middle-Age Interlude.  
 Two in the Campagna.  
 A Grammarian's Funeral.  
 One Way of Love.  
 Another Way of Love.  
 "Transcendentalism:" A Poem in Twelve Books.  
 Misconceptions.  
 One Word More. To E. B. B.
1864. DRAMATIS PERSONÆ—  
 James Lee.  
 Gold Hair: A Legend of Pornic.<sup>2</sup>  
 The Worst of It.  
 Dis aliter visum; or Le Byron de nos Jours.  
 Too Late.  
 Abt Vogler.  
 Rabbi Ben Ezra.  
 A Death in the Desert.  
 Caliban upon Setebos; or, Natural Theology in the Island.  
 Confessions.  
 May and Death.<sup>3</sup>  
 Prospice.<sup>4</sup>  
 Youth and Art.  
 A Face.  
 A Likeness.  
 Mr. Sludge, "The Medium."  
 Apparent Failure.  
 Epilogue.
1864. Orpheus and Eurydice. F. Leighton.<sup>5</sup>  
 1868. Deaf and Dumb.<sup>6</sup>
- 1868-9. THE RING AND THE BOOK.  
 In Four Volumes.
1871. BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE,  
 including a Transcript from Euripides.
1871. PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY.
1872. FIFINE AT THE FAIR.
1873. RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY, OR TURF AND TOWERS.
1875. ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY,  
 including a Transcript from Euripides, being the Last Adventure of Balaustion.
1875. THE INN ALBUM.
1876. PACCHIAROTTO AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER: with other Poems—  
 Prologue.  
 Of Pacchiarotto and how he worked in Distemper.  
 At the "Mermaid."  
 House.  
 Shop.  
 Pisgah Sights. I.  
 " " II.  
 Fears and Scruples.  
 Natural Magic.  
 Magical Nature.  
 Bifurcation.  
 Numpholeptos.  
 Appearances.  
 St. Martin's Summer.  
 Hervé Riel.<sup>6</sup>  
 A Forgiveness.  
 Cenciaja.  
 Filippo Balduino on the Privilege of Burial.  
 Epilogue.
1877. THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS.
1878. LA SAISIAZ.<sup>7</sup>
1878. THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC.<sup>8</sup>
- <sup>1</sup> First printed in a pamphlet entitled "Two Poems. By Elizabeth Barrett and Robert Browning." 8vp. London, 1854.  
<sup>2</sup> First printed in *The Atlantic Monthly*, vol. xiii., May 1864, p. 596.  
<sup>3</sup> First printed in *The Keepsake* for 1857.  
<sup>4</sup> First printed in *The Atlantic Monthly*, vol. xiii., June 1864, p. 694.  
<sup>5</sup> First printed in the Catalogue of the Royal Academy Exhibition 1864, afterwards called "Eurydice to Orpheus."  
<sup>6</sup> First printed in "The Poetical Works of Robert Browning," six vols. 1868; vol. vi. p. 151.  
<sup>7</sup> First printed in *The Cornhill Magazine* March 1871.  
<sup>8</sup> Published together in one volume.

## 1879. DRAMATIC IDYLS—

Martin Ralph.  
Pheidippides.  
Halbert and Hob.  
Ivan Ivanovitch.  
Tray.  
Ned Bratts.

## 1880. DRAMATIC IDYLS: SECOND SERIES—

[Prologue.]  
Echetlos.  
Clive.  
Muléykeh.  
Pietro of Abano.  
Doctor ——.   
Pan and Luna..  
[Epilogue.]

## 1883. JOCOSERIA—

Wanting is—What?  
Donald.  
Solomon and Balkis.  
Cristina and Monaldeschi.  
Mary Wollstonecraft and Fuseli—  
Adam, Lilith, and Eve.  
Ixion.  
Jochanan Hakkadosh.  
Never the Time and the Place.  
Pambo.

## 1884. FERISHTAH'S FANCIES—

Prologue.  
1. The Eagle.  
2. Melon-Seller.  
3. Shah Abbas.  
4. The Family.  
5. The Sun.  
6. Mihrab Shah.  
7. A Camel-Driver.  
8. Two Camels.  
9. Cherries.  
10. Plot-Culture.  
11. A Pillar at Sebzevah.  
12. A Bean-Stripe: also Apple-Eating.  
Epilogue.

## 1887. PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY. To wit: Bernard de Mandeville, Daniel Bartoli, Christopher Smart; George Bubb Doding-

ton, Francis Furini, Gerard de Lairese, and Charles Avison. Introduced by a Dialogue between Apollo and the Fates; concluded by another between John Frost and his Friends.

1889.<sup>1</sup> ASOLANDO: FANCIES AND FACTS—

Prologue.  
Rosny.  
Dublety.  
Now.  
Humility.  
Poetics.  
Summum Bonum.  
A Pearl, A Girl.  
Speculative.  
White Witchcraft.  
Bad Dreams. I.  
" " II.  
" " III.  
" " IV.

Inapprehensiveness.

Which?

The Cardinal and the Dog.

The Pope and the Net.

The Bean-Feast.

Muckle-mouth Meg.

Arcades Ambo.

The Lady and the Painter.

Ponte dell' Angelo, Venice.

Beatrice Signorini.

Flute-Music, with an Accompaniment.

" Imperante Augusto natus est—"

Development.

Rephan.

Reverie.

Epilogue.

## NEW POEMS BY ROBERT

BROWNING AND ELIZABETH

BARRETT BROWNING, edited

by Sir FREDERIC G. KENYON (1914),

containing twenty-nine poems by

Robert Browning, in which notes

were prefixed to all the Poems col-

lected, giving what is known of their

History, both Literary and Biblio-

graphical.

<sup>1</sup> Published on December 12th, 1889, the day of Mr. Browning's death.

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

OF

## SHORTER POEMS AND SONGS

- A CERTAIN neighbour lying sick to death . . . . . ii. 661
- A King lived long ago . . . . . i. 213
- A Rabbi told me : On the day allowed . . . ii. 623
- A simple ring with a single stone . . . ii. 745
- Ah, but—because you were struck blind . . . . . ii. 718
- Ah, but how each loved each, Marquis ! . . . . . ii. 635
- Ah, did you once see Shelley plain . . . i. 297
- Ah, George Bubb Dodington Lord Melcome, —no . . . . . ii. 704
- Ah, Love, but a day . . . . . i. 563
- Ah, massa ! such a fiery oss . . . . . ii. 786
- Ah, the bird-like fluting . . . . . ii. 761
- All I believed is true ! . . . . . i. 389
- All I can say is—I saw it ! . . . . . ii. 483
- All June I bound the rose in sheaves . . i. 289
- All service ranks the same with God . i. 198
- All's over, then : does truth sound bitter . . . . . i. 258
- All that I know . . . . . i. 280
- All the breath and the bloom of the year in the bag of one bee ; . . . ii. 745
- Among these latter busts we count by scores . . . . . i. 430
- And as they footed it around . . . . . ii. 775
- And to these Rhodians she, the sharp eyed one . . . . . ii. 779
- And so you found that poor room dull . ii. 487
- "And what might that bold man's announcement be" . . . . . ii. 662
- And who is He that, sculptured in huge stone . . . . . ii. 777
- Anyhow, once full Dervish, youngsters came . . . . . ii. 659
- As I ride, as I ride . . . . . i. 251
- Asks anyone—"Where's a tag for steps ?" . . . . . ii. 782
- Ask not one least word of praise . . . ii. 676
- "As like as a Hand to another Hand !" . . . . . i. 567
- At the midnight in the silence of the sleep-time . . . . . ii. 773
- "Ay, but, Ferishtah,"—a disciple smirked . . . . . ii. 673
- Ay, this same midnight, by this chair of mine . . . . . ii. 690
- BANCROFT, the message-bearing wire . ii. 785
- Beautiful Evelyn Hope is dead ! . . . i. 260
- Boot, saddle, to horse, and away . . . i. 249
- Bow to me, bow to me . . . . . ii. 775
- But do not let us quarrel any more . . i. 523
- But give them me, the mouth, the eyes, the brow ! . . . . . i. 599
- CHRIST God who savest man, save most . . . . . i. 385
- Cleon the poet (from the sprinkled isles . . . . . i. 542
- ould I but live again . . . . . ii. 482
- rescenzio, the Pope's Legate at the High Council, Trent . . . . . ii. 750
- DARED and Done at last I stand upon the summit . . . . . ii. 542
- Dear and great Angel, wouldst thou only leave . . . . . i. 296
- Dear, had the world in its caprice . . i. 291
- Dear Herries, let's hope, by impounding your Pope . . . . . ii. 786



- Dear Hosmer ; or still dearer, Hatty ii. 778  
 Dervish—(though yet un-dervished,  
 call him so . . . . . ii. 657  
 Don, the divinest women that have  
 walked . . . . . ii. 695  
 "ENTER my palace," if a prince should  
 say . . . . . ii. 781  
 Escape me ? . . . . . i. 292  
 Eyes calm beside thee (Lady, could'st  
 thou know ! ) . . . . . ii. 776  
 "FAME !" Yes, I said it, and you  
 read it . . . . . ii. 556  
 Fear death ?—to feel the fog in my  
 throat . . . . . i. 599  
 Fee, faw, fum ! bubble and squeak ! . i. 428  
 Fire is in the flint : true, once a spark  
 escapes . . . . . ii. 665  
 First I salute this soil of the blessed,  
 river and rock ! . . . . ii. 582  
 Flower—I never fancied, jewel—I  
 profess you ! . . . . ii. 484  
 Forth, Forth, my beloved one . . . i. 396  
 Frowned the Laird on the Lord :  
 " So, red-handed I catch thee ? " ii. 752  
 GIVE her but a least excuse to love  
 me ! . . . . . i. 208  
 Going his rounds one day in Ispahan . ii. 658  
 Goldoni—good, gay, sunniest of  
 souls . . . . . ii. 780  
 Good to forgive . . . . . ii. 542  
 Grand rough old Martin Luther . . i. 405  
 Grow old along with me ! . . . i. 580  
 Gr-r-r—there go, my heart's abhor-  
 rence ! . . . . . i. 254  
 HAD I but plenty of money, money  
 enough and to spare . . . . i. 264  
 Hamelin Town's in Brunswick . . i. 408  
 Heap cassia, sandal-buds and stripes . i. 53  
 Hang your kickshaws, and your  
 made-dishes . . . . . ii. 785  
 He was the man—Pope Sixtus, that  
 Fifth, that swineherd's son . . ii. 751  
 " Heigho ! " yawned one day King  
 Francis . . . . . i. 391  
 Here is a story shall stir you ! Stand  
 up, Greeks dead and gone . . ii. 604  
 Here is a thing that happened. Like  
 wild beasts whelped, for den . . ii. 585  
 Here's my case. Of old I used to love  
 him . . . . . ii. 482  
 Here's the garden she walked across . i. 252  
 Here's to Nelson's memory ! . . . i. 252  
 Here was I with my arm and heart . i. 575  
 High in the dome, suspended, of Hell,  
 sad triumph, behold us ! . . ii. 637  
 Hist, but a word, fair and soft ! . . i. 298  
 "Horns make the buck" cried rash  
 Burdett . . . . . ii. 786  
 How I lived, ere my human life began ii. 768  
 How of his fate, the Pilgrims' soldier-  
 guide . . . . . ii. 667  
 How strange !—but, first of all, the  
 little fact . . . . . ii. 724  
 How very hard it is to be . . . . i. 496  
 How well I know what I mean to do i. 281  
 I AND Clive were friends—and why  
 not ? Friends ! I think you  
 laugh, my lad . . . . . ii. 605  
 I am a goddess of the ambrosial courts i. 510  
 I am an old and solitary man . . ii. 783  
 I am a painter who cannot paint . . i. 207  
 I am, indeed the personage you know ii. 491  
 I am poor brother Lippo, by your  
 leave ! . . . . . i. 517  
 I could have painted pictures like that  
 youth's . . . . . i. 516  
 I dream of a red-rose tree . . . . i. 294  
 I dreamed there was once held a feast ii. 780  
 I hear a voice, perchance I heard . . i. 318  
 I know a Mount, the gracious Sun per-  
 ceives . . . . . i. 546  
 I know there shall dawn a day . . ii. 770  
 I leaned on the turf . . . . . i. 565  
 I—"Next Poet ?" No, my hearties . ii. 477  
 I only knew one poet in my life . . i. 509  
 I said—Then, dearest, since 'tis so . . i. 407  
 I send my heart up to thee, all my  
 heart . . . . . i. 399  
 I sprang to the stirrup, and Joris, and  
 he . . . . . i. 250  
 I've a Friend, over the sea . . . . i. 393

- I will be happy if but for once . ii. 744  
 I will be quiet and talk with you . i. 564  
 I wish that when you died last May . i. 598  
 I wonder do you feel to-day . i. 287  
 If a stranger passed the tent of  
     Hoseyn, he cried "A churl's!" . ii. 610  
 If ever you meet a rhinoceros . ii. 785  
 If one could have that little head of  
     hers . . . . . i. 601  
 If you and I could change to beasts,  
     what beast should either be? . ii. 746  
 In far Esthonian solitudes . ii. 776  
 Is all our fire of shipwreck wood . i. 563  
 It happened thus: my slab, though  
     new . . . . . ii. 748  
 It is a lie—their Priests, their Pope . i. 256  
 It once might have been, once only . i. 599  
 It seems as if . . . or did the actual  
     chance . . . . . ii. 700  
 It was roses, roses, all the way . i. 383  
  
 JUNE was not over . . . . . i. 289  
 Just for a handful of silver he left us . i. 249  
  
 KARSHISH, the picker-up of learning's  
     crumbs . . . . . i. 512  
 Kentish Sir Byng stood for his King . i. 248  
 King Charles, and who'll do him right  
     now? . . . . . i. 248  
 "Knowledge" deposed, then!"—  
     groaned whom that most grieved . ii. 674  
  
 LAST night I saw you in my sleep . ii. 746  
 Let them fight it out, friend! things  
     have gone too far . . . . . i. 294  
 Let's contend no more, Love . . . . . i. 259  
 Let us begin and carry up this corpse . i. 424  
 "Look, I strew beans" . . . . . ii. 676  
  
 MAN I am and man would be, Love—  
     merest man and nothing more . ii. 662  
 May I print, Shelley, how it came to  
     pass . . . . . ii. 496  
 Morning, evening, noon and night . i. 386  
 Moses the Meek was thirty cubits high . ii. 654  
 My father was a scholar and knew  
     Greek . . . . . ii. 766  
  
 My first thought was, he lied in every  
     word . . . . . i. 435  
 My grandfather says he remembers he  
     saw, when a youngster long ago . ii. 579  
 My heart sank with our Claret-flask . i. 251  
 My love, this is the bitterest, that thou . i. 285  
  
 NAY but you, who do not love her . i. 259  
 Nay, *that*, Furini, never I at least . ii. 709  
 Never any more . . . . . i. 293  
 Never the time and the place . . . . . ii. 655  
 Nobly, nobly Cape Saint Vincent to  
     the North-West died away . i. 273  
 "No, boy, we must not"—so began . ii. 500  
 No, for I'll save it! Seven years since . i. 624  
 No more wine? then we'll push back  
     chairs and talk . . . . . i. 528  
 No protesting, dearest! . . . . . ii. 487  
 Not with my Soul, Love!—bid no  
     Soul like mine . . . . . ii. 673  
 Now, as she fain would bathe, one  
     eventide . . . . . ii. 785  
 Now, don't, sir! Don't expose me!  
     Just this once . . . . . i. 602  
 Now that I, tying thy glass mask  
     tightly . . . . . i. 255  
  
 O THE old wall here! How I could  
     pass . . . . . ii. 469  
 O worthy of belief I hold it was . ii. 628  
 Of the million or two, more or less . i. 388  
 Oh but it is not hard, Dear? . . . . . ii. 637  
 Oh Galuppi, Baldassarro this is very  
     sad to find! . . . . . i. 266  
 Oh, good gigantic smile o' the brown  
     old earth . . . . . i. 567  
 Oh Love, Love, thou that from the  
     eyes diffusest . . . . . ii. 779  
 Oh, Love—no, Love! All the noise  
     below, Love . . . . . ii. 683  
 Oh, the beautiful girl, too white . i. 569  
 Oh, to be in England . . . . . i. 272  
 Oh, what a dawn of day! . . . . . i. 262  
 Omnibus hoc vitium est cantoribus,  
     inter amicos . . . . . ii. 780  
 Once I saw a chemist take a pinch of  
     powder . . . . . ii. 671  
 On the first of the Feast of Feasts . i. 625

# 794 INDEX TO FIRST LINES OF SHORTER POEMS AND SONGS

- On the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen  
hundred ninety-two . . . ii. 488
- One day it thundered and lightened . ii. 637
- Only the prism's obstruction shows  
aright . . . i. 599
- Others may need new life in Heaven . ii. 746
- Out of the little chapel I burst . i. 480
- Out of your whole life give but a  
moment ! . . . ii. 745
- Overhead the tree-tops meet . . i. 218
- Over the ball of it . . . ii. 481
- Over the sea our galleys went . . i. 57
- Petrus Aponensis*—there was a magi-  
cian ! . . . ii. 613
- Plague take all your pedants, say I ! i. 253
- Plane te valvam fas est pressisse  
salutis . . . ii. 778
- Pray, Reader, have you eaten ortolans ii. 657
- QUERY : was ever a quainter . . ii. 469
- Quoth an inquirer, " Praise the  
Merciful ! . . . ii. 665
- Quoth one : " Sir, solve a scruple !  
No true sage . . . ii. 669
- Room after room . . . i. 291
- Round the cape of a sudden came the  
sea . . . i. 259
- Round us the wild creatures, overhead  
the trees . . . ii. 658
- SAID Abner, " At last thou art come !  
Ere I tell, ere thou speak . . i. 273
- Savage I was sitting in my house, late ii. 370
- See, as the prettiest graves will do in  
time . . . i. 258
- Shall I sonnet sing you about myself ? ii. 479
- Shakespeare !—to such name's sound-  
ing what succeeds . . . ii. 781
- She should never have looked at me . i. 257
- Sighed Rawdon Brown : " Yes, I'm  
departing, Toni ! . . . ii. 780
- Sing me a hero ! Quench my thirst . ii. 596
- So far as our story approaches the end i. 406
- So, friend, your shop was all your  
house ! . . . ii. 479
- So, I shall see her in three days . . i. 292
- " So say the foolish ! " Say the foolish  
so, Love ? . . . ii. 745
- So, the head aches and the limbs are  
faint . . . ii. 667
- So, the three Court-ladies began . . ii. 749
- So, the year's done with ! . . . i. 258
- Solomon King of the Jews and the  
Queen of Sheba Balkis . . . ii. 633
- Some people hang portraits up . . i. 601
- Stand still, true poet that you are ! . i. 297
- Still ailing, Wind ? Wilt be appeased  
or no ? . . . i. 365
- Still you stand, still you listen, still  
you smile ! . . . ii. 484
- Stop, let me have the truth of that ! i. 573
- Stop playing, poet ! May a brother  
speak ? . . . i. 508
- Stop rowing ! This one of our bye-  
canals . . . ii. 753
- Such a starved bank of moss . . . ii. 556
- Suppose that we part (work done,  
comes play) . . . ii. 655
- [Supposed of Pamphylax the Anti-  
ochene . . . i. 583
- TAKE the cloak from his face, and at  
first . . . i. 295
- That fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers . i. 290
- That night came on in Egypt with a  
step . . . ii. 774
- That second time they hunted me . . i. 394
- That's my last Duchess painted on the  
wall . . . i. 384
- That was I, you heard last night . . i. 288
- The blind man to the maiden said . . ii. 779
- The fancy I had to-day . . . ii. 320
- The grey sea and the long black land i. 259
- The Lord, we look to once for all . . i. 426
- The morn when first it thunders in  
March . . . i. 267
- " The Poet's age is sad : for why ? " ii. 743
- " The poets pour us wine—" . . . ii. 507
- The rain set early in to-night . . . i. 434
- The swallow has set her six young on  
the rail . . . i. 563
- The year's at the spring . . . i. 202
- Then, what do you say to the poem of  
Mizpah ? . . . ii. 786

- There is nothing to remember in  
     me . . . . . i. 568  
 Therefore the hand of God . . . ii. 785  
 There's a palace in Florence, the  
     world knows well . . . i. 431  
 There's a woman like a dewdrop . . i. 336  
 There's heaven above, and night by  
     night . . . . . i. 516  
 There they are, my fifty men and  
     women . . . . . i. 547  
 "They tell me, your carpenters,"  
     quoth I to my friend the Russ . ii. 587  
 This is a spray the Bird clung to . i. 288  
 This now, this other story makes  
     amends . . . . . ii. 640  
 This strange thing happened to a  
     painter once . . . . . ii. 757  
 This was my dream: I saw a Forest. ii. 747  
 Thou, whom these eyes saw never,—  
     Say friends true . . . . . ii. 782  
 Thus the Mayne glideth . . . . . i. 66  
 Touch him ne'er so lightly, into song  
     he broke . . . . . ii. 629  
 'Twas Bedford Special Assize, one  
     daft Midsummer's Day . . . ii. 596  
 Up jumped Tokay on our table . . i. 252  
 VANITY, saith the preacher, vanity I. i. 527  
 Venus, sea froth's child . . . . . ii. 786  
 Verse-making was least of my virtues:  
     I viewed with despair . . . ii. 672  
 WANTING is—what? . . . . . ii. 630  
 We two stood simply friend-like side  
     by side . . . . . ii. 748  
 We were two lovers; let me lie by her ii. 484  
 What a pretty tale you told me . . ii. 576  
 What girl but, having gathered  
     flowers . . . . . ii. 745  
 What, he on whom our voice unani-  
     mously ran . . . . . ii. 750  
 What, I disturb thee at thy morning-  
     meal . . . . . ii. 671  
 What is he buzzing in my ears? . . i. 598  
 What it was struck the terror into  
     me? . . . . . ii. 764  
 What's become of Waring . . . . . i. 402  
 When I vexed you and you chid me . ii. 669  
 Where the, quiet-coloured end of  
     evening smiles . . . . . i. 261  
 Who hears of Helen's Tower, may  
     dream perchance . . . . . ii. 779  
 "Why?" "Because all I haply can and  
     do . . . . . ii. 781  
 "Why from the world," Ferishtah  
     smiled, "should thanks" . . . ii. 683  
 ["Will sprawl, now that the heat of day  
     is best . . . . . i. 593  
 Will you hear my story also . . . ii. 630  
 Wind wafted from the sunset, o'er the  
     swell . . . . . ii. 783  
 Wish no word unspoken, want no look  
     away! . . . . . ii. 659  
 Woe, he went galloping into the war. ii. 744  
 "Words I might else have been com-  
     pelled to say . . . . . ii. 778  
 "Would a man 'scape the rod?" . . ii. 777  
 Would it were I had been false, not  
     you! . . . . . i. 571  
 Would that the structure brave, the  
     manifold music I build . . . i. 578  
 YET womanhood you reverence . . ii. 753  
 "You are sick, that's sure"—they  
     say . . . . . ii. 604  
 You blame me that I ran away? . . ii. 753  
 You groped your way across my room  
     i' the dear dark dead of night . ii. 661  
 You in the flesh and here . . . . . ii. 746  
 You know, we French stormed Ratis-  
     bon . . . . . i. 383  
 Your ghost will walk, you lover of  
     trees . . . . . i. 272  
 You'll love me yet!—and I can tarry i. 215  
 You may at Pekin as at Poggibonsi. ii. 786  
 You're my friend . . . . . i. 412

# GENERAL INDEX.

- ABBAS, Shah** . . . . . ii. 659  
**Abd-el-Kadr, Through the Metidja to** i. 251  
**Abt Vogler** . . . . . i. 578  
**Adam, Lilith, and Eve** . . . . . ii. 637  
**Æschylus' Soliloquy** . . . . . ii. 783  
**After** . . . . . i. 295  
**Agamemnon of Æschylus, The** . . . . . ii. 511  
**Agricola (Johannes) in Meditation** . . . . . i. 516  
**Amphibian** . . . . . ii. 320  
**Andrea del Sarto** . . . . . i. 523  
**Another Way of Love** . . . . . i. 289  
**Any Wife to Any Husband** . . . . . i. 285  
**Apollo and the Fates: A Prologue** . . . . . ii. 684  
**Apparent Failure** . . . . . i. 624  
**Appearances** . . . . . ii. 487  
**Arcades Ambo** . . . . . ii. 753  
**Aristophanes' Apology** . . . . . i. 666  
**Artemis, Prologizes** . . . . . i. 510  
**Asolando** . . . . . ii. 743  
**At the "Mermaid"** . . . . . ii. 477  
**Avison (Charles), Parleyings with** . . . . . ii. 724  
  
**BAD Dreams** . . . . . ii. 746  
**Balaustion's Adventure; including A**  
     **Transcript from Euripides** . . . . . i. 627  
**Balcony, In a** . . . . . i. 550  
**Baldinucci (Filippo) on the Privilege**  
     **of Burial** . . . . . ii. 500  
**Bartoli (Daniel), Parleyings with** . . . . . ii. 695  
**Bean-Feast, The** . . . . . ii. 751  
**Bean-Stripe (A): also, Apple-Eating** . . . . . ii. 676  
**Beatrice Signorini** . . . . . ii. 757  
**Ben Karshook's Wisdom** . . . . . ii. 777  
**Before** . . . . . i. 294  
**Bernard de Mandeville, Parleyings**  
     **with** . . . . . ii. 690  
**Bifurcation** . . . . . ii. 484  
**Bishop Blougram's Apology** . . . . . i. 528  
**Bishop (The) orders his Tomb at**  
     **Saint Praxed's Church** . . . . . i. 527  
**Blot in the 'Scutcheon, A** . . . . . i. 330  
**Book (The) and the Ring** . . . . . ii. 279  
**Boot and Saddle** . . . . . i. 249  
**Boy (The) and the Angel** . . . . . i. 386  
**Bratts, Ned** . . . . . ii. 596  
**By the Fire-side** . . . . . i. 281  
  
**CALIBAN upon Setebos; or, Natural**  
     **Theology in the Island** . . . . . i. 593  
**Camel-Driver, A** . . . . . ii. 667  
**Camels, Two** . . . . . ii. 669  
**Campagna, Two in the** . . . . . i. 287  
**Cardinal and the Dog, The** . . . . . ii. 750  
**Cavalier Tunes** . . . . . i. 248  
**Cenciaja** . . . . . ii. 496  
**Charles Avison, Parleyings with** . . . . . ii. 724  
**Cherries** . . . . . ii. 671  
**"Childe Roland to the Dark Tower**  
     **came"** . . . . . i. 435  
**Christmas-Eve** . . . . . i. 480  
**Christopher Smart, Parleyings with** . . . . . ii. 700  
**Cleon** . . . . . i. 542  
**Clive** . . . . . ii. 605  
**Colombe's Birthday** . . . . . i. 352  
**Confessional, The** . . . . . i. 256  
**Confessions** . . . . . i. 598  
**Count Gismond** . . . . . i. 385  
**Count Guido Franceschini** . . . . . ii. 87  
**Cristina** . . . . . i. 257  
**Cristina and Monaldeschi** . . . . . ii. 635  
**Croisic, The Two Poets of** . . . . . ii. 556  
  
**DANCE of Death, The** . . . . . ii. 775  
**Daniel Bartoli, Parleyings with** . . . . . ii. 695  
**"De Gustibus——"** . . . . . i. 272  
**Deaf and Dumb; a Group by**  
     **Woolner** . . . . . i. 599  
**Death in the Desert, A** . . . . . i. 583  
**Development** . . . . . ii. 766

- Dialogue between Father and Daughter . . . . . ii. 786  
 Dis alter visum; or, le Byron de nos Jours . . . . . i. 573  
 Doctor — . . . . . ii. 623  
 Dodington (George Bubb), Parleyings with . . . . . ii. 294  
 Dogma Triumphant, The . . . . . ii. 786  
 Dominus Hyacinthus de Archangelis . . . . . ii. 173  
 Donald . . . . . ii. 630  
 Dramatic Idyls. First Series . . . . . ii. 579  
 „ „ Second Series . . . . . ii. 604  
 „ „ Lyrics . . . . . i. 248  
 „ „ Romances . . . . . i. 383  
 Dramatis Personæ . . . . . i. 563  
 Dreams, Bad . . . . . ii. 746  
 Drinks, Nationality in . . . . . i. 251  
 Druses, The Return of the . . . . . i. 301  
 Dublety . . . . . ii. 744  
 Duchess, My Last . . . . . i. 384  
 Duchess, The Flight of the . . . . . i. 412  
 EAGLE, The . . . . . ii. 657  
 Earth's Immortalities . . . . . i. 258  
 Easter-Dav . . . . . i. 496  
 Echelos . . . . . ii. 604  
 England, The Italian in . . . . . i. 394  
 Englishman (The) in Italy . . . . . i. 396  
 Epistle (An) containing the Strange Medical Experience of Karshish, the Arab Physician . . . . . i. 512  
 Epps . . . . . ii. 782  
 Eurydice to Orpheus; a Picture by Leighton . . . . . i. 599  
 Evelyn Hope . . . . . i. 260  
 FACE, A . . . . . i. 602  
 Failure, Apparent . . . . . i. 624  
 Family, The . . . . . ii. 661  
 Fates, Apollo and the . . . . . ii. 684  
 Fears and Scruples . . . . . ii. 482  
 Ferishtah's Fancies . . . . . ii. 657  
 Fifine at the Fair . . . . . ii. 321  
 Filippo Baldinucci on the Privilege of Burial . . . . . ii. 500  
 First-Born of Egypt, The . . . . . ii. 774  
 Flight of the Duchess, The . . . . . i. 412  
 Florence, Old Pictures in . . . . . i. 267  
 Flower's Name, The . . . . . i. 252  
 Flute-Music, with an Accompaniment . . . . . ii. 761  
 Forest Thought, A . . . . . ii. 776  
 Forgiveness, A . . . . . ii. 491  
 Founder of the Feast, The . . . . . ii. 781  
 Fra Lippo Lippi . . . . . i. 517  
 Franceschini, Count Guido . . . . . ii. 87  
 Francis Furini, Parleyings with . . . . . ii. 709  
 French Camp, Incident of the . . . . . i. 383  
 Fuseli, Mary Wollstonecraft and . . . . . ii. 637  
 Fust and his Friends: An Epilogue . . . . . ii. 731  
 GALUPPI'S, A Toccata of . . . . . i. 266  
 Garden Fancies . . . . . i. 252  
 George Bubb Dodington, Parleyings with . . . . . ii. 704  
 Gerard de Lairesse, Parleyings with . . . . . ii. 718  
 Gerousios Oinos . . . . . ii. 780  
 "Ghent to Aix, How they brought the Good News from" . . . . . i. 259  
 Girl. A Pearl, a . . . . . ii. 745  
 Giuseppe Caponsacchi . . . . . ii. 116  
 Give a Rouse . . . . . i. 248  
 Glove, The . . . . . i. 391  
 Gold Hair: a Story of Pornic . . . . . i. 569  
 Goldeni . . . . . ii. 780  
 Gondola, In a . . . . . i. 399  
 Grammarian's Funeral, A . . . . . i. 424  
 Guardian-Angel, The. A Picture at Fano . . . . . i. 296  
 Guido . . . . . ii. 245  
 HAKKADOSH, Jochanan . . . . . ii. 640  
 Halbert and Hob . . . . . ii. 585  
 Half-Rome . . . . . ii. 21  
 Helen's Tower . . . . . ii. 779  
 Heretic's Tragedy, The . . . . . i. 426  
 Hervé Riel . . . . . ii. 488  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau (Prince), Saviour of Society . . . . . ii. 292  
 Holy-Cross Day . . . . . i. 427  
 Home-Thoughts, from Abroad . . . . . i. 274  
 Home-Thoughts, from the Sea . . . . . i. 273  
 House . . . . . ii. 479  
 Householder, The . . . . . ii. 370  
 How it Strikes a Contemporary . . . . . i. 509  
 "How they brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix" . . . . . i. 259

- Hugues (Master) of Saxe-Gotha . . . i. 298  
 Humility . . . ii. 745  
 "IMPERANTE Augusto natus est—" . . . ii. 764  
 In a Balcony . . . ii. 550  
 In a Gondola . . . i. 399  
 In a Year . . . i. 293  
 In Three Days . . . i. 292  
 Inapprehensiveness . . . ii. 748  
 Incident of the French Camp . . . i. 383  
 Inn Album, The . . . ii. 426  
 Instans Tyrannus . . . i. 388  
 Isle's Enchantress, The . . . ii. 783  
 Italian (The) in England . . . i. 394  
 Italy, The Englishman in . . . i. 396  
 Iván Ivánovitch . . . ii. 587  
 Ixion . . . ii. 637  
 JAMES Lee's Wife . . . i. 563  
 Jochanan Hakkadosh . . . ii. 640  
 Jooseria . . . ii. 630  
 Johannes Agricola in Meditation . . . i. 516  
 Joan of Arc and the Kingfisher . . . ii. 785  
 Juris Doctor Johannes-Baptista Bottinius . . . ii. 195  
 KING Victor and King Charles . . . ii. 221  
 LA Saisiaz . . . ii. 542  
 Laboratory, The . . . i. 255  
 Lady and the Painter, The . . . ii. 753  
 Laresse (Gerard de), Parleyings with . . . ii. 718  
 Last Duchess, My . . . i. 384  
 Last Ride Together, The . . . i. 407  
 Last Word, A Woman's . . . i. 259  
 Life in a Love . . . i. 292  
 Light Woman, A . . . i. 406  
 Likeness, A . . . i. 601  
 Lines for the Tomb of Levi Lincoln Thaxter . . . ii. 782  
 Lines on Felix Moscheles' Painting, "The Isle's Enchantress" . . . ii. 783  
 Lines to the Memory of his Parents . . . ii. 778  
 Lippo Lippi, Fra . . . i. 517  
 Lost Leader, The . . . i. 249  
 Lost Mistress, The . . . i. 258  
 Love among the Ruins . . . i. 261  
 Love in a Life . . . i. 291  
 Lovers' Quarrel, A . . . i. 262  
 Euria . . . i. 439  
 MAGICAL Nature . . . ii. 484  
 Mandeville (Bernard de), Parleyings with . . . ii. 690  
 Marching Along . . . i. 248  
 Martin Relp . . . ii. 579  
 Martin's (St.) Summer . . . ii. 587  
 Mary Wollstonecraft and Fuseli . . . ii. 637  
 Master Hugues of Saxe-Gotha . . . i. 298  
 May and Death . . . i. 598  
 Meeting at Night . . . i. 259  
 Melon-Seller, The . . . ii. 658  
 Memorabilia . . . i. 297  
 Men and Women . . . i. 508  
 Mesmerism . . . i. 389  
 Mihrab Shah . . . ii. 665  
 Misconceptions . . . i. 284  
 Monaldeschi, Cristina and "Moses" of Michael Angelo, The . . . ii. 777  
 Muckle-Mouth Meg . . . ii. 752  
 Muléykeh . . . ii. 616  
 My Last Duchess . . . i. 384  
 My Star . . . i. 280  
 NATIONALITY in Drinks . . . i. 251  
 Names, The (To Shakespeare) . . . ii. 781  
 Natural Magic . . . ii. 483  
 Ned Bratts . . . ii. 596  
 Net, The Pope and the . . . ii. 750  
 Never the Time and the Place . . . ii. 655  
 Now . . . ii. 745  
 Numpholeptos . . . ii. 484  
 "Oh Love, Love" . . . ii. 775  
 Old Pictures in Florence . . . i. 267  
 On being defied to express in a hexameter "You ought to sit on the Safety-valve" . . . ii. 778  
 On Singers . . . ii. 782  
 One Way of Love . . . i. 284  
 One Word More. To E. B. B. . . i. 547  
 Other Half-Rome, The . . . ii. 41  
 PACCHIAROTTO (Of) and how he Worked in Distemper . . . ii. 465  
 Painter, The Lady and the . . . ii. 754  
 Pambo . . . ii. 651  
 Pan and Luna . . . ii. 628  
 Paracelsus . . . i. 11  
 Parleyings with Certain People of Importance in their Day . . . ii. 584

Parleyings with Bernard de Mandeville	ii. 690	Ring (The) and the Book—	
" Daniel Bartoli	ii. 695	I. The Ring and the Book	ii. 1
" Christopher Smart	ii. 700	II. Half-Rome	ii. 41
" George Bubb Doding-		III. The Other Half-Rome	ii. 41
ton	ii. 704	IV. Tertium Quid	ii. 64
" Francis Furini	ii. 709	V. Count Guido Franceschini	ii. 87
" Gerard de Lairesse	ii. 718	VI. Giuseppe Caponsacchi	ii. 116
" Charles Avison	ii. 724	VII. Pompilia	ii. 146
Parting at Morning	i. 259	VIII. Dominus Hyacinthus de	
Patriot, The	i. 383	Archangelis	ii. 173
Pauline; A Fragment of a Confession	i. 45	IX. Juris Doctor Johannes-	
Pearl, A Girl, A	ii. 745	Baptista Bottinaius	ii. 195
Pheidippides	ii. 582	X. The Pope	ii. 216
Pictor Ignotus	i. 516	XI. Guido	ii. 245
Pictures (Old) in Florence	i. 267	XII. The Book and the Ring	ii. 279
Pied Piper of Hamelin, The—A		Roses, Women and	i. 294
Child's Story	i. 408	Rosny	ii. 744
Pietro of Abano	ii. 613	Round Robin, A	ii. 778
Pillar at Sebzevar, A	ii. 674	Rudel to the Lady of Tripoli	i. 546
Pippa Passes	i. 195	St. MARTIN's Summer	ii. 487
Pisgah Sights, I.	ii. 481	Saisiaz, La	ii. 542
" II.	ii. 482	Saul	i. 273
Plot-Culture	ii. 673	Saxe-Gotha, Master Hugues of	i. 298
Poetics	ii. 745	Scene in the Building of the In-	
Pompilia	ii. 146	quisitors at Antwerp, A	ii. 785
Ponte dell' Angelo, Venice	ii. 753	Scruples, Fears and	ii. 482
Pope, The	ii. 216	Sebzevar, A Pillar at	ii. 674
Pope and the Net, The	ii. 750	Serenade (A) at the Villa	i. 288
Popularity	i. 297	Shah Abbas	ii. 659
Porphyria's Lover	i. 434	Shop	ii. 479
Pretty Woman, A	i. 290	Sibrandus Schafnaburgensis	i. 253
Prince Hohenstiel-Schwangau,		Sludge (Mr.), "The Medium"	i. 602
Saviour of Society	ii. 292	Smart (Christopher), Parleyings with	ii. 700
Prospice	i. 599	Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister	i. 254
Protus	i. 430	Solomon and Balkis	ii. 633
QUARREL, A Lovers'	i. 262	Sonnet	ii. 776
RABBI Ben Ezra	i. 580	Sonnet to Rawdon Brown	ii. 780
Red Cotton Night-Cap Country, or		Song	i. 259
Turf and Towers	ii. 371	Sordello	i. 115
Relph, Martin	ii. 579	Soul's Tragedy, A	i. 465
Rephan	ii. 768	Spanish Cloister, Soliloquy of the	i. 254
Replies to Challenges in Rhyme	ii. 785	Speculative	ii. 746
Reply to a Telegraphic Greeting	ii. 785	Star, My	i. 280
Respectability	i. 291	Statue (The) and the Bust	i. 431
Return (The) of the Druses	i. 301	Strafford	i. 77
Reverie	ii. 662	Summum Bonum	ii. 745
		Summum Bonum	ii. 662



TERTIUM Quid . . . . .	ii. 64	Tyrannus, Instans . . . . .	i. 388
Through the Metidja to Abd-eh-Kadr .	i. 251	Verses from "The Hour will come" .	ii. 779
Time's Revenges . . . . .	i. 393	Villa, Up at a—Down in the City .	i. 264
Toccata of Galuppi's, A . . . . .	i. 266	Vogler, Abt . . . . .	i. 571
Too Late . . . . .	i. 575	WARING . . . . .	i. 402
"Transcendentalism" . . . . .	ii. 508	Which? . . . . .	ii. 749
Translation from Horace "On Singers" .	ii. 780	White Witchcraft . . . . .	ii. 746
Translation from Pindar's Seventh Olympian .	ii. 779	Why I am a Liberal . . . . .	ii. 781
Tray . . . . .	ii. 596	Wife (Any) to Any Husband . . . . .	i. 285
Tripoli, Rudel to the Lady of . . . . .	i. 546	Wollstonecraft (Mary) and Fuseli .	ii. 637
Turf and Towers, Red Cotton Night-cap Country, or . . . . .	ii. 371	Woman's Last Word, A . . . . .	i. 259
Twins, The . . . . .	i. 405	Women and Roses . . . . .	i. 294
Two Camels . . . . .	ii. 669	Worst of It, The . . . . .	i. 571
Two in the Campagna . . . . .	i. 287	YEAR, In a . . . . .	i. 293
Two Poets of Croisic, The . . . . .	ii. 556	Youth and Art . . . . .	i. 599

THE END